

# **My Vampire System (WN)**

**JKSManga**

**9kafe.com**

Fantasy, Action, Sci-fi

The human Race is at war with the Vicious Dalki and when they needed help more than ever, THEY started to come forward.

Humans who had hidden in the shadows for hundreds of years, people with abilities.

Some chose to share their knowledge to the rest of the world in hopes of winning the war, while others kept their abilities to themselves.

Quinn had lost everything to the war, his home, his family and the only thing he had inherited was a crummy old book that he couldn't even open.

But when the book had finally opened, Quinn was granted a system and his whole life was turned around.

He completed quest after quest and became more powerful, until one day the system gave him a quest he wasn't sure he could complete.

"It is time to feed!"

"You must drink human blood within 24 hours"

"Your HP will continue to decrease until the task has been completed"

# Table of Contents

- [Chapter 701: Break the law](#)
- [Chapter 702: Moving on](#)
- [Chapter 703: Poor Equipmen](#)
- [Chapter 704: Infinite Flame Gauntlets](#)
- [Chapter 705: The tenth's strength](#)
- [Chapter 706: Reopening](#)
- [Chapter 707: How long?](#)
- [Chapter 708: We are better than you](#)
- [Chapter 709: I'm differen](#)
- [Chapter 710: Useless Beast gear](#)
- [Chapter 711: The tenth Vampire knights](#)
- [Chapter 712: An attack on the tenth castle](#)
- [Chapter 713: Protect or attack](#)
- [Chapter 714: Capture the flag](#)
- [Chapter 715: Activating true power](#)
- [Chapter 716: Yellow power](#)
- [Chapter 717: A Reunion](#)
- [Chapter 718: An ex leader](#)
- [Chapter 719: Irrational thoughts](#)
- [Chapter 720: Taking the blame](#)
- [Chapter 721: Solving the issue](#)
- [Chapter 722: The smug tenth](#)
- [Chapter 723: Living with a Queen](#)
- [Chapter 724: The tenth vampires fall](#)
- [Chapter 725: Down to the last few](#)
- [Chapter 726: A blind man's soul](#)
- [Chapter 727: The second ability](#)
- [Chapter 728: The king's power](#)
- [Chapter 729: The fallen king](#)
- [Chapter 730: New Era powerhouses](#)
- [Chapter 731: Making the first move](#)
- [Chapter 732: Red flush](#)
- [Chapter 733: Film everything](#)
- [Chapter 734: Getting cold](#)
- [Chapter 735: Who's the bad guys?](#)
- [Chapter 736: Save them please!](#)
- [Chapter 737: I'm a Villain](#)
- [Chapter 738: The other factions reactions](#)
- [Chapter 739: The future vision](#)
- [Chapter 740: The leader's table](#)
- [Chapter 741: The new era duel](#)
- [Chapter 742: The new Cursed Ship](#)
- [Chapter 743: Ex Head](#)
- [Chapter 744: Borrowed Power](#)

- [Chapter 745: Secret of Pure](#)
- [Chapter 746: Annoying girls](#)
- [Chapter 747: Blood or Soul?](#)
- [Chapter 748: An interruption](#)
- [Chapter 749: Overpowering force](#)
- [Chapter 750: My love in life](#)
- [Chapter 751: Pure VS Daisy](#)
- [Chapter 752: Can't Heal](#)
- [Chapter 753: Untreatable](#)
- [Chapter 754: Big Distraction](#)
- [Chapter 755: Major Quest failed](#)
- [Chapter 756: Getting the truth](#)
- [Chapter 757: What is Qi?](#)
- [Chapter 758: A vampire healer](#)
- [Chapter 759: Choose a reward](#)
- [Chapter 760: The new world Leader's table](#)
- [Chapter 761: Equal postion](#)
- [Chapter 762: Beyond AAA rank](#)
- [Chapter 763: Unknown killer](#)
- [Chapter 764: Stone thrower](#)
- [Chapter 765: The chains are off](#)
- [Chapter 766: Starting a war](#)
- [Chapter 767: A three spike](#)
- [Chapter 768: Thirty to the hun](#)
- [Chapter 769: The strength of a demon tier](#)
- [Chapter 770: Beast gun](#)
- [Chapter 771: Ice walls](#)
- [Chapter 772: Waisting the bulle](#)
- [Chapter 773: How will we succeed?](#)
- [Chapter 774: The beautiful sword](#)
- [Chapter 775: The demon tier arrives](#)
- [Chapter 776: The final skill](#)
- [Chapter 777: An angry crab](#)
- [Chapter 778: Bone Claw protecter](#)
- [Chapter 779: Sil's rage](#)
- [Chapter 780: Same mistake](#)
- [Chapter 781: Turning back](#)
- [Chapter 782: Second stage of Qi](#)
- [Chapter 783: Under attack](#)
- [Chapter 784: The Strength of a draugr](#)
- [Chapter 785: A pure Blood weapon](#)
- [Chapter 786: Blood Fairy power](#)
- [Chapter 787: Little man's strength](#)
- [Chapter 788: Find Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 789: A new hun](#)
- [Chapter 790: A final tes](#)
- [Chapter 791: Second stage Qi Vs Qi](#)
- [Chapter 792: Unknown man](#)

- [Chapter 793: Strong rumbling](#)
- [Chapter 794: Mona's ship?](#)
- [Chapter 795: The strongest human in the world](#)
- [Chapter 796: A fool never learns](#)
- [Chapter 797: Hilston vs the hero of war](#)
- [Chapter 798: Another Monster](#)
- [Chapter 799: You have to live](#)
- [Chapter 800: Two extra](#)
- [Chapter 801: Summoning the grea](#)
- [Chapter 802: Chains dropped](#)
- [Chapter 803: Everyone is better than me](#)
- [Chapter 804: The blood of all vampires](#)
- [Chapter 805: One more attack](#)
- [Chapter 806: The white coa](#)
- [Chapter 807: A vampire lord!](#)
- [Chapter 808: Get stronger than me](#)
- [Chapter 809: The Dalki mothership](#)
- [Chapter 810: Missing person](#)
- [Chapter 811: Spreading the news of the Cursed](#)
- [Chapter 812: Completing the leader Ques](#)
- [Chapter 813: In the head](#)
- [Chapter 814: The new guy](#)
- [Chapter 815: The tenth person](#)
- [Chapter 816: The last turn](#)
- [Chapter 817: The New Punishers](#)
- [Chapter 818: A special item](#)
- [Chapter 819: Older women](#)
- [Chapter 820: Breaking the rules](#)
- [Chapter 821: The second castle](#)
- [Chapter 822: Secret meetings](#)
- [Chapter 823: New faces arrive](#)
- [Chapter 824: High Expectations](#)
- [Chapter 825: The leader returns](#)
- [Chapter 826: Choosing the second knigh](#)
- [Chapter 827: The new group](#)
- [Chapter 828: Experience is key](#)
- [Chapter 829: The real tenth leader](#)
- [Chapter 830: The new title](#)
- [Chapter 831: Jim's debt](#)
- [Chapter 832: The new family name](#)
- [Chapter 833: Yellow eyes](#)
- [Chapter 834: The thirteenth's son](#)
- [Chapter 835: Don't trust anyone](#)
- [Chapter 836: The creator of the Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 837: Underestimating the tenth](#)
- [Chapter 838: Useless Title](#)
- [Chapter 839: Upgrading the Towers](#)
- [Chapter 840: A true talent](#)

- [Chapter 841: The problem with yellow eyes](#)
- [Chapter 842: Mass Turning](#)
- [Chapter 843: Chain Turning](#)
- [Chapter 844: Mother's gift](#)
- [Chapter 845: We want your vote](#)
- [Chapter 846: A leader's deal](#)
- [Chapter 847: Who am I?](#)
- [Chapter 848: Following bread crumbs](#)
- [Chapter 849: Who, Who, Who?](#)
- [Chapter 850: Just a pawn](#)
- [Chapter 851: Returning old memories](#)
- [Chapter 852: A little pig](#)
- [Chapter 853: In the middle of a game](#)
- [Chapter 854: True feelings](#)
- [Chapter 855: A king's touch](#)
- [Chapter 856: Ham's warning](#)
- [Chapter 857: The Boneclaw's master](#)
- [Chapter 858: The Big Day](#)
- [Chapter 859: Quest reminder](#)
- [Chapter 860: Farewell](#)
- [Chapter 861: Chapter sides](#)
- [Chapter 862: Clever Peter](#)
- [Chapter 863: Catching up](#)
- [Chapter 864: Moving forward](#)
- [Chapter 865: An obsession](#)
- [Chapter 866: A Showdown between leaders](#)
- [Chapter 867: First generation Blood weapon](#)
- [Chapter 868: The showdown's end](#)
- [Chapter 869: One more trump card](#)
- [Chapter 870: Silent steps](#)
- [Chapter 871: A Breakthrough](#)
- [Chapter 872: The 13th puppet](#)
- [Chapter 873: Framed](#)
- [Chapter 874: Quinn vs six, fight or run?](#)
- [Chapter 875: Quinn vs the leaders \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 876: Returning after a long time](#)
- [Chapter 877: The castle duty](#)
- [Chapter 878: Plan of Hope](#)
- [Chapter 879: The passing tenth](#)
- [Chapter 880: The vote for the crown](#)
- [Chapter 881: The King's Vault](#)
- [Chapter 882: Finding the fairy](#)
- [Chapter 883: The original vampires](#)
- [Chapter 884: March to the tenth](#)
- [Chapter 885: Helping from below](#)
- [Chapter 886: Hold the line](#)
- [Chapter 887: The statues' power](#)
- [Chapter 888: Getting rid of all problems](#)

- [Chapter 889: The cries of everyone](#)
- [Chapter 890: Double cross](#)
- [Chapter 891: The last vision](#)
- [Chapter 892: Protect them little one](#)
- [Chapter 893: An Original's strength](#)
- [Chapter 894: A rising energy](#)
- [Chapter 895: The battle's end](#)
- [Chapter 896: Winner or loser?](#)
- [Chapter 897: Aftermath of the tenth](#)
- [Chapter 898: Turning into a monster](#)
- [Chapter 899: Behind everything](#)
- [Chapter 900: Set in stone](#)
- [Chapter 901: Stuck in place](#)
- [Chapter 902: A vampire god](#)
- [Chapter 903: Boneclaw's promise](#)
- [Chapter 904: A strange new world](#)
- [Chapter 905: Leo's little friend](#)
- [Chapter 906: Keep your d.e.s.i.r.e strong](#)
- [Chapter 907: The Undead King](#)
- [Chapter 908: The second half of the tale](#)
- [Chapter 909: Another blood fairy](#)
- [Chapter 910: Where are all the....](#)
- [Chapter 911: The day before](#)
- [Chapter 912: Where are the tenth family?](#)
- [Chapter 913: Getting an upgrade](#)
- [Chapter 914: A red beam](#)
- [Chapter 915: The breakout](#)
- [Chapter 916: The truth](#)
- [Chapter 917: The one behind everything](#)
- [Chapter 918: Round two](#)
- [Chapter 919: Rooting for the enemy](#)
- [Chapter 920: Kill anyone](#)
- [Chapter 921: Borden's grudge](#)
- [Chapter 922: Attack attack](#)
- [Chapter 923: Raining blood](#)
- [Chapter 924: Eat it!](#)
- [Chapter 925: A king doesn't yield \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 926: A king doesn't yield \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 927: Remembering everything](#)
- [Chapter 928: Shadow Overload](#)
- [Chapter 929: Absolute Shadow](#)
- [Chapter 930: Glowing shadows](#)
- [Chapter 931: The debt](#)
- [Chapter 932: You can rest](#)
- [Chapter 933: SIDE STORY \(MVS EVENT WINNER\) QUINN](#)
- [Chapter 934: A vampire Hero](#)
- [Chapter 935: King is just a title](#)
- [Chapter 936: Cindy's darkness](#)

- [Chapter 937: Returning memoires](#)
- [Chapter 938: Juicy Rewards](#)
- [Chapter 939: Answer them](#)
- [Chapter 940: Paul's Goal](#)
- [Chapter 941: An old castle down, a new one in its place](#)
- [Chapter 942: Revote the king!](#)
- [Chapter 943: Deciding vote](#)
- [Chapter 944: A warning to you all](#)
- [Chapter 945: Preparing for the future](#)
- [Chapter 946: An invitation](#)
- [Chapter 947: On my own](#)
- [Chapter 948: A date](#)
- [Chapter 949: A teacher](#)
- [Chapter 950: Taking along](#)
- [Chapter 951: My Choices](#)
- [Chapter 952: Pure's secret weapon](#)
- [Chapter 953: Planet Earth](#)
- [Chapter 954: The Head generals](#)
- [Chapter 955: Getting rid of sc.u.m \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 956: Getting rid of sc.u.m \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 957: Disappointment](#)
- [Chapter 958: A speech](#)
- [Chapter 959: Strongest Teacher](#)
- [Chapter 960: No ability, take mine](#)
- [Chapter 961: The caring teacher](#)
- [Chapter 962: Reliving the past](#)
- [Chapter 963: A.d.u.l.ts are liars!](#)
- [Chapter 964: Class of 2A](#)
- [Chapter 965: The Cursed faction Influence \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 966: The Cursed faction Influence \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 967: Logan the real superpower](#)
- [Chapter 968: Two wrongs](#)
- [Chapter 969: Adapt to the situation](#)
- [Chapter 970: What is the strongest ability?](#)
- [Chapter 971: Who taught who?](#)
- [Chapter 972: The missing person](#)
- [Chapter 973: Shadow books](#)
- [Chapter 974: Replacement teacher](#)
- [Chapter 975: Same same, but different](#)
- [Chapter 976: The fourteenth castle secrets](#)
- [Chapter 977: The Punishers' leader](#)
- [Chapter 978: The Punisher Title](#)
- [Chapter 979: The return of the king](#)
- [Chapter 980: A tricky opponent](#)
- [Chapter 981: A waste of time!](#)
- [Chapter 982: The strongest fighters in the world](#)
- [Chapter 983: Noob fighter](#)
- [Chapter 984: The Dalki growth](#)

- [Chapter 985: The martial art god](#)
- [Chapter 986: Noob fighter vs God fighter](#)
- [Chapter 987: Deadly kick](#)
- [Chapter 988: Surpassing the Teacher](#)
- [Chapter 989: The fear of him](#)
- [Chapter 990: Activating new power](#)
- [Chapter 991: Best in the world](#)
- [Chapter 992: A touching leader](#)
- [Chapter 993: Three classes](#)
- [Chapter 994: Thumbs up](#)
- [Chapter 995: The Turnaround](#)
- [Chapter 996: Own Talent](#)
- [Chapter 997: Hardy strong?](#)
- [Chapter 998: Respect for you](#)
- [Chapter 999: Hypocrite](#)
- [Chapter 1000: Familiar name](#)
- [Chapter 1001: The grand master](#)
- [Chapter 1002: Important date](#)
- [Chapter 1003: Sil's anger](#)
- [Chapter 1004: Spoiled Brat](#)
- [Chapter 1005: Young master](#)
- [Chapter 1006: Who is the strongest?](#)
- [Chapter 1007: Protect the Blade family?](#)
- [Chapter 1008: Visiting an old planet](#)
- [Chapter 1009: Something in the air](#)
- [Chapter 1010: No big event?](#)
- [Chapter 1011: Can I stab you?](#)
- [Chapter 1012: Who, who, who](#)
- [Chapter 1013: Taking over](#)
- [Chapter 1014: A mistake!](#)
- [Chapter 1015: The Noble vampire](#)
- [Chapter 1016: The power of green blood](#)
- [Chapter 1017: A single warrior](#)
- [Chapter 1018: A bigger enemy](#)
- [Chapter 1019: A order powered by will](#)
- [Chapter 1020: Fex's Secret \(one\)](#)
- [Chapter 1021: Fex's Secret \(two\)](#)
- [Chapter 1022: Cursed teamwork](#)
- [Chapter 1023: Sacrifice continues](#)
- [Chapter 1024: A dangerous man](#)
- [Chapter 1025: Three questions](#)
- [Chapter 1026: A condition](#)
- [Chapter 1027: Help from an enemy](#)
- [Chapter 1028: Quinn missing?](#)
- [Chapter 1029: The most important figures in the world](#)
- [Chapter 1030: Close connection](#)
- [Chapter 1031: Announcement to the whole world](#)
- [Chapter 1032: Rude or a pass?](#)

- [Chapter 1033: You should be dead](#)
- [Chapter 1034: The real Eno](#)
- [Chapter 1035: Another option](#)
- [Chapter 1036: Making a deal everywhere](#)
- [Chapter 1037: Trapped between two](#)
- [Chapter 1038: The secrets of a clone](#)
- [Chapter 1039: The final deal](#)
- [Chapter 1040: Evolving the blood](#)
- [Chapter 1041: The Blade's power](#)
- [Chapter 1042: Cleaning job](#)
- [Chapter 1043: No longer getting through](#)
- [Chapter 1044: Complications](#)
- [Chapter 1045: The special set](#)
- [Chapter 1046: Working together](#)
- [Chapter 1047: Tired eyes](#)
- [Chapter 1048: The best place to be](#)
- [Chapter 1049: Nitro accelerate](#)
- [Chapter 1050: The Blue Fang Armour](#)
- [Chapter 1051: A diffrent skill?](#)
- [Chapter 1052: Missing people](#)
- [Chapter 1053: The red mark spreads](#)
- [Chapter 1054: The mark activates](#)
- [Chapter 1055: The infected](#)
- [Chapter 1056: Over a 1000](#)
- [Chapter 1057: Working with a Demon](#)
- [Chapter 1058: The Demon's trick](#)
- [Chapter 1059: Killing the Marked](#)
- [Chapter 1060: Give us the boy](#)
- [Chapter 1061: Uncovering the Demon tier beast](#)
- [Chapter 1062: Level up Blood](#)
- [Chapter 1063: Two strong forces](#)
- [Chapter 1064: What would they do?](#)
- [Chapter 1065: The ultimate choice](#)
- [Chapter 1066: Live on to the end](#)
- [Chapter 1067: Best rewards yet](#)
- [Chapter 1068: Important question](#)
- [Chapter 1069: I like you](#)
- [Chapter 1070: The answer](#)
- [Chapter 1071: An intruder](#)
- [Chapter 1072: A how many spike?](#)
- [Chapter 1073: The city of Zoo](#)
- [Chapter 1074: The Mighty Cruncher](#)
- [Chapter 1075: A Crossover?](#)
- [Chapter 1076: The fat cat](#)
- [Chapter 1077: I've found you](#)
- [Chapter 1078: The feeling of red](#)
- [Chapter 1079: Taking off](#)
- [Chapter 1080: The old vs the New](#)

- [Chapter 1081: All together](#)
- [Chapter 1082: A better pair of weapons](#)
- [Chapter 1083: The leader of Pure, Zero](#)
- [Chapter 1084: Assassination failed](#)
- [Chapter 1085: The glowing eyes](#)
- [Chapter 1086: Strong red eyes](#)
- [Chapter 1087: The Recording](#)
- [Chapter 1088: Owen's Soul weapon](#)
- [Chapter 1089: A sick leader](#)
- [Chapter 1090: A Special Power](#)
- [Chapter 1091: A struggle Within](#)
- [Chapter 1092: The secret of the red power](#)
- [Chapter 1093: Falling blood](#)
- [Chapter 1094: Admitting the truth](#)
- [Chapter 1095: Call them V](#)
- [Chapter 1096: Eno our saviour?](#)
- [Chapter 1097: The missing man](#)
- [Chapter 1098: A pick up](#)
- [Chapter 1099: The return of a trio](#)
- [Chapter 1100: A crystal problem](#)
- [Chapter 1101: The passive effect](#)
- [Chapter 1102: Two active skills in one](#)
- [Chapter 1103: All our strength](#)
- [Chapter 1104: Changing the future](#)
- [Chapter 1105: Challenge for the seat](#)
- [Chapter 1106: A detour](#)
- [Chapter 1107: A stronger Qi inside](#)
- [Chapter 1108: Two heads collide](#)
- [Chapter 1109: Battle for Romeo](#)
- [Chapter 1110: Everyone knows](#)
- [Chapter 1111: Can thank me or not](#)
- [Chapter 1112: It's not easy](#)
- [Chapter 1113: Taming a beast](#)
- [Chapter 1114: The god of the sea vs a human](#)
- [Chapter 1115: The Tour of Blade](#)
- [Chapter 1116: Two problems at once](#)
- [Chapter 1117: The strongest beast yet](#)
- [Chapter 1118: The active power](#)
- [Chapter 1119: A family reunion](#)
- [Chapter 1120: A third body is needed](#)
- [Chapter 1121: Lumped together](#)
- [Chapter 1122: One Horn evolving](#)
- [Chapter 1123: Two vampire knights](#)
- [Chapter 1124: A ticking bomb](#)
- [Chapter 1125: The first loss](#)
- [Chapter 1126: Plan coming together](#)
- [Chapter 1127: The strange plan](#)
- [Chapter 1128: Going a bit crazy](#)

- [Chapter 1129: Always getting in the way](#)
- [Chapter 1130: Bringing one back](#)
- [Chapter 1131: The Green's power](#)
- [Chapter 1132: Logan activate](#)
- [Chapter 1133: An upgrade in powers](#)
- [Chapter 1134: Defeated by fear](#)
- [Chapter 1135: Finish the story](#)
- [Chapter 1136: The odds](#)
- [Chapter 1137: The Supreme commander's fall](#)
- [Chapter 1138: Use my body](#)
- [Chapter 1139: Switching bodies](#)
- [Chapter 1140: Do you want to live?](#)
- [Chapter 1141: Passing on the Mantle](#)
- [Chapter 1142: After the same thing](#)
- [Chapter 1143: Chasing i](#)
- [Chapter 1144: Evolution tiers](#)
- [Chapter 1145: The fear of the V](#)
- [Chapter 1146: Inspect skill secre](#)
- [Chapter 1147: Giant Robots](#)
- [Chapter 1148: The vampire boy's dream!](#)
- [Chapter 1149: Is he Cheating?](#)
- [Chapter 1150: Bucky steps up](#)
- [Chapter 1151: Best babysitter](#)
- [Chapter 1152: The faction of monsters](#)
- [Chapter 1153: Layla's anger](#)
- [Chapter 1154: Bucky a legend?](#)
- [Chapter 1155: A copyca](#)
- [Chapter 1156: A special gif](#)
- [Chapter 1157: Project: Evolve](#)
- [Chapter 1158: Pure or Demi-god](#)
- [Chapter 1159: Solving both](#)
- [Chapter 1160: Pure scum](#)
- [Chapter 1161: Unlikely Pair](#)
- [Chapter 1162: Slight hiccup](#)
- [Chapter 1163: Agent 2 power](#)
- [Chapter 1164: Undying Mech](#)
- [Chapter 1165: Discovering another way](#)
- [Chapter 1166: Broken strings](#)
- [Chapter 1167: Overpowered](#)
- [Chapter 1168: A dark mind](#)
- [Chapter 1169: Pure's creation](#)
- [Chapter 1170: The beast's pledge](#)
- [Chapter 1171: The fourth Evolution](#)
- [Chapter 1172: Clash of Titans](#)
- [Chapter 1173: Too much Qi \(1\)](#)
- [Chapter 1174: Too much Qi \(2\)](#)
- [Chapter 1175: A grand return](#)
- [Chapter 1176: A secret deal](#)

- [Chapter 1177: Finally Returned](#)
- [Chapter 1178: Consuming beast crystals](#)
- [Chapter 1179: The special deal](#)
- [Chapter 1180: You are not in charge of us!](#)
- [Chapter 1181: A Changing world](#)
- [Chapter 1182: World Changing Day](#)
- [Chapter 1183: The Family returns](#)
- [Chapter 1184: Blood delivery](#)
- [Chapter 1185: Speaking up](#)
- [Chapter 1186: Don“t go](#)
- [Chapter 1187: Ongoing quests](#)
- [Chapter 1188: The Cursed Faction Family](#)
- [Chapter 1189: Trophy weapons](#)
- [Chapter 1190: Preparing for the wors](#)
- [Chapter 1191: Wide scale](#)
- [Chapter 1192: 4095 days](#)
- [Chapter 1193: Fight for Freedom](#)
- [Chapter 1194: Another war](#)
- [Chapter 1195: The family reunited](#)
- [Chapter 1196: Not just one](#)
- [Chapter 1197: Three Sils](#)
- [Chapter 1198: A ray of hope](#)
- [Chapter 1199: Doom](#)
- [Chapter 1200: One of them](#)
- [Chapter 1201: The Dalki leaders](#)
- [Chapter 1202: A Penalty](#)
- [Chapter 1203: Climb](#)
- [Chapter 1204: Grinding](#)
- [Chapter 1205: Getting in](#)
- [Chapter 1206: Inside of the Dalki Mothership](#)
- [Chapter 1207: Scarier than a Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 1208: One Down](#)
- [Chapter 1209: The Amule](#)
- [Chapter 1210.2: The Amulet Part 2](#)
- [Chapter 1211: Demon tier powers](#)
- [Chapter 1212: Full control of a new body](#)
- [Chapter 1213: Hug it ou](#)
- [Chapter 1214: Abandon the ship](#)
- [Chapter 1215: Last wish](#)
- [Chapter 1216: Catching up](#)
- [Chapter 1217: The impossible ques](#)
- [Chapter 1218: Fight for me](#)
- [Chapter 1219: Crash Landing](#)
- [Chapter 1220: Vincent“s truth](#)
- [Chapter 1221: An Awakening](#)
- [Chapter 1222: The end of the Blade family](#)
- [Chapter 1223: Worst Quinn ever](#)
- [Chapter 1224: The Clothed Dalki](#)

- [Chapter 1225: Finding out secrets](#)
- [Chapter 1226: Broadcasted to everyone](#)
- [Chapter 1227: Prisoners or V](#)
- [Chapter 1228: The urge to kill](#)
- [Chapter 1229: The Dalki or Military](#)
- [Chapter 1230: The special deal](#)
- [Chapter 1231: The big figh](#)
- [Chapter 1232: Alien VS Predator](#)
- [Chapter 1233.2: Alien Vs Predetor Part 2](#)
- [Chapter 1234: Pick a side](#)
- [Chapter 1235: Your own kind](#)
- [Chapter 1236: I picked a side](#)
- [Chapter 1237: The real end](#)
- [Chapter 1238: A little help](#)
- [Chapter 1239: Defeat?](#)
- [Chapter 1240: Winning the battle, but losing the war](#)
- [Chapter 1241: An investigation](#)
- [Chapter 1242: Dethrone the king](#)
- [Chapter 1243: A message to them](#)
- [Chapter 1244: The penalty](#)
- [Chapter 1245: Fixing the issue](#)
- [Chapter 1246: Unwelcome face](#)
- [Chapter 1247: The Major Threats](#)
- [Chapter 1248: Arthur Switch sides?](#)
- [Chapter 1249: Double Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 1250: The Board](#)
- [Chapter 1251: Blessing](#)
- [Chapter 1252: Stronger than before](#)
- [Chapter 1253: Disruption](#)
- [Chapter 1254: The Origin](#)
- [Chapter 1255: Fake Family](#)
- [Chapter 1256: The Creation of the Blade family](#)
- [Chapter 1257: Ramblings of a Mad Man](#)
- [Chapter 1258: The worst century yet](#)
- [Chapter 1259: Unsettled](#)
- [Chapter 1260: Confident creatures](#)
- [Chapter 1261: A Punisher's message](#)
- [Chapter 1262: The real killer?](#)
- [Chapter 1263: A Gift from Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 1264: Black Flames](#)
- [Chapter 1265: Quick Growth](#)
- [Chapter 1266: Dragon eyes](#)
- [Chapter 1267: Wight Upgrade](#)
- [Chapter 1268: I'm Evil](#)
- [Chapter 1269: Tired](#)
- [Chapter 1270: Everyone Upgraded](#)
- [Chapter 1271: The calm before the storm](#)
- [Chapter 1272: Hunting for treasure](#)

- [Chapter 1273: Risk your life](#)
- [Chapter 1274: The red crown](#)
- [Chapter 1275: Roseus tree](#)
- [Chapter 1276: A mistake](#)
- [Chapter 1277: Ray of hope](#)
- [Chapter 1278: Planned or not?](#)
- [Chapter 1279: Beast Tamer](#)
- [Chapter 1280: A Familiar person](#)
- [Chapter 1281: Not Your Friend](#)
- [Chapter 1282: Protect my brothers](#)
- [Chapter 1283: Don't turn](#)
- [Chapter 1284: A New Tier](#)
- [Chapter 1285: Moody Dragon](#)
- [Chapter 1286: The back up](#)
- [Chapter 1287: A Tiger's last stand](#)
- [Chapter 1288: The Special box](#)
- [Chapter 1289: The Puppet Master](#)
- [Chapter 1290: A copy of a copy](#)
- [Chapter 1291: Going back](#)
- [Chapter 1292: Get the Tablet](#)
- [Chapter 1293: Jim's Grudge](#)
- [Chapter 1294: Don't have to kill](#)
- [Chapter 1295: A gift from him](#)
- [Chapter 1296: A Shadow Raven](#)
- [Chapter 1297: Staying back](#)
- [Chapter 1298: The six spikes' strength](#)
- [Chapter 1299: An old enemy](#)
- [Chapter 1300: Blood Armour Weakness](#)
- [Chapter 1301: The Trigger](#)
- [Chapter 1302: Broken Jim](#)
- [Chapter 1303: Can't hurt the Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 1304: Destroying the Temple](#)
- [Chapter 1305: Goodbye](#)
- [Chapter 1306: Strange powers](#)
- [Chapter 1307: Crossroads](#)
- [Chapter 1308: The Dalki special](#)
- [Chapter 1309: Graylash duo](#)
- [Chapter 1310: Hesitation](#)
- [Chapter 1311: No Longer Needed](#)
- [Chapter 1312: Is Fate Real?](#)
- [Chapter 1313: Eno's Surprise](#)
- [Chapter 1314: The unknown space station](#)
- [Chapter 1315: The sun blocker](#)
- [Chapter 1316: Space Battle](#)
- [Chapter 1317: The rewards](#)
- [Chapter 1318: Passing the test](#)
- [Chapter 1319: The other tests](#)
- [Chapter 1320: Stronger than a Demon tier](#)

- [Chapter 1321: Relying on the system](#)
- [Chapter 1322: A new....](#)
- [Chapter 1323: The Headless](#)
- [Chapter 1324: The other kings](#)
- [Chapter 1325: Seeing them again](#)
- [Chapter 1326: Eno's Sin](#)
- [Chapter 1327: I Nominate...](#)
- [Chapter 1328: Out of the tenth castle!](#)
- [Chapter 1329: The other Hero](#)
- [Chapter 1330: The list](#)
- [Chapter 1331: Low and high](#)
- [Chapter 1332: The wrong or right](#)
- [Chapter 1333: The shadow's weakness](#)
- [Chapter 1334: Off the list](#)
- [Chapter 1335: Him](#)
- [Chapter 1336: Walking snack](#)
- [Chapter 1337: BEEP](#)
- [Chapter 1338: He's everywhere](#)
- [Chapter 1339: Giving up!](#)
- [Chapter 1340: A large list...](#)
- [Chapter 1341: What my powers can do](#)
- [Chapter 1342: Not Even An Original](#)
- [Chapter 1343: Trespassers](#)
- [Chapter 1344: A message to the settlement](#)
- [Chapter 1345: The Castles special](#)
- [Chapter 1346: Make a Choice](#)
- [Chapter 1347: Back to a baby](#)
- [Chapter 1348: The families shame](#)
- [Chapter 1349: Blood swords](#)
- [Chapter 1350: Hundred blood swords](#)
- [Chapter 1351: A True Infected](#)
- [Chapter 1352: Interruption](#)
- [Chapter 1353: No point fighting](#)
- [Chapter 1354: Better than them](#)
- [Chapter 1355: An Eye With Wings](#)
- [Chapter 1356: A Vampire God](#)
- [Chapter 1357: Laxmus' Strength](#)
- [Chapter 1358: Vampire knights](#)
- [Chapter 1359: Not a Vampire](#)
- [Chapter 1360: The Castle reward](#)
- [Chapter 1361: Quest Update](#)
- [Chapter 1362: The strongest form](#)
- [Chapter 1363: Save the settlement \(1\)](#)
- [Chapter 1364: Save the settlement \(2\)](#)
- [Chapter 1365: The Perfect Combination](#)
- [Chapter 1366: My way](#)
- [Chapter 1367: Help the Tenth!](#)
- [Chapter 1368: The rain falls](#)

- [Chapter 1369: The future of the settlement](#)
- [Chapter 1370: Too strong](#)
- [Chapter 1371: Becoming a king](#)
- [Chapter 1372: A Decision Made](#)
- [Chapter 1373: Do you accept me as your king?](#)
- [Chapter 1374: The vote, and power](#)
- [Chapter 1375: The power of a king](#)
- [Chapter 1376: The settlement upgrade](#)
- [Chapter 1377: An upgrade](#)
- [Chapter 1378: A Proposal](#)
- [Chapter 1379: A Collection](#)
- [Chapter 1380: Double Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 1381: Much Change](#)
- [Chapter 1382: Making an entrance](#)
- [Chapter 1383: The leaders growth \(1\)](#)
- [Chapter 1384: The Leaders' growth \(2\)](#)
- [Chapter 1385: The upset leader](#)
- [Chapter 1386: The first of his kind](#)
- [Chapter 1387: Project Utopia](#)
- [Chapter 1388: The lost planet](#)
- [Chapter 1389: Unique power](#)
- [Chapter 1390: Quinn's return](#)
- [Chapter 1391: A Royal](#)
- [Chapter 1392: Super Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 1393: Untouchable \(1\)](#)
- [Chapter 1394: Untouchable \(2\)](#)
- [Chapter 1395: Battle of Daisy \(1\)](#)
- [Chapter 1396: Battle of Daisy \(2\)](#)
- [Chapter 1397: Battle of Daisy \(3\)](#)
- [Chapter 1398: Battle of Daisy \(4\)](#)
- [Chapter 1399: Helen's fate](#)
- [Chapter 1400: Final message](#)

## Chapter 701: Break the law

Honestly, Quinn's mind was full wondering if he was doing the right thing or not at the moment. Not because he didn't want to help those in the Parasite group, but because he was worried about his friends back on the Cursed ship. They had been infected with the poison for a while now, and when Quinn had left Dennis was in serious trouble.

He knew his actions now would delay helping them.

The problem was, that with Sil his ability would only work for the next 24 hours. There was a chance travelling from the faction Shelters that they could run into beasts, Even when using his shadow travel there was the off chance this could happen. Upon returning, he felt that maybe by then Sil would no longer have his ability.

He might have been able to copy Pual's but he was even unsure if that would work, or if they were exactly the same type of ability as they differed slightly. According to Wevil, even when crazed there was still a couple of days before they would meet their end.

It was only because Wevil had informed him of this, that he wasn't too worried about returning so soon.

Still, that didn't mean he wouldn't worry. Leaving the room with the other's, they finally reached the outside where they could see the extent of Sil's work.

There were hundreds of men, in pain either knocked out rolling on the floor. Seeing them spread out all across the shelter like so.

"Don't worry, Quinn. We'll be back soon. I'm a lot stronger than Mantis." Closing his eyes. Sil concentrated. His hands started to glow green and a strange aura surrounded them. Before even accepting, Sil knew about the others, that they needed to help. He was never planning to go around, and remove the poison individually from every single person.

The aura around his hands grew even larger than before. From each of the bodies lying on the floor, the green poison could be seen lifting out. Where they were standing, they could see little green particles of poison all over the shelter and then at the same time, they all fell to the floor.

'How, I've never seen Mantis do a thing like this before, can any poison user even do this type of thing?' Wevil was wondering.

The parasites should have at least done some research before even attempting to take on the Cursed faction. That was their biggest downfall in this whole thing.

"I think I got everyone, now let's head back to the ship." Sil said.

"Let's save everyone. I'm happy that no one will have to die," Said Quinn.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the training room, everyone was looking at the horror that was happening before their eyes. Fex had turned into some strange beast, having half of his body transformed. He had latched onto Blip's neck and was constantly draining him of his blood.

Blip wanted to do something, he tried his best to hit Fex off, he didn't even know it was Fex but was just trying to do anything he could to survive, but his punches seemed useless and as each second passed, he could feel the power in his body fading away.

Linda was still on the floor, hurt from her encounter with him, she wanted to get up and help her brother but couldn't.

Eventually, it seemed that Blip's attack's were hurting him somewhat, but now Fex was starting to slash at his arms. Destroying any hope Blip had.

"Are we going to do anything?" Sam asked.

Paul was hesitant, he didn't know what this was in front of him, and was actually waiting for Kzz to act.

"He should have had enough blood by now to turn back, but he keeps consuming as if he has become an addicted bloodsucker. Maybe the poison is affecting him?" Kazzz said.

Paul was wondering if he could do the same trick as he had done with Dennis, but he found no room for him to step in. Everything that was happening was so wild. Then, he felt a breeze on his cheek.

While him and Sam were thinking about what to do, Kazz was already starting to act. She had held the regular hand of Fex, stopping it from hitting Blip, then lifting his body slammed it into the ground. Soon after with her legs, she continually dug her heel into his body, hitting it over and over.

Finally, it looked like Fex had stopped moving.

The two boys were amazed by this.

'She's far stronger than I thought.' Sam said stunned. 'Is this why Quinn told us not to act out against her?'

"He's not dead, is he?" Paul asked.

"No." Kazz replied. "For now it would be best if I stayed by his side, in case he does get up."

There was a slight groan from the ground near her, and immediately, she stomped her foot on Fex's body making sure he was silent.

By now, Linda had already healed up and she was running towards her brother who was on the ground. When she arrived, she was devastated at the sight, her brother was almost unrecognisable to her.

One shoulder had been clawed completely down to the bone and tendons, his skin had shrivelled as if it was extremely dehydrated, yet, she could see he was breathing, still in pain. While the blood was still seeping out from his wounds.

"I'll go call the medic!" Sam shouted leaving the room, to try to find someone, but the others including Sam knew that it would be useless. Too much blood had already left his body, and it looked like Blip was on his last breath.

Lifting her brother's head, she tried to call out to him, but there was no response , as if he was deaf. His eyes were still open, but they were slowly closing in and out. Lifting his hand with little strength, he held Linda's and smiled at her softly.

"NO!" She shouted. "You are not going to die here."

Linda looked at Paul and Kazz. "You two, you're both vampires like Quinn, right? Can't you save him, just like Quinn did with me. Turn him into something, anything so he can live another day!" She cried.

"I don't know how, and I'm not sure if I really could?" Paul replied.

"You can't, and I can't." Kazz interrupted. "Although I can turn him, it is against the vampire laws. If I did then he would become an illegal. I do not have permission from my leader to do so."

"But he's dying, can't you just forget about the rules and save him?" She pleaded.

Kazz shook her head, and stood firmly.

"The only person who would be able to turn him, is Quinn as he is a vampire leader. Then he would no longer be an illegal."

"Please! Please!!" Linda screamed at the top of her lungs, she was begging. She knew Kazz had the ability to. When she said she couldn't, it was just because she was following her laws.

"Quinn!" She screamed. "Where are you!" With Kazz refusing to help there was only one person she would ask, but her cries were useless. At that moment, Blip's eyes started to close and his breath had stopped.

The sound of the heartbeat was silent.

"I can confirm, he is dead, there is nothing that can bring him back now." Kazz said.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 702: Moving on

When leaving the Parasites to their own devices, there was the chance that they could use this time to run away. To escape the planet, however, where would they even go? Who would they run off to? Wevil, had promised Quinn that he would follow him from now onwards, and to leave everything to him and Hana.

Even though Tony was the vice leader, the faction members actually had the most respect for these two. Whenever something had gone wrong, they would be the ones that tried to reason with Mantis, to give them part of the antidote earlier than needed. While Tony would be the one who was Mantis's yes men.

Saying Yes to every suggestion and everything he did.

"Alright everyone, it's time for you all to decide!" Wevil shouted from on top of the platform. The faction members were recovering and they had gained enough strength to move again. But they were unaware of the bombshell that Wevil was about to drop on them all. "You have a choice...."

\*\*\*\*\*

Heading back, Quinn and Sil had no trouble and they had arrived at the shelter sooner than they thought. A message had been sent back ahead of time, and Peter had responded saying that Dennis was acting strangely, but that was a while ago.

The two of them went through the teleporter and were onboard the Cursed ship, running straight for the command centre, but before they could even reach there. Peter was standing in the main large open hall.

"Quinn, did you manage to solve it?" Peter asked.

"I didn't, but Sil can now remove the poison. Where are the others?" Quinn asked.

Peter led the way but didn't say much, he didn't know what to say to Quinn to prepare him for what had happened while he was on his way. If anything Quinn seemed to be in a happy mood that he had actually found a way to save the others.

Then entering the training room, Quinn could see many people in the room. It reeked of blood, but he expected this. As time went on, he imagined more of them were throwing up on the ground like the others. Sam was present, along with Paul and Kazz. The two of them were standing over Dennis, Nate and Fex.

They looked like they had been beaten a few times, but were at least still alive. Sil seeing them rushed over quickly and got to work removing the poison.

Scanning the room more, he saw Linda, away from them all. She was sitting down on the floor with her head on her knees. Quinn had seen Sil do this a number of

times when he was upset. However, what caught his attention more than that, was two things.

First, the sound of crying coming from Linda, she was uncontrollably sobbing and even now tears were falling to the floor. The second thing was what was in front of her. A sheet had been placed over something and right at the bottom, a pair of boots could be seen sticking out from them.

"No, no I brought back Sil, we can get rid of the poison," Quinn said walking towards her. Seeing Linda, and the body in front of her, it didn't take long for him to put the two things together.

When she heard someone coming closer, she looked up to see Quinn through her blurry vision.

"Quinn..." She cried. "Blip, you can save him... Right? Please tell me you can save him!" She continued to sob.

It was her last hope, hoping that Kazz was wrong about what she had said. Kneeling down on his knees, Quinn removed the sheet to have a look underneath it, a bloody mess known as Blip. He closed his eyes and placed the sheet back over.

He knew Blip was dead.

"I'm sorry... I'm sorry I wasn't here, I can't bring back the dead." Quinn said softly.

Placing her head back down, she continued to sob, Quinn went to approach her, hoping to perhaps comfort her.

"Don't, please Quinn, just go away. I know it's not your fault, or Fex's but I just can't look at you right now, not for a while." Linda said.

Quinn understood and decided to leave her be. She was such a strong woman and it broke his heart to see her like this, but then he was starting to wonder what happened? Blip wasn't infected by the poison in the first place.

Thinking back at the image of Blip in his mind, there was something he could see on the neck. It was two bite marks. Immediately, Quinn's mind wanted to blame Kazz, and walking back towards them a strange energy was overflowing from him.

He had enough, if Kazz was behind this, then he was unsure if he could hold himself back this time, even his gauntlets were already covered in a strange shadow.

"Quinn, it wasn't Kazz," Paul said, knowing the look in his eyes.

Hearing this, he started to think about what Linda had said, about how she said she didn't blame him or 'Fex' for this. The anger started to calm down, and the shadow disappeared.

"But how?"

Everything was explained to Quinn about what had happened while they were away. He was kicking himself in the foot wondering, if he had stayed behind, if the outcome would have been different.

However, Sam, Nate and Dennis all tried their best to comfort him, especially Dennis who was more thankful than even before to Quinn. He knew that his life was hanging on the line, and if Quinn hadn't left to deal with the Parasites as quickly as he did, there was a good chance that he could be dead as well.

Eventually, the news was released to everyone on the Cursed ship. A day of mourning had been given to Blip. It came as a shock, especially since a lot of members of the Crows had joined because of him. What surprised everyone even more, was Linda had yet to be seen at the morning event.

They were expecting some type of speech from her, but nothing had occurred. Blip's death was blamed on the Parasites, and with that, the news of Quinn attacking them was also spread. They weren't informed of how he did so alone, but they couldn't have imagined a large group having acted.

Otherwise, more faction members would have known about it. To them, the order of events were jumbled. They had thought Blip had been killed by the Parasites some ways and then Quinn went to deal with them, which just proved to all of them how much Quinn cared about their lives.

He thought that maybe people would leave after such a thing, but they had all decided to stay. Showing him more respect compared to before.

Weevil had kept to his promise. He was unable to get in contact with Daisy, as they were dealing with their own things, but he left them a message blaming the event on the Parasites.

They decided to stick to the story that was spread around the Cursed faction. After the duel, Mantis had attacked Blip, and Quinn retaliated. Most of the Parasite members agreed to join under the Cursed faction, they were very thankful after the poison was removed like Weevil thought they would be. The members explained the situation to their families as they were unaware of what was really going on in the Parasites. The shelter they had could remain and now was in the process of being built permanently.

They wanted a person to oversee this matter, and in the end, Linda was the one who volunteered. She had recovered a little from her brother's death, trying to act

normal with everyone, but there was an odd feeling around her whenever they would converse.

When she volunteered it came as a surprise, and they thought it might be best to give her a task like so, to get her mind off it.

When going through the Parasite's belongings, they found that Mantis had written his own personal Poison ability book. It was given to Paul to look over and he had found that it had cultivation techniques that would teach someone to get their ability up to level eight. It was the thing he needed most right now.

It was a tough time for the Cursed faction, but Paul reminded them that many more tough times were probably to come in the future, even though big things were happening they couldn't just take a break. They needed to proceed with their plan. The plan that would place them in prime position to become part of the big three. A powerhouse of the human race.

In those two days, wiping the sweat from his head, Alex looked at the last piece of equipment on his table.

'Finally the emperor tier equipment..is done.'

\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 703: Poor Equipment

With everything that had happened on the Cursed Ship so far, everyone seemed to be recovering at a steady pace, all except one person who was affected by this just as much as Linda was.

Heading over to the living quarters, Quinn had stopped just outside one of the rooms and entered. In his hand was a blood pack that had been taken from the medical storage centre. He threw the pack over and it landed right on Fex's face, who didn't even move, allowing it to slide off onto the bed.

"Well the tables have turned now," Quinn said, "Usually you're the one who comes to cheer me up."

For the last three days, Fex hadn't left his room after finding out what he had done to Blip. Blip had been nothing but nice to him since they joined, he was nice to everyone. The events that day were worse for him compared to Nate and Dennis.

When the others had regained consciousness, they couldn't remember a thing that happened when they were crazed, but Fex remembered everything. Just like when Quinn would turn into a Bloodsucker, Fex had experienced the same thing. When regaining consciousness, they would remember everything that they did and knew they were responsible.

"You need to eat, we will be moving soon and I need you to lead one of the attack teams." Quinn said.

Getting himself out of the bed, Fex sat on the edge and looked at the blood pack. Looking at it, reminded him of when he had killed Blip.

"Have you ever heard of a vampire that is scared of blood?" Fex replied back chuckling, while his hands were also shaking.

"No, but I do know that if you don't consume any blood, then there is a good chance you're going to turn into a bloodsucker again." Quinn replied.

Although it seemed like Quinn was being tough in situations like this, he had to be and it seemed to work. Hearing Quinn say those words, Fex tore into the bag and started to drink from it.

On Quinn's request, Sam had got people on the ship to start donating blood. Sam thought it was strange for they didn't even have a capable doctor that could perform things like a blood transfusion anyway. But Quinn said it was best to prepare for the future.

Sam thought that it might have something to do with having a safe food supply, but the amount of blood requested was too much and Quinn's suggestion was strange as

well. He didn't ask for certain blood types to be stored, instead he asked to gather as many different types of blood from people as possible.

Of course, to the faction members this made sense and they were willing. They would be called in for a routine checkup and the procedure for drawing blood was simple.

'Is there something about vampires that Quinn hasn't told me about?' Sam thought.

By now a decent amount of different blood packs would be stored in the medical bay, which was a bunch of stat points that Quinn would have access to soon.

Before leaving the room, Quinn had one more thing to say to Fex.

"If you want to stop pointless deaths and things like this from happening, then help me win this war." Quinn said.

The plan was to move out tomorrow when Quinn had been given some news by Alex. He was told that the emperor tier equipment he had been working on was finally ready. Entering the forgery, it was quiet this time. Alex had told the others to take a break and it was mostly because he wanted to show Quinn everything he had made.

They too were curious about what Alex had been working on nonstop this whole time, and they were starting to think he wasn't human. Rumours were spreading about how they hardly saw Alex get a wink of sleep while working on these pieces of equipment.

Alex didn't know whether he was being paranoid or not, but because of this he chose to give everyone a break in the forging room until he was done. Any request in the meantime were to be sent to the Parasite shelter where they had their own forgers there as well.

Just like before, Alex had spread out the items on his work bench and had a piece of cloth individually under each one.

"You sure like to put on a show." Quinn said.

Although Alex wasn't as happy as he was last time, or at least he didn't seem to be as he had his hand over the first piece of cloth.

"Is something wrong?" Quinn asked.

"You'll understand when you see it, but I promise you. I tried my best." Alex said.

Instead of revealing the pieces one by one, he had pulled all the pieces of cloth down apart from one at the very end and each piece of equipment was shown for their body parts. Boots, legs, chest and shoulders.

Looking at them, Quinn had two things to comment.

"Aren't they a bit big, and flashy?"

Alex shook his head as he knew this would be Quinn's comments. The emperor tier looked impressive. It was nicely designed and one could see and feel the quality it had been made from. But the pieces were extremely large.

The shoulder protectors were twice as large as regular ones and it was the same nearly with every other piece. Quinn's other comment was that all of the equipment was red in colour.

It was usual for the equipment to take the colour of the beast crystals they had come from. However, Quinn had used many different emperor tier crystals to create this.

"I should have realised this sooner." Alex started to explain, "I've never worked with high tier crystals before, but mixing the different types of crystals was a huge mistake. I was unable to create any type of active skill on any of them. However I did do my best making it the highest quality possible.

"Rather than lacking in any department and wasting the crystal, I made whatever I could best and this was the result. As for the red colour, I did as you asked and added a bit of my blood. When that happened all the pieces of armour started to dye red."

Although he couldn't say much about the colours from the sounds of it, the equipment might be pretty disappointing, and using his inspect skill, Quinn was even more worried.

[Basic emperor tier - chest piece: All stats +1]

[Basic emperor tier - boots: All stats +1]

[Basic emperor tier - shoulder guards: All stats +1]

[Basic emperor tier - leg covers: All stats +1]

'How can this be, it's worse than the king tier equipment, but we used so many emperor tier crystals.'

Seeing the look on Quinn's face greatly pained Alex. He knew he was expecting a lot from this, and he felt like his inexperience had let him down. There were some crystals that he had gathered that were similar and if he knew beforehand maybe he could have made something else.

Before making full judgement, Quinn felt like there had to be more to it, and decided to look into things a little further.

[Chest piece defence: 100]

[Shoulder guards: 30]

[Boots: 20]

[Legs: 30]

[Total defence: 180]

[Active set kill: When wearing all pieces of equipment, defence of armour is able to double for five minutes]

Now Quinn was starting to understand a little more, why the gear was considered to be at the emperor tier level. His king tier chest piece from before had a defensive capability of thirty. While the chest piece alone was set at a hundred. He was sure wearing this full set of armour, he might not be able to be injured by an enraged king tier beast.

However, it did remove the extra stat points he would usually get, so he would be slower and his attacks weaker with this set of armour. Thinking about it, Quinn thought it would be perfect to use his shadow equip. Depending on the opponent he was facing, he could switch between the emperor tier gear, and the regular gear he had until he improved.

After finding this out, he was no longer as disheartened as before.

"Don't worry, you did a good job." Quinn said.

Moving onto the final piece, Alex had a smile on his face for this one, because it was finally time for him to show the emperor tier gauntlets.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 704: Infinite Flame Gauntlets

As the last sheet was pulled off, Quinn's eyes were glued to the gauntlets he could see in front of him. Just like the others, it had a red base of colours from being mixed in with Alex's blood. Running up the gauntlet's sides and within the palm itself, a brighter red radiating energy could be seen coming from it. Running down the arm, several small spikes that looked similar to those that were on a Dalki's back.

"Is it still active?" Quinn asked, wondering why the palm and sides were glowing red.

"I only just recently finished creating these gauntlets. They took the longest out of everything. I think the energy from the crystals is still seeping out from it, but it should start to cool down a bit and return to regular looking gauntlets in a few hours or so." Alex explained.

If it wasn't the case, then Quinn could imagine he would have to wear the gauntlets less often, otherwise others would think he was preparing to attack them all of a sudden.

Nervously, Quinn looked at them, he didn't even want to touch the gauntlets and was afraid to use his inspect skill. After being disappointed a little by the other pieces of equipment, he didn't want to over expect with these.

One thing for sure, they certainly pleased in the looks department, if that was anything to go by, then it would be quite the great outcome.

'Alright let's go'

[Inspect]

[Infinite Flame Gauntlets - Emperor tier]

[Strength + 20]

[Defence +20 ]

'So far so good,' Quinn thought.

The strength was increased by double compared to his last pair of Gauntlets, which was a huge improvement.

[Active skill: Blade condense]

[Using the power of the fire crystals, the active skill allows the user to condense and harness the power to create a four inch spike made of flames. The spike will

appear from the palm of the user's hand. The skill can be activated and deactivated at will as many times as the user wishes.]

Just on the description alone, Quinn was wondering how useful such a skill could be. Essentially, the spike that would come out from his gauntlets, was a hidden Blade. When attacking enemies they would assume he had no weapon, or if his reach wasn't enough he could form a spike made of flames.

He was unsure how strong the condensed flame was, otherwise it would be useless against certain types of armour.

However, what Quinn was more interested in, was how he could improve the active skill like he had done with the previous one. When infusing his Qi into the last pair of gauntlets, he could use his shock skill for longer. As long as he had Qi, the shock would work.

These gauntlets didn't seem to have a time frame on how long or short the skill could be used for. So he was wondering what effect it would have, if he infused his Qi into the gauntlets themselves, before activating the skill.

"Would the blade be stronger, longer or maybe it would even do nothing?"

It sounded a little like a weapon, and Quinn wasn't really good at using weapons. Still, at least it came out from the palm of his hand, allowing him to continue to use his martial arts in the fight. It was probably the best type of weapon he could ask for from an active skill.

The second thing was, Quinn was trying to figure out a way, in his head, to combine this with his shadow powers. Similar to how he had done with the shadow scythe. It didn't seem like he could fuse this with the scythes like he did before, but it also didn't make sense for him to switch out these gauntlets for his last pair like the rest of his equipment.

After all, these gave him more strength stats than the others, so even without an active skill it was overall just better for him to use these.

"What do you think?" Alex asked.

"They're great, I'll need to do some testing with them though, get the hang of them for a bit." Quinn replied.

Touching all pieces of equipment, Quinn placed it into his dimensional space, that way he could shadow equip them on at any time. He wouldn't use the emperor tier armour, unless he was going up against a foe that required it.

"In the future, I will place the crystals that are a similar attribute off to the side." Alex said. "And then when I get a set of emperor tier crystals to create something for you, I will make sure to try my best."

With the emperor tier equipment collected it was finally time. They could start their conquest of the other planets. There had been a few changes in the teams since the latest incident.

They now had more people then before and one less leader compared to before. It was a tough decision to make, but in the end, Wevil from the Parasites was invited to join the Cursed leaders. This was because he had the most trust over his people and he knew them best.

He wouldn't have the same respect and possibly his words wouldn't carry as much weight, but it was important for him to be there in the decision making process.

Wevil was replaced with Blip, to head off with Nate, Dennis and Linda as an attack force. As the people that would be going with them, they were the old Parasites. This solved two problems, as the force that was originally with Blip and Linda, were moved over to Sil and Peter and now they too had a group that was willing to follow them and attack.

Every team had already been given their briefing and were getting ready to move out. The Cursed ship would soon arrive at the Crow's planet and that was when each team was to make their movements.

At the moment, Quinn was looking around trying to look for the others that would be joining him. Kazz, Paul and Fex. When looking for them, it turned out that Kaz was also looking for Quinn. They had bumped down the hallway of the living quarters and for once Paul was nowhere to be seen.

"Quinn, before we head out, due to how long we might not be in contact with the council. I have decided to push forward the in person report," Kazz explained.

Once a month Kazz was required to make an in person report, on top of her weekly reports, the last time this happened, they had two unexpected vampires going after Paul's life.

Quinn couldn't really decline her quest. The only reason why they were allowed out in the first place, was to investigate the disappearance of the vampire spies all around. Truthfully, he hadn't even been trying to investigate about that, and was thankful that Kazz wasn't pestering him about it, perhaps because she knew that everything else going on was more important at the moment.

"That's fine, I hope you can say good things about us." Quinns said, attempting to smile at her. " When you come back we can move out."

Kazz herself was nervous. She hadn't made an in person report ever since what happened to the first family members, and she also had not informed her father of their doings either. Since her weekly reports went directly to the king.

Returning meant she would also have to meet and speak with him. To explain why Quinn wasn't dealt with yet. This too was something she couldn't avoid, and she walked off.

Seeing Kazz walk off back to her room and head to the vampire world, it gave Quinn a thought. He had been so concerned with the human's, he didn't have time to think about them.

"I wonder how both Leo and Erin are doing, and the rest of the tenth Family? I hope they are living a better life than before, and I hope things are less crazy there then they have been here."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 705: The tenth's strength

The tenth castle was busy compared to when Quinn had last left it. It now had vampires walking around the empty hallways and the once empty rooms now were half filled. Thanks to Leo's little display, people were happy with him being the vampire knight and there were no complaints internally within the family.

Most of the tenth, still wished to eventually leave and one day join one of the other more recognised families, however, they no longer felt as hopeless as before. Thanks to Edward and Quinn's idea, it gave them a goal and hope. Their little reward system seemed to work out.

Unlike the other families, who were able to share their abilities with those they saw potential in or were directly linked to the family, the tenth family didn't have that. So they came up with a reward system.

Most of the vampire technology ran on beast crystals and it was what they used as a way of trade between each other. Once in a while, groups from each of the families would go out on expeditions. Before there were many in the tenth family who would simply give the crystals that they earnt, to the other families with hopes of gaining favour.

Now, those that did well on the expeditions and returned with the crystals, would be rewarded with different sets of beast equipment, or gadgets that had been created by Vincent in the past. Some of the items had been duplicated and were made into a special set.

The tenth family soon felt like they were in the middle of a type of collection game. When they had the gauntlets, they wanted to get the shoulder guards and the boots that went with them. With each item they felt stronger. This was because the set of equipment they were giving to people, had an active skill that would activate when all of the items were together in a set. As long as you had all the items, they would gain a boost in power.

Once they had collected the full set, they were able to decide whether or not they wished to move out of the pooling area, and join the main castle. There, it would be traded for a better set of beast gear equipment.

If anyone was to leave the tenth family, they would have to give their equipment back.

Although Quinn had come up with the idea, he wasn't the one that had thought about all the little smaller final details. This was all thanks to Timmy, who had become a close assistant of Edward.

At first there weren't many vampires who even cared for the beast gear equipment. It was embarrassing for vampires to have to rely on such a thing. It was seen as something humans needed to match up to them in terms of strength.

However, from using the beast gear himself, Timmy knew. He knew that once they got the taste and strength of beast gear, it would be hard for them to turn back from it. Which led to the result they had today.

Twenty five vampires had completed the full set of beast gear equipment and had chosen to trade in their set, for a better tier of equipment. They now lived inside the castle and would no longer be able to move between the other families.

Even though they had no leader, things were changing around the place.

Xander and Amy didn't live in the castle. They had moved with their family and although they were happy to join the tenth, Xander still couldn't commit to the tenth family inner circle so soon. It was a loss not just for him, but his family as well. The tenth family still had the reputation of being at the bottom of the barrel and that wouldn't change soon.

However, the two of them did often come to the castle, to talk to Edward, Timmy, and Amy wanted to get to know Erin a bit more. In her mind, a friend of Layla's and Cia's was a friend of hers, even if she seemed to be a little colder than the other two.

The reason they were in the castle today, was because they had been invited by Edward to watch something. One of the storage rooms that wasn't sealed like the one on the top floor. Had been converted into a plain empty room. The room itself was covered in scratch marks, broken pieces of rubble and more.

It was one of the worst rooms they had seen, but the room itself made them wonder, what type of training was going on in here. The castle was built using a mixture of the strange black rock that Vampires had managed to obtain. Although the castle walls were mixed with other materials to mold and shape the structures, it was still very strong and sturdy.

Xander imagined even if he used his full strength to punch the wall, or swung at it with a sword he wouldn't be able to make a scratch.

When the two of them entered, they could see Leo and Erin standing against the wall on one side. In the middle of the room, was Edward and Timmy, who was huffing and panting and had marks over his face. His body looked as if he had been hit a few times.

"I guess Timmy is no longer the cry-baby he was before, huh?" Xander said.

"Yep, it looks like someone's gotten a promotion." Amy replied, with a giggle, looking at Xander. She was happy, although Xander might have been less pleased with the current situation he was in. He was by far in a better place.

When Xander was part of the first family, he had this pressure to achieve something and be something. He needed to get better and learn the first ability not to disappoint all those that had hope for him.

Now with that pressure gone. He was far more calmer and didn't start up useless fights and arguments with people.

"Again!" Edward shouted.

Taking a deep breath, Timmy's body started to vanish and soon a mist appeared, it surrounded Edward. The others could see Edwards' position but had no clue where Timmy was. Then suddenly, Timmy's shape started to form, immediately Edward went forward and punched the human shape in the mist, but it had disappeared. A few seconds later and the mist started to finish and Timmy could be seen now on his knees gasping for air.

"I did it!" Timmy said, managing to pull a smile.

"You have grown a lot," Edward said. "I see our guests have made it."

Both Amy and Xander gave a bow to Edward. He was now their vampire knight but the two of them would have even respected him before this.

"My mist ability is quite strong right, we all know how weak Timmy was, and now look how much he has improved." Edward said. Although these words might have hurt Timmy, Timmy didn't care because he was thankful that Edward even allowed him to learn his ability and be his personal teacher.

"I know you guys are stubborn about learning one of the other families abilities, and you don't want to rely on the beast gear, but there are still plenty to choose from," Edward explained.

Now Xander knew what he was trying to do. He was trying to get Xander to become his pupil. Before the whole mess, Xander was considered the top student, if one wasn't being compared to the direct descendants like Fex.

Edward knew in the future if they could make sure he wouldn't move to another family leader. He would be a big plus to have on their side.

"The ability is certainly one of the best ones. It's not even available at the marketplace, so it is nearly as rare as a leader's abilities." Xander said. "But please, give me some more time."

"Is the mist invincible?" Amy asked. "Does it just require a lot of MC cells?"

Edward started to laugh.

"If you are really interested in how it works, then are free to learn it, for some users who are extremely skilled, it can seem invincible but there is always the main body hiding in the mist somewhere."

While saying this, Edward was peaking over at Leo. Interested in what his powers were, once the two of them had fought a little. Just to test their skills. There were two things that amazed him at the time. The first being that his ability allowed Leo to find out where Edwards' true body was at any moment and time. The second, when being injured by Leo's sword. His wounds took longer to heal. At first he thought it might have something to do with the weapon.

However, Erin, his disciple, was able to do the same thing. It seemed like they had learnt something dangerous that could be used against the vampires. He was in the middle of whether or not to ask Leo, if he could teach the other vampires, but he thought if they had found out about this strange skill they knew, then the two of them would be targeted even more.

Edward turned and looked at Layla and was deeply concerned about her.

Moments before Timmy had gone through his final training session with Edward, Erin had done the same.

'So you taught her in the end, huh?' Edward thought.

Having been turned, Erin was finally able to learn an ability. While browsing the market she was unable to find one that she had liked. After much deliberation she was wondering if she ever would.

Then that day, she had seen the fight between Leo and Edward, she had made up her mind.

"Leo, would you please teach me your ability?" Erin asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 706: Reopening

When Leo had been popped the question from Erin, it had come as quite a surprise for himself. It was the first time that anyone had ever asked to learn his ability before. This ability he had devoted himself to, no one had taught him it, so he was considered a new original.

However, unlike other abilities and powers, his was not one people could just see with the naked eye. There were no flashy explosions and such, and even if he did allow for anyone to learn it, not many would choose to. For the simple reason, if the ability was on its own it would be able to do no damage whatsoever.

It would have been classified as a supportive type ability like super hearing, sonar and so on.

"Do you really think it's the right choice?" Leo asked. "After all, unlike me you are not blind, you can rely on your own eyesight."

"I know, but I have been thinking about it a lot." Erin replied. "You often said that your ability allows you to see more than regular people. I've seen you fight multiple times and the way you use your sword.

"I've realised that when I had an ability in the past, my swordsmanship would suffer, but for me, I need an ability that will further enhance my sword skills. You have been my teacher for the longest time, but there are some things that you can't explain to me, I think maybe the ability can help with that."

Leo thought about it for a while, not for his own sake but for hers. It was true his ability would be able to help one become a better swordsman, but it required hard work and dedication. During this whole time Leo had been with her, he hadn't seen her back down from a challenge once. Perhaps this ability would be perfect for her.

"What's your goal?" Leo asked.

"I wish to get rid of the Dalki, kill all of them that hurt my family and friends." Erin said, clenching her fist.

It was similar to Leo's own goal, he too hated the Dalki for killing his own friends and family. However, he was also in search for his leaders, who he was sure had connections with Pure. He was wondering if having a direct disciple was the right thing to do.

"And I want to get strong enough to the point where I can protect my friends from any dangers, so I don't feel useless anymore."

Saying these words, the memories of her father saying she was too weak rung in her head. Too many times had she felt weak during her time at the school and at Pure, but with Leo and Quinn, she felt like she was progressing and changing.

"Very well, but it will be a tough road for you."

Back in the training room, everyone had gathered around Edward as it looked like he had something important to say.

"Today is the last day that the two of you will have at the castle." Edward said, looking at Timmy and Erin, the two of them were confused by this as they hadn't been informed of anything. "The reason why I personally fought both of you was to see if you were ready or not, and after today's performance, I believe that you are both more than ready.

"The reason I called both Xander and Amy is because the two of them, from today onwards will take you under their wing."

Erin looked at the two of them, although they were strong, she was pretty sure that at the moment she had the ability to beat both of them in a fight. What could she possibly learn from staying with these two? She would much rather continue training with Leo.

"I can see the look on your face, but there are things that Leo can't teach you that these two can." Edward started to explain. "I'm afraid the council has made a decision so it's out of my hands, but starting from tomorrow, the vampire school will be starting up again, and you two have been admitted.

"This is why these two have been called upon, you may have survived school life back on earth, but it's a different story here."

\*\*\*\*\*

Inside the vampire council room, the monthly meeting had been called and all of the leaders had been summoned apart from the Tenth family. This was because they had officially recognised Quinn as the leader and decided they would just inform Edward about the decisions that had been made later on. If they were to vote on anything, they wouldn't count his vote like they had done in the past.

The meeting also had the king present and his two royal knights by his side, which was a rare occurrence, but recently, he hadn't been avoiding meetings.

The first matter at hand was the request to increase the limit of vampires each family held. Currently the limit was set to 1500, but nearly every family was at the maximum limit and some vampires had requested that they would like to have children.

After much discussion they had finally come to a decision.

"It has been decided." Dwight said stepping forward. "Each family is able to have a maximum amount of 1600 people registered. However, the amount that are allowed to live in the castle shall remain at fifty, and those in the inner castle area at a hundred."

Although the amount of vampires had been increased, it essentially meant those allowed to learn abilities or those that would be absolutely loyal to the vampires families, were not. This increase would only increase the general pooling area, which was not what some of the vampires wanted.

But based on their case, they couldn't really argue about the decision either.

"We shall move onto the next subject, it seems like some of you are not happy with the decision to have the direct descendants, join in with the regular vampires at school." Dwight explained.

"It's madness!" Prima shouted across the table. "Those kids shouldn't be mixed in with the others, their powers and skills are worlds apart, and they carry the weight of the future of our leaders."

"The decision was made because of what had happened recently," Sunny replied. "We have experienced our first attack in years and students have died this time. The school is safer for them all, and they need to learn quickly in case of more attacks."

"But then why the need to teach them the same things?" Bryce interrupted.

"Are we sure the students' skills are that far apart?" Muka asked. "Why should we differentiate their teaching? Perhaps there are some students who are even better than the descendants?"

Half of the leaders started to laugh at this comment. The descendants were vampires that had more pure blood from the leaders than any of the others, and this was what made them naturally skilled and stronger than the others.

"Enough!" The king spoke, everyone was quieter and the king started to cough, it seemed to be getting worse with each one, but no one was allowed to show concern for the king, and just waited for it to eventually stop.

"The decision has already been decided. The descendants are not the only vampires that we must protect, and this is the best case to look after them all. If there aren't any more matters to discuss, then I think it's time for me to leave."

After respectfully bowing down, the other leaders left the room, however Dwight had asked for Sunny to stay behind.

"Would you please have a look at the king, things have been getting worse lately." Dwight said. Of course she agreed.

Just before leaving the room, Bryce made note of what was going on. It was clear to him based on his coughing from earlier and then asking Sunny to take a look at his condition.

'It looks like the king's time is almost up.' Bryce said with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 707: How long?

After everyone had left the room, Sunny, the two Royal knights and the king went off and headed for the top floor of the main castle. For the whole journey, the king had been walking on his own and he seemed to be doing just fine. However, the second the doors to his room closed and there was no one else but them in the room, Dwight immediately went to his side, giving his arm to the king.

It looked like he was about to fall over. The two of them went to his bed and gently laid him down. Looking around the room, there seemed to be multiple empty packets, and there was even a strange machine that had been filled with red liquid, it was clear that it was blood.

Getting onto the bed, a needle was injected directly into the king's arm and blood started to enter his body from the machine. The pained and weak look he had on his face started to disappear.

'Has he really already gotten this bad?' Sunny thought. 'He should have gone into Eternal sleep years ago.'

"I know what you are thinking, but maybe this was how Eno felt like when he was king, I wished to see the vampires heading in a clear direction before passing my time. At the moment, things are still difficult."

Sunny went by the king's side and started to do a few checks on him. She closed her eyes and was trying her best to see if there was anything she could do. After a few checks, the king spoke.

"That's enough." The king said. "There is no reason for you to do this, I know my time is already short."

"But your majesty," Dwight interrupted, "If you went into eternal sleep now, then you would no longer be in pain."

"But the pain in my mind for leaving this place, in the state that it is in at the moment, would haunt me forever." The king replied. "Tell me, do you have any news about the Crazed?"

Sunny stood up from the bed, and felt like it was her time to leave. Perhaps it was a discussion that was not meant for her ears, but the king raised his hand informing her to stay.

"There is no point hiding our troubling matters, soon you will all learn and need to deal with them." Said the king.

"We thought that eventually the Crazed would end up starving to death, especially since there should be no source of blood on the planet apart from in the castle." Dwight replied. "We are still keeping an eye on them and they are certainly still

active. They have made no such move, apart from killing beasts here and there, but if they still have the strength to fight, then it means they are getting a supply of blood from somewhere."

The king shook his head in disappointment. If the Crazed were getting the blood from somewhere, it meant there was a traitor who was going against their orders in the castle. If someone was ignoring the orders and working with those that couldn't even be called vampires anymore, it meant they planned to use them somehow.

"There is trouble all around us, Dwight. I feel like not a single thing has been solved during my time and you want me to go to sleep?" Said the king.

"Don't say that." Dwight came forward with a pained look. "If it weren't for you, I'm sure the leaders would have clashed several times already."

Sunny, who had been listening in on the conversation, knew what they meant by this. If the king was to give up his seat, then a new one would need to be elected. In the past there were two types of kings that ruled, one that had favour with the majority of leaders. They were either a charismatic or smart person, who helped advance and better their lives.

Or the second type of king that had been elected in the past, was one that was far stronger than any of the others. For the current king, king Numan, He was a person who excelled in both.

The vampires respected him because he was stronger than any vampire in his current generation, and he also had a good head on him. However, out of the current set of leaders, although Bryce may have been considered the strongest, it wasn't overwhelming enough for him to sway support with everyone.

At the moment, there wasn't a clear idea of who would become king if the current one was to pass. This means the tradition would begin again. A tradition in electing a new king. Sunny shivered thinking about this, the mess it would cause.

When leaving the room, Dwight had followed her out and stopped to speak to her.

"Tell me, how long do you think he has left?" Dwight asked.

"It's hard to tell, but he definitely doesn't have more than a year, and if something occurs where he has to use his powers, then it could turn out to be even less. Every bit of blood aura that leaves his body is leaving it permanently," Sunny explained.

Thinking about what to do, Dwight had originally wanted to go into slumber when the current king did after selecting someone as his replacement. But the way things were looking, if the king was to pass, he would have to remain to see what happened.

Although everything was kept in secrecy and Sunny had told no one, news about the king's condition was spread to the other castles. The leaders had found out, but it wasn't new news to them.

From a single look they could see the king's condition with their own eyes.

Jin, Cindy, Sunny and Muka had called their own meeting together. Sunny wanted to tell them the probability and time frame of the king passing soon, she was deeply worried.

"Why didn't you try calling Lee and David here?" Muka asked.

"I did, but they refused to come. They didn't want to make it an us versus them situation." Sunny replied.

"Well, it certainly seems like it will turn out like that." Jin said. "The problem is, if a new king is to be selected we need to convince Lee of the 13th family and David of the 11th family over to our side. As we agreed, we will all vote for Cindy to be our next leader."

"I think your maths is a little off there." Cindy replied. "Even if we manage to get the two of them onto our side, that is only six seats out of the thirteen. We would need seven, and that is a big if. What happens if they chose to pass up their vote, then the selection process will begin, the tradition."

"I hope it won't come to that." Muka said. "I think we might be able to convince the young boy. Remember he is now a leader as well and his vote will be accepted just like ours. It has to. Unless a certain someone decides to go against the rules."

"Bryce will follow the rules and accept the result." Sunny replied. "Even though his thoughts and ideals don't line up with ours, he is one to follow the rules."

Although the others thought this, Muka disagreed greatly, he was still sure that Bryce had killed his vampire knights that were looking over Fex. He had no evidence, so he decided to leave the matter, but if he broke the rules before, then perhaps this righteous rule-following fool, was all just an act that he had everyone tricked with.

"I think we are getting ahead of ourselves here." Jin added. "The reason I didn't even put the young boy in our calculations to begin with, is because we're not even sure if he will choose to come back, or if he will even make it back."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 708: We are better than you

The next day had arrived in the Tenth castle. Both Xander and Amy had chosen to sleep over as they were all to leave in the morning together and head off to school.

No words were spoken to them as they left, whatever they needed to do, it was better if they found out for themselves, Edward and Leo thought. If they really needed their help, they would know where to come find them.

A few moments after the kids had left for school, Edward suggested it was best for the two of them to start performing their leader duties. This whole time, Leo had pretty much stayed in the castle. He knew those that had joined the inner circle and even fought with them a couple of times, but the same couldn't be said about the rest of the family.

Edward wanted the Tenth family to grow a strong connection, like the one that it had in the past and not the fractured connection they have today. So he wanted Leo to get more acquainted with them.

'Is this really the right thing to do?' Leo thought to himself. 'One day I will leave you guys as well.'

He was worried, worried that something might happen here similar to the past. The vampires were strong, but so were his close friends back at the dojo. It seemed a little strange, the vampires acted as if there was no threat to them.

Judging by what he had seen so far, the vampires should have been just as worried about the Dalki as the humans were. Judging by how little vampires there were, if the two sides were to clash at this moment, he would put his money on the Dalki winning.

He was making this judgement without having seen the royal family or the king act though, which could sway things in their favour.

Edward had given Leo a change of armour, it was the set that those in the castle wore.

He had his own armour, but the idea behind Leo walking out in this one, was simply promotion to the other family members. They had already seen his power and some in the Tenth now looked up to him. Edward was hoping if they saw him wearing something they could actually get, they would be excited to work harder.

Coming out from the front of the castle, Leo was in a full suit of silver and blue beast gear.

"You look great!" Edward said, wearing the same gear himself.

Just as the two of them were leaving the castle, there was a surprising visit, someone standing there at their front gate.

"Now what is a beauty like you doing here?" Edward asked.

Walking forward, her long silver hair swayed and seemed to shine even in the darkness of the planet.

"I came to speak to you." Silver said, walking towards Leo. "I'm sure Edward has already told you this, but you and those you care about need to be careful. The new Tenth family is an unknown to the other families, and the unknown scares people."

"With things moving forward the way they are, I'm sure there will be many that will try to influence you, trick you or out right force you into doing their bidding."

Leo smiled.

"You are a caring type, I thought the only person you cared about was your brother. Even though he is not here, you have come down here to warn us."

Hearing this, Silver stepped back as she tried to think of another reason as to why she had come down here.

"I was just in the ar-"

"Worry not." Leo replied. "We, everyone, have expected this, especially with the disruption we caused. But I assure you, each of us in the Tenth family has a goal, and it will be hard to kill any of us until our goals are achieved."

Quickly, Silver pulled her hand and performed a blood slash, stepping her foot forward and trying to fire one out as fast as she could. Before she knew it, Leo had sliced the blood slash and placed his sword back in its sheath.

"Looks like I had nothing to worry about." Silver said walking off.

Walking to school, Timmy was shaking with excitement and Amy and Xander were chatting away. Meanwhile, Erin remained mostly silent the whole time.

"I can't wait, everyone is going to be so surprised when they see my new powers!" Timmy said excitedly. "You really should have taken Edward's offer Xander, maybe now I can even beat you!"

"Hey," Xander snapped back, "Don't get too cocky now, remember I was, and still am the best student, even with no ability."

Truthfully, Amy was a little worried that they might be subjected to what the Tenth family were subjected to before. Now both Xander and Amy were part of the Tenth family, it could prove troublesome compared to the past.

Even in this short amount of time, those that she used to call her friends at school hadn't come to visit her once, not like they used to. They hadn't hung out, gone to the centre together or anything.

The only reason she could think of, was it was because of her current family situation.

"Those fake girls, I don't need them. They can flip flop all over the place!" Amy shouted in anger.

However, she did feel lonely without them and there wasn't even Layla here to talk to. Turning to look at Erin, she could see that she had her eyes closed. She had not only been quiet the whole way but had been walking the whole time with her eyes closed.

'Impressive.'

The path they took wasn't a straight one, and there were many things that would get in one's way. If a person tried to walk with their eyes closed, their imagination often started to make them fear what was in front of them, but Erin was walking just fine.

When they finally reached the school, which was located in a different area from the main vampire settlement, they could see everyone was already making their way inside the gates, but once they got past the gate, they noticed that there was quite the audience. Instead of heading straight to their classes, the students were fascinated by something outside.

"What's going on?" Amy said out loud.

Stood on the open field, were around thirty of the direct descendants. Students who had already learnt the abilities of their families, lived in the castle and had the chance of becoming a family leader themselves.

It was a mixture of boys and girls, and even Rokene was stood there nervously. He had been forced to comply by the others.

"What are they doing here?" One of the students asked.

"Aren't they supposed to have their own special training, don't tell me they're going to be joining us?"

The students were beyond shocked, none of them had been informed of this change. The reason for their worries was because some of them already worked under these kids outside of the school, and they had beyond a superiority complex.

This was something that many of the leaders encouraged for some reason. They would fill their heads and tell them that they were born to be a leader and were better than the others.

Standing in the centre, there was a handsome looking boy who had his hair gelled back. His hair was blonde in colour with a black streak running down the middle.

Xander noticed him straight away and thought he would be up to this.

'One of the first family descendants, Nicu."

Nicu was younger than most there and he had an older brother. That was until he was killed during the expedition trip. He was killed by the new Tenth leader, yet nothing was done about it.

This had caused him to focus his anger towards those in the Tenth more than anyone, but in some ways the event helped him. Because of his brother's death, he was allowed to attend school earlier than expected, but then was disappointed once again after learning he had to do so with everyone else.

So he had decided to call this gathering, a gathering to make the others aware of their positions.

"You see us standing here in front of you, you all are staring at us like we are different." Nicu said. "Well, that's because we are different. Although we are attending school with you, we hold a higher position than you, we hold more importance to the vampire's future than you, and that is why we expect to be treated better than you."

The students started to mumble and talk to each other. They didn't like where this was going. School was a break from their family duties and now it looked like they would have to keep it up here as well.

"Are you really that special?" A voice said.

"Who said that?" Nicu asked, annoyed he was interrupted in the middle of his speech. There were many mumbling about what was happening but he chose to ignore them, however this was said loud and clear and was directed at him.

When the crowd cleared the way to reveal who had spoken those words, they were all staring at a girl they didn't recognise.

"It was me, and I said, are you really that much better than us?" Erin repeated.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 709: I'm differen

Hearing the mysterious woman speak, they were wondering just what student would be so brave to say these words. Perhaps behind ones back, but not right in their face.

Although, a lot of students there had the same thoughts. They carried the same resentment deep down against the direct descendants. Of course, not all descendants were like this. But in every group there would be those that led the way. Pushing others to have similar thoughts to their own, influencing them. This had caused a fraction between the regular vampires and those that live in the castles.

Vampires were meant to be able to speak up and tell their leaders the concerns they had. The family leaders were there not only to protect them, but to better their lives, but lately, the young vampires had been treating them more like slaves, rather than as fellow people they were responsible for. Yet, not a single one of them would dare complain for fear.

Which was why someone speaking up, in front of them all had come at such a surprise to everyone. When they turned to look at her, they did not recognise her but there were many vampires that chose to just live with their families and would only be seen at a later time.

The reason they did not recognise Erin as one of the humans that had come to attack a short time ago, was because her facial features and hair colour had changed since the last time they had seen her. Before she was a blonde haired woman, but now her hair was black.

"I know your type." Erin said. She continued and ignored the death stares Nicu was giving back to her.

"My type?" Nicu replied. "You mean us here, those that have a chance at being a leader, those that protect you."

"A leader? All I see is a child who has let everything go to his head. I've seen a real leader before." She thought back to her father who had protected the planet at the risk of his own life. These types of leaders, when trouble came, were the first to run away. "Leaders are meant to gain the respect of their people. They chose to follow them, not force them. Even if you have the title of leader, you will never be one."

By now, all those that were around Erin had moved off to the side. They did not want to be associated with her at all, and the only ones that were still standing next to her, were the same group that had arrived with her.

"Maybe we should calm down a little, huh Erin, it is the first day and all?" Amy said, nervoley.

She knew that they would probably be targeted by a few people here and there but she was hoping that Xander's past deeds and strength would deter most of those away. She never thought the descendants would be attending the same school. Even Xander with his skill stood no chance. Now with Erin winding up the descendants, there would be the centre of attention and a bigger target.

However, she didn't know Erin's strength either. She had never seen her directly fight before and was wondering where this strange confidence was coming from.

Nicu was thinking about what to say, when he noticed the people standing by the annoying girls side. He was hoping to prove her wrong and shut up this wench, but seeing a certain someone gave him an idea. His angry frown had turned into a smile.

"Now I see why you were acting up." Nicu said. "It's because Xander is there standing behind you, right? I had heard that he was once the most promising student of the school and had even been invited to join the first family. I had heard you had moved to the tenth family. Have you been made to just be a simple babysitter? It would be best if you keep those girls of yours mouths shut!"

Those comments had now even infuriated Amy as well.

"What did you say you snot nosed brat!" Amy shouted back. "We don't need his permission to speak, we can speak for ourselves. Look at you, Erin was right, you are a child. Have you stopped sucking on your mothers breast yet?!"

Worried that maybe Eirn had gone too far, Xander didn't think for a second that the real person he needed to keep under control, was Amy.

The other decedents standing behind Nicu started to chuckle at the comments and this only infuriated him more.

"Let's see who gets the last laugh." Nicu said.

"Stand back." Erin said.

Before anyone, Erin knew what was about to happen, she could tell with her ability, the change in his aura had gotten aggressive and it was moving out before him. The next second he was already on the move with his hand held out.

"Amy!" Xander shouted, who was closest to her. He pulled her back out of the way, and went to hit Nicu, but in compassion to Nicu's speed, it looked like Xander's fist was moving in slow motion.

Nicu ducked, and did a sweeping kick knocking Xander off his feet. Before Xander could try anything else, with an aggressive stomp he had not only pinned down Xander's arm, but had crushed it as well.

"Ha, ha!" Nicu laughed widely. You see this, this is the difference between us decedents and the rest of you. Even the strongest of you is not a match for us."

"Get off him," Erin said, walking towards the two with her hand on the hilt of her blade. She had switched to a katana like blade that matched what Leo would use, but on her back, she also still carried a long sword.

"I just defeated your leader, what do you think you can do?" Nicu asked.

Not saying anything else, when Erin was in striking distance, in one smooth motion she took out her sword ready to strike at Nicu.

A loud clang was heard stopping her blade.

'How did he block it?' Erin thought.

When she looked at who had blocked her attack, it wasn't Nicu.

"What is going on here, and on the first day?" Silver said.

"It's Vampire knight Silver." The students gasped and spoke.

"Is she going to be teaching at the school again?"

"She must be, that's probably why she's here right?"

The blade had been stopped by Silver's hardened hand, and it looked like Silver had used the blood hardening skill as her fingertips were incased in blood.

"Everyone. Head to your classes immediately. I will not have this on the first day." Silver commanded and everyone started to follow.

Silver made sure that the direct descendants entered the school a while before she allowed Erin and her group to move.

Lifting her hand up, she felt a slight stinging pain and she could see the palm of her hand had been cut. 'That's your student Leo, I can see she is a strong one. But a dangerous one as well. If I hadn't stopped that attack just now, then Nicu's head would have been rolling on the floor.'

Heading to the school, Erin continued to close her eyes and was acting as if the incident that had just happened, never did in the first place. She wanted to use every opportunity she had possible to train her new ability.

She wasn't like Leo, and she would need to try to increase her level somehow.

'I was able to see his aura quite clearly. But it seemed like that was because he was quite the wild one, and had a lot of energy.'

However, during that small little scuffle she noticed something else as well. She had felt something different when her aggression had risen towards Nicu. What shocked her more than anything was the Aura's she had seen.

Everyone around them, weak or strong had the same colour aura. There were differences in the sub classes like Amy and so on but they were similar. There was one person with a completely different aura though, and that was herself.

'Quinn did you lie to me, what am I?' Erin thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 710: Useless Beast gear

Quinn had told Erin that she was different compared to the others. Curious about what Quinn actually meant by this, she had asked Amy for information on the different types of vampires.

Since she never attended school and this was the first time learning about them, she didn't know much apart from what her friends around her had turned into. From Amy, she had learnt about the subclasses.

However, this was what she had found strange, vampires and sub classes had the same purple aura. The only difference was the shape it would take. Vampires flickered like a type of flame.

The undead's aura was more like a circle, and so on for the other subclasses, but hers was different. It wasn't a different shape, in fact it was similar to a vampires, but hers was a different colour altogether. Which made her question, was Quinn keeping something from her?

'What exactly is a Dhampir, maybe I can find out more details about it in school.'

The first day of school started, and Erin and her group were all placed in the same class. They could only assume that this was thanks to Edwards doing so; he would have been able to give a simple reason as to why it was important to have those look after the new members of the Tenth family.

There were a few descendants in their class, but thankfully it didn't seem like Nicu, who held the biggest grudge against their group, was in it. Another bit of bad news was their teacher wasn't Silver either, and was another woman who went by the name of Gina. She was strict with her lesson, but in the teacher way rather than in the cold way Silver would be.

As the lessons went on through the day there was an apparent gap that people started to notice. The descendants were not only stronger but their knowledge was better as well. The subjects that were being taught to the rest of the class they already had knowledge about.

It got to the point where Gina would no longer ask them questions. However, when this happened, they started to cause disturbances in the class out of boredom which caused her to snap.

"Would you guys at the back please shut up!" Gina shouted. "I understand that you may already understand today's lesson but the others do not, can you really be so selfish?"

The descendants stopped talking, and one boy who was at the front of the group who had his fringe covering one eye looked at her.

"Aren't you part of the third Toppy family, Miss Gina? If I recall, you have been buttering up my mother for quite a while trying to get into the inner castle. It would be a shame if that all suddenly fell down the drain, wouldn't it?"

Gina's face sunk and she gulped, soon going back to her lesson and ignoring the chatter in the back.

"This is a mess, what were they thinking?" Amy whispered.

"This is why the descendants were taught by only vampire knights in the past." Xander replied. "They have too much influence over the regular vampires, regardless of age."

Moving on from the theory lessons, the next step was to go onto the practical lessons. Here the other classes had joined together out on the field. Holographic dummies were placed in different areas at all different distances, and the goal was to hit the dummies using the blood swipe.

It was a lesson of exercising control, and seeing how far each person could throw out their blood swipe. When the classes were seen outside, there was a certain group in particular being mocked, and this time it wasn't just by the descendants but the others as well.

"I can't believe you guys can wear that outside?" One of them said.

"I would rather kill myself than rely on something like that."

Some of the taunts were even thrown at Timmy and Erin who were both wearing the same beast gear. The ones that were being mocked were those in the Tenth family who wore beast gear.

"Can that beast gear even help you?" They continued to say.

The practical lesson had started and as expected, the descendants were outdoing all of the regular vampires, hitting targets that were nearly twice as far. The targets were set up in five rows and so far the descendants were hitting mostly the third row, while the regular vampires were hitting the first.

Seeing this, even the teachers apart from Silver thought they would at best be able to hit the fourth row. The targets set behind the third row was more for encouragement, and to show them that they still had training to do.

When Xander's name was called, he had a fierce look in his eyes. He felt a little down ever since he had been beaten by Nicu, someone who was even younger than he was.

'Can hard work really not make up for talent?' He started to question himself. Preparing and getting in a distance, he decided he wanted to break through those barriers, surpassing all those that thought he couldn't make it.

The blood swipe came out, larger than most and it was moving across the ground at a great pace. Those that thought nothing of him were now paying attention.

"Xander whoo!" Amy shouted.

It smashed through the first target, going through the second row and it didn't look like it was going to slow down. Then it had reached the third row.

"That's as good as the descendants!" The other students said, now cheering for him, regardless of what family he was a part of.

Finally, it looked like it was about to reach the fourth row but halfway through the red aura had disappeared.

Still, everyone was amazed that a regular vampire had the strength to match the descendants.

"I guess you weren't the best student for no reason." Amy said, giving him a high five on his way back.

"Pathetic." Nicu said. "You guys let a regular vampire get the same score as you. You guys don't deserve to be leaders."

Nicu was a person who believed the leader should be the strongest. It was the vampire way of being strong to be respected. When he reached the platform, he appeared to put in great effort and threw out his own blood swipe. With so much power he had even fallen to the floor.

But it didn't matter, for when he lifted his head up again, he could see that he had destroyed the fourth target. Getting the highest score out of everyone.

"This is the difference, you can never catch up to us." Nicu said.

More students were called up and not a single one was able to beat Nicu's score, finally it was Erin's turn. No one expected much from her, to them it was just someone who had the will to go against the decedents for some reason.

Although they were not cheering her on publicly, somewhere deep down, they were hoping that Erin would display something impressive.

"Look at all that pathetic beast gear!" Nicu shouted, making it clear Erin had heard.

"Am I not allowed to use beast gear?" Erin replied back. "I thought that the test was to get us ready for the real world, to see what it was like if we needed to battle at

full strength. If outside I will be using beast gear, then here I shall use beast gear as well."

The others still felt embarrassed for Erin, it felt strange someone talking so positively about beast gear. To them, it was like a kid claiming he rode a bike better with training wheels, so why not keep them on all the time?

Concentrating, Erin put her Qi, and also focused her blood. She had learnt a lot from Leo, and this was one of the first things. Drawing out her blade as fast as she could, from the blade rather than her finger tips, a blood swipe was released.

It came out faster than any of the others, and it looked like there were no signs of it slowing down. It had smashed through the first, second, third, fourth, and finally the fifth.

"This is the power of beast gear, if anyone has a problem with the Tenth family using beast gear, then please. I will be happy to duel you." She strutted off, and didn't even look in the direction of the decedents.

Seeing what she had just done, Nicu knew this girl was going to be trouble, and something seriously needed to be done.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 711: The tenth Vampire knights

Edward and Leo's relationship was a little complicated to say the least. The two of them respected each other, but Leo was not much of a speaker. Never initiating the conversation. The problem was that the two of them were in charge of not only the castle, but the whole of the tenth family as well.

Since Edward had more experiences and knew the duties of those in the castle, Edward was the one that had to try and force communication with Leo. It wasn't that Leo wasn't willing, but Edward knew that Leo was someone who was stronger than himself. In the vampire world, people respected power, and it felt strange to be ordering or commanding a vampire that had more power than him.

Wanting them to get a closer connection with the tenth family, he decided it was best if they did the same task that Quinn had been given. Delivering the supply of blood to those that lived in the inner castle area. There were only around fifty or so people so it wouldn't take too long.

'Twenty five members in the castle, fifty in the inner castle area. It certainly is a big improvement to when nobody wanted to join us.' Edward thought with a smile.

There were those in the castle that usually did this job, but this was the personal touch he wanted the new vampire knights to do.

Leaving from the castle, the two of them walked with the automatic storage crate, moving along behind them. Seeing the blood packs inside, a thought came into Edward's mind.

"According to Quinn, you haven't been a vampire for long." Edward said. "Yet, I have never seen you consume blood. At least not in front of everyone."

"I have done well in controlling the blood lust." Leo replied. "At first, I thought the hunger would make me weaker, however I soon found that it actually made my attacks stronger. Although the actions in the mind wilder for some."

It was true, the more hungry a vampire was, their abilities got weaker, but their strength, speed and general stats improved. The only other thing that was affected, was more of their regenerative abilities.

"You should be careful," Said Edward. "Go too far and you can turn into one of those Crazed beasts. Although as long as you have turned into one through lack of blood, and not addiction, you should be fine."

What Edward was mentioning was the vampire's other form, the form of a bloodsucker.

"It is fine, I no longer have trouble with controlling my hunger. I can now go a month without requiring any need of blood."

"What?" Edward replied stunned. He knew that vampires were able to wean off the blood addiction, but to be able to get it so one could last without blood took many years. "How?"

For a second Leo hesitated before giving his reply.

"It's the Qi. The special technique I practice. I was able to utilise it, to control certain actions in the mind and body."

Once again, Leo had mentioned the use of Qi, and it seemed to do a lot more than just stop vampires from healing when they were hurt.

"You are truly a great person. After learning all the great things Qi can do, I have to ask, Would you be willing to teach it to the vampires in the tenth? We could make it so only those in the castle are able to learn it."

Before, Edward thought that it might be rude to ask Leo such a thing. If he wished to teach people then that was his choice, but after learning about all the wonders of Qi, he couldn't pass this opportunity.

He even thought it could be something they taught those loyal to the family, similar to how the others used abilities, they could teach those with Qi.

When hearing this question, Leo was about to decline. He had always been taught by his master to not share something like this to the world. However, there were already those who knew how to use Qi, such as those that worked for Pure.

Maybe it wouldn't be such a bad thing to teach more people this skill. But there was one thing that was worrying for him if he did. When people got a new power, they did dangerous things and he would be the one responsible for having taught them it.

"I'll think about it," Leo said. "But my answer for now would be this. Can we really trust that everyone accepts the current tenth family the way it is. If we taught them this power, we have to be sure that it couldn't be used against us."

Leo was right, Edward had let his ambitions of bringing the tenth family up to its former glory get to him. There was a chance that this could do more harm than good, especially with those that would be watching him.

However the good news was it wasn't a no.

They had gone by a few houses and delivered the blood packs with quite ease, when they saw Leo at the door, they were quite starstruck. They would act nervous, smiling and some had even made some strange request.

For one, a middle aged man answered the door, and immediately his eyes started to glow seeing Leo.

"Leo, the tenth vampire knight. I can't believe you're at my door. Honey look who's here!" The man shouted.

When his wife came to the door, a little scream came out, as she went forward. This was not the type of reaction that Edward was expecting. It seemed his last demonstration had made him far more popular than he imagined.

"I have a huge favour to ask, and I understand if you say no. But you were the whole reason why I decided to stay in the tenth family. I'm also only one more item away from the set."

Leo smiled at the men, it was nice to see people energetic about things, and they appeared to be more welcoming than those at the military.

"If I can complete the request without any trouble to others and with little difficulty sure." Leo replied.

"Can you please cut off one of my limbs. Don't worry I've saved up some blood so I can regenerate. Even just a finger would do."

Edward slapped his head in frustration. It was a two way street, not only did the people need to respect Leo, but they needed to convince Leo they were worth teaching and he was afraid these types of silly actions would dampen the mood.

However, Leo pulled out his sword.

"It should be simple enough to do."

'I'm surrounded by crazy people.' Edward thought.

Going from house to house, they were about halfway done, and Edward was greatly pleased with the result. He should have thought sooner that those that were in the inner circle already had chosen to stay in the tenth family.

So they respected the knights more than most and already had loyalty. Next time they would need to go to the general tenth people to see if they had the same reaction.

Eventually they had knocked on one of the house's doors and there was no reply.

"Perhaps they are out," Edward said. "We will try to get them on the way back."

It was a little strange as the delivery was at the same time every week. So the vampires would usually stay in to get their delivery.

Using his ability. Leo sensed something inside the house.

"Something wrong." Leo said.

Immediately, he grabbed his blade, and sliced the door open, entering without saying anything else.

Edward seeing him act this serious knew something was up and followed Coley behind. When they finally entered the living room, they could see blood all over and on the floor. Four people died. Two older vampires and two middle-aged vampires.

"Four vampires dead, and on our own family grounds. Who would even be strong enough to do such a thing?" Edward said.

"Whatever it was, part of their aura has been left behind, there close."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 712: An attack on the tenth castle

The two of them stood there for a while investigating the scene around them. It would take a lot to kill any vampire, even a single one, but these were ones that had already been introduced into the inner castle. They showed promise and were stronger than an average vampire.

From looking around, the two of them had even gathered they had collected four out of five of the full set of equipment.

"It looks like they have been killed by a strange beast." Edward said, investigating the wounds. There were large slashes around their necks and parts of their bodies as if they were done by claws.

"It wasn't a beast. I can tell by the aura that was left behind." Leo replied. "This was the work of another vampire."

Edward also thought this, but he was too afraid to say it aloud for fear it would make it true. If it was a beast, it would have had to have gotten past all the vampires in the city, the guards and barriers. The only explanation was it was a vampire.

'An internal dispute perhaps?' This was wishful thinking on Edwards behalf. If there were any suspects for an internal dispute they were looking at them on the floor now.

Following the trail of aura, Leo could see that it led outside through a broken window in the back. Judging by the fact he could still see some of it, it was clear that it happened not too long ago.

Following the aura, Leo jumped out of the window and Edward followed closely behind.

"Wait, what are you going to do?" Edward asked.

"To find the person who killed them, there is a killer on the loose and they could kill more." Leo replied.

"I'm afraid this may be a trap." Edward tried to explain. "Remember what Silver said, there are many against us, but I thought that they wouldn't outright attack us. At least not like this. If they did, the king wouldn't forgive them. They would also lose favour with others."

"Right now I can't understand the reason for their actions, which is why I think we should wait."

Leo thought about it for a while. When looking after his own shelter he had founded, he was used to dealing with problems like these and his natural instincts

kicked in. The problem was, this was not a city he was used to, nor were these normal people.

If he wanted to live and help out Quinn in the current vampire political mess, it would be best he did as Edward said. He was the one with the experience and patience.

Agreeing, they decided to call one of the vampires from the inner castle to guard the house, not allowing anyone else inside. They also called another one to continue delivering the rest of the blood.

They now had more important things to figure out. While heading back, Edward was trying to wrap his head around things.

'Is it really one of the vampire families acting out? There wouldn't be many who would go against the king's order. They might have disliked Quinn being the leader, but he isn't even here. What's the point of targeting his people?'

All of these questions had greatly confused Edward. On their journey back, he could see that Leo had his hand around the hilt of his blade. It was now gripped tighter than before as they got closer to the castle.

"It looks like we might not be able to avoid a confrontation after all." Leo said.  
"The aura from the house leads back to here."

Edward had called those in the castle just moments ago, and they had reported no such disturbances. Two vampires had even left the castle and had said nothing to them.

But Leo had no reason to lie, and his power was mysterious. Trusting him, and unsure whether or not those in the castle were in trouble, they decided to proceed cautiously.

"We have to be careful, the vampires are not fools. They know both mine and your strength. There won't be many to take us on. If anyone has been mobilised, it will need to be another knight like ourselves." Edward said. This was why he felt like it wasn't one of the families.

When they finally entered, nothing seemed to be out of the ordinary. However, Leo knew they were in the right place. They were in the reception area, where the torches and light crystals shined brightly.

The doors at the top of the side stairs opened, and a vampire was there to greet them.

"I welcome your ret-"

Before he could finish his sentence, the man stopped speaking, a tingling feeling was felt around his neck. He raised his hand, but soon a thud was heard as his head hit the floor. For a brief second, Edward had seen the culprit.

It's large fangs were sticking out, it had no hair, and only had clothes on from the waist down. Its muscular dehydrated body was on full display, with its dark black eyes piercing against the light room.

"A crazed blood sucker!" Edward said. "What's it doing here?"

At that moment, the torches and light crystals were all smashed, and the room went into complete darkness. For both Leo and Edward it didn't change much, but the small amount of light was an advantage for the bloodsucker.

"Be careful." Leo said. "There's more than one."

Through his vision, he could see in the reception area there were six crazed bloodsuckers all around them and the one on top of the stairs.

'These have to be addicted blood suckers, otherwise how could they have so much coordination?' Edward thought.

Vampires who had gotten too addicted to blood forced their body to change forever while keeping most of their intelligence. In a way, these were far more dangerous than regular blood suckers.

Three on one side immediately went towards Edward and he used his ability to mist up. It was the only advantage he had. Then when they were busy trying to find him, he managed to get a hit in. Shoving his whole hand through one of the Blood sucker's chest, killing it in the process.

He planned to change back into the mist as soon as possible, but before he even could, another blood sucker had hit him with his amazing speed and strength. When hit, the mist would disperse and soon they were quickly following him.

However, it was not for long. A blood slash was created, and it had cleanly cut both of them at their ankles. They fell to the ground and only had stubs to move.

Turning around, they could see Leo looking down at them. With a stab of his sword, he pierced each of them right through the heart, killing them both.

"Watch out, there's more of those things!" Edward shouted. He knew based on the sound and the initial ones that had come after him there were more, but when the room was filled with silence, he realised something. There was only the sound of them two breathing in the room.

When he looked around he could see that all of the other Bloodsuckers had been defeated. Slashed in some way with the blade.

"It looks like someone was after our lives after all." Leo said. "What exactly are these?"

The blood suckers were faster and stronger than regular vampires. Edward had his ability and experience he could use against them, but facing more than one of them would prove troublesome to him. Yet, somehow Leo had been able to deal with them all.

'Is it because of their lower health?'

Another downside to the blood suckers was that they didn't have much health. If one was to damage them, they would die quite easily. So as long as Leo could keep up with their moves, then they were no trouble for him.

"I'm worried." Leo said. "If these monsters came after us, then it means they might send some more after them."

Leo worried for Erin and the others.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 713: Protect or attack

The kids at the school slept on campus and were each given their own rooms. One thing that was different between the regular vampires and the decedents, was that they were both given separate areas.

This was actually due to Silver acting behind the scenes. It had only been a day, but it was enough for her to see the mistreatment that was going on. She was sure that there would only be bigger problems if they were allowed to mix at this moment.

It wasn't a bad idea, getting the two groups to work and act together, but going all in like this was risky.

A meeting had been called in the evening and the teachers were trying to come up with a way to solve this problem. Twelve of them were present at the table including Silver.

"The problem is we can't even punish them," Gina said. "They hold a higher position than us and threaten us."

"If they do that I can always report it to their leaders." Silver replied. "They will be punished for abusing their powers."

"Are you really that naive, Silver?" Garath said. He was a rough looking man who wore basic thin clothing and had spiky hair that made his head look twice as big. "Maybe because you spent most of your time in the castle you don't know what it's like. The descendants act this way because they know they will get away with it."

"What's worse is at some point, they probably will become our leaders, and then what? They hold a grudge against us because of something petty we have done in the past. Not all of the families are the same way and think like you."

'When did the vampires become like this?' Silver thought. When she grew up, there didn't seem to be this level of discrimination between groups. Sure there were disagreements but generally the vampires lived quiet, peaceful lives.

Back then it seemed like they didn't have any worries. Now it seemed like due to the recent attacks from Earth and other external threats, that the vampires that saw humans as the types to be enslaved, were starting to come out and convince others.

"The descendants need to learn more about responsibility and what it's like to be a leader." Silver said. "They are still kids and this is the perfect time to influence them to be better. Maybe we can't change the current vampire mindsets but we can teach the future.

"We also need to split them apart. Otherwise they will just create an echo chamber of their current values, supporting their thoughts more and taking them down the wrong way. Here is what I suggest..."

Back in the rooms, Erin was sharing with another vampire. It was one she did not know, but it was one from the Tenth family, as recognised by a single piece of beast gear she wore on her chest.

Xander and Timmy were in a room together, while Amy was sent to the subclass campus.

The two girls didn't talk, and the other girl was a little nervous, for Erin hadn't said a word and was just silent sitting on her bed cross legged with her eyes closed. Both of her weapons were laid out on the bed in front of her.

It felt like if she made a noise she would break her concentration.

What Erin was doing right now was two things at once. She was trying to improve on Leo's ability, for currently she could be compared to someone who was at level four, and the second thing, was focusing on improving her Qi control.

She now realised one of the things that made Leo so strong compared to other humans. With his ability, she was able to control the Qi to a greater level. She could fine tune and move it to certain areas. Before she could only harden or improve a certain part of her body.

But with the ability, she could also now just reinforce her skin, making it stronger and allowing her to move the Qi into different areas. She couldn't imagine anyone being able to get to this level of control without Leo's ability.

This was why he was special, but now, she had a chance to get to his level as well. Not only that, she wanted to surpass him. Even Leo wasn't able to save his friends with his power.

While concentrating, she looked at the auras all around, and that's when she spotted something. Opening her eyes, she grabbed one of the blades in front of her.

"I'm sorry!" The other girl screamed. "I just wanted to watch some Poutube videos!" She shouted flinching and covering her face, worried that she would get hit.

As soon as the other girl started making noises, the aura that she could sense felt like it was disappearing. Closing her eyes again, she tried to see if she could find it, however, it was no longer just outside the dorms.

Her ability also wasn't good enough to detect a trail left. There was one thing she was sure of though, the aura belonged to a vampire. Yet, if it had nothing to hide, it wouldn't have tried to run away the second she heard the girl scream.

The next day when school started, each of the classes were informed that they would be taking part in a group bonding session together. The descendants, the subclasses, everyone. All the classes were taken outside, while Silver explained the rules.

"So for today's session we will be playing a modified version of capture the flag. For this game we will be entering the forest." Silver explained. "Each team will consist of a group of five, and in that group of five, there can only be one decedent. Every team must have a descendent."

This caused murmuring amongst the other students and even complaints, which were mostly from the decedent's themselves.

"Why do we have to form a team with them, they will only slow us down." Nicu said.

"What would be the point of having the decedents go up against the regular vampires when there is an obvious power gap? Would it not be boring, and you would learn nothing." Silver replied.

"Every person on the team will have this." Silver pulled out a pole, which had a coloured flag on the top. "All apart from the decedent that is. The goal is to get the most points while also protecting your own. Getting another team's flag earns you one point, while losing your own flag will make you lose two points.

"The second a flag has been taken off the pole, it will be reflected in our school system. This is to avoid others from cheating. Now please form your teams of five, you have ten minutes to do so."

There were multiple reasons why Silver had suggested this game. One of them being she wanted the descendants, who would possibly be future family leaders, to get used to protecting those on their side. Rather than getting other peoples flags, it was more important for them to protect their own.

Another reason was to develop teamwork. The descendants probably never cared for the other vampires' abilities or strengths, and now they would need to work together, if they didn't want to lose.

"For the decedents, I will be reporting your results to your family, so don't disappoint." Silver said, giving them the last bit of encouragement.

It didn't take long for Erin to form a group with those she knew. Timmy, Xander and Amy. The four of them thought it wouldn't have been so hard to find a fifth person due to Xander's strength.

However, they weren't expecting that the fifth person would have to be an decedent. Xander had approached a few but they all declined, the main reason being they knew that their group would be a target of a certain someone.

"I'm sorry." Erin said. "I didn't know my actions before would put us in this predicament."

"Don't worry about it!" Amy chuckled. "If we don't find anyone they'll just give us someone. I hope we just don't get Nicu."

At that moment, a small looking vampire had approached them.

"Hey, you guys are from the Tenth family, right?" The boy asked.

"If so, is it okay if I join your team? The name's Rokene." After everything Quinn did to help him in the past and what Quinn had shown him, how actions spoke more than words, he decided he wanted to help those in his family.

He couldn't get a transfer due to him being a direct descent, if he could he would have, but this was the least he could do.

"Huh, a loser of the decedent's joining the loser family. As expected." Nicu said. This little game was going to be a great way for him to hurt some people without having to suffer the consequences for it.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 714: Capture the flag

Looking at the little vampire that had approached them, Xander was wondering who he was. Most of the descendants were quite well known, especially since there were so few of them, but he had never seen this one before.

"What!" Rokene snapped back. "Are you not happy with me or something?"

Without realising it, Xander was giving Rokene a strange look and Amy quickly pushed him off to the side.

"No, of course we're happy." Said Amy. "As you know though, we're just a little cautious. After the scene yesterday, we're just a little worried that they might have sent someone to disrupt our plans. You understand, right?"

Amy said this as she approached Rokene and gently placed her finger on his chin and slowly started to run it down his chest.

'Oh, is she trying to charm him?' Xander thought.

However, when she reached the midsection of his chest, Rokene had grabbed her hand.

"If I was to allow a subclass to charm me, I wouldn't really be allowed to call myself a decedent now, would I? You guys don't have to be cautious of me, I'm from the Fifth family. I'm only second from the bottom of the barrel, just above you."

The Fifth family, due to their weak ability, were mocked by the other families as well. If it wasn't for the fact that their leader was kind hearted, then there wouldn't be many who chose to be loyal to them either.

"Sorry about that, come on let's go." Xander said.

"I don't need your pity." Rokene said, as he saw the brief look Xander gave him. "I am my own person, and just like Quinn did, I'm going to do what I want."

Punching him on the shoulder, Erin gave him a smile.

"Then let's show the other teams who's boss."

Once all the groups had been assembled, they were led into the forest. This forest was explored by a lot of the vampire kids and there weren't dangerous beasts inside it, from time to time, one or two might appear but that was all.

However, this area was a very well known area by the descendants, because it was where they had their lessons before. It seemed like the descendants would be relied upon more in this game than they first thought.

The groups were given an additional ten minutes to split up all over the forest. Then, just outside the forest, a computer system was set up, which had information with a tag on all the flag's keeping track of points. The teachers had spread out in the forest themselves, dividing themselves into two groups.

One group stood around the outside perimeter, it was the area the students weren't allowed to go past. While the other teachers were asked to look over the students in case anything serious happened.

It was explained to them that this wasn't a battle, although they could use their abilities, it wasn't a sparring match or a fight, just a game to try to capture the flags. Silver would be looking over the students making sure they complied with this rule.

A flare was shot up into the sky, signalling the game had begun.

"What do we do, should we attack or defend?" Amy asked.

"Why don't you fly up and check around to see if there is anyone coming our way?" Xander said.

"No, that will only make us a target." Erin replied. "And it looks like we won't need to do any scouting of our own."

Looking at Rokene, he had summoned a black rabbit with a horn sticking out of its head. It hopped off Rokene's shoulder and started to run off, soon it came back.

"There's a team not too far from here, He will lead the way." Rokene said.

seeing the black rabbit, Amy had recognised it from Fex's execution that time, and now remembered Rokene was there as well.

"Not too bad after all." Xander said. Realising that it didn't matter if Rokene was strong or not, as this wasn't an event that relied on strength, but one that focused on using everyone's skills and teamwork.

When they eventually got close, Erin closed her eyes and she could see all of their positions. If anyone was hiding through the thick trees, she could see them.

After regrouping they came up with a plan and it was using Rokene's black rabbit. Judging by the auras, Erin could easily tell which was the strongest out of all of them. And the strongest would most likely be the decedent.

Although the descendants didn't have a flag of his own, that didn't matter. The black rabbit came out and the first thing it did was fire out an electric shock towards the decedent.

He blocked the attack easily, but it was never their goal in the first place. Soon after the black rabbit was off running at a great speed and was being chased, leaving the others behind.

Some of them were hidden, but Erin felt where they were quickly taking their flag, and the others positions were located with ease. They had captured all four of the flags and ran away with no trouble at all.

The four of them met up at a meeting point they had decided beforehand, but Rokene was nowhere to be seen. At that moment, ruffling through the leaves the black rabbit had appeared squealing to them all.

'I think it wants us to follow it.' Amy said.

Following the rabbit they eventually found Rokene, who was beaten up and left on the ground. Nothing appeared to be broken but he was badly hurt.

"Whoever done this has already gone."

Amy went over to try and comfort him and suddenly placed her lips onto his giving her a kiss. Xander looked away with his face blushing red. While Timmy was the opposite, he couldn't stop looking at the two.

"You're a little perv aren't you?" Erin couldn't help but comment.

But he ignored it as if he was caught in a daze.

After a lustful kiss, Amy felt weaker, but the small wounds around Rokene's body started to heal and he was soon woken up.

"Damn it!" Rokene shouted, still recovering from his wounds. "That guy used his ability. The second he found out I had no flag, he locked on to what happened and said he was punishing me for it."

However, his mood was soon lighted up when he saw that the rest of his team had gotten four flags while not losing one off their own. Using both Erin's ability and Rokene's, it was easy pickings for them.

While Amy was weak due to using her strange powers, the others decided to rest for a bit. After all, they could do so with Erin and Rokene keeping guard. Their resting spot was by a stoney area by a small water stream.

They chose an open area as they thought many students wouldn't choose to be out in the open like so, even then they had the advantage.

Or at least that's what they thought. Soon Erin had spotted someone coming fast at them. Grabbing her sword, she immediately struck out a blood swipe that was thrown towards their direction.

However, this was the first time, where she was pushed back a little bit by the force.

"An attack, and from another vampire." Amy said.

Soon they could see five vampires coming out from the forest, and leading the charge, was the young boy Nicu.

"What are you doing Nicu!" Xander shouted standing in front of them. In his head he was the strongest one on the team, even though Rokene was a descendant.  
"You're not meant to attack. This isn't a fight."

"Hahah, does it matter how we get a flag? As long as no one sees what we're doing, it's your word against ours." Nicu replied.

Sadly, he was right. "Where are the teachers?" Amy asked.

Erin was afraid, not afraid of them, but that she would go too far hurting them and they would get the blame. So she closed her eyes and tried to see if there were any teachers nearby.

Soon, she quickly opened her eyes, and grabbed the hilt of her sword. "Watch out!" She shouted at the top of her lungs, while pulling out the sword from her sheath, as soon as it left, a large line of blood aura came out with it.

Nicu was skilled enough to know that the attack was off and wouldn't hit him so he remained still. He also thought it was strange to shout out something before you would attack.

"I knew you wouldn't have the guts to actually hit me, even you, are scared of us." Nicu said. Then, the sound of a deep growl was heard. Looking to his right, he could see a large blood sucker up in the air, only inches away from his face.

However, the attack from Erin hit the Bloodsucker, making it fall and roll on the ground.

"A bloodsucker." Nicu said, covered in sweat. "What's it doing here?"

Erin for a second didn't let go off her sword, for she knew it wasn't the only one with them.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 715: Activating true power

As Silver was making her way around the forest, she decided to move up high through the trees. She had a better view from up there, although she didn't want the students to know where she was, so she had to make sure her footsteps were as quiet as possible.

So far she thought everything was going well. There had hardly been any bad experiences happening from her end. Because of this, she decided to try to find one of the other teachers who was also going around the forest to see if there was anything going on.

Her search was cut short, however, as she had stumbled across something devastating. Leaving the disguise of the trees she dropped to the floor and her foot landed in a pool. A pool of blood. One of the teachers had been killed. Judging by how the blood was bright red and hadn't dried yet, it looked like the teacher was killed recently.

"Attention, there's something wrong, we need to cancel the expedition. Gather the students and return to the school immediately." Silver ordered on her wrist watch communicator, but there was no reply from the teachers around her.

Something was seriously wrong, and if she was to leave now then the students would be in trouble. Making another call, she decided to inform the castle of the situation, but she would be staying behind and it would take them a while to get there.

"I hope everyone is okay."

\*\*\*\*\*

The blood sucker slowly got up from the ground and Nicu and his group were frozen in fear. The others stood behind him, waiting for him to do something. They were young and had never seen a blood evolver before while Nicu was frozen for a different reason.

Nicu went through training, as a descendant he needed to learn about the blood suckers and possibly what to do if they met one, so he knew how much trouble they were in now.

When the blood sucker finally stood up from the ground, it looked at the large cut that was in its forearm.

"Arghh!" It screamed. Right now the blood sucker was experiencing something it hadn't done for in a long time - pain. For some reason the attack coming from Erin was hurting the blood sucker greatly.

Rather than looking at the group of kids in front of it, it started to look towards Erin instead. Soon it went after her.

"Huh, aren't they meant to be crazy wild beasts?" Nicu thought. Usually they would just attack anything they would see in front of them. If this had intelligence then that means it came from them.

There was a group that Bryce had warned him about before. Then a realisation hit him, this blood sucker was from that certain group.

"Argh!" More screams were heard from behind Nicu, it was too late. Turning around he could see two more blood suckers and they had stabbed two of the other students.

"Get off them!" Nicu shouted, and throwing two blood swipes of his own, he attempted to hit both of them, but using the bodies of his fellow students, they moved them to block the attacks.

What little life they had left, were taken by Nicu's own hands.

"We have to help them." Timmy said.

"No, we have to look after ourselves." Erin replied. "There are more."

Coming out from the other side of the lake, three more blood suckers were seen heading their way. Slashes were let out in succession from Erin's blade, but this time they had avoided them all. Their speed was faster than anything they had dealt with before.

Amy spread her wings and flew up high.

"Go get help!" Erin said as they saw Amy looking down on them, worried. She knew there was nothing else she could do but try and get help.

Xander, coming to the scene when it counted, went to engage one of the blood suckers head on. He wasn't the best when it came to using blood skills, so he decided to use his fist instead, he was skilled when it came to combat.

"No!" Erin shouted but it was too late for her to intervene, the other two blood suckers were headed in her direction, and there was one coming from behind.

A punch was thrown out from Xander, and a wild swing had come out from the blood sucker. Both of their fists collided head on. One of the attacks was far stronger than the other. One second Xander was there in front of them, the next he was gone and he was on the other side with the others, back in the forest of trees.

Now it was three against one, even with her increased skills, Erin didn't know how she was going to get out of this one. She was a little worried for Timmy, but he was no longer by his side.

He had ignored her warnings and had transformed into mist, covering both him and Nicu in a strange mist, making it hard for the blood suckers to find them.

Right now, Nicu was thankful for the help he could get and couldn't believe that the only reason why he was possibly alive right now was due to another regular vampire.

The first blood sucker approaching her was too close and she had no chance to use her blood skills. Other than the blood swipe with her blade, she didn't really know how to use anything else.

The blood sucker confidently swiped its large claw towards Erin but the attack was blocked. What the blood sucker wasn't expecting was for her blade to go through its tough skin and was slowly cutting through the muscle until it eventually reached the bone.

Once again, it screamed in pain. Her attack had done its job and her sword was now stuck in the blood sucker's arm.

She tried to pull it out but the other two were already upon her. They smashed hard into her stomach and she had no choice but to let go of her blade. She too was chucked over and slid across the floor.

'I won't fail!' She thought as she placed her hand on the ground and her knees skidded. Her head was facing towards the floor and she no longer had her Patna like blade. Still, she had one more weapon, the long sword on her back.

The pain running through her was strong, and a strange feeling started to rise in her. It wasn't the blood power, it wasn't Qi, but something else. It was the first time she had been greatly hurt and in a dire situation since she had turned into a vampire.

"You tried killing me, so that means I can do whatever I want to you bastards, right?"

When Erin raised her head, her eyes were glowing yellow. She felt stronger than she had ever before. Using Leo's ability, she could see that her blade was now covered in a yellow aura as well.

Without realising it, she had activated her true Dhampir abilities, and it was time for her to hunt some vampires.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 716: Yellow power

Without even moving her body, Erin could both feel and see the new found energy rising within her. Since joining the school, her aura and power levels had been the same, however, she noticed that there were instances where it would increase.

She noticed it when sparring against Leo as well as Edward, and when she was about to hit Nicu outside of the school. The difference in power was noticeable but right now, it was on a different level altogether. She didn't know if it was because of anger, or possibly just because there were more vampires she classified as enemies in front of her.

Looking at the field she was trying her best to assess the situation. Two students were still on the floor, they looked to be dead, and one student had run off into the woods somewhere. Amy had gone to try and find help, and Xander was probably too hurt to get back up. Otherwise he would have returned by now.

There were five blood suckers in total. Two of them were being distracted thanks to Timmy's mist skill. However, his ability level was still quite low, so he was unable to cover the entire area in mist.

That meant she had to deal with the remaining three. One of them was charging at her before she even had time to recover while the other two moved forward as well, but decided to hold back and move slower intentionally.

It was as if they were waiting to see the outcome of what was about to happen.

'My ribs, I think they've healed enough now.'

When the beasts leapt up through the air, dragging her sword across the ground, she swiped upward using all her strength and also activating the blood aura around her blade. This time, she was trying something different. Controlling her Qi better than before, she wrapped the blood aura around her large sword and using the Qi held it in place. Rather than a blood swipe, she increased the strength of her blade, leaving a glow around it.

The blood sucker hadn't expected Erin to recover that fast, nor her strike to be that quick either. He was sure he had gauged her speed before, but now it was even faster. He could do nothing but brace while the blade passed through his body, which it did like butter. The sword sliced the blood sucker in half.

"One down, and I'm ready to take on even more of you ugly men." Erin said, flicking her sword to the side, allowing for the beast's blood to splatter on the floor. "I'm sorry, but I don't like bald guys."

With the blood off her blade the other blood suckers and herself could see it. The blood aura compared to before was a different colour. Blood swipes always came

out red, just like every other vampire hers did as well, but right now, the aura was yellow in colour.

The two blood suckers that were advancing had stopped, and the one furthest away jumped across back on to the other side of the water stream.

"Fall back!" The blood sucker said, in a deep demonic voice. The voice was a little mumbled as if it had its mouth full, but it appeared to sound like so due to the large fangs in its mouth.

'It can speak?' Erin thought, surprised. It certainly didn't look like something that could speak. They just looked like crazy wild beasts in a humanoid form.

When the blood sucker that seemed to be their leader gave the orders, the beasts that were in the mist and the other one fell back. They left running back through the forest while the leader turned to look at Erin.

'I will have to report this to the leader, he will definitely be pleased.'

At first Erin thought maybe they were just hiding, it was a trick. They were outnumbered and outmatched. She was lucky with her first strike just because the blood sucker underestimated her, but their strength and speed were similar to hers. They surely would have come up with something to take her on, she thought.

After activating her ability she knew they really had gone. Then, placing her sword back on her back she went to pick her katana blade off the ground.

She turned to look at Timmy and Nicu. Nicu was on his knees looking at the two bodies in front of him.

At this moment, she was very thankful for Timmy's ability. Because of the mist none of them saw what Erin had done. The secret Quinn had told her to keep was still a secret.

However, it was clear that Nicu wasn't in the right mind in the first place. He was down on his knees and surprisingly he had tears in his eyes.

"Come on guys, you're alive right, tell me you're alive!" Nicu said, looking at their bodies but there was no response.

Nicu was younger than them all by a couple of years, he had always been pampered at the First castle. It wasn't even normal for vampires to experience such things in the first place. Even if he was a bully and someone who threw his weight around, he never wanted death upon other vampires.

He would have never gone that far, more so, he had delivered the killing blow. He didn't know Timmy had an ability like that, and noticing how effective it was

against the blood sucker, if he hadn't acted so rashly, then maybe Timmy's mist could have given them all a chance to escape.

Finally, it looked like Xander had come out from the forest, he held one of his arms, which still hadn't healed and he had a slight limp as he walked out.

"How come no one came to check up if I was okay?" Xander said. "Come on, let's get out of here and try find a teacher, we'll head back towards the school and report back to them about what happened."

\*\*\*\*\*

Silver had been running around for a while now, she had bumped into a few students and informed them that the whole test was over. She escorted a few of them back, leaving them with the teacher who was just outside the forest in charge of the system.

The call had been made to the castle, and people were on their way, but Silver couldn't sit there doing nothing knowing there was trouble inside the forest still. After searching some more, she had come across another dead teacher, only this time, on the ground not too far away from her was a blood sucker.

'A blood sucker here? Did one of the students turn into one by accident?' She thought, on inspection it looked like the two of them killed each other in quite the difficult battle.

She was now by the blood sucker's body, seeing if she could find any clues, but the pieces of clothing it did have on that weren't torn off, did not resemble the school uniform or what vampires would usually wear.

All the clothing was a dark blue color.

'Is it them, if it is, have they finally decided to attack the settlement, but why? They know they would stand no chance against the whole family.'

Attaching her strings to the blood sucker, controlling it like a puppet, she lifted it up and threw the body behind her. The body was ripped completely in half in a second and behind the body Silver was looking at a blood sucker that was twice the size of the one that she had just used as a meat shield.

"Silver?" The blood sucker said in a deep booming voice. "I'm surprised to see you have become a teacher, I never thought you would fall this low. Even if the Thirtieth family has always had a man as their leader I thought you would be the one to change it."

"But, I'm afraid it's impossible now, because you won't be living to see another day."

Silver didn't have a clue who this blood sucker was, any resemblance they once had as a vampire was now gone with the way they looked now, but it was clear that this man had known her at one point in his life.

It was also clear that he wanted to kill her. Using her blood she threw out her red strings and successfully wrapped them around his ankles, but he carried on walking slowly and the strings just broke apart as if they did nothing.

'Who is this guy, he must have been an incredibly strong vampire before turning into a blood sucker.'

The fear could be seen in Silver's eyes as she stepped back continually until her back had gone up against a tree.

"I will not die here."

"I don't think you have a choice."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 717: A Reunion

Silver was a skilled knight, the best of the best when it came to vampires. There were only two positions that could be considered higher than hers. The vampire leaders and the vampire king's loyal knights. Of course there was also the vampire king or queen position, but without being a leader in the first place, she could never be considered for such a role.

It was well known throughout the other castles that if Silver hadn't been born a girl, that she would have been made the next leader. However, tradition of the thirteenth family, would not allow it.

Still, none of those facts changed her current situation. That there was a blood sucker staring her down that was making her feel completely powerless. Usually she could gauge one's power by the use of her red blood stings, yet in front of this blood sucker, they were as useless as a gentle wind breeze.

He had snapped them by just moving his large muscular legs.

"At least tell me who you are?" Silver asked.

The blood sucker started to laugh, it was so deep and loud that the ground around them seemed to slightly vibrate.

"As expected, whenever there is a history the vampires are not proud of, they just completely disregard it, pretend it doesn't exist or that it never happened." The giant blood sucker said. "Do you even know what type of people you work for? The vampires appear strong on the outside and are arrogant as they see themselves above others, but the truth is they are scared.

"They are scared that one day something will come along and top them, so they get rid of anything that they see as a threat, not even giving them a chance to rise. Werewolves, Blood fairies, dhampir and us, the true form vamps."

Silver's hunch was right, this man and the other blood suckers were from that group. A group of Vampires who had given in to the blood addiction. They had consumed so much blood and became addicted, that their bodies changed into a permanent form of the blood sucker. Although unlike a starved Bloodsucker, they kept some of their intelligence, and this one in front of her, had kept a lot of his intelligence.

Even the vampires that thought they should be on top of the food chain ruling the humans, didn't agree with the blood suckers. Losing control at the sight of human blood, having an addiction like that, it was giving in to one's weakness. Something they didn't want to admit happening. The sun could build up a resistance, but blood was something they would always need sooner or later.

While the blood suckers like the one in front of her, saw it as accepting themselves and embracing who they really were.

She was lucky that the blood sucker liked to talk a lot, as during that time she tried to figure out a way to escape, but she could see none. The only choice left, was to fight.

"I can see it in your eyes, you have chosen to fight. You are certainly a special strong one. If I could, I would have had you over to my side, but I know that's not possible."

"Silver!" A voice shouted from a distance.

With her advanced hearing, she could tell that the voice was coming from above, and in the distance she could see Amy flying up high in the sky. The problem was, the blood sucker could hear it as well.

The second the blood sucker looked up, Silver had made her move, she ran forward as fast as she could and slid underneath, inbetween the blood sucker's legs. While doing so she held both hand's out and used as much red string as she could to tie up the blood sucker's legs.

She knew it would mostly be useless but she just needed to buy enough time. Jumping up high, she then threw out her string and wrapped it around Amy's leg. Using her blood skills and string together, she could control the string with finer detail thanks to the blood control ability she had as well.

Once it was wrapped around Amy's leg, she started to pull herself up, and Amy was off as fast as possible.

"Thank you Amy, you're a lifesaver," said Silver. "We need to get out of this forest as soon as possible. I'm afraid I am no match for that thing."

Silver had a saddened look on her face, she hoped that most of the students were already out of the forest, but with the giant blood sucker in the forest, there was nothing she could do.

"What was that?" Amy asked, when she looked down at Silver. Her face immediately was covered in fear, for the giant blood sucker that was down on the ground, was suddenly not too far behind them.

She had seen it all happen so fast, the only thing the blood sucker did was jump and now he was around thirty meters in the air, taller than any of the trees and level with Amy.

"Don't worry!" Silver shouted. "Blood suckers can't use blood attacks."

Although he was the same height as them, the distance was out of the blood sucker's reach, yet the bloodsucker had a smile on its face showing its sharp fangs. It wound up it's fist and as hard as it could, threw out a punch.

A bang was heard and moments later a strong force had hit both Amy and Silver out of the air. The punch hadn't even reached them but it had hurt like hell. Amy could no longer fly and Silver taking most of the blow was struggling to keep consciousness.

Even if the fall from this height didn't kill them, then the blood sucker surely would.

Seeing the trees coming towards them, they both braced for impact. But their harsh descent was no longer, as both of the girls felt someone catch them and was holding them in both arms.

Amy opened her eyes, couldn't believe who had caught her.

"Leo, what are you doing here?" Amy asked.

"An emergency was summoned, and I insisted on coming." Leo replied.

Landing on a thick tree branch with the softest of touches, Leo quickly went to the ground, where soon Silver followed and holding her was Dwight, the king's vampire knight.

Placing her wings back in her body, Amy was able to stand as she wasn't as badly hurt as Silver. Then when she looked around she noticed that they weren't the only two that had arrived. Jin, another vampire leader had as well.

'Something serious had to have happened if they called over these two as well as Leo.' She thought.

"Wait, Xander, Erin and the others, Leo we have to save them!" Amy shouted.

"Don't worry." Dwight replied, placing Silver up against a tree and giving her his flask that was full of blood. "The other leaders and their knights are making sure all the students return to safety. They will be fine, but I'm a little worried about us."

The heavy footsteps were heard through the forest, and even the sound of some trees being pushed and branches falling were heard until finally they could see it. A giant blood sucker.

Seeing the vampire in front of him, the blood sucker started to slow down his pace and came to a halt. Once again he had a creepy smile on his face.

"What a great runion, I didn't think they would send out you two just for these kids, oh and who's this." He said looking at Leo, who had his hand on his hilt. "Someone looks ready to fight before hearing what I have to say.

"Come on speak up, how long has it been since you guys have seen me, surely you haven't forgotten who I am?"

"Of course not, Rowa, ex vampire leader of the Second family, and also ex royal vampire knight!" Dwight said, with anger in his voice.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 718: An ex leader

Hearing Dwight say his true name, Silver finally understood who he was. At the time, she still wasn't a vampire knight, but she had heard of an upcoming vampire who was rising through the ranks at an incredible rate.

A great talent that everyone knew, and that said person, was Rowa in front of her.

Even when he became leader, he had relinquished that position fast moving on and deciding to become a Royal knight. The thing was about Royal knights, once someone accepted this position, they were expected to stay loyal to the current king and most of the time they would pass on with him.

Those that joined the Royal army would no longer have the opportunity to become king and they knew that. It was a way for them to prove their loyalty to that of the current king. But Rowa had changed all that.

The others were unaware of how Rowa was growing his powers so fast, and eventually without warning, he had one day turned into one of them. Of course, when Rowa had turned into a permanent Bloodsucker, the king had ordered to get rid of him.

There was no reversing back once one had reached this point, so Rowa felt like he had no choice but to run away, holding a grudge against those that he had dedicated his life to.

So what if he enjoyed a sip of blood now and then, the second he turned into a blood sucker, they had forgotten all the sacrifices he had made, they could have at least tried to figure something out, yet they hadn't.

From that day onward, Rowa would take on future Bloodsuckers looking after them. Where they were based or where they were getting their blood from no one knew. But it was a threat that the current king was always worried about.

"Have you finally decided to betray the whole settlement. Are you here to destroy us all?" Dwight asked. "Let me tell you, it won't be easy."

Silver was a little concerned even with Dwight, Jin and Leo. She felt like it wouldn't be enough. When one turned into a bloodsucker their basic stats nearly doubled, and Rowa being a past leader, and being a blood sucker for so long would be far stronger than a regular leader.

"Not today," Rowa said. "I want you guys to crumble in fear, wondering when the next attack will happen. You know nothing about us, how many people we have, how strong our forces are, yet I know everything about the settlement, even this little training session going on today."

"I want you all to worry each day that soon it could be your last. Because that was the same experience I feared when I was turned into this, and locked up, knowing that I would be executed. Death for you all is too light of a punishment." Rowa said, and the next second the large body was gone.

Silver hadn't even seen him leave, but there was nothing in front of her. Even with such a large body he had speed beyond what she could see.

"That person was a strong one, I would have liked to see how I would have fared against him." Leo commented.

Jin chuckled a little bit. "I'm more thankful that we didn't actually get in a fight, for a new knight you sure are brave."

"Not brave," Leo said, shaking his head. "I just wish to test my limits, so far I haven't had the opportunity to test how far my current strength can take me. He looked like someone who would have been able to do that."

"Let's look for the students and head back to the castle. I must inform the king about what is happening." Edward said, looking into the distance of where Rowa had left.

The other vampire knights and leaders had safely rescued most of the students, there were very few that had actually died. In total two teachers were found dead along with five other students. Some of the vampire knights had confronted the bloodsuckers, but soon left after seeing them.

Sadly, there seemed to be more deaths on one side rather than the other. It was impossible to keep a secret of what had happened as the students were already talking to each other about it as they made their way back to school.

However, there was one rumour going around. Students had overheard the knights and the other teachers talking. Saying that a couple of bloodsuckers had been killed before they had arrived at one of the locations.

Soon, they had figured out that it was the bloodsucker who had attacked both Nicu's and Rokene's group.

While walking back, Nicu was doing so with the rest of the descendants. He had his head held down and he hadn't said much. He was still in shock of what had happened.

"Hey Nicu, you were in the group that killed one of the bloodsuckers, right? Those things are so powerful and scary. I can't believe you managed to kill one, how did you do it?" One of his friends asked.

"I killed one?" Nicu replied.

"Yeah all the other kids are talking about it. Some of the teachers even died, there's no way that anyone else could have killed one."

"Well, I'm sorry to burst your bubble, but it wasn't me." Nicu replied.

"It wasn't you? Stop joking around, if it wasn't you, then who was it?"

Nicu said nothing, but just looked in the direction of Erin.

'Who are you, how could you be so strong coming from the tenth family? I need to look into some things.'

Some time had passed, and somewhere on the Vampire planet, was a certain special place. Somewhere on the planet in the middle of a forest, there was a large waterfall, gushing water down into the bottom of the lake.

If one was to go through the waterfall, they would notice that there was a large cave, one large enough that housed Rowa and his army. Another society of bloodsuckers lived here calling this place there home.

Inside there were building structures, homes and empty blood packs scattered round the place. Most of the houses were just basic. Although these bloodsuckers did have intelligence, it varied from bloodsucker to bloodsucker. Only a few had the full mental capacity they once had in the past.

Entering the cavern was a hooded man, but he was not one of the blood suckers. He walked passed and a few of the creatures snarled at him, but he continued walking confidently deeper and deeper into the cavern.

Until he had reached the end, where a large mansion could be seen. Two bloodsuckers stood guard, larger than the others.

"He has been expecting you," One of the guards said and the hooded man was let in.

Eventually, he was escorted to a throne room, where sitting in a large giant chair to fit his giant body, was the leader of them all, Rowa.

"Did you bring the goods with you?" Rowa asked.

"Of course, I have left the blood packs at the usual place, but I'm starting to wonder why I even helped you in the first place, when you couldn't even do such a simple task. Why did you attack the children! That was not what I asked!" The hooded man shouted in anger.

"Calm down." Rowa replied calmly. "I need to remind you, that you are on your own here and not in your own establishment. You asked me to get rid of the tenth,

and you said it would be an easy task. However, all of my people that attacked are dead, so I decided to improvise.

"I thought maybe we could start right from the bottom, getting rid of the tenth children."

"Well, it looks like you failed at that as well, and instead now the whole vampire council know about you." The hooded man replied.

"It was only a matter of time before they found out about us. Besides it looks like you were keeping something from us, no wonder you want to get rid of the tenth family."

The hooded man didn't reply as he was confused by what Rowa was saying.

"Oh, so you don't know?"

Rowa didn't say anything past that, but before meeting with the hooded man he had found out about the girl. The girl who wielded the strange yellow aura, confirming that she was most likely a dhampir.

She was surely hiding herself, and maybe this was something they could use.

"Don't worry." Rowan said with the biggest grin on his face so far. We will get rid of the tenth family for you. I am more than happy and this time, we will do it right. It will also be a message to the king. That there is a force out there that will soon even topple them."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 719: Irrational thoughts

The leaders that had come out to help with the incident, had returned to their castle for more reasons than one, as once again, another council meeting had been called. However, the vampire knights that had been called out, had traveled back with the students.

Now inside the large school assembly hall, all of the students had been gathered. Everyone's condition was being checked to see if they were okay, and at the same time, they were busy trying to gather as much information as possible.

The students had minimal wounds, but some were affected more mentally than others, particularly those that were either running for their lives or had seen a student die in front of them.

The main reason for the questioning was to find out the scale of the attack that took place. Hopefully it would give them an idea of how strong of a force and large of a force they were dealing with. Although there would be no way to know the true extent of the force, but would at least have an idea of the minimum.

As students were being checked upon, one of the vampire knights went up on stage. A female knight with dark purple overflowing hair that nearly brushed against the floor.

"First, to all the students, I would like to let you know that while you are here, you are safe from the threat that unexpectedly came at you today. I know it is a shock for many of you young students, but the most important thing is that you came out still alive to experience, and live another day." She said.

"Perhaps we were a bit behind on teaching you about the Bloodsuckers, which is a mistake on our part, but now I will give you information about them that should help you in the future, if you are ever to encounter one again."

The knight started to explain to the students what a bloodsucker was and the difference between the two types of bloodsuckers. Most students knew what happened to a vampire when they ran out of blood, but were unaware of the type that would get addicted to blood. They knew of blood addiction but not what it could lead to.

When Silver was listening to this, she started to think back to the words that Rowa spoke. About how the vampires tried to bury and hide any bad thing about them in the past. On top of this, got rid of anything they saw as a threat.

Before the incident with her brother, she was a law abiding vampire, but lately she was allowing thoughts, and other people's ideals to affect her.

"Lastly, when someone turns into the form of the bloodsucker, they no longer have that family bond attaching them. Perhaps some of you might think you're safe if one of your family members were turned, but you are not.

"They are free to hurt anyone regardless, which is why they are considered so dangerous." The knight finished explaining.

Leo went ahead to check up on Erin and everything seemed fine, however he did notice she was acting a little strange as if she wanted to ask something.

What was on her mind was about her being a dhampir. She wanted to know more about that strange aura she used in the middle of her fight. How she was able to activate it? But she knew that this was not the right place with so many people around. Also, Leo was an ordinary vampire, she could see that, so it was unlikely he would know anything.

"I heard you did a good job Timmy," Leo complimented him. "I will tell Edward about his favourite student."

Timmy started to blush, as he was shy. He wasn't really good with getting compliments like so. "Thank you, I will continue to work harder for the tenth family in the future."

Xander, who was being treated, with his good hand also gave Timmy a thumbs up. This experience made him realise he couldn't just rely on his fists, and maybe getting Edward to teach him the mist ability was a good idea.

The group of decedents were gathered together and they couldn't stop talking about the incident that had just happened. While the others were afraid many of them felt excited.

"I swear, if that bloodsucker didn't run away, I would have taken it down."

"I don't know man, did you hear what Kathey just said, they're dangerous."

"What do you mean, Nicu took one down, so of course we can as well."

However, there was one person that wasn't excited about the whole thing, and that was Nicu himself. He had branched himself a little away from the descendants. He just couldn't share the same feelings as they did.

From the sounds of things, the others got attacked by a single blood sucker, two at most. While their group had far more. It also seemed like the bloodsuckers varied in strength. Which would make sense since it was dependent on the vampire they were turned from.

Most of those that would turn into a Bloodsucker would be weak regular vampires anyway, there were only a few that were at the higher level.

Still, that didn't stop Nicu feeling two things. Fear from almost dying and the second one, regret. He still couldn't get over the fact that with his own hands, he had killed two fellow students.

While sitting down up against the wall, he started to hear certain conversations between the other teachers and knights.

"Did you check the report?"

"Yes, two of the students had different wounds on their body compared to the others. There are signs that show the attack seemed to be made using blood aura."

"So you think there's a chance the other side has vampires working for them?"

"Maybe, but there is also the possibility that these two students were killed before the bloodsuckers arrived. Maybe a dispute over the flags, someone went too far and killed them both. Or, maybe one of the students or teachers were working for the Bloodsuckers. It would make sense as to how they were aware of the training taking place in the first place."

"I'll start conducting a search and see if we can find out any more information about these two boys. I'll check who were the last people to see them alive."

Hearing them talking, was giving Nicu the shakes. He held out his hand in front of him trying to keep it straight, but it wouldn't stop shaking. His heartbeat was out of control and beating like a regular human.

'Will they think I'm working with the blood suckers?' Nicu started to think.

They hadn't found out yet, but Nicu being a young boy was having irrational thoughts. He started to go down a deep dark hole of negativity. If they were to find out he killed them what would happen to him? Would he be stripped of his title, his chances of becoming the next leader disappearing?

'Maybe if I just explain the situation to them?' He thought. That would have just given him a small slap on the wrist. Surely they would believe him.

Soon, the negative thoughts took over, and he was no longer thinking of the small outcomes, but just overly worrying about the big ones. He was eating away at his thumb nail.

'They're going to banish me from the first family, put me in a cell. I'm going to rot and be executed, all because of a misunderstanding. I can't let that happen, I can't

let them think I was the one that killed those students. I Have to do something.' Nicu thought, looking in the direction of Eirn.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 720: Taking the blame

The longer Nicu was leaving things, the more his mind was going to strange thoughts. The disappointment, the shame he would bring to his family. If he didn't do something then his whole life would be ruined.

When one got to this point, they needed to speak to someone to rationalise their thoughts, a friend to tell them what they were thinking was crazy, but Nicu had no one but himself. He felt like he had to do something, before everything got out of hand.

From the two of the vampire knights that were talking with the inspector earlier on, he spotted one of them speaking to students and decided to approach him. The knight he was approaching worked for the twelfth family, the Killton family. These guys always seemed a bit snobbish when someone would speak to them.

As if they had a different upbringing even compared to the descendants. When drinking blood, they would do so by placing it in the perfect glass, and the blood would have to be at the perfect temperature. Small sips would be made from here and there.

The twelfth family was a major family that was against the idea of the vampires making their own blood. Although they weren't blood addicts, they were certainly blood connoisseurs, and there had been rumours that he had requested to see some of the humans they had caught multiple times, however they were always refused.

The king had made a deal, and he would keep to the deal.

The knight he approached was quite the young looking person named Jax. He had high spikes back hair and his uniform didn't have a single crease on it. Although it was always hard to tell how old vampires were especially the higher up in rank they went.

"Master Nicu, I was just about to come and see you." Jax said.

The relationship between the first and twelfth family wasn't a bad one, but it wasn't as if they were best of friends. This was the case for a lot of the families

On his way over, Nicu had ironed his will repeating in his head, what he was going to say a number of times. He didn't want to appear nervous in front of the knight. It was strange how before he was panicking, but now, he had already decided to dump a certain person, he was back to his usual self.

"I overheard you talking with the other knight before," said Nicu. "As you know, those two were in my team. The truth is, I didn't want to say anything before because I didn't want the vampire in question to get in trouble, but now that you are running an investigation, I don't think the vampire knights time should be wasted."

"Before we encountered the blood suckers, we came across Rokene's team. They were trying to take our flags, and she, used her blood swipe against us. At the same time, I sensed the bloodsuckers appearing and went to deal with them, and that's when it happened. The two students fell due to her attacks." Nicu said without faltering and looking towards Erin.

"That's the new turned from the tenth family." Jax said after inspecting her for a while. "Prima was right, he said the tenth family would bring us trouble, I guess since they were a former human, she feels nothing attacking us."

This was excellent news for Nicu, he had no clue that Erin was someone who had been turned, and was a past human at that. The only ones that did know of this information, were the vampire knights and the leaders. As Quinn had gotten permission from the king to do so.

It looked like all the blame would easily be falling on her now.

"Thanks for the information," Jax said. "You did an excellent job in protecting them all, and defeating that bloodsucker. I will be sure to mention this to my leader and hope they pass it on to the king's castle. We need more vampires like you."

The praise made him happier than ever, and it looked like he was going to get some unexpected rewards out of all of this. He never wanted to take claim for something he hadn't done, but what was the harm in it.

Soon, Erin would be out of the picture and he would be the only one. No one would believe the tenth family over a direct descendant.

Jax had immediately gone over to where Erin was, she was currently listening away to the three boys and Amy talk about what just happened. They were making up their own theories as to why they were suddenly attacked by bloodsuckers. But the one who had the most interesting story to tell, was Amy. Who was describing the odd giant bloodsucker.

Before Jax had even arrived, Erin started to walk towards him as well. Just from his aura alone, she could tell who he was looking for.

"Oh, it seems you know you have done wrong and have come to turn yourself in," Jax said.

"Not at all," Erin replied. "I just didn't want to waste my time waiting for you to come over to me."

\*WHACK

A sharp slapping sound was heard and Eirn's cheek had gone bright red. For once, she hadn't seen the aura move before the hand did. Also, she wasn't expecting to be hit out of the blue like that.

"You don't talk to a vampire knight like so, even if you were human, where are your manners? You should show respect to those that are higher than you. I am a vampire knight and I should be treated like one." Jax said.

Eirn's breathing was out of control as the same energy as before was rising in her, but she needed to calm down. She was doing everything she could to hold herself back. Everyone near by who was talking and yapping away, had turned to look at the incident.

"Now onto the matter of business," Jax continued. "There have been reports that the two students' deaths were not done by the bloodsucker but by a student, and an eyewitness has said that student was you. You are to be restrained until further notice."

"What!" Erin shouted, having now managed to restrain most of the strange energy, her Qi control helped with that greatly. "I didn't kill anyone."

"Now you are lying informant of a vampire knight, your punishments will only add up. Dear Nicu said he saw you kill them with your own blood aura."

"That's not true." Xander interferred.. "When the bloodsuckers came, he was the one who had hit them and killed them."

"Xander huh, you have always had the soft spot for women, on top of this I believe you would have a grudge against Nicu, in fact, the whole tenth family would have. I can't believe you all are accusing the one that saved you from the bloodsuckers, do none of you have any pride?"

"He saved us!?" Erin shouted, her blood boiling. "He was shivering there like a log when he killed his fellow students, he didn't even lift a finger against the bloodsuckers. I was the one who killed them!"

Many in the room started to laugh at what they had just heard.

"Does she think just because she got the best score on one silly test, that she would be strong enough to kill a bloodsucker?"

"Enough of your lies," Jax said. "I will now tie you until we reach the castle."

Jax took one step forward, and Erin looked up at him, she had given him a daring look, saying if he was to take one step closer, she would attack him and he could feel this.

Not holding back like he did last time, he reacted to this himself. Lifting his hand by his side, he was preparing to slap Erin on the face again. Swinging out his hand, it was too fast for Erin to do anything.

She thought she had gotten stronger, better, but a vampire knight was still beyond what she could deal with. Then, bits of blood had splattered across Erin's face, and the sound of something hitting the floor was heard.

She felt no pain, and her face was perfectly fine.

"Arghhh!!!" An almighty scream came from Jax. "My arm, my arm!"

When she wiped her face, she could see that Jax's arm was on the floor.

"If you try hurting my family member one more time, the next thing that will be rolling is your head." Leo said.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 721: Solving the issue

"Hey who's that?" A student asked.

"I'm not sure, but he just sliced off a vampire knight arm, he has to at least be another vampire knight, right?"

"That's Leo, the new tenth vampire knight." Another student said proudly. "Did you not here about his introduction event?"

Leo had briefly shown up at Fex's execution, but he hadn't made much of an impact or impression, and the people who watched what was happening that day, were far too focused on other things to even notice Leo.

However, what was memorable was when Leo had been announced as a vampire knight. That day, anyone who disagreed with him about becoming a vampire knight, he fought them head on in a duel and he would often slice off their arms in the process.

This news had spread to the other families. It was dubbed a crazy and exaggerated story, but they did not know what Leo looked like that well either. Those in the tenth of course remembered who Leo was, and that's why they were proudly telling others that this was their vampire knight.

'Why does it hurt so much, and how was he able to cut through my arm so easily?!" Jax thought, as he gripped tightly applying pressure around the wound. Usually, something like this would have healed up by now, but it was still seeping out blood.

Looking up at Leo, filled him with rage, an unknown person from the tenth family, the lowest of the families had chopped off his arm. He needed to pay them back. With his other arm, he had surrounded it with his blood like a red wax, and then used the hardening skill. This time, he wouldn't let a silly beast sword harm him.

Knowing the intent behind his attack, Leo could tell this strike was going in for the kill, so Leo was ready to retaliate.

"If you plan to take my life, then I am allowed to take yours." Leo replied, slashing his sword vertically. It didn't manage to reach Jax for it was stopped as sparks flew up in the air and the attack had hit another blade.

A two handed long blade but something was different about it. If it was an ordinary blade with as much power as Leo had put in, it would have sliced right through. Looking at the man holding the two handed sword he noticed that the hilt of the sword where his hands were wrapped around, was covered in blood.

From his new sensitive nose he could tell it wasn't just any blood, but it was human blood.

Going upward from the hilt of the blade, the red energy could be seen down the centre line of the sword.

'Is this one of those blood weapon's the vampires have?' Leo thought.

"Put down your sword, and stop attacking at once." Tela said.

Telal was the vampire knight who was wielding the blood weapon. An older knight who worked for the Seventh family, the dawn family. He was even older than the current leader but that still didn't stop him from doing his duties, and he was quite popular between the other knights as well.

Looking around, Leo could see that four other vampire knights including Tela had surrounded him, and one of them was Silver. She had wrapped her red string around Leo's bicep before his strike had hit Telo's sword, weakening the power.

"Leo, listen to him, we don't want this to turn into a serious matter, not while everyone is still alive and well." Silver explained.

Complying, Leo put his sword away. Even he wasn't sure if he could take on this many vampire knights. The blood weapons were a big variable and he was unsure how many vampires carried them.

Not even all vampire leaders had a blood weapon.

Tela, when putting down his sword could feel his hands were numb.

'How can a human turned vampire be so strong?'

"I'm sorry, maybe I was mistaken, but I have been told that my duty as a vampire knight is to protect those in my family." Leo explained. "I couldn't just stand idly by while he was hitting one of my own."

What Leo said made some sense, but that would only be true if Erin was somebody. They could understand his actions if he was trying to protect someone important, but not just a simple vampire who worked for the tenth.

"Leo, but you attacked another vampire knight." Silver said in a soft tone, trying to express what type of situation he was in.

"Even more reason why he shouldn't have acted so unreasonably. Tell me, should he not be punished for hitting an innocent person, someone who isn't even an adult yet. In my eyes, I can see the real person who should be punished."

"Innocent!" Jax shouted, while still holding his severed arm. The end of it was throbbing as it tried to regrow.

'That blade is not a normal blade, has it been made with fairy blood?' Jax thought.

"I am innocent, you didn't even listen to what I had to say!" Erin shouted back.

This was a troublesome matter, the situation had calmed down a bit, and while Leo had gone over to Erin to talk to her, the other vampire knights were talking trying to solve the situation.

Honestly, they didn't want a matter like this to go up to the council if there wasn't the need for it. The problem was the people involved. To use the influence skill on Nicu they would need the permission of the first leader Bryce, and it was unlikely they would get that. As for it to be used on Erin, they would need Quinn's permission, or at least the person acting as leader currently.

That person was Leo. Silver had brought up that this was just not possible as Leo didn't have a strong enough influence skill to make her submit, and she also mentioned if anyone else tried, it would be against the rules.

Finally, Jax's arm had healed to the point where the wound had at least healed up and he decided to speak his mind.

"There is no need for this to go to the castle, we just need to know who is lying."

"There is a simple way to find out that girl is lying." Jax replied. "She said she was the one who killed the bloodsucker, something even the teachers failed to beat as well as all the other decedents. Apart from Nicu. I say let the two of them fight. Let's catch her for her lies, and she should be punished for it."

Silver was wondering if this was really a good idea and if it would even solve anything, how was showing one strength proof if they were the killer or not, but there was a little idea to his madness. He felt if he could prove that Erin was a liar with this, then maybe the others would feel like she was lying about everything.

Still wondering what to do, Jax had already walked out to the others and made the suggestion.

"So you say that Nicu was quaking in his boots, that you were really the one who defeated the bloodsucker? Then prove it, prove your strength by defeating Nicu in front of everyone here."

Getting away from Leo, Erin pulled out her blade.

"Gladly."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 722: The smug tenth

It had finally come to this. When Nicu had come up with his lie, he never thought this would be the result. It looked like Erin was already gearing up, ready for a fight, and Jax was giving him some type of look. As if he wanted him to teach her a lesson.

'This isn't the same, this isn't the same as in the forest.' Nicu thought. He had to tell himself this, as he was still a little shaky from what had happened before. He clenched his fist and started to walk to the centre of the hall.

The students had already cleared an area giving the two of them a place to fight.

'I've fought sparring matches before, this isn't some beast that's trying to kill me like the Bloodsucker, and I'm a descendant, I should have more skills than her.'

While Nicu was in shock back at the forest, he did not see how Erin was able to kill the bloodsucker, nor how strong the bloodsucker actually was. In his mind, he too would have been able to kill the bloodsucker if he had a fair chance against one.

Judging by both of their upbringing and his blood being more pure coming directly from the first family. Nicu thought he would win this, the only worry he had was the beast weapon she used. He was sure that the weapon was the reason for her beating him on the practical test and probably why she had killed the bloodsucker.

Cheers coming from the descendants erupted when Nicu went to the centre ready for a duel, on Erin's side, surprisingly there were a few supporting her other than her friends, and they looked to be all from the tenth family.

No longer were they as shy as they once were or suppressed, they felt confident knowing Leo would be there to strike anyone who would try to harm them in front of him.

"If it gets too dangerous, I will be stopping this silly fight immediately." Silver said, and Tela agreed.

The two of them stood closest to the two and would be watching their every move ready to interfere at any time. While the other vampire knights stood off to the side to deflect any oncoming attacks.

Nicu was the first to charge in, throwing out blood swipes, two of them either side of Erin and then one straight down the middle so she had no chance to dodge.

"You don't even care about hurting others, do you?" Erin said.

The two to her side were timed, so when the attack was blocked by the knights from hitting the crowd, the third strike would already be ready to hit her, but taking

out her blade she simply slashed through the attack, not even using any of her own blood aura.

'I have to remain calm, I can't get too agitated otherwise it might happen again.' Erin thought. 'And I need to finish this quickly.'

A flurry of blood swipes continued, and Erin was avoiding them all, not even using her blade but just moving out of the way of the attack. Erin wasn't moving very fast so the onlookers were confused, and that's when they noticed she was moving just as Nicu was making his movements.

This was possible because of two things, first was Leo's ability, however, just because someone had this ability didn't mean everyone could avoid attacks like so.

She had the fighting experience and had trained constantly with Leo. Before becoming a vampire she was already a skilled warrior, but she had been in far too many dangerous situations later.. Compared to those at Pure, Arthur and Leo, these attacks were deadly slow.

"Blood rise!" Nicu shouted, cutting his own hand and controlling it before it dropped to the ground, forming it about in the air. This attack was similar to a blood swipe but was more flexible and it looked like Nicu could move it at will.

"I knew he was going easy on her, being able to use blood control at such a young age. He is talent we all need." Jax said.

Although she wasn't able to avoid this attack, just like with the first blood swipe, using her sword she was able to cut through it. It was now clear to everyone that when comparing the two attacks, Erin's was stronger.

Blood attacks would not work on her, so Nicu went for a different strategy moving in at a great speed, he went to punch her in the stomach but with the guard of the sword, Erin had blocked the attack.

"That's not what I was going for." Using all his strength, he hit the but off the sword knocking it out of her hand falling to the floor.

"Without your sword, you're useless." Nicu said, now at close range he went to punch her again, but she punched his hand up with a greater force and then hit him back in the chest making him fall to the floor.

When Nicu went to get up, the blade from the floor was already pointing at his neck.

"You would be dead if it wasn't for me back at the forest, and this is how you repay me?" Erin asked.

At that moment, having realised he had lost the fight to a vampire, and through Erin's words it had all hit him. He started to break down in tears.

"I'm sorry," Nicu cried. "I lied, she wasn't the one who killed them, I did. But... but...it was an accident. The blood sucker pulled them in front of my attack."

Nicu continued to sob and all the students looking at him realised something seeing this scene, Nicu was still a child, younger than all of them, because of his skill they were treating him like an adult.

"I hope that has satisfied you," Leo said.

"Fine, she can leave, but I will need to interrogate further into this." Jax replied.

'That sword something has to be up with that sword.'

They probably could have pushed further, Leo could have asked for more, but he thought it was best to leave it as it was. As Silver had said before, no problems had been caused and everything was fixed, there was no need to make more problems and an enemy.

The others and the tenth family finally had something to be smug about, one of their own had defeated one of the strongest direct descendants. Soon they would no longer be called a weak family they felt.

Then, word back from the castle had been received and Silver as the current figure of the school had made an announcement.

"While we teachers can't guarantee you protection in the school, a decision has been made to suspend school for the time being. All students should head back with their vampire knight and to their respective families. Once we believe it is safe for you all. Then school will reopen once again."

At that moment, standing in front of the tenth gate, was a hooded man. It was the border between the pooling area and those that lived in the inner area of the tenth family.

"It's time to take over this place."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 723: Living with a Queen

After the order was made, the students started to return back to the tenth castle. There weren't many students in the tenth family attending the school. There were ten and then also Erin and the rest, making a total of fourteen students.

All of them followed Leo and couldn't stop talking about not only Leo's crazy actions but Eirn's great and unexpected achievement as well.

"Looks like they have some new person to admire," Amy said giggling to herself.

She could see that Erin was hearing all of it, and didn't know how to take it. The words were making her lose focus, and her usual closing eye routine she did for training, she was unable to do. Any second now it seemed like she would snap at the students who were gawking at her, in fact, one of the kids that tried to talk to her, she had already threatened to shove her blade right through his backside if he didn't get away.

Once in the pooling area, those students continued to follow Leo, this was because they would be staying at the main castle with him. The reason for the attack on the students was unclear, but they could only guess they were after something or someone, so they wanted to give them more protection by allowing them to stay in the castle.

The parents wouldn't have had this time with them anyway, as they would have been staying at the school apartments. The kids had just been made aware of this, as they thought they would be staying in the inner castle area.

"You mean we're going to be staying with the Queen, maybe I should try talking to her?" A student said.

"Are you crazy, didn't you hear what she said to Jake, the Queen's better off being one of those beauties you just stare at from afar," Another replied.

Once again hearing this, Erin's hand was shaking. On the journey here the students continued to talk amongst themselves and had come up with a nickname for her, Queen.

She did not like this one bit.

"Don't worry about them," Amy said, placing her hand gently on her shoulder. "Boy's will be boys, and some girls would love this type of attention."

"And you're one of them," Xander commented, receiving a kick to his leg right after.

"You are very pretty though." Timmy said in a gentle voice.

When Timmy said these words, Erin didn't feel any anger, and instead went to rub the top of his head. She saw him as a little cute brother.

"Queen we think you're pretty too!"

"Yeah, you're the best, rub my head please!"

"The Queen should treat all her followers equally, and rub all our heads." The boys nodded in agreement.

Passing the inner gates, there was nothing out of the ordinary. Leo was scanning with his ability and the guards were fine, and so were all the houses in the inner area, which was a relief for him.

When entering the castle, the twenty five castle vampires went and showed the students to their rooms. Usually the vampires that lived in the castle would be related to the vampire leader in some way, but the tenth family didn't have many descendants and according to the rest, Vincent had none. For the students, it was the first time they had ever stepped into the castle, and was staying here.

They thought they would never see such a thing, and it only confirmed that they wanted to work for the tenth family even more.

"It's good that you have done this," Edward said, looking at the smiles on the students' faces. "The other leaders have only let the students enter the inner castle area to protect them. Unless they're part of the family, they won't let them into the castle, you have given these guys hope."

Although Leo didn't care for any of the vampire politics and ways, he was just doing what he thought felt right. He had always felt that way, and it was the same with a certain kid he had chosen to follow.

"I heard you did a good job as well Timmy, you have become a brave vampire that will soon take my position," Edward complimented.

Timmy was all smiles, his grin was so wide it looked like it would fall off his face. He was scared as well when he saw the bloodsuckers, but he kept thinking back to last time at Fex's execution. He couldn't help due to how weak he was, and this time he could. This was what had given him courage.

Suddenly, there was a change in attitude from a certain someone, who had gone down to his knees, and placed his head on the floor.

"Master knight Edward, after what happened, I have seen the wrong in my ways, and I wish for you to teach me your ability. If you can take me on as your disciple, I will work harder than anyone you have ever seen before."

"Lift up your head boy." Edward said, "The only person you should bow down to like that, is either the king, or the family leader and I don't see any of them here. Of course I'll teach you. But it won't be easy. Timmy has natural talent in my ability so let's see how you do."

Things had calmed down for a couple of days, with no more incidents happening. Leo and Edward would remain in the castle, not going out like last time, afraid that there could be another attack behind their back.

The Council themselves had yet to make any moves as they had no clue where the Rowa and his people were located. They had decided on two things, either find out the reason for the attack, or find out who the leak was.

If they were watching carefully enough, then sooner or later the said person who was helping them would slip up, and they could get all the information they needed. But there were no leaks so far. They expected as much, since the attack was only a couple of days ago for not much to happen.

As for Nicu, there was no news of what his punishment was. Either Jax didn't really submit the report or Bryce was able to sweep the whole matter under the rug. Still, once they confirmed the truth of what Nicu had done, he wouldn't have gotten much of a punishment anyway.

If it was truly an accident it was understandable , the only thing he would have been punished for was lying to a vampire knight, and trying to pin the blame on somebody else, but the person getting pinned on wasn't exactly popular so the second part of his crimes always seemed to have no light shed on it.

While in the castle, Erin was worried about a major thing, and that was how she was different to the others and why Quinn had told her to keep it a secret, but it seemed like even he didn't know at the time.

This led her to speak out to the one and only other person she felt like she could trust a hundred percent, Leo.

She had explained to him what she felt, and how the colour of her aura was different.

"Well, of course I knew all along, we share the same ability, but when it came to these matters I trusted Quinn with his thinking." Leo said. "For all of us humans, it's difficult and we do not understand what is going on. However, I understand how you feel and you wish to know what you are. When I get time I will try my best to ask about what the dhampirs are and what is so worrying about them."

"Thank you master." Erin said.

Suddenly, Leo's face took a serious turn, he turned his head and was looking in the direction of the front of the castle.

"What's wrong?" Erin asked, concerned..

"That man from the forest, he's here."

Standing inside the inner castle area, was a regular sized man, the guards that were meant to be there, were no longer there. Slowly his body started to change, as he grew in size becoming a giant, ripping through the clothes he wore, his muscles bulging and his hair falling to the ground.

Finally his transformation had finished, and he was now the bloodsucker known as Rowa.

"If there is an important mission, it's always best to do it yourself."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 724: The tenth vampires fall

It was strange at first for Leo, as he could hardly sense anything. When people or things were further away, it was hard for him to feel the strength or see the certain creatures' aura. This was unless he was trying to look for it. This would also limit the range as he tried to look further. But even then, if the force was weak he was unlikely to be able to sense it.

Which was what had shocked him even more. His abilities should have allowed him to sense only those in the castle, yet though the castle walls, out far, he could sense a strong energy and it was the same as what was in the forest.

'He came straight to the tenth castle, so they really are after something from the tenth family? Or someone wants to get rid of us?' Leo thought while looking at Erin.

"Tell Edward to gather the vampires and inform the Council immediately, tell them that the bloodsucker that was in the forest has arrived, they will understand. Then we shall all meet up in the reception of the castle, hurry!"

Erin hadn't seen Leo so panicked before, so rather than asking questions about what was going on, she rushed off to gather the others and did as she was told.

Walking out, down to the bottom floor, Leo was trying his hardest to concentrate on the energy. There were only two times he had felt a power similar to this one that worried him.

Once, when he was underground to rescue the kids, later the energy was found to belong to Arthur, the other energy the vampire king himself and now this one.

'Is he as strong as Arthur?' Leo thought. 'No, he's weaker, but he's still strong.'

Erin had gone to Edward to inform him of what the whole commotion was about. He had a devastated look on his face, and looked like he nearly fell over.

"Now of all times," Edward replied. "I will inform the rest of the inner castle vampires and the council, you, gather the rest of the students and head for the reception area as well."

"Wait, you're going to take them all outside?" Erin asked. "Isn't that where the enemy is?"

"Last time, while you were at school, we too were attacked by the bloodsuckers and that was in this very castle. No one should be able to enter the castle so easily. At the front door there is a lock that only so few know the combination to."

"Sure these days, it is left unlocked more often due to the vampires coming in and out, but there were guards stationed that hadn't seen a thing. I can only guess that

there might be people working with these foul creatures, or there is also someone working against us in the castle.

"There's a good chance that these guys are after the children for some reason based on their past attack. The safest place for everyone right now, is beside me and Leo where we can protect you. Now go!"

Erin didn't ask a second time and she was off to gather everyone else, storming into their rooms one by one, but she couldn't help but think, were the bloodsuckers after her? The bloodsuckers had seen her use her strange powers that day, and just maybe, she was the reason why they had returned.

'It's happening again, we're getting attacked, everyone I care about.' Erin thought, worried that history was just repeating itself with a new enemy, only this time it might be due to her.

Everyone was now in the reception area, their students looked worried while the adult vampires were doing their best to put on a brave face, some even excited that their skills would be put to the test.

Each of them was wearing the advanced tier beast gear which was handed to them for contributing to the tenth family. The students were also handed the intermediate beast armour, which usually would be given piece by piece as they completed more tasks for the family, but this was an emergency matter.

"I'm sure you are aware, but it looks like the Bloodsuckers who refer to themselves as the true vampires have attacked. I have tried to get through to the eighth leader Jill, but she is not receiving communication, which means I can not contact the council at this moment." Edward explained.

"We don't know what their aim is, but the most important thing is those beasts are out there in our inner castle area, we don't know how many they are, how strong their forces are, but the people we wish to protect are out there. I don't want any of the tenth members to die. Stay close to me and Leo at all times, and follow our orders."

The kids were shaking, their teeth rattling. They had already seen the bloodsuckers once before, and how strong they were. They thought they were now safe out of the forest and in the castle walls, but now they found out they were about to go face them once again.

Seeing this, Leo stood out in front of all fourteen students.

"The enemy is strong, but so are you. If you are worried about getting hit, stay close to me and I will take the hit instead."

What Leo was saying sounded ridiculous, how could he guarantee none of the students getting hurt, but for some reason, his words had given them confidence.

Wasting no more time. The small little army left the tenth castle and ventured into the inner castle living areas. The first thing that they noticed was it was quiet. They were meant to be under attack and they were sure they would hear screams.

"Can you sense anything Leo?" Erin asked.

"For now I can only sense their leader who is staying by the gates. Maybe he is staying there to stop any reinforcements from coming in." Leo replied.

Soon a little while later, they noticed that it was far too quiet. Even if the place was being attacked, there would be some vampires out in the streets, talking and more, but there was none of that. That's when one of the vampires spotted a dead body in the street.

Soon walking, they spotted more dead bodies. Leo could sense the aura left behind by the attacker but the tracks were going all over the place, trails could be seen left and right. It was clear there was more than one enemy, and that's when he could see multiple Aura trails heading inside the buildings.

"Check the houses!" Leo shouted. "Every one of them."

The soldiers got right to it. The group split off into two but still stayed close together. Leo led the students and Edward the castle vampires. When entering the house, Leo made the students stay outside, for he could guess what had happened.

After checking every household in the area and reporting back with the other team, Leo's fears were confirmed. Somehow without causing an alarm, or any one of them noticing, every vampire in the tenth households was killed.

If this was the case for all the households, then that would be nearly half the vampires belonging to the tenth family. Many vampires had been invited to live in the inner castle area from the tenth family, out of kindness and support, rather than keeping them in the open pooling area. The conditions were better and so were the houses.

If they were empty anyway, then they saw no harm with them being used.

"How, my family, noo!" A student started to cry at the top of their lungs.

It set off a chain reaction, as the students realised there was a good possibility that their parents had been killed. The ones that lived in the castle, some of their families worked in the castle as servants and were safe, but there were a few that had extended family that lived in the inner area. They also had mixed emotions. Some showing anger, other sadness and regret.

Some of the students that were also greatly affected, were Erin's group. All of their families had just moved into the inner circle area, and although they hadn't checked their homes yet, they feared the worst.

"Mother, father!" Xander cried, along with Timmy and Amy.

"Why, why did this happen to us?" A vampire asked.

"We still don't know what's happening, this could be happening to the whole settlement." Edward replied. "After all, I still can't get through to Jill."

Although Edward wasn't so sure about that, Jill was one of the vampires that had a grudge against the tenth family due to what had happened at the execution, there was a good chance she was just ignoring Edward's call.

"Everyone, pick up your weapons." Leo said, drawing his blade. "Your friends and families might be dead but you still live, and the enemy still lives. You want revenge right? Well ,now is your chance."

Coming right at them, was a small army of blood suckers, the battle had begun.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 725: Down to the last few

The vampires and students were a little struck at what they were seeing. They knew that there was a high chance that they would be facing bloodsuckers, however, they never knew how many. Coming towards them, it looked like an army of bloodsucking crazy beasts were on their way.

Some were running straight down the street, while others were using their hard claws to climb the side of buildings, and few were running on the top of rooftops.

"Stay close together!" Edward said. "Remember they can't use blood attacks, our range is our advantage."

"How many of them are there?" Amy asked, nervous herself wondering if they could even survive such an attack.

"I'm not sure, they're moving fast, maybe thirty?" Erin replied.

"Fifty is closer." Leo said.

There was no point hiding the enemy's true numbers; it would do nothing for them. On their side, twenty four vampires, two vampire knights and fourteen students. It wasn't a fair fight at all.

The vampires had gotten in a row standing in front of the students, they stayed strong in their beast armour.

"What are you doing, we can fight as well!" Erin complained.

"We never brought you students out to fight in the first place," said Edward. "We brought you out because we thought you would be safer with us."

Edward nodded towards the two boys and they started to move.

Xander and Timmy's bodies were changing slightly. Timmy was faster and had formed mist over more than half the students, while Xander finally had gotten a hang of what he was trying to do, and covered the remaining students in a mist.

As he promised, he worked harder than any student Edward had seen and, he could already use the mist ability, still there was a lot to learn.

"Erin, protect them," Leo said.

The vampires in a line were waiting for Edward's orders and then when the bloodsuckers were close enough, Edward shouted the signal. He released a blood swipe out from his hands. The rest followed and multiple lines of red aura could be seen ripping through the streets.

There were too many for all the bloodsuckers to avoid. The bloodsuckers responded wildly, as some pushed each other over. They tried jumping to the side, getting on the rooftops, but the attacks had hit their legs and arms causing some of them to fall onto the ground.

"Keep firing, don't let them get close!" Edward said.

While some bloodsuckers were getting injured. They saw someone break formation and start to run towards the street, that's when they recognised it was Leo.

"We might hit him?" One of the vampires said concerned.

"Don't worry about him and keep attacking!" Edward said.

Out on the field, Leo was able to avoid each of the strikes coming from behind as if he had eyes on the back of his head, and those bloodsuckers who were injured, he would slash down with his sword one by one. Getting rid of their numbers as they were now, would be a big blow to the enemy.

However, he knew that this was only to help them in the long battle, as soon, the bloodsuckers had reached the vampire's position. The ranged battle had become a physical one.

The bloodsuckers barged their way through crashing into the enemy and digging their strong claws into the armour. Some of the vampires screamed and if it wasn't for the beast gear they would be dead by now.

Still, it was strange as the target of the bloodsuckers never seemed to be the vampires themselves. Their eyes would wonder and they would constantly be looking ahead at the mist.

'They are after one of the students,' Leo thought.

Hurrying, he slashed the few bloodsuckers that were rolling about on the floor and went back to help.

"I can't really see through this fog, what's happening?" Someone asked.

"Just stay here and we'll be safe." Another replied.

"He's right, we have to trust them," Said Amy.

The group of students were a little further back from the fighting force, but still close enough to hear every detail of what was going on. They heard screams, snarls , shouts of pain and cursing. Some of the students were thankful they couldn't see what was going on outside.

"Everyone ready!" Erin suddenly said. Which came as shock to the others, did it mean they were about to be attacked?

She knew what was happening outside, and she didn't really want to tell the others either. The vampires had put up a great fight killing many bloodsuckers in the process, but in the end they were too many, and they were stronger and faster than the vampires.

The second it became a close ranged fight, they were at the disadvantage.

'I won't let them die?' Erin thought, gritting her teeth.

The only other two that were aware of what had happened outside, was Xander and Timmy. Seeing the scene had even caused them to shiver, and breaking their concentration the mist started to disappear, revealing the horrifying scene in the street.

That's when they saw it, the vampires, were only down two a couple along with Edward and Leo a little behind them. While the bloodsuckers still had half their size left. Nearly all the vampires were dead.

"No!" We're going to die!" A student screamed.

With so little vampires holding the line, the bloodsuckers had started to charge forward at the students and leapt through the air, but before it could reach out, its body was sliced in half.

Even though Leo was far away, he had performed a Qi mixed attack with blood aura to kill the beasts and as soon as it sliced through the body, the red aura disappeared in seconds not continued to move forward.

'Has he learnt blood control already?' Edward thought seeing this, still distracting a couple of the bloodsuckers.

Rushing to their side, Leo was ready to protect them all.

"Don't move," Leo said. "If you move it makes it harder for me to protect you."

Things weren't looking the best, but Erin was still confident. They had Leo and Edward, even herself, and she felt they should be enough to get rid of the remaining forces. Whether they could do so protecting all the other students was a different story.

However, the bloodsuckers didn't move forward and instead were looking back down the street. As if their attention was on something else.

"He's here, the big boss has finally arrived," Leo said.

Bloodsuckers were generally already a little bigger than normal human beings, and now, one twice the size could be seen walking calmly down the street.

"I'm surprised you were able to kill this many," Rowa said. "I was told that the tenth family was a weak family. Looks like their information was wrong and there isn't only one special person among you all."

Leo knew that they would run into this man eventually, but he didn't predict how strong the bloodsuckers would be, or the size of their force. The bloodsuckers attacking them now were stronger and faster than those that had attacked them before.

So his predictions needed to change, just going up against Rowa alone. Leo felt that him and Edward needed to work together.

"Ahh!" A student screamed from behind. Leo quickly threw out another blood swipe, but this time the blood sucker jumped back avoiding the slash.

"Stay with them, protect the kids!" Edward shouted. "I will deal with him, don't worry about me, I am a vampire knight for a reason. When you've finished dealing with them, we will get rid of this guy as well."

Leo was wondering what to do, he sensed Erin's energy as well as the other students. Judging by their strength, it was impossible for them to come out alive without his help.

'He stood by the gate for so long. Perhaps he was worried about reinforcements from the other families. Did he come out because he could tell his people were dying. Then maybe there is still a chance.' Leo thought

Readjusting his position on the sword, Leo was ready.

"I will be helping you soon, right after I kill all these bloodsuckers."

Closing his eyes he focused on his chest, and the strange warm energy was ready to be brought out. Leo was ready to use his soul weapon.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 726: A blind man's soul

While the students were stuck in the mist, all of the vampires were fighting for their lives against the bloodsuckers. They had tried their best, using everything they could, and they were thankful that they were even able to last this long.

Countless times they would have died, been too slow, or overpowered if it wasn't for the beast armour. They felt that the other vampires were fools for mocking things that could improve their ability like this, and in the future they may come to regret not using such tools.

However, despite everything, they were still no match and they could tell when they started fighting. Their legs were shaking, as they were coming to terms with accepting their death.

"We won't run," An older vampire said by the name of Naj. "We can't run, I know all of you must be scared like me. But there's a reason I haven't turned and ran yet. My family is already dead, but those kids are still young and alive. Our future, the tenth's family future now lies in their hands. And I will continue to fight until my last breath!"

Those that had thought about running away, felt a little disgusted with themselves. If they ran then what life would they even be living? Could they even live with themselves if they were still alive.

Naj's words had given the vampires the will they needed to continue on. They did want to run away, but the kids behind them were pushing them on, so they continued to fight, fight and fight until eventually there was only one left. The bloodsucker had badly damaged and ruptured a lot of Naj's internal organs. It was beyond the point of healing as he laid there on the floor.

He could see the blood suckers he had tried to keep so far behind go ahead of him, and he regretted that he didn't train harder. Reaching out his hand he wished to fight even more.

"Don't worry, I will protect them." Said Leo, as he went off throwing out his sword infused blood swipe, killing the front runner of the bloodsuckers.

"Protect our future," Naj said with a smile. Being the last of the castle vampires to die. Now the only adult vampires still left alive were Leo and Edward, but Edward had his own mammoth of a task to deal with.

Right now he was standing in front of the giant bloodsucker, Rowa.

"Ah Edward, you have lived for so long waiting for Vincent to return, did he ever come back?" Rowa asked. "It was a shame, I liked that guy, he even had the guts to

leave this place. I respect him more than any of the vampires at that council table. It would be a shame if I have to kill you."

"Then why are you killing and attacking us?" Edward asked.

Rowa started to laugh, and the power felt so great in his laugh alone, it seemed like it was causing Edward to step back a little.

"You might be right, how about this, you give me the girl and I will leave things as it is, after all, that's the only reason why I'm here," Rowa said.

Edward was a little confused. There were a few girl students, but why would he want a girl? However, his loud voice made it so both Erin and Leo had heard and they very well could guess who they meant.

'So it really is my fault, if I give myself up now, will everyone live?' Erin thought.

But before she could even say anything, Edward had started to turn and change the area around him into a mist.

"Whatever the reason, I can not comply, after all, I have to pay you back for killing all of our family members." Edward said as his whole body disappeared into the mist.

Hearing this, Eirn regained her own composure, giving herself up wouldn't bring back those that were dead.

"You couldn't beat me when I was a leader, what makes you think you can beat me now?" Rowa asked, but Edward was never planning to beat Rowa, he was just buying time for someone else.

Knowing there was no more time to waste, Leo had no choice but to activate his soul weapon. Reaching within himself, he let the warm energy out. With his blade held in one hand, his other seemed to be covered in something.

To Erin, the only change she noticed with her ability was his aura seemed to be more concentrated in his left hand.

"What's that covering his hand?" Amy asked.

"You can see that?" That's when Erin realized that the aura was actually visible without using her ability, the whole of his left hand was covered in the red vampire aura, but in a layer underneath the normal yellow color humans had used.

One of the blood suckers went to grab one of the students and Leo at the same time struck his blade down, striking its arm off. However, two of the other bloodsuckers were soon on him, both going in for the attack, but only moving his left hand something strange seemed to happen.

The course of the attacks had changed and where they were originally aiming, their attack was hitting another place. They couldn't stop this momentum and the two bloodsuckers ended up impaling each other in the stomach. Turning around, Leo swung his blade, slicing both of their heads off.

"What was that?" Amy asked. "Was it telekinesis?"

It certainly looked that way, but Erin knew there was more to it. Two more bloodsuckers were going for the other students, showing his hand, soon one of their movements slowed down to almost a halt. Then jumping in, Leo struck the one in front, killing each of the bloodsuckers with one hit.

Still, this time he was hit by the bloodsucker on his side, but the claws just bounced off his beast armour. Currently, Leo wasn't wearing the best beast armour so something like that shouldn't have happened. Just like the other armours, it should have ripped through it.

The only person that had a clue what was going on was Erin, she could see it. The Aura's of the blood suckers were changing every single time Leo moved his other hand.

Leo's soul weapon was called aura manipulation. It was an enhancement type ability that allowed him to alter other people's aura. He could remove the aura from a strike, making it powerless, making one feel like they no longer had power going to their legs. And could redirect and change the direction of one's aura, changing the path of the attack.

The problem was, the stronger the enemy Leo used this skill on, the more of the enemy's aura he would have to manipulate and it would only tire him out quicker.

This was why even though Leo was a vampire with great stamina, sweat was running down his forehead.

"I will keep my promise and get rid of all of you!" Leo shouted, as he continued to fight off the remaining blood suckers.

Rowa who was stuck in a mist looked almost bored.

"If you were thinking that the other vampire knight would be able to help you, then think again," Rowa said. "Those bloodsuckers that are still alive were the top of the top. Candidates to become vampire knights, vampires living in the castle area. Why do you think they were able to kill your castle vampires so easily? I don't know whether your friend is the lucky one facing all of those, or you are, only having to face me."

Rowa was doing a lot of talking, but Edward hadn't said a word. He didn't want to do anything that would reveal to him where he was.

"Your skills are good, they always have been." Said Rowa. "I have no clue where you are but it doesn't matter."

He stretched back both of his arms, as far as he could, then storing up the energy in them they started to slightly vibrate. Like a spring, both of his hands shot together, clapping them. A deadly loud bang rang out. It was a hundred times louder than a gun going off.

Nonetheless, it had done its job. With a simple clap, Rowa had gotten rid of the annoying mist and Edward's real body could be seen.

Edward tried to start up his ability again but it was too slow. Punching downward at the top of his head, Rowa used his full power. This caused Edwards's head to collapse into his ribcage and his body falling to the floor.

"No!!" Timmy cried out. "Edward, Edward!" Timmy continued to shout.

Using her ability Erin could see it... Edward was dead.

All it took was one hit from Rowa. His strength was beyond any current vampire leader.

When Rowa looked up he was surprised at what he could see, twenty five of his elite bloodsuckers had all been killed, and a bald headed blind man was standing in front of the students, huffing and panting.

'Who is this vampire knight, he is as strong as a vampire leader, yet I have never seen him before.' Rowa thought. 'It's a shame he is already spent.'

Placing his blade in the ground, Leo held onto it, holding himself up. He had used his soul weapon for too long and he was now completely out of breath. The bloodsuckers were faster than he thought, but he had kept his promise as not a single student was hurt.

"Erin..." Leo said, taking in huffs of air. "Take everyone and run, I will hold him as long as I can."

After seeing what happened to Edward and seeing what condition Leo was in, Erin didn't think she could beat such a man. She knew she would lose.

'Again, it's all happening again. Everyone's going to die and I can do nothing about it!' Erin thought as she turned around and started running. She then felt her head bang into something sturdy.

"I'm sorry, it looks like I have come too late," a soft old voice said.

When Erin looked up at what or who she had bumped into, it was an unexpected face.

It was the vampire king.

"Nobody interferes, I will be dealing with this matter myself," The king said.

Behind him, ten royal vampires and his two royal knights bowed down.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 727: The second ability

Seeing the king arrive himself, everyone felt a sense of relief that this would soon all be over. The kids could feel the comfortable, strong energy radiating from him. To them, the king was a sign of power and they could never imagine him losing to anyone.

The students were quickly protected by the royal vampires, and Dwight had even pulled Leo back with them.

'Did he do all this by himself, it looks like my evaluation of his strength was off by quite a bit.' Dwight thought, seeing all the dead bloodsuckers on the floor. 'What worries me more than anything is this might not even be his peak.'

When they knew all the kids were safe, they moved a distance away from the fight so as not to get hurt, but could still see everything with their superior eyesight.

With attacks coming from these two strong forces, if a stray was to come at them, not even they could stop it.

"With the king here, it should be over."

"He'll get rid of that giant bloodsucker and get revenge for us." The students started to talk.

Although everyone seemed calm and thought nothing could go wrong, there was a look of concern on both Dwight's and the other royal knight's face. This was because only they knew what the current condition of the king was.

'Please, just don't use too much power.' Dwight thought.

"The king is finally getting involved, I thought you would never leave your castle old man." Rowa said. "Well, it looks like we have just moved from step three all the way to step ten. This was going to happen eventually." Slamming his fist into his hand, each time creating a loud bang.

"Edward!" Timmy continued to cry, he hadn't stopped crying his name since he had seen what had been done to him. That's when Dwight realised that his body was still in range of their attacks. Quickly going in, he grabbed the body and returned to where the others were.

When placing the body on the floor, everyone saw Edward's headless body, though the head wasn't missing, it was just inside of his own chest. He was dead, and there was no coming back from this.

'What will happen to the Tenth family without you Edward?' Dwight thought. 'Now was not the right time for you to leave them.'

The Tenth was already a shambles before, and there were many times where the council had thought about selecting a new leader, but Edward was what held it all together. He knew the ways of the vampires and how the vampires acted, with him gone, who else could take the lead of this fragmented family?

The king took off his grand white robe, dropping it on the floor to reveal a strange armour that was radiating with power. The chest piece was black in colour but the design on it almost looked like a demon face was engraved into the front, and there were two red glowing eyes near the pectoral area.

Underneath the armour he wore a simple white bright shirt, but there were more pieces of armour around his hands and feet. They had a similar design of red and black to match the chest piece.

"The king's armour, passed down from king to king." Rowa said. "It looks like you decided to take this fight seriously, then so will I."

Rowa was the first to act, pushing both his feet off the ground. The power was so strong that the floor beneath him rose up like an explosion. The ground had been flung so forcibly that it destroyed a house behind it.

When Rowa reached the king, he threw out his fist too fast for nearly anyone to keep track of, but Erin and Leo could follow it with their aura. The attack continued moving forward destroying three buildings in front of it from the force of the wind generated.

"How is it possible to have that much power?" Xander asked. "Can the king really beat that thing?"

"Do not doubt the king," Dwight said sternly.

Standing on Rowa's body on top his shoulder was the king himself.

"With such a large body you are very easy to hit, and the biggest weakness of a blood sucker, how weak their vitality is!" Lifting his foot up, the king stomped hard into his shoulder and Rowa's feet were sunk deep into the ground.

He tried to grab onto the king but he was no longer there, instead he clawed at the back of his knee making him fall on his front. Pulling one of his legs out of the ground, Rowa managed to land a kick on the king, but he had blocked the attack in time raising both his hands.

There was no time for rest between the two of them, as they continued to attack each other, but it was clear that the king was faster, and it looked like his blows were dealing more damage as well. Soon Rowa was covered with cuts and punctures all over his body.

Rowa had managed to hit the king a few times, his speed was also great but each one was blocked. Soon it looked like Rowa life was going to come to an end, there were too many wounds on his body.

Dwight was thankful that so far the king hadn't used any blood skills, for this was his main concern if he was to get involved in a fight.

Falling to the floor, it appeared that Rowa was done for.

"We will bring you in and find out who has been helping you." The king said. "You shall suffer for the rest of your days, never getting a day of peace until you tell us who has been helping you."

But then, something strange started to happen. Rowa's body started to shrink down, the blood sucker's features were becoming less prominent and he was now back to looking like a normal vampire.

Apart from the hair, he looked exactly like his old self when he was leader.

"Surprised?" Rowa croaked out. "You thought that once someone turned into a blood sucker through blood addiction, it wasn't possible to turn back into a regular vampire. This was why you punished us, tried to chase us out, but I knew that one day I would prove you wrong."

Rowa was expecting the king to be shocked by this revelation, to feel bad for how he had treated all the past vampires, but he just stood there looking at him.

"Come on say something! Think about all the vampires you executed that didn't need to be killed! I was right, I proved you wrong."

"Is this why you have decided to return?" The king finally replied. "That isn't the reason for getting rid of the blood suckers. When you turn into one, you are too far gone for us to change you, the way you think. We already knew it was possible to change your body back. Just like when a vampire is starved from blood, there are ways for it to revert back, of course there would be ways for those addicted."

Rowa's hand was now shaking with anger, he didn't understand. What had he been doing this whole time? Why had he been trying so hard to solve this problem? There was a time he thought that maybe if he returned to the king proving this fact, that he would allow them to return to the vampires, to live side by side with them, but now the king was saying this was never a possibility.

"Why! Why do you reject this part of the vampires so much!" Rowa shouted, as blood continued to pour out from his wounds. The more he moved, the quicker it looked like he would come to his death.

"Because, we must protect the humans," The king replied. "This is something that not only you, but some of the vampires don't understand. It is our mission, it was what we were born in this world to do."

Barely standing on his two wobbly feet, Rowa was still shaking with anger.

"Once I've killed you, I'm going to kill all your precious humans as well."

A strange bubble formed around the whole of Rowa's body, and nearly in an instant all of his wounds that he had, seemed to be disappearing in front of everyone's eyes.

"Is he healing himself?" Amy asked. "But he didn't drink any blood."

"No, he's not healing." Dwight replied. "Rowa used to be the leader of the Second family. They have the ability to reverse time in a small area and right now, he's making it as if the wounds on his body had never happened yet."

When all the wounds had finally healed, Rowa started to transform his body into the blood sucker once again.

"I know you're getting tired old man, I could feel and see your movements getting slower towards the end of the fight." Rowa said. "You thought the fight was over, and now you will have to beat me all over again, and I will come back no matter how many times it takes to beat you!"

Instead of looking at Rowa, at that moment the king turned towards Dwight.

'No your majesty please don't.' Dwight wanted to call out. He knew why he was looking his way. 'If you do this, you will die.'

"You are right, if I have to battle you over and over again, I would tire before your ability would run out." The king said. " Which means I only have one option - to completely over power you and kill you. I will not give you a chance to use your ability again."

The king's eyes started to glow red, and his whole body started to shake.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 728: The king's power

At first when they looked at the king, they thought they could see him shaking, but that's when they realised it wasn't him that was shaking at all, it was them. The strange power the king was activating made everyone's body start to vibrate slightly and the students, including a few of the royal vampires, fell to the ground. They felt weak and couldn't take the upsetting feeling they had in their stomach.

"What is going on?" Erin asked, as she too had fallen to the floor, taking a knee. But Leo stood there strong, still pinned up with his sword.

"Listen up," Dwight said. "You two don't know much about the vampire world but you are now too involved. There is a reason why some of the leaders are so obsessed with becoming the vampire king. When one becomes king there are two things that get passed on to the next. The first being the armour the king is wearing. It is one of the only two sets of armour in existence that has been purely made out of blood crystals.

"Today we haven't seen the extent of this armour, due to its power not being activated by any human blood. As for the second thing, it's a skill passed down that only the king can learn and that skill is what you're about to witness."

When saying these words, there was a sharp pain going through Dwight's heart. With the current king's strength, using such power could possibly end his life, if it didn't, it would certainly shorten it.

"Summoning this much power, are you trying to kill your self old man!" Rowa said, even he felt uneasy.

"Rowa, you are strong, stronger than possibly any other vampire I know of..." the king said. Then the image of a certain someone who had returned recently popped into his head. "Let me take that back, you are stronger than any vampire here. You could beat any of the leaders. I can't go easy on you."

Lifting his hands from his side, red balls of red liquid had formed, and soon from all the dead blood suckers around, and all the dead vampires in the inner castle area, their blood was floating in the air. Every single last drop of blood had been lifted from the ground and taken directly out of the dead bodies.

"The skill passed down from king to king, absolute blood control." Dwight said. "When one obtains this skill, they can control the blood in their own body, advancing the vampire's body beyond what any leader has ever seen. There's no need for the king to become a blood sucker to match up with Rowa's speed, for his body has already reached that point.

"But that's not the only thing the skill can do.."

Rowa charged in once again, at full strength. He was just as fast as he was before. But suddenly at a light speed, all of the blood that was in the air, had moved to where the king was and had formed a giant wall of blood. It looked like there was a waterfall pouring from above.

When Rowa punched the wall of blood, it did nothing, his hand went through it but there was nothing else. Then, a sharp pain could be felt through his whole body and eventually into his back. Turning his head he could see that thousands of blood daggers were floating behind him, stabbing him constantly.

With no choice, he attempted to run through the waterfall of blood but that was his biggest mistake. The blood surrounded him like a tornado, and threw him up in the air. He noticed that from the wounds that had been made, his own blood was working against him, restraining him from doing anything.

He couldn't see anything and had no clue what was happening, looking around all he could see was red blood swirling around. He kicked and punched, nothing was effective.

Finally, the blood had disappeared around him, and he could now see that he had been thrown up fifty meters into the air, he could see the whole city from up high. However, there was something else there that wasn't there before.

It was a giant blade made of blood. It was taller than any of the castles. Turning his head, he could see six more surrounding him.

"Old man, do you really have to go this far!" Rowa shouted. "Do you hate us this much!" Now genuine tears were running down his face and sadness was taking over from the anger. Rowa started to revert back to his regular vampire form.

"Look at me, I am one of you. I served you and you're going to kill me, kill your own kind over them!"

The king had his hands held up to the sky, he said nothing but coughed as his own blood had started to trickle out of his mouth. That too started to float up in the air and join the blood made blades.

Swinging his hands down, all of the giant blood blades swung at the same time. At the same time they had clashed into Rowa's body. When it did, the swords started to crush into each other and a great explosion of blood occurred.

The sight could be seen for miles in the vampire settlement and all of the vampires had witnessed what had just happened.

"Pathetic." Bryce thought while watching the spectacle from his castle window. "If I was king, I would have never used so much power against a weakling like that."

"Damn it! Damn it! Damn it!" Another vampire stomped the ground, witnessing Rowa's death.

"It may have been the end of your life Rowa," Cindy, the current Second vampire leader said, "But you have affected the vampire world far greater than you know, now it will be the start of a new era." Saying these words, tears started to fall down her cheeks.

As for the rest of the vampires, they soon found themselves covered in a rainfall of blood. Little droplets fell down like rain and covered everyone's faces from the explosion. In the sky where Rowa's body once was, there was nothing. Not a single scrap of flesh or clothing, but somewhere in the rainfall of blood, was his.

The king had since fallen and was laying on the ground.

Dwight, knowing the fight was over rushed over to his majesty's side. He held him up to check if he was okay, and thankfully there seemed to be faint sights of breathing.

"Tell Cindy to head to the main castle now, we will meet her in his majesty's room. Your majesty, you have done enough, you have protected the people from the great threat."

The king shook his head disagreeing with this, he wanted to speak to tell Dwight of the Tenth people that had died and of the future he wouldn't live to see. Killing Rowa would not put an end to the vampire's deaths, but he was too weak to speak.

"Don't worry, I promise we will work harder than ever, we will find which dreaded bastard was working with the blood sucker, and I will personally kill every last one of them!" Dwight said, shaking in anger.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 729: The fallen king

After the incident with those that called themselves the true form vampires, the Tenth family was in recovery mode. Now standing outside the inner castle, were a few vampires from the royal family who were each as strong as a vampire knight.

They were placed there just in case anything else was to occur. They had realised after the attack that the Tenth family were the only family who were attacked. None of the other vampire families, or areas had been touched.

Even though the supposed leader of the true vampires were dead, they still suspected that there were more blood suckers out there that hadn't joined in with the battle, without a leader, or perhaps now under the control of whoever was helping them before, which was why the guards were placed there.

An investigation was carried out with the main purpose of clarifying a few things. Why was the Tenth family targeted? It would have made sense if it was another family's doing, but not for Rowa to target them since he knew nothing about the recent changes in the vampire council. The second purpose was to find out who had helped them.

The investigation led them to discover a few key things. The guards that were stationed at the Tenth's gate to the inner castle area had been influenced to not raise an alarm. It was assumed this was how the blood suckers were able to infiltrate the Tenth area without anyone knowing and killing those that were inside.

It was hard to tell whether it was a vampire from one of the other vampire families or not after the revelation that Rowa was able to turn back to his regular state and use his powers as per usual. As a leader, he would have easily been able to influence them and anyone on the way who would have seen anything.

Still, Dwight was keeping to his word and he wasn't letting any leaf go unturned in his thorough investigation. It would take some time, the problem was he felt like time was something they didn't have.

At the Tenth castle, they were struggling without Edward, there was no support sent from the council and on top of this, the king wasn't in a position to help them much either with the investigation. All the trust that they had built up with the vampires had disappeared in one moment.

Since the other families were full, vampires who wished to move families weren't able to, but no longer did anyone want to move into the inner castle area where so many had died. In their minds, the Tenth leaders and vampire knights failed to protect them and the one thing that put them altogether was Edward.

The only ones that had remained in the inner castle area were staying at the castle itself, and those were the students that had survived. They saw what happened first

hand, they could tell that if Rowa had attacked any of the other castle areas it would have been the same result.

It was why the king had to use so much power. Also where else could they go? Their families had been slaughtered and now there was nothing else they could do. What stood out in their minds though most were the vampires that had fought to protect them from the blood suckers.

That memory was ingrained in their minds, when they fought, they fought as the Tenth family vampires and the students wanted to do the same, not letting their blood be split in vain.

With Edward gone and wishing to help Leo with his duties, two people stood up to the task. That was both Xander and Timmy. Xander knew a lot about vampire politics as he studied about it before joining the First family.

It was important for him not to offend anyone and tip toe around if he wanted to rise up and he thought this knowledge would help greatly. As for Timmy, before Leo and the others arrived he was Edward's personal assistant, so he knew the tasks that needed to be done day in and day out.

In front of the Tenth castle, a ceremony was held for the vampires that had died as well as a special send off to the vampire knight Edward. Anyone was free to join from the other families and surprisingly nearly every vampire from the Tenth family had attended.

Even if they never wanted to be in the Tenth family, they could still remember and appreciate everything Edwards did for them. Surprisingly there was also a high turnout from the other vampire families, with six family leaders turning up with their vampire knights.

They were the leaders that had chosen not to get involved on the day of Fex's execution.

"Edward, you were quite the popular guy." Leo said. "Our time together was short, but I could tell that you were a good man. Too many good people die in this world to allow others to live."

When the ceremony was over, the students entered the castle in tears, and Xander, Amy, and Timmy couldn't stop sobbing as they walked back inside. It was an unusual thing to experience, vampires often just went into eternal sleep when they were ready. It was peaceful and it was something they wished to do.

To them, death was a horrible thought, leaving the world without doing everything one had wished.

As for Erin, she stormed off after the ceremony and when she entered the castle she went straight for one of the training rooms. She threw her katana-like blade on the ground, and used the large thick heavy blade on her back. She didn't want to focus

on practicing on skill, she didn't want to think about anything but just letting her anger out as she swung the heavy blade.

Images would constantly appear in her head, not just of what had recently happened but also what had happened in the past.

"It's the same! I didn't do anything! I thought I had gotten stronger!" She screamed, swinging the blade again and again.

A strange energy was rising in her as she pictured Edwards' head getting smashed in. She swung hard hitting the floor, when she saw her parents being killed by the Dalki.

"What am I meant to do noooow!" She shouted.

At that moment the doors opened and Erin turned around huffing and panting to see who it was.

"Erin, are you okay?" Amy asked, but she soon covered her hand over her mouth.  
"Erin, your eyes, they're, they're yellow."

In the king's bedroom, Cindy the Second leader had tried her best to use her ability on him, but it was impossible. Her ability could only reverse time by so much. If she was reversing his condition by two hours, he was worsening at such a rate that all it was doing was slowing it down.

"Is there nothing you can do!" Dwight shouted in anger.

Cindy didn't take this personally, as she knew Dwight just cared about the king. If a new king was elected by vampire code Dwight would have to leave him, this was why most royal vampire knights decided to pass on with their king.

But Dwight didn't want the king to go to sleep, not yet. Not until he found out who was betraying them and had caused him to go into such a state. This was why if the king needed to go in internal sleep, he would choose not to.

"I'm sorry, if he sleeps now, then he will regain his strength and no longer be in pain. Maybe after a thousand years or so, he will have the strength to move like a regular vampire, but he has already aged greatly, he will never be at the strength he once was."

Clenching his fist, Dwight knew what this meant.

"So you're saying he has no choice, he has to go into eternal slumber now, and a new king needs to be elected?"

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 730: New Era powerhouses

"This is the last one," Bonny said, as she carefully steered the spaceship and it started to descend.

"Thank the heavens," Void replied, as he started to get his equipment ready from his little satchel bag that was attached around his waist. He pulled out a flat square device that was no bigger than a book, then placed a round camera lens on the front of it. "Visiting all these places has been quite intense, we're lucky that everyone has been so nice to us so far."

"We're reporters, that's our job," Bonny replied. "They know that people like us are needed, besides we're practically the only ones, don't you feel a sense of duty?"

Void sighed in defeat as he knew she was right. The two of them had been in countless life or death situations together being war reporters, and this time was no different. He knew the job he had signed up for.

Bonny was a well known reporter that had continued to give reliable information to the civilians, and update the people living in shelters all around. But it was a job she couldn't do alone.

Many new reporters relied on gadgets like drones and such, but she liked to do her reporting the old fashioned way, with a good old camera man and that was Void.

She was quite the beauty as a reporter. She had silky straight brown hair with a fringe that went down to her eyebrows and no further. She looked like a pop singer and also had the diva personality to go with it.

Her facial expression could change whenever she wished. On camera when it mattered, she would have the right emotional face to match, but off screen or when needed to be, she could smile warming people's hearts.

Meanwhile the man behind the camera never got enough credit for his work, but he didn't have the face to be on camera either. Freckles covered his nose and were heavy under his eyes, even though he was an adult. He also had curly hair that was a nightmare to deal with.

At times like this, he didn't care and just allowed it to go wild, as long as it wouldn't block the camera lense he was fine with it.

As the ship descended they could see they were landing in the middle of a plain tiled floor, right in front of a Chinese styled palace. There were several buildings placed around on different levels and tiers and they were landing on the lowest. Leaving the ship, there were men waiting to greet them and each of them wore bright white robes.

"We have finally arrived," Bonny said with a big smile. "The Graylash family."

The group of men escorted Bonny and Void as they headed into the building. While walking, Void couldn't help but continuously take pictures of the spectacle around him, it had such beautiful architecture and it felt peaceful.

"Could you please delete and not take any more photos," Hector said, the member of the Graylash family who was currently leading the reporters. "Maybe not know, but those photos could help our enemies know the layout of our base and more."

Void immediately bowed down, apologising and got to deleting the photos right away. He was surprised that they had told him so respectfully. There were times when they would get in quite the pickle for something like this. He knew better, he just couldn't help but want to take a picture when he saw such an amazing sight.

As the two of them continued to walk, they thought back to the reason why they were here right now, and the reports they had made so far.

Before coming to the Graylashes, they had met with the military leader Oscar, and also with the Bree family leader Mona. They tried to meet with Pure but had no clue where their base was nor had any leads to go on.

The reason for speaking to these people was to ask what the current state of the civil war was looking like. News about a demon tier beast on a particular planet had already been spread far and wide, and everyone knew each powerhouse had their eyes on the prize.

The question was, why hadn't anyone acted yet? The reply was a surprising one and it gave hope to those that maybe the civil war was coming to an end.

The powerhouses were currently in talks with each other to see if they could somehow make it so it was a joint hunt for the demon tier beast. All sides had already felt that there had been too much death on all accounts.

They could only imagine what would happen if they all tried to go for the demon tier separately, it would be even worse. So they were currently negotiating a way to make the hunt fair between all of them and hunt together.

It was a sign that maybe the talks after this, could lead into something further and end the Civil war. However, there was something else on their minds and something else Bonny wanted to ask each of them.

"In your current talks, are you considering inviting one of the, as people are calling them, new era powerhouses?" Bonny had asked Oscar, the supreme commander.

"It's actually one of the reasons why we have been so patient. After the Sunshields disappearance there has been a lot of speculation about what will happen. Everyday members of Pure are coming out more and more and I believe they will no longer

hide and will be willing to talk soon. My bet is on them becoming a big powerhouse.

"Daisy however does have a way with the people. Many factions have decided to go with her because of her charisma and skill of leading. Honestly, I am unaware of how much strength their group truly has, but I could say the same for Pure as well."

When Bonny had asked the question to Mona, leader of the Bree family, she had said the opposite.

"I think that Daisy will come out as one of the major powerhouses," Mona replied.  
"In the past, they have always been right behind the big four in terms of strength. If it wasn't for Truedream's strange ability, I always thought soon we would be inviting them over to the leaders table.

"As for Pure, there is speculation amongst the people that they are an incredibly strong group but I don't believe that. If that was true, why did they ever have to go in hiding and act as a terrorist group in the first place? The only person we have to worry about is their leader, who contains an demon tier weapon."

Both of these interviews were broadcasted all over and the public were split when discussing who would become the next powerhouse, but Bonny had one more thing to ask.

"Recently there has been talks about a new power rising, a faction called the Cursed family. They have quickly taken over a few planets with very small forces. Because of this, they have also been considered a contender, do you know anything about them?"

"The Cursed family?" Oscar replied. "I have heard their name in reports here and there as they have taken over only a few planets, but when looking into their members, there seemed to be no names that stand out."

"The Cursed family," Mona said, a little surprised at the name. "I don't think it's even worth mentioning any new powers. This happens from time to time, and they will just be absorbed by either Pure or Daisy. Although, maybe if one of these groups takes over the Cursed family they will have enough power to take over another."

Both Bonny and Void had entered the room where Owen was sitting down in a relaxed manner. They had already asked him a few questions but finally, Bonny had gotten to the same question as she had asked the others. About which new era power did he think was going to rise to the top.

So far, the military had said Pure, while Mona had said Daisy. It was expected that the general public opinion was also one of these two, so she was excited to see if a third opinion would sway one side's favour.

"Which is the new era powerhouse out of those two?" Owen repeated. "I think neither. The ones that will shock us all, are the Cursed family." Owen replied.

This blew Bonny's expectations out of the water. Owen had said those words so confidently, while the other two had debated over the two. Just what had made Owen so confident?

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 731: Making the first move

When Bonny spoke to Owen, she hadn't mentioned the Cursed faction like she did with the other interviews. She thought it was an interesting subject at first, but it seemed like neither of the other big families were particularly keeping their eye on this new faction, their replies were disappointing and didn't make for a good interview. So she thought it would be pointless to ask again a third time, and would only bring it up at the end of the interview just in case.

But for the first time, the interviewer had brought up the faction themselves. Bonny's little sense was tingling, as she felt like she was onto something.

"I have to ask." Bonny said in an excited voice. She was upbeat now and the change in her tone could be heard by everyone. "Why do you speak so highly of the Cursed faction. Their name has recently been passed along, and I also noticed that they seemed to have started out their planet questing campaign near the Graylash family territory. If you really thought this highly of them, wouldn't it have been better for you to either get rid of them early on, or try to get them to join under you?"

During the interview, Owen had his metal fan covering his mouth the whole time, he often spoke this way when speaking to others, but he decided to take it down and place it on his lap. When she could finally see his face, she noticed how young Owen really looked and how precious his smile was.

For a second, she completely forgot how he was one of the people who sat with the others at the leader table. The others were quite old and gave off a wise feeling, but Owen, he seemed to have the mind of a trickster, a fox in disguise.

"How much do you know about the Cursed family?" Owen finally asked.

"Not much, just what we told you right now."

"Then let me tell you something, in this world I think there are people who are born to be natural leaders. Even if they don't know it themselves, when they are chucked into a situation people will rely on them."

"When I met their leader, I could tell he was not someone who would work under me. And if your evaluation is like mine, I knew it would be more beneficial to work with him, rather than become an enemy of his."

Bonny was a bit stunned by what the Graylash family had said. Out of the big four powers, there were many that hailed the Graylash's ability as the strongest, but there was always one thing holding them back. It was the fact that their ability didn't work well against the earth ability that the military had a monopoly over.

The reason she felt shocked, was because their leader was quite possibly treating the Cursed family leader as an equal, even more, the two of them seemed to have met in person.

"You seem to think very highly of them, who is this leader you speak of?" She asked. When she tried doing her research about the current leader of the Cursed, it was hard for her to come up with anything.

She was sure it had to be a leader of a high ranking faction that possibly broke off and now created their own, or something similar along the lines. The other possibility was it was someone who had broken off from Pure, but that was unlikely as well from what she had heard from the reports.

Owen started to chuckle and stood up from his seat.

"Why don't you go and meet them, see if your evaluation is right like mine. Also you've met him before."

With that, the interview had come to an end, and Void and Bonny were told to pack their things and leave.

When entering their ship, Void was looking back over the recordings and footage they had received. "Where to now?" Void asked.

"We could try to find out more about Pure, or we can head to one of the planets that Pure and Daisy have taken over. It seems like the two faction are at boiling point with each other." He asked.

"No," Bonny said, shaking her head. "Didn't you hear what he said, we have to go see the Cursed faction. They could be the next big thing, an influence of power in this war."

"Are you serious?" Void replied. "You know it's safer for us to record this thing from who we think is going to be the winning side, otherwise there's a chance we could get caught in the crossfire. Usually when we're recording, we make that faction look good so they're more willing to protect us, and you really think this Cursed faction can do this?"

"Think about it, Owen was far more confident than the others, and we only have to go see them, I'm sure we can tell once we meet them whether or not it's the right decision to follow them."

On the Cursed family ship, the group was having a meeting. Each of the groups had been busy going from planet to planet taking over the other factions if they were to cause trouble. The main way they would do so was through a duel, but more times than not, it wouldn't work out and they would have to demonstrate the extent of their powers before the faction agreed to either work under them, or leave.

Most of the factions, had agreed to join under them, as there wasn't much they could do, some that had left had tried returning attacking a second time, but after setting up teleporters from the Cursed ship to each planet, they were easily able to send there strongest fighters and defend the planets successfully.

The successful defence had gotten around the small factions and other planets which made it easy for them to take over, but now they were in quite the pickle.

All of the planets that were once claimed by the Sunshield family had already been claimed, with the Cursed faction including the Crow's planet, they had taken over six in total.

Ten had been taken over by Pure, while double the amount twelve had been taken over by Daisy.

"Beep, Beep." The ship's indicator went off.

Sam answered the call, and spoke to Bonny who was on the other end for a while before telling her they needed to think about it, Quinn and the others had also heard everything he said.

"So what do you think?" Sam asked.

"Actually, I would like to hear your thoughts on this." Quinn replied. "You have been great in coming up with plans and talks through all of this so far."

"I think we should do it. The interview, and the filming will be good press for our family and people. They can see how we treat our own and maybe more people, including the civilians will be happy to switch sides."

Quinn thought about it for a while and finally gave his answer.

Bonny and Void were now just floating around in space, waiting for a reply. They didn't want to set a destination as they knew they might be going in the complete opposite direction, that's when they finally got a reply back from Sam.

When the call ended, she had a strange look on her face that Void didn't understand.

"Why aren't you jumping with joy like you usually are?" Void asked. "We got the interview you wanted, didn't you?"

"Yeah but didn't you hear?" Bonny replied. "They want to do the interview on Planet Kutuma." She then pressed a button getting up a map of the beast planet area. Each of the planets were colour coordinated. Something that she had set herself. A different colour represented what planets belonged to which powers.

Void looked for a while and finally spotted the name of the planet, which was coloured white. "What was White again? Wait what! They want to do an interview on one of the planets owned by Pure."

Bonny nodded.

"It means, they have decided to make the first move out of the new Era powers. I knew this was going to be something exciting," Bonny said with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 732: Red flush

"Hey, did you see the latest report from Bonny?"

"What the one with the Bree family?"

"No, not that one you lemon. How the hell did you miss it? I'm talking about the one with the Graylash family."

[A new user has entered the chat.]

"Ah, I was waiting to see it, not everyone has no life checking out these things all the time you know?"

"We're in the middle of a civil war, us non fighters have to keep on top of things. Anyway, basically they said this Cursed faction is going to be the one that becomes part of the big three."

"You really believe that, why would Owen give a no name faction like that as his answer?"

[A new user has entered the chat.]

"The Cursed faction, that name is kinda lame, but doesn't that remind you of something? Were any of you guys at the inter base tournament last year? There was a kid who called himself the Cursed child. "

"Cursed child? Come on, couldn't he have come up with anything better. The Big Toe sounds like a cooler name than that, just thinking about entering with a stage name like that and hearing the announcer shout out "Cursed child" makes me cringe so hard my balls start to hurt."

"If your balls start hurting after thinking about that, I think maybe you should go see a doctor. Anyway the Cursed child actually did really well, some say he could have even won the tournament if he wanted to, but decided to forfeit. I'm telling you, these two things are linked in some way."

[A new user has entered a chat]

"Guys, guys, have you seen this? After the latest interview, someone went ahead and set up a betting ring. Basically you choose which new era faction is going to come out on top."

"Seriously, well I guess there's nothing better for people like us to do, maybe we should try to earn some easy credits, who even set up this thing anyway?"

"Not sure, but what's interesting is you can see how much people have bet and so far, the Cursed faction has the least amount of bets, maybe I should put some

money on them, who knows what could happen, just like at the tournament the Cursed child could surprise us all, lol."

\*\*\*\*\*

On the Cursed ship, as usual Quinn was preparing to take a small team with him over to one of the planets that Pure had currently occupied. Just in case, people needed to be left behind so they were able to protect the planets that they had occupied themselves.

More eyes were now on them than ever before, and there was a good chance that if Daisy found out that Quinn had taken a large force with him to one of the Pure planets, then they would try and attack one of his.

[Status]

[Strength: 60]

[Stamina: 60]

[Agility: 60]

[Charm: 60]

Every time they had taken over one of the planets, Quinn had made sure his people went around and took as many blood samples from different people as possible. Sam was already ordered to do this and he continued to, until Quinn had finally hit his max once again.

Consuming blood now didn't increase any of his stats, which meant his body would be at the limit, at least until the next evolution.

'Am I just as strong as those vampire leaders now?' Quinn thought. 'Or maybe I'm just at the bottom.'

Quinn could assume this was as strong as a vampire noble could get. All of the leaders were vampire lords so their stats should be better than his.

However, there were a few advantages Quinn had over the other leaders. For one, he had beast gear which the other vampires didn't use, improving his stats significantly. The other advantages were his Qi, and finally his soul weapon.

However, there were the blood weapons vampires carried that a few had as well, and also the vampires abilities. If Quinn was to compare his shadow ability at the moment, he would say his ability was weaker than theirs. But seeing how well Arthur was able to utilise the shadow, he knew he had room for improvement in that area. Especially since his shadow was still at the ability level of seven and he had one more skill to unlock before going up to level eight.

As for becoming a vampire lord himself, the Exp amount was far too high. According to Fex, vampires took hundreds of years to become a vampire lord. Although Quinn felt like his progression had slowed down a lot, if they knew how quickly and close he was to becoming a vampire lord, they would have had a heart attack.

All he could hope for after completing the quest of becoming part of the big three, was to receive an instant level up.

Entering one of the medium sized spaceships, he was on his way and with him was Nate and Sam. These two were chosen because they needed another strong fighter, and Sam was there to try and talk to the reporters, as well as settle things with Pure without too much conflict. There were also around fifty or so faction members, ranked around D and C taken with them.

These had fought with Quinn during his take-over, although "fought with" was a very generous phrase to describe it.

"Ah, I wish it was one of the Daisy planets we went to." Nate complained. "We wouldn't have had to fight at all, I could have used my charming looks to swoon them over into surrendering."

"Has that ever happened?" Sam replied. "If anyone is going to win over people just from their looks, then Quinn's got more chance than anyone."

Nate glanced at Quinn's pure skin, that didn't seem to have a mark on it. No acne scars, no scars at all. And there was no change in pigmentation in his skin. His body was better proportioned compared to Nate as well, who had short, stumpy legs.

"Hey Quinn, I know you're busy with this whole taking over the world thing.." Nate said.

"I'm not trying to take over the world." Quinn replied. "I'm trying to change it. You're making me sound like a villain."

"Potato, Potahto. Anyway, my point is now that you're kinda my boss and everything I don't want to step on your toes. Do you have any girls you're interested in at the base at all? Or boys of course. But there must be someone in your life."

What Nate actually was thinking, was what if Quinn was interested in any girls at the base who had made Nate's list? Then he would have to give up immediately because there was no way he was winning. Maybe in the past he could have fought for his love, but he knew he stood no chance now. Not yet anyway.

'Thinking of girls, there's plenty that have been in my life.' Quinn thought. Layla, Erin, Cia, Kazz, Silver. He never had time to stop and think about these types of things because he was always running for his life.

Thinking about the girls, Quinn wondered about the information he had received so far about the Pure planets. From Layla and Cia they had told him that this was only a small portion of Pure's force that were involved in this fight.

But with each of the planets that had left what they refer to as the 'numbered' behind on them. Those in Pure that were ranked from five to twenty were left on each planet in charge. And there was one of the high ranked numbers, from one to five in charge of the whole operation.

In a way, Layla had explained that Pure were only committing a little more than one fifth of their force in this takeover. They were confident that this was enough, and they had been doing a good job so far.

Because of this insider information, it was why they had decided to attack Pure first, not wanting to mess anything up, Quinn had decided to personally be involved.

A meeting place with the reporters had been made beforehand and it was placed a distance away from the shelter where Pure was based. They would have seen the ship coming, but such a small one they wouldn't possibly think that it was an attack with so little people.

They had also scouted out the planet a few times, and no ships were sent to attack them and it was the same this time.

The location they had agreed to meet at was an abandoned shelter, or a destroyed one that used to belong to the military before the planet was completely taken over by the Sunshields. It was the smaller of the two that were on the planet.

Both Bonny and Void were already there patiently waiting for them. Bonny felt like bouncing up and down as she saw the ship land, and when the rail came down she saw who was out in front, her excitement quickly dwindled.

"Isn't that the kid I interviewed at the all base tournament?" She said out loud, not even being able to hold in her thoughts. "The mystery leader of the Cursed faction is just a kid?"

The ship had landed a distance away, but Quinn spoke loud and clear while walking over.

"Do I really look that young?" Quinn said.

He had heard her with his hearing from far away, but when Quinn finally got close and Bonny got closer, a strange feeling had come over her. Her face started to blush bright red and her pupils winded.

"What have you done to me?" She asked.

When Quinn was finally close enough, she grabbed him, pulling him forward and pressed her soft lips against his.

"WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON!" Nate shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 733: Film everything

Bonny didn't know what was happening and just acted on instinct. Her lips were still pressed against the boy's and suddenly, the strange feeling she had that was in her body, had disappeared.

Void, who was standing off to the side, had his mouth left wide open and he also had his camera held out. What the others were unaware of was Void and Bonny had decided to live stream their first meeting as a surprise, and everyone had seen the deed done.

Quinn had gotten famous all right, as all the jealous boys who were die hard Bonny fans burned the image of him in their heads.

"What happened, how could he do that?" A user commented.

"Was it just me, or did it look like Bonny was the one that lent in?"

"Are you crazy, why would she go for that curly haired bastard! It was clearly an ability of his or something."

One of those that had their heads filled with jealousy, was Nate.

'How, can someone be that lucky, is it really that easy if you have good looks, to just pull up and get a kiss like that?'

The next set of actions were unexpected even for Quinn. He had taken a step back and wiped his mouth. When she had pulled him forward, he knew there was no harm in her intentions, but never expected something like this to happen.

'That was my first kiss?' Quinn being Quite the lonely hermit at his school, never experienced anything like this before. 'Maybe it wasn't a good idea to test out my charm stat.' Quinn thought.

Recently, Quinn had learned to use his charm skill with greater control. It happened when his stats had reached level sixty. So far, he had relied on the system when using his skills. The problem with this, it only allowed him to either use the skills or not.

This was also the problem with the shadow ability and was why he was unable to pass on the knowledge to Sam. Thanks to Fex, Quinn had been practicing how to use some of his vampire skills in a more controlled manner.

The only problem was, when using his charm skill other than using it via his influence, he would attract unwanted attention. Now he was able to focus his charm stat so that it was only being directed towards one person.

He had done several tests and had found out a few things, the charm stat affected humans a lot easier than it did Vampires. Fex had explained that it was natural evolution, a way for vampires to get their meals easier.

However Fex was still affected by it, but that was due to how high Quinn's stat points were. What he also found out through tests though, was the more someone was exposed to it, the less of an effect it would have on someone each time.

Apparently, this was also the case with all the skills related to the charm stat. Removing someone's memories once was fine, but if one needed to do it a second time, there was a high chance it wouldn't work properly.

As a final test, Quinn had used it against Kazz, but there seemed to be next to no effect. The vampire knights were often around other leaders, so perhaps they were training against it or had built up some type of resistance to it.

All of this led him to what he had done when leaving the ship, he was still currently testing it now and again, and had done so with Bonny. But this was not the outcome he was expecting.

'This boy, was that his ability? Why do I feel nothing now.' Bonny thought. 'But it couldn't be his ability. I'm sure of it, this kid is the same kid that was at that inter base tournament with the unique shadow ability.'

Trying to forget and ignore what just happened, Bonny looked at the ship they had arrived in and noticed that Quinn had only brought around fifty members with him.

'I thought they were coming here and inviting us, because they wanted to make an announcement to everyone. To show us the Cursed faction's strength. Did I overestimate them?'

"It's nice to meet you again." Bonny said, giving out her hand to shake this time.

"Er, yes." Quinn replied, shaking it back.

All those that continued to watch on the stream had been given the wrong idea by these set of words.

"Meet again, so these two are an item."

"No wonder she embraced him like that."

"No I'm telling you, he has her under some mind control trick or something. I'm telling you trust me."

The faction members were brought off the ship and were preparing themselves while casually chatting away. They didn't look afraid as if they had done this type of thing a few times before.

Bonny had asked Quinn some questions but the answers he gave were uninteresting to say the least. She would ask if there was any relationship between him and Owen, and he would reply, "Not really."

Then, when she asked about Daisy and Pure, Quinn didn't really know what to say, he left all the research stuff to Sam and said if they had any questions about it that they should ask him.

In the end, she had given up asking Quinn any questions and was starting to feel like the whole thing was a big disappointment.

'Owen, this is the guy that you said is a natural leader. Someone that you saw at the same level as yourself. I can't believe it. How can all of these people just follow him, how did he even get all those planets in the first place?'

Thinking about this, Bonny tried to push herself on, there had to be something or someone running things behind the scene. Trying to get an idea that there may have been someone else running the Cursed faction, she decided to interview all the faction members that had been brought with them.

"The young boss." One of the members replied. "Of course we have no reason to worry with him here. He will take this place over just like how he did all the other planets."

And the interviews and questions continued.

"We thought the same thing when we first saw him, I guess my opinion of him changed when the Sunshields attacked one of our planets. I think he took out about half of their forces out himself."

"Yeah, what the guy you spoke to before said was true. We saw him do it again with another faction. They had agreed to give in, and then suddenly wouldn't let us leave the planet. All of their members had the fifty of us surrounded, but Quinn and Sil dealt with them all, none of us even needed to lift a finger."

"If I had to say anything about Quinn, it's that he's certainly strong, but he's only better than me by a little bit. Also I would have to say he has a horrible personality. Can't trust the guy, he's a playboy alright. One time I saw five different girls go into his room." Nate answered.

After interviewing the members, Bonny was now struggling with what to think. Some of the things they had told her sounded almost impossible. And now there was even new information about defending an attack from the Sunshields.

It sounded so barbaric that she was wondering if they were making things up just to look good for the report.

Finally she decided to approach the one person who seemed sensible so far about everything, Sam.

"It seems like the members are gearing up just incase of a fight." Bonny said. "But with so few people, you can't expect to take over this planet? I know this isn't the main planet Pure has a hold off, but they still have an entire shelter full of people. Some of these guys think that you might be fighting today."

"That's because they might be." Sam replied. "We always have to prepare for anything, why do you think we haven't moved yet?"

She was wondering why the ship had landed at the abandoned shelter and they still hadn't done anything other than casually talk to each other.

"It's because we are waiting for them to come to us. By now they would have seen that our ship hasn't left yet and they will be investigating."

At that moment, the sound of vehicles could be heard coming their way from a distance. Sam turned around and could see everyone getting ready including Quinn.

"You better be filming everything on that camera of yours, because you don't want to miss a single thing."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 734: Getting cold

Recently, Quinn was unable to get in contact with Layla or Cia, he was little concerned but the last time they spoke and gave him information, they both sounded and looked to be doing good. He didn't know why, but he was always worried when thinking about the two girls.

Maybe it was because he didn't know much about Pure or maybe it was something else.

What this meant though, was out of all the planets Pure currently occupied, Quinn had no idea which one the two girls were on. However, if they were on this planet, he should have been able to sense them, but he knew at times that the vampire blood bond sense, wasn't always the best thing to rely on.

Since when he was on the Blade family island, it didn't work the best due to a strange interference. Otherwise he would have been able to find Peter a lot sooner.

The group stepped out of the shelter. The planet's surface looked to be mostly gray gravel with red rocks scattered about everywhere. To show that they weren't too intimidating, they only brought ten men with them as well as the reporters.

"Are they going to be okay?" Quinn asked.

He had expected the reporters to stay at the back possibly behind the others, but instead they were in the front row just off to the side of Nate and Sam. Quinn didn't know when, but he noticed that the equipment Bonny and void were wearing now had changed compared to before.

While void, was pointing his camera towards her and she stood in front of it, the two of them were wearing king tier beast gear.

"I'm sure they know what they are doing," Sam replied. "They survived this long getting by, right and they had to get their beast gear somehow?"

Still, out of concern Quinn decided to go up to them both, he placed his hand on both of their shoulders. "We're not planning to fight right here, but it gets rough, stay close to me." And Quinn was off again.

"That was a little strange," Void said. "When he was talking about it getting rough, I thought he was going to tell us to run away. Someone's a bit over confident and cocky."

Soon after Nate had approached the two as well.

"If a fight breaks out and you want to live, get behind me, I promise I won't let anything hit you."

"What about me?" Void asked, noticing that Nate was only looking at Bonny.

"My body can only protect one person, sometimes we have to make sacrifices."

Nate nodded giving him a thumbs up and walked off as well.

'I have to learn how he does it, maybe if I mirror him for a bit, I'll learn a thing or two.' Nate thought.

"These people are weird," Void said.

But Bonny didn't make a comment, and instead just continued to watch everything.

A large square looking vehicle with six wheels as big as the jeeps next to them was on its way over to the shelter. It didn't look to have any weapons on the vehicle itself, but was made more for transportation.

"An estimate of how many people that thing can carry?" Quinn asked.

"I would say five hundred, but you don't have to worry, I doubt they would send more than a hundred people to deal with us," Sam replied.

Eventually the large vehicle stopped. The two jeeps by the side carried four groups of people each covered in beast gear and then finally , the door to the larger vehicle opened up and fell to the ground.

Just as Sam had estimated, it looked like they had brought a group of around a hundred or so with them.

"It looks like Pure have finally arrived, from the looks of things it seems Pure hasn't sent many members themselves, and have mainly gotten aid from the faction members of the shelter that had gotten taken over." Bonny said, giving her report.

"Cut!" Said void. "That was good with them in the background, let's get a few more takes."

Out from the front, a man walked out who had several scars over his face, and behind him were two more. They walked with a sense of confidence compared to the rest. When using his inspect skill, Quinn could tell that the three in front of him were the only pure members there, or most likely anyway since they didn't have any abilities.

"Are you the leader- " Quinn spoke but was cut off.

"I suggest you pack your things and get out of here while we are being nice. We saw you arrive and expected you to leave, but you never did."

Void's hands were sweating slightly, but he kept hold of his camera filming everything. He always got tense in situations like these. Usually, one side was the

aggressor and led the negotiations to show they were in control, and it looked like Pure was doing a good job.

He was also wondering when Quinn was going to call the rest of the people that had been left inside of the abandoned shelter.

"We're from the cursed faction and are here to ask for a meeting," Sam said. "You can guess why we are here, so if you want to be aggressive we can be as well, but if you want to deal with this situation so as little people as possible die, then that's up to you as well."

"The Cursed faction?" The man started to laugh. "You guys actually decided to come here?"

"Let's go in closer for a better shot." Void said, and now they stood by the side of the two groups who were standing five meters apart.

"So you want to meet the leader of this planet so you can request a formal duel?" The scar faced man said. "But why would we do that, when we can deal with you here?"

"I think we deserve a little respect, this isn't the main planet of the Pure is it?" Sam asked. "And while we have brought our leader himself, besides your not even a numbered member of Pure, correct? So you shouldn't even have any authority to make a deal with us in the first place."

At that moment, the scar faced man and the two men beside him, demeanor changed. They no longer had the look of fools who were joking about.

"You two with the camera, this thing isn't live is it?" The scar faced man asked.

"Um no, this wouldn't do well as a livestream, the numbers were quite low so we decided to just make it a report and get better angels. We will send you the footage before it goes live and can cut out anything you don't want to be broadcasted, we want to work with both sides." Bonny answered in a polite manner.

"Good, because I'm wondering how you guys know about something that is only top secret within Pure. It looks like we got a little rat, and unfortunately, anyone who knows, must die!" The scar faced man then pulled out a dagger, and threw it right towards Bonny.

It was faster than she had expected, and she never thought them two were the ones that would be targeted. This had never happened to them before. However, the dagger hadn't even reached midway before it was stopped and caught midair by Quinn.

At the same time, Nate had come over and had become a human shield in front of Bonny hardening himself, but it was pointless as Quinn had already caught the dagger.

"Are you sure you want to do this? We just asked to be brought to the person in charge on this planet? I don't want to kill you if I don't have to."

Sam sighed and started to shake his head as he made his way back to the others, and they all sat down on the floor. He knew how this would go, and based on the scar man's personality and how aggressive he had been from the get go, he knew what his answer would be.

"Quinn, don't damage the large vehicle, it looks nice maybe we can use it," Sam said.

"Hey square...kind sir." Bonny whispered. "Aren't they going to go help him, it looks like a fight going to start any second."

"Help him, didn't we already tell you about how he took down the Sunshields on his own, if I tried jumping in the middle of that, I might get hurt myself."

"Attack them a-" The scared man said, but before he could finish his sentence, he found his own dagger piercing through his skull. It was thrown with such force that the dagger went through and carried on until it got stuck into the vehicle behind.

'Quinn, I don't know whether this is a good thing or a bad thing, but ever since Blip's death and the incident with the parasites. You have become a little colder in terms of killing.' Nate thought.

Quinn jumped in to deal with the rest of them, without hesitation.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 735: Who's the bad guys?

When Blip had passed away, after finding out more information, Quinn had been made aware that there probably was something he could have done. There was time that had been wasted in between when Quinn had chosen to save the Parasite members, and getting back to the ship.

In truth, there was no way for him to know for sure whether or not he could have saved Blip's life that day.

Others had told him he had done the right thing, even Linda. She had great anger when she went to the Parasite's base. Quinn was questioning whether it was the right thing to do, but Sam had informed him she needed to see something.

She quickly realised that they too had families, children and others living there. When she felt like her brother's sacrifice had saved all these people, she felt a little better about it.

But for Quinn he felt different, he blamed himself for putting strangers' lives ahead of those he actually cared about, and this had happened more than once already.

A person needed to look after themselves before they looked after others. After all, what's the point in saving everyone, if you yourself end up dying. Quinn stuck to this mindset, with 'himself' being the Cursed faction.

He needed to protect them, before thinking about saving others. Hesitating against those that attacked him first, could mean the death of one more person.

"Are you getting all of this!" Bonny said, looking at what was happening. "Quick! film it all."

"I can't!" Void complained back. "He's moving too fast."

Using his fists, Quinn pounded through abilities and any beast armour they were wearing. Using his kicks, he was able to hit away those that got up close from behind, and moving from person to person, he was too fast for anyone to use their ranged abilities without hurting their own.

Quinn was taking out a hundred or so men one by one by just using his fists and legs. At one point, he had activated his new gauntlet skill, creating a blade made of flames, and it grew in size stabbing three of them quickly before retracting again.

From battles on other planets before, Quinn had realized that when adding Qi to his active skill, he was able to make the flame blade that appeared from the top of his gauntlet longer. The more Qi he used, the longer the blade could be.

When people saw no weapon in his hand, it was a little surprise for them to suddenly feel a hot poking blade in their stomach.

'How is he doing all of this?' Bonny thought. 'From the looks of things, he hasn't even used any of his abilities, he's beating them all bare handed.'

"We have to get in closer!" Bonny said as she ran forward with Void following.

It became clear to the Pure members that they were going up against someone who was impossible to beat, the only thing they could rely on was him tiring out, and it didn't look like he was slowing down anytime soon.

That's when one of the members spotted the reporters coming in. One of them went to grab Bonny.

'He tried protecting her before, maybe we can get him to let his guard down.'

But before they could, an iron hard fist was slammed into the man's face.

"Are you two idiots!" Nate shouted as someone else went to hit him with a sword. A clang was heard, but there was no pain.

Soon though, more started to join in. Nate was able to block and hurt most of the attacks without him getting hurt, and using his body to block things from hitting Bonny, but not from hitting Void.

An ice spear was heading his way. Not wanting to destroy his precious camera, he pulled the camera away from his face.

'Damn him, that guy really meant it when he said he was only going to protect Bonny.' Void thought. 'I only have one thing left to say.'

"Bonny, I Love yo-" A shadow was lifted in front of his face, it had not only blocked out the spear but also the sound of his sentence. Still, he was alive.

"You listened to me?" Quinn said. "You stay close; if you want to live, then don't go too far."

When the shadow dropped, Void could see out of the hundred or so people there were only about twenty left, and each of them had dropped their weapons begging to be spared.

The short little fight, was over.

"What do you want us to do with these guys?" Sam asked.

"Get the guys to take over the large vehicle, they can set up and relax in there for now. They can keep an eye on them in the vehicle and when this is all over, it's up

to them if they want to join us or not. We only need one of them to give us directions."

The group started to get ready, and although the jeep was only meant to fit six men, by hanging climbing and sitting on the front, they managed to fit ten members on one. The reporters, Quinn, Sam, Nate and their guide were sitting on the other jeep that was brought with them.

"What the hell is this crap!" Bonny said. "I've never seen you film so bad before, you didn't manage to catch anything other than flying bodies, and random people using their abilities."

"It was hard like I said, he was moving too fast and taking them all out too quick. I couldn't keep the camera still in one place." Void complained, still feeling a little awkward about what he had said just moments before.

'It's true, why was he so fast. I can tell he has good beast gear on, but that was too fast. Maybe the faction was just weak? Or...' For a second, Bonny started to think about what all of the Cursed faction members had told her, all the stories she thought were exaggerated, what if they really weren't exaggerated?

A tingling feeling was felt in her body, but Quinn hadn't been tested yet. He needed someone that could at least draw out his power before she could judge him. Also, there was only so much one person could do.

If the people following him weren't strong either, then he could only get so far.

During the ride, Quinn checked his system screen with a concerned look on his face.

'It was close, if that attack was stronger and I had used too much of my shadow, then that would have been a little problem.' Quinn thought.

After a bumpy ride over the small red rocks, they had finally made it to the shelter. As soon as they saw Quinn and his gang a surprise move was made. The doors to the Shelter were opened for them.

Now that he was inside the shelter, Quinn was pretty confident that Layla and Cia weren't here, which made him feel a little better. He could sense Sam, so he was sure there was no interference going on like before.

When they entered, multiple different beast weapons, open palmed hands and abilities were pointed at them.

"Get out of the viecheals, if you try anything we will attack."

Once they had descended, The guide had been recognized as one of their own and immediately the guide went running towards them.

"Oh thank you, thank you, he killed them, he brutally killed and beat all the guys. Take him out, take him out now before he can kill us all!" The guide said, panicking so much he had even fallen over a few times running away.

"Just play along everyone," Sam said and they all raised their hands acting defenseless.

"Are you recording?" Bonny whispered.

"It's still on." Void replied, with his camera hanging off a strap that went chest high. Void was a little bugged about what had happened. They had tried attacking them, in an attempt to make out Pure as the bad guys, this time, the whole broadcast was being live streamed.

They waited for a while, with no one saying a word until finally, a dark skinned black man with sunglasses had come out. It was another member of Pure. Using his inspect skill, Quinn noticed that there were a lot more Pure members in the shelter.

Counting at the moment, there were around six hundred faction members with a good split. The shelter itself also had civilians all over that had been made to move away from the entrance gate. Pure was a bigger organisation than both the government or the general public thought, but Quinn already knew all of this, because of Layla's first hand information.

"The name is Abdul." The black skinned man said.

"Why is he wearing sunglasses even though it's not sunny?" Nate commented.

"Are you one of the low ranking numbered from Pure?" Quinn asked right off the bat. If Layla and Cia weren't here, then it was a simple task, to take over the planet.

"Oh, maybe we have underestimated the Cursed faction to be able to have information like that." Abdul said. "If you know that much, then if I was to tell you I was Ranked number sixteen, you should be able to know my strength?"

Quinn knew his strength all right, he knew it wasn't strong enough to pop the instant level up on his quest notification. Until this happened, he knew he had nothing to worry about.

"Nobody has to get hurt," Quinn said. "I think everything will be a lot easier, if you leave this planet, and then come back with your commander? I'm telling you, don't make the same mistake as the last group of people you sent."

"For someone who is in their current situation, surrounded in another one's base, with so few people you certainly are making some crazy demands." Abdul replied. "You know I can see it in your eyes. You're like a wild dog that refuses to be put

down. It's a shame because I would have loved to have you work under me. But I can tell you won't ever let that happen. Maybe you need some convincing."

Signaling with his hands, the men started to move in, aiming for those around Quinn.

"I was just wasting my breath after all," Quinn said. "If you give up, then I will save you all.

"Shadow lock, open."

Above Quinn, four strange shadow like oval portals had appeared. Three of them were quite large, but the fourth one was the biggest of them all.

"What is this an ability, fire above!" Abdul ordered, and the faction embers started to shoot their abilities into the strange looking shadow portals.

From the portals themselves, A claw had appeared from one, a furry figure from another and more from the other portals.

"Beasts! We're under attack from beasts!" They shouted.

The beasts that had decided upon the shelter were of the king tier, so it proved difficult for many for them to deal with, but finally a beast had exited out from the largest of portals. A large one that mimicked an elephant on earth, only it had several trunks on its front and was two times the size.

Seeing the attacks nearly bounce off the beast's skin, Abdul realized. They were dealing with an emperor tier beast.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## **Chapter 736: Save them please!**

This wasn't the first time that Quinn had done something like this. This was his usual way of taking over the past planets, the only difference was he never did it so openly before. Sam had said to him that he couldn't just force the base into submission if he wanted them to be loyal.

This gave Quinn the idea of being their saviour. If a shelter was attacked by strong beasts that they had no clue where they had come from, and Quinn displayed his strength by saving them, then he could offer them protection in return for them coming over to his side.

Not only this, but they would also feel indebted to him.

After unlocking the shadow skill shadow lock he of course went through a testing phase with the ability. It was a skill that allowed him to lock creatures and living beings in a separate space, the shadow space.

It was similar to his dimensional space but there were many differences between the two. When using his dimensional space, he was able to put as many items and take them out as he wished. As long as it wasn't living matter.

The shadow lock was the opposite, only allowing him to lock in living things in the shadow space. However, there were more differences. Depending on the strength of the creature when using shadow lock, it would use a certain amount of MC points.

While the skill was active and had creatures or people in the shadow lock, then those MC points would also be locked away and were unable to be used. Before coming to the shelter, Quinn had locked the king tier beasts as well as the emperor tier beast.

Only allowing him a little amount of MC points left to use his shadow. He was worried about this, for if he ever went over the amount of MC points that were meant to be locked away, then the skill would break, unlocking the shadows and allowing for all the beasts to break free.

This was why he hadn't used his shadow, and only used it when needed to in the previous fight. There were also other ways for the shadow lock to be broken and one of them was from the inside.

Similar to the shadow void, if someone was to attack the strange space they were in, it would eventually break, but what Quinn found, was that beasts when entering the shadow space, would only do a few things.

They would sleep, run in the space looking for an exit, or just walk around. They didn't see the space around them as a threat, but there was one time where a beast

was left in there for too long and Quinn could only assume it had gotten hungry. In it's pain it started to beat on the space around it.

This was why even though the space could be used on humans, usually, after a short while out of frustration they would attempt to attack everything breaking out of the space. Still depending on one's strength, it would take longer for one to break out then others.

The beasts were going on a rampage currently in the shelter, not only attacking the faction members but also houses, stalls and the marketplace. One of the beasts had tried to attack Quinn and his group.

"Of course, it's a beast it will attack us as well!" Void said. This isn't the Bree family where the beasts are tamed.

Using his hand, he knocked the beast's claw away. When their two eyes met, the beast chose to ignore Quinn. Knowing who the clear winner would be out of the two of them.

"These people's lives are in your hand." Quinn said. "If you want us to kill these beasts for you, then we can do it at any time."

Abdul could hear Quinn loud and clear, he wanted to go over and smash the cocky brat's face in but was too busy dealing with the emperor tier beast. His weapon of choice was dual wielding axes and he was holding his ground well.

Each time a giant trunk would swing his way, using his own force he was able to knock it away. Abdul was a muscular man and had good beast gear on, but shouldn't have been able to do such things.

The way he was fighting right now, reminded them of feats that Quinn could do. What the others didn't know, was this was due to Abdul using Qi in his attacks.

Still, even though he was able to hold his ground, the other members who were fighting the king tier beast and getting whacked away by the emperor tier beast's other trunks weren't doing so well.

While the others were distracted, the group started to move out into the shelter. Quinn stayed where he was, just behind the emperor tier beast and Abdul. Both the reporters didn't move away from Quinn, listening to what he had told them before, and besides at the moment, for Void it was the best angle for all the chaos that was happening.

Online, people could see the whole thing being streamed.

"How could he do that?"

"The Cursed faction are so cruel, people have to worry about beasts attacking shelters all the time and now, he has unleashed a bunch of wild beasts at the shelter.

"You can hear all the screams."

"These people are scum, look he's just standing there."

At the moment, Quinn and his group were unaware of how much hate was being directed towards him online for his current actions. To them in this situation, getting uninvolved people in the shelter, he was the villain.

"Make a decision!" Quinn shouted. "Give up and let these people live."

If Abdul had time, maybe able to think straight, he would have been able to deal with the emperor tier in some way, but not like this. Not while the chaos was going on and his men were dying left and right to the other beasts.

He knew giving up and asking for help. Meant the cursed faction had won.

"Please, help us! Help us!" The others cried.

These people weren't part of Pure but the faction that had joined them on the planet. They had no loyalty.

Still, Quinn stood there, doing nothing. Gripping his fist, Abdul whacked one of the trucks with all his strength, he had finally managed to chop the top part of it off, but in the process he was whacked by another of the beast's trucks sending him sliding across the floor.

Feeling the pain and power of the beasts, and the continued screams, he had made his decision.

"Help us, Stop this madness, please!"

At that moment, Quinn ran underneath the emperor tier beast's legs and activated his flame daggers, infusing his Qi, they were able to go grow in length reaching and piercing the belly. He continued to run as the beast screamed in pain lifting its front legs.

The others who were looking at Quinn before on the ground and now had no clue where he was, and before they knew it, they spotted him up in the air, above the large beast's head. Spinning his body multiple times he came falling down and at the right moment, he had performed the moves of the hammer strike, while adding in his own power of Qi.

With the added momentum of the spin, he was able to perform a strike more powerful than usual.

Hitting the elephant's beast right on the top of it's head, it's heavy body was slammed down onto the ground, and Quinn fell with the beast onto the floor, he stood there on top of it's head as it laid there dead.

Seeing everything unfold in front of him, Abdul now knew that they never stood a chance. Even if he was to attack him after Quinn had killed the beasts, at any moment, Quinn could have taken over this shelter.

What Abdul was wondering though, after seeing the attack and the strange sudden force, was whether or not Quinn was using the power of Qi. Something only high ranking members of Pure should have known.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 737: I'm a Villain

After defeating the emperor tier beast, it didn't take long for Quinn to kill the other king tier beasts as well, and the screaming all around the shelter had soon stopped. Many of the faction members were angry at Quinn for what he had done, and some were about to lash out their pent up feelings at him, until Abdul stepped in.

He knew it would all be pointless. The younger faction members were young fools who were just too hot headed to realise that. The fighting may have stopped, but they were now in a tricky situation they had never been in before. What to do with the remaining members of the faction, including those that were part of Pure.

The planets they had taken over had no affiliation with any other big factions, so it was easy to convince them to come under the cursed faction once they had shown them their power, and Quinn had saved them.

This time, taking in any members of Pure was dangerous. They were still a large force that had more power than themselves. There was a high chance that at any point and time, Quinn could be betrayed.

Eventually, all of those that had arrived with Quinn, including Nate and Sam had returned to their positions. Bonny seeing this was wondering just where they had gone off to during the fight.

"Is everyone okay?" Quinn asked.

"Yep," Nate added, rolling his shoulder about a bit as if it was sore. "I had to take one or two blows though, but I guess whatever doesn't kill me only makes me stronger."

Abdul who was listening in was confused, and then he thought of something.

'It can't be?' He thought.

The fighting had stopped between the two of them, but Abdul and the others hadn't really been made captives, there were far too many of them, and not enough of Quinn and his group to even do that in the first place, so Abdul still had control of the shelter, he just wasn't able to leave or communicate back with Pure, for now at least.

He then ordered his men to go check on their families, and when they returned with their report, his eyes had widened.

"You," Abdul said, approaching Quinn who was chatting away with Sam about what to do next. "You protected them all, thank you." It was the only words he could say.

Bonny and Void were confused, and had turned off the stream as soon as the fight was over, just seconds ago these two were enemies and Quinn had unleashed an army of beasts on him, why was he thanking him?

"There were still people who ended up dying." Quinn said, "But at least the people who aren't involved in this didn't get harmed."

Now, Bonny was starting to get an idea, just what Nate and the others had done during the fight. While Quinn was waiting for Abdul to surrender, Nate and the others went around protecting the families of the Shelter from the beast attacks, while also making sure not to kill the beasts.

"Still, you didn't need to do that." Abdul replied. "As thanks, let me give you some advice, what you used to take down that beast, it was Qi, right?"

This startled Quinn for a few seconds, but then he thought back to what Erin and Leo had told him. When they were on the run, Pure had sent an agent that was also able to use Qi. According to her information, all top ranked officials in Pure knew how to use Qi in some way.

What Quinn didn't understand, was Leo had told him that everyone who once knew Qi had died. There was a chance Leo was somehow involved in Pure, but Quinn doubted that, Leo would have told him otherwise.

"I don't know who taught you it, or whether or not you learned it naturally by yourself, but this is a warning. Your Qi is strong, but if you were to fight with the level of Qi you have against the Pure leaders, you would be outmatched. At the moment, yours is at the primary stage, your control is good so you should be able to learn the second stage quite easily."

"But all the leaders are already at the third stage."

Hearing Abdul talk, Quinn had no clue what he was going on about. When Leo had taught him Qi, the only thing he had taught him was how to sense it and move it around his body. Everything else was a learn as he went basis.

He was wondering if even Leo knew about these stages of Qi, and how Quinn currently compared to him at the moment. Quinn still kept up his daily mediation of Qi, but it had stopped growing in size long ago, he was at a standstill and it would have been good to learn more about it from Leo or someone else.

"What stage of Qi are you at?" Quinn asked.

"I am only at the first stage, so even if I wanted to teach you, I could not," Abdul replied.

While Quinn was thinking about Qi, and wondering what he could do to improve himself. Sam and the others had realised that something else had occurred that they were unaware of.

"Bonny look at all of this." Void said, showing her all the comments on the video at the end of the livestream.

The group read them out, and nearly every single comment was condemning Quinn for the actions he had done. Once the fight was over, the livestream had stopped, and due to everything happening, Void and the others hadn't uploaded the videos of where Pure had tried to attack the Cursed faction first.

"You guys have to do something, you have to fix this now!" Sam said, worried and concerned. 'I thought having the reporters come with us would show the Cursed faction's good side, but it looks like it's only made things worse.'

"Don't worry, we can fix this," Bonny said.

Quickly, the two of them went around interviewing all of the survivors of the attack and had them explain how the Cursed faction members had protected them from the beast during the attack.

The clips, from when Pure first arrived and attempted to attack them were also edited and made in a way to make the Cursed faction look as good as possible and finally. They had finished off the report, claiming that the Pure's planet now belonged to them.

Even though they didn't know what to do with Abdul and the others yet, Abdul had made it clear he would not be fighting them and allowed them to do as they wished.

When the videos had been uploaded, Bonny thought she had repaired the damage, but the comments didn't make it seem like so.

"Are you kidding me, obviously the cursed faction now having taken over the base have forced the people to say that."

"But why would they make a false report?"

"Isn't it obvious, we all saw it. Their leader and Bonny are an item, of course they're not going to report anything negative."

"He's right, I saw that video as well, Bonny went up and kissed him. Also, they say they were attacked before, so why didn't they upload that footage until now. Did they really get attacked?"

"I heard the screams and cries of all those people, they must have been so scared from the beasts."

"Did you see how he made that guy beg before he even stepped in to help?"

"Whatever, it's clear that the Cursed guys are the bad guys in this, this is portably how they were able to rise so quickly, using underhanded tactics like so."

"Do they think we're stupid, that we would believe whatever the report tells us."

"Don't blame Bonny, it's the Cursed faction, they are Evil twisting things like this."

The comments were more negative than ever, and it looked like due to the incident before being streamed. Even Bonny and Void's reputation as reporters was being affected.

"Quinn.." Sam called out, but didn't really know what to say.

More than anyone, Quinn was doing all of this for those people who were commenting. He wanted to create a safer world for everyone, and to see everyone writing things like this about him.

People were so cruel, even when they didn't have all the facts.

"Don't worry," Quinn said. "In the end, it will all be okay, if I have to play the role of a villain to make a change, then so be it."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 738: The other factions reactions

The news reports from Bonny and Void were surely quite popular. They were well known, and one of the only reporters giving out first hand information. However, it was something that was more for the citizens and people living at the different shelters spread across the universe to watch.

Large factions and powerhouses would have their own ways of gathering information. With negotiations going on though, there had been less for these factions to do, and more people than usual were watching Bonnie's report, as they were waiting to see what would happen between the new era powers.

Outside a large shelter, there were fields filled with all sorts of different flowers. Each section was a different colour like a rainbow. Inside the Shelter, was the main base for the group known as Daisy. They too had just finished watching the report.

Daisy was a faction that was mostly made up of women, and at their base in their main conference room, there was Helen, who now flaunted a long pink pastel hairstyle, then there was also her two closest friends who had started the faction with her.

Ivy, who was two meters tall and thin like a tree with green hair, and Peach who was as round as a peach herself. She had orange her with red rosy cheeks.

"I'm surprised that group from back then has made it this far, and they even went ahead and attacked one of the Pure planets," Ivy said.

"No, I saw it in that boy's eyes that day," Helen replied. "I knew he would be trouble and crazy enough to do something like this. Something is wrong with that boy's head. To be able to use beasts against civilians like that."

"Well, I guess that gives us a few options," Peach suggested. "We can either take on the Cursed faction now while they are focused on Pure. The good thing about this is, while everyone hates them if we're the ones to take them out, we will be even more popular than ever with the people."

"We could attack Pure. Out of Pure and the Cursed faction, I still think Pure is the bigger threat, so while they are focusing on the Cursed we can take them out. Or we wait it out and see the outcome of this. After a battle between the two, one side should be weakened, even if it's by a little bit."

Helen thought about it for a while, and what she was struggling with, was why had the Cursed faction decided to attack Pure, over them? They had two choices, two paths to choose from moving on after taking over the last of the unclaimed planets.

'Do they have some information on Pure that we don't?'

In the middle of her thoughts, a call had been made and an offer had been given on the other end.

'Now this is a surprise.' Helen thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

Away from the Daisy faction, a group of planets in the beast part of the universe was owned by Pure. There was one in particular they had chosen to set up base at. The beast planets that Pure occupied were set up in a way so the main base was located in the center.

All the other planets surrounded it in some way, this way if there ever was an attack, they would have to go through one of the planets ahead and they would be informed beforehand anyway.

This of course wasn't the main base of Pure whose whereabouts were still unknown.

The center planet where the Pure base laid was covered in a white pastel ground. And built on that ground, the Shelter. Which was a different shape than usual. Pure had converted it into their style. A large oval dome that blocked everyone's view from the outside.

Having complete control of everything, who went in and out, what, when, and where. Relaxing in a basic bunk bed on the bottom bed. Layla decided that she would get some rest, while doing so she started to watch the video report.

She soon went down a rabbit hole and had seen everything.

"What!!" She screamed at the top of her lungs.

Cia grabbed her pillow and held it over her head.

"Hey, I'm the one that's meant to do the screaming," Cia said. 'What the hell is going on?"

"Look, it's Quinn, he... he... he..."

Then Cia saw the video replay of Bonny kissing Quinn.

"Oh, calm down, it was only a kiss, besides it looked like she was the one that leaned into him," Cia replied.

"Just a kiss?" Layla said not having calmed down, her face still feeling quite hot.  
"So have you ever kissed someone before?"

Cia shrugged her shoulders and pointed to the top of her head.

"How am I meant to know, I can't remember?"

As time went on, Cia had become less and less dependent on Layla ever since arriving and working for Pure once more. She hadn't learned much about her past, but had learned Pure's ways of doing things.

And she soon realized that maybe it was better that she had forgotten everything to do with this organization. Soon, she was starting to accept what she had become and although she didn't realise it, Layla could recognize that she was more of her old self, the fake persona she was portraying at school.

After settling down and watching the rest of the reports, a smile appeared on her face.

"It looks like the others are doing well."

"Are you happy that the enemy has taken one of our planets?" Cia said sarcastically, smiling back.

'Once again Quinn, you have become so strong, when I return I might not even recognise you. Will you still have time to speak to me like we used to?' Layla thought.

Things were much simpler at the start between the two. Quinn would often rely on Layla for help. Helping him figure out the vampire stuff, being a blood supply for him, among other things and great mental support.

Now, he had others around him that could help him with that. Clenching her fist, she wouldn't give up, she had also improved herself overtime.

The two of them left their room the next day and started their normal routine. When walking around the base at the canteen Layla was seeing something that was disturbing her.

A blonde spiky haired boy called Rony, a member of Pure, had four other men up against the wall. Each of them appeared to have bruises on their bodies and marks on their face.

"When are you guys going to understand that this Shelter no longer belongs to you guys!" Rony shouted.

Others could see this happening, but just walked past and continued to grab their food.

"The only thing you guys respond to is physical pain!" Tony shouted, punching one of the larger men in the stomach and causing him to drop to the floor.

"What are you doing!" Layla said, rushing over. "You can't treat them like this. They're not members of Pure, so of course it's going to take some time for them to settle into our ways." Layla complained.

Tony turned to look at who exactly was nagging away at him.

"Pipe down, Agent hundred, I remind you that I'm agent sixty four, so I carry a higher rank than you."

"Of course you would use the agent ranking card on me," Layla replied. "Were an organisation that is against discrimination. Even if I'm a lower Rank than you, I have the right to speak out and speak my mind when I think what you are doing is wrong."

Tony started to walk towards the two girls and pulled out two finger daggers which had a circle handle at the end where he could spin his blades.

"Your right, you can speak your mind. However, we can also have disagreements as we see fit, and would anyone care if a low ranking agent like you were to die?" Rony said, throwing out both of the small finger daggers.

Layla was wondering what she should do, but before she could act, an invisible force had pushed back the daggers, and had thrown them back into the wall, piercing right through the solid metal.

Footsteps were heard clanking against the metal ground. And in her field of view stood in front of Layla, a large white overcoat could be seen with a number on the back.

In Pure, only five members proudly displayed their agents rank, and they were the top five within Pure. On this overcoat was the number five being displayed.

'Mother.' Layla thought.

In charge of becoming a new era power, was Layla's mother, agent five and at some point, her and Quinn were destined to clash.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 739: The future vision

"The young girl is right," Agent five said. "At a time like this, we should be treating those that are helping us with respect, not through fear and abuse of our strength, like them."

Immediately, Rony's tune had changed, he looked down, finding it hard to look the Pure leader in the eye, and decided to walk away from the scene.

'That bitch, everyone respects those with a higher rank, because they know how much those members have given up for the sake of our goal.' Rony thought. 'We higher ranks have contributed more, so why shouldn't we be treated better than others, and Layla, agent one hundred, she shouldn't even be in the numbered agent ranks in the first place, if we are going to talk about privilege through birth then she's the worst.'

'Just because she has some type of blood relation to the leader.'

It was no secret around the base, that agent five was Layla's mother. Rony didn't know when, but apparently a certain incident in the past had made everyone aware of this fact, and rumour of course went around the whole base.

Agent five, real name Lucy, was not only a high ranker, but she was well respected in Pure, because she was one of the founders of Pure. Even though she was lower ranked than some of the other members in Pure, she was respected even among them.

And she would do anything to get rid of the ability users of the world.

"Thank you," Layla said, giving a little bow, as she felt the wind of the overcoat walk past her.

"Is that really your Mum?" Cia asked. "She doesn't even act like she knows you. How are we meant to convince someone like her to leave Pure?"

"I'm not sure we can," Layla replied back, looking at her mother walking away.

Later that day, a meeting had been called, all of the Pure members had been gathered in front of the main building, still inside the Dome shelter. Also, all of the faction members who used to be a part of the Shelter before it was renovated, were invited.

Lucy had been given quite the strong allies to go with her on this campaign, when the Civil war started, many of the larger factions had formed an alliance and people thought they would soon be a new great power, but they were defeated when they had stepped on the toe's of Pure.

The people that were in the shelter today, were part of the group that had attacked. The main three leaders of the old alliance were also present.

"Time for the daily speech again, it really feels like they're trying to brainwash everyone." Cia said, standing somewhere in the middle of the crowd with Layla.

The person who was giving the speech, was none other than agent five, Lucy. She stood there with her long brown hair and wrinkled face. Her body was in top shape but her face told a different story as there were deep wrinkles.

"The world has been in chaos, and has been worse than ever before and why? The reason is simple, because of abilities." Lucy started to explain. "The powerful ability users that refuse to share their powers with anyone else, bully and suppress the world. Why was it even before this, we had the term the big four and the military, the powers were divided because these people ruled."

"Think back to incidents in your own lives, when one of these big powers ever did something wrong where they punished for it? Or were they exempt from such things, their actions brushed off stating that these people were more needed in the world then us.

"We are fighting for the good of the world. If Pure are in charge will there no longer be fighting? Of course not. Will the war's stop in the world, no. But it will be on equal terms. It will be fairer than how things are today."

Everyday so far, Lucy had given out similar speeches to the people at the same time. She would also have Pure members come up on the stage and speak about their own experiences. Their rough treatment form higher ability users and answered anything other users wished to ask.

Hearing all these stories made Cia wonder.

"What did you Mum go through that made her hate ability users so much?"

"Actually...I don't know." Layla replied, she was starting to realise how much she didn't even know her own mother and it was making her more upset by the day. Whenever the two would converse it would always be about Pure.

"Do you really need to save her, it's risky us being here the way we are," Cia explained.

"I know but, I do have some good memories." Scenes of when Layla was really young were flashing in her head, but even they weren't too pleasant. However she did remember seeing her mother smile. It warmed her heart thinking of this and it was something she hadn't seen her mother do ever since she was a kid. "She is my mother, the person who raised me, I just can't leave her like this, at least I have to give her a proper goodbye."

"Does that mean you're going to tell her what you really are?" Cia asked. "What if that goes wrong?"

Layla didn't want to think about that, how her mother would react knowing what she now was. She was wondering if she would only be thinking about what benefits this body could bring for Pure.

Letting out a big sigh, Cia came up with a suggestion.

"Why don't I have a look, I can see you've made up your mind, so I should be able to see something right, as long as I touch her."

Lately, Cia had been getting better at using her powers as a Banshee, through a simple touch of someone she could see a possible future. The only problem was, this type of ability could only be used once and what it would show, how long in the future she did not know.

It was possible that she might have visions later on about this person, or nothing related to them at all. The only sure thing was when she would touch someone for the first time.

Layla was still unsure if she even wanted to actually know about a possible future where her Mum disowned her, but before she knew it. Cia has raised her hand and had been selected to come up on stage.

"Oh Cia, have you remembered something about your past." Lucy asked.

Cia stood there looking at everyone and she started to shake, a few moments later and her legs gave in as she fell to the floor sobbing.

"I can't do it, because of them they removed my memory, I can't even remember who I am!" She shouted and continued to cry.

At that moment, Lucy came over, offering her hands lifting her up off the ground.

"Don't worry young child, we will help you get your memories back, and Pure will be sure to make you feel at home and welcome." She said with the gentlest smile.

There was one thing for sure, Lucy was able to easily win the hearts of the others, even those that weren't members of Pure previously. The thoughts of Pure being some type of vicious terrorist group had long gone out of their heads.

After Cia's little act, although they were channelled by some of her true feelings, she had returned to Layla.

"So what did you see?" Layla asked, too curious not to ask.

"Let's talk after this meeting is over."

When the meeting was over, the two girls returned to their room, and Layla was worried about what type of answer Cia would give.

"Did you find out anything, about what would happen if I told my Mum what I really am?"

Cia shook her head, whatever it was, it didn't seem like it was good news.

"I saw Quinn," Cia finally said. "Your mother and him were fighting, I don't know over what but it looked like a lot of people were watching."

"That's not too surprising, Does Quinn end up losing then, why are you so worried?"

"No he doesn't lose, but if we don't get involved. I'm afraid Quinn's going to kill your mother in that fight."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 740: The leader's table

Since the start of the Civil war, the leaders table had not been used. The great powers were unable to meet each other without the fear of fighting one another. Before, there was the Military, with the Supreme commander Oscar and his eight head generals.

Jack Truedream, Mona Bree, Burnie Sunshield and finally Owen Graylash. These people were part of the leaders table and were in charge of the human race. Pure was an outside force who didn't wish to be any part of what was happening at the leaders table, and it was part of the reason why they were considered a terrorist group, not because their power was lacking.

Today was the first day since the Civil war started, that the leaders meeting room and the building would be used again, only this time there were far less people. In a dark room, there was a large round table and only three were sitting there.

A light source from the table shined on their faces, and each of them had two guards standing by their side. At the table, Mona Bree, Owen Graylash and finally Oscar White.

"I'm happy that the two of you finally agreed to join this meeting," Oscar said.

"Well, the troublesome ones are out of the way." Owen chuckled, with his fan still covering his mouth as always.

"Well, I'm hoping that the talks today can put an end to this Civil war, so there aren't more situations like what has happened with the Sunshield family." Oscar said.

At that moment, both Owen and Mona gave each other a little glance. They knew who was behind it, and it looked like Oscar was still unaware.

"A lot of people have died in this war, Humans." Oscar continued to say. "And I think everyone has missed the real threat in front of us, the Dalki. If we don't get our act together soon, they will attack and all of this fighting for freedom will be pointless."

"You do have a point," Mona said. "Which is why we have agreed to this meeting, however, the people still remember how they have been treated, how you utilized the dungeons in your camps. I think now that there is no longer the threat of Truedream, that things will never be back to the way they used to be."

"They don't need to be." Owen quickly added. "Things are looking up, but I do agree if there is a way to stop the fighting, especially now it would be best, we can try to solve our own and individual problems later."

Oscar was a little relieved hearing the two of them talk like this. It seemed like they were willing to cooperate. So far the military had actually been staying out of any scuffles, and was content on protecting anything that was to happen on earth.

Because of this, unlike with the other families, their powers hadn't diminished, although they were affected the most when the war started, as the military also had the most deserters, either moving to the other families or starting their own factions.

"Although it is unfortunate, a lot of the initial fighting has stabilized with the troublesome groups disappearing," Mona said. "Now, only those loyal to their said groups remain. As long as us three can work together, then we should be able to move forward."

"Great!" Oscar said, clapping his hands together. "An announcement won't be enough, the public won't believe in our harmony as three separate powers. Which is why I think we should deal with the demon tier beast as a group together."

"And the beast weapon itself, how will the reward for that be split?" Owen asked.

"At the moment, there is nothing in the world that is comparable to a demon tier beast weapon, even if we gave gifts to the other groups that were comparable to the demon beast weapon, it would not be acceptable."

"I have a suggestion, when the crystal is obtained and forged into a weapon. It is locked away. The location is only known by us three at this table. Each of us will put in a combination only known to us, and to use the weapon the three of us must agree to its uses. This will make it so none of the current powers gain strength, and it doesn't fall into the wrong hands either."

"At the same time, I think the demon tier weapons are needed in order to help us defeat the Dalki."

At first, Mona and Owen didn't give an answer straight away. Their reason for this was they had their own plans with the demon weapon. One of them was protecting themselves from a great force that the military didn't even know about.

Still, what other options did they have, if they weren't to do this hunt together, then it would surely be a bloodbath.

"There is still one problem," Mona said. "Although most of the current powers are under our control, not all. Do you think we should invite the new Era powers to hunt with us? Otherwise there is a good chance that they could get involved in this as well."

This was another topic of discussion that needed to be brought up and couldn't be ignored.

"With the current tensions, it would be impossible for the three of them to work together and be invited along, and I don't think any of us have the time to control them," Owen said. "However, if there is only one of them, then maybe we can invite them to this hunt as well."

"What are you thinking of?" Oscar said, knowing Owen already had something in mind.

"I'm sure they would agree to this, but how about a duel between the three new era powers? Winner takes all supervised by us three here at this table. I'm sure they are tired of deaths just as much as we are, if this offer was made public, they would have pressure from the people to be accepted."

"If this can be solved without getting others involved, then they should snap at this opportunity. It would also be a way for us to see their strength, to see if it's worth inviting them to the hunt with us in the first place."

"Remember, people don't like to be controlled, they like to have a sense of freedom whether it really exists or not. What you have to do, is make them believe they had a choice in the first place."

"Is that how you control your people?" Mona commented, but Owen chose to ignore it.

"I think your suggestion is a good one." Said Oscar. "The event should also be broadcasted to everyone and we should also agree that if one of the other sides does not accept the outcome of the duel, that we will join forces to eliminate them."

"A blacklist is too little of a threat."

The others couldn't see it, but Owen was starting to smile. There were many that had only seen Oscar's good side. One of the heroes of the war, but if he was really truly a good man, he would have never have been able to have done the things he had done in the first place.

Here at the leader's table, he could show his true colours.

"Great, so it's decided!" Mona said, rising from her seat. "A location shall be set, now the only thing we have to worry about, is whether or not they accept."

Secretly, Mona didn't mind letting one of the emperor tier crystals fall into protection, for she had her eyes on the bigger picture. With the device from the green family, she would soon have her own collection to choose from. Especially with this alliance, she wouldn't have to worry about attacks from the others."

"How did you come up with this idea?" Oscar asked.

"Have you heard that there has been a little bet going on online," Owen asked. "It seems the public are already casting their votes on which one of these new era powers will come out on top. That's when the idea popped into my head. There is already more attention on them than us, so let's give the people what they want: A little show."

"Although, I have already made my own personal bet?" Owen said with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 741: The new era duel

Soon after the leaders meeting, the information was soon passed onto Bonny and Void. After all, they were the ones that were requested to record this event and reveal the news to everyone else.

At the moment, the two of them were staying at the previously owned Pure planet with the Cursed faction. Their next move hadn't been made yet, perhaps they were waiting for a reaction or news from Pure themselves, but none of that had arrived yet.

'With this news, maybe they won't have to do anything.' Bonny thought as she sat there typing away and a holographic screen. She often wrote down her notes and what to do next when it came to her interviews.

'The problem is - will Pure really accept taking part in this?' Bonny thought. 'They might not have a choice.'

If the Cursed faction and Daisy agreed to the terms of the duel, and Pure didn't, even without them, one side would be declared a winner and they could absorb the other factions forces.

Without a doubt, there would then be one faction far stronger than the other whereas currently the powers were seen as almost completely equal. Plus, with the pressure from the people and with Pure trying to get in the public eye more, they wouldn't be able to miss this opportunity.

While Bonny was deeply consumed in her thoughts, Lucy was in the middle of a call with the leader of Pure, Rank 0. The request had been sent out and she was waiting for the leader's answer.

"We really have no choice," Mr 0 replied. "Now is not the time for everyone to know the full strength of Pure, we need to make sure we always have a hidden card up our sleeve."

"I will leave this in your hands, number five, I hope you will achieve this task for the future of Pure."

"I understand, may Pure be with you." Lucy replied.

The first to reply to the duel was Daisy. They claimed that if there was anything that could get less people involved in a battle, then they would always take that choice. It just made those following Daisy grow more attached to them than before, and others who were with other factions wishing they had a leader like that.

In contrast, many thought after the broadcast that lots of people would have deserted the Cursed faction, especially after they would have seen that Quinn was behind the beast attacking certain shelters in the first place.

Yet for some reason, no one had caused a fuss at the Cursed faction. On the outside, no one understood why, but slowly, comments online were starting to appear with support of the Cursed faction.

They would get shut down immediately, but those that were within the Cursed faction never got mistreated, and felt like their lives were better than ever. Still, there wasn't enough positivity to overturn the negative opinion of the Cursed faction.

And even more so, now that they were the last to reply to the duel.

In truth, they felt like they couldn't decide until they had heard from Pure, and now that they had agreed, they knew their answer.

"Of course we will join the duel." Sam said with a smile, while a camera from Void was being pointed in his face.

Sam wanted the Cursed faction to appear in the front of the camera more, hoping they could change others' opinions.

"There is no need to get others involved, and we won't do that. We don't want to hurt people either."

However, once again when the report came out, people were complaining that Sam's response was too similar to the Daisy faction, and they were just trying to gain public favour by repeating what they had said.

Even Sam was getting worn out and tired by all the troubles the media was bringing to them.

Sitting outside at a table, Nate, Sam, and Quinn were talking. Sam had his hands in his hair, pulling at it.

"Hey, if you carry on like that you're going to go bald." Nate mentioned.

"Don't worry," Quinn said. "If any of us had said anything on the camera, it would have been worse. You're doing a good job. So now that we've agreed to the duel, what exactly is it, is it one on one fights or group battles?"

"Actually it seems to be a little complicated." Sam replied, pulling out a piece of paper and drawing a diagram so everyone could visualise it better.

"Every faction will create an A team and a B team. These teams are groups of three and they will be there on three battles. Both of these groups will also go up against the opposing teams groups. So each group will have to fight a total of four times.

"Each win is one point, and whoever gets the most points will be declared the winner. I'm guessing they chose to set it up this way so they could see the strongest people in each faction. After all, a faction's strength isn't just reliant on one person, kinda." Sam ended his sentence, as he realised that many of the big four were reliant on the overwhelming strength their leaders contained.

In a way this duel was a trap for the new era powers, as they would be displaying all their secrets, such as abilities and strength, but they had no choice but to participate.

"So we have to make two groups of three, then I guess we should pick the two strongest to lead each group?" Quinn said.

"I have some suggestions," Sam replied. "But it's completely up to you. Right now without a doubt the two strongest people in our faction are both you and Sil. We can't just have one strong group and one weak group if we want to win this thing for sure.

"So I suggest Quinn will lead group A, While Sil leads group B, the real question is, who to have supporting them. Our next two strongest after them would be Nate and Dennis, and both of these people are great physical fighters. Then we have two options, to either pick someone who would act as a great support, or just go for the next set of strongest people we have on our team."

If Nate and Dennis already filled up two slots, Quinn started to think of other people on the team that were considered strong. Linda and Peter with their new bodies were certainly strong. However, their strange powers and strength would reveal to the world who they really were.

Fex was also a good choice, but he would be limited and there was always the worry that if he was put in a tough position, he would reveal himself, but then who else was there?

Their choices were finite.

"Do you have anyone you think will do a good job?" Quinn asked.

"Yes." Sam replied, "There are two people whose ability will be useful and also are strong. Fex, with his string ability. The creative ways he uses his power, and the fact that it's an original ability means others won't know how to deal with it that well, and then my next suggestion would be Paul.

"Since you gave him the book from the Parasites, he has now become a level eight poison user."

"I will go with your advice then." Quinn said.

"Yes!" Nate cheered. "I knew following you would be interesting. I can't wait to see who we face out there. The strongest people in the world, all in one place."

After informing Bonny of what their team had planned to do, she then updated the other's as well. The reporters were in contact with all of the current powers and the other side would almost always answer their call at the moment.

That's when a new piece of information had hit them all, after the duel had been accepted.

The duel was set to be broadcasted live to everyone, and it would be taking place on the planet where the demon tier beast was known to be located. The idea was that once a new era power had been chosen, they would be invited onto the leaders table and from there, they would start their hunt for the demon tier beast.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 742: The new Cursed Ship

The decision to have the duel out on the planet where the Demon tier was located, was a careful one. Why? There were a number of reasons, but one of the main ones was due to new information that had been received, about how closely the Dalki had been watching them lately.

They could see that the Civil war fighting was dying down and was coming to an end. If the Human's were in the Dalki's position, they wouldn't give them the chance to recover and attack them while they were recovering.

So they needed to get moving and fast. The military, Bree and Graylash family already had their main spaceship with their forces stationed and hovering just outside the planet and each ship had their own unique design as they landed.

The Graylash ship was large and quite thin, tall almost like a tower. It's design was mainly white with certain sections of the ship coloured blue. The Bree family ship was mostly brown, it was flat like a pan but at the very end on its left side and right side two towers could be seen. The whole ship itself looked like a giant beast, perhaps to remind everyone what their power was.

Finally, the military's ship had landed and they had chosen to bring one of the new Bertha models to show off to the others. A top state of the line ship, there were only eight of them in existence.

There was no shelter on the planet, but each group had already done extensive scouting on the planet, so they knew where the safe areas were and where the demon tier beast was located. They had chosen a safe area well away from the demon tier beast.

They didn't want any unexpected interruptions to happen during the fight. When all three ships were stationed, out from them, walking onto the cold hard surface were the leaders. The planet they were on was quite the unique one, the surface was shiny and mostly a clear blue substance like a crystal.

But it was as hard as a diamond, much of the land was uneven and they were on the few stretches of land that were flat.

Exiting from the ships, each leader came out with around thirty or so people behind them.

Everyone knew there were more on the respective ships, but this was the number of agreed upon people that would be taking part in the demon tier hunt. Too large of a force and too many lives would be lost, but too little, and they would never be able to kill such a devastating beast.

Even if most of them didn't come back alive, it would be worth it for the demon tier weapon, that's how valuable a demon tier weapon was considered.

"Oh, today will be an exciting day," Owen said as he felt the chill of cold air on the planet.

He looked over to Mona, who was wearing her witch-like outfit and pointy hat. Standing by her side, a humanoid beast which was floating in the air, glowing almost like a spirit. None of the others had beasts with them, as they had all remained on the ship.

When Oscar had arrived, he did so wearing his usual military uniform, however, this time he came knowing the stakes, on his back a box that was as large as himself. The moment he stepped foot on the planet, the others knew what was in that box, a demon tier beast weapon.

One of the two known demon tier beast weapons known in existence. Standing by his side he had brought two head generals along with him, while the others remained looking after earth.

First by his side a female head general who went by the name Zera. She had red fiery hair and silver plated beast armour. She looked like a knight in the olden days, apart from her modern military uniform that could be seen underneath.

Then, the next head general was someone many didn't recognise as they hadn't seen him in any meetings before, this was because it was someone who had recently gotten a promotion, joining their ranks.

He was a muscular stocky man, but the thing that stood out, was one of his arms was robotic. The man was previously a general at the second base but was now known as head general Duke, of the second military base.

"It is good that everyone has kept to their promises, now all we need to do is wait for the others." Oscar said.

"We are already here," A female voice was heard. Walking towards them in the distance was a woman with a white overcoat and on the back, it had the number five proudly written. It was Lucy from Pure.

Behind her, thirty people had also arrived, and included in that group of people, were both Layla and Cia.

The three leaders were standing next to each other, while their people stayed back. They wanted to prove that they were no longer fighting amongst each other, and they also wanted to know the opinions of others.

"I recognise those guys with them." Mona said, looking at the three standing by her side. "They were part of the faction alliance that got destroyed by Pure. Quite powerful people, maybe Daisy won't be the winners in this after all."

"It seems Pure also have chosen not to send their leader, are they that confident?" Oscar said. "I was sure that after finding out the event would take place on the Demon tier planet, that they would bring their full force."

"The other question is, were they here before us? I saw no other ships in the area and it appears as if they have just walked over." Oscar mentioned.

The Pure group stayed quite the distance away, and Lucy walked ahead, with her she brought over the two groups that would be participating.

"These three will make up group B of Pure." Lucy said, pointing at the previous alliance. "Myself and these two will be group A."

From Group A, one of the participants was none other than Layla herself.

Now they just needed to wait for the other's to arrive. The next ship landing was the Daisy group. They also introduced themselves and the main group consisted of Helen, Ivy and Peach.

The group B were less known, and it seemed like they were putting all their eggs in one basket making group A the strongest group.

"Now just one more." Oscar said.

That's when they saw a similar ship arriving at the scene. Everyone had brought their flagship spaceship to show their powers, and after much discussion, Sam had convinced the others that it was something they needed to do as well.

Upon seeing the large ship, that's when the look on many faces of the people there had changed. From before, a few new changes had been made to the Cursed ship, one the colour design. It had gone from the normal boring metallic colours and had been coated in mainly black, with a few different sections made red.

At the front of the ship the words Cursed could be seen. A slash was made through the words and at the start and end of the word two fangs could be seen sticking out from the bottom.

However, what had shocked them more than anything was the spaceship itself.

'So that's what happened to the missing Bertha.' Oscar thought. 'But how did it end up in their hands, just who is in charge of the cursed ship?'

The others also recognised that the ship design was the same as the military's one, and now they were questioning just what type of connections they had.

"We never saw this when we were on the Crow's planet." Helen said. "Did we underestimate their strength. I thought the only group we had to worry about would be Pure."

"Quinn..." Layla thought, seeing the ship.

"A grand entrance I see." Owen chuckled to himself.

The ship landed, and coming out from it were Bonny and Void, who began filming as soon as they had entered the large ship. They had not seen anything like it, and now seeing the military have one similar they were equally as confused.

The answers would soon come, as the members participating in the Cursed duel, started to descend from the ship, and there was someone who Oscar and Duke recognised well.

"Paul... I thought you were dead?" Oscar said.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 743: Ex Head

It seemed like the Cursed faction were full of surprises, bringing both Paul as well as the redesigned Bertha, they knew what they were in for. They knew who would be there and how it would further complicate matters.

Originally, they had already decided to use Paul on one of the teams due to his poison ability. It was strong and could act as a support type ability. However, when they found out who was going to be there they were trying to figure out whether or not it would be best to swap Paul out for someone like Peter.

But Paul had now become a crucial part of the Cursed faction, and surprisingly he was keen on fighting even when knowing who would be there. Peter was strong but they already had strong physical damage dealers. In the future, this would be something that needed to be answered anyway, and if any questions were raised about his lost and new ability, he no longer answered to the military. They no longer needed to answer to anyone.

There was no longer the fear that some stronger power would take them away and ask them questions. The reason being after today, the Cursed faction would become one of the strongest powers the human race had.

That's when Quinn had realised how far they had truly come from the beginning. Still, the vampires were something he needed to worry about, so he or the others wouldn't be using their vampire powers anytime soon.

'The reaction from the supreme commander is a strange one.' Bonny thought. 'Do these guys know each other?'

That's when she noticed. Oscar wasn't looking at Quinn, but instead was looking at Paul when directing the question.

Before saying anything, Paul looked to Quinn for confirmation. He stood there not reacting at all, letting him do as he wished.

Giving a bow, Paul replied,

"It's good to see that you are healthy and looking well."

Oscar was trying to wrap his head around what could have possibly happened for Paul to be put in this situation. He was quickly analysing everything he had just seen, and had noticed the small glance he made towards Quinn.

'Isn't that boy, the one with the shadow ability?' Oscar thought.

Suddenly, the links in his head were starting to connect. The last time Oscar had seen Paul was when the two of them had led an investigation into the location of where the shadow ability book was discovered. At the time a crisis had happened

which caused Oscar to step away, leaving Paul with the task. That crisis was the Civil war.

When he had tried to contact Paul and the others, there was no reply. Seeing Quinn, he knew he was the one with the shadow ability and now, after Paul disappeared, he had returned working under this kid. The whole thing couldn't have been a coincidence.

'Who are you really, kid?' Oscar thought.

Clenching his fist he had one more thing he wanted to ask.

"Just tell me, are the others alive, or are you the only one that survived?"

This time, rather than turning to Quinn for confirmation, there was someone else he needed to turn to. That was Kazz, and she was shaking her head denying him to reveal anything.

With no answer, Oscar had assumed the worst.

The others around were still slightly puzzled by the relationship Oscar had with one of the members of the Cursed faction, that was until a few comments started to appear on the livestream.

'Hey wait a minute, isn't that the head general Paul?' A person commented.

"You're right. I used to be in the Second military base, I only saw him a couple of times but I'm sure of it."

"I was a student, he is definitely the same person. Why is he working with the Cursed faction."

"Didn't you guys know, the leader of the Cursed faction is also a student at the second military base."

"How could a head general now be under a student, what the hell happened?"

"I think you mean EX head general." Another person replied.

Seeing these comments, Bonny was already reporting as they came in.

"It looks like some people have recognised one of the members of the Cursed faction as the ex head general of the Second base."

Of course, the others could hear Bonny's words quite clearly.

'A head general that's gone over to the other side.' Lucy thought, looking at the large ship. 'Well that explains that.'

Another person that was taken back by Paul's reveal was none other than the current head General Duke. Paul used to be his boss, his superior. He would answer to Paul and there was always this slight fear when working for him.

'If Paul is participating in this duel, then there is a good chance the Cursed faction will win this fight.' Duke thought.

There was a reason why Paul was elected as the head general - because of his great power, particularly when using his soul weapon. However, Duke knew that having a head general on one's side wasn't enough to become a big power.

Otherwise the military would have been able to be a lot more commanding with just their eight head generals. In the other factions here today, there should be people who were just as strong as a head general and maybe slightly stronger.

"Oh, will you look at that," Bonny said excitedly. "We have just been given an update on the current betting situation and it looks like those now betting on the Cursed faction have better odds. Currently the Daisy faction still has the biggest lead having the most amount of credits put by their name."

"Of course we do." Helen interrupted, hearing Bony speak. "We are so confident that we will be winning this that we have put all of our factions' funds betting on ourselves."

Daisy had been an ongoing faction for years, just as long as the other big factions, so hearing this was shocking news. They were unlike the Cursed faction who had recently started out. Even if they put all of their funds betting on themselves, it would hardly raise the amount of credits that were put towards Daisy.

Seeing the screen, Bonny gulped at the amount of credits she could see now being spent. The one line from Helen caused even more to bet on their team winning.

In truth, Owen wanted to bet on the Cursed faction, but he knew that news would get out if he did. Before today, others thought it was strange that Owen had praised the Cursed faction so much. There were also questions as to why they didn't try and take over the Cursed faction when they were smaller.

He had to be careful because every action was now being watched, and he didn't want to do harm for himself or Quinn at the moment.

"You can ask all the questions you want later on!" Lucy said, pulling out her thin rapier and stabbing it into the ground.

"Yes, yes." Oscar said. "Would the Cursed faction please present the people who will be taking part in this duel."

Quinn then reached the teams, for team A it would be himself, Nate, and Fex. For team B, Sil, Dennis, and Paul.

Once the team members were revealed, another interruption had taken place, and this time it was from Owen.

"I'm sorry for interrupting, but I don't think you should use him." Owen said. "No let me rephrase that, it wouldn't be fair to the others if you used him, this competition would be over before it started."

They all wondered who Owen could be talking about, was it the young Cursed leader who had displayed great powers at the Pure planet? Or possibly the head general that had turned sides. It turned out he was talking about neither of these two people.

Instead, the person Owen was talking about was Sil.

"I think Mona will agree on me with this one. If he is to participate in the fight, I wouldn't be able to count this as a fair duel, for this boy is a Blade."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 744: Borrowed Power

Attention was moving from person to person on the Cursed faction team. So far, Owen had been really supportive of everything the Cursed faction had been doing, but the words he used were certainly strange and when Bonny pointed the camera towards Sil, they expected for the audience to answer who this person was this time as well.

However, there were no such comments, it seemed like to them he was just an everyday student and they had no clue why Owen didn't want him to fight.

While Layla was looking at him, she noticed that Vorden was acting a little odd. His head was faced downward towards his chest, with his back slightly humped and with his fingers he was constantly twiddling them as if he was nervous.

'His eyes, did something happen to Vorden, why do I feel like he's.... A completely different person.' She was unaware of the things everyone else had been going through during her time, and she could never imagine the truth.

Although she was curious, her mind was preoccupied with other things and she couldn't lose focus. In Cia's vision, Quinn had killed her mother, and it looked like this would be the event where it was to happen.

Layla wasn't originally planning to take part in the duel, but after learning about the possibilities of her mother's death, she knew that they needed to change the future that Cia had predicted, and the only way she could get involved, was by becoming one of the participants for the duel.

Three of the members had already been selected, those that were brought along with Lucy, the previous leaders of the faction alliance. As for the other two, trials were to take place in the shelter. They decided to hold a little fighting contest to just see who would be chosen to fight alongside Lucy.

Trying her hardest, having improved her abilities, and facing countless life and death situations, Layla had managed to come out as one of the winning contenders alongside a boy she disliked greatly named Rony.

Of course, Pure had stronger agents than these two, but on the planet they were located on these were the best, and Mr 0 had made it clear. To deal with this herself, and not call upon help from the others, but Lucy was confident in her own abilities either way.

"Why can't he take part in the fight, why would it be unfair?" Sam objected.

"If what Owen is saying is true, then I have to agree with him." Mona added.

Sil didn't know how to act as this was happening, he was happy to do as Quinn asked, and now he felt like he was causing more trouble for him. He looked

towards Quinn, and his eyes were watering up. Seeing how uneasy Sil looked, Quinn stopped forward.

"Sil is part of the Cursed faction, and the Cursed faction only." Said Quinn.

"Even if he is a part of the Cursed faction you have to know what weight his family name brings," Owen replied. "Can you truly say his family see's it the same way? If he was to get hurt, or maybe something was to happen, their grudge might not be pointed at you, but to all of us."

"Besides, do you not think it would be best if you were to demonstrate the Cursed factions power, and not the borrowed powers of others?"

They had a point, Quinn remembered how much the Blade family had done just to keep Sil on the island. They never had any intention to harm him, they just, didn't want him to leave. It was quite possible for whatever reason, they saw Sil as someone important to their family.

Although Quinn didn't think Sil would get hurt with how strong he was, there was always the chance, and in a way it did feel a little like cheating especially with who was around them. With Sil's ability, the stronger his opponents were, and the stronger people around them were, the stronger he would be as well.

And here, there were some of the strongest humans in existence that had been gathered.

'These blasted families, it seems like they always have secrets they have been keeping even from us.' OSCar thought.

'A boy that possibly is too strong or has relations that not even these guy's want to touch?' Bonny thought. 'What is going in here. Are the rumors true, were the big four being controlled by a force even big then them that no one was aware of?"

Throughout time, people always wondered why some people just had abilities, and others didn't. Where they had come from and how people had learnt them in the first place, and there were rumors that the people who gifted these abilities, were secretly controlling all the power houses, however none of it was able to be proven true.

But there was one thing that Bonny had found suspicious during her time as a reporter under a bog news channel, before she had become independent. At times there were incidents she had reported, and the articles themselves came out slightly different to what she had mentioned, when talking to her previous bosses about it, she was told to let it go if she wanted to live.

'Could this boy be part of that certain group?' While thinking of this, Bonny had a saddened look on her face. The reason, she wished she had found Quinn sooner.

Then she could have reported on his entire journey, because she was sure, that Quinn was full of secrets.

After agreeing to the terms the next thing that needed to be done, was select a certain replacement for Sil. While they were discussing this, a jeep could be seen approaching the scene.

"Don't worry, they belong to me," Mona said.

When the jeep had arrived, three men exited from the jeep, and what looked like a middle school green haired boy.

'Logan,' Layla wanted to shout out, but she had to pretend that she had no idea who he was. At last. The original gang was reunited once again.

"Did you complete the task?" Mona asked.

"I set up sensors around the place, so we know where the demon tier is located. We will also know if it's on the move or starts to head our way, don't worry. I won't let anyone disturb this fight." Logan replied.

Mona thought Logan had been quite loyal these days, he didn't even ask for compensation when doing this task or anything in return. She thought maybe he liked being under the protection of a strong family, what she didn't realise, was Logan was doing all of this for Quinn and his group.

This was important for Quinn. He needed to become one of the big power houses and Logan wasn't going to stop him from doing so.

Finally, Quinn had returned and the person who had been selected as Sil's replacement was Peter. A strong fighter who was unlikely to get hurt, and his regenerative abilities could be explained.. to most people.

For there was one person who was shocked to see Peter.

'That brat!' Duke thought. He knew Peter well, and both of them had caused great trouble for each other in the past.

When Peter saw Duke looking at him, he gave a little wink, and soon after raised his middle finger.

"Do you know that young boy?" Oscar asked.

"Only a little, a past student at the school," Duke replied.

Back at the second military base, Duke had tried to get Peter to do his bidding, when Peter was unable to complete his tasks and was no longer of any use, his plan was to get rid of him using Jack Truedream, but Pure was meant to take him away.

Yet, for some reason, the person had returned disguised as another student and then Peter was forced to participate in the inter base tournament as a fighter. Once again though, Peter had been taken away.

'What's going on? Are Pure and the Cursed faction actually working together, but I have no proof, and they can easily just deny it....Wait, how do we even know Pure was really behind those kidnappings in the first place.' His eyes started to turn towards the Cursed leader and Sil. 'Didn't we bring those two boys in for questioning multiple times?'

It was simple, Duke couldn't figure out anything that was happening or had happened, because he didn't have all the pieces of the puzzle, but seeing the three boys here together, and the fact that the Cursed faction had attacked one of the Pure planets, he could only guess that these three had managed to fool him somehow.

'You three have just made it to the top of my hit list, just under that dreaded, stupid night dmeon.'

Now with all the teams sorted, the area was cleared and an open large circle space in front of them was made.

"Let's give this a go," Oscar said, placing his hands on the ground. He was unsure if he could move the strange crystal like substance, but soon vibrations were felt and shooting out from the ground a circle platform was made.

Oscar then went and made several smaller platforms for each of the factions and the military to watch from. Split apart from each other so there would be no conflict. Then contacting from the smaller cylinder platforms was a bridge that led out towards the centre.

"The first group that will do battle is group A from Pure, against Group B from Daisy." Oscar announced.

The three from the Pure platform walked out onto the arena, and the same could be said for Daisy's group.

"It doesn't matter if you lose this one girls." Helen said. "Just try to get them to show everything they have hiding up their sleeve."

Helen never expected her team to win this one, she was relying on her group A to beat the others but Pure was surely their biggest threat, which was why she wanted to see what they had.

"Alright, Void, make sure you get everything, I don't want you to miss anything."

Lucy stood out front, and she hadn't drawn her weapon. She looked uninterested.

"You two, don't do anything." Lucy said.

Both Layla and Rony didn't draw out their weapons and stood there like statues.

"Match, begin!"

The three girls from Daisy came charging in, running towards them, but after a few steps they started to slow down, and suddenly tumbled, falling to the ground. No one had seen anyone from Pure move, yet for some reason those in Daisy, were lying on the floor.

"This match is over," Lucy said.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 745: Secret of Pure

A winner of the duel hadn't been decided yet, and the others only came to realise this when they heard Lucy say the words "this duel is over." Everything happened so fast, so sudden and too quick.

"What just happened?" Bonny said. "The two of them didn't even start fighting. The Daisy group haven't used any of their abilities yet."

"Do you think that they used an ability?" Void asked.

"No, the person in front, I'm sure there's a big shot in the Pure group. They shouldn't have any abilities. If their leaders did, it would go against their whole philosophy."

But if it wasn't an ability, then what was it? Void opened up another holographic display. It was still live streaming the events in the arena, and at the same time he was going through the footage that he had just caught.

A split screen was made so the audience could see what he was doing, and he started to watch the moment those on Daisy fell to the floor. From the clip alone it seemed like there was nothing fishy, as if they had just fallen.

No attack , and no movements from any of the members of Pure, but in a single frame, the screen had distorted for a second, becoming a blur.

'Was it in that moment, or was it something that the Pure member had done causing the recording to distort? What could interfere with the recording like that.' Void thought. No matter how many times he went through the clip, it would distort at that exact moment.

It was clear they weren't going to get any answer from the video clip.

"Do you have an idea of what she just did?" Owen asked.

"No," Bree replied. "I didn't see anything, I can only guess it was an ability."

"It's not an ability," Oscar interrupted. "I guess you two haven't had much run-ins with Pure to be saying that. Their tougher members have learnt how to harness this unknown power we are unaware of, we still don't know the full extent of what it can do but we're sure it's not an ability."

What Owen had made note of, was the fact that the military was somehow sure that it wasn't an ability. He was sure that they must have captured some Pure members to find out this information.

'Just what things do you do behind the curtain?' The dark side of the military that wasn't very publicised.

At that moment, Lucy had done something strange after being declared the winner. She started to walk to the edge of the platform, and stared straight at Void, looking into the camera.

'She's not going to use that strange ability on me is she?' He gulped, but held the camera steady.

"Everyone watching, listen well. I am one of the founders of Pure and what you just saw me do is something called Qi."

Hearing this, had confirmed Quinn's thoughts, but he had never seen Qi used this way before. Somehow she was able to knock out the others. Also, what was Pure's aim revealing this information to the public?

"Qi is something we have started to teach members at Pure. It is something every single human can learn, regardless of where they have come from. How strong your Qi is depends on you. It isn't dependent on some group holding the secrets to an ability, or if someone doesn't have enough credits.

"We have chosen to roll this out to our members slowly. Of course, when one has a power others don't have, their are always those that abuse it. While we slowly introduce it to everyone at Pure, we will punish anyone of those that feel the need to abuse this, just how the military and the powers you see before you, abuse their powers."

After Lucy was finished with what she had to say, she decided to head back to where the other Pure members remained.

"A promotion for Pure, and right after an impressive display of their powers." Sam said. "It's clever. They will feed off the frustrations of those in the war that felt like they had a weak ability. Seeing this as a way to improve themselves, and everyone else who decides to not share their powers, will be seen as villains."

Quinn was wondering if teaching everyone Qi was really a bad thing or not. Especially during times like these when people needed to protect themselves. In a way, what Pure wished to do and what the Graylash family were planning to do were no different.

Just replace Qi with the lighting ability and it was the same. However, there was one thing Quinn didn't like about both Owen's and Pure's idea. With Truedream gone or missing, Those that had an ability couldn't learn a new one or remove one, and what of those with abilities. What would Pure and Owen do with these people?

He was afraid that the answer would be a Purge. A reset to make things better.

'So that's one of the things Qi can do. It looks like Abdul wasn't lying when he said there were three different stages of Qi. If I was to learn that, then it would be one more thing I could learn that would help me grow stronger.'

"We will now be moving onto the next battle, which will be Daisy team A, against the Cursed faction team B." Oscar announced.

Since Sil was no longer allowed to participate, there had been a little change in the teams. Team A, now consisted of Quinn, Nate and Paul. While team B had Fex, Dennis and Peter. It was discussed that Fex was more suited to take the leader role in the other team due to his quick thinking and unique ability.

Before Fex walked across the bridge, Nate walked up to the three.

"Wait" he called out, and placed his hand on Fex's shoulder. "Try not to hit their pretty faces."

"What about me! You square head!" Fex shouted back. "I thought you were going to say some words of encouragement, but I find your routing for the other side?"

As for Dennis, he too had been stopped, but it was from Linda who had been a lot quieter ever since her brother's death.

"Dennis, if it's dangerous give up. This fight isn't worth risking your life for." She said.

Dennis gave a nod, and understood, he was the closest person to Linda after Blip. If he passed away, he didn't know how it would affect her.

Finally Sam had his words of encouragement to say as well.

"Remember, these guys are strong. Each one of them, will at least be as strong as a head general or even more. Their AAA Rank adventures, so I'm sure you know what that means. You have thought against emperor tier beast, right? Well think of your opponents as a legendary tear beast, and that's the wall you have to climb."

The three of them walked off, and Helen with the two by her side had entered the arena as well.

"So these are the dumb bimbos that chose to bet on themselves winning this whole thing." Peter said out loud so they could hear. "They lost the first match, and they're going to lose the second one as well. You might as well give us the money now."

The vein on Ivy's head could be seen bulging, looking like it was about to pop.

"Don't get angry, it's properly part of his plan." Helen said. "It seems like they are so weak that they have to resort to mental attacks like this one. There's a reason

why we are so confident, and why we were close to becoming one of the big four great families."

"Close though, right?" Dennis said. 'Which means you never did, and I agree with Peter. I think today you will only be..close."

While the two groups were fight talking to each other, Fex wasn't taking part in it. Instead he was concentrating on something else. He had his eyes closed and was focusing in his chest.

Usually, when he did this, he would see a hard red crystal, but day by day he had been chipping away and now, it shined brightly like a flame.

'This is my trump card.'

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 746: Annoying girls

The best outcome for the Cursed faction would be for them to win every single one of their duels. Of course, being realistic this outcome was unlikely. They were now fighting those nearly at the top of the food chain, and a faction like Daisy had been around for years.

Another negative point was Fex, who was unable to use his blood abilities, but was still able to use his blood string which was a bonus.

[Inspect]

Seeing this, Quinn took a step back.

'Well, this should be the case for a faction going on this long. I guess now we are going to start seeing things like this more often.'

Using his inspect skill, Quinn wanted to gauge their strength, he couldn't see their ability but he could see the equipment they were wearing. The two girls by their leaders' side were covered in legendary equipment. While Helen herself had a piece of Demigod equipment on.

At this level, seeing top level equipment like so would start to become more common. Their advantage with speed, strength and so on, would be less apparent until Quinn had gathered his own high level gear for his faction.

The problem was, beasts at the legendary and Demi god tier were rare. It was hard to find such beasts. Which was why even though Quinn's faction was powerful, they were playing catch up in terms of equipment and beast gear.

"The match can now, begin!" Oscar shouted.

Unlike before, Daisy wasn't going to take any chances and they had activated their abilities straight away. Each of the girls started to form what could be described as seeds in their hands. Moving slightly towards the centre. All three girls then through the seeds onto the ground.

Ivy and Peach threw their four in a semi circular surrounding behind them, while Helen was able to throw out four seeds on her own in front of her. Everyone waited in anticipation for something to happen, but there was no reaction from the seeds at all.

"It would be best for them to proceed cautiously while they have no clue what their abilities are." Sam said. "I tried to see if there were any videos online, but similar to you Quinn. Daisy had managed to take over their planets without having the need to use their abilities."

"What are you two doing, were not going to win the fight by just standing here?" Peter said as he charged in.

Sam was shaking his head, as it looked like Peter was doing the opposite of what he just recommended.

'What impressive speed,' Helen thought. 'But it won't be enough.'

The second Peter had gotten close to the seeds that surrounded the three girls. They sprouted to life creating a human sized plant. A stem with leaves could be seen and for its head a closed bulb. Still, it was moving as if it was alive and all of the plants twisted towards Peter.

Seconds later, the bulbs opened up and large thorns were shot out like bullets. With his great speed, Peter was able to dodge the first few, however, there were too many coming out from all the plants. The thorns that were the same size as a large stick had pierced right through Peter's leg.

"Got him!" Ivy said as she licked her lips, blood was trickling down his leg. "Once you get hit once, the other thorns start hitting you more and more."

"Screw this!" Peter shouted, running straight ahead. It was clear the attack's were too fast for him to dodge and if he was going to get hit anyway, then he might as well get his own hit in.

Running forward he raised both his arms covering his head, making sure it was the one place that didn't get hit. Now multiple thorns were hitting him in the leg, thigh and shoulders. He was looking partly like a hedgehog, but he continued to run forward.

"Have you noticed?" Mona said watching.

"Yeah, this one doesn't feel pain." Owen replied back.

It was the only explanation as Peter hadn't slowed down one bit and ran past the plants. The plants had turned and were firing some in his back, but he continued to ignore them.

"I never thought one of you would reach us, but it doesn't matter." Helen said, pulling out her whip. She then flicked her wrist and the tail end of the whip lashed out, grabbing onto one of Peter's forearms. He tried to pull away but at that moment the weapon's active skill was activated, creating multiple thorns all across the whip digging into Peter's flesh like barbed wire.

"This is why we needed to wait," Fex said. "Now we have to help him."

Dennis had transformed into his golden eagle form, and was trying to see if he could dive down and pull Peter out of there somehow, but the plants were now

shooting at him. His wings were used to deflect the thorns and were strong enough to block them, but his body wasn't and it was making it difficult for him to move well.

Fex on the ground was dealing with a similar problem. The thorn's from the plants were too strong to be blocked by his strings even with the blood coat. They were just going through them and he was using all of his energy avoiding the attacks.

Helen had originally planned for the plants to finish Peter off while holding him in place. With the other two now taking the attacks from the plants it was no longer possible.

"I'm now going to have to get my own hands dirty." Helen said as she yanked Peter forward. The whip seemed to be alive as it had its own strength added to her pulling him in and before he knew it a fist was planted in face. The great momentum from pulling him forward and her punching him made the attack extremely effective.

Peter was hit back, his head flung backwards tossing his whole body towards the edge of the large platform, lying still on the floor.

"That's one down, just two more." Helen said.

Getting annoyed at the thorns shooting his way. Fex eventually managed to grab one with his stings and threw it back at one of the plants, it went through the head of the plant and soon it shrivelled up turning brown and was no longer alive.

"This will work," Fex said with excitement.

However, Helen threw another seed down and another plant had just risen in its place.

"Okay bad news, it looks like they can just make more plants. Good news, there seems to be a limit to the number of plants they can have out at one time. Otherwise there would have just planted more."

Seeing what just happened though, the girls decided to change tactics.

"Aim all attacks against the boy over there." Helen ordered.

And now, all the thorns were being shot Fex's way.

"Damn it, if I could only use the blood wall right now."

"Arghh!" A battle cry was heard from the girls right side. They had expected it to maybe be the eagle man, but instead it was a person who they thought they had already dealt with.

"Why did you have to scream!" Fex said.

The thorns had been removed from Peter's body and thrown to the ground, while Peter himself had no visible wounds apart from the holes in his uniform, and cracks in his armour. He had completely healed.

"Unfortunately, if I get hit by those things, I won't be able to heal as well." Fex throat, then an idea struck him.

The whip was brought out and was ready to be used on Peter again, but before he could get close, Peter felt something else pulling him away, he was then thrown up in the air, and once he knew where it was coming from he had stopped resisting.

His body landed in front of Fex. At the right moment, the thorns were being hit away with such speed and skill. Hitting them so they wouldn't pierce his body.

"When did Peter learn martial arts?" Nate asked.

"He didn't," Quinn replied. Peter had stats that were comparable to Quinn's. They were a little worse due to not having the same equipment as Quinn but he was still impressive. However, one of the worst things about Peter was, he didn't really know how to fight.

Edward had only taught him how to protect his head and no more, if Peter ever learnt to fight he would easily improve.

"I'm just going to have to borrow your body Peter," Fex said.

'Although Peter's body is strong it won't be enough to block the attacks and hit the girls. Dennis isn't the best fighter either and I can only control and use one person as a puppet at a time. I guess I'm going to have to use that.'

"Dennis, come down here!" Fex shouted.

Dennis landed, and the three of them stepped back away from the range of the plants.

"I don't like you controlling me like this, but if it makes it so I can hit those bitches then it's fine." Peter said.

"Don't worry, we're going to win this," Closing his eyes, Fex looked inside himself and saw the red flame. As he reached out to it, he felt a warm sensation over his body. The light started to form in his hand and an item could now be seen.

It grew, and the others could now see it fully formed on the outside.

"Is that his soul weapon?" Sam said.

'How can that be?' Quinn thought 'I thought vampires didn't have soul weapons, and Fex was a vampire from the very beginning. Not only that, but this feels different.'

When Kazz saw the item in Fex hands her eyes widened as well, for she knew it wasn't a soul weapon, but a blood weapon.

\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 747: Blood or Soul?

In Fex's hand was his blood weapon. Shaped like a large needle black in colour. There was no handle, hilt or guard for the weapon and it only had a pointed end. Looking closely, even though it was black in colour, one could see through it like glass.

'It's light.' Fex said giving it a few swings.

Lucy chuckled seeing this.

"He is no master swordsman, that's for sure."

From the few swings, she could tell he was inexperienced when it came to using a blade, Layla knew this as well.

'If this really was his soul weapon, then it was a shame that it had to be a weapon type.' She thought.

However, Kazz seeing the weapon knew straight away that it wasn't a soul weapon. It was a blood weapon. But this was different and it challenged everything she knew about blood weapons, everything she had learnt.

Blood weapons were created using crystals that were left behind once a vampire was killed. The crystal's strength varied depending on the vampire that had been killed. But once the crystal was used to form a weapon or armour, it was permanently in a solid form.

There was no enhancement type blood weapon like the soul weapon, it was more like beast weapons. A user wasn't able to bring it out and place it away as they wished.

But Kazz had just seen Fex do that very thing. He didn't have the weapon before, and it had come out from within. The energy coming off it, she could tell straight away it was a blood weapon.

When she saw Quinn use his soul weapon, she could tell it was different to a blood weapon. That was a soul weapon, something only humans had. She thought because he was a human before, it looked like he was able to have a soul weapon. She didn't know much about human turned vampires.

And there hadn't really been any since the discovery of soul weapons since it was linked to abilities.

In the past, Vampires had attempted to see if they had a soul weapon, but could only see the blood crystals inside them.

'How did this boy manage to do it?' Kazz thought. 'If I go back and let the vampires know about this, it will be a huge change. The vampire's strength will increase greatly. I just need to find out how he was able to do it.'

Since using blood crystals had become a taboo and was against the vampire's code, blood weapons were very rare amongst vampires, and were either passed down through families, or only those that were old enough had one.

"Dennis do you trust me?" Fex asked.

"We haven't been together long, but I trust you guys as much as I would my own family. We have been through life and death fights together. Split the same blood, drunk from the same cu-"

"That's okay Dennis, I just wanted a yes or no answer but it was a good answer." Fex said, tightening his grip around the large needle. It was then thrusted forward towards Dennis back. "Then trust me on this one!"

"No!" Linda shouted as she saw what looked like Fex trying to hurt one of his own.

The needle stuck in about two inches deep, and through the transparent black sword martial down the middle, a red glow started to fill up.

There was another major difference between soul weapons, beast weapons and blood weapons. For blood weapons to use its true power, it needed human blood.

"What are you doing?" Dennis asked, but soon he felt a strange surge of energy pumping through his body. A new found strength he had never felt before. He realised that he wasn't feeling pain, but instead, it was pleasure.

From the needle itself, right at the end where Fex's hand had been covering the whole time, there was a small hole. Here was where he would use his string ability.

"Try not to fight it Dennis, and I promise this will be the best chance we have at winning." Fex said.

With his blood weapon, it allowed him to control two people. The needle was somehow linked to his thoughts and only a single connection needed to be made. While with his other hand, he was able to control Peter.

Not only that, but the Needle would strengthen whoever it was placed into, and this included vampires as well. That was until the blood would run out.

When acquiring his blood weapon, Fex thought of a number of ways to use the needle. He could try to impale his enemies and absorb their blood. When filled up he could stick the needle into himself or an ally.

That's when he came up with another idea, what if the needle was stuck into a human permanently? This way it would get a constant blood supply and would empower Dennis for longer than anyone else.

Now controlling the two of them, Fex made it so Dennis was in front running forward. He used his large wings to block any of the incoming thorns and just behind them was Peter.

Before when the thorns would hit Dennis, he would feel a slight pain and even though his wings were strong enough to block the attacks, there would be damage done, but not now, not while he was being empowered by the needle.

When they eventually got close enough, Peter jumped up in the air from behind and landed in front of the three girls. A strong kick was made towards Helen, but Peach had jumped in the way with her large round body.

However, they never expected the kick to be so powerful, as it threw her into Helen and they both went flying away. Thinking fast, Helen threw out her whip wrapping it around Peter's arm. They started to slow down, and she started to retract the whip pulling herself towards him.

"Why aren't the plants doing anything?" Ivy thought.

Looking around, all the plants had already been destroyed by Dennis. He was faster than before, and his claws were now more dangerous than ever. His next move surprised them all, as he chopped down using his claw slicing off Peter's hand.

With nothing to pull against, the two girls fell to the floor.

"How could he hurt his own teammate like that." The members of Pure mumbled to each other, but in front of their very eyes. Peter was starting to heal, it was beginning to grow back.

"Were fighting a bunch of freaks!" Peach said in anger.

Those watching from the Cursed faction started to cheer their teammates on. A lot of them had seen Sil and Quinn's power, but the others didn't get to shine so much lately. This was only bringing them confidence that they were in the right faction.

Trying to get rid of the most troublesome one and being the closest. Ivy threw out a punch of her own, which was just matched with Dennis's. The two hit and neither one was pushed back.

"How, I'm using legendary beat gear. I should be overpowering you?"

Dennis didn't understand it either, and could only guess it was Fex's doing.

"Stop!" Linda shouted. "You're killing him."

The others by Linda's side looked in confusion. Was Linda talking about Dennis, but he had yet to be hit or take a serious injury? When they looked at him closer, they noticed that he was starting to go pale, almost looking like a ghost.

'I don't think Dennis can take much more, I'm going to have to remove the needle. I can still use Peter and it's just going to have to be enough,' Fex thought.

Not wanting to hurt Dennis or push him anymore, the needle was removed and returned, but there were still other ways he could use it. Looping his string through the whole, he was able to freely swing it about all over the place, if he could stick the needle in one of the girls, then he could empower himself or Peter.

"Do you think they've done enough to win this one?" Sam asked.

"No," Quinn replied. "You can see it, Daisy haven't given up yet."

Peter charged towards Ivy ready to help Dennis out, now he no longer had the needle in him, it was impossible for him to go toe to toe with the others.

"I can't believe I'm going to have to resort to this for a small fry like you!" Helen shouted.

Suddenly, Peter's feet were frozen to the ground.

'Did something hit me?'

His great strength allowed him to break through and carry on running, but his feet continued to be hit and were freezing as he went forward.

"Maybe you can heal from physical wounds but let's see you heal from this." Helen said.

Right where Peter was standing, six plants rose from the ground looking different from before. The others were green with a bright coloured bulb. While these were red. When looking around the arena, there were also four more plants that were coloured blue by her side.

What Peter was getting hit by, were thorns created by these specialised plants.

"They held back!" Sam said. "The limit was never six in the first place. It was all done just to trick us. To get them to feel comfortable."

With the ice thorns constantly hitting Peter, he could only break free and move across slowly. Fex was busy dealing with Peach who had come towards him, and Ivy with Dennis, leaving Helen and Peter together.

When the plants opened up it's head, he could see the thorns seemed to have a flame attribute around them.

"If the fire is strong enough he will die," Kazz said.

Seeing this Peter started to laugh.

"It looks like my time has come to an end, it's a shame I won't get to see what Quinn does to you. For killing me like this." He said smiling.

\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 748: An interruption

The amount of plants that had been summoned was a total of ten. Whether or not this was the girls from Daisy's limit, or they were still holding back was unknown. However, compared to the start of the fight, there were now two different plants that had been created.

The regular plants were just able to consistently shoot out large thorns that were strong and could pierce decent tier armour. While the new types were elemental plants, they were able to shoot out ice and fire, and were just as strong as the regular thorns. This was the girls soul weapons, an enhancement type that was able to change the attribute of their plants.

The three girls were sisters and they all held the same ability, while their soul weapons each contained a different elemental attribute. They fought mainly as a trio all the time and had never lost a fight doing so.

This was where they had gotten their confidence from, when finding out the duel would be a team of three on three matches, due to their abilities they could never see themselves losing and it looked like they were just about to win another match as well.

The head of the plant's that surrounded Peter all opened wide. Even if he covered his head, if the fire was strong enough it would burn his body and everything inside including the brain. It would be the end for him.

"No!" Fex shouted, he swung his needle and managed to scratch Peach slightly on the belly with it, the needle had filled up a little and then he proceeded to stab himself in the shoulder, giving himself a boost.

'If I have to, I will use my vampire powers to save you!' Fex thought. 'It was my fault that Blip died and I can't just let someone else die in front of me again!'

The mouths of the plants had already opened, and out from them, the fire thorns were released.

"I'm sorry for being such a disappointment of a son, mother, father." Peter said, as he closed his eyes.

"You're not a disappointment," A voice was heard. "And if you're sorry, you should tell them in person.'

A wall of shadow wrapped around both Peter and Quinn, the attacks had hit it but they remained there floating in the air, the flames flickering slowly inching their way deeper into the shadow. When the shadow lowered, the thorns moved again, colliding into each other causing a small explosion of flames.

That's when they saw Quinn had entered the arena off to the side. He didn't have a mark on him, and Peter was behind him by his side.

"Did you see him enter the arena?" Mona asked.

"No, but I might have been too focused on the fight." Owen replied.

"Or he had moved too fast, that shadow ability is certainly a handy one, I wish I could figure out how it worked." Oscar said.

"What are you doing!" Helen shouted. "You can't just enter the arena whenever you want, this is an official duel."

"This match is over, team B forfeit due to me interrupting the fight," Quinn said. "I only blocked an attack that was going to kill one of my own."

Folding her arms, it was clear that Helen was frustrated.

"This is how duels are, if a person isn't strong enough on the battlefield and was meant to die, then they were meant to die."

Quinn looked at the three girls, he hadn't activated any skills and didn't even have his beast gear on at the moment, his eyes had changed and were a piercing red. As he stared at them, the girls all felt a shiver run down their spine.

'What is this, is it an ability?' Helen thought. 'My body, it's telling me to run away'

"I never planned on killing any of you, but if you had killed him, the three of you wouldn't even be speaking to me right now." Quinn said.

'If that is your wish master, then I can deal with them now.' Mist started to show from out of Quinn's back and the others thought he was getting ready for an attack.

"No, not now." Quinn said, and the mist started to enter the marking in his back, disappearing away..

The participants of the duel returned to their areas, and were busy getting healed. If they didn't have a strong healer then the military was happy to lend out theirs but there weren't actually any major injuries from both sides.

The others talked about what to do about Quinn's interruption, but in the end, thought it was fine because he hadn't attacked or hurt the other team, only defended the attack.

Peter had also returned to the ship, to deal with his special diet, giving him full energy for the next fight.

'Even after fighting those guys in the Vr game, I haven't improved at all.' Peter thought.

It took years for people to learn hand to hand combat, maybe some geniuses could learn it quicker, but Peter wasn't a genius and was slow at learning. He always had been at everything in life.

It was why he always decided to just head in wildey, relying on his strength and healing abilities, it was the only thing he really could do. It had worked for him so far, but it wouldn't work at the current level of opponents they were facing. Something needed to change.

"The next fight will be between Pure group B, against the Cursed faction Group A." Oscar announced.

Cursed faction Group A was Quinn, Nate and Paul. The three of them entered and were ready. They hadn't talked to each other, or discussed anything about what they were going to do.

The reason why, because both Nate and Paul knew whatever they said right now, wouldn't get through to Quinn.

When group B from Pure had entered the arena, the online chat started to go crazy.

"These three are really strong, they were part of the top factions before they got disbanded."

"There's Tulk, the man who had taken on fifty men all on his own at the same time. Beating three will be a walk in a park."

"Oh, and don't forget about Fareen, I heard she was the one that had created the alliance back then in the first place. The other two agreed to follow her so she must be strong."

"I also regaonise the last guy as well, Demon man Kubo. They say he will do anything and everything to get the win. All these guys are members of Pure?"

"Pure must have recruited them after the attack, don't you remember, they were growing really fast but something happened and they were beat by Pure."

"Well, these three together might be stronger than the main team of Pure."

"Do you think the Cursed faction has a chance of winning?"

"No! Are you kidding. The only person worth watching on their team is the ex head general. It was probably because of him they have gotten this far."

No one seemed to think that the Cursed faction had a chance of winning, including those in the Pure team.

"Watch out for the one called Paul," Fareen said. "We get rid of him, then we've already won this fight."

[Place your bets now, who will win, Pure team B or Cursed team A, click here]

A link was provided on the livestream chat, and it led people to the same site where people were betting before. Not only were people able to bet on the overall outcome of the match, they were even able to bet on the individual outcome of matches.

Typing away on a holographic screen, not too far from the fight itself, was Logan.

'The cursed faction is in need of money. And what better way to make money than this.' the master mind who had been behind all the betting systems so far, was Logan. It was the perfect way for the Cursed faction to solve their money problem.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 749: Overpowering force

The three big powers were sitting next to each other on their own platform. Oscar had made each of them seats from the ground below, making it more comfortable for them to watch the match. While, the others watching were left on their own platforms.

Although the leaders were trusted not to get into a brawl, the same couldn't be said for those that followed them. It wasn't too long ago that each of these powers were at each other's throats.

When Quinn entered, Mona noticed that Owen's shoulders were moving up and down slightly, the fan still covering his face, but it was clear that he was happy about something, chuckling to himself.

"You seem to believe in this boy a lot," Mona said. "I watched your interview and I was surprised by your answer. I admit that the boy seems strong, but I wonder why you think so highly of him?"

Oscar was listening in, but he also felt the same way, why did Owen believe in him so much? Back at the inter tournament, sure the kid showed promise and anyone would have been lucky for him to join their side, as he would be a sure asset to a faction in the future. But that's all Oscar could see, the future potential in Quinn. As the inter base tournament was only a year ago. How much could one improve in a year?

"At first I didn't," Owen said. "It was just a slight interest, but eventually that started to grow. Like a caterpillar turning into a butterfly. He has only been an interesting subject to me, that was until I gave him a little test. You remember the blonde haired boy from before?"

It was clear Owen was talking about Sil, the one in the Blade family. Oscar was aware of this kid and had heard about them not wanting him to participate. Whatever the reason, it was something that the others didn't want him to know about, so he would have to try to do his own research about it later on.

Mona just nodded not wanting to give too much information away.

"Well, one day that boy came to me, asking me about their location. I gave it to them, thinking I would never see him again and when he returned, that boy was by his side. If he can escape from those monsters, then this will be a walk in the park for him."

'Monsters, did the kid escape from some powerful beasts.' Oscar thought.

At that moment, Mona realised just how powerful Quinn was, as she was unsure, if that was something even she could do.

When Quinn walked onto the battle floor, dark shadows started to cover his body, and soon his equipment was visible on him, as the shadows disappeared. However when the others saw what the equipment looked like, they were quickly disappointed.

"Most of their leader's gear seems to be at the king tier level." Helen said as if she was disappointed but at the same time what she had expected.

Both Paul and Nate, also didn't have equipment above the king tier level, even though their equipment was now better than before.

"Are they laughing at us?" Nate asked, hearing chuckles from the other platforms, mostly he was worried that the girls were laughing at him, making him feel a little subconscious.

"It's because of our equipment," Paull replied, making sure his clawed gloves were on properly.

Recently, their weapons and armour had been upgraded to king tier, most factions would die to have equipment like this, but here it was seen as nothing special.

Quinn, when using his shadow equip had decided not to put on his emperor tier equipment apart from his gauntlets. It had great defence but slowed him down. He felt like this wasn't the time to use it and could always switch midway through the match if needed to. Shadow equip took less than a second to cast.

Another piece of equipment he didn't equip on, was his mask. This was due to Duke being at the scene. When Quinn went around the school as the night demon, he did so using his blood abilities not using his shadow abilities.

Besides he knew he wouldn't be needing it in a fight like this.

Watching from the sidelines, Layla had her hands behind her back with her fingers crossed, begging that Quinn would be able to win this match without getting hurt.

"Are there any rules about accidental deaths?" Quinn asked, while looking in the direction of the Daisy gang.

"If someone does die, then they can replace that person with someone from their faction for the next duel." Oscar replied.

"This kid," Tulk chuckled. "You didn't need to ask that question, because we were about to find that out in this match."

Quinn didn't reply, as he just continued to look in the direction of Daisy. Not even caring about those in front of him.

'Again, they nearly killed someone I cared for in front of me. I was here this time, but what if I wasn't?'

"The match between Pure Team B, against the Cursed faction A will now begin!" Oscar shouted.

As soon as the match began, Quinn raised his hand and pointed it at the man known as Tulk.

[Shadow lock]

A shadow portal appeared behind him, engulfing him inside, and as quickly as it appeared, it disappeared along with Tulk.

"What just happened to Tulk?" Fareen said nervously. Neither of them had ever seen the shadow ability before, so they had no clue what they were dealing with. They had only seen a glimpse of it block the attacks from the Daisy fight.

In her shock, she looked back, and when she did, she could no longer see Quinn there, only the other two. A loud stomp was heard on the ground by her side. A force so strong she nearly fell from it. Turning her head, the next thing she could see was Quinn throwing out a fist.

'Hammer strike!'

'He's using his bare hands? His shadow ability doesn't seem like an offensive one, so he needs to use his beast gear to rely on his power. I'm wearing legendary armour so his attack shouldn't hurt me too much, then that will be my chance to strike!' She thought.

However, as the first landed, the punching power seemed to bypass whatever armour she was wearing, feeling a pain she had never felt before. Her insides felt like they were rupturing by the second, as the force pierced through her skin into her organs.

She was barely able to keep conscious through the pain as her mouth was filled with blood and before she knew it, she was staring upward at the sky.

Before her body fell off the large platform, Oscar managed to raise another pillar catching her, and medical attention was immediately on the move from Pure's side.

No matter how strong one's armour was, Hammer strike, added with Qi energy was an attack that bypassed one's armour.

'How did he get over here so fast, does his ability allow him to move like that as well?' Kubo thought. 'My ability works best at a distance, I need to move away.'

Just as he was about to run, a path of shadow was seen under his feet, and when he tried moving his legs, they did so at a snail's pace.

[Shadow path activated]

A strong kick was thrown out to the head, the one place Kubo had no beast gear on, knocking him out instantly.

Was the fight over? No, there was still one person remaining.

[Shadow lock open]

The portal of shadow that was seen at the start of the fight, opened up again and Tulk had fallen out of it, onto the ground.

"Huh, where was I? What was that place?"

For strong ability users, it was easy for them to break out of the shadow lock if they were to start attacking it, but Quinn knew that when a person entered the space, they would be shocked and cautious about what to do.

It might have only kept him in that shadow space for a few seconds, but that was all that Quinn needed. Before Tulk could make a move, a red hot blade had appeared from his gauntlets and had skimmed past Tulk's throat.

When he tried moving his head back, Tulk felt another searing pain behind him. Quinn had used both blades, activating his gauntlet's skill, and Tulk was unable to move his head.

"I give up!" Tulk said, thinking that those simple words had saved his life.

"The winner is Cursed faction A," Oscar announced.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 750: My love in life

Layla's fingers were uncrossed and her mouth left wide open like many others that had watched the fight. They just witnessed something they didn't really understand. While Lucy had done the something similar in taking out a whole team without touching them.

Quinn's display had a more lasting effect, as the sheer power could be seen through each of his actions, rather than something unexplainable happening.

'Quinn, how strong did you get?' Layla thought.

The fight had gone even easier then Sam had predicted and he felt like he knew the reason why. Usually, when Quinn would fight, he would do so conserving his MC. The reason for this, was the shadow was used mostly to block attacks or as a utility tool.

On top of this, usually in fights, Quinn would have to worry about the chance of what was coming next. When fighting bests or in a war, there was always the next thing around the corner, and using up one's MC could be the death of them.

But here, in an official duel, he could use his shadow as much as he wished, and replenish his MC before going into his next fight.

The camera had been left in one place, with others having been set up beforehand in multiple positions to get a better view, and this time, the livestream was able to see everything.

"What the hell was that? How weak were those guys?"

"Huh, weak I thought a moment ago someone said they were really strong?"

"Cleary not if this guy could beat them so easily like that. Someone was clearly overhyping those leaders."

"Yeah I agree, they were treating them like they were the next best thing since sliced bread. So I thought they were actually strong."

"Thats a really old saying bro, has there really been no great inventions since sliced bread this whole time. I mean, we can travel using teleporters and you used sliced bread?"

"Maybe, the cursed faction is just strong? They did well against Daisy."

"Couldn't you tell Daisy were going easy on them. They hadn't even used their beast gear properly."

The general thought of the online community watching, was the Cursed faction couldn't possibly be strong. It had to be that the opponents in Pure were weak. Still, there were those that knew the truth.

Those that had personally been beaten, and had seen these 'weak' people fight, but anyone who would bring it up, would be considered a supporter of the Cursed faction, accused of being a member.

With the first three fights over, one from each faction, everyone was currently tied with one point. Most still believed that the winner of this whole outcome would either be Pure or Daisy. The bets continued to pour in supporting this thought

It didn't worry Logan, he had just made a killing on the fight that had just taken place. Very few people had betted on the Cursed faction winning, and those that did, didn't put a lot of money in to begin with, so the payout was minimal.

Lucy had decided to go over to Fareen who was receiving treatment. She knelt down and went to take a look at the chest piece she had worn. It had been scuffed but wasn't really damaged , yet it was clear she was hurt internally.

'Internal damage, was it Qi? But how would a kid know Qi?' Lucy thought.

Luckily, some of the best healers had been brought by the military and something like this didn't take too long. Soon, all three of them were as good as new, physically at least.

"Tulk, I need you to tell me about everything that happened to you. We need to learn about his ability." Lucy said.

The next fight was announced and this time it was the Cursed faction again, only the B team. They were to go up against Daisy's B team as well.

Wanting to make up for their lose, when the fight started the Cursed group went out in full force. They had discussed what had gone wrong in the last fight, and this time were far more organised when it came to thier attacks.

In the end, it didn't matter too much, as it looked like an easy victory for the Cursed team. This was expected not only online, but everyone else including Daisy as well.

Daisy's B team was already evaluated as the weakest team, and was only there as a way for them to scout out the other teams strength.

Soon after, when all the healing was done, Daisy's B team were to fight again, and they were to go up against Pure's B team. Online were still criticizing Pure's B team over their horrendous performance, and they were trying to decide who was weaker out of the two teams.

The haters were quickly silenced, as Pure's B team had a dominating performance finishing off Daisy quickly. They had seen a strong display of abilities and skills that many of those watching could never perform. Reminding everyone at home who they were really criticizing at the moment.

"Wait, so does that mean the Cursed faction are strong?"

'I told you, but no one would listen."

"Well, they must have some strength to get to this point, but we haven't seen them go up against any of the really strong guys yet. They're on another level that I just don't think they can reach."

The next fight the Cursed A group were up again and were going up against Daisy's B team.

"Quinn, would you let us deal with the fight this time, we need to stretch a bit as wells and your going to need us for the last fights." Nate said.

When the fight started, Quinn did nothing and allowed both Paul and Nate to take the lead. It was three against two.

Nate at first found it a little difficult to hit the girls, but he knew where to draw the line between an important fight and his love life.

"My biggest love in life... is martial arts!" Nate shouted as he punched one of the girls in the stomach, causing her to fall to the floor. However, that didn't stop the tears from falling off his cheeks.

"Is that guy crying, what a wimp?"

As for Paul's opponents, he had actually faced two of them on his own. Displaying great fighting skill, dodging attacks and hitting them back with his weapons, and slowly the opponents seemed to slow down, unaware of what was happening to their bodies.

"Why doesn't Paul use the earth ability?" Duke thought watching from the side.  
"I've never seen him fight like this before, or use beast weapons?"

It was confusing, and they had the right to be confused, especially when the two girls Paul was fighting against had collapsed on the ground, and started to throw up uncontrollably.

When the fight was declared the Cursed teams victory, Paul removed the poison from the two girls, making sure they wouldn't die.

Then, an unexpected big clash happened. It was the Cursed B team, going up against Pure's B team. After witnessing their fights and gaining the confidence of the public once again, no one was sure which side would win.

Both sides seemed quite strong, and the fight proved that as well, but there was one overwhelming factor that gave one side the advantage over the other, and that was Peter.

In the last fight, Peter wasn't really able to show his talents, but in this one, it was clear. No matter how hurt, or badly damaged Peter got, he was able to heal the wounds at an incredible speed. With Fex controlling him and his great strength and power. The cursed Faction eventually won that fight as well.

After witnessing such a great fight, Pure's group B were to fight again, this time against Daisy's group A. The outcome was as expected though. If Daisy were able to beat the Cursed faction, and the cursed had beat Pure, it was clear that Daisy would become the winner like they had done.

"Hey, hey, this isn't looking good," Peach said. "So far, Pure have won two matches, and so have we. But the cursed faction in total have already won four times."

"That means, if we lose one more fight, we've lost, and if the Cursed faction wins one more. They've won this whole thing." Helen added.

"The next fight will be between Daisy's Group A, vs Pure's Group A." Oscar announced.

This was the fight many had been waiting for. Even if Daisy and Pure were behind. They thought the winner of this fight, would go on to win the whole thing. To the viewers this was the most important fight, and for Quinn and the others, it was one they needed to watch closely.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 751: Pure VS Daisy

The comments on the livestream were coming in faster than they could be read now that the most anticipated fight was about to happen. For the bets, the odds were made even and it looked like Logan wouldn't really make a loss or a profit depending on which side would win.

It didn't matter much to him, as his main profit making machine was the Cursed faction, and so far from what they had made, he had more than enough to support the group once more.

"So far, we have seen very little of what Pure can do." Bonny started to speak into the camera during the break. "But the Pure leader's performance from the last match is still ingrained in our minds. This mysterious power known as Qi, we still have yet to know what it really does, and how far it can go.

"Is it strong enough to go against the top ability users in today's world? We will soon find out."

This time, when Pure entered the arena, both Layla and Rony took a fighting stance, rather than just standing there like trees. It seemed that they too would be participating in the fight.

"Who do you think is going to win?" Nate asked.

"Judging by how the two girls are taking part in this fight as well. It looks like Pure sees Daisy as a strong opponent." Sam replied. "I think rightfully so as well."

'I need to watch closely.' Quinn thought. 'Maybe then I can see what she's doing that I'm not.'

"The match between Pure's team A, and Daisy's team A, will begin!" Oscar announced.

"Go on," Helen said. "Why don't you use that skill you used before on us, like you did against the others? Oh wait, that's right, you can't can you? I'm guessing that skill only works on those that are weaker than you."

While Helen was talking to Lucy trying to taunt her, roots were travelling fast across the ground and it looked to be Ivy's doing, as she had her hands placed on the floor.

The seeds were then quickly planted on the ground and sprouted the plants. They didn't waste their time using their soul weapons to give them each an elemental attribute.

"Agent hundred, I need you to distract the tall one, agent sixty two, you stay behind me, and when the fat one gets involved. Knock her to the side," Lucy ordered.

Firing out her arrows and using her telekinesis, Layla was able to target them wherever she wished. The range with her bow was longer than that of the plants, and she soon realised that the plants were only able to target living things.

It allowed the arrow to fly straight past everything and aim for Ivy. She easily avoided the arrows, but was unable to use her other skills while doing so.

'That girl is so annoying!' Ivy thought.

Walking ahead Lucy had drawn out her rapier and held it by her side, while Rony stayed directly behind her, with a large bat in his hand. A strange beast weapon, but it was his unique one.

Moving forward, the ice thorns and fire thorns came straight at her, but a good meter before they could even reach her. They would either swerve to the side or fall to the ground.

"It's like she has some type of invisible force field." Peach said. "Just what is Qi?"

Going past the plants, Lucy sliced them cutting off their heads causing them to shrivel up. The others prepared for her to dash forward after this, but instead. Lucy went around to different parts of the platform ground they were on, and started stabbing random places in the ground.

Although it looked random to those on the outside, Helen was in shock for each place she had stabbed, was a seed that had yet to be sprouted.

'How did she know?'

Trying to stop her, Peach moved forward and now it was time for Rony to shine, as he interrupted swinging his bat.

"Hold her for thirty seconds." Lucy said, she then went forward and was after Helen.

Lucy knew that both Layla and Rony weren't a match for those at Daisy. They didn't even know Qi themselves, but after getting rid of the leader, the rest would fall one by one.

Two plants suddenly sprouted right by Helen's sides. These looked different to the ones before, being black in colour. A thorn shot out from the black plant and the same was expected to happen to this thorn as the others, only when it reached the meter distance and hit the invisible shield, it exploded on impact, creating a black cloud of smoke.

"Ha ha ha." Helen started to laugh. "The fire plant and the ice plant were my sisters, but this one is my soul weapon. Did you really think this was all that I had?"

When the black smoke cleared, she could see Lucy standing there with one of her arms over her head. Her sleeves were black, but there were no such injuries on her body, or even the clothing itself.

A dash forward and a thrust with the rapier. On instinct, Helen moved back avoiding the tip of the blade, or so she thought. Quite the deep cut appeared on her cheek, even though the rapier had never hit her.

While she was distracted the rapier came at her a few more times, now attacking her beast armour. However, Helen was fast and was blocking most of the attacks with her arms and legs, not allowing the blade to hit any of her vital spots and only parts of the armour.

Then the attacks had stopped, and Lucy turned around.

"This fight is over." Lucy said, loudly.

The two sisters turned their heads to have a look, and they could see Helen standing there. She looked fine on the outside, and had blocked all the attacks, but why wasn't she moving?

Then when looking down underneath her feet, there was a pool of blood. Seeing Helen's eyes not alive, Ivy, gritted her teeth and regrettably said...

"We forfeit this match."

"What happened?" Mona asked.

"I'm not sure." Oscar replied. "I was sure that Helen had blocked all the attacks."

The only one that had a slight idea was Quinn. His guess was it had to do with Qi. The blocking of the attacks, the defending against the explosion, and the attacks that were able to bypass the armour and damage the body underneath.

It all must have been Qi. From watching alone, Quinn wasn't able to figure out much at all. The only way he knew how to use Qi was to enhance his body, and also to control it outwardly on his items.

When the girls returned, back to their group everyone could be seen crying. There were multiple reasons for this. The first being the fact that Daisy had lost. It meant they were no longer contenders for becoming the new era powerhouse.

This fact was hitting them hard. After being a faction for so long, they would have to disband. As the rules of this duel stated. The resources and land that Daisy owned, would then belong to whoever was the final winner of this duel and they

could choose to join them, or go to one of the other powerhouses, if they would take them.

Suddenly, a loud pricing scream was heard, and Ivy stood up, looking at the Pure group.

"You bitch!" Ivy shouted. "What did you do to her, our healer, she can't heal her wounds. It's not working!"

Hearing this, Quinn thought it was the same as when he would hurt the vampires using his Qi, although this was strange. Qi had never stopped abilities from working before, so was this something different to how he would usually combine Qi with his attacks?

"Clam down." Lucy said. "Your leader will live, I made sure not to hurt her too badly. In a week maybe she will be back to how she was."

With the fight over, Pure had now won a total of three matches, Daisy two, and the Cursed faction four. There was no longer any reason for Daisy to fight, nor could they with their leader out.

So the next fight was to begin, Pure group A, against the Cursed faction group B.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 752: Can't Heal

The cursed group were preparing gearing up, doing a few stretches here and there before the fight. There was always a small little break between each fight, and those in Pure had just fought as well.

"You guys don't have to do this," Quinn said. "If you give up the fight, then it will be four wins each and our group will go up against them."

The three of them looked at each other, and they all already knew their answer.

"Quinn, thanks for looking out for us, but we want to fight. We need the experience. You can't keep doing things on your own. There will be times when you aren't there to protect us. You aren't the only one that needs to get stronger, we do as well. And what better way than against people like this?"

"And besides, you saying that hurts us a bit you know? Do you really think we're going to lose?"

Quinn stopped to think for a second, perhaps he was being selfish, he was forcing his wishes and desires onto them. Yes they were a part of his group, some even a part of his vampire family, but they were each individual people. All living their own lives.

"Don't cry too much if you lose." Quinn said, and gave his team a thumbs up as they walked out onto the platform.

Layla, making her way out was nervous as ever and gripped her bow tightly. Technically she was now going up against her own teammates. Before the Cursed faction had stepped foot on the planet, the leaders were made aware, that both Layla and Cia were one of their own.

This was to update the new leaders that were placed at the table. As they had never seen the two girls before. It also explained to all of them why Quinn was able to get inside information about Pure.

Everyday, they were learning something that impressed them even more.

When the two groups reached the arena, Lucy had asked them something surprising.

"Do any of you know how to use Qi?" She asked.

The others looked at each other for a moment, as they had no clue why she would have asked that.

"The look from your faces says it all, none of you interest me then." Lucy said and she drew her rapier weapon.

"So far, group B from the cursed faction has only lost against group A of the Daisy faction." Bonny reported. "Even though Pure managed to beat Daisy, this should still be a good match up. From what we have seen, since just the first fight alone the Cursed faction has improved, so who knows what the outcome of this fight would be?"

Finally, the comments seemed to agree with what Bonny was saying. Many didn't like the Cursed faction, but many didn't like Pure either. Even if they had become more popular recently, years of televised T.V stations showing all their wrong doings and labelling them as a terrorist group couldn't be rid so easy.

Most of the viewers were supporting Daisy, and with them out of the picture they now needed to decide out of the lesser of two evils and the support was pretty evenly split.

"The match between the Cursed group B and Pure group A will now begin!"

Layla had begun firing arrows, being the support she was meant to be, and most of them were aimed at Dennis who was flying in the sky. At first Dennis allowed one of them to hit him and then realised that they were quite strong, and were coming at him fast.

'Hey, hey wasn't she meant to be on our side, I thought she was just going to pretend to fire those arrows!' Dennis complained inwardly, but he knew that she needed to try her best to make it look realistic otherwise she would be found out.

'But then, why the hell are all the arrows being fired at me, fire them at the others! Does she hate me?'

The reason she was doing this was for two reasons, it made sense, her being the ranged one to target the airborne ability user, as for the second reason. Due to her being part of the Cursed family, something in her mind wasn't quite letting her fire arrows towards Peter.

It felt like if she forced it, maybe she could, but it would use an incredible amount of energy in the first place to even do such a thing. It wasn't even worth attempting even at a time like this. There was far too little she knew about vampires, and their family links.

What came as a surprise to most people, was how urgently Lucy and Rony seemed to be attacking both Fex and Peter.

She wouldn't let up and continued to thrust the blade towards Fex. He dodged each one and tried to tangle the blade with his red string, but it would slice through it without putting up any type of resistance.

What he needed more than anything was a break.

'If she keeps attacking me like this, then I won't be able to use my bloody weapon.'Fex thought.

Still inexperienced, Fex couldn't someone his blood weapon with ease, he needed to concentrate and take a few seconds before doing so. It seemed like somehow Lucy had caught on to this, and she was doing her best to stop him from summoning it.

'Oh, this boy isn't all looks, he has dodged everyone of my attacks.' Lucy thought.

After seeing what she had done to Helen, Fex wasn't going to let the blade touch him.

Rony, swung down his bat, and wanting to help out Fex as quick as possible, Peter sacrificed his arm blocking the blow. It had broken in the process but it gave the perfect opportunity for Peter to deliver a full force punch. Sending him flying and out of the fight.

Now he was free to help Fex. Seeing Peter running towards him, Fex was hoping to use Peter as a puppet like he had done previously. To do this, he could use his normal strings.

The problem with the red blooded string, even though it was stronger, it could be seen quite easily, but in this situation the red string was being treated the same as his regular string, so he might have well made it harder for the opponent to see what he was doing.

When Peter was close enough, moving his hand outward he threw out the small needles with the strings attached, required to control Peter. However, this was the opportunity Lucy had been waiting for.

Somehow she could see everything, and slicing the strings she soon followed up by stabbing Fex in the arm from above.

"Damn you!" Peter shouted throwing out a punch as hard as he could. Lucy was able to lift her other arm to block the attack. When the fist had hit, nothing happened.

There were no broken bones, Lucy didn't go flying and it reminded Peter of the old days. When his punches were weak with no power.

"That's not a punch of a regular human." Lucy said, as she pulled the blade out of Fex's arm. She then slashed at Peter's arm that had just hit her and it had fallen to the floor.

"Arghh!" Peter screamed, and had stepped back gripping onto the wound.

"What!" Quinn said, panicked. He was now worried, it had been too long since he had last heard Peter scream. Just moments ago his arm was crushed by a bat, yet he had made no noise, but if he had screamed it meant one thing. He was feeling pain.

Blood was pouring out on the floor and it didn't look like it was going to stop. She then proceeded to stab him in the thigh. His face was scrunched up in pain.

How long had it been? How long since he had felt pain? Coming back to him, his body was frozen.

That's when Fex noticed, that neither his wound in his forearm, nor Peter's missing limb was regenerating like it usually would. If Peter's arm wouldn't regenerate and with the amount of blood he was losing, they were in serious trouble.

"We forfeit the match!" Fex shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 753: Untreatable

After forfeiting the match, the Cursed faction quickly moved Peter away and onto the platform the rest of them were standing. A few of them couldn't help but whisper to each other and feel concerned as they looked at Peter's face in pain. An unusual site for those that knew him, as well as anyone who walked around the ship.

While moving him, the bleeding still hadn't stopped. Fex using his string had tied just above the wound, keeping strong pressure on it, his arm was raised, whatever was left of it to make sure it was above his heart trying to stop the blood loss as much as possible.

When the healer came out, they were hoping everything would be okay , but Quinn had a bad feeling and he was hoping he wasn't right.

"It's not working, the bleeding won't stop. I don't know what's wrong?" The girl cried and looked like she would break down herself at any second. Her hands were shaking, but she wasn't frightened because she couldn't help Peter. It was because she could feel a strange intent behind her, it was a smothering feeling around her throat, the air felt tight. If she couldn't do anything to help Peter, she thought it would be the end of her life.

"Quinn, stop it!" Linda said, noticing that he was the one that was frightening everyone else. A strange power was seeping out of him that he wasn't able to control.

Getting his act together, Quinn went over to Peter and tried to see if he could do anything. The attack that was used was a Qi attack. Quinn knew that Qi attacks made it so vampires had trouble healing. It was most likely that Peter was experiencing the same thing, only a more drastic version of it.

Maybe it was more effective against vampire type creatures compared to humans.

Closing his eyes, Quinn tried to feel the Qi around Peter's body and that's when he could see it. A strange energy was felt around the edge of the wound. The question was, how would he get rid of it?

Quinn tried moving his own energy to the wound but there was nothing, he tried extracting whatever energy Peter had but that still didn't do anything. Each time he tried something different it failed, and he clenched his other hand by his side harder and harder.

So hard that he hadn't noticed his fingernails piercing into the palm of his hand, and the blood dripping onto the floor.

"Peter are you still, there? I'm going to do everything I can, so don't die on me!" Quinn shouted.

Grabbing Peter, he soon dashed away with him to the ship. Injuries that were bad could usefully be fixed with meat. Maybe the healing hadn't completely stopped, but was just slow. This was the last thing he could think of.

When entering the ship, Peter still had the energy to eat the food provided. It had been mashed up into minced meat, that way if anyone was to find the strange meat or see Peter eating it, they wouldn't be suspicious of anything.

Finally, there seemed to be some results, as the wound was slowly healing, but it was at a rate that was far too slow, and soon Peter didn't have the energy to eat any more, bringing the healing to a complete halt.

"No Peter, we aren't going through this again!" Quinn shouted

Back outside the ship, many of the Cursed were busy talking to each other, talking about what had just occurred.

"Why did they have to go that far, and why aren't they doing anything to help us?" The Cursed members were talking amongst themselves.

She clearly knew the wound wouldn't heal, just like how Helen's hadn't. What Lucy had done was basically a death sentence. They were wondering if it was a message.

On the other side, Layla was having similar thoughts, she didn't think her mother was a killer and didn't understand why she had done what she had done. She wanted to ask but was too afraid. When looking at her mother it was always hard to read her which was strange.

Ever since Layla had changed, she was able to see a smog of emotions depending how negative one's mood was. Everyone usually had a little bit of fog or smog above their heads. With her mother it was different, she couldn't see anything above her head.

'Does she really feel nothing after what she has done?'

"You want to know why I did it, don't you?" Lucy said. "It was the only choice I had after receiving that punch. After seeing him regenerate, I thought he had a regenerative ability. Which was why his raw attack power took me by surprise. A regular person with that low level of beast gear shouldn't have that much power. I thought it might have been Qi at first, but I couldn't feel any of that coming from him."

"These guys, I don't know what they are, but they aren't ordinary. The only thing I can think of that they might be doing, is altering Humans. If that's the case. I can't let this faction get away with it."

It seemed like the whole thing was a big misunderstanding. Usually, when two sides were fighting each other, both believed they were fighting for the right reasons and it was the case with this as well.

'And what if I told you what I really was mother, would I be something you had to deal with?' Layla thought, saddened.

Someone could be seen running over to the Cursed faction platform, crossing the bridge that connected to them. It was a brown haired beauty, who wore large round classes and had her hair up in a ponytail.

"Wait, you're not part of the Cursed faction, what are you doing here?" A member asked.

"I was sent here by the supreme commander. He said your staff might not be enough." The woman replied. "I have healing powers, but if that doesn't work I'm a trained doctor as well. So I'm sure there's something I can do to help."

A doctor from the military had been sent over to the other teams during the matches before, healing them all. But this was the first time they had seen this doctor, it made them a little suspicious.

"Let her in," Paul said.

A command was given by one of the leaders, so the members made way allowing her to pass through.

"I'll lead the way to the ship so you can take a look at him." Paul said.

The two of them were off and they were running as fast as they could, while doing so the journey was completely silent, until Paul was the first one who had eventually broken it.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry I didn't say anything to you." Paul said.

The doctor continued to run ahead with her head held down.

"You could have at least told me you were alive. That's all I wanted to know."

"I know." Paul replied. "I'm sorry Hayley, I'm a horrible father."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 754: Big Distraction

Hayley was the school doctor at the second military base. She had also been made one of the Saregents there as well, although many thought it was due to her special connections, as she had relations near the top, one of them being her father, the head general of the military base.

One could imagine all the crazy thoughts that had gone through her head during the time of war. When she hadn't seen her father return, the rush of feelings she felt right now, seeing him completely fine, yet supposedly on the enemy side. It was conflicting.

She didn't care what he was doing though, what had upset her more than anything, was the fact that even though he was alive and well, she hadn't been informed of this.

"Why, why didn't you tell me you were okay, do you know how much I worried about you?" Hayley asked.

Paul wanted to see his daughter, he wanted to make sure she was okay more than anything in this silly war. He was sure she would be safe, as many of the higher ranking officials in the military were protected.

But due to his situation, he thought it would be best for him to distance himself from her. Pretend she never existed. The less relations and information the vampires knew about him, the less chance there was of any of his family and friends getting involved.

When they finally arrived, Quinn was surprised to see the doctor from his school here, but he couldn't care about that now. His main concern was Peter.

While Peter was getting healed, Quinn was wondering how he could have done things differently, unlike before he didn't interrupt this fight, but there were a couple reasons why he couldn't and hadn't.

The first being even Quinn was overconfident about Peter's healing capabilities. If she had aimed for the head, he would have attempted something. The second reason was how sudden the attack was. The movement was too quick, and the duel had gone from a few scratches here and there, to a whole arm being chopped off.

Thankfully, Fex was quick to call the match off.

Wiping the sweat away from her forehead, it looked like Hayley had done everything she could, using the tools from the medical bay. There was quite a lot of advanced equipment left on the ship that was never used by the others. The Cursed faction had people with healing abilities, but no doctors on board.

The wound was bandaged up, it was hard to tell if blood was still soaking through it or not, and Quinn was no doctor.

"My abilities helped a little, but I had to operate on it mainly, the problem is, in an open space like this in a non sterile environment, there is a good chance the wound will become infected.

"Also, I don't think I will be able to get his arm back."

"That's not much of a problem, but is the wound healing?" Quinn asked.

Hayley shook her head. "It isn't healing and if I had more time, we could cover it with artificial tissue and also probably get him a mechanical arm. But his regenerative abilities seemed to be blocked."

Quinn, then tired to search for the Qi inside Peter's body again, and there was still the strange energy felt around the wound. It didn't look like it would be healing anytime soon.

Turning his head, Peter could see the concerned look Quinn had on his face.

"Hey, don't worry Quinn, she said I'll live, right? Just do me a favour, go ahead and return the favour to that Bitch will yah?"

\*\*\*\*

The others had been waiting outside for a pretty long time, but it was understandable after what had just happened and there was only one fight remaining anyway. Finally though, Quinn had returned from the ship and was ready for the duel.

He walked across the bridge without saying anything, Paul followed behind and so did Nate. Pure started to do the same with Lucy walking out the front, but then behind her, Layla had stumbled to the ground.

"What the hell!" Rony complained. "Are you that scared of him, what's wrong with you?"

Her whole body couldn't stop shaking, even while she was on the floor, her knees were banging into each other as she walked, causing her to stumble. She was afraid, but it was because of all the dark smog she could see circulating around Quinn.

At first she thought it was his shadow ability, but she soon realized that it was her own powers. She hadn't seen this amount of negativity smog around a person before.

'Is this it? Is this why Quinn kills my mother?' She thought.

"Agent Five!" Layla shouted out. "You can make it so the person from before can heal again, right? You can make it so abilities will help the healing process."

"I can," Lucy replied.

The reason Layla was asking this, was because she wanted Quinn to hear the answer. Maybe if he knew that she could reverse whatever was happening to Peter. Quinn wouldn't kill her.

Looking back at him, she could see that the smog had died down a little, and it looked like her plan had worked slightly. It was still there but not as intense as it was before.

'I have to do this, for both of them!' Layla reassured herself, standing on her two feet. They were still a little wobbly but she could move forward.

"You won't have to get involved in the fight," Lucy said. "Stay away from them the best you can."

It was hard for Layla to know whether this was her mother speaking out of concern for her, or if she felt like she would only get in the way. Still, to find the truth she needed her mother to come out of this alive at least.

She went out and grabbed her hand.

"Mother be careful, he's strong," Layla said. She knew she wasn't meant to call her mother in front of the others but she felt like she had to, and at the same time, Lucy didn't seem to be rejecting her daughters hand.

Lucy then smiled before letting go.

"The match between Pure Group A, and the Cursed group A, will now begin!" Oscar shouted.

"What do you want us to do Quinn?" Nate asked.

Quinn held out his hand, like he did at the start of the last match.

[Shadow lock activated]

A shadow portal had opened behind Rony, and he was sucked into the shadow. The look on his face was one of confusion, as he was wondering why he had been picked.

Then, Quinn moved his hand over to his two teammates.

[Shadow lock, open]

The portal opened, and Rony caught himself, before he fell on the ground face first.

"Just make sure him and you two don't get involved in the fight." Quinn said, walking forward. "I need to find something."

"Oh, I thought you would have attempted to use that strange skill on me?" Lucy said. "I was looking forward to breaking it down, and showing everyone here that it was nothing to be frightened of."

Layla was wondering what to do, Quinn had asked for the other two on his side not to get involved, and they currently had held Rony down on the floor. Nate was able to use his soul weapon to make his weight a ton and now he was unable to move any part of his body.

Still, trying to keep up the act, she drew her bow and was ready to fire at Quinn.

"Layla, move to the side and stay there!" Quinn commanded.

To him, he was just saying simple words, but without realising it, he had activated a true command, a leader's command. All of a sudden, Layla, placed her bow down and was starting to move to the edge of the arena.

"Agent hundred, what are you doing? why are you listening to him!" Lucy said.

Layla was unsure herself, but her body was doing everything Quinn had just said. Unlike before when thinking about attacking Peter, there was no chance for her to put up any kind of resistance.

"A true command from the vampire leader and the person that turned her," Kazz mumbled. "Of course she can't disobey."

Soon after, Quinn dashed forward and threw out a single punch. Lucy being confident went to strike it down with her sword, expecting Quinn to be straight forward.

"This blade will slice through your hand, just like it did to your friend!" Lucy shouted.

When the blade hit Quinn's hand, both of them had stopped mid air and she could feel the strange force.

"I thought so, I knew you could use Qi!" Lucy shouted. "Now tell me how you know!"

Quinn had no time for games, and he was hoping he could figure out just what she had done to Peter. However, something had appeared that would distract him from the fight.

In front of his face, a notification screen appeared.

[Emergency quest!]

[The Tenth family is under attack]

[New Quest revived]

[An unknown force has invaded the tenth family area. Do not lose more than ten percent of your forces!]

"What?!"

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 755: Major Quest failed

The notification screen couldn't have appeared at a worse time for Quinn, and during his initial distraction. Lucy's blade was swung down in the perfect place, between the gap in his shoulder guard and neck.

It got in a few inches deep, before Quinn used his flash step to get out of there and return to a position far enough where he could prepare. From here, if she tried to come in, he could move away as he still had the greater speed.

[-5HP]

[95/100 HP]

Concentrating, Quinn was trying to see if he could see anything strange when searching for his Qi. It was like he had expected, there was the strange force or energy that could be seen around the wound, just like with Peter, and similar to Peter, the wound wasn't healing.

Trying to move his own Qi to the wound. He tried to fight off whatever foreign force had entered his body and was stopping him from healing. However just like with Peter, it was all useless. Other than moving it in place, he didn't really know what to do.

Looking at his HP, another thought possibly had entered his head, it was a little bit of a waste to use it now, but he felt like finding a way to get rid of the current problem, would help him out greatly in this fight.

'Consume blood bank, ten milliliters,' Quinn thought, like he usually did when activating his skills.

Usually a sudden rush feeling in his body would run through it as the blood was consumed, and after the wound would heal. The initial rush feeling was felt in his body, but the normal HP notification never appeared.

Instead he had received another notification.

[Unable to heal using blood]

[Your thirst for blood is still satisfied]

This confirmed it, the wounds that Quinn would usually inflict with his Qi would slow down the healing process vampires had, but the wounds that Lucy inflicted, weren't able to be healed at all.

In this fight, Quinn wouldn't have his second chance.

Now, he needed to decide how to approach this fight, the problem was, his mind was unfocused, for the sudden quest he had got only seconds ago.

'What was with that Quest, what am I meant to do about the tenth family being attacked? Does this mean something is going on in the vampire world?'

The problem was no matter what was going on, there wasn't really much Quinn could do about it at this point and time. The best thing to do was to ignore the quest but he was finding that hard to do as a big percentage bar had appeared. It was at a hundred percent at the moment and while looking at it, it had already gone down by a single percent.

"You seemed confident before, and now you're just standing around doing nothing!" Lucy shouted, and this time she came forward to attack.

With the distance, there was more time for Quinn to react. It was easy for him to just move or run away around the area, but he had another goal in mind. He wanted to find out just what Lucy was doing differently with Qi compared to him. He couldn't see or tell anything from a distance, so he thought he could do up close.

[Skill Daze activated]

[Skill Daze failed]

He wasn't sure it would work against such a high ranking member of Pure, since daze's probability of working was dependent on his charm skill, skills like this varied depending on the opponents state of mind, but it was always worth a try.

'Shadow rise!'

Lifting up the shadow, Quinn had stopped the sword from hitting him from his side. Or so he had thought. For the first time ever, the sword had ignored the shadow completely. When it touched the shadow, it split open, moving like clouds and allowed for the sword to go right through.

This had never happened before.

The sword was still blocked by Quinn's gauntlets instead. The look on Lucy's face had slightly changed, as she wasn't expecting the attack to be blocked this time.

'He has incredibly strong Qi, so I can only do this.' She thought.

Preparing for another strike, Lucy used her bare hand placing her palm on Quinn's chest, at the same time, Quinn had his eyes on something flashing in the top right hand corner.

[8 percent of the tenth family has been lost]

'What's going on!' Quinn was thinking this in more ways than one.

From Lucy's hand, a strong force was felt, it was sudden and powerful chucking him back and blasting him away. The pain was felt in an instant, and his armour was practically non-existent.

[-30 HP]

[68/100 HP]

Blood was dripping from Quinn's mouth and the insides of his body were screaming with pain.

'That attack, it was like hammer strike but different. It seems like it was an internal strike, but there was no force or anything. Was it a pure attack using Qi?'

From the sidelines, there were many people judging the fight.

'What is happening, is Quinn losing the fight?' Layla thought watching from the sidelines. She had attempted to move, but still her body didn't want to listen to her. She thought that Cia's vision was to do with this moment. But with the way things were now, she didn't think that was possible.

'Quinn, is this really everything you got? I refuse to believe you escaped the Blade's island with this skill alone.' Owen thought.

"Is Quinn going to lose?" Megan asked.

"Do you really think so?" Sam replied. "To me it looks like Quinn has been distracted by something, and he hasn't even begun to show what he can actually do."

'The shadow didn't work for some reason but that's okay, I have another way. I just need to find out what she's doing with her attacks. I thought if I took a few of them then maybe I could have figured it out, but I haven't learnt anything, and the more attacks I take the more dangerous this whole thing becomes.'

Due to the last attack being internal, Quinn was unsure how much damage was actually done, but as long as all his limbs were working, he would push through the pain and let his body work the way it always had done.

'I don't know if your talented or untalented.' Lucy said, unsure what his knowledge of Qi was. He was either talented for having such a large amount of Qi, or untalented because even though he knew how to use it, he was unable to progress to the second and third stage.

Just as Quinn was about to make his next move, the annoying message throughout the fight had appeared again.

[Quest failed]

[More than ten percent of forces have been lost]

Looking at the bar now, it had reached 65 percent so quickly, the bar was still on screen as well. Quinn thought that maybe when the quest had failed, the bar would go away, allowing him to focus more but it stayed there.

'Is it because the attack on the tenth family is still going on even now. Are the other vampires attacking the tenth, what about Erin and Leo? Are they in danger?' Too many questions were going through his mind at the moment.

And he had even thought about summoning Leo, to ask what was going on, but there was the chance he could be in the middle of a fight, and even if he saved Leo, what about Erin? Only Leo was able to be summoned due to a special skill granted by the system, allowing him to call his vampire knights by his side.

'I need to find out what's going on, I need to finish this fight and I need to save Peter.'

"I have to end this fight." Quinn said out loud, and these words came as a shock to everyone.

Particular they were surprising to the viewers online.

"Him ending this fight, how is he going to do that? It's clear that Pure can do something that is stopping him from using his shadow. Did you see his face?"

"I don't think he's gotten one attack in yet, all he's done is dodge and run."

"Maybe it isn't a bluff, remember he still has the other two in the fight as well, and they haven't joined in."

From underneath Quinn's two feet. Shadow started to spread across the floor. As it came towards Lucy she tried to stab it with her sword. The shadow spiralled around moving out of the way, but only on the part where her sword had landed, and it continued to spread across the floor.

When Lucy had attacked with her sword, although Quinn's shadow hadn't blocked the attack, it hadn't used up any of Quinn's MC points either. When blocking an attack with the shadow, depending on how strong the attack was, Quinn would lose MC points.

The blade had gone through, but didn't use up any MC points, which meant rather than Lucy using a skill that allowed her to cut the shadows, it was one that forced it away.

From the ground the shadow rose, and started to incase everyone on the field inside a dome, a dome made of shadows.

"This skill, it was what the kid had done at the inter tournament as well," Oscar said, surprised. Back then they couldn't see anything Quinn had done, but when the dome fell, the winner was clear. "Will this be a repeat of last time?"

"We can't see anything if he does this!" Void shouted, disappointed that the viewers and the footage they now would be getting was just a dark dome.

"We can't do anything about it," Bonny said. "Let's improvise and go around asking the others what they think is going on, and just who is going to win this thing."

Inside the shadow dome itself, Quinn had now equipped the emperor tier mask on his face.

"Oh, this dark dome and that mask has made you a little scarier but it won't frighten me." Lucy said.

"It looks like I can't find out your secret, and I've run out of time, so I can only force you." Quinn said, while wearing the mask his voice was slightly altered, coming out deeper and more menacing. A design Alex had put in, copying what Logan had done when creating the last one.

"In here, I can hide my secrets from everyone outside."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 756: Getting the truth

If there was one thing Lucy was being right now, it was cautious. There was a strange confidence that was filled in the boy, and she knew that he wouldn't be naive enough to act this way, if he truly didn't feel like he had something.

Inside the dome itself was Layla, Lucy and Quinn, while it had just cut off blocking out Rony, Paul and Nate, left on the outside. She was unaware if this was done on purpose or not, or if Quinn could even control the size of the dome around him.

This was done of course, to keep certain people out of the loop for what Quinn was about to do. Before Lucy knew it, Quinn was sinking into the ground itself. She looked around trying to sense the Qi energy from within him, to see if it was anywhere close by.

'If the boy plans to attack, I should be able to sense it just before.' Yet, she could feel nothing, until the force she was expanding around her changed, it was like a ripple in a pond hitting her.

All of a sudden, Quinn had appeared from an angle above. He was dropping down with an axe kick raised high with his foot reaching his head. It was too close and the only thing she could do was block the attack with the hilt of her blade.

The attack was strong and Quinn had even used his own Qi on top of his regular strength. The struggling face of Lucy said it all, as it changed into a smile and it looked like she wasn't hurt at all.

Quinn not letting up, and not letting him lose focus, flashed stepped behind her and started the regular hammer strike, rather than the blood hammer due to it taking too long. The fist was thrown and slammed into her back, but there was no movement on Lucy's end. She hadn't moved like a rock and she seemed to be completely fine.

Sinking into the shadow again, Quinn was wondering what had just happened.

'How, is it her beats gear? But a hammer strike still should have had some type of effect on her?' Quinn thought.

"You really don't know how to do anything other then basic Qi, if you keep attacking like that, then you won't even be able to hurt me!" Lucy shouted.

It seemed like what she was saying was true, but Quinn hadn't even begun to show her everything that he could do. It was a last resort, but nothing else had worked so far. Using shadow hop, Quinn could move to anywhere inside the shadow dome, appearing in one of her blind spots Quinn threw out a blood swipe.

A single one as a test, and when Lucy turned to block it with her sword, the two collided. Her hand was visibly shaking and this didn't go unnoticed by Quinn.

Seeing this, he shadow hoped to a different location and threw out more blood swipes. Lucy was no longer talking back and was focused on blocking each strike with her blade. Compared to the physical hits she had taken head on before. None of the hits had gotten through, as her skill with the blade was excellent and the blade she was using was at the legendary level also.

As she had gotten used to dealing with the blood swipes. A loud bang was heard and she had fallen down on one knee, Looking down, her knee was bleeding and a hole had been created. It looked like an object had pierced right through.

[25/100HP]

Quinn had to be careful. Usually he could rely on the blood bank for extra HP, but at the moment, he was unable to heal from attacks that had been dealt from Lucy. He could still heal up health from the Bloodskills, but it was something that would be difficult to keep track of during the fight.

When noticing Lucy was desperately blocking the attacks, he knew something was up. For some reason, the blood attacks she was unable to block like she could his physical attacks. When Lucy got comfortable blocking the blood swipes, that's when Quinn fired using his blood shot.

"What are you, how can you have two abilities!" Lucy shouted. "I knew you had been experimenting on people, but I never knew you had gotten this far. Tell me who you are working under?"

Although she was on one knee, Quinn could tell Lucy was not out of the fight. She was waiting for him to get close.

Throwing out two blood swipes and catching it with his shadow, Quinn had created the duel blood scythes. This way he could attack with great strength from a distance. Swinging out wide he had great momentum, Lucy tried to move and she did so quite well picking herself up.

A normal person who had their kneecap blown wouldn't have been able to move like her, yet she could, but she only found herself running into the other scythe swinging in the other direction. Lifting her sword, she allowed it to take most of the impact. The shockwaves and power was still sent through her body and it sent her back into the other scythe behind, hitting the back of her armour.

The amour was strong and had taken a lot of the damage, but blood could still be seen flowing out of her mouth.

'When was the last time I was in a situation like this?' Lucy thought.

"From the beginning I could have beaten you, I just wanted to find out how to save my friend. Now quit this match, and tell me what you did to Peter?" While speaking these words, Quinn's eyes were glowing red.

He had activated the influence skill and was hoping now she was more hurt, that it would work, but unfortunately, by the look on her face he knew that it had done nothing.

Lucy smiled. "You and all your people can rot in hell. Your friend will die, and you will suffer watching him. I know your kind, even if I saved your friend, you would either use me or kill me anyway. I'm telling you now, I will never be used again, everything I do is for myself, and for a better future for the world!" She gathered her strength to throw out a blood fist mouth full of spit on the floor, which landed in front of Quinn.

He couldn't force Lucy to do his bidding with influence, and he couldn't threaten her with her life. What could he even do that would make her save Peter. Not being able to come up with anything, just filled Quinn with more rage.

[Mask's active skill activated]

[Select an attribute to use adrenaline on]

[Strength attribute selected]

[Secret Mask active skill has been activated]

[Rage active skill activated]

[Your next attack will be twice as strong]

The mask on his face lit up, changing in colour and a red glow could be seen around it. It seemed to be feeding Quinn with a new energy in his body.

Staying a distance away, still not getting close. Quinn prepared a blood hammer strike. He pounded his foot, stomping it into the ground, and snapped his fist back, before throwing out his right fist, he flash stepped forward closing the distance, and threw his fist down towards Lucy's stomach.

"Let's see if you're really not afraid of death!" Quinn shouted.

"Quinn, no please!" Layla screamed from the sides, as she could see everything happening. It looked like what Cia had seen was coming true, even with her interference, even with her being in the duel.

Was it really going to play out the same way? No, Layla wouldn't let that happen.

When Quinn's fist had hit Lucy in the stomach, it almost felt like it had phased through until he had felt something solid. Then, he could see strange looking ripples around his fist.

'What is this?' Quinn thought.

The sound of a body falling to the floor from his right side was heard, and he could see Layla lying on the floor in a pool of blood. Where her stomach was, a giant hole.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 757: What is Qi?

After seeing Layla's body lying on the floor like that, Quinn didn't rush over, he wasn't filled with rage. Instead his mind had gone completely blank. It was as if he didn't really understand what he was looking at, nor how something like this could have been possible.

'No. No, I gave her a command, didn't I? I told her not to get involved. So how did it become like this?'

Quinn was unaware of everything that Layla had done beforehand. Knowing that it was quite possible her mother would die in this fight, she needed to make sure that wouldn't happen, not just for herself, but for Quinn as well.

If Layla had to pick who she sided more in this fight, Quinn or her mother, it would have to be Quinn. Whenever she thought about this, this was what her mind wandered to.

And at the end of the day, not only did Layla not want her mother to die, she also didn't want Quinn to become a large target of Pure. He wasn't ready for that yet.

Beforehand, when Layla had made her plea to her mother and gave her a warning, she had reached out and grabbed her hand. At that moment she had activated the skill Spiritual Partner. The skill, when activated, would allow Layla to choose what attacks she would take instead. Any damage that would be inflicted on Lucy, would come back and be dealt to her.

When Quinn started to get the upper hand in the fight, she had tried to activate the skill, but it hadn't worked. The skill wouldn't activate as something was stopping her, and Quinn's words would ring in her mind.

Since the skill was activated on her mother before, she thought it would be okay and since it was a skill that didn't do any damage to Quinn, nor really would change the fight, she thought that it would activate. But in her mind, she knew what she was doing, she knew it would be interfering with the match.

That's when she started to wonder, how did Quinn's command actually work? There were limits to it, as she remembered that the council had told them they needed to keep an eye on Paul. Even if Quinn had ordered Paul not to tell anyone, it would only last so long and when Quinn wasn't there he could speak to whoever he wished. This was what the council was worried about.

There were a number of parameters that they still didn't understand about the skill. How long it would last, how detailed the instructions needed to be given, or if there was any work around.

Thinking about this, Layla started to focus her mind on some distant memories. Ever since she had been turned, in order to control her emotions she had gotten

good at picturing herself in certain situations, they had to feel realistic, feel like she was there. It was even easier to do when there were negative emotions around her, as their feelings would enter her and at the time she had the perfect two people who were filled with negativity.

Absorbing some of the smoke, memories started flooding in and she began to picture herself in the past in different situations. She needed to make it so she was no longer there, with the fight still going on in front of her. After a good while, she had come up with a scenario in her head where she had to use the skill, but it had nothing to do with Quinn.

The outside world no longer existed and only the thoughts in her head seemed real.

A glowing feeling was felt in her chest as her skill had been activated, then when she opened her eyes and looked up, she had done so at the worst time. For Quinn was ready to deal a devastating blow to her mother, one with great power.

"Quinn, no please!" She shouted.

The skill was already activated and seeing the scene in front of her, had changed nothing. The only thing she could do was absorb the rest of the smog empowering herself. If she was going to take this blow, she needed to heal from it.

With the smog of negative emotions, she started to partially evolve into her next form, but before she knew it, there was a large wound in her chest and she had fallen to the floor.

While Quinn was standing there with a blank look on his face, not even running over to Layla, it was the perfect opportunity for Lucy to strike, but she hadn't done so. Instead, she tried to run over to Layla's side, but had fallen and stumbled.

She was still hurt from the injuries that she had been dealt before. Internally she was hurt and her kneecap was busted.

The shadow dome surrounding the two started to lower down, and the situation was being reached by the others, they could see Lucy hurt on the floor holding one knee, Quinn standing there with a blank look, and finally Layla in a pool of her own blood.

"Quick!" Lucy shouted out. "The match is over, we lost, someone just help my daughter!" A sudden pain was felt around her chest as she shouted out those words. Uncontrollable tears started to flow down her face.

The Pure members were stunned by this scene as they had never seen Lucy ever act like this before. She was their cold hearted leader who even treated her daughter like something that could be replaced at any time. In some cases she was treated harsher.

Hayley had returned from looking after Peter for a while and she immediately dashed into the arena to have a look at Layla who was on the floor. The wound was so large that the floor could be seen through the hole in her chest.

'This doesn't look good, part of the heart has been destroyed....but how the hell is she alive? Whatever the case is, she won't be alive for a lot longer if I don't do something about it.'

Hayley got to work. It looked like the body had already been trying to heal itself beforehand, it was the only reason why she was still alive right now. However, her body could only do so much. Even with Hayley's healing abilities and the body's natural regenerative abilities, they would be lucky to bring her back.

"What's happening?" Lucy asked, choked up on tears.

"She's dying quicker than I can heal her." Hayley said. "I'm afraid, there's nothing I can do. It would be best if you could say your goodbyes to her now, while she can still hear your voice."

Hearing this had just further put Quinn in a strange state of mind.

'No, I did this to her, she had to have used her ability, right? Can't I do anything? Can't I save her like the others..'

Unlike the time before, when someone was on the verge of death, Quinn could turn them to save them, but this wasn't the case this time. Snapping out of it, he rushed over to Layla's side. Her eyes were barely open and she could only see blurry figures above her.

The first thing Quinn tried was giving her blood from his flask.

"What are you doing?" Hayley asked, "How is that meant to help?"

"Just leave me alone!" Quinn shouted, "I have to try something!"

Even though she wasn't a vampire and didn't need blood, he tried it anyway. There was no response. The next thing he did was make a cut on his hand, and tried to feed her his blood. He didn't really know what his thoughts were behind this, maybe he could have activated another blood ritual turning her into something else, or maybe his blood would empower her like it did with Peter.

Still though, there was no response. The people watching from the sides thought it was a desperate act from a stranger to do something. They were unsure why he was even acting this way, when the girl wasn't even on his team.

"Move idiot." Lucy said, shoving passed Quinn and falling to the floor on her knees. The tears were no longer dropping down the side of her cheeks, it was as if she had come to accept what was about to happen.

"Good it looks like you are still alive," Lucy said, brushing her to the side, and that's when she could see two small bumps on the top of her head. "I knew you were hiding something from me."

She then placed both hands above the wound on her stomach and left them there.

"You know, when you were born I hated you. I hated your guts because every time I looked at you, you reminded me of him. Oh how much you had to take after him rather than me.

"I know I shouldn't have blamed you, an innocent child for something he had done, but I couldn't help myself. When the organisation asked for someone to volunteer to infiltrate the academy and use an ability, I chose you straight away. Why? Because I didn't want to see you ever again.

"But then, you came back and returned, came back to me for some stupid reason. Whenever you would go away you would somehow come back into my life. You're such an idiot....it looks like you took after me in that aspect at least.. Only now seeing you like this, I realised how much I care about you.

Hayley couldn't believe what was happening, but the colour and the wound in her body was starting to close up. It was no short of a miracle. When she turned to look at Lucy to have a look at what she was doing, she could see her hands were changing by the second.

The skin on her hands was becoming thinner, wrinklier, and her face and hair were ageing by the second. In front of her very eyes she was turning into an old woman.

"Do you know what Qi is?" Said Lucy. "It's life energy. Use it well." She lifted her hands off Layla's stomach as her body fell to the side. Her heart, no longer beating.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 758: A vampire healer

Those who had watched everything on the platforms were left confused by the sequence of events that had unraveled. Whatever the case or actual outcome of the fight itself, they didn't think it would lead to this.

One of the Pure leaders was lying there on the floor, still, while another one, who they had just heard being called her daughter, was in a pool of her own blood barely clinging on to life.

"An upset once again that has been hidden behind the shadows." Oscar said.

"Not only that, but it seems like there is a greater story to all of this, something that we are unaware of completely." Mona added, seeing Quinn look uncomfortable about the whole thing happening.

Void and Bonny were unable to film the fight, but as soon as the shadow dome started to disappear, the camera was pointed right at the duel taking place once again. The viewers were in for a surprise as they saw Lucy looking defeated while Quinn stood there fine.

When the dome fell, he also unequipped his equipment, he wasn't even sure if he had the will to fight at that moment if Lucy had tried to attack him. Then the viewers heard the great cry Lucy had done as she saw her daughter.

"So the Cursed faction, they won? Doesn't this mean they are the new era power? They will be invited over to the leaders table with the others."

"I can't believe it. I put all my life savings on Pure winning, how could they lose!"

"Don't you think he went a bit far, he tried to kill the girl. He could have just beaten her. Maybe that's why she gave up."

"Did you see what happened at the end, why did the woman turn into a granny, it looked like she's dead."

Soon after the stream had ended there, and later on an announcement was to be made about the rest of the outcome. While things weren't very clear Bonny and Void thought this would be for the best.

With the duel coming to an end, the place was cleared and the Pure members and Daisy members were told to stay on the planet to remain on standby. Later on they were to negotiate the terms and hand over everything that would now belong to the Cursed faction.

For the time being, the leaders and all the groups returned to their ship, and none of them were to leave. The original plan was to set a meeting inviting the new leader to the table to discuss plans on hunting the demoin tier beast.

However, Quinn wasn't in the mood to talk at the moment, and they could see that by his actions that they had considered strange.

Hayley had confirmed the death of Lucy, and her body was handed over to the Pure group. On a ship there would usually be a place where one could store bodies, freezing them to preserve them for burying later, but when they tried to grab Layla as well, Quinn refused.

He stated if anyone touched her, he would deal with all of them. They stayed back with no leaders and most of them not being from Pure, they didn't care about her that much to get involved.

He then grabbed Layla in both arms, and began to move her while Hayley followed. She wanted to make sure Layla was all okay.

Quinn didn't quite know what happened, but he knew that her mother had given her life in order to save Layla, but they were unsure if that was enough.

After some emergency treatment provided by Hayley, she was placed on one of the medical beds next to Peter. The two of them lied down side by side, and Peter was being much more responsive but he was still weak.

No amount of food was allowing him to heal, but Hayley said it didn't look like he would be dying soon either. It was clear he couldn't fight in the current condition he was in, and his arm was still missing as well.

With Lucy gone, he was starting to wonder if he would ever find a way to get Peter back to normal.

"Is she okay?" Quinn asked.

"As a doctor I have to tell you the truth. I know her mother has given up her life for her, but all she has done is give her more time. The wound won't close up, her heart is still partially beating, but if we try to put an artificial one in there, to get a donor. I'm afraid it will put too much strain on her body and we will lose her. It's not something she can go through in the condition she is in."

While looking at Quinn's saddened face, and seeing him stare at Layla, a thought had come into Hayley's mind. She knew she had seen something similar before. When she was working at the school, the two of them had come in and she thought they were both an item at the school.

It was strange, seeing the two of them like this again. It was a small world. She wondered how these two came to be on opposite sides. She just wished the world didn't need to be this way.

Footsteps could be heard coming up from behind, and when she turned around she was surprised to see that it was her father Paul, but he wasn't alone, and there was someone else with him. A young looking female.

"Hayley why don't you come with me, these two need to talk about something." Paul said and the two of them were off.

There was silence between the two of them and Quinn didn't even look at Kazz but continued to stare at Layla.

"What do you want? Have the vampires asked you to do something?" Quinn asked. Thinking about this, it also reminded Quinn of the strange quest he had gotten during the fight. He now had multiple things to worry about.

"In the vampire world, there is a leader who can probably heal them both. I know the humans can't do anything, but I'm confident one of the vampires can." Kazz said.

"And why should I trust you, why would you choose to help me?" Quinn replied.

"Quinn, I am not here to sabotage you, I am only here to keep an eye on you. Both of these two here are part of the vampire world as well. They will get treatment for being injured on this mission. I can tell they don't have time."

"Although I am a vampire under another family leader, right now my job from the king is to help you. Everything I do is for the vampires. And these two here are vampires."

He didn't know if Kazz was a good actress, or if her words were genuine, but she was certainly very convincing about the whole thing. He didn't know what other choice he had. According to Hayley, Layla would soon die and Peter was now unable to do anything.

"Can I come with you?" Quinn asked.

Kazz shook her head.

"It's not that you can't but I suggest that you don't. There are people who don't like that you are here in the first place. If you go, there is a good chance you won't make it back, or at least stop you from returning."

When saying these words, she was wondering herself why she was telling Quinn this, but at the end of the day, she really was just following her orders as she was meant to.

"Can you do me a favour when you get back?" Quinn asked. "Find out what happened to the Tenth family and report back to me. Keep me updated."

In the middle of the fight, the progress bar for the quest had stopped going down and had disappeared. Quinn was unsure what the number it had stopped at was, he was only sure that it wasn't zero, which meant they were still alive. At least some of them.

His system also still stated that Leo was his selected vampire knight and could still summon him, so he could only assume Leo was okay.

"I'll try." She replied.

Bringing over the teleporter, Kazz held Layla carefully in both arms, while Peter steadied himself onto his two feet. The three of them went through, travelling to the vampire world.

"I hope you can get better." Quinn said.

With a little bit off his mind, there was finally something he could look at that had happened as soon as the match had ended.

[Quest complete]

[Become the new era power]

[Please select your reward...]

\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 759: Choose a reward

Quinn was expecting quite the reward from the quest since it was a major quest line. Rather than an instant quest that would pop up when facing a tough opponent. When going up against Lucy, nothing had come up when using his inspect skill either.

He suspected that this might have not been because the system didn't consider her strong enough, but just because it was already related to the main quest anyway of becoming a new power. It had been quite the journey taking planet after planet, but in the end it ended quicker than he imagined due to the duel.

Not without its problems though.

[Please choose your quest reward]

[Instant level up (Evolution available)]

The first set of messages surprised Quinn, rather than giving him multiple rewards or just a single big one it was letting him choose. The first option an instant level up, there was nothing else but that.

A little disappointed, but the rewards for becoming one of the leaders at the leaders table, would bear fruit soon, rather than in the system itself. And if Quinn thought about it a bit more, the instant level up quest would appear less and less as he got stronger.

At the moment it felt like it was impossible for him to level up, and despite all the people he had met so far, he had not been given an instant level up quest. With this he would finally reach level forty evolving into a vampire lord, which he was sure would have its own benefits.

And he would have been one step closer to completing the quest of becoming a vampire leader. All that was left after that was to appoint another vampire knight.

But then there was the second option.

[Unlock all skills of the shadow ability, Level eight and seven]

He thought it might be easy choosing between the two but the second one had certainly made things difficult. There was still one more skill to be unlocked at level seven and he had no clue how many there were at level eight. Choosing this reward would unlock them all.

Training the shadow to get enough skill points took a long time, and unlike the instant level up, there was hardly ever a quest that would allow him to unlock a skill. Yet, this was allowing him to unlock every skill.

After thinking about it long and hard, Quinn had finally chosen one.

[New skill Shadow sink unlocked: similar to shadow hop where the user is able to travel to anywhere the shadow they control is present. Shadow sink allows one to do this with anything as long as the shadow is large enough. The larger the object is to be moved, and the greater the distance is, the more MC points will be consumed.]

Quinn had seen Arthur use this skill while fighting the vampire leaders. He had spread his shadow so it was spread on the whole battlefield floor, then used it to move the leader's away from battle, and even used it to redirect one of their attacks.

When Arthur used it, the skill certainly seemed very handy, but Quinn and Arthur were two different people. Quinn was unable to spread his shadow on the floor that wide, he just didn't have enough MC points for that. If the skill took up more MC points on top of this, then that would be a problem.

Like shadow hop, it was most likely a skill that could only be used with Shadow void, when he would create the domes made of shadow.

That was the last skill of the level 7, and finally he had levelled his ability to the last level, level 8.

[Level 8 shadow ability unlocked]

[Reward sixty MC points]

[You now have a total of 200 MC points]

Just when Quinn was talking about the lack of MC points, he had received a nice surprise, however he thought 200 must have been the difference between the earth and sun when comparing himself to Arthur.

[Skill unlocked Shadow link: This skill allows the user to feel other shadow users no matter where they are as long as they are currently using the shadow ability. Requires no MC points to use, but must activate the skill. This is not a passive skill]

Quinn could only guess that this was how Arthur had found out about him that time, which meant he was pretty sure what the next and final skill would be.

[New skill unlocked, Shadow to Shadow: Once a link has been made using shadow link, the user can use the skill shadow to shadow. This will allow the person to move and travel to the other person's shadow. This skill can only be used once a day.]

Obtaining these two skills Quinn was understanding what Arthur had done that day, Quickly as a test he decided to try to activate shadow link to see if there was anyone out there, or if he could even locate Arthur.

Activating the shadow link skill was simple enough since the system did all the work for him, but he could feel nothing, and this was confirmed by the system message that had appeared.

[No shadow users found]

'Arthur must not be using his shadow right now, I guess it was true when he said that all shadow users had died out.' Although Quinn couldn't be completely sure as someone would have had to have been using the shadow ability at that very moment.

Looking at all the skills and checking out the system, there really wasn't anything else. There were no more skills with his ability to unlock, but he was sure he had seen Arthur do some interesting things with the shadow other than the skills present.

One of them was restoring Quinn's MC points allowing him to consistently use his shadow. Perhaps this was something that Arthur had found out how to do himself, he had been alive for thousands of years after all.

Now with the shadow ability completely unlocked, Quinn really only had to worry about two things, levelling up to evolve and increasing his MC points. The only current way he knew how was using shadow eater.

'Surely there has to be another way.'

In the middle of his thoughts, the door slid open again, and it was Linda who had appeared. She was surprised to see that both Peter and Layla were no longer in the medical bay, but she didn't dare ask.

"Quinn I have a message from the other leaders. They can't wait any longer and have said that it is time. It's time for the first meeting of the new leader's table."

His heart thumped a little louder than before hearing those words. It confirmed that Quinn had somehow, someway made it to this position. A position he could only dream of. He knew what questions they wanted to ask, but he had a few questions of his own as well.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## **Chapter 760: The new world Leader's table**

Before entering the meeting with the other powerhouses, Quinn was to choose two people to take in with him, and two only. This was the same for the others as well. They were usually there as advisors, or future successors to the family. The other option was someone who was considered strong themselves.

When deciding who to bring with him, Quinn's first choice was Sam. Although Quinn hadn't known Sam too long compared to some of the others, Quinn not only trusted him but, Sam ran nearly everything that went on in the Cursed ship.

Quite frankly, without him, Quinn felt like his life on the Cursed ship would have been ten times harder. This was the obvious choice, but with the second person he was struggling. Usually with something like this, he would have liked to have taken one of his close friends, but where were they all?

Logan was still pretending to work with Mona, Layla and Peter were now in the vampire world and as for Vorden. Well, he was now known as Sil, and although Quinn and Sil got on, it wasn't in the same way as with Vorden. Their connection didn't feel close at all.

Finally there was Fex, but it felt strange to get him involved in a matter with humans. He never really seemed to have an interest in these types of things and it felt like Fex was just there along for the ride, wishing to help Quinn wherever he could.

In the end, Quinn had decided on bringing Paul along with him. Paul being an ex high-ranking general would have been used to these things and knew what games they would play. On top of this, from time to time, Paul would share his wisdom, if he had completely disregarded the group he could have chosen to say nothing, but he had chosen to help Quinn.

The two of them were also vampires who had been turned by Quinn, so with him in his presence, something strange was unlikely to happen.

The meeting was to take place outside. Their people remain on the ship. The ships themselves including the ones belonging to Pure and Daisy were all lined up in a circle shape, and when the current leaders of the world exited from their ships at the appointed time. They walked together with the two by their side towards the centre.

Quinn didn't recognise the ones that had been brought out with Mona and Owen, but he did recognise Duke by Oscar's side, the other one next to Oscar was a female.

Just like before, when they had arrived in the centre, Oscar placed his hands on the floor and created a round table. He then created seats for everyone there, while the two by each person's side would remain standing.

"I would like to announce that everyone sitting down at this moment, is part of the new World leaders table, and that we should welcome our newest member, Quinn Talen." Oscar announced.

Claps from everyone at the table were made. It felt a little hollow and quiet and the grand moment felt quite small. Usually a big deal like this would be televised and a ceremony would take place informing everyone, but it didn't change the fact that Quinn had made it.

"First I would like to talk about the outcome of the match," Oscar said. "Daisy has agreed to hand over everything to you. Resources, equipment and their planets now belong to you and they have disbanded. The same could be said for Pure but we all know this isn't true in the first place.

"The Pure members that had come with their leader, and managed to escape somehow and it looks like they are no longer present on their occupied planets, However, those that lived in the shelters that weren't really part of Pure are still there. We have spoken to these instead and they too have agreed to hand everything over to the Cursed faction with no trouble."

Hearing this, Quinn was wondering what happened to Cia, was she still on the ship with the other faction members, or had she returned with the Pure members from before? It was something he could go see after this meeting.

"As for the members themselves." Oscar continued. "They are not slaves and we wish to correct our ways of the past. They will not be forced to work under you or join your group. They are free to do so if they wish, or are free to join any of the groups here at this table. However, to stop any more troubles occurring, groups will have to be under one of the leaders present at this table."

"I understand what you are saying." Quinn said. "But don't you think it might cause a problem in the future. The group here today were separated by the Cursed faction and we don't have the best of reputations at the moment. There is a good chance once they join one of the other groups, that they will attempt their revenge and take back their planets."

It came as a nice surprise to everyone that Quinn had actually spoken up. This was fine to do as a leader at the table. It was meant to be a discussion in the first place. However, usually when a new person was in front of such great people that they had looked up to for years, they would be a little afraid to speak.

Still, for some reason Quinn wasn't nervous. It felt like he had been in this situation multiple times before, and the vampire council table, the air felt a lot more heavier than this one.

"If they are to attempt something like that, then the respective leader will need to deal with them. This meeting and everything that's happening so far is a sign. A sign that the Civil war is over, and things shall remain the way they are for now. The military is not in charge and has no rule over the others apart from its own people.

"Would it be better for the human race to come together as one force? Yes, I believe so, is it possible. Perhaps, but not without more fighting, and right now we can't afford to carry on fighting with the enemy around the corner. Rather than one force we would need to think of this as an alliance."

It had to be thought of as this way. Quinn thought. Especially since he knew what Owen's ultimate goal in all of this was, and if the Bree family had agreed to the military's ways of doing things, they wouldn't have parted ways either.

"Now before we move on to other topics, there are some concerning thoughts that we share as a group." Oscar continued. "There is still a power that is not part of the alliance still out there, Pure. They have great strength and have announced to the world that their power comes from Qi.

"I was afraid that a lot of people would be swayed into joining them, but thankfully their loss seems to have hindered that a bit, but regardless they are a strong force. Now one of the concerns my people have brought to me is, they worry that you Quinn, are working with Pure. There are multiple reasons for this, your strange actions and taking in the Pure girl you had hurt is one of them. It also doesn't sit well with me that one of my trusted men is now standing right by your side. I can't help but think he was forced to do so."

They had invited Quinn to the leaders table, and then the first thing they had done was question him about his intentions. Quinn was a little frustrated about this, but worried he might say something wrong allowed one of his men to do the speaking.

"Both of those are quite aggressive questions." Sam said. "I thought we came here to be treated as another leader like the rest of you? We could ask all of you here incriminating questions as well. What was with the dungeon area's beneath the base? The experimentation rooms?"

"Why did the Graylash family decide to strike first and start this war, and why are the Bree family hiding the fact that they have a device that is able to locate demon tier beasts, yet aren't sharing this with everyone?"

There was silence between everyone there, apart from Owen who started to chuckle.

'Ha, ha, so the Cursed faction haven't just been dealing with me this whole time.'

Each one of the powers here had secrets of their own, and somehow the Cursed group knew about them all. They had revealed things that the others had no clue about.

"If you want to ask if Paul is being forced to do this or not, you are free to ask him?" Quinn said. "but I want to tell you now. Many of the Cursed faction is made up of people who have been pushed and bullied around their whole lives. We have crawled through far more than you know to get here, and now that we are here, we will not let that happen here either."

As Quinn spoke those words, and intense pressure was felt off him, that all the others could feel.

'This is no normal child, just what did he go through to be able to give off a presence like that?' Oscar thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 761: Equal position

Due to Quinn's young age, and the inexperience of a new faction. Oscar and Mona had plans thinking that maybe they could use the Cursed faction in some way.

Perhaps have something against them, 'an attempt to blackmail them' to be used to force them to act.

Oscar was originally planning to put pressure on Quinn, even if they didn't have a relationship with Pure. To prove to the others and the world, it would have been best if they two groups fought each other.

However, it looked like Quinn and the people by his side weren't going to be so naive in this after all. They knew their position well now, if there was something they didn't like, or felt like they were being treated unfairly, they could very well be the catalyst to start a new war.

Especially with the dangerous information they carried with each group.

'I expected there to be spies within my group, but I didn't expect for any to be from the Cursed faction.' Mona thought. The demon tier locating device was meant to be their trump card. Now that information had been revealed, if they chose to keep it hidden or deny it, the others would soon think that the Bree family were planning something.

"Your right," Oscar said. "We really haven't been treating you fairly. Our time is short, but while you are here, is there anything you would like to know from us?" Oscar asked.

This wasn't just asked to make Quinn feel welcomed and make him feel a part of the group, but was also there to see what the Cursed faction goal was. Oscar having already worked with Mona knew her ambitions pretty well.

As for Owen, he was one covered in mystery, since he and the previous leader seemed to be nothing alike, but with the Cursed faction. Oscar had no clue, but it was clear from his words, that they were filled with anger.

'That boy has risen to this position, not because of skill, talent and pure luck, but because he wanted to, he has clear intent.' Oscar thought.

"As long as we are open about information with each other, I guess I should ask some things that will benefit all of us." Quinn said. "Have any of you been able to locate Richard Eno, or Is he possibly in one of your families?"

The others looked at each other for a second, as if they were trying to read their faces hoping to get an answer, but it seemed like no one was hiding anything. While asking questions, Quinn was also listening very carefully to each and everyone of their heartbeats.

To see if there was a slight change, or response to his questioning. He wasn't sure if this would prove someone was hiding something, but it was a start. However, there seemed to be no reaction from anyone at the table.

"It appears no one has information on his whereabouts," Oscar replied. "Even before Eno was a very secretive person, he would only meet the military on occasion to provide new information or technology and then disappear. He was a hard person to find before the civil wars and even harder to find now."

Quinn waited to see if what Oscar had said was inline with what the others had to say. And it seemed to be the case. The question Quinn asked also didn't raise any suspicions, as they thought anyone who wanted to raise their groups strength, would be looking to build a great relationship with the individual.

"Actually, I suggest once this whole thing is over we try to gather our resources and find him as soon as possible." Oscar added. "I'm sure the Dalki have been watching us closely this whole time. If that is the case, once they find out the fighting has stopped, they will not allow us to recover and will attack."

"Eno was a man who gave us technology to fight the Dalki back, I'm sure he wishes for humanities survival just as much as the rest of us."

What Oscar had said made sense , but Quinn wasn't too sure if Richard Eno really was on humanities side or not.

"And what of Jack Truedream?" Quinn asked.

Other than a grudge, Jack Trudream was another person that people were after. If someone controlled him, they could effectively control the other groups and people once again. No matter how horrible his personality, the public saw him the same way as the vampires saw the Punishers. Someone who could apply justice to those that did wrong.

"All we know is that Jack Truedream is missing after his city was destroyed. Although a lot of people are missing after that. The military's guess at the moment, is it might have something to do with Pure."

When Oscar said this, the heartbeats of the other two changed, but Quinn could guess why. They knew the real people behind the Truedream's mess, which was the Blade family. The other two thought the Balde family had captured Jack and were currently using him as a chained.

However, Quinn knew this wasn't true. When rescuing Vorden they had checked the other prisoners briefly and at least while down there, there were no signs of Truedream, according to Sil this was the case as well.

As for thinking Pure had Jack, according to Layla she hadn't seen him. Which didn't rule out the possibility but it was unlikely they had him as well.

'Just where the hell is that little rat,' Quinn thought.

"Do you have any more questions?" Duke asked, in an annoyed tone. Seeing a student of his rise to a position higher than himself annoyed him, but what was even more of an annoyance, was the particular student in question as well.

He was actually the one that had convinced Oscar greatly that Quinn was working with Pure. Putting doubts in his heads.

Quinn liked seeing Duke annoyed though.

"Yeah I have another question, how's your arm doing?" Quinn asked, he didn't let him reply though and moved on to the next real question. "I wanted to ask you, when the war started or before the war started, did any of you have some unexplained deaths that happened suddenly?"

Now this was a question Oscar wasn't expecting and was wondering why Quinn was asking such a thing.

"It's hard to say, at the start of the war deaths happened frequently, also it's a shame to say, but those types of reports on individuals don't rise to the top. I just get numbers on a sheet of paper. Perhaps it's something each of us can look into, but it will have to be after the hunt."

"Can I ask, why?" Mona interrupted. "Why are you interested in deaths that would have happened before the war?"

Quinn was actually asking because that was the mission he had been given by the king. To find out what had happened to the vampire spies on earth that were within each group. He also felt like this incident might be linked to Eno and the others somehow as well.

Still, Quinn didn't really know how to reply to this without sounding too suspicious and Pall was the one that eventually answered.

"It's because our men were part of your group." Paul replied. "We had people in each of the major factions and military, including myself but we had lost contact with them all. We find it strange for this to all have happened at once."

Coming from Paul it sounded very believable, and Oscar looked a little upset, as if Paul's words stung him finding out he was a double agent. The reason Paul decided to speak was because this was his main goal as well.

If he had done well getting information about them for the council, then he could save his people. The king at least seemed to be a vampire of his word, but that

didn't mean others would attempt to leave the humans in that crazy world alone. The longer time was spent here the more chance his people had of dying.

"I think that is enough questions for today," Oscar said. "We must move on to the main matter."

Oscar went on to explain to everyone about the hunt for the demon tier beast, at the same time he explained what would be done with the crystal to make things fair, adding Quinn as one of the code bearers to unlock the weapon once it was crafted.

Quinn hadn't expected this to be their answer when splitting the rewards, but at the same time couldn't complain about it.

"So when does this hunt for the demon tier beast start?" He asked.

"As soon as this meeting is over," Oscar replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 762: Beyond AAA rank

At a time before Quinn had been made one of the new leader's at the leader table.

In the beast planet solar system, a particular planet located in the Bree family area was declared an orange portal planet. It had a couple of shelters that had been set up. In them, there were those from multiple different factions and they all worked under the Bree family.

The people there lived good lives and achieved great financial support from the Bree family. Due to it being classified as an orange planet, the main goal was to scout the remaining parts of the planet and report when new beasts were seen.

Due to the planet belonging to the Bree family, although beast hunts did happen, if they found a high tier beast, they were actually told to report back or capture if possible, rather than killing the beast. Both of these rewards would be substantial for completing them.

This was one of the reasons the Bree family had quite a dedicated following of factions even outside of those directly in the Bree family.

In the Faction hall, where one would take quests, there was often a tavern-like bar area where the Travellers could drink food and eat. Filling their belly before going off to battle, or on a long journey. And in the faction hall, there was a man sat on the table on his own doing just that.

He brushed his long flowing blonde hair to the side, as he picked up his drink and took a swig.

"At least this is one thing that hasn't changed in all these years. Although it does taste watered down." Arthur, like a certain type of vampire, was able to change his hair as he wished. He worked hard at this. Before when he was a human his hair was blonde, but when turning into a vampire his hair had turned jet black.

After visiting an old friend, although he wasn't sure if it was right to call him that anymore. His friend was able to make it so Arthur could change his hair colour.

Arthur had been going to each of the orange portal and red portal planets in the beast solar system. All in search for the first king, Eno. He wanted to ask so many questions after finding out the truth about what he had done.

He also thought there was a chance that he might be aware of what had happened to his people. He was sure that some members of the council were behind it, but the problem was for the vampires to take out the punishers, even with him gone. There had to be more than one leader behind the attack, and as strong as Arthur was, accusing certain vampires of such things, would just cause a war between himself and them.

'Maybe I could take out half of them if it came to it, they do seem weaker than the vampires back then. I guess they don't fight as much. The problem is if the king gets involved,' Arthur thought.

Trying to think like Eno, Arthur thought rather than hide on the planets that are fully occupied, he would have created a research lab somewhere on a dangerous planet. Somewhere the humans refused to set foot on. Just like the training planet the vampires used.

But he had no luck so far, there were no leads and he was just searching around aimlessly. He took a deep breath, and five other travellers came over to where he was sitting.

"Sorry, this place is a little busy and full at the moment. Do you mind if our team take a seat?" It was a young boy with brown hair and green eyes. He had a shield on his back and a sword by his side. Although he was young he was confident and his party behind him were as well.

"I don't own the place, so you are free to sit where you wish." Arthur replied.

The group sat down at the round table and ordered a few drinks. The young boy who seemed to be the leader had also ordered a sixth one, and when they arrived handed it over to Arthur.

"A thanks for letting us sit here." The young man said.

The group was composed of an odd looking frail old man in robes, a shorter stout man with a great beard with an axe and an athletic female who wore light clothing but had no weapon on her. Then there was also another female who was dressed similar to her, but was a little gloomy and fragile.

Through listening to their conversations, Arthur had learnt the young boy's name was Andy, and they seemed to be quite the experienced Travelers with a lot of great achievements under their belt.

"Okay next one, a three spiked Dalki or a Demi god tier beast." The ginger short man asked.

They had been playing this game for a while now, comparing beasts, strong ranking figures and the Dalki. On this one, the group seemed split and it was up to Andy to decide.

"I have only seen the strength of a one spiked Dalki in the war, so it's hard for me to really say." Andy replied. "We don't know how much in power they scale from each spike."

"Just pick one already, and stop being a sour plum. You're the deciding vote." One of the girls said.

Looking in the corner of his eye, he decided to turn to the stranger.

"I know, why don't we ask our guest. What do you think is stronger?" Andy asked.

Other than the first drink that had been given to him, this was the first time they had spoken to him. Arthur thought this might happen, and he didn't mind speaking to them. He actually enjoyed others' company. The problem at the moment was the question they were asking him.

'A Dalki, that's that new Alien race that came about while I was asleep. I wonder how strong they are?' Arthur thought.

Because of this, Arthur had to give a random answer.

"The Dalki would be my bet."

Two of the members broke out in cheers while the others started to moan, one of them being the short ginger man named Pike.

"Arghh, what would he know." Pike said annoyed. "We would need to ask someone who is a seasoned Traveler. I bet this man has never even met even an emperor tier in his life."

It was fine for the others to assume this, especially since Arthur was wearing no such beast gear and was in pretty plain clothing, apart from the large sword that was chained up on his back.

"That sword must be for show." One of the girls said.

"But he has such a big sword." The shy girl said while her face blushed bright red.

"Now calm down, let's not all jump on our guest just because of an opinion," Andy said smiling nervously. "We are quite competitive in this regard, especially since we have a lot of experience. Sorry about this."

"A lot of experience is putting it lightly!" Pike shouted as he threw his Traveller tag and placed it on the table proudly displaying the letter A.

Looking round, Arthur could see each one of them had the A tag on them as well, but he had no clue what this meant. At first he thought they were just wearing it for decoration with the initial for their name, now he realised how stupid he was being.

"So you are telling me you guys are strong?" Arthur said, taking another chug of his beer. "Well that's good to know. It would be a shame if such lively people like

you were to die just trying to earn some gold. Your lives could end at any moment."

Pike was getting annoyed by the way Arthur was speaking, as if he was an elder speaking to children. Who even used the term gold? Pike himself was quite an old man, and he also didn't like the fact that there was no respect seen due to them being high ranking travelers.

"Wise words from nobody. What rank are you then my dear friend, I would love to see it?" Pike asked.

Arthur, of course, had no clue what the ranks were even. He had been so busy searching for the first king.

"What is the highest rank possible for a traveler?" Arthur asked.

It was a strange question to ask, but Andy still answered it anyway.

"Rank AAA.." Andy replied.

"Then I would be a triple A rank, maybe even beyond."

There was silence as everyone was starting to wonder if this person was crazy or not. Beyond triple rank A would put him at the leaders level or even higher. If it was true they would have known the person who they were all looking at.

What made it even stranger was how straight forward Arthur sounded when speaking these words.

"As I thought, this person is a crazy fool." Pike said, giving up on trying to impress a nobody.

"What's your name?" Andy asked, interested in the strange man.

"Arthur."

"I'm Andy, it's nice to meet you. Don't mind them. Trust me they are great guys. I was wondering if you wanted to go out for a hunt with us? Old man Clinkers hasn't been feeling well. So we have been resting for the past few days drinking ourselves in this tavern until he gets better. Of course, we need five people to go on a quest. Because of this we have been a little bored these days."

"You wouldn't have to do much, we can take care of ourselves."

Arthur thought about it for a while, it would be putting his own mission on hold but he then released he was in no rush. It didn't really matter how long this task would take him, and he would have to explore the planet anyway, so why not with a lively bunch.

"Sure, I look forward to working with you." Said Arthur.

\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 763: Unknown killer

Traveling with the Travellers, Arthur remained at the back of the group, not really doing much as they encountered beasts along the way. The terrain they were travelling on was mostly filled with small shrubs and rivers that were long and winding. In the distance large hills and mountains could be seen in all sorts of different shapes.

Arthur could see that the Travelers were skilled as they had said. They certainly had backed up their words with there skills. Even when dealing with a group of advanced tier beasts, they were calm and had no trouble fighting them off. However, Arthur didn't do much as he was looking around for any clues or signs of the first king. His mind was always wondering about different things.

However, the task was a large one and it was going to be difficult. Looking for a single man on a single planet was nearly an impossible task, and now he had to look for a man among multiple planets.

'Still, I have an infinite amount of time to do this, I'm probably the only person that can do this.' Arthur thought.

After having an encounter with the advanced tier beast, the group decided to rest up by the river on some boulders, where they could put down their supplies and take off their heavy equipment for a few seconds. Not all of them did this and they took it in turns while keeping watch. The river was quite beautiful as a glowing slightly red mist could be seen above it. Unsure where it was really coming from.

The black haired girl, who wore a headband on her head, was the healer of the group. Although she was shy, when fighting she wasn't shy to get involved, and knew the right place to be at the right time.

Due to her ability, she was able to shoot it out like a beam at her allies, healing them while the fight was happening at the same time. Although the healing was less effective this way. Now the fight was over she was busy healing them directly using her hands.

"I knew that man would be useless." Pike said annoyed, as he had gotten a big scratch on his shoulder from one the beasts. He had attempted to get Arthur hurt, or to see his skill by fighting near him. Maybe if Arthur was in trouble he could have even saved his life and look up to the man. But Arthur wasn't hurt once and the beast took no interest in him at all.

The truth was, the beast had looked at Arthur and had planned to attack him at one point, but a single look into Arthur's eye's and the beast wanted to submit there and then. Do whatever this foul creature wished. But Arthur looked away and the beast felt like it had gotten off lightly.

"Maybe a triple A rank doesn't need to get involved with such low beasts like this." The feisty girl who went by the name Priya said.

"He is our guest." Andy replied. "We just invited him along so we could actually go hunting for once, we should be thankful."

"Is that why we haven't been going into the unknown areas?" Priya asked. "We haven't hunted here before, but we have hunted in this area. It's not really the best for making money."

Andy was unsure if Arthur was bluffing or not about his strength, at the moment he hadn't seen him do anything, so going into the unknown, unexplored areas with one person less, would be quite troublesome.

"Can you do some ranged attack's Arthur?" Andy asked.

Arthur then turned to look at one of the larger rocks that wasn't too far away, without the others seeing, he also had grabbed a few stones from the floor.

\*Bang \*Bang \*Bang

When looking at the boulder, small holes could be seen going right through them. It was as if someone had picked up a gun and shot right into it.

"Nice!" Andy said with his thumb up. "Who knew you had a ranged ability, with that it will help our team composition greatly."

"You're telling me, he could have helped the whole time but had chosen not to?" Pike said, gripping his axe in anger.

What Arthur had done wasn't an ability at all, he had just picked up a few stones from the floor, and threw them over to the rock. He thought this would be enough to impress them for now. When the group was off again, Arthur decided to pick up some more rocks from the ground.

While walking, they decided to walk along the river. They could see up ahead it was thinner, then they could finally go over to the other side, which was part of the unexplored area. As long as they stayed near the river it shouldn't have been too much trouble.

'There's something not right.' Andy thought. 'If his ability is a ranged one, then why does he carry a giant chained sword on his back?'

Still, he could tell Arthur wasn't a bad person, so they continued to travel along the river.

"Somethings coming," Arthur said, as he heard and could feel the vibrations from the floor.

"Ha! Is this some sixth sense that only triple A rank Travelers have?" Pike said, at that moment, from the river they were walking nearby. A large wave was made causing the water to wash up on the land.

Out from the river, a large muscular sea creature could be seen. It was one with a large thick body upper chest and had several spikes running down its spine. Its scales were blue in colour and the top of its head was shaped like a trident.

When it stepped out of the river, it's webbed feet could be seen. Soon, it had opened its mouth and fired out a hydro pump full of water towards Pike. It was a strong powerful single stream. The attack was fast but Andy had headed Arthur's warning unlike the rest of them and managed to block the attack with his shield getting in between Pike.

The force was strong, and while the attack was being blocked the others started to move in.

"Careful, it's at least a humanoid king tier elemental beast!" Andy said, judging by the strength of it's attack.

Seeing Pirya coming forward from above, the fish creature quickly looked up and was ready to fire another Hydro pump towards her. She was still in the air and could see the bubbles forming in its mouth.

"Wait, it can fire another one that fast!" She said, wondering how she could move while in the middle of the air.

\*Bang

Another loud explosion was heard, and the bubbles had stopped forming in the beast's mouth. When Pirya looked at the beast, she could see it's eyes were dead and it was unmoving. Still she pulled out her dagger and proceeded to stab the beast on the top of it's head and fell to the floor with it.

"Quickly, let's see if she's okay." Andy ordered, and the rest went over.

When they arrived the beast was dead, and Priya's blade could be seen in its head.

"Pirya, good job, you managed to kill the thing in one go." Pike said, giving her a pat on her back.

"Yeah..." Priya replied slowly.

However, she was sure of it, the beast had died before she had even stabbed it in its head. When inspecting the beast, Andy was trying to help get the beast crystal from the beast's body. That's when he also noticed a small hole in the side of its head.

'Where did this come from?' Then something hit him, 'but how and when?'

Looking back towards Arthur, he seemed disinterested and didn't even care about the crystal in the beast.

'Damn.' Arthur thought. 'I was just trying to hurt the beast to stop it from doing its silly attack. Who would have thought it would die from throwing a stone, are these stones made from diamonds!'

Slowly the team was starting to realise that maybe, Arthur wasn't lying about his rank after all.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 764: Stone thrower

Continuing his travels with the group, Arthur started to participate more and more when beasts would appear. He was getting the hang of his strength so an incident like the first time wouldn't happen again. Part of the problem was the density of the rocks themselves that were from the planet. Of course, the material and density differed based on what one's planet was, so it would take him a while to get used to his strength when throwing them.

Now, he was no longer killing beast with a single hit with the stones, Travelers like these needed to get used to fighting in order to grow, it would be wrong of him to deal with the beast single handedly. Besides the group didn't seem like the type to do that. Even if Arthur told them he could defeat beasts like these with such ease, they wouldn't have wanted him to anyway.

The group were starting to grow on him a little, as he found their arguments humoured him, and even Pike was starting to see Arthur as a valuable asset, with his er.. stone throwing ability.

Once again, after an encounter with another group of beasts, they were resting while the blakc haired traveller girl was healing them..

Sitting down, the black haired girl had approached him, offering a small orange pill.

"It's okay," Arthur said, rejecting the kind offer. "I can go for a long time without food. I don't like those types of things."

Unsure what it was or how it owed affect him, Arthur wouldn't just eat random things created in this day and age. A vampire's stomach was often delicate when it came to these types of things. After years of being a vampire, Arthur longed to try to find food that would satisfy him compared to when he was a human, and he had run into a few difficult times in the past. The short story, Vampire diarrhea was not the best.

"Okay let's do it," Andy said with a cheerful voice. "We've seen Arthur's strength, and I think he might be better as a team then when we are with the old man. Although don't tell him that, the old man might never travel with us again."

"You mean, you think we can go exploring the new area?" Pirya said with excitement. "I was getting tired of fighting the same beasts over and over again. Besides that's where the real treasures are."

Along with them, Pike was carrying a small rucksack, which would expand in size when placed on the ground. When it opened up, it would show all types of different equipment. These were different types of tools that were meant for capturing a beast rather than killing it.

"As long as Arthur is okay with it, then I see no problem." When Andy said these words. He looked towards Arthur with his innocent young face and puppy dog eyes.

"Sure," Arthur replied.

Honestly, with so little people to protect, Arthur didn't see it as a problem. If there was a strong beast to arrive he could deal with them. As long as they didn't run into a demon tier beast of some sort. Maybe he would have searched, to try and fight such strong beasts like these travellers when he was younger.

But the days of testing his strength against strong foe's were over.

When giving his reply. The group looked happy and excited, filled with energy. Seeing the smiles on their faces, he started to wonder what life as a Traveler would be like. When he was a human, from a young age he had been told he was destined to become king. He looked after people but went out on adventures helping the people.

Then, when he became head of the punishers, his job was a strict one, there was no longer the time to go out on an adventure. He had spent his whole life protecting and upholding the law. So much time, so much life flashed before his eyes.

Friends were made, friends were lost. He had even seen someone from the young age of a baby grow up, grow old and die before he did. His life would continue to live on seeing everyone he cared about pass on. In the end, he had gotten sick of this and chose to go into an eternal slumber.

"Come on, are you ready?" Andy asked. They all were now standing up, with some strange looking items attached around their waists and on their back.

Crossing the small part of the river, they had placed some levitating platforms that they were able to jump across. The person at the end would have to pick them up though, as they carried on moving forward.

Technology sure had come a far way, even though the vampires were more advanced in their tech, Arthur was sure the humans would always catch up one day innovating as their population grew.

When reaching the other side, they were now in a new land, a new area that was expected to be full of different types of beasts.

They walked and explored for a while, but it wasn't what they had expected. Unlike on the other side of the river, they hadn't encountered a single beast yet. So to kill the time, the others wanted to make some conversation.

"So Arthur, what's with the big sword on your back?" Pirya asked. "You're a ranged user right, so why have a sword and why is it chained up, you won't be able to cut anything with that thing?"

Arthur grabbed the hilt of the sword on his back for a few seconds, before taking it off his back and swinging it forward with a single hand. The sheer size and weight of the thing, just carrying it with one hand looked like it would snap someone's wrist.

"This, well I'm not really skilled with the sword so I don't like to use it too much. As for the chains, if you ever saw me unwrap the chains on this thing, then you should probably start running."

The others chuckled a little bit but it was a bit of a nervous laughter from some. They realised that after travelling with Arthur, he joked a lot, but when he was serious he said things seriously, and this time just like the other times, he had spoken the words without smiling or laughing.

"And if I was to ask what tier that weapon that was, you would tell me it was a demon tier correct?" Pike said, sarcastically.

"Of course not," Arthur smiled, putting the large sword back on his back. "This isn't even a beast weapon. If you tried using this thing to cut up those beasts back there, you wouldn't do much to them."

With this statement contradicting his last one, the others felt a lot more at ease about the weapon. Still walking through the new lands, they no longer saw any rivers but still had run into no beasts. So they decided that they would head to the closest mountain and when they reached there they would rest before turning back.

They had already spent a lot of time finding nothing, and maybe it was time to choose a different area. When approaching the mountain, leading the front was Pirya, and when she turned round one of the corners, she immediately turned back, placing her back against the mountain wall.

Her eyes were enlarged and she looked like she had just woken up from a nightmare.

"Priya, what did you see?" Andy said, rushing over.

Not even wanting to make a sound, Pirya placed her finger on her lips, and pulled him over to the side. She waited for the rest to reach her possessions and when they did. They all peaked around the corner and they could see it.

A great grand fortress had been built at the base of the mountain. However, it wasn't just any regular fortress. The material that had been used was a hard black substance, the surfaces were uneven and had several bumps and spikes sticking out,

yet they still were able to build structures such as towers and even had a large gate out the front.

'This, it looks like a vampire base.' Arthur's first thought was, judging by the materials used. Although they were a little rough, similar to how the old ways vampires used to build their castles from the black material. Nowadays they had discovered a technique to smooth out the material and could build structures just as well as they could with brick and glass. At least from what Arthur had seen on his latest visit to the vampires base.

'Have I finally found a vampire base outside of the vampire establishment? Is this where Eno is hiding.' He never thought he would find something so soon, but then. The words from one of the others had changed his train of thought.

"It's a Dalki fortress." Andy said. "We have to return, we have to inform everyone on this planet, that the Dalki have already established a fortress here, otherwise, everyone could die."

That's when Arthur could see what they were talking about. On the gate walls, he could see large figures, human looking almost giant like, however they were far larger and muscular than humans, and the features of their faces and arms were almost beast like.

'This belongs to those that are called the Dalki, and not the vampires? Why does their arcreticeture look so similar to the old way of the vampires?' Arthur thought confused.

"Well, I never thought we would have visitors." A deep snarled voice from behind was heard. It was hard to make out what the words actually were.

Turning their heads they could see it, there was a Dalki standing right behind them, towering over, it smiled and showed its sharp teeth. At the back of the group, was the shy black haired healer. Out of fear she closed her eyes and was about to yell.

Jumping in front of her, Andy had his shield held up and ready.

"Don't scream!" Andy said. "If there's just one we might be able to deal with it."

Soon after saying those words, the Dalki swung its arm, and the shield was destroyed, falling to the floor. It was sliced in half. His hopes of possibly getting out of this situation alive was suddenly lost.

"We're dead..we're all dead." Andy said, shaking and sweating nervously. Pike and Piry, were too afraid to even jump in like Andy had just done, and were frozen with fear.

"This is boring, I thought you would at least provide some entertainment." The Dalki spoke, raising its hand to throw another strike towards the couple.

With its hand swinging and it's strong claws it should have been over for them, but they could see Arthur's long blonde hair, in front of them. It started to change and blacken in colour in front of their eyes.

"Am I dreaming?" Andy said, falling to his knees full of tears.

Arthur, with a single hand, was holding the Dalki's by the wrist, having stopped the attack.

"I kind of like these guys, so do you mind leaving them alone?" Arthur said.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 765: The chains are off

'What's happening right now, I've squashed bugs like this in the war before! So then why can't I move my hand against this guy!' The Dalki thought. It tried to summon all its strength, but the human in front of him had a tight grip held on his wrist. It wouldn't even budge. This was something the Dalki had never felt before.

With Arthur's right hand, he threw the stones right into the Dalki's chest where the heart would be. Three bangs were heard firing off like bullets and crumbles were seen falling from the Dalki's chest.

"Damn it, even Arthur's ability can't do anything," Pike said, hoping for a second that maybe Arthur being a triple A rank Traveller was true, but of course it couldn't be.

"Wow, you're the first person to survive my new stone flick technique." Arthur said as he started to chuckle at his own humour. Although the others behind weren't laughing. How could they when their deaths would soon be upon them.

'How can he be so calm, and why hasn't the Dalki flinged him away yet?' Andy thought. What was worrying him most was the number of spikes on the Dalki's back. As they were a group of A rank adventures, they should have been able to deal with at least one spiked Dalki but not two. And if they didn't take care of this one fast, then soon more would come.

On his body the Dalki was wearing beast gear. Although the Dalki were known for wearing beast gear, it was found out that they were unable to activate beast gear. Meaning the extra power boost humans felt when wearing such items, as well as the active skills were not possible for the Dalki. So they only wore beast gear as a form of protection.

"You blocked my stones, now lets see how well you block this." Moving the Dalki leading it by the wrist, Arthur made it so the Dalki's back was now facing the mountain, then not holding back, he threw out his other fist at full strength. Hitting it in the stomach. The Dalki was far too tall for Arthur to hit it in it's head but it didn't matter, for the Dalki was slammed into the mountain and he had gone in a few inches deep creating a large crater behind it.

Soon, it started to cough out green blood and it appeared to still be alive.

"I guess I was right about what is stronger, a three spiked dalki or a demi-god tier beast." Arthur said, impressed.

"What are you doing Arthur!" Andy shouted. "You have to kill it now, while it's still weak!"

Arthur looked puzzled by Andy's words. What did he mean while it's still weak. It had just been injured so surely it wouldn't suddenly get any stronger. Not knowing information about the Dalki was a mistake on Arthur's behalf.

As he turned his head to look back at the Dalki in the mountain wall, it was no longer there and instead a fist was pounded in his face, sending him flying away.

"No!" Priya screamed. "Arthur, he let his guard down, he was our only hope." Seeing a man who wore next to no beast gear get hit like that, no one thought he would have survived.

"It's a shame the interesting one had to disappear so fast like that." The Dalki said, while blood continued to drip from its mouth. It took a step forward and suddenly, it felt its leg sink into something and it had fallen into the ground. All the Dalki could see as it looked beneath it were shadows.

"Huh, what happened?" Pirya asked. "The Dalki was in front of us, and now it's gone."

Soon after, they saw an object fly past and slam into the mountain once again. When the dust settled they could see someone walking in the direction from where Arthur had been hit, and it was none other than Arthur himself.

In his two hands he was holding onto the Dalki's hands. They had been torn off from the Dalki's body.

"That freaking hurt!" Arthur said, although he looked fine walking forward.  
"Shadow sink."

Once again, a shadow appeared beneath the Dalki's feet and a shadow appeared above Arthur's head, dropping the Dalki onto the floor. With its arm missing it was still alive, as it fell it tried to kick Arthur, but he was too fast, and avoided the attack. After jumping up, he was now higher than the Dalki. Slamming his foot between the neck and head, the two of them came crashing down onto the floor, and a round object could be seen rolling to the others.

"The Dalki, the two spiked Dalki, was killed." Pike said, stabbing the head with his spear to make sure it really was dead, he quickly took a step back, just in case the head somehow would attack him.

Green blood had been spilled all over the floor, and the area they were fighting in, but not only that, a small amount had also gotten on his sword on his back. It started to shake slightly as if it was alive.

"This blood works as well?" Arthur said. "I made a promise not to harm humans with it, but maybe I could use this instead."

While everyone was busy celebrating, Andy had a concerned look on his face, he quickly picked himself up and went to look at the fortress and it was as he feared. The guards on the gate wall seemed to be discussing something, and a few of them seemed to already be moving towards them.

"How many of them are in the fortress?" Arthur asked.

"I don't know, the fortress isn't too big so maybe around fifteen of them." Andy replied. "We have to hurry back to the shelter and ask the Bree family for help. We can't deal with all of these on our own. Otherwise everyone could die."

'Fifteen huh, if they're all as strong as this guy they could be trouble, although it seems like the single spiked ones are more common among them, besides, maybe I should play it safe and use this.'

Taking the sword off his back, the chains started to unravel from his sword and fell to the floor, which later went into a strange shadow. Soon, shadow appeared all over Arthur's body, and when it disappeared, a red and black armour could be seen in its place.

"Remember what I said about when the chains come off this thing?"

"You can't be serious!" Pike shouted. "You'll die if we leave you."

"If you stay, you will die." Arthur replied. He proceeded to stab the Dalki's body underneath him with his sword. Soon the centre of the sword slowly started to light up with the green blood, as if the weapon was consuming it.

"Listen to him, I'm sure Arthur has a plan to escape." Andy said, as he dashed off in front of the others, and soon they followed.

Andy wasn't basing this off nothing, he had seen Arthur use the strange shadow ability on the Dalki to defeat it. And seeing what it could do, he was wondering if Arthur was just planning to hold them back and escape later.

'I promise Arthur, we will report this, and come back for you as soon as possible!' Andy thought, running as fast as he could.

When Arthur's sword was finally energised it was ready.

"It's been a long time since I've had to use you."

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 766: Starting a war

Andy with the rest of his group had arrived back at the shelter as fast as they could. They were huffing and panting, and felt like they would soon pass out from the lack of oxygen in their bodies. Still, Andy had pressed on more than the others, using every last bit of strength he had in his body as if his life depended on it.

Of course, the whole group had urgent news to bear to those that were in charge. Due to their high status as a traveller party, those in the shelter were keen to listen to their group. And what they had to say.

Andy and the others had come back multiple times with new captured beasts and information of new areas, they had become quite well known. There weren't many solo traveler groups that didn't belong to a faction that was as high ranking as they were.

Of course, all this meant was the information they were giving now was reliable. At every shelter that was owned under the Bree family, a small token of direct Bree family members would be left behind, these were the ones in charge of the shelter. After receiving the information, a bulky man by the name of Max was more than worried. He was biting the top of his thumb nail thinking what the next best course of action was.

"This had to have happened at the worst time," Max complained, in his hand he had a tablet of some sort and it looked like he was trying to get in contact with someone from the upper Bree family, but there was no luck or answer. "Mona and the others are away on an important matter. I can try to get in touch with her and leave a message, but I don't think they will answer soon."

"Please, our friend Arthur, he was still left behind," Andy pleaded. "Can't we send a group from here to go check the place out?"

"We mustn't panic the others." Max said. "It was a simple mistake, we didn't know this planet belonged to the Dalki, we also don't want to panic the people. I think it would be best if we have a look at their forces, then try to negotiate getting everyone safely off this planet. Remember we are still in a treaty with the Dalki, so they will more than likely comply."

"As for your friend, you said he had been discovered., that you had already come into contact with one of the Dalki. If he has killed one of them, then I can't see them letting him get away. Even if he is still alive, to settle this matter they would want to use him. The best thing to do is prepare for the worst, it is most likely he has left us. But his sacrifice might have not just saved your lives but everyone at this shelter."

Although Andy knew the chances were slim, it still wasn't zero.

Just as Max had said, he had invited a couple of Bree family members along with a scout team. These people had abilities that were used for sneaking about. Super hearing, invisibility, silent sound. And so on.

Their goal was to see how strong the Dalki forces were, after contacting Mona, they would return with a force of equal strength and negotiate with the Dalki fortress. As the Dalki weren't the best when needing to talk to them. So at times they needed to be prepared for anything.

In the past, when all the groups were one, this would be reported to the military and they would send out a communication request with the Dalki themselves, but now with everyone separate things were a bit hectic.

While the rest of Andy's group stayed behind. Andy himself insisted on going with them. Arthur had saved his life and those of his friends. The least he could do was bring back his body to them. Arthur was strong and maybe he wasn't bragging about his strength, but to take on all the Dalki, it seemed impossible. He just hoped that he had some sort of plan to escape.

Traveling using vehicles until they reached the river, they soon descended and started to make their way to the mountain. Thanks to Andy, it was quicker for them to locate the exact spot where the Dalki fortress was seen.

Those that didn't have the best of abilities to keep them undercover waited a distance away from the mountain, while two men went in with invisibility abilities. After waiting a short while they had returned.

Although when walking back they looked calm, not what someone would expect after seeing the greatest enemy of mankind. But at the same time, they had the look of disbelief on their faces.

"Is it really a Dalki shelter like Andy reported?" Max asked.

The two men nodded, but looked at each other.

"But sir, there's more, it's too hard to explain, I think you should come have a look yourself."

"Is it safe for us to do that?" Max asked, starting to feel confused by the whole thing.

After confirmation it was safe for them to move on, they did so, still a little cautious of anything up ahead. Then they had finally reached the point of where Andy had left Arthur.

No longer crouching, Max was standing tall, he continued to move forward slowly, placing one foot in front of the other, in disbelief at what he was seeing, his mouth left wide open.

"What is all this, what happened here?" Max asked.

Standing in the middle, there were body parts, huge amounts of green blood all over the floor, but they weren't body parts of a human. They were all from the Dalki. Looking down at his feet, Max was in a large creator, where it looked like a Dalki's organs had been ruptured by something as guts were left hanging on the floor.

'Did Arthur manage to do all this, one person?' Andy thought as he gulped. He couldn't imagine someone with this huge amount of sheer power.

The Dalki's that were on the floor looked to be one spiked Dalkis. There were around seven of them dead. At least putting the body parts together it was how many they could find.

Soon after they decided to continue moving on forward, and that's when they had set eyes on the fortress.

'Seriously?' Andy thought.

Even the strong standing fortress was no longer the same. Not as menacing as it once was, as the towers were destroyed and the gate had been bashed in. As they got closer, caution started to go out the window. It was clear whatever had come here, had killed every single last Dalki.

And it was true. All the Dalkis in the fortress were found dead, including another two spiked Dalki.

"Are you telling me the truth Andy. When you left your friend he was the only person here?" Max asked.

"Yes, we were fighting with one of the Dalkis and he had managed to defeat it, but..." even Andy wasn't sure if Arthur was capable of such a thing. The two spiked Dalki he thought was strong, and Arthur hadn't completely overwhelmed him. Although there was a difference.

Arthur had unchained that strange sword when he knew more were coming. Had he gotten that much stronger from using the strange sword? Was that what had done all of this damage?

"We need to run an investigation." Max said. "Find out if there was anyone else involved in this, I can't believe this is one person's work. Also make sure the Travellers only hunt in the safe zones near the shelter from now on. There is always

the chance that the Dalki could have set up multiple fortress on this planet if they deem it worthy enough for them."

Another person? No after looking at the scene himself, Andy could see all of these had been killed in a similar way. He was sure that all of this was the doing of one person. An unknown who was beyond the ranking of a triple A.

'Looks like you were telling the truth after all.'

One would think that getting rid of a Dalki fortress was a good thing, but when humans would see one they were to not attack at all costs. They were meant to report back. Half of the beast solar system had already been conquered by the Dalki, and there were a few planets left that had been conquered by neither.

Of course, without knowing what the other side was doing, it was hard to tell which unclaimed planets had now been claimed and at times this could cause confrontation. Small scuffles here and there from both sides were fine.

However, this was different. Not once before had an entire fortress like this been destroyed, Max was sure that the Dalki would get wind of this, and when they did, they could very well use this as an excuse to start the war.

This was why he was adamant on trying to find out, just who, which faction or person, was stupid enough to get rid of a Dalki fortress.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 767: A three spike

It was a scorching hot day on one of the beast planets in the solar system, but it usually was, as this planet seemed to have only four different types of weather. Hot, very hot, heavy rain, or hot and raining.

The shelter was placed in the centre of a jungle and surrounded by large towering trees, but this wasn't like a regular shelter. They were able to make use of the large trees, creating platforms filled with houses and shops high up off the ground. Connecting each of these platforms they used bridges.

Leading all of this was a middle aged woman named Ruby, she was currently staying at the highest platform which allowed her to look down at the whole shelter. Originally, the planet was classified as an orange portal planet, but later turned into a red one.

The people there thought they had been abandoned by the military. However, since the start of the civil war, portal use had been unregulated and there had been more visitors. Before there welcoming would be...well, unwelcoming.

Anyone who appeared would be greeted by an army full of spears, but then, there were those that appeared that looked frightened, hurt and injured from the war. Seeing people like this, they couldn't help but allow them to stay at the shelter.

So since then, the shelter had been growing day by day, and this was what Ruby was looking at from below. The improvements made by the shelter. They would have been considered a tier five shelter before. The bottom of the barrel, but now with all the improvements, they were quickly improving and it looked like they would soon reach the third tier.

They were certainly now big enough to be considered a second tier shelter, the only thing that was letting them down was their current equipment and technology used in the shelter itself. They only had old equipment left behind, or what they could make from scratch. Not opening up to the other planets, they were unable to trade with other shelters.

However, Ruby was not to do this, until she consulted with a particular person. Turning around, she walked towards a large building that had been built on the platform she was standing on. It was the only building on the platform, and basking in the sunlight, was a figure standing tall just in front of it.

"Arthur, when will you return?" Ruby said as she looked at the figure and started to brush her fingers down its body. The figure seemed just like a real person, felt like one to, but she knew it wasn't him.

Before Arthur left, not wanting to leave them defenceless, she had seen him create another one of himself out of shadows. Apparently, if there were any beast attacks

they couldn't handle, then the shadow copy of himself would handle it, and if the shadow copy couldn't, he would be able to travel to it when he wished.

"I wish you were here." She said to herself, looking down at the ground.

"I am here," A voice said, as shadows looked to be leaving the body, and Arthur fell to the floor covered in sweat.

Ruby's face had gone bright red, she knew that this was now the real Arthur she was speaking to, as the clone was unable to speak. She had to quickly disregard her embarrassment, as she could see something was wrong with him.

"Does this planet always have to be so sunny?" Arthur said, and before he knew it, he had collapsed on the floor.

When he next opened his eyes, he could see the rustic looking roof above him, made from wood. Most of the houses were made from a mixture of earth and wood. Slowly getting up, Arthur was recalling what had happened.

"Those Dalki, were a bit of a harder fight than I thought they would be, still I managed to get rid of them all. But the human race has been going up against them this whole time? How did they survive, how many of them are there that are that strong?"

His natural king and leader-like instincts were kicking in, as he was already planning in his head, the things he needed to know and what would be the best course of action to take, but he soon stopped himself.

'That isn't my job anymore.'

Thinking back to the fight, the reason for his unstable condition wasn't because of the fight itself, it was because of resisting the urge. Arthur was used to resisting the blood of humans. He had learnt to control himself long ago, and he restricted himself from using blood abilities because of it.

The more a vampire would use blood abilities, the hungrier they would get, and that power would need to be restored. However, during the fight, Arthur found himself resisting against something else, it was the green blood.

He found it strange that the blood from the Dalki was able to power his blood weapon. Since blood weapons were made from blood crystals inside of vampires, they needed one thing to activate them. Human blood.

What he didn't expect, was the green blood to actually have a stronger effect, and the smell to be more alluring. In the end, resisting against a taste of the green blood while fighting was what had tired out Arthur the most.

When Ruby returned, she had given Arthur an update on the planets and shelters situation. She avoided asking what he had been up to this whole time. He could see

how she was thinking, worrying about the shelter's future, but he couldn't agree to them opening up the planet to others just yet.

"Just give me a week or so before you do that," Arthur replied. "There is something I still need to check out."

The planet they were on, was the planet Arthur and the punishers had moved to, choosing to live underground and away from the council and all its troubles. What he didn't want, was new people to go exploring this sacred place of his and for more reasons than one.

So before they would open up the place, he thought he would head down there to see if he could find anything, any clues about what had happened to his people just one more time. He would also set up some counter measures if certain people would try to venture their way down there, and he could always place some people as guards.

The people at the shelter were very loyal to him after what he had done for them.

Entering the underground city, a wave of emotions and memories had hit him, he hadn't really searched this place thoroughly since he had left, it was almost as if he was avoiding it. There were multiple destroyed houses made out of the black material, but the black tower could be seen standing strong and tall, shining bright from the blue crystals.

Arthur searched and searched the area but just like before, there really was nothing that gave any sort of hint at what happened. Other than a sign of a battle.

'A note, a book, a monologue about what happened here. Wasn't anything left behind?'

Of course it wouldn't be that easy though. Walking towards the tower, he thought maybe in the tower itself there was something. At that moment, when he had entered the front open area, something surprising had caught his eye.

Stepping out of the very tower he once stepped out of, were two people. Two people wasn't the right word, because he knew exactly what they were with their dragon like features. For he had just fought off a bunch of them.

'The Dalki, what are they doing here?'

These Dalki also looked slightly different to the ones he had faced. For both of them had small wings sticking out of their back. Something the other Dalki did not have and, they also had three spikes.

The highest Dalki Arthur fought with at the fortress, was a two spiked Dalki. This was going to be a tough fight.

When they exited from the tower, they simply went to the side and stood there straight. There was no communication, and they weren't wild like the others he had faced. They carried on standing there as if they were waiting for something.

That's when Arthur could hear the sound of footsteps. Another person was also coming out of the tower. These footsteps were a lot lighter than the Dalkis, making the person smaller, a normal sized human.

'No, no human should know about this place or the tower.' Arthur thought.

"What a surprise," The voice from inside the tower said. "I came all this way hoping to awaken you from your slumber, and then I find that you are already awake. I never expected to step out of this tower and for you to return here yourself. I hope that doesn't get the two of us off on the wrong foot. I have longed to see you, Arthur."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 768: Thirty to the hun

Inside the Cursed ship, Quinn was preparing for the grand hunt for the demon tier beast. In truth, he wanted to ask more questions while at the leaders table. All the questions he had when he was a student at the school. The things that just didn't make sense to him. He had already asked Pual but still wasn't satisfied thinking they had to be a better way then what they had done. The reason why Quinn was a little desperate to ask this, was because he wasn't even sure if there was a better way anymore.

But the leaders seemed to be in a great rush to go hunting for the demon tier. Even if Quinn had pressed for questions, they wouldn't have had time to give him a proper answer.

Inside the ship, Quinn now had to select the thirty members from the faction that would be going on the hunt with him. However, he also had to make sure there was at least an adequate person protecting the ship. After all, the ship would be left behind, with all the other groups full of their people, and on a planet that had a demon tier beast, there was sure to be another high ranking beast on the planet as well.

Usually, in this type of situation, Quinn would have picked Peter, but Peter was no longer with them. Not dead, but just not on the cursed ship. He was busy healing in the vampire world. That was another thing that was annoying him. If it was up to Quinn, he wished to wait for Kazz's return. He was worried about what was going on with the others, and wanted to wait for an update, but she seemed to be taking a long time.

Also, it felt like this was something he should be a part of.

"I'll stay behind," Linda said. 'I can quickly use one of the teleporters and grab Wevil from the parasites. If I bring him along, we should have a strong enough force to protect the ship."

Linda was certainly a good replacement for Peter, she was plenty strong, but perhaps a little weaker then Peter. She still had the option of evolving, and it was something Quinn would have to look into when he returned.

She had more than enough time to get used to her new body, and she should have accepted her situation by now. For some reason Quinn could feel it, maybe it was because of the sudden quest he had received before, but he felt like they would be returning to the vampire world soon, and he would need to make sure everyone was ready for it. Now with Linda being a vampire subclass, she would have to be brought along as well.

They stood in the main hall of the ship, which would branch off to all the other rooms, and Quinn had told everyone to gather so he could pick who to bring with him. When Sam had arrived, it looked like he had some news.

"Quinn, there are a few people here to see you." Sam said.

Following from behind him, where three girls all sorts of different sizes, and two more behind them. Quinn recognized these people well, as they had all been there at the fight. Seeing them, Quinn without realising it, his expression was an unpleasing one.

"Don't worry Quinn, they're not here to fight." Sam said.

"I know we didn't meet with the best of circumstances," said Helen.

That was right, Helen and her two sisters Ivy and Peach were the ones that had arrived, and next to them, were the reporters Void and Bonny.

"The leaders said that nothing needed to be done until after the hunt, but I wanted to make my intentions clear." Helen continued. "We of the Daisy group, wish to go under you. This may not be the wish of the other factions under ours, and we will speak to them, but all those who are part of Daisy wish to join the cursed faction."

The three girls gave a little bow, as a sign of respect. Seeing this did calm Quinn down a little, but he couldn't help but feel a little strange.

"Can I ask why, why not join one of the other families?" Quinn asked.

"I will be honest with you," Said Helen. "Part of the reason I want you to select us three, is to go on this hunt with you. This hunt can be a world changing event and we want to be a part of it. It was why we tried so hard to rise to the top. As for the second reason, you won that fight, you beat those that we couldn't beat. So I feel it's right to go under you."

"We decided to be separate from the other families for so long for a reason. We never wanted to just be under someone, but now that we have no choice. I think it's best we at least go under those that are more deserving of it. Besides, I have always liked the story of the underdog, and I'm making a bet that you will become the one."

Sam then scooted over and started whispering in Quinn's ear, telling him how he thought they would be a good asset to the team. While speaking, Quinn could see his face was a little blushed, he seemed more excited than he usually would be as well.

"Don't tell me you've fallen for them?" Quinn asked back. "I knew Nate was like this, but you too?"

Sam glanced at the girls, and he couldn't help but admire their beauty.

"Quinn, it might be the case but know that everything I said was the truth." Sam replied, while straining himself to seem more professional.

"It should be fine," Quinn said. "But don't you dare try anything against those in the Cursed, for now you are outsiders just helping us. You will have to prove your worth."

"Quinn!" Bonny shouted. "Can you bring us as well? I know we don't have permission to film this, as the other leaders have requested, but just like she said. This is once in a lifetime opportunity and I feel like we can't miss this chance, seeing everyone working together again. Don't worry, you don't have to protect us, this is our decision but we just want to be a part of your thirty, and in doing so we promise to write a good report on you."

After the two of them had shared an interment moment, Quinn was finding it hard for him to say no, and he was struggling to decide who to bring along with him. In the end, this was a demon tier hunt, it was a place where anyone could lose their lives.

But he had finally made his decision.

"These are the names of those that will be going on the beast hunt!" Quinn shouted loudly. "Quinn, Sil, Fex, Nate, Dennis, Sam, Paul and Megan." Quinn also wanted to bring Borden, but he had suggested it was best for him to stay behind and look after the kids, especially since Peter was gone.

A few more names of those in the shelter were read, the strongest of their group from a mixture of the planets they had taken over. "Helen, Ivy, Peach, Bonny and Void." Hearing their names they were pleased that Quinn had listened.

Finally, a few more names were read out, and the one that was recognisable in this batch was Cia. After Layla moved on and her mother died, there really was no reason for Cia to remain. On her own it was going to be difficult to get her memories back and at this point she wasn't sure if she even wanted them back.

If she did, now her best chance was to get her memories back In the vampire world. Although her abilities weren't the strongest, Quinn wanted to bring her along for a different reason. If someone close to the family was in trouble, he thought that maybe she would be a warning signal. The banshee's scream.

It was finally time for the demon tier hunt, to start.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 769: The strength of a demon tier

Once everyone was chosen, it was time for their group of thirty people to set off. Outside their ships everyone had gathered and were preparing to leave. The military had brought two head generals with them, Duke, and a head general named Sophie. On top of this, they had ten sergeants and then the rest were captains of their own squads.

There were no weak members in the group the military had brought with them. Looking at the Graylash family, they too had selected thirty of their top tier members, and finally there was the Bree family. Mona still had her humanoid-looking spirit next to her, while there were ten others in the group that carried beasts with them.

What was fascinating was how the beasts had been taken off the ship, which meant they had to have been living with them or at least transported by them safely on the ship. Quinn wondered just how the Bree family ability really worked, was it similar to how vampires made contracts with Familiarers, or did they actually control the beasts like his influence skill?

Looking towards Sil, Quinn thought there was one person he could maybe ask if he could get a touch. Other than those with beasts, the rest of the group looked quite average and had no beasts at all. According to the information Quinn had on them, the Bree family had similarities to the Truedream family. They had many with different abilities in their family, but only the leader's power was taught to those trusted the most.

When exiting from the ship, Quinn also managed to catch Logan, which meant he too would be coming on this trip. He didn't know whether to be happy or upset about this, as he was afraid Logan might just get hurt.

Then there was finally Quinn and his group. If it wasn't for Helen and her sisters, they would have seemed quite lacking. Yes, they had strong members, but after that, the rest of the Cursed faction wasn't too impressive. They were even bringing along some of the B rank members.

Helen did offer to have some of those from Daisy to fill the slots if he wished, but Quinn had refused saying he trusted these people more.

When everyone was ready, the four small armies were off and taking the lead was Mona, as she was relying on Logan to give them first hand information on the beast with his special equipment. The groups traveled on foot, as nearly the whole planet was one that was unexplored and they needed to be careful.

"Look at this!" Nate said with excitement. "The strongest people in the world are travelling together and I'm with them."

"You need to hone in your excitement a little." Paul said. "It will give others the wrong idea about just how serious they need to take this. None of you have ever faced a demon beast before, have you? I don't think even those from Daisy have."

The three girls shook their heads.

"Is there really that much of a difference in power?" Sam asked.

"We can take on emperor tier beasts without too much trouble, so it should be fine, right?" Fex wondered.

For a lot of those in Quinn's group. They had only experienced life in the military. In the past there had only been two encounters that the world knew of with demon tier beasts. One of them with the military, and the other Pure had dealt with. There were no recordings of such events, so none of them knew how much power a demon tier beast really had.

"Think about it. Why, even with all the leaders' strength here, have they chosen to bring thirty people each? It isn't because we want to risk others' lives for no reason, it's because this is the bare minimum number of people needed to fight them. Even the Dalki don't bother fighting demon tier beasts due to how strong they are." Paul continued to explain.

Although a lot of them didn't know the strength of the demon tier beast, they did know the strength of the leaders, and to hear Paul say they wouldn't stand a chance on their own was a frightening thought for them.

"Well, if they can't activate the beast equipment, then it would be pretty pointless to risk so many lives to get it." Sam said, speaking about the Dalki.

"I am worried." Paul said, for the first time speaking his concern out loud to the others. "Our group has dealt with emperor tier beasts before, and Quinn, I know you're strong, but we haven't even fought against a legendary tier nor a Demi-god tier beast. I'm sure you've realised each tier of beast gets incredibly stronger and the gap between them is larger as well."

What Paul was talking about was the gap in power between the tiers. The difference between a basic tier and intermediate tier wasn't so great, but between each tiers as you went up, this gap grew more and more.

"I understand your concern," Quinn replied. "That's why I want everyone to listen up. Kazz isn't here and your lives are more important than anything. If you are in trouble, I want you to use your full strength, hold nothing back and live. We can deal with the problems later as long as you are alive, but can do nothing when you're dead."

Some of those that were walking with Quinn were confused, especially since his words only applied to a few of them. The one that stuck out to Helen the most was

the words 'use your full strength'. This would imply that what they had seen at the duel wasn't everything they had. At the same time, there was also the mysterious boy who they wouldn't let take part in the fight. Although they were happy for Quinn to bring him along now.

With the device Logan had created, they were sure there was only one demon beast on the planet. So it wouldn't interrupt the duel, they had decided to place it a great distance away from where the demon tier beast was located.

They also chose to travel on foot to not cause any disturbances and to be ready for any beasts around them. However, because of this, the travel to the location of the demon beast would take some time, on the way there they would have to camp for a few nights before they would reach their destination.

It was tricky to find a safe place to park such a large group. The whole ground was covered in a hard diamond like substance, and the floor was often uneven with large slabs of land sticking out here and there. Eventually they discovered a weird path. There were several giant slabs sticking out above, it looked like large spaceships had crashed and ice had formed over them.

Here, they decided each group would take cover underneath a different slab. Sleeping wasn't too bad either. Those in the military who knew how to use the earth ability well could also apply it to the diamond substance.

The material they were on seemed to be a mixture of some sorts. Because of this, they were easily able to create large places for the groups to sleep in. Even with sleeping bags, sleeping inside a place made them feel safer somewhat.

When the night sky hit, fires could be seen out and the members were busy chatting away. Both Nate and Sam stayed a distance away and were walking around the edge of where the girls from Daisy were. It looked like they had been discussing for a while now what to say and how to introduce themselves.

Looking at this, Quinn thought it would be nice for them to have this as their only worry. He wished one day that kids, and people their age only had to worry about everyday normal things like this.

That's when he heard large footsteps approaching from behind him. He pretended he didn't notice and continued to look at his members.

"Quinn, do you care to join us?"

Turning around, Quinn could see it was Oscar. He had his hand held out, and there was a separate fire, where all the leaders were sitting with raised seats made for them personally.

"I think it will be important, there is something we need to discuss. Oh, and it would be best if we bring Helen into this too."

Just then, Nate was ready to go in, he had waited long enough.

'Wait, what's happening, where is Quinn taking her?' He thought. 'NO! Not another one.'

But when he saw where they headed, he knew it wasn't what he had first thought.

Sitting around a campfire was Helen, Mona, Owen, and Oscar.

"The reason I wanted to bring everyone here, is because I have the most experience fighting a demon tier beast before. I want to give you all an idea of what it's like to fight such a thing, and why we came to even give it the name Demon in the first place.

"Let me tell you about the human race's first encounter with a demon beast." Oscar said, and responding to his words, it seemed like the flame flickered with sadness and anger.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 770: Beast gun

Oscar begun his great tale of the first encounter with the demon tier beast and everyone sat around the camp fire listening well. It was a tale that not many knew all the details of, and they would be hearing it from the very man who owned a demon tier weapon.

At the time, the human race were in the middle of the war with the Dalki. At this point they were fearing a bit better thanks to the introduction of ability users. The military were starting to learn the earth ability and Oscar was one of the first people selected to learn about such an ability.

Because of his talent with the ability, he rose up the ranks quickly and was put out on the battlefield more often than not. But still, the rollout of abilities to the military and general public was slow. They needed to do more to win this war, or at least give them a fighting chance.

During this time, another man had been introduced into the war who would also be one of the few who people came to know as one of the heroes of war. This was none other than Leo. He was one of the first few people that were able to kill a Dalki without the use of ability. Due to the use of abilities, only those that had great power were Abel to kill the Dalki, which would destroy what was left of most of them.

However, thanks to Leo, they were able to retrieve the bodies of the Dalki mostly intact. This was when they discovered the strange armour the Dalki wore. Testing it out, they soon found out the great power of beast equipment.

Still, this could only increase the strength of a few, not all Dalki wore beast equipment, and it was hard to retrieve their bodies as the Dalki seemed to be actively collecting their fallen comrades as well.

That's when another person, who would turn the tide appeared Richard Eno. He was the one that told the others of the ability of the beast equipment, and also calmed he knew where to find more beasts.

After showing what the beast equipment could do, and how it could power people, there were those that started to trust him. The military were desperate and felt like they had no choice., eventually he was given access to everything the military had access to, most of it being destroyed parts of the Dalki's spaceships and more.

From this, Eno introduced the introduction of portals. Portals that would transfer one to the beast solar system, and the introduction of beast planets would come into play.

Of course, a few tests were done with men, before deciding anything, but times were getting desperate. Learning abilities took too long and people were starting to

hit their limit with certain abilities. Just because everyone could learn an ability didn't mean they would be as strong as another with it.

The military then started to rely on their second plan more, relying on the beast planets with the beast gear. A small team of fifty people lead by Oscar was made, and they were to travel to the beast planets, hunting for crystals.

Back then, there were only portals, and the coloured portal system never existed, they had no clue what dangers they would face, but the group sent out were confident. They were all ability users, and Oscar was special, being the only one at the time in the group who could use a soul weapon.

As expected, beasts were killed easily and crystals were obtained, but then they started to come across more difficult beasts, the crystals obtained slightly different. The expedition was a long one, and they would constantly send back crystals back to the military.

Here Eno, had discovered along with the help of others how to turn the crystals into weapons. A report came back to the expedition team, stating that the clearer the crystal were the stronger the weapons and armour created from them would be.

This wasn't good news, as Oscar knew that the clearer crystal came from the more difficult of beasts they were hunting. However at the time, Oscar was in a position where he was unable to go against his superiors orders and he knew the dire situation earth was in.

In a way, they were being relied upon. Their hunt for clearer crystals put them into different areas on the planets. They started to learn that the stronger beasts were located in the same area, which made their progression slower.

"Sir, we can't continue on like this, ten of our men have already been injured and the beasts keep on getting harder as we press on." One of the sergeants said, voicing his concern.

The group were resting after having defeated a group of strong beasts, it came as a surprise as they were looking for a place to use as shelter. They were currently on a planet filled with snow, and the visibility was quite poor.

Still, they had eventually found a place, an ice cavern of sorts that allowed them to take cover from the snowstorm outside.

"I know it's hard." Oscar said clenching his fist. "But I just got a report recently from back at earth. They have just destroyed London. Whatever you knew of the place no longer exists."

The sergeant looked devastated and so did those behind them. London was one of the strongholds, one of the main bases that were being used, and it just meant the Dalki were even closer to winning the war.

"We'll stay here until the snow storm dies down, and then we can move out again." Oscar said. "This that are injured can remain here, and we will come back to get them. We been getting good feedback from the team. The latest batch of crystals we created have been the best weapons yet."

Oscar and his team were also trial users for the beast equipment. Whatever they sent back, would be made into items and sent to them first. This helped them gain more strength as they went on, and they found that the beast weapons of a higher tier dealt more damage.

" I can tell, the beast we are fighting, are not the strongest, and I still haven't had the chance to use this yet." Oscar said patting his side. It looked similar to a gun that would be used, but everyone knew guns were useless against beasts and the Dalki. Which meant Oscar had to be carrying something special.

Beast weapons were pretty useless if formed into a gun, as every crystal had an imprint, these imprints helped base what the items or weapons the crystal could be used to make into. If peons weren't made to this specific imprint, then it would cause trouble when trying to activate the beast weapons power, once again making it no better than what the Dalki were using them for.

No beast implement was suitable to be made into a gun, the second problem was, even if it was, then the next problem was what to supply it with, as standard bullets did next to nothing. However, when research continued they found something.

There seemed to be a beast crystal imprint that was suitable to be made into a bow, and then later they found one suitable to be made into arrows as well. If this could be done, there was soon hope for having a gun beast weapon along with a bullet.

And many assumed that what Oscar had on his side, was a one of a kind weapon. The only beast gun and bullet in existence.

While waiting for the storm to settle and in the cavern, the room they were in started to vibrate, the isles on the roof were moving slightly, and pressing their hands up against the wall they felt like they could feel something.

"What was that, an earthquake?" One of the men asked.

Another vibration was felt, and this time listening carefully Socar could hear it, it sounded more like a cry. A scream so loud that it had caused the whole room to vibrate.

"It's a cry of a beast, and a pretty loud one." Oscar said.

The cries continued and the vibrations in the room where felt. When looking outside in the snowstorm they could see nothing, but also the vibrations seemed to

lessen. When returning to the cavern, they quickly realised that it was coming from underneath instead.

In the room, there were several tunnels that looked to have led down, but afraid of where or what they would lead to they thought it would be too risky to investigate. Especially if they were fighting.

"You're not thinking of going down there are you, the tunnel walls could collapse if you start fighting."

"With my ability it shouldn't be a problem. I can stop the place from caving in, and if the beast is as large as it's cry, there's bound to be a lot of space down there and another way to get out." Oscar repeated.

After much discussion, Oscar gave his squad the choice, to either come with him or not, and that he would only be scouting. But other than the ten who were injured they all agreed to go with him.

This was one of the biggest mistakes Oscar had made, as he would be the only one left alive to return.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 771: Ice walls

Heading down one of the tunnels together, the vibrations from the strange screams were getting louder and louder. They were starting to worry that the cave would collapse just from the loud screams alone, but the material that the cave was made from, although it looked fragile like glass, was far more robust than it appeared.

Some of the men tried to chip away at the tunnel walls using the normal tools they had brought with them to send back samples to the lab. However, they were unable to and only high level beast equipment could break such a thing. Since the discovery of new planets, nearly everything new they found, minerals and materials, were to be sent back for research purposes.

Proceeding with caution, the loud cries from the creature seemed to have stopped.

"Why do you think it was making so much noise?" One of them asked. "I've never heard a beast make a sound like that."

"I'm not sure," Oscar replied, "Maybe that's just what it normally sounds like." Although Oscar said this as a joke, his men behind him gulped as they thought about the sheer size of a beast that could make a sound like that.

Continuing through the tunnels, they found it a little strange that they only headed downwards. There were no signs of it being man made, but at the same time it was consistent in its route.

Then finally, it looked like they could see what could only be described as the end of the tunnel. It was a little strange as it had suddenly cut off and it looked like they had gotten to the bottom of the floor.

"Do you think we should go back up and try to head through one of the other tunnels?"

"It took us a while to get down this one, and we aren't sure how many others are dead ends either." Oscar replied.

He then pressed his face up against the ice cold surface of the wall at the very end, and gave it a knock a few times. Oscar continued to do this in different parts of the wall as if he was searching for something.

Ever since entering the tunnel, there was something strange that had been bothering Oscar. His soul weapon was an enhancement type, it was one that people either saw as weak or strong depending on the situation, but it allowed him to use whatever his feet were on, as a piece of earth. No matter what the material was actually made of, he could shape and form it at his will.

However, he didn't understand how it fully worked, and it seemed to relate with the planet he was on. As long as the material belonged to the planet, he would be able

to use it in some way. Which was why he was confused ever since they had entered the tunnel.

If the ice tunnel they were in had naturally been formed by the planet, then using his abilities he should have been able to shift or chip away at the wall, but he was unable to.

'What does this mean?' Oscar thought.

Eventually, using a short sword he had equipped to his side, he pulled it out and proceeded to cut a rectangular shape, large enough for a man to fit through.

"The walls are thin here and I think we've reached what we were looking for, is everyone ready?" Oscar asked.

When they all nodded, Oscar immediately lifted his foot, kicked the ice wall, and the large slab of ice went sliding across the floor.

"Well it looks like I was right," He said smiling.

Drawing their weapons, they all carefully walked out of the ice tunnel, and it looked like they had entered a giant cavern. They could hardly see the ceiling, the room they were in was as big as a football stadium.

"Look." One of them pointed.

In the large cavern, several long ice tunnels just like the one they had come out of were leading right to the ceiling. It certainly was a strange thing to see, and was definitely unnatural.

"Ah!" A man screamed as he fell to the floor. Looking at him, he had his finger pointed out and he was visibly shaking, he looked like he was nearly in tears. When the others went to see what he was pointing at, they all took a step back.

"What is that?"

What Oscar was starting to notice was the room was getting brighter by the second. When they had entered, there were dim blue crystals on the ceiling and walls, allowing them to see even though they were underground.

Slowly, the crystals seemed to be getting brighter, and it had revealed the body of a giant beast. It had a large body covered with fur and on its shoulders were three large wolf-like heads, with fangs as large as a human body protruding from its mouth. The beast was something far larger and looked to be stronger than anything they had faced before.

But as the crystals lit up more and more, they could soon see the whole body of the beast. It was bleeding, and one of its three heads had been severed from its body.

On top of that, several large spikes the size of the tunnels were sticking out from its body.

"The beast appears to be dead," Said Oscar. "There is nothing to worry about."

What was worrying him, was the crystals lighting up in the room more than before. This reaction he had seen before but never at this level. The small blue beast crystal acted the same way as regular beast crystals.

When a greater power force was using energy near it, they would react by lighting up even more. When fighting a king tier beast near these crystals, Oscar had seen a few of them light up, but not the whole room.

If the beast was dead, then the crystals couldn't have possibly been glowing due to the beast, it had to be something else that was alive powering the crystals. Besides, whatever was able to kill such a powerful beast was probably inside the same room as them.

"Get out!" A voice echoed in all of their heads.

The others started to look around to see if they could spot where the voice was coming from, only to realise it was being spoken into their minds.

'Telepathy, and it knows how to speak!'

"Leave now!" It shouted, and rumbling from the ground could be felt.

"Everyone move!" Oscar shouted.

Now that his feet were on the solid ground, he could raise the floor beneath them and created a thick ice wall to protect them. However, he had a bad feeling about what was to come and decided to dive out of the way.

A loud bang was heard as something had smashed through the wall he had created. Straight down the middle, another ice tunnel had appeared, and it had split the group into two halves.

"Boss, help me!" A voice shouted.

Getting back on his feet he rushed over to where the voice was coming from, and that's when he could see a few of his men had been caught by the strange tunnel, half their bodies crushed by it. They tried to move but it seemed impossible.

Slowly, the ice seemed to be covering the rest of their bodies as if it were spreading. One of them in a panic brought out a small dagger and tried to cut into the ice that was forming around him, but when the knife hit the ice, he screamed in pain. It felt like the ice that was attached to his body now had become a part of him.

Oscar, seeing this, used his blade once again and cut around the ice. The problem was how to detach the person from the tunnel itself. Oscar went to grab his hand, but before he could,

"No, if you touch me it could spread to you! I can tell I'm already dying. When the ice touched us, I could feel that it was already freezing around my heart." The man said. "Just do me a favou-"

But before he could finish his sentence his lips stopped moving, and the ice covered his entire body.

This was what Oscar was afraid of, the ice tunnels were an ability of some sort. Trying to not let his emotions get the better off him, he took a deep breath and looked in the direction of the attack, and this was where he saw the demon tier beast.

"A girl?"

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 772: Waisting the bulle

The first thing that Oscar noticed when looking at what had just attacked them was that it had a humanoid shape. Although she didn't look completely human, her form was the same. There were two legs, two arms and a head.

However, there were also some distinctive features that made it clear she wasn't a regular human at all. Sticking out from her shoulder were two black wings, and the top half of her head was completely black with no hair. It was hard to even see if the beast had any eyes.

Finally, where her mouth would usually be, her jaw stretched wide, showing her long razor-sharp teeth that went to the back of her cheeks. It was the first time they had ever seen a humanoid beast.

It startled Oscar as the first thought that came to his head was if this was an ability user, one that had strong ice powers, but how could that even be possible? However, one thing was clear, this was an enemy and not a friend, he had already lost a few men, and he didn't want to lose anymore.

Rushing in front of the others, Oscar had both his hands held out by his side, ready to use his powers at any moment. Although he had his soul weapon that would allow him to use the ground, the others didn't. However, once he used his ability on the material, the others could also treat it the same as well.

To help them, Oscar raised a large thick wall of earth on both sides, allowing them to use it as they wished. The advantage was the ground on this planet was denser than earth, on earth. Meaning it should be able to be more useful for defending and attacking.

The other reason for raising the walls, was so the beast only had one target to focus on, himself. When Oscar eventually got closer, he could see that the humanoid beast had stumbled, at any moment, it looked like the beast would collapse.

On a closer inspection, he could see that one of its black wings were torn, and underneath it was a pool of black blood.

'The beast, it's injured.' Oscar thought. It wasn't just a small injury. It had severe cuts all over its body. The amount of blood on the ground, if it really was a human, it would have been dead by now.

This had confirmed that the humanoid creature in front of them was indeed a beast. The beasts had black blood. Thinking about what might have happened for it to be injured like this, he could only think of one thing, the other beast that was dead.

'Were the injuries from fighting with the other beast before? It certainly looked strong enough to have injured this one as well.'

Oscar made sure his gun was still attached around his waist, with a single bullet in its chamber. There was only one chance, as it would be nearly impossible to retrieve the bullet either.

Getting up from the ground, the beast opened its largemouth, and a blue glow could be seen. Oscar could guess what this was, similar to what had happened before, it was getting ready for another attack.

'I have to stop it!' Oscar thought, stomping his foot on the ground, it started to rumble, digging up the ground beneath, and when it finally reached the beast, a large pillar shot up, hitting its leg. It threw it off balance, but the attack from the beast still went ahead, firing off to its left side.

Seeing this, Oscar tried his best to raise several walls, but the ice tunnel attack went through anything he made with no problem at all, and the men tried their best to run, with the tunnel before blocking their way. They didn't have much room or choice of where to go. Most of them had been caught up in the attack, surrounded by ice.

The others, knowing the ice would soon spread through their bodies, immediately went to try to pull their comrades out, by cutting around the ice, but this time, The beast seemed to be more aware of what they were planning. It raised its hand, and at that moment, from the ice's outer walls created from its attack. Spikes spread out and stabbed anyone who was close.

Even if the ice hadn't hit any fatal spots, it started to spread through the body of the others, freezing the areas that had been hurt. Some resorted to drastic measures, cutting off their limbs that were starting to get frozen.

Oscar desperately wanted to try to help them, but the best thing he could do to help them was to get rid of the beast. It seemed like its injuries were affecting it greatly, for every time it would make an attack of that calibre, it would look tired and more blood would seep out of its wounds.

Not only Oscar, but the others that were uninjured knew this was their opportunity to attack, hurling boulders, using their weapons, and more, they all started to attack the beast. With the flying objects approaching it, it opened its mouth once more and howled, creating a piercing scream.

When the boulders and objects got within a certain range, they too would freeze and fall to the ground, once again it had stumbled through using more of its power.

Drawing his gun, Oscar was waiting for this moment, he knew after each attack, there was a brief resting period, and it was the only time he had. Not wasting any more time, he fired calmly.

'I saw your beast core when you opened that wide mouth of yours, this may do damage to the crystal, but it's worth it to take you out.'

Oscar started to wonder just how strong was the beast before it was injured. Would they have even stood a chance?

Raising its wings, the beast thought it could block the bullet, but it had gone right through, and then knowing this, it could only do one thing. It tilted its head slightly downward, allowing for the bullet to go through the top of its head rather than the crystal itself.

The bullet continued to travel and went through the walls behind them to be forever lost, the only beast bullet in existence.

The beast had flinched but not for long, as it opened its mouth, preparing for another attack.

'No, I wasted the opportunity, everyone here is going to die!'

"Oscar," A man shouted, standing in front of him. Those that were left alive stood in front of their leader. "There is still one more thing. Remember, Eno said that the gun can also be used to fire out pure crystal energy. The beast from before, it looks to have only been killed recently; maybe the crystal is still there."

Running off, Oscar used his abilities to quickly help him travel to where the beast was. The sound of the other girl beast attacking was heard, and his men's cries were heard behind him, but he continued to move on.

Eventually getting to the beast, he tried to locate the crystals carving out certain parts and ripping them to shreds with his ability until he had eventually found it. A crystal clearer than any other they had ever collected before.

Placing the crystal into a special glass tube at the top, it was ready to be used with its second function. The military had already discovered how to use crystals as pure energy, and their ships and mechs used this to attack.

The problem was, if the raw energy of the crystal was to be used, then it could never regain its energy back. That crystal would be lost forever. It was a shame, as the crystal perhaps could have been made into something great, but there was nothing he could do. His and his men's lives were at stake.

When Oscar turned around, it was a scene he didn't expect, no one was moving, and the beast had nearly collapsed on the other end. Everyone had been hit by the strange ice abilities.

'Leave, now!' The voice spoke in his head again.

Not listening, and out of sheer anger for all those that had died. Oscar lifted his gun once more and pulled the trigger. A large surge of power stronger than ever was shot out from the gun. It was unable to hold such power that the gun itself had shattered and fallen to pieces. A small explosion was made, flinging Oscar back, and the beam of energy was shot out towards the beast.

For the first time, the beast seemed to be using a strange skill he had never seen before, a barrier of some type was rising from the ground, however, the shot of energy was too fast and had hit the beast killing it before it could have its final stand.

No one else had survived from the expedition apart from Oscar, and in the report that had returned. There were two demon tier beasts that had been discovered that day.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 773: How will we succeed?

There were multiple things that had been revealed in the story that Oscar had told. They were revelations none of them knew about and it came as a great shock.

"A beast gun, well that is certainly amazing." Mona said. "I never knew one existed, it's a good thing those two reporters aren't here or they would be having a field day."

"Well, it was wasted in a way, destroyed there and then." Oscar replied. "And ever since there has never been another one made along with the bullet. However, the use of energy weapons became more potent after, using the crystals raw energy as a form of lasers, and this has worked the best against the Dalki and their ships so far. But remember, beast crystals are still hard to come by, they aren't something easily manufacturable like bullets, so stronger beast crystals make more sense to be made into weapons or armour."

"A sword can be used again and again to further fight more beasts and the Dalki. A beast bullet just isn't practical."

"It's true, there are many flaws with something like a beast gun." Owen said as he played with his fan, looking at it as if it was a great piece of craftsmanship. Quinn was wondering if the fan itself was some type of beast weapon as well, considering how much Owen had it around him. It was hard to tell as it didn't have the usual beastly features that beast weapons have.

They had learnt a few more things from Oscar's story, but it wasn't good news. Information was key when going into battle, and none of them other than Oscar had faced a demon tier beast before. They were hoping his story would give them an idea of the beast's strength but it hadn't.

In the story itself, the beast had already been greatly injured and it was hard to tell how injured. But according to the information that was found out later, it had been placed in a deadly fight against another demon tier beast beforehand. Being a humanoid one, it came out as the winner but not without a few scratches here and there.

Oscar and his group were just in the right place at the right time. Although it was also strange to say that considering they all still had died, it sounded like Oscar would have died as well if it wasn't for the other demon tier crystal and gun that he had in his possession, which they didn't have this time.

"You're worried?" Helen asked, seeing the deep frown on Quinn's face.

Quinn paused before answering.

"I think it's fine to be worried but I just thought we would have gotten a better idea from the story of the demon tier beast's strength." Quinn replied.

"There are a few things that are different this time." Said Oscar. "Back then, I was not as strong as I was today, we also have the other top ability users here as well."

"But we don't have the gun, the demon tier crystal, nor has the beast been greatly weakened." Owen mentioned.

"True, the forces are small as to not cause great damage to our men, at the same time depending on the size of the beast we might need a great force, which is why I chose the number of people to come along with us on this hunt. Too little and we may never be able to kill the thing. Too many and there is a chance of sacrificing too much for the sake of the crystal."

"Also there are a few more things that we have now that we didn't have before. Our men are wearing the best of the best of beast gear that we can find. Their lives won't be as lost easily, second we have this." Oscar said, patting a large wooden box to his side.

The others knew what he was referring to.

"The demon weapon." Helen mumbled.

"Correct, not just any demon weapon, but also one from a humanoid type beast. Before I used the demon crystal to kill one, this time we have the demon weapon."

When Oscar had returned back from his expedition, the demon weapon was created and rightfully so, they allowed him to be the user of it in the war. With the demon weapon in his hand, he had become one of the heroes of war.

Hearing everything, Quinn was starting to wonder about the other demon weapon that had been secured by Pure. Oscar was extremely lucky, but what about Pure? Could the same set of situations have happened to them to stumble across the demon weapon? No, that was very unlikely.

Which meant somehow using their strength, they were able to kill a demon tier beast. It showed just how strong Pure was.

"Do you know how Pure came across their demon tier weapon?" Quinn asked. He figured that after what he had done, there was a good chance that he had created a target for himself, and it would be good to learn of them a bit more.

"Actually, we had no clue Pure had a demon weapon in possession. I guess the military has been keeping too many secrets." Oscar sighed, like everything he was telling them was a great weight of his chest. "I have been following after those that

were left behind, but I often forget that I'm the one in charge now. At one point, we had discovered Pure's whereabouts.

"You see the reason why it's so hard to find Pure and their base, is because it is located in the sea."

"In the sea?" Quinn repeated, confused.

"Correct, the Pure base is a giant submarine located somewhere in earth's seas. They are constantly on the move and hardly ever surface, but at one point we had received information on their whereabouts. As a chance to get rid of the pain in our backside, I went there personally. The attack was going well until I had clashed with their leader, and that's when we had discovered they had a demon weapon."

"I don't know how, but rumours had come out, perhaps other people had seen their leader use the demon tier weapon as well. Then, the world saw the use of the demon tier weapon once again when the alliance attacked Pure during the civil war. Maybe it would be best to ask those guys, they still remain back with the other ships, and they will be able to give you a better picture."

"Was it anyone you recognised?" Mona asked, now interested in who the Pure leader was after seeing the strength of one of their top members.

"No, I thought it might be someone who had taken part in the war, especially someone with such great power. However, his fighting style did remind me of someone...never mind, just the ramblings of an old fool."

Having only ever experienced the strength of the emperor tier weapons, Quinn was wondering just how strong demon tier weapons could be that everyone was willing to fight over them for and risk their lives.

His eyes started to glance over at the box and Oscar at this point noticed that Quinn wasn't the only one that was looking at the box. Everyone at the campfire was.

Oscar started a deep laugh which sounded like it came from deep within his belly.

"Ha, ha, I suppose you all want to see it don't you?" He asked. "What a demon tier weapon looks like and what it can do."

Looking over his shoulder, he looked at all the groups that were a distance away. "I suppose it would be useful for you to know about it, after all we will be fighting together."

Opening the large rectangular box in front of him, he dragged it across the floor. The others wanted to get up from their seats and look over, but at the same time their pride wouldn't allow them to seem too keen.

'Pride, what do I care.' Quinn thought, as he stood up from the seat, and stood next to Oscar as he started to unlock the box.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 774: The beautiful sword

Standing by Oscar's side, as soon as the wooden crate was lifted, Quinn was the first one to set his eyes on the demon tier weapon. The heavy top was pulled open and at the same time, a pulse of energy could be felt around the campfire. Quinn wasn't the only one that had felt it. From the look on the other's faces, the rest did as well.

It was at that moment that Quinn realised that the crate itself wasn't any regular crate, it was one that had been crafted using beast materials as well, and it seems to have some type of suppressive ability.

Looking down at the weapon itself, Quinn could only think one thing.

'It's beautiful.'

From looking at the weapon, he imagined what a beauty the beast must have been in its humanoid form. Images started to appear in his head, at what creature Oscar had described in his memories to create such a thing.

Oscar was careful as he pulled the weapon out to show the others, he was holding it and taking care of it like it was a baby. When he pulled it out, the others also could now see the magnificent weapon, and it seemed to have drawn the attention of all the other camps as well.

"Damn it!" Bonny shouted. "Look at that thing, if only we were allowed to film, we would be able to show so much footage."

In his hand, Oscar was holding it by its large black hilt. At the very bottom, hanging off, like a cloth was something black in colour and shaped like wings. The hilt was quite thick but it looked to be perfect in Oscar's large hands.

Although Oscar was able to hold the weapon single handedly, Quinn was unsure if he could do the same. For the size of the weapon was something in between a greatsword and a longsword. It had the length of a longsword, but not quite the thickness of those giant greatswords used to slay beasts.

Only one side of the blade was edged, with a slant at the very top. Then towards the top of the blade, there were three circles cut out, each getting smaller as they got closer to the tip of the sword. The most beautiful thing about it, was the sword guard.

It was covered in a beautiful royal dark blue colour. It looked like feathers would wrap around the user's hand, but it wasn't feathers. Instead, its material was more like that of ice.

"The three circles on the blade light up depending what active skill is used." Oscar started to explain. "Once a skill is used, the outside of the ring will turn red. Once

the red circle disappears the active skill can be used again. The red goes around in a circle like a timer so the user has an idea when they can use it again. The smaller circles have a slower cool down time."

"I'm assuming the weapon has some type of ice abilities, do you mind sharing?" Owen asked, hiding the expression on his face with his fan.

"The smallest circle is the ice wave ability, similar to the beast. With a swing, a screeching sound is made, and anything that enters its proximity will start to freeze. However the ability doesn't seem to be so effective on beasts or humans, and is more so for weapons or abilities.

"The second active skill is the ice tunnels explained in my stories. Though not at the same power level. The tunnels themselves are far smaller than what the demon tier beast could produce and it seems like the cooldown time is longer as well."

Hearing this, the others had realised and noticed this too with the other beast weapons. When the weapons were made from the crystals, their power was far less effective. This was one of the other reasons why multiple crystals of the same tier would need to be used to create a true tier of that weapon class.

But with a demon tier weapon, that would nearly be impossible. The power of one crystal alone was powerful, it was enough to be turned into a weapon or armour far greater than any of the other tiers and it still wouldn't match up to the level of what the beast could do.

"You only mentioned two active abilities." Mona said. "Judging by the last ring being the biggest and taking the longest time to cool down, that would be the most powerful skill, would it not?"

'So far, all the active skills had been based on what the demon tier beast could do. However the demon tier beast was injured, so perhaps it was unable to use its ultimate skill in the state it was in, but it still had been transferred to the weapon.' Mona thought.

"Now, I can't tell you everything. If there is a need to use it you will see it anyway. The skill won't help you guys out in the fight." Oscar replied, with a smile growing from the corner of his mouth.

'What a weird old man, first he says that we should share our skills and then he goes and hides the most powerful one.' Mona thought, crossing her arms to show her disappointment. But Oscar wasn't going to budge on this one. It just showed that the relationships between each other were clearly only at the surface level.

Quinn looked at the sword intensely as if something was pulling him in. He wanted to reach out and grab it, just to give it a few swings to see what it was like. He didn't say anything but his eyes wouldn't look away from it for even a second.

"Master...." A deep voice said in Quinn's mind. "You want the sword...I can snatch it from him whenever you wish" The deep voice said.

The voice was one Quinn knew well, it was his familiar. One that would grant his darkest desire, and right now, Quinn wanted that sword more than anything, even though he wasn't a swordsman.

Locking the sword back in the crate, Quinn was knocked out of his trance and the others were now heading back to rest. However, Quinn couldn't get the weapon and what the bone claw had suggested out of his mind.

With the bone claw's unique skill, it was something he probably could easily grab, even if the bone claw was spotted, they would think it was just a beast and if it got killed, it would come back to life at a later time. The best thing was that Quinn had his dimensional space he could hide the weapon in.

'Your....wish...." the deep voice said again.

While Quinn was sleeping in his house with the others, he thought about it long and hard and decided against it. He shook his head trying to screw it on straight. Taking the weapon now would lower their chance of survival against the demon tier beast, and Quinn didn't know how to use it.

And if he used it now, he would be turning everyone against him.

The sun rose once again and it was time for the group to set off, but before doing so, Logan had opened up his little computer system to try get a location of where the beast currently was. The rods had been set up beforehand on the planet, and it now allowed not quite real-time tracing, but at least every hour or so they would know where the general direction of the beast was.

"I suggest everyone prepares to encounter the beast today." Logan informed Mona.  
"I don't know why, but I think the beast might know we are here."

"What makes you say that?" Mona asked.

"Well, ever since yesterday, the beast has been making its way towards us. Even if we stood still and did nothing, there is a good chance that the beast will arrive here in at least three hours."

Hearing this news, there had been a slight change of plan as suggested by Oscar and Logan. Instead of going towards the beast, it would be better for them to wait for it and set up a trap for the beast. It gave them time to get into gear and create the best formation possible to give them a better chance.

Preparations were being made, and as an hour passed it looked like the beast was still heading towards them. While Quinn and his group were following orders from Oscar, further led by Sam, someone started to walk over.

'This guy, I don't know whether to be worried about him, or to see him as a friend.' Quinn thought as he saw who was walking over.

Owen placed down his fan, showing a smile and his moon shaped eyes to Quinn. Whenever talking to Quinn he often put down his fan showing his expressions, rather than hiding it compared to the others.

"Why do you do that?" Quinn asked. "Why don't you hide yourself in front of me."

With an even bigger smile on his face Owen replied,

"I have many secrets I hide from others, we all do. Some use a mask, some are acting. Others chose to only show their true self to those close to them. I have never been good at hiding my emotions so I use the fan. However with you Quinn, I feel you have more secrets than even me to hide, and for some reason that makes me feel...comfortable."

Quinn was right, this person was strange and Quinn still didn't know how to feel about him.

"The boy from the Balde family. I want him to stay close to you and us. After hearing the supreme commander's story, I fear this beast might be stronger than what we have anticipated. If he needs to use our powers, then don't hold him back."

After Owen had finished speaking those words, vibrations could be felt through the floor.

"It's here earlier than expected." Owen said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 775: The demon tier arrives

Although the beast was upon them earlier than they had thought, at the same time, everyone was already in a position to fight whatever was heading their way. A lot of work had been done, most of the preparations thanks to Oscar.

Due to his ability, he was able to move and change the terrain at will. Creating quite a wide valley, he had made two large cliff tops. Walls that went on for a hundred meters only allowing the beast to come down one direction.

On the top of the cliff tops themselves, there were also several smaller walls so they could take cover from attacks. Then on the ground were the more vital members in the hunt, and behind them the support classes.

The idea was those at the top of the two walls were ranged users. Judging by the reading Logan had received, the demon tier beast seemed to be a large one. Using their abilities and weapons, they would rain down attacks on the beast.

Then, the strongest fighters, including the leaders, would be on the ground, fighting toe to toe with the beast. Finally, there were those behind them. They were the group's healers and supportive classes. Some had reinforcement and buff abilities to be used, and even defensive abilities.

Also, a group of tunnels had been made from their position, allowing the support to either enter them to run away from the beast, if anything went wrong, or head upward to the top of the walls to support the ranged users as well.

"Which means, the ones that have the hardest job in this fight, are those on the ground," Sam said, standing at the back with those that were playing the supportive role in the fight.

They were a few people who had come along in the hunt, that weren't exactly considered fighters, or at least even if they contributed, they wouldn't be much help. This was why Sam, Logan, Cia and the two reporters had stayed at the back.

The main fighting force was composed of Quinn, Owen, Mona and her sprint, Oscar, Duke, Nate, Dennis, Paul, Sil, Fex, Helen, Ivy, Peach. Also, five from the Bree family with their beasts had been brought. It was a mixture of king tier beast and a couple of emperor tiers, and also a few from Owen's family. However, most of the Graylash family were at top using their lightning abilities at a range.

What Bonny found strange looking at them, was both Owen and Mona were standing around a particular blonde haired boy.

"Are you sure this is the right thing to do?" Mona said, looking at Sil, like he was some type of disease.

"Not right now, but there might be a point where we don't have a choice," Owen said. "Would you rather end up dead?"

The reason Mona was being cautious, was she felt like as soon as Sil touched all of them, he would have the strength of all of their abilities. There would be no stopping him. If he was truly loyal to Quinn after dealing with the demon tier beast, he could make the two of them submit there and then.

The horror and true power of the blades would be revealed.

Although Mona had no clue how strong Sil was compared to that man, what she feared more than anything was if with her powers, he was able to control the demon tier beast to do it's bidding as well.

"I'm sorry, I just can't let him use my powers. There are plenty of offensive powers he can use here. If you want to share yours, then be my guest." Mona said, as she walked off to the other side, staying away from the others.

The vibrations in the ground were more frequent and getting stronger by the second, yet they still could see nothing.

"The beast will be here soon!" Logan shouted.

Hearing this, the blue demon tier weapon was drawn.

"We can trust this, this weapon is even stronger than my own abilities. But together, we make a great pair." Oscar said

"It better be," Quinn mumbled. The main reason why he didn't attempt to take the blade, was because he was sure that they would need it in Oscar's hands to win this fight.

Finally, everyone could see something coming towards them in the distance. A strange diamond-shaped object made from the same material as what they were standing on was moving towards them. When it got closer, they realised the sheer size of the diamond, as it was the size of a small hotel.

"It was a good thing I made this wide enough," Oscar said.

It carried moving, but they were confused. The beast itself couldn't just be a moving diamond.

"It's under the ground." Sam said.

"It's under the ground!" Logan shouted to the others.

When it finally reached the area where it was travelling within the two large walls, a rain of attacks fell on it from above, hitting the large diamond. Flashes of

lightning powers, explosions, arrows and more. However, it seemed like it had no effect at all. Still, they all continued to attack as it was the only thing they could do.

Placing both hands into the ground, Oscar thought he might be able to do something to get the beast to come out. He had raised the ground underneath the very beast, shooting it up. It had worked, as they could all now see what type of beast they were going up against.

The closest animal they could use to describe the beast, was it looked like that of a giant crab. It had two large claws with one bigger than the other, and the large tower diamond they could see was the back of the beast.

The attacks from above changed to try to hit the beast's shell. As the crab was not made of the same material only its back. Still, most of the attacks would land on the diamond back, and those that did get through to the front, would hit its hard outer shell.

"None of the attacks are getting through," Oscar said. "Which means it's now up to us!" And the group began to charge forward.

Oscar swung his blade, and fired out a tunnel of ice, to try freeze one of its claws. Although the attack had hit one of its large claws, it quickly lifted it, breaking the ice with its sheer strength. Some of the ice from the weapon had remained and it had spread slightly covering more area of its claw, but soon stopped. Then standing up, off its belly. Several longer limbs of the grab were seen coming out from underneath, they stretched out, nearly touching the walls. In total, there were sixteen powerful claws, thinner than the two large ones that covered its face and had a sharp pointed end.

One of these claws descended down on Owen, moving his fan at the right time, a powerful lightning bolt was shot out, knocking the thin claw away to the side, but it moved soon after, attempting to hit him again. Like a dance, Owen moved, flipping his body, avoiding the attack while hitting it away with bolts of lightning.

'My lightning doesn't pass through the shell? I thought I might be able to cook this thing.' Owen said.

The strange spirit that was being controlled by Mona was somehow repelling the attacks away from her, and it was as expected, her ability was having no effect on the demon tier beast whatsoever.

The others had to group up, to defend against the claws, as it would quickly use its pointed end to stab down and up like a drill. Straight away, some groups of people were hurt.

"The main problem is its hard shell," Quinn thought. "Then the only thing that might work..."

Timing it right, as a claw went down, Quinn stomped his foot and hit the claw with a hammer strike as hard as he could. Swinging the claw off to the side. The large bang had caught the attention of a few others there.

"It still didn't break the shell," Quinn said.

Although it didn't break the shell, it did cause a reaction out of the crab. It had jumped slightly back, and when it landed, the sheer weight had caused those on top of the wall to fall over. retracting all its claws back into its body, it looked like it was preparing to make its next move.

"This is what I was worried about," Oscar said. "The beast still hasn't used any skills, everyone get behind me!"

They did as they were told, but just in case Quinn was also ready to use the shadow. When looking at the demon tier blade, both the smaller circles were already glowing red, what Quinn also noticed was one of the claws from the crab had been damaged and was cut. Which could have only come from the demon tier blade.

Foam started to form in the crab's mouth, as it was ready to fire out its attack.

"You wanted to see the last skill of this weapon right, well I didn't think we would have to use it so soon," Oscar said, as the ring started to light up.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 776: The final skill

Everyone could see the foam bubbling up in the crab's mouth, and judging by how it had made room and leapt back like so, they thought there was a high chance that it was about to unleash a powerful skill.

Attempting to distract the beast, those above continued to hurl their abilities at it, but MC points weren't unlimited. The order was given for them to halt, as it was clear it would do no damage, nothing was getting through the large diamond on its back. It was best to wait for the right opportunity to then strike together.

All those that were on the ground floor, now had to trust in whatever Oscar had up his sleeve. However Quinn wasn't worried, there were multiple ways for him to get out of this, but what about the others?

Firing out from the crabs mouth was a powerful jet stream of water. It looked like the crystals around it's back were spiralling around the jet of water.

Oscar then proceeded to stab the sword into the ground, which had gone through it like a hot knife through butter. Then the final large ring began to light up. In front of the sword, ice started to form building up from the bottom layer forming a barrier.

"That's it!" Helen shouted, worried. "The final skill was an ice barrier?"

If a wall made from the planet's substance wasn't going to hold the attack back, she was wondering why Oscar thought an ice barrier would do the trick.

"This isn't just any ice barrier." Oscar said, picking up the sword from the ground. Now the barrier was formed, at the right moment he proceeded to stab the sword into the ice itself. The ice started to light up so bright, some had to cover their faces and squint their eyes to see what was going on.

The attack had hit the barrier, but unexpectedly it was holding its ground. What happened next was the most surprising. For the attack was now going right back at the beast.

"The last skill is a reflective ability. It can reflect any attack back at it's opponent, and that's not all, it also adds a little bit more power when it sends it back as well." Oscar explained.

Back when Oscar was fighting against the demon tier beast in the ice cavern, he realised that when he fired the bullet, this was the skill it was trying to use. The only thing was that the ice barrier hadn't risen in time, probably due to how weak it was.

"With an active ability like that. It could turn the tide in any fight." Owen thought.

Seeing its own attack sent back to it with added strength, the beast knew it was in trouble. There were two large walls on both sides, so it only had one option left. It started to burrow down in the ground. All of its claws that were positioned in its abdomen retracted inside itself and started to dig away at the ground.

"That's how it was travelling underground from before." Logan said, watching the whole thing from afar.

Burrowing itself, it was able to hide its body but not the large diamond on its back. The attack hit and it sounded like a hard rock was grinding it. A screeching noise was made until eventually it had stopped.

When they all looked at the demon tier beast, the diamond still remained undamaged.

Burrowing itself out of the ground, it swung its two large claws enraged. And once again it brought back the other claws from underneath and started its charge towards them. Watching the beast come their way, the group were trying to think of a plan.

Its outer exoskeleton was unable to be pierced and the diamond on its back seemed to be even stronger. Perhaps, if they were able to reflect the attack on the exoskeleton it would have worked. At the moment it was the only thing Oscar could think of, then he felt a touch on his back.

"I will just be borrowing your strength." Sil said, as he walked out in front of the others.

'That's the kid the others didn't want to join in the fight, what is he doing?' Oscar thought.

Mona had still remained well away, not allowing for Sil to touch her, but it didn't matter, there were plenty of strong people to borrow their MC points off and he had another great ability at his disposal.

Holding out his finger like a gun, blue lighting started to run up and down his arm.

"That's the Graylash ability." Oscar said.

It was running up and down faster than the human eye could see. Aiming carefully and lifting his hand, a bolt was shot out. It looked just like the one that Owen would fire, so people seeing this didn't expect much.

But when the bolt had hit one of the claws, it had snapped right through its shell and the claw had fallen off its body.

"How, how can an ordinary boy we have never heard of be stronger than the leader of the Graylash family!?" Helen said, then she soon realised that there was a chance her and her group would have gone up against such a monster.

Sil's attack was the first attack on the demon tier beast that was able to completely break off a limb. Sil, preparing the attack again, fired another one hitting another of the thinner claws.

While Sil was preparing for the next attack, the beast screamed again and stood up on its thinner claws, putting its body in a higher position than before, and then something strange started to drop from the beast's belly.

"Is it taking a shit?" Nate asked thinking it was strange.

Large drops of diamond were falling out from its abdomen. Hundreds of them the size of a large tiger. One of the first diamonds began moving and soon after all of the diamonds that dropped from the crab were moving.

"Everyone be careful." Logan shouted. "These things are beasts as well."

These smaller crabs weren't slow either, and when the group from above tried to hit them, they would burrow underground to only pop up and deal with those on the ground floor.

Nate, hitting one of them with his full strength, expected it to be sent back flying. Instead it had blocked the attack with its claws and then struck him back, piercing through his hardened skin, he was bleeding.

"These smaller crabs are freaking strong!" Nate shouted, hoping to warn the others.

Everyone was now busy dealing with the hundreds of smaller crabs that were soon overwhelming them all. There were just too many and being close range, those from above couldn't help without hurting their own team.

The only good thing was that while the crab was dropping miniature versions of itself, it looked like it was unable to move.

When Quinn went to punch onem with the added strength of his Gauntlets, he had fared better than Nate moving it back, but it was by far not out of the fight as it quickly went to attack him again, and soon another three were on him after the first one.

Using his fast body, he could move or block the attacks, but Qi, the gauntlet's active skill, none of it was hurting the little creatures that were just as tough as the big one. It looked like only the other leaders or the strongest members could actually deal with the crabs but they were soon tiring out.

Using his shadow to block in a situation like this was just pointless and his soul weapon required human blood. Quinn was unable to use it on a beast like this. Frustrated that nothing was working and at all the crabs coming his way, Quinn threw out a kick, but it wasn't just any kick.

Using the power of Qi he had thrown out a blood crescent kick and a sharp single red line of aura had come out. When it hit the crab in front of him, it had sliced through its shell and the beast was dead.

[Emperor Tier Diamond - crab beast has been killed]

The message coming up had worried Quinn even more. The system had just told him that these hundreds of smaller crabs dropping out of the demon tier, were all emperor tier beasts.

[New quest received]

[The Demon tier beast now sees your group as a threat, retrieve the demon tier crystal]

[ Quest reward ???]

"Does this mean the beast never saw any of it as a threat before?" Quinn thought.

The claws that had been shot off by Sil had regenerated back to normal, and finally the last diamond crab had dropped out of the demon beast and it looked like it would be on the move again.

Using his inspect skill, Quinn knew that the demon tier beast was never really injured by Sil for its'l status had remained green and healthy. Having received the sudden quest, Quinn now felt a lot more enthusiastic about killing the thing.

A shadow started to surround his face, and as it disappeared the bottom half of his face was covered in a mask, a japanese demon, with its large tusks were shown.

"Everyone, use your full strength, don't hold back!" Quinn ordered.

[Mask attribute set to strength]

Slamming his foot on the ground and infusing his fist with Qi, then preparing the blood spray ability, Quinn mixed all these things together. Snapping his arm back like a shotgun a loud bang was heard as he let his fist fly out.

The crabs that were in front of Quinn all were blown to pieces by the sheer power of the attack. Their backs shattered and those near had also been slightly damaged as the blood sprayed over them.

"That attack..."

Seeing the attack being performed there was one person that recognised it well. He started to touch his robotic arm.

'That mask, it's the exact same one from that night demon, it may be a different colour but...the attack he just used. It's the same one that ripped my bleeding arm off. It was YOU ALL ALONG!' Duke screamed internally as he had recognised that Quinn... and the night demon were the same being.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 777: An angry crab

The loud bang alone had caught the attention of a few on the battlefield, but turning their heads, what was even more shocking was the ten or so emperor tier crabs that had been defeated, lying there on the floor.

The crabs themselves weren't too hard to deal with in terms of their attack power. The armour the others were wearing was enough to protect them from the crab attacks. The main problem they were facing was how hard it was to penetrate their bodies, to actually use an attack that would damage them.

'That skill, he didn't use it in the duel?' Helen thought.

'As expected, always hiding secrets.' Owen thought.

However, he wasn't the only one that was grabbing attention. Although the crab's attacks weren't damaging to the others, those in the Cursed faction didn't have great beast gear to protect themselves, and they were getting hurt from the attacks. Once Quinn gave his command, and since they saw how he was no longer hiding, Fex and Paul went into action.

Fex, using a mixture of his string abilities while also hitting away others with his blood swipe, was impressive. He also no longer held back on the speed or raw strength that he possessed. Even Paul was demonstrating the same set of skills. Mixing his poison and not holding back, he was able to use everything he had trained in secret.

'Quinn, is this the right thing to do?' Logan thought while watching. "I guess there's no one left to really question you any more. We will just have to deal with the consequences that come after." He said to himself, smiling.

"If the demon tier joins the fight while we're dealing with all these little ones, it will become troublesome." Quinn said as the shadow beneath his feet started to expand. "I can take us all there."

The first one to go to Quinn's side was Sil. Following soon after was Owen and Oscar. Helen, with her two sisters, also had followed. However, Mona didn't want to get close and decided to stay back. Before Quinn was about to use his shadow travel, Duke had also jumped into the shadow.

Not saying anything, they all sunk into the shadow. Travelling in the dark space, they went underneath all the smaller crabs, while the others were left to fight dealing with them. Mona and the others would have to be enough to get rid of them, while they dealt with the larger threat.

Sure, they would have fewer people to fight the demon tier beast, but at this point, they were useless. None of them could even put a scratch on the demon tier. It was unfortunate the type of demon tier beast they were going up against.

When they rose from the shadow again, the first thing Helen and her two sisters did was turn around and run back towards the army of crabs.

"You guys deal with that, we will make sure your back is covered so you don't have to worry." Helen shouted. Using their plants and soul weapon, they were strong enough and experienced enough to make sure the others didn't have to worry about attacks from behind.

'Looks like she is quite reliable.' Quinn thought, but they now had to worry about the thing in front of them. Not wasting any time, Quinn decided to use one of his strongest skills. He threw out two large Qi infused blood swipes and combined them with his shadow making the shadow scythes. Then activating his gauntlet ability, a searing red outline started to show on both of the scythes.

If this skill wasn't enough to hurt the grab, then none of his skills would be. The crab was also too large for him to use his shadow lock, or cover it with a shadow dome, so he would have to rely on his natural skills.

One of the thinner claws came shooting down towards the group, and Quinn swung out his scythe, hitting it away easily, but that was all he could do. However, with his eyesight, he could see something the others couldn't, the outer shell of the crab had cracked a little.

The other leaders were dealing with the claws well. Avoiding getting hurt by them, Owen would often move from one location to another like a bolt of lightning. It was as if he could change his body into lightning itself. When he would appear again in a different location, he would fire his lightning out at the claws and body, looking for a weak spot.

Oscar was also able to use the hard ground of the planet to knock anything coming at them, and it looked like he was attacking the same spot on the crab over and over again, hoping for a certain result. Duke had to stick close to Oscar, for there was no earth, and he could only use the materials that Oscar had already used with his ability.

This was also the reason why at the moment, Sil using the earth ability was useless. The planet they were on was one of the worst for earth users, unless they had a soul weapon similar to Oscars.

'I hate to admit it, but even I'm not strong enough to kill this thing alone.' Quinn thought. 'At the moment, there's only three people here that can damage it. Oscar, with his sword, Sil with his lightning powers, and finally, the crab itself, but that requires Oscar to use his demon tier weapon skill.'

"Sil, don't worry about the claws; I'll protect you. You just keep on firing at the same spot on that crab!"

Sil nodded, and raised both his hands. Using the MC cells he had gathered from all the ability users, his lightning powers were supercharged compared to Owen. He fired at the top of the crabs head just underneath the Diamond. It seemed the more power he used, the harder it was to be accurate with the skill, so Sil decided to go for an area that was easy to hit.

Still, it wasn't strong enough to damage the crab, but as the same spot was hit over and over again, the crab was starting to feel something. Soon most of the claws were heading towards Sil. Keeping his word through, Quinn was ready to cover him.

He hit them away swinging his scythes, but the claws were coming down fast and eventually, one of his scythes had shattered. With one hand free, he started to throw out blood swipes until the other shattered and he started kicking and punching the claws away. When he had time, he would mix in a few blood hammers here and there so the claws would take longer to recover. With every strike, he made sure to use his Qi as well.

At one point, one of the claws had snapped off, but as seen before, the crab was able to regenerate them. Seeing this, he wished maybe he could have learnt what Lucy had done with her Qi, it probably would have helped in the fight.

'I will trust you, Quinn,' Sil said, as he continued to fire at the crab's head until eventually a small crack could be seen.

Now, the claws that were busy dealing with the others had stopped.

'Huh, where's it going?' Owen thought. When he turned, he could see they were all going for Sil.

Trying his best to protect their best chances, Quinn threw out as many blood swipes and crescent kicks as he could, but it wasn't enough, and the only thing he could do now was raise his shadow, protecting both of them. When the long claws had hit the shadow, they slowed down.

Nonetheless, the attack was too powerful, and his MC points had gone down to zero. The shadow disappeared, and the claws continued darting forward.

A sword was stabbed into the ground and an ice barrier was formed, the same one from before. When it rose, the claws bounced off the barrier, and in the process, it looked like each one of them had snapped.

"I'm no idiot, I know that kid is the best weapon we have against this demon tier," Oscar said. "We will protect him as well."

What they did notice was not only were the claws that had hit the barrier broken and unusable, but also all the others that Quinn had attacked as well.

'Those attacks from before, he is definitely the night demon.' Duke thought, as he clenched his fist.

Finally, a light could be seen to defeat the demon tier beast. Even though it could regenerate its claws, it would take some time, and with all of the small ones dealt with, now there were only the two large claws the crab had left.

When the ice barrier went down, they were all ready to attack again.

"AHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH"

From the very back of the group, a loud, piercing scream continued to ring out louder than anything anyone had ever heard before. Some even thought it was one of a beast. But this was no beast, the screams continued, and when they went to look, they could see it was coming from a purple short-haired girl.

"The banshee's scream." Quinn said. "Everyone, we have to leave now get out of here!"

Shouting, Quinn stumbled to the floor, he had used up more energy than he thought.

'Was I overusing the Qi?' In the past, if he would deplete his Qi, his body would feel the effect greatly. Even if he had health, his stamina would take the brunt of it. Quinn was so focused on protecting Sil, he was unaware of what was happening.

Quinn had no time to explain to the others what the scream meant, but he knew they were in trouble.

"Just go, everyone leave now, everyone!" Quinn said.

Logan also knew what the scream meant, and he instructed the others along with Sam. When the Cursed family started to move, all the others soon followed.

This was for more reasons than one, as the crab was already starting to act. It lifted its large two claws, and the strange diamond on its back started to glow. A few seconds later, and the large claws started to crystallise.

"Trust me," Quinn said, "One of my people has the ability to see the future, the scream was a warning."

He didn't need to say anymore, and with the strange actions the crab was doing, everyone was already running away. Those of the smaller crabs that were still alive

started to scale the side of the walls and then the large crab had dug its two claws into the ground.

"What is it trying to do?" Sam said.

Out of energy, everyone was running faster than Quinn and he was now at the back of the group.

'Come on, legs!' He was pushing through the pain, but his speed wasn't there.

Using its great strength, the crabs' claws had ripped apart the ground, and a large fissure had been created down the middle. The crack reached to the centre of the planet, and a dark crack was chasing after the group.

The group had a head start thanks to the warnings and were nearly at the area where the tunnels leading up to the wall were. At this rate, they should all have been able to escape safely. Quinn, seeing the entrance in front of him, was ready to fall over as soon as he was safe.

"No," A voice said, as the person in front of Quinn turned around and a large pillar of earth had hit Quinn in the stomach, sending him flying back.

If Quinn was his regular self, if he hadn't used too much energy, he would have been able to protect himself, or if he hadn't been so trusting perhaps, he could have foreseen this. As he fell into the dark crack in the ground, the last thing he saw was Duke's face with a smile.

"If I make it out of here alive. I'm going to kill you!" Quinn screamed at the top of his lungs as he fell into darkness.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 778: Bone Claw protector

The cold wind could be felt on his back and through his hair as he continued to fall. Looking around all he could see was darkness, apart from the small light from where he fell, which was getting smaller and smaller by the second.

'How deep is this thing?' Quinn thought. Soon his mind wandered to a certain individual. To the last person he had seen. 'Duke, you ruined my life at school, ruined my friend's life and so many others, and now you attempt to get rid of me? I swear if I come back, I will drain every bit of blood from your body.'

Blood, Quinn had been free falling for a while now and not only had he used so much Qi that his body now felt weak, he had also used a lot of blood skills. He attempted to grab at the wall as he fell, but his weak hands were unable to grip anything and the skin on his fingertips were just ripped to shreds instead.

He didn't know why, but not only did he feel weak, it seemed like he was losing consciousness as he fell as well.

'If I fall from this height, will I still die?'

Hoping to give himself some type of chance, Quinn activated the blood bank. He knew it was unable to restore his stamina which was completely depleted at the moment, but he hoped the refreshing taste would energise himself to at least do something.

[Blood bank has been activated]

[Your HP is recovering]

A welcoming warm feeling was felt through his body, but it was having no other effects and the last thing he saw before he completely passed out, was his HP bar had maxed out.

He continued to fall and while doing so his body would hit the sides of the wall, at such a speed that it was sure to create bruises and break a few bones, but still he wouldn't wake up.

'This is not your time...to die...' a deep voice said, as black smoke started to rise from Quinn's back. Soon a portal had opened and a large claw was seen holding onto Quinn.

The bone claw was able to create small portals that it could travel to, usually it would use this for attacking purposes. However in this case, with Quinn in its hand it was using it to avoid the walls of the planet's crust. It was however impossible for it to teleport them up to the surface; they were simply falling down too fast.

The bone claw managed to make it so neither itself or Quinn took any damage as they continued to fall but eventually, a light could be seen at the bottom. When the two of them fell through the sight the bone claw could see was unbelievable.

There were hills, forests, trees, lakes, rivers and even beasts could be seen flying through the sky. Everything was visible as the sky began to light up by the planet's blue crystal material. It was as if there was a planet within another planet.

Still, there was one thing the bone claw was unable to do, and that was to slow down their descent. Even when going through the portals they were still dropping down at the same speed, and that's when a large winged beast was spotted coming their way.

It had a large pointed beak that was as long as its body and it had set its eyes on the two falling objects, honing in on them fast when it got close enough. The beast sped up hoping to stab its prey with its beak.

Suddenly, the targets had disappeared in front of it, and it soon felt a sharp pain dig through the back of its head.

'Weak creature.' The bone claw said, and all three of them were now falling to the ground. They braced for impact but now were no longer falling as fast as they did before. Still, when the three of them hit the canopy of trees in a jungle area, it had easily broken all the trees and caused a commotion as they pounded into the floor.

The bone claw and Quinn looked to be safe, but Quinn still was unconscious. The bone claw remained outside protecting its master because the noise they had made was sure to attract others. It wasn't long before loud footsteps and the sound of trees tumbling to the ground were heard coming their way.

The bone claw prepared itself, stretching out both of its long dangling fingers, and flicked one of its hands, throwing the black blood of the winged beast onto the floor.

Some time had passed, and it looked like a horror scene around Quinn. The bone claw was quite hurt, covered in black blood. Whether it was its own or the beasts, it was hard to tell. Not too far from where the two of them were, countless beasts had attempted to take the bone claw on, and none of them had succeeded.

However, it needed to rest. Now that it had signed a contract with its master, it was starting to feel weak. It needed to be fed by its master's will or rest in its body and Quinn being unconscious could do neither.

The sound of leaves rustling was heard once more, and the bone claw gathered its energy to fight the intruder. This time, it wasn't a beast, but a human.

The human had no shirt on and wore simple khaki trousers, on his feet a pair of wooden woven sandals. His hair was bright red and long like a wild man, his body

covered in countless scars. The most important thing was the two small thick duel swords he held on his back.

"Whoa, was this all your doing?" The man said looking at the bone claw. "Beast fighting beasts is quite common here, but I can see you're quite hurt. So why didn't you leave?" The man said out loud.

Seeing that the beast had a humanoid shape, he thought that perhaps it had some form of intelligence and could understand him, but it was a long shot. When looking around, that's when the man spotted a human lying there on the floor.

He then looked up in the sky, and could see the crack which they had appeared from in the distance.

"Someone else fell too?!" The man said excitedly. His eyes glowed as he was happy to have contact with another human. Stepping forward, the bone claw moved toward Quinn's body and stood in front of it.

"Look I don't know if you're protecting him, or wanting to save him for later, but I haven't talked to a person in a long time." The red haired jungle man said, as he continued to move forward.

The bone claw did not waste time, it teleported in and appeared behind the man, but before the bone claw could do anything else, his body was already disappearing and the sound of the man putting his sword back in its sheath on his back was heard.

"I would have loved to have fought you at full strength, it's a shame." The man said. "Wait, what's happening?"

The man was now confused, he thought he had slain a beast, but instead the figure turned into black smoke and started to head towards the person on the floor.

"Ah, so you were protecting him. Well it looks like someone special fell down here then."

\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 779: Sil's rage

Back on the surface of the planet, many of those that had been gathered to take on the demon tier beast were standing on either side of the artificial giant walls that had been created by Oscar. They were looking down below at what had just happened.

A large crack could be seen, and staring down into the void there was nothing but darkness. It was incredibly wide, stopping just short of the two walls. As for the demon tier beast itself, after causing such a mess, it had already burrowed itself into the ground and they had no clue where it had gone.

Those that were on the ground floor had used the remaining tunnels that lead to the top of the walls. The idea was for the support users to use them, allowing them to travel in between. It was a good thing, otherwise a lot more of those on the ground would have been caught up and would have fallen in.

When they arrived at the very top, they were unaware of what was going on. When the demon tier beast had unleashed its small army of emporeir tier crabs, some of them had scaled up the side of the walls and were busy fighting with the users up top. Some died, but as soon as the leaders had arrived, they dealt with those quickly.

In the scuffle against the demon tier beast, around a quarter of them had lost their lives. It would have been a better result than expected if they had actually killed the demon tier beast.

When they all had arrived at the top and had a moment to take in everything that had happened, that was when Sam noticed.

"Where's Quinn?" Sam asked. "What happened to him, did anyone see what happened to him?"

Everyone looked around but had no clue where he was. Duke remained silent, that was until someone started pointing fingers.

"You," Sil said with his finger pointed at Duke. "You were behind me, and Quinn was behind you. He should have made it."

Scrunching up his face with his arms folded, it looked like a vein was about to pop out of his forehead. "Are you accusing a head general of something? I know nothing, he was running behind me and was at the very back. Of course it would make sense for him to fall in out of everyone. Why, did you think I did something?"

"You know those that lie tend to over explain things." Logan interrupted, as he continued to type away as if he was trying to find out something. "All he said was he should have made it, and that you were behind him."

The anger was rising in Duke, since when could just normal civilians, a bunch of nobodies talk to him like that?

"You're a right smart arse, aren't you!" Duke said, as he threw out a pole made from earth towards Logan's head, but before it could reach him, a hand grabbed the pole that looked almost transparent.

"He is part of my group, what do you think you're doing?" Mona said.

The one that had grabbed the pole was Mona's beast.

While everyone was focusing on the conflict that was unfolding between Duke and Mona, they had failed to notice the blue bolt of lightning that was charging up and down Sil's arms, and before they knew it, it was fired straight towards Duke.

Duke had brought some earth with him along on this trip, that was how he was able to form the object now and the one before, but even though earth was stronger against lightning, in this case it would be useless. However, before it could hit him, a blue sword had intercepted the attack.

Lightning struck the edge of the sword and Oscar's arm which was holding it could be seen covered in the diamond material from the planet. It was protecting him from the lightning. Still, it wasn't enough. Stabbing the sword into the ground, he had to redirect the power to the ground.

"Are you trying to start a war!?" Oscar said in anger, as one of his own men was attacked in front of his very eyes.

"Did you hear what Logan said," Sil replied. "He was lying! In short, he knows something, he..he..." Sil repeated with his head held down, and soon bolts of lightning were running up and down both arms.

'He had already attacked the crab with so much force, and he still has power to use his ability?' Owen thought. 'He is one of the stronger ones from that family.'

"He killed Quinn!" Sil shouted while pointing at Duke.

Oscar was ready, and all of his active sword skills were off cool down, whatever attack this boy had, however powerful, he would raise the ice barrier and reflect it back.

"Are you going to start a war now, another civil one, when we don't even know the truth?!" Oscar said.

"There's a chance that Quinn is still alive, and when we find him he can tell us the truth." Logan said, as he pulled up a hologram for them all to see.

Ever since they had lost the demon tier beast, Logan was attempting to find its position again, but it was proving difficult. The hologram was showing the planet, and it was showing where the large red dot was, which was supposedly where the demon tier beast was. However on the map itself, it was showing that it was inside the planet.

"Confused? Well I was too when I first took a look at this. At first I thought it was an error, but it claims that after the beast moved away, that it went into the planet. We all saw it's ability so I thought it made sense, it could burrow underneath the ground after all, but the map indicated that it was quite deep underground, which led me to investigate.

"After sending one of my drones into the fissure to investigate, it looked as if there is a whole other habitable land down there and it looks like our demon tier friend has decided to rest down there as well.

"When we find Quinn, he can tell us what really happened." Logan explained.

"How would we get down there?" Mona asked.

"Honestly, the quickest way would be the same way Quinn supposedly went down there, but a drop down that far would kill us, and the pressure from the gravitational pull from the core would be so great, that most would probably pass out, unable to do anything. The only thing we could do is return with some smaller ships, take a small group to investigate and take down the beasts." Logan suggested.

"If that is where the beast is and it's the best chance we have, then so be it." Owen said.

The group discussed it a bit more as Logan tried to show what he could do to make everyone feel a bit safer about going down there. After much discussion, a group was sent to get a couple of small ships that could fit through the crack, and then the leaders would go ahead and investigate.

During the whole conversation, the frown and anger on Duke's face never left for a second and at the same time, Sil didn't look away from him either. When all was decided all the group could do now was wait for the spaceships to arrive.

Standing up, Sil looked at Duke, unafraid of everyone that was there at that moment.

"If Quinn is dead, the first person I'm killing is you." Sil pointed once again.

Hearing the threat, Oscar was clearly not pleased, but then Sil turned to him as well continuing to point his finger out like a child.

"And if you try to help him, you can die as well."

His words were spoken like that of a child, but at the same time every one of them had seen the immense power he had, and both Mona and Owen were afraid that they still hadn't seen the full extent of it.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 780: Same mistake

Down in the inner planet, where the sky was made out of a crystal that lit up the place with a slight blue hue. The red-haired man had safely taken Quinn with him to a tiny little cave placed right next to a waterfall.

Quinn had been laid out on a bed of large leaves, still unconscious, and as for the red-haired man, he was wondering what to do. The place was quite bare, but the man did try his best to make the best out of his situation.

The problem was he was the opposite of a handyman.

There were rugs and tables made out of beast skin and bones. Still, there were no signs of modern technology anywhere in use, and he himself had no clue how to even create anything of the sort.

Relying on technology made by others for too long, he was lucky he knew how to cook.

"Well, I guess I'll just have to wait for him to wake up." The man said, looking at Quinn.

He proceeded to do his daily routine. Ever since he had been stuck down here with no way to return to the surface, he did the same thing every day. He placed his weapons on his back down on the ground and grabbed a small dagger placed on the table.

On a closer look, the dagger itself was just a beast's tooth, but drawing a line, he had now added the seventh one.

"Day seven huh, well, the way I look and act, some people might think I've been down here for years." He chuckled and spoke out loud to himself.

The loneliness took a toll on him, and speaking out loud would often make him feel less lonely. A large thick boulder made from the same crystal material on the outer of the planet was inside the cave in the corner at the very back. Grabbing on to it wide as if he was hugging it, the man proceeded to use all his strength to lift it.

Then after placing it on his back, he started to do some squats.

"Let's go for thirty-nine percent this time; maybe one day I'll be able to do this without any help at all."

He continued doing the squats as sweat dripped down his face dropping onto the floor. He had a clear target to hit in his head, and when he did, suddenly the rock appeared weightless as he lifted it easily and placed it on the ground.

'The boy is still not awake huh, I guess I can train some more.'

Next, the boulder was slightly thrown up in the air, and he quickly got down into a pushup position. The rock fell on his back, but he didn't flinch when it landed, not affecting the man at all.

'Thirty min percent again should be good.'

And soon, he began his marathon of pushups as well, and just like before, when he was done, the heavy rock seemed light as a feather as he took it off him. He wiped the sweat off his face and looked at Quinn once more.

"Come on!" He shouted. "Are you really not going to wake up!"

The desperation was getting to him. When he came down here, he didn't know that communication devices would be interrupted. He thought if there were beasts on the surface, surely, there was a way to go up, but he never found it.

He had even tried to catch one of the winged beasts, and steer it into one of the cracks above, but that proved more difficult than he thought, as they were stubborn, and no matter what he did, they would refuse to listen. So, in the end, he was trying to make the best out of a bad situation. Someone would come to him eventually, right?

What he didn't realise was how much a human being would yearn for contact and so quickly. There were multiple times where he had gone weeks without seeing anyone, but that was when he had T.v shows and the internet to communicate with people.

With nothing to do at all but hunt, he was going crazy. He was no monk. However, he was well disciplined and kept up his training every day, hoping to improve his body.

Frustrated that the only person he had found in the last week was just lying there, he decided to go over to Quinn and see just what was wrong with him. He had no physical wounds on his body which was amazing. There wasn't even a scratch on him. Considering he fell from such a great height, but then why wasn't he waking up?

'Maybe the problem lies somewhere else?' He thought.

As he reached out his hand to touch Quinn, the image of the strange creature that protected him popped into his head. So he decided to grab his duel blades from the wall and attached them along with thier strap to his bareback.

The weapons were quite thick for duel blades and were around eight inches thick. Each part would be segmented and had a small tooth that acted as a sharp blade; these segments continued until the very top, where it was a flat edge.

When touching Quinn, nothing happened, and he now felt safe and started to close his eyes.

'Now that is unexpected. No wonder he's out for the count. This boy Qi is completely depleted. He must have gone over his limit. If he carried on fighting and used himself like that, it could have been very dangerous. It would have started to eat into his real-life energy.'

'The thing is, the only way for someone Qi to deplete like this if they know how to use it?' The man then took a look at Quinn's face. He looked young, too young.

'What a surprise to find someone this age that knows how to use Qi. I don't recognise him, do I? Have I really gotten that old that now I can't even recognise the people I have met before...'

Even so, he knew the way Quinn currently was; if something wasn't done, then it would take a while until his natural Qi was restored.

'Well, let's share a little of my own.' Sending his won Qi into Quinn, he could feel it passing through his body quite easily.

The man wasn't using his life force, he was just using what his body would naturally produce; although he wanted to talk to a person, he didn't want to talk to them that desperately that he would give up his own life.

He continued to pass him Qi, and now there was sweat running down his face slightly.

'How much Qi does this person need, I'm not a fountain.'

What was surprising more so to him, was the fact that the Qi in his body hadn't reached its limit yet. Then, Quinn's eyes started to slowly flicker open.

He could see the cave around him and had a warm, pleasant feeling inside, he was becoming energised. Looking at the hand placed on his chest, he could tell it was Qi being passed on from the man.

Someone who was doing this, wouldn't want to harm him.

"Thank...you" Quinn gently spoke.

Those simple words nearly brought a tear to the man's eyes.

"Your welcome kid, the names Chris, I think me and you might be down here a while, so it will be good to get to know each other."

At the moment, Quinn wasn't bothered about why this man knew Qi, or who he was. If he wanted to, this man could have killed him while Quinn was passed out, but then, a particular memory entered his head. In the past, there was another who tried to give Quinn his Qi, and it had ended in a terrible result.

At that moment, Chris started to sense another power inside of Quinn other than the Qi. A strange red energy was swirling around, and it was heading straight for him. It had reached his arm and was beginning to enter his body. Straight away, Chris pulled his arm away and off Quinn. He could tell the foreign energy was trying to take over.

"No!" Quinn shouted as he realised what he might have done for a second time to his saviour.

'Is he, is he going to turn, just like with what happened to Leo?'

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 781: Turning back

Flashbacks of what had happened to Leo was going through Quinn's head right now. After that day, there were a few times where Leo had explained to Quinn about what happened, how inside his body there were two types of auras. The aura known as Qi, the aura that Quinn now knew as life force. This was something every human had, but then there was a second more sinister type of aura inside of him.

That aura was the red aura. As soon as it latched onto Leo, it started to also latch onto his whole body, chasing his very cells inside. It was like a virus that multiplied quickly, trying to take over the body. With his Qi, he was able to slow it down, but that was it. In the end, there was nothing else he could do, and eventually, he ended up becoming a turned.

Quinn didn't know who this was, but it was clear by everything around him that he was looking after him, and because of him, somebody was going to get hurt or was in the middle of getting turned.

However, Chris was calm, and he looked at his hand for a few seconds then closed his eyes. "This is certainly a nasty little thing, isn't it?"

Coming out from the surface of his skin, was none other than blood, but when seeing this, or more correctly smelling this, it didn't have the same sweet fragrance it would when it came out of humans. This was more like vampire blood.

Swinging his arm, he threw the blood out on the floor, and it looked like Chris was completely fine. There was no struggle on his face, no pain from being turned, absolutely nothing.

Quinn checked out his system and used the inspect skill on Chris, but there was nothing out of the ordinary at all.

'Did this person manage to stop the turning? Was it with his Qi powers, but not even Leo could do something like that? Does it mean this person knows more about Qi than Leo?' Quinn started to wonder, but now he was put in a tricky situation.

"Relax," Chris said. "I can tell from the look on your face you didn't mean for that to happen, I don't know if you realize, but the energy inside you it's infectious. I've never seen anything like it before. What exactly are you?" While asking the questions, Chris decided to grab one of his makeshift chairs and sit down. He also grabbed what looked like an odd-looking apple and proceeded to eat while throwing one over to Quinn.

It was clear he was utterly calm, and not worried about Quinn in the slightest, even after what had happened.

Placing the apple to his side, Quinn decided to answer back.

"It's related to my ability; I don't really understand it," Quinn replied, playing the fool as he gave a smile.

"I don't think that's right?" Chris replied, taking another bite from the apple. "If it were an ability, I wouldn't have been able to get rid of it with my Qi just now. You're an interesting one, you know how to use Qi, and then you lie straight to my face. I already know what your ability is."

"You do?" Quinn said, wondering just how he could have known, although Quinn did become a lot more popular ever since the televised duel. So, there would have been plenty of people that knew his powers now.

"When I found you, there was this strange looking bone guy. I thought he was a beast at first, but then I saw him go back into your body. That is your ability, and you cannot have two abilities, at least not that I know of." Chris finished eating the apple, including the whole core.

While Quinn didn't know what to make of the situation, even though Chris was asking all these questions, it seemed to be more out of interest than an integration.

"Look, you don't have to tell me. Maybe you don't even know, but the reason I was telling you, is because you saw what I did right? I got it out of my body. There is a good chance that I can do the same for you if you want. Your Qi is strong, but the red aura has already mixed in with it. So, when I was only able to restore part of your Qi, till it got involved, but if you got rid of it, you would probably be quite the talent in Qi." Chris explained.

Hearing this, Quinn could not hide the expression on his face. 'He could get rid of the red aura?' What did he exactly mean by that? If this were true, did it mean it would stop him from becoming a vampire? Did Quinn even want that? More importantly, there could also be a chance for him to turn his friends back to the way they were.

"Have you done it before?" Quinn asked.

Chris shrugged his shoulders.

"No, how could I, this is the first time I've even seen anything like this, but I'm pretty confident I could do something."

Quinn didn't like the sound of that. The red aura was now a part of Quinn. Getting rid of it, there was a good chance that it could kill him, and Quinn didn't want to be the test subject for that, nor any of his friends.

The conversation seemed to move on from there, as Chris was now bored of the first subject. Although he looked like a middle-aged man, he acted more like an impatient teenager moving on from subject to subject.

At the moment, Chris was the only one asking the questions. Quinn was not getting a chance to ask his own. Chris had learnt that Quinn had just "fell" through one of the cracks when fighting a certain beast. It was an accident; he didn't explain that he was on an expedition with the others.

Assuming that this man was down here and had no clue who Quinn was, he could assess that he had to have been down here for a while, at least before the big duel had happened. Only someone living under a rock would not have known who the newest World Leader was.

After hearing everything Quinn had to say, Chris started to think for a bit. Quinn wanted to ask, what happened to him, how did he know about Qi, and even more, but it just didn't feel like there was ever the right moment.

"I like you, Quinn, but you seem to be on the weak side," Chris said. "You said you fell just from an Emporer tier creature. Well, believe it or not, but I fell down here because I was fighting a demon tier creature." Chris said, pointing to himself, and he also had his chest puffed out as if he was proud.

'Demon tier? I'm sure Logan said there was only one demon tier beast on this planet.'

"That damned diamond looking crab, I was holding on for dear life." He mumbled in anger. As Quinn thought, he was fighting the same beast, and now he was starting to wonder just who this person was and how were they strong enough to live fighting against a demon tier. Were they on their own? The mystery surrounding Chris was just growing.

"I've decided you have talent, and as we are the only two humans here, it would be a shame if you were to die. As I said, I think you and I are going to spend a long time down here. Underneath here, there are more high tier beasts than you can dream of."

"It's a dangerous place, and I can't always be protecting you, so you need to get stronger. Now it's going to be easier for you since you already know the first stage of Qi. A genius like me knows all three stages. It might take some time, but as long as you know the second stage, you should be safe down here, so what do you say, my apprentice?" Chris asked.

Thinking about it, it wasn't really such a terrible thing, Quinn thought. He wasn't arrogant enough to think he was better than others to not learn something from them. Especially after seeing how strong a demon tier beast was, he knew he had a long way to go.

Even before this, Quinn was interested in the other forms of Qi after learning about them from Abdul and Lucy. Now he had the perfect chance to learn them. If Chris

was willing to teach him without Quinn having to convince him, then why should he complain. This was a perfect chance to have one more skill in his arsenal.

"It's a deal," Quinn said as he went for a handshake. Even though Chris knew what was possible from Quinn, he wasn't worried and shook Quinn's hand anyway.

At that moment, behind him, Quinn spotted a pair of blades behind Chris. Presumably, they were his weapons. Quinn wasn't stupid; he knew there were only a few people in the world that knew about Qi, one of them being Pure. The man he was speaking to was most likely a member of Pure, but just who was Chris?

Out of habit, he had used his inspect skill on the weapons, and the information about them was brought up.

[Inspect]

[...]

## Chapter 782: Second stage of Qi

Quinn's wondering eyes didn't go unnoticed as Chris spotted him looking at the two blades behind him.

"Oh, so it looks like you're interested in them, huh, well I can't blame you." Chris said as he walked over to the blades and picked them up. They were in their sheaths, but he pulled them out for Quinn to get a better look. "After all, I bet you've never seen or set your eyes on a pair of demon tier weapons before. This will be a nice treat for you"

Pulling them out in spectacular fashion, slowly as if there was some big reveal. He was expecting a grand reaction from Quinn, but it never happened.

Placing his hands over his mouth, Quinn couldn't help but let out a little chuckle. He had tried his best not to smile, but Chris was just acting so confident.

"What, do you think I'm lying!?" Chris said, partly annoyed.

"How do you know they are even demon tier weapons?" Quinn asked. "Did you kill the beast yourself?"

Looking at the sword a few times, Chris was now starting to doubt himself.

"No, but I was given these, and the person has no reason to lie to me and using them, I know their strength."

Of course, Quinn knew the actual tier of the weapons held in Chris's hands right now, and although they weren't Demon tier, they were certainly at the Demi-god tier. Something that even Quinn hadn't faced, whoever the person was that had given him those blades, they certainly had to be strong.

"Who gave them to you?" Quinn asked. "Maybe if I knew that, then I would be more inclined to believe you."

When Quinn asked this, the expression and mood on Chris' face changed, his eyes narrowed, and his face was emotionless.

"I'm afraid if you knew that, then I would have to kill you." Suddenly, his expression turned into a smile. "Haha, but that's not going to happen, so don't worry. We're going to become good friends after all."

It reminded Quinn that this person was most likely a member of Pure, what position, who knew. If the weapons were at the demon tier level, then there was a good chance he was talking to the Pure leader directly now. However, Oscar had claimed the leader of Pure used a demon tier weapon, which Chris didn't have, and

Quinn just couldn't believe someone like Chris, who was so immature and easy going, to be the leader of any organisation.

Pushing past the awkward moments, Chris decided to get right to work. He seemed excited about talking to someone and that he was going to have a strong disciple.

"It looks like you already know how to use Qi," Chris started to explain. "Which we call the....which I call the first stage."

From the way Chris was speaking, he would constantly say we, and change it to I. It was clear that Chris wasn't someone who found out how to use Qi naturally, and he had been taught by someone. No matter how badly he was trying to hide it.

"This is not bad because to learn the other stage, you would have to learn the first stage..well.. first." Chris said, scratching his head as if he was trying to remember everything. "Now, in this stage, the most important thing is to increase your Qi output strength. It looks like you've already hit the limit and know how to utilise all your Qi, although part of that is because of the other force messing about inside your body, but there are other ways we can improve ourselves."

Chris, then started to walk over to the large boulder in the corner of the room and then proceeded to lift it with ease, as if he was some type of superhuman.

"Right now, I am using hundred percent of my Qi in my arms and body to help me lift this boulder. Without Qi, I would have never been able to do such a thing, but what if I could? This is why training the body and not relying just on Qi is just as important. Each day I have been lifting the boulder, using less Qi day by day, and at the moment, I can lift the boulder mostly myself. Training your body like so, can make our bodies almost superhuman.

"Even a regular human, no matter how hard they trained, wouldn't have been able to lift something like this, but slowly using less Qi, our body tries to make up for what was missing before, and it changes us. So if you have already hit your Qi limit, then creating a super body to use Qi, will make you even stronger!" Chris said as he punched his own chest, a little too hard, and he started to rub his peck a little that had now turned slightly red. "Now this can also be used to train other areas such as speed and other things as well, but I chose to mainly focus on strength."

Although this might have been good advice, it wasn't really helpful for Quinn, who was beyond superhuman already. Without using Qi and just through his own natural strength, he would have been able to lift that boulder up just as easy as well.

But it did make him wonder if this was something similar to what the Blade's did. Even without abilities, Vordne's sister and brother were strong. According to Sil, their training was mostly to do with putting their life on the line and activating that hidden strength the body had. If Qi was life energy, would it activate this life

energy when the human body felt like it was going to die? Had the Blade family figured out how to create a super Qi body without knowing a thing about Qi?

However, what the Balde family did, wasn't something just anybody could have done, and most people who went through training like that would have died.

"Now that I've told you how to improve the first stage, let's explain a little about what the first stage is. The first step is simple, know how to use Qi in your body. Check. Know how to move Qi around to different parts of your body, Check, and finally, know how to infuse Qi into items or things you are touching. Ding ding. You already completed the first stage of Qi. Congratulations!" Chris said, as he saw Quinn nod to all of those things.

"Now let's look at the second stage, the reason why the third part of the first stage is so important, is because it's a similar feeling, rather than moving the Qi to different objects and people. We are going to learn how to externally release Qi to coat the outside of our bodies. Think of it as an invisible shell of armour. It's harder to get the hang of but can be really helpful, especially in improving your weapons. When you can coat your weapon and infuse it with power, your weapons and attacks will be more powerful than others. It can even disrupt other peoples life force when hit by it."

'The second stage of Qi, was this what Lucy was using on her weapon. Is that what happened, when she cut Peter? Her own Qi was the force I could see, the casting around the sword having attached itself to Peter, making it impossible for him to heal."

After the explanation was done, it was time for the demonstrations, and surprisingly Chris was quite the gifted teacher. He would press his hand against Quinn's backs and sense what he was doing with the Qi. Whenever Quinn would do something wrong or stray, Chris was able to correct him.

A few times, the other energy inside Quinn tried to attack Chris, but if it ever did infect him, then he would do what he had done before, getting rid of the Qi. Quinn had asked if he could do the same with the second stage, but apparently, what he was doing was more inclined with Qi's third stage.

Still, Chris said he shouldn't even think about learning the third stage until he had mastered the second stage. Although many could learn the second stage, the third was a little different. He didn't go further with explanations other than that.

After a couple of days of hard work together, Quinn had finally shown some progress, and the two of them were getting on quite well. When talking, both of them would avoid questions about each other's past, and they seemed to respect that.

Why should one tell them about the other, if the other was keeping secrets, and soon they learnt to respect each other.

Finally, after Quinn had successfully coated his gauntlets in Qi, he was ready on the third day.

"I knew you were good." Chris said. "To learn this in three days, I mean I guess we had nothing else to do, and I am a great teacher."

It was true; without Chris, Quinn would have never been creative enough to figure out any of this independently.

"What now, the third stage?" Quinn asked.

Chris shook his head, like Quinn was a fool for asking such a question.

"Knowing how to use the second stage while standing still, and knowing how to use it in a fight are two different things." Chris picked up his weapons and went to walk out of the cave, while Quinn followed.

They went to a certain area that had many broken tree's and craters in the ground. It looked like a bomb had gone off in the area and completely cleared all the jungle and greenery.

"ARGHHHH!!" Chris shouted at the top of his lungs. The shout itself was amplified with Qi, and bird-like beasts flew in the air from a distance.

Soon, the sound of large footsteps was heading their way. Chris went off to the side and sat down crossed-legged on the floors, and started to eat an apple again.

"Show me what you learnt, my great disciple." Chris said.

When the loud footsteps grew closer, a large beast had jumped into the area they were in, shaking the ground as it landed. Using his Inspect skill, Quinn could see it.

[Inspect]

[Legendary tier beast]

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 783: Under attack

On the diamond-like surface where the ships of all the big factions were stationed, the rest of the groups and their people were waiting patiently inside their ships. They were unaware of how well the hunt for the demon tier beast was going, and all they could do was wish them good luck.

While the others were away, Linda was in charge of the Cursed ship, she was told to wait for Kazz to arrive back with the others, and report to Quinn as soon as possible, but there still hadn't been any signs of their return.

On her stroll around the ship, she made sure the other areas were doing well as well. Wevil had been brought over from the old Parasites faction. He was quite skillful and his speed ability was nice to have if Linda wanted to get anything.

The forgeing area led by Alex was hammering away, it was as if they never stopped making weapons. Alex was so excited because he knew thanks to the Pure planets and Daisy materials, they would now be getting new materials to work with. Finally being part of the big four, they were free to trade without any worries and Alex's dream of becoming a well known forger across the universe would come true.

Seeing his enthusiasm always put a bright smile on Linda's face, finally the last area she went to check up on, was the makeshift school. There were a few kids from the families that lived on the ship on board, but most of the faction members' families lived off the ship on their planets.

Since there were teleporters linked to each of the planets on board the ship, it felt like an ordinary job for them, in the morning they could wake up and just hop through the teleporter heading off to the faction. So most families decided to live on the planet.

Still, there were plenty of kids on board because of those Quinn had brought back with him. Peter was no longer here, and usually he would have been the one looking after them, but instead there was little Borden.

As she took a peek through the window, she could see that little Borden was holding one of the kids above him with his two small hands.

"Wow that's amazing Borden, me next, me next!" Another kid shouted.

"Are there any ordinary people in this faction?" Linda thought.

Knowing that all the areas were safe and doing well, all she could do was just walk around and check if the faction members were okay. As usual when she was left with nothing to do, her mind would start to wonder about her brother.

'I wish he was here to see all of this.' She thought. The worst part of it all was that she didn't know who to blame for his death. She had gone through so many emotions, and had gone from one person to the other, blaming Fex, blaming the Parasites, and even blaming Quinn. In the end, there was one person she wanted to blame more than anyone, but that person was already dead.

Feeling somber, the words of Quinn rang through her head. Seeing how she was, at one point Quinn tried to pick her back up.

"The feelings you are going through at the moment aren't just felt by you. So many people around the world are experiencing the same thing. Rather than thinking about what you could have done, or who to blame, we should start being more proactive and prevent anything like this from happening to others again."

Quinn was a young adult while Linda was in her mid twenties. She often thought he was naive and his decision making skills were stupid and suitable for his age, but at times, there were moments where he seemed the most mature person in the room as if he had lived a long life.

At that moment, a whizz of air passed her, and Wevil was suddenly in front of her. His face looked panicked and it wasn't from the running.

"Linda, we have intruders." Wevil informed her.

This was something that she didn't expect to hear.

Outside of the Cursed ship, all the other ships were on standby. From time to time there would be those that went outside just for some fresh air and to check if any beasts were around that would come close. However, no such thing occurred.

Unaware to the others though, two certain groups were planning a move. Those from Pure that had supposedly run away were now returning, but they weren't returning to their own ship, they were heading for the Cursed faction's ship.

On top of this, the three people who had formed the temporary alliance were under Pure before and were also leading the charge. The Pure members were on standby, hiding behind one of the large uprooted slabs of crystal. In total there were around a hundred of them.

They were waiting for the Cursed faction to open their doors and that was the job for the three from the alliance. Two people were put outside on watch, as the three approached.

"Did you notice?" Someone from the Graylash family said. "The three of them have all their beast equipment on. My guess is that they aren't exactly there to just talk."

"Then should we go and help them, their strongest members are away."

"Do you think we should? The Cursed faction are now meant to be one of the strongest factions out there, if they can't deal with something like this, then they don't deserve to be a part of the leaders."

"We are here to speak about the terms of us joining the Cursed faction!" One spoke loudly, trying to seem non threatening.

The two from the Cursed faction looked at each other and knew it wasn't their decision to make. From the look on their faces, Fareen, one of the others from the alliance, knew they were going to radio in.

She quickly pulled out her weapon and got behind the faction member, placing a dagger against his throat. While Kubo did the same with his spear pointed towards the other one.

"Open the doors nice and easy, and we promise we won't kill you." Kubo said.

Fearing for their lives, they did as they were told and the runway and door started to open for the Cursed ship. They were in.

At the same time, a loud explosion was heard off in the distance, going off one after another. It wasn't too far from where they were, but it was enough to cause the effect they wanted. The other groups went to investigate, although the explosion themselves would do nothing to the hard terrain around them.

It did attract some unwanted attention, attention from beasts. With beasts heading their way, all the other groups started to prepare for a battle in front of them. Using this confusion and panic, the Pure members came out from hiding to also board upon the Cursed ship.

They were dressed in regular traveler clothing and even if anyone did see them now, no one would really know who they were. These factions weren't close with each other, and they didn't even know what the others looked like.

They would simply think that the Cursed faction were doing their own thing and even if they did spot them, these groups were only under a temporary alliance, they wouldn't care about another group getting attacked, they would just focus on the beasts and themselves.

However, they were those that did notice, like the ones from the Graylash family. They had an idea who was behind the sudden commotion, but decided to keep their mouths shut.

"Finally we're inside." Kubo said. "Well with everyone away, this should be as easy as taking candy from a baby."

The alliance members were strong, even if they hadn't done well in the duel. They knew there were few people in the world that could go up against them, it was just they were meeting those more frequently lately.

It was now up to those on the Cursed ship, to successfully defend the attack.

\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 784: The Strength of a draugr

Before the planned attack, the three members of the Alliance had gathered inside the Pure ship. There was Tulk, Fareen and Kubo. These three were those that had once gathered multiple factions and were close to becoming a great power, until they had stepped on the toes of Pure and soon after became a part of their group.

Inside the ship itself, there were no longer any Pure members, only those that were loyal to the faction leaders. Since the Pure members had supposedly already escaped from the planet, or at least that's what Tulk had told the other leaders.

Instead, an elaborate plan was made to get rid of the Cursed faction. Lucy was well respected in Pure. Not just because she was one of the higher leaders but because she was also one of the founders of Pure. There were certain people within Pure, like rank 1 who were in the position of power just because of their strength.

Her death would come as a great shock to the leader Mr. 0. Having witnessed Pure's power first hand, Tulk, Fareen and Kubo felt that they knew who the strongest humans in the world were. It was those in Pure. There wasn't a doubt in their mind, even after seeing Lucy die like that to the Cursed faction.

They felt that one day Pure would rule, and if that was the case, then they needed to be put into a position of power and be trusted, and what better way than to get rid of the people, or at least cause severe damage to those who had taken away one of their beloved leaders.

A faction was nothing without those following them, so getting rid of them, would most likely put Quinn and the others in a position where they would have to join up with someone else, at least this was their train of thought.

Upon entering the cursed ship, there were the three leaders and the hundred or so members of Pure behind them. What had come as a surprise to them when first boarding, was how empty the ship was, considering its size.

This was because most of the members had no need to stay on the ship and were resting at home on their planets until they needed to be called upon. So only a token group of people were left behind.

"This only makes our job even easier, let's take over this whole ship!" Kubo shouted, and the three of them split off into three different groups, with three equal size forces.

Tulk, had started his rampage in the main hall of the ship that led off to the different areas. They were engaged in combat with those from the Cursed faction, and Wevil immediately went to inform Linda of the enemy's presence.

Simultaneously, Fareen had gone to the left side of the ship, and Kubo to the right side of the ship, with their own little groups.

The first thing going through Tulk's mind was that the fighting was proving a bit more difficult than he first thought. He thought those in the Cursed faction would be weak. They were a new faction so they couldn't have good equipment, and most of them were from no name factions.

However, they had learnt a lot being with the cursed, and surviving an attack from the Sunshields, one of the strongest families to ever exist. Soon, Linda had arrived, and her blood started to boil as she saw who was behind the attack.

"Wevil, make sure no one dies, help whoever is in the most trouble." Linda said, as she continued to walk forward.

Wevil went where he could, using his super speed and dagger to stop fatal blows, and those that were already seriously injured, he tried to carry and move off to the side for now. As for Linda, she carried on walking forward, not slowing down or speeding up.

One of the members came forward with his blade, and she threw out her fist not even caring if it cut her skin. The blade had barely scraped past the skin on her knuckles before her fist was planted in the Pure's members face. He was sent flying across the room with one hit.

Another fight going on nearby, she proceeded to kick the man, and his legs were shattered as his body spun in the air a couple of times before landing on the ground. Soon, the members, realizing what a threat she was, started to focus their attacks on her, but she dealt with them all with a single hit and carried on moving forward like a robot which had been given a command.

"We have just found peace as humans, and it's people like you....that have to ruin it!" She shouted.

Finally, it looked like someone had successfully stabbed a sword into her back, but turning around she punched the blade in the center, snapping most of it off, before throwing it back at the person who had attacked her, then pulling out the blade from her body, as if it caused her no pain.

The wound was healing and at the same time a hunger was building up inside her, but her temper had already grown too much for her to care.

"Hah, you're a strong one, so your ability must be strength I assume, but let me tell you, there is a reason why my name is Tulk, I was based off of a character who has an inhuman strength and is a little green!" He shouted as he charged forward with his fists.

Tulk's equipment was great, and he seemed to be slightly faster than Linda. He gave a solid strong blow to her stomach. It was powerful, but she didn't flinch and proceeded to give her own punch back hitting him in the stomach as well.

'I'm wearing legendary tier armour, and I can still feel her power.' He thought. 'But if I'm hurting, she has to be hurting as well!' Tulk thought as he continued to deliver blow after blow.

The two of them didn't care if they got hurt and continued to punch at each other, but as time went on slowly one was coming out as the victor. Tulk was soon getting tired.

'She should have a few broken bones, but her power has remained the same this whole time.'

While Tulk's damage was building up, Linda was healing after every single attack. Her power was weaker, due to Tulk's strength ability and armour, and her speed was slower, but her lack of pain felt when taking hits and her regenerative powers, eventually would make her the winner.

A last punch was thrown from Linda; towards the battered and bruised face of Tulk. His eyes were cut, and blood was dripping down onto his armour. He tried to twist his body to move out of the way, but a sharp pain was felt, and a broken rib stopped him.

With a clean hit to the face, the punch had knocked him out cleanly.

'I did it.' Linda thought.

She fell to her knees feeling weak, not because of pain, but because something was going on in her body. She turned her head to look behind her and could see not only had Wevil managed to help the others, but reinforcements had arrived through the portals, mostly from the planets of the Parasites, and it looked like they were nearly done as well.

'I need to see if the others are okay.' Linda thought as she would try to get herself up, but an unbelievable hunger pang was felt in her stomach. One she had never felt before.

Wevil seeing this rushed over to her.

"Is everything okay Linda, did something happen?" He asked, but he could only see she was holding onto her stomach.

'Was this because I took too many injuries? Does that mean, I have to...eat..?' She thought.

Quinn had tried feeding her in the past, and she did eat a little, but the idea made her sick. Just like Peter as a Draugr, she needed to eat human flesh, but unlike Peter, when he was a ghoul it wasn't compulsory unless she had taken on too many injuries.

The problem was in the state she was in, she wouldn't be able to reach the kitchen.

"Wevil, get everyone out of here!" She managed to squeal out.

"But how is that going to help you?"

"Just do it!" She snapped back at him, and a strange look could be seen in her eyes. After clearing the area, Wevil decided to stay behind, unknown to Linda. He could see her on the floor looking around, and then she started to crawl, crawl towards Tulk who she had just beaten.

'What is she planning to do?' Wevil thought

The next few moments, it was nearly impossible for Wevil to stomach. What he could see she was doing to Tulk's body.

It was the only thing that would satisfy the pain, but soon the pain inside her body was replaced with a burning sensation.

Unbeknown to her...she was evolving.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 785: A pure Blood weapon

On the right side of the ship, is where the Cursed faction's hardest working members were. If one were to walk past, they would hear a constant clang that never stopped no matter what time of day it was.

This was the forging section on the ship, a place rarely visited due to how hot it was. Here the forgers were led by Alex, each person being handpicked by him. The forging team consisted of ten people, and a few assistants, but the assistants would only come by occasionally.

No one really knew what criteria Alex was looking for when choosing a forger, but anyone he chose, always stuck with it. Forging was a tough job, one would have to complete tasks repeatedly, and the slightest change, or wrong strike, could ruin the outcome of hours and hours of demanding work.

So, it was a job few ever thought of doing, which was why Alex being able to select the right people was impressive. In return, for them finding their passion, they thanked Alex and worked just as hard as him. The team grew and bonded together, and they all cared for each other.

One of the forgers closest to Alex was called Nog, and he had noticed that recently, Alex had been able to work for longer periods of time without stopping as he was doing now.

'Is he even human?' Nog pondered with a smile. He admired his work, but he did notice something strange.

Lately, Alex had been touching his back increasingly as if something were sore, and he would often leave the forgers room claiming he wanted to rest. Even when Alex was tired before he never left the forgers room.

Still, it was something that he had just noticed so it wasn't too much of a big deal.

\*BANG \*BANG

The entrance of the door was a wide sliding one, and at the moment they could hear it being whacked upon multiple times.

"Turn off the furnaces!" Alex ordered, and everyone did as he said. The furnaces generated a lot of noise, so it was hard to hear clearly just what was going on.

"This isn't a funny joke you guys!" Alex shouted, but the banging continued.

Some of the other forgers started to panic as it was clear something was going on. On the table in front of them were pieces of completed equipment. Usually, they would not wear any beast gear due to it being harder to work in, although they

would have some things on their arms to give them a few extra stats in strength here and there.

They quickly grabbed what they could and started to put on the equipment, and soon the door was pulled away and flung over to the side. A woman with short black hair walked in, and behind were the members of Pure.

"I knew this would be a gold mine." Fareen said. "Take what you wish from here."

Members of pure needed weapons more than anything, and what better place than the forgery. When those in Pure ran forward, the one in front was quickly greeted to a hammer in the face. It landed heavily knocking the first person out.

'You think we're going to let you take our things!' Nog shouted. "Do you know how hard we worked making these? You'll just beat us up anyway so we might as well put up a fight."

Soon, everyone including Alex were chucking the things on their table towards the Pure members, they weren't fighters, so they didn't really know how to use the weapons they had created.

"I was giving you guys an easy out." Fareen said, as she lifted her hand, and soon all the weapons in the air and those on the table, started to come together and towards her. A large ball of weapons had been made, and slowly she placed it down on the floor in front of her.

"Now go get them, fools trying to resist." Farheen said.

Everyone running towards them, Alex was thinking about what he could do, and that's when he noticed out of all the peons that floated towards her, there was still a single short sword left on his table.

'Huh, isn't that the new weapon I created?' Alex thought.

This weapon was different to the others, for this one was created using his very own blood. Quinn had asked him to start putting his blood into weapons, but due to how weapons were made, the items would mostly be composed of glathrium and only a small percentage of blood could be used.

It made Alex wonder if a weapon with a higher blood content could be used. He knew Quinn wanted such a thing, so he set himself the task of doing so. Using more crystals, and beast body parts as a basis would make it less durable, but he had eventually found a way to create a red soaked blood fairy sword.

A beast's eye in the center just above the hilt, by the sword guard several sharp beast teeth, and then instead of a silver or grey shine like normal swords, this one was blood red.

Needing to do something, Alex rushed forward and started to engage in combat with the first person he could see, he swung his sword sloppily threw the air, while running and the man laughed.

The swings were clearly one of an amateur. The man from Pure was easily able to block it, but when he did, he felt the weight of the sword and the strength behind such a swing.

"What the hell!?" The man said, as the weight soon crashed down, and Alex went for another attack stabbing him in the stomach.

Alex was a forger, and if forger had one good thing about their bodies it was their strength, on top of this, ever since becoming the blood fairy, his strength had improved beyond what a normal human was capable of.

Fareen seeing this, tried to lift her hand and tried using her magnetic ability to pull the weapon towards her again, but there was no such luck.

"Now I want that sword." She spoke.

Out of the pile of weapons, she would then repel each one towards Alex at a fast speed. Using his reflexes, he moved and avoided the attack. Looking behind him, the small dagger she had fired at him was stuck in the wall, an attack like that would kill him.

She started to do this with the weapons multiple times, but Alex was faster than even he envisioned, he dodged, hit, and managed to miss all the attacks narrowly. The moves still looked odd and sloppy, as he would curl up ducking, twisting his back in odd shapes.

To everyone it was clear he wasn't a fighter and it looked like pure luck that he was avoiding the attacks.

"Now I'm getting annoyed." Fareen said.

The weapons that were stuck in the wall, now were also moving from behind, and that's when Alex noticed that one of the weapons being pulled was going for Nog.

"No," Alex thought.

Nog was quite a distance away, and even with his fast movements, he wanted to make sure he would make it in time.

"I have to move, my body, it needs to move faster!!!" Thinking this, screaming at his body to try and block the weapon, a twitch was felt on his back like no other.

Nog, looked around him, he looked for anything to pick up and block the weapon. He could avoid one, but he could not avoid them all. Then, the sight of something red appeared in his vision. To off them spread wide.

"I'm sorry Quinn, I couldn't keep it a secret."

With his blood fairy wings out, everyone in the room could see them clearly. They were so powerful they had ripped through the uniform he was wearing, and he had moved faster than he had ever done in practice before.

"So this is why you kept touching your back." Nog commented.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 786: Blood Fairy power

Standing in front of Nog, he couldn't keep his eyes off Alex. His eyes would sweep from one wing to the other. The red color was just so captivating, in a way they looked light and see through. If a person were to touch them, he imagined his hands would just fall through, but at the same time they looked strong and alive, pulsing like a heartbeat.

There were several lines that stemmed from Alex's body going to the very tip of the wings.

"Arghh this crap hurts!" Alex shouted as he knelt over. He quickly grabbed onto a dagger that had pierced the top of his thigh and pulled it out throwing it onto the floor.

He had managed to avoid and block some of the weapons with his sword, but not all of them. A dagger had managed to hit him in the thigh and it had pierced quite deep.

"Do me a favor, try to use the workbench as cover, I'm going to try my best to get rid of these guys." Said Alex.

The workbench was large and solid, due to it having to be used to make weapons all day. It was the perfect tool for blocking attacks. Moving around it would help them avoid attacks from all directions. Now, all the forgers were bent low and taking cover.

When he spoke, his words didn't sound too confident, but what else could they do? Gripping his sword tightly, he flew over to the person who was the cause of the problem, Fareen. She tried her best to throw out weapons towards him coming from all sorts of different angles, but like a fly, he was able to quickly change direction avoiding all of them.

'All that training I did, it seems to have been for something.' Although Alex never trained in combat, when he had become a Blood fairy there was one thing he did every day, and that was practice flying. How could he avoid the temptation, humans wishing to fly where many people's dreams and he could, so whenever he got the chance, he would practice.

Lifting his sword above his head, he struck down, but creating a wall of weapons it was blocked easily.

"You don't even know how to use that thing," Fareen said, as she moved the wall of weapons to act like a claw, grabbing onto the sword, then picking it up, she struck with her own short sword stabbing Alex in the stomach.

From the pain, Alex let go of the sword, and flew back in a hurry, he had never been hit like that before, and he soon realised he was filled with something, fear.

"You are no fighter I can tell, it's a waste of time trying to fight back," she spoke, continuing to walk forward and pulling the weapons stuck all over the room to her once more.

Holding onto his stomach, blood was starting to fill his hands, the pain was one he hadn't felt before, it was no longer hurting, but just looking at the wound was causing him to worry.

'The others, they always get hit like this, but they carry on fighting. Who would go through this type of stuff? I don't want to do this. I can't!' Alex thought.

He noticed his hand was shaking, but then looking around the room, at the other forgers inside, he could see one of them had his hands held over his head, his teeth chattering, and him mumbling words.

"Please...just leave...please...just leave..."

The man was clearly frightened for his life, and the reason he was here was because Alex chose him to be here.

"Maybe if I was Quinn I could have done something." Alex said smiling, which soon turned into laughter.

Fareen thought Alex had gone mad.

"You guys are so sick, attacking while our leader and the others are away. All we wanted to do was protect what's ours and you're trying to take it away. You're worse than beasts!" Alex shouted as he flew towards her.

Thinking that he was going for an attack, she placed the weapons in front of her creating a shield again, but he had gone right past her and grabbed the sword on the ground. However, one of the Pure members expecting him to do this, swung their axe down hitting Alex's hand right in the center just short before he could reach the weapon.

"Arghh!" Another scream at the top of his lungs.

Fareen then turned around and quickened her pace walking towards Alex, she smiled as if she was enjoying this. Seeing that smile alone, something was building up inside, anger, it was causing him to feel the energy clearer in his body.

Grabbing the axe, Alex pulled it out from his hand and yanked it out of the Pure member, before grabbing his head with the other hand, and chucking him off to the

side. A display of strength just not possible for a human, especially one not wearing beast gear. Picking up the sword again he charged forward.

He wasn't going to make the same mistake twice, now when attacking, he would quickly fly in and out hitting around her. Fareen using the weapons as cover thought she was safe, but what she failed to notice was how worn out the weapons were getting with each attack, and how Alex's weapon was glowing.

Then, with another strike, Alex had broken through her shield of weapons she had been using, then out of nowhere, he reached out with his other hand as if to grab her, but her movements were fast, and she had jumped back.

"If only I could reach her!" He thought.

At that moment, the energy that was building up inside him went to his left hand. A red form of aura like a laser shot came out, hitting her in the head. All the metal weapons fell from the ground and so did she.

Huffing and panting, Alex looked at her body, maybe he should have been upset as it was the first time he had killed a person, but instead he just felt relief.

"I did it! I did it!" He shouted as he too fell to the floor.

"Damn it, take all their weapons!" A Pure member shouted, they were on the move, but it looked like Alex could do nothing, he was spent on energy.

"Leave the rest to us." Nog said, as he had his forging hammer in his hand. The other nine were ready behind him to fight. Seeing Alex fight so hard for them, they couldn't just sit down. Now the biggest threat was out of the way they had a chance.

They would soon realize they didn't have to, as reinforcements had arrived from the portals, to take care of the others.

'Thank you Quinn, thank you for giving me the power to protect these guys.'

Over on the left side of the ship, Kubo was also exploring the ship to see if there was anything interesting. He had attempted to contact the other two to see how things were going but there was no reply.

'They're probably too caught up and excited in fighting. How come they get all the fun. Why haven't I found anyone yet!' Kubo said, running his fingers up and down his spear.

Out of the three he was quite the bloodthirsty type, and he didn't care whose life he would have to take to achieve his goal. Eventually, him and his group's search had led him to one of the training rooms.

When they entered, they were surprised to see a room full of kids, and a really short little man the size of a small dog in front of them.

The Pure members thought after seeing these, they would just turn around, but instead, Kubo licked his lips and started walking forward.

"What are you-" A Pure member tried to call out, but his friend quickly covered his mouth.

"Are you crazy, if you say something to him, he could snap and kill us all, it's better you just leave him be."

Pushing his friend's hand away, he just couldn't agree.

"Are you really going to just watch him do that to children? I agreed to help Pure, to create a world where our children can grow up safe, not to harm them."

The Pure member took a step forward, but at the same time Kubo turned around, and with a single stare, the man froze and fell to the floor.

"Now kids, who wants to play a little game?" Kubo said, as he spun his spear round and round.

Moving in front of the kids was Borden, he looked up to Kubo from below, with his head tilted back.

"Are you trying to hurt my students?" Borden asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 787: Little man's strength

Kubo could hear a voice but he didn't know where it was coming from, until eventually he heard the sound of someone's foot tapping. Hearing that, he looked down and could see a small blonde haired boy.

"You look like a young adult but have the body of a...of a..." Kubo couldn't make up his mind, the boy was like a toddler but had the proportions of a normal sized human.

"Why is a kid calling the other kid's his students?" Kubo chuckled, as he started to spin his spear around at great speeds. He twirled the spear above his head, threw it up in the air and caught it, placing it by his side all while making the strange noises martial artists would do in those old cliche movies.

A round of applause was made from the kids when they saw this.

"Whoa, I think he might be as good as Jerry with weapons." One of them said.

"Nah, this guys a little better, Jerry's good but not that good."

"What are you talking about, give me a spear and I'll do the same thing, right now!" Another kid shouted in anger.

'What's with these kids, I'm here to attack them and they're all so calm, do they not know the extent of the situation they are in?' Kubo thought.

It was making him feel sick, this was not the pleasure he wanted, he wanted them all to be scared, crying with fear and begging for their lives.

"Damn you!" Kubo screamed as he thrust his sword fast towards one of the students that was closest. The attack was too fast for the student to react. Skimming just past the students face, the spear was suddenly stopped and unable to be budged an inch, and when looking down he could see the little man holding onto it.

"These people are only kids!" Borden shouted. His hand that was gripped around the spear was tense, his knuckles were white. Cries from the kid started as a small scratch had been made on his cheek.

"What...do you think...you're doing!" Borden shouted.

The spear had snapped from where it was gripped and a spike had grown out from Borden's back, not just one but two. Scales on his face and arms started to grow as he couldn't contain his anger.

Before he knew it, Kubo could no longer see the little man.

'Hardening activate max.' Kubo activated his ability while he was mid air and looking at the Pure members who were behind him. All of them were too stunned to even move to help, as they witnessed the small man lift Kubo in the air above his head, only to then slam Kubo into the ground.

As his body landed, the arena floor tiles were smashed and a vibration was felt by everyone in the room.

Kubo was desperately coughing out blood, he had legendary tier armour on and used his hardening skill but it was still useless.

"You're still alive, I guess that's where your confidence came from." Borden said.

'Oh crap! I transformed in front of the kids.' Touching himself all over, Borden realised the kids were staring at his strange features. During his time teaching them, he had a lot of fun with them, and he showed his feats of strength but had never shown them his transformation, like Quinn had asked.

He knew if those on the Cursed ship knew he was a Dalki, they would be afraid of him and now Borden was afraid that the kids wouldn't speak to him again.

"Wow, that's so cool, he can transform as well!"

"Our teacher's amazing, I thought he was just a strong little man."

"I want to be like him."

"I'm the closest, look my hair is like his."

Looking at the ground, Borden wanted to hide the smile on his face, he wanted them to remember him as a serious teacher as well as one they got along with. The kids had calmed him down, and the spikes and scales started to disappear from his body.

"Did you see that, that was a Dalki! The Cursed faction has a Dalki!" The Pure members started to say in a panic.

"Kill it, we have to kill it!"

"But I've never seen a Dalki turn into a human, and transform like that?" Another commented.

"Who cares, while it's not in that form we have to kill it!"

Seeing the Pure members charge forward, Borden thought this was the perfect opportunity.

"Alright kids, this guy isn't dead, so you'll be able to use him right? Show me what you have learnt so far."

After touching Kubo who was near death on the floor, the kids, almost fearless, decided to go into battle with those at Pure. This was something they were not expecting.

Some wished to not fight children. But soon when they saw how skilled and serious the kids were, they were fending for their own lives. They were skilled with the weapons they took from the members, faster and knew how to fight well using the ability.

On top of this, whenever Borden thought one would get hurt, he would intervene, blowing the person to bits.

"None of you deserve to live, just sitting there and watching that man do what he was going to do, you are all just as bad," Borden said.

A few minutes later, and the training room door opened. In came members from the Cursed faction who had come through the portals. They looked like they were in a hurry, covered in sweat.

"Quick, we have to make sure they're....safe.." The man in front started to slow down his words as he saw that all of the Pure members, including Kubo, had already been dealt with.

"I taught them well, triple A for all of you for this assignment!" Borden said, giving them a thumbs up.

Back in the main hall of the ship, Linda had finished going through her evolution. It was a pain just as bad as when she first turned, and she thought she would never have to experience anything like it again.

At the time, she didn't know she was going through an evolution, but now that it was complete she could tell her body had changed, not much physically but she knew something was different.

Moving her body slightly through the air, she wondered what changes her new body even had.

'I'll need to speak to Quinn when he gets back.'

"I've just got news from all the others, it looks like everyone is safe and they have dealt with all the intruders." Wevil reported.

His voice had startled Linda, and she quickly looked at Tulk, who had been eaten by her on the ground. Images flashed in her head, something she thought she would never do, she had done. At the time she didn't even feel like she was herself.

Now, she was starting to understand a little of what Fex must have been going through at the time.

"That's good news. Anyone that is alive let's round them up. I'm sure Quinn is going to want to hear an explanation from them about what just happened. When they wake up, we can make them clean up their own dead. Send a message to them."

Wevil nodded and started to walk away to give the message but before doing so, Linda called out.

"Wevil, don't tell anyone."

He stopped for a second and then continued walking with a thumbs up. She didn't know if she could trust him with such a secret, but she owed him for helping and saving the lives of the others in the faction.

After doing what was asked, the only person that was left alive from the leaders in charge of the attack, was Kubo. He was locked away and kept an eye on until Quinn came back.

The attack outside from the beasts had also been dealt with by the other families, but the Cursed never left their ship, which made the Graylash and other families wonder what was going on inside. However, they didn't have much time to wonder.

They had all just received a call with an update of the Demon tier hunt.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 788: Find Quinn

The ones that were sent out for a hunt were patiently waiting above the large crack that had been made in the planet's surface. They had called for smaller ships to come to their destination and then they would go through the crack in search of Quinn and the demon tier beast.

While waiting though, they had to make a few decisions. Only small ships could be taken, so a small team rather than the one they had brought with them, needed to go down there and they were now deciding who would go.

"We have to be honest with ourselves." Owen said. "Nearly everyone here is pretty much useless when fighting against the demon tier beast. We knew it was going to be a large one so we brought a big force, but we never knew it was going to be a defensive type. If we take more people down with us, then they will just get in the way or there is a chance they might not return."

The others that were listening in on the meeting nodded in response, it made sense after all. Now it was just a matter of who to pick. From the Cursed side, Sil was already adamant that he would be going, Fex had also agreed as well.

As for the others, although Sam was a good strategist, it would be risky taking him down there, and Dennis and Nate knew they weren't really up for the challenge. Paul could do well, but he didn't have the right equipment with him to do much damage either. So the only two that were chosen were Sil and Fex.

The military had chosen Oscar and Duke, Graylash family member Owen and another member, while surprisingly Mona had said that she would stay above.

"My beast isn't strong enough to deal with that thing." Mona said. "I thought when the smaller crabs came out I would be able to control them, but it seems to be linked to the demon tier beast. Besides, someone has to protect those on the surface. We will wait here, and if your ships are destroyed or you need help, we can easily send more support."

The others didn't like this too much. As one of the family leaders, Mona would be getting a big reward out of this joint hunt. Not only that, but she had also kept the demon tier location device a secret from them all, which had put a sour taste in the others mouths. Still, it was true that Mona didn't really do much. And the deal had already been agreed beforehand.

"I would like to volunteer to come as well." Logan said, raising his hand. "I can help you locate and pinpoint the demon tier beast easier."

Oscar looked at Logan who had a small frame and a small digital device by his side.

"This is a very dangerous task boy, and although I will protect you, I will protect my own life and those close to me before protecting you."

"Don't worry, I can look after myself." Logan said.

The truth was, they wanted someone like Logan to go down with them, so there wasn't much pressure against him when he requested to join.

In the end, Helen and her two sisters also agreed to join, but their job would be a different one. They had done a good job protecting their backs from the beasts when the leaders went to attack. This time they would be in charge of protecting the ships that they would land in.

Their guess was this secondary inner planet could be filled with dangerous creatures.

Finally, there were two more people who had volunteered. Bonny and Void.

"You do know you still won't be able to record anything." Said Oscar. "Why risk your lives?"

"We need to make a report on this, I know this will be a big turning point for the whole world." Bonny said.

Through her determination and sheer will power, the others knew she wouldn't take no for an answer, and so those that were to go down to the inner planet had been decided.

Finally, the ships had arrived, but due to how little of them were going they only needed one ship. However, the other two that were brought as well were left on standby, protected by Mona in case they needed more help.

Once everyone climbed on board, they were wished good luck and they were on their way.

Once on the ship, everyone took a seat and Logan was in charge of controlling the ship, claiming to have the most experience. When they saw he was able to control it with just putting his hands on the control panel, they quickly allowed him to take charge.

"Everyone strap in, hold your gut as much as possible. We will be dropping down at a speed greater than this ship can fly, your insides will feel like they are being pulled out from you. With me being at the front, if you throw up, then the sick will be going all over me."

The ship was ready and it soon started to descend into the black crack. Diving deep down, at first it was a steady slow ride as they used their lights to navigate through the crack, making sure they wouldn't hit any of the walls.

"What the, is this it?" Fex said. "I thought it was going to a lot worse than-"

Once the ship got past a certain point, it felt like a strong force was pulling them down. Their stomachs felt like they were sinking into themselves, right down to their toes.

"Argh! I'm going to be sick, I'm going to be sick!" Fex shouted.

"Don't you dare, pretty boy!" Ivy shouted, as she was the one that was sitting in front of him. "I will tie you up and whip you until you're raw if you're sick."

The group continued falling at a great speed and then, they could see a light. Going through it they continued to drop and at the right time, Logan activated the thrusters to counterbalance the ship.

It was a hard stop, and this was where the real pain for the others would come. Eventually when all was settled, Fex quickly undid his strapping and headed straight for the onboard toilet, but just shy, he managed to throw up all across the floor.

The group quickly landed and left the ship as the smell was too much for them to bear.

"What the hell do you eat?" Ivy asked.

Honestly, Fex didn't know how to answer that one.

Looking around them they could see the forest area and immediately Sil was looking for any signs of Quinn nearby but couldn't see any.

"There will have been a set distance where he could have fallen from, he couldn't have gone too far from here." Logan said.

"What are you doing?" Duke asked, as he walked over to Logan. "Pull up your machine and let's look for that demon tier beast."

Logan looked at Duke for a few seconds, there weren't many interactions with the two of them at school, but he still had a dislike for this man, based on the trouble he had caused.

"No, we are here to find Quinn first, and then locate the demon tier beast second." Logan said.

"Did you just see how far we dropped from?" Duke replied. "You think that brat is alive, you're just wasting our time. And why do you care about him? Remember Mona's not here to protect you."

"But I am." Sil said, as he fired a lightning bolt, hitting just ahead of where Duke was standing. He was inching his way closer and closer to Logan, and it was clear if he had moved any closer it would have hit him.

Oscar was about to give Sil another lecture, but they all soon heard the stomping of a loud beast. The ground was vibrating and the sound of tree branches breaking were heard. Then peaking over the trees, a long necked beast could be seen and when it finally appeared out of the greenery onto their area. It's large body, similar to the dinosaurs of the old.

Quickly pulling out one of the scanners, Logan quickly scanned the beast in front of him.

"Careful, it's a legendary tier beast." Logan warned them.

The rest got ready for battle, Oscar drawing his sword and Owen ready to fire. Then a streak of blue lightning went past all of them, hitting the beast in the neck, causing its head to fall and hit the floor. The beast was dead.

When they turned around they all could see that it had come from Sil.

"We look for Quinn first." Sil said.

\*\*\*\*\*

My werewolf system Exclusive on P.a.t.r.e.o.n its only \$1 dollar a month. Cheaper than webnovel :) and you get access to the MVS webtoon. (2 Chapters per month)

## Chapter 789: A new hun

Returning to the cave, Quinn was covered in cuts and bruises all over his body. They were healing slowly, but rather than use blood from his blood bank or the one from his small flask, he decided to let his body heal naturally as he didn't want to cause suspicion.

Fast healing could be explained via Qi, but not at the speed Quinn's body would heal after consuming blood. Doing this would make him feel hungry for later, but he would always consume some blood from the blood bank without having Chris notice, so that wasn't too much trouble.

Besides Blood now needed to be rationed, otherwise Quinn would be feasting on the closest human next to him, and he was sure Chris wouldn't want to be a volunteer, not without an explanation first.

"Another one added to the pile." Chris said, as he placed the clear crystal on the table. Now there were five crystals of the same clarity next to each other.

"Don't worry," Chris said. "You did all the work and got beat up for them, you can keep the crystals. Besides I have no need for them anyway. I have my demon tier weapon." He said, putting an emphasis on 'demon' and making sure Quinn had heard him.

He did this often, as if he was gloating about the weapon, he thought that Quinn didn't believe him due to him being jealous.

Quinn had given up trying to convince him otherwise. There was no way for him to really explain how he knew it wasn't the case. Still, he was glad Chris had been a nice guy, so far at least.

Between the two of them they had collected five legendary tier crystals, which was above a rank of any gear that Quinn had, especially since his emperor tier equipment was only good for defence and not much else other than that.

The planet was a gold mine for high level tier beasts, so far he hadn't met anything under the emperor tier.

'I wonder what they will do with this planet after defeating the demon tier beast?' Quinn thought. 'Since now the families are in an alliance, will it go back to the way it was before, where different shelters belong to all the leaders on a single planet, and there would just be a routine tax? Or maybe this planet and the others were too close to the Dalki.'

As days passed it always felt like the big threat over their heads was getting closer, whether they wanted to admit it or not. Building new shelters and sending a force out to protect them wouldn't be the best of ideas.

"You did really good Quinn." Chris said as he sat down next to him and started to go through what went well and what had gone bad, on their latest outing.

So far Chris had been helping Quinn learn the second form of Qi. Quinn knew how to use it, but using it in battle was a different story, and the way Chris made Quinn know this was by pitting him up against legendary tier beasts.

It was strange at first, as Quinn realised that he would have to quickly shift his Qi over to different areas of his body during a fight more often than before. There was only a limited amount of Qi one could have, and using a weapon while also enhancing it with Qi would use up quite a lot.

It was critical to have absolute control of how much you would use and where you would use it. Quinn was learning fast, faster than usual, although Chris never told him that. The reason for the fast learning was because controlling the Qi in this manner was similar to him using the shadow.

Usually people would struggle with controlling two forces at the same time, it would be like trying to separate your mind into two, or when one learnt the piano making their left hand and right hand do different things. These skills to do well would take years but Quinn was learning fast.

However he was unaware of this because his fights with the legendary tier beasts had been tough, tougher than he had expected. When fighting, Quinn did use his body to its full extent, speed, strength and stamina, but he didn't use his shadow nor vampire powers. Not because he was worried about Chris, but because Quinn himself wanted to get better at using Qi, and thought this was a great way to do it.

He managed to still defeat the beasts, but not without getting quite badly hurt in a few scuffles here and there, which was why he was in the condition he was in now.

Right now, Chris would analyse everything he had done in the fight, telling him what he should have done differently or what he could have improved on. Even though Chris said he was a bad teacher, honestly Quinn had never been taught better by anyone else. It was perfect and allowed him to focus on the correct things each time.

After taking everything in, Quinn wondered how he would implement this second stage of Qi with his current set of abilities.

'The hardest part of it all will be when using the shadow. Controlling two different things and thinking of the fight is hard enough, but then using the shadow. Is it even possible?'

The problem was, he didn't really have the time to practice it either.

"Alright, I think that's enough for today. We should rest up, we have a big night tomorrow." Chris said, as he went to his own bed of leaves and went to sleep.

The next morning, Chris was already awake before Quinn. Or at least Quinn couldn't see him in the bed next to him. Usually Quinn would be the one to wake up first due to him not needing much sleep in the first place.

The sound of something passing through the wind was heard, similar to when one would swing a fast skipping rope. Trying to check out what the sound was, Quinn stepped out of the cave and could see that Chris was standing on top of the rock and facing the waterfall.

He had his Demi-god tier weapons in his hands, and were swinging them against the waterfall. The strikes from his weapons were so clean that it cut through the stream of water perfectly, there were no droplets of water. Even though he was attacking the waterfall, it continued to flow as if it was never hit by anything, uninterrupted.

"Oh, you're awake!" Chris said with a smile looking over at Quinn. "I thought I would warm up for today's event."

'Warm up?' Quinn thought. For all the times they had gone out before, Chris had never warmed up once. Why was he warming up now?

With a great jump, Chris managed to leap across the pool of water created from the waterfall and landed on the land beside Quinn. Seeing things like this had become normal for Quinn and he had to remind himself that the man in front of him had no ability.

He was a superhuman and wasn't even a vampire.

"Your face looks confused. My disciple, don't you trust your teacher?" Chris spoke with the great smile he usually had.

"My wounds are all good, so if you want to go out hunting we can." Quinn said, not too bothered. He was getting a little bored of hunting legendary tier beasts. He would have left in the middle of the night by now and tried to find a way back to the others if it wasn't for the fact that Chris still hadn't explained or shown what the third stage of Qi was.

Whenever Quinn would bring it up, Chris would just mention that it was too soon to talk about it. In Quinn's head this didn't mean he wouldn't teach Quinn the third stage, just that he wasn't ready. He kind of liked this feeling of being a student, in the end Quinn was only seventeen and he hardly got to experience this in his life.

He had grown up too fast to enjoy those parts of life and just appreciate the quiet moments. In addition, there was someone that Chris reminded him of - Vincent.

When Vincent left the system, Quinn never thought he would feel strange without him, but it did affect him and he did feel slightly lost.

"Of course. Even I'm going to have to warm up for what we're going to do today." Chris said. "Today is your final day of second stage Qi training. Me and you are both going to hunt a Demi-god tier beast."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 790: A final test

A demi-god tier beast. A tier of beast that was just under that of a demon tier. How strong it was Quinn had no idea, but he wasn't too afraid. One of the main reasons for not being scared was because his system made him believe it wasn't a reason to be.

After defeating the legendary tier beasts, even with the first kill reward, Quinn wasn't even close to levelling up to the final stage. There were times when they were out on their training and a demi-god tier beast was approaching them. Using his inspect skill he knew so, and somehow Chris would know as well, as he had warned them and the two of them were running before it arrived.

The thing was, even after using his inspect skill on the demi-god tier beast, he still didn't receive an instant level up reward. Which meant as long as Quinn used all of his powers and abilities, the system believed it should have been something Quinn could deal with.

Right now, it looked like obtaining the demon tier crystal was the only thing that could level him up. Still, Quinn was conflicted with how strong a demi-god tier beast would be.

There was one thing that did worry him slightly, maybe the demi-god tier beast Quinn had seen at the time wasn't strong enough. If they ran into a humanoid one, or maybe something similar then it would definitely be a problem.

"Will I be taking it on my own?" Quinn asked. He wondered if there was a chance he would have to use his shadow abilities to get out of this one.

Chris started to laugh, a deep laugh from within and fell to the floor punching the ground. Quinn felt like it was an overreaction, but Chris was often this way.

"Come on man, you can barely beat legendary tiers, and honestly I've never really fought a demi-god tier beast myself, even I don't think it's something I can deal with on my own. Of course I will be joining you on this one, and I will be using the demon tier weapons as well."

Gulping, now Quinn was worried. Was Chris just bluffing about this? Perhaps he thought due to him having the demon tier weapons there was no chance he could lose.

Still, Quinn had no idea of the extent of Chris's full power. He hadn't seen him use the third stage, nor what the third stage of Qi was capable of, and Chris hadn't seen Quinn's abilities.

'Maybe it won't be too dangerous?' Quinn thought. He did have one thing to worry about, how much time had passed being down here. The others might have already left the place, or they were busy looking for him.

Quinn would hate it if the Cursed faction came down and were suffering trying to find him. The only thing that didn't make him worry so much, was Sil and Sam. With Sil's strength they could deal with anything apart from a demon tier beast, and with Sam's smarts they would never risk bringing everyone down to a place like this.

"Come on, what are you daydreaming about, let's go looking for that beast!" Chris said with a big smile.

While the two of them were walking around the jungle with Quinn following Chris' lead. Quinn wanted to ask Chris some questions he hadn't asked before.

"Chris, have you tried to look for a way out of here? And I mean recently?" Quinn asked.

"I already told you everything. I tried, but even if I found a way out I don't think I would leave yet." He replied. "Not until I taught that damn crab a lesson."

Apparently, Chris still had a grudge towards the crab for bringing him down here in the first place. Through their time together Quinn had found out a little bit more about him. He didn't say if he came with others or not, but did say he tried to take on the Crab demon tier beast. When it was planning to escape, he jumped and held onto the crabs back only for the crab to drag him down and he eventually passed out. Later on he woke up and found himself in this place.

The two of them had been walking around for a while now and what was strange was, like the days before they hadn't run into a single legendary tier beast. There were though, a couple of emperor tier beasts that had approached them.

These were beasts similar to horses in appearance that had bodies made of a stone substance and green plants growing from their bodies. They would be able to control the vines and plants from their bodies to trap their enemies before stabbing them with the sharp single long horn on their head.

At first, Quinn stepped forward, thinking this was a chance he could practice his Qi use, but Chris placed his hand in front of him and went up ahead instead. The horse charged forward with its horn pointed out and was running quite fast. When it got within range, vines from its body started to tangle around Chris's arms.

"Where the hell are all the beasts!" Chris shouted, as he ripped the vines and held out his hand. When the horn hit the palm of its hand, it didn't pierce through but instead it crumbled to pieces until he was able to hold the head of the horse.

Only now seeing this did Quinn notice how large of a guy Chris was.

'Was he always this big?'

Grabbing the sword from his back, he cut the beasts head clean off, killing it in one swoop. Quinn was about to approach the horse's body to help find the crystal. But then Chris had let out an almighty roar. He swung his sword out once again and it looked like the links on them started to open up and extend.

Each of the sections of the short blade opened up, and now it was nearly four times as long and was moving like that of a snake. The trees that were in front were each hit and falling on top of each other one by one. When he was done with his attack, the sword retracted back to its original size.

"Maybe that will be enough noise to bring one of them over here." Chris said.

After waiting a while, the two of them still could find no legendary tier beasts or demi-god tier beast.

"It was so easy last time, we saw one by accident, so why can't we find one now!" He started to complain.

"Well, demi-god tier beasts are rare in the first place, but I do think something is strange. Let's just head back for now and see if we can find anything in the opposite direction." Quinn suggested.

Upon returning Chris was quiet and Quinn had never seen him like this before. He often loved to talk, and Quinn kind of just nodded along, only asking questions about Qi when he had them. When they finally had reached the waterfall and cave, Chris stopped.

"No, as your teacher I can't disappoint you. I won't fail you Quinn." Chris said with a passion holding his hand by his chest.

"It's okay." Quinn said nervously. "I never knew you were taking this whole thing so seriously."

"You have been the best student I have ever had, the only student!" Chris started to speak even more dramatically now. "So I can't let you down, I have come up with an idea. In those old movies, the final test between master and disciple, the student must overcome the master."

Now Quinn was really starting to worry, often Chris would quote things from martial arts movies, and a lot of the training seemed to be based on them as well. But now he was starting to wonder if this crazy acting was because he had been down here too long. Originally, Quinn had gone along with it, perhaps that was a bad idea.

'Argh what the hell, let's just go with it.'

"Thank you master, I will be willing to do anything to please you." Quinn said with his hands held out, his face was bright red as he looked at the floor. He didn't want to admit it but he was kind of enjoying the role play.

"Excellent. Then for your final test, you and I shall fight each other, in a final duel."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 791: Second stage Qi Vs Qi

Although Chris was cheerful and often a joker, when he said things, he really meant it. Which meant that Chris was also dead serious about them having a duel.

'Can I really do it, without using the shadow or my blood abilities?' Quinn thought.

He didn't know why but right now his heart was beating fast, and it wasn't one out of fear or worry like in the past, but it was out of excitement. A feeling that Quinn had suppressed a few times but now he was starting to realize something.

He was enjoying the thrill. Even if he didn't want to admit it, he liked the feeling of getting stronger, improving himself, learning new things and finding out what his body could do. He imagined this was what athletes felt like when they competed in sports, always striving to improve.

Maybe he realized this more now than before because of the situation. He wasn't risking his life; he wasn't following some Quest. Of course, he needed to get stronger to achieve his goal, now was just a simple battle. The worry was, if he let this power get to him, like it did so many others.

Perhaps the others felt fear that maybe one day they could be surpassed, and rather than improving themselves they chose to suppress others.

'Chris also knows how to use the third stage of Qi, and he hasn't shown or told me anything about it, but if I can get him in a position where he has to use it, maybe I can learn a thing or two myself.'

"You've learnt enough about the second stage of Qi, that I know you won't die from this." Chris said, and before he knew it, Chris had disappeared in front of his eyes, and was throwing an uppercut towards his stomach.

However, Quinn wasn't Chris's typical opponent, although he wasn't going to use his shadow or blood skills, he wasn't going to hold back.

"You might want to go all out for this one." Said Quinn as he held Chris's fist with a single hand. Both were using the first stage and second stage of Qi, one not overpowering the other.

What was stranger was that even if Chris had better control of his Qi, Quinn was sure that both of their strengths in Qi should have been the same. If that was the case, then his superior vampire strength should have made it so that he was overpowering him.

Quinn wasn't the only one that was confused by this either, Chris focused on strength more than anything. He trained his body, on top of using his Qi in an explosive manner, but still they were both equal.

Chris had only seen Quinn fight the beasts, watching could only do so much when determining one's strength. He thought it was either due to his gauntlets, or his use of Qi.

At the same time, the two of them were trying to find where their extraordinary strength was coming from.

'Now I see.' Quinn thought. Even though his Demi-god tier weapons are on his back, the reason he keeps it on his body is so he can still activate their power.'

Now that Quinn was more in tune with his senses, he could feel it, the aura from the crystal made to make the weapons, when activated, was being infused in his body, giving him an incredible stat boost making him comparable to Quinn's own stats.

What was impressive was that it was the only beast gear that Chris was wearing. The stats boost from a Demi-god tier weapon was impressive, and if he were wearing legendary armor, or other items, then perhaps Chris would have even overpowered him.

If all humans learnt to use Qi, and fully utilized the beast weapons, they would be unmatched in power even against the Dalki. Now Quinn was understanding the obsession with this hunt, and more so of conquering the beast planets before the Dalki.

At the same time, Chris was learning new things about his number one pupil Quinn.

'I thought that the strange aura inside him was taking up useless space in his body, it turns out I was wrong. It was supporting him in other ways making his whole body superhuman.'

Instead of being upset that Quinn was holding back this information, Chris smiled instead. Soon after he threw out punch after punch with each one being blocked by Quinn.

'All of these punches, he's using second stage Qi on them and he's hitting them in a different place each time. He's really making me work and testing if I've fully mastered the second stage of Qi, but there is something I can do that you can't.'

Seeing the fist coming towards him, Quinn decided to not cover himself with the second stage Qi. While Chris was still treating this as a lesson, Quinn wanted Chris to bring everything he had, and was imagining it like a real fight.

Taking a large punch on his shoulder, rather than blocking, he went on the offensive as well, throwing a kick and hitting Chris on the head. His body went skidding on the floor, but he quickly recovered.

"That was a good hit, let's see who can take mor-"

Not letting Chris have time to recover, Quinn was mixing his punches in with his kicks. The patterns of the kicks were obvious for Chris to block, as he recognized their style and how they worked. As it was the standard of what the military used. What he didn't realize, was the style of punches. It was something he hadn't seen before.

A mixture of boxing, with a traditional Chinese style of Wushu, he noticed some patterns, but this was unique, and soon he was getting hit more than he liked. Thankfully, he was better at controlling the second stage more than Quinn and was able to cover himself more thinly. Although he would feel the force more from the punches and take slightly more damage, he would cover himself more, and with a strong body like his this didn't matter too much.

"If I was using my weapons this match would be done for." Chris said.

While Quinn was thinking along similar lines, if only he could use his blood abilities, and shadow powers, this would be a walk in the park.

Still, Quinn had not pushed Chris enough for him to show the third stage of Qi, which was his goal in all of this, slowing down his strikes he wanted to give Chris the false sense that his power was weakening, and it was working.

Chris noticed the attacks coming in slower, then started to go from defense to offence, and when he did, Quinn was ready with a flash step, dodging the attack appearing right behind him.

The great thing about learning the second stage of Qi, was it acted as a defensive barrier.

Slamming his right foot into the ground raising up the energy inside him, Quinn was starting to perform the hammer strike. Usually against an opponent this fast, it would take too much time and they could interrupt the move, but seeing Chris fist come at his stomach, he was able to block the attack using a coat of the second stage Qi.

Now all that's left was to deliver the powerful strike on Chris.

\*BOOM

A sudden explosion shook the grounds so hard that it had even rocked Quinn off his stable feet, and it allowed Chris enough time to just avoid the blow, as he did, the fist hit where he was and a smack through the air itself was seen. He could feel the wind pressure alone form the attack on his face.

'What was that? I thought this kid was talented but what?!"

In the middle of Chirs's thoughts, another loud explosion happened, and the ground was shaking again. In a distance not too far away from the two of them, winged beasts could be seen flying away from the scene. It was clear something was going on.

"You want to go check it out?" Chris asked.

"Yeah, it wouldn't do any harm to check at least." Quinn replied.

The two were soon off to explore just what was causing the strange explosion.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 792: Unknown man

It didn't take long for Sil and the others to find out just how dangerous the place they were in was. Sil had already dealt with a legendary tier beast with ease before, a single strike even. However while searching for Quinn they soon found themselves coming across more than they bargained for.

It had been a few days since they landed and began their search. Due to Sil's persistence, they agreed that they would look for Quinn first. According to Logan, the Demon tier beast was remaining still in one place and unmoving, and it seemed to stay that way for the entire duration.

This was one of the reasons they eventually agreed, the other, was because they didn't want to get on Sil's bad side. It was clear he had a short temper and the level and strength of his powers were hard to gauge.

Of course with each day, after twenty four hours had passed, Sil's ability would reset, although the others wouldn't know this. Resetting meant Sil no longer had the abilities stored and he would have to touch the others again.

Touching Owen was easy as he would allow this, and the same could be said with Logan. Helen and her two sisters had been left to look after the ship, but each day the group would return to the ship after searching. Therefore touching them was still rather easy for Sil, a lot easier than he imagined.

It was a strange feeling when the girls saw him, a powerful person who even caused fear in the leaders, but at the same time very childlike. The girls found him quite cute and often would play with his hair, or pinch his cheeks, so there were no problems there.

Still, after displaying his powers in front of everyone, there were two people who were cautious of him, and that was Duke and Oscar. They would keep their distance from Sil so that he couldn't get anywhere near. There were no secrets about this child, as Duke knew his ability well from the files they had received when he was in school, but they didn't know the ins and outs of the ability.

Regardless, they didn't want to be anywhere near him for now. Because of this, Sil's attack power was significantly weakened compared to before. But it was still strong enough for him to defeat the beasts with ease.

The group were standing in a dark muddy field, it was strange as there was no greenery while the rest of the place was filled with jungle. All their problems with the beasts seemed to stem from when they stepped foot in this area.

A giant silver gorilla with a tail of a scorpion came out from the jungle to the clearing they were in. When it got in range, multiple plants would pop up and start firing away at the gorilla. It was the thorns from Helen's skill, unfortunately he didn't have their soul weapon so it was basic. By the time it got close, Sil was able

to finish it off with his lightning bolt. That was now the fifth beast that had attacked them while they were there.

They didn't know why but it was as if something was radiating off them, all the beasts were now starting to make their way towards the group, and that included the strong ones.

"Why do they keep coming?" Bonny asked as she was starting to panic.

As soon as she finished saying those words, another beast had come into view.

There was a problem though, Sil couldn't keep doing this forever. His MC points and level would have been above everyone there and it was true he could combine the levels to make an almighty attack, but the stronger the attack, the more MC points it would still use, and Sil was starting to grow tired.

'It looks like they're doing this on purpose.' Logan thought as he was observing both Duke and Oscar. 'The two of them haven't done much in terms of helping fight the beasts. Even Owen is firing his abilities, you would think they were just preserving their strength but that's not it at all. They're afraid, afraid of Sil.'

Logan's hunch was on the ball. Both Duke and Oscar didn't want to help Sil and were glad he was getting tired out. They felt like he was a loose cannon that they couldn't control. Because of him, they were wasting time and effort when the Demon tier could be escaping for all they knew. They wanted him to weaken.

Soon, a loud rumbling was heard and the ground was felt shaking from underneath them. Bonny and Void fell off their feet the shaking was that rough. It went on for a good few minutes and it was only getting stronger.

When the shaking stopped, they realised that the beasts had stopped coming from the jungle area.

"Was that an earthquake?" Bonny asked.

Finally, with a moment's rest Logan could pull out his computer to check something

"Hey!" A voice was heard shouting in the distance, When Sil and the others turned around to look, they could see Quinn walking forward with a red haired man behind him.

'Quinn, you're safe..' Sil thought, and a giant smile beamed on his face.

However, Quinn's mood soon turned sour and his facial expression had changed when he looked at Duke. It was so intense that even Chris who was standing next to him could feel his Qi building up.

'Whoah, Quinn must really hate one of them.' Chris thought. When he looked over, that's when he recognised just who Quinn was waving over to.

'Wait a minute, isn't that the military supreme commander Oscar, and Owen the head of the Graylash family? What the hell are they doing here, and this kid knows them. I really shouldn't be here.' Chris thought, as he started to turn away and hide his face.

When he did, that's when Oscar spotted the two weapons on his back and his eyes widened.

Back on the surface where the others had fallen through the crack, Mona had begun to make herself comfy. She had brought out a nice comfy levitating seat with her, and the others were busy chatting away.

It turned out that there weren't many beasts on the surface of the planet. For what reason she didn't really care.

'This has turned out quite nicely. While they are doing all the work, I still get my part of the deal - having access to the Demon weapon on request. Even if it isn't successful, I can always build up a force later on and try for the other demon tiers thanks to Logan.'

'The only thing I didn't really calculate was the strength of the demon tier, who would have thought that they were that strong? I'll have to prepare more in the future, but I'm sure I'll be able to do something if I pick and choose my battles.' She thought.

While relaxing away with her eyes closed and deep in her thoughts, she felt her eyelids darken even more as a large shadow was cast over her. Opening her eyes, she could see a large spaceship but it was not one that she recognised and it definitely wasn't one of the ones belonging to any of the others.

'Could it be Pure?'

"Miss Bree, what should we do?" A man shouted.

"Prepare yourselves, this could turn into a nasty battle." She said as she prepared her beast by her side. All groups were ready and standing behind Mona, waiting for her command. The ship slowly landed and the ramp started to defend first.

"Lets see how you deal with this," Mona thought, as she commanded her beast that was like a spirit, to head over to the entrance of the ship. When the doors lifted, a large dark red fire hand was seen grabbing onto the beast and it was turned into ashes in a second.

"What do we do? Miss Bree, Bree, Mona!" They shouted but she wouldn't respond.

They thought it might have been due to how easily her beloved beast was killed, but it wasn't. It was because of the three people seen walking out of that ship and heading towards them.

"I heard there was a demon tier beast on this planet." A deep voice said.

When the person in front got close, Mona immediately got down to her knees, and tears were running down her face.

'What is he doing here, why is he here now? Why did he leave that island!' She screamed inside her head, as she feared for the whole world as they knew it.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 793: Strong rumbling

Looking at the weapons on the red-haired man's back, Oscar's memory flickered of when he last saw them. He instinctively grabbed his own blade, which was by his side, however his grip around the hilt loosened when he looked at the man closely.

'Who is that, I've never seen that person before?' He thought.

Regardless, even if they didn't know who Chris was, he was already on his way out of there, that was until he saw a black smoke of mist.

'Isn't that the kid's...'

The strong anger inside Quinn still hadn't settled, he promised himself that if he saw Duke again, for attempting to take his life, that he would finish him the next time he saw him, and through that, his desire was summoned, and someone or something was there to complete it.

Although the smoke appeared behind Quinn, when Chris turned his head to have a look, he could already see the large deathly claw of the Boneclaw appearing behind Duke. A large swipe of its hand slashed the back of Duke, carving a large scratch across his whole back.

"Arghhh!" He screamed in pain as he fell to the floor and landed on his knees, the long fingers were strong, and Duke never saw it coming. They had sunken quite deep into his body.

Oscar, who was usually keeping an eye on Duke, was too busy looking at the red-haired stranger who was by Quinn's side. He was distracted and was unable to help Duke in time. Seeing such a creature, he thought it was a humanoid beast, and went forward to strike, but by then the beast had already teleported away from Duke's behind, making his sword hit nothing but air, and the next place the Bonecalw appeared was directly in front of Duke to finish him off.

'Why is Quinn attacking them, from the way he was acting before he seemed to be on friendly terms with them. If I'm not wrong that's the same beast that I saw that was protecting him before, can he not control it?'

The initial blow on Duke's back was worse than he thought, it had ripped through his chest armor, although it was weaker on one's back, which meant he could only think that it was a high-level beast. The only thing to do now, was to activate his soul weapon and cover himself with the earth, but it would be too slow.

All these thoughts went through his head, as he saw the claw dangling in front of his eyes, but then, slowly it started to freeze, as a large tunnel of ice came out and froze the death claw in place, soon after a slice with the demon tier sword dealt

with the beast. Instead of the black blood one would see, they only saw it turn into a black mist that slowly went over to where Quinn was.

However, it would be hard for them to relate that the beast was something to do with Quinn despite this, the only reason Chris had figured it out, was due to the beast's strange actions beforehand.

"What was that?" Bonny asked. "I think it was some type of beast, is it still alive?"

The attack had startled most, and they were now on guard for what was about to happen next. Turning his head, Oscar could only assume it was one person, especially after seeing the smoke head their way.

'That damn red haired.' Oscar thought.

Seeing him walk towards them, Quinn was the first to step forward in front of Chris.

"What are you doing Oscar?" Quinn said, ready for a scuffle.

"This man hurt my men, you expect me to do nothing, when Duke almost died."

"That man doesn't deserve to be protected by you!" Quinn replied, still upset. "He tried to kill me; he was the one that had pushed me into the black crack when we were all escaping. Whatever is happening to Duke now, he deserves it!"

Hearing this made Oscar rethink, just who was the one that had really hurt Duke.

The sound of the lightning ability being activated was heard, and soon, Oscar had to move back as he covered Duke, for the lighting was coming from Sil.

'This isn't a good situation, the Cursed faction are too strong, there is that blonde boy over there, and there is also Quinn and the other man, three against one, or two if I include Owen being on my side. It isn't a good match up for me.' Oscar thought.

"How could you!" Duke shouted. "I saw one of the emperor tier crabs coming from the side, so I decided to push you back before it clawed your head off. I knew no one would buy my explanation so I kept it in! Now that you're alive you should be thanking me."

How could such a person claim a thing, Duke;s words were only making Quinn more angry.

"What an obvious lie." Quinn replied. "You, try to save my life? Why would you ever even think of doing that? You have been scum ever since your days at the academy."

"Quinn hear him out," Oscar said. "And I have to say, I'm not really on trusting sides with you right now, it seems like the rumors are true after all. The Cursed

faction really are working with Pure." He said as he pointed his finger towards Chris.

This was something Quinn expected, but the certain situation wasn't one he thought that he would be in now.

"Quinn I'm sorry for putting you in this situation." Chris said. "I should have told you I was in Pure, but people tend to act this way when they find out."

"Don't worry," Quinn replied immediately. "I was the one that actually started this mess, and I might not be the best judge of character, but that man on the floor, is a lot worse than you."

"Quinn tell me who you want me to deal with, I'm ready when you are." Sil said, still standing there with bolts of lightning running up and down his arm.

With the demon tiers third active Skill, Sil had to be careful, and Quinn knew this as well. Essentially that single skill was what made the demon weapon so deadly. The stronger one was, the more powerful effect that skill had.

"Quinn, if you're going to fight, then I will be happy to help out my disciple for this one." Chris said.

"This is not how a leader of the world table should act." Oscar said, as he placed the sword down by his side. "Even if my man has done something wrong, we need to hear out both sides first and act accordingly, we don't want to start another Civil war, right after we have decided to team up together again, right?"

As angry as Quinn was at Duke, what Oscar said made a lot of sense. In his position he couldn't just act rashly anymore, his actions were the actions of everyone else in his faction and it would affect them too now.

If Quinn had a grudge, it could start a fight that the others didn't want to get involved in.

"Huh, what, Quinn you're a World Leader?" Chris was so confused, he could not understand what Oscar was saying. He knew the others were the world leaders, but he had no clue who Quinn was before meeting him, he had never seen him before, but apparently he was a world leader.

'This situation is getting wilder by the second.' Quinn thought and it would have been better for the two of them to have been honest with each other first.

"Err guys..." Logan said interrupting everyone, even though he hadn't said a word so far. Soon he didn't need to say anything for the rumbling in the ground had started. The ground was shaking violently just like before, but it was even more intense.

"Everyone move, we need to get out of here now!" Logan shouted.

However, the warning was too late, as the ground underneath them was shaking. They all quickly tried to move away from the area as much as they could.

Then, out from the ground, a large diamond was seen popping up, now the others were starting to understand why there was no vegetation in this area, and they were about to meet an old friend.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 794: Mona's ship?

The large diamond could be seen popping out from the ground, everyone knew what was coming. Whatever arguments they had with each other moments ago was forgotten as they had to deal with the real problem at hand.

The demon tier beast wouldn't wait for them to figure out who was in the right and who was in the wrong.

It exploded as the beast surfaced, and the sound made was one similar to the one that Quinn and Chris had heard off in the distance before. Its whole body was in view, chucking up the ground from beneath with it.

While everyone was busy arguing, Logan was keeping track of the Demon tier beast. When he had a look, he noticed it moved locations, but once again it remained still. Slowly he was starting to put things together. The rumbling in the ground, and the movement of the demon tier beast soon after.

The ground they stood on, why there was no vegetation in the area, simply put, the area they were standing in now, was one of the spots the demon tier crab visited frequently. Still, he couldn't work out why constant beasts were making their way here.

However, a memory returned to Logan, when they were underground, on a particular orange portal planet. The beasts seemed to communicate with each other and were all influenced by the great power of the king tier beast.

'Is there a lingering power that we humans can't, see? Is that what was attracting the beasts here?' As interesting as this thought was, he now needed to get out of the way, along with Bonny and Void, for the others had a great beast to defeat.

"Thank you." Duke managed to cough out, as he was still injured. Right now, he was being carried underneath Oscar's arm. The injury wasn't too bad and usually one would be able to still move, but for some reason the pain was lasting a while after the attack.

"If you're too weak to join this battle, then you don't have to fight." Oscar said, before rushing in to fight the crab with his weapon drawn.

"I was going to leave you guys be." Chris said, "But now that damned crab is in front of me, I'm going to have to teach it another lesson!" Drawing his two blades, Chris was not holding back this time when he went against the demon tier beast.

As for Sil, Quinn had managed to throw his shadow to the ground, and use his sink skill, to drop Sil inside his shadow, and reappear him by his side. Sil had great power using his abilities, but in terms of speed and reflexes, he was better than top humans, but nothing compared to all these monsters here.

Watching Oscar take on the carb, Quinn realized something. He didn't notice it in the last fight, but Oscar only had the earth ability, he didn't utilize Qi, yet he was able to move faster than the crab and it was all because of the demon tier sword.

Not only that, But Quinn soon realized that he was even moving faster this time compared to before.

'Was he holding back, maybe from fighting a demon tier beast before, he knew the crab hadn't shown everything yet. So, he didn't want to use his full strength.' Quinn thought.

"Sil, you're tired right?" Quinn asked. "I can see the sweat on your face."

"Quinn, I can still help you fight." Sil said, as he grabbed onto Quinn's arm.

"Don't worry, I'm not going to die, and I have a few tricks up my sleeve, you recover with Logan and the others, and protect them if you see anything coming. We can't have you dying, and we still need to get Vorden and Raten back." Quinn said.

It was safe to say that the crab had made a full recovery from the last fight, the beast of a higher tier did heal faster, and they had seen its impressive regeneration abilities. Still, each person seemed to have also learnt from the last fight and was much more cautious.

Apart from Chris who was swinging his large blades at the large crystal on the crab's back, but then Quinn noticed something. When one of the thin claws came to attack him, without even looking at the claw it was knocked away, as if by some invisible force.

'That's the same thing Lucy did? Is that the third stage of Qi?' Quinn thought.

The second stage could only block, maybe third stage of Qi was an external strike of Qi. Now knowing this, even if he were to never see Chris again, it was something he could try to progress on his own.

Finally, Quinn too had come and joined in the fight, wasting no time, the first thing he did was use a hammer strike against one of the crab's legs, blocking another one of its thinner claws raising up a blood wall. He had used only ten points of Hp to create the wall, he knew this would not be enough to block the attack of the demon tier, but he needed to only slow it down, while touching the blood wall he was able to coat it with the second stage of Qi.

Then when one of the other claws came towards him, he prepared himself to use a hammer strike, or a hammer kick! Kicking one of the claws and slightly cracking the crab's outer shell. His blood wall was shattered but he was fine now, flash stepping out of the way. Jumping after the damaged claw, Quinn threw out a blood

swipe catching it with his shadow, creating the scythe, then striking it down, he finally cut the limb off.

This was something Quinn was able to do before, but this time it was different. The limb wasn't regenerating back, thanks to him using his second coat of Qi, when attacking with his shadow scythe he was able to leave a little bit of his own Qi in the attack to disrupt the beast's natural healing process.

Seeing this, Chris went back as he found attacking the large crystal useless and stood in front of the crab.

"This is going to tire me out Quinn, so I might need you to take care of me for a while." Not allowing Quinn to reply, Chris started to extend his two swords and slashed swinging at full strength at all the claws around the area. They whipped around out of control like a snake.

He didn't care if he was to hit Oscar or Owen, but the two of them were able to avoid the blade anyway. The strong attacks managed to cut each of the limbs off and they were now no longer regenerating.

The weapon itself was impressive, as it ripped apart each of the hard legs like a chainsaw, even Oscar's demon tier blade was not able to do that.

However, as soon as he was done, Chris was covered in sweat and on the floor. "Take that you stupid crab, I couldn't do that last time because I was on my own. Quinn, make sure I'm safe."

There was one easy way for Quinn to do this.

[Shadow lock activated]

Chris had suddenly disappeared, but there was no chance of him getting hurt anymore.

'I hope he's smart enough to not try and break out of the place.' Quinn thought.

The diamond on the crab's back started to shrink and soon its two large claws that remained near its face started to crystalize just like before, it started using them like two giant hammers, slamming them down. When Owen, lightning bolted himself away, he appeared on the crab's back. It was still partly made of diamond but now he could see that a section of it was no longer covered in diamond.

"The crab's back is now open; it looks like it can only move part of the diamond around to different parts of its body." Hearing this, Owen was striking the back, and Quinn started to help him while Oscar was left with at the front.

It was better this way, because occasionally, the crab would shoot a jet of water out of its mouth, and when it did, Oscar was able to use his weapon's active skill. When it happened this time, part of the crystal covering the crab's hands started to fall off,

not only that but through Owen and Quinn's persistence, they were starting to crack the crab's back and were successful.

Its flesh to its real body could finally be seen.

The crab cried in anger and lifted its two claws again. Knowing what happened last time, Oscar and Quinn were both able to get away. Instead of doing what it had done last time, it borrowed itself under the ground and it was on the move again, too fast for them to catch up.

"We were close." Owen said, "I think if we chase it this time, we should be able to finish it off."

"From the data, it looks like the crab is resting in another area again, I agree with Owen." Logan said. "I know everyone might be tired, but the crab is tired and hurt as well. If it ran away like that, it should be on its last legs, after all, a beasts' survival instinct is to run away."

During the fight, Duke was patched up, and the wound did not seem to bother him as much anymore, he was once again fit and ready to fight. It seemed like the argument they all had just moments before was all put on hold as they worked towards the same goal.

Opening the shadow lock, Chris was let out as well. When everyone was ready, they were finally on their way again, but after only a few steps, a small spaceship was seen heading down to where they were.

"That's one of the Bree family ships." Logan said. "Did Mona decide to finally come down here?"

Just in case something had happened on the surface, or Mona did change their mind, they decided to wait for the small ship to land, and the doors to them slowly opened.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 795: The strongest human in the world

The surface of the planet was scattered with bodies strewn across the floor. Signs of a one-sided battle were seen, as all the bodies were from the newly joint world alliance. There was no discrimination when it came to the attack, Cursed, Bree, Graylash and the military. All of these had been beaten, with most of them dead or missing limbs soon to die.

One of them, Mona, was still alive, her legs burnt. She could feel pain through her whole body but was unable to move. She tried looking around to see if anyone could help anyone who was at least in a better condition than herself, but there was none.

"That maniac, what did we do? What did we do to make him angry?" Mona said with a face full of tears.

When she saw who had left the ships, she did nothing but comply with their demands. After getting everything they wanted, that's when the rampage soon started. At that point, all Mona wanted to do was help the others; she wanted to do something to stop the cries and screams she heard behind her, but she remained still. Not wanting to anger the person in front of her.

She thought that even if everyone here disappeared, she would be safe. Why? Because she had a great power, but that great power was overshadowed. When the man touched her shoulder, he had already decided that she was not worth his time.

"Usually a new generation is stronger, but this time they are weaker."

Those were the last words she heard before her legs were burnt to a crisp.

"Please, someone, anyone, stop them!" Mona cried as her head went to the ground, and her vision faded to black.

A shadow soon stepped over her, but she had already passed out to notice.

"You and your power will be needed in the future, so you will not die here." The voice said, before picking up Mona, and leaving the area.

At this very moment, on the inner planet. The others now had their eyes set on those same people that had attacked above. When the doors opened from the Bree ship, the first person they could see stepping off it was a large muscular man with a scruffy grey beard and spiky grey hair. Behind him, there were two more as well, both blonde, handsome and beautiful.

The moment Owen saw who it was, he nearly dropped his fan to the floor. Instead, it moved away from his face and was now hanging by his side.

"Are they from the Bree family?" Oscar said, unsure, and thought that maybe Owen would know more, but looking at him, he could see the sweat running down his face and a panicked look. Before he knew it, Owen was bowing down.

'Bowing, the Greylash family? Who could this person be to cause them to bow down?' Oscar thought.

It was the same for both Quinn and Chris as they had never seen this man before, and he wasn't alone, as a blonde-haired woman and a blond-haired middle-aged pair came out behind him.

"No, no, no, what is he doing here!" Sil said as he suddenly went into a crouched position on the floor and started to rock back and forth. "He found me, he came for me, he's going to kill Quinn, he's going to kill everyone."

Logan, who was closest to Sil, could hear everything, and putting Sil's reaction together with the appearance of the other two, he had a bad feeling and hoped he wasn't right.

"Quinn, this man, can you feel it?" Chris whispered.

"Yeah I can." Quinn replied.

"He has more Qi radiating from his body than I have ever seen. Who is he?" Chris said.

Before, Quinn didn't realise the strange energy coming off everyone's bodies, but more people had a Qi infused body than they thought. Whether they were actively aware of that or not was a different story, but this sometimes set apart those stronger than others.

Some people could sometimes feel this as a certain type of aura, but what they actually felt was the Qi, as Qi would often shape and react to a person's emotions.

Knowing how strong the Qi this man had and the sheer amount in his body, Quin thought that maybe it was the Pure leader who had arrived, but Chris would have surely known what the Pure leader would have looked like, so it couldn't have been him.

"I came here to collect what is mine." The old man at the front said. "My name is Hilston Blade, and we are part of the Balde family."

Saying those words made Logan, Quinn and Chris act differently in that precise moment.

Chris had heard this name before, but it was passed around more as a myth within Pure.

'This is the guy, this is the guy Sil is so afraid of, the person who trapped him on that island!' Quinn thought, gripping his fist.

[Inspect]

[Inspect failed]

[No Quest has been given, no threat detected]

At that moment, Quinn wasn't fighting him or trying to live, so it made sense for the system not to have a quest for him, still, for his inspect skill that was now a high level just to fail, that was surprising, but there was something else that it did show him. Although it failed to bring up basic information, it didn't fail on bringing up the equipment stats for the gear he was wearing.

This was why Sil had acted like he had when first seeing Hilston. He knew what that equipment was before Quinn did. An armour coloured in a black and gold trim, almost demonic looking in design. It looked impressive on his body.

And it didn't just look impressive.

'Every single piece of equipment he has is at the demon tier level. How is that possible?' Quinn thought. Seeing that alone was telling him to try and get out of here, but could he even if he tried? Although he had no demon tier weapon, did that even matter?

According to Sil, Hilston was somewhat of a superhuman and now sensing the Qi from his body, Quinn could tell why. If he also had the added stats of the demon tier equipment and Sil's ability, this person was the strongest human to exist.

"My grandson, if you wanted to run away and hide, you should have done a better job. Your face was blasted all over from those reporters over there." Hilston said with a chuckle.

Hearing Hilston speak provided more clues to both Chris and Oscar of who this man was and why Owen was bowing down. If the family's blonde boy could do something like that, then the head of the family should be something special.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry." Sil kept repeating, now seeing the person they were all afraid of acting like that, they knew it was a serious problem.

'This bastard, look at Sil, how is it normal for your own family member to be that afraid of you.' Quinn thought, but these were just thoughts as he knew he wouldn't be able to do anything.

He was happy that the Bone claw was still recovering because if it could read his thoughts right now, it might have come out for an attack.

"I see that you guys are in the middle of a hunt. I know there are a few of you here who might not know me, but we are the ones that have controlled the Bree, Sunshield, and Graylash family from behind the scenes for a few generations now. We have hidden ourselves in secret, but a certain someone wanted to show off a little." Hilston said, looking in Sil's direction.

"So we have finally decided that we should have more of a presence around here. You two." Hilston said, pointing at Bonny and Void. "You are the reporters that filmed everything earlier, correct? Turn your camera on. It's time that everyone knew of the Blade family around here; record everything you can."

Although the words spoken by Hilston were calm, they felt like they needed to listen, and Void started turning on the camera.

'If they are here, did Brock come along with them, or is he still on the island?' Logan thought. Brock was one of the key workers on the Blade island that had let him go free. If it wasn't for him, he wasn't sure they would have ever escaped that place. He also had told Logan to keep looking, as if he was close when asking about Richard Eno.

"Well, what is everyone waiting for? Why don't we go on this hunt together." Hilston said, smiling.

\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 796: A fool never learns**

It was a weird reaction to say the least, but the only reason why it was working out between everyone and these two groups, was due to how quiet Chris and Quinn were being, and how cautious Oscar was. Owen, he was the tiebreaker between all of this. As soon as Hilston suggested going on a hunt, he stood forward, bowing just like before.

"It would be great to have you help us on a hunt," Owen said.

Oscar had noticed Owen's change in demeanour. Owen was a confident young person, who spoke freely whenever at the leader's table, but he wasn't doing so now, which made Oscar act cautious as well, on top of knowing that he was released to the blonde-haired boy somehow.

The whole group was on the move, just like before. This time, Bonny and Void were filming the whole thing. They were unable to go live where they were underground on the inner planet, but they would be able to post a video about it after.

Although Bonny and Void felt like they were forced to film, at the same time, she couldn't thank them enough for allowing them to film such a turn of events. After witnessing Sil's power, she became curious about his family background; she never expected them to turn up.

The two of them were walking off to the side filming everything, while the Blades were travelling at the back. This included Sil, who was walking along dragging his feet with his head down, standing next to his 'Mother' and 'father'. No one asked him to do this. He just naturally fell into place, and seeing Sil like this was just upsetting Quinn even more.

'I've worked so hard, I've improved so much, but still, everything is telling me that if I try to save Sil from them, I'm going to lose. I need to think of a way to bring back Sil with us, I can't lose him again.'

Logan was now travelling closer to Quinn and Chris; he felt more comfortable next to them, especially after the new people appeared.

"Quinn, I think it's best if we stay away from Sil for now, pretend we don't really have a relation to him. We don't know how much they know about Sil or why he left the island. They might not even care. I just feel like maybe part of the reason they are here, is because they're looking for the people who helped him escape from there, and if he finds out what we did, I'm sure he will have a great grudge." Logan explained.

Quinn agreed, but he was pretty sure that they had already been made a target, especially if they found out that they had taken in all the other kids from the island as well.

After fighting Sil's siblings, Quinn knew how strong the Blades were, so he thought he had a clear idea of the others strength. What he did not expect, was Hilston, Sil's grandpa, or technical father had four pieces of emperor tier gear on him, and the other two by their side were not weak either, with each of them wearing Demi-god tier armour.

The atmosphere was heavy in the group, as they soon realized that in the end, all these people were a group of strangers working together.

"The signal is not too far up ahead; it still hasn't moved. It probably is quite injured from the last fight." Logan said. "It shouldn't take much to finish off the demon tier beast."

As they were getting closer to the beast, Oscar needed to make things clear.

"Hilstion, being so strong, I was wondering why you never chose to show yourself to the military?" Oscar asked. "I understand you said you have come out now to look for your beloved grandson, but it seems like all the great power users knew about you apart from us?"

Chris was also interested in this. Pure had very little information on the Balde family; they just knew a greater power existed beyond the big four families and nothing else. All their attempts in getting an insider had failed.

"You should see it as a blessing you didn't know about us." Hilston said while laughing. "All of these only knew our family due to the pain of choosing us, the pain of trying to overthrow us, so in return they were punished for it. I hope you don't do the same."

When speaking his words, Hilston sounded so calm, but at the same time, they were a threat, and Owen knew what Hilston was talking about. Due to the big families all at one point trying to defeat the blades, they had been bound via a contract to have their stronger members become chained.

'If these Blades were so powerful, then my real question is, why didn't they join the war and try to help us fend off the Dalki?' Oscar thought with anger building inside him, even the other big four families, as arrogant as they were, had tried to defend earth. Yet, the Blades just sat back and did nothing?

Finally, they had left the jungle-like green and were now walking through tall grassy fields. Then up ahead on a large hilltop just like the area they were in before, a giant mud patch, where grass didn't grow. The large back of the crab could be

seen. Its wounds still had not healed from before, and black blood was pouring out from them.

Still, it was a distance away, but due to its sheer size, they could see it.

"Thank you for leading us to the demon tier beast; it will be nice to add another one to the collection." Hilston said, and the three of them picked up their pace and walked ahead of the others.

"Wait!" Oscar said. "We still haven't discussed the terms; I know you are powerful. I can see that, and I would be happy to invite you along to our hunt, but we have already made an agreement between the world leaders as to what to do with the demon tier weapon to be made. If you would like, I would be happy to add you to that agreement as long as everyone agrees, but we need to agree to these things beforehand."

Immediately, Hilston started to laugh.

"You expect me to be part of some deal? Have you gone mad? The Blade family take what they want from who they want. That demon crystal, once we kill the beast, is ours. I thought you would be smarter than this Oscar. I thought you were complying when you were leading us here, but now I see it was all just a big misunderstanding."

"You crazy old man!" Duke shouted at him. "You really think that we would just let you have the demon crystal. Why would we agree to such crazy terms? Maybe all of that hiding has made you go crazy!"

Duke had been holding it in for a while. He hated when others disrespected the military, and even more so when they did to Oscar. A family they never heard of before, they couldn't be that strong, was what was going through Duke's head. Oscar was just a cautious person and sometimes too nice.

"Crazy?" Hilston repeated, and the mother and father Blade stepped back, pulling Sil with them.

Owen was now sweating even more than before.

'This is it; this is what I feared; I now need to make a choice of what to do.'

There were rumours passed along the big families when they learned of the Blade family, and one of those rumours and rules was never to say the word crazy in front of the Blade family. Not only had they said that word, but Duke had directed it at him.

Everything happened too fast. No one was able to react or see a thing. Suddenly, Duke's body was on the floor, his neck twisted at a weird angle, and his eyes gone.

The person standing over him, who was standing a few meters away just moments ago, was now standing over Duke's body with his hand held out in a grabbing position.

"Oh, I think it broke easier than a toy?" Hilston said.

Looking at Duke on the floor, Quinn could tell with his inspect skill, Duke was dead. His neck snapped in front of everyone there.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 797: Hilston vs the hero of war

Some of them had closed their eyes for just a second and when they opened them, the whole scene had changed. It seemed so out of the blue, so unexpected. Hilston had been calm, talking the whole time to them all. Did Duke sound rude when he spoke up? Sure, but usually one would argue for some time or have some type of disagreement before it led to this

Those watching never thought Hilston would result in killing Duke.

Although Quinn wanted to be the one to kill Duke and thought he had gotten what he deserved, Quinn felt like they now had something bigger to worry about.

'He killed him, just like that? In front of everyone, what's going to happen now?' He thought.

Just as expected, that single action had soon caused a chain reaction of events. The ground was lifted where Hilston was standing, two large walls holding and trapping him in place, soon after Oscar had swung his sword and activated the first skill.

A tunnel made of ice came beaming out towards Hilston. Expecting him to dodge or avoid this attack, Oscar was watching carefully ready to strike with his sword. Instead Hilston stood there and as the ice had gotten extremely close to his body, it started to melt by the second until there was just a pool of water where the tunnel would have been.

"The fire ability from the Sunshield family, they're still alive?" Oscar said. He had received information on the Sunshield's demise but had no clue what had happened to them. Now, knowing what type of ability the kid and his family held, all sorts of thoughts were running through his head.

Still, even if Burnie had been captured by the Blade family, the question was how was Hilston's fire ability so strong that it was even able to overpower his demon tier active skill?

"That idiot's ability has become quite handy in more ways than one." Hilston said.  
"That fool was also considered one of your leaders, correct? Unfortunately he didn't quite live up to his name. If this is the power of the leaders, then the human race deserves to become extinct."

From the start Oscar wanted to avoid this conflict if possible, but from this man's actions which were so rash, even killing Duke, he knew if a person like this was placed near the top it would be doom for the human race. His words just then had convinced him even more.

This wasn't just a fight to avenge Duke's death, this was a fight for the whole sake of humanity. Gripping his Demon sword tightly, it was the only thing he could safely rely on at this time.

Oscar took a step forward planning to move in when he saw a spark of blue light coming towards him. At the last second he was able to twist his sword and take the attack. Now coating his sword in blue streaks of lightning, he could see it was the Graylash's power. However. Oscar was unprepared, he hadn't coated his arm in earth, and from the sword the power was running up and down his arm, but he stood there as if it didn't affect him and allowed the ground to slowly cast over him.

'This person is just like that kid, but he should be more experienced so I have to be careful.' Oscar thought.

When the lightning died down from the sword, Oscar moved again, ready this time. Even if Hilston was in a secret position of power, hardly anyone knew the weapons abilities and Oscar wanted to use this information against him.

When the lightning attack came towards him again, this one was more powerful and larger than before. Two huge lightning bolts came towards him at lightspeed.

'The first one a warning shot to see how I deal with it, then the second one to show me your true strength. That's just perfect.' Oscar said as he placed his sword on the ground activating the third skill, the ice barrier.

It raised up in time and started to glow as the sword was stuck into the barrier. When the lightning bolts hit the barrier, it stayed there for a few seconds before being reflected back. Now the powerful attack was being used against Hilston, and it would be slightly stronger than before.

Following up the attack, Oscar moved in thinking that it wouldn't be enough to finish him.

"I didn't activate all of the demon tier weapons aura before, but I'm going to need every bit of your power, so please help me!" Oscar said, as he went from one side of the field he was on, to the other faster than before.

The bolt of lightning had hit Hilston first and rather than being flung back or trying to avoid the attack, Hislton just stood there. However Oscar didn't care as he swung his sword down with his full strength and speed.

Before his sword had struck Hilston, his eyes widened and his sword was stopped as it was grabbed by Hilston's bare hand.

'He's... he's completely fine, even though he was hit directly by his own strike, I saw it, but he looks unhurt.'

Now that Oscar was closer, he could see the black and gold armour better and seeing how well he took the attack, there was only one thing running through his mind.

'It can't be, he's wearing demon tier armour.'

"This weapon is strong, but it seems you rely on its power too much." Hilston said. "You have neglected training yourself and at the same time you forget that abilities, are king."

A heavy blow from Hilston was delivered right into Oscar's stomach. It was so strong he had expected to go flying, but instead his back was hit against a wall and he sent through not one but multiple, slowing him down. It also allowed the punch to do far more damage than usual, as the full force of the punch had been received.

'This person, they're not human.' Was the thought running through Oscar's head as he was sent flying.

When his body did finally land on the floor, it didn't stay there for long as a pillar made from earth rose from the ground and hit him on the back, lifting him up above the ground. Before he knew it, a large fire ball was in front of him chasing him back down to the ground.

Using his strength, Oscar managed to activate the second skill of the sword, the fire started to slightly freeze, but it was stronger than he thought and had still hit him. The fireball slammed him into the ground before the flames eventually diminished.

He was hurt, badly hurt but Oscar was a strong one. He dug his sword into the ground and used it to lift himself up.

'How can I beat him? If he uses lightning, then my earth ability should give me the edge, but he has multiple abilities. He can switch to fire, which is strong against ice, and can even use the earth skill better than me. On top of that he is physically stronger and the other two by his side haven't even joined the fight yet.'

Watching the whole thing, Bonny and Void's eyes were filled with tears. They were capturing everything they could, expecting it to be a fight of high skill. Void had upped the frame rate on his camera, and later he could capture as much as he could.

The reason their eyes were filled with tears though, was because of Oscar, the war hero of earth was being toyed with. Even if they didn't like what the military had done, everyone had to thank Oscar for what he had done in the war.

They had seen recordings of how he fought against the Dalki and now for him to be treated like so, barely able to do anything against another, was devastating.

"Why are you guys just standing there?" Bonny said. "Watching with your eyes wide open! I know this is selfish and stupid of me to say and ask, because me and

"Void can't do anything, but you guys are the strongest earth has to offer right? Then do something, can't you see, if nothing is done by that man, then ....then... Please...Just help him." She said falling to her knees.

So far no one else had joined in, Oscar was the only one that had acted so soon after Duke's death. They were overwhelmed by the power they had seen.

"Armour skill, activate." Oscar said, and his chest piece started to glow green.  
"This will help me heal, but it will take some time."

But time was something Oscar didn't have, as two even larger lightning bolts were sent his way. He was too injured to move and the active skill of his chest piece hadn't healed him enough yet. Looking at his sword, he could see the red ring was only half way being off cooldown.

He raised an earth wall, but the lightning bolt went right through it, not slowing down.

"I've finally made my decision." A voice over Oscar's shoulder was heard.

A metal fan was seen pointing outward from a hand, and out of it came another strike of lightning hitting Hilston's and slowing it down.

"Owen, thank you," Oscar said.

"Recover and we will fight him together. I had planned to do this at some point, and I can't see any other time where we have a better chance of beating the brute."

Still, even with Owen's lightning power and Oscar's earth from before, he was being overpowered. That was until someone else had joined in, attacking the same spot Owen did increasing his power.

A large bang of sparks erupted, and all of the lightning had disappeared.

"Oh Sil." Hilston said. "I couldn't have been happier, it looks like what Vicky and Pai said were true, you have finally gotten your powers back. But I didn't think you would be using them against me."

Oscar didn't know what was happening or why the blonde haired boy from before was fighting against his own family, but he was welcoming it.

"I never thought I would be helping the military." Another voice said. "But I have a feeling if we don't kill that guy, he's going to snap all our necks like he did to that other dude." Chris said as he stood by Oscar's side as well.

It seems Like Bonny's plea had hit a lot of them, and they had all come to their senses. As everyone was willing to join in the fight, all accept for one, which was Quinn.

He was still standing by the side doing nothing.

'Is he really not going to join this fight?' Bonny thought.

However, Fex, who had opted to not get involved in a fight between these giant powers, looked at Quinn and was wondering just what he was up to.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 798: Another Monster

Some of the strongest people on earth were all teaming up to face one man, and in that team of people, Sil had joined their side as well. The one who had managed to convince him, was Logan in the end.

During the fight, Logan had managed to snatch Sil slightly away from his family, and through his own words he made Sil think.

"Sil, you know what's going to happen if Hilston beats them all, right? Quinn isn't strong enough to take on your grandfather, it's just not possible." Logan said. "But with you, they might have a chance."

Sil looked over to his father and mother who hadn't joined the fight and then his grandfather looking at Oscar with a smile. That smile started to build up a slight anger in him. It was because of him he lost all of those close to him but whenever he thought about fighting, that anger started to turn into fear and his hands started to shake again.

"Sil!" Logan snapped. "We saved you once, we risked our lives to break you out of there and if it wasn't for you back then, we all would have been dead as well."

But last time Sil had Vorden and Raten by his side supporting him, this time, he was on his own.

"When your grandfather finds out that we were the ones that took you from that island and hurt all of his people on his precious island, do you think he will let us live? Do you think he'll let Quinn go peacefully?"

The answer to all those questions were clear, and that was when Sil finally plucked up the courage to fight against his own grandfather.

'Quinn, even if you are too afraid to fight, I will protect you this time.' Sil thought as he looked over to Quinn.

Bonny was also looking at Quinn, wondering why he wasn't joining in the fight, even the stranger who had been claimed as part of Pure had joined. Instead, Quinn was just standing there. As for Fex, if Quinn wasn't going to go in, then Fex wasn't going to either. At the end of the day Fex was a vampire, who owed Quinn, not the human race.

Besides, Fex wondered how much he could really help anyway.

'Why isn't my inspect skill giving me a quest. It has come up before no matter how hard the task was, even against Pai and Vicky, so why not against Hilston?' Quinn thought.

'Is that what you're telling me system, are you telling me that it's impossible?'

The others didn't even have time to notice that Quinn was just standing off to the side because they were more worried about the monster in front of them.

"Oscar, I need to borrow your power." Sil said as he approached him. Not moving away, Oscar let Sil press his hand against his body.

Oscar knew the highest chance of beating this man was with the kid and he was going to do what he could to protect him. The green glow around his armour had gone away and his body was fully healed, however, he wouldn't be able to use the active skill again for a while, and was doubtful if Hilston would even give him the chance to.

"I'm going to scratch up that old man's armour just like I did against that crab!" Chris shouted as he charged forward and extended both his blades, swinging them coming towards Hilston at both sides.

At the right time, Hilston with the bottom of his hand, slammed both of the blades into the ground. His Qi body was even stronger than the Qi that Chris could produce and his strength from the Demon tier armour would always out weigh whatever stats Chris's weapon gave him.

Soon after, a flash of blue lightning appeared by Hilston's side as Owen had transported himself right next to him. Acting fast, Hilston fired out his own lightning strikes towards Owen. Throwing his fan on the ground, the lightning was suddenly drawn to the fan causing no harm to him, and now Owen was able to attack Hilston.

However, a dome of earth was quickly risen above Hilston while the others were busy blocking any of the attacks. When the dome came down he was nowhere to be seen.

"Is this how you do it?" Hilston said, coming down like a lightning bolt himself, he was behind Owen and had grabbed him on the shoulder, slamming him onto the ground. With his other fist covered in flames he was ready to finish Owen off.

Before he landed his hit, the ground started to shift underneath Owen until he was covered in a box made of earth, he was moved back over to where Sil and Oscar were standing.

Chris, lifting up his weapon again, tried to strike Hilston. This time Hilston had grabbed the blades, then swinging the weapon, he managed to lift up Chris' whole body up off the ground and slammed him back down. Before he tried to get up, four strikes of lightning in a row were thrown out, keeping him on the floor.

The ones watching from the side had seen it all, what Hilston had done was far more impressive than the ones fighting knew, because during the whole time while

they were fighting, Sil was firing his lightning bolts at Hilston, yet not a single one had hit.

Sil needed to stay far back, because he didn't have super speed or good armour to give him extra stats, but now he couldn't even hit him with lightning.

"Owen." Hilton said. "I'm surprised you agreed to join up with them, I always thought you were the smartest of the other leaders. Especially when I took your dear grandfather. Don't you care for his life?"

Owen, getting out from the earth box Sil had created looked hurt, but was still well enough to continue fighting.

"Do you really not understand?" Owen said. "When you captured my grandfather his life was already over. I'm sure some of the chained you have would rather be dead than kept alive, and I don't want to live in fear from you or anyone else. If we have any chance of beating you, now would be the only ideal situation for it."

Hilstion started to laugh.

"Look, two of you are gravely injured, one of you is hurt from before, and I haven't had a scratch on me. To me it makes no difference fighting you together or one at a time. Maybe you have confidence because my grandson is on your side, but let me tell you why you can never beat me Sil." Hilston said, turning to look at Sil, and looking right into his eyes.

"There are three reasons why. Firstly, even if we both can copy the same abilities, I'm better at using them than you with my years of experience. Secondly, you never completed the training on the island, maybe then you would be somewhat of a threat, but you have a body that isn't even comparable with your mother and father let alone me. And finally, you can store more abilities than me Sil, I can tell by the power of the abilities that you have returned to your former self. But there is a difference between the abilities I have and the ones you have, and that is quality."

After his speech, he fired off a large blue lightning bolt more powerful than any others and Sil out of reaction had done the same. When the two hit though, there was a clear winner as it continued to push forward against the other lightning strike.

Before the strike had hit, the ice barrier was raised up once again, but it was only a repeat of last time. Even when the strike was returned, it had hit Hilston's chest piece and had no effect whatsoever.

"Now, what was the point in that, you have only delayed your passing." Hilston said.

When the ice barrier went down, there was one more person that was now with them who wasn't there before. A kid with black curly hair.

"Oh, and who is this?" Hilston said.

"According to the information father, he is one of the new leaders." The mother Blade spoke.

"A new leader, and you think you joining now will change the tide somehow, right, you are all idiots."

"No." Quinn said. "I don't think even me joining would help us win. To put it simply, I think you're a monster that can't be beat."

Hilston smiled at these words, he thought monster was quite a powerful sounding phrase and this boosted his ego.

"However, I know more than one monster exists and to defeat a monster, I just need to call another monster."

By now, Chris had recovered enough to look at what Quinn was doing. His second stage of Qi and great body had helped him survive the lightning attacks. He knew Quinn's strength, at least he thought he did, and thought that there was no point in Quinn joining in, he should have ran off while the others were fighting...

'So then, why does he have this much confidence?'

Placing his hand on the ground, a shadow started to spread out on the floor. While observing Quinn also noticed something else about Hilston, he would give the others plenty of time to show their power. This man was crazy, all he wanted was a strong opponent, which was why he was always waiting for them.

And he knew that Hilston would now do the same.

When the shadow was spread out across the floor, it started to bubble up, and soon a figure could be seen rising through it. A tall long black haired man, who wielded a chained sword on his back.

Seeing this, Fex fell over on his back side.

"Arthur!"

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 799: You have to live

Bodies of those from the great families were scattered on the surface. All of it done by the one and only Blade family. Some of them upon seeing the old man didn't know it would be the last thing they saw before they moved on from this world.

They were fighting for peace, fighting against the Dalki, but they never expected to be fighting against an unknown enemy. When attacking those on the surface Hilston was sloppy, some would think this wasn't in line with what the Blades did in the past.

The truth was, Hilston was always sloppy, leaving traces of the Blade family behind wherever he went, there were plenty of witnesses that had seen his power before, yet no one outside the big families knew who the Blades really were. Why? Because someone was always there to cover their tracks, to silence those that knew about them.

The problem was this time, it was too big to silence, too many people were involved, and the Blades were making it clear - they were now getting involved in this mess. They were no longer hiding.

Because of Hilston's sloppiness, there were a few unexpected survivors. It was those that were stronger than he thought, those that were a little more special than regular humans. One of the first ones who had come to and body was slowly healing was Sam.

Sam had remained on the surface hoping to provide help or information if Quinn had ever needed it. He wasn't a great fighter and he hadn't learnt an ability yet. However, his body was slowly healing enough to keep him alive, but not enough to get his body back to the way it used to be.

His legs were still broken in places and several burn marks were visible on his body. Looking up, opening his eyes, he was trying to see if anyone was alive.

"Nate... Dennis... Paul... are you guys okay?" These were the others that had remained on the surface along with him. They too weren't much against the Balde family, but then again no one was a match for them.

One of the others that fared better though, was Paul. His arms were still intact, even though the bottom half of his body had been crushed.

'I can't die here.' Paul thought. 'Everyone is still alive waiting for me to come back, and what would Hayley do, she still doesn't know the truth.' Thinking about his daughter, he was worried for her. She had remained back at the ship with the rest.

After witnessing what Hilston had done, it would have been easy for him to have destroyed the other ships and everyone on board as well. The strongest members

were there with him on the hunt. All he could do was hope that they hadn't gone there first.

'What if she's alive, what is she hanging on just like me?' With these thoughts running through his mind, Paul dragged himself across the floor, putting one hand in front of the other and digging into the hard ground.

Using his hardened nails, he dug into the icy surface and pulled himself towards the closest body. The person was already dead, but what Paul needed was something else.

He had never taken blood directly this way before but he had no choice. Digging his fangs into the veins of one of the dead bodies, he started sucking the blood into his throat. A tingly sensation was felt all over his body and from there it didn't take long for his legs to heal.

His legs were only crushed and his limbs weren't torn. Still, if he was a regular human he would have already died from blood loss. When his body finally healed, he looked around and could see someone nearby who was struggling, trying to lift themselves off from the ground. That person was none other than Sam.

Grabbing another body, Paul brought over another body and dropped it in front of Sam.

"Drink up, you're like me, right. So it should heal you." Paul said. "I don't know where my flask went and I'm guessing you lost yours in the fight as well."

It didn't take long and Sam didn't really have to think about it, before he had dug his fangs into the body in front of him. Just like Paul, his body was soon healing and he was able to walk like before.

"My flask was completely destroyed." Sam said. "What about the others, have you checked if they are okay?"

"The Cursed faction members that were around me at the time, well they were all dead. But I haven't had the time to check everyone here yet." Paul replied while looking at all the bodies. It was reminiscent of scenes he saw during the war, something he didn't expect to see here too, especially not done by another human.

With their search for any survivors they found a few, but their conditions were always unfavourable. They mostly were in so much pain they were asking to be killed, or would soon die anyway.

For those that were like this, Paul using his poison ability was able to give them a painless death. When Sam was searching he had his best friend in mind. When they first had gotten off the ship, Nate had managed to grab onto Hilston's arm and activated his soul weapon slowly solidifying it with his hardening ability.

They soon found out that Hilston allowed that to happen, even with his arm heavier than usual, the old man was still able to move it just as fast and had hit Nate away, from that single punch Sam didn't see him get up again.

He was hoping that maybe he had activated his hardening skill in time and would still be alive, but it was difficult to tell. Multiple craters from different abilities being used were all over the place, and if Nate hadn't recovered, he could have been hit by one of those as well, the same as what happened to Sam. The only difference was, Sam wasn't human.

Eventually, the two of their searches allowed them to find the two Cursed members they were looking for, Dennis and Nate. They were still alive, but were in horrible conditions.

Moving them and carrying them to the side they were wondering if there was anything they could do, but just like the others they were soon to both die.

"I think the only thing I can do is make them pass away peacefully just like the others." Paul said with regret. At first he didn't really care for the Cursed faction, but they did start to grow on him as he spent more time with them.

In particular, he was close to Dennis who was closer to his age, they had a lot more in common.

'Is this my fate, to always let people down at the last hurdle?' He thought.

Sam was equally feeling as bad, he had tried talking to Nate but his jaw from where he had been punched was shattered, and it looked like he was hardly responsive at all.

"If it's the only thing we can do, then I guess we should do it." Sam regretfully said as tears fell from his cheek and onto the floor.

"There is one more thing the two of you can do." A voice said.

They both turned their heads to try and see where the voice was coming from, but they couldn't see anybody. They both knew from their reactions that they were hearing the same thing, so it couldn't have been in their heads.

"Just like someone did to you, to make your bodies stronger, you can do the same to them. You two are strong enough to create another." The voice continued to speak.

"Who are you!" Sam shouted. "Show yourself, why should we listen to someone who is hiding themselves?"

"It's up to you two to listen to me or not, but you know that this can save their lives, and the man who did this to all of you has gone underneath. I fear the same fate

will have fallen to your friends as well. The least you could do is save the very lives in front of you." The voice explained as it slowly faded away and the two of them could feel that the presence was gone.

They thought about it for a few seconds and they understood what the voice was saying.

'To do to them the same thing that Quinn once did to us? He wants us to turn them, but is that even possible?' Sam thought.

He remembered the tales Quinn would tell about the vampire world, whether or not it was possible, it was certainly illegal via vampire law, but did that really matter. Was the law or his friend's life really more important?

Nearly at the same time, the two of them slit their arms, and started to pour their own blood down the other two cursed members' throats.

"You guys have to live!" They both shouted, as the ritual for the turning had begun.

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 800: Two extra

Normally, just letting a human consume blood from a vampire wasn't enough to turn someone. If blood from a vampire was accidentally consumed by a human, it wouldn't turn them. One couldn't just carry vampire blood around them, and turn people as they wished.

What would need to take place was a blood ritual, the activation process of turning a human into a vampire, and that started with the human consuming the blood. Both Paul and Sam had no clue how to activate the blood ritual, their only knowledge was what they had been through themselves via Quinn.

And Sam wasn't too sure Quinn knew either, since he would activate via the system he used.

However, someone was telling them everything they needed to do step by step, the same voice that reached out to them from before. They could feel the strange energy inside them activate and resonate, as if their bodies were linked to the two in front of them, and just like before, the process of them being turned had begun.

"I can't believe the ritual actually worked, it looks like they might pull through this," said Sam. He was now worried about something else. He was worried about just what both of them would turn into.

Based on all the people Quinn had turned so far, and their situations, the most likely answer was they would turn into undead types due to the situation they were in. It was also possible that they were just more likely to turn into these and could turn into something else, but all of this was based on when Quinn turned people.

Right now for the first time, Sam and Paul, two regular vampires, were turning others. Sam was actually originally a halfling but through fighting and spending time with the others, he eventually evolved, and he was thankful he did. Otherwise, the process they were going through now might have not been possible.

Looking over at Paul, he could see sweat running down his face, and he would guess that he was feeling the same thing Sam was feeling as well. While the ritual was going on, and the others were screaming in pain, a huge amount of energy was being felt coming from them too.

"You two are only regular vampires." The mysterious voice said. "It will drain you. You are not a vampire leader or a direct descendant, most likely turning one person will be your limit."

Thinking about this, when Quinn turned others he seemed completely fine, as a vampire leader just how many people could he actually turn before he felt like these two right now? Another question was what of the people they turned. Would

they be loyal to Quinn like Sam and Paul were? Or would they now be under their command.

These were questions Sam wanted to ask, but he was afraid of relying on the mysterious voice too much, and whether this whole thing would eventually be a trap of some sort. There was a risk and reward to doing this, and Sam had calculated it was worth the risk to save their lives.

'Nate, I know you would never have wanted Quinn to turn you. You would have thought of it as outside help, you might even lose your precious ability you worked so hard on perfecting your whole life. But you will forgive me, right? You will understand that living is a much better life than death.'

"You still have a lot to do, not just by helping Quinn's but helping make your own legacy in this world.' Nate thought

Finally after a good while, the strange energy the two of them could feel that was sapping away from their bodies, was gone, and the screams and turns from Nate and Dennis was starting to fade.

Eventually, when the pain through their bodies was no longer there, they could feel that their wounds had healed from before. Slowly the two of them were coming to and they could see the others in front of them.

They could remember everything that happened moments before, they were conscious for the whole thing. Nate even remembered trying to talk to Sam, but now he was completely fine.

"What magic is this?" Nate said as he went to touch his face, and noticed that his jawline felt a lot more smoother compared to before. His blocky square hair felt softer, and his whole body felt slightly lighter.

"I feel so fresh, I feel so alive, did you guys have healing abilities, what's with that blood you gave us?" Nate asked.

Rather than asking questions the first thing that Dennis did was get on his knees and placed his head on the floor.

"Thank you for saving my life. I thought I was okay with dying. But when I felt there was a way to live again, I grabbed on and pulled onto it. Thank you, thank you." Dennis said.

"I guess I should thank you too man." Nate said. "Sorry, I was just so shocked I forgot to show my appreciation."

"You two might want to hold you thanks for now." Sam said.

Both Paul and Sam went into a brief introduction of what had just happened to them, and what they now were. They were shocked, surprised, but at the same time

had thought something was up for a while, they just never thought it would be something like this, a whole secret race separate from humans hiding in the dark.

There wasn't enough time to go through the whole history of what Quinn had been through and the others, but they'd explained a little about Kaz and the others' situation, who were already turned.

For a second Nate was silent, and Sam was worried how he was taking it all.

"I'm sorry Nate, I know you didn't want any help." Said Sam.

Placing his hand on Sam's shoulder, he looked up and had a gentle smile.

"Don't be sorry, you idiot, you saved my life. Why would I be ungrateful and hate you for something like that? I'm not an idiot, Would I have liked to have accomplished things myself, of course, but how the hell am I meant to do that if I'm dead. And I couldn't die before getting a date you know that."

"Hey wait a second!" Nate suddenly shouted as if he was excited, he touched his face again, and ran his fingers through his hair, he then turned to look at Dennis.

"It's true, his clear skin, his robust facial features, his soft gentle eyes. He's gotten more handsome!" Nate said with excitement. "Does that mean, does it mean..." Nate said as he continued to point at himself.

"Haha," Sam chuckled. "I'm not really the one to judge you on that, but you can see for yourself when we get a mirror."

"I do have a question to ask." Dennis said. "You said they were different types of vampires, so what are we?"

Sam tried to look at them to see if he could figure it out. They weren't any stand out features but one could never be too sure. In the end, they would have to wait for Quinn to let them know.

Now with everything explained the group needed to decide what to do next. They were unable to turn others, and everyone they had found was now dead. They were the only survivors of the whole thing.

"Who was that guy from before?" Sam asked.

"I don't know." Paull replied. "But could you smell it? he had the same smell as us. Who ever was helping us through that whole thing, they were a vampire as well."

Other than the smell, Sam already knew that, the person seemed to be quite the knowledgeable one as they explained everything very clearly to the two of them. The question was, why or who was trying to help them out, and why did they leave and not show themselves?

They both knew that vampires had very strict laws, and surely them two, not being vampire leaders turning people without permission from the leader was against a type of law, not that Quinn would have said no, or not given them permission anyway.

"What should we do now?" Nate asked, still touching his new smooth face.

"I guess we have two choices, there are still two smaller ships here that were brought over from the main group." Said Sam. "We can either use them to go down and search for Quinn, or head back to see if the others are okay."

"You guys can do what you want." Paul said. "But I have to head back to the others first before doing anything else. I know Quinn might be in trouble, but there might be others like you two that need saving."

'I'll go with you.' Dennis said.

"Don't worry we will all go." Sam said. 'Honestly I know Quinn might need our help, but I don't know how much we could even do to help him.'

"Who was that monster, will Quinn even be okay against them?" Nate asked.

"I'm not sure, but Quinn usually has a few things up his sleeve that he even hides from us from time to time. I just hope what he has is something big enough."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 801: Summoning the great

Total confusion would be a word to describe the look on the faces that were staring at the mysterious man who had just appeared. Out of the shadow that Quinn had cast on the ground, a man started to rise through the fields.

"Have you seen this guy before?" Bonny asked.

"No, I don't think we have any details of anyone looking like that or using a weapon that looks similar. How did he get here? Was it to do with Quinn's ability?" Void replied.

Many of the others were wondering the same thing, but there was a lot that they didn't know about the shadow. It was a mysterious ability that they had seen lock people, transport them, move them, as well as block attacks, so something like this could have been quite possible.

"Arthur, what is he doing here!" Fex said, still shocked by the whole thing. "How, how did Quinn even manage to bring him over? Is this what he was doing the whole time?"

When Quinn realized that the system hadn't even given him any type of quest, even one to survive, he was starting to lose hope. Seeing Hilston's equipment tier and displays of abilities just showed what he could do.

Desperate to get out of this situation in any way possible, Quinn could only think of one person that might have stood a chance against Hilston. Arthur, the question was how Quinn would summon him and get him to help fight.

Arthur didn't know Quinn that well. He had protected him against the other vampire leaders at the time, but it seemed like that was out of misunderstanding more than anything. Arthur didn't really have a reason to help Quinn other than the fact that the two of them shared the same ability.

Still, what else could Quinn do? So, he tried to activate his shadow skill once more. Suppose Arthur was using his shadow ability, or any other shadow users out there were using a shadow ability. In that case, Quinn should have been able to tell where they were from the skill, Shadow link.

What came as a surprise was that he had found a connection when using the skill this time, and it was none other than Arthur himself.

Unknown to Quinn, Arthur used his shadow abilities to set up a shadow clone in the Shelter. If the shadow clone were active, it would also count as Arthur using his ability. Arthur did this so he could use the shadow link ability and travel to his shadow at any point and time, regardless of where he was.

The skill acted like some type of shadow portal. When the link was made with Arthur, he could feel that someone had connected with him with the same ability. Knowing that there was only one other person, Arthur could only assume it was Quinn.

Each person who did a link and connected would feel slightly different. Arthur could remember using the link the first time on Quinn and could remember what it felt like.

Usually, when one would make the connection like Quinn did, they would be the one to sink through the shadow and teleport to them. However, Quinn did not do this despite creating a link. Arthur certainly found this strange.

Quinn did have the choice if he wanted to, to go over to where Arthur was, escape from Hilston and the other Blades, but then what about the rest? Once travelling to Arthur, there would be no way for him to return, and unlike other skills, shadow link was something only Quinn could use himself.

Not being able to communicate through the link itself, Quinn kept the active link on, and the longer it was kept on, the more Arthur started to become curious.

'Is he trying to call me over?' Arthur thought at the time.

If that was the case, then there were a few possibilities. Either Quinn was in trouble; he had found the first king or possibly another shadow user or something that needed Arthur's aid.

At this point and time, Arthur was not too busy. If his shadow clone was up, he could always come back, so he thought there was no harm in him coming over through the shadow, and it looked like he had been thrown into the middle of a battle.

"I was kind of hoping I wasn't going to be thrown into the middle of the battlefield." Said Arthur glancing at Quinn, who was behind him.

"I'm sorry, Arthur, this person, he's too strong, I don't even know if you can beat him," Quinn mumbled at the end.

"Hey what the hell!" Arthur complained. "You bring me here, and then you say you don't even know if I can beat him, so you are basically trying to get me killed."

He took a deep sigh and looked at those in front of him, there was no way for Arthur to gauge their strength off a simple look, and he had not done such a thing in a long time. He couldn't even remember when there was a need to know how strong his opponent was.

"Well, while I'm here, I guess I can help you, that's what we Punishers are meant to do after all." Arthur said as he looked at Hilston in his armour.

"Useless flies keep on popping up out of nowhere." Hilston said. "You seem to think because there are more of you, you have some type of chance of winning."

The whole time Arthur stood opposite him, he had his arms folded; his sword was still on his back. It was clear Arthur was not taking this too seriously.

"Arthur, this person is strong." Quinn said, heading another warning.

"Strong, well, you're pretty strong yourself. So if you called me, he has to be strong," Arthur replied.

Not waiting around any more and as a test, Hilston fired a dual lightning bolt towards Arthur, holding both of his hands together, but before it could reach them, the shadow from the ground rose up, blocking it.

Although Arthur still had his arms folded, his calm expression changed.

"You guys move out of the way, he is strong."

The others split up into two groups and moved to the left and to the right. Then when the shadow was lowered, Arthur moved out of the way of the sped-up lightning bolts. Hilston now continued to fire lightning bolts, and Arthur would move the shadow blocking them each time.

'I know how powerful Hilston's attacks must be.' Quinn thought. 'If I tried blocking one of these attacks, then my MC points would have already been at zero, but Arthur is blocking so many of them.'

Hilstion, who was continuing to attack with the thunderbolts, started to think along the same lines. He had thought that the shadow was being used as some shield, but if a shield was needed to block a strong attack, then it would use up a lot of MC, and there should be no human other than his family that had such a huge amount of Mc points.

After blocking more strikes, the lighting finally stopped from Hilston.

"Oh, are you finally going to do something different, I'm surprised you can keep up attacks that strong for so long." Arthur said.

Hilstion, who had been quite talkative up to this point, was quieter than before.

"How can you have such a large MC pool, or is it your ability?" Hilston said, his expression soon changed into a smile as he thought he had found someone strong for once.

And the stronger his opponent was, he could use that against them, by taking their MC level and points.

A mass amount of shadow started to form along Arthur's back, slowly building up, making a particular shape. Just like last time, Quinn knew what this was. Arthur was making his large shadow wings on his back.

When the shadow was finished expanding, the wings themselves were ten times the size of Arthur.

"When you have lived for thousands of years, taking other people's shadow, your powers grow a little bit." Arthur said.

Excited more than ever, Hilston slammed his two fists together, causing significant vibrations in the air each time he did so. His black and golden armour started to light up as well as if it were glowing.

"Is he only activating the beast aura now to aid himself." Quinn thought as he could sense Hilston's body getting stronger than it was once before.

It looked like they hadn't seen Hilston use all of his strength, but Quinn hadn't seen all of Arthur use his either. Although Quinn wanted to stay and watch the fight, he was worried, worried if Arthur couldn't finish the job.

If there was anything he could do to help, there was one thing. He looked off in the distance where the demon tier crab could be seen, still recovering. Even though it should have been able to sense or hear the fighting going on, it should have moved.

Just as Logan said, it was gravely injured and on its last legs.

'I have to try.'

While the two were fighting, Quinn thought his time would best be used to get the Demon tier crystal and complete the quest. When completing the quest, his evolution should begin, and as a vampire lord, he also should gain some new strength.

With his goal in sight, before moving, Quinn had a few last words.

"Good luck Arthur."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 802: Chains dropped

The others were off to the side, looking at both Hilston and Arthur. Even the Mother and Father Blade had stepped away from Hilston, fearing that they might get caught up in what was about to go down.

Most of the leaders had minor injuries, and surprisingly, Chris was able to recover relatively quickly thanks to his Qi, Oscar due to his chest piece, and Owen hadn't really been hurt much but was the most hurt out of all of them, grabbing onto his shoulder.

"That person can use the shadow ability as well." Oscar said, seeing how easily the attacks were blocked. "The question is, will he be strong enough to turn the tides."

They looked at Sil, who although he hadn't been hurt, was now almost gasping for air on his knees. Even before meeting Hilston, he had been fighting a lot, using nearly all his powers to help them.

'I wonder why the boy appears so weak when the other one seems to be fine?' Oscar thought.

However, Oscar was unaware of how the ability worked. Due to the chained that Hilston collected, he had gathered a lot more MC points and stronger level abilities than Sil had. That's what Hilston meant by quality of abilities.

"The black-haired man's demeanour hasn't changed. Although he is more serious, he is unafraid even after taking his attacks." Owen commented as he observed Arthur's body language. "I think he will be fine. What we need to worry about are the others."

Trying to not get hurt, they had gone away from where Arthur and Hilston was. They were still in the open field, where everyone could be seen clearly and walking towards them were two others.

"I think these two might be here to finish the job." Chris said as he looked at the mother and father Blade walking towards them.

Swinging his sword and gripping the hilt tightly one more time, Oscar was ready for another battle. "It's been a long time since I've felt like an underdog in a fight. Since coming here, it has felt like the war against the Dalki all over again. I guess I have been too relaxed lately. If there is a chance that man can defeat the old man, then the least we could do was take out these guys."

Although they didn't know who the stranger was that had come to their aid, both Oscar and Owen had an unknown confidence in Arthur. Most of this stemmed from Quinn. They had seen how useful and strong his shadow ability was. He had told

them he had found the ability book, which meant someone else had to have known how to use the shadow in the past.

For Quinn to know this person, the others were thinking that this was Quinn's master, especially judging by how much more shadow he could control.

Arthur stood there with his two large wings made from shadows on his back. One of the wings fell to the floor, looking like it was almost melting, and when it touched the ground, it started to spread outward.

Not knowing what it was, Hilston tried to attack it, setting the shadow on fire. When that didn't work, he switched to using his lightning, and trying to move the earth around it, but it would still spread across the floor. He first allowed the shadow to briefly touch his foot and slowly touch the other parts of his body. When he realized it had no effect, he was less concerned.

Still, on Arthur's left side, the large shadow wing remained.

"Your ability might be strong." Hilston said, "But let's see how you are physically."

Using his own body's natural strength, with the beast armours power, Hilston lifted off from one foot and had covered the entire distance in an instant. This had come as a huge surprise to Arthur, who still had his arms folded.

He knew his opponent was human but had never seen a human move that fast before, even one with a top-level super speed ability wouldn't be able to do this. Since the attack was an unexpected one, all he could do was take the strike head-on. He allowed the fist to hit his head while moving it himself at the same time. He flung it in the direction of the strike to take less damage from the punch. At the same time, Arthur threw a punch from underneath, aiming right for the elbow in an uppercut position.

It was a perfect hit, and Arthur hadn't pulled any of his power when punching. It caused Hilston's arm to fling upward, but it looked just fine, unhurt, and when Arthur looked at his own fist, his was the one covered in blood and bruises.

"I never expected you to be strong enough to fling my arm like that and overpower me," Hilston said. "But with the hardening ability, I now have the hardest body in the world."

"We'll see about that," Arthur said.

A lightning strike was fired from above his head but was blocked from Arthur's one wing covering him. What surprised Hilston next was when the lightning attack hit Arthur's wing. It reappeared directly underneath him on the shadow he was standing on and was going right through his body.

The attack was strong, and although it wasn't doing much damage to Hilston, it did slightly stun him. A punch was returned to Hilston head just like the one Arthur had received, then another to the stomach, again to the side of the rib.

In anger at the constant attacks, Hilston screamed, and his body became engulfed in flames. Stretching his limbs, flames shot out everywhere, going widely, and it looked like it was going to interfere with the others' fights. Before it could, the shadow from the ground rose up, blocking them all. Instead of slowing down the attack like Quinn's, each of the attacks sunk into the shadow and were redirected to one person in the centre, Hilton.

The flames had no effect on his flame body, and Arthur looking at his hands, they were still getting bruised from each of his punches.

Trying to change his tactic, the ground quickly rose around Arthur, covering his arms and legs. Using his strength, Arthur could break out of the earth restraint, but the ground kept reappearing and attaching on to him as quick as he could break out of them.

The two of them seemed to be in a stalemate, as Arthur wasn't able to be completely covered in earth, but at the same time, couldn't really move due to how quick it was covering his body.

"You can't do this forever; eventually you will run out of MC points," Arthur said.

Hilstom smiled while walking forward with his arms held out using his ability.

"I'm glad I met someone like you." Said Hilston. "But do not think for a second you have won this fight. I have four pieces of demon tier equipment on me, each with an active skill beyond your dreams, yet I haven't used one. Relying on their power wouldn't improve myself, and there was something else I wanted to do."

Finally, when Hilston was close enough, he stopped the earth ability, and when Arthur broke free, instead of going for a punch or a kick, Hilston went to grab Arthur's hand.

However, a few seconds later, and the smile on his face went away.

"They exist, the people my father spoke about, those that have abilities that I can't copy."

Side kicking Hilston away with his leg, they broke free, and Arthur moved back a little. "I never thought humans could have gotten this far, I thought maybe one day, but seeing you like this, gives me a little hope, but it's still not enough," Arthur said.

There was a problem; although Arthur was not getting hurt by Hilston's ability thanks to his shadow, his hands were being damaged by his hardened body. It had been a long time since he was unable to hurt someone with his bare fists.

Thinking about what to do next, the great large sword on his back started to vibrate a little, and the chains jingled.

"I was afraid of this, you had a taste of blood recently, and now you're still awake, will the chains hold out for this fight?"

While thinking about this, without noticing, a dark cloud was above their heads, but it wasn't up high where clouds would usually be. It was only slightly above the two of them, then raining down from that cloud were several bolts of lightning, and at the same time, Hilston appeared from one of those bolts in the cloud.

A powerful punch was felt in his rib, and one of the lightning strikes struck his arm, swinging his hand back at Hilston, he was no longer there. Then when another lightning bolt was fired from the cloud, Hilston appeared again, this time coming down with a kick on the top of Arthur's neck.

When Arthur looked up, Hilston was across the field again.

"The ability of the Graylash family, it certainly lives up to the reputation of being the strongest ability known out there, and in my hands, it's even stronger," said Hilston. "Your shadow on the ground is handy, but it has no power and can only use my own power against me. With my armour and hard skin, your attacks will never hurt me, and I will slowly wear you down."

Arthur stood there, rubbing the back of his neck where he had been hurt. The chains on his back were now rattling more than ever as if it was responding to Arthur's annoyance.

"I'm sorry..." Arthur said as the shadow raised above his body. When it disappeared, a bright red blood armour could be seen covering every bit of his body apart from his head. Then the chains from the sword fell down, touching the floor and disappearing into the shadow.

"My sword was recently fed, and it still has a lot of energy inside it. I'm sorry that it has to take out its energy on you."

Holding the sword in his hand, the line down the centre of his blood weapon was filled halfway, with a strange green substance.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 803: Everyone is better than me

The others knowing that they were now no longer going to fight that monster of a Blade, thought they might have been given a break. Seeing the less frightening two coming towards them. However, they quickly realised that wasn't the case, especially when the first thing the two of them did, was fire out lightning from the palm of their hands.

This was blocked by raising several walls of earth from Oscar. The lightning had managed to pierce through three thick walls before being stopped by the fourth one. Thankfully, earth was the lightning ability's weakness. The bad thing was, they all knew that lightning wouldn't be the only power they could use as well.

"So they all can copy the same powers it looks like." Oscar said.

"Yes, and even these two have lightning powers that are stronger than my own, so we have to watch out." Owen added, looking back at Sil, who was still recovering. If he expended himself anymore, he could faint; however, if he was given the time to rest, maybe he could help them out.

"You two, stop relying on the kid." Chris said as he stepped out in front. "I can't believe the leaders of the world, now are looking back, waiting for that kid to recover. Even though we all don't gel well, we all fight for the same thing, for better lives for humans. Right now, I see two people in front of us that are looking to support someone who doesn't have the same wish as us. They are an enemy, and it's our job that get rid of them for the future generation."

Oscar knew Chris's words were right, and there was some hope. Even though these two could use multiple abilities and had a stronger attack, he could tell it wasn't as strong as that old man. Before, no matter how many walls he raised of earth, the lightning still would have broken through them all if it was an attack from Hilston.

The only thing that was strong enough to stop Hilston's attack was the demon tier weapon's active skill and the shadow from the strange man.

The three of them, now fully committing to the fight in front of them, were more ready than before.

Nearly everyone by the sidelines, Logan, Bonny, Void and Fex, had been too engrossed in watching what was happening between Arthur and Hilston. They failed to notice what Quinn was doing, all except Logan that was.

He had seen Quinn silently cast his shadow travel ability to move away. Still, he never reappeared and instead went into the direction of the demon tier beast.

'Quinn, I know that the demon tier beast has been significantly weekend, but that doesn't mean it's going to be easy. I hope you know what you are doing.' Logan thought.

Travelling through the shadow as fast as he could, Quinn was trying to get to the Demon tier beats without being seen. He wished he could help Arthur, he thought he could have confidence in his skills, but after seeing the power of a single demon tier weapon, Quinn didn't have much hope.

'The only thing I can do is complete the quest and evolve myself. Come on you stupid crab. Let's do this!'

Travelling up the hill, the crab could be seen. The limbs that Chris had cut off still hadn't healed and were only partly contracted inside its underbelly. The black liquid blood was pouring from it, and the beast could be seen breathing in and out slowly as if it was in pain.

It was a sad sight to see the beast in such a way. Humans were having to go onto these beasts planets and killing them to harvest their crystals. In a way, they were only defending their territory or fighting for their lives. But Quinn could never think about this while fighting them.

If he did, then what of the human race? The Dalki didn't care about them, and it was something they needed. When Quinn finally got within a certain range, the crab started to move. Even while travelling in the shadow, it looked like the crab could tell something was heading its way.

It lifted its two large front claws and started to snap them in the air. Each clack rang out. When it slammed the first one down, Quinn had popped out from the shadow and at the same time threw a blood crescent kick towards the joints of the claw.

The joints were the weaker part of the crab, and now using his second stage Qi, if he managed to serve the limb, it wouldn't heal again.

'Dealing with two claws is a lot easier than before.' Quinn said as he avoided them hammering down towards him. Each time he would avoid the strike, he would throw out a long-range blood crescent kick, weakening the joint slowly.

The crab not only had fewer limbs to attack with, but it seemed like it was also slower than before.

'If I can keep this up, it looks like I can make it out of here without getting hurt. I just have to not make a mistake.'

Some form of success was seen, as the outer shell of the joints were cracking, and finally, one of the joints had cracked open. Seeing this, Quinn went to summon his

shadow scythe. With it in hand, swinging it above his head, he was able to extend the scythe with the shadow and swung it down as hard as he could.

"Break you damn crab!" Quinn screamed as he swung down with all his strength. When it landed, it had hit the floor, throwing up rocks and grass in the air, and then the ground was felt shaking again, making him lose balance.

His shadow scythe was unsuccessful. It had hit nothing but the empty ground. What was surprising was how the crab was still able to move like so. When Quinn swung down, it had avoided the blow by jumping back, and its body landing on the ground was what had caused the big crash and vibrations in the environment.

There was some good news from this though, when looking at the crab, Quinn could see using his inspect skill that it had gone from a weekend state to a critical condition. Avoiding the blow when it landed seemed to have hurt it more so than it would have if Quinn was even successful with the attack.

It was instinct for the crab to try to save its limb, but its other injuries on its body had only worsened from jumping.

'Critical, it means I'm nearly there, I still have about half my health left due to me using the blood crescent kick so much, but I can do this.' Quinn thought.

He rushed forward towards the crab, grabbing the scythes. Maybe in such a state, there was an easier way to finish it. Still, when he got close, Quinn quickly saw something that frightened him. He promptly put the dual scythes away and immediately started to go on the defensive.

Inside the crab's mouth, foam and bulbs started to appear. Quinn thought maybe it was too weak to make an attack like this, but it didn't seem to be the case.

'Thats the attack that Oscar used his ice barrier to block, sh\*t I'm going to have to use everything I have to block it.'

The jet of water could be seen coming out from the crab's mouth, and in a panic, Quinn first used his blood wall skill, using up 45 points of HP. Only leaving him with 5, he cast the wall of shadow and placed this over the blood, like he would have done when using his scythes. Next, with his hand, he placed it on the wall activating his second aura of Qi.

Using so much blood, if this wasn't able to block the attack, Quinn was done.

The jet stream smashed into the wall Quinn had created, and there seemed to be a close struggle as the water wasn't moving forward and the wall wasn't being pushed back, but touching the wall with his hand, Quinn could feel the sheer power.

'This damn thing is in a critical state and can still make an attack like this!'

The first line of defence to go was the shadow, Quinn's MC points were now at zero as the shadow disappeared.

'If only I had as much strength as Arthur!' Quinn complained.

Then covering the blood wall with the coat of Qi, Quinn continually supplied more. He was careful as he didn't want to be exhausted after this; otherwise, what else could he do? But soon, the coating of the second Qi was also broken as Quinn couldn't supply it with anymore.

'If I had as much control or Qi as Chris.'

Then lastly was the wall of blood shattered, and it didn't take long for that to break either.

'This perfect wall of blood, I bet all the other vampire leaders would look down on me.' Quinn said.

Falling to his knees, Quinn looked up and could see that the jet stream of water had been blocked, but at what cost?

He no longer had blood in his blood bank, no more MC cells and his Qi was minimal.

"I've lost..."

\*\*\*\*\*

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 804: The blood of all vampires

During the fight with Hilston, Arthur gave everything he had. He had used his full strength, speed and skills when fighting, on top of that, he even used his shadow. However, there were a couple of things he still hadn't used, and never thought he would need to.

The first being blood skills, using blood skills required Arthur to consume human blood and that was something he didn't want to do, so he had held back on that so far. Other than that, there was the blood weapon that Arthur always kept on his back, made from blood crystals of fallen vampires, and also the blood armour.

"Is that really the blood armour Arthur is wearing?" Fex said as he couldn't keep his eyes off the armour for some reason, it was as if something was drawing him towards it. "It looks exactly like the one the king wears, it's the same as the one in the pictures from the books I read!"

Fex had actually never seen the blood armour in person, and he wished there were others around him who could understand just what he was looking at right now, and why it was considered so special. He wanted to pinch himself, thinking everything was a dream.

There were only two sets of blood armour known in existence, the first belonging to the king and the second belonging to Arthur, the head of the punishers.

Looking at his arm, even Arthur himself was looking at the unfamiliar armour that seemed to fit perfectly on his body.

"No one is allowed to escape punishment from the Punishers, not even the king himself. If he was to do wrong, it is said that whatever is granted to the king, must be given to the Punishers as well." Arthur said, speaking to himself, as he knew Hilston would have no idea what he was talking about. But Arthur couldn't help himself, looking at the armour was reminding him of those days, the days where he had trusted the first king's every word.

Swinging his great sword upward, Arthur held it with a single hand and had the pointed end of the sword, pointing towards Hilston.

"It would be wise for you to give up now." Said Arthur.

Chuckling again, Hilston thought the man in front of him was too confident and he could only think of one reason why.

"I'm guessing what you hold in your hand is a demon tier weapon, is that why you are so confident? Do you know how I got all of the demon tier beast equipment on my body? By killing every single one of them I came across. One demon tier weapon isn't going to change the tide of this battle."

In a situation like this, everyone would think Hilston had every right to be confident. He not only had a full set of demon tier armour, but hadn't activated any of their skills yet.

"This weapon is not made by beasts but by something else." Arthur explained.  
"And unfortunately, to power this weapon and the armour I'm wearing, there needs to be a special ingredient. Blood. But worry not, for this sword will not need to be bathed in your blood. You see, recently I had come across a special green blood that has the same effect, perhaps even stronger. Honestly, I don't think the armour is needed against you, but it's a set you know, so it's best to bring them out together." Arthur said with a smile.

Now that he had his sword out, his serious expression had calmed down again.

"It's time to show you the ultimate weapons of the punishers, and why none of the thirteen families dared to go against me while they were still alive!"

Shouting these words, Arthur's eyes started to glow slightly red, his hair started to float up slightly as the power was being summoned and the green bar line down the centre of the sword was lowering.

Swinging his giant sword out, from the edge of the blade, a green liquid appeared heading towards Hilston. He managed to raise a wall trying to block the unknown substance and when it made impact a huge explosion was made, crumbling the wall to pieces. Soon after Arthur was seen behind it coming through the cloud of smoke and dust. He swung his great blade again, but Hilston had managed to avoid the attack. The sword went right past him hitting the air, or at least that's what he thought. A few moments later and a large wound was seen between the gap in his armour and blood started to soak out from it.

Another swing was made from the sword and this time the attack seemed to be faster. Hilston narrowly managed to avoid it again, but a clang was made against his chest piece as if the sword had actually hit.

Hilston didn't like to take a step back, but until he could figure out what was going on he thought there was a need to. His foot had landed on something and it started to glow, suddenly Hilston was no longer able to move it was as if he was frozen.

"Thanks for staying still for me." Arthur said, swinging his sword like a baseball bat, while the edge of the blade was laced in the green liquid again. When the sword hit his chest piece, a loud explosion was made sending Hilston flying, but before he could recover or regain his position, the shadow from the floor was raised into a wall. Hilston went right through it and reappeared from Arthur's giant left wing, knowing where he would be struck again, blasting him up into the sky.

Flinging him upward, Arthur continued to strike at Hilston with his blade, now successfully hitting him and each time he did it looked like his speed had improved, getting faster than he did before.

"I can't regroup or use any of my abilities." Hilston said. "I need to activate my beast armour!" It was something Hilston never wanted to do, to rely on the equipment he had, but he needed to live to fight another day. However before he could activate the armour, he heard something.

"You don't think I'm going to let you do that, do you?"

It was a voice, not just any voice but the black haired man's voice and it wasn't said out loud, it was spoken directly into his head.

The green line on Arthur's sword was now nearly completely gone, but he had used the remainder of it to coat his sword in the green liquid more than before. When the sword had hit Hilston again, a bigger explosion than any other was made and a slight cracking sound could be heard.

'My chest piece, imposs-'

The explosion was so large, that it seemed like it would reach the others. However, the shadow was raised just in time, stopping it from getting out of control and redirecting it through the shadow sink skill. so all of the power was focused in one place.

Landing on the ground, Arthur placed his sword on his back, he didn't look tired or worn out at all. The chains were returned wrapping up the sword again, and the blood armour was put away.

'Looks like I didn't need the armour after all.'

Fex, who was watching everything still had his mouth wide open at what he had just seen. He only knew very little about the punishers and had no clue about the blood weapon on his back or what it was capable of, but now after seeing it he understood, he just didn't understand why.

'All those moves he just did, the exploding blood, from the fourth family, the trap that was placed on the floor, it was the power of the sixth, he used the first and I was sure he was using twelfth family abilities as well. How can he use the other families abilities, is it to do with his blood weapon?'

Unknown to Fex, Arthur did use other abilities during that fight as well, such as the ninth's telepathy ability.

Arthur's face wasn't one of joy after using the weapon, instead it looked more like one of sadness. Whenever he would use the abilities it reminded him just how his blood weapon was created.

Usually, a single blood crystal would be enough to create a blood weapon. Depending on who it came from it could make a strong or weak weapon. As for Arthur's weapon, it wasn't just made from one blood crystal but multiple, how many he couldn't even count. All those that he had executed had dropped a blood crystal, and they had been used to make his weapon.

Perhaps that was why when his blood weapon was activated, he was able to use all the abilities of the other families, because the blood crystal was a part of the vampire themselves.

Seeing the weapon in action, would usually send a shiver down any opponent Arthur faced, a reminder of who he had slain.

When the smoke finally disappeared from the explosion, Arthur retracted his shadow wing back into him, it wasn't because he had run out of MC points, it was because there was no longer any reason for him to fight.

"Looks like you had one more trick up your sleeve after all, old man." Arthur said, as there was no one to be seen in front of him.

Hilston, for the first time in his life during a fight, had run away.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

## Chapter 805: One more attack

During the tough battle between Arthur and Hilston, the others were busy fighting against the two other Blades who seemed to be just as troublesome, especially as a pair. They soon found out that fighting these two members of the Blades, came with its own set of different problems compared to when facing Hilston.

Even though the Blades could copy more than one ability, only one ability could be used at any given time. However with two of them, they could cover each other's backs quite easily as they used different abilities. The earth ability was used for defence, while fire and lightning was used for attacks.

"I'm getting sick and tired of these walls of earth!" Chris shouted.

Watching Chris fight, Oscar was starting to wonder something. He was sure that the weapons Chris was using right now were the same ones that he had clashed briefly with before, the only thing was, they seemed to be weaker in Chris's hands.

'Does he not know how to use them properly?'

While not thinking about his MC points, Chris's impatient nature caused him to rush in extending his two blades.

'I've finally recovered to do this again, and this time it's going to be a little bit more of a bang compared to before, you two better be ready after this!' Chris said.

Although it seemed quite rash, Chris had already been fighting them for a while trying to get them to show every ability they had up their sleeve, and so far, they had seen three different abilities, so he was sure there wouldn't be any surprises.

Once again a wall of earth had been put up between them, and several attacks with the earth was made towards Chris, but he ignored all the attacks, the spikes and poles that hit his body. When they did, they crumbled to the ground, not leaving a mark on him.

If he had just spread the Qi around his body thinley than the attacks would have gotten through, but Chris was paying attention, moving the Qi around each attack point.

Oscar's skills had all come off from cooling down and he was now following closely behind Chris, and Owen had his own trick up his sleeve.

'If I use this, then maybe we can get out of here, but I was saving it for that old man.' Owen thought. Still he was ready, Owen still hadn't activated his soul weapon, however he was unsure if he could rely on Chris to do the job properly.

Just as Chris was ready with his swords, the large explosion over from the side of the field came at them. The first thing they felt was the immense wind from the

explosion that had pushed their hair back. If it was a normal human, then they would have gone flying from the power of the explosion alone.

When they turned their heads, they could already see the shadow encasing the explosion.

'What is happening over there?' Owen thought, the real question he wanted to ask, was who was winning.

Chris, trying to keep focus, quickly destroyed the earth wall in front of him and just when he was ready to teach the two a lesson, he could no longer see them.

"Huh, where the hell did those guys go?" Chris said, as he twisted and turned his head but could see no signs of them at all.

"They're gone." Oscar said. "I guess they must have had some teleportation ability just to run away just in case, and it looks like the big boy has disappeared as well."

Chris slammed both of his swords into the ground, piles of dirt were thrown in the air and fell back down on the floor again. It was clear he was just venting his frustration.

With the two fights over, now they could all finally get a breather and it was only then that they would come to find out that Quinn was no longer with them, and he was in a struggle between life and death fighting against the Demon tier Crab.

Over on top of the large hill that had mostly been flattened due to the crab using it as some type of nest, Quinn was down on his knees having expended most of his energy. There wasn't much he could do to stop the water spout attack. The water jet coming from the beast's mouth was a large one, it covered more range than his flash step would have allowed him to dodge and he would have been hit.

Shadow hop also wasn't possible because he could only hop to another shadow created by him, that's why he always activated the shadow dome when trying to use it, and shadow dome was a skill that just wasn't possible to use against the demon tier beast.

It was too large in size, if Quinn even could create a dome big enough to trap it, it could have easily broken out with a single strike.

With no MC, barely any Qi, and his blood bank and flask empty, there was nothing he could do. Now he had wished maybe he did snatch some blood to put in the flask from Chris, but he never did.

Staring at the crab, it looked like it was heading towards Quinn. It had crystallised it's uninjured claw and opened it up, then swung straight towards Quinn and it's claws had already surrounded him.

With its power, one snap would be the end of him.

'I could call Leo for help.' Quinn thought. The system allowed him to summon his vampire knights to his side whenever he wished.

'No, I don't think Leo could even face this thing, and why should I risk him getting hurt, I already called Arthur for help. There has to be something I can do.'

Looking at the crab and it's crystallised claw around his body, it hit him. In the crab's attempt to get rid of the enemy in front of it, a ray of hope was seen for Quinn. When it crystallised it's hand, the crystals on it's back moved and dissipated.

The group in the last attack had caused a large crack and wound on the crab's back. With how weak the crab was, only one last move needed to be completed to kill the crab. With the amount of Qi Quinn had right now, one last move was properly all he could muster but it was enough.

Now he just needed to figure out a way to get out of the current situation he was in. The claws were open and were ready to snap him in half.

#### [Shadow equip]

Shadow equip was a skill that didn't use any MC points, and when the shadow covered his body then disappeared again, in its place was red thick armour that made Quinn look like a solid boulder. It could be seen covering his body.

The claws snapped, but unlike the crab had expected, for a brief second its strong grip strength had been stopped. Due to the large empty space the suit of Armour had, there was plenty of space for Quinn to move. At the right moment, Quinn leapt in the air, and tried to place the set of armour back into his shadow, but by then it had already been crushed.

'Sorry Alex, but you'll thank me when I get you more crystals in the future.'

Inside Quinn's dimensional space was the emperor tier armour. An armour that seemed mostly useless as it didn't give the user any particular stats, and even gave Quinn less strength and slowed him down. At the time, Quinn thought it was useless and there wasn't really much use for it.

But right now it was the perfect thing. Using the armour, Quinn was able to block the weakened attack from the crab. It was probably one of the strongest defensive armours at the emperor tier in existence, and even though the crab was weakened, it was able to crush it into pieces.

'The armour you created wasn't a failure Alex.'

Still, Quinn only needed to survive that attack. Landing on the crabs' claw, Quinn started to run up its arm at an amazing speed until finally he had reached the creature's back.

He still didn't have his MC points back, nor did he have blood, but he had a last bit of Qi and stamina inside of him. Standing on top of the wound, Quinn started the process of raising the energy in his feet using all of the Qi he could, then lifting up his leg towards his face, he slammed it down on the crab, performing an axe hammer strike and hitting the crab with his heel. At the same time, Quinn had also performed the blood crescent kick.

The hammer had penetrated the surface of the flesh of the crab and created a large open wound where its insides could now be seen. Then the crescent kick was further propelled by the strength of the attack and went through the body, tearing it to shreds.

[3/100 HP]

'One more, I have the strength to do one more!' Quinn said.

Raising his leg again, he was ready to perform the strike one more time, but a loud thud was heard, and the breathing from the crab had stopped.

'Did I do it?'

Looking down into the large hole that Quinn had created, he could see it. The crystal was hanging on a piece of the crab's flesh. It was so clear to him, clearer than any crystal he had ever seen before, it was like a diamond but also there was a shine to it all over.

Not wasting any time, Quinn went straight to grab it and pulled it out. He held the crystal up against the sun to admire it.

[Quest has been completed]

[Obtain the demon tier crystal]

[Instant level up received]

[Congratulations you are now level 40]

[Your evolution will begin....]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 806: The white coa

With the Blade family having run away, the group finally had time for a breather. Making their way over with caution, Oscar and Owen were on their way to greet the person, who was strong enough to take on such a monster, as it was clear out of the two of them, there was a winner.

Unfortunately, they hadn't seen the fight due to their own and were at least hoping Bonny and Void were able to capture something. To Oscar, knowing that there was someone so powerful, someone like Hilstion that could take on all of the leaders, perhaps any of the factions was a surprise.

And now, they were walking towards the person that had supposedly even dealt with him. Now there were two great powers that were beyond what Oscar and the others thought were even capable.

'Just how much is this world hiding from us that we don't know about.' Oscar said.

Arthur seemed to be casually talking to Logan and Fex, who were updating him on the situation. After all, he had just been thrown into the deep end, and the first thing Arthur had to do was face an enemy tougher than most.

After the last incident in the vampire world, it wasn't too frightening for them to talk to Arthur, but when Fex tried to speak to him, he was a little starstruck. He had a glowing fascination in his eyes and a new appreciation for Arthur's powers.

'I don't think there is any leader that's stronger than Arthur, not even the k... ' Fex stopped himself before even thinking about his next word. 'No, you can't say that, not unless I want a thousand wooden stakes shoved in my heart.'

When the other group had walked over, they didn't know what to really say to Arthur. They needed to be thankful, but was this person on their side, and who was he?

"Did you notice?" Owen whispered while looking at Arthur from behind.

Looking closely, Oscar knew what Owen was getting at. Arthur's body didn't have a single bit of damage on him. They who couldn't even touch Hilstion, were now about to go and greet a man who was beyond even him.

"Quinn was the one who summoned him. I assume it is his master," Owen said.  
"Maybe it would be best if we asked him to introduce us. I would hate to offend someone like this."

Hearing this, Oscar thought it was a good idea. He was on the more cautious side, and after lashing out at an unknown person last time (Hilstion), he didn't want to do the same again. He had been contemptuous with thinking he was one of the greatest

powers in the world and that there were hardly any humans in existence that could match him.

At times, it allowed him to act first and think about things later, but now learning there were those stronger than himself, he needed to become more humble. He knew all this, and this little experience was a great way to remind himself that he should stay humble.

'Quinn, how did you come across such a great man?' Owen thought.

That's when the two of them noticed something while looking around in the area. Sil stood behind them and went ahead to talk to Logan, Fex and the other two, and that's when Sil realised it too.

They were all looking for the same person, but he was nowhere to be found.

"Where's Quinn?" Sil asked.

Instead of giving an answer, Logan just looked up the hill where the giant crab could be seen. It was hard to tell what had happened to it from how far they were, but the beast did remain stationary.

"Thanks for the catch up on everything guys," Arthur said with a smile. "I'll go check up on Quinn. That beast looks like it might be quite troublesome."

Before Oscar and Owen could even introduce themselves, Arthur was off, travelling in his shadow towards the giant crab.

'It looks like those two wanted to talk to me.' Arthur thought. 'According to the kids, they were the current leaders of the human race huh, it would be best to not get involved with them. Not now anyway.'

Seeing Arthur go away like that, Oscar and Owen couldn't help but feel a little rejected. For the first time, there was no excitement, respect or anything when someone saw them. Instead, the person seemed to treat them just like any other regular human being.

Having this strange feeling, Owen started to laugh.

"I think I might have been quite the fool without realising it. The gift of the thunder, all I wanted to do was share its great powers with all the others. Now, I'm beginning to question myself if the power is really all that great, because of a single person."

However, Oscar felt like it was more of a loss to not get in contact with such a great person. He was thinking about the future and how best to utilise the possible connection and person's ability. Thinking about this made Oscar think about another person.

When looking around, he noticed that the red-haired man too had disappeared entirely from the scene.

'That man, he was not the same one that I fought against in the past, but he is definitely a part of Pure. Those weapons from before, I fought them when they belonged to another. Why did they seem so weak in his hands though?'

Then a horrible thought started to run through Oscar's mind. What if those weapons weren't demon tier in the first place? Did that mean the person he fought against before was just so strong that it felt like he was going up against a demon tier weapon?

If this was the case, then Oscar needed to reevaluate just how much of a threat Pure was without knowing what they would be doing next. According to the intel they had gathered, Pure had definitely killed a demon tier beast, which meant they had a demon tier weapon.

If the real demon tier weapon now belonged to the leader of Pure, his power would far outweigh his own.

'It looks like I'm not one of the great one's after all.' Oscar thought. He then turned his head into the direction of Duke, whose body had been flung across the field from the fight. 'The military everyone needs to get stronger if we have any hope of winning this fight against the Dalki.'

Suddenly, the ship that the Blade's had come in started to make a sound and soon, it was floating in the air.

"We checked the ship; there were no signs of the Blades on board." Said Oscar.

Before the ship set off, they could see a man standing up against the glass. It was Chris. He gave all of them a quick salute and a wave before the ship had set off into the sky, getting out of this place once and for all.

While the ship was flying away, he couldn't help but think about Quinn.

'So you managed to defeat the demon tier crab. Even if it was weakened, that is quite an accomplishment for a young kid like yourself.' Chris thought. 'You will get stronger in the future, Quinn. I hope we will meet again, but I just hope we don't meet as enemies if that happens again.'

Soon after the fight had ended, Chris was able to sense that the crab's energy had severely weakened to the point where it would have had to have been killed and quite recently as well. He could also sense Quinn's Qi off in the distance.

With the crab dead, there was no longer a reason for him to stay down here, and it was clear that Oscar knew Chris's identity by the daggers he was shooting into his back with his eyes.

After leaving the place, before taking the ship, he needed to get one more thing before leaving. Something he had lost on the way down here, and he had seen during the fight.

"Damn, it's a little roughed up and ripped. Maybe they can get me a new one?" Chris said, as he threw over the large white overcoat on his back, with a large number one displayed.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

## Chapter 807: A vampire lord!

Standing on top of the crab, Quinn had gotten the notification that the quest had been completed and his body began to feel weak. His grip around the crystal had weakened and he had dropped it, hitting the shell of the crab and sliding down onto the floor.

In this situation, usually someone would have done anything to try to get the crystal, especially a demon tier one. Quinn's plan to keep the crystal for himself had slipped through his fingers as he saw it fall away from him. He reached out his hand but that was the only thing he could do with the little strength he could muster up, before he had fallen and started to slide down the shell of the crab.

His body bounced off and was now laying on the floor.

'No, no, no!' Quinn started to scream as the usual pains that came with every evolution had started. However this time it was worse, a pain greater than any before and the main problem was his thirst.

When evolving, Quinn always needed to be careful about such things, and one time Quinn had needed more human blood to complete the evolution. If he didn't receive any at the time, there was a good chance he could have died, now Quinn was worrying if the same thing was about to happen now.

There was always a risk when completing a quest, especially a hard one like this of evolution and it was why Quinn wanted to do it away from the others. It was the perfect opportunity to evolve while everyone was busy.

What he did not expect, was to use so much HP fighting the demon tier beast and by that point, running away could have been the death of him as well. When seeing the crystal, something was drawing him to it. After achieving something so great, he just had to grab the crystal, not realizing that would be the catalyst to completing the quest and levelling him up instantly putting him in his current situation.

His skin was tightening around his whole body and his throat was starting to tire out. His body structure was changing as the bones in his body would break down and rebuild itself, all while Quinn was feeling everything that was going on.

'Will I really die, after surviving something like that? Or maybe something else will happen, maybe I'll turn into that blood sucker, and go crazy for blood.' Looking around he was searching for options, there was the black blood from the beast, but it was poisonous to vampires and he honestly did not think he could even crawl over to anything if he did see someone dead nearby.

At that moment though, a shadow across the floor was approaching, and popping out of the ground was Arthur himself.

Immediately Arthur knelt by Quinn's side and out from his shadow he grabbed one of the same flasks that Quinn and Fex used.

"I was going to congratulate you for beating this thing on your own, or maybe tell you off for forcing me to fight, but I didn't expect to see you like this." Arthur said, as he popped open the cap from the flask and started to pour the liquid into Quinn's mouth. However, the liquid that was being poured wasn't red, instead it was green.

"Don't worry, I know it looks strange, but this liquid actually has more effect on us than regular blood, so even less is required for you to go through an evolution, and honestly it's the only thing I have on me for now."

After pouring the blood and seeing Quinn no longer look like he was gasping for air, Arthur decided to take a step back, it was not a small one either.

Feeling the pain, Quinn punched the ground with both of his fists, and the ground was destroyed underneath it. He coughed and a strange red sludge had come out from his mouth and started to float in the air, with each cough, the red thick sludge continued to come out and was swirling around his whole body.

"You're evolving into a vampire lord Quinn, the final and strongest stage of becoming a vampire. Only leaders have the potential to get up to this point, and it takes hundreds of years, you really are a special kid.' Arthur thought, but he did not have a smiling look on his face, it was one of concern instead.

The red sludge that was floating in the air suddenly all went into Quinn's body through his skin all at once. It was a shock to the system and his eyes opened wide, glowing bright red, as his body jerked up. A few seconds later and his eyes returned to normal, and the area around him seemed fine once again.

[Congratulations! You have evolved into a vampire lord]

[Quest: Become a True vampire leader has been updated]

[Current status Incomplete]

[Reach level forty and become a vampire lord - Complete]

[Select two self turned vampires to become your knights 1/2 incomplete]

[Create ten members of the Cursed family through the blood ritual 9/10 incomplete]

There were several messages appearing on Quinn's screen as his evolution had finished, and slowly the energy was coming to his body as the messages continued to come in.

[Linked Quest - Become a True vampire leader]

[Quest: Return to the Tenth leaders tomb once the Quest 'Become a True vampire leader' has been completed.]

Looking at the quest reminded Quinn there were a lot of things he still needed to do, but when he stood up, he was more interested in his current body than he was when the quests appeared.

When evolving to each stage, Quinn felt different each time and his new body felt stronger than before. However, for the first time he felt so powerful. He could feel all the blood moving through his body, the fine control of strength through his fingers, the delicate sounds and smells his body was picking up.

All these things in the past, he would have to fine tune how to use them to a degree, now he just knew how to use them with this new body of his.

"You finally look like an adult now, your looks really don't suit your age." Arthur said. "Well, at least you aren't stuck looking like a kid for the rest of your life, that would have been awful."

[New stat required]

[Blood control: 10]

[Blood control is a stat that is only achieved by a few vampires. Improving one's control of blood will improve the strength of the blood skills used, as well as allow the user to control blood depending on how high the stat is.]

Looking at the stat, Quinn noticed it was incredibly low compared to all his other stats, which meant that he was starting from the beginning. After reading the description, he realized now why even though the other leaders did not have Qi, their blood attacks and blood swipes seemed more powerful.

It was because of their blood control, the better one's blood control was, the stronger attacks like blood swipe would be.

'Doesn't this mean, I can still get stronger? If I can increase my blood control, and still add Qi..."

While deep in thought, in the distance Quinn could see that the others behind Arthur were making their way towards them. They were walking over as a large group.

Quinn was happy to see that they were all safe and was wondering where Chris had gone. Still, if they were fine, he would be as well.

Just as Quinn was about to wave over to them. Arthur stood in Quinn's sight of the path.

"The two of them look to be in good condition and the crab looks to have been defeated." Oscar said with delight. "As tough as this hunt was, we were able to get through it in the end to obtain the crystal."

At that moment, when approaching they could see that Quinn was not the one with the crystal. Instead, Arthur was the one holding it in his hand. The group paused for a second, as Owen and Oscar were leading at the front and were trying to decide their next course of action.

If Arthur wanted to take the crystal, they could not stop him from doing so.

Quinn wasn't worried about seeing the demon crystal in Arthur's hand, he knew he had dropped it when falling off the crab and thought Arthur must have just picked it up.

With Arthur's other hand free, he held out his palm and opened it up.

"I'm sorry Quinn, but I need to speak to you away from the others."

'Shadow lock'

A portal of shadow opened behind Quinn, consuming him and quickly closed after. It was the same skill Quinn had used. Shortly after, another portal that looked identical to the first one opened and Arthur had disappeared into it as well.

In front of them, both Quinn and Arthur had disappeared.

"Did they take the crystal?!" Oscar shouted. "Is this that what they had planned?"

"No." Owen said. "Didn't you see Quinn's face before he was sucked into that portal. This was certainly unexpected, and he might have been taken against his will."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 808: Get stronger than me

A moment ago, Quinn could see the cloudy skies, and the diamond-like surface above. He was staring at the others walking towards him, but in seconds, not being able to fight back, he felt like his body was being consumed by a strange force. Soon after, he found himself in a pitch black space.

He first checked his body to see if there was any harm done, and to see if everything was okay.

'Where am I?'

Looking around the dark room, Quinn was able to see, but there was nothing to look at. There was no one else inside and if he walked forward it looked like the dark space was endless. The ground beneath him was solid, but that too was dark in colour.

When looking at his feet and taking a step, he could see the black substance slightly shift, and it reminded him of his own shadows. Just when Quinn thought he might have had an idea of where he was, he saw Arthur appear in the black space as well.

He seemingly came out of nowhere, and he had the demon tier crystal held in his hand. Seeing that Arthur had no injuries on his body, Quinn was relieved. The fact that the whole group was returning must have meant they were able to deal with Hilston somehow.

"Just how strong are you?" Quinn said.

"I was about to say the same thing to you. Before you needed my help to protect you against those grumpy council members, but I think you will be able to hold your own against a few of them now." Arthur replied.

"I'm sorry for calling you out like that." Quinn said. "It was a desperate situation."

"I can see that," Arthur replied. "Don't worry, you are a punisher and I will naturally protect you whenever I can. It is my job...." Saying these words, Arthur began to speak quieter towards the end. "At least, it was my job."

"You would have never won against such a person anyway. Honestly it looked like he had even more to give than that. If he had time to prepare and knew what type of opponent he was facing, he would have been a troublesome person to deal with."

"Where are we?" Quinn said as he stomped his foot on the ground and small ripples of shadow could be seen rising up like smoke before quickly fading away into the black room.

Before Quinn had asked this question, Arthur was all smiles, but his expression had changed as if Quinn's question had reminded him just why he had brought him here.

"This is where living beings are sent to when we use the skill shadow lock. As you can see, the skill can also be used on ourselves as well. Think of it as an empty space. In the past from time to time, when I wanted to get away from everything, I would lock myself away in the shadow lock space."

"Quinn, I wanted to talk to you about the first king, about Eno. Did you manage to find out any information on him?"

Quinn didn't see any reason to hide what he knew about Eno so far. After all, they were both looking for the same person in a way hoping to find some answers.

"I see, so you think that Eno has disguised himself as a scientist named Richard Eno? That should help me with my search."

Judging by his words, it looked like Arthur didn't get very far with finding anything about Eno either.

"Did you find out what happened to the punishers?" Quinn asked, knowing that this was another goal of Arthurs - to find the First king and find out what happened to his people.

Asking this question had led to a few moments of silence, which Quinn didn't understand as before this, Arthur was very forthcoming. Even if he did find out some things, was it really information that Arthur wasn't allowed or willing to share with him?

A strange feeling was coming from Arthur, and Quinn didn't know why but he wasn't liking the position he was in at the moment. The conversation they were having was a private one sure, but was there a need to be placed in the shadow lock, couldn't they have simply gone to another place?

"I have." Arthur finally replied. "Quinn, I saw myself as the protector of humans. The peace bringer between the vampires and the humans. I don't know whether or not the punisher's existence was necessary for vampires to stop attacking humans, but it seemed like Eno felt it was."

"You are like me, having experienced what life is like as a human, and as a vampire. Me and you both stand in the middle. However, I'm unsure if my decision was the right one. I left both of those worlds behind thinking they wouldn't get involved, yet they still did. You were able to ignore the vampires for a while now but you are too involved and soon you must decide what you will do."

"We are all too weak for what is about to come. I am too weak, the vampires are too weak, and the humans are too weak."

Quinn had hardly ever heard Arthur speak like this before, with a serious tone and he was trying to make sense of what Arthur was saying. He was too weak? Compared to what, was Arthur talking about the Dalki? Or was he just simply talking in riddles and metaphors. Was he blaming himself for all the punisher's deaths?

Quinn often did this himself, when those in the Cursed faction died.

"Let me leave you with some advice that I want you to remember forever." Arthur continued. " You are too kind hearted. I can see that and I understand why. You are young and even though you have experienced a lot for your age, it is still small in comparison to me. Whoever attempts to take your life, you must not hesitate to take back theirs. Otherwise you will live to regret your decisions.

"Finally, let me ask you a question, do you want to save the lives of the humans?"

An answer wasn't given immediately, but Quinn did know the answer straight away as he thought about his friends and those that were part of the Cursed faction.

"I do."

"Then do you want to save the lives of the vampires as well? I'm not talking about those that you turned, but the others."

Thinking about this, Quinn was wondering if he did. Most of the vampires hated him and were against him, but then he started to think about those in the Tenth family, Edward and others. The past memories of living his life as Vincent were strong in him. Quinn remembered the scene of when he stood in the castle looking at all those down below. Were the vampires that different from humans? For some reason he felt like if he said no, he would be abandoning them and his heart ached thinking about this.

"Judging by how long you have been silent for I can guess your answer. I don't think it's possible for you to save them both Quinn. At least not the way you are now. If you want to save them both then you need to get stronger. Even stronger than me." Saying these last words, Arthur lifted the crystal up, and then it started to become surrounded by shadows until it eventually disappeared.

"What are you going to do with that crystal!?" Quinn said slightly panicked, he didn't expect Arthur to take it and even though Arthur had saved his life, he suddenly couldn't help but feel slightly annoyed after killing the demon tier crab for his reward to be taken away.

"Do you remember my words of advice, anyone who tries to kill you Quinn, you need to kill them before they can kill you."

The next second, Arthur was directly in front of Quinn and a heavy blow was felt in his stomach. His insides screamed and felt like they wanted to all spill out on the floor. Immediately, it had caused him to cough out blood from his mouth. The strength of the punch would have caused Quinn to go flying, but instead he had been grabbed before he could and was being held around the throat by Arthur, his grip tight making it hard for him to breathe.

"You want to save them Quinn, as weak as you are. Even I couldn't save them, stop being an idiot!" Arthur shouted as he threw Quinn to the dark black floor. His body had sunk through and he felt himself suddenly falling through the air.

'Is Arthur trying to kill me, what is he doing? Didn't he just save my life, if he wanted to kill me then why did he give me the Dalki blood? This doesn't make any sense.'

But Quinn could tell that Arthur was quite serious, it wasn't like they were training. For some reason Arthur was filled with anger and it was being directed at Quinn.

"You need to stop hesitating!" Arthur said as he kicked Quinn by the side.

This time, Quinn was able to cover himself with the second form of Qi but the blow had still crushed the bones in his forearm. Thanks to the evolution his body was now stronger, but against someone like Arthur it didn't seem like much help.

'Am I really going to die!?'

Outside of the shadow, the others were standing where Quinn once stood, trying to figure out just what had happened. Oscar would have thought that Quinn was planning to run away, but according to Owen that wasn't the fact, and Fex didn't seem to know anything either.

Just as they were planning their next move, a shadow in the shape of a portal opened up, and as it closed, what looked like a young adult was thrown out of the portal and landed on his face, lying on the floor.. He was covered in blood, his bones broken and piercing through his skin.

Shallow breathing could be seen by his chest moving in and out, broken as if it was hard for him to breathe. As Oscar went to turn the person over, he almost didn't recognise who it was as the face was so badly beaten.

"Quinn!" Fex shouted. He rushed over along with Sil and Logan following behind.

"What happened to you, who did this?" Fex asked. He didn't even want to touch Quinn as he was afraid just moving him slightly would greatly hurt his body.

"A..r..thu..." Quinn managed to mouth out.

Fex wasn't sure if he had heard the right words, but it was clear that Quinn was trying to say Arthur.

'Why, why would Arthur do this?'

Lying on the floor and close to passing out, Quinn remembered the last words Arthur spoke.

"If you plan on protecting the vampires Quinn, then I will tell you know. We are not on the same side."

End of Ark 4

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 809: The Dalki mothership

The beast solar system was extensive, filled with many planets and all sorts of creatures. However, humans only had access to half of the planets in the solar system. Some of the planets were unexplored, and there were some that the humans were to never set foot on.

This was because part of the solar system was known to already belong to the Dalki. In the Dalki half of the solar system, a giant unique looking spaceship could be seen. It was the size of a small planet, but what was unique about it was the ship's look.

Its outer surface was a bronze-gold like colour. A large circular ring around it. Which acted as a significant bridge around the whole ship. From it, many smaller bridges would connect to the main body of the spaceship. As for the body of the spacecraft, it looked like a large deathly castle, floating on a flat piece of land.

The ship itself was the Dalki's mother ship. The humans were never able to locate where the Dalki had come from. With that, they also never knew just how large of a force the Dalki were. This lack of information was worrying and left everyone on edge.

There was a chance that those that had invaded earth had just come from a single mother ship of many. It was part of the reason why the humans had agreed to the terms back then, why both sides agreed to peace.

Unaware of just how close or far they were to defeating the Dalki. If only they knew they had no home, and this single ship was where they all lived.

Inside a room located at the centre of the spaceship, several Dalki themselves seemed to be gathered. The room itself was dark but was lit up by small blue crystals all around, hundreds of them. Even though they were inside a building, it looked more like a meeting was taking place in a cave.

Here five people were standing around the table. Or, to be exact, five Dalki.

"We've searched everywhere for that demon tier beast, and we still can't find it!" One of them shouted as he slammed his fists on the table. The strike was so powerful that the room started to shake, and a few pieces of the ceiling had crumbled.

The Dalki, who was huffing and panting with anger, had a single horn sticking out from his head. Although most Dalki looked quite similar, they had differences; just like how a human might grow an extra finger or toe, this Dalki had a horn sticking out from the top of its head, which was slightly broken.

Because of this, he came to be known as One horn.

"One horn, many times do I have to warn you. If you cause the ceiling to fall in on us like last time, you will be responsible for building a new one." Another Dalki replied.

Most Dalki's had a short temper; they were battle addicts filled with rage just like One horn, but not this one. He went by the name Graham. He stood out from the other Dalki for a simple reason, he was wearing clothing as if he was human, even though special holes had to be made on the back of his shirt to fit the spikes on his back.

Usually, a Dalki would be mocked for such a thing. It was as if a Dalki wanted to be like a human and the same for his name. The name was too human to be considered a Dalki, but no one mocked Graham, and this was because of the number of spikes on his back.

On top of this, Graham seemed to have done a lot for the Dalki and was leading the group in order to better all of their lives.

"But yes, we have searched all the beast planets in our side of the solar system, and it looks like the demon tier beast can't be found. That includes all the previous unexplored planets as well." Graham said.

"What's next?" A female looking Dalki replied. She was the only female Dalki that was currently present at the table named Slicer. Her nickname came from her abnormally long limbs and tail. She would use these to slice her enemies apart.

Some Dalki were born without tails; even if they were, they would usually be too small for one to notice, but Slicer's tail looked like that of a large dragon, and it was sharp as well.

"It means one of two things, the demon tier beast is on one of the planets that the humans own, or it's on earth," Graham replied.

"Earth!" One horn shouted. "We couldn't find it no matter where we searched."

"Yes, but now we know why." Said Graham. "We are running out of time, so we don't have much choice."

"Then will we have to go to war with the humans again? I heard they recently took out one of our fortresses." Slicer said.

"That's still under investigation," Graham replied. In truth, he had received reports that it was all done by a single person, but that fortress had a couple of two spiked Dalki. He could not imagine anyone who was strong enough and not recognizable to have managed to do such a thing.

They were keeping tabs on the humans they thought were troublesome, and they weren't in the area at the time.

Just then, in the darkroom, the sound of a door lifting letting white light into it appeared, and two figures could be seen walking in. These two figures were not like the rest in the room. They were far smaller in terms of height and width, and they did not have any dragon-like features at all.

They looked like humans. The person stood in front was slightly smaller than the man in the back, and he walked forward towards the table where the others moved to the side, allowing him to join.

One horn had a displeased look, and so did another of the Dalki. It was clear not everyone was welcoming to this person.

"I overheard you guys from outside." The man said.

"Eavesdropping as usual..." One horn mumbled.

"It's clear that you have two options, and it would be best if we act now. We already know the location of one of the demon tier beasts needed for your people. The other we can only guess. The question is which is more troublesome." The man said.

"Aren't you the one who told us that it was best to wait before trying to attack the other side?" Graham asked.

"Yes, that was before." The man said, smiling as if he had expected that question. "There have been some changes in the current situation. The relationship between the vampires and humans is at the weakest it has ever been. There was always a worry that if one of these sides would get attacked, someone would interfere and protect one side. The vampires are still strong, but the humans have been weakened from the Civil war. I will leave it up to you guys to pick the best choice."

"How has this changed? Did you manage to find the person you are looking for?" Graham asked.

"I have not." The man replied. "But I found something that may be even better. Someone who will turn the tides and has agreed to join us."

Stepping aside, the man bowed down slightly as the more significant figure stepped forward. His long black hair could be seen and a large, chained sword on his back.

"I present to you all, Arthur. Possibly the strongest vampire in existence."

While Arthur stood there, he did not say a word. His expression was emotionless. It looked like all feelings had been drained from his body.

"Arthur here has agreed to join our side, and I believe a couple of you have already met him."

Two of the Dalki at the table looked almost embarrassed after seeing Arthur. While the others were unaware of who he even was.

"With him, our goal of getting the demon tier beast will be a walk in the park, but he does have some conditions before joining...."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 810: Missing person

Sweat was dripping down her face, her feet were sore from the hours she had been walking, and her throat was dry from the incredible thirst. She took one more step forward on the hard diamond surface wondering if she would live to see another day.

'I have blisters on top of blisters!' She said, as she sat down under a slanted piece of large crystal that stuck out from the flat ground. She proceeded to take off her boots and as expected, the skin on the back of her heel had rubbed off. She felt like she had no skin left to protect or cushion her feet.

'How many days has it been, was the ship really parked that far?' Cia thought.

Cia was originally with Nate and the others, she was waiting patiently for Quinn and the others to return, and while walking around she had bumped into one of the others from the other faction. When this happened, a vision appeared in her mind, of his death but not just his, several people around him as well.

Noticing that the area where the man had died was not too far from where they were standing, she decided to go ahead and touch a few of the others as well and every single one of them experienced the same fate. She didn't know when it was going to happen, but it had to be soon considering the area they were in.

Thoughts of warning the others went through her head, but she thought nobody would believe her, especially when she couldn't see what or who was the cause in her vision. There was also the chance that telling others would risk her own life. Maybe the future she had seen was due to her warning in the first place, this was why she hated her own ability sometimes.

Just in case, she had gone up to Dennis, and saw the same devastating scene when touching him. His body was badly beaten and coughing up blood soon to die. Seeing this, she had made her choice, the only way to live was to head off without letting anyone know.

It was just too risky, and her life was most important after all. The only problem was, she hadn't taken a ship, how could she with so many people standing around, unaware that death would be upon them.

With her abilities lacking, she needed to be careful about where she walked, making her journey on the planet that much harder.

"Maybe I should have at least told Dennis, then he could have flown me back to the ship." Thinking about this, the scene in her head appeared again. "Arghh! Why am I such a horrible person? I didn't even try to save them, and I just cared about myself."

As she got more tired during her walk, she often thought about weather or not she had done the right thing.

"Come on Cia, it's not like they would have saved you if they were in the same boat, it's only natural, right?"

Was it though? If Quinn was in her position would he have done the same? Sil was also adamant to try and save Quinn. There were many in the Cursed faction that would have risked their lives to save each other, but Cia didn't have a close connection with anyone.

There was one person though, maybe if she was there Cia would have at least warned her, Layla. During their time at Pure the two of them had gotten even closer together. If it wasn't for her and the vampires possibly knowing a way to get her memories back, she would have already attempted to leave Quinn and the others by now.

Unlike the others, she didn;t really have a reason to thank or stay with Quinn.

While attempting to put on her boots back on, she was halfway through putting on the second one when she heard a familiar hum.

"Isn't that the sound of a spaceship!?" She thought with excitement. Wasting no time, leaving one boot off, she rushed outside, and could see a medium sized spaceship moving ever so slowly.

Not wanting to miss this opportunity, she started to scale the large crystal that she was under using her sore feet. She fought through the pain and eventually made it to the top. Waving her arms jumping up and down, it looked like the ship would soon go past her without seeing her as it was heading in a completely different direction.

'No, don't leave, I'm over here. Come on you have to see me!' knowing that this might be her only chance, she did the only thing she could do. "I can only do one thing!" She thought as she placed her hands around her mouth.

"OVER HERE!!!!" She screamed so loud, the cry of the banshee skill was activated and the sound seemed to cause even the spaceship to shake a little.

The only worry was, that she was sure such a loud sound would attract beasts in their direction as well. However, it had worked as the ship was soon heading over to where she was, and when it landed, she was happy to see familiar faces come off the ship.

"Hey, is she crying?" Nate asked, and next to him was Dennis and Sam.

"I thought you guys were dead!" She said, wiping away the tears from her face. Maybe she did miss them more than she thought.

"Haha.." Nate started to laugh nervously.

"Do we tell her that we thought she was dead as well?" Nate whispered. "And that's why we forgot about her?"

The smile on Cia's face looked so sweet, that the boys decided to say nothing.

"Hey, I never noticed this before, but don't you think Cia is kinda cute?" Nate whispered over to Sam.

"Is there anyone you don't think is cute? Sometimes you need some water." Sam replied.

"Need some water, what does that even mean?"

Dennis slapped him on the back a few times, as they went back onto the ship.

"There is more to life than girls young boy, trust me, sometimes they are more trouble than they are worth. I mean did you hear her scream? Could you imagine what would happen if you did something wrong?"

On the way back, the boys updated Cia on what had happened so far, and who had attacked them, and what had happened with Quinn and the others so far, especially with how injured Quinn was. In the ship it was a short journey back and Cia could see that all of the other faction ships had left apart from the large Cursed faction ship that still remained.

"It seems like a lot happened while I was away." Cia said, looking at the ships, she was imagining what would have happened if the cursed ship left as well. Did it mean that no one would have ever seen her on the planet? Dying from hunger and thirst wouldn't have been the best way to leave the world.

"Wait, what I don't understand, is if all the others have already gone, then why did you all decide to stay here, and how did you even know I was alive. Why were you looking for me?" Cia asked.

The smaller ship docked, in the bay inside the large Bertha Cursed ship. When they exited the four of them continued to talk.

"Actually, you can thank Quinn for that.' Said Sam. "When he eventually healed from his injuries, he said he could sense that you were still alive. And that's when we realised...." Sam stopped himself, as he realised himself that they hadn't even bothered checking to see if Cia was alive amongst the bodies.

In all honesty, Sam, Nate, and Dennis didn't even know Cia that well, which was why they had forgotten about her and it was the first time they were really talking to each other so much.

"Okay I think I understand everything now, so I guess now that Quinn is alive and now that he's part of the leaders, earth and the rest is going to change quite a bit, so where are we headed to next."

The three boys then looked at each other for a second before replying. They had a worried look on their face.

"For now, I have been doing the meetings with the leaders table as a few things have happened. " Sam said." But I don't think we will be leaving this planet anytime soon. For one, The Bree family can't locate where Mona, or at least her body, is. Nearly every body from the Bree family has been accounted for apart from hers. Even after searching there were no traces of her, but they had to leave so as to not worry the other planets they were on.

"We agreed that while we remain on the planet, we would keep an eye out for her. As for the second reason, it's about Quinn..." Once again Sam paused which was starting to worry Cia.

"What about Quinn?"

"Well, Quinn made a full recovery. It didn't take him long, but the problem was shortly after that. Just as we were getting ready to leave, he went missing."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 811: Spreading the news of the Cursed

"Maybe missing isn't the correct word to use." Sam quickly corrected himself as he saw the look on Cia's face and thought she might have gotten the wrong idea.

After all, Quinn was young and maybe the pressure of being a leader had gotten too much for him. He was certainly one with a lot on his plate, and there were many reasons for him to possibly leave.

"Technically we have some idea of where he is," Sam continued, "You see, after healing up, Quinn was acting a bit weird, it was understandable after Fex explained it to us. The person who had saved their lives was known as Arthur, and Quinn saw him as a type of teacher, someone to look up to. So after what had happened to him, he was more than devastated.

"When he had finished healing, he didn't even leave the medical bay, no matter who came up to him. He hardly spoke and mentioned about you. Out of concern I placed Linda there to keep an eye on him. From what she had described, it seems like Quinn had used his own shadow skill on himself, and ever since he hasn't returned."

"I think i understand a little more now." Cia replied.

Honestly, no one even knew what had happened between Arthur and Quinn, and Fex was the only one that could guess, but it seemed to be quite accurate based on the way Quinn was acting. Still, Sam didn't really know what to do, the faction belonged to Quinn, didn't it? Without him what was their goal or direction.

Eventually, the group had called a meeting with all the leaders to discuss what to do next, and the one who was most vocal, was Paul.

"It's clear that Quinn isn't fit to lead this faction at this moment and time." Said Paul. "This faction, this group is now too big to be left alone like this. The world now knows the Cursed faction as one of the big three forces that make up the human forces.

"We can't be like the Bree family who have been disorganised ever since they have been unable to locate Mona. Everyone has to start thinking about acting without him, and even if he does return, we need to evaluate if he will even be fit enough to lead us."

The room was quite silent, Dennis, Linda, Fex, Sil and many others in the room all owed Quinn a lot, but they couldn't deny the days before he had disappeared, he was certainly acting strange.

It hadn't been long since the Bree family had their leader disappear but the fall of the great family was becoming clearer and clearer as days went on. Before no

ability books had been made of the Bree family, but suddenly with Mona gone, they started to circulate on the market place.

This caused infighting between those in the groups and eventually some had disbanded to join the others. Oscar and Owen with Sam's blessing had made the decision that the Bree family were to be broken up and become absorbed by the other three families. Which made it easy for Logan to join the Cursed without being suspicious.

Since it was an order from the leaders, and now there weren't any solo stray factions, they had no choice but to comply. What Sam was surprised about after this order was made, was how many from the Bree family had requested to join the Cursed.

What he didn't realise was just how much effect the videos of Quinn's duel against Pure and others had on other people.

The video of what happened to Hilston wasn't broadcasted. There was footage but Oscar demanded that it not be released. The humans already had many things to fear and they didn't need a new one right now.

However, the live streams of the duel that Quinn were in, were edited down and the clips showing off Quinn and his power the most were broadcasted.

"Wait, pause the video. Did you see what he looks like, isn't that Quinn?"

"Quinn, the guy from the inter base tournament."

"Oh crap! This can't be real, I used to beat that guy in school, I hope he doesn't remember me and come back for revenge."

"You really think he has time for that? He's a world leader now, he will be far too busy to do anything like that."

"But how did he get so strong? I remember he used to be, well so...weak."

"Hey, maybe if we join the cursed faction the same thing can happen to us."

The news of Quinn's past as a nobody, a weak level one who used to get bullied all the time, was spread across the internet and the story of his achievements as he rose was passed along as well.

This seemed to inspire many from a younger generation who felt the same way Quinn had once did, and it also caused an influx of people requesting to join the Cursed faction.

However, this news didn't just reach the public, it had a far wider reach than that as well.

Somewhere underwater, in a large submarine that could be anywhere at any point, they had heard the news as well. Once in a while, the submarine would surface and today was one of those days.

In the middle of the sea, the giant behemoth of a submarine rised up crashing through the waters, chucking huge waves off to either side and when it finally settled, it stayed there for a few moments.

The hatch door wasn't opened, and it looked like they were waiting for something. A few seconds later and a small human could be seen crashing down on the submarine, hitting the upper half of its body and lifting the back of it up.

The tail of the submarine crashed back down, and the white overcoat of the man could be seen fluttering through the air. It had a large number one on the back.

"Whoa, that was a bit off a rough landing. I hope no one gets mad about that." Chris said. "Actually, maybe I need to be worried about being away for so long, but he said I could do what I wanted, didn't he? As long as I just came back when he asked. Oh well, nothing I can do about it now." He shrugged his shoulders as he opened the hatch and entered the submarine, soon after it descended back into the water just like before.

Chris, having returned, had a lot to catch up on. However what he was looking forward to finding out about most, was who Quinn was. Supposedly he was a new world leader, but when did that happen, and how?

He was so determined to find out about Quinn, that Chris practically ignored everyone in the Pure base that would greet him as he headed straight to his own room. When at the computer, he sniffed each of his armpits as he noticed a foul smell coming from them.

"Damn I need a shower, but first things first."

Typing in Quinn's full name, as expected there was plenty of information on him. Videos, articles, and more and what's more, all of it seemed to be recent. However, his eyes were glued to one thing in particular.

It was a video titled, "Pure leader vs Quinn from the Cursed faction". Then underneath it there was an article discussing the Pure leader's death.

"What happened while I was away?" Chris thought, as his hands were shaking.  
"Shit, I was meant to be there.... I'm sorry my dear friend, I said I would protect you."

Back on the Cursed ship, they had decided to think about what Paul had said, but there was one thing that was agreed. They would remain on the planet at least until Quinn returned. According to Sil, the skill Quinn used would allow him to reappear

where he had left, so if they moved, they were wondering if it would cause a problem for Quinn and they didn't want to risk it.

While walking around doing his duties as normal, a gust of wind ruffled Sam's hair.

"Sam, its..its..its... Quinn!" Wevil shouted. "He's returned, he's come back. Everyone is already gathering at the medical bay."

At first Sam thought this was great news, he had finally returned, but the question was whether Quinn was okay or not. Even if he did return, did he return as the same person as before?

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 812: Completing the leader Ques

Although the injuries Quinn had suffered were brutal, and everyone who had seen him that day couldn't have imagined the pain he had gone through, it was nothing that a vampire couldn't heal with human blood.

With the new Qi he had learnt and his new body as vampire lord, it was actually a quicker recovery than the others expected. But by the time he had arrived at the Bertha Cursed ship and placed in the medical bay, he was already back to normal. At least his body was.

When Quinn came to and saw this, he looked around and went through a mix of different emotions, the first one confusion. In truth, at that very moment Quinn didn't really know what he was feeling, and with everyone trying to come in and check up on him, he couldn't really think straight.

This was why in the end, he had decided to cast the shadow lock skill on himself, sending him to the black room. A skill that Arthur had taught him.

Back to the first emotion, confusion. Arthur was a vampire that had lived for a long time, he wasn't stupid and he too would have known although the injuries were devastating, unless killed he would have lived. So what was the point of even injuring him to that point in the first place if he was sign to let him go? Was there a need to go that far?

Then his previous actions were even more troublesome, Quinn would have probably died if Arthur wasn't there to save him. No matter how hard he tried to think, he just couldn't understand it.

Eventually though, being in the black space allowed him to move on from this thought and feeling, and this was where he had felt hurt, hurt by Arthur's actions.

Maybe some would find it weird, after all Quinn and Arthur didn't have much interactions and hardly knew each other, but Quinn felt like he had a closer deeper connection with Arthur. When he was in trouble and no one was on his side at the vampire council table, he was there to protect him during that time.

And if there was anyone that understood Quinn and the situation he was going through right now, it would be Arthur. They both shared the same shadow skill, at one point they were both human, and it seems like they were going through the same experiences.

It was because of these things he felt closer to Arthur than he really was. Looking into things deeper, Quinn was starting to think about the others that disappeared around him as well.

'Why, why does this keep on happening?' Quinn thought.

Vorden, Arthur, and even Vincent.

'Why did you all choose to keep secrets from me, did you think I wouldn't understand if you told me the truth? Was it for my sake, or maybe you just thought I was too weak to help?'

Quinn saw similarities in all of these cases, and he felt slightly betrayed by all of them as well, including Vincent.

Not being able to understand Arthur's actions, eventually he started to think about Vincent. Although Vincent hid things from him, he hadn't betrayed him and he started to wonder about the quest.

'Maybe there is a chance for me and you can talk again, there's a lot for the two of us to catch up on.' Vincent in a way was Quinn's ancestor and part of the reason why he was more involved in both sides of this than he wished.

Eventually, the dark feelings he felt were still there but they weakened, and he started to think about what he could do. Had the goal changed? No. Were there things that still needed changing in this world? Of course, and now he just had another question he needed asking on this list.

'So Arthur, you want me to get stronger. Stronger than you. Well, I'll get stronger so I can return the damage you did to me, and then I'll ask you why, why did you do all of this.' Quinn said, picking himself up.

'There are those that haven't betrayed me, those in the Cursed faction, and before I stood by while they got hurt. Why, because I was scared of what the vampires were going to do? No, I can't carry on being like this.'

While in the dark space, Quinn noticed he could use the dimensional space and shadow equip as well. It was something else he had seen Arthur do when he took the demon tier crystal. From there he grabbed the dagger and started to cut away at his long curly hair.

Since the evolution, his hair had grown slightly longer and was covering his eyes, but Quinn didn't want to be reminded of his old self. No, just like how the world needed to change, he needed to as well.

When he was finally ready, he activated the shadow lock skill and appeared back at the medical bay. Both Wevil and Linda were waiting for Quinn to return and when he did, Wevil immediately ran all over informing everyone of Quinn's return.

It didn't take long for them all to head to the medical bay and when they did, their eyes were glued to the person in front of them and their mouths were left wide opened.

"Quinn?" Nate asked.

"I'm pretty sure it's the young boy, it has to be. Although 'boy' probably isn't the right word to use anymore." Dennis said.

"Of course it's Quinn, he's just...different." Fex said, knowing full well what had caused the change.

It was hard to say Quinn looked like he once did. For one his body structure was now that of a middle aged man, even though he was still only seventeen years old. There was no more room to grow here and there was a sense of maturity coming off from him.

His facial features were slightly more sunken in, and a light stubble could be seen on his face. It was clear that he hadn't shaved while in the dark space but there was one thing he did do, and that was cut his hair.

His old curly hair was no longer recognisable, for he had cut the sides quite short, leaving only the middle parting and a small fringe. Still, it was impossible for him to get rid of his normal curls, but without a doubt Quinn looked like a new person altogether.

Just then, vibrations could be felt moving around Sam's wrist watch and that's when he noticed the call was coming from the other world leaders.

For a second Sam looked at Paul, but then looked back at Quinn.

"Are you ready to get back to work, or do you need more time?" Sam asked.

"The world isn't going to sit around waiting." Quinn replied.

Straight after coming back, Quinn was pressed to be a part of the meeting table. On their way to the main command centre, Sam tried to catch Quinn up on what had happened so far.

Those from Daisy were doing a great job in helping secure the planets they got from Pure, and true to their word they had given the Cursed faction access to everything as it all now belonged to them.

However, Oscar was now suggesting that the compulsory school military system was to start back up again on Earth, and with the threat of the Dalki, he wanted Quinn and Owen to make their main base on earth as well.

The school base would be condensed down to just three bases, and those from the Cursed faction and Graylash faction would have to send their students there as well. This time, the focus of the academy would be on unity rather than trying to bring out those that were strongest.

Sam had suggested some changes he thought Quinn would be happy with, such as consistent checks from the other factions, for them to also have their own people employed as teachers and not just the military as before.

Quinn knew that the other military bases weren't as bad as what he and the others were subjected to, mainly because of Duke, but that didn't mean there wasn't discrimination still going on in the other bases either.

This was why he was happy with the things Sam suggested.

"I do have a couple of things I would like to add." Quinn said. "I suggest that the ability books on the market place up to level five should be mass produced and handed to all the students."

"I understand why you want that, but I'm afraid that it might disrupt the economy." Oscar replied. "And if we were to allow this and another civil war was to happen, we would find ourselves in a more difficult situation."

"I understand, but what economy will we even have left if we are all dead? And another thing, get rid of the levels on the wrist watches the academy uses. I understand you want there to be competition, but they cause more trouble to the students than you think. If you can't accept at least this demand, then we have a problem." Quinn said as he hung up the call. Not even waiting to hear their reply.

Sam didn't know what Quinn thought about while being in his dark space, but he certainly did have a different feel. It felt like Quinn was now more focused than ever.

'Now to move on to the next thing,' Quinn thought. 'To complete the quest there are two things I need to do, the first is turn one more person using the blood ritual, and the second, to select a second knight. The question is, who?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 813: In the head

Once the meeting with the other leaders was done, Quinn stood there for a while thinking about what to do. There were a few others in the command room as well, including Paul, Logan, and Sam.

"I know it might be a bit early to think about what we should do next, but do you have an idea?" Sam asked.

This question wasn't just asked out of the blue, honestly the words of Paul were ringing in his head and he was doubting if Quinn really was fit to lead at the moment.

"I think staying where we are is fine." Quinn replied, which was a surprise of an answer from Quinn.

"Why?" Sam asked. "Wouldn't it be better to locate ourselves on Earth? They have agreed to give us the city that Truedream used to own, so we can build our base there. Where we are now is quite risky because we're close to the Dalki. We also have the matter of all the planets we have been given and the resources, as well as gathering those to send to the military bases."

Thinking about this, Quinn wondered whether the fact that he was seventeen and technically should be in his second year of military school, meant that they were expecting him to go back to school with the others. Surely Quinn could request an exception for certain members in his group, it would just be a waste otherwise.

"This was my line of thought," Said Quinn. "You told me that Daisy is doing quite well at the moment. I think their experience with running a big faction and controlling multiple planets can be used. Let Helen and her sisters be the middlemen and deal with all the planets and we will just collect the resources off them."

"Won't that be a problem?" Paul interrupted as he walked up the staircase to the table where Sam and Quinn were at. "Giving them so much control, the others might think that Daisy is their leader and not you, Quinn. What happens if they plan to take over?"

"Then let them." Quinn snapped almost instantly, and he almost sounded annoyed. "We can't control other people and their desires. But I will make it clear that if they do betray me, then the lesson will be taught. Someone recently told me I can't be giving people second chances."

Although Quinn was a lot more assertive in the answers he was giving, Paul seemed to not mind that, while Sam felt conflicted. He was worried that he might be straying down the wrong path.

'If you do Quinn, don't worry. Me and the others will stop you.' Sam thought.

"For your other questions," Quinn continued, "Building a base on Earth will be nice but it will take time and we are in no rush. We have already established ourselves here. Thanks to the teleporters we can send a few people to slowly build a place until it's acceptable. I'll be honest, right now the only ones I feel like I can trust is the Cursed faction. So I still don't like the idea of setting up a base on Earth."

"As for why I think we should stay here, the answer is simple. When I was down on the inner planet by myself, there were a few legendary tier beasts and demi-god tier beasts down there."

"I don't know what's going to happen but I feel like something big might happen soon." Saying this, Quinn started to think about what Arthur was doing, and possibly Hilston's next move as well.

With Arthur no longer there to help him, if Hilston came back for Sil, who would be strong enough to fend him off this time?

"Rather than relying on others I want to make our own group stronger starting with you guys. The main leaders all need to have at least legendary equipment, and I think this is the perfect place to be. If the Dalki come, we should be able to use the teleporters before they can do anything."

Sam gave a short smile at Quinn.

"I'm just glad you haven't gone crazy." Said Sam. "I think what you said makes sense. You can leave the preparations for the military school to me. They told us to send a couple of teachers there as well, and I need to decide who would be the best fit."

With the talk over and done with, Quinn was going to go back to the task at hand, but before he could leave, Paul wanted to have a word with Quinn.

"Quinn, I'm glad you're using your head a little and I don't think what you said is wrong."

"I have a feeling there's going to be a but..." replied Quinn.

"But I feel like this might delay the original task given to us by those vampires." Said Paul. "If we waste too much time here without going back, or giving them an answer, don't you think they'll try to do something? We still haven't found out anything."

It was true, but before they weren't really in a position to investigate, especially since there was a civil war going on. It was hard to gather any kind of information, but now they were in a position to start looking.

"I understand you're worried Paul, you always have been," Quinn said, giving out a sigh. "When Kazz comes back, I think it's best if we send out some type of investigation team with the two of you to start having a look."

Satisfied with the answer, Paul didn't say anything and started to walk away. Quinn felt indifferent about Paul. He was someone who he wanted on his side, but it felt like he was more in it for him rather than anyone else.

'I guess I'm the same way. Come to think of it, Kazz has been gone for a while now. The system still says they're there. Wait, would the system even update me if they died?'

Still, even though he couldn't feel the connection due to how far away they were, he thought the system would at least inform him if one of them did die.

Looking at the number on the screen he could see that it said 9/10. There was one more person he needed to turn. When looking around, he could see Logan tinkering away at one of the consoles to control the ship. He had several strange items by his side.

The ship had impressive tech on board, the best humans could develop, but Logan still felt he could do better. A teleporter had been set up on board the ship and from time to time he would go back and forth bringing back items from his houses.

'No, Logan's ability is still too useful, same with Sil. There should be some others I can pop the question to. It would also be best to turn someone while Kaz is away.' He thought.

Then there were two others that came into Quinn's mind when pondering who to turn, so he decided to go explore the ship while looking for them. Eventually, Quinn managed to find them, but when he did, to his surprise they were together and immediately Quinn could smell something.

The two of them happened to be in Quinn's private training room and they were in there along with Linda.

"What the, what happened to you guys?!" Quinn said.

The two people he was looking at were both Nate and Dennis, and from their smell alone, he could tell that they were both no longer human.

Nate started to rub the back of his head as if he was embarrassed.

"Oh, I thought Sam was going to update you on that, I guess he might have been a little busy. But Quinn, don't you think I look different, like, as in better!" Nate said excitedly.

Quinn thought based on Nate's personality of someone who was independent and always looking to improve would hate to be turned, but it turned out he was actually very happy about it. The main reason being he was starting to get a little attention around the ship.

'Hah, I guess Nate cares more about girls than he does his martial arts. I should have asked if he wanted to turn a long time ago, although I would have never said looking better was one of the benefits.' Quinn thought.

"Who cares about that." Dennis said. "Quinn, we wanted to ask you, what exactly are we?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

## Chapter 814: The new guy

Originally, Quinn was on the search for Nate and Dennis with different intentions. He had decided that he would ask either one of them if they wished to be turned. Telling them the risks and benefits of turning. He could trust the two of them to keep a secret while Kazz was away and even if she did find out, then Quinn had already decided what he would do.

Just from the smell alone, Quinn could not tell what type of vampire they were. He was not good enough, and his nose wasn't a skill he really tried to train. He only knew that they were different from humans. Still, there was something he could do.

[Inspect]

"So, what are we?" Nate said, with his heart beating so loud everyone present could hear it. Although, that was also due to their senses being improved. "Sam said the two of us could turn into," Nate gulped for a second. "Monsters..."

"Well, the two of you can relax." Said Quinn. "The two of you are regular vampires. Which means the two of you will be on the blood diet for now."

Usually, Quinn wouldn't joke about in a situation like this, changing someone was changing their life, but he had done it that many times, and the two of them didn't seem to be overly worried, in fact they seemed more thankful.

"So, what did happen to you two anyway, how did you get turned?" Quinn asked.

The two of them began to tell their story of the attack, and how badly hurt they were at the time. They couldn't move and if left there, they would have bled out. They were still conscious and could hear the same voice that was guiding, both Paul and Sam as well.

"Those two champs said that it was another vampire." Dennis explained. "Although we never did see them."

'Another vampire, and one they didn't recognize?' To be able to know the blood ritual meant they couldn't have been a vampire that I turned, and Arthur only came later due to me. So, who the hell helped them and why?' Quinn thought but couldn't think of anything.

There was another thought that entered his mind while thinking about that. Based on the story the two of them had told, they were near death. Quinn thought he had figured out the system and blood ritual, if the two of them were near death, then shouldn't they have turned into a type B vampire, an undead like Linda and Peter?

'Was it because they were turned by Paul and Sam who are both vampires, Is there now a limit to their evolution?' Of course, this was all guess work by Quinn, but he did know one person who would know the answer. Vincent.

Without Vincent, there wasn't much Quinn could do but to try to explain to the boys what they will be like from now on.

However, it did make Quinn wonder, if his theory was right, what if Alex tried to turn someone? Would that person change into a blood fairy as well? Through this method, Quinn could choose certain classes he wanted. There was the limit to how many people one could create and there also was the limit on how many vampires were allowed in the tenth family.

It didn't seem to affect his own limit either. When checking the system, it still allowed him to use the blood ritual one more time.

The two of them seemed to be nervous after Quinn had explained but a little excited at the same time.

"Can the two of you use your ability?" Quinn asked.

After that question, their mood soured a little, as they both shook their heads. It was strange what abilities vampires could and couldn't learn and he knew for these two, their abilities felt more like a part of them, it did for a lot of people.

Quinn thought that originals could use their abilities, but that didn't seem to be the case either, as Linda and Dennis both couldn't use their ability, despite being an original. Which meant trying to change Logan or Sil would be a significant risk.

"Don't worry Quinn." Nate said. "I'm just going to see it as a chance to get better. A new ability will be a new challenge, and who knows maybe I can get something like your shadow now, huh." Nate said shoving him with his elbow.

"Yeah, maybe..." Quinn mumbled. "And what about you Linda?" He said with a greater smile. "You seem to have changed a bit as well."

"You can tell?" Linda replied.

When using the inspect skill, Quinn had seen all three of their classes and Linda had changed from a Draugr, and had evolved into a Great Draugr.

"Wait, you're not a vampire like us?" Nate asked.

Linda shook her head, she had explained to the boys about what had happened, and how Quinn had saved her, but she didn't go into detail of what she was.

"Is there anything new you can do?" Quinn asked out of curiosity, when he evolved, there were slight changes and it was the same for Peter.

When Quinn asked this though, Linda's face went a little red. Which was odd because it was something he had never seen before on such a straightforward serious person.

She took a step back from the others, a few steps back more, and then even more until she was quite the distance away from the others, then she proceeded to take off her armor one by one, until she was wearing nothing but the special suits made from the beast crystals that were on the ship.

They watched intently for a while, the redness on her face was appearing again. It got too much that she turned around. That's when they noticed something happening to her body.

"What the..." Nate said, as his head started to tilt up increasingly.

Linda could now change her size at will, getting bigger than her original size, now she was as big as the Dalki warriors, but she soon retracted her form and went back to what she once was and turned back around.

"I don't know if it improves my strength yet or not, but I can move and jump and do everything just as fast as I could previously. The only downside is the beast armor. The uniform can expand along with my body, but the beast armor can't."

"We could always get that hammer hitting kid to make some giant armor for ya body." Dennis said.

"But then where would I put it?" She replied. "I would need to carry it along with me somehow, and also switch between the smaller armor and larger armor."

Hearing this, it sounded like if Linda had something like the dimensional space and shadow equip Quinn used it would have been perfect.

"Maybe we can think of something." Quinn said, and he soon left the three of them. If they had any questions about being a vampire, Quinn left it to the usual helper, Fex.

By now, Fex had a lot of experience of looking after newly turned people. With turning the two of them out of the picture, Quinn still needed to find another person.

So, he continued to walk around the base while trying to rack his head. Leaving his own training room, he went into the ones next door to see what others were doing.

Borden was teaching the Balde kids.

'I wonder if.."

Quinn didn't want to put any children through the troubles he went through. Looking at Borden, Quinn was starting to imagine some Dalki vampire hybrid. However, Logan had stated that Borden's condition was too unstable in the first place. Trying anything like that could kill him.

Seeing no one of potential in this training room, he then went on and headed into the next one.

Here, he noticed that the training room had been turned into a type of games room. There were many VR pods, as well as a couple of soul machines. Compared to only the one they had before, and in the back, Quinn could see they were even playing a familiar game.

The sound of the automatic doors behind Quinn were heard opening and a young snapper Quinn didn't really know who was entering the room.

"Hey, I don't think I've seen you before, are you one of the new recruits?" The young man asked.

Quinn pointed at himself and was confused for a second, but he then realized that a lot of people he met had the same reaction. Due to his hair, face, and body change, no one recognized him unless they were taking a hard look.

Only when someone mentioned it, or he pointed it out could they see the resemblance.

"Don't worry, whatever family or faction you were from doesn't matter, we're all part of the Cursed family now!" The man said putting his arm around Quinn's neck. He couldn't hate a friendly stranger. Especially one that was this welcoming to new people.

"All this new equipment for the training room, it was given to us from taking over Daisy and the Pure planets, it's great right? Let me show you something here." The man said dragging Quinn along.

Eventually they went to the very back, where they were all playing a game Quinn had seen when he had entered.

"The game is called Block Block, are you any good new guy?" The man asked.

"I would say I'm pretty good," Quinn replied, with a smirk.

Placing his fingers in his mouth. The man whistled.

"Hey, you guys, we got a cocky one here, let's put him up against Jumbo!"

Another man walked out, who had a small frame. They were a similar size to Wevil, but instead of the green hair it was a light blue. The little man also carried two daggers and was in the middle of sharpening them. What use he had for them while playing the game Quinn didn't know.. If there was one thing about the person, they sure were popular with the crowd.

"Alright everyone, time to place your bets, we have Jumbo currently undefeated, going up against the new guy! Thanks for doing this by the way, we were looking for someone to spice things up." the young man said. "Just don't lose on the first level."

Quinn honestly didn't know what he had gotten dragged into, but maybe there would be someone here he could find in this group that was worth turning.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 815: The tenth person

It was a tricky situation for Quinn to say no to what was happening. Suddenly, he was dragged into playing the game, and everyone was too excited. After seeing the look on their faces, he was afraid that if he said no, he would disappoint a lot of people.

'All these guys seem to be having a lot of fun. Maybe I should put on a bit of a show for them?' Quinn thought.

Seeing how everyone was welcoming and Quinn looking around at all their faces, he realised that he didn't actually know many people in the Cursed faction apart from the leaders or those in a higher position. Even the original Crows, who were the first to convert and become part of the Cursed faction, Quinn didn't recognise.

"A 1000 credits on Jumbo."

"Ah, I keep betting on the newbies and keep losing; I'll bet on jumbo as well."

"Yeah, but those are some bad odds. I'll guess I'll bet on the new guy, even if he does look a bit clueless."

'Ouch, that comment hurt a little,' Quinn chuckled to himself, but he knew he must have appeared to be dazed to the others.

The small Jumbo walked up to the block block game with cheers from the crowd, and he placed his two daggers back into his side, down by his legs.

"Let's start with level five. If you can't do that, I don't want everyone to lose any more money." Said Jumbo.

"Hey, we're not all losing money. I have faith in you, Jumbo!" Someone shouted from the crowd.

The others turned to look at Quinn's expression, who just shrugged his shoulders.

"That's fine with me, whatever is best for you."

Just because one was good at the block block game, didn't mean they would be strong in real life, but it did focus on reflex, speed, prediction and other things. When the game started for Jumbo, he excelled at these things and swiftly blocked the attacks from the machine and dodged without moving out of the zone.

'His movements are good and smooth. He reminds me a bit of Wevil, although less robotic.' Quinn thought.

The last fifteen seconds were where it really sped up, and not keeping his eyes off the machine, he managed to finish the game without getting hit. Walking out of the

game room, Jumbo looked proud of himself, it was the best performance he had done so far. At best, he could pass level six, but he wouldn't be able to do a hundred percent of the time.

'No one on this ship can beat me at this game apart from my teacher. Your whole act is obviously a bluff.' Jumbo thought.

Walking up to the game room, Quinn decided that eventually, these guys would find out who he was, so why not put on quite the show for them.

"Let's get this over and done with. How about level eight?" Quinn suggested, which was the highest level the block block game went up to.

"Is he crazy? Why would he go up to level eight? He does know you can't use abilities in this?"

"I don't think I've ever seen someone complete a level eight without using abilities."

"He doesn't have to do this. He could just do level six; he can't be serious about the level eight thing."

Giving a nod to the person who was controlling the game system to the side, the man started the game.

'Ha, you want to try level eight, go on then, show us something amazing.' The man thought, setting up the game.

At that moment, a particular person had entered the training room, that very person was Wevil. Wevil often went and relaxed with the others in the ship and played a few games with them from time to time.

He was growing closer with the group, and his bond was getting better with them. He felt like this was what a real faction should be like, not like that of the Parasites he was with before. As soon as he entered, he could hear the sound of cheering and talking at the back.

"These guys, they're doing bets again?" Wevil thought, walking over. Pushing through everyone, Wevil eventually reached the front and could only see the back of someone entering the game.

"Teacher!" Someone called out to him, and someone who was the same size as Wevil approached.

"Jumbo, I'm guessing you're the one playing again?" Wevil asked.

"Yes, teacher, but can you believe this new guy? He comes up to the game and asks for level eight. He's just going to embarrass himself." Said Jumbo.

"Level eight, on the Block block game?" Wevil started to chuckle. "There's only one person who could do..." His speech started to slow, as the screen above the game centre showed who was inside. Maybe the others didn't recognise him, but Wevil, being the first one to see Quinn did.

He placed his hands on Jumbo's shoulders.

"I'm sorry, Jumbo, ten thousand credits on the new guy!" Wevil shouted, taking advantage of the whole situation.

"Teacher, how could you bet against me!?"

"I don't think there's a person out there better than him at this game."

The game had started, and Quinn perfectly blocked everything. He didn't do his usual tactic, where he would hit the moving parts before they came at him until the very end. When the last fifteen seconds had started, getting a little too excited, he had blocked a part of the machine, and at the same time, activated his Qi.

'Oh crap!'

It was a habit when an incoming attack as fast as the one coming toward him did. The next second, the machine's top half went flying and crashed into the wall. Crumbling to pieces.

"What!, he broke the machine. Does that count as a win?"

"He must have used an ability."

While the others were arguing amongst others about who won, Jumbo had his head down. He had seen Quinn's impressive display and knew he wouldn't have even lasted while playing the game at level eight.

Walking up to the front before a riot started, Wevil turned around, facing the crowd and cleared his throat.

"You idiots!" Wevil shouted. "Don't any of you know who this is? This is Quinn. Leader of the Cursed faction and now also now one of the first world leaders!" Wevil shouted.

They were hesitant for a second. Some even thought it might have been a joke, they had seen Quinn a couple of times and watched the videos, and the two of them didn't look to be the same person. But after seeing the look and serious tone of Wevil's voice. They soon all bowed down as a sign of respect.

"We're sorry." They said as they wore worried about what Quinn might do to them. They saw his power in the duel, and when dealing with those Pure members.

Not knowing Quinn that well, they were wondering if he would deal with them the same way.

"Well, that was a little fun." Said Quinn. "Don't worry about it, you guys didn't know, and I kind of liked being treated just like one of you for the day. And Jumbo, you have talent. Just try not to be so arrogant, let me tell you, in this world, there always seems to be someone better than you."

Saying these words, Quinn felt like he was more saying them to himself.

From Quinn's reaction, the others were getting a good impression of their leader. Quinn decided to use this to mingle with those on board and talk to them; he hadn't done this much, and he felt a little awkward.

He wasn't a very social person and didn't have many times when he needed to be social at school. If people talked to him, it was usually to ask him to do a favour for them; if he didn't do it, he would get beaten.

This attention felt strange, which led Quinn to try and get out of the training room as soon as possible, but the heavy crowds were making it impossible. Seeing the discomfort, Wevil was the one who eventually spoke up.

"Alright, everyone, give Quinn a break; he has very important things to do and can't be talking to all of you every day for the whole day," Wevil said as the two of them walked out of the room, and headed to somewhere quieter.

"Thanks, Wevil," Quinn said. "You seem to get along with them well."

"Well, after they saw me play the block block game a few times, they kept asking me to teach a few them, and it just went from there really," Wevil replied. "Of course, I didn't cheat or anything like that." he laughed nervously.

"Quinn, thank you for forgiving me, and bringing me on board. I really like it here."

Seeing Wevil have a genuine smile on his face, Quinn started to consider Wevil as a candidate for the next turn. Not being close to Wevil, he never thought of this as an option.

Sure, he could command Wevil and force him to do his bidding, but he wanted those that would help him out of their own choice. However, it looked like Wevil was treating this more like his home than others.

'Wouldn't he be a good person to turn? His ability is super speed, so if he's a vampire he would have that anyway. With a new ability, it's a chance to make him stronger as well.'

There was also the chance that he wouldn't turn into a vampire and something else, but Quinn thought a regular vampire suited him best, and maybe the system would think so as well.

When the two of them had reached a quiet spot on the ship, Quinn had decided to pop the question and explain everything to do with them.

Wevil was listening in carefully, and Quinn was waiting for the surprised look on his face, but it never did appear. It was as if Wevil already knew.

"I... Don't have to eat people do I?" Wevil asked out of the blue.

Although Quinn couldn't deny based on what he could be turned into, he thought it was a specific thing to ask. Usually, the word vampires people would think of blood.

"What makes you ask that?" Quinn said.

Wevil revealed what he had seen Linda do, and now he understood the lack of surprise. After explaining more about the different possibilities of turning and their powers, he let Wevil think and ponder about it more.

"You don't have to give me a reply no-"

"I'll do it," Wevil said. "Quinn, you not only saved us from the Parasites life, but you released us from that torture. I now realise how much of a prison we were in that faction. If I can help you out, get stronger while doing so to protect this new faction, then I will happily accept."

The two of them went ahead and walked over to Quinn's private training room. Both Nate, Sam, and Linda were still present. Based on the room's condition and the look on their faces, it looked as if they were busy training.

They quickly stopped when they saw who Quinn had entered with.

"Don't worry," Linda said. "He already knows."

"Wevil, I'm going to ask you one more time. I know you said you owe me, but I don't want you to be doing this just because you feel like you owe me. I want you to do this for you as well." Quinn asked.

"I'm positive," Wevil replied

With that all and done, it was time for Quinn to turn the tenth person using the blood ritual, getting that much closer to completing the Quest.

The usual ritual was completed.

[10/10 ritual completed]

[....]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 816: The last turn

Once the blood ritual began, Wevil whirled around in pain just like all others before him. Quinn was getting ready for anything to happen. So far nobody had turned into a creature that needed to be dealt with like Edward had warned him about, but there was a first time for everything.

'Come to think about it, wouldn't the Blood fairy and the Dhampir count as 'dangerous types' that need to be dealt with? Just because they weren't wild, doesn't mean they won't be troublesome for the vampires.' Quinn thought.

Finally the evolution was complete.

[10/10 Blood rituals have been completed]

[Updating Blood ritual skill]

[Currently 10/50 Blooded]

Strangely, the 50 in the message started to be scratched out as if the system had changed its mind, and the next message confirmed Quinn's worries.

[Error, unable to complete upgrade to Blood ritual skill.]

[Added prerequisite: Complete "Become a Vampire leader" Quest for skill upgrade]

The new amount Quinn was able to turn had come as a surprise to Quinn, but when he thought about it more it started to make sense. Usually there were around 50 of those that were closely related to the leader that knew their ability, and those that had been turned by a leader would have the same blood.

[Congratulations, you have successfully created a Strigoi]

[A Strigoi is a type of vampire that has not yet chosen its path. Evolution will commence once the Strigoi has decided on its future path. Possible evolutions include the Strigoi Mort, a dangerous vampire that focuses on physical abilities or a Strigoi Vu that is a sorcerer among vampires.]

[Strigoi are not affected by sunlight, they also consume human blood via simple touch, powering their ability to transform into an animal-like creature. Strigoi are just as mortal as vampires, but apart from their speed they share only a few physical traits. (Even this may vary depending on what animal they are able to transform into)]

'Another new subclass. I was expecting this after having had so many normal vampires lately, but at least it doesn't look to be anything dangerous.' Quinn thought.

It remained to be seen just how powerful this new subclass would be, judging by the description Quinn felt it would be somewhere between a Class C and a Class A type vampire. He was already curious about what further evolution Weevil would undergo in the future.

'So I'm a Stonkie?' Weevil asked.

"No, you're a Strigoi." Quinn corrected him after explaining all the details to him.

"Wow, he can actually transform. Sounds like it would have been perfect for someone like me." Dennis sighed from the side, wishing he still had his wings.

"Are you going to show us what you can turn into?" Nate asked, curious and now starting to feel that just having a bit of power was a little boring. Fortunately, the blood abilities were certainly something fun to use.

"Didn't Quinn say I would need human blood to transform? However, I don't see any humans around here." Weevil replied.

Taking out his flask, Quinn wanted to check if Weevil could also consume it directly. Unlike the others though, Weevil didn't feel a sweet scent enter his nose. In fact, when he attempted to drink blood from the flask he felt disgusted as soon as a single drop was placed on his tongue, which wasn't the reaction of a normal vampire at all.

"It seems that the bit about consuming it through touch is quite important." Quinn suspected. "Let's leave it for now, but if you get the chance it would be best to learn how to use your powers as soon as possible. As for your ability, and that goes for all of you, I would hold off learning a new one for now."

They didn't understand why, so they just assumed Quinn had a reason for telling them this. Quinn left them wondering as he walked to a different part of the ship to carry on with his business.

Taking a look at his Quest, he could now see that there was only one thing to do, selecting a second Vampire knight. After completing this Quest, Quinn would also have to head back to the tombs to meet Vincent again.

'Maybe I should hold off on selecting someone until I'm back in the Vampire World. That way I could go do the other Quest straight away.'

Honestly, Quinn just didn't have a single person in mind who he felt was undoubtedly suited for the Vampire knight role. He would also prefer to get the opinion from his current Vampire knight.

When Quinn stopped, he found himself heading into the forging room. As usual the busy sound of hammers striking down on metal was audible before one even entered the room. Looking inside, Quinn was surprised that it looked the same as before.

He had been told that Pure had attacked them, leading to some areas of the ship getting damaged, but although it could be seen in some parts, the forging area appeared as if new.

'I guess they can fix anything if they put their mind to it.'

When Alex noticed who had just walked in, he immediately put his hammer down, and rushed over pulling Quinn by the arm.

"I'm sorry Quinn, please, please you're not going to kill me, are you?" Alex asked worriedly.

The others also started to slow down their hammering as they noticed Alex acting strangely.

"Is this about you showing your wings to everyone here?" Quinn asked. "Don't worry about it. The good thing is, no one knew what your ability was before so we can just cover it up saying it was your ability. The only reason I wanted you to hide it was because of Kazz, but you don't need to worry about that anymore."

Wiping the sweat from his forehead Alex looked relieved.

"Thank the Smithing Gods, I thought you were about to drain my blood, forcing the others to make weapons out of me."

Quinn had no idea why Alex thought he would do such a cruel thing.

"On a separate note I have a few requests. Would you be able to create a large scale piece of armour, one that could fit a Dalki? Quinn asked.

"Of course, but is there anyone in the Cursed faction that can use such armour?" Alex answered, as he started to mentally go over each Cursed member. Perhaps it was someone who had recently joined.

"You don't have to worry about that, as for the second thing, everyone in here saw you change, as far as I'm aware?"

Alex looked at the others and nodded slowly. Even if he wanted to lie, something inside him prevented him from doing that. He was afraid that even if Quinn wouldn't kill him, perhaps he would get rid of all the witnesses.

"If you think someone is interested in sharing your type of ability, tell them to come meet me, it might be interesting." Quinn told him. He was thinking about the theory he had come up with earlier.

If Alex could turn someone, would he turn that person into a Blood fairy? If that turned out to be the case, then it would certainly be very helpful if they ended up having to fight the vampires.

"I know you're not a fighter, but I've realised after last time that there might be a chance that another surprise attack happens on the trip, so I think it would be best if you did some fighting training and made some gear for yourself, just in case."

Pulling a piece of red armour from underneath, Alex had a smile on his face. "I'm already one step ahead of you. It's light in design, so I can even work while wearing it. After all, I really don't want to die on this ship."

"Great, unless you have something very important that can't wait, meet me in my personal training room around 6 PM." Quinn instructed him, before walking off, heading to his own room, away from the eye of others.

When Quinn was finally alone, he decided to use the Shadow lock. There was no longer any need for a private room for him to practice in. The Shadow lock was even better than that, a large empty space that went on forever. Nothing could get destroyed in here and he could use his full strength. It also had the added bonus of being away from everyone.

'Alright, let's try this.' Quinn thought to himself, as he closed his eyes.

A few hours later, Alex left the forging area and entered the training room. When he arrived, Alex saw that he wasn't the only one that had been called here.

"Did Quinn tell you to come here as well?" Nate asked with a grin. Next to him were Linda, Dennis, Nate, Sam, Wevil. Alex, still baffled, just nodded, having thought that Quinn wanted to give him some one on one training.

"We need to try think about what we all have in common." Sam started to speculate, his mind always went to things like this. Seeing everything as a puzzle. "All of us aren't human, that's the common factor between us."

"But then where is Fex and Paul?" Linda asked.

"Perhaps they will come later." Sam shrugged his shoulders.

However, when the doors opened again, it wasn't Paul or Fex, but Quinn.

"It looks like everyone is here, that's great. Seems like I'm the last one to arrive, so sorry about that." Quinn apologised with a kind smile. "I guess let's just get started straight away then. All of you here have lost your ability. As most of you know, the abilities vampires can learn differ from the ones humans can. Unfortunately for all of you, the abilities you had in the past belong to the group that are not compatible with your current bodies."

"If you want to, starting today, I'm willing to teach you all how to use the Shadow ability."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) and read My Werewolf System exclusively.

If you want to support me you can do so on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

## Chapter 817: The New Punishers

The idea of teaching everyone the shadow ability had popped into Quinn's head more than once, but it all started when Sam first asked if he could learn the shadow ability. It was a strong defensive ability that could be utilised in many different ways. Due to vampires and subclasses being strong and having their own set of skills. The two things worked well together.

In the past, those with the shadow ability were known as the Punishers, and they were so strong that they were feared by other vampires. It was clear it was a good ability and worth teaching others. They had all seen how Quinn was able to use it in battle and didn't question whether the ability was good or not.

As time went on, Quinn found more reasons for the others to learn how to use the shadow ability, such as Linda with her transformations. The shadow equip, and dimensional space would have been perfect for her.

The problem was, Quinn had learnt the ability through a book using the system. He didn't know how to actually use the ability and would just activate it using the system. His hope was that maybe Arthur could teach someone else and Quinn one day.

It was also why Quinn felt like he wasn't allowed to teach others this ability even if he did know-how. Arthur was the leader of the Punishers, so it would be up to him who could learn the ability or not. It was safe to say Quinn didn't think this way anymore.

"You do all have a choice if you want to learn this or not. I just think it will be advantageous to you all." Said Quinn, as he waited for someone to speak up and object. Everyone stood there in silence which was there was of agreeing and had a determined look on their face.

Still, one person did raise their hand, and it was Nate out of surprise.

"Quinn, why did you choose to teach all of us, as in what was your criteria?" Nate asked.

"Criteria? I mean, all of you are vampires who have lost their ability. I can't teach it to Paul or Fex since they already have an ability." Quinn spoke like it was quite obvious.

"Then can I ask, why did you choose not to invite Cia, or is she on her way?" Asked Nate.

Quinn gave Nate the silent treatment for a few seconds.

"You forgot, didn't you?" Sam said, smiling as he remembered that they too, had forgotten about Cia.

Cia was the one who had the missing memories, not Quinn. Usually, he would leave everything about her down to Layla. He just felt awkward interacting with her ever since he had removed her memories. When Quinn was around her, he could feel the shift in the air between the two of them.

'She did save us when we were fighting against that demon tier beast. Her scream and future warnings are useful, but at the same time, I'm a little scared to know the possible future.' Quinn thought.

"Permission to be the one to go grab her?" Nate asked with his hand raised and his body stiff like he was back in military school.

"Sure, sure, go ahead," Quinn said, still feeling a little embarrassed that he had forgotten about her. "Just don't mention this to her. She might pierce all our eardrums."

A few moments later and Nate had returned with Cia. When she entered, Quinn had started his speech all over again, telling them why he had gathered them all as if the others had never heard it and even spoke in the dramatic fashion he did the first time.

Some of them giggled and were unable to hold in their laughter at this after Quinn was done.

"Is there a Joke or something I don't understand?" Cia asked, looking at the others.

"Don't worry about them, they are just immature, unlike me," Nate replied with his chest puffed out, standing next to her.

Moving on, it was time for Quinn to teach them what he knew about the shadow. To teach someone the shadow, they needed to know a lot about their ability, and usually, those who taught abilities were the originals who discovered them.

For Quinn, he really needed to start from the drawing board, and doing this, he would do so while in his shadow lock space. Silence, time to think and a way to be in tune with his body. Thankfully, Quinn was quite skilled at feeling the different energies that were in his body.

There were times when learning how to use different skills, he would do this and learnt more about how his abilities worked. It was even how he turned the standard blood swipe, and created the blood crescent kick. Using this knowledge, he thought he could do the same with the shadow.

The other advantage he had to learn about the shadow, was his more vast knowledge about Qi. Thanks to learning the second stage of Qi, Quinn also needed

to fine-tune his control over the first stage of Qi. All of his experiences so far and the little training of the shadow he had done with Arthur, allowed him to understand the shadow more.

Quinn started to think back to when he first learnt the shadow, the basic things he could do with it. Then when using the shadow, just simply controlling it and moving it around, he focused on everything that was going through his body at that time. It was difficult, as every skill and everything he did when using the shadow was slightly different, and he somehow needed to explain this to the others.

So far, Quinn had only learnt how the shadow control skill had worked, and he would be teaching them this first. It would be a while before he learnt the other skills and would be able to pass it on to the others.

Explaining to the others wouldn't be enough, and would take quite a long time, So Quinn had a shortcut in mind. Just like how others would infuse Qi and red aura energy into him. Quinn would try to share his shadow energy with them.

Placing his hands on their backs one by one, he would try to move a little bit of his own Shadow aura into their bodies to allow them to get the feeling. This would also turn what Mutant cells they had in their body, into those that would allow them to use the Shadow ability. No longer letting them learn another ability.

'Separating the different engines in my body is a little hard, but it doesn't matter if these guys get a little bit of Qi and vampire energy in the process.' Quinn thought.

There was always a risk like what nearly happened with Chris and Leo happening to others, but everyone here was already turned.

"Okay, all of you should have the feeling of the shadow in your body, and you need to remember this feeling," Quinn said, then pulling out from his own shadow Quinn had a book in his hand. "I wrote down everything in this book about how to use and control the first skill, shadow control, as well as the feeling of the actual shadow. We will come back every day at this time, and keep moving on from there."

In Quinn's head, even though he didn't know much about the shadow, as he learnt about it more, he would teach them what he knew. It was as if someone was going for piano lessons for the first time, and teaching somebody else. As long as Quinn was one lesson ahead of the others, he could teach them what he had learnt.

"Our own personal ability book written by Quinn," Nate said with a smirk.

"Perhaps what is happening right now is exactly how the ability books and skill books came into circulation," Sam commented. "History repeating itself."

When everyone left, they were in a bright mood. The sadness from having lost an ability had disappeared, and they felt the joy of learning something new again.

Quinn felt like the future would be bright, if everyone here knew the shadow ability, then if they were ever in trouble, or needed to support each other. Those with the shadow ability could help.

But without an adequate teacher, and the system. The learning would take a long time compared to Quinn. How long was up to them.

Waiting inside the room, Quinn heard the door open as there was another person he had invited here but asked to come a bit later.

"How are you doing bro?" Fex said, walking in.

"Tired." Quinn replied.

"I'm not surprised, you went through a pretty big growth spurt" They both chuckled.

Fex was a more talented vampire than the others knew or gave him credit for. One, he was a young vampire that used to be the strongest of the direct dements before he was punished. That never stopped Fex from improving. He was also the first one to discover how to use a blood weapon without having to kill a vampire, an amazing feat that no one had yet discovered that surely would put Fex in the council's good books, a game-changer.

Although Quinn did want to talk to Fex about this, that wasn't what he had called him over for today.

Instead, he wanted to talk about another skill that Fex could do that Quinn couldn't.

A new stat that Quinn had only gained recently.

"I was wondering if you could teach me more about blood control?" Quinn asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 818: A special item

Before asking to meet with Fex, Quinn did try to increase the blood control stat by himself. Now that his body had evolved into a vampire lord, Quinn was sure his stats should have been able to increase beyond what they were all currently at.

Before, they were all maxed out at sixty points each. He had hit the limit of a vampire noble. Thanks to Quinn's system, he was able to gain a stat point from consuming other peoples blood. He had gathered this from the members of the faction. Once again, he had asked Sam to bring him more blood from faction members he had yet to consume, and this was where the problem started.

Increasing a single stat point, now required ten or sometimes even more of the same blood type. The good news was that if consuming ten O types, Quinn would still gain a free stat point, where he could use this however he wished and could place it into any stat, including the blood control.

Eventually, he managed to raise some of his stat points.

[Strength 64]

[Agility 62]

[Stamina 61]

[Charm 60]

[Blood control 14]

Then the real problems started. Consuming so many different blood types in one sitting was making his red aura run wild, a burning sensation going through his body fighting to get out. Quinn had felt this feeling once before. It was blood addiction.

In the past, Quinn was able to mix the blood with his Qi to curb the blood addiction, and from that day forward, he had no problems consuming peoples blood while having to worry about the blood addiction.

The difference was, he never had to consume as much blood in one sitting as he did now, and it looked like the same symptoms were returning. When trying to calm it down like he did with his Qi before, it seemed like his blood powers were now stronger than his Qi powers.

'Was there a balance before? It looks like if I want to get rid of the blood addiction and power through my stats with blood, I might have to find a way to increase my Qi. But is that even possible? Didn't I already reach my limit. The size of Qi I can control hasn't increased for a while now.'

Not being able to improve his Qi, and afraid of consuming too much blood, Quinn needed to focus on another way to increase his stats. Which eventually led him to think about Fex, the only person who currently knew about blood control.

"Ah man, you know I'm terrible at explaining these things. It's just a feeling ya know?" Fex said, pulling his hair back like he usually did. Quinn started to notice when Fex was in tough situations and didn't really know what to do, it was a habit of his.

"I had a feeling you would say that" Quinn replied, remembering last time he had asked Fex to teach him how to fight. "Why don't you just tell me what you know, or show me what it can do?" Quinn asked.

"Yeah, I can do that," Fex said, hoping he wouldn't disappoint.

Fex started to throw out his red blood strings out on the floor while they were still attached to his finger tips, he then detached them and left them there lying on the floor, and soon they started to move and rise up off the ground.

"Blood control is something that all the leaders know, and from what I know not all vampires can even do it." Fex started to explain. "Blood is everything to a vampire, and it's how our powers work, and the more control they have over it the more powerful their attacks."

So far, Fex had said the same thing that the description had already told him, but was wondering if there was more to it.

"My blood control is still weak, but it lets me move the strings even after they have been detached, allowing me to create more points and connections. Usually, I can only make ten, but with my needles and the blood control. It's like fighting against multiple people from the thirteenth family. If I could use it well enough, I could probably control a puppet to do my bidding and fight myself like my father, but I'm not at that point yet.

"There's also Blood hardening, which is also a form of blood control. I'm sure you remember some of the leaders and vampire knights using that. But as I said before, the strength of one's blood control is dependent on the person, unless you're the king of course, they have the best blood control."

"The king?" Quinn replied. "I thought the king was voted in, not chosen because he was the one who had the best blood control."

"You're correct, a king is voted in, but think about it, if a weak king was placed would people listen to him? Especially for those vampires that see strength above all. After the first king went to sleep, he did so, leaving something behind.

"Some say he used his ability to create it. Some said it was an item that belonged long ago. The item is given to the next king and with it are the secrets of how to

obtain absolute blood control. Once that king vacates then it gets passed on to the next one."

When Fex was talking about the first king, he was sure he was talking about Eno and not the original king from where Arthur had gotten his shadow abilities from.

The first king Eno, a person with the ability of equivalent exchange. A mysterious powerful ability where the limits were unknown.

"That would be a nice shortcut huh?" Said Fex with a smile. "If we could just get that item then you could learn blood control easy."

"Yeah, but I would have to be king for that, and I think with those old men at the council, my chances are pretty low." Not that Quinn ever had the idea of becoming king in the first place.

"Hey, if I was one of the vampire leaders, I would give you my vote!" Fex said, punching him on the shoulder.

When Fex said these words, he heard Fex's heart skip a beat. A sign of pain. The fact that he was no longer a part of his family still hurt him somewhere deep down.

"Why don't you show me that blood control again, and this time I'll place my hand on your back," Quinn said, trying to move on from the conversation.

Quinn had a reason behind this. If he couldn't increase his stats from consuming blood there was one other way. In the past, Quinn repeatedly tried to use his charm skill, learning the phantom punch. After suffering with headaches, and pushing on, his Charm stat naturally increased on its own.

So he knew there was a way to increase his stat points by improving one's self. The idea was if he figured out how to use blood control, maybe he too could continue to train in it, naturally causing the stat to rise.

The problem was, he didn't really know how to use blood control. Which was why he was planning to focus and feel what Fex was doing with his body instead. After learning how the shadow worked, maybe he could do the same thing with Fex and figure out how blood control worked.

The more he understood it, the easier it would be to use it and improve it. But it seemed like it was a little harder than he thought.

'Is it because my stats points in blood control are so low in the first place?'

After trying for a while, Fex was tired, and so was Quinn. He had just had a whole session of teaching everyone the shadow ability, and focusing used a lot of mental energy. He could only do it for so long.

"Let's call it a day," Quinn said.

"I'm sorry man." Fex replied. "I wish there was someone better to teach you. Maybe Edward could teach you when we return back to the vampire world. He's a good teacher and a cool guy."

"He is different from the other old dudes there," Quinn said.

Hearing this and thinking about the vampire world, made Quinn wonder something.

"About your blood weapon and soul weapon, do you plan on telling the other vampires how to do it?" Quinn asked.

Fex had thought about this a lot. He knew that some vampires had bad intentions, and he was potentially making them stronger, but if he told all of them, then the power of those opposed and against would be equal. The other problem was Kaz had already seen him use it anyway.

"I want to... at least tell my family." Fex said. "But I know if I did, they would have to reveal this information to the others."

"I think for now, it would be best if we kept it a secret, just until we see what will happen." Said Quinn.

When leaving the room, Quinn was planning to finally head back to his room and rest up for the night. He imagined that training every day for the next few days would be quite tiring.

The group continued their training for the next week or so, and didn't leave the planet. Until they were well versed in the shadow, there were no planned hunts on the planet. Quinn also continued to learn the blood control little by little and eventually, a week later he had increased his control by a single point.

[Blood control 15]

"It's still a little too slow."

"Quinn! Come quick!" Sam said, entering the training room, where him and Fex stood.

"It's Kaz, she's finally returned, and she's alone, saying she needs to speak to you about something urgently."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 819: Older women

On a planet where the sun never shined, blocked out by a strange contraption. There stood a castle. Many other castles surrounded it, but this castle was different. In front of the castle were mansions, gardens, living areas and more. However, every single one of them was empty.

This was the tenth family's castle area. Although the buildings were repaired, the damage done from Rowa, and his bloodsuckers were irreversible. For one, the number of people that now remained in the tenth family was significantly less.

There would be around a hundred vampires living in the inner area castle in the other castles, then fifty or so living in the castle. For the tenth area, there was Leo, Timmy, Xander, Amy, Erin and the ten students that had survived and agreed to stay.

There were more in the tenth family, but they were in the pooling area. They were only in the tenth family because the other families were full. Even with Timmy's plan of handing out high tier beast gear, they just didn't wish to join the inner family.

They felt like the tenth family was not strong enough to protect them from certain dangers. Still, Leo, with the help of Timmy completed their duties, helping those in the tenth family whether they wanted to or not.

Leo was currently on the second-highest floors, and he had changed the room to suit his style. The floors were now covered in wood, and the surrounding area was made to feel like a dojo. He didn't like to use the throne room as he never felt like it was meant for him.

Right now, in front of him, he had paperwork spread out across the floor that usually Edward would have to deal with. One of the Royal knights had come by asking for updates, but Timmy didn't know about it either.

It turned out; Edward did a lot more than they thought. Each castle had a plot of land given to them, where the inner castle area was, and the leaders of each land were like lords back in the past. They had to decide where they wished to focus their resources on.

Standing up, Leo was struggling.

"That kid, he just left the room, telling me to deal with it since it was grown-up stuff, but he forgot one thing.... how is a blind man meant to do paperwork if I can't even see what's on it?"

"Do you need some help?" A soft voice said.

Taking off her shoes, and walking in wearing high white knee socks, Silver sat down next to Leo and started to sort through the piles of paper.

"I was starting to think you weren't blind with how well you use your sword." Silver commented.

"You were quite skilled yourself. Maybe in the future, we could duel and learn some skills from each other." Leo suggested. "It would be an honour to learn something from a sweet lady like yourself."

Silver couldn't help but smile at the comment. She had been complimented many times, but it always felt like there was an alternate motive. Here, she knew that Leo was just being a gentle, kind person.

"You should be careful with what you say to people who are older than you." Silver replied.

"Older? By the sound of your voice, and your body figure, I would have thought you were someone in their late twenties." With Leo's ability, it was impossible for him to see clear features of someone. He could only see an outline, and judge by their voice. Unless he started to touch her face out of the blue.

'It seems you have a lot to still learn about vampires.' She replied.

"Indeed."

While Silver was going through all the paperwork, she would discuss with Leo what he would want to be done. There were certain decisions to be made and requests from those in the tenth family. Such as building applications, requests for repairs and even minor disputes. It was starting to feel that the vampires weren't really that different from humans.

With the two of them, they eventually managed to complete all the paperwork for that day.

"Thank you for your help, but I assume you didn't just come over here to help a blind man," Leo said. "I have my own questions I would like to ask you as well."

"I think that young boy was right to make you a leader." Silver replied. "You have great insight; Edward would have been proud. Why don't you ask your questions first?"

"What is going to happen to the tenth family? A lot of our forces are no longer, weakening our power. When I first joined, there were many that would pick on those from the tenth, but slowly we were starting to change that. Suppose nothing is done about our position, or a rebalancing between the families. In that case, the tenth will struggle more than ever. I'm sure that is not the intention of the king?" Leo thought this, based on the king's actions that day. He was a good leader,

someone who had personally come to try and save the tenth family and based so far with his decision making, he tried to please everyone.

"Things have been moving slowly." Silver replied. "Dwight, the royal knight, was meant to oversee what would happen to the tenth family, but instead, he has been too obsessed with trying to find out who was aiding Rowa. Of course, there have been no leads."

"There have been several meetings about this, and I know you haven't been invited to any of them, so that's why I have decided to come personally. Honestly, this is something that would be unacceptable treating a family like so."

"The past tenth leaders in their eternal sleep would be rolling around in their graves. They helped to create this society, and now they are treating the tenth like this." It was clear that Silver was angered by this. She was a caring person even if it wasn't to do with her family.

"They are taking advantage that your leader isn't present. What I can tell you for now, is all the leaders are preparing something big. If my hunch is right about what is soon to happen, eventually they will have no choice but to see you."

'

"See me, or the tenth family?" Leo replied.

"They will come after Quinn. The reason I am telling you this is because you are his vampire knight. Me myself as a vampire knight, I know how vital our duties are, and we must be prepared to sacrifice our own lives for our leaders."

"Unfortunately, no matter what, the tenth family plays a significant role in all of this, and when they come, they will either do one of two things. Ask you to join their side or attempt to get rid of you."

"I owe a lot to the tenth family, but I still belong to the thirteenth, so this warning is the most I can do, and maybe this is selfish of me, but I have a request. I know my brother will help Quinn no matter what, just like Quinn did for him, so please, protect my brother."

Leo, experiencing what he had experienced in his life, knew what Silver was implying. The vampire council was split. Which meant that the tenth family would be the deciding factor. They would either try to convince the tenth to join them or force them.

"Is this a request from you, or a request from the thirteenth family? Otherwise, this could get you into trouble, and it could be seen as the tenth siding with the thirteenth family."

Standing up and getting ready to leave, Silver turned her head before leaving the room.

"This is a personal request; maybe we can have the duel some time." She said, and the next second she was gone.

As soon as she disappeared, Leo's eyebrows frowned inward.

"Things might start to get difficult. I should continue with teaching the kids Qi as quickly as possible."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 820: Breaking the rules

The king's castle was located in the centre of the others, larger taller and more robust than the rest. From the centre, seven castles would go out to the left and right side of the king's castle making a semi circle shape.

Inside the king's castle, there was a dedicated room where the portable teleporters they used would be locked into. This was set up for Kazz, as well as the other vampire agents on earth to use, and was guarded at all times by a group of Royal vampires.

There were no expected visits, so when the guards could see a portal opening up, they were on guard with what was about to appear. Soon after, they could see Kazz with two people. Layla who was still knocked out and being held in Kazz's arms and Peter, who had decided to walk himself while carrying his severed arm.

"Kazz, Vampire Knight of the first family. I am here to make a report, I also request permission for these two to be seen by the second leader." She said.

The Royal guards recognised her straight away and went ahead to report. Until she got the okay she was unable to move out of the room. Not that she would if she had tired. Inside the room were four Royal guards with their royal blue trim around their uniform.

Each of those had the same strength as a vampire knight. If she wanted to try to fight them, it would be a quick demise even for her. There ranks holding the same weight, she had to make sure to show the respect that came with it as well.

Eventually, Dwight had entered the room, each step with convection and his hands behind his back.

'Has something happened?' Kazz thought. She knew straight away something was up. Dwight was the calm and collected Royal knight, but this was an impatient angered man.

"You may make your report to me," Dwight said.

She gave a respectful bow before asking her own question.

"Has something changed? I usually make my reports in front of the king."

"The king is having troubles, you may speak to me and I promise I will report to him."

Kazz started off her report explaining what had happened so far, and then went into detail about Quinn's current position, how he had now become one of the world leaders and how they should be able to dig up information easier now.

"That's one bit of good news." Said Dwight. "But I'm afraid I don't know how much it really matters." He mumbled, but it was still heard by Kazz.

Dwight had a feeling that possibly the incident with the agents, had to do with the betrayal as well and were one in the same. So his focus was still on finding who had teamed up with Rowa.

"And why have you brought these two with you, I didn't expect you to return with anyone, not without the tenth leader anyway?" Dwight asked.

"It was from the request of the tenth leader, he had asked me to come earlier than expected due to two reasons. The first, during the duel I just informed you about. These two suffered injuries that are unable to be healed from their natural regenerative abilities, as for the second reason, Quinn... I mean the tenth leader has said he has some concern that something might have happened to those at the tenth castle."

Hearing this, Dwight's eyes widened. How was Quinn able to know what was happening here at the vampire world? Was he in communication with one of his own somehow?

Going closer and having a look at Peter, Dwight looked him up and down. He could see he was weak.

"Your a Wight correct?" Dwight asked, to which Peter responded with a nod. "You are known for being unkillable while having the best regeneration abilities to offer, so how is this possible?"

This was certainly a concern for the vampires. If the humans had found a way to suppress the healing abilities that vampires had, then that was one advantage less they had over the humans. However he didn't know how much of a concern this would really be. Were the vampires a bigger threat to themselves at the moment. Or the humans who seemed to be growing at a rapid rate.

"You have permission to take them to see the second leader, about the tenth's situation, I'm sure you will find out what is going on from your leader. Also, don't return back to the tenth until we have certain things sorted here, I have a message I would like you to deliver to him, but now is not the right time." Saying these final words, Dwight started to walk off as if he was in a rush. He was even in a rush when speaking the whole time, it felt like he was trying to get everything out as quick as possible.

'Is it the king? Is his condition really unstable at the moment?'

"Sir Dwight." Kazz called out. "There was one more thing I wanted to report. It's about the thirteenth decedent Fex, somehow-"

"If it's not related to the task that was requested then you can leave it for now"  
Dwight had cut her off, and he had already left the room.

'Maybe I should have mentioned it at the beginning, but I was unsure whether or not to report in the first place, but I'm sure Fex was able to use a blood weapon, just like how humans are able to use soul weapons.'

Unless given permission, no one was allowed to enter the upper floors of the king's castle, and her being only a Vampire Knight and not even a leader, she wouldn't be granted a second meeting so soon, so she decided to leave it for now. After all, Dwight did say he would meet her again to deliver a message to Quinn and she would always inform him before she went back.

A quick journey was made to the second castle, and they were informed beforehand of Kazz's visit. The three of them, including Layla who was still being held in Kazz's arms, were escorted to the top floor where the second leader Cindy was at.

When they entered the room, they could see a woman around her forties wearing a large grand black dress where the bottom half was puffy like a huge flower Similar to a wedding dress. She gently drank her tea as she looked out the window.

"Kazz, I wonder what your father would think if he knew you were doing such tasks for the tenth's family and that you decided to come and see me, the second leader personally."

Layla was placed down on a makeshift bed in the room, it was basic but there were many of them in the second leader's throne room. In the past at the worst of times, the room would be filled with patients waiting for her to use her ability.

Peter also sat down in a chair next to Layla, he didn't know how much longer he could walk as his wound was throbbing with pain. Something he wasn't used to. Still, he decided to listen carefully to the conversation as it seemed these two didn't get along.

"I don't understand what you mean, I am doing a task given to me by Dwight."  
Kazz replied.

"Of course, but you're not so silly to not know about the politics going between our two families are you? The king is soon to go into his eternal slumber, everyone is aware of this and the two front runners are the first family, and the second family.

"We all saw how much the tenth cared for his people, if I save these two then he will owe me a great favour, turning the tide to our side, and you have personally delivered them to me. If he knew about this, I'm sure he would punish you. So the question is, why didn't you kill them when you had the chance?" When Cindy spoke this, her eyes were glowing red.

Cindy was often known as one of the gentle kind hearted leaders, but right now Kazz wasn't feeling this was the case.

"The first leader is not like that, just like me he follows the vampire code." Kazz replied, not backing down. "The first family, just like all the other families, works for the king. The current king, there is no new king yet." Kazz said as she left the room.

Leaving the second castle there was one more place that she needed to visit, the first castle. She was wondering what to tell her father's and what he would think of the vampires he sent after Quinn. Although she used to believe her father was a man who cared about the law more than anything, she was starting to think he was straying from this path, she just hoped the incident was a one off.

When finally entering the castle, she had gone straight to her father's throne room and had given a report of everything. Including the fact that Quinn had killed the vampires that were sent.

"It was expected, honestly if he couldn't do that much then he never deserved to be a leader in the first place. Don't worry too much, times have changed and I think the tenth family won't have much use soon." Bryce replied. "Even if she helped them two, that young boy will be too angry at what happened to the tenth people. Especially since it was the previous second leader that caused that mess in the first place."

"Are you talking about Rowa?" Kazz replied.

Bryce explained what had happened to the tenth family while away, including how the king got involved, and now things were making sense, if Quinn knew about this, what would his reaction be? With those he needed to protect on the Cursed ship, would he come back to protect the vampires? She thought.

Kazz had seen how much he did and cared for those in the Cursed faction, but she wondered if he thought of the tenth people the same way. It couldn't be possible, after all Quinn only knew them for a short while.

"There is one more thing I would like to report that I was unable to report to Dwight." Said Kazz. "It's about the ex descendant of the thirteenth family Fex. I believe he has somehow discovered a way to summon a blood weapon from within one's body. Without creating a weapon from a crystal."

A large smile appeared on Bryce's face as he got up and out of his throne, and started to walk over to Kazz he placed his hand on her shoulder.

"Good job, this is definitely great news, tell everything you know to him." He said walking off laughing to himself.

"Wait, are you not going to report this to the king?" Kazz asked.

But her father didn't say anything and had just left the room.

'Please don't tell me you will break the rules again father, otherwise, I don't know what to believe anymore.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 821: The second castle

Once the little spat between the two girls was over, Peter decided to sit there silently. Honestly, he didn't think he had the energy to scream, the pain from his severed arm was disappearing and he was wondering if it was because he was getting closer to death.

'Wait, aren't I undead anyway? I guess I'll just become an unmoving corpse then.'

Finally, the Second vampire leader Cindy started to walk over to the two of them.

"Now lets see what we have over here." Cindy said, she walked past Peter and was taking a look at Layla first. She just looked around her body noticing that there were no marks or scars, and even the wound on her stomach had healed up but there was a scar left over it.

"Strange, she seems fine, and her wounds have healed to a certain point but now it looks like they have stopped, and she's showing no sign of waking up." Cindy said speaking to herself, well aware that Peter was in the room. Still looking at Layla on the bed, she moved her fringe to the side revealing the two small bumps on her head.

"A Hannaya, so rare." She said with her eyes glowing. "It's a shame that someone so special like you fell into the hands of the Tenth."

She continued to look at Layla for a while now, not doing much other than inspecting the horns on her forehead and eventually this had frustrated Peter to the point where he needed to say something.

"Hey lady, not to say my friend doesn't need help or anything, but I think I'm the one that's dying." Peter said, his face covered in sweat. "Maybe I'm the one you should look at first?"

Moving from the side of the bed, Cindy walked over to where Peter was.

"Finally, I can get my ar-"

Trying to finish his sentence, it was interrupted as he felt something hard go against his mouth, busting his lip and jolting his head. Soon his whole body was following along as he went crashing and tumbling into the beds.

"I know you are new to all of this, but there is a certain level of respect that needs to be met when speaking to a leader. We spent years rising to this position and to finally get it, I will not be spoken down to by an undead like yourself. You are lucky I am even bothering to treat you."

Turning around, she didn't bother to check on Peter's condition. She couldn't care less if he died, she would simply say he didn't arrive in time and blame it on Kazz for delaying them. Instead she went back to Layla.

Thankfully, Peter was still alive as she had only slapped him. Lying on the floor with parts of one of the beds on top of him, he tried to get up but simply had no energy. Attempting to lift up his head, he quickly failed and passed out.

\*\*\*\*\*

Opening her eyes slowly, Layla was greeted with a ceiling filled with strange markings she didn't recognise. It was covered in engravings that looked like they belonged to a century she had only seen in history books.

'Where am I?' She thought, as the last thing she could remember was activating her skill trying to save her mothers life. Beyond that she had no clue what had happened after.

Turning to her side, she could see Peter there in his bed, with his arm attached and bandaged up, she was happy there was at least one familiar person with her in the room.

"You're finally awake." Peter said. "Good thing that woman isn't here, I imagine she would be jumping all over you right now."

Looking underneath her sheets, Layla realised that her clothes had changed from what she last remembered wearing, and now she was wearing casual gothic clothing that the vampires often wore, and her bow was nowhere to be seen either.

"Did she change me while I was asleep?" She said with her face bright red.

"Relax, I didn't see anything." Peter replied. "It probably happened while I was passed out. Your uniform was ripped anyway."

"Oh, right..." Layla said slowly, as she started to remember everything that happened. "What happened after I, I mean, how am I still alive?"

Peter was thinking about what to say, he knew the tough question was coming and even though he just wanted to blurt it out and get it over with, if there was one person who should have told her in person about what had happened, it should have been Quinn.

"Kazz brought the two of us here, apparently Pure knows how to use some special Qi that stops vampires from regenerating, so the suggestion was made to bring us here. The strange lady should be back soon, she was the one that healed us. I don't know if it's a healing ability, but it wouldn't make sense if it was. None of the other healing abilities were working so it must not be a healing ability. Still, she got my

arm working like before, but I still don't like the bi\*tch." Peter said as he touched his face where she had slapped him, even though there was no sign of injury.

Just as Peter was going to explain what Cindy had done, the doors swung open and she entered the room. When she saw that Layla was awake, she quickly walked over to her side.

"Oh great, how are you feeling? There are no problems are there?" She said as she grabbed both of Layla's hands and had the biggest smile on her face.

"No I feel fine, great." Layla replied.

"Excellent, I know you two are part of the Tenth family, but I want you to treat this place like it's your own. I am Cindy Cha, leader of the Second family. I have instructed those in the castle to treat you like you are one of us."

Peter didn't like the way Cindy was treating Layla compared to him, she was acting as if the incident between the two of them never happened. Still, Peter had learnt to keep his mouth shut. He knew he didn't stand a chance against her, and eventually she would leave like she had been doing so far.

After introductions were done, and Cindy gave Layla a warm welcome, they were free to relax and roam around the castle using the spare rooms located in the throne room as they had been doing. In fact, Cindy insisted that they used these rooms. She would then inform them on what to do next when she had been given orders.

Peter had eventually told Layla what had happened between the two of them, and why he had such a disliking towards her.

"Duh, of course she would get mad." Layla said. "Didn't you hear what she said, you disrespected her. The vampires have different ways of acting when talking. You need to think of the leaders more like kings here and you had just offended the king while in her castle."

When Layla had put it that way, Peter understood the reaction a bit more, but still there was something that he didn't like about her. While relaxing in the room, Cindy had left as she usually did.

Peter stood up and pressed his ear up against the wall to try and figure out which direction she was walking in.

"What are you doing Peter?" Layla asked. "We have been treated so nicely here and you're going to snoop around?"

"I just need to find out what is going on, don't worry, even if I get caught I won't get in trouble." Said Peter.

"What do you mean?"

Peter then knocked on the door, and the servants that were at their call opened up the door.

"We're a bit hungry, do you mind getting the two of us some food?" Peter asked.

No questions asked, the servants agreed and started to head towards the kitchen. There were no guards protecting them. There were guards and vampires all over the castle, but Layla and Peter weren't considered a threat in the first place. They were guests after all.

As soon as Peter saw the servant leave, he used his transformation skill turning into the servant and had quickly left the room following in the direction that Cindy had gone.

"I forgot he had that transformation ability." Layla said as she laid back down in her bed, not worrying about him too much. "Wait, the smell, that idiot!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 822: Secret meetings

Peter had the ability that allowed him to transform into others he had seen before, and it was now at the level where it was perfect. The body composition, facial structure and even hair would be identical. At first, Layla didn't really have concern or worry due to this reason, maybe he needed to work on his speech if he was caught but she was just enjoying herself too much in the castle to worry.

Lying down hoping to take a quick nap, soon after something had dawned upon her.

'Wait a minute, when Silver had come over that time, Fex said something. Vampires can tell that the others have different smells. Not just vampires, but the differences between the subclasses as well. That idiot, if he runs into Cindy, he'll get caught!'

Throwing off the sheets, still wearing the strange gothic clothing that had been gifted to her, she rushed out of the room shortly after Peter, but not without a side of caution, looking around and down the hallway first. If the others saw her running about it would definitely cause some concern.

Walking down that very same hallway, up ahead, Peter was heading in the direction he had last heard Cindy's footsteps.

"This isn't the first time you have headed this way, you think a vampire leader would be more busy than this.' Peter thought, and eventually he heard the sound of others speaking by a large double door. The vampires had better hearing than him, so he was careful to not get too close. The problem was with not getting close, the only thing he could hear was the sound of mumbling, not making out any of the words being spoken.

'That's a little strange, could it be a spell or some type of device, or is my hearing really that bad.' Peter said shoving his pinkie finger into his ear, realising that by accident, he might go a little too far without realising. There were disadvantages and advantages of feeling no pain.

Waiting by the door as if he had nothing else to do, all Peter wanted to do was see who exactly Cindy was talking to, then he could hear footsteps coming his way, when he turned his head it was someone unexpected.

"Peter what are you doing, they can smell you!" Layla mouthed but not making a sound, while also acting out the words. However, she wasn't the best at this and looked like a strange monkey doing some type of dance in a circus.

'What the hell is she doing here?!" Peter thought, at that moment the door was heard being unlocked as the handle was pushed down. If they were caught outside, it

probably wouldn't be too much of a problem, but at the same time, Peter didn't know how Cindy would act.

Using all his speed, he dashed over to Layla in an instant, while forming an earth mask in his hand, and shoved it on Layla's face. Soon, her body and appearance started to change into one of the other servants they would regularly see outside.

"Thank you for coming, maybe next time everyone will need to meet together again." Cindy said as she opened the door, and she noticed the two outside straight away.

Touching her face, Layla was wondering what Peter had put on her, but there was one thing that she couldn't feel and that was the horns on top of her head.

'Did Peter somehow use the transformations skill on me? But how?'

"You two, shouldn't you be busy looking after our guests?" Cindy said.

"Sorry, they requested something unusual so we had come to check with you first." Peter said bowing down.

Layla was quite impressed, Peter had imitated the man's voice perfectly. His transformation ability had improved greatly from the last time she had seen him.

"I didn't know you had visitors, I must have got the schedule wrong, we will be on our way." Peter said bowing down again.

When lifting his head from the bow, he could see several people leaving the room, but they weren't just anyone, they were vampire leaders. The two of them had recognised them from the time they had tried to save Fex. Most of the leaders leaving the room were the ones that hadn't participated in the fight.

"You have guests?" Muka asked.

"Those from the Tenth family, as I said I'm one step ahead so you all don't have to worry."

Walking down speedily, the two of them tried to quickly leave the area. Thankfully, it looked like Cindy was too preoccupied with the others.

'Did she really not smell that we were different, I know we were standing quite far away, but the leaders surely have a better nose than regular vampires?' It was a worry that wouldn't escape her mind.

Upon returning and closing the door, the first thing Layla did was slap Peter on the back of the head.

"Why do girls keep slapping me!" Peter turned around in anger. It didn't hurt, but it was annoying.

"You idiot, did you forget that vampires can smell that you're different to them, what would you have done if she thought you were a spy? She might have just killed you on sight, not even realising that you were her guest, just don't do that again." She said as she went back to her bed. She didn't want to be rough on Peter, but she needed him to have half a brain, especially when they were in unknown territory and they didn't know the laws.

It was quite possible that for doing an act like that they would be executed, just like Fex has escaped.

"Did you at least find out anything useful?" Layla asked.

"I couldn't hear anything, I was too far away because I did think about their hearing and sense of smell." Peter complained back. "Anyway, did you recognise those that left their room?"

"Yeah, some of them. They were the other leaders, but it looked like only half of them were there. I don't think it's so strange leaders should meet up with each other." Layla replied.

"Yeah, leaders," Said Peter. "Not half of them meeting up without the others. I don't like it, and I don't like what she said at the end either."

"What did she say?" Layla asked, as her senses weren't as good as Peters.

"She said she was one step ahead, looking after the Tenth family, so we don't have to worry. I just worried that maybe Quinn will have to deal with that vampire bullcrap again." Peter said concerned.

Over the next few days, every time Cindy would visit them she treated the two like she always had done. Seeing this, Layla thought that they must have gotten away with what had happened last time, yet still, Cindy would go off and have these meetings time and time again.

One time, Peter just walked down the hallway as himself. Cindy allowed it, so it wasn't really a problem, and he could see that they were having the same meeting with the same people again.

'Something is definitely up.'

Then one day, when Cindy entered she came with news they didn't expect.

"You guys are to return to the Tenth castle. From there your vampire knight will tell you everything." She said, this time she was quite blunt and didn't have the usual happy expression on her face.

"To the castle?" Layla said. "Aren't we going to be sent back to Quinn?" She asked.

"Don't worry," Cindy said. "He will be with you all soon as well."

In the main king's castle, Kazz had finally been called back to meet with Dwight, and he had some words for her.

"You are to go back to the human world and meet with the Tenth leader to deliver this message." Dwight explained. "The king will be going into eternal slumber, and all leaders must be present. Soon a new king will be selected, rejection of this invitation is not an option."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

## Chapter 823: New faces arrive

Three weeks had passed since Quinn had officially become one of the world leaders. The military schools had yet to be completed, It was taking longer than they originally thought as they were still figuring out and fine-tuning their new system as well as condensing their forces.

The Graylash family had been placed on the beast planets closest to the Dalki, waiting for an attack to happen, while Quinn wasn't really given any responsibilities.

It was clear that despite having the power to be one of the world leaders, not to mention the backing of the others to help him, they didn't really utilise him in that capacity. He had been put on standby to search for Mona and was free to carry on doing as he wished.

Maybe some who had finally reached this position would be annoyed, but Quinn was perfectly happy with this sort of arrangement.

All of this had happened since Kazz had been away, and there were still no signs of her. Making him wonder what was taking so long. The only thing he could think of was that both Peter and Layla needed more time to recover.

'The king seems to be a reasonable person based on what he has done with Paul's men. I doubt he would instigate anything with those two.' Quinn pondered once again. This line of thought had been what had calmed down his worries most of the time.

He could also always rely on Leo and Edward to take care of the others and it looked like his active skill of summoning Leo was still available. He had the feeling that the system would have removed the skill if he was no longer alive.

'Either that or perhaps it would summon over his dead body... What the hell is wrong with me having such sick thoughts?'

"What are you thinking about?" Fex asked, as they were in the middle of their training session. Before Quinn had a chance to say something, Sam rushed in to inform them that Kazz had finally returned, adn alone delivering some very important news for them.

While Quinn was making his way to the command centre, he was wondering what the news could possibly be, now that she was finally here, he wanted to desperately know what had happened to the tenth family.

'I didn't think I would feel so nervous. My hands are sweaty, did living my life as Vincent really make me have such a connection with the place.' Quinn thought.

When Quinn was in the Vampire World, he felt closer to the people there, and the memories were still quite fresh in his mind. Now that he was here, where all the humans were, he had managed to sink those feelings deep down about abandoning the vampires.

'What do I do about the others that have been turned? Should I inform her beforehand? According to Fex since I'm a Vampire leader as long as I give permission it should be okay.'

The doors opened, and Kazz was standing on the top platform in the command rooms round the large table that would be used as the digital map. She was constantly tapping her foot away as if she was in a hurry or rush.

"You're finally here." She noted sternly. Often in front of Quinn and the others she would put on a childish display, but right now she seemed more mature than before.

"What happened to the tenth family?" Quinn asked, hoping that the uneasy feeling from his chest had nothing to do with the news.

"You will be able to hear the story from the others yourself.' Kazz replied, while Quinn wondered what she meant by these words.

"I have a message to deliver from Dwight the Royal Vampire knight." Kazz said. "The tenth leader, Quinn Talen is to return to the vampire settlement immediately to attend the King's eternal slumber. Afterwards, a new king shall be elected. Dwight has requested that you and all those related to the tenth family come back immediately."

It was shocking news, Quinn had noticed the Vampire King had looked old, but vampires were supposed to live for hundreds of years. The old vampire surely had at least a couple more decades in him. Whatever the case was, Quinn was now having to step up to his duties as a Vampire leader.

"What if I reject.." Quinn mumbled. It was just a thought, but he had unconsciously voiced it out. After all, everyone from the Cursed faction he had to look after was here.

"Rejection is not an option, Quinn. You're a Vampire leader, so it's your duty to return to the Vampire World in these kinds of situations.' She reminded him.

He already knew the consequence of going against them. At one point Arthur had chosen to run away from the vampires, wishing to break off, but it had come at the cost of a Great War. War meant bloodshed, and Quinn didn't wish to get the Cursed faction involved in his Vampire life.

'Arthur couldn't protect them all, and he was much stronger than me, so what chance do I stand?' Clenching his fist, Quinn felt like he had no choice. "Okay, just let me sort some things out here."

Walking around, Quinn wasn't really looking for anyone, he had told Sam, to gather everyone who was a vampire or vampire subclass away from Kazz and into his personal training room. There were those that still hadn't been seen by her and maybe they didn't need to get involved.

But from their smell alone, Kazz would be able to tell who was a vampire, and who wasn't.

'If a new king is going to be elected, does that mean I will also have to vote? What if someone like the first leader becomes the next king? What will happen then? No, I can't let that happen, otherwise what will happen to all the people Paul was trying to protect? Will the deal that he set up from before even be honored?' The more he was thinking about it the angrier Quinn was getting.

After circling around and calming down, Quinn eventually entered his private training room. Sam had complied with his order and had brought everyone into the room. Including Logan and Sil, who were still human but already involved in all of this.

The problem was, Kazz was also in the room. "Quinn, I understand why you tried to hide this, I guess some things happened, but please understand, for the moment they are safer if you bring them to the castle."

Quinn didn't know why but when she spoke these words she sounded genuine about them. "How could that be the case? A lot of these guys have never been there and you know we are hated!" He shouted back.

"That is EXACTLY the reason Quinn! Remember what happened before, when they went after Paul? I'm sorry, but you know I can't say more than this." Speaking these words it felt like Kazz was struggling internally.

"Quinn I trust her, I think it's best for us to do what she says." Paul took her side.

"Quinn, do you know how many dangerous situations we've already been in? Just think of this as a field trip." Nate commented from the side with a grin on his face.

"Yeah, and with the shadow ability you've taught all of us, we should at least be able to protect ourselves!" Alex agreed happily.

This caused Kazz to twitch slightly.

'Did he really teach them all the shadow ability? That is supposed to be the exclusive ability for the Punishers... if the other leaders find this out... maybe they will be afraid that history will repeat itself like last time.' She thought. 'Then again,

maybe they will try to eradicate them to prevent them. Should... should I talk Quinn out of taking them along, after all?'

Conflicted, she ultimately decided to bite her tongue and not say anything. The order from Dwight was to bring all the vampires from the tenth family and those related and that's what she would do.

"There's a slight problem." Sam said. "If we all go then who will run the Cursed faction? Who will run the ship?"

Before, there had been trustworthy people from the Cursed faction's top brass, but now they were very few as they had all been turned, and Logan and Sil were supposed to come along with them.

In the end they were left with only one choice.

"You can't be serious, you want me to look after the whole Cursed faction by myself?!" Megan was shocked.

Technically she was one of the Crows past leaders. She had been at the leaders' table for a long time, but since there had always been those more capable than her, she had simply left it to the others.

"We all need to go away on an important task." Sam argued. "And don't worry, you won't be completely alone. Helen will be dealing with most of the hard stuff, you will just need to make sure everything will continue running as smoothly as it has been."

Rather than a request it was pretty much an order, as the others had no choice. Heading back to the private training room, the code was inputted, and the door behind Sam was shut. The teleporter from Kazz had already been set up and everyone was ready.

Most of them carried around flasks prepared with blood and other things they needed.

Quinn was ready to head back to the vampire world, but this time with some new faces.

Linda, Wevil, Dennis, Nate, Alex and Sam had never been to the vampire world before, and while they were worried they were excited, as for the others. There was Fex, Cia, Paul, Sil and even little Borden was coming along. After Borden heard that his brother was coming to a dangerous place again, he instead on coming, and it was easy to hide him on Sil's body, in the leg like toolbox.

'A new king, huh. Maybe I'll be able to see Vincent again.' Quinn thought as he stepped through the teleporter with the rest.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 824: High Expectations

Going through Kazz' teleporter didn't feel any different from those they had gone through before.

Still, it wasn't some school trip this time. They weren't going to an unknown planet to fight beasts, but instead they were going to a world most humans wouldn't even know existed.

As always, it only took a small moment for them to appear at their destination. When the whole group opened their eyes, they found themselves in a large empty room with four guards seemingly awaiting them.

"Wow, we're actually here! Only... is it just me or does this place look kind of plain?" Nate asked, looking around. He didn't realise it, but some of the guards grimaced at this comment.

"What, did you expect we would arrive directly in the throne room? We're in some sort of landing room, you idiot, of course it would look like every other room." Sam replied.

Those who had come here for the first time were busily looking around the place, looking for something different, something new... but there was nothing to indicate that they weren't on a human planet, as such they were a little disappointed.

Alex was the only one to notice something 'out of place' which was the outfit from those in front of them.

'That doesn't look to be made out of beast crystals. Does that mean they don't use beast weapons here? It makes me wonder why Quinn asked me to give every person a weapon made from my blood before coming here. It's meant to be effective against these guys, right? I just hope he's not expecting us to fight with those vampires at some point.'

"Those four guys are vampires, right? They look just like us." Dennis asked in a hushed tone.

"I would assume so." Linda answered. "Aren't you a vampire yourself? Why would you think they would look different from you?"

"Our group seems to be filled with the dimwitted and the ones that have only some brain power." Logan commented as he observed the situation, which silenced the others who had been talking as if they were actually on a field trip.

"I think my own intelligence speaks for itself, Linda has always been quick on the ball, and Sam is someone who I think can even outwit me. Paul is knowledgeable

with his experience, Cia, too quiet for me to make an opinion. Wevil I have yet to make an observation about and then there's the rest."

It had been a while since Quinn had traveled with Logan and he had actually forgotten about his bad habit of speaking his mind not caring about whether his words were considered rude or polite.

"Hey, don't lump me in with these idiots! Do you know how much knowledge it takes to craft a weapon!?" Alex complained.

"Yes, your skills are excellent with the hammer, but can't a trained monkey do the same job?" Logan replied.

"That's it, return everything I made for you, you short twerp!"

The royal guards who had been watching the strange group argue over each other had never seen anything like this. One of them had already been sent out to report their arrival, but they were still waiting for the most important person to arrive.

"What about Quinn?" Sil asked. "I didn't hear you mention his name."

Hearing this, hurt Quinn a little, and he was starting to think if he was a little slow since he hadn't even realised Logan had omitted him.

"Of course. Why would Quinn need those things if he has us?" Logan questioned back.

The group stopped arguing with each other and all started to laugh collectively at Quinn, who now had dropped his head down and sunken his shoulders.

"Don't listen to them, Quinn." Fex encouraged him with a wink. "Just wait until they find out what a bigshot you're here as well as in the Human World."

While waiting in the room, Fex started to explain the basics to everyone. Just certain manners they should abide by and what they were and weren't allowed to do as well as what to look out for. Fex wanted to avoid disrespecting another family leader at all costs since it would cause a lot of trouble for Quinn.

Looking at Kazz, Quinn was wondering how much she knew. All the others had been gathered and Kazz was there, she would have picked up that each of them weren't human with her nose but the one he was worried about the most was Alex.

'Can she tell that he is a Blood fairy? I don't think that should be the case. Since my evolution my nose has gotten a lot better without me having to train. I can tell the difference between the subclasses and vampires, but I can't tell the difference between the smells of each subclass. It's a little different but if she's never seen a Blood fairy before, she might not even know what they smell like.' Quinn thought.

Respectively, Kazz was also having thoughts about Quinn.

'He looks a little older, did he learn how to control his blood properly and control the aging process? No, he feels a little different. I always thought he was strong for a Vampire noble, but he still doesn't feel like the leaders yet, he's not quite there . What changed while I was away, and how many people did he turn? Still, the biggest concern is whether he really taught them how to use the shadow ability...'

Finally, after waiting a while, Dwight the Royal knight entered the room.

"Remember, what I told you guys." Fex reminded them, as he bowed down, with the others quickly following suit, Only Quinn did not. As a family leader there was only one person he was meant to bow down to, and that was the King.

"I see a lot of new faces here." Dwight commented in a friendly manner. "And that includes yourself, you seem to have aged many years in such a short amount of time."

'Did he turn all of these? I hope he hasn't gone against any rules, but Kazz didn't report anything about the humans finding out. To be honest, it's probably better this way as the tenth family's strength needs to build up somehow. Just what happened to this kid to elicit such changes? I feel like I can't even call him a kid anymore, he has improved far too quickly. I've never imagined this would be the case. I didn't think about this before but maybe, there is a way I can use him. But will he be enough?' Dwight thought.

"I'm sorry we weren't able to find out too much about the agents and I hope the King is doing well.' Quinn said.

During Fex and Quinn's training sessions, Quinn had also been learning about the Vampire World bit by bit. He needed to make sure not to make any mistakes during this outing. As long as all of them behaved according, there was no reason for a fight to break out.

Mentioning the King, also seemed to spark something in Dwight, it was clear he cared greatly for that person.

"The ceremony will be in a week. There we will put the King to sleep. I know you don't understand the formality too much, but for now just know that you will be expected to bring your two knights with you and soon I will send someone to further instruct you about your responsibilities. The rest will learn what to do as time goes on I'm sure of it." Dwight explained.

"Quinn, I'm sure once you head back to your castle, what has happened will be quite a shock to you. I only know some of the details, so it would be best you hear and see everything with your own eyes."

"Allow me to apologise in advance, on behalf of the King and his guards. We should have done more to prevent that. Know that you have a good knight as your retinue. If all the others that follow you are even half as great as that man, then the tenth family will be a great force in the future."

"After you have settled in with the others, and found out about what has occurred, please return to the King's castle and request to meet with me. I think it will be best if the two of us talked alone." Dwight said.

Hearing this, Kazz was quite shocked, Dwight was asking to meet with Quinn, a new leader. The underlying meaning of such a thing was just too great. It was clear it wasn't on the King's order. From what she had heard, he could barely move, and if he didn't go to sleep soon he might just pass before the eternal slumber.

As for Quinn, when he saw Dwight leave the room, he felt even more concerned for the others.

"Erin, Leo, just what happened to you guys while I was away? Please, be okay."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 825: The leader returns

Stepping out of the castle, the others were now walking through the main vampire settlement. They couldn't keep their eyes off what they were seeing and had to comment on everything new they walked past. The only one that was now no longer with them was Kazz, as her mission was complete, and she was to return to her leader's side.

There were no sweet goodbyes as she left the group. Many of them knew their lives were harder because of her, but still, Quinn had given her a little nod of appreciation.

"It looks like a mixture of old and new. There's technology here that is just as advanced as what we use, some things even better, but then the style of those said things is...really old." Sam commented.

In a sense, it felt like they were in some type of play with how everyone around them was dressed. Wearing high end tailored clothing that was near enough a perfect fit, and many of the girls also wore gothic dresses.

Commenting on the technology, it was only later that Sam found out that most of what the vampires used ran on beast crystals rather than what the humans would use. Vampires had known about beasts crystals for a long time, so they had found more uses and had longer to experiment on them.

'So why don't they use beast crystals to create weapons then?' Sam thought.

"There's one thing that I've liked about this place ever since I first got here," Nate said with a huge grin.

"I don't even have to use my abilities to know what he's about to say," Cia commented.

"There isn't one bad looking girl here. How is it possible with their smooth skin, clear eyes and perfect hair?" Nate said.

"For once, I would have to agree with the boy. They certainly are in a different class." Dennis added before being hit by Linda on the back.

"I know these vampires may look young, but most of them are older than your parents, and besides, they are nothing compared to my sister," Fex said.

"Isn't it a little strange to compare your own sister like that?" Said Wevil. "Or is this just some other vampire thing we don't know about yet?"

Fex's ears were burning from that comment, and the others started to laugh. They were all far more talkative than they would usually be on a trip. Paul was one of the

few that remained silent through their walk. The reason for them all being like this, were nerves. They were incredibly nervous.

The stares they were getting from the others as they walked through the unknown place, on top of this the building structures. Those that had never been here before couldn't get one thing out of their mind. The buildings and the material used reminded them of the Dalki.

When Quinn would explain things about what happened to him and the others, he wouldn't go into detail about Richard Eno, the vampires' past and the possibility that they were linked to the Dalki. This was more kept between Logan and Quinn. It wouldn't change things for the others anyway.

"So, you told us that Quinn is some king, right? Then why aren't the others bowing to him in the street?" Nate asked.

'He's not a king, don't say that word so lightly.' Fex snapped a little. "Quinn is one of the thirteen leaders and is the tenth leader. They are a council that works together to better the lives of the vampires, each looking after those in their own family. A certain amount of vampires belong to a family, and the leaders are in charge of them, as for the other part..."

"It's because I didn't tell them I was one of their leaders," Quinn said. "Rather than a position I was elected to, or rose up, it was one that was given to me, with no choice to refuse. I could have told them I was their leader, but at the time, I thought it wasn't right for me to do so. What right did I have to just come in and say I was their leader when I had never planned to stay here."

They could hear Quinn's words spoken with anger and regret, and they were starting to imagine what type of double life Quinn had to live to get him to this point. Quinn was originally human, just like them. He was turned for some reason, yet, he had an essential role among the vampires. Otherwise, he and the rest wouldn't have even been called here.

Finally, they entered the tenth area, and up ahead, they could see the large castle they were walking towards.

"You're saying that castle belongs to him!" Nate said, looking in amazement. "It's like a fantasy dream or those novel stories."

"This place isn't fantasy," Paul interrupted. "Look at the face of all of us that have been here before. I know you are young and excited, but when they came here, they fought for their lives. When I came here, I lost everything in my life. Yes, this might all belong to Quinn, and we all are part of his family in this world, but you will soon realise that for us, this is more like a prison we can't escape."

Feeling a little bad, Nate, Alex and Dennis, who had been acting like kids at the amusement park, had calmed down a little.

"Don't worry too much about it, Paul," Quinn said. "They should enjoy what they're seeing and while they are here. Who knows how long we will be here, and it won't be like last time."

"I won't be pushed around," Quinn mumbled.

They continued to walk towards the castle, and that's when Quinn was starting to notice something strange; it was quiet. The tenth inner area had always been quiet but not like this. It was almost silent, and the lights that would be seen in certain buildings before weren't even lit.

'Something definitely happened here, that quest message to protect those in the tenth family. It failed. Those that mean they all died? Was it an attack from another family?"

Picking up his pace, Quinn stood in front of the castle door and placed his hand, spinning the combination he knew off by heart. He had done this many times, not just by himself but living his life as Vincent. The sound of the door unlocking was heard, and standing in the reception area to greet him were his old friends.

"Leo, Layla, Erin, Peter.... It's good to see that you're all alive." Quinn said.

Cia had run from where she was, and had given Layla a big hug. Tears were almost coming out of her eyes, noticing that she was all okay, Logan and Peter caught up and spoke few words but were happy with each other.

Timmy, Xander and Amy were also there. They talked to Fex, and introduced themselves to the others.

"We'll get the rest settled in and give them a tour of the place," Fex said. "I'm sure you have some things to talk about with Leo."

The others were taken around the castle, leaving only Quinn and Leo on their own, who had decided to head to the throne room on the very top floor. They didn't start off with the hard-hitting question as it was nice for the two of them to just casually talk to start with.

"Every time I see you, you get stronger and stronger. I can tell you have changed a lot. Your aura is more confident and stronger than before. It's almost at the stage of the other leaders I have met, and as for your Qi, it feels more in control."

'Almost as strong as the leaders?' Now having evolved into a vampire lord. Quinn thought that he would be the same as them. There were no evolutions anymore. At least the system didn't state there were any.

'Is it because the quest is still incomplete?'

"I think there are a lot of things for me and you need to talk about in the regards of Qi that you might find interesting." Said Quinn. "But before that, there are a few things I want to do. Tell me, Leo, what happened here?"

When they were finally sat down, in the throne room at the table. Leo had explained everything to him. About the attack from the Bloodsuckers on the tenth family, and how they had killed everyone in the tenth family inner castle area.

They were more affected than they originally thought. Because they didn't care about the normal rules, there were vampires that perhaps shouldn't have been allowed in the inner castle area who were.

Then, there was also the mention of Edwards's death, each piece of news was stabbing Quinn in the heart, but this one hurt the most out of everything. Finally, Leo spoke about the king, how if it wasn't for him, perhaps he and the few that were still in this castle would have died as well.

He also mentioned that it was most likely why the king now needed to go to sleep after that incident.

"Edward..." Quinn said, clenching his fist so hard that his nails had dug into the palm of his skin. "You stayed by Vincent's side that whole time, even after he had gone, and you didn't even get to rest properly. You waited for a leader to return, and when a leader finally did, I just left.."

It was hurtful for Quinn, a lot more than he thought, and the main reason being, he felt that he had failed Vincent. Living Vincent's life, even though he abandoned the tenth, he never wished to and always tried to better their lives through inventions and more.

He knew that the one regret Vincent had was leaving his people, and Quinn was his replacement, Quinn felt like he had failed Vincent, allowing so many to die for not being there.

"Quinn, I know what you're probably thinking, but even if you were there, it wouldn't have made a difference. The enemy this time was just too strong. If you and the others were here, there is a good chance more could have died. Thanks to Edward, the kids and the others managed to live, and they still have hope for this family." Leo explained.

After hearing everything, Quinn didn't want to waste any more time. He wanted to see Vincent, now, but he needed to complete one more quest before that.

"Let's go back to the others. It's time I pick my other knight."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

## Chapter 826: Choosing the second knight

Walking around the castle and giving everyone a tour didn't take up too much time. Although the group was amazed by how big and grand it was, there was something they all quickly realised.

Most rooms were just... empty.

What's more they looked like they hadn't been used for years.

"Are all the castles like this?" Sam asked what was on everyone's mind.

"Not all." Xander shook his head. "Most other castles have around 50 members that are related to the family, and then there are of course also the servants who work to maintain the castle. The tenth family is just a 'special' case."

They had heard this line a few times already, while being shown around. Those that didn't know the full history of Quinn couldn't help but be curious.

Who was Quinn and why was he so determined to rise and become one of the World Leaders?

"Is that the same for the outsiders with all the empty houses?" Linda asked.

"That is a different thing." Erin interrupted the others before they could reply. Amy gave her a quick glance, before looking away.

Layla immediately noticed a dark smog over Erin's head. Even though she hadn't asked about what had happened yet, it was strange. Erin wasn't the only one present when something had happened, so why were her emotions affected?

Did it mean that the lack of people for the tenth family had something directly to do with her?

Seeing this, Layla tried to steer the conversation away. "You know, a lot has happened on our side as well. You wouldn't believe it Erin, but Quinn is now not only a leader of one of the Vampire families, but he's also recently become a World Leader in our world."

Erin paused for a second, and repeated the word 'World Leader' in her head. Were her ears playing tricks on her?

Quinn, the person who she had considered nothing but a useless level one only a couple of years ago was now somebody that made decisions that affected the whole Human World?!

For a second she felt disheartened learning this fact, someone had passed her by leaps and bounds, but getting herself together she started to remember her teacher's teachings.

From Leo she had learnt not to compare herself to others. She only needed to compare herself to her. If she was better then she was yesterday then she could still get stronger, and right now, she was still improving every day. Nevertheless, she couldn't help but think, 'If he can do something like that, then so can I!'

"I see all of you have a lot of questions about the tenth family." Xander cleared his throat to attract everyone's attention. "Why don't we head to the canteen and grab something to eat? Right now the other students are there as well. Since everyone can be considered to be part of the tenth family, it will be a great way to get to know each other."

Back in the throne room, sitting at the table, Quinn and Leo were going over the potential people to promote into a Vampire knight.

With Leo having worked with Edward, who better to ask then the person who had been doing the job so far?

"First, we should probably just sort out the people we don't think suit that role." Leo suggested.

"When you gave me the trial of Vampire knight it wasn't just a mere title I've gained. I actually found myself growing stronger and to this day I haven't reached my peak yet. I feel that making someone like Wevil into a Vampire knight, especially when he is new to the group and hasn't had much time to focus on his Vampire skills would be a waste."

"I agree." Quinn nodded. "That being said, I think there are a few more people that we can rule out as well. Nate and Dennis. Neither one was turned by me, but when checking the system they do come up under the Family branch. So it seems like I can still give them the role."

"However, these two, although strong, were only recently turned and it feels like it was against their will in the first place. A Vampire knight will have a lot of things to deal with in the Vampire World, and I don't feel like it would be right to do that to them."

"Another important aspect of a Vampire knight will be their loyalty." Leo pointed out. "They'll be your right hand man, and must therefore be willing to sacrifice themselves for the sake of the family. Being here, I started to see the tenth family just like humans."

Quinn listened carefully to this revelation. "If that is the case, then we should also rule out, Linda, Cia and Alex. Linda has a slight hatred for vampires due to what has happened to her, still bearing a grudge against Kazz. As for Cia, she only cared

about getting her memories back in the first place, and I'm sure she still dislikes me. In Alex' case, I wouldn't really call him disloyal, but he has an important job to run the forgery."

"Then that leaves us with Erin, Layla, Peter, Paul and Sam." Leo concluded.

Three of these vampires were subclasses, with one being a Dhampir. Quinn was wondering if it would be a good or terrible idea to make Erin a Vampire knight, given that Vampires patently feared her subclass.

Then there was also the fact that he didn't really know her too well. On the other hand, she had always been by Leo's side and the two of them seemed to have developed a real bond, so she wouldn't necessarily be a terrible choice.

"What do you think of Erin?" Quinn decided to straight up ask instead of worrying about it.

Leo was silent while he pondered over the idea.

"She shouldn't be strapped down to that title. I'm sure she will have room to grow into bigger things."

That was decided then, looking at the four remaining names out on the table, Quinn was now considering who would be the best choice, and eventually someone was called to come see them.

A short while later, the door opened and a single gentleman walked in.

"Paul, can you please have a seat, there is something I want to talk to you about." Quinn said.

Leo started by explaining what his responsibilities were as possible as a Vampire knight. The two of them had talked in the past, and Leo knew what Paul was like, so the two of them got on well. It didn't seem like theirs was a bad relationship.

"I haven't made up my mind yet, but I have to ask Quinn. Why me?" Paul stared into Quinn's eyes, making the other slightly nervous.

"I have to be honest, my first choice would have been Sam. I think he is great at these types of things, but he already has a vitally important role to fulfill on the Cursed faction's ship. I can't even begin to imagine what I would do without him there. Finding someone to replace his position would be a long and arduous task. Peter, although loyal, is just not suited for this role, and then there's Layla."

"Her personality might make her suitable, but it seems like she still has other things she needs to deal with."

"This position, shouldn't it be someone who is more loyal to you?" Paul questioned, not showing any outward emotions about Quinn admitting he wasn't his first

choice.. "Although I don't think you're a bad person Quinn, and I thank you for saving my men's lives, unlike the others we don't really have a strong bond."

Hearing him say this merely confirmed Quinn's personal reasoning for choosing him.

"You see, when Leo told me that loyalty was important for the one who takes on this role, I had an epiphany. Whoever takes on the role, shouldn't just be loyal to me as the leader. They need to be loyal to the tenth family!" Quinn explained.

"You have seen Kazz and how she acts. Unlike you and Leo here, we have had a little more experience dealing with the vampires. But I think even with your little experience you should know by now."

"What do you think they will do to those 200 men? Do you think once we complete the task they will just let them go? The only thing they promised was that they wouldn't outright kill them. My best guess is that the only thing that can happen now, is for them to be turned and become part of the tenth family."

"You're right we don't know each other too well, but my impression of you is that you feel guilty. You might blame yourself, thinking it's your fault that they all ended up here trapped and imprisoned, which is why you're doing everything you can to get them out. So, if my impression of you is correct, would you be able to abandon them and leave them here?"

Quinn had paused slightly when asking the last question, this stung him a bit, because when Quinn was asked the same question, he probably at the time would have said yes.

"Quinn, if I say yes, I want you to promise me something. You're right, I do feel guilty, but they have their lives out there, in the Human World. I have a daughter there as well. We can't stay here forever! If I take on this role, then as my family leader you can't be a pushover with these leaders!"

"If I agree, I want you to push! To push hard so we can have a bit of our old life back, where we can still connect with the outside world! If you have no intention of doing this, I can't agree to this!"

"Don't worry." Quinn smiled. "I didn't rise to the position just so I could live my life out here."

With all that said and done, the ritual of turning Paul into a Vampire knight began.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 827: The new group

As the group headed to the canteen, Paul had been pulled away by Leo in the middle of their journey. Not much was said other than Quinn had called for him, but that still didn't stop the rest from grabbing a bite to eat and heading over to meet the rest.

"I just don't get as excited about food anymore, I used to love eating so much." Nate groaned remembering that when they said grab something to eat, they were probably referring to blood.

Hearing this had brought back bad memories for Cia and Logan. When they had infiltrated the school they had to pretend to be vampires, which included drinking human blood.

"Hey do you remember that time you nearly threw up from drinking all that blood?" Cia chuckled walking over to Sil.

Sil looked up at her for a few seconds, and just stared at her blankly giving no reaction at all.

"I don't think that was me." He replied, and continued walking off with the others.

"He seems different." She commented and Cia wasn't the only one that noticed, so did Layla. For a while now she thought that Vorden felt different and the way he spoke seemed to confirm her strange thoughts.

'It's like when we were in that cave, is Vorden no longer...there.' The two of them might not have gotten on well to start with. At Their first meeting, she had been strangled by him, and she retaliated by stabbing an arrow into his thigh, but there were many good memories between the two as well. Including the time Vorden, even though he had no abilities, had stood up for her and fought against Xander.

Soon, the others could smell something sweet enter their noses. It smelt like freshly baked cakes coming through the double door in front of them. This was the usual smell that came from blood, but then they could smell something different, a bit stronger husky smell, the smell of meat.

Opening the doors, they were welcomed into a grand dining hall that looked like it was built for hundreds of people. Large tables that had benches for sitting on each side. Giant paintings of figures on the wall. It truly did look like something out of a movie.

The room was far too large and it looked odd as only one of the tables were filled with students while the rest of the place was empty.

"Xander! Amy!" Timmy called over, as he got up and started to head over.

Taking on more responsibility since Edward's death, Timmy was now in charge of the students.

"You did remember to spray that stuff from the bottle I gave you, right?" Logan asked, giving a slight nudge to Sil, to which he nodded.

Although they weren't outsiders and were allowed in the castle and vampire world, it was just easier this way than explain their position. Also, who knew if there was an extra hungry vampire around that would be attracted to them.

Logan would have usually felt safe next to Sil, but not in the vampire world, where his copying ability was useless.

"Whoa, some of you don't smell like vampires." Timmy sniffed and looked at a few of them, he already knew about Layla and Cia, but there seemed to be more. "You don't have to tell me what you guys are now, but why don't we have a little mixer, and you can introduce yourselves then."

A lot of the nerves the group felt originally were disappearing. Especially with how gentle and nice Timmy seemed. It made a lot of them forget that they were now vampires and felt like they were just meeting another bunch of students.

The ten or so student vampires moved to one side of the bench while the other group, with Xander, Amy and Fex, sat down on the opposite side. One by one, they stood up and introduced themselves.

"Wow, so we have a Strigoi and Draugr. There are so many sub classes now in the tenth!" Timmy expressed with excitement. All the students that had survived the attack were just regular vampires. Six boys and four girls. Before, Amy was the only one that was a subclass.

"Timmy, it's nice meeting them and all. "A student named Naomi said, who looked like a sweet girl with a black ponytail. "But how come these guys are in the tenth family. Did they come from the pooling area, and some of them look quite young. If they were students, shouldn't we have seen them before?"

Timmy looked a little nervous.

"I think Leo might have something to announce about this a bit later on. You will all understand what's going on a bit later." He promised. "Let's just get on and learn more about each other for now."

They talked, laughed and ate food together. What came as a surprise was there was actual meat being served. The others had only been consuming blood and didn't realise that they could also eat meat that had been lightly grilled. This allowed them to experience a whole new taste that they had missed for a long time.

In a much better mood, one of the kids, called Zane, posed a sudden question.

"So, I know you guys are new, but vampires are all about strength, so which of you guys are the strongest out of each other?"

Immediately, nearly everyone turned to look at Sil, but remembering that they were in the vampire world, knew he wasn't the right choice, so they started to think. It was a hard question to ask when they were all new to their bodies and ability.

"Don't worry, We are plenty strong." Nate proclaimed, while showing off his bicep. Saying these words he tended to point his head towards the girls of the group who had just chuckled. "If anyone tries to kick your arse, we can always come and help you out. We're family, but not related by blood family." he made sure to add the last part.

"Oh really, then why don't we have a little friendly fight then?" Zane suggested. In all honesty, the kids wanted to test their own strength because they had been training with the vampire knight Leo for a while now.

While at the same time, the group who had been practicing with Quinn weren't against the idea either since they wanted to know where they stood in this new world.

Following the steps from before, Quinn had successfully gone through the starting points of the ritual, just like he had done with Leo. What had come as a surprise was that Paul was already a vampire Noble. Quinn would usually keep an eye on the others, because when he was in the middle of his transformation, there needed to be a supply of blood. The flask they carried was a backup, but it might have also not been enough.

When asking the question, Paul said he had reached it when learning his poison ability, and at the time Kazz was there to help him,

'She helped him, when she could have let him die. I still don't really understand her.' Quinn thought.

After finishing drawing the strange marking using his blood on his back. The final stages were done, and now they just needed to wait.

While doing this, Quinn wondered just how certain things in the vampire world would work. In the past, he tried to figure out just what were vampires. Was it some type of mutation or infection or something else, but the ritual he was doing now, turning Paul into a vampire knight, the thing it seemed the most similar to, was magic.

'How did the first vampires come to be?'

Thinking this thought, he was interrupted as the messages popped in front of his face.

[You have successfully given the title of vampire knight to Paul Snelleart]

[Summoning knight skill has been applied]

[Update to Quest 'Become a leader']

After turning Paul, Quinn thought that something grander would have happened after completing the quest, but instead, he had just received an update, but reading it, he now understood why the quest was still incomplete.

[You have successfully completed the following tasks]

[Reach the evolution of Vampire lord]

[Complete the blood ritual ten times]

[Select two vampire knights]

[To complete the quest 'became a vampire leader', please complete the linked quest below]

[You may now visit the tenth's tomb]

"Well, it's time to see you again, Vincent."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 828: Experience is key

Both groups agreed that it would be a bit much for everyone to fight everyone, so they agreed to have just a single fight. Each group would decide on their strongest member to send out as their representative.

It had been a while since they had just been fighting for the fun of it, rather than with something on the line, so everyone was looking forward to it. After finishing their meals and grabbing some extra blood, they decided to head to one of the training rooms.

The good thing was that even if someone ended up injured during the fight, there was sufficient blood nearby to quickly heal up and recover as long as the injury wasn't too bad. They even had other things like 'meat' for those who needed it.

Xander, Timmy, Fex and Amy were selected to act as referees. If at any point they thought the fight was getting too dangerous, it was up to them to rush in and stop it. Nobody actually thought it would come to this, but still it wouldn't hurt to be on the safe side.

The second thing, which was suggested by Fex, was that the fight should be without the help of beast gear or weapons. Even though the students used beast gear themselves, a duel should be an even playing field. In actuality, Fex just believed that it would be best for the student group to get used to how vampires thought instead of relying on their abilities.

"One more I think this should be obvious, but I hope you weren't planning to make us fight the Wight." Zane said. "I mean we already know his strength, and we want both sides to learn something from this."

A Wight's healing abilities would make the fight a little too unfair, besides some of them had already seen Peter in action, back when he had gone up against the leaders. Hearing this, Peter just scoffed before walking away to the side where the others were.

"Well, this fight is for you new guys, so it's up to you." Layla announced with a smile, grabbing Cia's arm to walk off over to the side next to Erin.

"Us two are okay staying out of this." Logan declared, and headed off with Sil, leaving the rest. The reason for them doing so was clear enough.

Huddling up in a circle, the ones left were Wevil, Linda, Nate, Dennis, Sam and Alex.

"So is there anyone that is keen on going out?" Sam asked. "I think it's important we make a good first impression. After all, all of us have been taught by Quinn, so it would be a shame if we ended up losing."

"Let me do it." Nate volunteered with a stern determination in his eyes. "I know I'm a bit slow with my vampire abilities, but when it comes to hand to hand combat I'm confident no one can beat me."

"What if it's a girl?" Linda suddenly asked, to the shock of Nate and Sam. Both of them had not even entertained the possibility their opponent might be someone from the opposite sex.

"Do you still feel up to it, Nate? If it's a girl, will you really be able to hit them and fight them with full strength? Be honest, if you feel like that would distract you, I can always go up." Linda suggested.

"Hey, no fair! What about me?" Weevil interrupted. "I mean, you guys won't have your beast gear in this fight, so you will be slower than usual and I think they might be quite fast. I know you're strong and can heal well, but maybe it's best if I show them what I can do. Besides, even you guys haven't seen me in action!" There was a cheeky smile on his face, but the others didn't like the idea of taking just his word for it.

"Personally, I think it should be a vampire." Dennis expressed his concern. "All of them are vampires and if we want to show off our skill then we need to make the field as even as possible! It also couldn't hurt to keep our trump card hidden, right?"

With that said, it meant there were only four people to choose from.

"Have you already decided who will be fighting on your side?!" Sam suddenly shouted across the other side of the room. "Who's the strongest?"

When they asked this question, all of their heads decidedly turned to Erin, Leo's number one student. Each one of them was hard spared to last long against Erin during their training and not a single one of them had managed to bear her yet.

"I don't think Erin being a direct student of Leo is fair to fight, besides I think Erin knows some of these guys." Amy quickly commented. The truth was that Erin hardly knew any of them.

She had remained in the Vampire World for a long time, and only knew those that had decided not to fight. Everyone else was pretty much a stranger to her, at best someone she might have seen at school in the upper years a couple of times.

"Don't worry." Zane pumped his fist as if he was ready to brawl. "We weren't planning on using her, that would be unfair like you said. We just looked at her since you asked us who was the strongest, but for this match I'll be the one to face you." Zane explained.

"Yes!" Sam cheered. "Then it's decided, Nate, I choose you! Just do your thing and go all out!"

Stepping away, they allowed Nate to walk forward and face Zane. Both groups cheered on for their representative, ready to gauge the other party to get an idea of the other group's strength.

"Huh, so boring I could take both of these guys on." Peter grunted.

"Oh, really?" Erin questioned, turning back with a smile. "I didn't realise you've gotten so strong, Peter. If you wish, me and you can always have our own sparring fight later?"

Rather than saying anything, Peter just turned his head away.

Chuckling, Layla couldn't help but think just how much stronger their group had gotten compared to the time when they had originally been at the academy.

Back then Peter had unmistakably been the weakest of their group, with Erin one on the strongest. She could have easily taken care of a hundred Peters without breaking a sweat, but now she wasn't sure who would win between the two of them.

"We can't fall too far behind them." Layla insisted, looking at Cia. Although Cia nodded back, the truth was she didn't feel this way at all.

Fex stood in the middle, and his hand was wrapped around in a red aura.

"Both sides ready, let the fight...Begin!" He shouted and the red aura disappeared which was the signal for the fight to commence.

Immediately, Zane dashed forward not holding back, firing off two Blood slashes along the way from both sides. However, Nate saw that they weren't heading for him directly, instead they had been aimed towards the sides.

As such, he remained standing where he was.

"Move and you lose, I'm going to take you head on and beat you with my fists, I'm better than anyone when it comes to hand to hand combat!" Zane shouted.

"Hey, do you think Nate is going to struggle since that guy is quite fast?" Wevil asked Sam who stood next to him.

"Nate? Nah, let me tell you why I selected him, why I thought he was a better choice than anyone else. You see, right now, he's far more motivated than anyone to win this fight." Sam grinned as his finger pointed towards the girls from the opposite team.

'Are you looking?' Nate thought. 'I thought if he used the Blood slash towards me I might have to try to use some blood abilities and I would have had to struggle, but if it's a hand to hand fight he wants, I won't lose! Not when they are watching.'

Two fast fists came towards him, but at the same time, Nate knocked both of them away with his own fists. One of the hands was struck up and the other down and before Zane had the chance to recover, he felt a punch connect with his stomach.

'It's strong, and he's fast, but I can still win this!' Zane thought, as he tried to throw a Blood swipe, instead, his hand was hit again, causing the swipe to go off in a different direction, and then grabbing Zane by the wrist he was chucked over Nate's shoulder and slammed into the floor.

"This fight is over!" Fex declared before anything else could happen, between the two of them there was just too much experience. Zane thought that his opponent was faster and stronger but that wasn't the case at all. It was just that Nate had been able to predict and clearly see through his attacks.

Between those on the Cursed ship, and the tenth family students. The two of them were quite far apart when it came to experience.

After Zane had recovered, he went back to the other students, who were surprised, but they soon saw someone else walking towards them, and their faces started to be filled with one of horror.

"Is that all you got?!" Erin shouted. "Your opponent didn't even take a single step from his starting position! It looks like you guys are going to have to train way harder if you managed to lose without getting a single hit in. Zane, your overconfidence cost you this match. When you're fighting against an unknown opponent, you should always test their skills first! We don't even know what ability he has."

"Remember, it doesn't matter if it's just a simple fight, but knowledge is key. Even if you can't beat him, then it's your duty to make the opponent show something so the next person stands a better chance to defeat them!"

All of them were on their knees apologising to Erin. Whenever Leo wasn't there Erin would take over as their teacher instead, so they were used to her scolding. Still, having lost so easily, she felt that she was partly to blame.

The scolding continued and while seeing this, Amy was reminded of her anger, and couldn't help but think back to what she had seen that day. When Erin was in the training room on her own, filled with anger, she had seen it for just a brief second.

"Xander, I was wondering, have you ever seen a vampire's eyes turn yellow?" She asked.

"What did you say?" Xander replied, with a look of horror on his face.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$1 dollar a month (only 60 slots left at this tier) And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

## Chapter 829: The real tenth leader

After finishing the ritual, Paul could feel that something was different about himself. It wasn't as if he had gained an overwhelming power, but something more subtle. Accepting the position, he had only been told about the duties of this position, the paper work, the political side. It sounded like trouble and something Quinn couldn't do on his own. Yet, they had yet to inform him about the pros it would bring him.

'Vampires... just how strong can they get?' Paul wondered. At first turning he thought it was a curse losing his ability and having a weakness such as sunlight, but as time went on he was starting to wonder, if he would become even more powerful than when he was a head general.

Using the inspect skill, Quinn didn't find any differences in terms of new skills Paul had been granted compared to Leo.

[Call]

[Call: A skill that can only be used with your vampire knights. This skill allows you to call your knight to your side no matter where they are. It will forcefully bring them to your location. Can only be used once a day.]

Now, if Quinn ever needed to, he could summon either one of them to his position.

[Passive skill: Vampire knight's buff]

[When a Vampire knight is fighting alongside their leader, all stats and skills will be increased by 10%]

[Knight's command]

[A Vampire knight is able to form a squad of ten vampires under himself. For those under the knight's command, all skills and stats will be increased by 10% when in his presence]

'The Knight's command skill seems to be something we should discuss. It will definitely be useful in the future.' Quinn thought. However, it would have to wait. For now he was far too eager to complete his task.

"Leo, please walk him through the basics. Ideally, I would like to make an announcement tonight. The others should learn about there being a second Vampire knight." Quinn ordered, before he walked off.

His quick pace eventually turned into a jog, then into him running. He had waited for this moment for such a long time, but he had the feeling that unless he hurried,

some other distraction might be getting in his way. However, nothing of that sort happened when Quinn finally reached the door to the tenth family's tomb.

He had memorised the combination after living through Vincent's life, so he entered and shut the door behind him on his own, without support from the others. This time he was going in on his own.. The blue crystals embedded in the walls started to light up as Quinn passed through the hallway, until he reached the large tomb filled with circle chambers in the ground.

Quinn stopped outside the first tomb, the one which should have belonged to the first tenth leader. Presumably who Quinn thought was Richard Eno.

'The first leader of the tenth family and the very first king? Richard Eno... was all of this set up by you? Are you actually the one behind the whole Dalki invasion? With everything that has happened with Arthur, I really can't decide who is good or bad anymore, or if such an distinction even exists.'

'Who says what I believe in is good? On the other hand is living a good life with my friends and family really so much to ask for? Isn't that what everyone wants? So then why can't everyone just leave each other alone....'

Ultimately, things had led Quinn to take on his current position, whether it had been by following someone's plan all along or by his own effort... No longer wasting his time trying to ask the ghost of a dead man for answers, he stepped away, passing three other tombs, until he was finally in front of the fifth one.

[You have successfully returned to the tomb]

[Quest complete]

Suddenly, the screen in front of Quinn started to shine bright white covering his entire vision. This was something that hadn't happened before no matter what Quest he had completed. He was unsure why this was happening now. A ringing sound went through his head and he had no way to turn it off.

'Argh, my head! Damn System, are you trying to pull it apart?! Did you friggin lead me here, so I can join my predecessors?!'

Although he didn't receive an answer, cursing out the system helped him endure the massive pain. It was hard for Quinn to say how long it had lasted, but eventually it started to die down and his vision was also returning.

"It's been a long time, boy! I see you have grown into quite the strapping young man. Still, a far cry from myself when I was your age, but oh well." It was an annoying voice, one that used to patronise him and give him information only whenever it pleased, but for some reason, Quinn had a warm fuzzy feeling inside his chest, as he straight away recognised the owner of the voice.

"Vincent... you... are you really back? Back in the system, I mean!?"

"Looks like it." Vincent replied in a contented tone. "I don't know how you did it, and I have to admit that I don't really understand how myself, but I'm back. It appears that there is a lot you catch me up on."

[Quest reward received]

[5th family leader Vincent Eno's soul has been rebound by the system]

When Quinn had originally been forced to rely on Vincent, he had considered it to be annoying, as if he had to share his mind with two people. Quinn had felt like he had lost his sense of privacy, but after Vincent had gone missing, he had been worried and had actually felt lonely.

All the time when he had found himself in hard situations, Vincent had always been there for him. As such there was only one thing Quinn could say: "I'm glad you're back."

[Quest complete 'Become a real leader']

[Rewards will now be handed out]

[New title received: 'Tenth family leader']

[You have unlocked access to the 'Reputation store']

'A new title, finally maybe one that can be of some use!' Quinn was excited, especially since the other ones hardly did anything. He was also looking forward to seeing what the new store would offer. He could finally exchange those reputation points he had gathered which had only been gathering dust.

The title was even automatically assigned to Quinn without him having to access the system this time, and at that exact point and time, the walls in the room lit up blue entirely. Even though Quinn was unaware something else was happening. The outside of the castle itself started lighting up blue as well.

There was a difference between the tenth family's castle and the others. Since the others had an active leader they were all lit up. While it had reacted the first time Quinn had stepped foot in the castle, it had dimmed soon after. However, now it was shining for everyone to see in the whole Vampire settlement, including the students who were inside.

The castle had acknowledged that there was a new family leader.

"It looks like something is happening with the tenth family again." Bryce noted as he stared out the window from his throne room.

"Quinn, and the mysterious Eno Family. Their history, our origins, it's all connected. I guess you can't escape your fate, Quinn. Even if you were originally human." Dwight commented as the blue light sparked in his eyes.

"You are now a Vampire lord? And the castle has accepted you!?" Vincent had trouble believing it. "How long have I been gone for you? 100 years? No, maybe 300 years?"

Quinn chuckled. "It might be hard to believe, but it's merely been a year." Quinn replied.

For a second Vincent was awestruck. He had always been hailed as a genius by the others for learning things before everyone else. Completing evolutions at record speed that would go down in history. So if Quinn wasn't pulling his leg, then what do they have to call Quinn?

'Is it because of the system or was it my ability and powers infused into the book that was handed to him?' Vincent wondered. Still, even if those things did provide Quinn with a boost, explaining it as just that would seriously downplay Quinn's achievement.

Vincent couldn't imagine that other people could have reached the same position if they had been the ones to benefit from the system.

Just as Vincent was about to say words of praise, a new screen had popped in front of Quinn, and this was an even bigger surprise to him than Vincent having returned.

[A new quest has been received]

[Quest: Become the Vampire King]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 830: The new title

Quinn read the quest text a few times. He thought if he read it enough, it might change, but it didn't seem to be the case, and when checking the system, it would stare at him as a reminder.

'I can't even hide it. Is it just going to stay there forever?'

"Either this system thinks a lot of you, or It's trying to kill you," Vincent said, reading the same questline. Becoming King was something even Vincent was not able to do. It was something he never wished either, but if someone asked him if it was possible, he would never claim it was possible.

"I think I might agree with you there," Quinn replied. "I mean, I've been completing these quests because the system has been rewarding me, and usually, with each quest completed, the reward has made me stronger. Maybe it's the only thing it can suggest after becoming a leader."

Seeing the quest did make him run a few scenarios through his mind.

"Hey, why are you so quiet?" Vincent asked. "You're not thinking of trying to complete the quest. Although the system is like a game, this is no game. First, to become King, the old King has to either pass away or go into slumber, and then a vote between the thirteen leaders has to pass. That means seven of the other leaders have to vote you in. You, someone who was human not too long ago and had become a vampire leader only this past year."

Hearing this certainly made Quinn realise the mammoth of the task the system was asking. Maybe this was one quest that would just have to be left uncompleted. After all, there wasn't a punishment for not completing such a quest. It would just be an eyesore.

Hearing Vincent go through the requirements, it came to Quinn's realisation that there was a gap between what had happened so far while Vincent was away. He wasn't even aware of what was happening to the King.

He wasn't a mind reader, and like when Quinn had access to Vincent's memories, Vincent hadn't lived through Quinn's life.

'I'll need to update him on everything that happened, but first, let's check out these things.'

Excitedly, Quinn was looking forward to the rewards that he had received for completing one of the longest quests.

[Title "Tenth family leader"]

[As the leader of the tenth family, the one who holds this total is able to assign quests to his people. Rewards must be given to the quest beforehand. Things that can be used as rewards, Items, Credits, Beast crystals]

The first thing that was given to Quinn via the title was a little disappointing. Although it sounded quite useful, honestly, Quinn could only think of it as the same as a faction quest board. Where the quest would detail the reward at the bottom.

It might have been handy in the past, but right now, he couldn't see any real use for it, but perhaps it might work a little differently since it would be given via the system.

[The title 'Tenth family leader' allows one to access the reputation store]

[All actions of the leader now will count towards reputation points. Based on how the family perceives the leader, reputation points will be given.]

Opening up the reputation points, Quinn could see a few items, but when he read what they could do, his eyes started to glow up. At first, they looked like plain basic things such as flags, towers and statues, but when he read what they could do, he couldn't stop thinking about the possibilities.

[Level 1 tower: Anything within twenty five meters that is considered an enemy by the leader will be shot at with a beam of energy. The leader must select an area for its use. Cost 1000 reputation points]

There were also a few more options underneath the item, an upgrade button, that also used reputation points and a placement button. When pressing this, Quinn could see the inner castle area and the castle area, which was divided into five sections with the wall around it.

'Defensive rating 0 stars? This is becoming more like a game every day.'

The main issue was the fact that the tower itself cost so many reputation points. Currently, Quinn only had six hundred, and it was way out of his budget. Looking at the other items, the statue cost two thousand reputation points, and finally there were the flags, which were five hundred.

[Strengthening flag: Increases the strength of the tenth family and those around it by 5%]

The flag itself also had a good effect, wondering what to do, Quinn was deciding whether to save up his reputation points on one of the more expensive items or pay for the flag. The problem was, before in the past, reputation points quests were hard to come by, but by the sound of the title, it would be a lot easier to receive after today.

In the end, he decided to buy the flag, and five hundred reputation points were used, leaving him with a hundred. What he wanted to do more than anything was test how the flag worked, and what the items from the store did.

Now, when looking at his system, the flag was in his inventory, it allowed him to either place it in his hand, or he could place it somewhere within the castle using his map.

"Are you seeing all this Vincent, was this something you could do?" Quinn asked as he was shocked by the system's great power that seemed to be getting stronger.

"A little bit, but I never thought the system could do this. The shop items from before made sense. I had stored the items in the storage room, and the system was set up so if you found the beast crystals creating them, it would transport you the item, but this... Giving reputation points for items that might not even be able to be created, something granted by the system, it's almost like my Equivalent exchange ability." Vincent explained.

It made him wonder, when using his powers, were they also transferred into the system, is that why the cost was so high, the cost of his life? The system was able to give Quinn strength, quest rewards and more. It always did seem strange, but what if this was the system's way of using the equivalent exchange. Maybe the A.I computer system for the game with Vincent's ability was what made everything possible.

After exploring the reputation store, Quinn was no longer upset by the title. It seemed like the two things came hand in hand together, and now Quinn had other things to go through with Vincent.

"I guess it's time I told you about everything that happened." Said Quinn.

"There's no need," Vincent replied. "I will live your life just like you lived mine."

The strange white light started to shine again, and Quinn's head felt like it was splitting apart, but this time, it had lasted only a few seconds, and when his vision returned, he was worried that Vincent was gone again.

"Vincent... Vincent... reply!" Quinn shouted.

"Calm down. I was just taking in everything I was seeing. You remember how you were shown my life, I just went and lived through yours, and I have to say they were some moments where you had strong, let's say, negative emotions towards me."

This was the part that Quinn didn't like. Vincent able to still do things while part of the system that Quinn was unaware of.

"Well, what do you think?" Quinn asked.

"You've been through a lot, I can tell you have grown so much stronger, but I'm afraid the question you probably want asking, I am confused with myself. I don't understand why Arthur attacked you. He has a history with the first king, something that is beyond my understanding, and I do not know what happened to the Punishers either, for the two of us were asleep at the same time."

"From his words, I can only guess that some of the vampires might have had something to do with the disappearance of the Punishers, even after they left the council, but Quinn, what worries me most is something else....

"The things you learnt from Logan and the Green family, and from my past, I can assume that there are two Eno's still out there. One being Richard Eno, who we assume to be the first king. What his goal is, I don't know. As for the second one, Jim. My old vampire knight. There is a good chance that he was the one that created the Dalki."

"If that is the case, then there are two people who we may be able to ask about that. Bryce, who was still alive during my time, and Dwight. But Quinn, if Jim is really the one behind creating the Dalki, I would be careful, because he too has the same ability that I once had, the ability of equivalent exchange."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 831: Jim's debt

When Quinn had lived through Vincent's life, it had started from a certain point and not the very beginning. He remembered seeing Jim briefly in those memories and from what he understood, Jim used to be one of Vincent's Vampire knights, but he had been more than that.

Technically, Jim was older than Vincent and for some reason he had always treated Vincent with great respect, despite being his uncle. When Quinn had asked Edward about it, he had unfortunately been unaware of the reason for this.

"I thought unlike other abilities that one was supposed to be the exclusive ability for the tenth family leader?" Quinn questioned, being confused as to how a Vampire knight like Jim could have gotten access to it.

"Well... it's complicated. Honestly I've never imagined it would ever come to this, but I suppose I'll have to tell you about my relationship with him." Vincent sighed. "To think he would be involved... Anyway, I suppose to understand Jim, I first need to ask you a question. What is something that humans fear that vampires do not fear?"

Quinn wasn't really in the mood for riddles, but he trusted that Vincent was going somewhere with this, so he racked his brain. It would have been easy the other way around, as it was common knowledge that vampires feared the sun whereas humans needed it to thrive.

'So maybe it's just the opposite of this?'

"The dark?" Quinn wagered his guess.

"Not quite. Humans are only afraid of the dark because they can not see, their fear is more a fear of the unknown, rather than fear of darkness itself. No, what I was talking about, was death. Human lives are short, and even though some may accept it once they come face to face with it, it still remains something they fear."

"On the other hand, we vampires rather choose for ourselves when we wish to go into eternal slumber never to be woken again. It's nothing unusual. The longer one lives, the more you see the actions of the world repeat in the same patterns and the less you start to want to be part of it. You could say it's just in our nature. However, that was not true for Jim, he had had an irrational fear for death. No matter how long he lived, he always feared that death may one day catch up to him, so he would do anything to stay alive."

"The original vampires never aged, being practically immortal. As for regular vampires, the stronger one was the longer they could live, but ultimately at some point they would pass if they chose not to go into eternal slumber. You see, most seem to have forgotten that Jim actually used to be the vampire leader before me."

Naturally he had received the ability, and using it he had experimented time and time again, attempting to elongate his life."

"He did succeed somewhat, but ultimately only to a degree to extend his time. He could still feel himself getting older and weaker. The problem with the ability itself is that it requires a great mind to make full use of it, not that Jim's mind wasn't great, but it wasn't great enough."

"Not to toot my own horn, but when I was born I was classified as a genius, and when I became one of the strongest Vampire nobles it was clear that I would become the next leader. Even Jim had accepted that fact, going so far as to teach me how to use the ability, but then he had done something he should never have done. Jim's obsession led him to break one of our ultimate taboos."

"He awoke one of the original vampires, wishing to experiment on them. They could live forever, so his hope was that he might uncover their secret by studying one. I knew about this, of course, as he asked me for my help. Although I felt indebted to him, I couldn't participate, still I decided to close my eyes to the fact that he did it. To be honest, I'm not so sure myself whether I did it believing that he might go into eternal slumber after seeing that it failed or part of me might have wished to see him succeed."

"Whatever the case, Jim was eventually caught doing his experiments. He had been taking in vampires from other families, using them as his guinea pigs. What they didn't know about though, was the original leader he had awoken...." Vincent paused there for a few seconds, it was clear there was something else that needed to be said in the story, but it was proving difficult for him.

"I covered for him. Despite claiming that I wouldn't get involved, I nevertheless returned the first generation family leader to his tomb, before the investigation team could find him. I don't know why I helped him out back then, maybe because I was young, maybe because he felt more like a father figure to me than my real father for teaching me the ability. Either way, my actions ended up saving his life."

"Naturally, Jim was punished hard for his crimes. Not only was he stripped of being a leader, but he was forbidden to be laid down to rest in the tomb. Of course, things wouldn't have ended just there if they had found the actual truth things would have ended far worse. With the tenth leader stripped of his title, I was quickly made into the next generation family leader and the other family leaders put it on me to decide the final punishment."

"He came before me, begging to be spared. Although I was the one who was supposed to decide, they all had 'reminded' me that such a crime would most often result in eternal slumber. However, once again, I decided against the idea."

"The tenth family's leader was replaced by a greenhorn. I might have had more potential than anyone else, but I had little to my name at the time. Even before that, people had started to regard us as weaker than the other families since Jim's focus was primarily on how to extend his life instead of increasing our influence. As

such, I decided to do something that would not only benefit Jim, but also the family and could serve as a sort of punishment. You guessed it, I made him into my first Vampire knight."

"There were some rules put in place though. The other families knew what the tenth ability was, and they relied on it from time to time, to improve the lives of others. That also meant that they knew about our castle's dedicated lab. One of the rules forbade Jim from having anything to do with the lab. He was to never set foot inside, nor work on anything, not even help out someone with any sort of projects involved in the lab."

"At least during my lifetime Jim had followed that rule, and he was eternally thankful and loyal to me, more than anyone ever had been. He did everything I asked, and often watched me when I was doing work. It became a slight obsession. Unfortunately, I never found out what happened to him after I left, only that Edward claimed that he felt slightly betrayed that I hadn't warned him."

It was an interesting tale Quinn thought, but it didn't really explain why Jim was possibly out there somewhere. The story did however sound similar to what they had found out about the Dalki. How they only had a short life, and were looking for the demon tier beast to live longer.

"I guess we'll just have to ask Dwight what happened to him after you left." Quinn suggested.

Later that day, all members of the tenth family were told to gather in front of the castle. This included those Quinn had brought with him and the students. On top of this, invitations were sent out to those belonging to the tenth family in the pooling area.

As Quinn had expected, none of them showed up from the pooling area, except for Rokene, who wasn't even part of the tenth family. Knowing there had to be something big going on, he had decided to come and take a look.

The students were mumbling and gossiping amongst each other, and they had bright smiles on their faces as they talked.

"Hey what do you think the announcement will be about? Do you think it has something to do with the tower being lit up?"

"It has to be! It would be too much of a coincidence that the same day the tower is lit up, we get an announcement."

"I'm sorry." Nate interrupted, over hearing all the students talk so excitedly. "Why is it such a big deal that the tower lit up?"

"Because, it means that the castle's official leader has either returned or a new one has been selected."

Nate didn't say anything to this, but only thought back to what Fex had told them. How this whole castle belonged to Quinn, and he was the official leader.

The first person to come out was Leo, and the students started to calm down as he walked up showing great respect, and then, there was a man that they didn't really know who had come out as well. His facial expression seemed a bit grumpy compared to Leo who looked calm, the only similarity between the two of them was the absence of hair on their respective heads.

And finally, walking out in the centre, was a young man who looked to be in his mid twenties, walking through the middle of both of them, and that's when they saw the two of them bow down to him.

The students were unaware of who this was, and only those that had recently come, recognised him as Quinn.

Although the other families didn't attend, hearing that there was an announcement, Quinn could see several little drones in the shape of balls flying around hovering all over the place, filming everything and also broadcasting it to the rest of their respective families.

Standing there looking at all the others, Quinn clenched his fist.

'Vincent I'm sorry I wasn't here, this is all that's left of the people that used to follow the tenth family. It's a sad sight I know, but I promise, under my rule we will thrive!'

"I've gathered you all today, to officially introduce to you the new Vampire knight of the tenth family." Quinn announced , as he opened his palm and placed it towards Paul to his left. Paul stepped forward and bent down his head forward.

"What?!" Bryce stood out of his seat in anger. "He made that human who invaded us, into a vampire knight?! What the hell is that kid thinking?!"

There was a round of applause from the students. Of course, no one could replace Edward for them, but they knew the position had to be filled by someone. Although they didn't know who Paul was, after witnessing Nate's strength, they believed that the newcomers were far more powerful than them.

"And finally, I know many of you don't know who I am, but I am here to announce that I, Quinn Talen, am the sixth family leader of the tenth family!"

This time, before a round of applause the students looked at eachother, but Sil breaking the silence clapped first, soon the others all followed after.

'So you have finally made an announcement to all the vampires and showed that you are the tenth leader.' Cindy sipped on her tea while watching the broadcast.

'Does this mean you have decided to stay? If so, you will be in for quite the surprise, Quinn Talen!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 832: The new family name

The broadcast of the tenth leader revealing himself was shown all over, leading to a plethora of reactions from different people. In the tenth family themselves, at first they were happy, but the students were wondering how a vampire they had never seen before could suddenly become their family leader.

Usually a new leader would fill their family with hope for a greater future, with his family members having a general idea of their leader's power, but Quinn had practically come out of nowhere. The only reason why they weren't outright moaning about his position was because the one person they had come to respect more than any other, Leo, was backing him.

If Leo was willing to serve under this person and bow down to him, then he must be a great person.

"For some reason he feels familiar, doesn't he?" A student from one of the other families wondered out loud.

"That's the guy! He's the one who participated in the training session of the direct descendants! He might look different, but look at his eyes!" Another pointed out after coming to the realisation of who the leader had to be.

"That... should be impossible! Wasn't that person also the one who tried to save young master Fex?"

That day, on Fex's execution, a few people who were closer to the platform, including the other leaders were slowly starting to recognise Quinn.

"Would those from the Cursed family please come up to the stage." Quinn requested, as the announcement wasn't finished yet.

Paul walked down to the others, and then led them up onto the stage one by one, including Sil and Logan. Everyone who Quinn had brought with him assembled next to them, all of them outsiders to the Vampire World.

"The tenth family has gone through some very tough times." Quinn started his speech. "And they have been without a leader for far too long. All of you watching should be familiar with the tenth family's past."

"Those leaders watching right now, already know that I do not carry the same ability as the previous family leaders, nevertheless I do carry their blood. Because of this, I wish for the tenth family under my rule to start with a new slate. As such, the tenth family shall no longer be known as the Eno family, but as the Cursed family." Throwing out his arm Quinn held his palm open towards the rest.

"I'm sure rumors will spread about it anyway, so let me be the one to tell all of you this. I'm not going to pretend to be someone I'm not, since I don't see any reason to

not be proud of what I am. Yes, I admit to not having been born a vampire. I was originally a human and so were all of my comrades here, but if anyone believes that this would make us weak, feel free to challenge us and find out for yourself. I promise you will regret it!"

With the announcement over and done with, the new Cursed family, including the students followed Quinn's lead and moved out, not caring about the stir his speech had caused. After all, the only other former human to become a family leader was Arthur Pendragon.

Once people learned the identity of the tenth family's new leader, Quinn quickly garnered a nickname; The Crazy Leader. This was because he was still infamous for going against the other leaders in order to save Fex. His aggressive announcement only strengthened this image they had of him.

"A strong introduction for a new leader." Muka commented to his family members who had been watching Quinn's speech with him. "A bold choice, but also the best one he could have made in this situation. Edward is no longer with him, so I wonder who advised him to do this. Could he have really come up with it on his own..."

Sitting down in a chair in one of the empty rooms Quinn felt a little tired. It wasn't a physical exhaustion, but a mental one.

"Are you sure that was the right thing to do?" Quinn asked for some reassurance. The die had already been cast, so it would be too late to regret his actions anyway.

"Of course. The other leaders already knew what you were." Vincent replied and Quinn could picture him shrugging his shoulders. "If you hadn't disclosed this on your own, they would have used this information in the future against you. Right now was the best time to do so. Although few will admit it, you can be sure that you have earned the respect of many by making such a forceful declaration."

"Let me tell you something as a former family leader, the thing your family will need more than anything will be loyalty. As long as you are upfront about everything those that do join you won't start to believe any rumours the others may spread about you. Also, believe me when I say that there is one thing all vampires respect far more than your background, and that is strength! That's why Bryce has a very good chance of becoming the next king, despite how much of an arsehole he might be..."

Thinking about that, Quinn was wondering what might happen if Bryce really would be selected as king. He had already tried sending two people to try and assassinate him and that had been him doing things discreetly.

Wouldn't he be able to act without any fear of repercussion without anyone else to keep him in check?

"Vincent, I meant to ask you something about the story you were telling me earlier." Quinn suddenly remembered something important.. "You told me, Jim experimented on one of the original vampires, but because of your interference no one ever found out. To awaken a vampire from his eternal slumber the thing you need is their blood, right? So does that mean the person he woke up was the first King?"

Vincent appeared to hesitate before answering. Quinn could feel that he was struggling to decide whether that information was something Quinn really needed to know or not. Still, he understood that sometimes knowing too much was bad on its own since it increased the risk of the wrong person finding out about it.

"... suffice to say, it wasn't the one from the first family." Vincent eventually admitted.

"Well that's my point." Quinn pointed out. "Judging by Arthur's story, he saw Eno fall into the first chamber, yet someone broke him out. In other words, someone at some point must have released him. Be that either by accident or on purpose. I just need to know if that was Jim's doing. Did you yourself return the wrong person, or could it be another leader who was working with Jim?"

Thinking about this, Vincent realized he had never pondered about that possibility. Maybe because he just assumed that Jim was so desperate that he could have obtained the blood from other ways. But if someone was indeed working with Jim, did that mean that there was another leader who wanted the same thing?

"Let's find out about what happened to Jim after my disappearance first. This might help us put the pieces together. I just don't want for you or me to force those puzzle pieces to fit to our own narrative. Even if it turns out to be the case, as a young family leader, and at such an important time, it would do more harm than good to reveal anything we might find out." Vincent claimed.

Putting a pin in it for now, Quinn finally got the first bit of sleep since he had arrived in the Vampire World this wonder.

"No wonder you're so strong!" Zane said, as the students had returned to the castle with the others just after the announcement. They were more excited than before and happily talking amongst each other.

"What do you mean by that?" Sam asked.

"Well, he said you were originally human, so I'm guessing he must be the one to have turned you, right? If you have the leader's blood, that means your powers should be similar to that of a direct descendant, in other words you got a head start above everyone else."

Honestly, Sam didn't agree with this, but he didn't want to correct him when he didn't know much about the subject. He remembered when he was turned by

Quinn, he had started out as a halfling and hadn't even been able to reach the evolution of a Vampire after turning.

A halfling was considered quite weak and it had taken a lot to grow, at the same time, Nate who had defeated Zane, had been turned by none other than himself. The strength seemed to correspond more with how strong the human used to be before they got turned, rather than the one who had turned them.

'I'll just let the kid feel better about himself. ' Sam decided.

It didn't take long for them to receive their first official visitor, as the sound of the door being knocked on could be heard throughout the castle. When Leo went to answer the door, the blue lining on the uniform revealed their visitor to be one of the royal guards.

Quinn didn't get to sleep long, as the royal guard was here to pass on a message.

"Royal Knight Dwight would now like to see you."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 833: Yellow eyes

There wasn't much time for settling down. The newcomers from the Cursed faction had already seen the whole castle, and also each had a room to stay in. This resulted in a slight divide between the two groups, as those that hailed from the Cursed ship had chosen to go live on the third floor, whereas the students all lived on the second.

There were a few exceptions to this though, as Erin stayed on the same floor as the students, due to her often going to train with them. Wanting to be near her, both Layla and Cia had also decided to select rooms on the second floor.

Of course, it wasn't a massive problem, it was easy enough for any member of any group to just go up or down one floor.

Right now, the boys and Linda had gathered together in one room to discuss the recent events. Paul was no longer part of his group, as he had already been swept up by Leo to get familiar with his new knightly duties.

"So, how long do you think we'll be here for?" Nate asked, addressing the question that was on everyone's mind.

"I'm not sure." Logan replied. "Quinn's situation is a little unique. It seems like vampires aren't meant to have contact with the outside world. The only reason why we were allowed outside before was due to him having been given the special mission to search for the vampire agents that had been killed."

"Our return was sudden because of the upcoming situation with the current Vampire King. Right now, we still have no clue about what happened to the agents, so after this is all settled we might get a chance to continue our mission. I also think even if we never do find out what happened to them, the vampires will want to replace their agents. Who better than us former humans who have been living there for so long already? The bad news is that everything will pretty much depend on who they select as the new Vampire King."

"And why would that be a problem?" Sam questioned as he knew very little about the vampire world from what he had learnt from Quinn, it was the same for most in the room.

"Did you forget that pretty much all the other families hate us?" Peter scoffed, as he leant up against the wall with his arms folded. "Have you forgotten how 'many' people actually bothered to show up earlier? A Vampire leader, who is one of the thirteen precious council members, is making an announcement... yet only us and those kids had bothered to show up. If that isn't a sign of how they feel about us, I don't know what is."

"Why do they hate you guys?" Wevil asked.

"It's because of me." Fex interrupted. "Quinn tried to save my life before and doing so meant going up against all the other leaders. Depending on who becomes the next Vampire King, we might never get to leave this place. Worse, they might even try to get rid of him or us altogether."

The room went silent for a few seconds as they imagined a scenario of all the vampires going up against their small group. It wasn't like on earth where they could solve this with a duel, or on the Cursed ship where they could call for help for more people.

They were on their own.

Suddenly, Nate started to laugh, making everyone else turn their heads towards him.

"What are you all so worried about? You saw me beat that guy easily, so if anyone's against us, we can just beat them all! Quinn's super strong and we've all trained under him, so doesn't that make us super strong as well?"

"You really think that's enough?" Fex raised his voice, trying to get the seriousness of the matter through to Nate. "That vampire that you defeated was just a regular vampire, pretty much a naive child. Erin wasn't wrong when she berated him for having vastly underestimated you."

"There are vampires who have lived hundreds of years and have trained with the idea of doing nothing but getting stronger. They have abilities that even surpass that of the ones the humans have, so how can you think of this being a simple walk in the park?!"

"Fex, I don't think he meant it like that." Linda tried to calm everyone down. "I'm sure Nate was just trying to cheer us all up. Of course, all of us understand that we can't just wage war against all other vampires, but staying worried won't help us with anything."

Fex started to walk towards the door leaving the room, before shutting it behind him he looked back at the others.

"You... you're probably right. I'm sorry guys. I think I might just be a little bit more on edge with us being here now, but not being home.... Please continue without me."

"Not being home, what did he mean by that?" Dennis wondered.

"There is a lot you guys don't know." Logan sighed and then started to explain. "Originally, Fex was the son of the thirteenth family leader. He left out the fact that he had tried to save Quinn's and our lives to not get us involved in this whole mess. Because of that he got banished from his own family and was meant to be

executed, but Quinn couldn't just let that happen, so he ultimately went against the other family leaders."

"Imagine turning up here, forbidden from going back to the place you grew up in, or seeing the family that raised you. No wonder, he isn't his usual self."

Meanwhile, on the second floor, both Xander and Amy had their own private get together. Xander was biting his thumbnail pacing backwards and forwards several times.

"And you're absolutely sure you saw her eyes turn yellow?" Xander asked for the umpteenth time. "It couldn't have been the light hitting her eyes strangely, you being sleepy and imagining things."

"How many times do you want to ask me that? I'm 100% sure that I saw them turn yellow, but I still don't understand what the big deal is?" Amy asked, getting slightly worried. "I only told you because something felt weird when I looked at them, if I knew you were going to freak out about it like you're doing right now, perhaps I shouldn't have said anything."

"... actually you might be right. It may be for the best if both of us just forget about any yellow eyes. On the other hand, if they ever found out we were keeping such a secret, then...." Xander was murmuring to himself.

"Then what!" Amy shouted, now completely annoyed at the fact that Xander refused to be clear about what those yellow eyes meant.

"Then they could execute us." Xander stared right at her, his face filled with dread at the gruesome end they could meet.

Amy quickly emphasised why Xander had been acting so strangely, yet it also made her just the more curious what exactly Erin was. What had she done that made her so dangerous that just hiding this from the families would warrant a punishment such as death.

"You wouldn't have learnt much about it yet, but I'm sure you've at least heard of their name. There is only one subclass of vampires who have those yellow eyes, a dhampir."

"A vampire hunter, those that were born to slay all vampires..." Amy mumbled to herself. "But that can't be. Erin seems completely fine! She isn't going off killing vampires left and right! Just cause she may be different we can't treat her like a different subclass?!"

"I don't make the rules." Xander insisted. "But, they are there for a reason."

"Do you think they know? I mean Quinn or even Erin herself?"

"I'm not sure. Reporting this to Quinn is probably our safest bet. At least that way it will no longer be our problem as we did what we were meant to. It will be up to him to decide what to do with Erin if her being a Dhampir is true."

Although Amy and Erin weren't as close as she was with Layla, she didn't want for her to come to harm. During their time at the castle she had seen a gentle side to Erin. Someone who always helped others in subtle ways. There weren't many left in the tenth family after the attack, and everyone had grown closer than before afterwards.

With their families killed, it felt like the survivors who lived in the castle had become one big family.

'Why are they so scared of you, Erin?"

In one of the thirteenth castles, where the vampire leaders usually resided, there was one sitting down patiently on their throne. The room was dark with shadows covering their face.

They waited patiently. Soon, creeping out from the shadow a large figure appeared before them. The newcomer had bulging muscles and gray pale skin. His breathing was heavy as he walked onto the red carpet leading up to the throne and entering the light it became clear it was a Bloodsucker.

"You may speak." The leader allowed.

"I'm here to deliver a message." The blood sucker did as he had been told. "You've previously asked why Rowa chose to attack the tenth family's castle. It turns out Rowa discovered that they were keeping someone very important."

Usually Bloodsuckers were void of speech, but those that were part of Rowa's group had been Bloodsuckers for a long time, and bit by bit they would get their sanity back and could converse just like this one.

"Oh, I thought he just went for the tenth because they were the weakest?" The leader commented, not at all perturbed by the explanation.

The Bloodsucker shook its head.

"Rowa found out that the tenth family are hiding a Dhampir amongst them. He wanted to convince them to join our side."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 834: The thirteenth's son

The Royal Guard waited patiently outside the castle for Quinn to escort him to the King's castle, where Dwight was already waiting for him. There he would find out what Dwight wanted to talk to him alone about, and Quinn was also hoping he could get some answers of his own.

Before leaving, Quinn made sure that both his Vampire knights would be able to take care of the place without him. He handed both Leo and Paul a specially designed mask, each one slightly different from each other in their design.

"You want us to wear these?" Paul asked as he looked at the mask as if it was some cheap decoration for Halloween.

'Is this what the kids consider cool these days?' He thought.

"Logan created these masks." Quinn answered. "Although the system allows me to summon you when I wish, it doesn't work the other way around. Phones don't work here if you haven't noticed, but these masks are all linked to each other so we can at least communicate by using them. You don't have to wear them at all times, just when there is something you need to tell me."

"Have the others been given masks as well?" Leo asked, not having seen anyone else wear one yet.

"You might have missed it, but Logan and Sil usually have them around their waist. The others from the Cursed faction have a secret place where they are keeping them. I thought about whether or not to hand these to the students in the tenth family as well, but for now, I think it's best just for us to keep them."

Quinn didn't give them his reasoning but Leo understood that it had to be more of a trust issue than anything else. Quinn himself also didn't want them to get involved and was sure someone like Erin or Leo would be near them at all times.

Just as Quinn was about to head out the door, he heard a familiar voice call out to him.

"Quinn!" Fex shouted. "Are you leaving for your meeting? If so, do you mind if I pop along with you?"

"I'm about to head to the King's castle, I'm not sure you would be very welcomed there." Quinn hesitated to take him along.

"My bad, I didn't mean that I wanted to go to the King's castle. I was actually thinking of meeting with my family. I know I was banished from there, but I believe if I come there as a member of the tenth family, it might be okay for me to just have a talk with them." Fex started to scratch his head, yet making sure that he

did so carefully, so it didn't mess up his gelled back hair. "The thing is, with me being part of the tenth family and all, I kind of need your permission."

Quinn just smiled back at him. "Sure. If anyone asks, just tell them that I've sent you as my representative."

Exiting from the castle, Quinn met up with the guard and explained that he had important business at the thirteenth castle first.

"Forgive me for my impudence, but he can go on his own, Sir." The guard responded. "He shouldn't need you to babysit him."

"If you're worried about losing time, don't worry." Quinn replied with a grin on his face, as he cast his Shadow travel skill, and the three of them were swallowed up.

Travelling via the shadow was a lot faster since they could simply go straight underneath buildings. Additionally, it allowed Quinn to remain hidden from the public eye. Seeing the cameras he was sure that everyone knew who he was, and he just didn't want to deal with the attention and rumors going around.

Once they reached the thirteenth inner castle area, the three of them popped out, and walked up to the guards.

"I, Quinn Talen, family leader of the Cursed family, have come here to request a meeting with the thirteenth leader. Please deliver this message posthaste." Quinn announced, following Fex's plan.

Fex was unsure whether his father would allow him to meet him if he just came unannounced, but if another leader made such a request, especially Quinn, he was sure his father would have to accept.

While the guard went ahead and gave the okay it was time for them to split up.

"Fex, spend as long as you need here. You have already helped out enough and now there are others that can help us. There's no rush to come back." Quinn encouraged Fex, before popping back off into the shadow with the Royal Guard and heading towards the King's castle.

Taking a deep breath, Fex followed the guard into the castle. He tried to hide his face from onlookers, slightly regretting not bringing a mask along, so it didn't take long for him to get spotted.

"Isn't that the thirteenth leader's son?"

"I thought he was banished, what is he doing returning?"

"I've seen him at the tenth family's announcement. Do you think he's a messenger boy for the tenth now?"

"It's a shame to have fallen so far. He had such a bright future ahead of him."

Gritting his teeth, Fex chose to ignore the comments until he finally entered the castle and subsequently the throne room. Awaiting him wasn't just his dad, but also his sister.

When Lee Sanguinis, the thirteenth leader, saw his son walk through those doors, he didn't know how to react. He had been wondering what Quinn might want from him, so he was surprised to see his son walk in instead. He stood up and came before Fex as he looked him directly in the eyes.

"I see the time apart has not really changed you. You're so old yet you still pull these stunts." Lee sighed. "Did you really have to come see us this way? As someone from the tenth family, instead of a son who wished to see his father?"

Hearing these surprising words, Fex started to tear up.

"Father...." He choked on his words as he couldn't fight against the tears. "I'm sorry." was all he could say while he continued to cry and fell to his knees.

Fex had expected to see his father's usual form before him. The one that always put pressure on him to become the next leader, the one that would scold him for doing something bad, but for the first time since his early childhood, the words spoken were soft and gentle.

"You have nothing to be sorry for. I should be the one apologising. I didn't really know how much I cared for you until..." Lee paused for a second and turned his head to Silver by his side. "...until I nearly lost both of you. Let me tell you this now, I hold both of your lives above any vampire code."

Silver started smiling, her father really had changed ever since the incident involving Fex. He was almost a completely different person. In the past, Lee had wished to become King, which was why he had followed the code so strictly. Only after he was forced to banish his son, did he realise that losing everything to get to that position would be meaningless.

Wiping his tears away, Fex got up from the floor.

"Father, I wish we could talk and stay here, but I know that I have to return to the tenth family at some point. Quinn, he's a good leader and I want to help him. Unfortunately, that means I can't stay by your side. I know you wanted me to become the next leader of the thirteenth family and I kept running away from it, thinking that Silver was always better suited for that position. I still think I would make a horrible leader, but I've always wanted to become a vampire that you can be proud of. And I think I can become one by staying at Quinn's side."

Smiling back, Lee wanted to comment that he was already proud of Fex. Who else would go through what he had done, just for a friend? There weren't too many in

the world now, and all because he had made a promise. He regarded the current Fex as a bigger man than the other leaders who would hide behind schemes and stab each other in the back.

"That is why, before I leave here I want to show you something, something that can help the thirteenth family." Closing his eyes. Fex started to concentrate and feel the power from within his chest.

Breaking down the crystal in his body's something slowly started to appear in his hands, until eventually they could see a large needle like weapon.

Standing on his feet, with his mouth left wide open, Lee started to walk towards the weapon Fex was holding. He had his hand held out as if he wanted to grab it.

"That can't be, is that a-

"A blood weapon, yes." Fex nodded, proud of his accomplishment. "And it's not one that has been made from someone else's blood crystal. This weapon came from my very own blood. I can bring it out and place it back as I wish, and it works just like any other blood weapon."

Silver could no longer keep her mouth closed, but soon her excitement changed to feeling proud of her little brother.

'You claim that I should have been made the thirteenth leader, and then you go pull out something like this? You truly don't know how talented you are.'

After showing them the blood weapon. Fex went on to describe in great detail how he was able to achieve this and what the necessary steps were. The two of them were listening and hanging onto his every word. Even after an explanation it didn't seem like something they could do just on the spot, and it would take some time to learn, and more importantly teach to their most promising family members.

"I'm truly sorry father, but I think it's best I go now." Fex apologised in a sad tone. "I fear staying longer will just make me too attached to this place. You can do what you want with this information. Give it to the King, share it with others or keep it to yourself. I just want you to know that you were the first one I've shared this with."

Touched by his son's determination, Lee nonetheless allowed Fex to leave.

'That boy might have changed the whole vampire race and he doesn't seem to even know it.'

On the way back, Fex no longer cared about what the others spoke about him on the streets. He was too happy to care.

'That was the old Fex of the thirteenth, now I belong to the tenth family!' He thought to himself on the way back.

However, after only taking a couple of steps forward, someone called out to him.

"Fex." A soft voice called out.

When he turned around, he could see two hair buns wrapped up. There was only one person he knew who had that hairstyle.

"Kazz, what do you want?" He asked.

The look on Kazz' face was one of concern, for she didn't look happy, in fact it was almost as if she was on the verge of tears holding it in.

"I'm... Sorry."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 835: Don't trust anyone

Reaching the King's castle was no easy task. At least getting past the guards that was. Last time Quinn had come here, it had been in the midst of a council meeting. At the time, he also had Arthur by his side, and the guards had been less cautious.

However, this time, there were several checks put on Quinn before he was even allowed to step in. They didn't allow any weapons nor any armour past the entrance. Everything had to be left before he could enter. Not that it mattered much in Quinn's case since he kept all of his important stuff in his dimensional space.

If he ever needed something, he could equip it with Shadow equip at any time. The reason why Quinn wasn't wearing his armour or weapons out in the open in the Vampire World was due to what substances they had in them.

Before coming here, Quinn had asked Alex to create weapons using his blood, not just for him, but also for the others from the Cursed faction. Similarly, everyone else was also hiding them in their shadow.

After the checks were done, Quinn was finally led into the castle, however accompanied by four guards, two in front of him and two behind.

The King's castle was quite similar to the others, with only slight differences, like the rooms being slightly bigger adorned with a lot of giant paintings. Quinn guessed that they had to be important figures in the vampire's history, as well as important events.

'I thought the tenth castle was already big, but this is just ridiculous. Who needs all this space?' Having lived most of his life on earth in a small apartment, Quinn wasn't used to these kinds of grand rooms.

Previously, Quinn had just been in a council room, which happened to be a floor under the King's throne room. Alas, it appeared as if he wouldn't get the chance to check it out this time either, as he never left the first floor. Instead he was escorted to one of many dining rooms.

Dwight was already sitting there, all on his own, with some light snacks red in colour and tea.

"Thank you for escorting him safely. You may take your leave now." Dwight instructed the guards who had been following him. They all nodded and did as they were told.

"I don't remember coming through this many checks last time, although I guess I shouldn't be surprised about you being cautious with the King's eternal slumber." Quinn commented, as he sat down opposite from Dwight.

"Indeed, especially with some parties daring to attack other castles, one can't be too safe. Those guards were just as much for your safety as ours." Dwight explained. "Before we start Quinn, I want to make sure that everything spoken here is just between me and you. I hate having to act this paranoid, but with everything that has happened I can't trust anyone else. I can only advise you to do the same. After you leave this room, perhaps you should even start doubting me."

The Royal Knight being this cautious was outside of Quinn's expectations, and he was now completely focused on the conversation. He had believed this was just to make sure nothing would interrupt the King's eternal slumber, but things appeared to be more dire than he had initially thought.

"I will spare you the details as I'm sure your Vampire knight must have gone over this with you, but the one responsible for the attack on your castle is someone named Rowa. He used to be the second family's leader, but has now turned into a Bloodsucker or had done. His grudge against the current King was no secret. Unfortunately he was also very strong, yet we never imagined him to attack us head on and so suddenly like that."

"To be able to attack any of the castles, what's more to so easily enter the inner castle area of even the tenth castle, there is only one explanation. There is someone among the leaders who must have helped him." Dwight shared, clenching his fist on the table. "I didn't want to believe that someone would work with those Bloodsuckers, to force the King's hand like that! And now it has come to the point that we must replace him! What I'm most afraid of is that this was that mystery person's original goal."

It was news to Quinn that Rowa used to be the second family's leader, although he had come to learn that it wasn't too rare for the families to change their past leaders if they turned out to be incompetent.

"Why do I have the feeling you're thinking something incredibly rude about me?!" Vincent asked, but Quinn chose to ignore him.

"For what it's worth, I'm sorry. You and the King seemed close, and I honestly wish I could have thanked him for saving the people he could." Said Quinn.

"You really have grown." Dwight sighed, taking a stronger look at Quinn. "I should probably come to the point of why I have summoned you here. I originally just wanted to apologise failing to do our job, but I also never expected you to return like you have done now. I can smell and feel the aura of a real vampire leader on you now."

"As I said, there is at least one traitor among the leaders. Let me be honest with you, right now I suspect every single one of the other families. Well, all except yours, Quinn. You were away when the attack happened, neither you nor anyone you interacted with in your family had anything to do with Rowa, and most

importantly, I can't think of a single reason why you would attack your own family."

"I never thought I would say this, but you're the only person I can trust and I would like your help. If the goal of the person working with Rowa was really to get rid of the King, then I can only assume their end goal lies in obtaining the seat for themselves. The powers are split into two groups, so they will be coming for you, Quinn."

"I want you to report everything that either side attempts to do, feel free to lead them on. Agree to help them and try to find out who was, and possibly still is, working with the Bloodsuckers."

"I won't lie to you, doing this could place you a big target on your back, but I will be trying my best to help you all the way. It would be best if you prepare for another attack. Your family is weak right now and they might strike again."

Thinking about this, if his area was to get attacked, Quinn was wondering if he could use the new reputation shop in his system to improve his defences. He could build towers, statues and set up flags to help fend off against attacks.

The only problem was obtaining the reputation points to upgrade the place. Once he figured out a way to quickly and reliably get more, he could create a fortress stronger than all others.

"It's your choice whether you want to help me or not, but you should be aware that you are bound to get dragged into this either way. All I'm asking is when you do get dragged into it, that you do your best to try and can find anything useful. In return I will try to do whatever I can to help you and your family."

"Right now, although the King can't speak, he has given me authority and power to act on his behalf. If there is something you need, you should ask now before the ceremony."

Quinn agreed with Dwight's analysis of the situation. As a family leader, he would be wrapped up in all this whether he liked it or not. Honestly, he also wanted to find out who was working with the Bloodsuckers. They had killed his people, killed Edward and had tried attacking the others, so he wanted revenge!

Quinn felt quite lonely in the Vampire World. His family was regarded as an outsider compared to the rest, and here a powerful ally was holding out their hand.

"I'll help you." Quinn declared. "However, there are a few favours and things I would like to ask myself."

"Of course, Quinn." Dwight replied happily. "For someone who has only recently become a leader, you are going far beyond that would normally be expected of you. As long as it's within my power, I will deliver what you need."

There were so many subjects and questions Quinn wanted to ask and talk about, but he decided to start with the one that weighed on his mind the most.

"The first one should be easy enough. What do you know about Jim Eno? I need to know everything that he did after Vincent left!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 836: The creator of the Dalki

It was safe to say that the question took Dwight by surprise. Out of all the things to ask for, especially given their current situation, why was Quinn's first question something related to the vampire's past?

'Is this just his own curiosity... or the request of someone else?' Dwight wondered, mentally going down the list of possible candidates who could be behind the young new family leader.

"You seem to be quite interested in the tenth family's past. With the flame extinguished, I know Vincent is gone, so I'm assuming this has something to do with his will? Maybe something he asked you as his final wish?" Dwight probed Quinn for some sort of reaction. Vincent Eno had been a very interesting person, yet he had failed to understand him in his lifetime.

Coincidentally, Dwight's current actions were quite rude and disrespectful. If it had been any other leader before him they would have made a fuss, perhaps even accusing him of being interrogated, but Quinn wouldn't know any better.

"Didn't you tell me you would help me?" Quinn questioned in a sharp tone, his eyes focusing on the older vampire. "Do you perhaps expect me to explain to you everything that I do?"

Quinn acting completely outside his expectations was a grim reminder for Dwight, that the young boy wasn't as innocent as he seemed.

"I apologise for my behaviour." Dwight bowed down, slightly surprising Quinn. "You're right, I did promise to help you in any way you need, and this is indeed something relatively simple. Of course, you don't have to explain yourself, I was merely surprised you knew about Jim, since there aren't many alive today that do remember him."

Dwight looked down at the table while trying to remember past events.

"You said you wanted to know what happened after Vincent's disappearance, correct? I don't know how much you know about Vincent Eno, but before he left us, he had been in charge of a special project. A project that would have made us far less reliant on human blood. Unfortunately, he left our world without ever completing the project."

"At the time, there honestly weren't too many great minds among us vampires. The common belief was that the fist was mightier than the brain and most lived according to that. The King at the time, not wanting to get involved with the humans any more than we already had, had felt like the project had to be completed at any cost. They were convinced that sooner or later the existence of vampires would become known to the humans, if we didn't change our ways."

Quinn still vividly remembered living through Vincent's life. It would be nigh impossible to count just how many human lives had been taken because of the vampires.

The King had been absolutely right, the detectives, just like Vincent's partner Katie, had been getting closer and closer to the discovery of vampires. In the past, when there was such a difference in strength it wouldn't have mattered but with the humans having caught up, it had suddenly become a problem for the vampires.

"Although many disagreed with the decision, eventually a vote had been cast and despite Jim's past and his oath to never enter a laboratory again, he had been allowed to continue the project from where Vincent had left off."

Now the puzzle pieces were starting to line up in Quinn's head, After Vincent had left, Jim had taken over the project, at which point he must have gone to earth where he encountered Logan's parents and 'convinced' them to help with the project.

'Was he searching for Vincent because he couldn't complete the project alone, or was there something else?'

"After countless failures, eventually Jim found a solution to our problem. Alas, there was a problem with the final project that he kept hidden from us. In order to fix this flaw before we found out, he committed a grave taboo... the same one that had stopped him from entering the laboratory in the first place. In the end the project had to be scrapped altogether."

'Jim... just what did you do this time?' Vincent thought, as he heard these words.

Dwight didn't say anything else on the matter, as if the story had ended, but Quinn noticed that a lot of details had been left out. Was it because he didn't know about what Jim had done, or did he think Quinn didn't need to know?

Still, Quinn wasn't going to back down, he needed his answers and he had someone in front of him who could help.

"The thing Jim created... the one that was unsuccessful... were they the Dalki?" Quinn asked, wanting confirmation, even though he was already sure of the answer.

Dwight's eyes lit up at this question, making him all the more aware that Quinn knew far more about this than should have been possible. With that being the case, it was pointless to hide the small details.

"Yes... instead of having to consume the humans' blood he had created something else, the Dalki. The only problem was that they were unable to reproduce. With the materials that we had provided him he had only been able to make a certain

amount. This would have been fine, yet due to their relatively short lifespan, it would have only been a temporary, yet costly measure."

As someone who had grown up with Jim, Vincent was easily able to figure out Jim's train of thought.

"Jim must have originally been mixing humans with the demon tier beast to create the Dalki." Vincent shared his insight. "Now there were two ways for him to fix the problems. Either find a way to allow the Dalki to reproduce... or turn them immortal. Given his prior history, it's no surprise which option he chose...."

Dwight gave out a big sigh before answering.

"He raised one of the Original vampires, and tried to experiment on them. Only this time, he was prepared for us when we found out. By the time we discovered what he had done, it was already too late. Jim had left the castle with the Dalki and despite our efforts to track him down he was never seen again."

"What about the Original vampire?" Quinn asked. "Was he successful in creating a hybrid?"

Quinn could only imagine what a monster the Dalkis would have on their hand if Jim turned out to have been successful. What was worrying him more, was whether Jim might still be experimenting to this day.

"Fortunately not, however that ancestor perished in the process. Actually it's a good thing you brought this up, I would be careful Quinn. The original that had been killed was the first generation family leader of the eighth family, so it shouldn't surprise you that they had a giant grudge against the tenth family ever since."

"That being said, I have been unable to find anything relating them to the current attack. Unfortunately, the same has to be said for all the other families at the moment."

It seemed like the eighth family and tenth family had multiple clashes after that, especially since Vincent had also been the one to have killed one of their previous family leaders due to what they had done to Katie.

"Whoa, that's a lot of enemies, I wouldn't want to be in your shoes right now." Vincent stated amused. "You have the first family's Bryce on your back, the eighth family, and let's not forget about the Sith family with Vadeen. I know Arthur was the one that killed him, but it was due to you."

"Don't pretend like everything's my fault! You were the responsible for at least one of those!" Quinn replied annoyed.

"If you know Jim had created the Dalki, then why didn't the vampires kill the Dalki or at least help the humans when they were getting attacked?" Quinn asked.

"I know you might start to hate me for this, since you're a former human, but... the Dalki simply hadn't been regarded as a threat by us. At any point in time we would be able to beat them quite easily, so we didn't really care what happened to them. Given their lifespan, most of us appeared to think that the problem would simply fix itself. And by the time the human race was facing extinction... well we had found a way to solve our blood problem, so once again no family felt the need to intervene."

'The vampires don't see the Dalki as a threat? Is it due to arrogance, or are they really that strong?' Quinn couldn't believe it, he had personally clashed with the other family leaders and had therefore experienced their powers firsthand. He also was aware of the power of the Dalki he had encountered.

If the vampire didn't regard them as a threat...

"Just curious, but how many spikes have you seen on a Dalki?" Quinn questioned to verify a theory.

The face Dwight pulled was one of confusion as he was clueless what that had to do with anything.

"One? No, I think I recall one of them having two. I'm sorry, it's been a while." Dwight answered, unsure where Quinn was going with his questioning. Still, he had learned his lesson, so he answered as best as he could. "Actually when the Dalki had first been created we had been unaware of their defects. The ones studying them reassured us that their intelligence was enough for us to attempt to train them, so we taught them how to fight. The idea was to use them as more than just a food source and make them hunt beasts as well. However, before we got the chance Jim had disappeared with them all in a single night."

'Did he say two spikes, but even during the war there was a four spike Dalki. Have they grown stronger in the meantime? Just like Borden. Do more spikes grow on them with age or did Jim find a way to create more? ... However, that means the vampires remain unaware of their increased strength. No wonder, they've just been sitting here focusing on their own internal struggles!'

This was something Quinn couldn't have predicted. He had believed there had to be a logical reason for the vampires to not get involved, but for the reason to be... pure ignorance. Unfortunately that meant Quinn would have to somehow convince them to start treating the Dalki as a threat.

Worse, they also had to worry about Arthur now as well.

"Don't tell them about Arthur, Quinn.' Vincent stressed. 'Right now Dwight trusts you, but they saw Arthur help you once when you were in trouble! Both of you share the same ability and they don't know quite how it works, but do know that he

can come to you through your shadow! If you tell them that Arthur plans to get rid of the vampires, that could easily be used against you!"

Vincent was right, Quinn didn't want any more enemies, not at this point and time.

'On that note, could you ask him who managed to create the Blood substitute? With me and Jim gone, I seriously can't imagine anyone else being able to complete it?' Vincent asked.

"There is one thing I don't quite get. You told me that Vincent was in charge of the project, but left it unfinished. Then Jim was the one to try and complete it, yet he failed and created the Dalki before vanishing. However, it was completed in the end, so who was the one who managed to do what those two had failed at?"

"I don't see why that would be a problem." Dwight replied, taking a sip of his tea. They had been talking for quite a while now. More so than he had initially thought, especially since Quinn was focusing on past subjects. "It was actually due to Jill, the eighth family leader. Believe me when I say that it was a complete surprise to all of us all when she had come up with a solution."

'Jill?!' Vincent shouted in shock.

'What, is she someone special or something?'

'Actually...' Vincent paused. "I don't really remember her. She must have been made a family leader after me. Although the eighth family did like to experiment as well, they were nowhere near as talented as the Enos' Vincent claimed full of pride.

"That is everything that I know about Jim. To this day there was a call out from the agents to find him, but he hasn't been spotted and with our agents deceased, we have decided to focus on more important things. I hope my answers have helped you."

It did help Quinn confirm a few things. For one, Jim was indeed the creator of the Dalki, and if Quinn's hunch was correct he would be working with them even now which was why the vampires were unable to locate them.

However, there was one other, perhaps even bigger question on his mind.

Where did Richard Eno, the first King, fit into all of this?

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 837: Underestimating the tenth

Judging by how many original vampires Jim had awakened, Quinn just couldn't put the idea out of his head that he might have woken up Richard. However, no matter how much Quinn thought about it, he just couldn't piece together what Richard was trying to do, nor what his goal could be in all of this?

But most importantly... just whose side was Richard supposed to be on?

"I'm assuming that was not all you wanted from me?" Dwight continued the conversation. "Even I would feel bad to reward you with just a simple history lesson for what I have asked of you."

With the most prominent question out of the way, it was time for Quinn to make some requests or suggestions, and he was just hoping these would go as well as the rest of the conversation had.

"Indeed, it concerns the men that came with Paul. I know you originally promised me that their lives would be spared as long as I managed to fulfill my mission, but I'm afraid that deal will not be honoured with a new King. I'm sure you never intended to just let them go back to the Human World after everything happened in the first place, right?"

Now that the conversation seemed to relax a little, Dwight's posture was less stiff as he replied.

"Asking for that would have been outside of what I could have offered. Returning two hundred or so men is bound to raise questions, even if we did erase their memories, not to mention it would be near impossible to check that all the details inside their heads had disappeared. However, there is actually a leader who is famous for her ability to erase her targets' memories with a hundred percent certainty."

This was news to Quinn, he had heard that erasing just part of someone's memories was already hard, especially a large chunk of it could be dangerous to the user. With how long they had stayed, Quinn had honestly thought the only option would have been to erase their entire memories.

However, Quinn had already witnessed the effects of turning someone into a black slate with Cia. All these people had their own families to go to, as such it was too cruel to do that to them.

"I'm guessing it's a leader's ability?" Quinn asked, not letting his personal emotions show.

"Correct, Cindy, the second family's leader can remove memories, or more precisely she can reverse one's memories up to a certain point. She could make it so those men only remember up to the point when they were handed their mission,

without remembering anything about the Vampire World or ever encountering you."

"Nevertheless, I can't just release them back to the Human World. Kazz has been tracking you and most likely has already reported to Bryce that you haven't achieved much. Our word means a lot to us vampires, the King's word perhaps more so than anyone else's."

"Right now, many believe the only reason you and Paul are complying is because of them, so giving up the hold we have over you would result in a bigger rift than there already is."

"But we don't have a lot of time." Quinn argued. "Once a new King gets elected, won't they just use this very same excuse? That the deal had been between me and the old King?"

"Then what would you suggest, I'm open to any solutions?"

Regretfully, Quinn had been forced to consider such an outcome, so he had already gone through the options with Paul.

"You're afraid that they would tell others about the Vampire World because they're human, so what if we make them into vampires. After they turn I would like to accept them into the tenth family. You asked me to help you, but as you're aware my family is currently at its weakest. We've been attacked, and I can't exactly do much with just ten vampire students and the few companions I brought along this time, now can I? I need to rebuild our strength and we need people for that!" Quinn insisted, not shying away from laying the guilt onto the Royal Vampire knight.

Dwight stayed silent for a while and relaxed back in his chair until he was finally ready to answer. "That does sound reasonable. I should be able to use the attack on the tenth family's castle as justification for giving you more people. However, that still leaves us with the problem that turning all two hundred will be impossible by yourself. Other vampires can only turn one or two at most, and with how little people you have... Still, I can allow for the humans to live in your inner castle area, without being turned, but I suggest you do this as soon as possible."

"Once the others learn that you have humans there... well, it will be like dangling a steak in front of a lion."

Two hundred people would now be added to the tenth family, and although he didn't have to worry about their lives being lost now, he still would have to worry about the possibility of the tenth castle being attacked in the future.

Thinking of those in his family, and what Dwight said earlier it made him think about something.

"By any chance, you said that her ability worked by not erasing the memory but by reversing them. Do you think a person's memories could be reversed to before they had been removed, in a way, returning their lost memories?" Quinn asked.

"... Theoretically? I would think it would work, but I don't know the ins and outs of the ability. You would have to ask Cindy, since she's the one with the ability." Dwight could tell that it was the last request Quinn had.

Of course Quinn would have liked to ask for more support and help from Dwight, but they needed to also keep their relationship a secret, which was why he could only do so much.

Before leaving it looked like he had one more thing to say.

"Cindy should be willing to help you. She already has the support from a lot of the other leaders so she will help you to gain your favour, but remember what I said Quinn, don't trust anyone!"

"The King will go into eternal slumber in two weeks. Use this time to strengthen the tenth family and find out whatever you can! We will meet regularly and I will start the process of sending those captured over to you."

Quinn had found out what he needed and had managed to solve the issue with the human prisoners, overall the meeting could be called a success.

Still, he couldn't help but feel bad that they had no choice in the matter. He just hoped they would agree that anything was better than death, especially since Quinn planned to make good on his promise to return them to their family one day.

'Are you thinking about letting Cia see the second leader Cindy?' Vincent asked.  
'When I said there was one in the world that could possibly return her memories, she was the one I was referring to. I just never thought we would be in a situation where they would need a lot more from you than you do form them.'

"I ruined her life."Quinn sighed. "It's hard for me to look at her, since I can see how much pain she is in. I thought that maybe after a while she would forget about everything, but even now she plans to go back to Pure in hopes of finding out more about her past."

Quinn grimaced as the thought crossed his mind that they were quite similar. In a way, he also had been obsessed with his past, only that he had tried unlocking the book his parents had left him, hoping he might learn just a little bit more about them.

"She saved us from the demon tier beast and has helped us a lot. I think the least I can do for her is allowing her to choose what she wants to do."

Exiting from the castle, the Royal Guards checked Quinn over again. Although Dwight was a higher rank than them, Quinn could see that even when he left the room they checked him before he was to go up.

'I guess they're only loyal to the King.'

After the check was done, Quinn started to leave the castle, but while doing so he walked past someone unexpected. Quinn paused for a second, as he heard the sound of something hitting the floor.

It was a cane, but he was aware that the man holding it didn't need it.

Walking past him, Bryce had but a small smile on his face.

"No matter how much you seem to have grown on the outside, you are but a human child." He whispered, knowing full well that Quinn could hear him.

"That old man is crazy." Vincent proclaimed. 'If he wants your vote, he's doing a terrible job at it!'

'It's ok, we should ignore him for now. If Bryce wants to go to war, then I will happily show him that the Dalki are not the only thing these old vampires have underestimated!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 838: Useless Title

Having come back from his meeting with Dwight, Quinn headed to the inner castle area. At the moment it was deserted with no signs of life after all the people that had died in the attack. Usually people from the pooling area would fill in those numbers, yet none had taken that chance so far.

Quinn wanted to improve the inner castle area. With Dwight having warned him about the possibility of another attack, and after Bryce's comment he was sure that the intention of the first family leader was to get rid of him altogether.

As such, he was inspecting the security around the place, focusing on the large wall built around the inner area, the small gate at the front, and the side gates in the walls allowing one to travel from castle to castle.

He couldn't stay in the tenth's castle area forever and he also wasn't expecting the vampires to leave their home and come aboard the Cursed ship, so that left him with only one choice. He somehow needed to improve the castle's defences.

Luckily, he had acquired just the right tools for that recently.

'This reputation store sure is handy for this. Now if only I could figure out how to get some more reputation points?' Quinn thought to himself.

Upon returning to the castle, he checked if anything had happened during his absence, yet there didn't seem to be anything noteworthy.

He only briefly encountered the students all together. Since he had become the family leader, they had all bowed down to him. Not knowing what to do, Quinn awkwardly just waved at them before leaving quickly.

'Seems Fex still hasn't returned. Well good for him, there must be a lot he has to talk about with his family.'

Sitting down he continued to try to come up with an idea how to get more reputation.

'I can see you are struggling.' Vincent noted. 'Do you want me to give you a hand?'

Struggling to find a name, he had planned to ask Vincent for help anyway, yet the way Vincent had approached him first and the proud tone in his voice somehow pissed Quinn off. As if the other was indicating he was better than him.

Choosing to ignore Vincent for now, Quinn continued brainstorming. Eventually, after not being able to come up with something he sighed in defeat.

'Please help me out.' Quinn requested in frustration.

'I believe the system was being quite literal when it called them reputation points. Even the shop itself only opened up when you became the tenth leader.' Vincent started to explain.

'Which leaves me to conclude, that more reputation points will be awarded as long as you increase your reputation with those in the tenth family. They must think better of you, or do something to better their lives. Like remember when Edward first assigned you a task? It was to deliver blood to all those in the inner area, right?'

Vincent's logic made sense, but now Quinn was left to wonder how to better their lives or give off a good impression. After all, he frankly didn't know them too well yet.

After Quinn formulated a small theory, he decided to call over Timmy, Alex and Logan. If it really was about increasing one's reputation, then those three would be the best candidates to help him verify it.

After the trio entered the room. Quinn started to ask them a few questions, mostly their personal rundown on what the tenths area used to be like before the attack. When it had been his turn, Timmy mentioned his idea about the armour sets.

"However, I don't think it would work anymore." Timmy admitted. "I tried to do it before you arrived, but even with offering them an armour set as a reward no one was interested to move. They just don't feel safe anymore."

"I don't think that will be too much of a problem soon." Quinn said. "The only thing I need to do is increase my reputation with those in the tenth. Alex if you could, would you be able to create new equipment for the students here? As for Logan and Timmy. Try to head over to the pooling area and see if there is anything needing that can improve their lives, I'm sure Logan can come up with a few things."

"Then what do you need me for?" Timmy questioned.

"I mean, you know how charming Logan can be. I'd much rather have you there as the spokesperson. Also make sure that anyone who wishes to leave the castle, does so in at least a group of five. I want you to take three others with you and make sure to take your masks with you as well."

Before allowing the three of them to leave, Quinn decided to bring up the system and check out one more thing. In the system interface, there was now a section where he could assign quests to certain individuals.

To do that, he merely needed to set up an objective, optionally add a mission description, but most importantly had to assign the reward from his own items in the system.

'Oh neat, it also lets me use the items I have in my shadow space. Ok, let's test it out with this.' Quinn thought.

The instructions had also stated that if Quinn wanted to give the quest to a certain individual, then he could do so by using his inspect skill, then, when the information screen popped up, there was a little assign quest button underneath there name.

Quinn wrote up the quest for Alex to create armour for the students and then also created an additional one for Logan and Timmy.

'What should I put here? Uhmmm... Get to know the tenth family people better? Let's see if the system accepts something vague like that...' As a reward Quinn just put some high tier crystals and the quest was set.

"Whoa what the hell is this?!" Alex wondered out loud as he looked at the screen in front of him.

"What are you talking about?" Timmy asked since it looked like Alex was staring at nothing but air.

"Can't you see it? This screen? It just appeared out of nowhere!" He started jumping up and down like a kid, despite it looking similar to the screens they used today. The only difference was this did feel a little like magic.

"Can you see the same thing in front of you Logan?" Quinn asked.

Logan didn't have any reaction, but he did nod. He had seen this once before, and knew about Quinn having the system due to the two of them touching. However, Timmy was unable to see anything.

'Can only those turned see the system screen and quests? But then why did the quest not appear in front of Timmy?' Checking the status of the quest it said that it was ongoing and Timmy had received one.

Moving on and past the excitement, Quinn made sure for them to deliver the message that the new tenth leader was the one that had sent them and asked to complete the task. As for Alex, Quinn opened up his dimensional space, and handed him a bunch of emperor tier crystals he could use to create equipment.

Something that had been given to them after the joint hunt from the demon tier beast, and some revived from the Pure planets and Daisy planets. Quinn thought they might have been a use for them so he brought them along.

Now all Quinn had to do was wait patiently, after waiting a while he received a few messages.

[Logan Green has completed the quest - rewards have been received]

[Timmy Sinblup has completed the quest - rewards have been received]

[The tenth's family opinion of you has increased]

[400 reputation points gained]

And after that.

[Alex Way has completed the quest - rewards have been received]

[100 reputation points gained]

[For completing the following quests, the tenth family members are grateful]

[100 reputation points received]

[100 reputation points received]

[100 reputation points received]

[Total reputation points currently 900]

'Oh, I didn't expect to get reputation points from them being happy about completing the quests! It looks like I got a hundred per person. I guess this title allowing me to assign quests isn't so useless after all...' Quinn smiled as he looked forward to upgrading some things around his castle.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 839: Upgrading the Towers

After he had determined the usefulness of his new title Quinn went on a quest assigning rampage. Unfortunately, his initial enthusiasm was hampered after he discovered that different quests would give him different amounts of reputation points.

The good news was that even those that couldn't see the quest screen interface in front of them had been able to complete their quests, earning him more points. Timmy was one such example.

When asked about it, he had told Quinn that a flash of white light had simply appeared before him falling into his hands to his utter shock.

It sounded quite similar to the time Quinn had traded his beast crystals with the system for the items in its shop. The quests appeared to work with the same concept in mind, transporting the item from Quinn's storage directly to the one assigned the quest no matter where they are.

In order to not shock everyone about his new system power, he had limited the quest to only those within the castle.

There were a few more things he found, the same quest couldn't be given twice, and he would only earn reputation points if the system deemed it as helping the tenth family, leading to a bit of mental exhaustion on his part.

Also, what appeared to influence the number of reputation points he would receive, was not the person completing the quest, but the opinion of the tenth family from Quinn helping them out as their leader.

A few days in, he also discovered that depending on his reputation he would also benefit from a passive daily amount of those points until he eventually ended up with a total of 6,000 reputation points to spend as he wanted.

The only thing he had bought so far was the flag, which he had not set up yet. Looking at the shop there were only two other items that he could buy. The tower, and the statue that looked like a gargoyle.

Quinn decided to purchase two towers, since he already knew where he wanted to place them right away. He walked out to the front inner castle gate to see for himself how the process would work.

In other castles this area would have at least a couple of guards patrolling the area, but with the lack of personnel there was no one there. The lack of security was the main reason why others still hadn't asked to join the inner area, despite news spreading about the tenth family having a leader again.

Usually there would be at least some vampires who would join a family for an easy promotion into the inner castle since that would guarantee them a grand life feasting on more blood than they could wish for. However, there was just too much risk of another attack happening and they all knew it. What was the point of untold riches if they would soon have to pay with their lives?

'Let's see how this thing works.' Quin motivated himself as he navigated the system screen. A holographic outline of the tower appeared on a map. At the same time Quinn could see that holographic display in front of him, making him aware exactly where, and how big the tower would be.

"Okay now for the points.'

[1000 reputation points have been used]

[Tower is being built]

In front of his eyes, the wireframe holographic display was coming into existence. It was taller than the outside wall, almost double the size and it matched the material that the castles had been made of.

Then at the very top there was a platform with four pillars allowing for an open area, and then a pointed roof above that. With his eyesight, Quinn could make out a strange circle orb on the inside.

'It really did just come out of thin air!'

'That is the power of equivalent exchange.' Vincent explained. "I have to admit I'm quite envious. If I had to do this with my own powers I would have had to gather the correct materials and then prepared beast crystals as an energy source before I could even begin.'

'Yet here the system conveniently takes over that task for you. It judges everything you have done, assigns you a type of currency, and then, by spending that currency, it allows you to create something like this without any other requirements.'

Vincent was honestly frustrated. Quinn's system was pretty much a cheat. What's worse it appeared to him as if his own powers had been upgraded and he was benefiting from it. However, when remembering what Quinn had gone through, and his own life that had been sacrificed to create the system, he didn't feel like he should complain.

It didn't take long for the tower to catch the attention of the vampires in the polling area. A large structure that hadn't been there before had appeared out of nowhere. It was only natural that a big crowd had gathered watching that right next to the first tower, not the other side of the gate, another tower started to appear.

[Please supply the tower with energy]

The system allowed him to use the beast crystals he carried in his dimensional space. When selecting a basic tier crystal, Quinn could see a bar that he assumed displayed how much energy it would provide the tower with. Selecting a higher tier crystal would fill it up more.

'So this is its source of energy.' Quinn thought.

Looking at the towers, Quinn could see that they could be upgraded to level two, each for 500 points. Before doing that, he first wanted to test out the strength of the level one tower.

Quinn started to walk out of his own front gate, noticing the vampires from the main settlement area, all standing there staring at him blankly.

'It wouldn't hurt for you to inform them of what you're doing. You're an official leader, so you should address the people.' Vincent suggested.

Clearing his throat, Quinn started to give his speech.

"Greetings, everyone. As you're aware we have recently suffered from an attack. As the tenth family's leader it's my wish to make sure that we can protect others if something similar was to ever happen again. These towers are the first step to make my wish come true!"

Quinn's speech was wonderfully effective in getting the vampires to speak more about him and his family, but for the moment he chose to ignore them. The towers would only attack those perceived as enemies, so Quinn manually assigned himself to be treated as one.

After he was selected as a target, Quinn approached the gate slowly, step by step, until he entered their range and both of the towers fired a ball of energy towards him.

The attack wasn't fast, but it wasn't slow either. He just stood there taking the hit to make sure just how effective they would be. Two small explosions injured his body.

[-5 HP]

[-5 HP]

After taking the first two hits, he could see the towers were getting ready to fire again, so quickly left the tower's range. The energy bar underneath the towers had lessened after the first shot. Quinn estimated that with the basic tier crystal each tower could fire off a total of 20 shots.

'That's way better than I thought.' Quinn praised their performance.

Quinn wasn't wearing any armour, but he had a strong body as a Vampire lord. Being able to damage him to this degree was something good to have.

[People are impressed by the tenth family's new contraption]

[500 reputation points awarded]

It looked like his little display was good publicity, capable of impressing some people in the crowd.

'Well there's more where that came from.' Quinn mused as he spent 500 points twice to upgrade both towers. Now stepping closer, the shots fired from the tower were quicker and stronger and when it hit Quinn this time, they took off ten points of HP each.

Looking at the system, the towers were displayed as level 2/5 towers, meaning they could be upgraded three more times. However the upgrade to level three cost 1,000 reputation points.

Quinn was curious about the performance, but decided to prioritise placing more towers at crucial points around the tenth area including the castle.

"Hey, that castle thing looked kind of impressive?" One of the spectation vampires noted.

"Yeah, It looks like the new tenth family leader is trying to show us what he can do!" Another cheered for Quinn to give them a good show.

"If we get close will it attack us?" A third was a bit worried about their safety.

Seeing Quinn now walk through the gates with no trouble, some dared to walk forward, happy the towers didn't do anything to them.

'Don't worry!' Quinn shouted to them while not turning around. "They will only attack anything that the tenth family deems as its enemy."

[People are impressed by the tenth family's new contraption]

[Reputation points earned 500]

After testing out the store and reading what the statue could do, Quinn paid 2,000 points to place a statue a little bit away from the castle door.

'This thing is pretty impressive as well.' Quinn said as he tapped the statue a few times. It looked as if someone had frozen over a winged bloodsucker. Even if it

didn't do anything he thought it was something nice to look at, but its effects were impressive as well.

As for the rest of his reputation points, Quinn decided that he would keep them for now, building them up to purchase something expensive perhaps. With the construction speed as fast as it was, there was no need to do it all at once.

After meeting up with everyone, Quinn informed them of the towers he had created and their function. The students, as well as those from the Cursed ship, were excited to hear and see the news.

Done with their meal, everyone almost instantly went outside to take a look at the improvements Quinn had made. Xander and Amy were among the last to leave. They hesitated for a little, looking at each other, seemingly wanting to tell him something, but ultimately shook their heads and just followed the crowd.

That just left Quinn and Leo, as he had asked the Vampire knight to stay behind.

"It feels like I haven't been able to rest since coming here." Quinn sighed. "Now that it's just the two of, there's a lot I wanted to ask you. Hard to believe how fast time passes when you're wrapped up with things."

"Indeed, but a busy life is not a bad one, and as long as it's for the future we can work hard." Leo argued.

"You're as hard working as always, Leo. As the person who has taught me Qi, I will forever be thankful to you. It has helped me in many situations and I'm sure the same is true for you, so I was wondering... are you aware that there are the different stages of Qi?"

Leo opened his white hollowed eyes and raised his eyebrow, as if he didn't know what Quinn was talking about.

'If this Leo has only mastered the first stage and is already this strong... just what kind of monster will he become after learning all the others?!' Quinn couldn't help but get excited at imagining the future.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 840: A true talent

It was a good thing the two of them had been sitting down when Quinn had started to share his knowledge in that regard with Leo, unaware just how much stronger it would make his Vampire knight in the near future.

Quinn started from the beginning, when he himself had learned about the different stages of Qi from a man named Abdul. How the rankings within Pure worked and how they were taught Qi. However, not everyone was on the same level, and there were three stages of it.

"You said you fought against someone at Pure before?" Quinn confirmed. "And that they used Qi as well? So it looks like your hunch was right. Someone is indeed teaching those in Pure about Qi, yet when you were taught it, your master did so without mentioning these different stages?"

Shaking his head, Leo had no such knowledge.

"I taught you everything my master taught me without holding back. Even the Qi strikes I use with my sword were developed by myself."

Although Leo didn't say it, he had always wondered about something. At the dojo, he had always felt like his teacher had been holding back something. Leo understood why his master might have not taught him the other forms of Qi after their little incident, but that didn't explain why he hadn't done so before. He had lived and stayed with him for years always being stuck at the same level.

"I see," Quinn replied. "When we were on the hunt for the demon tier beast, I met a man called Chris. Similar to Layla's mother they both knew the three stages of Qi. I'm sure he was a member of Pure, especially based on what the others said at the time. You told me that your master has gone missing, so I was wondering if the two of them could have been the same person? He was the strongest Qi user i have ever met so far."

Quinn tried to describe his outer appearance and even imitated Chris's actions, but eventually Leo told him to stop.

"No matter how much you try to pretend to be him, I can't confirm it without seeing his Aura. Still, based on what you've told me about his personality, he doesn't sound like my master. Even when I was young my master was about my age now, so he should be an old man by now. He might have already died, so perhaps Chris was just another student of his, one he passed down everything to."

Thinking about this, Leo was wondering why though. He had so many questions. If his master was the one behind Pure, why did he create that organisation? Surely his enemy should have been the Dalki that killed all those people, or at the very least blamed Leo for making the world aware of their existence.

The second thing that was troubling him was whether or not his master knew about the other stages of Qi during their time together, or whether it was something he had only learnt after their separation. If he knew about them beforehand, then why didn't he teach it to Leo?

"I thought this information might become useful for you. I remember you saying that Qi was a passed down secret, so I found it strange that those in Pure knew it, but it seems I have given you a lot to think about, and at a time when we can't even leave this place. I'm sorry."

"Don't worry about that young boy," Leo replied. "More than anything what you have given me is time which I did not have before. Time to figure out this whole mess, and I quite like the students here." He said with a soft smile.

Seeing this, Quinn thought that the role of a teacher suited Leo quite well.

"Say, when did you start teaching them Qi?" Quinn asked.

"How did you know?" Leo was surprised by this.

"Ever since learning the second stage, I have had more control and can sense it a bit better. Still, I noticed that their energy is incredibly weak. Is there a reason for that?"

Leo let out a big sigh before answering.

"I did try teaching them, but unlike Erin or you it seems like their body is just not that compatible with it. After learning how it could disrupt the vampire's energy I thought it could help them, if the other vampires attempted to attack us again. However, that was also the case when learning Qi. Trying to gather up any energy in their body is a painful process for them. There is no harmony and the energy tries to attack them from within."

"It was just like Chris told me." Quinn replied. "When teaching me Qi, he had told me that the energy in my body is taken up by the vampire energy, and if it wasn't there, my Qi would have been more powerful, but my body has been able to balance the two out. Maybe it's because the three of us were humans before being turned?"

After the conversation, Quinn stood up and went over to Leo's side.

"This is a little awkward." Quinn said, scratching his head. He then quickly bowed to Leo out of respect. "If you will allow me too, I wish to teach you the second stage of Qi. I know that you are my teacher so it would be rude of me to say this, but I want to return the favour. If you don't want to accept help I completely understand."

Standing up, Leo lifted Quinn up from his bowing position.

"You can't be doing that anymore, you are now a family leader. If the others saw you bowing down to one that should be bowing to you, it would cause quite the fuss, and Quinn. Having a student surpass you is an achievement in my eyes. Maybe some people get scared or worried but not me. I will be happy to accept your guidance."

The relationship between the two was a close one. Even though they hardly spoke, Leo had always been a teacher they could rely on. He hadn't told anyone about Quinn's secret in the military academy, and he had helped him in many tough situations, yet now Quinn could finally help Leo after all the help he had received.

The two of them headed down to the training room, and just like Chris had done, Quinn would do the same guiding Leo, while explaining what the second stage actually did.

"I'm sorry if I'm not good at explaining, but I hope you'll understand what I'm getting at. If you don't understand then I can try again, and show you." Quinn offered, feeling a little nervous. When teaching the others how to use the shadow ability he hadn't felt this way, but in front of Leo it was different.

"Don't worry." Leo said, as he walked away disconnecting from Quinn's hand on his back. He then drew his sword, and flung it down to his side.

Quinn was left there stunned. Chris had praised him for being a fast learner, yet it had taken him several days to get the hang of it. As for Leo... someone who had no knowledge of it before, only had to be shown once, before he was able to use the second stage Qi, covering it with his sword.

"This feels good." Leo smiled after giving it a few more swings. He then proceeded to strike out, extending the Qi beyond his swords taking the air even further. A scratch mark was left across the floor even though his sword hadn't touched the ground.

'How is he even better than me at it?' Quinn questioned.

'Finally! For once take a look at someone who has true talent, someone even better than yourself!' Vincent triumphantly cried out, bitter that Quinn always seemed to surpass him in many ways. 'It's people like him that should be the main character in stories!'

After swinging his blade for a short while, Leo stopped.

"It's a shame you didn't learn much about the third stage Qi, but I will try to improve this for now."

"I guess I need to start learning from you again." Quinn sighed in defeat.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 841: The problem with yellow eyes

Witnessing just how quickly Leo had gotten used to the second stage Qi, Quinn started to emphasise how other vampires must feel when comparing themselves to him.

"Don't feel so down." Leo encouraged him. "I've felt the kind of aura you've demonstrated all the time in the dojo. Because of my ability, I have always been able to sense Qi on a different level compared to others. As for control, my unique soul weapon allows me to fine tune not just mine but the Qi of others as well. So as long as I have seen and understand how it works, it's an easy feat to replicate it. If it had been anything else but Qi, it would take me a while to learn it as well."

Quinn believed he had hidden his jealousy well, but he realised too late that it had just been him hiding the emotions on his face. Which was useless in front of the blind Leo who saw beyond a person's face.

"Can you do me a favour?" Quinn asked. "Although the other students are unable to learn this, you mentioned that Erin is similar to myself, so if you have the time, away from your normal knight duties would you be willing to teach her?"

Leo nodded. "No problem, I've already planned to do that even if he hadn't asked me to. Although she blames herself for what has happened, her obsession for power is pointed in the right direction."

With nothing else to show Leo, Quinn decided to leave the training room. Unexpectedly there were two people who had been waiting for him.

"Sorry to disturb you, leader." Xander quickly bowed down. "There's something we wish to discuss with you in private. I know you must be busy these days, but we believe it's quite important for you to know this."

Quinn didn't know Xander or Amy well, only that they helped Layla and Cia during the fight, yet from the look on his face, it appeared to be something quite serious. He was wondering just what could make the boy so worried.

"Of course, if you have any concerns then feel free to come to me at any time. I don't want you to feel like you can't."

The three of them walked off, to one of the many empty rooms in the castle. They entered a smaller room that had a small bed, indicating that it was a room meant to be used for servants. It was untouched and on the first floor with the training rooms, but at the same time it was away from the others as well.

"I don't want you to take offence, but I don't know how much you know about vampires since you used to be...." Xander paused, trying not to offend Quinn.

"Don't worry, I probably know as much about vampires as you guys who have been born in the Vampire World, if not more. I also don't mind being called a human. I won't bite your head off." Quinn joked, but it was clear that Xander was finding it hard to react.

'Is this what it's like to be a leader? Everyone is so uptight around me, even though we should be around the same age. Perhaps I'm even younger.' Quinn thought.

As for the comment about knowing more about vampires, Quinn was naturally referring to Vincent. At times like these it was super convenient to be able to ask a leader who was older than most members of the current generation of family leaders.

"Okay, here it goes." Xander let out a big breath. "It's about Erin. You see, we think- No, we're pretty sure she's... a dhampir."

There was no reaction from Quinn's side when they accused their teammember of being a member of that subclass, and Amy noticed this.

"You... you already knew, didn't you?" She spoke softly.

"Indeed, I did." Quinn nodded, pausing as he waited for one of the two to say something else, but neither one spoke out of turn. "Why? Did she do something that caused a problem?"

"No." Amy shook her head vehemently. "She hasn't done anything and she's been nothing but nice, only... We didn't know what to do because there are rules to report a dhampir, but we don't want her to be taken away, so we decided to come to you."

Turning his head, Quinn was now looking at Xander who found it hard to keep eye contact.

'Quinn, it may not be my place to say this, but you need to make sure that they don't say anything to anyone else! Not at this crucial time!' Vincent advised. 'You might not like it, but you know what to do.'

"Look up." Quinn ordered them in a stern voice.

With Xander's legs shaking, he slowly lifted his head.

'What is this pressure? It suddenly feels as if I'm talking to one of the leaders!'

Finally, when he lifted his head, Quinn's eyes were glowing red.

"Will you tell anyone about this?" Quinn asked, while using the Influence skill.

As if stuck in a trance, Xander replied.

"No, since I have already reported it to my leader." He replied in a monotone voice and the Influence skill stopped working.

'What just happened? I just replied without having even a chance to think about it? Was that his power?'

"Sir." Xander suddenly looked up, putting his right arm across his chest. "You are going to do great things for this family! I have worked hard under the tenth family, and I promise you to work even harder under your Cursed family!"

[100 reputation points earned]

Quinn was surprised that his actions had resulted in earning Xander's respect, yet it was a welcome surprise.

"Thanks for telling me this. You two can go now. I'm sorry for using that on you, but I just needed to make sure that this information will remain a secret for now. I promise you that I will look after Erin and everyone else in my family, no matter who or what they are! "

When the two finally left the room Quinn sat down on a victorian style large chair.

'So will you tell me what's wrong with being a dhampir or do I need to beg?' Quinn mused.

'Sorry, I was just too taken aback how the little boy in the past has grown up to the point he managed to speak like a real leader.' Vincent answered him, his tone revealing that he was half teasing and half serious.

'Your question sure is a tricky one though. I studied many subclasses during my time, and it was my duty to report back to the King. Of course, this also included information about the Dhampirs, yet it was completely scrapped and rewritten. I assume what the kids have been taught about them is false, and I can tell you the reason why.'

'Dhampirs aren't scary irrational beasts like the Wendigos and other subclasses. I'm sure even you can see that. No, the thing that scares the normal vampires is what they represent. Remember when I told you that the vampires' opinions were split into those who thought we should rule over humans and those that thought we should protect them as a higher form of existence?'

'Similarly, they are stronger than vampires, especially when fighting them, they share the same skills and traits as us, but at the same time can even overcome the one weakness all vampires have, sunlight. Don't they just sound like the perfect vampire?'

'But now think about the implication. If we feel we have the right to protect humans as the better life form... then shouldn't we allow Dhampirs to rule over us? It was why relationships between a human and a vampire were forbidden.'

'But once the new King took over that is on the side of protecting humans, why are they still considered a taboo?' Quinn wondered.

'Because it would cause conflict. The King more than anything must think about its people, just like a leader. If you have two sides already disagreeing about a single matter, just try imagining them trying to discuss Dhampirs?'

'As I said before, no one has been able to see the true potential of a Dhampir. Erin is still at the first stage of her evolution. According to my research, she is able to evolve just as many times as a vampire. It would be wise of you to hone her skills. Allow her to grow and maybe one day she could even become your Queen.'

Vincent said straight at first, but after a minute he couldn't help but giggle.

Just then, the door was opened wide, and Paul entered.

"I've been looking for you." Paul declared. "My people, they have finally arrived!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 842: Mass Turning

Walking through the main centre of the vampire settlement, a particular group attracted a lot of attention. This was because, for the first time ever, two hundred humans were being escorted by ten royal guards.

The humans walked in a single file, split up into four rows while the guards were placed around them. The look on their faces, some were worried, broken down, defeated at what they had seen. While others still had determination and will, the fire in their eyes hadn't burnt out yet.

'We're going to survive this place no matter what!' Ashley thought. He was one of those that hadn't given up. A man who was the lieutenant of the group. In charge of them after Paul. During their days in the cell, hearing countless cries, seeing other beasts. He tried his best to give everyone hope. However, right now, he had no clue what was happening at this very moment.

"Are they marching us to our deaths, there going to feed us to those creatures, right?" A nervous soldier said, who was shaking.

Ashley wanted to comfort them, but he also didn't want to give them false hope.

'If they were going to kill us, why did they allow us to live for so long? And why are we being guarded right now?'

What was worrying the others more than anything, was the look and the faces of those that lived on this strange planet. Off to the side of the streets, they had gathered in large groups. All of their eyes glowing red, and on a closer look, their teeth seemed to be growing, beyond their mouths, sticking outside like large fangs.

"Don't kill them!" One of the guards said as he continued to march forward. The guards had no weapons on their bodies, but they did wear light black armour with royal blue trim.

"They just can't control themselves, some of them at least." The guard continued as he looked around carefully with his eyes.

Listening in, Ashley was wondering what they were talking about. Until he saw one from the crowd jump towards their large group. They leapt up around three meters in the air and had crossed a significant distance. It was not a feat a human could achieve by any means, especially while wearing no beast gear.

"We don't have any beast gear to defend ourselves. It was all taken off us!" Ashley shouted in anger. He pushed through his group, going to the side, hoping to save one of the females that were about to be attacked.

However, before he could reach them, one of the guards moved out and grabbed the attacker by the neck. He had moved so fast Ashley was unable to see him.

Before letting go, the royal guard slammed the attacker onto the ground and held him down by the neck. The attacker kicked and tried to claw at the royal guard, but he would just apply more force each time until the hacker eventually calmed down.

"Everyone!" The guard shouted. "This is an order from the royal guard. Return to your homes for the next hour while we are transporting the humans!"

They complied with the order as quickly as possible, returning to their homes, but not without whispering and gossiping about the first humans they had seen.

"Where are they taking them? Are they using humans for experiments again?"

"No, I think that's the supposed group that attacked us before?" Another said.

"Still, what are they going to do with them?"

Although they had returned to their homes, they continued to watch where the group was going through windows and such. A short while later, they could see them all enter the tenth castle area.

'These castles, this place... what is happening, and Paul, where are you?' Ashely thought.

Eventually, the guards had reached the tenth castle, and the one in the front shouted at the top of his lungs.

"The humans have been delivered, as promised by the royal Knight Dwight. We will now take our leave." The guards said as they left the humans, standing there alone.

"Wait, they just left. Does that mean we can leave?" One of them asked.

"Do you really think we can? If we tried to go back through all those things, we would be killed. The only thing that was protecting us were those guards." Ashley pointed out.

"So, are we meant to just wait?"

Soon all of their questions would be answered, as the castle's large double doors opened wide, and unexpectedly, they could see an old face they all knew well.

"It's good to see you all again."

"Paul!" Ashley shouted, and soon the others started to call his name.

"Everyone, remember who we are!" Ashley shouted back.

Saying these words snapped them all back into action. Even those that were disheartened before. They got into the position they had practised countless times, and all stood straight.

"We have returned, Sir!" Ashley shouted.

And the others in unison followed after, saluting their general.

"A lot has changed," Paul said, his eyes filled with sadness, looking at all of them.  
"Why don't we head inside?"

Walking inside, before Paul was a young man who had come out with him. Ashley made note that Paul allowed him to walk into the castle before him and wondered about what happened while they were locked up.

The group was led to the grand dining hall. It was able to fit them all in quite comfortably, and those from the Cursed faction were there as well. However, the students were told to remain in their rooms for the time being, as they were worried that they may not be able to control themselves.

Once they were in the hall, Paul went to the front to make an announcement. He looked at them all again before giving an explanation of what had happened.

"As you know, we are not on earth, and maybe as you suspect, these people who live here are not humans," Paul confirmed their thoughts. "However, due to Quinn, the owner and leader of this castle. We have been able to strike a deal with them that can save you all...."

Paul went into further detail about the planet they were on and the deal made between Paul, Quinn, and the others. The way Paul explained it, was that Quinn and Paul were both victims, and he even told them the truth about himself.

How he had already been turned. This was an important point because the next request he needed to make, was about turning all of them as well.

Quinn had thought about how he was going to do this. He was able to turn fifty people at most and had already turned ten. But he had no clue how many his vampire knights could turn. On Vincent's assumption, since they were both at the noble stage, they should be able to turn around ten each.

If Quinn got the group to turn one person each, and then the students as well as himself, that would still only be half of the entire group brought to them.

Those that were turned, could turn others as well, and this was what Quinn was counting on. However, Vincent reminded him that not all those turned would

become vampires. Some would be halflings, subclasses, and only certain subclasses were able to turn others.

'It should still work out, as long as the numbers are with us.' Quinn thought.

After the explanation was done, it was, of course, quite a shock to them, but to Paul's surprise, most of them were willing to be turned. The reason being, it felt like while they were trapped before, they had gone through hell.

They wanted freedom, and if this was the only way to get it, then they would do so. The others that were on the fence or against the idea did understand what Paul must have gone through. It was quite clear if the deal wasn't stuck, then all of them would be used as food by now.

With no choice, they too were willing to be turned.

There was no time to waste, and Quinn got to work straight away.

"Paul, Leo, out of this group, I think it would be best if you select ten of those that you trust most. I believe that they will be able to grow quite well under you." Quinn commanded.

The reason for thinking this was one of the Knight's skills in the system.

[Knight's command]

[A vampire knight is able to form a squad of ten vampires under himself. For those under the vampire knight, their skills and strength will be increased by ten percent]

"Leo, also about what we talked about before. Maybe it's time to put that theory to the test. If these humans have been turned into vampires, perhaps these can learn Qi? Try to select those that have the most potential."

With the orders made, Leo took ten people with him. He selected those with the strongest aura of Qi. Paul followed after. As for the rest, Quinn wanted to wait and see what would happen first.

Leo, started to turn them one by one, activating the ritual. Everyone watched the person in front of them scream in pain as they were being turned. It had put some of those off, but when they realised they were completely fine after, it calmed their nerves a little. Everyone so far had turned into either a vampire or a halfling. And then when Leo turned the very last one, they too had turned into a vampire.

'Was my assumption correct? If the others turn people, they turn into the same class that created them. Maybe if Alex does turn someone, they too will become a blood fairy?'

Of course, Vincent didn't know the answer, as the system seemed to be doing its own thing, which didn't follow the normal rules that he had learnt.

Next, it was Paul's turn, and in his group Ashley stood proud, being the first to be turned. Then it was time for the rest to follow. Just like Leo, everyone had turned into a halfling or a vampire.

Those that were turned into a vampire were told to step to the side, as Quinn would use those to turn others as well. But before that, it was finally his turn.

While turning others, Quinn didn't want to use his slots, so he planned to only turn twenty more people. This way, he would still have twenty slots left. If need be, he would turn the rest after.

So far, everything had gone well, until the ninth person.

The ninth person was wriggling around on the floor for far longer than the rest. Screaming louder than the others before him. The skin on his whole body was shrinking. His facial features were becoming more prominent, and his hair was falling out.

'This guy, is he turning into a Bloodsucker, but how?' Quinn thought in a panic.

"No Quinn, that's not a Bloodsucker. You need to kill him now. He's turning into a Wendigo!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 843: Chain Turning

The man on the floor continued to scream in pain and it looked like his limbs were starting to stretch out. Quinn had seen a Wendigo before, and so had Logan.

"Everyone make space! Step away from him, now!!" Logan shouted, ordering everyone away.

All who knew him were aware that Logan only spoke when necessary, so seeing him so agitated, they immediately started helping with clearing the group of people, by making them stand against the side of the walls.

'Vincent, are you sure? Is there really no way to reverse the process or to at least stop his evolution process?'

Unfortunately, Vincent remained silent in front of Quinn's cries and pleas, making it clear that killing him would be the only option.

'Fine, but what if I capture him? Don't you think if I restrain him, we can look for a way in the future?' Quinn suggested in desperation.

'No!' Vincent shouted back in frustration. 'I'm sorry Quinn, but there is absolutely no way to reverse an evolution once it has begun and you won't be able to change them afterward. I tried more times than you can imagine and not once did I come even close to a success! What makes you think you can?!"

'I know you don't mean to be, but you're actually being selfish to that person! Wendigos are creatures that feed on human flesh. Every second of their life they are under the constant pain of starvation, yet they're undead creatures who can't be sated no matter how much they eat! The best thing to do is to finish him off, for your sake as much as his own!'

Paul who was standing by the side with the others was stunned. He too recognised what the creature was as they had met with them when they first had arrived on this planet. Quinn's hesitation had allowed the transformation to complete, and the Wendigo stood up.

The tall creature immediately turned its head towards Sil and Logan and let out a mighty scream as it launched towards them. However, Quinn appeared before them to protect them.

"I'm so sorry." Quinn apologised, as he sliced at the Wendigo's head with his hand laced in Qi. The next moment the head fell to the floor, with its body soon after.

[Some of the tenth family members are frightened of you]

[- 200 reputation points]

He had already expected this type of repercussion. Now that the first batch of soldiers had been turned, they were members of the tenth family, so it was only natural for his reputation to go down after losing their respect.

'You don't understand I didn't want to do this!' Quinn wanted to explain his actions, that he had no other choice, but before he got the chance someone else had something to say.

"Quinn!" Paul shouted, as he stormed towards him. "These people trusted you, and now you killed their companion just like that! My men!"

Clenching his fist it looked like Paul was about to punch him, but before he could do something he would come to regret, he felt a sword being placed against his throat.

"Remember who you work for now!" Leo admonished his fellow Vampire knight. "Who was the one who saved your life and that of the soldiers before you? It was Quinn, the one you swore to protect when accepting your new role! You as an ex-general should know better than to let your emotions get the better of you. Take a look at him! Does it look like he wanted to do what he did?"

When Quinn lifted up his head, Paul could see that Quinn's eyes were filled with sadness. There weren't any tears coming out from them, but he could tell that he had taken no pleasure in doing what he did and had merely acted out of necessity.

Nevertheless, it didn't matter how sorry Quinn felt about the deed, the others were now afraid of being turned. They all had thought that by getting turned they would get to live longer, but apparently the process wasn't as risk free as they had believed.

Quinn needed to do something to calm their hearts and change their opinion and he had to do it quickly.

"I'm sorry everyone." Quinn apologised by bowing down in front of them. "I should have been upfront and clear about it. As you saw some of your colleagues have become Halflings whereas others became Vampires after turning. It's a random chance for you to become one or the other and although those two are the most likely evolution you will undergo, there is also a slight chance that you can turn into something else entirely..."

"The thing your friend became is called a Wendigo. They are beasts who feed on human flesh and are in constant pain due to hunger. Unfortunately, the changes are irrevocable. Please believe me when I say, I only did it because there really was no other way. Had I not intervened he would have started attacking those around him to satisfy his never ending hunger. I did what I had to do, before he could start a blood bath."

"I won't force any of you to turn if you don't want to. However, you should also be aware about the consequences if you wish to remain humans. If I don't attempt to turn you know, then the only thing waiting for you is death. It might not be today or tomorrow, but don't forget you're in the Vampire World now. Coming here you must have experienced it already, they all pretty much regard humans as nothing more than walking juice boxes. The deal that I've struck allowed me to take you in, but if you wish to leave you can only do so after turning. The very best case scenario for a human will be to die on this planet from old age."

"By turning you, you will get another chance to fight. Isn't that why you joined the military? To fight for not just yourself, but also your family?! This will be the only way you will get a chance to see them in the future! I promise you all, even if you die, be it today or in the future, I will make sure that your families back home will be supported for the rest of their lives!"

Although his speech was touching to them, it was still hard to feel convinced after what had just happened. The chance might be small, but nobody was eager to take it. It was one thing to do in battle, but an entirely different thing to be struck down after becoming a beast.

Still, Quinn's appeal to think about their families did give them a new resolve. The mere thought of their loved ones, had been the only thing allowing them to endure rotting in their cells in the meantime, daydreaming about what they would do if they only could get one more day with them.

"How can you promise us that?!" One of the human soldiers shouted. "How can you promise to look after our families? You're not the Supreme Commander Oscar! You might be a king or whatever here in this castle, but that doesn't mean you have any power outside of here!"

"But he does." Paul stepped in, after having calmed down. Seeing his stabilized aura Leo retracted his sword.

"I don't just work for a nobody. The person you are all currently looking at is not only a family leader in the Vampire World, but also one of the great powers in our Human World. He is in charge of one of the great factions comparable to the Big Four. It might come as a surprise to you all, but a lot has happened while you were stuck here. Quinn Talen, is now one of the World Leaders!"

Many of them couldn't keep their mouths closed after hearing what Paul had just revealed. Would it have come from any other person, they would have called them a liar, but this was their general.

"I knew you wouldn't follow nobody." Ashley said with a smile.

After much debate and learning some facts. Slowly a few more came to volunteer to be turned. This time though, Quinn took a step back and allowed those who had

successfully turned into vampires to do the turning. Those who then turned into vampires could do the same to others.

Eventually, Quinn had to step in once in a while, whenever the chain of turning got broken. As soon as another vampire appeared, a new chain began.

This way they were lucky enough not to encounter any other major hiccups.

The soldiers under Paul's command were all strong, so most of them had successfully turned into Vampires rather than Halflings, and in the end, Quinn still had fifteen slots left after everyone had been successfully turned.

"Paul, it's been a long day. Please see to it that your guys find their lodging." Quinn requested, and his Vampire knight did as told.

The ten that were taken in by Leo, and the ten taken by Paul, were allowed to live in the castle. As for the rest, they were free to pick out any of the mansions and large houses just in the inner castle area. Most of the soldiers chose to stay in groups and to live in the large houses together.

This meant that plenty of houses remained available in the inner area. As for getting them settled and learning about their new bodies, Quinn delegated that task to Timmy and Xander. The two would give everyone briefings, about when blood would be delivered, how much and how often to take it, and other things they should be aware of.

It would be a while until they would get used to their new routine, but the good thing was that they were all used to taking orders as soldiers. This made it easy for Quinn to leave most of the day to day stuff to the duo.

The day was nearly over and although Quinn wanted to just rest he decided to do that in one of the training rooms. He knew he wouldn't be able to sleep after what had happened today, and the best thing to calm him down was letting out the pent up frustration.

'Shit, that never happened before, so I thought it might never happen!' Quinn thought in frustration.

'You are being hard on yourself, Quinn.' Vincent came to console him. 'Honestly to have only one person turn bad for a group that size is quite the success. Your plan to make the newly awakened vampires start turning humans as a sort of chain was quite ingenious if you ask me.'

'That's not the problem.' Quinn argued. 'You know when he turned and I had to kill him, my first thought wasn't how sorry I was to take his life. No, it was "Thankfully it wasn't one of my friends. At least it happened to him and not them." I can't help but hate myself for thinking like that!'

Just then, the training room door opened, and the one who had entered was none other than Erin.

"I forgot that there might be others that use this place." She stated, as she continued to nonchalantly walk in.

Quinn turned his head but didn't reply, and just looked at Erin for a while.

She continued to walk forward, until she was right up in his face.

"You can't be like this." Erin told him. "If I was under a spell or mind control right now, I could have killed you. Quinn, death is normal. You're not all powerful. It was bad luck that he happened to turn into a Wendigo, but you shouldn't blame yourself. Those people were soldiers, and right now they need a leader who has his head together. I need someone who has their head together. You understand?"

Her words snapped Quinn out of his daze and it was only now that he noticed how close she had gotten to him. Then a sudden thought entered his head, the words from Vincent about making her his queen.

His face started to turn red imagining himself on the throne with Erin next to him.

"What's wrong? Are you not feeling well?" She asked, placing her hand on his head.

"No it-"

He got cut off by the sound of the door to the training room opening.

"Oh, I'm sorry, didn't know someone else was here. I'm sorry for... interrupting you two." Layla quickly closed the door, and at the same time, on the other side of the door, she felt a deep pain in her heart.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 844: Mother's gift

'What was that?' Layla tried to think, yet her heart was beating fast enough to make her worry it would jump out of her chest.

'She had her hand around his face... were the two of them about to kiss?!"

Layla had only seen a glimpse of the two of them, and they had been standing far away, yet her mind was turmoil. Her imagination tricked herself into believing that she had seen Erin with her hand around Quinn's cheek, with Layla coming in at just the perfect moment to interrupt something important.

'Those two... well they would suit each other, I mean she's a special compared to me. What have I even done for Quinn lately?' She sulked, and soon she felt something running down her cheek. Wiping it away she tried hard to compose herself.

Suddenly, the sliding doors behind her opened and she lost her footing falling backwards, but she felt someone grab her just before hitting the floor.

"Hey, easy there Layla! So you WERE the one we just saw." Quinn stated as he propped her back up on her feet.

Erin, who was also there, walked past and while doing so punched her on the shoulder.

"I have no interest in him, so go for it." She whispered into the other girl's ear and continued walking away.

'Why would she say that? Didn't these two..'

"Did you want to see me?" Quinn asked, as he had never seen Layla before in the training room. What's even more surprising was the fact that Cia, who was usually stuck at her hip, was nowhere to be seen.

Honestly, Quinn and Layla used to be a lot closer since the Cia incident, unfortunately he just didn't feel too comfortable around Layla's new BFF, which had resulted in him approaching Layla a lot less recently.

"Yeah." She replied, twirling her hair. She thought it would make her less nervous as long as she had something to play with. "I... I saw that the incident earlier got you down ! So... So I thought you might need someone to talk to."

"Was it that obvious?" Quinn sulked. "Thanks for worrying about me. Actually, Erin came to me to give me a pep talk. Well, her version of it, anyway. Don't worry, I won't lose focus. However, since you're already here, why don't the two of

us have a little talk? It's been a bit since our last chat.." Although Quinn suggested this quite naturally, there was another reason he had been avoiding Layla.

And he thought what better time to speak to her about it than now.

After Quinn suggested to go somewhere else, Layla started following him. However, since it seemed like he was about to head to one of the bedrooms, she quickly suggested going to the dining hall. Layla was worried it would be quite strange to just have a boy and girl in a room, and the way her mind was acting right now, she just wouldn't have been able to handle something like that.

The dining hall was completely empty, as it was already quite late at night. Most of the others would be sleeping by now. The two of them sat opposite each other across a large rectangle table.

At first the conversation was quite nice, it was more of a catch up with how the two of them were feeling, but then they started to talk about the past and the old times. During this conversation it made her realise what was on her mind.

"What happened to Vorden? He doesn't really seem like himself?" She asked Quinn.

"It's a bit complicated. I'm sorry that I haven't had the time to go through all the details with you yet. You were away, and then we suddenly met at that duel..." Quinn paused for a brief second, then continued to fill her in about the story with the Blades.

"That's so sad, do you think we'll be able to get the old him back?"

"I haven't given up on it. Someone once told me that abilities never die out. If someone with an ability dies, then that ability can reappear again somewhere else. Whether this is true or not, who knows, and maybe it's something that takes hundreds of years to manifest, or everyone with the ability needs to die but we have to try, right? Just like I'm doing now."

Layla nodded and agreed, but hearing about what happened to Vorden, it was the second time this day that she felt a stabbing pain in her heart. Even her stomach was starting to feel a little queasy.

"How come, you haven't come to me? Surely that one question must have been on your mind for a long time now." Quinn suddenly blurted out.

Layla looked down, and started to dwindle her fingers, because she knew what he was getting at.

"I guess I just wasn't ready yet. After speaking to Cia, and the way she's been acting I can pretty much figure out what happened. You know, the first night I figured it out, I couldn't stop crying. My mother... she wasn't like other mothers.

We never really did things together, and whenever we did talk, it was always just be about Pure."

"She sacrificed her life to save you. She really did care for you, Layla. Maybe she didn't show it, but at least her last moments were dedicated to you."

"I know." She replied with a big grin on her face. "I can feel the energy that she passed down to me inside of me."

"Can I touch your hands for a second?" Quinn requested.

"What?!" Layla started to panic. When she saw him place his hands on the table, she hesitated for a bit, but ultimately placed hers on his and grabbed them.

Quinn then closed her eyes, and Layla did the same.

'What is he about to do? My heart! I can't take this for long.'

"Done." Quinn told her after a moment and let go to her slight disappointment. "It appears that her Qi really is inside you. This must be her final gift to you. It might not be as strong as hers at her peak, since she used it to heal you, but it's plenty strong. Say, what are you going to do after this? Do you plan to head back to Pure?" Quinn wondered.

"I intend to go to Pure, but I have no plans to stay there. My mother, she was one of the founders of Pure, but she never told me her reason. I hope by returning to them I might discover just why she hated ability users so much. Once in a while she would even look at me with hatred in her eyes. Once I've found that out...." Layla stopped there, because that's when she realised, she hadn't really thought about a future beyond that point.

In the past she had just followed her mother's path for her in life, but with her now gone...

"You can figure that out later." Quinn advised her as he noticed her blank look.  
"Our priority should be to defeat the Dalki, or at least get out of this place.  
Otherwise there won't be a future to worry about."

A few days had passed since their talk and their new family members were starting to get into the swing of things. Quinn was gaining reputation points daily, but he had stopped placing more towers for the moment.

He didn't want to get even more attention to himself just yet, and thought the two at the front were fine for now. However, he had upgraded them to level three, making them stronger and more powerful than before.

As for the statue, that didn't have a level, as it was unique in its own way.

One day, when Quinn was in the lab checking on Logan and Peter. One of the men that worked for Paul came to notify them that there was a visitor, namely one of the second family's Vampire knights.

'So it's finally started? If I remember correctly, the second family leader is Cindy, and she's the one that might be able to get Cia's memory back. It's clear she wants something from me, but perhaps we can use them as well.'

"Let them in." Quinn ordered.

Quinn didn't move from where he was. He didn't want to make it seem like it was such a big deal that a knight had come to see him. Fortunately, as a family leader he outranked their guest, so he had the privilege to wait for them to come to him.

In the meantime he continued with what they were doing, in this case examining the new things Logan had created recently alongside Peter.

Eventually the female knight entered the room. She had short brown hair and big eyes. All three of them noticed the bag under her eyes. Vampires didn't need much sleep in the first place, so it was rare for one to have them.

She gave a quick bow to Quinn as a sign of respect, and immediately went to deliver her message.

"The second family leader, Cindy Cha, invites you to a meeting in her castle, tonight at six PM. There will be several other leaders present, so she hopes you will join them. She promises that you won't regret it."

She stood there as if waiting for an answer, but Quinn just waved her off, allowing her to leave.

'It's just as Dwight predicted. Cindy must be trying to get me over to her side. I guess if I want to find out more of their plans that meeting will be the perfect place. Dwight did deliver on his promises, so time to return the favor.'

Peter, who was swinging a strange contraption in his hand, a tool Logan had created, waited for her to leave before warning Quinn. "I don't like that bitch. They were having those meetings before you were here, so she is definitely planning to use you Quinn! If you ever need someone to give her a slap, I'll be the first one to volunteer."

"Right..." Quinn replied awkwardly, he had actually heard what had happened between him and Cindy from Layla, a couple of days ago.

Half an hour before the meeting, Quinn decided that he would participate. He was sure that they wouldn't attack him, after all they would want him on their side.

Nevertheless, just in case they wanted to do something stupid, Quinn was confident enough to be able to escape via his shadow.

Leaving the castle, Quinn wore a hood to cover his face and made his way to the second castle. A short while later, another visitor arrived at the tenth castle.

Another Vampire knight.

Entering the castle, the first person she asked to meet wasn't Quinn but Leo. One of the soldiers went to fetch him.

"I didn't expect to meet you again so soon, did you come here for that duel?" Leo asked.

"Actually, I'm here to see my brother." Silver replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 845: We want your vote

Ever since his talk with Dwight, Quinn had been wondering which of the two groups would approach him first. He had even started to worry a bit since the day of the King's burial was closing in, but neither one had contacted him yet. Without any new information he had also naturally abstained from visiting the Vampire knight.

'Honestly I'm surprised Bryce hasn't made a move yet?' Quinn wondered.

'It's unlikely he will try to pull something. Bryce is a lot of things, but he's also a man known for following the rules. In that regard the other leaders actually respect him. Unfortunately, that also makes him a viable candidate. A leader who follows the rules is also something the current leaders will want to see on the throne. If there was any evidence that he had something to do with some sort of actions that were outside of the scope of the rules, it would ruin his chances significantly.'

Vincent explained.

Still, Quinn's uneasy feeling didn't get better from this. The tension remained that everything was going to pop off once a new King was elected.

Finally, after walking under disguise through the city, Quinn reached the inner area of the second castle. It would have been faster to travel using his shadow, but right now, Quinn was being more cautious than ever. He had a flask full of blood on him, and he didn't want to use any of his shadow MC points.

When Quinn lifted his hood, the guard wasn't surprised. In fact, he looked to have already expected him. He bowed down and then started to lead the way into the castle.

Looking around the place, it was certainly livelier than his. He could see the smiles on people's faces and there were even young children having fun.

It was one of the few times Quinn had even seen children in the Vampire settlement. During their walk, he also checked for any form of defence like he had. Unsurprisingly there were no towers or any other form of defensive structures, not counting the walls.

Then again, the vampires who lived in the inner area were meant to be some of the strongest members of their family. Despite the leader's differences, it also wasn't like attacks on each other were commonplace.

However, Quinn wasn't just wary of the other vampires. He knew a certain powerful individual like no other was coming for them, the only question was, when exactly he would show up.

Entering the castle, Quinn noticed that the layout was nearly identical to his own, the entrance also led to a grand reception room, and the size of the rooms

themselves was the same. The main differences were all the decorations inside, and the fact that these rooms had a clear, distinct feeling that they were lived in.

'I really need to get someone to clean our place up a bit. Now that I see one in action, our castle smells like dirty moth balls in comparison, and we still have too many unoccupied rooms with dust and armaments and photos that must have piled up for decades!'

!

Eventually, the guard led Quinn up the stairs until they reached the top floor. They stopped in front of a pair of double doors and the one escorting him on them a couple of times.

"The tenth family's leader, Quinn Talen, is present!"

After being announced, two vampires from the inside opened the doors wide..

Cindy Cha, leader of the second family and the one who had invited Quinn was on the other side, a cup of tea in hand, a smile on her lips. She was wearing a large black dress, in a Victorian style that wouldn't look to be out of place at a ball.

"You certainly look different from the last time I saw you." She greeted Quinn.  
"I'm looking forward to talking with you face to face. Last time there was unfortunately no opportunity for that."

Looking behind the one who had most likely organised this entire evening, Quinn recognised many familiar faces. There Jin Talon, the fourth family leader with whom he had a brief scuffle in the underground tunnels. Although the other was unable to use the full strength of his ability, explosive blood was certainly dangerous.

Then there was one with a very familiar face, which wasn't a coincidence since he was the father of one of his best friends, Lee Sanguines. There was also the large vampire who was always covered head to toe in a thick black armour, Muka Fortuna, the ninth family leader, in charge of the underground tunnels and prisoners.

The other two Quinn had not met personally. He only knew them by name. The one furthest to the left was Sunny Kent, leader of the fifth family and next to her, was David Scutter, leader of the eleventh.

'As expected, it seems like these types of things don't change even now. The group is equally split.' Vincent lamented.

Quinn immediately understood what he meant by this. There were thirteen families in total, so all those who had been invited must be on Cindy's side, in other words, she had secured six votes for herself.

Unless there was someone who planned to abstain, the other side would have six as well leaving, meaning Quinn's vote would be the tiebreaker.

'Are the alliances the same as back then?' Quinn wondered.

'Not quite. Very similar, but still with a few changes.' Vincent replied.

"It's a pleasure to meet you all again." Quinn replied, as he bowed down following etiquette, before going over to the open seat they were directing him to.

Quinn felt a bit odd at first, he could tell that they were not only staring at him but were also analysing him. He could guess that the reason for that was that his smell must have changed from last time.

'How did the boy manage to become a bonafide Vampire lord, when he had just evolved into a Vampire noble the last time he came here?' Jin wondered. 'Just how fast is he progressing? No, I should worry more about how much stronger he will become if this trend continues. We must get him on our side, or things will look dire in the future.'

"Now that everyone is here, allow me to cut to the chase. You don't mind, do you, Quinn?" Cindy asked with a smile. "The reason that you've been called back is that the current King is soon to go into his eternal sleep. After that happens there will be a week of mourning. During that time every leader must either choose to present their case why they wish to become the next King or forfeit their right to candidacy. On the eighth day, the council will come to a vote to decide on the next King, as well as their Royal Vampire Knights."

"Usually it would be two, but Dwight has chosen not to accompany his Majesty on his last journey, so this time only one replacement will be elected.."

According to Vincent this was quite unusual, as the Royal knights tended to be very loyal to the King. Although Quinn hadn't known Dwight for too long, it had been easy enough to see how loyal he was to the King.

As such, the reason for him remaining was quite clear to everyone.

"I won't sugarcoat why we've brought you here. At the moment, all of us gathered here have decided that they will vote for me as the next Queen. We are content with how things are run and I don't really plan to change things around after getting my new position."

"I'm sure your maths isn't bad, so your vote would indeed be the one to secure my victory. The other mandate most likely to be in charge is Bryce. You don't need me to tell you that he already has several grudges against you, and he has a dislike for humans as it is. Of course, I am different, and the leaders here can all attribute to that."

"I have treated those from the tenth family when they got injured. I even helped your two allies who Kazz brought in, and I intend to continue treating the tenth family fairly. All I'm asking is for your vote when the time comes."

Quinn remained silent. It all sounded great, but honestly he didn't know Cindy too well. At least anyone should be better than Bryce was his opinion at the moment.

However, her actions just came off as a little too arrogant, as if she was already expecting Quinn to agree. Everything was falling into place for her and it was making him feel uneasy. Then there was also the warning from Peter. His friend was unusually sharp in his judgement of others who might hurt Quinn.

"Should a new King or Queen really be selected at this time?" Quinn questioned. "I mean, there still has been no news about who attacked my tenth family. However, from what we've discovered, there is only one logical conclusion. One of the other families must have been involved in this attack. I don't know you all too well, yet I know for a fact that I at least annoyed some of those at this table."

'Go on Quinn.' Vincent cheered him on a little further. 'Push them some more! We will never find out the truth without giving them some hardball questions!'

A little nervous to say this before, with the push Quinn wanted to say what was on his mind.

"For example, we did find out that the attack was done by a Bloodsucker by the name of Rowa? Wasn't he originally from the second family? And now, out of nowhere, I get an invitation to come here, to crown you as the new Queen? That seems awfully suspicious."

Although his speech started off nice he started to think of all those in the tenth that had been attacked while he was away, and the words he spoke were true. Rowa was from the second family and he was the one who killed the others, including Edward.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 846: A leader's deal

The others were taken aback by Quinn's words. All of them had tried to gather information about this new family leader, yet all their sources could find was that he was supposed to be a normal seventeen year old boy, with his eighteenth birthday not too far away. Even if he didn't look like your typical eighteen year old, his experience should have still been limited.

What was making them confused, was how did someone like him find out about Rowa? There weren't that many who knew the former second family leader, so how could he have found out that sort of information? The initial thought was somebody was helping him but maybe that wasn't the case.

The last time these family leaders had seen Quinn was at the council table, he was still a frightened teenager, shaking in his boots, even though there had been times when he had sparked and shined through, just like he did now.

"Well, you have a right to say that." Cindy admitted by taking a sip from her cup of tea. It was only when she placed it down that Quinn noticed that the 'tea' itself was red, and the liquid didn't look like water.

'How is she covering up that smell?' Quinn let his mind wander.

"Just like I have the right to say this. Do you really think the current leaders should be judged based on the previous leaders actions?! You should get rid of your human thinking. Not only aren't we one and the same, but in the case of us vampires, there could have been centuries between the previous and current generation family leader. Some of us might not have even been born when our predecessor came to power. The environment of our upbringing would have been completely different!"

"If you want to follow this trend, then I have to ask you, what about your tenth family? You might have changed the name, but the tenth family will remain the tenth family, no matter what you call them. Should we punish you for what Vincent has done or the crimes the leaders before him, might have committed? Why don't we go back to the Originals and punish each other for their crimes now as well?!"

Taking another big sip of her drink, she put down her cup. "I think you get my point."

Cindy had retorted his logic with a fire in her belly. Quinn had to agree it was quite reasonable. He didn't know any of their situations, but then he had only been trying to probe them, hoping to find a clue if not an answer about the situation.

He just knew that one of them must have been working with the Bloodsuckers. As a former member of the second family, the current family leader had naturally been his prime candidate.

"Quinn, we're aware that this wasn't the most welcoming of meetings." Muka spoke. "I apologise for that. A lot of us leaders have high pride, and we already get compared to our predecessors internally. However, Cindy had a point, although we might follow in the footsteps of others, everyone is responsible for their own choices. As for me, I want to find out the truth just like Dwight."

"Remember when you came the time before? My knights had been killed, Fex got interrogated, and the Influence skill had been used on him. The reason why I'm telling you all this, is because I'm convinced that the one responsible isn't anyone in this room, and that includes you. If I had to put my life on it, my guess would be Bryce. No matter the cost, that man can not become the next King!" Muka was clenching his fist and his words were spoken with conviction.

Honestly, Quinn believed his words a lot more than Cindy's.

"I haven't made a decision just yet, but I do agree with your points. Honestly my decision will be based on what's best for the tenth family. You are asking me to do something that I might regret in the future, so in return I at least want to get something out of it now." Quinn demanded.

"Aren't you the feisty one?!" David was enraged and his tone made it clear he was ready for a fight. However, when all other leaders stared at him he quickly sat back down. "FINE! Speak, what do you want?! As long as you aren't asking for too much, we should be able to accommodate you."

"Firstly, protection. It's no secret that my tenth family still gets treated poorly, including those living in the pooling area. I've received some reports and they are shocking to say the least. I want all of your family members to immediately stop discriminating against them, including those in the pooling area. Should there be any incidents involving the tenth family that require punishment, be it in the past or future, I want you to leave the punishment up to me."

There were a few looks between the other leaders, honestly leaving their people in the hands of another family. They wondered how their families would view them.

"I'm not asking for you to let me decide everything on my own. If it's an incident involving both our families, I'll be happy to decide what is fair together." Quinn clarified.

"As long as it's a case-by-case basis then I think we can agree to your deal." Muka suggested. "Especially those that have been punished enough to be sent to the prison. I will definitely be able to hand over those criminals to you."

'Boy, just what are you thinking?' Vincent wondered where he was going with this.

There were two reasons for Quinn to make this request. Soon those in the tenth family would start to be treated better and it would be through his own actions.

This should lead to some nice reputation points allowing him to further upgrade his defences.

As for turning the criminals to him, there were times when the punishment was eternal slumber, or imprisonment for life. Quinn wanted to check if they might have been judged too harshly in some cases. If so, he could lessen the punishment and add to his force. Naturally if he had to agree that the punishment was fitting, he could at least use the skill Shadow eater on them, so they would help him improve his shadow ability.

He knew it was quite harsh to make the vampires suffer through such a thing, but with Arthur arriving, someone who had been doing this for thousands of years, how could he ever hope to match up to him without getting his hands dirty.

"Are there any more requests?" Cindy asked, as if she thought he had already pushed his luck with the first one.

"Yes, although the next one is far more simple and it actually involves you personally." Quinn answered. "I've been told a bit about your ability, that you are supposed to be able to reverse time on a certain body part up to a certain degree. I have someone, whose memories have been wiped, so I was hoping that you could help in that regard."

Cindy didn't reply immediately, and instead looked into her drink that was now empty. She stood up and walked over to Quinn offering her hand.

"I agree. As long as you give us that vote, then your two requests shall be honored. Feel free to send them over whenever you like."

Although Quinn didn't want to make a deal that he might later break, he needed to gain her cooperation. He couldn't allow Bryce to end up as King, so in the end he might actually end up giving her his vote anyway.

He shook her hand and with that the meeting had concluded.

"As long as no problems arise between now and when the voting starts, this will be our last meeting. Quinn, whatever you do, be careful to survive until then." Cindy told him as he was the last to leave.

Quinn was unsure if it was meant to be a threat or if she was genuinely concerned.

Before he had a chance to clarify, the doors had already closed behind him.

Soon after leaving the place, one of the leaders who was present in the room had approached Quinn just outside the castle, away from the others, he was one that stayed silent during the whole meeting.

It was Fex's father Lee.

"Quinn, there is something we need to talk about, something I was unable to say to you before." Lee spoke. "Thank you, thank you for doing everything you could to save Fex."

He didn't bow down, Quinn supposed he was too prideful for that, but he didn't care, this was enough.

"It's fine, Fex is a good friend and I treat him like family. How is Fex doing anyway?" Quinn asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 847: Who am I?

'How long have I been here?' He wondered.

His head had been ringing with pain upon waking up. It had been dull but constant, without any signs of stopping anytime soon. No matter how hard he tried to think about how he got into his current situation, he was unable to remember a single thing from before he woke up.

Fighting through the ringing pain he had eventually managed to open his eyes. At first he had seen absolutely nothing. His eyes needed time to adjust to their surroundings. His vision was slightly altered which could only mean one thing. Right now he was in a complete pitch black room.

It took quite a bit of time before he started being able to make out the silhouettes of the things around him. Still it was a far cry from him being able to see during the day.

'Where exactly am I? How did I get here?'

As the ringing suddenly started to dull, he attempted to move his hands. Unfortunately he quickly realised that they were heavier than they should be. His attempt resulted in the sound of metal scraping across the floor. Moving the other hand and his legs resulted in the same thing happening.

He was completely chained up.

"Arghhh!" He shouted with a hoarse voice, using his mighty strength to pull against the chains, but to no avail. He could only move each of his extremities up to ten centimeters before his freedom got restricted.

'At least that annoying ringing in my head has stopped.' After having this thought, he suddenly had another shocking realisation.

'My name... What was my name?! Why can't I remember something as simple as my name?!'

Then he started shouting in frustration for whoever put him here to come forward. Unsurprisingly there wasn't anyone who came forward. Frustrated he wanted to touch his head, but once again the chains stopped him from doing so.

Once he noticed that he had forgotten his name, he tried to remember other things about him... only to realise that he was drawing more and more blanks. He was unable to recall his name, his age, his outer appearance or anything about his past.

It was as if his life had just begun a few moments ago when he had opened his eyes.

His heart started beating louder and louder as he started to panic, and the walls appeared to start closing in on him from his perspective.

"Arghhhh!" He shouted again, stomping his foot on the floor so hard that part of the ground had risen. "It broke?"

This time grabbing two hands, he proceeded to tug at the chains as hard as could. He could see that they were attached to a wall further down. However, as long as they were made of the same material, he believed his almighty strength should be enough to break free from them as well

He pulled and pulled, sweat was dripping down his face, and eventually blood started to drip from around the cuffs of the bracelet the chains were attached to, and eventually he had to stop.

'It's useless, it feels like those chains will never break!.'

Checking himself, his body appeared to be in fine condition, not counting his self inflicted injuries at least. There were no markings on him whatsoever, and there were no clues as to who he was. He got some comfort from at least wearing clothes, yet they were too simple to give him any information about himself.

The only thing that he found noteworthy was that he had a single earring on his left ear, but no weapons to use to break out of the room.

'Well, whoever trapped me in this place can't be that stupid, but surely I had to have come in somehow?' He started to think.

Walking towards where the chains were attached to the wall, he brushed his hand against the wall, and could feel slight bumps in the rock, and a certain watery smell.

'The wall is made out of stone?' Then listening in carefully and placing his head against the wall, he could also hear the sound of what appeared to be running water.

'Am I in a cave of some sort? If there's running water then that means there has to be an exit somewhere!'

Still, as he tried to move around, touching the side of the cave walls that he was in, the chains would only allow him to go so far.

Once again, his frustration peaked and he attempted to pull out his hair, something that seemed to be a habit of his despite him lacking any memories of it. While doing so, he had swung his arms up, and the blood from his wrists around the cuffs, hit his earring. At that moment, it started to light up.

The earring detached itself from his lobe and fell to the ground.

The white light started to take shape until eventually he could see its full form.

"A...A..Pig!?"

"Idiot! I'm a bull! Can't you get this right after all these years?! Haven't you punished me enough by naming me Ham because of this misunderstanding?! I clearly have a ring on my nose marking me as a bull!" Ham complained as he started to fly around with his bat wings in circles out of frustration.

"You came from my earring... What- No, who are you? Do I know you? Do you know me?" He asked, clinging on to hope.

"So they really did succeed? I couldn't see clearly what had happened, only hear voices but there was no time to help you. Alright, let's bring you up to speed. Your name is Fex and you're my.." Ham paused for a second as he recognised that this was a golden opportunity "...and you're my servant. Yes, I, the mighty Ham, am your master!"

Fex's face told Ham that he clearly wasn't buying that.

"I have the power to crush the ground with my bare feet, yet you're saying I'm the servant of a little pig? Sorry bull, no I meant Ham! I doubt I would be that pathetic." Fex replied in disdain.

"Fine, I was just joking. You're not my servant, but we're really close in rank. Like you're just barely above me, so you have to treat me with respect, okay?" Ham clarified.

Even though Fex was unable to remember the little bull, he was aware that he might be his only chance of getting out of this place.

"Sure, sure. Say if you know who I am, then you must know someone who could help me from the outside, right?" Fex asked.

Ham thought about it for a while and he quickly recalled one particular person who had already risked their life to save Fex in the past. He hadn't even asked anything in return, so it was likely he would do it again.

"Yeah, Quinn. Quinn will definitely come if I call him!" Ham answered excitedly, his wings started to flap with excitement.

"Well whoever it was, they captured me alive, so they must have a use for me. Otherwise, they would have just killed me. At some point they'll have to check up on me, or at least come to feed me." Fex stated. "All you need to do is wait for the door, window or whatever it will be to open, and then fly out of here as quick as you can. Go call Quinn and lead him back to this place!"

Ham nodded. For once his master was relying on him and he would do whatever he could to help.

The two of them waited patiently to proceed with their plan. They were unable to tell just how long they had waited and how much longer they would have to. Without anything better to do Ham started to fill Fex in about his past self.

Eventually Fex's hearing allowed him to hear the sound of approaching footsteps somewhere, but in the cave it was hard to locate.

Ham immediately flew upwards, so he would be outside the newcomer's perception. Soon enough a part of the cave wall moved to the side.

For a moment Fex was happy that their plan proceeded smoothly. That was until he saw that what had come inside didn't look the least bit like a human. No, it was far too large and it bared its teeth in his direction. Its eyes were that of a monster, and its skin was tight with bulging muscles.

Seeing this thing Fex could only think one thing.

'It's so ugly with no hair!'

As soon as the creature stepped forward, Ham immediately used the chance to slip through the gap it had come in from. Luckily the creature mistook the bull for a bat on account of his wings.

Ham continued to fly through the cave, swirling, noticing that it wasn't a regular cave. There was a whole civilisation living here, with many beasts that looked just like the one that had entered.

Ham didn't have time to look at them, he needed to find a way out. Unable to see a way he resorted to following the sound of running water. A few minutes later he shot outwards, finally exiting the cave.

Looking back, he saw that he had actually been behind a waterfall.

'Fex, I will come back for you! Quinn will save you, just like he did before! I know he will!' Ham thought flying off into the distance, towards the Vampire settlement.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 848: Following bread crumbs

After Fex had instructed his direct family members on how to create a soul weapon, Lee Sanguines was unsure what to do with that information for a while.

It certainly was something that could be used to improve the position of their entire family on the council, especially after what had happened. Due to past incidents, the Sanguines family had a reputation of being a bit unreliable, however, Lee didn't care about that.

After considering what to do with it for a long time, he decided that the best course of action was to share this information with the King, or at least with Dwight who could pass it on. This way it would be up to the King what to do with it.

However, there was a problem with this method.

Lee and Silver felt like this wasn't their information to share. Although Fex had allowed them to do so, this was a huge discovery that would forever change the vampires as a race.

It was guaranteed that the King would honour the responsible person with rewards and titles. Unfortunately, Fex was officially no longer a member of the thirteenth family, as such they wanted for him to personally deliver this news and receive his glory.

They hoped that his contribution might sway the King into overturning their decree, so that he might enjoy being part of the thirteenth family once again.

Still, Silver had disagreed with her father's idea. She felt like even if the banishment from the thirteenth family would be reversed due to this discovery, Fex would likely remain with the tenth family with all his friends.

Nevertheless, she agreed that Fex should be the one to deliver the news and receive the reward. Heading over the tenth family castle, Silver had intended to inform Fex of their decision, as well as ask him a few questions herself.

She had been practicing the method in secret already, although not yet to the degree of managing to create a blood weapon. Since the information was eventually going to become public anyway, she saw no problem without getting a headstart over the others.

That's when she had met Leo, in the tenth castle.

Leo was a bit dumbfounded upon her request. "I'm sorry, but did you just ask for Fex? I'm sure the last I spoke with Quinn, he informed me that the two of them had gone off to the thirteenth castle, but that was around a week ago."

"Please, I know you're blind, but you don't have to joke about not seeing him."

Silver replied.

However, Leo's face was dead serious.

"I assure you, I'm not joking. As you should be aware, a Vampire knight's duty includes being aware of who is in and out of these castle walls. Ever since the day he had left, he had yet to return. Quinn mentioned that he might enjoy staying with his family for a while, so we've been under the impression he was with you, but it appears that's not the case."

Silver's heart started beating rapidly, as she started to have flashbacks to her brother's position before.

'That's impossible, he left on the same day he arrived and it was already over a week ago. If the tenth family doesn't know where he is, and he hasn't updated anyone on his position, just where could he be?'

Silver was usually composed in all circumstances, at least Leo had never seen her act out. Her aura was normally firm and strong, staying close to her body, yet he could 'see' that it shifted like a wild beast, with her hands shaking, causing the sword in its sheath to rattle.

"Fex is strong enough to take care of himself. Wherever he is, I believe he is safe. Nobody should have any reason to go after him unless they would want to go after Quinn. Together we have a good chance to find him. I can see what you can't and you can see what I can't. He must have gone missing at some point between your and our castle." Leo tried to talk her down.

"It's okay." Silver replied, taking a deep breath. "You are a Vampire knight and you have your own duties to attend to. I will search for him by myself." Leo quickly placed his sword on the ground in front of her, before you could leave.

"It's exactly BECAUSE I am a knight that I will accompany you. Have you forgotten that Fex is also a member of the tenth family? We have another Vampire knight now and he is doing a pretty good job. I would say he is more suited for doing paperwork, whereas a case like this is more of my speciality." Leo smiled.

Wanting to find out what had happened to her brother, she stopped refuting Leo's willingness to help and the two of them rushed off. The tenth house and the thirteenth house weren't very far apart, so there wasn't much to search in terms of the vampire settlement. There were only two castles on the way between them.

It also wouldn't make sense for Fex to deliberately take a roundabout route. Looking around, they both walked different paths that he might have taken several times. Silver was having a hard time, and she was just pulling anyone she could see around the areas questioning them.

"Have you seen a gelled black haired boy, the previous descendant of the thirteenth family?" Silver almost shouted, scaring those around.

"No, I haven't, I don't know." The scared man in front of her answered, making himself small, afraid he might get hit for being unable to help.

Her techniques weren't the best and all it had accomplished was clear the area they were searching in, reducing the number of people they could ask if they had seen Fex.

She knew she was acting rashly but she just couldn't help it.

'I thought he wouldn't get targeted again! Why would they even attempt to use him? Even if they're after Quinn, they could have used anyone else! No, I should have walked back with him, but I thought he wasn't a child, he was a strong adult. The only ones that could have made a move on him would be... one of the other leaders, or one of their Vampire knights!' She realised.

When the crowd dispersed, it actually allowed Leo to discover something. The Vampire settlement consisted of mostly a stoned floor area. There were houses spread throughout, and streets placed all over the place with shops and market stalls.

There weren't any clear roads or places one could go to, overall it appeared as if they had been constructed without any prior planning to it. The two of them had chosen to look for Fex, between a path with several streets, that would go between the two castles.

With Leo's special ability, he could see something on the stone pavement below. He hadn't noticed it before because the aura had been too weak.

"What is this?" Leo wondered, as it just looked like a Vampire's aura, but for some reason it had remained on the floor.

Silver came over, bent down and took a closer look, the stone was slightly red and trying to place her finger on it, it had already dried out.

"It's blood." She assessed.

"The blood still has an aura but is dry. Which means it must have come from someone with quite a lot of energy, to still have the energy last that long" Leo concluded. He began looking around and eventually found another spot with that aura on the ground. Following them like breadcrumbs, it eventually led the duo down a dark hallway, between several houses.

It was already dark, thanks to no sunlight, but the houses had covered every little light source with beast crystals and more.

"Your aura tells me that you want to immediately rush in, but it should be more fruitful if you allow me to go in first. In case they are in a special place." Leo advised, slowly walking inside.

Silver forced herself to fight her wish to rush in. She endured the wait for half a minute, before she slowly followed behind him.

The blood splatters and aura on the floor started getting larger and larger, until eventually Leo could sense where the aura was coming from. After turning a corner through the alleyway, he placed his sword away.

'Who would do this?' Leo thought.

When Silver looked at who it was, she too couldn't believe someone could do this. Up on one of the alleyway walls, pinned against the back of a house, was a body which had been spread around. Both hands and legs had been hammered in, to prevent it from falling.

The blood was dripping from each wound, and it looked like they were unable to heal.

"She's still alive. Quick, get someone to help us heal her, while I help her down." Leo instructed, as he chopped the large head off the nail and then the two of them had no choice but to pull her off.

It must have hurt immensely, but there were no cries of pain due to how close to death the person already was. When Silver brushed the bloody hair away from her face, she recognised who it was.

"KAZZ?!!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 849: Who, Who, Who?

It was unexpected while looking for Fex that they had found Kazz instead. Honestly, though, when Silver had seen the trails of blood, she was worried that just maybe they had come from her brother. After seeing Kazz the way she was, she was a little relieved.

Soon though, her mind went back to being the vampire knight she was, following her duty as she should be doing.

"It looks like she's really badly hurt, and if she's still alive, she will need help immediately." Silver stated while looking at the amount of blood in the alleyway. "In a situation like this, it would be best to take her to the first castle since she belongs to that family to get treatment. Especially since she's a vampire knight. It might be best to take her to the second family, but Bryce would raise a fuss if anyone did that, so the only choice is to take her back to the first. The only problem is...."

Silver hesitated for a few seconds. She wanted Leo to take Kazz back but knew that it wouldn't be such a good idea due to the relation between the two families, and Leo might not know the correct procedures. Bryce was a person who got quite offended at certain things, which might even cause a conflict while he was there.

Leo's straightforward personality that spoke his mind and did what he believed was best, wouldn't be good in a situation like this one.

"You take her, I will continue to see if there are any more clues around here. Besides, maybe when she wakes up, you can ask her what she knows." Leo replied, knowing full well what was on her mind.

With a quick nod, Silver was already gone carrying away Kazz and heading to the first castle. Leo continued to look around, wondering if there were any different signs of aura around the place but the only thing he could see was the blood of Kazz.

"Kazz, is a vampire knight, and she is strong, yet someone was able to completely overpower her to the point where there were no signs of struggle. IF there was a fight between her and someone else, then there should at least be injuries from the other, yet there is none. Someone would have seen something or heard something."

'It's almost as if the person had already managed to subdue her somehow, and this was the result. The question is. Why not kill her, to leave a trail? So that Bryce wouldn't know. Having fought this close, shouldn't the vampire connection have gone off? And... The way she was pinned up there, it was like a message, the question is for who?"

What this also implied though, was if Fex was involved in this somehow, he was safe as there weren't any signs of his blood around here either.

Closing his eyes, Leo decided to increase the range of his ability. He could make it so he could see the auras and everything around from a bird's eye like view.

At that moment, Leo could sense something from above. He had noticed something odd. A bat-like shape flying through the sky.

"I...Finally...made it...now to the tenth castle!" Ham said, covered in sweat, huffing and panting.

\*\*\*\*\*

Silver had eventually made it to the first castle, and it was safe to say that the guards at the gates didn't make it easier for her to enter.

"Move aside, you idiots! I have your vampire knight in my own hands. Will you be responsible for her death. What will you tell Bryce if he was to hear of his daughter's death all because you want to do your checks!" As she finished her words, none other than the person's name she had just mentioned appeared.

It was like he had responded to his name. He had his cane held in both hands, and the veins were seen bulging on his hand.

"Who!" He shouted, hitting his cane against the floor. It was so powerful it caused the guards around them to fall to the floor.

"Who has attempted to attack a knight of the first family!"

At first, Silver thought maybe Bryce was upset due to his daughter being hurt, but she could tell based on his actions now and her fathers of the past. This man was just upset that someone had dared to go against his family.

Handing her over, Kazz was quickly rushed into the castle, while Bryce continued to stare at Silver. He didn't even turn to look, as Kazz's beaten body went past him.

'Is he waiting for me to say something? I need to find out what happened. I need to speak to Kazz when she wakes up.' But the pressure coming from Bryce's body was immense.

"Vampire knight, Silver Sanguinis reporting from the thirteenth family." Silver started her formal greeting bowing down. "I discovered Kazz between the tenth and thirteenth castles just outside of the twelfth. I am unaware of what happened to her, but brought her here immediately. From the scene, it looks like she has been in that condition for a while."

Even after mentioning this, the expression on Bryce's face didn't change, and she was wondering if he even cared about her at all.

"I will confirm what you say with her when she wakes up, but if it's not true...."  
Bryce stopped there he didn't need to say anything else and just turned around.

"Wait Sir!" Silver shouted, when Bryce turned back, and she could see his face, the words she wanted to ask wouldn't come out. She wanted to be the first to ask Kazz a question, but it was clear he thought of her as a suspect and would never allow it. "When she wakes up, and if she's okay would you please inform me. I'm worried about her, me and her are the same age and grew up together after all." She said, and turned back around, heading towards Leo hoping he had at least found something.

While Bryce continued to walk, he was placing his walking stick, harder and stronger, into the ground. It was digging into the ground as if it was made of butter.

'I sent Kazz to go grab Fex hoping to see how far this little development of his blood weapon had come, and now Kazz returns like this?!' Bryce thought. 'Did the tenth leader plan ahead. Did he plant something so none of his people could get hurt. If it is him, are you trying to start a war kid? It won't be the same this time, it won't be the same at all.'

When Kazz finally was able to get the treatment, the medical team at the first castle found that she wasn't actually as badly hurt as she looked. It was more made to look that way. The wounds on her hand and feet had healed once she had been removed from the wall.

But her energy was gone, she was feeling incredibly weak for some reason. The staff were unable to find out why, but eventually Kazz had regained some of her energy and started to wake up.

"Quick, inform the leader!" A member of staff shouted.

Moving slowly, Kazz started to touch her head, and touch several other parts of her body.

"You must have been through a lot, don't worry, the leader will be here to see you soon."

Kazz looked at the girl beside her who was treating her, still squinting her eyes as if in pain. The staff found it a little strange, since she no longer had any injuries on her, so they were trying to figure out what she was exactly suffering from.

"Who are you?" Kazz asked.

The staff member smiled.

"Don't worry, I just work in the castle, I don't expect anyone to remember who I am. You are a busy person, you just get some rest."

However, that wasn't what she had meant at all. When the door was swung open, Bryce had entered the room, and everyone had stepped aside, allowing him to pass. He walked, and everyone kept their heads down, bowing to the first leader.

Eventually reaching the bed, Bryce looked at Kazz.

"What happened?" He asked.

'The same as always, he didn't even ask about her condition, or how she was feeling. The leader is always straight down to business. But this is what makes him a strong leader.' The staff members thought.

From her bed, she looked him up and down a few times, and the squint in her eyes still remained.

"What happened, I don't know..." She paused. "I know you must have saved me, but please tell me...who are you?" Kazz asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 850: Just a pawn

Standing just outside the second castle, was Lee and Quinn. The other leaders had already left the area early and Lee had waited for Quinn to come out, as wanted to pass on a message to the tenth family leader.

It was something important, something he had been hiding inside of him for a long time. However, when Quinn had popped the question about Fex, a strange look of confusion appeared on Lee's face.

"What do you mean? Shouldn't you know better than me how he is doing? I know you're busy as a leader these days but didn't you just state that you were close?" Lee questioned in bewilderment.

Quinn was silent for a moment as he put two and two together. "Fex, is no longer at your place, is he? When exactly was the last time you saw your son?" Quinn asked back. Lee was now starting to really worry. He told Quinn that it was already more than a week ago. If both leaders thought the Fex with the other and he had gone missing... just what could have happened to him?

A shadow swiftly formed around Quinn's hand and he immediately popped the mask onto his face, to get in contact with the castle. He tried his best to suppress his rising fury that someone was messing with his best friend, and by extension with his family at such a crucial time. It was important for him to not overreact before finding out all the details.

On the other end, Paul was the one who answered the call. He found it a bit odd that he had to wear a mask to communicate, since he was sure Logan could have just as easily created some smaller and simpler devices for them to use.

However, his request had been denied. The mask had already become a trait for those close in the family circle. Furthermore, aside from communication it had some other features as well, such as its ability to cancel out the noise from spreading to the outside, if one was to stand close they were unable to hear what the user wearing the mask was saying. This could be activated or deactivated at will.

"Has there been any news in regards to Fex after he has gone to visit his family? For example anyone that's seen him ever since?" Quinn asked.

"Not quite the latter, but there was a silver haired girl that had come to the castle earlier. She wanted to see him. Shortly after that, Leo told me to take charge since he accompanied her to investigate. They only set out a while ago, you basically just missed them. He hasn't reported back, so I doubt they have found anything yet." Paul answered.

Hearing that Leo was on the case already, alleviated Quinn's worries a little. He was the perfect man for tracking people with his ability.

Nevertheless, Quinn still couldn't figure out why someone would have gone after Fex. If it was to blackmail him, shouldn't they have contacted him by now?

'Perhaps this is a ploy against his dad, but Lee looks like he has also been oblivious to Fex' disappearance up until a few moments ago... who are they and what do they want then?'

Realising just thinking wouldn't solve the problem, he called Leo through the mask. His Vampire knight informed him that he was looking around the area with Silver trying to find any clused, but they had been unsuccessful so far.

"He's missing..." Lee mumbled while clenching his fist.

'Did someone go after him because of the blood weapon technique they discovered? Or is this some ploy to influence the next King's election?' Lee thought.

"Quinn, did Fex tell you or anyone else about the blood weapon technique he recently learnt?" Lee asked Quinn, who had been busy fiddling with his mask.

"No, I was actually the one who..." Quinn stopped for a second, as he realised there was one more that knew about it. "Kazz! When Fex used the technique successfully, there was one time that Kazz saw him!"

"It has to be Bryce!" Lee shouted. "He knows that I have already decided to cast my vote against him! If he knows about the blood technique, then he has two reasons to capture Fex! It's his way of telling me to vote for him, and he can get even more power for himself!"

Lee was furious, and Quinn could feel the heat of energy coming off from his body.

"I have to return to my castle, I will try to gather as much as I can and find Fex." Lee informed the other before storming off.

'Bryce, why does he keep doing things like this!' Quinn was beyond angry.  
'Vincent, you said he wouldn't get involved, that it was too important at this time, so why would he go after Fex?! I trusted you.'

'Quinn, listen to me, I think you and Lee are both acting rash here! To me it just doesn't make sense! Things might have changed in the time I've been away, but Bryce should still be a smart person. He wouldn't do something like this since the risk of him being found out is also great. Think about it, even if he were to use it and succeed, once it would come out, his authority as the King would be greatly undermined!' Vicent argued.

'Even if I'm wrong, you're still playing into his hands by getting angry and attacking him. Without any proof connecting it to him, you will be just a young leader who has rebelled. We must find that proof first. I suggest you meet with

Dwight and inform him of this news. I'm sure it will help him greatly and maybe he can convince you.'

Quinn was taking some deep breaths before calming down again. He asked Paul to put in a request to meet Dwight but before that, just in case anything else had happened, Quinn decided to head back to the castle. Once there he immediately called for an emergency meeting with the main group in his family.

His first priority was to find out if anything else had happened to the others that he had been unaware of.

He still was trying to figure out whether this was a ploy against him, Fex or Lee. With everyone gathered, Quinn insisted that if anyone was to leave the group in the future they needed to do so in at least a group of five. This was said before but he told them this again to get it through their heads.

In cases this wasn't possible or if someone wasn't willing to, Quinn decided that the minimum requirement to leave would be to have someone accompany them who knew the shadow ability, and that the chaperone would have to keep it slightly active at all times.

This way, when something unexpected happened, Quinn could get to their position quickly when needed. Leo still hadn't returned to the castle and there had been no updates from their end, however at least the request for Quinn to see Dwight had been quickly approved.

Leaving the castle, Quinn wanted everything to go as smoothly as possible, so he brought Cia and Nate along with him. He wanted the other leaders to honor their earlier promise as soon as possible.

He was worried that if he didn't collect his benefits now, then after fulfilling his part of the deal by voting against Bryce, they might just change their mind and go back on their word.

As such, he decided that on the way to the King's castle, he would be the one to escort Cia, and have Nate as backup, at least inside the castle.

Soon enough, they stood outside of the second castle, having arrived with no problems.

"What are we doing here?" Cia asked, feeling a little strange without Layla or any of the other girls next to her.

"Do you remember me promising you that I would do my best to get your memories back? Well, the second family leader's Cindy has an ability that just might help you. At our meeting earlier one of my demands was that she would do her best to help you." Quinn explained, and for the first time he smiled at her.

He sincerely hoped that his guilt for hurting her life would go away if this turned out to be successful.

"Nate, I have to go, but remember, keep your shadow active at all times! And contact me via the mask if ANYTHING suspicious happens! Don't leave the castle, until I return." Quinn ordered.

Nate responded, with a playful salute and Quinn was off in his shadow.

"Well pretty lady, why don't we head inside?" Nate suggested playfully, placing his hand out, towards the castle's entrance.

Arriving at the King's castle, Quinn was forced to undergo the same procedure as last time before the guards led him to the same dining room as before. As soon as the other guards had left Quinn immediately told the Royal Vampire Knight about Fex and what Lee believed to have happened.

However, he didn't mention the blood weapon technique, only that Lee suspected Bryce might have done this to influence Lee's vote for the next King.

"I see, but this doesn't sound like something Bryce would do at all." Dwight replied to the dismay of Quinn. "I looked into him, especially since I suspected he had been working with the Bloodsuckers... however I found no such thing. I know you hate him, but blackmailing really isn't something that would work against the leaders!"

"Honestly, I'm stumped as to why someone would have taken Fex. I know you're worried and wish to find him and I hate to say this but, we need more information before we can go around pointing the finger, which is why I haven't done that myself either." Dwight explained.

This type of answer wasn't good enough for Quinn. Not that one of his best friends was involved. It had been over a week since either side had heard from him, and Quinn just felt like the more time that had passed, the less chance they would have of finding him alive.

Exiting the King's castle, Quinn felt like the meeting had been nothing but a giant waste of time. He had been doing everything by following Vincent's advice so far because he felt the vampire by his side knew better, but now he was starting to have serious doubts whether that was really the case or not.

On his way out, there was a large man in black armour who appeared to have been waiting for him. It was the ninth leader, Muka Fortuna.

"I have heard what has happened to Fex." Muka bowed. "I actually came here to try to meet with you. Quinn, there isn't a doubt in my mind, that the person who is behind this is Bryce! I know Dwight has his ways of doing things, but I feel like we

are going to lose this battle if we are playing by the rules while our opponents aren't."

Honestly, Quinn couldn't agree more, especially when the rules were working against him at the moment.

"So what do you suggest?" Quinn asked.

"Dwight needs evidence, and I can only imagine there has to be something in the first castle. Unfortunately, my skills, body frame and abilities don't make me the ideal person for such a thing. You on the other hand, you have been gifted the power of the shadow. Find the evidence that we need in the castle, and maybe you might even find Fex there." Muka suggested.

'Don't listen to him, Quinn! Remember Dwight's words, don't trust anyone!' Vincent warned. 'Don't you find it awfully suspicious that he appeared just after you have met with Dwight?!"

Quinn felt he was at a crossroads, he had been pushed around his whole time as a human, and now the same thing was happening as a vampire.

He didn't want to be used as just a mere pawn any longer, he would find out things himself!

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 851: Returning old memories

The second family was very welcoming to both Nate and Cia, despite their sudden arrival at such a late hour. It was quite clear they were outsiders, yet they were still greeted with waves and smiles. As they were being escorted through the inner castle area more and more eyes from those living within fell on them.

"This is great." Nate grinned as he waved back. He felt less like a chaperone who had tagged along and more like a hero who had just slain a big monster threatening the populace.

"Urgh! You're so predictable! You know being desperate isn't going to help you get a girlfriend. We girls can sense that kind of thing. You being extra nice just makes you seem clingy and wrong." Cia commented on his behaviour.

However, Nate was currently too happy to let Cia's words bring his mood down. The grin on his face continued to grow. Several girls had already come up to him, handed him flowers and some had even pecked him on his cheek.

If anything they were a little too welcoming, not that Nate was complaining. In fact, he was already looking forward to boasting about it to his friends once they returned.

The two of them were aware that Quinn had made some type of deal with the second family leader. Based on their current treatment, they could only suspect that it would be to vote for her in the upcoming election.

While looking around and passing through, Cia began to notice some things. Perhaps it was because she was actively ignoring the fool beside her, although he was actually the one who indirectly provided her with the hint.

Nate's appearance was a stark contrast to the vampires. The inner castle area housed a large number of females as they could see, yet they appeared to lack any men. Cia only saw male children, none older than twelve.

'Layla said the second leader was nice to her, so I guess I'm just overthinking things.' Cia tried to reason. 'Perhaps the men are all just inside?'

Eventually they had been escorted to just outside the doors of the leaders throne room. A knock announced their arrival and soon after the doors were opened up to reveal a beautiful woman wearing her usually large black dress.

"You must be Cia from the tenth family, right? It appears that the boy failed to mention he would be sending me such a cutie like you." Cindy complimented her guest. The girl's cheeks immediately became a few shades redder, but before she could hide, Cindy grabbed both her hands together as if she had just received a gift.

"It's... it's nice to meet you." Cia, quickly bowed.

"Come in, come in. Please sit down, while I get you a drink ready. I'd like to talk with you for a bit, before we'll try to help you in any way I can."

Cia was a bit overwhelmed by Cindy's openness, but seeing as this might be her only chance to recover her memories, she walked through the large double doors.

Nate was just about to follow behind her, when he was suddenly stopped by a single finger on his forehead.

"I'm sorry, but this pertains to my ability which is a bit special. You should understand that I wouldn't want others to know too much about me. Besides, I'm sure your lady friend would also want some things to remain private." Cindy stated. Although her tone was nice, Nate felt that this wasn't a suggestion but more of a command.

"I know the boy has asked you to be her bodyguard, but I will take good care of her. Feel free to wait outside or ask some of my family members to entertain you. "

Usually, Nate would have complied with such a beautiful ladies order, but the way she had looked at him just seconds ago, he could feel a strange shiver through his body.

"I'm sorry, but Quinn told me that I have to look after Cia at all times and that's what I've come here to do. Either I go in there with her or we will both leave!" Nate stood his ground.

The finger on his forehead turned into a flick and he was sent flying across the room, skidding across the floor. Eventually he regained his footing, and started to rub his head as he felt blood trickling down.

'All that from a flick, these leaders are no joke.' Nate thought.

"Now, don't you go making the girl's decision for her. You should let her decide, right?" Cindy berated him, looking back in Cia's direction who was already inside the room.

Cia looked towards Nate as if his eyes were telling her to disagree and come towards her, urging her to leave this place together, but Cia kept thinking about her memories. She had done so much to try to get them back and now she was so close to achieving her goal.

She couldn't just turn back now.

"I'm sorry Nate, but I need to know!"

The last thing Nate saw was Cindy closing the door with a smirk on her face as Cia continued to walk further into the throne room.

'Should I call Quinn? No, I'll stay here and keep my shadow active. I'll give her the benefit of the doubt and will try to enter again in half an hour. If they don't reply or come out then I'll act.' Nate decided, as he stood with his back facing against the wall, hoping to hear whatever was happening inside.

The second family's throne room was unique, as they had plenty of beds placed on each side, and the throne was at the very back. It looked more like a hospital than anything else. Cia was asked to lie down on one of the beds at the very back next to the throne, while Cindy had remained standing.

"The boy told me that your memories have been wiped, and that you wish to get them back. Now I would like to hear your version of that. Is what he said true?" Cindy asked.

"Yes, although... he was the one who wiped them. I just want to know who I was, before... before I met them." Cia answered in a soft voice.

"Interesting, I didn't take him for the type to bully young girls. I have to say I'm quite intrigued what made him wipe your memories now. But first there are a few questions I need to ask you..."

Cindy went on asking about how old she was, when her memories had been removed and what she could remember if anything from before the incident. With all that information she could see about whether or not she was able to help or not. At the same time she decided to record what was happening, on a small electronic device the size of a finger.

"So, can you help me?" Cia asked, her eyes filled with water. She looked at Cindy as if this didn't work, then she had decided that she would no longer attempt to get her memories back. From then on she would just live her current life and forget about the past.

"I can help you." Cindy answered as she handed the poor girl a handkerchief.

Having expected bad news the tears in her eyes started to really fall.

"You really mean it? I will really remember who I was?!" Tears had already started to flow from her cheeks, as she felt like her journey would be over.

"However, there is a catch. The reason why I can bring your memories back, is because I will reverse your mind to the time before they were taken. You will revert to you from around a day before losing your memories. In other words, everything that has happened to you after that will be gone. One day before they were removed. Putting it more bluntly it wouldn't be too wrong to say that the

current you will cease to exist. You won't even remember who I am, so are you absolutely sure you want to go through with this?"

When asked the question, Cia started to think if there were any memories worth keeping, and the only ones she could think of was her time spent with Layla, but it was so short. All her memories only added up to a year. In her mind, getting her old memories back was worth forgetting that one year.

Seeing this, Cindy brought up the video recording she had made.

"I just recorded everything you said earlier, that you told me about yourself. Once you come back, i'll play it to you."

"I'll do it, I have to." Cia nodded, learning of that information.

Cindy got straight to work, and placed both of her hands on Cia's head. A few seconds later and energy was seeping through the palm of her hands and Cia's eyes started to white out as her mind was being reversed.

There was no pain, and the process only took a few seconds.

Finally, when Cindy's hands left Cia's head she could see clearly once again, but she had no clue who the person in front of her was.

"Relax, darling, I'm not trying to hurt you. You must be very confused right now, so here you have a little drink to calm your nerves." Cindy offered her a cup with some dark red liquid. "First of all, you should know that your memories are dated. Someone removed your memories a year ago and I was asked by a person important to you to try my best to return them. Unfortunately, I'm not all powerful, while I managed to fulfill your wish of returning your memories, everything that happened after you lost them is gone now. I'm sorry but it's the best I could do!"

Cia looked around the room trying to make out where she was. The last place she remembered being at was the inter tournament, where she had been asked to look out for Layla, and that Quinn and the others were a danger to her..

However, at the moment she was holding the top of her head, and squinting badly, she was suffering from a major headache.

"What's wrong, are you in pain? My ability shouldn't affect or hurt the person it's being used on."

"No, it's not that..." Cia groaned. "Just now, I saw a vision! I don't know who you are yet, but for some reason I saw you in that vision. I saw Quinn killing you." She blurted out, not really considering the situation.

Cindy dropped the cup she had offered Cia.

'The banshee's prediction saw the boy killing me?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 852: A little pig

Cindy took a moment to calm down a little, then she asked Cia to clarify what exactly had happened in her vision. Fortunately, a banshee's vision was merely one of the possible futures, so it wasn't like it was set in stone.

Nevertheless, Cindy needed to find out as much as she could about how one of her future selves' demise came to be in the first place.

'He felt stronger than last time, but how could a boy like him possess enough power to kill me?' Cindy pondered.

"I'm sure you understand that your vision is making me a little nervous after hearing you say that. Could you tell me more about it. Even a tiny little detail could help me avoid such a fate." She requested with a smile, only unlike earlier this one was more forced to hide her slight worry.

"Of course, only... the vision was incredibly short. I saw Quinn, with his hands covered in a lot of blood. He himself was badly hurt, looking like he had been through a rough fight, the kind where one false move could decide life and death. Beneath him was your body, surrounded by a pool of blood. I didn't really see much else, other than that. I'm sorry." Cia apologised, luckily the pain in her head had just as quickly subsided as it had appeared.

After hearing this, Cindy placed her hands behind her back naturally. At the same time, she placed the recording device that had recorded Cia's memories from before inside the band that held her dress from the waist.

"Now could you please tell me where I am and how I got here. Are we back at.." She turned her head a few times but decided to still ask. "Pure?" Cia whispered.

Hearing this, Cindy had come up with an idea.

Before reverting her memories, Cindy had made Cia tell her everything the others had told her about her former self and what the 'supposed' reason was for Quinn messing with her memories.

Now, armed with that knowledge, the second family leader told Cia about everything, only she made sure to give the story a dark spin, by making a certain person sound far worse than they were.

"In the end, after already having removed your memories, he chose to turn you, to make sure you would remain loyal to him. He chose to turn you into what he was. It was the same for Layla but it seems like she has grown quite fond of him based on what your 'other self' had told me. The other you that wanted to save her, show her the error of her ways. The other you confided to me that you had a feeling it might have been your mission from Pure to do so."

Hearing all of this, especially about where they were now and the part about turning into a vampire was shocking, but she could tell her body was different.

It didn't feel like it belonged to her, like she wasn't quite herself anymore.

'My mission... Was it to look after Layla? That's probably why I went as far as I have done to stay by her side. I have to complete it and return to Lucy somehow?' Cia thought as she tried to fill in the gaps.

Of course, there were some details that hadn't even been recorded on the device, so she was unaware of what had really happened with Quinn or Pure.

'Quinn how could you turn both of us?'

"Why did you choose to tell me all this? Aren't you and Quinn on the same side? I mean both of you are vampires after all?" Cia asked the woman.

"Oh my, so straightforward, getting right to the point, I like it~. Well you are correct in that we are both vampires and at least for the time being we should be on the same side. However, Quinn is originally a human and I just can't bring myself to trust him. By doing you a favour I was hoping you could help me in return. Although your other self had agreed to my request, it wouldn't be fair to force you to do something you can't even remember." Cindy explained as she patted the girl in front of her lightly on the head. "Of course, now that I have heard your version, it's safe to say I no longer trust him as much as I did before. As such allow me to ask the current you, would you be willing to keep an eye on him for me."

Cindy didn't doubt that Quinn would vote for her, as the boy didn't seem to type to easily cross others. Besides, his hatred for Bryce should ensure that they would be on the same side, at least for the foreseeable time.

There wasn't anything concrete she wanted Cia to do for the time being, but having Cia act as her eyes and ears would be helpful for a variety of reasons. Most of all, to find out what had led to the events of the vision.

Why would he attempt to kill her?

Around twenty five minutes after she had entered the throne room, Cia came out and the doors behind her were quickly closed, preventing Nate from seeing Cindy again.

"Hey, are you okay? She didn't do anything strange to hurt you or anything?" Nate asked as he looked all over seeing if there were any injuries, but also made sure not to touch her.

"Bug off!" Cia replied, slapping Nate's hand away. "Come on, just take me back to Quinn."

Although Nate didn't like how Cia was treating her, after dealing with the leader he imagined something must have gone on between the two to annoy her. As such, he chose to ignore it as they both left the castle.

In reality, Cia couldn't even remember Nate's name. Cindy had never bothered to learn Nate's name in the first place, so she had merely informed Cia that someone from Quinn's family was already waiting for now.

For now Cia opted to keep the fact that her memories for the past year had been lost a secret.

The two of them waited outside, and eventually Quinn came to pick them up.

When he popped out of his shadow, he looked at Cia awkwardly for a few moments.

"Are your memories back? Do you remember everything again, everything you wanted to know?" Quinn asked, a bit unsure what outcome he should be hoping for.

"Of course." Cia nodded happily. "Cindy did a great job. Thank you Quinn, for helping me get back my memories."

With no time to waste, Quinn used his Shadow travel and was already heading back to the tenth castle. Between the three of them the journey was silent. Each one had a lot on their mind.

Quinn was still undecided whether to trust Muka or not, but even if he didn't trust him, he definitely didn't trust Bryce. It was also quite likely that the first castle would have something inside of it to bring more light into this confusing mess.

Still, it would have to be him choosing to infiltrate the first family because of his own decision, not Muka's.

When they finally returned Quinn spotted something lying in front of the castle doors. It was black in color and looked like a dead animal. Coming out from his shadow, Quinn quickly approached it.

"What is that?" Nate asked. "Is it a dead bat?"

Not wanting to touch it directly, Quinn eventually used his foot to lightly flip it over, revealing a large nose with a ring around it.

"That's Ham!" Quinn shouted in excitement. He went down and picked him up immediately off the ground. "It's Fex' familiar, but what is he doing out there? Did Fex return?"

When picking up Ham, Quinn noticed he was incredibly hot, and at the same time covered in sweat, not to mention unconscious and not responding to anything they said.

A familiar's energy was different compared to that of a human or a vampire. Even using Qi wouldn't work to wake. All Quinn could do was place him somewhere safe and hope he would wake up soon, hopefully with some answers.

Going inside he asked Paul about any news regarding Fex. Once again while there was no direct news, the Vampire knight received an update from Leo and Silver and the two of them were currently heading back to the castle.

Ham was placed in one of the beds, and was kept under watch, with strict orders to inform Quinn as soon as that happened, no matter what time it was.

Right now though, he felt like he could do nothing but wait, either for the news from Paul and Silver or that from Ham.

'As long as Ham is still alive, I can be sure Fex is also out there alive. I promise, I'll find it, wherever you are!'

Finally, both Leo and Silver had arrived at the tenth castle, and they had some news.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 853: In the middle of a game

Quinn arrived at the reception of the castle, by the entrance waiting for Leo to arrive. When Quinn saw Leo and Silver, both parties looked a little down. The duo, just as Quinn, had hoped that Fex might have been found by the other side.

This meant that the big news Leo had informed them about was something else

After meeting up they moved over to one of the smaller reception rooms, which had a couple of large sofas and a table. It was a room rarely used but rather than find something comfy to sit on or look around the place, Quinn was just eager to hear what information might be important enough to make the duo of Vampire knight return instead of continuing their search.

Only the three of them were present, as Quinn didn't want to get the others involved. By now everyone in the castle already knew that Fex had gone missing, so they were on pretty strict orders to remain inside.

"Silver, I'm very sorry that I just heard about Fex today. I was sure he was enjoying his time with you and your father. It's my fault that I hadn't checked up on him earlier." Quinn started off the conversation by apologising as he fully blamed himself. "Lee is now also aware of what has happened to your brother and said he is doing everything he can on his side to see if he can find him. I'm going to do the same."

Silver nodded but didn't say anything, and the silence just worried Quinn more, when one was silent they tended to be thinking about something else. It was clear she was worried.

"Paul said the two of you found something, will it help us find Fex?"

"It's possible." Leo answered. "But it might or might not be fixable. You see as soon as it became apparent that he had gone missing we started searching between the two castles and on our path we managed to stumble upon Kazz."

Hearing this name, anger started to rise in him and Quinn thought his hunch was right, that Bryce was the one behind it all.

"We found her pinned in an alleyway behind one of the houses. She was badly beaten and her blood was everywhere. From the looks of things she had been that way for about a week. The path taken and the timing collates with when Fex disappeared as well. I have a feeling these two things are linked."

'Kazz was beaten by someone? How is that possible? She's Bryce's Vampire knight, right? Who would even have the power to do what? Just what the hell is going on?'

'I bet you're glad you didn't go storming into Bryce's castle now, patience is something one learns when they get older.' Vincent teased the other

'Is this really the right time to give me an "I-told-you-so-speech? Besides I listened to you in the end, didn't I?' Quinn replied angrily.

"Then what about Kazz? Is she in any condition to tell us what happened to her? Or did you find anything else?" Quinn asked.

"She was too weakened when we found her. To avoid any misunderstanding the first thing we did was have Silver return her to the first castle to heal her injuries. I checked if there have been any reports but for some reason, it looks like Bryce hasn't reported what has happened to his first Vampire knight yet."

"Judging by his character, he will try to find out who did this himself. I also wanted to ask Kazz what happened, but she hasn't left the castle yet and I have no idea of her current condition. So it means we are still stuck and have no idea of what happened to Fex." Silver said with her head held down.

"Not quite." Quinn smiled. "I didn't want to say anything to you guys beforehand because the lead on my end isn't in better condition than Kazz. Still his existence proves that Fex is at least alive and he might even know where he is."

Going up to one of the higher floors, they arrived in the medical bay of the castle. There were no healers among the vampires, so just like the other rooms this one was usually empty.

Luckily many of Paul's people knew how to do treatment beyond first aid, and they were currently looking over Ham in the hospital bed. Quinn had asked Linda beforehand to keep watch, since he wasn't willing to take any chances if someone was going to go after one of his people again.

"That's... the flying creature." Leo called out once he recognised its aura.

"It's Ham!" Silver shouted as she leaned forward, but the person who was looking after Ham quickly stopped her.

"They say he's very weak at the moment. I found him lying just outside of the castle and he was covered in sweat. I imagine he must have used a lot of energy to get here. I was hoping after some rest he would wake up, but he still hasn't done so."

Silver asked permission if she could look over Ham, and after the personnel explained a few things, Silver started to check all over him with a gentle touch and finally placed him back down, the look on her face seemed to be more worried than before.

Quinn had imagined that seeing Ham would make her feel better, but for some reason she seemed even more concerned now.

'It's because of Ham's condition.' Vincent explained. "Remember, Ham is not a beast or an animal but a familiar that belongs to another world. Although strong ones like yours can remain in this world, once one makes a contract, their power is linked to their creator.'

'She's worried that his current conditions could be either of two things. Ham is recovering slowly or worsening due to Fex's condition, or it's due to him being too far away. If his condition is getting better but slowly then it would be the latter'

'So that's why we can't use Ki, or Blood, the heal Ham, the energy familiars use is different, something linked in our bodies?'

'Correct.'

With this new information Quinn wanted to say something.

"Silver, Ham should wake up soon, he's looking better than he was before, so at least we know Fex isn't hurt, and they've captured him for some reason. We will just have to wait."

The problem was could they really afford to wait. The ceremony for burying the king was soon, and they wouldn't be able to delay it much longer.

The three of them were about to leave the room but Silver requested to stay. She wanted to stay by Ham's side even though she knew she could do nothing. It was just that she wanted to be the first person there when Ham woke up.

"You can stay here as long as you like Silver, just remember to get some sleep. The second we find out where Fex is, we'll punish those who are responsible for all of this." Quinn said.

He felt bad but honestly, with Quinn and Vincent, the two of them couldn't figure out what was happening. A lot of the others were ruling out Bryce as a suspect due to Kazz being attacked, but Quinn felt they had all overlooked one crucial detail.

What was Kazz doing there in the first place?

Had she been there together with Fex? If that was the case what had the two been talking about?.

Back at the ship, he had seen glimpses of Kazz's reaction when talking about her leader. She was frightened of him, and there were times when Kazz had decided to do things that she felt were right.

'Did she decide to go against her father? Was Bryce after Fex like Muka claimed? Could she have just been there to try and help Fex? Do you think that is something Bryce could do against his own daughter?' Quinn wondered.

'I wouldn't say it's impossible.' Vincent commented. 'Unlike humans, there are only a few vampires that have a strong bond with their children. In the past, it was actually considered quite normal for leaders to have multiple wives. By spreading their seed they increased the likelihood of creating the strongest vampires possible. It was also agreed that rivalry between siblings would have a good overall effect on their powers, as such the blood relation didn't matter too much.'

'However, it is strange that Bryce hasn't revealed any information on someone attacking the first family. A knight at that. If he did, he could try to pin the blame on the other side, and use this to grab one of their votes. This 'game' of crowning the next King seems to be getting rather complicated.'

'And we're stuck in the middle.' Quinn lamented.

Before leaving the room, Quinn looked over Ham and Silver. He felt a slight itch on his back, and a deep whisper that he couldn't make out.

'Did you just say something?' Quinn asked.

'Not unless you can suddenly hear me humming in my own head.' Vincent replied.

'Weird, is this stress starting to make me hear things?' Quinn wondered as he left the room.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 854: True feelings

The next morning after Ham had arrived, Quinn came to visit the hospital room where he found Silver looking over Fex' familiar. She hadn't left it, and by the looks of it she hadn't gotten any sleep either.

'It's a good thing vampires don't need much sleep, I guess.' Quinn thought to himself. With Ham not having woken up, he left the room without even greeting Silver who was fully focused on her task.

"Keep an eye on her and let me know if Ham's condition is getting better or worse!" Quinn instructed Linda who was standing outside of the room. Just like Peter, her subclass didn't need any sleep at all, which was also the reason Quinn had specifically chosen her to guard the place.

Over in the dining hall, the other students, the old army and those from the Cursed faction were all enjoying breakfast.

At the start everyone had kept to their own groups, but as everyone got to know each other and started to get along, eventually their members started to mix and mingle, leading to the creation of new groups between the members.

Most prominently the groups had been split into those consisting of only girls and boys for the meals.

At one of the boys only tables, Nate was currently busy boasting to his peers about how he had been the centre of attention when he had been over to the second castle. "I'm telling you guys, all the girls were bringing me gifts! They were totally all over me."

Then, making sure no one else was eavesdropping on their conversation he whispered. "And they're also a 'little' prettier than the girls we have over here."

"So you're saying that someone like you with zero talking skills, who freezes every time a girl comes up to you, with your blocky head was not only surrounded by pretty girls, but they all seemed to be into you?" Alex summed up all of Nate's negatives. "I don't want to call you a liar, but you gotta admit if you have no chance here, it's hard to believe they would all be so into you over there."

"I assume they were just being nice to him. Who knows, if we were to visit them they might treat us the same way." Sam theorised. "I mean we could always go over and have a look."

"Did the second leader treat you that way as well?" Peter suddenly perked up. He grinded his teeth against each other as he thought back to the slap he had received from Cindy.

"I'm not lying! Everyone over there really DID treat me nicely. Well, Cindy was polite at first I guess. However, once I tried following her and Cia into the throne room she changed. She tried to convince me to stay out, but when I refused she flicked me across the room with her finger." Nate explained.

"She managed to flick you?" Dennis asked, a lot of them were still wondering about just how strong the other vampires were, since they only had the students to use as a benchmark. On the other hand they at least knew Nate was considered strong among them and those that had never seen the leaders before were quite surprised.

"You shouldn't be so surprised, the vampires treasure strength above all else. To put it into each one of them should hold the same power as the leaders of the Big Four." Logan stated nonchalantly while typing away on his holographic keyboard. He always was a hard worker, and even taking his meals didn't stop him.

"You idiot!" Peter slammed the table. "Quinn told you to look over Cia! How could you allow her to be alone with that bitch?! What was even the point of sending you with her then? What if something happened?"

"Look, I'm sorry, Peter, I was well prepared to go in, but I didn't want to mess things up. We're in the Vampire World right now, so I couldn't just barge in on a leader when she was trying to help us. I was at the door the whole time and if I felt there had been any problems I would have contacted Quinn immediately!" Nate argued back.

The others that were at the table stood up, ready to get in between the two if a fight was about to break out, but after giving Nate a derisive look, Peter walked out.

"What's his deal? Cia came back fine in the end, didn't she?" Nate pouted. "I even tried opening those doors a bit to eavesdrop but they wouldn't budge. Was I supposed to try and destroy them, because of his hunch?"

"He might just be on edge. I know I certainly am." Alex said with his hands shaking. "Think about it, Fex got taken away somehow, and he's strong. At least way stronger than me. Now we're practically on lockdown, forbidden from leaving this place. I don't know about you guys, but being unable to hammer away like I usually do on the ship... it just doesn't feel like home."

The others wanted to say something to brighten the mood after what happened, but many that came from the Cursed faction felt the same way. They couldn't imagine living the rest of their lives on this planet. They just hoped that after Quinn finished his business here they might return to how things were.

There were two girls who hadn't gone for breakfast, the two being Cia and Layla. Right now the two of them had gathered in Layla's room because Cia wanted to talk with her about something.

"So you finally got all your memories back? I guess all that hard work paid off in the end?" Layla smiled while grabbing the other's hands. "You went through a lot during those times and... I'm just glad that you're still the Cia that you were."

'According to Cindy the two of us are supposed to have grown close. I remember us talking at school a few times, but I didn't really care about Layla back then, it was only because of the mission. However, the way she's acting now, did we really become close friends? If so, I have to help her!'

"Layla there are still things I'm unsure of. I wanted to talk to you about Quinn? What do you think about him?" Cia asked.

Hearing these questions, Layla's cheeks began to redden.

"Quinn is kind- I mean he's kind of busy these days so the two of us didn't have a lot of opportunities to talk in recent times." Layla answered quickly and panicky, but as she started to think of him more she calmed down. "I don't know how to say it, but he isn't that extraordinary of a person, yet somehow he's managed to do extraordinary things. I guess that's what attracts me and others to him."

"Have you ever felt that you were just ordinary? I mean I was okay with the bow, I'm not exactly the smartest, if anything I was considered below average, but when I look at Quinn I feel like he's the same, yet despite that he's managed to climb all the way to his current position."

By the way she was talking about Quinn, Cia knew that she had already fallen head over heels for him. "But don't you hate him for turning you? For bringing us to such a dangerous place? Pure could have continued to look after the both of us and things would have been fine."

"You think so?" Layla replied back, but she just smiled.

'Cindy was right, Layla's already been trapped by him, and the only way to break her out is with Quinn.' Cia thought.

With the two finished speaking, it was time for them to grab some food as well, and when they opened the door, they encountered Peter who had walked out, on the way to his room.

'Cia, don't you dare betray Quinn!' Peter thought as he passed the girls. 'I made that mistake once, and I won't let him get hurt like that ever again! If I see you try anything funny, I'll end you with my own hands!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 855: A king's touch

On the third day after Ham's return it was safe to say that everyone in the castle was affected by a general feeling of frustration. The tension was high in the air, between the regulars that were uninvolved. They were unable to do anything and even if they did, all eyes were on them.

While Silver had remained in the castle, Leo and Quinn had been busy searching the area for any more clues pertaining to Fex' location. They searched other areas on top of where Kazz was located, just incase he could be anywhere, apart from the other inner castle areas. Permission would need to be granted to enter.

They had also kept in contact with Lee the thirteenth leader, but unfortunately neither side was able to find even the slightest lead.

Their only remaining hope was to wait for Ham to wake up.

As for Kazz, perhaps she could have shared something with them, but despite three days having passed since her rescue, there had been absolutely no news from the first castle.

It was clear that Bryce was hiding something, which frustrated Quinn all the more, but he understood that it would be a stupid move to act against him.

Whoever was behind all of this, Ham's escape must have been outside their expectation. Getting any sort of information from him would allow them to be one step ahead of the mastermind.

Unfortunately, time was working against them.

That day, there was a knock at their door.

"Quinn, there's someone here to see you." Paul reported as he entered the throne room.

The throne room had become Quinn's new resting place. The large glass panel window on the top floor offered a beautiful view when looking outside. It also reminded him of the heavy responsibilities he had as the tenth family leader.

"Could you tell them I'm busy? We don't have a lot of time, and I'm still trying to find Fex." Quinn sighed.

"I'm afraid this can't wait!" A voice said as they barged into the throne room. The intruder was wearing the royal trim around his uniform, indicating he was a Royal Guard.

He had been waiting outside but when overhearing Quinn's unwillingness to meet with him, he chose to break protocol.

"Quinn Talen, we're aware that your close friend Fex Sanguinis is currently missing. Just like you, our side has been doing its best to discover his current location. However, he no longer holds a high ranking position, so a large force can't be used to investigate." The guard explained.

"Not an important figure?!" Quinn shouted. "I don't give a damn if he has a title or not! If you don't want to find him, then stop bothering while I'm trying to!"

"Quinn!" Paul interrupted. "Please don't forget yourself. The man is just here to pass on a message from Dwight, so we should at least hear him out!"

The Royal Guard was taken aback by the powerful shout. Not only had Quinn been extremely loud, but he had let out his energy outward, waking up all the cells in his body. Even at this moment they were all vibrating.

The guard bowed. "Royal knight Dwight asked me to pass on the following message: The ceremony for putting the King in eternal slumber will commence tomorrow at 9:00. Each family leader is required to be present with both of their knights."

"The public will also be eligible to attend the event. Everyone may participate, but after the capacity has been reached no more people will be let in. The leaders and knights will be part of the ceremony. You will be informed about your duties on the day. For everyone else the ceremony will start at 12:00." Once the message was delivered the Royal Guard swiftly left.

Having to turn up earlier than the others to prepare, Quinn was reminded of a wedding rather than a funeral.

At that moment it really dawned on Quinn, that time had run out. As the tenth family leader, he had no choice but to take part, and for whatever reason they had taken Fex, it would be achieved tomorrow.

With this new information, Quinn headed down to the medical bay, where Silver was still sitting in a chair beside Ham. She appeared to not have moved in the slightest ever since she had sat down.

"Silver!" Quinn called out but there was no response. "Hey, Silver!" Quinn shouted, but she only answered after he placed his hand on her shoulder. She turned and looked at Quinn for a brief moment, before her gaze returned to watch over Ham.

"Ham's getting better. He's no longer hot like he was on the first day. Now it looks like he's just sleeping, but he still hasn't woken up. Why won't he wake up?" Silver asked, still not diverting her eyes away from the familiar.

"I have some news for you. I've just been informed that the ceremony will take place tomorrow. I know as his sister you're just as desperate as me for any news, but you're still the Vampire knight of the thirteenth family."

"I'm afraid you'll probably have to go back to the thirteenth family and make preparations with your dad soon. I'm sorry. I'll look over Ham, and will have someone else here tomorrow. I promise you that they will inform me if anything happens, and I will pass that info to you ASAP."

For a while, Silver didn't reply back, but Quinn could see she was clenching her fist.

"Why... Why... Why won't this damn pig wake up!?" She screamed as she punched the bed, but surprisingly the punch softened to the point as if she had just touched it.

A vampire of her strength should have been able to break a bed with ease but her energy was completely drained, and soon watermarks could be seen falling onto the bed.

Silver was crying.

'Damn it! What the hell am I doing? Why am I forced to take part in this crap, when I don't care about tomorrow?! Why do I still have to deal with this, and why does no one else seem to care that my friend has been abducted!' Quinn thought with anger.

Seeing Silver upset like this was just making the anger inside him boil stronger, and the mark on his back was responding in kind.

"You desire..I will help...." Quinn heard the same voice as last time and black mist started to form from his back.

Eventually a black portal opened on the other side of the room, next to one of the beds. Next, large deathly claws could be seen coming out of them.

"What is that?!"

"A beast, a monster!" The other staff members currently in the room started to panic.

"Don't worry! That... 'thing' belongs to me!" Quinn shouted, hoping to calm them down, but the sheer size of such a creature was too much for them. In the end Quinn had them leave the room.

Seeing the Boneclaw appear, Quinn didn't know what it wanted to do at this very moment. Usually the Boneclaw only answered to Quinn's dark desires, so why did it come now?

The Boneclaw with one of its long sharp fingers pointed towards him.

"You are filled with anger...I will help you..."

The Boneclaw looked down towards Ham for a few seconds, and then started to turn into the same mist that would usually form when it appeared or disappeared, only this time the mark formed on Ham.

'Vincent, what is happening?' Quinn asked in wild confusion.

'I'm not sure, there are many things we don't understand about the familiars ourselves. This is amazing though! I wish I could have more time to study the mechanics behind what it's doing, but it looks like the familiar is acting on its own.'

Once all the mist had gathered into the mark, the little Bull's eyes finally started to open.

The first person it saw was Quinn.

"Quinn!" Ham shouted. "Fex, he's in trouble! You have to save him!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 856: Ham's warning

'How long has it been? Being stuck in this goddamn room, it's impossible to tell whether I've been here a day, a week, a month, or longer!' Fex cursed internally, as he looked blankly at the cave walls.

"And worst of all, this is all so BOOORRIIINNNNGGG!" He shouted at the top of his lungs. "Come on! Where's that ugly bald monster from before? I can't even remember anything about my past, so at least give me someone to keep me company! You don't want me to die from boredom, do you?!"

However, no matter how much Fex shouted or how often, he didn't get any reaction from his captor's side.

'I hope that Pig manages to find someone soon. Maybe he already did and I'm just stuck somewhere really far out.' Fex pondered.

Just as he thought that the doors opened and another creature walked in. It was hard to tell if it was the same one he had seen before, or if each time they came it was a different one with just a similar look.

His only company had been these monsters who would come after certain periods of time feeding him blood. Next to them was always a hooded person with their face wrapped up, ready to take care of him.

"What's the bloody point?! How many times do you intend to give me blood, only to take it away immediately after?!" Fex loudly complained. He was no longer afraid of them. The first few times they had arrived he had been worried they had come to finish him off. However, since they merely come to take his blood each time, he soon enough realised that they weren't going to kill him at least for the time being.

"Boy, you have done very well up to this point. Only a few more times and after that, well... Let's just say we haven't decided what will happen." The person answered for the first time, as they went over to inject Fex with a syringe.

The tube was large so they took quite a lot of his blood. As soon as he was within reach, Fex jerked his arm hoping to whack his hand and hit the syringe away, but just like all the other times before he failed.

The accompanying Bloodsucker had grabbed onto one of his arms, while the hooded person grabbed onto the other. Their strength was enough to overpower him, preventing him from moving even an inch. He was forced to endure their bizarre treatment once more.

When they were done, they left the cave, leaving Fex on his own again.

"Hey, where are you going?!" Fex shouted. "If you CAN talk, then at least tell me what you need my blood for! Answer me!"

Fex continued pulling against the chain, but it continued to be in vain.

At the tenth castle, Ham had just woken up, and the first words had been a plea for Quinn to help Fex. They had all known that Fex was in trouble, but deep down they had been hoping that it might have all been some sort of misunderstanding and something else was going on.

"Quinn, please help Fex! Pleeeaaaasssseee!" Ham urged him, flapping up and down, hovering just above the bed.

"Ham, please calm down first! We don't want you to tire yourself out again! You've been out for days already! If you want us to save Fex, tell us everything that happened to Fex!" Quinn instructed the familiar.

"But you don't understand!" Ham continued to panic, instead of calming down.

"He said, CALM DOWN!" Silver shouted as she placed her hand on top of Ham's head, and forcefully pushed him back onto the bed. She had made sure to keep herself in check, yet the frustration was making her do strange things.

Still, the effectiveness spoke for itself.

"Alright, Ham, do you know where Fex is? What happened to him?" Quinn asked.

"Fex, well I don't know where exactly that place is, but it's not in the Vampire settlement. It took me days to reach here by flying. I was so tired, but I continued on as I was worried about master!" Ham revealed on the verge of tears.

"But I can show you! I remember the way there! Let me guide you and take you back! Only we have to hurry! Fex is trapped in a cave, and chained up! If I've been out for a few days, I don't... I don't know if..if..he's still alive!" Ham started to burst out in tears.

"Stop being so silly." Silver replied annoyed and flicked the familiar's forehead. "If Fex was dead you would no longer be here. If he's far away it's no wonder we couldn't find him. Do you know who captured him? Have you seen what exactly happened after he left the thirteenth castle?"

After realising that Fex must still be alive Ham started to calm down, lying in the soft comfy bed.

"I'm sorry, at the time when Fex was taken away I was hanging around back in our own world. It's been a while since he called for me, so I was just relaxing.

However, I could tell something strange was going on. My Porky sense was tingling!"

"I didn't see what took him or what happened, I just know he ended up in a cave filled with Bloodsuckers!"

Hearing this, Leo's ears perked up. After hearing Ham had woken up, he had come into the room.

"Those must be the vampire beasts that attacked the tenth castle!" Leo concluded.

"So Dwight was right!" Quinn commented. "Someone is working with them and for some reason they're after Fex... but why? Ham, are you absolutely sure you don't know anything else? Anything that could give us some clues."

Ham gulped before answering.

"I....I don't know what happened to Fex. I couldn't even ask him. For some reason he's forgotten everything. He's forgotten about who he is and how he got there. He's forgotten about his family and he couldn't even remember you Quinn! Which was why, when I escaped, I came towards you for help."

"He can't remember anything?! Are you sure about that?!" Silver shouted.

"Look, he didn't even know who I was when I appeared before him, ya hear me! I'm not lying! Why would I ever make stuff up in a situation like this? So what are we waiting for. We have to go now!"

'Vincent, Fex had his memories removed... is that really possible?' Quinn asked.

'Fex may be a strong vampire, but it's not like it's completely impossible. The person responsible would have to either have an ability related to doing so or be someone with a very strong influence skill, which could only be.."'

'One of the other leaders!' Quinn finished off his sentence for him. This was already predicted since someone had attacked Kazz a vampire knight.

Their problem was, although Quinn wanted to go save Fex, he had to attend the ceremony tomorrow.

"Quinn." Leo interrupted his train of thought. "I fear that this is part of whoever is behind this plan. The ceremony is important, and from what I have heard, all the leaders must attend. We got some more information, and it seems like you have to be part of the ceremony for an important reason. Maybe they want you to not turn up. Whatever the case I don't want us to play into their hand!"

'Wise words from your vampire knight, Quinn, if he wasn't going to suggest it I was.' Vincent agreed.

'I understand, but what about Fex? I can't just leave him there!'

"I'll go!" Silver volunteered. "He is my brother in the first place. Leo is right. The leaders are needed at the ceremony but the Vampire knights not so much. Us being there is more of a formality. I can be replaced."

Even though Silver had volunteered, Quinn still wasn't sure. Silver was strong, but whoever was involved in this had been not only been able to take Fex without leaving any evidence behind but had also taken out Kazz, whose strength should be around Silver's level.

"Quinn, I would also like to request that you can find someone to take my place. Those Bloodsuckers were the ones who attacked the castle, I just know it! I wouldn't have volunteered before but we have Paul and your contraptions, also if you need me in an emergency you are still able to use that skill. If you are afraid I might not be strong enough, don't be. Thanks to you, I think you will be pleasantly surprised with my current strength."

Clenching his fist Quinn needed to make a decision. It would be Ham, Leo and Silver going off on their own, while Quinn was to attend the ceremony, either one could have been a trap, but it was more likely that they hadn't realised Ham had escaped.

"Fine!" Quinn agreed. "Just stay in contact with the mask at all times, I will be keeping mine on during the whole ceremony and will contact you as soon as it's over!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 857: The Boneclaw's master

When Ham was finished explaining all the details, the other two were getting prepared taking with them everything they needed for their trip. But they couldn't leave just yet, as there was a reason why they had to wait. On Silver's advice Quinn had informed Dwight about what was happening.

There were a few reasons for this. He thought that maybe one, he would be able to send help to the other two from Dwight. He still wasn't very confident that just with the two of them they could save Fex, who knew how strong the enemy was, and two, Silver and Quinn also agreed to keep Lee involved with what was happening, just like he had been doing Quinn.

There was a certain royal guard that Quinn would speak to, a contact that Dwight had told him to talk to whenever he needed to get in touch with him. Dwight said he could explain all the details to him, as he trusted him. This was how the two of them would set up their meetings.

Usually vampires, especially those of a higher rank that needed to communicate with each other, would do so using the eighth family leader's ability, Jill, through her telepathy. This was rather than relying on technology that could be intercepted by others and they could make sure that only those that were meant to receive the message needed it.

However, Dwight was the one that had informed Quinn not to use her, and Quinn agreed. Especially since she was one of the ones that had chosen to give her vote to Bryce. At the moment there was a clear bias towards certain leaders.

The two of them filled up flasks with blood for both Leo and Silver, and Quinn had made a suggestion to Leo.

"Before you leave Leo, it would be best if you grab something from Alex, I'm pretty sure he has something that might come in use for you." Quinn suggested.

While the two were away, Quinn continued to look over Ham. Who looked to be doing fine compared to how he was before. He started to think about what had happened, moments before he woke up. Ham didn't seem to be close to waking up at all, yet suddenly he did. Once the Boneclaw had turned to smoke and entered him, disappearing soon after.

'The Boneclaw has helped me in many different situations, according to Chris it was protecting me on the demon tier planet as well. Boneclaw, you originally belonged to the first leader, right? Do you work for him, or do you work for me at the moment?' Quinn wondered.

The reason for thinking about this, was due to the Boneclaw being more than uncooperative, Quinn could enter the space to attempt to talk to him, yet for some

reason, it would choose when it wanted to speak, and when it didn't. Acting on its own will.

Familiars usually worked together with their master, but the Boneclaw seemed rather selfish, either only helping Quinn when it wanted to, or when he was close to death. Quinn didn't feel like it's master at all.

"You...won't be able to summon..." the deep voice was heard.

Quinn looking around the room, was trying to see where the voice was coming from. He knew it was from the Boneclaw, he just didn't know where. Until he looked at Ham, smoke was forming from his back, and it had taken the shape of a miniature version of the Boneclaw. Swirling above Ham's head, created from the black mist.

"Ah, the king. Why is that devil of a king on my back!" Ham shouted. Soon he started to bow down. "I'm sorry I didn't mean to call you names, it's a normal reaction when one meets someone as great as you."

This type of reaction from a familiar when seeing the Boneclaw, wasn't the first. Quinn had seen it when Bryce had summoned his familiar as well. It was clear the Boneclaw was special.

"What do you mean?" Quinn asked.

"My energy, inside him.... No longer with you..." the Boneclaw spoke.

'I think I understand. ' Vincent tried to interpret. 'Right now, because Ham isn't receiving enough energy from Fex, the only way he could wake him up was by using his own energy. Which is why there is no marking on your back and he is appearing above Ham at the moment.'

"Which means, if you are in a dangerous situation like the times before, the Boneclaw won't be able to help you." Vincent explained.

Quinn understood and nodded towards the Boneclaw.

"I know you have helped me many times before, but I want to ask you a favour." Quinn said approaching the mist. "If they are in trouble, can you protect them?" The Boneclaw seemed a little uninterested in this, but then Quinn mentioned something else.

"It doesn't matter what happens to those that try to attack them, you are free to do as you wish, go wild and don't worry." After Quinn had said that, the mist disappeared right back into Ham's body.

'I think I'm understand this thing a bit more.' Quinn thought.

Ham started to shiver.

"That crazy guy is inside of me!?" Ham gulped again and quickly placed his small hand hooves over his mouth. "He can hear everything I'm saying, can't he?"

Finally, both Leo and Silver had returned, and attached around Leo's waist was another sheath, a similar size to his other weapon.

'Looks like Alex is on top of things here as well.'

"I guess now we have to wait." Leo said.

While waiting for a reply or answer from Dwight, Silver had decided to personally go to her fathers castle to inform them of Fex's development and what she was doing. All they were doing now was patiently waiting, for one or the other to return.

The first person they heard back from was Silver. When she returned, she did so not looking the exact same as she had done before. On her back she had a large box that was slightly bigger then herself and taller. She carried it as if it was weightless.

The three were in the reception area now just waiting to hear back from Dwight, however, Quinn couldn't help but stare at the large box on Silver's back.

"My father says he is happy to hear that Fex has been found, but he is worried about us two going. There are a few problems, if the ceremony wasn't tomorrow, then he would have liked to have come himself, but this is something that can't be delayed he stated.

"Also sending a large group might startle the enemy into knowing we are coming, so he has kept his lips sealed for now. So he gave me this before leaving." Silver said, hitting the box behind her.

Other than that, she didn't say much else, leaving them to guess about the large box.

'If I'm correct, that's the thirteenth's puppet that's passed down from leader to leader.' Vincent explained. 'For her father to give her that, he must either be really worried or really trusting of her.'

'I remember Fex said one time that Silver would have made a better leader than himself for the thirteenth family, but in their family they had always had a male leader. I wonder how strong she is with the puppet? Fex was definitely skilled when controlling others.'

Finally, a royal guard had arrived at the tenth castle. First he bowed and claimed he was here on behalf of Dwight.

"I'm sorry that Dwight wasn't able to come himself, Quinn. He sincerely apologises but tomorrow is an important day and many preparations must be made." The royal guard explained.

"I work directly under Dwight and are one of his few trusted men. Dwight says he knows what you wish to tell him, he has heard the news that you have found where Fex is. Unfortunately, tomorrow is an event that can not be delayed. The king can not wait a day longer.

"As well, he thinks it's best if only a small group of people go. If it is the Bloodsuckers hideout like we suspect, they should be significantly weakened no longer having their leader there. Also many of them were killed in the attack. He grants permission for Silver and Leo to go, however Quinn. This means you must find a replacement to attend the ceremony with you tomorrow. Please inform me of who you wish to bring with you so we know beforehand."

Quinn paused for a second, he was happy that his request was granted, and knowing more about the area they were going to, lessened Quinn's worries, but he didn't expect that he would need a replacement for Leo as his vampire knight for the ceremony.

'Who to pick?' Quinn thought, and one person had entered his mind.

"I will be picking Peter Chuck." Quinn suggested with a smile on his face, "Although ask Dwight if he can look a little different at the ceremony."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 858: The Big Day

Before Leo, Silver and Ham went looking for Fex, Quinn decided to add one more person to their team. The group couldn't get too large since others would notice their movement otherwise, but adding one more shouldn't be too much of a problem.

However, the problem was picking the right person. There weren't exactly many people who could match up to Leo and Silver. There was Paul, but he would also have to be in attendance at the ceremony.

In the end, Quinn chose Nate, as he was the one least afraid to go with them, yet the main reason was him having the shadow ability, allowing Quinn to come over quickly in case something went wrong.

They set off in the middle of the night with Ham taking the lead. It was always dark in the city, but there were certain times when even the vampires would turn off all the light crystals that lit up the walls and streets.

Not wanting to be seen, their group used this opportunity to disappear.

'Boneclaw, I hope you listen to what I told you.' Quinn silently prayed as he watched the group head off.

The next day, Quinn woke up earlier than usual. It was a good thing that he didn't need much sleep because throughout the night he had been extraordinarily worried about the others. It didn't help that he still had no idea what today's ceremony would entail.

The first thing he did was attempt to get in contact with the others. Luckily, Nate had immediately answered via the mask.

"Hey I was just checking up on you guys is everything going okay?" Quinn asked.

"I would love to say yes." Nate sulked. "But despite his earlier testimony that flying little bull can't remember the exact way he came from. We've been stuck going through the forest for a while now."

"Hey, I just don't remember this exact part! As soon as we see something that I'll recognise I'll be able to lead you the rest of the way." Ham could be heard yelling from the background.

It seems that Ham had been so incredibly tired on the last part of his journey, that he couldn't recall that part with great clarity.

'Perhaps them taking a little longer isn't such a bad thing. If we can get this ceremony over and done with I'll be able quickly follow them.' Quinn thought.  
'Please endure a bit longer, Fex.'

According to Vincent it wouldn't be proper for Quinn to appear in his regular clothes, so he suggested for Quinn to fetch something from his old room.

Vincent guided him to his former quarters and it turned out that the former tenth family leader had occupied a room on the top floor, next to the room Edward used to stay in.

As he passed by Edward's room he briefly glanced inside, before continuing onward.

'We're doing this so things like this can stop happening.' Quinn reminded himself.

Entering the room he was surprised by how tidy it was.

'I didn't do this, I can only assume that Edward had tidied it up and left it this way.' Vincent theorised.

The room was large and it made the king size bed look small in comparison. However, the only thing Quinn was interested in was the walk-in wardrobe that was attached to the room. In there Quinn was introduced to a style of clothing... that made him feel sick.

'This is what you want me to wear? it all looks so... so lame.' Quinn judged the other's attire.

'You know during my time I never understood you people. I lived a very long time, and it allowed me to notice that what you humans or even some of us vampires refer to as fashion was always going around in circles. One day something was seemingly arbitrarily decided to no longer be cool, but a hundred years later it would suddenly be on trend again.'

'Clothes are just clothes. Besides, you need to wear something more formal and these ones perfectly fit the bill. You can't be wearing that military uniform from the ship all the time as if you're getting ready to go into battle."

Walking over towards the back of the walk in the wardrobe Quinn passed several clothes that were all quite similar. They were organised into sets with a dark colour on the outside, mostly black with a bright colour on the inside.

It took some time, but eventually Quinn spotted something that took his fancy.

'Will this do?' Quinn asked, pulling his choice off the railing.

Trying on the clothes Quinn thought back to something while he looked at himself in one of the many large mirrors in the room.

'Layla always said that a vampire should be dressed in red and black.' Quinn thought, as he was quite pleased with his new look.

The overcoat he was wearing was a tight fit. The front part of the coat was covered in black velvet and underneath there was a red shirt with a black collar with the top button tied up. The trousers were a perfect fit, going along with a nice pair of smart shoes.

In the past his long curly hair would have looked like a mismatch but with his new hair style he thought himself to appear quite handsome.

'It seems like after your evolution you have grown to be the perfect fit into my clothes.' Vincent agreed to his choice.

'Yeah, looks like you don't have completely bad taste, grandpa.'

'....'

'Never call me that again.' Vincent demanded dead serious.

'... Agreed.' Quinn replied.

It was meant to just be a joke about his taste in clothes, but the awkward fact remained that these two really were related and Vincent would be a few generations above his family.

Heading down to the reception room, Quinn could see that his two Vampire knights were waiting for him bright and early.

Paul, who was wearing the same military wear, and 'Leo', with a couple of swords around his waist.

"Well, I'm glad I don't have to wear that!" 'Leo' said.

Many would find 'Leo's words to be out of character for him, or very odd, but that was because the one next to Paul was Peter in disguise.

The aim of the game was not to raise any suspicions, and Peter with his Transformation skill was the best fit for that. Quinn had also entertained the idea of having Peter replace himself, but Vincent had insisted that the ceremony had parts that only he would be able to fulfill, so there was no way around attending it.

Another idea had been to get Peter to disguise himself as Fex to see the reaction of the leaders. Perhaps he could hear a change in their heart beat, or something else and he would find out who was behind everything.

However, that plan had also been thrown out the window. There was a risk that whoever was responsible might mistake Peter for the real Fex, which might have dire consequences for the captured Fex.

They hadn't killed Fex so far, and they didn't want wherever the real Fex was to be put into more danger, or risk those who had captured him to start moving him based on Quinn's actions here.

Fake Leo pulled out the swords by his side which were some spares that Alex had made and started swinging them around. The movements weren't sloppy or slow, but just had a different sound when shining them compared to Real Leo.

"Maybe you should find something that's more your style." Quinn suggested.

"I have informed everyone in the castle that they have to attend the ceremony that starts at twelve. The earlier the better and Logan will be there to allow for communication if necessary." Paul informed him.

Quinn was still worried that with him and his Vampire knight gone, it would be the perfect chance for someone to attack the place, so he wanted everyone at the ceremony.

It was unlikely that the Bloodsucker would act in front of everyone, especially all the leaders.

So in a way it was actually safer for them to attend it than stay inside the castle.

Even if it did get attacked or destroyed, it didn't matter. The tenth family were his people and not the place.

"Alright, let's get going! I have a feeling we have a big day ahead of us." Quinn threw on his overcoat and walked down the centre with his two Vampire knights behind him.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 859: Quest reminder

The ceremony was to take place in front of the King's castle. Usually the open plaza platform was filled with markets and shops that the vampires used on a day to day basis and it was currently time for the vampires to set up their stalls all over the place.

However, today was different. The whole place had been renovated and the vampires had built a special large white staircase that led up to a large platform, with large pillars on either side. On the staircase there was a flowing red carpet which led directly to the coffin. The contrast of colours made the red really stand out.

Arriving at the area were Quinn and his two Vampire knights. From the looks of it they appeared to have arrived a little earlier than any of the other leaders. Perhaps it was due to Quinn's nervousness, and him still not being told what exactly his role would be in this event.

There were plenty of Royal Guards on the premises, including some other extra helpers that were still busy getting the final preparations done. The houses nearby were getting adorned with touches of red roses to match the theme of the ceremony, and what surprised Quinn above all else was the amount of technology that was being used.

Several drones had been put in different places, which were hovering around. As a test run, large holographic screens appeared which all displayed the same thing. Right now it was the coffin on top of the platform, as well as Dwight next to it, as he was carefully making preparations.

What Quinn also noticed was a smaller coffin that had been prepared by the large one by its side.

'What's that for?' Quinn thought.

'Can't you guess?' Vincent asked. 'It's actually quite rare for a King not to be accompanied by both his Royal Knights into eternal slumber. Usually the King would assign one of the leaders to handle everything, but since Dwight had refused to pass on with the King, it looks like he has taken on the role this time.'

Quinn felt a little sad for Dwight. He must have been tired, as Vincent had known him to be a Royal Knight even during his own time. Calling him an old vampire seemed to be a bit of an understatement. Quinn suspected that he actually wanted to pass on, but just couldn't until he found out who was the one responsible for all the tumult in recent times.

Climbing the stairs, Quinn asked Dwight what his role in all of this was, and what he was to do during the event.

"Well, I'm glad you're at least properly dressed for the occasion." Dwight greeted him. His tone might have sounded happy, but his face was telling a different story. Quinn could see the signs of days and days of sleepless nights in preparation for this day.

"You shouldn't get used to this look, after all they're just borrowed clothes." Quinn replied. "Now would you please tell me what exactly it is that I have to do?"

"You see all the pillars that surround us? Each one represents one of the thirteen families. They have Roman numerals written beneath them. All you need to do is stand next to your pillar and at a certain time you will be required to touch it. When you do the flame will activate as long as you are the leader of your family."

"Your Vampire knights will have to do nothing but remain next to your pillar. Think of them as your security if you will. No interruptions are to be made, as the King will deliver his final speech. Honestly, after that point just follow along to everyone else. Since you are the tenth leader, you will be called up at a much later time, and you will have had the chance to see what the others have done."

It sounded simple enough, but Quinn couldn't help but still be nervous at what was to come.

"Did you hear that, 'Leo'" Paul said. "There are to be no interceptions! No matter what someone says."

Peter just looked at Paul and scoffed before he went towards their pillar. Paul was worried and would have much rather had the real Leo by his side, but Quinn had chosen Peter for a reason.

Standing by the pole, Quinn could see all the preparations had been made. There was even a podium built out front. Interestingly there were markings that were being drawn all over the place. Under the coffin, and elsewhere.

'What are those markings? They look similar to when vampires do Blood rituals?' Quinn asked.

'Those markings are based on vampire alchemy. I guess you could say it's the closest thing we have to magic, but honestly most of what is set up today, at some point or another, had been created through the tenth's family ability, for example the vampire rings that help block out the sunlight.'

'Originally they were the form of my ability, and then later, through reverse engineering and breaking it down, we discovered how to recreate them to the point that we could distribute them to others. Vampires are mysterious mystical beings, Quinn. Our blood, and the way we grow stronger is almost magical.' Vincent explained.

After waiting a short while, eventually all the other leaders started to show up, with their own Vampire knights by their side.

Each one passed Quinn, briefly talked to Dwight before they got into their position.

The ones that gave him the most menacing stares were both Bryce and the new Sixth leader. It looked like they still held a grudge against Quinn for killing their leader.

When Cindy came up, she noticed that someone else was giving her a menacing look.

'That's the infamous Vampire knight from the tenth family? I heard he is quite the strong one, but why is that disgusting man giving me such a look? I don't recall ever seeing him before.'

When everyone was there, Dwight went through the schedule with them. Making sure that each one knew the proper order of things and what had to be done.

Surprisingly neither the King nor his accompanying Royal knight Kubit had arrived yet.

Finally though, vampires from all different families were entering the plaza area. They swarmed in like an army of ants, and it looked like nearly every vampire from each family had come to pay the King his last tribute.

"Since we never leave the settlement, I didn't know there were this many vampires." Wevil noted surprised as he looked around.

The Cursed family had also arrived and they chose to stay together. Mostly being led by Linda, and Dennis.

"The red on the staircase really stands out." Linda commented.

"Well, I guess it matches the blood theme." Dennis added.

Even Logan and Sil attended, alongside little Borden, who was currently resting on Sil's shoulder. It turned out that with a few costume changes they had succeeded in passing off Borden as a familiar and there weren't many who bat an eyelid at seeing him as well.

Of course, the three of them were wearing the special spray that would cover up their scent.

Even though they were outdoors, it seemed like most people who were initially looking at them and were interested in them, turned their attention to the special

platform that had been built. For many vampires, the changing of a King was a very important moment, one which they weren't guaranteed to ever see in their lifetime.

A leader maybe, but a King was different.

When Dwight walked up to the podium, the whole crowd went silent.

"We are here today to mark a special occasion! The man we all know as our King has looked after all of our lives for many, many years and changed it for the better. He has put the people's needs before himself, time and time again!"

"After all these years, he has finally chosen that the time has come for him to move on and pass the crown on to a new generation. Before taking his rest, the King has some final words he would like to say to all of you who have come today."

As soon as Dwight's speech had ended, the large double doors by the King's castle opened up and the King stepped out, donned in blood red armour. Slightly behind him was his Royal Vampire Knight, both of them graciously walked towards the stage.

There was a staircase identical to the one on the platform side and the drones were there to capture everything.

When walking up the stairs, he did so without any help, and although he tried his best to look strong, Quinn could see that his legs were slightly shaking.

'He looks completely different to the last time I saw him, what happened?' Quinn thought.

'Hard to say, although if I were to wager a guess, he must have used that power. Absolute blood control.' Vincent said. 'It's a power so great that it takes the life force of its user.'

"Absolute blood control?" Quinn thought, not knowing full well just how special a position it was for one to become a King.

Seeing the King, a ding sound sounded inside his and soon a voice followed.

[Quest reminder]

[Become the Vampire King]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 860: Farewell

The quest screen that appeared in front of Quinn's face was quickly dismissed. Quinn had already decided that he would ignore this quest. With everything going on, he had no desire to participate in a popularity competition against the already established two sides.

He was considered an outsider, so even if he did try to win the others' votes, would there be anyone willing to stay by his side?

'It's just not possible, so stop thinking about it Quinn! Maybe in the next century when all the current leaders have been replaced it might be something you can consider.'

Nevertheless, he couldn't help but be curious about it. Becoming King was such a mammoth task that the rewards were guaranteed to blow him away. The reminder of the quest made him even more aware that the current King was about to go to sleep and a new one would be selected.

Standing up on the podium, King Numan stood there on his own, with his hands grasping around it. For a brief moment, while he held his speech, the King did his best to leave behind a strong image, not wanting his people to remember him as a weak looking man.

"I still remember the day when I first became King. It continues to be my greatest honor to have moved from the twelfth seat to my current position. It came as much of a surprise to my younger self at the time, yet the leaders of my generation had all agreed that I was the best candidate to lead us towards a peaceful future.'

"Peace'... it is something us vampires have been longing for, and I'm elated that we were able to maintain for the longest time under my rule. The only regret I leave behind as I go to sleep, will be the fact that it appears at the end of my time someone intends to rob us of our peace."

"Still, the message I want to leave you all before I go will be one of peace. As King, I did everything in power to protect our race. Every choice I made was to stop internal conflict between ourselves! Although we're split up into thirteen families and I originally came from the twelfth family, ever since I became King I only saw us as one big family!"

"And so I hope that this generation's leaders may select someone who might share my ideology, who I would happily acknowledge as my successor. May we all continue living a fulfilling life for the future!" The King finished his speech and roars of cheers erupted so loud that it felt like the whole planet was shaking.

'This King... it's a shame I never got the chance to witness his rule during my time. He seems to be loved by the people.' Vincent commented. 'You know Quinn, you have only had a taste of what it's like to be a leader, but haven't had much

difficulties due to the circumstances you are in. Still, your followers all wish to follow you and are indebted to you. However the same can't be said for someone like the Vampire King.'

'There are those that may hate him or despise him, yet he must still rule over them with a cool head, placing their needs on the same level as those who deeply care about him. I know you want to create a certain type of world for the humans, but there will always be those against you, who think there is a better way than the one you envision.'

After the King finished his speech, he stepped back, allowing Royal Knight Kubit to also leave behind a last speech. His was short and sweet, and at the end he also received a round of applause, yet unsurprisingly it paled in comparison to the King's.

Kubit went ahead and stood by his own coffin to the side of the King's, but it looked like things weren't over with. Heading back to the podium, Dwight placed a book on the podium.

Quinn immediately noticed this wasn't any ordinary book. What's more it looked nearly identical to the one he had obtained his abilities from. A red gem was in the middle of the book, but it appeared dull.

"I shall now lay down my Absolute blood control ability!" King Numan declared, and placed both hands on the book.

The pillar underneath started to glow bright red, and the veins on the King's forearms could be seen popping out from his hands. They were deedly red, as if his own blood was being sucked in by the book, pulsing each time with strange power.

After a few moments, the red crystal on top of the book started glowing and the King let go of the book looking weaker than ever before. He took a step back with his legs weak and stumbled.

Dwight, paying attention to the King the entire time, was able to catch him before something happened to him.

"My King, you did a great job. May you rest in peace now." Dwight whispered.

'What just happened? What's with that book?' Quinn asked.

'That book is something that will only be handed down to the next Vampire King. Inside it is stored great power. The book is unlike the ability books you know and it works more similar to your system. There are no words describing how one could learn the ability and only great power inside.' Vincent explained.

'Opening the book will allow the person to inherit the power of Absolute blood control. It's said that you will receive the memories of the previous Kings and their understanding of the ability.'

'Absolute blood control? If it's something only the King of the vampires could learn, I'm guessing it's quite strong.' Quinn stated.

'Quite strong is an understatement. If my history is correct, Arthur's power was greater than anyone expected in the past. That one shouldn't be surprising since they needed the Punisher's power to be greater than the leaders to have the desired effect. However, there was always the fear that maybe the Punisher might decide to turn against the vampires.'

'After all, whatever the King would get the Punisher would get as well. They both received Blood armour and more, but as time went on Arthur's strength only continued to grow. So something was made so the King would have equal power, and that was the Absolute blood power.'

'Let me guess, it also just happens to be something your family ability created again? Did you happen to notice that your ability seems to be the common cause of a lot of problems nowadays?' Quinn mentioned with a mix of slight annoyance and frustration.

'... yes, but can you really blame the blacksmith for what happens with the sword he forges when he was hired to do so? You have to bear in mind how my ability works. The greater the power that it bestows, the greater the cost. I can't imagine what my predecessors have used in the past, or how many lives had been sacrificed to create such a book. If it was up to me, that book would be destroyed!'

"Now we will begin the sealing process of the book!" Dwight announced loudly.  
"Leader of the first family, Bryce Cain, please come to the podium!"

Looking carefully Quinn realised that soon it would be his turn to finally actively participate in this ceremony. When Bryce went up to the stage, he made a small cut on the palm of his hand and let it drop onto the top of the book. After that he went back to his pillar and the next leader was called.

It looked like every leader was doing the same.

'What is the point of this?' Quinn asked.

'The blood of every leader will be used to seal the book. You remember how you were unable to open the book your parents had until your blood was spilt on it? Well this will be the same. After the next King or Queen is selected, he or she will receive the blood from all the leaders which will then be used to unseal the book again.'

Quinn was thankful for this. He had already experienced Arthur's strength and didn't want to face someone of similar strength to him anytime soon.

"Leader of the tenth family, Quinn Talen, please come to the podium!" Dwight shouted.

Quinn walked towards it very stiff. The main reason was him being worried that something was about to happen. He had a bad feeling about this entire ceremony, yet so far everything had progressed without any hiccups.

Then, when he finally reached the podium he could see everyone down below watching him.

All the vampires standing there staring at him. The wave of eyes hit him and a strange feeling entered his body.

'Is this what it feels like to be King?' Quinn wondered.

Cutting his hand, a drop of blood dropped onto the book and he returned to his pillar. The last two leaders were called and with that the book was sealed.

Dwight held the book in his hands, securing it tightly.

"Now everyone, it is time to let our King go into eternal slumber." Dwight announced.

Walking towards the large coffin, the door opened up automatically for him. No one helped him, as King Numan used his weak hands to climb into the coffin himself.

Quinn found it strange seeing one climbing into their own final resting place while still fully alive, but then when he laid down, the red markings that were drawn underneath the coffin activated and the lid had closed itself.

The King had finally gone to sleep without any interruptions at all, and with that the ceremony was over. It had been a complete success.

But it was the fact that the ceremony had finished as a complete success that worried Quinn all the more.

'This whole thing has gone too smoothly... Does it mean the person responsible has gotten what they wanted?'

It was hard to say, but with everyone dismissed, it was time for the council leaders to meet up, and plead their case on who should become the next King or Queen of the vampires.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 861: Chapter sides

As soon as the ceremony was over, the people at the plaza square started to leave the area. They were all heading back to either their homes or to the inner castle areas.

All of them had only one question on their mind.

'Who would be the next King?'

With all the vampires being under certain families most of them had their personal bias, but fortunately this decision wasn't up to them. It was down to the family leaders to decide between, just as it had always been the case in the past.

They used the King's castle as their meeting place. The one in charge of that was the one who had been in charge of the ceremony, which was none other than Dwight.

In past generations it had been relatively easy to decide on one person, as oftentimes one leader had managed to earn the respect of all of his peers. However, over time the families ended up split into two sides. Rather than growing closer together over time, they had somehow grown further apart.

Dwight was slightly afraid that both sides could end up having a conflict, but there was a good reason why he was confident that nothing would happen... at least not until the new King had been agreed upon by the rest, giving him more time.

The reason was that Dwight was the one who would keep the Absolute blood control book until that happened. With only him knowing the location.

All of the leaders with their Vampire knights entered the council room and sat down at their respective seats while their knights stood beside them. The tension in the room was a little unbearable for Quinn.

Sometimes when entering they would look towards him in disgust. Others would be talking to each other, but there was no sound at all, and this time they weren't only looking at him. Still, he did receive the odd stare now and then.

When everyone was seated, Dwight came out on his own, standing behind the seat which was reserved for the King. It was a little odd just seeing Dwight, but there were still the Royal Guards in the room which would listen to his command until the next King was chosen.

"It's time for me to explain a few things, as not everyone here has been through a change of the crown. Those of you new to this listen very carefully as I don't wish to repeat myself. If I need to then it would just prove that you are incompetent to take such an important position." Dwight stated firm and strongly.

"Each of you will have the option to speak or remain silent. If you choose to speak up, then you should use the time to either present your case to the other leaders why you think you would be best suited for the role of King or you can explain why you think another person who you think is best suited for the role. Please make note, that at this point and time you will merely state your opinion. It will not be counted as your vote, but merely you speaking your current set of mind!"

"Once everyone has spoken, you will have a week to consider who to vote for and everyone shall return here once again to cast their votes. Now this next bit is extremely important, so listen up. Things have changed slightly compared to the past. Now to obtain the seat one MUST obtain seven or more votes from the council table! And one is able to vote for themselves."

"If the voting is inconclusive and a majority vote is not decided, then we will have to default to our old tradition. A leader can challenge another in a sacred duel to claim their vote!"

'What?! How stupid is that?!' Quinn screamed internally about this nonsense way of handling things. 'What's the bloody point of us voting in the first place then?'

'For a long time tradition in the past had stated that the strongest vampire should become leader. This was because it was something that pleased the public. The vampires would at least be willing to follow who they believed as the strongest.'

'Besides, a good King should have been able to get the other leaders on his side beforehand, don't you think? If the leaders agreed together on one person who was most suited for the role, then the vampires in their families would naturally comply, believing in their leaders' decision. In the end this was decided just as a way to stop arguments, and two sides from clashing. All families at one point or another had agreed to these rules.' Vincent explained.

'If it comes to that, if one side can't get the majority vote, then does that mean Bryce would become King, just because he's stronger than all the other leaders?' Quinn asked.

Vincent chuckled internally.

'Only if he wins against the person he chooses. Theoretically, if he chose you and you beat him you would get his vote. Essentially the duel is also a double edged sword because then you would also obtain his vote after beating him. So a leader must be confident if it comes to this.'

"Okay, we will now start with the first leader, who I believe doesn't need any extra introduction." Dwight said, taking a seat next to the king's throne.

When one was ready to speak, they would stand up and state their point and as the first family leader, Bryce got the first chance to do so.

"Us vampires have lived on this planet in hiding for far too long. We hold such great power yet for some reason we force ourselves to live in the dark. We now have technology better than anyone else in the other worlds! With the help of our rings we can even walk under the sun, yet we still continue to stay here!"

"I, for one, want a better life for our race! Where we don't have to worry about limiting the amount of people we have! Where we don't have to hide in fear! Do I want war? No! Of course, I don't want that! I understand that some of you like your life here, and I'm not against that, however, you all saw that it was the humans who attacked us first!"

Saying this, Paul looked down with his head in shame.

'We weren't the aggressors, we were attacked the moment we came on this planet.' He wanted to argue, but he understood his best course of action was to keep his mouth shut.

"They have come for us once, so who says they won't come again? Just like the previous King I want peace, but that can only be achieved if the humans want peace as well! If the humans decide to wage war against us, then our race will need a strong King who can lead them, not one who will bend over to every single one of their demands! If you will have me, I shall be that person for you!"

After Bryce had finished speaking, there were many at the table who nodded in agreement.

Since the order was that of the families once again, the next person to make their case was Cindy Cha. She stood up, fluffing her black dress a few times and cleared her throat before pleading her own case.

"I believe we can all agree that the previous King did a great job! Our lives have gotten better under his rule, and I believe that we can continue to improve our lives WITHOUT getting involved with others! I would like to become his successor and continue his ideal."

"There are many beautiful people, even in the Human World that should not perish. Just as there are bad humans, there are bad and ugly vampires as well. We're no better than them, we are both just different. I feel it's a shame that there are vampires hurting each other even at this very moment. I agree that if we were attacked we should deal with it appropriately, but just the same way as if other vampires were attacking us, like we have been doing."

With that Cindy sat back down, and those on her side nodded.

As they went around the room, the third leader Suzan forfeited her claim to become Queen and instead nominated Bryce. She wasn't the only one, as the new sixth

family leader Jake Muscat, the seventh family leader Kyle Dawn, and the eighth family leader Jill Snacker all did the same.

All others had nominated Cindy so far, which was the expected result. Unless anything unforeseen happened, Cindy would tie with Bryce, making his vote indeed the tiebreaker.

Finally it was Quinn's turn to speak. He stood up but froze for a second as he hadn't actually decided what to say. Dwight made it clear that whatever Quinn said today wouldn't be counted as a vote, but if he didn't clearly state which one of the sides he supported, in the weeks time it could just make matters worse.

'If I don't give up my vote now, will Cindy think I'm going against her? I'm sure she might understand that I don't openly want to antagonise Bruce..'

"I, at the moment, remained undecided and would like to hear out the rest." Quinn stated.

"That is fine, Quinn you may sit down."

At this moment, Quinn didn't even want to look at Cindy or the others for their reaction, but the hearing continued, and as expected the two sides were equally split down the middle.

"So we have heard from everyone here today. In a week's time an actual vote will be cast, and I have to warn you Quinn. During that time, if you are not able to come to a decision regarding your vote, either side could challenge you to a duel to force your vote." Dwight reminded him.

When the meeting left, there was one person standing there more confused than ever at what he had just heard, and he felt like he had figured something out.

'I knew there was something up with that hag!' Peter thought, clenching his fist as he stared towards Cindy. During the meeting he had realised something, that might change whose side Quinn would be on...

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 862: Clever Peter

Quinn was starting to doubt his earlier decision. Perhaps it would have been wiser overall to openly nominate Cindy. At least that way he would have the backup of the leaders on Cindy's side and they would be sure to protect him.

However, Dwight's words kept ringing in his head that he shouldn't trust anyone!

Honestly, before he cast his vote for anyone he would prefer to find out the truth about who was behind the attacks. After learning what happened to Kazz, he wasn't so sure it was Bryce anymore.

At the end of the day, he had made his decision of not nominating anyone and he would have to live with it. Unfortunately, this meant that now it looked like both sides were after him and his vote. As they left the room, Cindy gave Quinn a quick glance before she turned her head almost immediately.

"Maybe we should wait for the others to leave first." Paul suggested since, once again, all the attention was on their group. Dwight had already left the room, looking as if he had something urgent to do. If Quinn was to wager a guess, the Royal Knight might be hiding the book in a safe place.

The tenth family waited a couple more minutes after the last leader had left, before they stepped out of the room, only to have someone attempt to grab Quinn. Thanks to his quick reflexes he knocked the hand away and took a few steps back.

"What are you doing?" Quinn asked, as he identified his attacker.

"I thought we had made a deal?" Cindy's sharp tone accused him.

'Leo' was furious. The second family leader had already attacked him once, and now she had attempted to take out Quinn as well! He was ready to leap off his feet, the only thing keeping him back was the knowledge that Quinn wouldn't want him to act in this way.

"Quinn, I need to tell you something about her!" 'Leo' blurted out.

However, Paul was the one that now grabbed his fellow Vampire knight and pulled him to the side.

"Let's go for now. Whatever you need to say to him don't say it here. There are too many ears including hers." He whispered.

Worried that there might be a big fight about to happen, Quinn peeked at those behind him.

"Head back to the castle for now, make sure everything is okay there and report to me once you reach it. Move now." Quinn ordered.

The two of them moved quickly, leaving Quinn with an impatient Cindy who was still waiting for an explanation from Quinn.

"Don't look at me like I'm the bad one here. I wasn't going to hurt them and just wanted to ask you what the hell you were thinking! You better have a very good reason for doing that. I've already fulfilled my end of the deal. Did Bryce make you a better offer than us? Or did he perhaps threaten you?"

"Aren't you doing the same thing to me now?!" Quinn accused her as he stood his ground. "Let me tell you, I don't like being threatened!"

Cindy, hearing these words could tell Quinn was serious. From this breath interaction she didn't feel like Quinn could be convinced through threats of action. No, the person before her was stupid and fearless. Only that type of person would have attempted to save Fex's life at his execution.

"Looks like he didn't get to you. Still, in case he does, you should know that our side is plenty strong as well. I kept my word, Quinn Talen, I hope so will you." And with that she walked out as if nothing had happened.

'Yeah, seems like Peter was dead-on about her being crazy... didn't even let me explain myself properly. Will it really be alright if I vote for her?' Quinn wondered.

'Of course you can, but then get ready to be asked for a duel from them to get your vote. I'm pretty sure both Bryce and Cindy believe they can take you on. Even if you win, you would just be faced with another duel after.' Vincent explained.

Waiting a short while, Quinn wanted to stay clear of Cindy and any other leaders who might have stayed behind for some 'talk'. He was ready to do his own investigation and find out if Leo and Silver had found out anything. Just as he was about to contact them though, once again another leader came out of the works, this time being Muka.

"Quinn, I was surprised you have chosen not to vote for us. Is it because of Fex?" Muka asked him directly. "Personally, I don't think you made a bad choice. With Bryce holding Fex then it is something he could use against you. Switching sides might even appear worse."

"But even now, Lee has still chosen to side with us, despite what is happening. You need to harden your will. This week will be tough for all of us and will be the last time anyone will be able to make any moves. As the tiebreaker, you should be extra careful." Muka cautioned. "Oh and in regards to your other demand, I have a list of the criminals that you are free to take. Would you like me to send them to your castle?"

Thinking about it, Quinn wasn't so sure if it was a good idea to send vampire criminals to where his family resided at the current time. According to Vincent it was hard for vampires to actually punish each other due to the family bonds and with Punishers no longer being a thing, the only thing they could do was lock them up. Unless their crimes were so grave.

For this reason, none of the leaders really minded handing them over to Quinn. At least that way it would be his family's problem to deal with them. No, what Quinn was afraid of was that some of them might add a couple of spies into the mix, who might attack the tenth castle from within.

They had few people in the first place, and he doubted the other families would help them keep control of the captives.

'Leo, Silver, you will just have to wait, I promise this will be better for us.' Quinn thought.

"Would it be possible if you could take me to them instead?" Quinn asked. If he could meet the criminals and cast his Shadow eater skill on them, it would increase his powers before meeting up with Leo and Silver.

"That is not a problem, please follow me to the tunnels." Muka stated, a bit surprised.

Back at the castle, everyone had already arrived, including 'Leo' and Paul. They made sure that everyone was there safely and once they were inside, Peter took off his disguise, a small grin indicating he was happy to look like his regular self again.

There was no one missing which was good, and it didn't look like anyone had been hurt by anything.

"Do you mind telling me what that was all about earlier on?" Paul asked Peter.  
"With Cindy?"

"Oh." Peter replied. "Sure, but I just need to check something first."

Walking off, before raising alarm, and accusing a leader, Peter realised he needed to make sure he wasn't jumping to conclusions. Now it was time to verify his conclusion, and for that he needed one other person.

Walking around, Peter eventually found Layla. The two of them had been in the second castle together a while ago.

"Do you mind if we talk somewhere quite together?" Peter asked, and the two moved to one of the empty storage rooms, with the door closed behind them.

"Don't worry I'm not going to do anything to you. I wouldn't touch Quinn's girl." Peter commented.

"Who said I was Quinn's girl!" Layla's face went bright red and her voice became high pitched.

"Look, I don't care if you have the hots for Quinn or Vorden. What I do care about is making sure they're okay. Do you remember when we were at the second family leader's place, and we stumbled across their meeting room? Do you mind describing to me each person you saw?" Peter asked.

Layla, went ahead and described every single person and once she was done, it was just like Peter had thought.

"What's wrong?" Layla asked.

"The thing is, all those that you mentioned just now voted for Cindy in the meeting room. However, I saw that Cindy would continuously have meetings with the same people over and over, and those people were involved. That makes sense, but what confuses me is that there was one person that always met up with Cindy... but she voted for Bryce today. I know, she's up to something." Peter stated.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 863: Catching up

After figuring out that Cindy may be up to something, Peter had stormed out of the room before even thinking about his next set of actions, or talking it out with Layla.

"Wait!" Layla shouted, but Peter had already closed the door behind him, not listening to what she had to say.

She thought about what he had said and wondered if it really was a big deal. When Layla had gone over to see Cindy, she had been nothing but nice to her, and she still believed that Peter was a little out of order.

'The leaders see each other all the time, and maybe the other one was just visiting Cindy trying to convince her? Who was the leader that Peter was going on about anyway?' There were times when Layla had chosen to stay in the room while Peter left constantly to spy on Cindy.

Layla still didn't have a clear idea which leader Peter was exactly referring to.

'Arghh! You can't just run out like that and not say anything. Now it's going to drive me nuts!' Eventually Layla left the room as well in search of Peter, as she couldn't leave him be, but he was nowhere to be seen. The castle was vast after all.

Eventually, after some time wandering around, she spotted Cia instead, who lately had been doing her own thing more often than before. When the two of them met eyes, Cia gave a brief wave. The interaction between the two just seemed a bit off compared to before.

'Didn't Cia meet with Cindy as well? Maybe she can give some insight?'

"Hey, you met with Cindy along with Nate recently, right?" Layla asked. "Do you mind if the two of us talk about it, it would also be nice to catch up as well. It's been a while."

Cia had no problem and agreed to have a chat. The two of them went off for a short walk while talking with each other, and eventually Layla popped the question about Cindy.

"What did you think of her, when you saw her?" Layla asked.

"She seemed nice, actually she was really nice to me. I didn't really see any problems with her. Why, is something wrong?" Cia asked, knowing full well the question wouldn't have been asked for no reason.

Layla took a second before thinking about what to say. She was still deciding whether she should mention it or not, but looking at Cia, she could see the good

friend she had made in the last year. The two of them had even gone through many trials together.

"It's about Peter, he thinks that she may be up to something because he saw her with one of the leaders, but I'm really not too sure myself." Layla said.

She was expecting a response, but Cia had just remained silent, deep in her thoughts for a while.

"So... you think somethings up as well?" Layla asked.

"No, no not at all. I was just thinking about something unrelated. I'm sure it's like you said, just an over reaction. Anyway, I'm feeling a little tired so I'm going to go ahead and take a nap." Cia said. Soon after, she quickly took off down the hallway to where her room was, but once she had lost sight of Layla she no longer headed towards her room. Instead she was heading out of the castle and planning to meet a certain person.

'Is Peter planning something, if so I should at least inform Cindy of it, right?' Cia thought.

---

Being escorted by Muka through the underground tunnels, Quinn was staying cautious. Muka was the leader that had access to the codes that allowed him to travel between each family area, and it certainly was something that would be of use if one was to attack the other families.

No matter how nice Muka was to Quinn, he couldn't clear him off as one of the suspects.

After walking through a maze of complex tunnels, they eventually came to an area Quinn had never been to before, even the tunnels looked slightly different and were wider than the last before.

"Criminals imprisoned for petty crimes are kept near my castle at the moment, but for those who have committed crimes that are more severe, they are sent here." Muka said, as he unlocked another one of the tunnel's locks.

The tunnel led them to the surface, and when they got out, Quinn could see that they were now standing in front of a castle that had clearly been left untouched for a long time.

"The fourteenth castle." Quinn blurted out.

"Yes, before criminals would be brought here regularly. I don't know if you know much of our past but there is a reason why executions aren't done by certain families." Muka started to explain.

Of course, knowing about the reason why Arthur was made punisher in the first place, Quinn knew about the original vampires.

The two of them carried on walking through the abandoned castle, eventually coming across several more locks. Whenever Muka would open these doors, he would use a specific glove.

'Is this to do with his ability, does it allow him to unlock all the doors or something?' Quinn wondered as he watched.

'No,' Vincent replied. 'The ninth family's ability is a little unique, let's just say an element of luck is involved.'

As usual, Vincent liked to speak to Quinn in riddles, even if Quinn thought it wasn't the appropriate time for it.

The two of them didn't enter the castle's numerous rooms but instead arrived in the inner castle area, where there was a large square building in the centre. The outside had no windows at all and there was only one entrance at the front, with the same lock system the tunnels had.

"I know you didn't get a chance to look at the reports, but the criminals in here have been here for a long time. And trust me, if they are in here they have done terrible, unspeakable crimes." Said Muka.

"Then why did Fex receive such a harsh punishment?" Quinn questioned.

"A lot of that was pushed through Bryce, as stated I felt like he had an ulterior motive back then just as he did now. At the same time, the difference was his crimes were to do with the leaders, whereas crimes composed of just vampires between themselves aren't as publicly punished as others."

Eventually, Quinn and Muka had entered the strange building, and walked past a variety of different types of creatures in cells. There were many creatures that Quinn had never seen before.

"What are these?" Quinn asked.

"When the punishers left, some of the subclasses that are uncontrollable were kept here, and in some instances they could be used for fighting. Don't you remember when Paul's men came and how they sent an army of Wendigos? Well this is where they kept them."

"Do you have an interest in these creatures as well?" Muka asked.

"No, these are just wild beasts." Quinn replied.

The truth was, he couldn't use the skill shadow eater on anything but other vampires.

In front of the two, there was a cell and inside there were ten vampires, whose eyes appeared dead. They had no reaction whatsoever to Quinn or Muka entering. They sat there completely still and lifeless. They looked hungry, it was clear they were only living on the minimal amount of blood to survive.

"Did you want me to bring them over to your place, or is there something else you wish to do with them?" Muka asked.

"I just want to make sure, you stated that these criminals have already been told that they will live here forever, suffering. There will be no punishments for what I do to them..." Quinn stated.

Muka was now wondering just what Quinn was trying to do before answering, but the deal had already been made and no one cared what happened to these criminals.

Seeing how weak they already were, Quinn had no need to do anything else.

"It's up to them what they want to do after this." Quinn said as he threw both of his hands together and activated the giant shadow eater skill.

They didn't try to run, and they didn't try to fight back as the shadow monster gobbled them up. A few seconds later and screams of pain were heard from them all. Not looking at them, Quinn turned around and was ready to head back to his castle.

[Shadow eater skill successful]

[100 MC points has been added]

'I need to catch up to Arthur.' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 864: Moving forward

For a second, Quinn thought it was a shame that there weren't more criminals in the cells, but that thought quickly left his mind, and he felt a little sick. Vampires seemed to be quite law-abiding, considering how many were in the cells. He understood why based on the strictness of some of their rules. It seemed like it was ingrained in their culture to follow their leader's orders. Some not even having a choice with the bond.

Still, just like with any society, there would be those that broke the rules.

One of the agreements for Quinn's vote was to hand over any criminals that hurt the tenth as well. Ever since then, there didn't seem to be a single incident. At least that's what the reports said. He didn't know if they were listening to their leaders or they were keeping it a secret from him.

He was hoping he could somehow utilize this as well, but there was no such luck.

As he walked away, he could hear the screams of those behind him in their cells, crying out in pain, feeling like the sun was burning their skin. However, it soon stopped. He was unsure if Muka had decided to give them a quick end to their suffering, which was unlikely, or if they had taken their own lives. The fact that this was more likely was more upsetting. They already looked on the brink of death, but had hung on for some reason, yet the punishment Quinn had given pushed them over the edge.

'They were criminals. They had already done bad things.' Quinn repeated to himself.

'Sacrifice the few to save the many.' Vincent said. 'It seems you are starting to understand the way the leaders on top have to start thinking. Yes, every person is important, but at some point, you really do just have to look at them as numbers.'

At the moment, Quinn had a total of 300 MC points to use his shadow ability, and that was just from ten criminals. Seeing this number, Quinn could only imagine how many MC points Arthur must have gathered.

He had been doing this job for a long time, and it was clear he had used the shadow eater skill on a lot more than just ten vampires. He had even seen him use the skill on one of the leaders, and it probably wasn't the first time either.

'Will I be able to get strong enough in time?' Quinn questioned himself, but it was the only thing he could do.

Heading back to his own castle, Quinn could tell that his mask was receiving a call. Now that he had told the others to keep in contact with him more, he no longer kept

it in his dimensional space, and instead by his side. When someone was trying to contact him, similar to an old mobile phone, it vibrated.

'Speak.' Quinn said bluntly, not in the best of moods after what he had just done.

"Quinn, it's Peter. I wanted to tell you something. I couldn't find you, so I went looking for Logan, who contacted you. I was worried that she might have gotten to you already." Peter explained.

"She?"

"Yes, the second leader. I don't really know the details of the deal you made with her, but it would be best if you didn't work with her. When I stayed at her castle, I did a little snooping. She would meet with the other leaders frequently, and today, every single one of them she met with voted for her, but there was one leader she would always meet on her own and more so than the others."

It wasn't enough to go on, but at the moment, Quinn was looking for any leads, and after seeing how she had acted and how she was fighting over the position with Bryce. It would make sense if she attacked Kazz as well, although Fex was still a mystery.

"Do you know who that leader is?" Quinn asked. Thinking maybe Cindy wasn't behind it all, but this person who had switched sides, someone else who had a deciding vote other than Quinn could be.

"Yeah, it was another female leader, the eighth leader," Peter said. "Be careful."

'The eighth leader Jill, but why would she attack the tenth family?' Quinn thought.

However, just like Muka, who could utilize the tunnels well for a surprise attack bypassing the other leaders, Jill was also one of those with an ability that would help her.

She was in charge of all the communication between the leaders and important figures, so she would have had the best idea of what was going on. And while she could listen in on all the conversation happening, the same couldn't be said for the other way round.

'Don't forget there is also the possibility that there is more than one person behind this Quinn.' Vincent stated. "We can't be thinking so limited.'

'But then why would Jill vote for Bryce? Unless Bryce and Jill are working together and he really did go against his own daughter.' It was giving him a headache. There were two people involved that could probably give him an answer.

One of them being Fex, but he had his memories removed, and the other being Kazz. Using the mask, Quinn went ahead and requested to contact the others, and eventually, Nate had answered.

"Is this Quinn?" Nate asked.

"Yeah, how are things going?"

"Ham eventually found a way towards their base, and he thinks we're heading in the right direction. He was right, it really is far, and we're moving a bit slow since he's the one that has to direct us. If anything comes up we can contact you."

Listening about it, it didn't seem like if Quinn joined them now, he would be any help, nor did they need him there. His time would have been better used elsewhere, and he knew just the thing.

"Good, because I think I'm going to be a little busy on my end of things," Quinn replied, ending the call.

Using his shadow travel, Quinn first stopped by at the royal guard contact he was to use to contact Dwight. He delivered the message giving the information that he had found out from Peter. Maybe with his own research, this clue would be something that would put the pieces together for him to have for a suspect. It was clear Dwight was keeping some things from him, he must have found out things on his own by now.

After the information was given, Quinn headed back to the tenth castle, and the first thing he did was enter the reputation shop on his system. The front towers by the inner castle area were upgraded to level four.

Then at the two other gates, that were connected to the other castle. Quinn placed two more towers and upgraded them by one level. Finally, in front of the castle, Quinn placed another gargoyle looking statue by the side of the door.

At this point, all of his reputation points he had earned were spent.

"Whoa, look at that, the tenth's just gone and made more of those tower things form before." A vampire pointed out.

"Are they preparing for something? Why would he build such things in his own castle area? It's like he thinks a war is going to happen or something."

"Well, they did get attacked not too long ago. Maybe he just wants to make sure it doesn't happen again. I guess the leader really cares about his people."

'Quinn, are you preparing for something, I feel like you're doing this now for a reason.' Vincent asked.

'Leo, is away and he's quite the strong force we have lost. I want to make sure while everyone is here, if I can't get to them and something happens. Then at least this can delay them.'

'You sound like you've already planned to do something?'

'Of course.' Quinn replied. 'I can't just stand here and wait a week for them to do what they want and come to me. Hopefully, Leo and Silver can save Fex, but with his memories gone, that won't help us at all, but there is one person that Bryce has been keeping away from the others, and it has to be for a reason.'

'So, I'm going to sneak into the first leader's castle, and ask Kazz, what happened that day.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 865: An obsession

It had been days since Kazz's beaten body was found pinned up on the back of a house down a dark alleyway, and yet there was still no news from the first family about the incident. Was it pride, anger or something else that made them hide this information?

But what concerned Quinn more than any of these things was that no one had seen Kazz either. Covering up what happened to her was one thing, but as a vampire, healing wounds were easy as long as they had blood. Which meant Bryce was hiding something by keeping her indoors.

With the other group approaching Fex's location, Quinn believed finding out the truth might just help them out or clear them of a danger they might be running towards.

'Are you sure you want to do this? If you get spotted, then there will be serious punishment.' Vincent said worriedly. 'A leader sneaking into another leader's castle, they are bound to think you are up to no good, especially with everything going on.'

'There are two reasons why I think it will be okay.' Quinn replied as he took off his clothes from the ceremony. They were beyond uncomfortable and would make him stand out if he was caught. 'When Muka made the suggestion, part of the reason I didn't want to go was in case it was a set up. It's been a while since then, so he probably thinks I'm no longer going to do this.'

'The other thing is my shadow cloak ability. Yes, it can still be detected from others like leaders and knights, but getting past regular vampires isn't really a problem. Third, even if I do get caught, I won't look like myself.' Quinn said, looking in a mirror.

In the reflection, Quinn didn't look like himself at all. Instead, he looked like one of the vampires from the settlement. Someone who was from the first family, but not part of the inner circle. Normal flat black hair, with a regular face, and was kind of plain looking.

"Perfect, Peter's soul weapon really does come in handy for situations like these, and with Logan's spray, I can't tell the difference between my own smell and others," Quinn stated, looking proud of himself.

'Let's just ignore the fact that you said two reasons and stated three. Maths really isn't your strong point is it?' Vincent commented.

Quinn was no fool that his actions might lead to something big, but everyone seemed to be making big actions before him, and to match them, he needed to make movements as well.

Before leaving, Quinn met up with Paul and gave a stark warning.

"You need to prepare them for the worst soon, with the king's election coming up next week, I'm sure the other families will make their move, or if someone doesn't get the result, they wanted this whole place could turn into another vampire Civil war, and our group just isn't strong enough."

"What I want is for the tenth family, is to just not get involved with outside affairs. We will stay here, make a stronghold and protect everyone within. Whenever I can, I'm going to keep improving everything around this place."

With that, it was time for Quinn to make his move. Using the shadow cloak while in the vampire world practically made him invisible. It was easy for him to move through his own castle area, and beyond without being spotted.

Of course, it would have been fine for him to just use the disguise but he wanted to see how well his shadow cloak would work. Once in a while, there was a vampire in the settlement that had better senses than others and would look towards Quinn's direction, but they would ignore him when they saw anything, to them it was just a feeling something was there and they weren't certain.

'Looks like this will work out after all.' Quinn thought.

Eventually, Quinn reached the first castle area, and the first thing he noticed compared to the other castles, was the amount of guards standing by the gate was three times as much as by the others.

'Maybe he is accepting someone to make a move?' Vincent thought.

'Well, he wouldn't be wrong, or it just means he has something to hide.'

Instead of going through the front gate, Quinn decided to scale the walls instead. The shadow cloak would remain active as long as he didn't use any other skills or got hit while doing so. The walls were also filled with guards but there were far fewer and with Quinn's speed once scaling he was able to jump right down into the inner castle area, allowing the guard to just feel a slight breeze.

The guard had turned its head and looked down where Quinn had landed, but could see nothing, just like the vampires with keen senses in the settlement.

'You will have to be careful now.' Vincent warned. 'In the inner castle area, and castle there will be vampire nobles, and those with better senses than most.'

'Don't worry, even if they can sense me they won't see me.' Quinn said, as he started running through the area as fast as he could towards the castle. Heading up to the front door would be a problem, especially with the special lock that was designed but for Quinn it was easy to enter through other ways.

Swirling around to the side of the castle, where no one could be seen, Quinn quickly changed skills from shadow cloak, into his shadow travel which allowed him to go through and under buildings, then when past the wall it was a simple as just getting out of his shadow, and putting the shadow cloak on again.

'Muka was right, you do have the right set of skills for a job like this. You know if all else fails and you want to just make a good living, you should become a thief or something.' Vincent recommended.

'Ah yes, doing everything I can to become a great infamous thief of the world, that's a brilliant idea.' Quinn replied, while he continued going through the castle.

All of the castles were large, and there weren't actually many vampires in either of these castles. This was something Quinn noticed when visiting the others. This would be a big help for him.

'Now it's time to search for where Kazz is in this place.'

While going around in the castle, Quinn made sure to not be seen. Using the cloak and hiding in places. His senses were better than theirs and so was his hearing. So whenever he could hear someone approaching , he could act before they could. Using a number of his shadow skills to avoid being seen.

What Quinn did notice though, was all the paintings on the wall seemed to be of one person. The person looked similar to Bryce but not quite the same.

'He has a lot of paintings of this man, do you think it's his father?' Quinn asked.

'I'm not sure, Bryce is even older than I am, but I can't remember him being close with his father.' Vincent replied.

As they continued to search for Kazz floor by floor, they still saw more great paintings of the same man, proud and strong, and then entering one of the rooms using the shadow, there was a shock at what he could see, it was a room full of paintings, but not just any ordinary paintings.

While the others showed the man in his glory with a gentle smile or defeating creatures and beasts, these ones looked as if it was drawn with blood, and the paintings were melting.

Trying to make out one of them, Quinn could see that it was the same man from all the other paintings, standing on an execution platform and standing by his side, was Arthur.

'This isn't his father. It's his grandfather.' Quinn said. 'Remembering Arthur's story, about how he thought the ones that had attacked his friends were the first leader.'

Now that we know it's untrue, it means that Bryce's grandfather was killed for no reason.'

Looking around the room, Quinn could see even more terrifying paintings. It was a room dedicated to Bryce's grandfather with his death.

One had a rolling head, the other as if his grandfather had been raised from the grave. Quinn had seen his fair share of death by now, he even had blood on his own hands, but this room felt different and was starting to get to him.

Everywhere he turned he could see Bryce's grandfather decapitated in some way, or being tortured and Quinn eventually had to leave the room.

'Why would Bryce have a room like that?' Quinn wondered, but with all the paintings around the castle of him and no one else, it felt like it was beyond just a liking for his grandfather.

Sticking to the task at hand, Quinn continued, and eventually, he had arrived at a room that appeared to be locked, it wasn't just a simple lock either. There were certain rooms in the castle that were locked, but they looked like they mostly led to either a weapon storage room or research lab, but here it was in the middle of what looked to be sleeping quarters.

Using the same shadow skills as before, Quinn entered the rooms and when he rose from his shadow, he had hit the jackpot, he could see Kazz from behind standing staring out of the window.

'She looks fine, so why lock her up?' Quinn thought, as he slowly approached her.

"Kazz, I don't mean to startle you." Quinn said in a soft gentle voice.

Kazz turned around, and when she did, she had tears in her eyes.

"Why....why have I been locked up in this place....did I do something bad?" She asked.

Seeing this, Quinn was slightly confused by her reaction and her tone of voice sounded like that of a young girl. It reminded Quinn of the first time he had met her.

"Kazz, are you okay..did something happen?" Quinn asked.

"I, who are you....are you with that man?" Kazz said, pointing behind him.

'What's she pointing at?'

When Quinn turned around. In a dark corner of the room, sitting down, was a man with a cane in his hand.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 866: A Showdown between leaders

The doors from Kazz's room were seen flying into the hallway, not looking like they were once before. They had been crushed to pieces and following soon after them, was Quinn with both of his arms held up in a cross position.

'Damn it, this old bastard. Does he really have to be the type to attack first and ask questions later!' Quinn thought. 'You think a leader would be more sensible than this?'

'Quinn, look at his eyes! This isn't an attack that was rationally thought out.' Vincent warned. 'It's one driven by pure anger and hatred.'

It was so sudden the attack. Before Quinn could even see who it was, Bryce had moved from his seat and thrown out a punch, but it wasn't any regular punch. It was surrounded by the blood hardening, making it stronger than usual.

Although Quinn didn't have time to raise his shadow, he did have time to cast himself with the second stage of Qi, minimising the attack's strength.

[-5HP]

[Quest received: defeat the first family leader]

[Reward: instant level Up]

[??????]

'Really system, you think I didn't know this was going to be a hard fight!'

But it did tell Quinn one thing, it was a fight that he could win. At least the system thought so.

"I saw how you came through those doors. The trail of shadow you left behind as you rose." Bryce said as he walked through the broken doors into the hallway.

"But, I've never seen you before, a face I don't recognise, but it doesn't matter because you carry with you that power." The anger in Bryce's voice was felt and heard as the cane in his hand could be seen vibrating.

"Are you someone that kid trained? No, you're too strong. You blocked my attack, which can only mean a few things. You're either someone working for Arthur who is still alive from back then, or you're the tenth leader himself disguised." Bryce started unsheathing his blade from his cane and pointed it towards Quinn.

"You should learn to control your heartbeat because it seems like one of my guesses was correct!" Bryce shouted, swinging his blade, but Quinn was just as fast

as he used his gauntlets to knock the attack away. More swings from the sword came, and Quinn continued to block them with his gauntlets.

'I can't just keep blocking!'

Eventually, Quinn got the timing down of the attacks, and managed to raise his shadow to block one of them, and at the same time with his hands free. Threw out his fist towards Bryce's stomach. The attacks landed but Bryce was also able to block it with his sword, only sliding him across the floor down the hallway.

'I can do it, I can keep up with another leader!' Quinn thought to himself. 'Even though my gauntlets are at the emperor tier, with my shadow and second stage of Qi, I can block his attacks.'

'I wouldn't be celebrating just yet.' Said Vincent. 'Bryce is considered one of the strongest vampires for a reason, and he still has a lot to show. He hasn't used his ability, or blood weapon just yet and look at your gauntlets.'

Looking down at his hands, Quinn could see that they were severely chipped and scratched, with each attack they were getting hurt, despite coating them in second stage Qi.

[Durability 90%]

'If I continue just blocking the attacks with my gauntlets, they are going to eventually break, and I can't use my shadow for defence either. He's only punching now but with stronger attacks my Mc points will go down to zero in no time.'

Kazz had rushed from the window in her room, and was now by the door peeking around the corner looking at the two fighting down the hallway. She didn't know why but when looking at the old man fight, a pain was felt in her chest.

'Are these two fighting over me, but why?' She wondered.

"Fast and skilled. I can't believe that you are the tenth leader." Bryce stated. "I waited here for something to happen, I thought someone would come back to get the job done when they hadn't killed Kazz. Maybe they were hoping for me to react or do something, so instead, I did the opposite. I made it so no news would leak out about her, and I knew that would worry whoever had done this, and they would come back eventually."

"What I don't understand is, why the remnants of the punishers have chosen to team up with the other side. Are you with the bloodsuckers, or with Cindy?" Bryce asked.

He swung his blade again, this time throwing out a blood swipe with it. It was a skill that looked almost identical to Leo's. Knowing full well its power, Quinn

avoided it but then could see that the real blade from Bryce was coming soon after, this time coated in red blood.

Activating his gauntlet's active skill, Quinn summoned the red fire blade of energy out from the top of his gauntlets and coated it with the second stage of Qi. The two blades collided, and Quinn was able to stop the sword. For now, this solved his problem of his gauntlets being damaged since the blade worked based on his gauntlets active skill. But to keep the blade out, Quinn would have to use his Qi, which was draining his energy quickly.

That's when Quinn noticed a smile on Bryce's face.

"You think you stopped my attack?" He said.

A few seconds later and stinging pain could be felt through his armour and shoulders. Two large slash marks were seen on his body, and blood started to pour from his wounds.

'But I blocked the attack, so how did it still hit me?'

'You fool, haven't you seen his ability many times before, it doesn't matter if you blocked his attack or not, or if you narrowly avoided it. Just don't get within the range of his sword, this battle will have to be a long-ranged one if you plan to win.' Vincent advised.

Bearing through the pain, Quinn gritted his teeth, and turned the pain channelling it into anger, he wanted to pay back for what Bryce had done.

"You know, if you would let the two of us talk it out, then maybe you would realise I didn't come here to fight!" Quinn shouted. He used all his strength and focused his Qi on the flame blade from gauntlets, and swung Bryce's sword to the side.

Then throwing out the shadow, he created a path. Luckily Bryce was close, and the area was narrow, so it had hit him, slowing down his movements. If he wanted to get away, he would find it difficult now. Then with all his energy, Quinn reached out with his hand in the shape of a claw, swinging it like a wild animal, but as soon as it got close, it felt like multiple attacks were hitting the outside of his gauntlets. Strikes from Bryce's ability were hitting his hand, trying to move it away. It slowed down his own hand, but in the end, his fingertips managed to graze Bryce's chest, just drawing blood before he stepped back away from Quinn.

[Left gauntlet durability at 70%]

'Damn, I only managed to graze him, and my gauntlets are already so damaged. I'm getting pretty tired using all this Qi as well, but the shadow managed to slow him down, and I can hurt him.'

There were still blood attacks Quinn could use as well, but with a fight like this, Quinn wanted to be cautious about how much blood he used, and still knew Bryce hadn't used everything he had just yet.

However, Quinn was suddenly surprised as he could see Bryce holding onto his chest, and his face showed great pain. Even though he was trying to hide it.

"You, what the hell is this!" Bryce shouted and soon after screamed, continuing to hold onto his chest.

'He's in pain from a little scratch like that, but how?'

Looking at his blood-red gauntlets, Quinn realised what had happened. Since returning, this was the first fight he had with a vampire. Fighting with the gauntlets before he forgot they had this effect. What was hurting Bryce right now, was the Blood fairy's blood, from Alex.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 867: First generation Blood weapon

The blood running through his body was spreading, and the pain continued, but it looked like Bryce was trying to do something as he consciously had his hand held over his chest.

"Your little tricks won't work on me!" Bryce shouted.

The wincing and sounds of pain soon stopped, as Bryce pulled his hand away from his chest and the infected blood could be seen floating mid air. It stayed there slightly above his fingers, out from his body and soon the wound started to heal again.

"You have some nasty tricks up your sleeve. Blood like this, is it blood of a fairy? Who the hell are you!"

'Did he just use blood control, to take out the blood?' This was another reason Quinn hadn't been using his own blood attacks. Whatever Quinn could do with blood, Bryce could do it as well, and thanks to his blood control, it was better and stronger. However, Quinn did have Qi to equalise that out.

Bryce quickly pulled out one of the flasks he had on him, and threw out the blood onto his sword and soon, it started to glow. It looked like the sword was pulsating, as if alive wanting more of the delicious blood it had just tasted.

'Blood weapon!'

"Quinn get out of here, that's the same blood weapon that's been passed down between the first generation family," Vincent warned.

Quinn quickly was thinking about what to do, as Bryce lifted the sword, and dropped it into the ground. When it touched the floor, it looked like it melted, disappearing. Out of the sword as it melted, blood started to cover the whole area. The surrounding area quickly was encased in it, including the floor, the sides and the top of the hallway. Just in case, Quinn had covered his feet in the shadow, so it didn't directly touch the floor.

The area was small, but it reminded Quinn a bit of his shadow dome.

'Reflective blood weapon skill, activate.' Bryce mumbled. He raised both hands, and threw out a blood swipe towards the top of the wall. When the attack hit, it had bounced off the wall, growing in size and looked as if it was moving faster. It bounced off the ground next, and the same happened again.

'In this space, his blood attacks are reflected each time gaining power from the blood area he has created. The attacks are a bit random, but it just makes it worse for you.' Vincent explained.

Bryce then started to fire out a flurry of blood swipes, and now tens of bouncing blood swipes at such a speed were bouncing around all over the small area. He peeked behind him, and several blood swipes were already surrounding the back area.

Quinn used his flash step to dodge one or two of the tracks, but it was tiring him out, and eventually, he was hit by one from behind.

[ -10 HP ]

But he couldn't stop and continued to move on, that's when he heard a scream. Not being able to control the attacks meant that Kazz was being hit by the blood attacks as well.

Unfortunately for Kazz, the blade had gone right through her arm, and it had been chopped off.

'This guy, does he really not care about her!'

Seeing more blades coming towards her, Quinn started to run forward, and with both his palms held out, he fired blood spray. It wasn't enough to destroy the attacks, but when it would hit, it would alter their path slightly, causing them to go off course to a different direction.

He wouldn't be able to keep this up forever, as with each blood spray his HP went down quickly..

'We have to get out of here!' Quinn thought, and he had finally reached Kazz and held her hand.

[ 30/100 HP ]

There were now too many blood swipes in the area, but before they could do anything else, Quinn held out his other hand, and closed it into a fist.

[ Skill activate, Shadow lock ]

The two of them disappeared, avoiding all of the attacks.

At that moment, Bryce had stopped. The attacks from his own blades continued to reflect off the walls and even attempted to hit him, but thanks to his ability, he was able to block all the attacks with ease that came towards him.

At the same time, the red energy from the walls seemed to dim, they fell from the walls, and all started to head towards one spot in front of Bryce, eventually forming the sword he once had.

Bryce, walked up to the severed arm on the floor.

'Where did they go?' He thought as he started to sniff the air. 'They are no longer here. Their entire presence has disappeared. Is this the same skill as the other punisher used. If so, it means he will return to this very spot. You can hide, but you can't hide forever. I'll be waiting for you right here. I promise I will get rid of all the punishers!' Bryce said, stabbing his sword into the ground, where the two were last seen.

"Man, your dad really doesn't care about you, does he?" Quinn said, scratching his head.

Kazz was sitting on the floor, holding her arm from where it had been cut. It looked like she had been by a few of the other attacks as well. Seeing her like this, Quinn couldn't help but feel sorry for her, even despite everything she had done.

Growing up with a father like that must have been tough. Quinn had seen Bryce not care for lives before with the blood dome, but never thought he would treat Kazz like this.

Her arm would heal though, and even now, the end was no longer bleeding. She started to look round the room, and noticed that they were in a dark space, one that was completely pitch black with no end in sight.

"Where are we?" She asked.

"This is part of my ability, don't worry, we're safe here, at least for now," Quinn stated, but he didn't sound too sure himself.

Kazz didn't say much and continued to look at her arm, until she eventually spoke.

"So it's true, that man really is my father.." She said. "If that's the case, then why...why does his eyes look so hollow when he looks at me?"

Looking at her, Quinn could tell she was upset, but didn't really know what to say, he didn't know what the problem between the two of them were, and he wasn't going to act as councillor trying to fix them. As much as he wanted to help her, he had his own problems to deal with.

"Kazz, I know I don't look like it right now, but it's actually me, Quinn. I heard you were attacked, and I was wondering if you knew who. Maybe if we figure this thing out, I can explain it to your father, and he'll stop attacking us." Quinn pleaded.

But there was just silence and sobbing from Kazz, but Quinn was not in the mood for her to act like this.

"Listen to me, Kazz!" Quinn said, shaking her by the shoulders. "What happened to Fex, were you with him, were you alone, was it one of the other families?!" Quinn continued.

"I don't know!" She screamed back. "I don't know anything! I can't remember anything, and then the person who calls me father did this to me!" She shouted, lifting her arm up. "I want my family, where is my family!!!" She continued to scream and cry.

Through her few words, Quinn had picked up something she said, that she couldn't remember anything.

'Wow, you really don't know how to treat people, can't you see she's having problems. 'Vincent started to tut. 'Calm her down and get a clear answer from her.'

It was stressful, being attacked by one of the vampire leaders and thrown into such a situation. Quinn was still in fight mode when talking to Kazz, even though he no longer needed to be.

He knelt down by her side, and lifted her head up slightly.

"Kazz, I'm sorry, I know this must be hard for you. You said you can't remember anything. Do you mean you lost your memories?"

She nodded slowly and continued to sniffle.

'So is it like Fex, did whoever did this to Kazz also do this to Fex, but why? Why the need to remove both of their memories. Is this why Bryce wouldn't let her out, to try and catch the person responsible... and now he thinks it's me.'

'Damn it! the two of us shouldn't even be fighting, but he will only suspect me until I find out who is behind this.'

Standing up, Quinn had a determined look on his face.

"Kazz, if we want to find out what happened to you, we need to get out of here. They kept you alive for a reason, and you're not the only one this has happened to."

"We're going to get out of here?" Kazz replied. "But what about that...that man. Isn't he going to attack us again? He's seemed to be really strong."

Kazz was right, Bryce was strong, but during the fight, it didn't feel like he was impossible to beat. Not like another person he had faced before.

"Don't worry, it's simple. To get out of here, all I need to do, is kick your old man's arse!" Quinn said, clenching his fist. 'I'm a leader too, and I'll show him the new tenth leader isn't going to just take a beating.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 868: The showdown's end

Standing in the hallway, Bryce didn't move from the spot he had last seen Quinn and Kazz. He stayed there, still as a statue. Eventually, there were those in the castle that had heard the commotion going on. They ran up to where they could hear all the fuss going on, only to see the hallway partly destroyed and Bryce standing there, with no injuries on his body.

"Sir is the first castle under attack by someone?!" The vampire in front of the others asked.

Bryce didn't look away from the spot while giving a reply.

"Leave this place, and if you hear anything, do not come back to this place. Make sure everyone stays away from here."

The vampire guard gulped before ordering the rest of his men to do as they asked.

'How long will I have to wait?' Bryce thought.

At that moment, a black shadow portal started to appear. Bryce gripped his sword, ready for what was to come. He swung right at the shadow as soon as he saw a red gauntlet appear from it. A loud clang was heard as the two objects collided. However, unlike before, the clashes of power weren't equal and instead, Bryce's hand was flung backwards, nearly chucking his whole body with it.

Coming out of the shadow was Quinn and Kazz. She quickly headed back into the room and stood behind the door peaking at the fight that was about to happen again.

"You know, you are so predictable. I knew you would be out here waiting for us." Quinn stated.

Bryce was a fast one to act, and it appeared like he had some knowledge about that shadow. So Quinn assumed he would be waiting for him. Knowing Bryce would be there was advantageous for Quinn. In the shadow space, he had enough time to gather energy for the hammer strike, and time it so when he appeared out of the portal, his fist would collide with the sword.

'Quinn, if there is any time to beat Bryce, then it is now. It looks like he only prepared one flask of blood for himself, so he can't activate his blood weapon again.' Vincent explained.

For Quinn as well, he had consumed blood from his own flask to restore his HP, and he still had his trusty blood bank in case of emergencies.

'Your ability is annoying, but I can attack you from far away as well!'

Quinn threw out his blood swipe, quickly grabbing it with his shadow creating the blood scythe. Swinging it to his side, it scr.a.p.ed across the side of the walls. The hallway was large but not large enough for Quinn's attack to build up its full momentum.

Seeing the attack from so far away, Bryce was able to block it easily lifting his sword. However when it hit, it was more powerful than he had expected.

'Blood hardening, blood swipe!' Bryce activated two skills, casing his sword in blood and then throwing out a swipe later on to throw the scythe away.

'That's the same attack that silly boy used!' Bryce shouted with anger.

He started to swing his sword through the air at a rapid pace. Quinn couldn't even count how many slashes he had done. What was strange though, was it looked like he was using a regular blood swipe, but when the sword swung through the air, the blood swipe would be created, but it didn't move away. Instead, it stayed there, floating in the air. Now in front of Bryce, were around a hundred blood swipes floating there in place created from his sword.

'Blood control, move!' Bryce commanded, and all of the blood swipes were now heading towards Quinn.

'If I block this with my shadow, even with the extra MC points I have it will just use them all up. I have to do something else.' Quinn thought.

Waiting at the right time, for all the attacks to come his way, Quinn held out his hand again, and clenched it into a fist.

[Shadow lock]

Taking himself in the shadow space, he waited a few seconds. All the attacks had collided into the spot where Quinn was or into each other. The dust and rubble from the attacks made it hard to see, but soon Bryce could see that a figure was still standing there.

Quinn had come out from the shadow lock, timing when the attack would be over.

[Shadow path activate]

Activating the shadow path skill, it threw a trail of shadows across the floor. Bryce seeing this from last time, wasn't going to let the shadow touch him, knowing it would slow him down.

He jumped to the side of the wall, digging his feet in, and started running fast towards Quinn.

'I knew you would avoid it, I never expected you to be hit by that slow skill.'

[Shadow hop]

Sinking into the shadow unearths his feet, Quinn had reappeared right at the end of his shadow path and now was directly behind Bryce. Immediately he performed a blood crescent kick. Quinn grabbed it with his shadow, swinging it with his full power creating more momentum. It had hit Bryce, chucking him off the wall and onto the floor.

Not letting him rest, Quinn jumped towards him lifting his leg above his head, and created another shadow scythe with his leg, hammering it down with an axe kick towards Bryce again.

The strike hit the ground and caused the whole floor to rumble, even though it was made from the hard black material the vampires used, it felt like it couldn't take much more punishment from a fight between two leaders.

The vampires inside the castle were starting to worry. Someone who was fighting against Bryce lasting this long, they just couldn't imagine, and they could feel the power of the fight, but they would follow their leader's orders and not get involved.

When Quinn had moved his leg, he could see Bryce had avoided the axe kick, but he was hurt and bleeding from the attack earlier, standing off to the side.

'That wound, it's just going to heal again, and I can't keep all these attacks up for much longer. If I want to beat him. I'm going to have to use my gauntlets like before!'

Rushing in, Quinn needed to only worry about Bryce's ability, it would hurt him, but he needed to get hurt to hurt his opponent.

He was at the mid-range level, and holding out his hand, Quinn fired a blood bullet towards Bryce. It had worked against other leaders in the past, and he thought it would do the same now. With Qi, it would be hard to heal.

However, Bryce had moved his sword and body in a strange way, he spun his body, and with the side of his sword, had flung the bullet right back at Quinn, hitting him in the knee.

"Arghh!" Quinn screamed but gritted his teeth.

[-50HP]

Bryce had used the force of his own attack against him, and made it greater than his own.

[Blood bank activate]

Activating the blood bank, he needed his knee to heal in time as Bryce came forward swinging his sword from above. Luckily, Quinn's regeneration with the blood was fast, and he was able to stomp his feet in the ground, and punch the sword away that was coming from above, what he didn't expect though, was a kick from Bryce to follow after, hitting Quinn right in the face.

[-20HP]

Stumbling down, with his hand touching the floor, Quinn had spread the shadow around the two of them. It was risky as Quinn's shadow MC points were low, if Bryce attacked the shadow now, he would have none left, but allowing it to touch Bryce would slow him down.

Lifting his own leg while falling to the floor, Quinn had hit the back of Bryce's head, then using all of his Qi, encasing his gauntlets in them, with the second stage and powering them with the first stage. Quinn threw his fist forward piercing right through Bryce's stomach.

Ripping through the clothes, Quinn could see that Bryce also had been using the blood hardening skill through his whole body, but it seemed useless against Quinn's Qi covered attack.

As Bryce was about to fall on top of him, Quinn had sunk his body through the shadow and hopped to a different place.

He looked at Bryce on the floor sweating and in pain and...he wasn't getting up. Walking up to Bryce, Quinn wanted to make sure that Bryce was dealt with, so he would no longer cause him any trouble.

"Please, please don't kill him!" Kazz pleaded from the side.

Looking at her, Quinn wondered why she still cared for him, even though she had no memories of this man, and how he had treated her. Was it because they were family, or the vampire bond? But her eyes filled with tears said it was something much more than that.

Kicking Bryce with his leg, Quinn moved him so he was now lying on his back instead of on his belly. His face was full of pain, and the wound around his stomach wasn't healing like before. Bryce had his hand over the wound, as if he was trying to remove the poison again.

At that moment, Bryce chuckled, and started to laugh.

"Haha, you really are the kid. The tenth leader, I lost to you!" Bryce said. "The vampires really are doomed having lost to the punishers and vampires."

Touching his face, Quinn realised what had happened. When Bryce had kicked him in the head, the mask had broken and fallen.

"Listen, old man, I never wanted to fight you in the first place, but you were the one who attacked me without asking questions. I just wanted to ask Kazz who the heck did this to her. I'm looking for the people who attacked my people, and that's all that I care about."

Quinn looked at Kazz one more time, and looked back at Bryce, before deciding...to walk away.

"Just remember, I spared your life when I could have killed you. I'm not the one behind all of this, and you should treat your daughter nicer. If I was her, I wouldn't save you right now."

[Quest complete]

.....

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 869: One more trump card

'It looks like I'm finally strong enough to face the leaders...but I'm still a long way off from facing Arthur.' Quinn thought.

[Quest completed]

[Instant level up reward received]

[You are now level 41]

Seeing his reward Quinn was actually a little upset. Because whenever he experienced an evolution reset, the first level was always the easiest to level up because of the low amount of exp points required.

Since it got harder with every level, he would have preferred this kind of reward at a much higher level. Still he figured he shouldn't complain about it. For now, he decided to put the stat point into his strength bringing it up to 65.

From the fight, Quinn learned that as long as kept his beast gear on, he could pretty much keep up with a leader's speed and their power. Of course, Bryce's natural attacks might be a little bit stronger but Quinn had Qi to make up for that.

He would just have to be careful to not allow his Qi to run out, fights between vampires could be long and tedious. The more strength he had going for him, the less he would have to compensate via Qi. Of course when he added his Qi to the mix, it would also result in a bigger bang, making for a huge impact.

That wasn't the only reward Quinn received for defeating a leader though. Unlike the previous one, he was very pleased with this one.

[Blood control +30]

[Total Blood control 44]

It was a huge boost to his Blood control, which he had only been able to improve slightly with Fex' help. Quinn had seen Bryce do some amazing things through Blood control, such as leaving the blood swipes in mid air or moving them all at once, and removing the fairy blood from his body.

The usefulness of this stat was apparent. However, it wasn't all good news, because at the end of the day, Quinn, after going through a tough battle like that, hadn't discovered much.

The only thing he could confirm was that Bryce most likely wasn't the one behind the attacks, as he was also looking for the person who had manhandled his daughter Kazz. There were also no signs of Fex anyway.

'Those paintings were pretty creepy, and his blood weapon was really strong. If he had more human blood, or humans around to sacrifice, I wouldn't want to fight him again.' Quinn thought.

'Yes.' Vincent agreed. 'The one thing you have been able to rely on so far, is that the others might understand some of your shadow abilities and skills, but not all of it. After having fought you once, it won't be the case anymore. The next time the two of you fight, might have a different outcome.'

'Well, let's just hope I don't have to fight him again.' Although Quinn was afraid due to what had happened to Bryce in the past, it was unavoidable as he was a shadow user.

Bryce continued to lie there in pain. He could tell that whatever was affecting his body wasn't enough to kill him, but it would prevent him from moving for a good while. However, he didn't have to wait too long. Kazz eventually approached Bryce herself, and opened up the flask.

As she opened the lid and tried to pour it into his mouth, Bryce placed his hand on the flask stopping it. He couldn't move well, yet he had summoned the will to not receive help.

"Where did you get that?" He asked.

"Why do you ask, when we both know you won't like the answer? It was from the man who just left. He gave it to me so my arm could heal quicker, but I didn't use up all the blood. It was my own decision to give you the rest, so please." Kazz pleaded, as she tried to pour it in his mouth again.

This time Bryce didn't resist and accepted the blood. Looking at Kazz, he could see she was still healing from some of the wounds, the worst one being the one on her arm.

'I didn't even realise I had hit her.' Bryce reflected.

As soon as his tongue tasted the red liquid, he could tell that it wasn't enough to heal him. The fairy blood in his body was still affecting him. Still, it did provide him with an energy boost, allowing him to deal with the rest himself. Placing his hand over the wound in his stomach, he closed his eyes and focused on using his Blood control.

He could feel the two different blood types and started to pull the fairy blood cells away from his own and eventually, it all formed into a small ping pong sized ball of blood. Letting go it dropped onto the floor, finally allowing the blood to start healing him properly.

'That kid... he was the tenth leader after all. Was he hiding his strength back then?' Bryce started to think back to the last time he had seen Quinn fight. 'No, that's

impossible, Vadeen would have killed him if it wasn't for Arthur... So how the hell did he get that strong so fast?"

'I was unprepared, I thought if any of the leaders came, my blood weapon would be enough, but I didn't expect him to come and be that skilled. Look at me lying here making excuses, no matter what a loss is a loss.'

Eventually Bryce had restored enough energy to move around. He knelt up and looked at the hallway they were in. There were scratches all over the castle. Huge slash marks in between doors and partly broken floors and ceilings.

'That kid, I can't think of him as a fake leader anymore.'

"Bring me your arm, Kazz." Bryce told her, and when she came over with it, Bryce slashed the skin off where it had healed up, and placed the seared part against hers. Then using what blood left in the flask poured it on top.

He placed both hands on the wound, and Kazz could feel that Bryce was doing something, moving parts of her blood inside to speed up the healing process and once he let go, her arm was all healed up again.

She moved it a couple of times, and it worked just as if nothing had happened. Usually it would take a while but she felt like it was back to how it was before.

"Thank you...er...father." She said bowing down, not really knowing what to say.

"It looks like you forgot your manners along with your memories as well." Bryce stated. "In this castle you are my Vampire knight, and I am your leader. As such, you should always address me as your leader, in a respectful manner and comply with what I ask, do you understand?" He asked.

"Yes, yes master." She quickly corrected herself and bowed down. She thought that maybe now that he was no longer fighting, this person who was meant to be her father would treat her like one, unfortunately, it appeared to her that the two of them didn't have that kind of relationship.

"When the two of you were alone... Did he speak to you? Ask you about anything in particular?" Bryce wondered.

"Just like you, he wanted to know about what happened to me. Who it was that attacked me. However, since I can't remember anything I was unable to answer him. Only... there was one thing that was different. He also asked about someone called Fex, it seems like he cared for that person, and was more worried about him, and... I recall he mentioned that I wasn't the only one that lost my memories." Kazz answered.

"I see, well I guess we are both looking for the same person in a way, so we shouldn't have to clash with each other again." Bryce concluded, finally standing back up.

"Wait, Sir, can I ask, he said I was with Fex at the time! Can you tell me why we were together? Maybe it will help me remember something."

"I doubt you will, but fine." Bryce sighed. "You see you were assigned a certain task before you disappeared. I had asked you to bring the boy to me. According to my sources, he figured out how to create and control a blood weapon. I wanted to ask him personally, just how far he had developed the technique or if he had told anyone yet."

"Can I ask why?" Kazz, pushed a little further.

Bryce turned around and gave her glance, before turning away.

"Because I wanted to know if it was similar to the blood weapon summoning technique I already know. Perhaps it was similar, or maybe even better." Bryce stated, holding his chest.

If the fight was to continue, there was one last trick he had up his sleeve.

'You should always have some trump cards, and stay ahead of your opponents.' Bryce thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 870: Silent steps

Silver, Leo and Nate had been following Ham for a while now, the truth was when Quinn had last called, Nate wasn't completely truthful about the situation they were in. It was true that Ham had recognised the way he had come from and they were heading towards the direction, but the reason they were slow was mainly due to the frequent breaks Ham would take.

"Do you even care about your master at all!" Nate loudly complained. "This is the fifth time we've stopped because of you!"

The group was waiting by a large rock along a river. Ham laid on top of it lying on his back, with his belly pointing upward.

"Of course I do!" Ham shouted back. "But do you want me to tire out like I did before? And if I pass out, what happens then, then we have no way of finding them."

While Nate and Ham were bickering backwards and forward, Leo started to walk upward against the stream of water. He could hear the sound of the crashing water getting stronger, and as he fine tuned his senses further he could hear water crashing down violently.

"Ham, did you not mention that the cave was in some type of water fall?" Leo interrupted the two. At the moment, Nate had grabbed Ham with both hands by his belly, and looked like he was about to chuck him a mile away deep into the forest.

Meanwhile, Silver stood there frustrated with a vein bulging out of her forehead, but still hadn't interrupted the two just yet.

"Yeah, when I came out of the cave, it was from behind a waterfall." Ham replied.

"It looks like we're close then, you might not have to lead the way anymore." Leo stated, and now the group was following him.

Rather than move up the river, the group was moving through the forest by its side. The reason for this was that the base was apparently filled with Crazed Bloodsuckers according to Ham. Moving through the river would just make the enemy aware of their position.

Their footsteps were light treading through the forest, as they attempted to make as little noise as possible. At least most of them, Nate was the one who was having the most trouble and would constantly step on twigs and leaves now and again, eventually Silver had enough. She turned around and grabbed Nate by the collar pulling his face next to hers.

"Look, I stayed silent when you were taking out your anger on Ham, because I partially agreed with you, but if you make this much noise and they find out that we

are coming, and it affects finding my brother in any way. I will kill you, and make you bring him back from the dead for me!

"Now do something about those footsteps of yours!"

Although Nate was a skilled martial artist, and could perform complicated footwork, something like treading lightly was never his forte, which was why he had gone for the hardening ability in the first place.

However, right now, he couldn't really think straight, as a beauty like no other was right up in his face.

Letting go, Silver stood there waiting for Nate to do something, if he didn't, she wasn't going to let him come with them. No matter the reason Quinn had asked them to take him.

'Man, she's serious, I don't want to be left out again.' Nate thought, then came up with a brilliant idea.

Activating his shadow, he placed them on the soles of his feet. He attempted to walk, and when doing so, it made his footsteps almost silent. Nate was talented, so he had more Mc cells compared to the others when it came to using the shadow.

Still, he didn't have the best control or skill, but doing something like this was achievable.

They continued to move along the river, and eventually the others could hear the sound of the water fall as well.

"It's here!" Ham shouted, and Silver, near enough pulled Ham from the sky and almost ripped out his wings.

'Oh, right don't say anything, but I miss Fex.' Ham thought, on the verge of tears, if he knew his tears could make no noise at all he would have cried there and then.

What they didn't know, was even though Leo told them to stop, it wasn't because the enemy was near, just that he could sense them from far away. He gave a hand signal to tell the others to wait there for the moment while going in on his own.

Silver, and the others agreed and stayed.

'Wow, she's letting him go on his own?' Ham thought. 'I've never seen Silver trust someone so much. This bald guy must be quite special if she trusts him. She nearly does everything herself!'

Just on the outer edge of the forest, Leo could see that there was a large lake where the waterfall would fall into. On the outside there was no one, but on the inside it was a different story.

Returning to the others, Leo and the others went further back, just far enough so no one could hear.

"So is this the right place?" Nate asked.

"Yes, it has to be." Leo answered. "So far while running I have only been able to sense the presence of beasts. Yet here, I can tell in the cave that there are the same creatures that attacked the tenth castle. What you guys call bloodsuckers."

"How many of them are there?" Silver asked.

"There are around fifteen or so in total. If this is their base, it seems like most of them were used in the attack on the tenth castle. Also, although the bloodsuckers are strong there is no one outstanding. However, there is one inside that is just as strong as you." Leo stated while looking at Silver. "Not just that, but they don't have the same presence as the bloodsuckers, they feel like just another vampire."

"Could you tell if Fex was in there?" Said Nate.

"No, but Ham confirmed this is the place. My aura couldn't reach that far, so there may be more inside the cave than what I could sense, and that might be where Fex is." Leo explained.

Hearing that there might be someone as strong as Silver, perked up her ears a bit. Yes, she wanted to save her brother but at the same time she wanted to find out who was responsible, and she was hoping this vampire that was with the blood suckers might be an important figure, possibly a vampire knight of one of the other families.

Nate pulled out the mask and attempted to contact Quinn. This was the protocol for when they reached the cave like Quinn had asked. It rang a few times, again and again, but there was no answer.

"Should I try someone at the castle, maybe they know where Quinn went?" Nate asked.

They tried calling the Castle, and the one that had answered was Paul. Paul informed them that Quinn had gone off to do something, and maybe he was too busy to pick up at the moment.

"Should we wait for Quinn?" Nate asked, but he could see the look on Silver's face. Now that they were here, she wanted to rush in and try to save Fex, to see how her brother was doing.

"I believe we are strong enough to take them on." Leo suddenly said. "Due to my ability I have a good idea on their strength. I will take responsibility for this. Quinn

will not be needed. Also, we don't know when Quinn will be free and the more time spent here, could mean Fex is closer to his death."

Nate didn't like it, he could imagine an angry Quinn telling him off, but telling off Leo, that was something that was hard to imagine.

"Well, you're my vampire knight right> so as long as you say so, then sign me up."

Nate cheered.

With the three of them ready, it was time for them to act.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 871: A Breakthrough

Heading back to the castle, Quinn was sluggish with his movements. He hardly had enough energy to escape from the first area without being seen and knew something needed to be done to get his Mc points back up to where they were. When he was out of sight in a quiet area still in the castle. He cast a small shadow dome, and allowed for His Mc points to restore quicker, then using the shadow cloak, he could walk out the front gates of the first castle area without a problem.

However, he soon realised when he left the gates and was no longer using the shadow cloak, his whole arms and legs were shaking with each movement. His body was drained, and it was getting worse.

There was only one other time he had felt like this so far, and that was after fighting the demon tier beast, but the evolution at the time and the green blood had changed that.

At this moment, he found himself slightly craving the green Dalki blood, which had tasted even sweeter than that of a human.

'Is this because I've been using the two types of Qi at the same time?' Quinn thought.

[Status]

[Stamina 2]

His stamina now was incredibly low, and it wasn't recovering at a fast rate like it used to. His health, and Mc points could always come back through certain methods, but other than taking others Qi to help him recover, there wasn't much that could be done, but rest.

'If I get my blood control up, and use the blood skills and Qi to fight only when necessary, it will allow me to fight for longer.'

This would of course, only help in one on one battles that tended to take a little longer then Quinn's normal fights. As for if Quinn was fighting a group, he could rely on his soul weapon, but the soul weapon was unusable against vampires, since it needed human blood to activate like that of a blood weapon.

After reaching the tenth's castle area, Quinn attempted to contact Nate, he had answered and it looked like they were finally heading in the right direction and getting close to the destination.

Quinn was a little bit pleased by this, because he too wanted to be there when they found Fex, in case they ran into trouble. With Bryce no longer being a suspect, it

meant someone else was behind this, someone who wasn't even afraid of angering someone like Bryce, who was considered one of the strongest.

'Is Peter right? Is there something really up with Cindy?' Quinn thought.

So far Quinn had a list of suspects in his head. Jill the eighth leader, who Peter had seen meet up with Cindy, Cindy herself the second leader, and lastly, he also suspected Muka. The last one was more recent as Muka had been very pushy when it came to suspecting Bryce, and it turned out Bryce wasn't involved at all, which pushed him up the suspect list as well.

Of course, there were all the other leaders that Quinn didn't have a clue about, maybe someone Vincent had angered as the tenth in the past, that he couldn't remember.

'Trying to get the king's seat makes sense, and if they wanted to achieve their goal of weakening the king with the Bloodsuckers, then it worked, but why attack the tenth and not one of the other families.'

'Why not attack Bryce?'

'Maybe they thought the tenth was an easy target?' Vincent replied. 'They knew you were away. Rowa was a strong leader in the past, but Bryce might have also been able to take him on to the point where the king wouldn't be called.'

'Hmm it makes sense, but I can't help thinking that they wanted something, which is why they even went after Fex now.'

Quinn would rest in the castle for now, and was hoping that by the time the others contacted him and found Fex, he would be fully recovered. Still, he didn't want to sit around and do nothing either.

He called on the Royal guard that he had direct contact with, as he wished to call a meeting with Dwight. Bryce surely was one of his main suspects, and Quinn wanted to inform him of what happened so far.

'Maybe I shouldn't tell him about the part where the two of us fought.' Quinn wondered.

The good thing was, it had been a while since Quinn had fought with Bryce now and there didn't seem to be any news coming out from the first castle side either. It was as if such a thing never happened.

Eventually, the Royal guard had been let in, and Quinn asked for a meeting.

"Yes, I will deliver this message to him straight away, and say you would like an in person meeting." The Royal guard said before bowing down and leaving the room.

In the room that Quinn had selected would be his, the second highest floor in the castle. Quinn was busy meditating, trying to recover the Qi energy. He at least needed to no longer feel sluggish, but it seemed impossible.

However, while focusing and closing his eyes, he noticed something else. In the centre where the ball could usually be filled with energy it was empty, and this was Quinn's Qi energy. After some time it would fill back up.

With the blood control being stronger, Quinn noticed he could move and swirl the red energy in his body to different places.

'What if...'

He decided to give it a try. Moving the energy around, Quinn started to fill the ball of Qi energy with the red energy instead. It was wild as it entered, but he no longer felt weak. At the same time, he didn't feel like before either.

The ball of energy was filled up about halfway until...

[Your bloodlust has increased]

"What is this?" Quinn said looking at himself, and although he didn't know it, his eyes were glowing red, and it was something he couldn't control.

'I don't think this is a good idea Quinn, perhaps this is how the Bloodsuckers had gotten stuck in their permanent form.' Vincent explained.

Thinking about what Vincent had said, Quinn wondered about the story Leo had told. The Bloodsucker was able to change forms and still had a part of his sanity. Maybe this was the answer.

If Quinn could change his energy fuel tank at will, maybe he could change his fighting style as well. Using the red energy to have the power of the Bloodsucker, the mix of Qi and vampire energy as his regular fighting self.

Still, it was an experiment he didn't want to do just now. With the blood control, Quinn made it so, it only filled halfway into his Qi. He would then slowly take the red energy away as it filled up with Qi again, and allow for the normal red energy to flow around his body.

When producing normal attacks with Qi and blood, the red energy would come from his body, combining with the Qi from the ball of energy centred around his stomach.

According to Chris, It was because of this red energy in his body in the first place, that the ball of Qi wasn't even larger.

While doing his little experiments, Quinn was unaware of how much time had passed, but the Royal guard had returned.

"Dwight has agreed to meet you at the normal place, he wishes to see you urgently as well." The guard said.

'Urgently?' It was the first time Dwight had said this, so he thought it must have been important.

He now had enough energy to fight, but it wouldn't be at the same point as before. He would at least need a couple of days, or maybe longer, to get to the fighting power he was with when fighting Bryce.

Leaving the castle once again, Quinn headed to the king's castle. However, Quinn noticed that something was strange immediately. There were guards outside, but they weren't checking him like they normally would.

"Hey, don't you need to check me?" Quinn asked.

"We have been told there is no need for you, you are an important guest and the matter has been deemed urgent.' The guard stated, without making eye contact.

'Quinn, something feels off, the royal guards would never be like this, be on guard and prepare to get out of here as soon as possible.' Vincent advised.

Walking into the king's castle, Quinn expected Dwight to be there greeting him, and then they would be led to the normal room, but there was no one.

'This feels so strange.' Quinn thought.

Heading to the left side, Quinn proceeded to enter the room, pushing the door slowly, moving it an inch forward, he could smell blood, but it wasn't human blood.

When the door was fully swung open, on the opposite side of the table, he could see someone had been impaled by a strange weapon that looked like a spear. The spear went through the back of their body and, through the chair they were sat in.

The body was unmoving, limping over and the eyes lifeless.

The worst part of it all was Quinn recognised the person.

"Dwight!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 872: The 13th puppet

Before going into the cave, Leo and Silver had to come up with a plan. Or at least that's what Nate thought they would do, but when he saw the two of them walking off confidently towards the cave, Nate suddenly realised that there would be no plan at all.

"Wait, are we just going to go in, why were you so angry about my loud footsteps then?" Nate asked.

"That was just in case there was someone we couldn't deal with, as long as a vampire leader isn't here, Leo and I will be enough." Silver answered, pulling out her small rapier blade and adjusting the wooden casket on her back.

"Do you want us to deal with the Bloodsuckers, or the vampire knight? It seems like the Vampire knight might be the more difficult one." Leo asked casually, as if it didn't matter which one she picked.

"Leave the vampire knight to me. It's time I restore a little honour for the thirteenth family." Silver replied.

Running at full speed, both Silver and Leo started running around the lakes and were ready to enter the cave. Nate was struggling to keep up with them. As a vampire he was faster compared to before, and he also had beast gear on, but even then, Silver was far faster than him.

'I guess the others were right, there are vampires that are a lot stronger than we thought. Are all the knights as strong as her, or is she just special?' Nate thought, as for Leo, he was always strong, but just kept improving all the time.

Seeing the waterfall up ahead , Leo then readied his sword. The two started to jump up and across on the rocks just in front of the waterfall. Then releasing the sword from the sheath, with a single strike, Leo struck the water full with his sword.

The waterfall stopped falling for a few seconds, and the waves started to fall behind the two of them. It was an amazing and special site that Nate couldn't believe, almost like a magic trick.

Inside the cave, the Bloodsuckers could be seen, with makeshift buildings that were being used as homes, the architecture wasn't as detailed as the vampires, as it looked like they had all been poorly made.

However, what was a stand out, was how many empty plastic blood packs could be seen all across the floor in the cave.

"I knew it, someone is definitely working with the Bloodsuckers, this confirms it." Silver said.

The attention of the Bloodsuckers all turned on the intruders, as they snarled showing their large fangs towards the two intruders. The blood sucker closest, leapt from his position from below, up to the entrance of the cave.

At the very back, a hooded figure was seen, and also noticed the Bloodsuckers creating a fuss over something. But seeing the Bloodsuckers attacking the intruders, the vampire remained calm, that was until they saw what happened next.

The Bloodsucker who had lept towards the intruders was fast and strong, but the bald headed man used one single motion with his blade, split the Bloodsucker in two halves, both sides falling to the floor.

'A single strike!' The hooded person thought, and immediately they started to panic. However, the cave only had one entrance and afraid of getting caught in this situation, they decided to head deeper into the cave.

Eventually, they had reached the back of the cave and in front it looked like there was just a dead end. Searching around the sides, the person finally had found something. Pushing it in, the dead end started to move to the side, and the hooded person quickly entered the room.

The door closed behind them soon after.

"Hey, have you finally decided to let me out of here." A voice said accompanied by some shackles. The room the hooded person was in, was the one with Fex.

"You, it was you wasn't it? How did you manage to call them?" The hooded man said, approaching Fex with anger. "You think you being saved will stop us, stop any of the plans we had. You know we already got what we needed from you, all you needed to do was wait, and we would have returned you with no problems, calling them has just caused you even more trouble!"

'What is this person talking about, did that little pig manage to get help, is the person they called Quinn here to save me!' Fex thought getting excited.

"Hey, I'm in here!" Fex shouted at the top of his lungs.

Then even from the room the sound of fighting could be heard from the outside. Screams of pain and growls were heard, and vibrations felt through the floor, but it didn't last long and a few seconds later they stopped.

Leo had dealt with all the Bloodsuckers, any of them that would try and get in Silver's ways he would slice. Nate who had followed from behind felt useless. By the time he had reached the cave, there were no Bloodsuckers left.

He looked at their bodies and wondered what they were.

'They kind of look like vampires, but a bit different? A little ugly.' Nate thought. 'I really don't know if these two are really strong, or the enemy is just weak.'

Eventually, all of them had reached the back wall, where the cave had come to a dead end.

"It's here, it's definitely in here!" Ham said, flying just outside the entrance.

"How do we get in?" Nate asked.

Silver, using her fist, used blood hardening to harden the outside of her hand. It was encased in the red aura and went to punch the wall as hard as she could. The whole cave shook slightly, and an indent had been made, but the wall was still there.

"Carefull, if you use raw strength then you could cause the whole cave to collapse." Leo said. "Let me take care of this."

Popping his sword back into its sheath. Leo prepared himself, and pulled it out quickly striking the wall, and placing it back in. There was no sound, but soon, a large cut could be seen creating two slab pieces in the cave wall.

Silver wasted no time pushing it, and entering the cave, only to see the hooded person gripping her brother's throat.

"Get off him!" Silver screamed, as she rushed forward and threw her red blood strings out. They wrapped around the hooded person's arm, and soon their whole body was being yanked away.

However, the vampire's strength was great and they pulled back as well. While the two of them were in a struggle for power. Leo walked past and towards Fex.

"I will not get involved as you wished, but I shall free your brother so you no longer need to wait for him." Leo said, as he swung his blade, cutting and freeing Fex from his chains.

"Thank you so much...err...Quinn." Fex said.

Leo smiled at the comment.

"I am not Quinn, but he is the one who sent me to save you, so you can leave your thanks to him later, right now. You should see your sister fighting and paying back the vampire who has brought you here."

Sometimes rage would cause one to fight wildly, and it was easy to predict their movements, but watching Silver. They could see she was using this to power her strength, not even taking a single breath.

Both Silver and the Hooded vampire were equal in power. They had the same strength and speed so one would think the fight would be equal, but it was not. There was clearly one stronger than the other.

"I don't need to use this on you to win this fight, but I will give you a gift from the thirteenth family!" Silver shouted.

The hooded vampire came forward with its claw out. Silver then turned around, and her fist had hit the casket, surprisingly not breaking it. Soon the door had opened, and the hooded vampire took a few steps back.

A few seconds later, a strange looking doll appeared out of the casket. It had six arms, and two legs, and looked more like a spider with the way it had more than one joint by the elbow. The doll itself had a blank expression, but what was even more frightening about it, was it wasn't made out of wood or anything like that, it was made out of flesh and if Leo's nose was right, it was human flesh.

In each of its hands the doll had a normal sized sword but Silver who was controlling it was able to control each hand and do so perfectly. It was strange because the strings had been attached to the doll so quickly, and Silver just stood in one place. She had set up a system of complexe strings linked to the dolls. She would control it with her sword, using the tip to touch and bend a certain string, it would then move the doll in a certain way.

Seeing the doll in action as it swung it's blades, the hooded vampire was getting hit with at least one of the swords each time.

'This swordsmanship, I am finding it hard to spot any holes myself.' Leo thought as he continued to watch.

Eventually, the match was coming to an end, the hooded vampire was too injured from the blades, and Silver eventually got the doll to restrain the vampire. Who even in terms of strength it couldn't match up. Four hands were wrapped around the waist of the vampire with its hands tucked in, while the other two had two blades pointed at its neck.

"Now, lets see which family is behind all of this!" Silver said, as she slowly walked up to the vampire, to unveil their hood.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 873: Framed

Quinn rubbed his eyes a few times, and even pinched himself to check that he wasn't asleep. It was safe to say none of it worked, because the scene in front of him didn't change. After realising it was all real, he still couldn't believe his eyes.

'Hey, you're also seeing this, right? The one on the table is Dwight, isn't it?' Quinn asked the only other person who could see the same thing as him, hoping he wasn't going crazy.

'It certainly looks like Dwight, but we can't be sure until we check. Make sure you lock the door behind you, Quinn. There is obviously something very strange going on here. Hurry, there's a chance we might be able to still save him.' Vincent stressed.

'Still save him?' Quinn thought those words were a long shot since he was unable to hear a heartbeat. Of course, there was the possibility that the scene in front of them was fake, but the smell of blood at the scene certainly made it seem real.

Quinn approached the body carefully, he didn't want to disrupt the possible evidence, yet at the same time he was listening outside, to see if the others had already noticed. Based on how the other guards had reacted, it would appear that he was the first one to find him like that.

If they were to storm in and see him with Dwight like this... it was clear who their number one suspect would be.

'It's too late.' Vincent said in a sad voice. 'There were cases of recently impaled vampires that had been saved by an injection of human blood directly into their hearts. Their brains had still been intact, so the next important organ would be the heart, but from the way the spear is stuck in his body, his heart is clearly pierced beyond repair. Whoever is behind this wanted to make sure Dwight would remain dead.'

Vincent had claimed to have done research on many different subjects many times before, and Quinn had experienced certain types of research even. Some of them had seemed cruel, but there had often been a sincere desire to help behind them.

Checking a bit more, there were no indications of who the weapon belonged to, no markings and such, and surprisingly there were no indications of a struggle either. There was blood but only Dwight's, while the rest of the room was in perfect condition.

'How? Just who could kill someone like Dwight this perfectly? As important figures, I thought the King's Royal Knights were supposed to have roughly the same strength as a leader?' Quinn pointed out the condition of the room.

'I find this difficult to understand as well. Dwight was a cautious person, whoever it was, it had to be someone he trusted. Maybe there was a meeting set up before yours? That would explain why he looks so calm in his seat, and then at the worst time he had been stabbed by that person from behind?' Vincent theorised.

Quinn wanted to touch the spear but at the same time didn't want to either, as it would just confirm the reality of the situation. Time and time again it looked like his allies were getting killed.

'Dwight you only wanted to find out the truth and help the vampires and this is what happened to you.' Quinn thought, looking at his body.

At that moment, Quinn could hear the sound of footsteps coming towards the door and some light knocks on the door. In order to conceal himself he used the Shadow cloak and hid in the corner of the room. After a while, the person on the other side slowly opened the door.

It turned out to be another leader, Muka. The look on his face was nearly as shaking as Quinn's had been. He quickly closed the door behind him, and went up to Dwight's body, making sure he did not touch anything. It was almost a repeat of what Quinn had done, until he looked into the corner of the room.

"Quinn, is that you there? I can sense your presence." Muka asked softly.

Of course the cloak was not as effective against other leaders.

"The guards told me that you were already in a meeting with Dwight. I was meant to have one after him, so I thought it could save us all some time if I were to join you. What happened here? Was it..." Muka paused before finishing the sentence.

"Of course, it wasn't me!" Quinn replied back in an angry whisper. "I came in only a few moments before you. Besides, do you really think I would be so stupid to announce myself to the guards and stay behind, waiting for someone like you to come in and catch me?! Before you interrupted me, I tried to inspect the scene just like you were right now."

Muka thought about it for a while, and started to inspect the room at the same time, seeing the same things Quinn had seen.

"It has to be Bryce! Who else could go this far, not to mention be able to kill Dwight? He was a strong Vampire Royal Knight. He might have weakened since he is past his prime, but barely anyone would be able to finish him so... cleanly." Muka claimed.

However, Quinn wasn't convinced. Bryce should be as hurt as Quinn currently was, meaning he should be recovering right now. After their encounter, Bryce was no longer on the top of his list of suspects.

Still, it would have been easier for Muka to just frame Quinn right now, but it looked like he was genuinely trying to figure out who it was. Was someone really pulling the strings behind Mala's back making him think it was Bryce or was it something else?

Both of them turned their heads towards the door, as they started to hear a large commotion and the look on Muka's face was now one of shock. Something had happened, only they both were unaware what.

"Quinn, I'm sorry..." Muka said. "But as a leader I must do my duty. They are accusing you of a possible assassination attempt on Dwight's life. Based on what I see here, I must bring you in and you shall be held until a decision has been made."

"What?!" Quinn shouted back. "What nonsense are you spouting? I VERY CLEARLY am being framed. I just told you that I came in right before you. You are literally the first person I see enter after me, so whoever is accusing me must have already seen the outcome of this and is trying to pin the blame on me!"

Muka stayed silent for a moment and had his back held against the door. It sounded like there were those trying to rush into the room from the outside but Muka was stopping them.

"Quinn, this is a message that everyone has received. I can only advise you to not resist. If everything really is as you claim then there is nothing for you to fear. Just let us get to the bottom of this, I promise our side will help you! We promised to help you, didn't we? If you act out now, it will just complicate things and might bring danger to your family."

Not understanding what was happening, and now being accused of a crime he didn't commit, Quinn was angry. As the doors burst open and the Royal Guard rushed in. He quickly used his Shadow travel to escape through the castle walls outside to the front of the castle.

However, he didn't get far, as a large explosion hit the ground where he was, kicking Quinn out of his shadow, making him skid across the floor.

When he looked up, he broke out in laughter at the absurdity of the scene.

"So everyone thinks I've killed Dwight? And now SOMEHOW all of the leaders JUST HAPPEN TO BE here at the same time?" Quinn pointed out the 'coincidence'.

In front of him were six of the family leaders, who were closest to the castle.

Jin, the 4th leader, Prima the 12th leader, David the 11th leader, Kyle the 7th leader, and Susan the 3rd leader.

"Quinn, we have just been made aware of a possible assassination attempt on Dwight. We need to go inside and confirm it's true. Please come with us quietly!" Jin shouted.

A few seconds later, the Royal Guards ran out of the room. "We hereby confirm that Royal Knight Dwight has been killed!"

This certainly wasn't looking like a good situation.

"Look, I know we don't get along, but don't you think it's at least a LITTLE STRANGE that you guys come here right now and just happen to find me right next to Dwight's body?!" Quinn questioned.

"It's not strange at all!" Susan replied. "We were informed of your meetings and have evidence in regards to your plan to kill the Royal Knight Dwight! We just amended to catch you red handed. Unfortunately we were one step too late and you've already committed your crime!."

It was clear that everyone had already agreed that Quinn was the murderer without an investigation. They probably wouldn't even attempt one and just directly put everything on him.

Now it was up to Quinn whether he would trust in his allies who might insist on an investigation which might clear him... or whether he would attempt to fight his way out of this mess.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 874: Quinn vs six, fight or run?

Looking at all the leaders in front of Quinn was quite daunting. Especially considering he had just had a large fight with one of the leaders in a one on one fight, now there were six in front of him. Perhaps Bryce was considered the strongest out of the leaders, but each leader was strong and had their own fighting style.

The strength between each leader was different by leaps and bounds, so Quinn couldn't see himself getting out of this through a fight, nor could he picture any of the other leaders either.

'But maybe he could?' Quinn thought, comparing himself to a certain person.

[Quest revived: Escape]

[Quest reward: ???]

While thinking about this, it seemed like the system had agreed with him as well. There was only one time the system had given him a quest similar to this one, and that was when Quinn was on the Blade family island. Back then, the system was very accurate, because there was no way of Quinn seeing himself winning the fight against the Blade twins, and it felt the same way now.

Still, the question remained on what he should actually do? Once captured, there was a low chance that he would ever be set free. He was practically just giving his life to them. Many of the leaders disliked him and would just see this as an excuse to get rid of him.

In terms of escaping, Quinn could use his shadow to transfer himself back to one of those at the castle and protect himself there, but based on the situation, he would have to face the power of all the other leaders attacking his castle. This would put the others through danger, and there was a low chance they would survive such an attack.

Finally, the words of Muka rung through his head.

If he was to fight back and resist, then what would happen to the tenth family? They would deem him an enemy of the vampire settlement. How far would that go? Would that also include everyone related to him, all members of the tenth family as well? Would they be punished for his actions?

In the middle of all his thoughts, a small near enough invisible object came towards him. Sensing it, Quinn managed to raise his shadow and block the object. Seeing it now stuck in his shadow he could see it was a red soaked needle.

"Suzan, what are you doing? He hasn't decided to resist yet!" Jin shouted, as he knew straight away which leader the needle had come from.

"That needle wasn't aiming to kill him, you know what my needles can do." She replied. "Also why are we bother taking him in, I think we know full well who killed Dwight. Would anyone else even think of doing such a thing, but an outsider like him. There's no need for the rest of you to get involved." She said as she rushed in with a needle between each of her fingers.

Seeing this, Quinn wasn't just going to let Suzan come at him and do nothing. He was tired of doing nothing.

Suzan was confident, based on what she had seen Quinn do in her last fight, and this was her downfall. When Suzan was within range and close enough so it was nearly impossible for her to avoid, Quinn used his skill Shadow Path. Once it touched her feet she immediately started to slow down.

The shadow path skill was hard to hit the further one was away, since the skill was slow to come out, but with someone as careless as her, he knew it would hit. Then Quinn aimed one of his fingers carefully, and fired out a blood bullet, hitting her right in the knee. She fell to the ground still in the shadow path. Out of anger on one knee, she threw out a desperate blood swipe, but Quinn simply avoided it with a flash step and threw one of his own towards her.

Suzan wanted to move, but her leg was badly hurt and for some reason, it wasn't healing. Although he hadn't restored all his Qi from the fight with Bryce, Quinn had healed it enough to at least use the first stage of Qi to disrupt their healing.

With the blood swipe coming towards her, and her leg hurt, she raised a blood barrier, but when the attack hit her barrier, it smashed right through and continued to move forward. The leaders who were casually watching were shocked and now knew the real danger Suzan was in.

This caused a movement between the leaders who were only watching at the moment. The seventh leader Kyle and the twelfth leader Prima were on the move. First, Prima had moved Suzan off from the shadow and off to the side, while Kyle took off the cape on his back, and at the right moment, had engulfed the blood swipe from Quinn.

'He blocked my attack, but that blood wipe was infused with Qi?' Quinn thought.

'That cape is related to the seventh family's ability, which is why your Qi has not disrupted the flow of energy, Quinn fighting six leaders at once with all their abilities....' Vincent didn't want to say anymore, for his words would only put pressure on Quinn even more.

"You sc.u.m, what are you trying to do?!" Prima shouted.

"Didn't you all see!" Quinn shouted back. "first, you accuse me without even telling me what evidence you have against me, and then you attack me first. Do I not even have the right to defend myself!" Quinn asked.

Although Quinn was unaware, the vampire leaders were now a little on edge, due to what had just happened. The weak leader they knew from before, was able to hurt Suzan badly, and it looked like Quinn had done everything so casually.

What was worrying them most, was the fact that despite there being six leaders in front of him, Quinn wasn't scared.

'Quinn, you were only on earth for a short time. What happened to you?' Jin thought, remembering their first fight.

'Quinn, I don't know what you plan to do, but if the message was really sent out to all the leaders, the others will be here soon, if you have decided to fight, then you have to beat all of these and get out of here!' Vincent urged.

But it looked like the others were deciding for him, as both David the 11th leader, Prima and Kyle charged forward at once, each with their clawed hands covered in the blood arnameant.

'Well, they've already made a choice. They won't even give me a chance to explain myself, and I can't let the others get involved!' Quinn replied.

Using Shadow Equip, Quinn equipped the mask to his face, and made contact with the castle. The message got through and had eventually reached Paul.

"Paul, this is an emergency, just listen!" Quinn said as he fired out blood swipes against the others, and used his shadow to block their oncoming attacks.

'If his cape can block attacks, then I'll just have to use my own fists!' Quinn, took the hit from Kyle dead on, and instead delivered one of his own, clawing through and touching his skin. It was a hit for hit, and he knew this would cause more pain due to the fairy blood.

The biggest problem was how fast each of the leaders were, making it impossible for Quinn to fight them all at once. Now with one of them screaming in pain from the fairy blood. The shadow was used to block an attack from Prima on his back, while he performed a hammer kick on David, breaking his arm and sending him tumbling across the floor.

'Is he really able to take on three of them at once?' Jin was observing the whole thing, still undecided until this point. 'I have to join in.'

Now, even Jin was involved with his blood explosion who had been sitting back the whole time.

The shadow didn't work well against Jin's explosion blood ability as it took up many of his MC points.

Seeing him join the fight, and not having taken out the other yet, Quinn needed to finish his message to Paul.

"Right now, I'm being accused of killing Dwight, the Royal knight. I don't know what's going to happen to me, and I don't know what's going to happen to the people or castle, but protect them at all cost!" the message was delivered, and the call was hung up.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 875: Quinn vs the leaders (Part 2)

Paul didn't even have time to reply to Quinn's message. Nevertheless, he had received his orders, so he would make sure to follow them. He knew what he had to do, so he immediately sprung into action, preparing the whole castle for the worst outcome.

'Something big is about to happen, and we have to be prepared for it. Leo, Nate, I hope you have a very good reason for not answering right now. Without you, we might just be screwed...'

Quinn was faring well against the leaders, since he wasn't holding back on using some of the strongest skills he had available. He didn't even shy away from using the Blood bullet because he understood the need to hurt them as much as possible while they still underestimated him.

Now that they knew how much his attacks hurt, and what effect his gauntlets had, the leaders would be more cautious.

The one giving him the biggest headache at the moment was none other than Jin.

'I'm sorry Quinn, but the quicker I subdue you here, the higher your chance of surviving the aftermath until we manage to get to the truth of the matter!' Jin thought, as he took out his blood weapon, the special shield. He threw it out and the small blades from the outside opened, making it spin.

Quinn had already fought against this once before, and it had completely destroyed his Shadow dome ridding him of MC points, but he had made some preparations in case he had to fight against it once more.

Quinn opened his hand up, ready to use the Shadow lock skill. However, before he could close it, it had been stopped by Prima's hand.

It was very strange, since he had stabbed his fellow leader with his rapier weapon, David, only moments ago, yet Prima's speed had somehow skyrocketed though these actions, allowing him to reach Quinn before he could react.

"You think this is the first time I have fought against a punisher?" Prima whispered. "I'm not letting you get away!" The next moment he kicked Quinn in his stomach towards the shield, while the others got out of the strike zone.

The blood from the spinning shield was closing in, leaving Quinn no choice but to surround his whole body in shadows. Explosions went off one after the other, continuing for a brief period of time. Quinn could see his MC points plummeting, until the explosions finally stopped.

He came out with a blood crescent kick aiming straight for Prima who had dashed to the front again, but the twelfth leader's speed allowed him to dodge.

'Damn, he's faster than Bryce and I don't have my shadow to slow him down! It seems that taking on more than one leader at a time, really is impossible!'

No longer having any shadow and unable to hit the leader in front of him with his blood, Quinn was at a loss of what to do, as he fell to the floor, he punched the ground as hard as he could to lift the rocks up in the air, causing debris to fly everywhere.

He gambled on the off chance that it might allow him to fight them one on one, or at least create a gap in their awareness so he could run away this time. He was even contemplating escaping with the shadow as his life was on the line, but he was worried the leaders would try to follow him.

Time was running out, so Quinn was getting ready to leave the scene, be it via Nate's shadow or one of the others.

Before leaving the area, he felt a stinging pain in his leg and the skill he was trying to use got canceled. No matter how hard he tried to summon the shadow it was unsuccessful.

'Is it something to do with the needle from that girl leader?' Quinn wondered.

One of Suzan's needles had hit him. The leader had been far away in the back, yet that didn't mean she had been just waiting around. She had waited for the perfect moment to strike and soon enough Quinn felt Jin's blood coming towards his face, and a large explosion set off.

His body was chucked like a rag doll and his health was dangerously low.

[5/100 HP]

[Blood bank activated]

Alas, it was useless, even with his second life. It might have been different if Quinn had been at full strength, but complaining about that wouldn't help him. Now, he couldn't even use his shadow ability.

In the middle of recovering, David had come over and slammed him to the ground, Quinn's health dropping to what little he had before the Blood bank healed. He remained lying on the floor, lacking the energy to resist any longer.

With his last bit of strength he looked up, and saw that even the last bit of hope had vanished with the arrival of the missing leaders.

At least most of them.

"It looks like what Cindy said was true, Quinn really was planning to kill Dwight and judging by your fight, it seems he has already succeeded." Jill stated as she entered the scene.

The eighth leader Jill was accompanied by, the fifth leader Sunny, and the thirteenth leader Lee.

'Quinn you have put me in a very difficult situation.' Lee lamented. 'We still don't know where Fex is, and now it looks like you've been framed for someone else's wrongdoing.' He regretted not being able to do anything for the tenth leader, but until they found out who the actual culprit was, going against the other leaders would just put him in the same situation as Quinn.

Kyle, was still grabbing his wound on his shoulder he had received from Quinn and the others could now see him sweating.

"What's wrong with him?" Sunny asked.

"It happened after the tenth attacked him with his gauntlets!" Suzan replied. "He looks almost poisoned."

"Kyle, you are poisoned with Fairy blood! Use your blood control to remove it!" Suzan ordered.

Hearing this, while still barely conscious, Quinn wondered how Jill even knew it was Fairy blood. As an old vampire it made sense for Bryce to know about it, yet even he had been mostly guessing, yet Jill somehow sounded convinced as she called it out.

"When you remove the blood we need to keep it for evidence!" Jill continued. "It looks like the information we got was correct after all!"

'Information, what information?!" Quinn tried his best to listen, but his remaining strength was barely enough to keep him from losing consciousness.

While Quinn was on the floor, Suzan quickly threw the red needles all over his body. Strangely, they didn't damage him, nor did they sap his strength, making him wonder what exactly they were doing to him.

David, then covering his foot in the blood hardening around it, was ready to stomp on Quinn's head for good measure. Jin wanted to rush over to stop him, but was too far away.

"Stop!" Muka shouted coming from the castle. "He can no longer fight! He is the most likely suspect, but that hasn't been confirmed yet! The correct thing to do is to

bring him in. Even with Dwight gone we will do things the proper way, especially in a time without a King!"

Hearing these words, and not wanting to scuffle with Muka, David pulled his foot away, albeit openly reluctantly.

Muka then knelt down next to Quinn, and looked him in the eyes. Quinn looked like he still had some fight in him, he wasn't ready to go just yet. He wanted to beat all of these people and Muka could see it.

"Please don't be angry at us. I promise you that we shall be on your side, and I will get to the bottom of this! I will make sure we find the right culprit and save you! All I'm asking you is to trust us. And... sorry, Quinn."

Hitting Quinn hard on the back of the head, Muka had knocked him out.

[Quest failed]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 876: Returning after a long time

Saving Fex had been a lot easier than they had imagined it to be. It was hard to tell if that was because Leo and Silver were on another level compared to the enemies, or if the security had been lax, since they might have never suspected that someone would be able to find Fex so far out from the Vampire settlement.

Either way, Silver was going to unveil the vampire responsible, and it was a knight at that. The doll held the person tightly and she lifted the hood up, to reveal a young looking girl with short brown hair and red rose cheeks.

"You!" Silver uttered, struggling with how to feel. "You are the eighth family's knight Amber. I knew one of the families was behind this, but why would the eighth family be involved in kidnapping my brother?! Why did you team up with the Bloodsuckers to attack the tenth castle?!"

In Silver's head, it only made sense for the person behind all of this to either be Cindy or Bryce. They were the likeliest candidates to have teamed up with the Bloodsuckers in order to get rid of the king, which would directly benefit them.

So what did the eighth family get out of all of this?

Were they just being used so the one's in the background could deny being responsible or was there something more to all of this?

Amber merely smiled and soon after fell into a hysterical laugh which echoed through the whole cave.

"Have you forgotten what our family's ability is? Did you really think finding this cave would solve everything? No, I've informed them that you are here. They know that you most likely already have Fex and me right now. Our plans are still in motion and you will be lucky to make it back alive!"

At that moment, Leo sensed something within Amber, she was doing something to the energy inside her body. Although Leo wanted to let Silver handle her alone, he decided to intervene because she was an integral part in all of this and couldn't be allowed to proceed with what she was doing.

He stood in front of the two girls and placed his hand on top of Amber's head.

Not long after, the laughing dulled as the defeated knight realised that her plan wasn't working.

"What are you doing you bald headed man? Get your hand off me!" Amber screamed.

"With the doll restraining you, and me having taken your energy away, you have no chance of killing yourself. Once we get back you'll share your little story of

working with the Bloodsuckers with all of them. Even if you don't want to, I'm sure there are some vampires that can pry the information out of your head." Leo said.

After realising what Amber was about to do, Silver wrapped plenty of string around her, and placed her in the wooden box they were carrying. She could still control the puppet while walking, it was just more annoying doing it this way. However, it would guarantee that their prisoner wouldn't be able to harm herself again, and Leo could always see if she attempted a stunt like the last one.

With Amber under control, the group exited the cave. They needed to take a few seconds to gather their thoughts. Fex was rubbing the area around his wrist, as they were red and sore from his repeated attempts to pull himself free.

"Is it true?" Silver asked, approaching him. "Have you forgotten about everyone and everything?"

When Fex looked into Silver's eyes, he could tell she was saddened by the idea. He could see that he must have meant a lot to this person, so he felt very bad that it was indeed the case.

"Yes, I'm sorry. I'm sure you're all great people. After all, you risked your lives to save me, but I really forgot everything." Fex replied.

Rubbing the top of his head, it brought a smile to Fex's face, but at the same time he immediately went to make sure his hair was in perfect place. This whole set of actions that happened felt natural, as if the two of them had done it over and over again in the past.

"Don't worry, we'll get your memories back." Silver said softly, happy that at least some things had stayed the same as she walked back to the centre where everyone else was.

"I won't lie to you, the situation is looking a little bad." Silver said. "I never thought that Jill the eighth leader would be working along with the Bloodsuckers. Usually, if I want to get in contact with my father or anyone else, I would do so by requesting it through her, but that's impossible right now."

"Which means, we have to bring her back with us?" Nate concluded. "Shouldn't we try to inform Quinn?"

The rest nodded and thought this was the most sensible thing to do, but when they tried to call him, there was no reply just like the time before. Still, this was important news that they needed to pass on immediately. The tenth family needed to be careful against the eighth family, so they decided to get in contact with the castle.

When they got through to Paul, he gave them bad news. They were devastated to hear that Quinn had been captured and was being accused of being a murderer, especially with the victim being the Royal Knight Dwight.

"Quinn, was captured because they think he killed that important guy?!" Nate repeated the words because he still couldn't believe it.

"It looks like Amber didn't lie about them setting Quinn up. Someone must be working with the eighth family and because of their ability, they knew the positions of every one of the families." Silver explained.

"I should have noticed something sooner." Leo blamed himself. "At the time, Edward had attempted to get in contact with the King's castle through Jill, however, the communication didn't go through. I didn't know much about the other leaders back then but now I am suspecting that it wasn't a coincidence."

"What will happen to Quinn? Will they kill him?" Nate asked.

"Well, right now they just have him down as a suspect, so they most likely will need to be completely sure it was him first. However, the eighth family and whoever is working with might have already prepared some evidence against him. What we have to do now, is return as soon as possible with Amber, and allow the leaders to integrate them in front of the others, not behind the scenes!" Said Silver.

Although Fex didn't know what was going on, by the look on everyone's faces it looked urgent, and they all spoke of Quinn like he was an important person.

'He was the person who sent all of these to save me, and now he is in trouble. I don't know who you are, but I will repay the favour.'

The group set off, and Ham returned to his earring form. Ham was slower than the others and they had only needed him to guide them there, having gone through the path once they knew the way back, and they needed to be quicker than ever.

Nate was able to go back, before the others, using his shadow, but they had already informed them that the eighth leader was behind everything so there was no need for him to go back, unless he could do it with Amber.

Unfortunately this wasn't possible for him with his skill. The only person who could travel in between others was Quinn. The others were still learning how to use the shadow ability after all.

Rushing off, they headed back into the forest and traveled at a good pace. Nate was starting to tire but forced himself to keep up, even though he knew he couldn't keep it up for ever. At the moment he wished he would have learnt the Shadow travel skill to make it easier on himself.

At some point, he had lost the two of them, but it didn't matter as he and Fex would continue on their own. Soon though, they saw them again and for some reason they had frozen in place and their weapons were drawn.

"What's the matter, what's wrong?!" Nate asked in exhaustion.

"Get ready, we are under attack!" Leo shouted back.

Once the two young vampires caught up. all four of them had their backs facing each other covering all angles, along with the doll.

The sound of the trees ruffling was heard, and Nate knew there was more than one enemy, what worried him most though, was unlike the expression Leo had when entering the cave, this one looked like he was worried.

"What is it?" Fex asked.

"I sense a few of those creatures like in the cave. Less than ten in total, but they are just as strong so don't underestimate them!" Leo answered. "The real problem however is another one. The last one has power nearly as great as the leaders, or perhaps even a little stronger."

"Are you talking about Rowa? But he should have been dead!" Silver shouted back.

"No, they're not as strong as Rowa, and they're a vampire."

Coming out from the woods, into the space they were in, a vampire could be seen. A middle aged man, with long black hair to his shoulders, and a mustache that twirled. It was a vampire that Leo had never seen before.

But when Silver set her eyes upon the man, she could only match it with images she had seen in paintings.

"This... impossible! What is an original vampire doing here?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 877: The castle duty

A message had been sent out to all of the Vampire knights and family leaders informing them that the tenth family leader, Quinn was currently treated as a high level threat. There was evidence suggesting that he plotted something against vampire kind.

Paul had also received that message, informing him to keep an eye out for the possible traitor with the order to inform one of the other family leaders or Royal Guard so that he could be brought to justice.

Based on the short amount of time Paul had been in the vampire world, and the expressions on the other leaders' faces he had seen in the council room, he knew something like this had been bound to happen. He had experienced this a lot in the past when even he was attempting to rise to the position of Head general.

The difference was, nearly everyone was against Quinn, and he didn't really have any allies amongst the other leaders. Whatever deals he would make, would only be tempered with and would benefit the others.

Springing into action, Paul had called in all the vampires in the inner castle area, to enter the castle itself, apart from those stationed at the gates near the tower. They were each given a mask that had been created by Logan.

Although Quinn would have preferred limiting the masks to those in his inner circle, the situation was now clearly different to before. At least Paul knew he could trust his people, especially the ten directly under his control as a Vampire knight led by his second-in-command Ashley, who had been the first to volunteer during the mass turning.

Everyone knew something was up when they were called in, but Paul didn't share the details. This only made them speculate and more anxious. As time went on, eventually he received another message a short while later.

"The tenth leader has been captured and will be held captive until a decision has been made by the council." The content was short and was delivered personally by Jill, the eighth leader.

However, it was the worst outcome Paul had expected. He called a meeting in the dining room next to the throne room. It included everyone who was close to Quinn and who he deemed as important. Communication with Leo's team was impossible, making them believe they were in the midst of their rescue mission.

Once everyone had gathered in the dining hall, there were those facing backwards and forwards, some standing up, and a few sitting down in the empty seats.

"I'm sorry that I've called you in without saying anything beforehand." Paul began.

They all were already aware that it had to be something about Quinn. When he had been in the middle of his fight, getting beaten by the others, they had all felt it, a horrible feeling in the bond between leader and creator getting stretched.

"Someone has framed the murder of the Royal Knight Dwight on Quinn, and the other family leaders have now captured him, holding him at the moment. I'm sure a lot of you have many questions, but I honestly don't have all the details either. However, I fear that there is something much bigger than this going on in the background!"

"It doesn't make sense for the mastermind to just get Quinn captured. If they wanted his vote there were a number of ways they could do it. So I think there is something bigger going on, which is why we need to focus on protecting the castle." Paul explained.

The first one to act after hearing this was Peter as he slammed his fist down on the table so hard that the corner piece of it had broken off.

"Bullcrap! How could they frame him for this crap? It's that second leader!" Peter claimed. "They're the ones behind all of this! We need to march up and get her to confess whatever she did."

"Peter we can't just go and do that!" Sam stopped him. "Our family here is small and doesn't have the power to stand against all of them. I mean there is a possibility we could get Logan to create one of the teleporters to the Cursed ship and call on them to help, but based on the strength of the other families and how they are acting, I fear even then it would be suicide mission."

"Which is why I think it's best we just protect ourselves." Paul concluded. "Just before it happened Quinn left me a message. I'm actually surprised he had the insight that something like this might happen, which was why he had made as many upgrades to the towers and statues around the place as possible."

"I don't think what Sam suggested is a bad idea, but we shouldn't lead them here. If the other families do attack us, we should use the equipment to hold them off while we ourselves escape back to the Cursed ship. Yes maybe we will be hunted down, but if it comes to that staying in the Vampire World is just too much of a risk!"

"Aren't you just telling us to abandon Quinn?!" Peter accused the Vampire knight. "After everything he's done for you! How many times has he saved us here? Even after he has returned, he spent most of his time looking after everyone in the family. If we leave this place and do nothing, then it's only a death sentence for him!"

The group discussed more on the topic and quickly two camps manifested. Those that wanted to protect their own lives, and those that wanted to stay and save Quinn.

Unfortunately, they lacked any details about the evidence the family leaders supposedly had against him. On top of that, there was no news from Leo and Silver.

"We can't leave Quinn!" Layla blurted out. "At least I can agree with Peter! If it was any one of us in his situation then he would have stayed to help us! He made the Cursed faction to protect others, and even you Paul! I know that as a general you tend to think about what's best for the majority of the people, but this time, I think you got it wrong! I think the majority of the people want to help Quinn."

Hearing that, Paul looked around the room and he saw the faces of everyone in the Cursed faction show determination, including some of those that had stayed at the castle, such as Timmy and Erin.

"It seems I got you all quite wrong on this one. Very well, but, I forbid anyone to do anything before we find out the decision that is to be made with Quinn!" Paul declared. "Also we shall wait for the return of Leo. In the meantime, I want Erin to take Leo's group of vampires that he had trained and protect the east gate!"

"I will send Ashley and my group over to the west gate, while Sam, you will be in charge of the main entrance, the north gate. I'm not telling you to engage, but to only be on the lookout and slow them down. Quinn showed me what these towers and statues can do, and if the other families do attack, they will be in for quite the surprise." Paul said with the meeting coming to an end.

Some were dissatisfied, especially Peter, since he wanted to storm in and attempt to save Quinn right now, but Logan calmed him down with reasoning, saying it would do Quinn more harm than good.

One person, though, had left the room a little more worried than when they first came in.

"Hey are you okay?" Layla asked as she rubbed her hand across Cia's back.

Her face was covered in sweat and she felt a little sick.

"Yeah, I just feel a little ill, I'll be okay." She smiled, and walked down the hallway to her own room.

While walking she couldn't help but think about what Peter had said, how the second leader Cindy was behind everything, if that was true, she was now starting to wonder if she was somehow responsible for all of this.

Cia only had the negative feelings towards Quinn she had before, she had lost her memories due to Quinn. The fact that Layla liked him only worsened that.

Cindy had been nothing but nice to her. In order to make it so the vision she saw didn't come true, she decided to inform Cindy of what Peter had seen, how Peter had claimed to see her with the eighth leader.

She thought maybe this would be the misunderstanding caused between the two that caused Quinn to kill Cindy, but when she went to visit her again something odd had happened.

'Is it really all my fault?'

Unaware, Cia had done something unbeknown to her that made Cindy aware that Quinn had in his possession, none other than something called a Blood fairy, which would be the start of a slippery path for the tenth family.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 878: Plan of Hope

It was dark, but it usually always was on this planet. Only this time, Quinn could tell he was in a complete pitch black room due to his eyesight changing. Usually, there would at least be a few lights powered by crystals here and there but not in this place. Wherever that was.

'So this is the outcome in the end.' Quinn thought to himself as he tried moving his hands but couldn't budge an inch, and it was the same for his legs as well.

Even without a light source, Quinn could see due to his vampire eyesight. And he could see that he was in some type of cell room. His hands and legs cuffed up. In front of him, one of the doors with the special circular locks. Not that Quinn could reach the lock anyway if he wanted to. Not only his arms but his legs were tied up, but they were up against the wall as well.

There was no chain, his limbs were spread out, and he was unable to move.

'Did you see what happened to me, after I was...'

'After you had a beating, unfortunately not. When you go unconscious, it looks like I do as well. However, I can take a good guess. Do you remember underneath the king's castle? There were special cells for certain types of people, protected by those from the ninth family. My guess is it's the same place they kept Fex. Which means they are waiting for a trial before they decide to do something with you.'

'Well, time to get out of here, I guess.' Quinn said with confidence as he tried to use his strength along with his Qi to break from the locks. However, it was useless. He thought this might be the case. They had to have something that could at least restrain leaders, right? So the next step was for Quinn to try to summon his shadow, and maybe he could get out of here that way.

'What, it's not working!' Quinn said in a panic, finally realising that he might just really be stuck in here.

'I was going to tell you, but I thought you would try for yourself anyway. Do you remember Suzan, when she threw those needles at you. Those aren't just any needles. It's based on her ability. It works similar to how Nathen's bubble at the school you went to works, although a little different.'

'Each needle that hits your body, limits your ability for a certain amount of time. It also depends on where the needle hit's your body. I don't know how much she can create at one time, since it varies on the leader's power, but I imagine they put as much as they could in you while you were asleep.'

Not that Quinn was counting on getting out of here, but he wanted to at least know he had the option. Now he was just left wondering up on the wall, what had happened and what would happen next.

Soon, the sound of the combination of the lock being undone was heard. Quinn still had no reference of how long he had been down there, but it wasn't long after he had woken up that he would be getting a visitor.

When the person had entered though, Quinn could only see a hooded figure, who also had a clown mask with an unhappy smile covering their entire face.

"Great, a sad clown has come to cheer me up," Quinn said. "Is this some type of special vampire ritual they do to prisoners?"

'Be careful Quinn, we have no such thing, this person is clearly hiding their identity for some reason.' Vincent warned.

It also looked like the clown was unresponsive, and instead, while walking towards Quinn, pulled out a large syringe form behind it's back from the cape it was wearing.

"Thank you, Quinn. "The voice spoke, clearly altered by the mask they were wearing. Giving Quinn no clue who this was. "It was hard for me to find a way to get blood directly from you. I was thinking of storming the castle but now seeing you here like this, there is no need."

The person moved forward and pushed the syringe into Quinn's vein on the other side of his elbow, and the tube slowly filled up.

"What's the need to hide under that mask?" Quinn said. "I already have a good idea who you might be, is it Cindy?..." Quinn paused before speaking again. "Perhaps Muka, or one of the other leaders." Quinn carried on speaking, mentioning name after name, he was hoping for a reaction or a change of heartbeat, but there was none.

When the syringe had filled up, the clown left.

"Quinn, maybe me and you want the same thing." They said before the door shut again.

'What was that all about, why did they take my blood?' Quinn wondered.

'Think about it,' Vincent replied. 'What can be done with the blood of a leader, in my mind I can think of two things. They can use the blood to raise one that has been put into eternal slumber, and the second one, is use the blood to unlock the ritual that has been put on the king's absolute blood book. Either one of those doesn't sound good, and who has recently died who had hidden such a book?'

Quinn had finally clicked on to what Vincent was saying. Dwight wasn't just killed to frame Quinn, they had killed him to get the book he had hidden away.

'But, don't they need the blood of all the leaders? How could a leader possibly do that without the others knowing about it...' At that point, something clicked in his head.

'Now you're thinking like me, the blood doesn't have to be from the leaders themselves. Although those that are turned by a leader's blood aren't pure enough. A direct descent of a leader's blood is good enough.'

'And that explains why they went for Fex and Kazz that time.' Quinn replied. 'But I don't understand, if it was Cindy, she would have become king anyway with my vote. She would have received the book anyway.'

While trying to figure out the last few parts, the door was seen opening again, and Quinn wondered if the clown had returned for something else, but instead two other leaders had walked in.

Both Jin and Muka.

Quinn, although didn't have anything against them before, didn't like how the vampires had treated him just because he was a suspect, they could have fought for his innocence at least.

"I know you are upset with us Quinn," Muka said, reading the expression on his face. "But trust me when I say this, me and Jin don't believe you are the one that killed Dwight. It's why we are here to see you. Our investigation has unfortunately come to a stand still, so we were wondering if there was any information you could provide on your end?"

Although Quinn didn't want to tell them anything, it would have been stupid not to when they were trying to help him. He was sure that the person behind this already knew everything Quinn knew anyway, somehow.

For now, what just happened with the clown and what he had figured out, he would tell them after he found out what he wanted.

"First, what evidence do they have that I killed Dwight? You saw me in the room with you at the time, and judging by the fact that you haven't set me free, I'm guessing the evidence shows me as the killer." Quinn asked.

Both Jin and Muka looked at each other before replying.

"There was a warning put out about you, that you may be hiding a Blood fairy in your castle. Because of this you were put on high alert. When Dwight was killed we weren't too sure, but through the investigation, it turns out that he was first poisoned with fairy blood." Muka explained. "This was how you...I mean, they

were able to overpower him. Then when we took your beast gear from you, we found that they were made with fairy blood, and that's what had injured Kyle."

"I'm afraid the evidence is highly stacked against you," Jin added.

Learning of this, Quinn thought back to a certain thing that happened after the fight, Jill had shouted out about the fairy blood, was it because of this, but how did they know about Alex? Not even Kazz knew what Alex was.

"So, do you have anything to say?" Jin asked.

Quinn took a deep breath, and while down here not able to do anything, he only good talk to these two about what he had found out. He went on to tell the two all the details, including the meeting with the clown he had just had, and the look on their faces told him they couldn't believe what he had just said.

"So you think it's Cindy?" Jin asked. "I find that very hard to believe, she would have become Queen anyway with your vote, and gotten the book. It makes no sense?"

"Then you don't have to believe me, but believe what I have found out," Quinn said. "Without me, the vote is still tied six to six. I don't know what she plans to do with my blood, but if Jill, who I think is working with Cindy decides to switch sides and votes for Cindy, it means It will be her win, and I think that is too much of a coincidence.

"If that happens, I want you two to do me a favour. It's the only thing you can do." Quinn said, putting his hope in this plan.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 879: The passing tenth

Inside the tenth castle, everyone was feeling quite tense. They were all waiting for something to happen. Due to Quinn being a leader they were afraid that an investigation may soon start from those from other families, or possibly something else, something worse. A storming of the castle in search for the evidence that they needed? Or a decision to get rid of everyone related to Quinn. The silence from the other leaders and the council members was affecting them all day by day.

What started to happen next though, was something Paul didn't predict.

"Paul, are you there?" Sam asked using one of the masks he had received. Those that were stationed by the gates were wearing their masks at all times now, due to the frequent communication now needed back to the base, adn in case they needed to warn all the others.

"Speak, have you seen someone coming from one of the other families?" Paul asked.

"Not quite, there are people at the northgate, but they're not from the other families, they're from the tenth family." Sam claimed.

Standing just outside the gate of the tenth inner castle area, were vampires that had come from the pooling area. On their bodies they looked to be beaten and bruised, some looked weak, and others looked slightly starved, having the blood that was meant to be given to them, taken off.

After Quinn was captured, certain news started to spread around about him. The deal that Quinn had made before with Cindy was off and the others started to discriminate against those in the tenth family again, but this time it was on a larger scale. They had become aware of the deal made with the leaders, and now that they had learnt of the suspicion of the tenth leader, it was getting worse.

In the past this would often happen as well, and some of these problems needed to be dealt by Leo personally. He would take a trip to the pooling area, and show his strength punishing those that had hurt the tenth family, within reason of course, but this was something Paul could not do at the current time.

"What should we do, should we bring them in. They look pretty hurt, they don't have to be brought to the castle but they can at least be brought to the inner area. Their pleas and reasons seem genuine." Sam explained.

However, Paul wasn't quick to say yes. Letting in those from the pooling area, those that weren't really loyal to the family wasn't a good idea. If an attack was to happen, they would switch sides or even be working for the other side already.

Right now, Paull was relying on the towers and other defences to protect them from an attack. The equipment only protected them from the outside. An attack from

within, would be difficult. Was turning them away the right thing to do? With Leo and Quinn away, it was up to him to decide.

"Bring them in to be treated, if they need blood, give it to those that look like they need it most. We can't have members of the tenth family turning into bloodsuckers, it would only make things worse. Use the houses closest to the gates as a base, when they're all healed up, turn them away, tell them to go back to the pooling area. If they come back again, treat them again. It's the only thing we can do for now." Paul ordered.

Letting one in, would soon allow for all of them to be let in causing a burden for them. Doing as Asked, Sam helped those he could.

Inside the castle other developments continued, as Alex had finished making those in Paul's team, as well as those from Leo's team of vampires, weapons made from his blood. It was one of the special things the tenth family had compared to other families that they didn't know about.

The orders were to keep the weapons within the castle for now, as the weapons made with Alex's blood gave off a distinct, different colour. It was fine for those with the shadow ability to hold them, due to hiding it in their dimensional space but too obvious for others.

Learning off this fact, Cia was now even more concerned with what she had done. She was in her room lying down, and by the side of her bed was a red whip. A weapon that had been given by Alex.

Those that knew the shadow ability were all given weapons from Alex a while ago, this was due to their dimensional space ability and apparently Cia had learnt how to use this as well.

However, after losing her memories, she had also forgotten how to use the shadow ability and was unaware that they were even supposed to hide their weapons. After visiting Cindy to inform her of what she had learnt from Layla about Peter.

Cindy had requested to see something, the whip that she had been carrying around her side. Something about the special red colour was calling out to her and had caught her eye.

At first, Cindy assumed that it might have been a blood weapon, and she wondered how Quinn was able to give the others blood weapons without having to kill vampires, but after testing it out a little, and even grazing it against her own skin, she felt a searing pain run through her body, and she immediately knew what it was.

It was only later when Cia had returned and learnt a bit more about the weapons she realised that they were meant to be kept a secret. Of course, later through

general curiosity and asking leading questions she figured out Alex was slightly different from them.

'She only looked at my weapon and I only told her what Layla told me, it's not your fault, and it might be the same for Cindy. Maybe she was the one who had passed on the message to the other leaders and they were the one who acted on the information.' She told herself.

But she knew that it wasn't true. Through her years of training and learning to read people, she felt a little off the second time she had visited Cindy. She didn't know why but ever since she had informed her of her own death, she started acting strange.

She had decided that she would no longer meet Cindy and report what the tenth family was doing like she had been doing. Since being here, everyone had treated her nicely in the castle.

And if Cindy was planning to hurt these people, then Cia didn't want that. She may have disliked Quinn, but not enough for everyone else to be punished as well.

She was just afraid that it might have already been too late.

Eventually a few days passed with more and more people coming to the castle from the tenth family. They had learnt of those that were treated and it started to spread, but Paul was adamant about not letting anyone in. If the people didn't listen, then soon he might have to start hurting his own.

But then a week passed, and it was the original time when the kings vote was to be decided. No decision had yet been made of what was to happen to Quinn, and the others knew he was still alive due to their connection they had.

Inside the dining room, Paull had called for another meeting, gathering the important figures in the tenth family.

"I have finally received an update on the situation. Today, the vampire council will have a meeting, without anyone from the tenth family." Paul stated. "The reason why they haven't been able to progress further with what happened with Quinn, is because they need to select a new king or Queen first."

"So, today the vote will go on, and once a king or Queen has been selected, then Quinn's trial will eventually take place."

There were worried looks around the room, as they knew depending on who would become the vampire King or Queen, could very well decide Quinn's fate.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 880: The vote for the crown

Usually, the vampire settlement would be filled with vampires going about doing their day to day business. Working in the marketplace, crafting arts and more, but today had been marked as a special event. It was almost like a public holiday to the vampires as they waited in their homes for the announcement to be made of who would be crowned next.

All the leaders had entered the vampire council room and had taken their seat, each with their vampire knights by their side. However, it felt a little odd in the room as it was emptier than it had been the last time they were there.

This was all because of a few empty seats and missing people in the room. The fourteenth seat at the end that would be accompanied by the head punisher, although that seat had been empty for years. The tenth seat that only recently got filled by its true leader, today there wasn't even any of the tenth's vampire knights, and finally the king's seat along with the two vampire knights. On top of this, Bryce had only brought one leader with him, and it was the same for Lee.

Seeing this scene and display, the vampires couldn't help but feel that their power had weakened during this generation and something needed to be done to get it restored. Standing up to address everyone, was none other than Bryce.

He often took care of the duties when the Royal knights were away, and in the past, with the king being frail and weak for a long period of time, they were used to Bryce doing this for a while now, and if there was one thing Bryce did know a lot about, it was the rules.

Which was why no one had a problem with his decision.

"First, to explain to everyone what we are here to do today," Bryce stated, placing his cane on the floor. What the other vampires did notice was that only one knight was with him, and Kazz was not present. Which was a first for Bryce.

"Based on the nominations made last time, there are only two that are in the running of becoming the next king. I, the first family leader, and Cindy, the second family leader. Unless anyone wishes to nominate themselves right now, or someone else they think is more suitable, then please speak now."

There was a moment of silence and odd glances around the room. Two of them came from both Muka and Jin, who looked at each other as if they were ready to do something, and they were as they had Quinn's plan in mind, but nothing was spoken from them.

"Good," Bryce stated, stomping the cane on the floor. "Now, due to the situation with the tenth leader, we have agreed that the tenth family, will not be able to cast a vote. After all, we don't know how involved him or his knights really are in this whole mess, so we are to do a vote with all the leaders present here. If there is a tie

again, like last time, then we all know what will happen, but I hope through discussion we will be able to choose the right leader." Bryce explained.

"Further from that, once the king or Queen has been selected, they are free to choose two leaders to become their Royal knights, those leaders can choose to refuse or accept the position, but if there are no more volunteers, then the king will have the final say."

"Or Queen." Cindy interrupted, quite bravely as Bryce was in the middle of a speech, but she seemed confident and unafraid.

Nevertheless, Bryce continued without saying anything to Cindy, apart from a couple of glares.

"After the Royal knights have been selected, you must choose a time to make everyone aware of who will take your position of leader. I hope everyone has prepared their next leader already, just in case?" Bryce asked, looking around the room.

This was another reason why they were given a week. Because of this, a few of the castles needed to prepare a few things just in case they were elected as Royal knights. With a new king, it was time for a new generation, and it wouldn't be a surprise if a few of the leaders decided to select a new leader and enter eternal sleep themselves. Although, maybe not with this group of leaders, as they all seemed more stubborn than ever.

What came as a surprise was that one leader had raised their hand, and that leader was the thirteenth leader, Lee.

Bryce nodded, showing that he was allowed to speak his turn.

"I wish to make a request. Although I'm sure I won't be selected as a Royal knight, as I am not close to any of the contenders to be the next king or Queen. I was unable to prepare my next in line. As you all know, the one I wished to take my place no longer can, but I believe I do have a candidate that is not able to take that position at the moment. I wish to have Silver take my place as a leader and for you to lift the title of her being a vampire knight to allow me to do this."

The others were quite stunned at the request, not because the request was out of order but because of which family it had come from. The thirteenth family had always had a male as a leader. It was tradition, and even Lee wished to follow this tradition with him. But now, he had requested to change it.

"I don't think there will be a problem, but I think we will have to wait for the new council to decide when it has been formed. If they agree, Silver will be stripped of her title as vampire knight, and then you are free to name whoever you want as your successor."

A small short smile appeared on Lee's face after hearing these words. He was ready to right every wrong he had done in his family. Although, the smile soon disappeared as he was worried just what Silver was up to.

At the same time, this move was done, as a way to protect her. Now that he had made his intentions clear, it would be a bigger deal if someone was to try and harm Silver.

"If that is all done, then I believe we should get on with the Vote," Bryce stated. "I hope you have thought hard and well over who will be the next best leader. First myself, those in favour of me, Bryce Cain becoming the first leader, please raise your hand."

Slowly, hands started to rise in the room. The 3rd family, Suzan, the 6th family leader from the Muscat family, Kyle from the 7th family and Prima from the 12th family, but after there were no more hands raised. In total, there were only four people that had voted for Bryce, which meant that there would be a winner declared today.

As for the person who had previously nominated Bryce but didn't vote for him this time, that was none other than the 8th leader Jill.

Everyone could see that this was unexpected for Bryce, as the cane started to shake under his hands. He was boiling with anger at the unexpected turn from his side, but he bit his tongue and kept his cool, not saying anything.

"Very well, all those who wish to vote for Cindy Cha, please raise their hand." Bryce asked, and Sunny, David, and Lee from the 5th, 11th and 12th family had raised their hands first. After a short while, the expected turner raised their hand, Jill from the 8th family.

All that was needed was the last two votes, and both Jin and Muka looked at each other and raised their hand.

'It looks like Quinn's guess was right', Jin thought.

'I really don't want to do this, but for now, it will be okay until we find out the truth. We shall use your plan, Quinn!' Muka thought.

"Me, the ninth leader and Jin the fourth leader, have decided that we would like to Vote for Bryce to become the next vampire king," Muka said out loud.

The other leaders turned and looked at the both of them. They had no clue this was planned, and it was an unexpected turn of events for nearly all of them. Jill had a look of great anger on her face as her fist was clenched, but Cindy quickly gave her a look, calming her down.

With the change of votes, it had finally been decided that Bryce, the first leader, would become the next vampire king, and there was nothing the other side could do to stop it.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 881: The King's Vault

Underneath the King's castle, a large smirk appeared on Quinn's face right about now, as he imagined the other side not getting their way.

'Damn it, if only I knew who to picture and blame for all this mess, it would make this moment a little sweeter.' Quinn thought, but all he could think of was the clown that had come to visit him.

'Well, you seem sure that Muka and Jin will follow your plan, but based on their reaction, I would have to agree.' Vincent commented. 'However, I think whatever we have done, we have only delayed the other side. We still don't know why they would need the blood or worst-case scenario, Bryce was playing with us all along, and he had finally got to the position he needed to be in.'

Quinn doubted this simply due to Bryce's reaction when he had entered the castle. Right now, the only reason Quinn wasn't panicking as much about the situation he was in, was because if Bryce had become King, then he was the best alibi he had for Dwight's death. Just like, Quinn didn't suspect Bryce, it should be the same the other way round.

There was one thing Vincent was right about though, this small move, he was unsure if it even faltered the other side's plans even a little.

"Are you sure you want to change your vote to..to..to Bryce!" Jill stuttered over her words, she was that angry.

"The two of us have had time to think about it, and we believe the way the current vampire settlement is right now, Bryce is the best leader for the situation we are in at the moment." Muka replied. "If times were like they were before, then I believe Cindy would have been the best choice. A lot has happened in this week, and I fear if Cindy was in charge, it would happen again, whereas for Bryce, there aren't many that would go against him, whether he chooses the right or wrong path, us as council members, can only guide him."

Muka didn't have to explain his position. He was free to vote as he wished, but he wanted to give sound reasons for the others that were supporting Cindy, so it didn't seem like he was being threatened or controlled like some others might have thought. This way, they would be more accepting of Bryce when the Crown was switched.

"Well, let's make an announcement, a new King has been decided, and we shall have the crowning ceremony within the hour. Invite everyone to the front of the castle to make them aware of the news." Bryce said, leaving the room giving his first order as King.

The message was soon sent out to everyone in the settlement that they should gather in the plaza that was stationed in front of the King's castle once more. This

time there was no built platform, as they would instead wait for whoever was crowned to come out and give their official first speech.

The people did not know who had been selected as King, but what they were surprised about was that there would be no duels. They knew of the split vote and thought that it might come to a duel, but the fact that an announcement had been made told them that someone had been selected.

It didn't take long for everyone to gather in front of the plaza, however, those that were in the tenth inner castle area, did not move from their spot. Even though they were invited.

Paul knew most likely that only bad things awaited them, and he had stated to those from the tenth family, they would only follow the orders of Quinn, and that was it. He would follow the last words of Quinn.

Which pleased Peter greatly for the first time, as the two of them were on the same wavelength.

All the vampires were waiting anxiously, staring upward at the King's castle. Around halfway up the gigantic castle, there was a balcony the King would walk out on, and usually the only person that could was the King themselves, and his Royal knights.

They waited patiently, and finally, a loud horn played from the castle. It was a single sound indicating that the King was to arrive. The doors swung wide open, and when they could see Bryce step through those doors, the crowd erupted in cheers, especially those from the first family.

A lot of the vampires in the settlement didn't know much of the politics going on between families. Most of what happened was between the inner castle areas and didn't affect the pooling area too much. So they were happy with the strongest vampire being the one selected and one of the oldest.

Bryce had this image he maintained with the public, so they thought it was the correct decision had been made.

Holding out his hand, it was a sign for the crowd to settle down.

"We, the vampire council, have come to a decision and they have voted me, Bryce Cain, from the first family as King. I know we have been through a lot lately, but under my rule, I wish to end those sad days will be over, and I shall bring us back to what we used to be, I hope the future of the vampires well!" Bryce shouted.

And everyone cheered again, getting swayed with the excitement, not really knowing what he meant by his words.

"I will now announce the two new Royal vampire knights, who you must respect and answer to, who will also be in charge of the Royal guards. First, we have the

fastest vampire of our generation and possibly ever known, Prima Killton from the twelfth family!"

Prima had been handpicked by Bryce, he was always a supporter of him, and what he said was true. If Bryce was the vampire with the most power, then he wanted a knight that would make up for what he lacked and speed was a good choice.

"Our next Royal knight that has been selected is none other than Kyle Dawn, the vampire leader with the best defence. Together the three of us will lead the generation into new and greater things. We will protect you all." Bryce said, finishing his speech there and giving them a wave as he walked back inside.

The talk was brief with the people, but now they knew who their King was, and it was unlikely they would see him much again. What the people did wonder about now, though, was that in a week's time, there would be another ceremony, and at that point and time, the new leaders would be announced as the replacements, and this included a replacement for the first family.

However, the ceremony wasn't complete. It was complete for those on the outside, but for the leaders, there was something else that needed to be done. Everyone was waiting patiently in the throne room for the new King and his two Royal knights to arrive.

They stood across the red carpet that would lead up to the throne and waited patiently. The doors opened, and Bryce continued to walk forward.

"You might be wondering why I asked you all to come here?" Bryce said. "As you know, when one becomes King, there is one more thing that needs to be done. The Absolute Blood Control book and its powers must be passed down to the new King. We all knew that Dwight was the one looking after it, and if I know Dwight, then there is only one place he would have put such a thing."

In his hand, Bryce was holding a flask, and he continued to walk up to the grand throne. When he reached the few steps, the Royal knights stopped as he approached the chair. Using his almighty strength, he pushed the chair to the side with ease, and behind it was a vault with a strange marking. A circle with many different patterns inside looked to have been drawn of blood.

"You vampires have never seen a new King elected, so I doubt you knew about this, but there is also a vault that can only be accessed with a drop of blood from all of the thirteen leaders. This is where the book is kept at all times, including the blood armour while not in use." Bryce stated while throwing the flask of blood against the pattern.

The red markings started to light up for a few seconds, and soon the sound of something unlocking could be heard as a large piece of the wall opened up and moved over to the side.

However, when it slid open, although the area was grand and full of things like useless treasures and gold. In the centre on a podium where the book would be, and in a large glass case by its side where the blood armour should be, there was nothing to be seen.

Both of the items were missing.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 882: Finding the fairy

Before the ceremony had actually begun, Bryce had gone around asking all the leaders for a drop of their blood. This included Quinn, who was still locked underground as well. Although Bryce wasn't the one that had directly gone down to see him, as it wasn't the time for them to meet just yet, he thought.

The flask with all the leader's blood was made in preparation for him to unlock the Absolute Blood Control book and obtain its powers. Now that he was King, of course, all the leaders had complied.

Something only the King should have been able to do. Looking at the vault, he was enraged with every cell in his body. Just how was the King's vault opened before him?

"Whoever did this, come forward immediately!" Bryce shouted, stomping his cane so hard into the ground, the outer wood casing that had never broken before, despite how angry he was, finally smashed to pieces. Revealing his sword under the case.

Bryce's anger was just met with silence from the other leaders.

Bryce had half expected the book to be missing, as he thought that maybe Dwight still had the book on him when he was murdered. It would also make sense as to why Dwight was a target. Other than him snooping around too much, however, what he didn't expect was for the blood armour to be missing as well.

Bryce knew the blood armour was to always be kept in the vault, and only when requested would it be worn and taken out. So the blood armour was placed back in the vault after the King's passing ceremony.

Seeing that it was no longer in there meant one thing, that the vault itself had been opened.

'thinking about this, it means there should be a supply of blood containing all our blood that only Dwight knew the location of. If Dwight was here, or if it was possible to raise him from the dead, I would. There are many questions I would like to ask you..' Bryce thought, but thinking about that, he thought there may be one other person who was in the loop with everything that was happening.

The only other person that was locked away.

"Kyle, Prima, this will be your first task. Make sure you question every single one of the Royal Guards. Between the old King's eternal slumber and now, I want to know everyone who entered and left this castle and at what time.

"We will find and punish whoever did this, and it won't be light. For the other leaders, I suggest you do the same. Once you have had the time to question those in

your family, we shall have another meeting at the council table. I know the council table has not had all its seats filled yet, but we must discuss the matter about the tenth leader as well. Does everyone understand?"

They nodded rather than responded, which just angered Bryce again, to the point he slammed his foot on the ground, choking up pieces of the flooring everywhere.

"Yes, your majesty!" They all replied and were off.

Leaving the room, Muka and Jin were shaking their heads, already thinking whether what they had done was the right choice. Bryce was taking the role of the King, just a bit too well.

Underneath the King's castle, it hadn't been long since Quinn had his last visitor, and once again, it was for someone to take his blood. Only this time, they were wearing the royal uniform.

Vincent explained what the most likely case for it was, which meant that either a King or Queen had been selected. Asking the Royal guard achieved no results though, and Quinn was just left in there on his own for a while.

'What am I meant to do?' Quinn thought. What was worrying him most was not having contact with the outside world, and every so often, when Quinn would be visited, they would supply him with more of those strange needles, not allowing him to regain any of his MC points.

However, he did have one trick up his sleeve, but he could only use it when he left this room.

After several hours, the door opened again and this time, entering the room was someone Quinn hadn't expected. Usually, his footsteps would be followed by a clacking noise of his cane, but it was broken.

"You're not going to try to fight me while I'm down here, are you? Maybe you should let me down, and we can have a round." Quinn said nervously, bracing himself for Bryce to hit him.

Bryce stopped just in front of Quinn, and looked at him tied up against the wall.

"You should address me differently now. If you could, I would ask you to bow." Bryce stated, and it was the answer Quinn was looking for.

Muka and Jin had followed through with his plan, and now Bryce had been made King.

"I found out that Jin and Muka came to visit you not too long before the vote. I'm guessing that you maybe had something to do with me being elected King. Let's not pretend, me and you don't get along."

"We don't like each other, so the only reason you would ask them to vote for me, is because you trust the other side less. You see, there has been a problem, the Absolute Control Blood book, along with the blood armour has been stolen.

"It's quite clear who they will place the blame on, especially as one has the ability to hide things from others in their shadow. I don't suspect you Quinn, which is why I'm asking you to tell me everything you found out between you and Dwight."

Quinn thought about it for a while. Who would have thought that the two of them would be placed in a situation like this?

"What will you do for me? Will you set me free? You said it yourself; you know I am not behind this." Quinn asked.

"And abuse my power and position right as I get the seat, don't be an idiot. The other leaders wouldn't allow it. A king needs to also prove his worth to the people that follow him. What is the point of a king with no people? With you tied down here, there is nothing you can do, you can keep that information to yourself, and it will be useless as you get accused of killing Dwight and stealing the items, or you can tell me, and with my current position, I can look into things."

"Will you protect the tenth castle?" Quinn asked.

But Bryce didn't say anything, which was only angering Quinn more. He never wanted this person to be King. If it was someone else, they would have wanted this information so badly that they would be willing to compromise or make a deal, but Quinn could tell Bryce wasn't going to agree to anything.

Quinn could either tell him or not.

"Fine," Quinn said, and he started to explain everything he had found out about Cindy and Jill so far. Listening to the story, Bryce seemed to be calm, and the two behind everything didn't seem to come as a surprise to him either.

When Quinn was finished, Bryce simply started to walk off back out of the door.

"Wait, Bryce! I helped you become King, I didn't harm you when I could have, and now I've also told you who might be behind everything. You owe me at least one thing. So protect the tenth people. You said it yourself, your King now, so they're your people as well!" Quinn shouted.

But no words were spoken, and Bryce just left the room.

Soon after, he went to the council room, where all the leaders were waiting patiently. They had gathered at the request of the King. After asking details from the royal guard, Bryce had found out nothing, which was why he had decided to go to Quinn.

But it looked like the other leaders didn't know anything anyway, or at least they 'claimed' to not know anything.

"If there is no new information on the book and armour, we shall move onto the next subject of the tenth leader, Quinn Talen." Bryce started. "Does anyone have an opinion or any new evidence on this matter?"

A single person had raised their hand, Cindy.

"As you guys know, I learnt from Cia that they have a blood fairy in their possession. Which was why everyone was put on high alert. Anyone who keeps those things are only doing so with an intention to harm the vampires. We found out his equipment has the same blood that was found in Dwight, so I don't understand what we are waiting for?"

"Because it doesn't confirm that Quinn was the one that killed Dwight, nor does it confirm he has a blood fairy, just because he has blood fairy equipment," Muka Stated. "Although I do admit, he is our prime suspect."

"Well, why don't we confirm he has the blood fairy. It had to have been a large amount, and we might find more evidence at the castle." Said Jill. "If he has the blood fairy, then who knows what else he is hiding, maybe the blood book and more. He constantly met up with Dwight, so there are ways he could have gotten blood."

Most of the room was clearly pinning all the blame on the tenth family, and Bryce could see that. It was going to be hard to sway anyone's decision.

"Very well, I agree. Someone needs to go to the tenth castle and confirm they have a blood fairy there." Bryce said. "However, entering the tenth castle could be difficult with the leader's followers. So why don't you Jill, head over to the castle? If you want to stay alive, I suggest you bring an army with you. I doubt the tenth will just hand him over to you. The tenth family is weak, so prove your worth." Bryce said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 883: The original vampires

There was only one known vampire settlement where all the thirteen families lived together. They were condensed to one area because this was where all the resources were and where all the leaders were gathered. Similar to a human city. It made it easier for family leaders in a way to keep an eye on them and control them.

If one was to leave the settlement, they could only do so under strict rules, this was all because the vampires wish to keep themselves a secret.

On the surface, and to the people it would appear as if they were one unit working together. However, those higher up knew there was more of a divide than others thought between the thirteen families.

Even in the past, the special fourteenth family and split off and made their own settlement, something many vampires didn't know about today.

Outside of the settlement, the planet was mostly covered in forest and mountains, and here there were beasts just like any other planet. Once in a while, there would also be wild familiars that had hoped over to their world. They seemed to be attracted to the vampire's strange ways, as wherever they would be, the familiars seemed to turn up as well.

The planet was large, so it was hard for them to keep track of everything that was on it, and this was how quite a distance away, the Bloodsuckers were able to build their base without the vampires knowing about it for years.

Still, there was one thing lacking on the planet for the vampires and the Bloodsuckers to live, and that was blood. The vampire settlement had that, while the Bloodsuckers did not. Seeing the cave full of blood packs and how long the Bloodsuckers were able to survive, Silver knew someone was working with them. She just didn't know how big that person was, or how deep it ran on for.

Right now, in the middle of the forest, between the vampire settlement and the Bloodsucker base. Silver, Fex, Nate and Leo were standing back to back surrounded by bloodsuckers when one man walked out, one Silver recognised.

When a vampire was growing up in school, they would learn of the vampire's history. Although a lot of it was altered, they all did learn of one thing. How the vampires originally started, with the thirteen original vampires. This was where the thirteen families came from.

Of course, during their time, there was no technology to take a photo of them as such, so the only references they had were paintings and drawings, but Silver was sure of it, based on what Leo had told her about the man's aura she was sure of it, because the man looked almost identical to this paintings, not changing in the slightest.

"I pay my respect to the Eighth original vampire leader." Silver said, putting one of her hands on the floor and bowing her head down.

"This place has changed too much, do vampires not even know our names anymore? All of you were born or turned by us originally, and everyone seems to have forgotten that. She was right; things have changed." The vampire said, as he lifted his hand and swung it back.

"You shall remember my name is Remus Snacker!" Shouting out these words, they seemed so powerful that Silver could feel her body shaking, and soon after, his hand swung back out, heading straight towards her.

She could feel that Remus, the original, was about to do something to her, but she didn't know what to do. These were the originals, should she move, or take the hit, but wasn't this original working with the Bloodsuckers?

Her mind was mixed with too many thoughts. She was just frozen in place.

"Silver!" Fex shouted, as he could see the hand moving towards her face, but he was unable to move fast enough. He didn't know why but seeing her in danger, he had to urge to protect her.

However, one person was fast enough, pulling out a dark red sword from his sheave, and he clashed with the hand coming out towards him. The hand didn't swing back, but it stopped mid-air.

The original hadn't used any hardened blood, but the original's arm seemed fine, until a small cut could be seen, and soon Remus pulled his hand away.

On this journey, Leo had brought with him two swords. Leo was not a dual swordsman, so he could only use one sword at a time. This was his speciality. The reason he carried two, was because before leaving, he had grabbed a sword created by Alex.

This sword, made with legendary tier crystals, was far stronger than his last one, there were no active skills, but it was powerful, and it was perfect in Leo's hands. Which was why, it was even more frightening that the man in front of him only received a single scratch from his strike.

'No wonder vampires never felt the need to use beast weapons. If this is how they originally started, did vampires weaken with time?' Leo wondered.

With Remus's other arm free, using blood control, he was able to take out parts of the infected blood and throw it onto the ground.

"Fairy blood, so this is your special trick. Who is your side working with? Have the Werewolves returned?" Remus spoke.

Silver was making note of what Remus was saying, it sounded odd, as if he had woken up not too long ago, and was slightly dazed, not knowing what was going on in the current world. He spoke of creatures that hadn't existed for many centuries.

"Silver, are you going to just stand here and let this man take your life!?" Leo shouted back. "I don't know who this man is, but it is clear to me that right now, he stands in our way. Your brother is still not back to the way he used to be, and we're in trouble here. The others might be in a worse position than us."

She knew Leo was right, but could they even go up against an original? The everlasting immortal beings that lived for thousands of years. They had more time than any vampire to hone their strength, and Leo's sword had only put a scratch on him.

Even though she had her family's Puppet, she couldn't imagine going up against such a great one.

The Bloodsuckers had now creped out from the forest and were walking towards the others, and eventually, one of them looked like it had waited long enough before receiving an order, as it leapt out towards Fex while the others remained.

"Fex use your string!" Nate said.

"String? What the hell! Why would I carry string on me? and what use is it going to do against a monster like that!" Fex shouted back.

Seeing that Fex might have also forgotten how to fight, Nate had no choice but to move in front of Fex, and block the attack. He no longer had his hardening ability, so he could only raise the shadow from his feet to block the blow.

The attack was blocked, but Nate could tell how powerful the punch was based on how many Mc cells it felt like he had lost from the one hit.

"If you can't use your string, then hit him now!" Nate shouted.

That was one thing Fex did know how to do. He didn't really know what these creatures were, but he did know that they had kept him up in that dark cave, and putting all his anger, he punched the Bloodsucker right in the stomach, hitting him away, but it had only moved a short distance.

It wasn't dead, and there were still plenty surrounding them.

"I can't Silver." Said, throwing her hands down in defeat. "I just can't attack an Original. This crime would be greater than any other if I did this."

"That's okay," Leo said. "You just protect the others then."

Leo is going to fight the original on his own, and Silver couldn't help but think it was a lost cause, even with his strength, but Leo had a trick up his sleeve.

Remus casually reached out his hand again, and Leo went out to strike it like the time before.

'Quinn, thank you for teaching me this.' Leo thought as he coated his blade in the second stage of Qi, and slashed downward. A few seconds later, and Remus's hand could be seen falling to the floor.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 884: March to the tenth

The tenth castle had stuck to Paul's order and had not let anyone in from the pooling area, even those who belonged to the tenth family. There had been some protests from the vampire students, but Paul had shut them down quite quickly.

However, at the moment the Vampire knight was extremely worried for a couple of reasons. One of them being the fact that they hadn't had many people from the pooling area visit them lately, and he had a feeling it had something to do with the second reason.

A new King had been elected.

Since none of them had attended the ceremony or any of the meetings with the council, Paul was sure that the tenth family was guaranteed to face some pushback. They had already been treated as outsiders before all of this, and this just made it more apparent.

"Something is going to happen, and it's going to happen soon." Paul said, while holding his mask. Nearly every hour he had attempted to get into contact with Leo and the others that had gone away, but there was still no result after all this time.

"Leo, you're a Hero of War, who has helped out the human race greatly, I just hope you can work your magic here again."

But it looked like, for this one, they wouldn't be able to rely on Leo or the others. Outside their castle, marching towards them was a small army of around five hundred or so people from the eighth family and on the forefront was their leader, Jill.

The reason why they had not received any visitors lately was because the vampires had been warned beforehand what could possibly happen, and had been ordered to clear the area for the time being.

Jill had brought with her fifty from within the castle, some of her strongest and one of her Vampire knights, a male with a scar across his whole face. The other vampires were mostly from the pooling area.

She knew how many vampires should have been in the castle, a little more than two hundred, but she thought if it was her forces against theirs even with an equal number there was no way she could lose, not without their leader at least.

"I really don't want to do this." Jill sighed. "Why pick me off all people to do this? My ability isn't really the best when it comes to fighting, and telling me to bring an army. Does he really think the tenth family will try to fight? He could have just asked one of the others to investigate."

"It is true that we haven't done any tasks for the family." Her knight Tifu replied.  
"This will be a good chance to remind the other families that despite our ability we are still strong, and by doing this we can redeem ourselves to the King."

'If I have my way, then he won't be the current king for too much longer.' Jill thought, clenching her fist as she walked up towards the castle.

When they finally were close, Jill noticed the two large towers by the front gate, stationed above the walls. She looked closely and she couldn't see anyone in them, but their destructiveness had spread through rumours, worrying her.

"This is Sam, at the front gate, can you hear me Paul. There is an army coming towards us, and it doesn't look like they're here for a friendly chat." Sam reported.

"How many are there? When you say an army, is there a leader present with them?" Paul asked.

"I'm not really sure what the leaders look like, but there are two important looking figures walking at the founder's dab. They number around five hundred."

To bring five hundred towards the front gate, they were not just going to be asking for something simple. Paul knew this meant they were here ready for a fight. The first thing Paul did was open all the channels, so everyone with a mask could now communicate with each other and hear all the messages being sent.

"There is an army at the north gate! Those at the east and west gate stay at your positions, even if a fight is to break out. Try not to aggravate them, and find out what they want first before we do anything to escalate the situation." Paul ordered.

Knowing what could come, he started to gather those in the castle and was getting ready for battle.

Sam nodded, and confidently started to walk out, with Linda to his right, and Peter to his left. Those that were at the north gate included Layla, Cia, Weevil, and Dennis. While the ones that had stayed in the castle were Sil, Logan and Alex.

There were a few reasons for this, the most prominent one was that Sil and Logan were both still human. Sil especially wasn't as strong in this world, but he did have Borden on him at all times in case something might happen.

As for Alex, he wasn't really a fighter and at the same time was a secret to the others.

Sam bowed down approaching them, and motioned the other two to do the same. His legs were shaking slightly and he made sure to stay a good distance away from the other group, ready to fall back at a moment's notice.

He had gone through meetings like this many times before while helping out Quinn with the Cursed faction, but for some reason the vampires had a different pressure coming off this time.

Standing here now, he knew that he was talking to one of the leaders.

"We are here by order of the King." Jill announced, speaking directly into all of their minds. What was impressive was that she wasn't just speaking to the three in front of her, she had sent out a message to everyone in the castle. "Due to the recent events, your leader has been imprisoned. We have reason to believe that the tenth family has been illegally harboring a Blood fairy without the council's knowledge. We request to search the whole inner castle area for said being. Let us in peacefully, or we will have no other choice but to use force."

Hearing this message, Paul now knew who they were after. All those close to Alex did too, because it had been explained to them when he had made their weapons.

Alex had stormed out of the room he was in, in the castle and headed straight to the research lab where Logan was busy working away on something with Sil by his side.

"What do I do?" Alex asked. "They're here for me!" He panicked, and the look of dread was on his face. He wanted to run away, run from this place, but at the same time, he was thinking about what could happen to everyone else because of him.

"Should I turn myself in? We had that plan, but it won't work! Those blasted teleporters won't work!" Alex shouted.

If the vampires had come to attack, there had been a plan put in place. Worst case they would use the teleporters to head back to the Cursed ship. Alas, testing that plan ahead of time, Paul and Logan had discovered a very big problem.

The teleporters for some reason weren't working, this reminded Paul of when he had transferred over to the Vampire Planet for the first time, and they had attempted to go back. At that time, they too had been unable to for some reason.

The vampires did have technology beyond what the humans had or understood, and even Logan's great mind was stumped on how to solve that issue.

Logan put down a tool he had in his hand on the workbench and walked up to Alex. "Alex, don't you understand Paul by now? He hates vampires more than anyone here because of what they did to him and his people. Why do you think he refused to go to the King's ceremony, and why do you think we have been making preparations this whole time? Whether they wanted you, or anyone else his response will be the same..."

Outside, lifting his head, Sam couldn't believe what he had just heard Paul told him to do. Paul had just requested not to agitate them.

'I guess the request ruffled up his feathers a bit.' Sam said with a smile.

Hearing his words, Sam's legs stopped shaking, and he looked at both Linda, and Peter nodding towards them.

"Prepare for war!" Sam shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 885: Helping from below

While the vote for the next King or Queen had been taking place, Paul had decided that he needed to be best prepared for whatever was to happen next. At that point, there had still been no news about what was going to happen to Quinn, and with Leo's group still missing, he could see that the situation would possibly turn for the worst.

Because of this, Paul wanted to make sure that the people were safe first. Logan had claimed that it might be possible for him to create a teleporter back to the Cursed faction ship. He had noted down the coordinates many times, and the Vampire settlement, including the equipment in the tenth family's lab, had plenty of equipment for him to do so.

Paul had agreed to the creation of the teleporters for two reasons. One of them being the fact that it would allow them to call for reinforcements if needed. However, that was more on the theoretical side. Ultimately how many people would heed his call for help without Quinn?

The second reason was for them to escape, so that they would be able to live to fight another day. Paul was a cautious man and there was something bugging him, so he wanted Logan to create the portal and put it for a test run.

The creation process had gone without a hitch... but that was when the bad news started to come in.

"That's strange, the portal from the lab in the mountains worked fine, so why is one this having a problem? Is something interfering with it?" Logan thought. No matter what he did, the portal just wouldn't turn on.

This was exactly what Paul had feared would happen, for something similar had already happened to him before.

If the teleporters worked, Paul's plan had been to hide Alex on the Cursed faction ship, at least until they searched the whole place, but now they had no other choice.

'What do you mean Alex just can't escape?!" Quinn asked, quite shocked as he talked to Vincent.

With the recent allegations of Quinn using fairy blood to kill Dwight. Quinn was concerned for Alex, and was hoping that if they did come after him, then at least his people could teleport back to the Cursed ship, but Vincent had just told him that wasn't possible.

'Remember when I told you vampires created the technology in the first place? Well, it seems that whoever introduced it to humans, only introduced our old technology. Put bluntly, you humans haven't kept up to date.' Vincent explained.

'The vampires are able to create a zone with a special device that stops all of your human teleporters from working. Usually they only do such things when they know they are under attack. I suspect since the problem with Dwight had occurred they already turned it on thinking that some of your people would attempt to escape.'

'But there is more they can do than just that, they can also redirect all the teleporters to a certain point while within a zone, and can redirect the teleporters to a different place altogether. Even into the pit.'

Now Quinn was greatly concerned for those in the castle.

'Let's just hope I left them with enough to protect themselves.' Quinn thought.

"Prepare for war? Are you some child?!" Jill shouted. "This wouldn't be a war, just my eighth family slaughtering your tenth! This is not something we want to do!"

Activating her telepathic ability again, she made sure everyone in the inner castle area and in the castle area could hear what she was saying.

"Listen up, we are only here for the Blood fairy! We know they are among you. As long as you bring him or her to us, then no one has to get hurt. However, if you continue being stupid enough to think you can protect them, then we will have to force our way in. Just give us what we want, and save the stupid people who are running the tenth family." Jill shouted.

She waited a while for a type of response or anything, but there was nothing until Sam eventually spoke.

"I can see what you are trying to do, you're trying to turn those in the tenth family against us, so we fight amongst each other! We are more like a real family and won't fall for your tricks." Sam said. "We don't have your stupid Blood fairy so go back from where you came from!"

Jill looked down and clenched both of her fists, and soon started to chuckle to herself. This whole thing just felt so degrading.

"Why doesn't anyone listen to what I have to say?" She mumbled. "If you weren't hiding a Blood fairy, then you would have no problems letting us search the castle!" She screamed while swinging her arm out, and activating her blood swipe.

It shot out towards Sam, and with an attack this strong there was only one thing he could do. He raised the shadow from beneath himself and blocked the attack. However, he couldn't hold it for long, but it gave him enough time to move out of the way of the attack. The strike continued going forward through the ground until it eventually dispersed.

The vampire's eyes opened wide, and even Jill could feel her heart take an extra beat. The reason was, because they had seen someone, other than Quinn and Arthur use the shadow ability.

"Don't tell me... did that arrogant buffoon really teach them how to use the shadow?!" Jill shouted.

The memory of what Arthur had done to the other leaders when he had been here was still quite fresh in their heads. None would forget how easily he had overpowered them, which was why they had frozen a little before making their next move.

Sam, knowing full well that his shadow wouldn't last long after blocking this one attack, thought it was their signal to get out of there, and started to run back towards the gate.

Seeing this, Jill snapped out of her daze, knowing that just because they had the shadow ability, it didn't mean they were as strong as Arthur.

"Get rid of them all, and bring me that Blood fairy!" She shouted, ordering her people to charge forward.

They were fast, but Sam and the others had a head start.

'Come on, tower, do your thing!' Sam prayed as they passed the gates and waited for what was to happen next.

Underground, at this very moment, a screen appeared in front of Quinn.

[Quest received]

[The tenth family is under attack. Eliminate all enemies or make them surrender!]

Seeing this quest message, Quinn knew something was up, but how was he meant to help out while stuck in this cave? It was as if the system was taunting him.

Just then, another screen from the system appeared in his vision. It was a digital map of the tenth area and just outside of it. On the map, Quinn could see his forces in green, while the enemy was displayed as red circles. Around the map, there were certain buildings that were highlighted blue.

'The blue buildings... Those are the towers and the statues I placed!'

From the system screen itself, Quinn was still able to upgrade, repair and do more to the towers, and while in the underground cellar for the last few days his reputation points had increased.

He didn't know why, but Paul's actions had benefited Quinn greatly. Despite the accusations that were going against him. Unlike other leaders of the past, or when they had no leader Quinn was the first that thought about protecting and looking after his people first and foremost.

On the map, he could see the green dots had just made it safely past the gate, and then, the red dots chasing after them. There was a circle around the tower and when the red dot got within that circle, another option appeared.

[Fire]

With no hesitation, Quinn fired, commanding the system, at the same time outside. A shot of orange and white energy lit up from the tower and went out hitting the vampire closest. It was one of the regular vampires from the pooling area, and they were unable to move in time avoiding the strike.

When the energy hit his body, he felt a large mass of energy hit him. Once the dust settled, half his body was completely missing, with his other half falling to the floor.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 886: Hold the line

"This is amazing!" Quinn said as he excitedly looked at the screen.

While still below, it looked like he could still help out those above using the towers to defend. After firing off one shot from the tower, he could see a cool down time, and he could do everything with his mind. There was no need to use his hands.

On top of this, whatever was within range of the tower, Quinn could select which targets to fire at. This way, if his own people were engaged in a fight against the enemy, he could aim at the backline instead.

Suddenly he didn't feel so useless anymore.

However, Vincent was concerned about one thing, the system made the whole thing appear to be game-like, and he wanted Quinn to remember at the end of the day, those red and green targets were real living things. The only reason he didn't say anything now, was seeing it this way may allow him to save as many people as possible.

The towers continued to fire at the army coming forward. Now that they knew what damage the towers could do, they were more cautious, and the vampires were able to mostly avoid the attacks, but not all.

Whenever a shot would hit, it would greatly damage a regular vampire while injuring those more talented. It was clear that the towers were something they needed to be careful with.

Upgrading it to the max level, made the cool down time between shots short as well.

Watching all of this from far back was Paul.

'Those towers are doing a better job than I anticipated. Maybe we can hold them off at each section.'

Thinking about this, Paul walked back in, and went down a floor to where the tenth's people had gathered. These were all the vampires that had been turned and were originally under Paul's control, although a few of them were at one of the other gates with Ashley.

"Xander, Amy and Timmy. You three will be in charge of leading this army to the north gate, I still think they might attack us from the other gates later on, so Erin and Ashley will be on standby. I will leave it up to you three to make quick decisions on the field, and you shall each lead a small group."

"If they do attack from the other sides, then it will be up to you to decide which areas need support. Do you understand?" Paul asked.

The three of them saluted like they were in the army and shouted.

"Yes, sir."

The order was given, and they were off as one large group towards the north gate. At the north gate itself, the others were patiently waiting. Large explosion energy shots were still being shot out from the tower, and they didn't exactly want to go out in the middle of that.

"What do we do? They're soon going to get past those tower shots. They're getting used to the speed already?" Linda observed.

"I think they're going to change formation in a second. Those that can avoid the tower shots, the more skilled vampires will come out first and will try to take down the towers. That means it's up to us to stop them." Sam replied.

Just as he had finished explaining those said vampires came forward. They were the vampire nobles that belonged to the inner castle, around fifteen of them had broken past the tower shots, but the tower shots continued stopping the regular vampires from advancing. With only five of them, this would be quite the hard fight ahead.

"They still think we're puny small fry, well let's show them!" Peter said, rushing out faster than anyone expected him to, and with the first vampire noble upon him, he punched him directly in the face and slammed him downward onto the ground.

As the other vampires near him came forward, Peter hit the floor, causing dust to rise, and when the dust settled, they could see that one of the vampire nobles had his hands holding Peter steady.

"I've got him. Take him out now!" The noble said.

"No, what are you doing? It's me!" Peter cried, but it was too late as the noble had pierced a hole through his chest.

The noble holding onto Peter then smiled, and when he looked down at who he had just hit, he no longer looked like Peter, but instead like the same noble that was holding onto Peter.

"How does it feel to kill your own family member, looks like there are some exceptions to the bond after all!" Peter shouted, grabbing the other's arm, and slamming it onto the floor.

The others couldn't see it, but when Peter had hit the floor to cause the dust cloud, he had transformed himself into one of them, and then using his soul weapon, he placed the mask on one of the nobles to look like him.

He thought maybe the bond would make it so he couldn't attack his fellow comrade, but it looked like it did no such thing, due to him believing it was Peter.

Just then, a blood swipe came towards him as Peter was enjoying this a little too much. He was distracted but it didn't matter, when a shadow was raised from behind, blocking the attack.

"Hey, remember there's a lot more of them still," Dennis said.

Seeing all of what was happening was just making Jill get angrier.

'It looks like he has been teaching a few of his people the shadow, and these towers. It reminds me of the old tenth's ability, does he really not have anyone with that ability?' She started to wonder.

Sending more of the Nobles, she hoped to overpower them, as the main concern were the towers for now. There were some vampires with ranged abilities that were attacking the towers and damaging them, but when they looked to be destroyed to a certain point, it was as if they were being repaired by some strange magic at the same time.

This was because Quinn was repairing the towers, using what reputation points he had whenever the tower would go below a certain point.

With more nobles going to the fight, so did the others but it seemed like it would be too much for them. A line of blood swipes, around thirty of them came their way, with Sam Linda, Dennis and Wevil, with the four of them raised a large wall of shadow to block the attacks, but they couldn't block much, fighting like this.

Behind the wall of shadow, Linda decided to act. Her body slowly began to grow in size, becoming larger than that of the Bloodsuckers and bigger too. Then using shadow equip, her red equipment could be seen, and a large club appeared in her hand.

She was using her skill as a great draugr to change her size, and she had the new equipment made by Alex ready.

"Lower the wall!" She shouted, with the shadow wall going down, the huge club was swung towards the vampire nobles. They thought with all of them, they could hold back the great swing, but when their fists and bodies touched the club, they could feel a burning sensation that went deeper past their skin.

It affected them, hurting and making them feel weak.

'Red equipment and armour, all of them have it on. It can't be, are they all using blood fairy equipment?!!' Jill thought.

Seeing this, she had enough.

"Tifu, get rid of the right towers, I'll get rid of the left one." Jill said moving forward.

She didn't think her being a leader would have to act, especially with those strong ones in her family, but the tenth had too many surprises for her liking and she had waited long enough.

The two of them ran opposite sides and could see the tower shots coming towards them. Jill had seen how long the cool down was between each shot. She had to concentrate on avoiding the shots and then run full speed straight ahead during the cool down time. Doing the same thing again.

"She's going for the tower!" Wevil shouted, but they were all far too busy.

Eventually, she had reached the tower, and climbed to the very top. Both her clawed hands were glowing red, and she proceeded to swipe at the top of the tower with all her strength, chucking out large chunks bit by bit.

Part of the roof was seen coming down, and eventually she got to the platform where the energy source was coming from. There was a white light and inside a crystal floating about, grabbing it with her bare hand, she squeezed the crystal until it had smashed into little pieces.

[Beast crystal destroyed, would you like to use another one?]

On Quinn's screen, he could see both of the towers losing their health fast, it was too fast and repairing the towers would only be a waste of his reputation points at this stage.

Finally, with a large, powerful punch, the tower collapsed within itself falling to the ground, and tofu had done the same with the other.

Now with the tower gone, the rest of the vampires could finally join in.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 887: The statues' power

Seeing how quickly the towers had been destroyed, Quinn could only come up with one conclusion.

'A vampire leader... they really sent a frigging leader to the tenth castle?! So much for Bryce keeping his promise! What the hell is he doing?!" Quinn was furious.

'To be fair, Bryce never promised you anything. I thought he made that bit quite clear.' Vincent pointed out.

At the speed his towers fell, building new ones in the same place would be impossible. Since they required a bit of construction time, the enemy would just destroy them mid-process, especially since he could see the red colored army run forward, chasing behind his own people.

'I might be unable to defeat them, but there should be a way to at least slow them down!' Quinn thought.

Quinn selected a place on the map that was a little further up ahead from where he could see the green dots, and he placed two more towers with his reputation points.

In the tenth area itself, Sam and the others were falling back, Linda had shrunk down as her larger form had made her more of a target and her movements in that form were a little slow.

Fighting the enemy army would be suicide, so they had opted for a tactical retreat. A wise choice, since Sam could see something forming up ahead.

"Everyone keep running! I see another set of towers! That should help us reach the castle!" Sam informed the others who immediately picked up their pace a little bit more.

Although the towers were incomplete, he had no hopes for them lasting longer than the previous ones. Still, they should be enough to buy them time. He also wanted to get his people to the gargoyles that Quinn had made, as he knew their power would help in the current situation.

Just as the group had passed the towers their construction had ended. They immediately started to shoot, even though the speed of their projectiles was slower than before. Nevertheless the eighth family's vampires were being careful after having seen how dangerous they were. They stopped and waited for Jill and her knight Tifu to destroy them.

'Those towers appear weaker than the ones at the front gate. If I remember correctly Quinn mentioned something about the towers having four levels, so the new ones must still have been at the first level.'

'Which means the towers were never built to stop them, just to slow down Jill and her knight.' Sam concluded, but there was one thing he was wondering about, how did the towers suddenly appear like that.

Was Quinn helping them from somewhere, somehow?

The plan had worked, and while running back the group could see Xander, Amy and Timmy coming towards them with the other members.

"Keep going back, let's head back to the castle where the gargoyles are. The towers have been destroyed and the others are useless." Sam tried to explain in a hurry. As if to stress that point, the sounds of two falling towers could be heard behind them.

"I think you might be right there." Xander agreed, as the group turned around and were preparing for a fight.

Finally they had reached the statues, and Sam was confidently waiting by them. They stood around thirty or so meters in front of the castle, and the men stood behind the statues.

"What can these statues even do?" Amy asked.

"Just wait and see!" Sam replied cryptically.

The reason he wanted to get to this position wasn't just because of the statues, it was because Quinn had also built another two level four towers in front of the castle.

Sam looked at the others behind him, he thought that they might be worried as they saw the large army approach them, but they didn't look scared at all.

'It's good to have real soldiers at a time like this. Having experienced a war before really helps, but this isn't a normal fight.'

When Jill got close, she could see the statues in the form of giant sized gargoyles on them, a muscular beast with a tail and wings. Behind them she could see the towers and all the men.

Even for her, she wasn't planning to fight through all of the tenants just to get to the tower, so she did one thing.

"All the nobles charge in! Me and Tifu will get rid of the towers. They are our main threat, without them these guys are nothing!" Jill ordered and her Vampire nobles moved out, this time the whole lot of them came charging forward. As they moved closer though and got within a certain range, the statues' eyes started to glow green and the stone started to crack off them.

A few seconds later, the rest of the dry stone fell from them and both gargoyle statues stood up, and let out an almighty roar. They flapped their heavy wings that were incapable of allowing them to take flight, but were perfect to make themselves even larger and more intimidating before they hopped off their stone pillars.

The first thing they did was a sweeping motion with their two large tails hitting the vampires in front of them. Most of them avoided the slow attack, but one of the vampires failed to do so and got sent flying through the air.

When the other vampire hit the gargoyle, stone from it fell to the floor, but it was still standing and soon, the stone that fell to the floor reattached itself to the gargoyle preparing it.

"Those things are quite strong, they remind me of some beasts." Dennis commented.

"That's because they have the power of a beast." Sam explained. "Quinn told me that the level of crystal put in those things determines how strong they are. They don't have separate levels like the towers, and unless the beast crystal is destroyed they can keep on regenerating. With these and the towers, we should be able to hold them off for a long time."

Seeing the gargoyles, Jill felt like she had no choice but to join the fray again. She didn't want to do this, but the only option was for the whole group to attack at once. All of them charged in, the original group of five hundred which had only been dealt a small blow to their forces.

Tower shots came out from behind, and the gargoyles continued to fight. At the same time, on the other side everyone else had joined in the fight. Xander did his best to protect those he knew using his mist ability, while Amy was looking for weakened vampires and when they weren't paying attention she would use them to turn against their allies.

The soldiers didn't have access to their familiar beast gear and were still getting used to their vampires selves and this inexperience was showing. Alex had been unable to outfit everyone with weapons made through own blood, so only a few had them.

Still, with the help of Quinn's equipment they were able to hold the line, the real threat that needed to be dealt with were Vampire knight Tifu, and eighth family leader, Jill who were concentrating on getting rid of the gargoyles.

Tifu started to make his way through the crowd of fighting going on and was eying up one of the gargoyles, when a small dagger came out, so fast he only had little time to react.

"I can see what you're trying to do, and I won't let you do it." Wevil challenged him, a dagger in his hand.

"Huh, I thought it was a strong opponent, but it's just a small fry? ... What even are you? You don't smell like a vampire." Tifu started to be intrigued.

"That's right, because I'm not an ordinary vampire." Wevil said, as he began his transformation....

Over on the other side, Jill moved forward and was directly underneath the other gargoyle, she threw a fist right towards its chest where she had seen a faint light before, thinking this was where its power source would be, but before she could hit it, her blow was stopped by another fist.

"You're not that Cindy bitch, but you will have to do!" Peter yelled as he punched her face, sending her back a few meters.

'The blow was strong, and he was able to see my punch?!" Jill thought.

Standing by his side were two more Wights that had been raised during the fight.

'I can't just think of him as any ordinary Wight.'

"Peter!" A voice shouted from behind. "Help out the others, let me deal with her."

Turning around, Peter could see that it was Paul who had left the castle. Since the fight was already at their doorsteps, there was no point hiding inside.

"You have a more important job with your Wights. Don't let anyone get inside the castle! Your skills are better suited for that than mine." Paul ordered.

Peter wanted to give Jill a beating, but he could see the tower shots not acting quick enough, and some running towards the gate, trying to scale the wall to get into the castle without going through the doors.

If they got in, then Logan, Sil and Alex were very much in danger.

"If you don't beat her, I'll beat you and her together!" Peter said before he ran off.

"Oh, the little toy I was going to play with ran away. Well, let's see how powerful the tenth's second knight is?" Jill said playfully.

"Let's see indeed." Paul lifted his hands and activated his soul weapon right off the bat.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 888: Getting rid of all problems

Although those from the tenth family were fighting well with all the support they were getting, they were nevertheless struggling to hold the line against the sheer number of vampires the eighth family had brought that day. Those with the shadow ability stayed a little further back and were using the shadows as best as they could to limit the number of injuries their family members received.

When one was badly hurt, some members like Dennis would carry them off, and enter the castle, closing the doors once again to keep them behind. They were trying to keep the deaths to a minimum, and luckily vampires were quite resistant when it came to dying.

However, there were too many vampires on the eighth side and eventually the eighth family got through. Even with the door closed, they began to scale the wall. They didn't know the special code needed to access the castle, so they decided to try entering through the windows and such on the floor above.

There were only a couple of vampires on the walls and Peter was ready to move, but then something surprising happened. One of the gargoyles that had been in the middle of the fighting, jumped up and started to flail its heavy wings. Although unable to fly, they helped the statue to glide, thereby increasing its time midair.

Peter, seeing this, was wondering why the gargoyle would do something like this until he watched it glide towards the castle and grab one of the vampires to chuck him off the wall. Not hesitating, he then went ahead and went towards the next vampire to deal with him.

Even more surprising was the fact that the gargoyle didn't head back into battle, but remained near the wall, making it clear that it would prevent anyone from using them to get inside.

'Well, looks like i'm not needed and that thing is doing a good job for me. That means I can go somewhere else.' Peter thought. He gave the gargoyle a thumbs up while using his elevated position to search for the place he would be needed the most.

The reason why the gargoyle had acted was because Quinn had figured out he was also able to control that from down below. As soon as he saw the red dots were breaking through and getting to the castle, he decided to add some defences of his own.

'Guys, I don't know what you're going through, but I'm going to do everything I can to help you!' Quinn thought, as he concentrated more than ever at the battle going on in front of him.

The other gargoyle was still in the midst of battling and thanks to its regenerative abilities the vampires were having a very difficult time dealing with it. This was

why Tifu had set his eyes on taking it down, but a certain individual was making sure to stop him just before he could do anything.

That was none other than Wevil. Knowing his opponent in front of him was strong, Wevil wasted no time with his transformation.

---

As a strogi there were two evolution paths one could take, a Strigoi mot, which focuses on physical powers or Strigoi vu, a sorcerer type vampire.

At first Wevil had thought the right choice for him would be to choose the Mot evolution path, simply because used to be a melee fighter with his previous speed ability. However, since he was already speedy enough as a vampire, he came to the conclusion that it might be good to gain something new, thus he decided on the Vu evolution path, after which something in his mind and body changed.

It allowed him to realise what powers he held, one of which was to let him transform his body partly into a type of creature, yet to do this he would have to picture what creature to turn into first.

He knew this would be important, and he already knew that he wanted something speed-based. If he had to change, why not try and become even faster than he had ever been before? With this goal in mind he went to the one person he was sure could tell him what animal would be the fastest, Logan.

"If we're just talking about the fastest land animal in existence in terms of their top speed, then that would be the cheetah." Logan answered him. "However, if we're comparing animals to scale with them all being the same size then the winner wouldn't be a mammal but an insect. Out of all the insects in the world there is none faster than the tiger beetle."

"Tiger beetle?" Wevil had never even heard of such a creature.

---

His arms started to become curved as they imitated the large jaws on the beetle he had extensively researched, turning green in colour. His eyes slightly became larger and his jaw widened.

Dennis, who was watching, had to look up since Wevil's form became larger than a human's.

'Can we even call that a vampire at this point?' Dennis started to wonder, but was too busy with his own fight.

Although the figure looked strange, the transformation was certainly an improvement, as Weevil pushed off his two large feet and dashed forward, appearing in front of Tifu before he could react.

Weevil's body slammed into the Vampire knight, and using his bladed hands he gripped him tightly with immense power. He carried on pushing Tifu through all the other vampires moving him back.

'When the description was talking about sorcery, it meant sorcery to transform and the tiger beetle has a few more tricks up its sleeve.' Weevil thought, as he spit out a strange green grey substance from its mouth right onto Tifu.

Immediately, the latter felt a burning sensation. However, Tifu was a vampire knight, using Blood hardening he managed to cover the layer where the strange goo had touched him, preventing it from further damaging his body.

"You may be faster than me, but you don't have the strength!" He shouted enraged as he grabbed both hands and slammed it down Weevil's head.

The force was great and the transformed boy felt his legs were about to tumble, his speed soon slowed down but he didn't let go of the other.

"Good job." A voice praised from behind. "It doesn't matter if he doesn't have the strength, because I do!" Peter shouted as he threw out one fist after another hitting Tifu as hard as he could. Every fist was heavy and strong, filling his fists with blood.

Weevil held on greatly and eventually, after taking too many hits Tifu stopped moving.

At this moment, Jill felt the connection with her Vampire knight sever.

'How is this possible, what the hell is going on?'

She looked at Paul in front of her, and started to look at the battle. It should have been an easy one-sided battle, yet now it was clear that they were on the losing side. It seemed like it was impossible to get into the castle.

She hadn't fought against Paul yet, but even if she did join the fight, on her own could she really do much?

Swallowing her pride, she eventually decided to get in contact with Bryce himself.

"Bryce, the tenth family is resisting as we've expected! They have more tricks up their sleeves than we thought, so I'm going to need some help. You need to punish them and come down here yourself or at least do something! They're disobeying a direct order from you as their King!"

Bryce had accepted the call and when he heard the news, he had to do everything to not show the smile on his face.

'I knew that Quinn would have some surprises ready. When he came to attack me, he would have had something in case I retaliated. I've come to learn how cautious that boy can be, and weakening two families at the same time, is getting rid of two problems.'

"Fine, you will get the support you ask for!" Bryce replied. "Contact me through Cindy, I'll ask the second family to send you support."

'Come on, I'm rooting for your family members to get rid of all of my problems.'

Bryce thought, no longer resisting the temptation to laugh out loud.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 889: The cries of everyone

As soon as Paul revealed himself, for some reason, it looked like Jill was staying back and not engaging with him. She seemed willing at first, but once she realised her and her family's situation, she backed away.

This was another reason why Paul wanted to switch with Peter. In this type of situation, it actually benefited them more. The longer Jill took to act, it was just one less person they had to deal with. The gargoyle statues and the towers could continue doing their work, slowly dwindling their numbers.

Whereas Peter might have rushed in head first, but Paul didn't just stand around doing nothing. While Jill was waiting, Paul had the three long-bladed spiked gloves on him, but these weren't like the last ones he had. They were red in colour.

Going through the battlefield, Paul carefully picked and decided who he would strike, blocking a claw from a vampire from above, and scratching them with his glove. It didn't take long for the vampire to start to kneel over.

Paul, thanks to the book from Mantis, was now a level eight poison user. Striking the weaker vampires would nearly take them out instantly, and with the fairy blood on top of it, it would only take one scratch.

For the noble vampires or stronger ones, it would take more, but Paul was aiming to shorten the numbers on the other side first, getting rid of all the weak ones. He continued going through the battlefield, attacking them, and their numbers started to fall extremely quickly.

'That blasted king, he's taking his sweet time on purpose isn't he!' Jill thought.  
'Where is my backup meant to be? I can't let this continue on, if I don't do something then the only other option is to retreat' Gritting her teeth she thought it was an embarrassment, she couldn't retreat.

They had the larger forces and were going up against a bunch of ex-humans, it would just be too embarrassing, and her family would be humiliated for years to come.

Having enough, she decided to confront Paul, she kicked one of his clawed gloves away before he could hit another. The hit was strong and Paul had stumbled back a few steps. It reminded him that maybe she wasn't the best mentally, but she was still a leader at the end of the day that had strength that surpassed his own.

'She surrounded her leg in the blood so she wouldn't be affected by the poison.'  
Paul noticed.

However, he was ready, as soon as he saw Jill, he made sure to keep his soul weapon active so he could use it at any point and time, and now was the time.

Out from the pores of his skin, and through his clothing, dark green liquid could be seen seeping out of him. Soon they started to form into dark green balls, the same size as a billiard ball.

"I'm happy my soul ability is similar to what I had in the past," Paul said as he was surrounded by eight dark green balls floating in a circle behind him.

Seeing this, Jill moved forward again, and Paul controlled the balls to go after her. The balls could move faster than himself and kept up with Jill's speed. The first one had hit her on her thigh, nearly a few seconds later, her eyesight started to blur, and she could feel herself feeling weak.

Luckily, she was able to use her blood hardening, to go under where the poison was and chuck it on the floor. Not touching it directly it was similar to scraping it off her body. But soon, there were more balls of poison upon her. She used blood hardening to block off some of them, and dogged the third, but what she didn't expect was that the one that had just missed and gone past her, was stopped mid-air, and moved back, hitting her from behind.

Again the same effects were happening as before, and she had no choice but to use the blood hardening to scrape the poison off again, now that she was more aware of her situation, she could see that all the balls of poison had surrounded her, ready to hit at all sorts of angles.

'These people, they aren't just ordinary humans who have been turned into vampires! How can they be so strong!' Jill thought.

Dodging the balls and using her blood hardening skills was taking everything out of her, and each time she would be hit by a ball of poison it would weaken her further, she was at a standstill, not being able to do anything.

Or at least that's what Paul thought.

At that moment, Paul could hear something. Not just one or two voices, but multiple loud voices rung through his head.

"My arm hurts, it hurts too much!"

'These vampires are so strong, I don't know how much longer I can go on.'

'I don't want to die, I want to see my children again.'

'I know I agreed to follow Paul, but I didn't think it would be the death of me.'

Right now, Paul could hear the thoughts, and cries of everyone on the battlefield. As they were being sent to his head.

He tried to concentrate and ignore them, but it was hard as some of the words were making him lose focus, and the balls were slowing down.

"How does it feel, how does it feel to know you're the one that caused all of this?" Jill said. "Because of you, all these people have been forced to fight." She started to laugh hysterically.

Paul was being so affected by the words, he fell to one knee. The cries were getting louder, and it was as if he could really feel their pain.

Jill stood there laughing in place, as the poison balls finally dropped down and fell to the ground. She could finally move once again.

Until, in the middle of her laughter, she felt something smashing into the side of her face so hard, she could feel her cheek and teeth falling apart. The punch was strong, it was just as strong as one of the leaders, and before she knew it she was flying through the air.

"I told you I would come back for you bitch!" Peter said.

Towards the back of the tenth's people, Layla and Cia were in the middle of the battle. Since Layla was a supportive type, she continued to fire arrows, there were also plenty of negative feelings for her to feed off in the middle of the battle, so at any point and time she was able to transform into one of her three forms, but she held off for now, until it was needed.

However, what had shocked her was suddenly Cia had grabbed onto her hand and had a look of death on her face. She was sweating greatly, and her breathing was quick and sharp like something had happened.

"We have to go to one of the other gates, now!" Cia said. "It's Erin; she's going to need our help."

At the other gate, it looked like Cia had seen something that was true, because marching forward was another army of around a hundred. While Erin, she only had herself and the ten students that Leo had been teaching.

"Don't be scared guys, we knew that this was a possibility, but that's why we trained, right?" Erin said, trying to encourage them.

"The others have already been fighting a hard battle, so it's possible that they won't be able to give us back up, but remember what happened last time, remember what happened to your family members. It's these same people that took your family away last time, and it's these people that want to do the same again!" She shouted.

Those words were enough to give the students resolve as they remembered saying goodbye to their loved ones after the last attack, and the brave ones from the tenth family before that had risked their lives to save them.

Walking at the front of them all, was a hooded man with two small strange looking daggers, it had three prongs on it and was known as a 'Sai'; another name given to it was the 'Hairpin'.

Using her Qi, she could sense the strength of the one in front, and it was definitely that of another vampire knight.

"No one engages with him!" This one's mine, she said.

The hooded man with the hairpin ran forward and could see the shots from the tower come out towards him, he had dodged the first one, but the second one managed to successfully hit.

The students cheered as they saw the power of the towers, and when the hooded man came out, his clothes were destroyed and part of his flesh had fallen to the ground. However, he continued running forward, and it looked like he was healing on the go.

"It's the ability of the second family, he can reverse the damage, be careful!" A student shouted, as he went past the towers and now was directly in front of Erin. Pulling out her large blade, she blocked one of the Hairpins with her large sword, but the other one had directly hit her in the stomach.

She was bleeding, but she didn't feel the pain, because instead, a new energy was rising in her as her eyes started to turn yellow.

"You're a Dhampir!" The hooded man said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 890: Double cross

Navigating their way through the battlefield, both Cia and Layla were running as fast as they could to reach one gate in particular.

Cia's hands couldn't stop trembling at what she had seen not too long ago, but at the same time, the sight of wounded vampires, their own side's and that of the enemy, as well as the cries of pain were distracting her, but not for the better.

Cia gripped the whip in her hand a little harder and swung it towards one of the vampires who came to stop them. The man had tried to block it with his left arm, but it got cut off and he immediately dropped the weapon in his right hand due to the sheer pain the loss of a limb and the still burning fairy blood caused him.

During this attempted attack, Cia had learnt a bit more about her weapons and why they were going to Alex, and now she was feeling even more terrible.

'All of this is my fault! This whole nonsensical war has started because they found out about Alex! If I had stayed quiet and not gone to visit Cindy, none of these people would have been hurt.' She blamed herself. 'After my parents died because of the war, didn't I join Pure because they kept preaching about peace? And now my selfish d.e.s.i.r.es led to this horrible outcome!'

'Why does the answer always have to be to fight each other?'

Seeing Cia's hand shaking after hurting the vampire, Layla embraced and grabbed her hand, to stop her from shaking.

"I know you don't want to hurt them, but if you hadn't stopped him, he would have hurt us. We are just defending ourselves." Layla reassured her. "So thank you for protecting me."

Alas, this all made it worse for Cia. She knew that Layla only meant well... but would she still think that way if she knew what Cia had done?

Cia's dislike of fighting had never been much of a secret and it was also why Pure had made her be an agent instead. When she was assigned the task to keep an eye on Layla she had wanted to get to know her better.

For once she was going to be with another agent, that would understand what they were going through. Since they were experiencing the same things together. Through watching Layla, and 'pretending' to be friends with her, she had actually felt like the two were starting to get on.

Perhaps, because Layla was the first friend she had made, Cia had regarded Quinn as someone who would get in the way of that.

However, right now she truly realised how foolish she had behaved. Simply put she had been jealous. Jealous that her only friend would pick Quinn over her and it was quite clear.

Because she couldn't swallow her pride, she had caused all of this. These were the thoughts that were going through her head.

'Layla, whatever happens, I promise, that I will make sure you survive all of this... no matter the cost!'

---

Erin had been pierced in the stomach and although most would have felt pain at this point, instead she was feeling a new energy rise in her. Against a Vampire knight she couldn't afford to hold back, so she let the energy take over her body.

Her eyes took on a yellow sheen, and power was being sent to her blade. She swung it and with it activated the Blood swipe, the usual red color also changing to yellow.

The knight stepped back a few steps and raised a Blood wall, but it got smashed through easily. With no other choice he had to use the Blood hardening on his forearms blocking the attack, but when Erin's attack touched him, it cracked through that as well.

It was too late to stop it, so he did the only thing he could by falling to the side and sacrificing his left arm over his body.

"A dhampir in a place like this! Not only are the tenth family hiding a Blood fairy but you as well! Have you gone crazy or do you intend to rid the world of all vampires!" The knight shouted angrily while he lost vast amounts of blood.

Normally the wound on his remaining arm would have at least started to heal but something was preventing it from doing so. This wasn't an effect he knew the dhampirs had, it had to be something else.

Still, placing his other hand over his arm, soon the arm started to reappear where it once was.

'He's healing again, no this isn't a healing ability, it's something else. A different ability.' Erin thought, since she knew the effects Qi should have had on vampires.

It looked like their advantage of using Qi to stop the healing was being countered by the second family's own ability to heal these types of wounds. Although they should still be very useful against the other families, that knowledge didn't help Erin in the current situation.

"Everyone, form a line inside the towers' range, your attacks will be stronger than theirs! Remember what Leo taught you, they won't be able to heal forever with their ability!" Erin ordered, and the rest followed nearly instantly.

The ten soldiers that Leo had been training how to use Qi, started to run past the knight in a line. The knight wanted to intercept them, but Erin wasn't giving him any chances. He might be able to heal such a wound, but he had a bad premonition that turning his back on her might lead to a fatal outcome for him.

She moved directly in front of him, and swung her sword down barely missing him as he pulled back.

'I feel stronger, and faster. I can do it this time!' Erin thought to herself, as her strikes accelerated with each clash.

The Qi users from the tenth family fired out their Blood swipes infused with Qi. The others raised Blood walls, only to be surprised when the attacks turned out to be stronger than they had expected. Some of them lost limbs or were greatly injured and that's when they noticed.

Not everyone in the second family had such a great control of the ability, they were only partly able to reverse the wounds, in several cases they turned out to be too great and this caused the tenth family to gain confidence.

However, there were still around a hundred or so from the second family, and they started to retaliate with their own attacks. They were coming from everywhere and it was impossible to block them all.

Thankfully they had equipped best gear armour which increased their defence, so the injuries they sustained weren't too great, yet they would lose if things continue this way.

Eventually one of them suffered from a deep cut to the stomach. Not knowing what to do, they were wondering if they should fall back, but at that moment, three green flames came out shooting towards them.

When it landed on the soldiers, their bodies started to feel better and the wounds started to heal.

"We'll try our best to support you!" Layla shouted a short distance away, but she didn't look like her usual self, for her bottom half of her body now looked like that of a serpent. Feeding on the negative emotions, she had succeeded in evolving into her third form. With this, her arrows could give out buffs, heal her allies and she could cause damage at the same time as well.

Usually seeing such a thing would scare the soldiers that were originally human, but it wasn't the case for these. That was because they had seen scarier things while they were locked up.

In her snake form, Layla had grown to a height of two meters , and Cia was riding on her back. She did her best to protect her friend with the whip, blocking incoming attacks and punishing anyone that got too close to her, because now the soldiers eventually no longer cared about the tower and were charging forward.

Aiming three arrows with red flames, the group were getting ready for another battle.

Once Erin saw that Layla had joined the battle, she stopped wasting any more time and let loose. So far the knight had been blocking many of her attacks, but now as she had gotten used to her newfound speed, her superior swordsman ship was showing. The wounds on him were piling up faster than he could heal himself, not to mention that he would run out of MC cells eventually.

And that time had come sooner than he had wanted it to. Feeling and knowing his time was coming to an end he used his last chance to warn his family members.

"This DHAMPIR will be the death of all of the vampires!" He shouted, letting his hands go, giving up.

Eirn had already vertically swung her blade, and couldn't stop the momentum before slicing off the vampire knight's head clean off.

The strange thing was that despite having fought a Vampire knight, Erin didn't feel tired the least bit. On the contrary, after killing the knight, the energy inside her only grew and she needed some way to expend it.

"Regretfully, it looks like I was a bit late." A female voice said in a neutral voice. At that moment the vampires that had all been charging forward and attacking fell back to where the voice had come from outside the towers' range.

For a brief moment the fighting by the gate stopped.

"Leader, what are you doing here?! It's dangerous, you should head back!" The vampires next to her cautioned the woman while quickly bowing down.

Dressed in her large black gothic dress was none other than Cindy Cha.

"You've already defeated one of my knights, so how about we end this fight here? After all, it would pain my heart to ruin your pretty faces, girls?" Cindy suggested, and at that moment her eyes had laid on Cia who had climbed down due to Layla cancelling out her transformation. Something she had learnt to do now.

"Oh Cia, I'm surprised to see you here. How about you tell them that there's no need to fight? We can even pretend to not know about the dhampir cutie. All we want is the Blood fairy... and you should know who it is."

"After all, you were the one who told us about its existence!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 891: The last vision

A brief break from the fighting was just what everyone from the tenth family needed, especially since they were outnumbered. Although Layla and Cia came at the perfect time to reinforce them, it wouldn't be enough. The sheer number of enemies was too great, even if they all seemed to be mostly regular vampires.

As soon as their line collapsed, or they retreated, the towers would fall, allowing the second family's army to join the eighth family.

That could very well turn the tide of the battle, that they were winning at the moment.

However, their camaraderie was already being challenged by what Cindy had just revealed.

"Cia, what does she mean by that?!" Erin demanded to get an answer. She had a deep hatred from those that had attacked the castle last time. A will stronger than any other on this battlefield to protect the castle this time, and to hear it might be Cia's fault.

A mixed set of emotions was rising in Erin, as she started to think about what Cia had possibly done.

"Calm down, Erin! Clearly this is just her attempt to make us fight each other. We can't just trust whatever she says. I'm sure she's lying, Isn't that right, Cia?" Layla defended her friend.

Alas, Cia's silence wasn't exactly helping her case. Her head held down, not even looking at the others, made it appear like an admission of guilt.

'Come on, Cia, even if it is true, now is not the time! Erin is too emotional!' Layla thought as she could see the smog above her head. Ever since her eyes had turned yellow, Layla had noticed that Erin's emotions were getting the better of her.

"A lie? Do you really think us leaders would have to resort to such petty tricks? I'm only telling the truth. Why do you think Quinn had been made out to be a high level threat? It was because I found that information from your friend there, but don't worry she was only looking out for her family, the vampires that is." Cindy spoke before they could clear any possible misunderstandings.

"You shouldn't be mad at her, but praise her loyalty to the vampire cause! That's why she told me what you and Peter were talking about. How you saw me have meetings with Jill!"

Saying that much, Layla knew that had to be at least a bit of truth to Cindy's claims. She and Peter had made sure to talk about it privately... and the only one she confined in, had been Cia.

'Cia, did you really tell her, is that why they tried framing Quinn. Was Peter actually right about Cindy?' So many questions were spiralling through Layla's mind right now but the biggest question was why?

Why had Cia decided to tell Cindy about everything? What did she offer her in return?

Could it be a deal to bring her memories back?

"Don't worry, I know a lot more about you girls than you originally thought." Cindy started to speak in a soft gentle tone. "You three girls don't deserve to get hurt, each one of you is more special than you think. A rare Hannya, a Banshee, and finally a Dhampir. Although the others aren't much of a problem, you will bring danger to the tenth family if you remain!" She said, looking towards Erin.

"Don't you see, that the boy can't protect you three girls? Because of what you are, you will always be sought after, and the vampires will find a way to get to you. Just like with the blood fairy, if you stay with them they will come and attack the tenth over and over again. Or, if you truly value your family members, come and join the second family. With me and my faction vouching for you, I can promise you that not a soul will be able to hurt you!"

Layla went over to Cia and knelt down by her side, she could see her hands were shaking and when she peaked at her face, tears were dropping to the floor. She already knew that Cia really had done those things before coming over.

"Cia, I don't know why you did those things, but I can tell that you regret them now. Just tell me, do you think because of what you told her, she's the one that set up Quinn?" Layla asked in a quiet tone.

Thinking about it, what probably started this was when Cia had blurted out the fact that Cindy had been killed, by none other than Quinn.

"After she treated me I had a vision. A vision of her being killed by Quinn." Cia managed to say amidst the sobs.

Now to Layla, it seemed like there was a major suspect. Someone who knew about the blood fairy beforehand, and if Quinn killed her in her vision, it would have been for good reason.

"I guess Peter was right about you." Layla said standing up. "You are one crazy person, setting all this up. You're willing to take in Erin, who you know is dhampir! Admitting you would hide her, I wouldn't be surprised if you have been hiding your

own blood fairy from the others and that's how you set up Quinn in the first place! It should be you rotting down underground, not him!" She shouted.

"Quinn... I guess it's true what Cia told me, you are head over heels for him." Cindy sighed, almost looking depressed by the words Layla said. "Oh, well. A shame, but I don't need a girl that relies on a man!"

In an instant, Cindy moved forward as fast as she could and swung out her arm, performing a single line Blood swipe. It was one that was focused on speed, so it came out across the ground faster than Layla could react.

She also wasn't a vampire so her physical traits weren't as strong as others. However, there was one person who was not injured and felt faster and stronger than ever and that was Erin.

Using the energy in her body, Erin also dashed in front of the attack, and held out her large sword in front of her. Infusing it with Qi hoping to either deflect the attack, or take most of its energy.

Seeing this, a smile appeared on Cindy's face. As she reached out her hand, and activated her blood control skill.

"I won't kill you, you are too special!" Cindy said, as she controlled the Blood swipe to move around Erin, heading straight for Layla.

The attack connected, and blood was seen flying in the air. Liquid was felt on Erin's back as it went across her clothes. When turning around though, rather than seeing a sad face, Erin only saw one of smiles falling to the floor.

---

At this moment, underground Quinn could feel having lost connection to one of his family members.

[A cursed family member has died]

[33/50 slots remaining]

The slots for being able to use the blood ritual had also gone down by one, and the messages had just confirmed what he feared.

An anger rose in him, as he was filled with regret.

'No, how could this happen!' Quinn thought as he tried with all his will to break free from the wall, but it was useless.

---

The blood swipe had hit, and her body had been cut in half by the blood swipe, and for some reason, Erin could see that she was smiling with her face full of tiers, but it wasn't Layla who had fallen, it was Cia.

'I knew, this would happen...' Cia thought.

Back at the main gate, the sudden vision Cia had received was not one of Erin's death or anyone else, but her own. She had seen herself save Layla's life.

Knowing that this was the fated outcome, she had accepted it, as it would save the one person she truly cared about.

'Please, continue to live on Layla... thank you, for having been my best friend.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 892: Protect them little one

Pacing up and down in the room at a quick pace, biting the top of his nail was none other than Alex. His back was starting to ache as it kept his wings tucked in tight underneath his clothing, more so than ever before they were twitching, begging to be set free.

Calling him a nervous wreck was still putting it mildly. The blood fairy was inside the castle, hidden from the two families who had come to drag him back. Paul had told him to go to the top floor, to wait in the throne room, until everything was sorted.

Still, Alex wasn't alone, Logan and Sil were there as well to keep an eye on him. Logan was looking out of the large glass panel window, watching the battle unfold. As for Sil... he took the chance to sit on the throne.

"This seat is really nice." Sil mentioned with a satisfied smile. "If I was Quinn, I would never leave a seat as comfy as this."

"All you have to do is become the leader of one of the families. Or, you could just get someone to make you a chair." Logan commented, not even looking up from the window.

The view from above allowed him to grasp their current situation, and to his surprise their family was doing extremely well defending their position. Before, the defences weren't great, and they would have been overpowered, but defending a castle was always easier than besieging one and that was especially true thanks to Quinn's towers and gargoyles.

However, if it would have been up to him, he would have placed them in slightly different places to maximise their efficiency. Logan had seen some of the towers start to rise on their own, unsure if Quinn was somehow doing this from wherever they held him prisoner or whether he had planted them there for the future with the power of his system.

If he could raise them on the go, then they should be able to turn the tides. If the battle was to continue this way, the eighth family was likely to flee, but if they could raise some towers behind them it would be possible to trap them all inside.

At least, that was what Logan would do. He knew Quinn wasn't vindictive enough to want to eradicate the whole family. Most likely their leader just wanted the fighting to stop rather than teach them a good lesson. In the long term, it would probably be the better decision.

"How can you two be so calm?!" Alex shouted. "There is a whole army out there trying to break into this castle and get us!"

"You're wrong." Logan corrected him. "They are here to get you, and it doesn't look like they will be able to make their way here any time soon."

At that moment, something strange had happened. Alex felt a slight pain in his c.h.e.s.t. It was a dull pain that was hard to pinpoint and he soon noticed that it didn't actually hurt but was more of a feeling as if they had an itch on their heart. The next moment it went away, as if it had never been there, yet he instinctively knew what it was.

"They're dead... someone from the Cursed family has just died." Alex softly spoke, in disbelief. He thought this was all due to him, due to what he had become.

Hearing this and looking out the window, it didn't look like anyone from near the castle area had died, which meant it was most likely from one of the other gates.

Just then, popping his head through the flap of Sil's side pocket toolbox that was attached to his leg, was little Borden.

"Alex, don't worry, you know I'm strong, right? If I'm here I promise I'll protect you. It's what Quinn asked me to do." Borden said.

Although Alex didn't know what a little human the size of a puppy was meant to do, he had heard the stories of how Borden had protected the little kids on the Cursed ship, when Pure had sent their people in. Seeing the one supposedly responsible, didn't really give him much confidence, but he understood that the other meant well.

"Erghh thanks."

At that moment, a strange device that Logan had set up by the throne started to blink rapidly making a beeping sound with it and then it stopped. Then, it did so again, soon stopping again.

"This is bad, quite bad. Someone's inside the castle, and they're incredibly fast! Prepare yourself!" Logan shouted, immediately recalling the spiders back to his body as he equipped the speed suit on himself.

Knowing what was happening, Logan had set up senses in parts of the hallway that one would have to pass if they were to reach the room they were in now. What was worrying him though, was the short amount of time between each beep.

At the speed they were travelling, it meant whoever it was would reach them in less than a minute. Popping out of the toolbox altogether, Borden was now on the red carpet, while Alex went to hide behind the throne.

"Brother, you have no abilities here, it's not safe for you, you need to stay safe as well! We can't save the others if you die." Borden cautioned him.

Assessing the situation, Logan could only assume it was bad. Paul had gone out thinking the castle would be quite safe. Sil was no help at all and Logan didn't really know what Alex could do. He himself wasn't the best fighter either. Which meant the only person they could rely on was little Borden.

'If only Quinn had placed one of those statues here In here, but I guess he couldn't predict they would be after Alex, only that they might attack this place.'

Soon, the doors to the throne room swung open violently and a man could be seen standing there with his hands behind his back. He wore a smart white shirt with a long dangling trench coat that had seen better days. It was in tatters and the one wearing it looked as if had just been in a fight, but one of his most standout features was the ends of his moustache that would twirl.

"I can smell you, Bloody fairy!" Remus, the original eighth leader, called out. "This place brings back bad memories. Just knowing there is one of your kind inside this damned castle, makes me want to tear it to shreds!!" He shouted out so loud, that the curtains at the very back of the room had ruffled from just his voice.

"Who the hell is that guy?!" Alex whispered, hiding behind the large throne. Sil, who was by his side, could only shrug his shoulders.

A few seconds later though, and they heard a loud crashing bang. Alex couldn't resist the urge to carefully peek over the corner of the throne to see that the intruder that had just entered had been smashed, and was currently stuck in the wall.

"See, I told you I was strong!" Borden cheered, not looking like he did a few seconds before. He now had two spikes on his back, as well as scales running up his arm and down certain areas on his face.

"Who allowed you inside our throne room, you old man?!" Borden shouted.

Getting out of the wall, pieces of it had crumbled to the floor. Remus twisted his apparently broken neck slightly. It cracked and twisted, fixing itself and so did the bones on the other parts of his body.

"That hurt far more than I expected. It seems that this era has its fair share of interesting people, yet why do all of you insist on giving me so much trouble?" Remus asked, clearly annoyed. He looked at the little one in front of him, and before he had time to react, Borden felt himself sent flying from a powerful kick.

His instincts had made him try to block the attack, yet his body had only been able to react when he was already mid air. However, the attack didn't stop there, Remus grabbed onto Borden's head and dragged him across the red carpet, before slamming him head first into the top half of the throne.

Several cracks ran on the previously immaculate throne, and a mix of green and red blood now decorated it. A few seconds in, the top half of the throne fell off, revealing Alex with his leg's clacking together.

"Looks like I have found you, Blood fairy."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 893: An Original's strength

Still on the floor, Alex looked up at the man towering over him, as his whole body started to shudder uncontrollably. The man wasn't large, nor did he have a very scary look per se, but as Alex stared into the other's eyes, he could feel the sheer power inside the vampire, power that he could never hope to match.

'If you don't do anything, he's going to grab you! Move, Alex, move!' He screamed internally but none of his body parts were willing to listen to him. He felt like a frog staring into the eyes of a snake, his fate already sealed.

That's when he felt someone grab his hand and drag him from their spot. That one person wasn't affected by the man's presence.

"My grandfather is a lot scarier than him! Trust me, if he was here, we would all be dead already." Sil joked as he pulled his friend along.

"It's useless! He seems to be even stronger than Quinn and we know how fast he is!" Alex protested, but when he looked back, the strange vampire had stayed in place for some reason.

"Just let Borden handle him! How have you NOT realised what he is yet?"

Looking over again, he saw that it wasn't the vampire not wanting to move, but more a case of 'little' Borden having his hands gripped around the vampire, and it was only then that Alex started to pay attention to his body features.

"Wait a second, he looks like a D-D...a-a-l... a Dalki!!!" He stuttered.

"That's because he is one, genius. That's why he was so confident." Sil replied, not stopping their escape.

Alex had been blissfully unaware that there had been Dalki on board the Cursed ship the whole time. Yet for some reason, he couldn't say that one was out of place, given their rag-tag team under Quinn. Nevertheless, right now he couldn't care less what Borden was, he just wanted him to win this fight.

Taking this brief moment of nobody paying attention to him, Logan decided it would be best to try to contact the others, because there was one thing worrying him. Yes, Borden was strong, but there was a time limit to his prowess.

"This is Logan. Paul, I don't know what's happening right now with you, but you have to come to the castle RIGHT NOW. We have a visitor on the level of a leader!" Logan tried to relay the message but there was no response.

This was because at this moment and time, Paul was being overwhelmed by the simultaneous influx of information coming from all voices on the battlefield. It was impossible for him to filter out what Logan had just relayed.

With blood dripping down his head, Borden had a smile on his face.

"Old man, have you ever fought against a Dalki before? You know the more you hurt me, the stronger I get!" Borden shouted as he crushed the bones in Remus' hands. Lifting up in the air was quite the sight for them to see and soon ,he was slammed down into the floor.

Getting up quickly, Remus was recovering at a rate that would even put a Wight like Peter to shame. Vampires had great healing abilities provided they had blood nearby, but this strange vampire somehow managed without, albeit at a tempo he himself was unhappy with.

"This truly is an interesting era, for so many people to be able to actually hurt me. What exactly are you, you smell like a human but at the same time like a beast?!" Remus questioned, shaking his arm after a few seconds.

Not answering or wasting time, Borden went in again.

'If one big hit won't finish you off, then I just need to hit you until you can't recover anymore!'

This time Remus took on a fighting stance with one hand in front of the other, and as the punches came he would tap them away with his finger from side to side. It was awkward due to Borden's small size, but still the original vampire could keep up with everything that was happening.

'The swings look wild, but I can tell he is well trained. It seems my bad habit is acting up again. I should stop wasting time with this one, and go after the Blood fairy.' Leaping back, away from Borden. Remus made a fist.

'Blood canon!' Activating one of his strongest skills, his arm churned back and the recoil was strong swinging his arm upward. A large red heavy ball was shot out from his arm as fast as a bullet, knocking the Dalki, back to the throne.

Looking at Remus' hand now, it looked completely destroyed as all the skin from his outer arm had peeled off, and his muscles could be seen, however once again his arm was regenerating at a visible speed.

'That skill, it looks like Quinn's Blood bullet but a stronger version.' Logan noted. 'Using Blood bullet once makes it so Quinn can't use his fingers for at least a day, but with his healing speed it looks like he can use it as many times as he wishes.'

And soon, Logan would find that out.

Borden stood back up again, yet he was covered in far more blood than before. For such a little person it looked like a horror scene, but there was a smile on his face as new energy was building up inside of him.

"You are pretty resilient, aren't you?" Remus noted, now holding out his fingers like that of a gun. He fired hitting Borden's legs, but he continued moving, firing again hitting his shoulder. He then attempted to hit his head but Borden was moving faster than before, and he was ready to deliver another punch.

Charging forward, the bullets continued to fire, as Remus' fingers would heal with each shot, but now Borden was dodging them all and this was when Logan could see it, that Borden had a third spike sticking halfway out of his back.

Jumping up from under, Borden was suddenly above him, and he grabbed both of his fists ready to slam it down upon Remus' head.

For some reason, Remus had a bad feeling that if this attack was to hit him, he might not recover that easily. Holding both his arms out and having his hands in fists. He shot out a double blood cannon, hitting Borden and throwing him slightly off target, to allow his fists to slam across the floor.

A shackwave was sent out instantly shaking the whole floor, and Logan and everyone else could feel it. Soon after, the floor started to cave in. From the single punch the hard black material was crumbling.

The whole floor had collapsed and they were falling to the floor underneath them. While falling. Alex decided to take off his top and used his blood red wings to grab both Sil and Logan so they wouldn't be hurt by the impact.

Remus on the other hand, had landed fine, but he was a bit stunned by what had just happened. He stood still, and was looking at the ground. The little man was still standing, huffing and panting, but he didn't look like his former self anymore.

'It hasn't been ten minutes yet, is it because of the third spike?' Logan wondered, but what he was more concerned about now, was Alex. He looked at him and Sil.

"Alex, get out of here!! Why are you still here?!" Logan shouted frustrated with everything that's happening.

'Quinn, are you really going to let this happen? We need you, right now more than ever!' Logan was frustrated, mostly at his own weakness. A battle between the two in front of him made him realise how powerless he was, and the one person who probably could have done something had wrongfully been detained.

Seeing little Borden, in pain like that, Alex gripped his fist and made his decision.

"No! I know inside that big head of your's, that you know it's pointless to run. He would catch up to me anyway. Besides, he's here for me in the first place. I should

have just done this from the beginning." Alex said, as he started to walk over towards Remus.

"You idiotic fool! You're going to give up now?" Logan questioned, as he was ready to attempt to fight the strange vampires, but Sil was the one that stopped him.

"Don't lose your life for no reason, Logan. We've already lost one of our own, let's not add to that count.." Sil shook his head.

When Logan turned around, both Remus and Alex had disappeared, yet the fighting outside continued. The enemy had yet to realise that they had already succeeded.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 894: A rising energy

The tide was still in the tenth families favour on the battlefield, but there was still one big problem they needed to deal with, Jill. A leader had great strength, and quite rightly so, some could turn the tides of a battle by themselves.

Paul was still down on one knee as the voices in his head continued from those that he cared about most. However, for a brief second, they had stopped, and when he looked up, he could see Peter walking towards him.

'Of all the people to come and save me at a time like this, I never thought it would be this guy.' Paul thought.

Peter was now standing directly above him and had his hand held out.

'I think my opinion might have changed of you.' Paul thought, seeing that he was giving him a helping hand.

"Your gloves," Peter demanded. "If you're going to be so useless fighting against her, then you don't need those weapons, do you?"

Peter wasn't offering his hand to help Paul up. Instead, he was demanding for the beast weapons in his hands. Slightly confused by the demand, he hesitated, and before he knew it, Peter was pulling them off him and wearing them.

He looked at them for a few seconds and gave a few practice swings in the air. He could throw his hands out like fists, but the claws had better range and were made with fairy blood.

It was the first time Paul had seen Peter really move up close like he was doing now. With each strike, a sharp noise was made as the blades slashed through the wind. Seeing this, he only thought one thing. 'Fast' Peter was incredibly fast, and judging how he sent Jill across the battlefield, it looked like he was strong as well.

If there was anyone that was a dark horse that the other families probably would have underestimated, it would be him.

A vampire came running towards Peter, and he was simply whacked away with the palm of his hand, further proving his strength was on the same level as a leader. Ignoring everything going on around him, he had his eyes set on one person and one person only.

Jill, who was recovering from the punch dealt to her face, her cheek slightly red and still in the middle of healing. She could see Paul starting to stand up, and she knew what was coming next.

'That punk from before is back, but I can only direct the thoughts into one person at a time. I don't think it will do much on that idiot, and the knight seems like more trouble in the first place.' Jill decided, as she once again activated her abilities.

Paul this time, could ignore the thoughts better. As he was getting used to it, something had changed. Now, not only were sounds being transmitted into his head but images to go with it. As he heard his fellow team-mates scream in pain, images proceeded, some of them were getting clawed at, and their limbs torn, or were bleeding out.

The images were even blocking his own real vision, and he was finding it hard to see in front of him.

'Looks like she can do a lot more than just become a mobile phone for the vampires.' Paul started to think, but he smiled, because he knew he didn't have to worry about her.

Peter immediately rushed in head first, and he had caught up to where Jill was in an instant. He threw out one of the claws, and it was faster than she had anticipated.

'How is he as fast as a leader? I thought he had just caught me off guard.' But there was one thing that vampires had that Wights didn't, and that was blood skills. Using the blood hardening, she blocked the powerful attack and threw out a blood swipe, hitting him on the shoulder.

However, feeling no pain the punch continued, and this time when he had hit her, it was with the claws from Paul, causing immense pain through her body. Using the blood control took time, same with the blood hardening, and Peter was ignoring his own body damage to deal blows to Jill, knowing full well she would be hurt more by it.

"Damn you!" Jill screamed as she gritted her teeth with a mouth full of blood from the hits she was taking. She attempted to slash Peter's head right off, But both his arms and weapons had blocked his head, with another pair in front of them.

Looking at it, Jill could see that the other pair of arms was from someone she knew. It was her own knight Tifu that had been raised from the dead.

"Protect the head, it was the only lesson Edward taught me, and it's the only lesson I need!" Peter shouted. Tifu, grabbed onto Jill, and Peter stabbed one of the claws right into Jill's thigh.

The blades dug in deeper than before, and the effect was taking over her whole body.

'I...I...I can't win.' She had finally admitted to herself. 'Where the hell is my help, just wait Bryce... let's see how you deal with this failure...' One second Peter could

see her, standing in front of him, proud and the next second he could see her running off, and soon after the rest of her people started to follow her.

Finally, the images in Paul's head were stopped along with the sound.

'Is it over?' Paul wondered.

As the battlefield in front of him was clearing. The eighth family had retreated.

Although the fight was over in front of the castle, there was still the fight at one of the other gates.

Erin had just witnessed Cindy attempting to kill Layla, and in the end, another was sacrificed in her place. Seeing the blood of someone she knew, someone fell in front of her again. Reminding Erin of her past.

'No, it's going to happen again, everything.. they're going to take everything away!' Erin thought as she gripped her sword, and dived into the enemy's side, right in after Cindy.

'She was the one that attacked. She is the problem I need to get rid of!' Erin thought as her anger had reached a boiling point so strong, she was crying inside to get rid of the energy that had built up.

The whole situation had been calm up until this point, that the others didn't know what to do. While Layla, she had transformed into her serpent form, and was placing her green flames on top of Cia's wounds, but it was doing nothing. The slash in her body had nearly gone through her. It was that strong, but it had torn everything inside with it, giving her almost an instant death.

"Cia, Cia!" Layla cried. "Come on, I lost my mother. You can't leave me now as well!" She screamed at the top of her lungs until her throat was sore. She continued to cry and used all her energy to produce bigger green flames. Her voice was nearly torn to shreds as she continued to shout.

"Wake up! Wake Up! Who is going to help me find out about my mother? Didn't you just remember who you are, you can't just leave like this!"

However, there was no answer, and her eyes were lifeless, with a soft smile on her face.

Seeing Erin rushing towards Cindy, the other vampires around her started to gather, pushing her towards the back. They were clearly worried for their leader who wasn't known for her combat abilities, but instead was known for her actual ability.

"Please, leader stay back. None of your noble vampires are here!" One of the vampires ordered.

Cindy had only brought one vampire knight along with her, along with the regular vampires from the pooling area. She didn't bring any from her inner castle area, or from the castle itself.

Which was why the vampires were so worried about her, and at the same time were trying to make an impression, hoping to be promoted.

"Don't hurt her too badly!" Cindy shouted, strangely concerned for Erin.

What the vampires didn't realise, was what they were getting themselves into. It didn't take much for Erin to beat them. All blood swipes coming towards her could be blocked with her sword, and with each strike of her own, a vampire would fall down and never get back up.

That's when Cindy noticed something.

'Every time she strikes down a vampire, her attacks are getting faster and stronger.'

It wasn't just her imagination either. Erin could feel it, every time she had killed a vampire, a surge of energy was increasing inside her. This was the special treat of the vampire hunter.

'I have to get stronger, stronger!' Erin screamed internally. No longer was she worried about herself or the others, but she was just looking at the next vampire to go after. The vampires stepped back a little, and she leapt forward, launching after them swinging her sword, when a sudden clash was heard swinging her own sword upward. It was a first in this fight where she felt her blade overpowered.

"Who did that!" she shouted.

"Don't get consumed by your own power, Erin." A voice said.

When she finally saw who had just blocked her attack, she recognised who it was.

"Teacher!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 895: The battle's end

Usually a run in with one's teacher would be followed by a feeling of relief, especially in the case that the one in question had disappeared for far longer than should be reasonable, but instead Erin felt hurt by what had just happened.

For more reasons than one, a strong swing from herself was still able to be deflected like so.

"What are you doing?!" She shouted. "Have you been swayed over to the enemy side? Why won't you let me pass?!"

For a second, Leo was concentrating on the aura around her. He could sense it. This wasn't the power of Qi, but it was something else that was fuelling her body. The yellow power surrounding her was larger than he had ever seen before.

What exactly had happened in the time they were away? What made it so you had to resort to the power taking over Leo thought.

"I'm sorry," Leo responded. "I'm sorry I wasn't here. I've neglected my responsibilities as this family's knight. I should have been here for you all. However, I can't let you hurt these people, not when they have already given up and lack the will to fight!"

"What do you mean?! Stop making excuses!" Erin asked, confused by his words. She dashed in not wanting to wait anymore, and swung up her blade high, towering over her head.

'Do I have enough energy left?' Leo wondered, as he could see the power inside of her. 'I have no choice, it will have to be done.'

He placed his blade in his sheath again, crouched, bending his knees slightly, not moving from the spot he waited, and when the blade started to descend down. That's when Leo unleashed his sword. Suddenly, Erin could feel something pull her sword in a certain direction, she could tell if it continued on this path, that it would be blocked, but she couldn't do anything about it.

It was as if her arm was being guided and it now had to follow that path.

At the right point and time, Leo's blade struck the large blade and stuck it into the ground, yet Erin had more than one weapon on her.

She also carried a new katana type blade made from Alex's blood, as she was attempting to draw this out, Leo kicked her hand, hitting her knuckles pushing the sword back in, and then his hand laid on top of her head.

Soon, the energy from her got distributed to Leo himself. Erin's head was clearing and all the anger in her body started to dissipate. What he was doing right now, was

a form of Leo's soul weapon and it was the same before. Learning how to use the second stage of Qi, had also opened up more ways for him to use his soul weapon as well. When the energy died down, her yellow eyes began to dull and that's when she noticed the look of those around her.

The vampires from the second family no longer looked defiant. No, they looked frightened as if they were looking at a demon, their weapons drawn shaking in their hands, and even those that were on her side had great concern for her.

Once the energy was transferred to Leo, he lifted his sword, and struck it into the ground. Cracks started to appear in the ground and yellow energy could be seen coming out from it. The area of attack wasn't large, but an attack deeper than one's eyes could see was created in the ground itself.

"Leo..." Erin spoke softly, having come to some of her senses. "I'm sorry, I didn't mean to attack you."

"Don't worry, you have too little experience with this type of energy and failed to control it. That is what teachers are for, and that is why you are still a pupil and not a teacher." Leo replied as he put his hand on her shoulder.

Now aware of what was going on, she realised that Leo was right, for some reason, the second family were no longer attacking them, and instead they just stood there watching the scene in front of them.

The reason why Leo knew they were no longer planning to fight, was because their aura told him so. It had retreated, and was no longer on the attack.

"What are you still doing here, do you need an extra invitation to leave?" Leo questioned.

"Do you think I would take orders from a vampire knight?" Cindy talked back.  
"Remember I am still a leader."

Turning his head, Leo had his hand gripped on the hilt of his blade. Although the others had put their energy away, there was still one person prepared to fight.

"No, I don't expect you to take orders from me, but I do expect you to listen to the orders you have been given. I'm not in the best of moods right now. My duty is to protect the tenth family, and if you dare to step a single foot forward, I will do just that."

Cindy appeared calm, cool and collected to everyone on the outside. The expression on her face hadn't changed in the slightest, but Lep could tell those words had angered her greatly. She was unable to hide it with her aura as it went about fiercely over her, like a rabid cat.

"Everyone, we shall retreat for now." Cindy ordered, turned around, and the rest soon followed.

Erin didn't understand what was going on. Why would they retreat now just because Leo had turned up? Things were certainly confusing, but as the whole area was quiet, there were sounds of sobbing that could be heard.

Looking at where the sounds were coming from, Layla was no longer in her serpent form, and had her head pressed up against Cia's c.h.e.s.t.

"Everyone!" Leo shouted. "The fight is over, return to the castle. Get your wounds treated. Afterwards, we shall pay our respect to those who have given up their lives for us."

Walking over, Erin could see Cia wasn't moving and she hadn't been for a while now. She looked cold. Dropping her large sword to the floor she fell to her knees.

"I'm sorry, my last words....my last words to you..." Erin, she couldn't even get the words out she wanted to say, a small tear fell from her left eye.

"It's okay, I'm sure she knew you didn't mean it." Layla said, with a forced smile through her own tears. "Look, she's smiling. It means she was happy, right? Tell me she at least died happy."

"Yeah, she's definitely smiling." Erin replied, thinking back to their last moments.

---

Not long before Leo had arrived at the battle scene. At the King's castle, they also had another visitor who was in the throne room. Her silver hair was ragged and messy, as if she had been living in the jungle for months.

Her face was full of dirt, but she didn't care. For she had come straight to the King's castle before going anywhere else.

Silver was bowing down, and standing in front of her was King Bryce.

"Silver, you truly are an amazing person to have found all that out. Who would have thought they would be involved." Bryce noted with a big grin on his face. "The request has been made, those attacking the tenth have been ordered to withdraw. You may leave now."

However, Silver remained, she had gone through all that, and that's all Bryce was going to say to her.

"Sorry, your Majesty, but may I ask, what will happen now? What will happen to Quinn and what about what we found out?" She spoke worriedly.

"Things are always more complicated than they seem, and unfortunately complicated things take time to unravel. You have done enough, Silver. Leave this to me and the council. Your father was right about you, you do have the traits to become a great leader. I shall look forward to working with you soon."

Clenching her fists, Silver still didn't think this was good enough, but what choice did she have?

Watching Silver leave the room, Bryce sat back down on his throne.

"You have done a great job so far, Quinn. Looks like I might need to use you and your family a little while longer. "

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 896: Winner or loser?

The area around the castle was filled with the sound of swords clashing, explosions going off as abilities were used, as well as cries of pain and anger from those who had mustered the strength to fight with their lives on the lines... until all of it stopped rather undramatically.

The tenth army had been outnumbered, to carry on pushing forward they had to go beyond what they had in their tank and pushing their bodies beyond. Yet eventually, with the appearance of their first Vampire knight, the fight was over.

Jill had already retreated with the rest of her family members, leaving the tenth family's army standing still. Some of them were wondering if it really was the end or some sort of plan. They could imagine that this might only be the beginning.

That was until Paul spread the news that he had received a message from a man he had been trying to get through to for the longest time.

"Paul, it looks like you did well in my absence. I'm sorry I couldn't return sooner. The other gates are fine, only the one I'm currently at got attacked by the second family, but Erin seems to have done a good job in fending them off."

"I know you are worried that they might return, but trust me. The other families won't be. At least for a while anyway. We have to take this time to rest and do what we can." Leo reported.

There were a lot of things Paul wanted to ask Leo, most of all where the hell he had been all this time? And, what did he mean they wouldn't return?

The order to get the Blood fairy came from the newly crowned King himself, and Paul couldn't imagine that unless they achieved their goal or got rid of the tenth family that Bruce had any reason to call them off.

But if there was one thing, Paul trusted Leo greatly. He was a man who had achieved a lot and might have been in a higher position than himself in the army if he had accepted it. Looking around at his men, there was a lot of work to be done.

'Let's get to it.'

What was concerning for him, was that in the middle of the fight he had felt something. Not just him, but everyone who had been turned by Quinn had felt it.

The loss of one of their own. One that had a blood connection. He was wondering if it had come from one of his army or possibly someone else.

Unlike with the attack from the Bloodsucker, the damage done to the inner tenth area was actually kept to a small area. The area directly in front of the castle.

The two newly erected towers had protected them well in the fight and were still left standing. As for the gargoyles, only the one who had defended the castle walls had remained standing, the other had been destroyed in battle.

The most impressive thing about them was their regenerative ability, but at the same time, if the core was destroyed, they would no longer be active. It was a weak spot they had.

Those from the Cursed family had known about it, so they had done their best to protect the core for as long as possible, but eventually they got overwhelmed. Those that were injured were taken into the castle for treatment and healing, thanks to them doing that in the middle of the battle there weren't a lot of casualties lost on their side.

There were many gravely injured that could no longer battle, but out of the two hundred, they had only lost fifty or so. Which was far fewer than the other side.

"Sir," Ashley reported. He had been called from the other gate, which was the only one that hadn't been attacked. Him and his group of ten had been lucky enough to survive completely intact, by following their orders to not move from their post. "What would you like us to do with those from the eighth family that are still alive?"

In front of the castle, a large green tent had been put up. For the time being they had dragged all those not belonging to the tenth family there. The ones that were still alive.

From this fight Paul had learnt one thing, it wasn't easy to kill a vampire.

Many of them had lost one or more limbs and couldn't move, but as long as their hearts continued beating and their heads remained on their shoulders they wouldn't die that easily, although it was easy enough to give them that finishing blow in their current condition.

"Don't treat them just yet. We don't want them to leave the area to start another attack any time soon. There's a dungeon underneath the castle. Place them in there, and then give them a minimum supply of blood. We don't want them dying. I'm sure we can still use them as some type of bargaining tool down the line."

"And what of the crystals sir?"

"Crystals," Paul replied, wondering what the man was talking about.

Out from his hand, Ashley revealed the bright red crystals that looked similar to that of the beast crystals. It looked and felt like there was a strange power within them.

"Gather them up for now, maybe there will be a use for them as well."

Finally, Paul could see Leo walking over with the others. He was thankful that most of them looked fine without any severe injuries, but there was one being carried in Leo's arms, and the look on Erin's face, behind him, didn't seem fine at all.

'So it was her in the end that had died. I wonder how this will affect the girls, and the others. I wonder how it will affect Quinn.' Paul thought. Although he was sad for Cia's death, there were many others from the army that he was much closer to that had died today.

Paul's mind was focused, and he was more thinking about how the group could grow from this. Death was a truth of this world. In all honesty, they were lucky that no one close to them had died until this point.

"You have made some good calls." Leo praised him. "A lot has happened on our end, and it looks like a lot was happening on your end as well. I'm glad we came back with what we could. When everything is sorted, we should try to figure out just what is going on here."

When the outside team had finally finished bringing everyone in, Leo and Paul had returned inside, and started to head up to the throne room. When Paul reached the floor underneath the top one, he noticed that the whole stairway was blocked in.

Trying to go down the hallway, there was rubble everywhere as the whole floor had collapsed.

"No! No!" Paul shouted, as he frantically started to run around the floor, and then he finally was in the room directly underneath where the throne room would have been. A large bedroom that Quinn would usually reside in.

Inside, there were Sil and Logan, who looked to be frantically typing away, at a holographic screen. Ever since Alex had been taken away, he was doing everything he could to try and reach him.

Alex had the shadow ability, and wasn't wearing his mask, which meant there was a chance that he could get in contact with him, but so far no messages appeared to have gone through.

"What happened here?!" Paul demanded to know.

"Paul, why haven't you been answering your mask. I tried to inform you constantly of what was going on!" Logan criticised the latter.

Looking at his mask he had taken off after the fight was over, he could see it blinking away, but the vibration function on it had broken so he was unaware that Logan had attempted to call him multiple times.

With the look on Logan's face, and Sil tending to a weakened Borden, Paul noticed that he couldn't see one vital person.

"They... got him? ... All of this and they still got Alex..."

"Yes." Logan confirmed it. "The other side has won this battle."

At that moment, the sense of victory they had felt, the lives they had sacrificed and the struggle they had endured, all of it felt... useless.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 897: Aftermath of the tenth

It was impossible to keep what was happening to the tenth family a secret from the other vampire families. After all, two of them had been involved with the attack. However, the result was contrary to what everyone had expected, and it had quickly become the talk of the whole settlement.

"Wasn't the tenth family weakened from the attack with the Bloodsuckers? I heard they made the eighth family and second family retreat."

"Stop giving the tenth family all this credit. It was under the King's order that they retreated!"

"But it's true! Have you not seen what happened to those that came back from the eighth family? Many from the pooling area had joined them for the attack, but only about half of them had returned. No one wants to mess with those in the tenth family now!"

"I heard it's all because of their leader's special construction. Those towers we saw last time, there are more in the inner circle areas and I heard they have deadly statues that are actually beasts."

"What's going to happen now? Do you think the other families will form a bigger army and attack them together?"

That was the question on everyone's mind, especially for the tenth family themselves. Paul was in one of the large dining rooms they often would have a meeting in, while the others were still busy completing his given tasks and looking after those that had been hurt.

Paul had just informed Leo about everything that had happened during his absence, catching him up on why exactly they were after Alex. The biggest shock to the first Vampire knight being the fact that Quinn had been captured.

"I see, so it's difficult for us to make a move currently. I wonder if what we found out will be enough to let him out. Have you had an update from the King?" Leo asked.

"No." Paul shook his head. "I've heard nothing and it looks like you might know more than me. Usually we would get an update through Jill, but I have this feeling she won't be speaking to us anytime soon after what has happened. So what about you? How come you knew what was going to happen? Did you discover some information during Fex' rescue?"

"Yes, we definitely found things, but it has nothing to do with Fex. It was just like his familiar said, someone had removed all his memories. It would be best for me

not to say anything just yet, at least until we hear back from Silver on how things will proceed."

"For now, we should keep an eye on those in the castle. Quinn brought a lot of these people together, and without him they are being torn apart. They will have to find something else to rely on and push forward. They are young and have never experienced things like this before. Even in my time I did things I regretted."

Leo was right, there were many of those that had been affected by the loss of their comrades.

Walking down the hallway, Peter was looking at the gloves that he had taken off Paul.

Paul had asked for them back, but so far Peter had ignored his request and was happily testing them out. He had never used a weapon but these gloves suited him quite well. There was a time when playing the VR game power fighters he had tried multiple weapons but couldn't quite find the right one.

Peter mainly fought with his fists similar to Quinn, but Quinn also had many options to fight at range due to his shadow and blood abilities. Although the gloves wouldn't give him a big range, they were perfectly suited for his current fighting style and gave him an extra bit of power, especially against vampires.

Suddenly, he picked up the sound of sobbing coming from one of the rooms. It was a voice he recognised. He placed his head on the door for a few seconds. Deciding whether he should go in or not.

'Urgh, this is something Quinn would be better at...but he isn't here right now.' It wasn't that Peter was a completely unemotional person, but ever since his evolutions his emotions had become far more dull. Even now, he didn't feel much empathy personally, but was more aware that he should feel bad and try and cheer the person inside, as that was the proper thing to do.

"Surprise!" Peter tried to act cheerful, but his voice came out quite dull.

Rubbing her eyes, she looked up to see who it was.

"Oh Peter, I probably look horrible." Layla said as she was rubbing her eyes with the bed sheet.

It wasn't hard to guess why she was crying. Not long ago they had just lit a fire for those who had passed away, including Cia. The fact that Layla was currently under Cia's bed sheets was all the evidence one would need.

"You look the same as always." Peter said, not realising that this actually hurt Layla's feelings. If a girl thought she looked horrible, it would be a man's job to deny it, not confirm it.

But Layla was far too upset to even care, especially since it was Peter. Seeing Layla continue to sob was kinda annoying Peter, so he decided to say what was on his mind, whether it would help her or not.

"Layla, crying for the dead is fine. It's good to let out your emotions, but it will do nothing. You should focus on those that are alive like Quinn, and try to do what you can to make sure the same thing doesn't happen to him." Peter stated bluntly.

This had just caused the water works to come out from Layla even more. She was emotional not just because of her, but also due to the race of the vampire she was. It would amplify her feelings. Grabbing the pillow off the bed, she threw it towards Peter as hard as she could.

He didn't move and as it hit him on the face it fell to the floor.

"Would it make you feel better if I pretended I was hurt by that?" Peter asked.

"Just get out!" She screamed, and Peter was on his way to the door.

"Before I go, one more thing. Cia could see visions of the future, right? So if anything she should have been able to avoid her death. If she saw herself dying, she probably knew this was going to happen, so in a way this was her choice. If she saw you now, she might be thinking she made the wrong choice." Closing the door, Peter was gone and he shook his head a few times.

'Yeah, let's not try to do that again.' Peter thought.

Continuing on his way to where he was originally heading. Peter was now walking towards the research lab. During his spare time he enjoyed helping Logan out with his things, since their personalities allowed the two of them to get on well.

Neither of them liked talking about things, and Peter could stay up all night helping him. When he entered the research room, he could see Logan, checking up on Borden, trying to see if everything was okay with him.

The little guy was plastered with white circles all over his body, which were linked up to a computer screen. He looked to be fine. There was a little worry as it took him a while to wake up.

"Everything is registering okay on the computer. The equipment says you are good so I don't see any problems." Logan reported.

Still, Borden didn't seem happy about that answer and was deep in thought.

"Everything is okay, but it's not, is it? I'm not the way I used to be. I'm not even the same size. I know I have a short life span like all the other Dalki, but why can't I fight for longer than ten minutes?!" He shouted in anger.

This was something that Logan wasn't really clear on.

"Please Logan, I know you have a great mind. There's nobody else I can ask. I want you to make it so I can fight for longer than ten minutes, so I can bring out the same power as I had before. Isn't there anything you can do? I don't even care if it makes my life shorter. Alex got taken away, and Sil nearly died because I was too weak!"

Of course, this thought had run through Logan's mind many times, and there were things he wanted to try, but experiments were risky, potentially damaging or costing the life of a subject, especially without any prior research.

'Research...'

Then something came to mind. In the lab where Logan's parents had originally helped create the Dalki there should be information that might help. Given Logan's identity, he had access to the place. There was all the past work he needed that was performed by his parents on the Dalki, and maybe he could find something to help little Borden.

The question was at a time like this, could he really afford to leave this place?

Remembering the strength of the vampire that had attacked them, Borden had done a good job, yet it had been the time limit that had made him lose. If they had to go up against someone like that to save Alex and Quinn, they did indeed need more help on their side.

"There might be something we can do." Logan said with a smile. "Peter, you want to accompany us on a little journey outside?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 898: Turning into a monster

In the dark pitch black room, still tied up against the wall, Quinn was given a few seconds of relief before a familiar ding was sounded in his head.

[Quest complete]

Quinn received the message after the other families had retreated from the battle. However, he wasn't happy with the result. How could he be when he knew that his family had been attacked and he knew many of his family members perished?

With the system having displayed everything as red and green dots to him, he had been focused on saving as many of them as possible, yet the reality of the matter had only really hit him once he had felt the loss of the connection with one of his own.

The fact that he had no way to find out who had died, turned out to be a worse form of punishment than anything else they could have done to him in his current situation.

[Quest rewards will now be distributed]

[10,000 reputation points earned]

[New title, Great architect received]

[Building items from the reputation shop in the allocated zone will now take half the time. This also includes upgrades and repairs.]

The rewards were nice, the reputation points made up for what he had lost during the fight, and even the title was great. It seemed like this title could also be used in conjunction with his other one, since he needed the tenth leader to access the reputation store in the first place.

Not that it would be much of a problem, since Quinn could switch titles at any point in time without any hassle.

What he was more concerned about, was whether he would have to use those reputation points and rely on the title in the first place, because if he could help it, he wouldn't want another attack to happen while he was down underground locked up.

'What the hell am I still doing here? So what if I can't use Qi, so what if I can't use the shadow? Am I really going to wait and rot in here, hoping for the others to bail me out?!"

There were two options that Quinn still had up his sleeve. One of them was his knight summoning skill. He could bring Leo to where he was, and Leo would probably be strong enough to cut down the chains.

However, if Leo was in the middle of an important matter he wouldn't want to do that, same with Paul. The other problem would be getting out of this area. There was the special lock on the front door, which with the two of them, they might be able to break, but it wouldn't be quiet and the ones above wouldn't just let them out the front door.

This was another reason why Quinn hadn't attempted to leave. Leaving in a way was admitting to his captors that he was guilty, but since nothing had happened to him for so long, Quinn could only deduce that they either lacked evidence against him or that it was not solid enough.

'At least the vampires are fair in that sense, even if they get the evidence through illegal means.' Quinn thought.

But there was a second method for Quinn to escape. Something he had figured out not too long ago. He still had one power source on him left he could use, his blood energy. The vampires that would come in so often had been feeding him blood and it was to the point where Quinn's blood bank had also been filled.

It wasn't like he could use his blood skills to get out of here. He could hardly move his hands to perform a blood swipe, or any of his other skills but there was something he could do.

Suzan's ability was strange, it prevented him from regaining any of his shadow powers and it appeared to have done the same to his Qi as well. However, after experiencing it a few times, Quinn came to the conclusion that it was actually more like it kept certain things in the exact condition he was when the needles were placed inside of him.

Unlike with the other form of energies, the feeding of blood did allow him to restore his blood energy.

He closed his eyes and started to focus. Looking at the ball of energy that would usually be filled with Qi, it was empty. The red energy was flowing around him as usual, and even if that wasn't enough Quinn had the blood bank to back him up.

'Let's give it a try.' Quinn thought, as he started to use his Blood control to move the energy around his body. He did so while pouring it into the Qi ball slowly, bit by bit.

[Your bloodl.u.s.t is increasing]

[Your bloodl.u.s.t is increasing]

'Quinn what are you doing?' Vincent asked, stunned, as he saw Quinn's body slightly changing. His skin was tightening and his muscles were building as his fat was being eaten away.

'Have you forgotten what I told you? Doing this could be how you turn into a Bloodsucker! Even if you can escape there is a good chance that they will try to kill you as you escape from here before you even get any proof!'

'Don't...worry Vincent.' Quinn replied while grunting out loud at the changes of his body.

He didn't fill up the blood in his body straight away. Instead, he was placing it on the edge, each time he felt his sanity slip a little and his mind start to go blank, he would move the energy out a little stopping him from turning.

When his body got used to it, he would push it further adding more blood in. He didn't mind what state his body had transformed into a Bloodsucker. He wanted to do that so he could have the strength to break out of here, but he wanted to also have a clear state of mind.

'I know it's possible from what Leo told me, and if someone else can do it, it means I should be able to!' Quinn grunted again as some of his hair from his head fell out.

It was a difficult stage to keep because one needed to be self aware of themselves the most, if he pushed it just a little over, then there was a chance he would completely transform into a mindless beast.

By this point, he had made it so his body was already starting to change, but was unsure how long it would take.

'Quinn, there are footsteps, someone is coming.'

Hearing that noise, Quinn didn't want to alert them to his plan, so he quickly moved all of the blood energy away from where his Qi would reside. His body started to go back to the way it used to be.

However, when looking at the cuffs on the wall, Quinn could see that one of them had moved very slightly off the wall.

'Looks like my new plan might work out after all, but I also need to think about what I do after. Do I go to Bryce? Or do I head to the tenth family and try to get my family out of the Vampire World?'

Without information, it was a hard decision to make.

The door started to open, and this time there were a few more Royal Guards that had come to visit him than usual. He thought the timing was a bit strange as they had been consistent with the times when posting him to give him blood.

Quinn had only met the clown once, thankfully and never saw them again after.

"Set it up." The guard ordered, and the guards quickly moved in with somebody that Quinn couldn't quite make out.

The room Quinn was in was large, and they had gone up against the same wall but were around ten meters apart from where he was. The sound of a few clangs was heard here and there and when they finally moved away, Quinn could see that they had tied someone up against the wall just like him.

"Alex!" Quinn shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 899: Behind everything

Up until the very last second, Alex had been wondering whether it was the right thing to give himself up. After all, in a way everyone in the tenth family had been dragged into a fight to protect him.

Would they forgive him, once they found out? Would they blame him for being selfish having made this decision on his own?

Would they understand what he was thinking at the time? Perhaps sympathising with how scared he was allowing that strange vampire to take him away from his friends and family, unaware whether he would see them ever again?

Ultimately, the reason why he had decided to go along with the powerful vampire was because he didn't want Logan to get hurt. Or anyone else for that matter. Before the vampire had entered the facility they stood a good chance, but after witnessing what he had done to Borden, he knew that even if Logan and him teamed up it would be useless.

If the outcome was bound to be the same either way, wasn't it for the best to at least save those next to him?

A few seconds later after he had begged the vampire to leave the others alone in exchange for his life, Alex had only been able to see the vampire sigh and nod, before he felt a pain at the back of his head, and his vision had gone black.

By the time he woke up, he understood that he had been knocked unconscious, though he was unsure for how long. The strangest thing was that when Alex opened his eyes again he found himself in a familiar looking room, yet at the same time something seemed slightly off.

'The walls, a throne... am I in another castle?' Alex thought.

Soon, the figure that had brought him here stood over him once again blocking his line of sight. Out of instinct, Alex scurried away, a little like a little scared cat.

"Ha, Ha, ha!" Remus laughed out loud. "That's right, this is how things should be. You're a pathetic being, just like everyone else from your damned family."

Surprised, Alex noticed that he wasn't tied up or anything. When he looked back the reason why became obvious. The man before him didn't care if Alex tried to escape, he would just bring him back in a matter of seconds.

"What...what do you want from me?" Alex asked nervously. He was trying to act brave, but he felt like he might pass out from his own nerves at any second.

"What do I want from you?" Remus pointed at himself with a look as if it was a stupid question to ask. "I am only doing what I have been asked, you are best

asking them over there." He tilted his head, and it was only then that Alex noticed there was one more person in the room.

'If this is one of the other castles, then that must be one of the leaders.' Alas, Alex had been kept inside the tenth family's castle for the entire of the trip for obvious reasons. As such, he had no idea what the other leaders looked like so he could only guess.

"You've done a great job, Great Ancestor, their family turned out to be more troublesome than I thought they would be." The leader bowed lightly.

"You can say that again." Remus scoffed. "I thought our original vampire bloodline was supposed to get weaker with each generation, not stronger. Yet somehow, their family is filled with extraordinary existences."

"You should thank your lucky stars that I didn't destroy the whole castle down there and then. That place is only filled with bad memories. Don't expect me to hold back next time. If I ever go near that place again, I won't be able to stop myself from eradicating the entire family and their castle!"

Hearing these words, Alex knew he was serious, he could see it in the vampire's eyes. For some reason when speaking about the tenth family, he had a deep hatred for them.

'Did Quinn do something to him to piss him off? No, the other one just called him an ancestor, so maybe it was something a previous leader did?"

"Noted. As promised, I will pay you back once all of this is over." The leader replied respectfully.

Analysing when the two were speaking to each other. Alex noticed that one didn't speak like the other was less than them, instead it sounded more like they respected this person. It made him wonder if both of them were leaders of a vampire family.

'This could work, I have to try what I can, but maybe I can turn them against each other?' He naively thought, but he had already been captured and since they hadn't killed him yet he should have still some use to them.

"Hey, you're stronger than them, right? In that case why are you listening to what they have to say? You should do what you want! I don't know what the tenth family did to you, but there is a new leader now and maybe you two can strike a deal." It took a lot of courage for Alex to say those words, and not hearing a response from either one of them was killing him.

"Nice try, boy. However, I will NEVER work with one of them. Not after what they have done to me. You're correct that I am stronger than them, but I know how to repay a favour. They've done something that couldn't be done by any of the other families."

"What your family took away they brought back, and they have given me a chance to get rid of every single one of your members. Luckily, you get the privilege of hearing about it." Remus said, as he started to laugh and left the room, leaving Alex alone with the leader.

The question was, what were they going to do with him now. What came as a surprise to Alex, was he was handed over to Bryce in the end, and eventually ended up put in the cell with Quinn.

Alex had just finished telling the tale of what had happened. How those in the tenth had been attacked because of what was used on Dwight. How they were after him and everything after he had been taken.

"The mysterious vampire that you saw, the one that entered the castle. Can you describe him?" Quinn asked.

"He had quite long black hair flowing to his shoulders, his clothes were all tattered but I don't know if they were old or because he was in a fight, but the thing that stood out most was his twirly mustache." Alex described.

From the description alone, there weren't any of the leaders that fitted that exact bill, but there were a few that came close.

'Quinn, I'm not entirely sure what Alex said is correct, but from the sounds of it, the person he was describing is one of the Originals.'

'One of the originals are you sure?'

'Yes, and not just any original, but the original belonging to the eighth family. If it's true, then what Alex felt and the words he heard might be true after all. Do you remember what I told you about Jim? How he had experimented on one of the original vampires, well that was the eighth.' Vincent explained.

'Wait, but didn't you say he had died?!'

'Yes, but I don't know the full details either, of what actually happened, only what we have been told, but if it is true, then his grudge against the tenth family will run deep. Very deep.'

Once again, something that was completely unrelated to Quinn, but to those before him was bringing pain to him and his friends. He couldn't imagine the experiments Jim must have run on the original for him to be so angry.

"One more question, would you be able to describe the leader in the castle that you saw?" Quinn asked.

"Of course, I didn't get a good look at her because she had a black veil covering her face." Alex said. "But, it was obvious it was a girl, because she wore a big fluffy black dress."

Out of all the leaders, Quinn only knew of one leader that wore the same dress every time he saw her. It looked like one of his guesses was right.

It was Cindy, and they were for some reason, working with the eighth original leader.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 900: Set in stone

A day had passed since Silver had returned with Leo, and since the fighting at the tenth family's castle had stopped. Nobody else had come to bother them since.

Frustrated about no news, Silver already decided to ask for another meeting with King Bryce. After the information she had given him yesterday, there should have been an announcement or something should have happened, but there was nothing.

Were it not for all the strange things that had occurred one would have called it a peaceful day in the vampire settlement. However, it was precisely the lack of anything happening that Silver thought it to be strange that such an important matter was moving so slowly, especially given that it was the new King's problem.

Up to this point, Bryce had been rash when deciding to attack the tenth family, but when it was other matters, suddenly things took longer?

To her surprise though, Bryce had immediately accepted a meeting with her, which was why she was currently standing outside the door to the King's throne room.

It was a place hardly used, since his predecessor's health had him remain in his old chambers most of the time, and leaders and knights mostly met up in the council room. But for Bryce, it had become his favourite place as the new King.

Opening the door, Kyle and Prima came out. Kyle gave a quick glance at Silver, and she realised that she hadn't bowed down to show her respect.

"He says you can go in to see him." Prima informed her, while walking past.

'These are the new Royal knights? It's as if they think everyone should give them respect due to their position rather than earn it. I can't believe Bryce was the one who had been elected as King.'

But walking in those doors, she was wondering if Cindy would have made for a better choice, given everything that was going on, maybe an outsider like Quinn would have been best. Just like last time, Bryce was sitting casually on his throne as if he didn't have anything to worry about in the world.

Even though there was an assassin on the loose, someone working with the Bloodsuckers, and the Absolute blood book had been taken away.

'You seem way too calm.' Silver wanted to tell him, but she knew it would be counterproductive.

"I can guess why you are here, you want to know why I haven't done anything, correct?" Bryce asked her directly, not mincing words.

Silver was on one knee in front of Bryce, paying him the respect a King should deserve but there was something different about him. He had always been a leader exuding a lot of pressure on others, but somehow after his election, he seemed to give off even more pressure than before.

"Indeed. With the information I have given you, Your Majesty, we know now that there is an original leader out there somewhere, and we know it to be the ancestor of the eighth family. As such, I highly suspect their current leader Jill to be somehow involved in the matter!"

"I brought you back her Vampire knight and thought there would have been some progress by now, or at least some action taken. And due to the other thing we found, it should be safe to assume that neither Quinn nor the Blood fairy he was keeping had been used on Dwight."

Bryce started to stroke his long white beard for a while, before finally answering.

"Young people always seem to be in a rush these days. The person behind this has been cautious and due to the eighth leader's ability I'm sure they already know everything that you or I know as well. Which means they are always one step ahead of us."

"Think back, when you thought you had discovered an illegal in the Human World, did you capture the illegal and bring them back straight away? No, you went on to search for the one who had created the illegal. I am taking the same steps here, so taking in Jill now will mean nothing. Instead I intend to use her to lead us to the rest."

Judging from his words, it seemed like Bryce was making his own moves in the background. He had always been sneaky as the first leader, and now it seemed like he could be even sneaker as king.

"And what will you do with Quinn and the tenth family?" Silver asked, concerned for her brother who was a part of the tenth family as well.

"There isn't much I can do. Even if Quinn wasn't behind the killing of Royal knight Dwight, we now have proof that he had indeed been keeping a Blood fairy. I was thinking of using him. If we plan his execution for plotting against the Vampire council, it will make whoever is behind this feel safe."

Although Silver wasn't particularly close with those in the tenth apart from her brother and Leo, these words angered her, her fist was tensing up as she thought back to that incident that had harmed people unnecessary, yet Bryce didn't care as long as he got what he wanted.

"Are you upset with my decision? The tenth family will become a problem in the future for my plans, do you not think so as well? They are mostly made up of humans, that stupid boy actually shared the ability of the Punisher with many of

them. If I simply leave them be I can see a future in which they may be those that wish to bring the Punishers. I won't get rid of the tenth family altogether, though. They are still needed, except those with the shadow ability, so don't worry your brother will be safe."

"Fine." Silver replied quite aggressively. "But if that punishment is acceptable for him, then an even worse punishment should be dealt to those that are really responsible! I know you do things by the book your majesty, so I have to ask. The knight I brought you earlier, were you able to extract information to prove that Jill is involved?"

This was important, just like with Quinn they couldn't prove he had killed Dwight so they couldn't execute him. Now they were going to use the fact that he had a Blood fairy as grounds to order his execution. As for Jill, there was no proof she was involved with working with the Bloodsuckers, only that her Vampire knight did. The leader would be punished for not keeping an eye on their knights but nothing serious would happen to them.

"The knight you brought back... their information was useless. We weren't able to get a single thing from them." Bryce answered.

"What?!" Silver shouted and nearly stood on her feet. She was so stunned. After all the work her and Leo had gone through to make sure to bring her back alive, they had found nothing.

There was one thing Bryce could do to her, and that was use the influence skill to force information out of her, but now he was stating they could find nothing. It would make sense if she had no memories like her brother Fex and Kazz but this didn't make any sense.

"She is under the influence of someone more powerful than I, most likely the original you have mentioned to have found, unless there are more of them awake. It could also be by whoever obtained the Absolute blood book and the blood of all the leaders, which means they could have awoken any of the previous leaders. ... I have told you too much already. It's time for you to go. Leave matters in my hands, and let this be a warning for you to not get involved."

Leaving the room, Silver once again felt dissatisfied with everything she had heard. She wanted to fight for Quinn, after he had saved her brother the last time, and after Leo had helped her, but she had failed to speak up.

However, the worst news was yet to come. A few days later a meeting was held, which led to King Bryce making an announcement.

A date had been set for both Quinn, and Alex' execution.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 901: Stuck in place

No news, no updates, nothing was heard. It was as if the tenth family had been set outside as an outcast. It was clear there had to be something going on, and Paul was starting to wonder if this was a tactic to put them on edge. The longer they felt this way, they would eventually tire themselves out, and maybe that's when they would return with another attack. The only good thing was that the attack hadn't happened yet. They waited a few days and finally, something did happen.

None other than Prima, the new Royal knight, had been sent to deliver a message first-hand at the north gate. He had been sent alone. The towers weren't activated, but even Sam, who was standing at the front, didn't know how they worked.

'Can it tell if he's planning to attack us or something?' Sam thought.

"Please bring me to your vampire knights straight away," Prima demanded without stating the reason why he was there. However, Sam knew not to make them angry at this moment and started to escort him along with Dennis.

The two of them kept an eye on him the whole way, it was out of fear after having just been attacked, and Prima didn't like it. As a Royal knight, he should have been respected, but the eyes of the others were looking at him like he was an enemy.

'I should kill all of these misfits on the spot!' Prima thought, but the words of the King, Bryce were in his head, and he wasn't to cause a scene and deliver the message.

Eventually, they had sent Prima to a meeting room that had been created recently. It had two offices inside that were placed opposite each other. On one of them, it was filled with paperwork. This was where both Paul and Leo would work. It was obvious from a look which desk belonged to who.

"I am here to inform you that a decision has been made," Prima announced.  
"Quinn, the tenth leader, along with the one known as Alex, the blood fairy, will be executed at midday tomorrow. Those in the tenth family are to remain in their inner castle area and are not allowed to attend the event. Those that do not comply with this rule will be punished."

"After the execution has been done, there will be an investigation into the tenth family to decide who is directly involved with Dwight's death from the tenth family. Attempting to leave will also be punished. A group of Royal guards will be placed around the castle to make sure no one leaves this area. They have been given permission to use force if an attempt is to be made."

The terms that had been given were quite ridiculous, but both Paul and Leo knew that saying anything was pointless. The decision had been made, and complaining to the Royal knight would mean nothing.

"Does this start from this very moment?" Paul asked.

"There is already a group keeping an eye on you to see if you are to leave this place. The Royal guards will be here soon. Make sure your towers and statues don't attempt to attack the Royal guards. Otherwise there will be trouble."

With that said, it looked like Prima didn't even want to give them any more information, as he was already on his way out. Paul was just thankful the others weren't there to hear what was said. Especially Peter, as he would have lashed out on the spot, possibly trying to fight with Prima.

Another worry was the towers. They didn't know how they worked and were worried that they could possibly attack the Royal guards as they approached.

After much discussion between the two of them, Paul and Leo decided that they would call all those that were close to Quinn inside the usual dining room. They thought about not informing them, but they wanted to know how they felt so they could get an idea about what to do.

However, when everyone entered the room, there was one problem.

"Is there a reason why Logan and Peter aren't here?" Paul asked.

"I couldn't find them anywhere in the castle. Maybe they are somewhere in the inner castle area?" Sam replied.

"Oh, those two said they were going outside to look for some lab or something, outside the vampire settlement. They don't know when they will be back." Sil casually replied, as if it wasn't a problem at all.

"What!" Paul shouted, stunned. Although, he didn't know if it was good timing or not. If they had tried to leave now, it would be impossible, but he was now shaking at the thought of them returning and finding out about Quinn.

Knowing the two, they would do whatever it cost to stop the execution.

Hearing that the two of them were going to a lab, Leo could only think of one place. The place they had discovered a while ago in the mountains. While there, they didn't seem to have any troubles, and Peter was strong, but still, there would always be some type of worry.

"We can try and go look for them?" Layla suggested, seeing Paul shaking his head.

"That's the problem. We can't," Paul replied. Just moments ago, he had received a message from Ashley, who had remained at the gates. The Royal guards had arrived to keep them in check. But they had also informed him that just before, they had a couple of visitors that had entered that should be joining them soon.

Paul explained to the others what they had been told by Prima, and the room fell silent as they were struggling about what to think.

"So, if we try to save Quinn, it basically means we are going against the king? Fighting all the leaders?" Layla asked. "But what choice do we have? They are basically telling us they are going to kill Quinn."

From the last conversation they had, Paul already knew everyone would fight trying to save Quinn. In a way, they also knew that if they didn't, their lives might become worse, and death would be a better option. As ex humans and with no leader, they could only imagine how they would be treated.

"That may not be the case." A voice said, entering the room. The doors swung open, and two people were seen. It was the guest Paul had been expecting, Silver, along with her little brother Fex, who was darting his eyes around the room randomly.

"Fex!" Layla said. "You're alive and look great!."

But it was clear that Fex had no clue who Layla was or anyone else in the room.

"Hey, everyone, I'm sorry if I don't know any of you? You know, I kind of have memory problems, but please treat me like you did before, and we can be cool, right?" He laughed nervously.

Although Fex coming back was a moment to be celebrated, their minds were still on the most important matter at hand, and wanted to know what Silver meant by her words.

"I had a meeting with Bryce, I don't think he is planning to kill Quinn at this execution. At least not yet anyway. Before that, he wants to find the real person that killed Dwight, and he also knows that there might be a bigger threat coming our way."

"A bigger threat?" Sam said. "Did something happen?"

Leo started to move and headed over to where Silver was standing. The others naturally moved out of Leo's way.

"Haven't we been around each other long enough to know you don't have to do that around me?" Leo commented.

Some of their faces went red out of embarrassment. Those from the cursed ship didn't know Leo very well, and seeing his eyes like they were all the time, just did what they had done out of instinct.

"I guess you already told Bryce everything we have found out, which means it's time for us to tell all of you," Leo explained. "The ones framing Quinn, it seems they have been preparing for this for a long time."

Silver nodded in agreement.

"We will explain what happened to us in the few days we were left, and once you know this, we can make our plan."

The story both Leo and Silver were about to tell, was during the few days back, when they met up with the original eighth leader and what they had discovered that had held them up for so long.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 902: A vampire god

After having just saved Fex, the group were on their way back, running as fast as they could through the forest. This time, not caring what type of noise they made. The main reason being, right now, inside the large box that was being carried on Silver's back was one of the eighth vampire knights. Hopefully, this would give them the answers they were looking for about who had attacked Fex and Kazz.

However, the group were currently stuck in the forest, having met with someone they never thought they would see. Fex and Nate were surrounded by around eight Bloodsuckers. Each one of them contained strength that surpassed their own, speed that matched theirs. To get out of this one, they couldn't just rely on their power alone and would need to use their heads a little.

The main problem was the original vampire that appeared with them, named Remus. Silver was on her knees, unwilling to fight someone that her eyes were never meant to look at. From the time she was born, she had been told that their very existence, what they were, was due to these people.

She felt like if THEY wished their life was meant to not exist, then it was something that was meant to be. In a way, the original vampires were like vampire gods, and what punishment would a vampire get for harming a said god?

The good thing for her, there was a man who didn't care who was in front of him. He strived to get stronger day by day, and he was ready to slice down whoever stood in his path, and Leo had done that very thing.

Lacing his sword with the second stage of Qi, Leo was able to cut off Remus' hand.

"What kind of sword is that!" Remus spoke while grasping the end of his wound.

The sword was unable to cut through his hand until this point, so why would it be able to now? The reason was due to the way Leo had used the second stage of Qi. The second stage was a casting over one's weapons rather than an infusion to give it strength.

However, with Leo's ability, he had more control than anyone. He was able to change the shape of the casting to such a degree it was as if he had covered his sword with another sword made out of Qi. It was almost a pure Qi strike that Remus had received.

What was even more shocking though, was how the wound wasn't healing like it would before. Remus would be able to grow his entire arm back if something like this had happened to him, but it wasn't happening now.

Down onward, from the middle of his forearm, the cut had been made and his hand was laying there on the floor. He could feel the fairy blood and another substance flowing through his body. First, Remus removed the fairy blood with his blood

control, but his wound still didn't heal. Thinking fast, Remus decided to use his other hand to slice off his arm from the shoulder downward.

It fell to the floor, and soon a whole new limb was seen growing from his body.

'This healing speed, it reminds me of Peter.' Leo thought. The strange thing was, when Peter healed his body, it would take up the energy inside his body.

Eventually, that energy would run out, and it would need to be replenished with human flesh.

When Leo saw Remus regrow the arm, it looked like no energy was used at all.

"You have an interesting body?" Leo commented.

"Interesting?" Remus repeated. "No one would speak of that if they knew the curse we carried!" Remus shouted as he held out both hands, and started to fire out blood bullets towards Leo.

With his sword, covered in the Qi. He was strong enough to deflect each of the bullets, and after eight had been fired and had been deflected, Leo could see that the fingers that had fired were in the middle of healing. Shooting out the ninth bullet from one hand and the tenth blood bullet from the other, knowing these would be the last shots while he needed time to recover, Leo made sure to change his second stage Qi from a cutting form, to a grabbing form. When hitting the bullets this time, he was able to spin his body to add extra power in his step and hitting it with the side of his sword, he grabbed the bullets making them appear as if they were hovering when touching his sword, and swung them back, sending them towards Remus.

They had hit his body, but he absorbed them like a sponge seeing with no harm done, other than a few holes in the clothes he was wearing. Soon though, Leo was upon him, and swung his blades aiming for his hands once again.

Remus could see the movements and pulled back, but his hands seemed to be dragging behind as if they weren't listening to him.

'No, that's not right. It's as if my hand is moving towards the blade!' Soon his fingers were being diced up By Leo, falling off like sausages to the floor. Leo had used his soul weapon to make Remus' body move in different ways, the person in front of him right now, wasn't as strong as Rowa.

"I know you can heal from this, but can you heal quicker than it takes me to strike at your heart?" Leo asked, staying as calm as ever.

"You are annoying!" Remus shouted, making a fist even without his fingers, and suddenly, his arm was chucked back, recoiling off in the air. He fired off a blood cannon. A large red ball of aura came out from his fists and this was something Leo couldn't block with his sword, it was too close to spread his second stage Qi.

Hitting him, he was chucked back, and sent skidding across the floor. The blood cannon was a large ball of red energy. It wasn't sharp like the blood swipe. He had managed to block some of it with his sword, but not without taking a large blow to his stomach. On the outside, his skin was barely hurt, but his internal organs felt like they had all been ruptured in some way, and the blood coming out from Leo's mouth was proof of it.

Nate, and Fex had their hands full, fighting the Bloodsuckers. Due to their speed and strength, the two of them were staying close together. It was only thanks to a combination of them both they had managed to survive but in total they had taken out only one of the Bloodsuckers' and soon Nate's shadow Mc points would run out, as the Bloodsuckers strength was strong.

"What are you doing, Silver!" Fex shouted, looking at his sister, who still hadn't moved. "You said you were my sister, right? You know, when you told me that and I saw you fighting against that other person, I thought you were really cool. I thought I can't believe I have a sister like this, but now, you're just going to stand there and let that man kill us all. You have to do something! Help him! Right now, you're a disappointment!"

Maybe the words of others wouldn't have gotten through to her with the state she was in, but hearing the words from her brother, the one she deeply cared for, and the one who she worried most about what he would think of her, had hit her a certain way.

There was also another thing that gave her confidence, seeing the fight between Leo and Remus, this man was no God. When Leo was close with his blade, he had a fear in his eyes. A god wouldn't show fear.

She stood up from where she was standing and grabbed the doll with her strings, ready to join in the fight. However, turning around, she soon saw that both of Remus' hands had healed and another blood cannon was coming her way.

The only thing she could do was place the doll in front of herself, and block the attack. As soon as it hit the doll, its limbs were torn apart, removed from the threads of string that tied them together, and its torso was sent hitting her own body with the blood cannon. The powerful attack was felt in her gut, and the wind was knocked out of her.

"You are all idiots, this could have been a lot easier," Remus said, now having fully recovered, looking like he hadn't been in a fight at all, apart from his clothing looking different to before.

Both of his arms were ready again, and firing out another blood canon would finish the two of them off.

Getting up off the ground, Leo was able to use Qi to strengthen his organs, so he could continue on the fight. For how long while they were still heavily damaged, he didn't know.

'This is going to be a hard fight alone, but I don't think it's one I will lose.' Leo thought.

"Guys!" Fex cried, but no matter how much he wanted to help, he and Nate were stuck in the middle of the Bloodsuckers, but at that moment, black mist started to appear from Fex's earring. Something that had never happened before.

The mist was starting to take portal-like shape, and as two Bloodsuckers jumped towards them, a large claw as big as a human body appeared, slicing the two of them in half. Out from the black portal was none other than the Boneclaw.

"What the hell is that!" Fex shouted, never seeing a beast like that before, and it had appeared from his earring of all things. "Was that me, did I do that! Maybe it's like the bull? Hey Bonney, save them!"

The Boneclaw looked towards Fex, with its hollow dead eyes. It made him realise straight away that he was not the one in charge of it.

"Why, why is the Boneclaw belonging to him here!" Remus said, his body trembling in horror at the thought of who it belonged to.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 903: Boneclaw's promise

The instant the Boneclaw had appeared, it was as if everyone in front of Remus had disappeared. His only focus was on the strange creature that had seemingly sprung out of nowhere.

The one who had realised this the most, was Leo. He could tell by the change in his aura as it flickered in response. The only thing he didn't understand was why? How would it come to be that these two knew each other? However, Leo wasn't going to waste this opportunity. While Remus was unfocused, they could use this time to recover.

He quickly opened the lid of the flask that had been given to each of them and started to drink the blood inside. Quinn was cautious about them going away in the first place and wouldn't let them leave without taking one, not that Leo wouldn't have. Silver, upon seeing Leo doing this, did the same. Soon their bodies were healing on the go.

Silver, now no longer hesitating, knew what she had to do. The only reason why she had survived was due to the robust puppet, but now her father's gift was seemingly destroyed. Stretching out her fingertips, a string from the ends appeared and started to attach to the torn body parts from the Doll all around.

Soon the body parts started moving towards the torso piece. With some quick hand movements, the Doll was nearly in the same condition as before and could be used in the same way as well.

'It's a good thing this thing isn't alive. If it gets destroyed again, I will just rebuild it!'

While the two of them were preparing for a second round with Remus, both Fex and Nate were staring at the strange creature in front of them. They still had all the Bloodsuckers surrounding them. Now though, they looked small. The Boneclaw itself was slightly larger than the Bloodsuckers, and its limbs and claws were nearly three times longer as it touched the floor.

"Hey, that thing's on our side, right?" Fex whispered over to Nate.

"Our side, does it look like it's on our side? And besides, weren't you the one that summoned it with your vampire mumbo jumbo magic?" Nate answered quite frantically. The reason being, he was hoping the strange beast that had just sliced one of the Bloodsuckers was on their side.

In an instant, the Boneclaw started to enter a black portal, and soon a claw was seen coming out towards one of the Bloodsuckers. It tried to hit the claw back, but its long sharp fingers just sliced through the Bloodsucker's hands, and with the

Boneclaw's other arm, it sliced upward, cutting the Bloodsucker into four separate parts like butter.

The great weakness of the Bloodsuckers were that they didn't have much health. If there was a vampire or beast that could overpower it and manage to hit it, then they were easy to deal with.

Although the Boneclaw's movements with its legs weren't fast, its long hands were quick as ever. With its ability to teleport to any position it wanted to in a short area, it didn't need to be quick on its feet.

Soon, the others saw this became the outcome, as one by one the Bloodsuckers were ripped apart. The Boneclaw teleported to each one, finishing them off in one or two blows. It didn't take long, but the Bloodsuckers that were proving to be a threat for both Nate and Fex, were no longer a threat.

Turning around, it then started to look towards Remus. Its hollow eyes stared at him, and slowly it started to walk over.

'The two young boys won't be much help in this fight, but maybe the creature that Quinn carries can help us.' Leo thought.

However, there was no way for them to communicate with it, Leo would just have to be happy for now that it was on their side.

Now knowing that Remus had a few tricks up his sleeve, Leo went for a different approach. He swung his blade out, firing off a blood swipe. Silver did the same but not getting closer and tried to get her Doll to charge in.

She knew her strings wouldn't be strong enough to hold him, so she could only rely on her skills controlling the Doll.

Remus avoided Leo's strike, but he decided to take on the Doll's six limbs which each held a sword in its hands. He hardened the outside of his body with the blood hardening skill and took the impact head on.

The Doll was stronger than expected, as a few cuts appeared on his body, but this was never the goal in the first place, because right behind him, the Boneclaw had teleported and was striking down its claw on top of his head.

Moving over to the side, Remus allowed for the claw to go through the side of his neck, but after digging in a few inches, it had stopped there.

The group thought their three pronged attack had worked, but instead, a smile had appeared on Remus' face.

"You are not as strong as you were before. Why is that? Is it because your master isn't here? Is this all the energy you can muster while on your own!" Remus

shouted, and as if reacting to his shout, a red energy could be seen emanating from the wound, which had completely destroyed the Boneclaw's claw.

The arm has been hit and could no longer be seen. It was leaving behind a trail of mist and nothing else. It backed away, teleporting elsewhere, but Leo didn't let up. He now was constantly throwing out blood strikes. He was being conservative before, for fear it would use up the blood in his body, but if he didn't try something, they could all very well end up dying.

Holding out his hands, Remus started to move them slightly, and at the same time, it looked as if the blood swipes moved as well. They eventually were thrown off course, and without Remus moving they crashed into the trees and floor around him.

"You have no blood control, do you? Are you really a vampire knight?" Remus mocked.

The doll Silver was controlling once again tried to attack Remus. This time, he didn't use the blood hardening and allowed for the blades to pierce his body, creating several cuts all over from head to toe.

Then, just like with the wound the Boneclaw had made, from all the wounds themselves they started to glow a faint red. The colour got brighter and brighter, eventually letting off a flash of red.

The others turned away at the energy. Leo went over to the other two in the Tenth family spreading out his Qi, hoping to shield them from what might come.

When the red aura and light dimmed, the Doll this time wasn't just torn apart. It looked like it had been ripped into a million small little pieces.

'Our family's sacred treasure was destroyed just like that.' Silver thought, as she looked down at the pieces of the Doll.

The situation was bad, and it looked like the original leader had another trick up his sleeve still.

'If I use my soul weapon, maybe I can take some of his energy and redirect it into me. With the Qi control, I should be able to make sure I don't take too much of his energy to turn me into one of those beasts, but maybe that's what's needed to defeat him.' Leo thought.

He was thinking of anything to get out of the situation they were in.

At that moment, the Boneclaw was seen standing next to Fex. It looked at him as if it wanted to say something, but no words had left its mouth until one had entered his head.

'Master, master!' A high pitched voice was heard in Fex's head. It was none other than his little companion known as Ham. 'The Boneclaw, it says it wants you to call all the others to where you are?'

"What, and why would that be of any help?" Fex argued.

With its hand that was uninjured, the Boneclaw lifted one single finger and started to draw a circle. Following its long finger, a purple line could be seen and when the line connected to its original starting point, what looked like a dark portal had opened.

It was one no one had seen before though, and a colour unrecognisable to the others.

Seeing this and thinking that the Boneclaw was at least on his side, he decided to call out to the others.

"Everyone, get over here, come on quickly!" Fex shouted, and he was the first one to jump through the strange portal.

Silver, picking up the large box, followed after her brother, soon running in, along with Nate and the last one, Leo.

"Where do you think you're going!" Remus shouted. The cuts on his body still hadn't healed, but it looked like he was using his own blood to somehow power himself. He formed it into a blood net, and soon threw it out towards the portal everyone had jumped through.

Seeing this, Leo resorted to one last thing. He sliced the ground beneath him quickly into a square and continued to run forward. Then when he was at the top half of the square he had cut, he slammed his foot down to create a wall between the two of them.

The net sliced through the wall crumpling it, and when the wall fell, Remus could see no one. The others had escaped, the question was, where had they gone?

On the other side of the portal the Boneclaw had created, they were all looking at the area they were in. It was one none of them had ever seen before.

"It can't be..." Silver said. "Are we in the...familiar world?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 904: A strange new world

The energy sensed from Remus was building up, and Leo could feel it. He knew that Remus still had a lot left in the tank even after fighting and using so many abilities. Although Leo and Silver weren't hurt, it was hard to imagine them winning without getting seriously hurt in the process or losing something of importance.

However, Leo was clear what their goal was, it was to bring back the vampire knight in one piece, not to defeat Remus. If he was on his own, then maybe he would use everything he had in his arsenal to try to defeat the person in front of him, only risking his own life. He had even considered that for a second, but the problem was what that would cost?

Which was why, when he saw an out to their situation being created by the mysterious Boneclaw. He decided to take it. The energy that was coming from the portal was one similar to the familiar's. It wasn't a portal that he was used to or had seen before himself either. Knowing the creature belonged to Quinn, he thought it would do them no harm, or at least he hoped.

When each of them went through, it worked the same as the other teleporters they had used. An odd feeling that only lasted for a few seconds before they were chucked into whatever was on the other side. This was when they found themselves in a place that was unrecognisable to any planet they had ever been on. They rubbed their eyes as they looked upon everything around them.

Everything was covered in a green and blue hue that seemed to stem from the sky. It was reflecting onto the trees and the ground they stood on. Large mountainous terrains were spread everywhere, while the mystical colours could be seen floating about. Creatures were flying through the strange giant clouds that seemed to all be formed together, yet moved in a way that felt like it was its own.

The creatures they could see, all were lit strangely as if they were surrounded by a glowing substance. It all seemed mystical. What stood out the most though, was what was floating about everywhere through the air. There were glowing balls the same size as a snowball. Millions surrounded them and spread out all over the place as far as they could see.

Keeping an eye on the strange slow moving balls. It looked like when the creatures got close to these strange balls, that they would absorb them into their body. Temporally giving their body a greater glow.

There was only one person who had the faintest idea where they could be, and that was Silver. Something she had studied, but she had only heard words being described of this place, so she was unsure.

"This can't be, is this the Familiar world?" She blurted out, trying to match it to what she had read in the past. Something that was discovered long ago by the tenth

family's original leader. He had written it down in his journal describing the place he had been to, but no one else had been to it, so others thought he may have made it up. Still, it was something that was gone through with students when learning about familiars.

It was clear now that this place really did exist, and for some reason, the Boneclaw was able to bring them all here.

"The familiar world? Is this another planet?" Nate asked.

"If what I read is correct, this is not another planet. It's almost as if we are in another universe different to our own, but also connected. This is where the familiars like the Boneclaw you saw before come from. This is where they rest and contracts are formed making a bridge between our two worlds." Silver explained, although she didn't feel like she was the best expert to explain this, for she really didn't know what this place was really either.

"If the Boneclaw could have done this, why didn't it do this from the beginning to hide us then?" Fex asked.

That was a question, that none of them knew and they wondered where even the Boneclaw was.

"Hey!" Nate shouted. "Where are you!"

Nate realised that to get out of this place, they would most likely need the Boneclaw to create a portal back as well, but the Boneclaw was nowhere to be seen.

"What are you doing!" Silver shouted at Nate. "Are you an idiot, what if a familiar comes and attacks us? Not all of them are followers of vampires. In fact some of them love to fight and try to test their strength against vampires."

Of course, Nate knew nothing about familiars, so he was unaware and he felt like lately he had been getting scolded by Silver a lot.

"I think we better hurry and find the Boneclaw. It won't do us well to stay here for long." Leo interrupted them.

"What do you mean?" Fex asked.

At that very moment, from each of them, a small ball of energy was seen lifting from their bodies, it looked almost identical to that of the small glowing balls they could see all around them. When it left their bodies it joined up with the other millions of balls of energy, they suddenly all felt a little weaker and lightheaded.

"What just happened to us?" Silver said, grabbing her head.

Leo was probably the only one that understood what was happening. For the energy that was leaving their body, was Qi.

"What just left your body, was your Qi. What we also call it though, is life energy. I think I know why the Boneclaw didn't bring us here. Because this world, the creatures here. They all feed off our life energy. If we stay here too long, soon all the Qi will escape from our bodies, and when it eventually runs out, it will start to take our life force as well." Leo explained.

Maybe they wouldn't have believed Leo's words, or trusted him too much before the light had left their bodies, but they had all felt it, and linking the two, they could see what he had said made sense.

The problem was, what direction should they go in? There wasn't a clear path anywhere, and everywhere looked almost the same.

"The mask doesn't seem to be working here either, so we can't contact Quinn." Nate said with the mask in his hand, which he had summoned from his shadow.

"The good thing is our abilities still work in this world , but we are on a time limit." Closing his eyes, Leo started to try to spread his ability as far as possible so he could sense everything around them. Hoping to find the Boneclaw this way.

Doing this, he was unable to see the finer details, and if other things were to attack them that were close, it was possible that he would be unaware of them, but with the others around him he thought it was quite safe to do this.

Opening his eyes, it seemed like there was some good news.

"The creatures from this world, or familiars as you call them. They all seem to be heading to one place, as if something had caught their interest. Maybe that is the Boneclaw, or it could be something else altogether. I usually would say it was unsafe to go towards the dangerous unknown. But we don't really have the time to be wandering around this area either."

"Agreed." Silver said, and soon all of them were heading off towards where the familiars were heading.

Letting the others walk in front, Leo decided to walk at the back of the group. What he didn't inform the others about, was he had sensed one of the familiars following them from behind. It wasn't one he had felt before, and it stayed a distance away from them, as if it was curious.

For the time being Leo would leave it, as they continued their journey, ready to face it if necessary.

What Leo didn't know, was the familiar wasn't interested in the group. It was interested, in him.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 905: Leo's little friend

The group continued to travel being directed by Leo. They passed many giant mushrooms that were as large as trees, that had yellow or green tints. Small little familiar bugs scurried everywhere across the floor.

Eventually, they no longer needed Leo to guide them because they could see many of the creatures heading a certain way. It was as if they all hurried towards a big event to the point that they all ignored these outsiders.

Just then, Nate saw what resembled a large deer go past them, but it didn't look like just any regular old deer. This one had antlers that were two times the size of its body towering over it's head.

"So are familiars something all vampires can get?" Nate asked, after developing an interest in the surrounding creatures.

"It seems to require a certain aptitude, yet there are not many who want one in the first place." Silver replied. "Vampire knights can choose to connect with a familiar through a ceremony, which opens the link between this world and our world. We offer them a drop of our blood, so they can sense our power."

"The familiars are not supposed to reveal the secrets of their world, so while we don't really know things for certain we can speculate. Those familiars that wish to form a bond, will fight over each other and the winner eventually forms the contract with the vampire who had initiated the ceremony."

"Then what about your brother? How come he's got that flying bull when he's not a vampire knight?" Nate questioned.

Hearing this, Fex touched his earring as it started to vibrate a little. Ham clearly knew they were talking about him.

'So you're my familiar, huh, I wonder how I got you?'

"As a rite of passage direct descendants also go through a ceremony to connect with a familiar. The chances for one appearing are quite low, although there have been cases when direct descendants managed to get familiars later on in their life, despite none appearing during that first ceremony. It's unclear why, and the most popular theory in that regard is that either one can somehow gain the necessary aptitude to summon one."

"Rarely there are also cases where familiars appear on their own in our world. We don't really know how this happens but they also can connect with vampires of their choosing. My brother is such a special case, where Ham appeared on his own before Fex came of age for the rite of passage." Silver explained.

"That being said, I can see that you seem to desire to contract one, but you really shouldn't. The reason they are not popular even among regular vampires who would be able to connect with familiars is because many have died because of their familiars."

"They are quite strange. Each one is unique when deciding what they are attracted to. When you make a contract it's almost as if you don't hold up your end of the deal, it will try to kill you."

Listening to Silver speak, and looking at the familiars, Nate was wondering just how strong they were? He knew that beasts had their own power ranking with some having almighty power, so was it the same for these familiars? If they could kill vampires then they had to have some strength, and the Boneclaw from earlier was definitely stronger than himself.

It was safe to say, if they did get into a fight, underestimating the familiars was not a good idea. Their journey so far had been relatively safe, although they saw many different types of familiars pass by them and come up close through the mushroom forest, not one of them seemed to be aggressive.

'So Ham, is this really the world where you came from?' Fex asked, wanting to know more about his little companion that had helped him.

'Kinda.' Ham replied. 'Our world is large, and this is the first time I've been to this area. Besides, I hardly come back here. When I'm resting in your earring, I can choose to see what you see, or head back here until you call me, but I choose to look after my master. Besides, your world is way more interesting than anything that is going on here.'

'Then do you have any idea why all the familiars are going somewhere?' Fex asked.

'I have no idea, but maybe they felt something. I could come out and try to see, but I'm a little worried that If I do come out of the earring then I will act just like them, and what if I get split up from you again?' Ham replied.

It was clear that Ham and Fex shared a good bond. It looked like he would have to treat his little familiar to something once they returned.

Suddenly, vibrations through the ground could be felt, the mushrooms heads seemed to shrivel slightly as if they were reacting to what was happening. The vibrations continued one after another as if something large was walking.

It was clear whatever it was had quite some weight to it, which was strange considering the size they had seen of everything before, but then they all could finally see what was heading their way.

Towering over the giant mushrooms was a creature of titanic proportions. It walked on all fours and was three times bigger than an African elephant. What was most

notable was it's long winding neck like that of the old dinosaurs and its large single ready eye with two horns sticking out of its head.

"That thing's enormous!" Nate couldn't help but say. "If that was a beast it looks like it would at least be a demon tier beast! It's almost as big as the giant crab we fought."

"How foolish are you?" Asked Silver. "You can't base everything on size alone. There are plenty of beasts that are small yet far more powerful than you would think, so just because one is large doesn't mean it has the strength or speed to match it."

It was very true, especially since humanoid beasts that were the same size as humans were said to be the strongest. Still, even though Silver spoke her words, she had to admit there did seem to be some strong power radiating off of it, as it glowed more than the others and the floating balls were quickly being absorbed by the large beast.

In the middle of their small argument, once again they felt something pulling away from their bodies. Their heads started to feel light headed and then another ball of energy escaped from each and every one of them.

By now, the beast wasn't too far away from them, and the ball of glowing energy that had left their bodies, started to immediately head towards the large beast. Just like all the other balls of energy, its large body absorbed them and it started to glow.

However, as soon as it did, it looked down to where the energy had come from.

"It seems to like the taste, and now wants seconds!" Fex started to panic.

The long neck started to swoop down towards them, diving down like a snake flying through the air. Seeing this, each one of them prepared on themselves, but they were all feeling a little weak after just having some of their energy taken away from them.

'If I fight using Qi, then it will only mean my demise will be quicker.' Leo thought about grabbing his sword, trying to think of the best option, but it seemed like he wouldn't need to act.

The energy that had been following them, the small but powerful energy started to hop between the smaller mushrooms. Going from one to the other at a great speed. It eventually hopped onto the largest mushroom in the area, and when the beast's head was close, it leapt up to meet it.

"What's that little black thing?" Nate asked.

It was quite hard to see from a distance, but what was obvious was the size difference. It looked like a mouse going up against a cat, when finally a small paw

was placed on the giant familiar's head. A pulse of energy was felt as ripples were seen going through the air, sending the beast's head away.

The small black object landed back on the mushrooms and it looked like the large family was now continuing off on its way to where it was going once before.

'Did that little thing just save us?' Nate wondered.

The small black object started to hop from mushroom to mushroom, eventually it was running towards the group. Noticing this, they became startled and prepared for battle.

"Don't draw your weapons! It's not planning to hurt us!" Leo held them back.

They were unsure though, but it wasn't like they could stop it if they could, as it ran past all of them, only to hop on the top of Leo's shoulder.

Soon, sat on top of Leo's bald head, seemingly claiming the spot for itself.

"Meow." The cat went, licking it's paw.

"A cat?" Fex blurted out, able to see that familiar was a black cat, with big eyes, and a small red slit down the middle of it's forehead.

"Well, it looks like someone wants to make a contract?" Silver pointed out, giving Leo a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 906: Keep your d.e.s.i.r.e strong

All the others were staring at what was lying on top of Leo's head. They were looking his way and couldn't keep their eyes off of it, although Leo couldn't tell this. There was no reaction from their auras after all, but the reason for them doing such a thing was simple. It was because they were looking at what had decided to lie its fat body on top of Leo's head.

It had spread its body wide and had its two large paws dangling on top of Leo's forehead just shy of reaching his eyebrows.

The others seeing this, we're all thinking along similar lines. 'Cute,' They thought.

"Hey Leo, you do know what's on top of your head right now, right?" Nate asked.  
"I mean, I know you can't see, but you should still be able to feel it."

Leo's reaction to the whole thing was what had startled them the most. He didn't move, he didn't try to attack the creature, and he acted as if everything was completely normal.

"Of course, I can feel it," Leo replied, which was a relief to the others when he said this. "I know it has been following us for a while, but just like humans, creatures emit a different aura when they are preparing to attack. This little one has been following us for a while now, and it has no intention of harming us. Although I have to admit, I never thought that it would end up protecting us."

Those words reminded them that although the cat looked cute now, yawning and lying on top of Leo's bald head, it just managed to repel a giant beast with a single paw. Making Silver's point from before, very valid. That it wasn't the size of the creatures that mattered.

"Well, it just means this familiar is very special. Do you know what it is?" Nate asked, turning to Silver, the knowledge dropper of the group.

She didn't mind explaining things. Since her teacher days, she was used to it, and Nate actually was her student at one point. Which was probably why Nate found it natural to ask her questions.

"No, I'm afraid I don't. But you have to remember, the familiar world is large, just as large as ours. There may be even more familiars than humans, and amongst them, there will be special ones. We have familiars that we know of and have recorded, but I can't say I have them all to memory, nor do I know which this one is." Silver explained.

At that moment, the cat finally looked like it had finished taking its little rest and hopped down from Leo's head. Now it was on the floor, on all of its fours. The

others could see that the cat was quite fat. It had a large round body, making its head look relatively small, but this just made its appearance even cuter.

"What a fat cat," Fex commented.

Immediately, The cat turned its head and held out its paw. Seeing this and remembering what happened earlier, Fex flinched and held his arms up to protect himself. Closing his eyes, after a few seconds, he felt nothing.

When he looked back at the cat, it was simply just licking its paw, then what appeared to be a grin on the cat's face appeared.

'No, did that cat just trick me?'

For that to have happened, the familiar must have had a good grasp on the human language and at the same time have a high level of intelligence.

Its next set of movements were strange, the paw it was l.i.c.k.i.n.g until now, it suddenly dug one of its sharp teeth that looked like a fang into it. Blood was now pouring from the paw. It held it upwards and was holding it towards Leo.

"I was right. It looks like the familiar is looking to make a contract." Said Silver.  
"Although it's not the conventional way, it seems insistent."

Leo looked at the cat for a few seconds and stared at its two eyes, not looking away. It was as if the two were locked in a battle where neither one of them could blink.

"Leo has won this battle, that's for sure," Nate whispered to Fex. "How can 'He' Lose a staring competition?"

Drawing his sword, Leo hovered it an inch above his own finger.

"What is it that you want in return, and how do you know I will be the one to give you what you are looking for?" Leo asked.

The others heard nothing, but in reality, the two of them were speaking to each other, as the cat was able to send its voice directly to Leo so only he could hear.

"You have a d.e.s.i.r.e stronger than I have ever felt before. Even now, you are filled with energy, all for the sake of improving yourself. I never thought I would meet a human that would match my taste. Several drops of blood have entered the familiar world, all of them so dull and straightforward, your's is interesting.

"As long as your d.e.s.i.r.e stays strong, I and you will not have a problem, and you will be helped out in many ways to come. We, familiars, live a simple life, and we don't ask for much. Besides, without my help, you all will not survive this place. For helping you, all I ask is to come with you."

Most of what the familiar said, he did not care about, but the last words were what had affected Leo the most.

"What is your name?" Leo asked.

"My name is Ovinnik, just remember to always have your d.e.s.i.r.e, or things could go very wrong."

Having heard enough, Leo moved his blade an inch, making a cut on his thumb. A trickle of blood started to fall, and immediately the familiars in the area started to turn their way.

However, slamming its paw onto the ground, another pulse of energy was sent outward, and the others soon stopped. They ignored them, continuing to go onward to their destination.

Leo and the cat walked closer together until eventually, both wounds had touched each other and finally, they could feel an exchange of energies within each other. A few seconds later, and the cat started to glow brightly until it had disappeared and now, on Leo's forehead, between his eyebrows just slightly above, he had a black circle appear.

"Although I do not know what or who that familiar is, it certainly seems you have made a strong ally that will help us in the future." Silver said with a smile.

'Where's my familiar!' Nate complained and wanted to shout out. 'Give me something cool like that deer from earlier or something.'

Alas, it seemed like nothing was interested in Nate.

"Let's go," Leo ordered. "It says what we are looking for is in this direction."

The others didn't argue, they knew that Leo and his new familiar must have been communicating, and the cat seemed to be directing them in the same direction as they were heading in any way, along with all the beasts.

Soon though, the terrain started to change as they left the mushroom forest, and the purple skies had gone dark, turning into a black grey colour. They were now at the base of a large mountain in front of them, and there were no signs of other life anywhere in the area.

Stepping out from the forest, they could see hundreds of different sized familiars all heading over to one place, and now they were part of this group as well.

'You're telling me, not one of these guys is interested in partnering up with me?' Nate continued to think about it, but he soon stopped as they could finally see what they were looking for.

Up ahead, all the creatures had stopped and were gathered around something. In what looked similar to a type of throne made from bones, sitting down was none other than the Boneclaw.

All of the familiars were heading to the undead king, to give their respects as he had returned to this area in a long time.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 907: The Undead King

Standing on the open black hard ground, they could see that the area was covered with familiars of all different shapes and sizes.

They had formed a semi circle roughly ten meters away from where the Boneclaw was sitting.

"This is crazy, they seem to be treating the Boneclaw like some sort of king." Nate noted, amazed and a little bit jealous of the treatment.

Their group were in the middle of thousands of familiars and they hadn't taken a step forward just like the rest of them, for fear they would be doing something out of place.

"I thought it was just a nickname, but it looks like it might be a deserved title instead." Silver mumbled to herself.

"What name is that?" Nate just had to ask.

"The Undead King."

Finally, it looked like something was happening, as one familiar stepped out amongst all the familiars and started to walk towards the Boneclaw.

It was the large antler deer they had seen earlier. When half a meter in front of the throne, it bowed its head slightly. The faint glow around its body started to brighten bit by bit.

Soon after a white glowing ball came out from the deer and flew towards the Boneclaw.

The deer repeated this process several times and when it stopped the initial glow around the creature's body had dimmed to a level where it was barely visible.

Soon after it quickly left the scene heading back to its space and when it did the surrounding balls in the area were being attracted to the deer. Once it had absorbed a few of them the deer regained its glow once again.

After the deer had left the next familiar stepped forwards and did the same. More and more familiars joined. Without seemingly speaking to each other they orderly came forwards and offered up the shining balls to the Boneclaw who kept absorbing them.

Seeing everything Leo was trying to guess what was happening.

'The balls of energy, I thought they looked and felt familiar but now it's starting to make a little more sense.' He thought. 'They are exactly the same as Qi, which also

explains why what comes out of our bodies is Qi as well. The Qi is able to be absorbed into their bodies unlike ours. Is this why they have a fascination with connecting to the Human World, but then why have the familiars chosen to make contact with the vampires?"

From what Leo had learnt so far Vampires didn't seem too knowledgeable about Qi in general. In fact, he had yet to meet a single vampire that knew about it and when he had tried to teach the vampire students they had been unable to.

Of course, there weren't many humans that knew about it either but from his experience they had varying degrees of potential in allowing it to grow in their bodies.

After a few of the familiars had finished going forward they had eventually stopped and for the first time the Boneclaw stood up from its seat.

It's menacing size was apparent and it was clear he had an overbearing power here.

'This guy, how dare he act like he owns this place? He didn't even ask me for permission before taking everyone's power.' A voice spoke inside Leo's head. It wasn't hard for him to figure out who it belonged to, since he had already heard it not long ago.

'From the way you're speaking, am I correct in assuming that you are actually the leader of this place?' Leo asked the black cat that had disappeared after leaving the black mark on his forehead.

'Indeed and you have even correctly assumed that it's 'just' this place. As far as I know you have several leaders in charge of different territories as well. He's lucky that he came across my territory and I'm in a good mood since I met you because of his actions. If he had tried this in any of the other places, there would be hell to pay.'

"Especially for him as he is right now. I have seen him a couple of times, but this is the first time he seems so... weak. Has the person he contracted with not let him fulfill his desire? Maybe he didn't choose the best person this time.'

The cat sure was talkative, but Leo was happy about it, since he had been able to learn a lot. The Boneclaw that Quinn had obtained and the black cat that Leo obtained, both of them appeared to be strong powerful figures in the Familiar World.

However, Leo found it strange that the cat claimed that the Boneclaw was weak. He had seen it help the others and it certainly didn't seem like something that could be described as such. It also made Leo question just how powerful it was under normal circumstances...

Looking at the Boneclaw standing up, this was when the others realised something different about him compared to the rest of the familiers.

It lacked the faint glow around its body. It looked just like they had seen it in their world.

It started to raise its hand, and at the same time all of the families in the area started to light up. Soon glowing balls of light started escaping their bodies. He now had enough energy to show some of his power and all of the balls of energy were heading his way.

They entered him one by one, energizing him.

'So that's why he is in that sorry state.' The cat commented. 'It takes a lot of energy to force open a rift between our two worlds and right now he's gathering energy to send you guys back. I wonder why he's trying so much for all of you? Oh well, it's better for me in the end since he hasn't asked to borrow my power.' Although Leo couldn't see it, he could hear how smug and satisfied it sounded.

With one of its long dangling fingers the Boneclaw held out, it pointed towards Fex who was in the crowd.

At this moment, not knowing what was going on, Fex started to sweat nervously.

"Have I just been selected for some sacrifice ritual or something?" Fex asked looking at the others for help and eventually stared at Nate thinking he would be a better choice.

"Hey what the hell?! Don't throw me under the bus!" Nate could practically read Fex' thoughts... after all, he would have done the same.

"He will not harm us." Leo assured them. "He is trying to send us all back."

Eventually Silver was the one who gave Fex a nudge, and was following straight behind him.

The others soon moved forward and with their support he felt less nervous. Not knowing everything and at the same time learning so much that was new to him as experiences he didn't want to forget.

When Fex arrived in front of the Boneclaw he knelt down unconsciously. He didn't know why he did it, it just felt right to him to kneel in front of the creature.

It then touched the earring on his ear. After it dangled in place for a few seconds, it lit up and Ham appeared in front of them.

"Please don't take all my energy away!" Ham pleaded immediately, begging and kneeling on the floor. "I only have a little bit of energy and if it's taken away this little bull will die!"

"Huh? Oh you just want me to speak to them for you? Haha, that's great then, sure I can do that!" Ham said as he stood up and his mood had changed in an instant.

There were a few nods here and there from Ham and he turned around to speak to the others.

"His Majesty says, 'I have fulfilled my promise by protecting you all, but I will not be able to do it again. I will be sending you all back but I must remain here to gather more energy before I can return.'"

"Creating a portal here I can send you back to the same world, but it won't be to the exact same spot that we left. I can only promise you that you will end up on the same planet."

"Don't make all my efforts be wasted in vain, live!"

It didn't look like there was much time to decide anything as the Boneclaw drew a circle in the air, which appeared on the ground surrounding them.

It was time for all of them to head back.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 908: The second half of the tale

Although the tale Leo and Silver had told so far was amazing and beyond what they could have ever imagined, it didn't explain what Silver meant by her words, saying that Bryce wouldn't attack and how something bigger was on the horizon.

Little did they know that this was because it was only the first half of their story and there was still a lot to go from when they had returned.

It was explained further by Ham that when they had moved to the Familiar World they had also moved from the position they had entered as well. Although the Boneclaw could have gone back, and opted a portal up there time wasn't on their side.

If two more energy balls were to escape from their bodies, then it would possibly be life threatening. As such they had no choice but to go through the portal that had been created and hope for the best. The Vampire World was not exactly the smallest, so they could only rely on luck to end up somewhere near the Vampire settlement.

Going through the portal only took a few seconds, and when they arrived it was as expected. They were in the forest but there was nothing resembling where they had come from, and nothing to tell where they had ended up.

"I feel different. Oh, his Majesty, the Boneclaw king is no longer with me!" Ham shouted as he flapped his wings, happy to be free. The rest couldn't share his enthusiasm.

"But didn't that Boneclaw protect us?" Fex pointed out the reason for their disgruntlement. "If we run into that vampire again from last time, it will be really difficult for us. We can't escape."

"I don't think the Boneclaw would have been able to help us a second time in any case." Leo stated. "It must have used up a lot of energy creating those two portals, otherwise it would have returned with us."

"So is that the last time we will see that thing?" Nate asked.

Truthfully, Leo didn't know, but he had a feeling it would be the last time. There had to be a reason why such a powerful being wanted to stay in the Human World, and it hadn't really appeared to be the type to help them out of the kindness of its soul.

'Finally! How long has it been since I have been here?' The cat purred inside of Leo's mind. 'It's so rare to find someone with your quality of Qi, no wonder that Bonehead had stayed here for so long. I'd love to taste some, but I will leave it

alone for now. I don't want you dying in the middle of nowhere, since you might need your strength.'

Silver, who had been carrying the large casket on her back the whole time, placed it on the ground, and opened it up. She was worried that their little captive might have been damaged when they had gone to the other world, but she was wriggling about tied up showing full well she still had strength.

Still, the others could tell that the energy inside her had also been s.u.c.k.e.d away. All of them were currently weaker and not at full fighting strength,

Using what they could, Ham flew up high in the sky and tried to tell the others what he could see. Silver had done some exploration in the past, so if they spotted some sort of landmark maybe they could find their way out.

"Mountains, smaller mountains, scary looking mountains." Ham kept naming them all as he saw them.

"Anything else, Ham?!" Fex shouted from below.

"Did I already mention the mountains? Hang on, there is something there.." Ham corrected himself as he noticed something else a little behind a mountain. Flying back down, Ham delivered the news.

He first described the different types of mountains but nothing seemed to give Silver any idea of their current location, except for the next thing the flying bull described.

"It looked like a giant dome created from the ground, but the centre of it was all cracked. It didn't look natural, that's all I'm saying." Ham reported.

The group needed to make a decision, head towards the stage man built object, or split up in different directions to return to the centre once they had found something.

"Split up? Did none of you guys ever watch any movies?" Nate complained. "If we split up, they'll get killed off one by one and knowing my luck I'll end up being the first one!"

Hearing Nate speak out about it, while they didn't think it would be as drastic as he had described, they decided against splitting up and with no better idea they headed towards the dome.

While on the way, Nate would constantly try and get in contact back at the base, but now it seemed like everyone in their base was currently busy all at the same time. It just made them feel tense about the situation, and rush forward.

Leo placed his hand out against the top part of the dome, and made a sign for the whole group to stop.

"I can sense vampires."

"All the way out here, in the middle of nowhere? But it makes no sense we aren't even close to the waterfall?" Silver wondered.

"But that original vampire guy didn't come from the waterfall!" Fex argued. "He had to have come from somewhere else, right? What if this is where they're hiding right now?"

Leo was quite confident that it wasn't the case, at least that the man they had met before wasn't here. Somehow he had known where they were, and Leo wondered if it had anything to do with their prisoner.

"Make sure, she doesn't hear or see anything." Leo warned, and soon the Vampire's knight's ears were plugged up with cotton balls made of string as well.

With Leo's ability, he should be able to sense anyone else before they sensed them. The group decided to continue forwards with Silver being the most keen.

Hearing what Fex had said, just made her want to find out if it was true or not. She wanted to bring back as much information as possible as they could.

Using Leo's ability, they took a path that would Delbert avoid the vampires that seen. However, foolowing them as they got closer to the dome they needed to follow them from behind.

Finally, they could see the crater in front of them, but were unable to see what was inside from the top. They could see two female vampires, holding a male vampire walking towards the dome.

"Hey, is it just me or does it look like they're treating that man like a prisoner?" Nate asked.

It was true, they could see that both the females were practically dragging the male vampire by his arms, as if he had been passed out and his legs dragging on the floor.

"What is this place? They're wearing the castle uniform, so they must be from the settlement, but were nowhere near the settlement." Silver said.

When they entered the dome, the door they had gone through closed behind them, and the way Silver was shuffling her feet it was clear she wanted to follow them inside.

"After what we encountered last time, we need to be more careful. Especially with the state we're in." Leo cautioned, closing his eyes as he spread his ability one more time, to get an idea of what was inside the strange place.

Straight away, Leo could sense multiple auras, many of them similar but at the same time a lot of them different, and it wasn't just a few, there were more auras than that at the Bloodsucker base in the waterfall.

However, something was strange about them, some felt weak and weren't moving about much.

"What did you see?" Silver asked.

Leo explained what he could see, and the others couldn't really figure it out much either.

"So, there isn't anyone strong that we can't take on in there?" Nate asked.

Leo nodded, but it looked like he had one more thing on his mind he wanted to say.

"About one of the auras I felt, it was exactly the same as one of the auras at the tenth castle. Someone inside has the same aura as Alex."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 909: Another blood fairy

A blood fairy was an illegal subclass. If one was created, it was the leader's responsibility to get rid of it on sight. If that didn't happen, then the vampires could only assume you were not only going against their wishes, but was plotting something against the vampire settlement.

These subclasses were explained to have a high potential to either be used against them or ruin the current lives the vampires had built up for themselves at the moment.

"Same as Alex, who's Alex?" Silver asked, confused.

Of course, Nate and Leo knew what they were talking about, but Silver didn't. Alex's existence was unknown to her, and she wasn't part of the tenth family. Even if she was Fex's sister, if she found out, there was always the risk she would tell her father or someone else and get them in trouble.

In all honesty, not even Leo really knew who Alex was that well either. Only that he was a special subclass vampire that had created his weapon. After seeing the way the vampire from earlier reacted, he was starting to understand why Quinn had asked him to keep it a secret.

"There are quite a few subclass vampires inside." Leo continued, ignoring Silver's question. "If we take what we saw earlier, assuming they are taking prisoners inside, I don't think the best of things is happening inside. A facility disguised behind a mountain, out in the middle of nowhere away from the vampire settlement?"

"It certainly feels like they are hiding something." Said Fex.

It was clear that quite a few of them wanted to know what was inside, but they would need to be careful if they were to investigate. Suppose it was true that the eighth family was involved. In that case, it means as soon as they saw them coming, they would be able to send a message to the others almost immediately. With the state they were in now if someone like the last person they had met was called, they probably wouldn't survive.

So instead, they decided to rest for the night. Their bodies needed to recover what was taken from them. Yes, they would try to avoid being seen, but it would most likely mean another showdown if they were seen.

They took turns resting as they kept an eye on the dome. It was too large to see all the sides of the dome, so they just looked at where the other three vampires had entered from. Eventually, while it was Silver's watch, she could see two girls leaving, whom had entered the dome from earlier, but the man was not with them.

'Heading back to the vampire settlement?'

Placing the large box on her back down, she decided to follow them from quite the distance. She inched closer and closer as a test, and eventually, she realised that the two of them weren't at the level of a vampire knight. If they were, Leo would have sensed it, and they would have discovered her by now.

She followed them in their general direction for a while through the forest until eventually, she could see it. She recognised one of the mountains that could be seen from the castles if one was to lookout. The two girls were definitely heading back to the settlement.

She tried to inch closer to them. If they were vampires from the settlement, then they would have an emblem on their clothing stating what family they were from. Silver mainly was travelling up high through the trees, but having taken one step too close, the two girls turned around.

"Did you hear something?" They asked.

"There are beasts on this planet, so hearing something isn't that uncommon." The other replied, and the two continued on the journey.

Coming out from behind one of the tree trunks, Silver realised that she couldn't get any closer without a confrontation.

'If they were able to sense me from that far, then they would have had to at least be at the noble level. So the leader involved is willing to work with their inner castle vampires. This whole thing smells rotten.'

Returning quickly, Silver was worried that she had left her post when she was meant to make sure the others were okay while they were sleeping. Upon returning though, she noticed that Leo was already awake and was leaning up against a tree.

"Did you find out what you needed to?" He asked.

"Yeah, I did, I found our way back, but we need to check out that facility first. Those two girls seemed scared." Silver said as she looked towards the two boys who were fast asleep, as if there wasn't a care in the world. "Thanks for looking after them. Feel free to go sleep; you couldn't have gotten much."

"I didn't sleep much before as a human, and it's even worse now as a vampire. Besides, we have more lookouts compared to before." Leo pointed to the top of his head, directly at the circle ring.

It was actually the cat that had informed Leo that Silver had gone off somewhere.

After the two boys had woken up, they didn't see anyone else enter or leave, so it was time for the two of them to enter.

Walking up, they noticed that security was very minimal, almost as if there was none at all.

'I guess if they are vampires from one of the thirteen families, they can't just leave when they want like the Bloodsuckers.' Silver thought.

Leo noticed something as well. He still found it strange that those that he could sense hadn't moved. It was as if they were locked up. There was no door to enter the dome, just part of the wall had been almost cracked to look like a cave entrance.

Leo suggested it was safe for them to all walkthrough, and so they did. They entered the cave-like tunnel and could hear the sound of screaming and groaning echoing through the tunnel's walls.

"Hey, should we really be walking towards those noises?" Fex asked.

Eventually, they had reached the end of the tunnel, but it wasn't the end of the groaning. Leo could sense that in a large circle shape as large as the dome itself, different types of energy spread out around and leading upwards.

Ham was the first to be sent ahead. If they spotted him, most would think it was just a weak beast. After leaving the tunnel and looking around, he returned.

"I would say it's pretty safe for you guys to go ahead, but be prepared for what you're about to see." Said, Ham.

They trusted Ham a little, but it wasn't until Leo said it would be okay as well, that the group continued to move forward. When they had exited from the tunnel, Leo and the others could finally understand what he was seeing.

This facility was one giant prison. The centre of the dome was flat ground that looked to be mostly destroyed, and it made the whole place look almost like an arena, but instead of an arena full of crowds, it was one full of prisoners.

Spread across the edge of the dome were prison cells, each with one person locked behind them.

"What do they want to do with all these people?" Fex asked.

"That's what we are here to find out." Silver replied. As she started to walk around the edge past each of the prison cells. They saw nearly every type of humanoid vampire subclasses possible. The groans and screams were coming from them, but as they tried to speak or reach out, their minds seemed wholly broken down.

They were unresponsive to the group's calls or presence.

"A blood fairy!" Silver said in shock. "They have a blood fairy!"

Nate looked at it. Its appearance was similar to Alex, but it was a sad sight to see. It looked like its wings had been pinned down to the floor, only allowing one to move its body. And the blood fairy eyes looked dead.

"What family is behind all of this? Why are they keeping so many different subclasses here!" Silver said, speaking out loud.

Eventually, they had stumbled across a man that seemed saner, as he responded to them, running up to the bars and grabbing them.

"I'm sorry for whatever I've done, but please let me out!" He cried.

This one was a regular vampire and was the only regular vampire they had seen so far. Judging by the fact that he wasn't as worn down like the others, they guessed that he was the one that had been brought in not too long ago.

"I'm sorry, but please, I don't remember anything!" The man screamed.

These words from the man, meant far more than they realised.

"What do you mean, you can't remember anything?" Fex asked while gulping.

The man touched his head.

"My memories, who I am, where I am or what this place is, they are all gone!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 910: Where are all the....**

The group asked the man as many questions as they could, but as expected, it was a lost cause. He couldn't remember anything, so he had no way of answering their inquiries. Still, his particular situation reminded them a lot of how Kazz and Fex were when they first had found them.

However, the strangest thing was how the man was even unable to remember how he had ended up in his cell. Even after telling him two girls had brought him here, it didn't jog anything in his brain. Silver was hoping that he could at least describe what he had seen on their uniform, but it was all hopeless.

"Wait, where are you going? Are you not going to set me free?!" He shouted as the group continued on their way.

"If we did that, then the others would know that we were here. Have you lost your common sense as well as your memories?" Silver questioned him harshly.

"But you can't just do this! After seeing all this, if you leave, you are just as bad as them!" The man continued to shout, pulling at the bars. He was desperate, but the main reason why he felt like this was because of how all the others around him were acting. He knew he would end up the same if nothing was done.

"When those guys return, I'll tell them that I saw you anyway, so you might as well let me out!"

Still, the group continued to ignore him and continued on their way.

"Hey, what if he really tells them about us? Won't that be trouble for us?" Nate asked.

"Don't worry, on the way back, we can deal with him, and as Leo said, there doesn't seem to be anyone to guard this place. They should be rather confident in their cells and hiding place." Silver replied.

Fex looked a little down after talking with the man. After all, he could relate to not having any memories and nobody explaining what was going on. Luckily, he had been important enough for people to come to his rescue. As for the man and everyone else in this facility, even if they had someone looking for them, how likely was it that those possessed the necessary strength?.

"I know what you're thinking, but we can't help them." Leo said. "At least not yet. Think about what would happen if we did. A lot of these subclasses would probably just get killed if they were to appear in the Vampire settlement. After we find out what is going on and that it won't put our or other peoples' lives in danger, then we can act."

Leo knew full well what acting before knowing all the small details could result in. He had once lost everyone he had cared about because of it.

After going past every single one of the cells, they had come across a couple more subclasses that seemed a bit saner than the others they had met. They could be communicated with but were close to a breaking point.

Just like the first, the others also had their memories removed. However, one of them seemed to have seen something, when asked if there was anything there. The subclasses pointed at the flat cordon in the centre of the area that looked to be just empty ground.

"Hey, I think that man is trying to tell us something." Nate noted, running over to the flat ground, he looked at the centre, and then walked over towards the edges.

"Hey, I'm right. You see how the rubble of the ground is spread off towards the sides? Yet, for some reason there's none in the centre at all, which can only mean one thing."

A clang sound could be heard after Nate had finished his explanation since Leo had used his sword against the ground.

"It appears we have a trap door, and quite the hidden one" Leo concluded.

The next course of action was to try and find a way in. This facility just kept surprising them more and more and they didn't feel like leaving before unearthing all the secrets they could find.

Eventually they found that on the second floor, there was an operation room. It was empty just like the rest, and even the inside of it looked to have been made with metals that were a little rusted.

'Does this mean that this facility has been here for a long time?' Silver wondered.  
'Doing all this right under our noses.'

Depending on the material, sometimes Leo's senses wouldn't allow him to see through them, and this turned out to be one of them, making him just as curious as his companions about what was underneath. The controls were simple enough, even for Nate to use them as he pulled a lever, and the mechanics behind the door started to move.

As they had learnt, the arena floor was a large trap door. From the centre it started to slowly pull away in two halves and what little burble there was would fall down the centre while the rest moved to the sides.

"Looks like the blockhead isn't so useless after all." Silver commented, and they all looked over to Nate, who grumbled under his breath that they were underestimating him.

Once fully opened, they could see a large swirling staircase going around the edge, and the team decided to carry on moving forward. Once they had awed around to the stairs, looking down they could just see the bottom.

The whole thing was made of a strange metallic material. It made the whole area feel cold and blue. Before they started walking down the stairs they were looking towards Leo for new answers.

"I think you will all be surprised as me, but the area down there is almost an identical replica of what is up there." Leo explained. "There is a major difference between the two though. All of these above ground are vampires, or vampire subclasses."

Here, Leo could feel it. "Nearly every single thing alive in this underground facility on the other hand is a Bloodsucker."

It confused them, but they did get the okay from Leo to move forward. Walking down the spiral staircase together, they were able to see for themselves. The Bloodsucker looked more hungry than ever, never taking its eyes off them.

Walking down more, they saw the same thing repeating again and again. Unfortunately, it looked like they had all lost their minds. Even if one tried to ask them a question they were unable to answer it just like those above.

There was no one they could speak to here below. Silver soon realised that the sheer number of Bloodsuckers behind bars was far more than should be possible. They had already passed around two hundred cells and it looked like there were around two hundred more to go.

"What are they planning to do with all of these?" Silver asked.

But no one knew the answer, apart from the person who had brought them here. This was when Nate also noticed something strange, something that had bugged him as he walked around the whole place.

"Where are all the women?" Nate blurted out.

"You teenager, do you really need to think about things like that, at a time like this!?" Silver glared at him.

"No, that's not what I was thinking about. I just pointed out that we have only seen men in these cages so far. Don't you find it at least a little bit weird given the

number? I could understand if it would have been a dozen or so, but there are hundreds down here, yet every single one is male." Nate explained.

"Is that really true?" Fex wondered as he tried to remember what they had seen so far. He had been more interested in their subclass than their gender.

"Of course, trust me I would have kept a note or something if there were some girls around." Nate replied, blushing when all three gave him strange looks.

Silver, who had quite a good memory, started to think back. She was unsure if it was a big deal, but it certainly did seem a little strange. It wasn't as if only men could turn into Bloodsucker, and the same was true for the subclasses.

"Putting aside that it does seem strange, does this information help us in any way?" Silver asked.

"I don't know yet, it just reminded me of a place where the opposite was true. Back when I went to visit the second family for Cia to get her memories back. I was surrounded by girls and had been wondering where the men were. It was just a thought, but now it makes me think, could it be they were brought here? Turned into these monsters?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 911: The day before

Based on what Nate was saying, it sounded like he thought all the men that should have been in the second leader's area had been placed in this facility, locked up. It was a crazy theory that if Silver had heard before, she would have just dismissed it.

Right now, with the circumstances the way they were, she was willing to accept this theory.

A leader was allowed to elect who they wanted in their inner castle area. If they wished all of them to be women, then that was the leaders choice. It did not matter how obscure the request was. However, what was more concerning than Nate's theory was the Second leader themselves, Cindy.

Nate's suspicion had become her suspicion due to her ability. All of these vampires having their memories lost, it wasn't too strange as a powerful vampire leader should be able to do such a thing with their influence skill.

Other than using the influence skill to remove one's memories, there was another way other than using the influence skill to remove one's memories, and that was with the Second leader's ability. Although according to Cindy herself, this was impossible. She was only able to reverse time so far back, it was different for body parts as well, or so she claimed. This would mean with her ability, it would be impossible to remove every single memory about themselves.

The power of the ability varied from leader to leader. Some were better with it, some were weaker, but leaders hardly ever got into scuffles to test such things. Leaving the other leaders to rely on only their word about their powers.

Every leader knew the other ones were hiding their true strength.

If Cindy claimed she couldn't do such a thing, then the others would just have to believe it as there was no evidence. There was no way for them to force the other.

"I think it might be time for us to head back," Leo suggested. "There is nothing left to explore here, and based on what we have found, it looks like some type of BloodSucker and Subclass breeding ground. Hiding this away, they must have bad intentions."

What was more concerning for Leo though, was the connection in his body going wild. He could tell something was happening to the Tenth castle at this moment, and they needed to return; they needed his help.

"Wait, shouldn't we get rid of these guys? Right now, they're trapped behind a cell. We can kill them so they can't be used to attack us. I know they will find out about this place was discovered, but they won't know who discovered it." Said Nate.

It wasn't a bad suggestion, but Leo was against it.

"Even with our strength and numbers, killing four hundred of these guys won't be easy. Can't you see? The bars have been made of the same material that they create the castles out of. Making an attack through these bars would be difficult, making the task take even longer."

"I also think knowing about this place can be used to our advantage." Silver agreed, "We stumbled upon this place by accident. The enemy probably thought we would never find such a thing, but knowing about it can make it clearer for us to know their goal. Finally, we can be one step ahead of them rather than always one step behind."

There was another person that didn't want to kill them, and that was Fex. These people had been turned against their will. As he looked into one of their white eyes that did nothing but stared right back at him, Fex didn't feel scared. Instead, he felt sorry for them.

'I wonder if there was a way they could be turned back.

Before leaving the place, Silver did one more thing to those vampires that were saner than the others. Just in case, she used her influence powers on them to remove any memories they had of them in this place.

Usually, she wouldn't do such a thing, but they had already lost their memories, and the one she was removing wasn't one that was particularly meaningful or long.

Doing such a thing, as long as she was able to, should have been an easy task.

"We must move as quickly as we can!" Silver shouted.

---

"And that's what we discovered while being away. It was what held us up for so long." Silver said, having finished explaining what herself, Leo, and the others had gone through.

"All of this was reported to Bryce?" Sam asked. "Which means he knows about the bloodsucker and the other blood fairy which would have been used to kill Dwight?"

This was the proof they had all been looking for. The only bad thing was, that Leo and Silver didn't know Quinn had been framed using the blood fairy.

"It seems all the signs are pointing to Jill and Cindy having worked together." Said Paul. "Yet somehow she had convinced the other leaders that she was the better one compared to the other leaders."

Layla, upon hearing Cindy's name, clenched her fist tightly. She couldn't believe for a second she had trusted her and thought she was a good leader. She knew how the other leaders must have felt but she had also seen her dark side when Cia had been killed.

"What I'm worried about, is after learning all of this, Bryce has decided to continue with the execution," Sam said. "Why not delay it until he finds the other blood fairy so it can be used as proof? Do you really think he won't kill Quinn just because he thinks it isn't Quinn?"

"No," Paul answered. "If we know Bryce, which I'm not sure we do, he will use this opportunity to kill two birds with one stone. He'll get rid of Quinn first, and then get rid of Cindy second, but if Bryce doesn't act soon, then the army of Bloodsuckers could be used again."

"So we are back to where we started," Layla complained. "The story was nice and all, but it still doesn't guarantee that Quinn will be kept alive. It just means we have ways to prove Quinn's innocence and know who the real enemy is. Tomorrow we have to act."

---

Down in the king's castle, unaware to everyone something was going on. Quinn was cooking up his own plan. He never did want to rely on others.

His arms had grown slightly in size, his hair had partially fallen out, and his fangs had winded. His arms were shaking, and the cuffs connected to the walls were starting to rattle.

"Quinn! Quinn, are you still there!" Alex shouted. "Come on, you're not going to turn and eat me, are you?!" Alex screamed.

There was a manic wildness in Quinn's eyes, but hearing Alex's words, they had disappeared. His transformation was still the same though, with his bulging muscles still on display. When cancelling his transformation, his hair started to grow back slowly, and his muscles shrunk smaller.

"That was good, we were almost there, but I would have lost it without you. Let's go again!" Quinn shouted.

Ever since Alex had joined him, every day, Quinn had been trying to learn how to become a Bloodsucker to utilise its extreme strength without losing his sanity.

Luckily, Alex was a great help as words from the outside while he was in the middle of losing his place, helped get him back on track and he was making progress faster than ever. Quinn could turn but would begin to pass out, hearing

Alex's encouragement would kick him out of that stage, but his body was still that of a Bloodsucker.

However, he felt it was risky having to rely on Alex every time he wanted to transform safely. They did the test again, and this time, there were no words spoken by Alex.

"So let's see what you do now," Quinn said with a smile. "Now, all I need to do is wait, and there will be a big surprise for you."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 912: Where are the tenth family?

To those in the vampire settlement, it didn't seem like a long time ago that they were all talking about the same thing. As members from each family were gathering at the plaza to witness yet another execution. The difference was, this wasn't just any execution, but it was one to do with one of the leaders, something the young vampires had never witnessed in their lives before.

"Did you see the royal guards, they have gathered around the tenth castle."

"Yes, I did, I guess they're making sure the execution goes well and don't want anything to happen, but why is the tenth leader being executed, do they suspect he has something to do with the Royal Knight's death?"

"I can only assume that is to be the case, but it's not only those from the tenth castle, they aren't allowing any vampires that belong to the tenth at all to attend."

The talk in the vampire settlement was true. The royal guards were stationed around those that lived in the tenth area, while those that belonged to the tenth family in name were told not to attend. There were no complications to happen this time as everything was planned to go smoothly.

Underground under the king's castle, Quinn and Alex were silently waiting. They had used up all the conversations they had within them. They had been together for several days now and with only the two of them together 24/7 they had learnt a lot about each other.

Quinn had explained his background, his life at school and how he was treated so badly and how he saw others being treated the same or worse. While Alex's background was a little different to what he had expected.

Before the war, apparently Alex's family used to be quite wealthy, owning many real estate properties in the big cities, however, after the war most of their properties were destroyed, and the government had done nothing to subsidise them.

They wished to build up their name and wealth again, but found it difficult after the introduction of abilities. Where power was more important than anything and it was something they didn't have.

'I guess a lot of people lost different things due to the war.' Quinn thought.

The reason Alex was interested in Quinn's offer initially was because he wanted to raise his own forging empire and bring his family name back up to what it used to be. He knew working for someone else wouldn't be possible. Even though it didn't quite work out how he originally planned, he was pleased.

'Working hard for your family huh?' Quinn thought, as he tried to think back to his own parents, but he knew very little about them, not enough to even feel sad that they were gone, but only to feel down that others had a family when he didn't.

'You still think like that?' Vincent said. 'Even your system is a constant reminder that it isn't true.'

Looking at his system, Quinn understood what Vincent was trying to get at.

'You're so cheesy man, but you're right! Maybe when this whole war is over I can start thinking about raising my own family as well.'

Quinn thought it sounded a bit weird for someone his age to start thinking about a family, but he realised it was due to his life that he had lived while being Vincent. The one thing that Vincent felt fulfilled by, was seeing his kids grow up, and because he had children he was at peace when leaving this world, thinking that he was at least passing something on, and it was the whole reason Quinn was here today as well.

Although Quinn didn't know it at first, that the two of them were related.

'A family huh, you know that to do that, you need a partner, do you at least have someone on your mind?' Vinent asked.

Thinking about this question, Quinn's cheeks started to turn slightly red and his body temperature was rising as he thought of the possibilities.

"Hey are you okay?" Alex asked. "It's just gone a little quiet, I guess it has been for a while."

Quinn thought for a second Alex could see what he looked like, but it was impossible from the way the two of them were chained up. It was just Alex speaking out of awkwardness with the silent room.

Now with the two having shared their stories together, all they could do was sit there and wait, they knew nothing about the planned execution nor what was happening above, but at least Quinn was pleased that it didn't look like the tenth were getting attacked anymore.

'As soon as they open those doors, depending on what will happen or what they will say. Depends on how I will act as well.'

Quinn wasn't a hundred percent with his ability to transform into the bloodsucker, while still staying sane. If something went wrong while trapped in the room he could end up attacking Alex which was something he didn't want to do, and he wasn't sure if he would have the strength to break down the door holding them inside either.

So he had decided as soon as he was taken out from those doors, that's when he would transform. That was when he would do what needed to be done.

However, there was a major problem with being a bloodsucker. His health would be incredibly low and he was unable to use blood skills including the blood bank. Essentially, one hit from one of the leaders or someone powerful and he could be a goner. A double edged sword.

That was why when he saw who had come to collect him, he was in for a bit of a shock. The sound of the doors opening was heard and it had been a while. What he didn't expect was for it to be a bald headed man walking in, and not one the ones who he enjoyed their company.

The door shut behind him, and now the only ones in the room were Bryce, Alex and Quinn.

"Are you ready boy, it's time for you to head out to your execution." Bryce said with a smile.

The stage was set and the vampires were having a weird sense of déjà vu as they looked upon the execution platform. It wasn't too long ago that Fex, a direct descendant, was the one to be executed. Now once again, the council leaders had gathered and were left standing on the ground of the execution platform looking outwards.

Some of the leader positions had yet to be filled, as the execution was deemed more important by Bryce, and Quinn's matter was to be dealt with first. So the vampire knights of their respective families stood in their place instead for the time being.

Finally, the King had arrived, with his two Royal Knights, following behind them, covered in a chain on their feet and hands were both Alex and Quinn. There were two short tables set for them, with a curve in it where they could nicely rest their heads, and on the stage itself, a clean, fresh sword that had yet to be used.

The executioner that had been selected was Muka. Who would use the blade to sweep both of their heads in one clean motion.

While being brought up to the platform, Alex kept looking at Quinn. He knew what Quinn had been practising underground and was wondering why he hadn't transformed yet.

'Weren't you going to escape before it got to this point, or is it because the King was the one that came to collect us?' Alex thought.

When Alex was placed in front of the table, there were many on the ground that couldn't help but gasp at his sight. Because now he wasn't hiding his wings like he

usually would. The ragged shirt he wore, with holes in its back, displayed his two wings on his back clearly.

"Is this why the tenth is getting executed, due to him having held a blood fairy?"

"Now it makes sense why they went to storm the castle!"

The vampires were soon filling in the gaps of what had happened, whether it was true or not, it was the only thing they could guess, and it didn't help that there were already rumors spread around about this very thing.

When Quinn was brought out to his own table, the vampires started to look around, same with the leaders.

Cindy, who stood in the middle of all the leaders, seemed quite pleased. She always had a smile on her face but this one was a little larger than usual.

'It looks like not a single one from the tenth family is here.' She thought.

However, she was wrong, very wrong. A few miles back on top of one of the regular households, Logan was in position. He had picked the highest regular house and with everyone away there was no security at all in the pooling area for the vampires.

On the roof of the building, he had built a strange contraption that almost looked like a sniper rifle. He had it propped up and was lying on his belly staring down the scope.

What he was looking at were two regular ordinary looking vampires. One which had curly brown hair, and the other next to him slightly taller with black hair.

"I hope we can pull this off Peter...and Borden." Logan said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 913: Getting an upgrade

A few days before an order from the King was received. It was to prevent anyone from leaving the tenth castle. By this time, Logan and Peter had left the vampire settlement already. Little did they know that their little trip to improve little Borden would turn out to be a blessing in disguise for more than one reason.

Leaving the settlement without anyone finding out was quite easy given Peter's ability to disguise himself and Logan as whoever they wished. Nobody raised a fuss when they went out of the settlement's gates as the guards were far more interested in those who tried to enter.

Once they were out of sight, Borden climbed out of Peter's large pocket and hopped onto his shoulder.

"Finally, I can breathe right!" He said while stretching his arms. He was looking forward to their destination.

Logan wanted them to go back to the lab where the supposed Dalki had been created, especially after learning that his parents had been kept captive there in the past. He felt like there should be a connection there and perhaps even a few things he had missed during the last time they were there.

As for why Peter was chosen to come along... he was the muscle of the group if needed. If they ran into any vampires, they could pretend to be some no-name villagers, but if that didn't work, then Logan was pretty confident that there weren't many that could take down both Borden and Peter at the same time, even if they ran into one of the leaders.

"I see you have taken a liking to Paul's gloves." Logan commented as they continued to walk through the forest.

"They are light, but there is still something missing to them. It just doesn't feel like me." Peter commented. "Do you remember a long time ago you let me try out the game? There was a weapon that I took a liking to, but I don't remember what they were called. Those things that looked like batons, only you held them?"

"Oh, you're talking about the Tonfas. Hmm, yeah they would suit someone like you. They would provide you with some extra range, and you could still use your fists to hurt your enemies.." Logan replied.

"Still, these are great because of how sharp they are, and I would want something a bit more secretive." Peter said, in a slightly excited mood. "Do you think something like that is possible?"

Logan considered Peter's request and he quickly came up with a design. Once they were back he would create a blueprint for a large blade that ran up each of his forearms, and when he wanted to activate it, it would appear out from underneath.

What made him think of this, was the active skill that Quinn would use with his weapon. This always gave him the extra range when needed once in a while.

"Alex has been taken, but there might be something I can come up with for you in the meantime. If everything is still at the base we're heading to, then I should be able to make you one before we leave." Logan promised.

He had brought a few items with him, mainly crystals of different levels for what he was going to do with Borden, but also some miscellaneous things that might prove useful. The base should also have plenty of equipment left over that would allow him to create a new beast gear weapon for Peter.

Eventually, they reached the base, only this time without running into any trouble on the way. They entered the mountain, and started to walk through the tunnels. Logan's memory was great and he remembered the way from last time they had come here.

When eventually reaching the glathrium made door, the same system welcomed him.

[Welcome Mr Green]

Entering the facility, it looked the same as before. It hadn't been touched, and there were many empty large glass containers big enough to fit a human in, filled with nothing inside, but had large tubes leading off to different locations. When they reached a crossing there were several doors leading to different places, and there was one room which Leo had told them not to enter, the last time they had been there, previously.

For that was the room with the Demon tier beast. Apparently it still had great power, more power than the Demon tier beast they had met before and it was possible that he would go mad if he stayed there long enough.

Heading straight forward, Logan entered a room where a large digital display nearly the width of the room was in front of him. Terminals with all sorts of stored information were in the corner of every room.

'This is the room where mum and dad had been kept for years and eventually made the Dalki.'

"It feels weird being here." Borden couldn't help but say. He recognised part of the entrance where they had come in from, but not the rest of it. He didn't have bad

memories of the place, but it was weird visiting the area where he had first opened his eyes.

Straight away, Logan went off to work, touching the several terminals and gathering what information he could. Before he had been skimming through information trying to find out what this place used to be, but now he had more of an idea.

There were several failed projects that had been created before the success that became the Dalki and he wanted to gather information on them.

His main concern was to discover why Borden was labeled to be an even bigger failure than the Dalki that had been created. After several hours of gathering information Logan had come up with a theory.

The Dalki were created using the Demon tier beast, part of that energy was also used in creating Borden, but at the same time when creating the green serum from Vorden, only low tier beast crystals he had on him at the time were used.

From what he could gather, the energy output from the Demon tier beast was no longer what it was before. It appeared that the number of Dalki that could be created from at least that particular Demon tier had hit its limit, and if there were any more that were created they would come out with problems, just like Borden.

'Was the vampire the one that set up the link between the lab in the tenth castle and this one? It seems like it had been kept a secret from the vampires and he was working from the tenth castle, he must have also been working here. Is that how I accidentally created a Dalki version of Vorden?' Logan thought.

If this was the case, then there was a solution to the problem, find a Demon tier crystal and somehow infuse that power into Borden. It would have to be one that matched with the original one that created the Dalki.

However, that seemed impossible, he could use any old Demon tier crystal, but that might only have a temporary effect, although temporary was fine for now.

If he didn't have Demon tier crystals, then he would just have to use the next best thing he had on him which was Emperor tier crystals.

"Is there anything that I need to do?" Borden asked.

"I just need some samples of your blood, but other than that you will be fine." Logan replied, as he got to work.

Just like before, Logan was hoping to create a few green serums the same as the ones received at the lab, but it would have to have Vorden's DNA imprinted inside it. Luckily he still had information from the last sample he had created, and Borden also shared the same DNA.

Then, using the Emperor tier crystals, he would create a better serum that could be injected into his body to give him more time. How much time, and if it would restore his body to normal, he didn't know.

Logan was working tirelessly, yet once in a while he would leave the room. He had Peter help him a few times, breaking one of the pipes leading to the large containers and seeing what was inside them.

There was some gold coloured liquid in there, and he took samples of this as well. It turned out that the gold liquid contained traces of energy from the Demon tier beast.

There were a few times where Logan was tempted to go look at the Demon beast himself, as he thought studying it further might give him more results or answers, however some information he had found out during his research had warned him against it.

It was a journal from his parents during the time they had worked on such a thing. Apparently there were a few times where they had entered the room where the Demon beast resided and images appeared in their head. The vampire that had held them captive had to drag them out of there after he had heard their screams and after that incident they had never ventured in there again.

Logan also made sure to pass on this warning to Peter and Borden, although he was unsure if the two of them would be affected like he was considering how they were.

Finally, Logan had gotten nearly everything down to the last detail. He had created the best serum he could possibly create, now there was only the last step needed. Melting down the Emperor tier crystals and adding it to the green solution, but when he went to look in his storage box, he also noticed a few bright red crystals in there.

These were blood crystals, the crystals harvested from the battle the tenth family recently had. He had been given some to do some research on, and he still had them on him.

'The vampire was focused on creating a blood substitute, so he tried to mix the beast DNA with humans to get human blood. There were also some attempts on vampires made, but vampire and human bodies aren't the same. Then what would happen if I used the blood crystal instead?' Logan wondered.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 914: A red beam

After spending a few days at the lab, Logan had gathered everything he needed. He had even found the time to create new weapons for Peter. As for the serum, there had been enough to create two vials of green liquid.

How long they would last for or more importantly what effects they would have on Borden, Logan was unsure. He suggested they should test one out before they left, but Borden insisted that he trusted Logan and he thought it wiser to have a second dosage just in case.

As for Peter, he still wore Paul's gloves on his hands since they were made with fairy blood. However, there were now two single long blades hidden under his clothing where his forearms would be, that could retract as he wished. It was safe to say he was pleased.

Luck seemed to be on their side, since just like on the way to the lab they didn't run into any trouble on the way back. When they had reached the vampire settlement, things seemed to be a little more rowdy than usual.

"What is going on?" Logan asked, as many vampires were out on the street all talking to each other excitedly. Yet, the tension in the air around didn't seem to bode well.

Using his hearing, Peter listened in to all the conversation he could, while Logan was gathering information via his small spiders. Between the two of them they quickly figured out what had happened while they were away, how Quinn's execution was set and how the tenth castle was surrounded by the Royal Guards to prevent them from doing anything about that.

'This is not good, if the others can't leave the castle, then how will Quinn get out of his predicament?' Logan started to rack his brain for a solution. In the end, it felt like that it may very well be down to the three of them, to break Quinn out of this whole mess.

Some time passed, and it looked like the execution was proceeding as scheduled as those from the families and pooling area were moving forward. Heading down a dark alleyway, the disguised Logan and Peter met up.

"Well, it looks like Quinn is going to have a hard time breaking out of this one." Peter concluded his research.

Logan nodded. "I also failed to find a way for those inside the tenth castle to escape undetected.." Logan replied. "The Royal Guards have made sure to have all our exits covered, however, I doubt that those inside the castle will do nothing. They will try and help Quinn escape. The problem is the Royal Guard's strength is nothing to laugh at, each one of them is meant to be at the same level as a Knight.

Even if they do try to break out, it will be hard to make it in time, especially since Bryce must have ordered the leaders to stop us as well.." Logan replied.

"Damn it!" Peter shouted in anger, nearly punching the side of the house they were meeting behind, but quickly stopped himself, worried his strength might give them unwanted attention. "Screw it all, I'll just have to disguise myself as one of them, and break the chains off Quinn. I'm sick and tired of all this vampire crap! Let's just break out and leave this place for good."

Quite frankly, Logan actually felt the same way as Peter right now. The vampires and the whole situation surrounding them was just tiring them out.

"Let me help." Borden declared. "If I use the serum I should be able to do the same as last time. As long as I can use my strength I can break the chains that are holding Quinn and Alex."

Although Logan wasn't against the idea, the problem was they didn't know how much strength Borden would regain, nor how long he could fight for. Fighting without that information would be troublesome and risky. What if Borden lost his strength in the middle of the fight and because of it lost his life as well.

"Don't worry about me." Borden said with a smile. He then moved his small hand and snatched the syringe Logan had been holding on to. Before the others could react, he had already injected it into himself.

"At the end of the day, I'm just a clone right? I just want you guys to promise me one thing. If anything happens to me, look after the kids from the Blade family and bring back Vorden." he said, grunting a little and falling to the floor.

At that moment, his body started to change, his body was growing by the second, and his hair with it, as it reached nearly the bottom of his waist. Soon, Borden was back to the size he once was.

Lying there on the floor with his clothes ripped off him, he started to clench his hands and touch all over his body, including the dangly parts.

"I'm back, it worked, my body is back to the same size!" He proclaimed excitedly.

"I have to warn you, we don't know if this is permanent or not, so please don't get too excited." Logan reminded him. "And you probably should not waste any time. Think of every moment as possibly the last."

"I know." Borden nodded. "We should act under the assumption that we don't have a lot of time, so let's get moving."

"First we need to get you some clothes." Peter pointed out.

This was an easy task, since nearly all the houses were empty, their occupants having left to go to the execution. Stealing some clothes for Borden to wear was

simple, but seeing Borden standing next to Peter had given Logan an idea. Something that would give them the best chance of survival.

Quinn suddenly noticed something. He could feel that other than Alex who was by his side, there was another connection out there in the crowd. However, he was unable to pinpoint where it was coming from exactly.

'Did someone come here to try and break me free?' Quinn thought, but looking over the vampires he didn't recognise anyone, yet that made him think of the first person he had turned. Ironically, that assumption did not make him happy in the least.

'Of all people, why the hell is he the one out here? He's going to ruin everything! My whole plan!' Quinn started to panic, yet there was really nothing he could do, especially since even he didn't know which one Peter was. 'Maybe, it's just someone wearing Peter's mask...'

Standing out in front of everyone, at the edge of the platform, was King Bryce. When he raised his hands, everyone in the settlement bowed their heads down, and then looked up at the King. This sight pleased Bryce greatly, making him almost forget about all the bad things that had happened as a grin appeared on his face.

"Thank you all for coming here today. Alas, today is not a joyous day." Bryce began his speech. "We are all here to witness the execution of the tenth family leader, Quinn Talen. He is a grim reminder to everyone that no matter what era we are in there will always be those who think of themselves first and foremost. As the new King, it is up to me to uphold our laws and the Vampire code!"

"Alongside him there is another member of his family, a subclass created by himself, who shall receive the harshest punishment! You may have heard the rumours so let me confirm, the tenth family has indeed been harbouring a Blood fairy!"

Hearing these words, a few gasps were heard between the people, but not many as there were only a few that knew what a blood fairy actually was.

"He is a subclass that is a great threat to us vampires! It is clear by keeping this subclass that the tenth leader has been planning to ruin the lives of us vampires, as he has already done to the late Royal Knight Dwight and so his punishment must match the crime! I decree that both of them shall be executed today!"

The sword was picked up by Muka, it could be seen in the distance as it shined and glistened even in the dark. He looked at the two of them, and shook his head slightly, but not enough for it to be visible to those watching from below, yet Quinn was close enough to see it. Muka didn't want to do this but he had no choice.

'After I stated that I would save you, I was unable to in the end. The only thing I can give you two now, is a quick and painless death. I shall perform a clean cut.' Muka thought as he started to walk up to the first person, who was Alex.

The sword was raised, and pressed against the back of Alex's neck. It stayed there for a few seconds, before it was lifted up in the air. It stayed there as Muka hesitated for a few seconds, but that was the perfect opportunity.

A red beam of energy came out from far off, and hit the very tip of the blade throwing it off balance.

"Now, that's our go sign!" Peter shouted, as the two jumped over the other vampires and were heading straight for the stage.

"You think, we didn't expect this?!" Cindy taunted, as three leaders including herself appeared in front of Borden, surrounding him. At the same time, the other leaders, including the Wight Vampire Knight that Peter had fought with, surrounded him.

The normal vampires left the scene as soon as possible, afraid of getting caught up in the ensuing fight. This wasn't the same as last time, where some leaders might choose to help out and some were not attacking, it was everyone against that of the tenth family.

The red beams of energy continued to fire out at Muka, but he carefully avoided them after having felt their power. Logan's sniper rifle used pure energy created from the blood crystals they had obtained.

Unfortunately, as a vampire leader Muka was too fast to be hit by them after knowing to expect them.

"I don't want your family to get hurt anymore!" Muka shouted. "So I shall end this, and with the death of both of you they will have no more reason to fight!"

Quinn, seeing Peter and a stranger coming to help, thought the fighting had already happened, and he couldn't let Alex die in front of him.

When the sword swung down at Alex's head, the sound of the wind being sliced could be heard, and soon after, half of the sword was seen falling to the floor.

"I was wondering when you would call me." Leo said.

"We have been waiting for this, don't worry we knew you would do this." Paul replied as well.

Seeing how Peter had joined in already, Quinn had decided that it would be finally time for him to use the system's summon skill, bringing both of his knights to his side.

"Good, now break me out of here, and let's get the hell out of this place, before I really start tearing all these guys apart!" Quinn shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 915: The breakout

From the very back, miles away, looking through his scope, Logan had a good view of everything that was happening. What he was surprised about was, even with the power of his new weapon and the use of blood crystals, that the leader Muka was able to avoid his attacks. Leaders were clearly stronger than he had anticipated.

As he was confident, if the weapon was to be used against a vampire knight, they would struggle to avoid such an attack.

The other problem was, unlike last time, Logan was hoping there would also be those on Quinn's side. Those that would not join the battle. That way, Borden or Peter would be able to get through, but that didn't happen at all.

When the sword was lifted, Logan started to imagine a life without Quinn for a brief second. What would be left of all of them after it happened? Would they be lost without a leader, would someone take his place, and would Logan be able to find out the truth of his family? Lastly, he realised how much of a loss Quinn would personally be for him.

However, the blade was stopped, and two of the people Logan had a lot of faith in were seen on stage.

He had no clue how Quinn was able to do it, but Quinn was always full of surprises, just like the towers he had made. What Logan liked, even more, was that both Leo and Paul were wearing the masks he had created for them.

Before, when arriving in the settlement, Logan had attempted to make a call their way, but the signal wouldn't even get through. He had a suspicion that it was quite possibly due to the Royal guards surrounding the area.

Maybe they had predicted that someone from the outside, or the human world would try to contact them, and had set up a device to block all incoming communications. Still, he knew his masks worked after testing them with Peter's mask. Which meant only messages sent within the tenth castle were being intercepted.

'A similar device used on as the teleporter blocker perhaps. If I have time to study these, I can find out how they are affecting our equipment.'

Now seeing the two of them there right next to Quinn, they could coordinate everything together. With three, Logan thought this was nearly impossible, but with Paul and Leo they might be able to pull it off.

"Peter, Borden, make sure the leaders don't reach the stage. Leo, Paul, I'm counting on you both to break Quinn free. If we can get out of this, I think I have a way we

can all get back to the human world. Sorry I can't help any more than that." Logan said, and everyone went straight into action.

On the stage were Bryce, Muka and the two Royal Knights that would always stay by the King's side. Kyle and Prima. Immediately, Leo went to strike at the cuffs surrounding Alex, who was closest to him. His sword had sliced cleanly through. The cuffs fell to the floor, and Alex was finally free, quickly moving behind Leo.

A material that even Quinn couldn't break with his natural strength was broken with a strike.

This was out of everyone's expectations, but they didn't know Leo was using the power of his second stage Qi. As Leo turned around to free Quinn next, another person had appeared in front of him.

"Your skills are adequate, but skill won't mean much if I'm faster than you," Prima said smiling, striking Leo across the chest with his small rapier he had in his hand.

Leo was unable to block the attack, but at the same time, when the blade scraped his skin, it did nothing.

"Does speed really mean much if I can defeat you in one strike!" Leo replied, striking diagonally upward, going across Prima's chest. Unlike his attack that had done nothing to Leo, Leo's strike had revealed a deep cut ripping through his clothes and piercing his skin.

'This is the tenth's Vampire Knight? Why does he have the strength of a Vampire Leader!' What was even more worrying was the wound wasn't healing, and a stinging pain was felt within him, that was soon starting to spread.

"You idiot!" Cindy shouted from below, off the stage. "Remember that the tenth family has been harbouring a blood fairy, and the report from the attack stated that they have weapons made from their blood, don't get hit! Remove it with your blood control now!"

But it was a little too late for that warning.

On the other side, Quinn had summoned Paul, and Kyle was now in his way, blocking his path. Just like when Paul had fought against Jill, he had wasted no time activating his soul weapon, and floating around in a circle were six green balls of poison.

However, this opponent was not as easy to deal with as Jill. The poison was fast, but if it couldn't hit his enemy, there wasn't much Paul could do.

Every time a ball would get close, Kyle was able to use his cape to block the attack, and then immediately, he would change it to a spiral, acting as a large spear, thrusting it forward.

Paul's poison was purely an offensive ability, so he had to rely on his speed to dodge the attacks. He couldn't focus on trying to attack with his poison ability at the same time.

'You know what would be good right now, if someone hadn't taken my damn gloves.' Paul thought, but he hoped that at least Peter was making good use of them right now.

For he was also surrounded by three strong vampires, one of them being the Vampire Leaders Jin, and Sunny, while the other one was a Vampire Knight, a Wight like himself.

For a second, Peter was slightly confused as he looked at the Wight that wore a hood, covering most of his head, but it still allowed him to see his distinctive facial features.

"Aren't you meant to be dead? Borden flattened your head last time?" Peter said, vaguely remembering the events when attempting to save Fex.

"That was my brother!" The Wight shouted in anger and was the first one to go in, throwing out his fist. At the same time, Peter did the same. When the two fists had collided though, there was a clear winner as the Wight's fist shattered within itself. Knowing what he was tough, Peter knew he would heal, so he used the spike gloves and stabbed them into his chest.

It was too fast for the Wight to react.

'How?' The Wight thought. 'I saw him fight against my brother last time. My brother and I are equal in strength, and last time he was outmatched. Could it be, his creator really has gotten that much stronger in such a short time?'

Peter was getting ready to use his new weapon to stab right through the Wight's head, finishing one of them off early, but before that could happen, some blood could be seen flying through the air heading his way.

A few seconds later and the blood exploded, it wasn't a large explosion, but it served its purpose as Jin just wanted the two of them to be split away. While Peter was startled, Sunny took advantage of the opportunity. She didn't have an ability that was that helpful in a fight, but she was still a leader who would be able to match Peter's strength and speed.

However, when she took a step forward, another red shot came out from afar and had stopped her from moving in.

'I have to be careful,' Sunny thought as she looked at the ground where the red beam had hit. It had caused quite a lot of damage to the floor. She remembered the

power from before, how it had nearly knocked the sword out of Muka's hand with his grip strength.

Although everyone was faring well, at the same time, Quinn was worried, as it didn't look like they would be able to do much, and there were still leaders and vampire knights that hadn't joined the fight.

Looking at Borden, two spikes had appeared out of his back, he wasn't using his full strength, but he was constantly trying to get out of the position he was in so he could at least get to where Quinn was.

'If I use more strength, then it might shorten my time.' Borden thought. 'But how much time do we have?'

The same thought was also running through Quinn's mind. Alex was on stage, hiding behind that of Leo. He was worried that if he attempted to fly, they would quickly hit him down out of the sky.

While Quinn was looking to his right at Alex, he didn't notice that a blood swipe was coming his way directly at him.

'I have to get out of here!' Quinn thought and started to fill in his energy with the red energy inside his body. Still, he soon noticed that this was a waste of time, as the blood swipe was blocked, and a shadow was cast over Quinn from the person's back.

"Why did you stop my attack!" Cindy shouted from below. "What do you think you are doing, Bryce?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 916: The truth

Leo's sword was continuing to clash against Prima's, but once in a while Prima's speed would win out and another small hit would be made on his body. After having removed the poison from his body, as Cindy had suggested, he was back to his usual self and was fighting at full strength. This time when attacking, he was more cautious than before.

'If I want to win this fight, I can't just treat this man as another Vampire Knight, I have to fight against him like he is a leader.'

What was strange though, was that Prima's attacks were faster after the first hit, and after a while longer of trading hits, Prima managed to get another hit on Leo's shoulder this time. Still, blood wasn't drawn, but when Prima came in thrusting multiple attacks, he was even faster than before.

'Now I have an idea of what is going on.' Leo thought. 'It's his ability. After he successfully gets a hit, he will get a speed boost, and it seems like his ability will stack with each hit. What an interesting ability, but there must be a time limit. As long as I avoid getting hit for a while, I will be able to return with my own attacks.'

Knowing this, Leo reverted to his own blood attacks, throwing out swipes of blood and keeping Prima's attacks away from him. For some reason, it seemed like Prima was desperately dashing in, hoping to get another hit in.

'Looks like I was right on the ball.' Leo thought.

However, he was soon distracted, for he felt an energy source heading towards Quinn. If he didn't do something, then Quinn would be hit by it. Leo was ready to act, but then he saw that one other was already moving before him, as if they were always ready to come in at any time and block any attack that would head Quinn's way.

It took a second for everyone to process what they had just witnessed. Even then, they weren't sure if what they had seen was correct, nor the reasoning for the person's actions. For some reason, the very King who had ordered Quinn's execution had just blocked an attack.

It wasn't until Cindy verified what they had seen from her words that they realised it wasn't a mistake.

"Bryce!" Cindy shouted again. "I will ask you again, why did you save that traitor's life?"

It was such a drastic scene, and confusion had spread so much that the fighting all around had stopped. After all, Bryce the King must have had a reason for

interfering, and there were those families that still didn't believe that Quinn was responsible and wanted to hear what was to be said.

"I didn't think you would actually come through on our deal," Quinn said, looking at Bryce's back. "I guess you at least kept your word."

Bryce scoffed a little and didn't even turn around to acknowledge Quinn's words.

"You are a lucky boy. You shouldn't thank me, things just happened to come through in time."

"Prima, Kyle, stand down," Bryce ordered, and even though they didn't know what was happening, they decided to comply and stepped away from both Leo and Paul.

"Cindy, you are shouting at me like I am another leader, but I do have to remind you that even during this moment, I am still your King!" Bryce said, with anger in his voice at those last words. He was no longer hiding the hatred he had for the person he was looking at.

His eyes had naturally lit up red, and there was something Bryce was never able to hide when he was angry. It was the veins on his hands that would show.

"I'm sorry, your majesty." Cindy corrected her tone, giving a slight bow and biting her lip. "But forgive me, have we not all gathered here, with the whole vampire settlement and its leaders to witness the execution of a traitor?"

"Yes, you are right," Bryce stated, looking back at Quinn, and nodded towards Leo. It was a clear sign that Leo was able to act without him interfering. Using his sword, he cut the chains off from Quinn's hands and feet, and he was finally free.

"So, he wasn't lying after all?" Alex whispered as he rushed over to Quinn's side.

"It seems to be the case," Quinn replied, thinking about the moment the two of them had met in the underground cellar.

Before their execution, Bryce had visited them to bring them out, but he had come alone. Without his Royal Knights by his side, it was strange, but when Bryce stated he wanted to speak to Quinn alone, it became a little clearer.

"Your execution has been set, and we have had some news about what has happened, but there still isn't enough evidence. However, I can't delay this any longer." Bryce explained. "The wheels are already set in motion. Quinn, what I need you to do is delay your own execution for as long as possible, you are buying your own time, and if you are successful in this, then we can all get out of this alive. Well, at least the people that should still be alive."

This was the reason why Quinn had decided in the end to abort his plan of turning into a bloodsucker once leaving the room, to do his grand escape.

However, Quinn was unsure why at this very moment, he had finally decided to intervene. What was he so desperately waiting for?

"Now, let's all find out who the real person is that has been working with the bloodsuckers, killed our Royal Knight Dwight, and has attempted to frame the tenth family for all these things," Bryce stated quite confidently.

Still, Cindy was unfazed, and even started to break out in laughter.

"Wow, so you really are trying to pull the wool over all my followers?" Cindy replied. "You have already become King. What do you have to worry about? Are you really now accusing me of all these things? Everyone knows that you have hated me because I was close to taking the position as the next Queen. Are you afraid that they might think you are unfit to be King? I would say if you are the one saving the tenth leader, then it is more likely you are covering up for something."

Those listening in to the whole conversation honestly didn't know who to believe at this point. For one thing, it was clear. Quinn did have a blood fairy, and Bryce had saved him, while there was currently no evidence for these crimes against the second leader. Not publicly anyway like there was with Quinn.

"Why do you think I have waited all this time to act?" Bryce stated.

At that moment, someone else was heard walking onto the stage, and it was an old face Quinn hadn't seen in a while.

"You did the right thing, believing in me and my father, Quinn. Thank you for not killing him back then." The voice said.

"Did she...regain her memories back!?" Quinn thought.

"That's right." Kazz said, standing at the front next to her father. "I Vampire Knight Kazz Cane was attacked along with fellow Vampire Fex from the tenth family, and it was all her doing." She pointed. "Cindy Cha of the second family."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 917: The one behind everything

Some families were aware that Fex had gone missing, however, they didn't know he was attacked or about the memory loss, and they definitely didn't know that something happened to Kazz. Her words were even a shock to them all.

Other than the thirteenth leader, Lee, this was the first time they had heard that Kazz had been attacked. Attacking one's vampire knight was similar to declaring war on that family, unless they had a good reason for doing so, or had been ordered to.

From the words she spoke, Quinn had gathered that it seemed like somehow, Kazz was able to regain her memories and this was the moment Bryce was waiting for.

'But how was he able to get Kazz's memories back?' Quinn wondered. By now Quinn was pretty sure Cindy was behind everything due to what he had learnt from Alex. With her ability she was able to return one's mind back to a certain point in time, similar to what she had done with Cia.

So Quinn wondered how Bryce was able to remove it. Was there someone with the ability to negate abilities, or possibly Cindy herself was able to reverse the reverse but this seemed very unlikely. Cindy would never help out Bryce. The main reason why Quinn wanted to find out was so he could help out Fex.

"I will now declare your wrong doings in front of everyone in the vampire settlement and to the other leaders!" Bryce said, moving forward and pushing Kazz slightly behind him. "A little over two weeks ago, Kazz and Fex were travelling together to return to my castle, when the two of them were attacked.

"Kazz's body was pinned to the wall, while Fex was taken away. Later on, Fex was to be found at the Bloodsucker settlement, and had been saved thanks to a collaboration act between the thirteenth and tenth family but there was one problem. Both of these had no memories of the attack and had no idea who had attacked them."

Seeing where Bryce was going with this, Cindy couldn't help but speak up.

"So now that your own 'Daughter' has regained her memories back, and she has pointed the finger at me, should we all just believe that I was the one who had done it? This just further proves my point that you two could have been working together all along. After all, we know the tenth was keeping a blood fairy."

Bryce didn't say anything, but gave her a quick stare, which caused her to take a slight step back a bit. He didn't move but it was a reminder that she shouldn't interrupt the King when speaking. So Bryce continued.

"In this situation, one would try to focus on regaining their memories, but if it was done via the influence skill, there would have only been one person who I could

rely on to get them back, those from the second family. However, I guess it was a good thing that I never did trust you Cindy." Said Bryce.

"I was focused on the why. Why would someone go through the trouble of attacking Kazz and taking Fex away? And why the need to frame the tenth leader as well. After the Royal Guards did some investigating, it was found out that they weren't the only ones that had a lapse in their memoires, but several of the direct descendants from the other families, were unable to remember what they were doing between certain hours of the day.

"Usually, this wouldn't be too much of a concern; it was only a brief moment that they couldn't remember but certainly strange. Yet, there is one thing that is needed to not only open the King's vault, but to also open the absolute blood book."

Now walking to the front comfortably, stepping one foot after the other was Quinn, and he didn't even have the best expression on his face either, as his eyebrows were frowned and the wrinkles on his forehead could be seen. Staring at the one person that had caused him so much trouble.

"It's nice to meet you again, Clown." Said Quinn. Thinking back to the person who had extracted his blood back when he was underground. "It's safe to guess that the guards protecting my Cell also have a lapse in their memory. Getting my blood, I don't have any direct descendants so you need to get the blood from me. Of course approaching the leaders directly to take their blood would have been impossible, so you aimed for Kazz, Fex and all the others."

For once, the usual smile that Cindy would have on her face had dropped, her hands were left hanging by her sides. She wanted to say something, but she knew she didn't have to. It still wasn't enough to convict her at all. Right now Bryce and Quinn were just acting like a bunch of detectives. Spouting links that could just be made up on the spot.

"Cindy." Bryce spoke, and she lifted her head again. "You think we stopped there? We learnt of all your plans, it's useless now. We know Jill, the eighth leader, was working with you. Her Vampire Knight was found with the Bloodsuckers."

Hearing her name, Jill's face was full of panic, and she immediately started to look around at what leaders were around her.

"And there's more!" Another voice shouted out, being marched in through the crowd, was the Royal Guards, and they had surrounded a group of people, in that group was Silver, and those close to Quinn from the tenth castle.

As expected, they were already planning to make their move, and when charging out through the front gate, the reaction of the Royal Guards was not what they had expected. The guards told them that they would escort them to the plaza, and Bryce had informed Silver of a little more that day then what she had told the others.

"An investigation was run into those from the second family. Out of all the families, the second family has had more vampires born than any other family, yet they never reached the limit. From reports they have also had the highest crimes committed that would be punished, and vampires perished under infighting. Yet, when we go to ask those in the second family, it seems like there is no such thing.

"I wish we would have found out sooner, but there was a clear pattern. All the vampire men that were promoted into the inner circle, didn't last long. They weren't just receiving a normal punishment, they were sent away to be turned into bloodsuckers, or vampire subclasses."

Seeing a sweat appear on Cindy's face, was giving Bryce a satisfied smile and he wanted to give her the last push over the edge.

"If you planned to take me out with that army of yours then that would be useless. Prima has already been sent out with a group of Royal Guards, and we got rid of every single one, apart from the blood fairy we kept for evidence of course."

Fex too had been brought along, and hearing this he was a little saddened. Silver looked at him for a second, and it was the reason why she hadn't told him. She knew he wanted to save them, but she also knew what Bryce's course of action would be after finding out.

"You're saying that I'm involved in this!" Jill said, placing the palm of her hand on her chest. "Just because my Vampire Knight was found, who knows what type of words Cindy could have used to threaten her. I have just been following orders from you this whole time."

"Both Kazz and Fex can verify that this happened to them." Quinn said. "And even Alex is a witness in all of this. The one that brought him to Cindy's castle in the first place as the original eighth leader. I find it hard to believe that you knew nothing about this. When the leaders are locked up in tombs below your castle."

Hearing this, there were many gasps from the vampires in the crowd and even the leaders looked at each other in disbelief. An original was woken up, and not only that but the eighth original.

"We can prove if what Kazz has said is true or not right now. Anyone feel free to use the influence skill on her and ask away." Bryce said.

Standing forward, the first one to volunteer for this act was Muka.

"You all know that I have been accusing Bryce and suspected Bryce has been behind this whole thing the whole time. So it's safe to say I don't trust him, and it is true even now. If I'm the one to use my influence skill, and Kazz is telling the truth we should all get our answer."

He walked up to Kazz, and Kazz was ready to allow him to use his skill on her. When the sound of clapping was heard.

"Bravo, bravo!" Cindy said, smiling once more. "There is no need to use the influence skill on her. You caught me, you were right. I was the one behind everything. You did so much digging. I guess the one thing I underestimated was for a bunch of vampire elite leaders to put so much trust in a human turned vampire."

Then grabbing her black dress, she pulled hard, ripping it completely off herself.

"But what are you going to do about it?" She said, with the red blood armour covering her entire body.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 918: Round two

As soon as Cindy had ripped off her black dress, everyone's eyes couldn't help but be drawn to what she was wearing underneath. Some had never seen Cindy wear anything other than her black dress, there were even rumours going around that she slept in it, and even when she fought just moments ago she kept it on.

Now, having taken it off, everyone could finally see what was underneath. It just wasn't what they had expected. To see the blood red armour. The red colour darkened on the edges of the armour, slowly getting more intense in colour towards the centre. Each piece was carefully crafted using one of the strongest blood crystals from the past. This armour was one of two that were known in existence.

"The blood armour..." Bryce said, as his eyes gazed Cindy up and down. He wasn't looking at her but the armour that she was wearing. Soon thoughts were beginning to consume his mind. That someone like Cindy, someone who didn't deserve it, was wearing this incredible armour made his whole body boil inside. His right hand was tensed so much that one of his bulging veins burst through the skin and was now slowly dripping onto the floor.

A first even for him.

It was expected that someone had to have the armour when the king's vault was found empty, but Bryce expected that there would be someone bigger behind this mess. How could the vampires let themselves be outwitted by her?

"So this means it's true, the Second leader was really behind everything."

"It has to be, otherwise why would she have the blood armour right now?"

The onlookers were visibly confused at the events that had occurred and had taken a step back. After having all those accusations thrown at her, she was now admitting to those crimes. However, showing the armour didn't mean she would be turning herself in, she was ready for a fight.

"Cindy..." Muka mumbled, not knowing how to feel. A lot of his anger thus far had been directed towards Bryce, and Cindy had even helped him and his people many times. After discovering the truth he felt guilty, not just because he had accused Bryce but for other reasons as well.

Cindy would often come by and visit the cells that were in the Fourteenth castle. It was normal for convicts to take their own lives, sometimes they even fought against each other and lost lives, but now Muka was learning what she had done to her own people. He feared that those prisoners suffered the same.

He was starting to realise that her willingness to help him constantly was just so that she could get closer to her own goal by getting him on her side.

'With her ability, she could have tricked everyone. She could have made it so no one remembered what she did, or saw where she had been, leaving no evidence behind. How...how were we all tricked by this person?' He thought.

There was a reason why Muka never suspected Cindy in all of this, because there was one thing that didn't make sense. Why go to all this trouble to get the blood armour and the absolute blood book?

If she had never framed Quinn for Dwight's murder, then both him and Jin would have still voted for her, making her queen. If she became queen she would naturally inherit these two items.

'Was she afraid that Quinn wouldn't give her his vote? No, even Quinn at the time only became suspicious due to Fex and Kazz. Meaning all of this started even before.' Everything she had done just sabotaged herself from becoming Queen in the first place, and this is what Muka didn't understand.

"Everyone clear the plaza now!" Muka shouted. "The second leader, Cindy Cha, is responsible for stealing the king's items, and for the royal knight Dwight's death! She is resisting and this place will soon become a battlefield!"

After Muka announced his warning, he also sent out his two knights to make sure that the crowd were to leave the area safely, and they did so quite quickly. Being caught in the crossfires of a fight between leaders would hurt many of them.

"This is going to be a difficult fight, Quinn. With the blood armour, you will need the help of the other leaders to take her down." Vincent horridly said.

"What do you mean, I understand that the blood armour might be strong, but just like the blood weapons won't it need human blood to activate its power? She might have a flask but then the blood will run out quickly. We just need to buy time." Quinn expressed his thoughts based on his own experience with his soul weapon.

Also after witnessing Arthur's fight, Quinn knew that unless a blood weapon got a constant supply of blood, the time frame it could be used for was limited.

"All of what you said is very true, but that's only if Cindy hasn't learnt from the absolute blood book. You see that book has special power. It treats all blood the same, including vampire blood, and when using it, it will power the armour as well. I'm afraid if she had the blood armour, she would have already obtained the book and has been learning it since the day she got it."

The vampires had left the plaza and now it looked empty with so few people in it, but those from the Royal guards and from the Tenth family had remained. They didn't want to leave Quinn alone for this one. They weren't able to help when he was captured last time, and many of the leaders were worried that there were others working with her.

At that moment, Cindy turned to Jill.

"Well, it looks like we have no choice but to fight ourselves out of this one. You know what to do."

Jill was still on the floor, on the brink of tears. She couldn't believe what was happening right now, but still she agreed as she got up off the floor, nodding her head wiping the tears away. Soon they weren't the only ones standing there.

In total, three additional men were now standing by her side, seemingly appearing out of nowhere.

Seeing this, straight away Leo and Borden attitudes had changed and they were ready to go for a second round. This was because one of the men that had appeared was the original Eighth leader.

"It looks like the Eighth family is heavily involved in all of this after all," Bryce said. "Judging by the fact that every past Eighth leader that is still alive is here at this moment."

Bryce was an old vampire, and he recognised them all. They were all the past leaders who had gone into eternal slumber, apart from the original vampire. However, Bryce knew who the original was based on old portrait paintings they had.

"Don't blame them." Remus said. "They are only following my orders and commands. Since the whole of the Eighth family is originally mine, they must comply with everything I say. Even if I have to force them to." Lifting up his hand, Remus snapped his fingers, and at that moment a large explosion in the vampire pooling area was heard, followed by sounds of vampires screaming in the distance.

"Prima, you are the fastest one, head with the Royal guards and go off to investigate!" Bryce ordered.

He did so, but soon explosions were heard going off in different areas as well. Bryce was startled about what was happening. He had killed all of those that they were hiding in the secret settlement. He thought that Cindy wouldn't have had a chance to coordinate an attack like this, so what was happening?

Because of this, he had no choice but to send off more leaders to investigate all the different problems that were going on. Sunny, Muscat, Lee and Muka were sent off to investigate as well, while the rest remained to deal with the trouble in front of them.

"Are you sure you can take us on with so few leaders?" Remus said. "You are going up against an original after all, and one that has the blood powers and the absolute blood armour."

"I don't understand!" Bryce said, pulling out his sword that was used against Quinn in their fight. "Why would an original be teaming up, or following the orders from the Second family, do you have no pride?"

"Pride?" Remus repeated. "That disappeared a long time ago. All I care about now is getting rid of the Tenth family!" Remus shouted, charging forward, throwing out a blood swipe.

It was aiming straight for Quinn, but it would never reach him as Leo stepped in front, smashing the blood swipe with his sword. Soon Remus felt a strong blow hitting him in the right side of his rib, chucking him across the whole length of the square.

Looking at who had delivered such a strong blow to send an original flying around like nothing, they could see a blonde haired boy, with three spikes sticking out from his back and scales running up his face.

"It's time for round two, and this time it will be longer than ten minutes." Borden said, cracking his knuckles. Meanwhile Leo stood behind him and prepared to back him up.

'What is a Dalki doing protecting the Tenth family!?' Cindy thought, grinding her teeth.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 919: Rooting for the enemy

The continued explosions were going off all over the vampire settlement and the screams from the vampires continued along with it. The vampires that had just left the square and were returning to their homes, were now suddenly running about in a panic and soon the sound of fighting could be heard as well.

It was apparent that the explosions going off all over the settlement weren't from any special devices of any sort, but it was from fighting. From vampires using abilities against each other.

The leaders that were sent off to deal with the commotion were trying their best to settle everyone down and find out where the explosions were coming from and what was just happening exactly. One of these leaders in particular was Sunny, leader of the Fifth family. She was extremely worried about members of her family as they were considered weak.

Her ability allowed her family members to communicate with familiars, but due to the rule surrounding familiars, there weren't many vampires in her family that had them, so they were to fend for themselves.

At the same time, not all vampires in the settlement were fighters. They had greater strength than your average human, but some didn't strive to be stronger and just enjoyed living their day to day life in the settlement.

Being from the fifth family she had more settlers than other families.

Trying to get to the commotion located closest to her castle area as quickly as she could, she summoned her familiar, and soon a large black wolf the size of a house was seen by her side with a horn sticking out from the top of its head. What was unique about this wolf was it was able to change its size and on its front paws it had beast equipment to power its attacks even further.

Shrinking down, the wolf eventually was the size of a small elephant and was now half the size of what it was before.

"Noir, I will need your help, we have to get to the castle as quickly as possible." She ordered, as she quickly jumped on the giant black wolf's back.

Noir noded, understanding what her master's desire was and was off.

Noir was fast, even hard for a vampire to keep up with. Her speed was her main trait that she used when fighting, but they didn't get far before Sunny had spotted someone she knew quite well. It was Rokene, with his own little black rabbit familiar, and he was crying out for help while dragging a student over his shoulder.

"He's hurt! Come on help!" He shouted.

Sunny jumped off from Noir and tried her best to help as she could.

"Here, give him some blood. He should be able to recover faster." She said while handing over a flask, but she knew she wouldn't be able to do this with all those she would come across. She only carried a few flasks with her for emergencies as most vampires did, but with this level of damage they needed something better.

"Can you explain to me what happened? Why is he hurt so bad, what is attacking them?" She asked.

"It's those from the Eighth family. Those in the pooling area and those from their inner castle. They're attacking everyone left and right, any vampire they can see, regardless of what family they are from. The other vampires have started to attack back, but.... Some of them are our friends. They are hesitant while the eighth family doesn't seem to care. Why is this happening!" Rokene shouted desperately, hoping that he would get an answer, but Sunny had no clue.

This wasn't something Cindy's ability was capable of, nor Jill's either.

'Are the whole of the Eighth family in on this, it can't be. Unless they were threatened with something, or does it have something to do with the original?'

While in the middle of her thoughts and checking if the vampire from the Fifth family had recovered, from the roof of one of the houses, a vampire had leapt off and was ready to claw their eyes out as it fell down.

Thinking fast and using her legs, Sunny kicked Rokene and the injured vampire away. With her strength she was able to send them quite the distance sliding across the floor. At the same time, she rolled backwards and the vampire's claws had dug into the ground.

It didn't take long after for Sunny to deal with the vampire. Once getting up from her roll she kicked his elbow, breaking it, then grabbed the back of the vampire's neck and slammed their head into the floor.

She lifted it again, making sure he was still alive.

"You have committed a great sin, attacking one of the vampire leaders!" Sunny stated, but realised saying any of this was useless. "Tell me why you are doing this?"

When looking at the vampire's eyes, even though he was looking at her, at the same time she felt like the vampire wasn't really seeing her.

"These images...these images, the voices...Get them out of my mind! You demons....you demons I need to get rid of them...I need to protect everyone...Get

rid of them all!" The man screamed, and soon, Sunny had hit him at the back of the head hard enough to knock him out.

"Those in the Eighth family are attacking everyone, but I don't think they are doing it of their own will. The vampires are losing their lives on both sides for no reason. Not all the vampires are strong enough to do what I just did, I have to help." She thought, gritting her teeth.

"We have to help everyone we can. Rokene, everyone I knock out I want you to pile on the back of Noir. Once we have gathered ten people, then take them to the Thirteenth family. Tell them to use their string to tie them up. We're going to try and save as many vampires as possible."

Back at the plaza square, fighting between the leaders and the others had already started, and it seemed like the other leaders that had been awoken were experiencing the same thing as those from the Eighth family.

When the other leaders tried to call out to them, they didn't respond and instead it appeared as if they were mumbling away.

At the moment certain groups had formed to fight against the leaders. Paul and Kyle who had just been fighting moments ago, were now going up against one of the Eighth leaders.

The vampire knights who were replacing Prima the 12th and Kyle the 7th family leader had also gone off to help on their order, for they feared that the opponents they would be facing were too strong.

There were rumors going around that the vampires were unsure of whether they were true or not, but it was commonly heard amongst the vampires that each generation the vampires got weaker and weaker as the blood line diverged. If it was true, even though they were leaders going up against other leaders it wouldn't be too easy of a fight.

The groups had teamed up, Leo and Borden against the original leader Remus, Paul and Kyle against one of the other Eighth leaders, David and Suzan against another eight leaders, and Jill against Jin.

Some of these groups naturally formed as leaders tried to make up for their weaknesses, and there were those like Jin who were confident in their strength.

As for those that belonged to the Tenth family that had come along, including Silver, they were busy dealing with the vampires that were beginning to enter the square. Those from the Eighth families were rushing to the square almost like mad men, and to support them was Kazz as well.

"Will Leo and Borden be okay against that original?" Quinn said, concerned but he had his own worries. Up until the last moment, they had been sedating Quinn with Suzan's needles, stopping him from recovering his power. However, thanks to

Bryce visiting him and the execution being delayed he was able to recover his MC cells and some of his Qi, but not all of it.

Using the shadow void skill he could create a space that allowed his MC cells to restore twice as fast, but then he wouldn't be able to see anything that was happening on the outside. It was a struggle but just thinking about it would waste more time.

If he helped now, he would only be able to fight at a fraction of his true strength, but there was one thing he could still do - turn into a blood sucker, but that was a huge risk.

"What's with that look on your face?" Bryce asked Quinn. "The day I ask you for help will be the end of me."

Standing by Bryce's side was Prima, who was ready to support Quinn and Bryce and also had a determined look on his face.

"The one that will cause us all trouble is not the Original, it's her." Bryce said, as the two of them were ready to take her on.

Quinn couldn't believe it, but right now he was rooting for one of his enemies.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 920: Kill anyone

As soon as explosions and fighting was heard all over the city, there was one person who had made the tough decision to break off from the group he was with and headed straight towards the settlement, diving right into all the fighting.

'With the others here, they should be alright without me, Quinn you won't hate me for this will you?' Peter thought as he ran full speed out of the square and between buildings. He continued to run and didn't care who got in his way, as he bumped shoulders with those in a panic, and even knocked a few people over on his way.

He ignored the cries of pain around him, and continued moving forward. In front of him, on the floor there was a female vampire, who was grabbing onto her teenage son. There were those who were fighting on the sides against each other and it looked like they were hurt.

Peter wasn't sure what was going on, but with all this happening he knew there was one person in trouble, Logan. Logan had remained far back in the vampire settlement giving them their support when needed with his new weapon. It was safe for him to stay away from the fighting, but now the fighting was everywhere.

However, with the vampires returning and the chaos and fighting going on between the vampires, Peter knew there was now a chance that Logan could get involved. Peter didn't think Logan was weak, he knew he could hold his ground but it was different here in this world.

Logan wore the spray that made him appear as a vampire to everyone else, but if one scratch appeared on his body, then all the vampires would be attracted to his blood, and not just the ones that were attacking the other vampires. It was possible that even those around him that were injured, would be wanting his blood to heal themselves.

At that moment, as Peter had reached a short distance from the woman and child, one of the eighth family vampires was seen leaping towards them.

"We must get rid of all the demons attacking the vampire settlement!" He screamed.

The mother's arm was bloody, while the boy was injured and didn't look like he could move very much. She gripped the boy tightly, bringing him in closer and placing his head across her chest.

"Our King, please save us!" She said, knowing that it was possibly her end.

Running past them, not slowing down, the vampire had come into Peter's field of vision.

"Get out of my way!" Peter shouted as he threw his fist. The vampire seeing this tried to block it, but Peter wasn't holding back his strength and when the punch landed, the vampire's torso was ripped from its body as it went flying down the street.

Quinn was just as strong as the other leaders, and Peter's strength was the same. Regular vampires would be no match for him.

The woman looked up and could just see a young man running off in the distance.

"Who saved us?" She thought, not recognising the vampire.

While going through the settlement, this had happened a few times. Peter didn't stray from his path and many vampires tried to attack him. Each one that did, he continued to deal with them with a single blow, saving other vampires all around.

"We were saved, but was there a vampire that strong?"

"I know him, I know him. He's from our tenth family." Another replied excitedly.  
"He's the special Wight!"

Some of them started to remember Peter from the Fex rescue mission. Right now though, they didn't care what family he was from. The vampires were just happy that someone was able to help them and save them from the attackers, even if it wasn't his intention.

Logan being where he was could see everything that happened and when it had happened. The vampires were returning to their homes from the square. They were all walking nervously after learning of what happened to Cindy.

But everything changed the moment the vampire with the curly moustache snapped his fingers. In an instant, some of the vampires that were walking with them started to grab their heads, and attacked those left and right.

There was great confusion, as the vampires from the pooling area didn't know what was happening, and were unable to tell friend from foe for a while. It was only later that they realised that it was all the vampires belonging to the eighth family that were attacking.

The only good thing was that Logan was in a high position, while most of the vampires were down below. He started to pack his weapon away, and changed his suit into the speed type.

'I have to get back to the tenth castle. That's the safest place for me right now.' Logan thought, as he used a grappling device, to swing him from building rooftop to another. He could hear and see the fighting going on from below, but he knew there wasn't much he could do.

Until the fighting eventually had reached the rooftops as well. Finally, vampires who were willing to fight against their comrades had appeared, and with two sides fighting it had gotten quite violent. One vampire was chucked up into the air, and as the two of them were falling both of them were swiping their arms firing blood swipes at each other.

For now, Logan thought it would be best to ignore them all, that was until on the large flat rooftop he was on, something had crashed in front of him only a few feet away, kicking up a storm of dust. When it finally settled, he could see that one vampire had defeated another, as one was on the ground lying dead.

'I would hope that the one that survived isn't one of the crazy vampires.' He thought.

The vampire turned to look at him.

"Another demon, we must protect the settlement at all costs." The vampire said.

"I guess, I was never meant to be that lucky," Logan thought.

He quickly activated the crystal slots located on his forearms and in turn two red blood energy blades were created. He would have to deal with this vampire quickly before others turned up, and he had to make sure he did it before the energy blades ran out of power.

In a fight like this trying to insert another crystal from his inventory into his suit of armour would be the death of him.

The vampire was quite wild in his attack, so Logan patiently waited for it to initiate. Even if a vampire was faster than him, he knew he only had to attack at the right time, and not attempt to randomly attack or dodge. Then, he would at least be able to do something.

As its claws swung out, Logan swiped his thin energy blade cutting right through the vampire's arm. It fell to the floor, but there was no sign of the vampire slowing down.

If you're in the air, how are you meant to dodge?" Logan said, as he changed his other blade into a cannon shot. Firing it right at the vampire's body hitting it straight on.

It was a risk, as he had used all the energy in his right arm using it as an energy shot rather than a blade, but it seemed to do the work, since the vampire was no longer moving, and most of its body had disappeared.

Placing another blood crystal in his arm Logan was prepared for anything, and was getting ready to head to the next building. He got his grappler ready and fired it out.

However, while it was in mid-air, and before attaching itself to the other building, a rumbling could be felt from underneath.

The whole building began shaking, and soon the roof itself was collapsing. Logan was falling through all sorts of debris and fell right through two floors to finally land at the bottom.

Luckily, his suit of armour had protected him from getting any external injuries, if he was to bleed now then it would certainly be bad.

'What caused the building to collapse like that?' He thought.

A few seconds later, he had found the answer, as pieces of the building were chucked everywhere as if they weighed nothing. Not too far from where Logan was, something was coming out from the rubble, and the first thing Logan could see was a pale bald head. Soon though, he realised as the creature started to stand, it was larger than a regular vampire and with all its other features on its body it was clear it was a Bloodsucker.

Straight away, it lept towards Logan, but it was too fast. Instead of trying to attack, Logan switched to his arms, to change into the defensive type of suit. The spiders worked quickly, moving parts of his armour to increase the size of its forearms.

Still, when he was hit, Logan was slammed to the other side, with the only thing stopping him was the house wall. With the strong impact, Logan could feel blood filling up in his mouth from internal damage, but he refused to let it spill out of his mouth.

He looked down at his arms, and the armour was destroyed but he wasn't cut.

The Bloodsucker was ready to try the same thing again. And even with its basic stupidity and attacks, Logan couldn't block it a second time.

"You should fight someone, who fights more your style!" A voice said, grabbing the back of the bloodsucker's head, and slamming it onto the floor. Then, from its forearm a blade extended outward, stabbing it through its head, killing it in an instant.

When Peter looked up at Logan, he could see no visible blood.

"Looks like I made it in time." Peter said.

Logan smiled, but soon his body started to jolt, and he couldn't hold it in any more. A couple of coughs were made, and the blood from his internal injuries had spread out across the floor.

"I'm sorry, I couldn't hold it in any more." Logan said, with his teeth and tongue covered in blood.

A few seconds later, and the place was surrounded with vampires. Vampires that were injured from the fighting, even those that were fighting each other just seconds ago, all had one thing in mind. They wanted Logan.

"Come on! I'll kill anyone who tries to touch him!" Peter shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 921: Borden's grudge

Seeing how everyone fighting in the plaza square was at least holding their ground for now, Quinn had decided to use the shadow void skill to create a dome around himself. It wasn't particularly large because it didn't need to be, but the first thing he wanted to do was regain his shadow MC points.

On the platform, the small little dome had been created and he remained inside. Quinn could have also used the shadow lock on himself. Taking him completely out of the fight, however in this space he was unable to regain his MC points as fast, and right now, time was a very important factor. At the same time sitting in the dome, Quinn started to meditate and he could feel his Qi energy coming back once again.

'Just wait Cindy, the second I'm out of here, I'll pay you back for all that crap that you put me through.' Quinn thought. 'Guys, just wait a little longer.'

It was almost impossible for him not to worry, while the rest were outside fighting.

Outside, the shadow dome was noticed by Cindy as well.

'That boy, he is someone I have to watch out for. He is a dark horse that could ruin everything, and with that shadow power of his it is a problem, especially if he calls him' Cindy thought referring to Arthur.

Seeing this, Jill looked towards Remus, and gave him a slight nod, and soon he placed his fingers up towards his head and twisted them slightly.

Those that had come from the tenth family were busy fighting members of the eighth family once again, only this time, they didn't seem to be as alive as before. Their eyes looked slightly dull. It was clear that something was up, especially their mumbled words.

However, in the middle of their fight, something strange had happened. They soon were ignoring those in front of them, and instead were trying to run past and head to the stage. That's when Sam spotted others coming from behind the plaza, and out from the sides. All the vampires were heading towards the stage.

"They're aiming for Quinn!" Sam shouted. "If his shadow gets attacked then it will lower his MC points and he won't have time to recover. We have to protect him."

Everyone had heard Sam's words, and were quick to act as they rushed over to Quinn's side, but they wouldn't reach him before the others did, and all the other leaders seemed to be occupied with their own fights.

Those from the eighth family that came from the other areas were seen climbing the stage, and Bryce and Prima had just let them past, without attacking a single one.

'I told you to stay out of this, we don't need your help.' Bryce thought.

As one of the vampires finally got up on the stage, he didn't have far to reach Quinn, but soon he felt something wrap around his feet, and he was thrown back down to the ground. Another vampire had climbed on the other side, and a stomp on its fingers forced the vampire to let go.

Standing on the stage were two girl's Silver and Kazz, and they wouldn't let any of the vampires get on stage.

Nate placed both his fingers in his mouth and started to whistle out.

"Look at that, we the tenth family have the baddest girls protecting our leader!" Nate said excitedly.

"Aren't they from a different family?" Linda tried to correct him.

But he ignored the comment and continued to cheer them on.

Now, on the ground floor, all those in the tenth family were also protecting the bottom area of the stage. They struck with their weapons, and used their shadow abilities to cover each other's backs.

Erin, in particular, was impressive as she was getting stronger each time she dealt with one of the vampires, but would alternate between attacking and helping the others, as the words of Leo went through her mind.

Layla, on the other hand, wasn't doing too well. She hadn't transformed into any of her other forms and was just firing out arrows, but finding it hard to not interfere with those fighting. It seemed like she was holding back her power, or she just had something else on her mind.

However, it didn't seem to matter. Although those from the tenth family were few and outnumbered, they were far more impressive than a bunch of regular vampires.

"It looks like the one that is controlling those from the eighth family is the one they call the original vampire." Leo commented. "Borden, if we want to stop the others from getting hurt, it would be in our best interest to get rid of him as fast as possible."

"Don't worry." Borden said, setting off kicking the ground with his feet. His powerful legs pushed off the ground beneath, and the floor was chucked up. "I'm already on it."

Just like before it looked like Remus was able to recover from Borden's powerful hits, but this time, Borden didn't want to give him the time to use his powerful abilities, so he decided to take the fight to a close combat level.

At first Remus seemed to be struggling, he was getting hit, and finding it hard to regenerate on the fly. With each punch delivered by Borden, it would destroy all the bones in that part of Remus's body. The others seeing this were wondering if this was something all original vampires could do, or if it was just special to Remus.

However, soon Remus was getting used to Borden's speed, and he was able to tap the fist slightly to throw them off edge so the attacks would miss. The momentum of Borden's punches were strong. So as long as Remus could hit his fist away at the right time, he could make it so Borden would carry on going forward and punch nothing but the air, at the same time his body was thrown off balance and Remus kneed Borden in the stomach hitting him away.

"Remember there are two of us this time!" Leo shouted, swinging his sword vertically. If Remus didn't do anything he would be sliced halfway through his midpoint, and even he wasn't sure he would be able to recover, especially with the bald man's strange abilities.

Using the blood hardening, he tried to block it as much as he could but the blade was still piercing through his waist. He had no choice, but to use his hands to activate the blood cannon ability. Firing them off towards Leo, he was hoping to take him out of the fight.

Loud bangs were heard as the two cannons successfully had hit, but it hadn't hit Leo, instead it was Borden. His hard scales were falling from his body, and green blood had been spilt, but he didn't have the face of someone who had just been hurt. His face was full of smiles.

"Do you not remember, the more you hurt me!" Borden shouted, grabbing both of Remus' hands while they were in the middle of healing from the blood cannon.  
"The stronger I get it."

Using his great strength, which far outmatched that of Remus, Borden was able to rip both of his arms from his body, and then without wasting time, he swung his own limbs at him, hitting him in the head. They exploded as they hit his body.

It was a gross site to see, as part of the arm was flung all over the place and blood was swinging everywhere.

"Let's see how much you can heal if I keep tearing off your body parts like this. It has to end at some point, right?"

Now with his arms in the middle of healing again, Remus didn't have much to attack either and could see the swordsman was coming at him again.

'This is really troublesome, I have to do something.' Remus thought as he looked towards Borden.

Then a few seconds later, as Leo was swinging his sword down ready to cut Remus's head in half, he felt a punch in his stomach hitting him away, sending him across the floor. Luckily, Leo was being cautious and had the second stage of Qi covering his whole body, but it didn't completely help him negate the damage.

Looking up at who had just done such a thing, he could see that the one that had hit him, was none other than Borden.

"Why are you attacking me?" Leo asked.

"Why, because you're the one trying to hurt the people I care about." Borden replied.

Leo quickly realised that whatever was affecting those in the eighth family, was now affecting Borden, and he was seeing Leo as his enemy.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 922: Attack attack

For a second, both Borden and Leo had the upper hand against the original vampire. Even for an original, it was too much. Although the original was strong and had good martial arts, he was only slightly better than Leo and Borden. And his strength was actually weaker than the three spiked Borden. With the two of them, it looked like they would soon win their fight.

That was until Borden suddenly switched sides and had attacked Leo. For some reason, Borden was mistaking Leo as the enemy, and now Leo was the one who had to face two against one.

'Well, it looks like your buddy has changed sides.' The cat spoke in Leo's mind, not literally changing sides. 'Do you want me to give you a hand? This could be a tough fight, and it would make it a two against two.'

However, Leo made sure his grip on his blade was correct, held it in both hands, and carefully looked at both of their auras.

'There is no better time to improve than when you are faced with death and a tough situation. One must take this to learn as much as one can. Making such a scenario like the current one would be impossible. It only comes every so often.' Leo stated.

'Exactly!' The cat said excitedly. 'If that wasn't the answer you were going to give, then I would have thought I had selected the wrong person, but I don't want you to die this early. If the situation arises, whether you like it or not, I will get involved, even if it means having to kill your own friend.'

Borden dashed in and was even faster than Remus, but similar to a bull, as long as you could direct where its attack was going to go. One should be able to avoid it, and that's exactly what Leo did with his soul weapon. Activating it, he could see the strong aura coming off from the Borden, and started to direct it to a certain place.

Borden felt like his punch was being sucked into a certain spot, like a vacuum and had eventually hit the air by Leo's right side.

Due to Borden's incredible strength, it wasn't an easy thing to do, and Leo was wondering how many more times he could do such a thing. At the same time, he was preparing for an attack from Remus, but it never did happen.

"Remus, I'll get you!" Borden shouted, swinging another fist. This time Leo had to block it with his sword, and at the same time, he dragged the energy away to weaken the attack. Touching his skin, Leo also moved some of his energy into his own body.

Due to Borden being half-human, the Dalki energy was more similar to that of Qi, or a beast. There was no risk of turning into a Bloodsucker himself, like if he was to take Remus energy.

'Why didn't the other vampire attack? It was the perfect opportunity, and I'm sure they would have had time.' Leo thought, at that moment, a few blood bullets came out his way, but Leo was able to block them all and soon after, Borden attacked him again.

Now, Leo was starting to understand. The two of them were attacking him, but not at the same time. Whatever Remus was doing to Borden most likely took a lot of effort. So if he wanted to attack, he would have to break his concentration for a few seconds.

To Leo, rather than fighting two at once, it felt like he was more fighting one after the other, and Leo had a good guess what was going on with Borden right now.

On the battlefield before Paul had fought with the eighth leader Jill. The two of them discussed what had happened back then. She had injected thoughts into his head from others around the battlefield. What if someone with a more powerful ability was able to show someone images, and what if they could make up those images.

Was that why the eighth family were attacking everyone calling them demons, and why Borden was mistaking Leo for Remus?

'It is also the reason why he is unable to use the ability against yourself, someone who does not rely on eyesight.' The cat added.

Whether or not Leo had figured things out or not, didn't matter. Because Leo had his own way of dealing with things. Ignoring Borden, for the first time, Leo was the one who charged in first, and he did so against Remus. Following quickly behind him was Borden, and it would be impossible for Leo to outrun Borden, but it was never his plan in the first place.

Everyone was quite close in the fight, and Remus would be distracted, sending certain images to Borden's head. His reactions would be slower. With him charging in, he would have to either cancel the images he was sending or fight himself.

"You think I can't fight you with at least one hand?" Remus said, as he fired blood bullets at close range toward Leo, he had blocked a few of them, but also a couple had gone into his arms and shoulders.

Ignoring the pain, and moving the Qi around his body to support those hurt areas, allowed him to push through.

'I'm not going to be the one that takes you down!' Leo thought, using his soul weapon at the last second. He moved out of the way but changed the flow of

Borden's aura behind him, so he could direct the attack to where he wished. That's exactly what he did. Borden's punch wasn't heading for him now but was heading straight for Remus.

A powerful punch was felt in his gut, blowing it half away. Seeing this, Borden screamed in anger.

'Are the images still being shown in his head? If Borden is seeing me as the vampire, is he seeing Remus as me?'

Even angrier, Borden went to punch Leo again, with even greater power. However just like before, using every last bit of his soul weapons energy. Leo was able to alter the aura and redirect his attack so it would hit Remus's head.

The punch this time, hit the right side of Remus's face and had blown half his head off, but Remus still had a smile.

"Do you think I would die before getting my revenge on the tenth? You think this pain is even the same as I went through, being experimented on! None of the vampire families deserves to live, they just sat there and did nothing, and that cursed tenth family is still alive! Bring me, Jim Eno! Let me skin him alive!" Remus shouted, without realising he was lying on the floor staring at the sky, unable to move.

His body was already starting to heal, but his power over Borden had finished.

"Here, use my sword," Leo said, panting, giving him the sword created with the blood fairy's blood. Leo was spent, his energy was used to redirect Borden's attack, and it had taken up all of his soul weapons power. "Also, carry me on your back."

The vision had ended for Borden, the second he had hit Remus in the head. When he saw his body falling to the floor, and Leo by his side sweating, he quickly understood what had happened.

Doing as asked, Borden put Leo on his back, and then he could feel something strange. A warm feeling in his body.

"It looks like the Dalki have Qi as well," Leo commented while moving the energy around his body. "Although I don't know if it's a good thing or a bad thing. It might be good now, but to learn that our enemies can get even stronger is frightening."

The reason why Leo wanted to be on Borden's back was so he could use Borden's own Qi, and from it, use the second stage Qi to coat the sword in his hand. With the blood fairy's power and the second stage of Qi. There should be no healing for the next thing they were about to do.

Walking up, Borden didn't hesitate to slice through Remus's head, and then soon stabbed him with the sword in the chest. A few seconds later, and it looked like Remus's body was turning to ash that was being blown away in the wind.

One of the original leaders had died.

At that moment, the vampires that were trying to scale up the platform attacking Quinn had stopped. They were confused at what was happening, and the sound of fighting all over seemed to end.

It was only when the cries had quietened down that Cindy had realised what had happened.

"That useless piece of crap. I healed him when all he had left was his head, and then he goes and dies just like that. I see now, too much time was spent on the originals, and we always saw them as gods, but now I see that it wasn't true at all.

"What god falls that easily, right now, I would say I am more of a god, wouldn't you agree. King Bryce." Cindy said, looking at Bryce's bloody hand, holding onto his sword, and Prima, who was passed out on the floor next to him.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 923: Raining blood

While Borden and Leo were busy fighting the Original vampire Remus. The others were all busy dealing with their own opponents as well. There was no slacking or time for any of them to rest.

Paul and Kyle were both fighting together. Although, it turned out the rumours about the older generation vampires being stronger were true. While fighting, Paul and Kyle would both use their blood swipes together just to match up with one of the eighth family's past leaders.

If they didn't then the old leader's swipe would overpower theirs.

However, just because one had the strength of two people, it wasn't the same as fighting two and the eighth leader would soon find that out. Paul had activated his soul weapon and was using it well, attacking him all around.

At first, the leader was able to dodge a few of the poison balls, but soon he found himself trapped by Paul's ability. Although the poison ability was something new to him, his soul weapon was not. He had years to perfect how to use his special earth balls created from his soul weapon, and he now could do the same with his poison.

The good thing was, even if his poison was cut or hurt, they could reform, and touching them with one's skin wasn't the best idea as the leader was finding out. From a desperate attempt, the leader started to use his blood skills, firing off blood swipes, blood bullets and more, but not a single one touched Paul.

Not because of Paul's super skills or speed, but because Kyle was there protecting him with his special cape ability.

"I'm not foolish enough to not know you are on our side, and you're the best chance we have of getting rid of this guy as quickly as possible." Kyle said. "For now, let me be your shield."

It certainly was strange, someone Paul was fighting moments ago, was now protecting his life, but he was glad to have him on their side. With that, the two of them inched closer and Paul continued to use his soul weapon with the poison balls.

'This strange ability.' Kyle thought as he watched him and continued to block attacks. 'It's as if his ability has a second form. Can all past humans do something like this?' He started to wonder.

Although people didn't like to talk about it, vampires were always said to be split up into two groups; those that thought they should protect humans, and those who thought they should rule over them. However, during Kyle's time he found a third group, one that was afraid of humans. Usually these would be grouped in with the second one.

They wanted to rule over them, so the same thing couldn't happen, and Kyle was wondering if this was one of the reasons.

Eventually though, when Paul got close enough, all of the green balls had stopped moving and fell to the ground. It was so sudden that Kyle was unprepared for the fist that was coming their way. He could move, but then Paul would get hurt.

'Damn you!' He thought, as he turned the cape into a solid shield, and took the force of the punch head on, soon multiple punches were coming their way and Kyle didn't know how much longer he could hold on for. His hands were becoming numb, blocking the attacks.

"What is wrong with you, have you suddenly gotten sick you fool!?" Kyle shouted.

But Paul found it hard to hear his words and was touching his head wincing his eyes as if he was in pain. Once again, just like before, Paul was experiencing all the strange voices in his head. Cries of the people he knew.

'Wait.... How can that be possible, the only people here are those close to Quinn.' Paul thought, as he noticed he couldn't hear any of their voices, but just voices of those he truly cared about at the tenth castle.

At the moment, the tenth castle should be safe, or at least one of the safest places.

"Just hold him on for a while longer." Paul grunted, and held out his hand. The poison that had fallen to the floor started to form into the ball shapes again, and soon they joined together to create a large ball of poison.

'These voices, they are all fake, I will make you pay for making me hear the screams of my people. I fight so they or any of the human race will never have to feel this way.' Paul said, moving his hands towards his body.

The large ball of poison was heading for all three of them and was as large as a human body.

"Cover us!" Paul shouted.

Listening, and seeing the green ball. Kyle quickly changed the cape from a shield and covered both of them like a blanket.

Now the leader thought he had his chance, the less material used by the special cape meant that it was weaker. However, soon he felt a searing pain hit him on his back, and it covered his entire body, soaking him from head to toe. It entered through any holes that could be found in his body and the more poison that was entering him the weaker he was feeling.

Some of the poison had continued to move forward due to the momentum, but it had only hit the outside of the cape.

"We should be safe now." Paul said, and Kyle thought the same since they weren't being bombarded by fists. Taking off the cape, they could see that the leader was on his knees, his eyes lifeless.

A huge amount of poison that no human or vampire could take had entered his body.

"We..." Before Paul could finish his sentence, his vision was blurring and he started to fall over, but before he could, Kyle caught him and placed him on the ground.

"You are a strong one, but it looks like whatever you did used too much power. You deserve to rest, but I still have someone else I must help." Kyle said, looking at the King.

Bryce had let Prima charge in first, and Bryce was carefully watching the two battle. Cindy had a supportive ability so she wasn't the strongest of leaders, but he knew they needed to be careful due to their blood ability, but as long as Prima could keep her busy she shouldn't have the chance to use the ability.

So right now, Bryce was waiting for the right time to act, however, the right time never came. Prima was hitting Cindy with his rapier sword multiple times all over her body, and with each hit, his speed increased. This was his ability, but it seemed like his attacks were doing nothing with the armour on her body, and the small scratches he was making on her face, the damage would be reversed.

Then, at the right moment, she grabbed the rapier weapon with her bare hand.

'Huh, when did she have such strength, is it the blood armour?' Prima tried to move, but she was too strong.

At this point, Bryce knew that Prima was in trouble, and also tried to charge in, but the rapier had melted in her hands, back to the liquid form it once was when it was made.

"Do you have any idea what power I have obtained?" She said, and soon the blood lifted from the ground from those dead vampires around, and the blood from the fights around them. Using it, she had formed little small pellets the size of bullets.

Everyone who was at the plaza could see it, and it looked like rain of blood had stopped mid air.

"This is bad! She's going to hurt us all!" Jin said, seeing such a thing.

Moving her hand, the thousands of blood bullets in the area came shooting out towards them. Those in the tenth family next to Quinn, told Kazz and Silver to come close to them and they raised their shadow, blocking the attack.

Jin had cut himself and used his own blood to create explosions around him, to stop the bullets from reaching him.

Borden, with the strength he had, decided to try and cover Leo's body taking all the hits himself; and Kyle had covered himself and Paul.

The bullets went at such a speed and had entered Prima's body going through him like they were nothing. Soon thousands of small pellet shaped holes could be seen through his body. As she let go, Prima's body fell to the floor. Unmoving, but no one was sure if they were alive or dead.

Many of them that were prepared managed to protect themselves, but when Jin looked at his opponent Jill, who he was fighting not too long ago, he could see she was unable to avoid the attack. She had protected herself with blood hardening as much as she could, but had been hurt quite badly by the attack, it didn't look like she would be able to fight anymore, and instead he thought his best use would now be going up against the person who had just caused this mess.

Bryce had done well to block the attack with his ability. Nearly everything that came within a certain range had been blocked.

"I admit the absolute blood book is strong, but in your hands I know it will be the weakest it has ever been. You have only had it for such a short time, and won't know best how to use its powers." Bryce said, pointing his sword towards her.

"Let me show you how undeserving you are, of that power you have." Bryce said, taking the flask from his side and throwing it onto his blood weapon. It started to light up red, as the power within the sword was beginning to activate.

Those from the platform stayed where they were and continued to watch the fight down below. They knew that they weren't strong enough to get involved after what had happened, but also many of them had no clue as to those that were fighting right now, especially of the new king.

"Should we help Bryce?" Silver asked, standing next to Kazz.

"My father is the strongest vampire of all the leaders. Unless Arthur himself appears in this battle there is no one he will ever lose to." Kazz said quite confidently, but for a second, her eyes looked slightly behind her, at the person who was inside the shadow dome.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 924: Eat it!

The bloodlust could be felt in the air, and as Peter looked at all the vampires that surrounded them, each of their eyes were glowing red, saliva dripping from their hungry mouths. Some of them were covered in wounds, as they were fighting against each other just seconds ago. It was amazing how their natural instincts had come out the second they had all smelt the same thing, human blood.

Usually to Logan, vampires appear quite human in his eyes, they had emotion, high levels of intelligence, but looking at them now, they just looked like wild beasts. Where their urges had taken over every thought in their body.

It wasn't only those in the eighth family that were eyeing up Logan, but also those all around in the area as well.

"Is it a human? What is a human doing here?"

"This smell, its so sweet!!" Another screamed, piercing its own skin with its finger nails from its excitement.

A lot of these vampires were from the pooling area. Other than the same blood they got everyday from the packs, they had never smelt pure fresh blood.

Logan was up against the wall he had been hit against by the bloodsucker, and Peter was now standing in front of him. His back that usually looked small had never looked so big to him at this moment.

"Peter, it's best if you stay in this position." Logan tried to explain, but the pain from the internal strike was hurting him greatly. A sharp pain was felt with every breath he took. Unlike the others he didn't have Qi to support himself, and now was regretting that he didn't attempt to learn it a little. "If we are up against this wall, then they can only come at us from the front..and Peter..if you think you can't make it out, then just leave." Logan said, and hysterically started to cough out even more blood after.

More blood spilled onto the floors and finally the first vampire couldn't take it anymore. It was a vampire that held onto its broken arm and was covered in wounds. It looked like it would fall over at any second.

"Logan, shut up and stop making my job harder!" Peter shouted as he punched the vampire in the head coming towards them, and smashed it on the ground for it to never get up again. Soon another one was in front, and Peter kicked it with his leg as hard as he could, sending the vampire tumbling into the others.

A blood swipe from another vampire had hit his body but it didn't do much and Peter continued to use his great strength to show them all they were no match for

him. His speed, his power was all on another level, and even though he couldn't use blood powers, it was useless at their level, compared to his healing abilities.

"Come on! You little craps. I'll blow all of you away!" Peter shouted continuously hitting every vampire that he could see.

A part of him inside thought that they might give up, but seeing their precious meal right in front of them, they never did stop, no matter how much Peter was hurting them.

One vampire that had parts of its body crushed was crawling across the floor, and it wasn't until Peter stomped on its head that it finally gave up, or at least was dead.

Soon he was getting piled on by the vampires, but thanks to the special weapons and claws he had borrowed from Paul, he was able to scrape their bodies off them, tearing them limb from limb. As the fairy blood entered their bodies, their movements slowed down greatly as well.

Logan, who now had his back leant up against the wall couldn't believe what he was seeing. Peter was taking on an army of vampires all by himself, his weapons and clothes were soaked in blood, and it didn't look like he was slowing down.

This was because of what Peter was. He was a Wight, someone who never tired or ran out of stamina, but had the strength of the one who had created him.

However, eventually a few vampires had gotten through Peter. Logan lifted up his arm and was ready to fire out his energy cannon at the one charging towards him, but he didn't have to.

For one of the vampires that had been beaten at the beginning, had stopped the other vampire, as if it was a human meat shield being used just to protect Logan. Soon another one was standing by his side.

Logan understood what and who they were now, they were the lesser wight's created by Peter. Even while fighting, Peter was going to keep his promise and protect Logan no matter what.

Seeing this, even though in pain, Logan felt like he needed to do his part. He had run out of the blood crystals given to him from earlier, but fighting against regular vampires they weren't really needed that much.

Instead, he inserted the King tier crystals he had on him, and started to fire energy blasts at the vampires that would get past Peter or cause him the most trouble.

Soon after though, the vampires had eventually stopped, not because Remus had been killed, but because there were no longer any vampires in the area, that was after Logan. It was quite the sight to see, as in front of Peter and Logan, there were hundreds of dead vampires on the floor.

When it was finally over, Peter was seen kneeling over on the floor holding his stomach.

"Peter, what's wrong?" Logan asked, but was still hurting from his own wounds. The reason why he was concerned was because Peter shouldn't be tired. He didn't have stamina like the others.

"I'm so hungry!" Peter shouted, and screamed as if someone was grabbing down into his stomach and trying to pull something out.

Of course Peter would be hungry. His body was constantly healing while he was fighting all of those vampires.

While Peter was lying there on the floor, for the first time Logan was seeing something happen to him he had never seen before. The wounds on his body that he got close to the end, they weren't healing and they were opening slightly.

'Is this, because he hasn't consumed human flesh.'

In front of his very eyes, Peter's body was decomposing, his muscles tearing down in front of him.

Standing up, Logan started to move towards him, he wobbled as his legs were shaky, but used the spiders to reinforce his legs creating a small suit over them.

"Peter.."

"GET AWAY!" Peter screamed. "Do you know how hard it is for me right now not to attack you!"

It looked like Peter was fighting every urge in his body to eat human flesh, and unlike the last time. Logan had none on him to give to Peter.

"Peter, if you don't eat something, it looks like your body will completely decompose and you will cease to exist." Logan explained. "I know you have a great healing ability, but there needs to be an energy source for that, and for you that energy source is human flesh. Luckily we have human flesh right here."

Placing one of the beast crystals into the top of his forearm, an energy blade was created from the palm of his hand and without hesitating, Logan sliced through his arm. It fell to the floor and quickly Logan used the end of the energy blade to sear the wound closed on his body.

He grunted, holding in the sheer pain he was feeling as the wound was burning up, but he needed to stop the bleeding, otherwise he would soon be dead.

"Take it!" Logan shouted. "Take it and live, Peter!"

Peter glanced at the arm that was on the floor for a second.

'What is this idiot doing? He isn't a vampire, or a wight. If I eat his arm, it's going to be gone forever. He will never get it back.' However, the pain to fight what was in front of him was only getting stronger.

In the end, he closed his eyes, and started to bang his head against the floor. A few seconds later though, he felt something grab the back of his hair and lift his head up.

"Eat it Peter!" Logan said, shoving the arm into his mouth.

What happened after that, Peter couldn't remember and had no clue, but when he regained consciousness, he could see that Logan was leant up against the wall and his own wounds had healed.

He walked up to Logan, and could hear the sound of him breathing. It was a relief for Peter, and he was glad that he hadn't eaten any other part of Logan.

"You might just be the craziest person in the Cursed family." Peter said. "I will never forget this Logan, I promise. Everyone keeps protecting me, and I now have a lot of favours I need to return." Peter thought as he looked off into the distance, as he could feel something.

The connection in his body had activated, and even as far as they were, Peter could finally feel Quinn. He couldn't feel him during the fight, but it looked like something had happened, that had awakened Quinn's power.

"Quinn, I hope you can give that bitch everything she deserves!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 925: A king doesn't yield (Part 1)

As if the heavens knew that the battle everyone was about to witness was going to be a great one, rain drops started to fall from the sky. It was a very odd sight for those from the Cursed faction as it was the very first time for them to witness this weather phenomenon on the planet.

Normally, when looking up one would only be able to see the dark sky. The only light source they had came from the moons and that from the crystals, making it hard to discern if there were even any clouds above them.

The blood attack of the second leader had made it clear to everyone present that Cindy was wielding tremendously great power. Blood skills of that magnitude were supposed to have major drawbacks, either consuming too much energy or hurting the user, yet she looked completely fine, ready to use it again at a moment's notice.

Kyle, uncapping himself and Paul, had managed to survive the attack, but he didn't have the best look on his face either. The cape was linked to his ability and just like with any other ability it could be exhausted and by the looks of it, he was nearing that point.

Still, he wasn't quite done yet. Kyle quickly lifted Paul off the ground and went straight ahead to the stage where the others were, handing the tenth family's second Vampire knight over to the hands of those from the Cursed family.

"Hard to believe that he used to be a human, a shame that boy got to him first. I would have loved having someone like him as a subordinate." Kyle stated. "He shouldn't be too hurt and as a Vampire knight he should heal in due time."

Kyle looked towards Prima who had remained motionless on the ground all the while. He checked in on him, elated to see that he was severely injured, but had not lost his life yet. "If we can get out of this alive, that is." There was little he could do for the other, so as cruel as it was, he left him lying there, hurrying to Bryce to help out in any way possible.

"What should we do? Nate asked. "Should we stay here, or try to get to the castle? If Quinn gets out, we should be able to get there with his Shadow travel, right?"

"The teleportation jammer is still up around the tenth castle." Kazz pointed out. "The King hadn't receded his order since he didn't want you to run away. Besides, going back to your castle will do nothing. Unless we defeat her here and now we'll all be dead."

The others could tell that Kazz had a lot of confidence in her father, but after witnessing what Cindy had just done, they just couldn't see him winning. He might be the current Vampire King, but she was the one who had learned the Absolute blood skill.

Would it even make a difference, if Quinn managed to make a full recovery?

"I don't know about you, but I lost most of my MC after that attack just now." Sam mentioned. "I don't think we should join in. We aren't a match for any of them and we will just get in the way if we intervene. It's possible that she will use more wide area attacks, so we should focus on making sure Quinn remains safe in that dome. Our best option right now is to stay put and pray that he comes out soon!"

Hearing Sam say this strengthened their resolve. It was a bitter pill to swallow, but there really wasn't much else they could do. If they were going to die anyway, they may as well do it facing their opponent with everything they had.

One more person joined the stage and was quite heavy footed as he landed. So much so that his feet actually went through the stage slightly. Borden was covered in green blood, dripping from his legs, shoulders and c.h.e.s.t nearly everywhere, with a lot of it ending on the unfortunate Leo in his arms.

The only places that seemed to have remained relatively safe was where he would often grow his Dalki scales from. Around his facial area and his forearms, yet it was clear to see that they were not that much better off than the rest of his body.

Alas, Borden lacked any abilities or skills to block the previous attack, having no other choice but to rely on his body's resilience. He hadn't had much time to think about it, as his primary concern at the time had been to protect Leo who had run out of energy after their fight and whose fate would have sealed if he had gotten hit.

Placing Leo on the stage, Borden was a little wobbly as he practically fell over from exhaustion. The first one to rush over to him was Layla, hoping she could do something.

"Vorden!" She shouted, as she knelt by his side. "Sorry, I mean Broden, is there anything I can do? Do you need blood?" If she had been in her right state of mind, then perhaps she could have attempted to use the negative emotions to transform and use some of her healing abilities on him.

"Don't worry about me, I'm used to losing a lot of blood. Besides, this Dalki body is stronger than you might think" Borden was half joking. Although it was true that he often got injured in that form, he wasn't exempt from experiencing all the pain that came with it. Nevertheless, it was true his body was tough and while the injuries might have killed anyone below the level of a Vampire noble, he was able to still joke around.

Even now with all his wounds, he had this strange energy inside him. If there was an opponent that was ready for a fight, he would be ready in an instant. Borden also hadn't forgotten that in the worst case scenario he still had one more syringe. 10 minutes had long since passed, yet his transformation had still not disappeared.

In fact, he wasn't sure when or if it would run out.

'I will have to thank the little guy later.' Borden thought with a smile.

At that moment, Bryce had thrown blood from his flask on top of its weapon and the centre part of it started to fill. Kyle was now standing by his side, while Jin stayed behind, waiting for the perfect opportunity to jump in.

He took out his own blood weapon, a shield. Activating it, small razor sharp ends were seen coming out, and pressing the top of the shield, it was soaked with human blood. The only way they could see themselves winning the fight was by using the blood weapons they had.

"You idiots, have you still not grasped the kind of power at my disposal? Bryce, how can you be so old and yet behave so foolishly?!" Cindy mocked the Vampire King, holding out her hand, after moving her fingers ever so slightly. The glow on Bryce's blood weapon started to fade, and the next moment droplets of blood leaked from the weapon.

All the blood Bryce had just splashed his blood weapon with, Cindy had effortlessly pulled it all towards him, making his weapon useless.

'A blood weapon without human blood, is practically nothing.' Bryce grumbled internally, realising that she had effectively sealed off one of his trump cards.

"I was never one to rely on a weapon's power anyway!" Bryce shouted, charging forward, lifting his sword. If Cindy was already capable of controlling blood to this degree, he understood that using any blood moves would just be suicidal and play into her hand. The only choice he had left was to best her in close quarter combat.

"Without your blood powers, how are you any different from those humans?" Cindy taunted him even more, chucking the blood towards Bryce. As it flew through the air, the blood started to spread into different balls, eight of them to be precise.

"Doesn't that look like Paul's soul weapon?!" Linda gasped. Indeed, she was right, having witnessed Paul using it earlier had provided Cindy with the idea, and at the moment she was copying his move.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 926: A king doesn't yield (Part 2)

Chapter 926 - A king doesn't yield (Part 2)

Bryce was a master swordsman as well as a strong vampire, he was able to use his skills to block, dodge and repel the attacks. Cindy carried on using the skill that was similar to Paul's. The attack was coming from eight different directions towards Bryce. Those that he couldn't catch in time, his ability was able to take.

"Enough. I'm starting to grow bored playing with you." Cindy yawned provocatively as she gathered all of the eight balls together to create a large one. At the same time, blood was being pulled out from the bodies of the other vampires her earlier attack had injured or killed.

'This is my chance!' Jin decided and threw his shield out.

However, Cindy had not forgotten about him. The second she saw him act, she lifted her arm and a series of explosions occurred. As the shield spun in place, a mixture of his own blood and the human blood exploded and when it finally stopped Jin was down on the ground.

Her other hand, Cindy moved downward to strike on top of Bryce's head. Kyle, not letting his King die, threw the cape over Bryce like a blanket while still holding on to the very edge.

All of the blood started to light up, similar to when a Blood swipe would be used, and when it touched the cape, an immense amount of energy was let out.

"ARGHH!" Kyle screamed, feeling everything that went through his body. He only managed to endure it for two seconds, before he started to cough out blood. The red liquid escaped through his eyes and ears, until he too fell to the ground.

With that Bryce was the last one who remained standing, yet it wasn't for long. All of Kyle's blood didn't go to waste and Cindy conjured them into several floating Blood swipes in mid air.

"You know, when I grew up, I looked up to you. One of the feats I was most impressed by was that you were able to survive dozens of Blood swipes without breaking a sweat. Now, as King, let's see how you fare against a hundred of my Blood swipes." Cindy stated with a sadistic grin.

Bryce didn't have a smart remark to this and even if he did, he was too busy calculating how he could block, evade, parry or at least minimise the damage from this onslaught of the next attack.

Helplessly staring at all of them in the air, floating about, ready to strike at any time, Silver just couldn't imagine anyone getting out of something like this, and

turning to her side, she could see Kazz gripping her fist tightly, to the point where blood was dripping from her hand.

It didn't fall down. No, the blood was flying over to merge with all the Blood swipes in the air, as if there was a strong magnet attracting it.

"If you have any last words, now's your final chance." Cindy proclaimed as she moved her hand down and all the Blood swipes came at Bryce at the same time. It was impossible for anyone to see anything. Only the sound of clashes and grunts could be heard, but soon the sound disappeared.

... and yet, the attacks continued in the same spot over and over...

Every single one of the Blood swipes had been used up in the attack. Cindy had not held back in the slightest, none had remained hovering in the air. It was a cruel fate for someone who would likely be remembered as the shortest lived King in Vampire history, if at all.

... so when all the Blood swipes disappeared everyone, including Cindy, were left speechless, when they saw the silhouette of a man still standing.

He was hunched over, having shifted most of his weight on to the sword he had placed into the ground to prevent himself from falling over, a multitude of wounds covering his body.

"No.....matter...what....I.." Bryce struggled to say each word, but they all could see the intensity burning in his eyes as his whole body had to be in tremendous pain.  
"A...King... never ... yields.."

"Y-You always were a stubborn old man. J-just die already!" Cindy screamed as she looked at him, a hint of fear in her voice, trying to fathom how it would be possible for anyone to survive such an attack.

Beneath Bryce Cain was a giant crater of blood. Even Borden was unsure if he would be able to survive, much less retain consciousness after being reduced to such a sorry state.

Kazz didn't even notice that the tears had started to drop down her face as she watched her poor and battered father prop himself up. She knew that he should be the one most aware about his own body's condition, yet pride did not seem to allow him to stop.

Eventually, he managed to stand up tall, with his back upright and strong. All of his clothes had been torn and disintegrated, now only partial rags covered him. As for his body, it was red, blood red and covered in scars from head to toe.

Bryce's ability was supposed to do something to stop them once they got within a certain point. Sadly, these hadn't been any ordinary Blood swipes, so they had been able to bypass his ability and penetrate through his skin.

"I...I.I.." Bryce continued to stutter, his eyes turning red as he slowly lifted the sword up in the air and with the last remaining bit of his willpower he let out a mighty roar. "I sentence you to death!"

Despite his declaration, he was devoid of any power and with nothing else holding him he was about to fall forward. Before he hit the ground, however, someone had caught him.

"That's enough, father." Kazz whispered to him with a face full of tears. "You have done enough! Please, just rest!"

Bryce was unable to respond though, having passed out from the loss of blood. The only good thing was Kazz could hear his heart still beating. Slow and weak, but it was still there. He was a man with a strong will, and he wouldn't let himself disappear from this world, not yet.

What surprised Kazz the most though, was when she looked up, she could see several people standing in front of her, protecting the duo with their own bodies.

"I'm literally crapping my pants right now." Nate revealed.

"If you're lucky, she'll spare your life on account of the stench." Fex jokingly said.

"As my brother, you shouldn't have any part in this! You aren't strong enough to help!" Silver stated, yet did nothing to send him away.

"I don't think any of us are." Sam commented. "But there's no one else left to fight her."

"We aren't as weak as we look!" Linda added.

"Yeah, we've managed to defend the castle against two families, so what's a single vampire to the combined force of us?" Wevil questioned, yet the look on his face revealed he didn't believe his own words..

"Yeah, but it's not just any vampire." Timmy stated.

"I don't care if it's a vampire, a human, a dalki or anything else. I will cut them down if they are trying to hurt us!" Erin declared, gripping her sword hard.

"Agreed." Layla nodded.

"Well, I can't just let all you younglings fight while I stand back." Dennis added, punching his hand into his fists.

All of them knew how slim the chances were. None of them knew how they were going to do it, but they just knew it was up to them to pull off a miracle if they wanted to live.

Cindy saw everyone there, with their legs shaking, so scared she started to laugh.

"You, the tenth family has always been a crazy bunch, but you guys are even crazier than previous generations. Are all humans this stupid? You don't even have any of your Vampire knights, or your le..." Just as she was about to say those words she noticed something.

"You guys did a good job, I'm sorry for taking so long." A voice from behind was heard, but when they turned their heads they could see no one. That's when Sam noticed that the shadow dome that had been on the stage had disappeared.

"I'm glad that no one has died, you don't have to worry anymore, so just stay back." Quinn said, as the shadow started to creep from his feet, and rise behind his back. It shook violently left and right, something they had never seen happen before.

It was as if the shadow was reacting to Quinn's feelings. If it was, it was clear what he was feeling right now. Soon, it covered his entire back and made him look twice the size.

"I'm not a Punisher like Arthur.. I never asked nor wanted that role, but right now I see someone who needs to be punished and today I will gladly do the job in his place!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 927: Remembering everything

At first, it was tough for Quinn to stay in the shadow dome while everyone else was fighting outside. He had no clue what was happening. There was even a chance that he didn't need to get involved at all.

However, just in case, Quinn knew he needed to recover and eventually had gotten into a special zone in his head. A particular meditation state that allowed him to recover his Qi as fast as possible, while in this state, though, his senses were a little dulled.

It made it so all his body's energy was focused on only getting his Qi energy back, while the shadow dome would help him recover his MC points. Because of the zone and the shadow dome he was in, he even had less chance of knowing what was happening. Still, there was one thing he was thankful for.

The family connection to the Cursed family. Although it was active as those from the tenth fought and could feel they were struggling at times, he knew that not a single one had been lost. Quinn knew what that felt like now, and he knew how the system would act if that did happen and neither of those things had set off.

When he was ready, he had exited out of the dome, his Qi was at full strength, and his MC points had regenerated. In front of him, he could see his family members, but they weren't their usual selves. The energy that was coming off from them, their hands and legs that were shaking, they all had one thing in common, they were afraid.

Each one of them was in fear due to the person in front of them, and that was Cindy. Seeing this, on instinct like a tiger going to protect its frightened cubs, Quinn stepped out in front of them all.

Now standing there, he finally had time to look at the situation.

'Did she do all of this?' Quinn thought as he glanced around at the leaders that had fallen. 'She even managed to hurt Bryce that badly and there doesn't look to be a single scratch on her. How strong is she?'

Quinn had to try and gauge the person in front of him. Quinn and Bryce had fought against each other recently, so he thought he could use that as a good measurement, but it didn't seem to be the case at all.

[Inspect]

Quinn thought this was his only other option. Maybe it would bring some more light on the situation, but it wasn't the quest he wished to see as Quinn received the quest.

[New quest received]

[Survive the encounter with the enemy in front of you]

'Survive?' Quinn read the message as he thought back to when he was on the Blade island, and he was up against the twins. He had managed to get out of that one by escaping, but the system was right at the time. If he tried to fight back then, he probably wouldn't have survived.

'You really think I can't win this fight?' Quinn thought, looking at Cindy in front of him and glancing at those behind him. 'System, you're wrong! I have no choice. I have to win this fight, and when I do, you better give me a freaking big reward for proving you wrong.'

This was a fight that Quinn couldn't just survive, he needed to win, so according to the system, he needed to do the impossible.

'Quinn, I will give you words of encouragement.' Vincent spoke. 'The tenth family is special, and you carry the bloodline of the tenth family. We are miracle makers, so go ahead and show me a miracle.'

Quinn had the shadow raised behind his back, and he activated it just in case Cindy made an attack on those behind him. Yet, for some reason, she wasn't attacking just yet. Based on the condition of the leaders around him, he didn't think Cindy was trigger shy with her newfound powers.

'Just what exactly is she waiting for?' Quinn thought.

In the end, he got the answer from Cindy herself.

"Go on then!" Cindy shouted. "I know why you're so confident, why you chose to come out to save these people. You are just waiting to summon that damn Arthur like you did last time. Bring him out and let me crush him, so I can crush your only hope in front of you."

Hearing Cindy say this, the other leaders who had regained consciousness but weren't exactly dead started to gain a little hope.

'That's right, Arthur!' Jin thought, propping himself on his forearm. 'If Quinn summons Arthur like last time, he might be the only person that can deal with Cindy.'

However, Arthur wouldn't be coming this time. Quinn knew that, and so did those in the tenth family behind him. This was something that Quinn needed to do, himself.

"Why?" Quinn asked. "Why have you gone this far? Why are you going against your vampires, your own kind? You would have become Queen anyway! And what

did you mean, what did you mean when you said both of our goals are the same. If that was true, then clearly we would be standing on the same side as each other right now."

"So you remembered my words," Cindy replied. "Well, you're right, I might have been able to achieve my goal a lot easier if I was at the top, but it looked like you came to ruin my plans, Quinn. You see, my goal from the beginning was to get rid of every single one of these scum bag vampires and what better way to do it than to become their Queen.

"However, my plans had to take quite a turn when I found out through a little friend of yours that I was to die. To die at your hands, a disgusting man of all things!" She shouted but soon calmed down.

'A little friend?' Quinn started to think, the way she was speaking and what she had said. Quinn was thinking of a specific person. 'Did she get a vision when Cia went to regain her memories?' Quinn thought.

"She has helped me out greatly. I don't know how her vision would come true, perhaps you had found out my plans before everyone else, but I couldn't risk it. So I had to stay one step ahead. It is a shame such a beauty like her had to fall."

"Shut up!" Layla screamed. "It was you. You were the one that had killed her!!" Layla shouted out in anger

"That was an accident. I didn't want to kill any of you beauties, you were all meant to come over to my side, and soon we would create a new utopia away from all of these men. Destroying the old settlement to create an ideal new one." Cindy claimed.

Putting the pieces together, Layla's anger and Cindy's words. Quinn now knew which one of his family members had passed, and of all people, it was Cia.

'Cia, I'm sorry, I'm sorry for ruining your life. I took away your memories, and I regretted it ever since. From then on, I just wanted you to have a better life, and it looks like I just sent you to your executioner.' Quinn thought as the anger was building up inside him. It was mainly at himself, but also at the one in front.

"Oh, you poor girl," Cindy said, shaking her head, and seemed quite genuinely concerned. "This is why I was unable to save you. Because you have already been trapped and have fallen for that man. There is no hope for you anymore." Cindy proclaimed.

"Why!" Jin shouted, listening in on everything. He had finally recovered enough from his own attack being used against him. He was in no way in fighting condition, but his will to find out why Cindy had done everything was pushing him through.

"Cindy, we trusted you! We thought you wanted to make the vampire settlement a better place. Why would you want to get rid of us!" Jin shouted.

For them, who had lived hundreds of years with Cindy, it seemed strange that her personality and attitude would just shift like this. They had never seen this side of her before.

"All of the words I said were true. I do want to create a better place. I just never was honest with how. That day when Rowa, my father died. I remembered everything. Everything that happened to me, and how the council and king did nothing! I was standing at the top of my castle, staring outward. The king was using the blood ability to finish him off but at that moment. Rowa looked towards me. At the time, I thought, just like everyone else, he deserved to die for attacking the vampire settlement.

"But before he disappeared, he did something. The final words out of his mouth, I could see them. 'My daughter, remember the past and take yours and my revenge.' The words seemed simple, but reading them from his lips, and his hand stretched outward, something activated. He made it, so the memories that had been locked away for a long time resurface once more. And because of that, I will get rid of you all!" Cindy stated as she lifted her hands, and two large circles of blood were hovering by her side.

"Quinn, the blood ability may increase her blood powers exponentially, but it doesn't make her any better of a fighter. If you make this a battle of powers, you will not win!" Vincent shouted in his head.

"So you're saying I have to beat her physically, so there is only one option." Quinn replied, but there was silence as he knew exactly what to do.

Not hesitating anymore, Quinn started to fill up his Qi energy inside him, with the red energy all around, and in front of Cindy's very eyes, he started to transform.

His hair started to fall from his head, his muscles were bulging out from his clothes, and his eyes were turning hollow. Those from the tenth family started to take a step back, and soon had retreated back to the stage, as they had seen this all before.

'Quinn, what are you doing. Are you going this far to beat her?!" Silver thought, worried about what would happen after.

[Transformation complete]

[You have transformed into a Bloodsucker]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 928: Shadow Overload

As Quinn's transformation was finishing up, and all the leaders, including Cindy could see what he had become, what he had turned into. The reaction he had gotten from her wasn't what he was expecting. Swinging her head backwards, her eyes widening, she started laughing while pointing her finger towards him. It was as if she had gone mad.

"Brilliant, absolutely brilliant!" Cindy said. "My father was cast out of the vampire settlement for turning into a bloodsucker, and now a vampire leader has become one in order to save it!"

Jin could no longer stand and moved to the edge of the plaza and was now lying against what used to be a small shop, but he couldn't believe his eyes, for Quinn had turned into those beasts.

'Something is different?' Jin noticed, and he wasn't the only one.

Bryce had been taken on stage to rest with the others, by Kazz who was tending to his wounds. They had to be careful about bringing in human blood as a way for the vampires to heal. Because right now, any amount of blood that would be shed would also aid Cindy, making her stronger.

"How did this happen? Did Quinn give in to the bloodlust? Did they do something to him while he was locked up?" Kazz wondered.

"No," Bryce grunted, looking onward. "This is different. Did you notice that he didn't drain himself of blood or show any signs of addiction before this? He simply turned into one at will."

If this was true, then right now, there was a good chance that Quinn was a sane Bloodsucker like Rowa, giving him a chance to do something.

For a second, Bryce had to stop himself because he had hope for the boy.

Wasting no time, Quinn was off from his position. He was aware of everything happening and could see Cindy getting ready to throw one of the large circles of blood she had in her hand, but before she could, he was already behind her.

He swung his arm downward, hitting her red armour. Not a single dent appeared in the strong blood armour, but the force continued through it, and if Cindy didn't allow her body to go with such a strong force, then it was quite possible her arm would have even ripped off.

Instead, her body was flung down with her arm, and it was crushed into the ground stronger than ever. Even though the armour wasn't broken, the shear force had

crushed her arm and blood could be seen seeping through her clothes and falling through the gaps in the armour.

"He's so fast!" Sam said.

"This is what happens when one becomes a bloodsucker." Silver explained. "But they tend to lose their mind only focusing on one thing."

Those from the Cursed ship didn't have to be informed. They knew what a bloodsucker could do. They had lost one of their most treasured members because of it, Blip.

Still, Silver was surprised at where Quinn had decided to attack. It looked as if it was intentional.

'No, this can't be!' She thought. 'A Bloodsucker shouldn't have this level of intelligence. Its attacks are meant to be wild.' As she thought this, she could see that Quinn was already going for her other arm as well. Making her realise the truth.

'He's completely sane. He can control the Bloodsucker form just like my father.' Seeing this was a surprise, and for a second Cindy was startled, but she soon realised that it was nothing to be worried about at all.

When Quinn went to grab onto the other arm, the armour on her body started to light up. Blood flowed from her injured arm, moving to the other side of the armour, and it was beginning to activate.

"My own blood is still blood!" She screamed, and the armour started to brighten up more, but seeing this, Quinn had moved quickly away and was no longer holding onto her.

One of the biggest weaknesses of the Bloodsucker was that they had low levels of health. One strong attack and he would be done for, and he was sure that Cindy wasn't going to be light with her attacks.

'What was that? What was she about to do?' Quinn asked.

'I...I don't know.' Vincent regrettably replied.

'What do you mean you don't know? That's the famous blood armour? Aren't you some famous researcher? How can you not know what the armour does?'

'How would I know? The absolute blood book and the armour were reserved for the kings, and I have never been king. Maybe if I saw it being used in combat, I could make some educated guesses, but I never did during my time. It's not my fault that you seem to attract trouble wherever you go.'

Quinn's one source of reliable information was now unreliable, and Quinn was wondering what to do. He was a little stumped. It looked like the armour had some

special effect, as long as there was blood being supplied to it, and at the same time, if he was to fight at a distance, he would lose out as well.

'Can you tell me anything about the absolute blood powers?' Quinn asked.

'It depends. Information is passed down when learning the book, but just because they know how to use it, doesn't mean they can use it well. Which is the only reason why you're still alive right now. Usually, it takes some time for each king or queen to adapt the book to their liking. However, if there was a past King or Queen that had a skill that suits the current one, then we might be in for some trouble.'

As if Vincent's words were cursed, Cindy had healed her arm up using her ability. She started to gather the blood that still remained on the battlefield and the two circles she hadn't used before. They both started to form a certain shape in her hand. The blood began to elongate into a thin shape, and soon Quinn could see what they were.

Now in her hands, she was holding two whips purely made out of blood, and immediately swung one out with such force, causing it to break the sound barrier, and a shockwave was let out.

Moving back, Quinn thought he could avoid it, and even though he avoided the most dangerous part, the end of the whip, a blood swipe continued out of the very end.

'It's going to hit me!' Seeing this, Quinn felt like he had no choice. He decided to revert back to his vampire-like form. His body started to shrink down, and while in the middle of his transformation, the blood swipe created by the whip hit his body, sending him flying back all the way to the execution platform.

[-80HP]

[20/100 HP]

He didn't know how he had survived the attack but soon realised that wasn't the end of it, as it only had touched the surface of his skin. No choice. He had to gather all of his second stage of Qi, and was pushing the blood swipe out from his body, making it so it couldn't pierce any further, because if it did, then he would be dead.

'All that Qi I gathered up, and it looks like it's going to be useless!' However, finally using the Qi, he managed to push the blood swipe away and into the ground. From the force, his body was still moving backwards, flying through the air, until he had hit something solid, stopping him.

"Don't worry, Quinn. I got you." A voice said from behind. Looking behind him, Quinn could see a full-sized Borden had managed to catch him.

"Hahaha!" Cindy laughed. "Look at this power! One single swing and a vampire leader is out for the count. I can swing these whips a hundred times, and a hundred

more blood strikes would come out of it just like the last one. With this power, I can finish off anyone with ease."

When Borden let go, Quinn fell to his knees, blood spilt from his mouth and from his wound across his chest. He still had HP and activated his blood bank, hoping to bring his HP back up, but he was starting to wonder how much help that would be.

"She's right!" Quinn thought. "This fight, it seems useless, the system was right, and Arthur was right. I'm weak!" Quinn shouted as he punched the stage, causing a hole to be made, allowing him to see the ground beneath.

The leaders seeing this didn't think the same though, Quinn wasn't weak. It was just that his opponent was far too strong.

All those around him, seeing Quinn like this, wanted to do something to help him. Right now, he was fighting alone, but even if they did try to help, they feared they couldn't do much.

"Quinn, you just need a little help," Borden said, as he stuck a syringe in the back of Quinn's neck. A green liquid could be seen inside the clear glass, and it was slowly going inside of his body.

[Level three Dalki blood has been consumed]

[30 percent increase in all stats]

[Effect will last for one hour]

Quinn was wondering what this was, he could tell that Borden had most likely given him some of his blood, but the effects were different compared to last time. When Quinn had consumed the blood of the one spiked Dalki, the message received at the time was that he had consumed a level 1 Dalki's blood, giving him a ten percent increase in all of his stats.

However, here it had stated he had consumed a level three Dalki's blood. Turning around, Quinn could see three spikes on his body.

'Is that the reason why?'

A confidence was rising in Quinn, but he wasn't sure if this was enough, and he didn't have time to think about it.

Swinging the whips widely, Cindy had fired off multiple blood swipes just as powerful as the others towards the stage, and if Quinn didn't do something, they would all die.

Thanks to the green blood received from Borden, the 30 percent seemed to also increase his MC points as well, but blocking all of these attacks with his shadow would be useless.

Seeing the attacks coming towards them as well. Everyone who had the shadow ability, their natural instinct was to use it. They readied themselves and had activated the shadow ability.

At this moment, something appeared in front of Quinn.

[Members of your family are using the shadow ability you have granted them]

[Do you wish to borrow the shadow powers of your family members]

This was the first time a message like this had ever appeared in front of Quinn, but at the same time, he had never fought by all of their sides before either.

If the shadow was in the hands of Quinn, and this would increase his MC points, it was worth trying.

[Yes]

The shadow under all of the feet of the members who had learnt how to use the shadow ability started to move towards Quinn. As it did, it looked like Quinn's shadow was consuming the others. Soon it was growing in size, and via the system, Quinn could see his MC points rising.

'This, it's similar to when Arthur was restoring my MC points that time he was training me.'

The shadow continued to be absorbed, but Quinn was wondering if it would be enough to stop the attack, but at that moment, another message had appeared.

[Enhancement type soul weapon has been unlocked]

Finally, the Enhancement type Soul weapon Quinn had in his system that was constantly greyed out could be used, and with nothing to lose, Quinn activated it immediately.

[Shadow Overload enhancement type Soul weapon, activated]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 929: Absolute Shadow

Although there was no hesitation for Quinn when he had selected the option to activate his soul weapon, now that his body was in the middle of a strange transformation, he did have a lot of worries on his mind.

Unlike the last soul weapon Quinn had used, he was able to test its uses and figure out how best and when to use it. Testing was extremely helpful due to the large drawback Quinn's item type soul weapon had. If his enhancement type soul weapon also had a similar drawback, he would be finding out about it during the fight.

Not just the drawbacks, everything about the soul weapon he would have to try to find on the job, learning how to use it and what it could do. All while fighting one of the strongest enemies he had ever faced. Of course, this would make anyone a little nervous.

The shadow that was on Quinn's back started to do something strange, it grew in size after consuming the shadows of the others, and when Quinn had activated the soul weapon, it rose up in the air slightly above Quinn.

For the first time, everyone around could see the shadow detached from Quinn's body. When using most of Quinn's shadow skills, there was one important factor in them all, that he had to be touching the shadow.

Shadow path, allowed a trail to be led out, shadow sink and travel would only work based on how far the shadow was spread, and shadow control, Quinn was never allowed to use it, if it detached from his body.

The only shadow skills that still worked a little away from Quinn was shadow link, connecting to other shadow users shadow, and Shadow on. Even then, this felt like Quinn was using their shadow rather than his own.

The shadow didn't remain in the air, and was moving about fiercely. Moving around as if it was alive, and soon a purple glow could be seen around the edges.

'Just what is this enhancement type?' Quinn thought. 'The other type was similar to a blood weapon, but this seems to be based completely on my shadow powers.'

'Vampires aren't known to have soul weapons, you are unique in that aspect, and their blood weapons are created from the crystals of other vampires. Just like Arthurs weapon, it isn't based on his own power. This soul weapon is made just for you, Quinn.' Said Vincent.

At that moment, the large shadow that was hovering above Quinn swooped down and started to enter his mouth. It slid down his throat and into his belly. However, it didn't stop there, as Quinn could feel it taking over every cell in his body. His blood cells, the organs, everything was being consumed and changed by the shadow.

'What is this!' He wasn't in pain, but the feeling was certainly odd as if someone was touching his cuts with a furry hand.

After covering nearly every part of the inside of Quinn's body, it started to spread to the outside as well. Seeping through his skin, the shadow covered his forearms. It looked like purple fur was growing from Quinn's skin, and soon he was covered head to toe in the purple shadow.

His clothes were unable to be seen. His hair was standing up, floating not from the wind but the strange power that possessed it. The only thing that they could see was Quinn's eyes. His clothes were even covered.

He looked more menacing, darker than anything they had ever witnessed before.

[Shadow overload is now in use]

[For a limited time, MC cells won't be affected while using the shadow ability]

[You have absolute control over your shadows]

[You have obtained a shadow body]

Multiple notifications appeared in front of Quinn, and if he had the time, he would have clicked on them all to see if they further explained what this soul weapon did, but the blood swipes from Cindy's whips were soon coming at him.

"There's one thing I understand. If I'm right, no matter how much I use my shadow skills, my MC points won't drop!" Quinn thought, spreading out his arms, and soon Shadows were seen rising in front of the others and in front of him as well.

However, it didn't look the same as it did before. Usually, everything would be connected to Quinn, but this time the shadow had raised where all the others were standing.

'Is this the absolute control over the shadows?' Quinn thought.

All of the blood swipes that Cindy had created, as soon as they had touched the shadow they immediately slowed down. It didn't even look like they were moving, and Quinn's MC points hadn't gone down just as expected.

The others moved out of the way, and Quinn quickly got rid of the shadow allowing the attack to move forward into nothing.

'This shadow, can it really be used like that?' Quinn started to wonder.

Out of anger seeing her attacks stopped like they were nothing, Cindy swung her two whips wilder, putting more strength in her hip, creating faster and stronger attacks.

"I have the king's power. How can someone like you stop it!" She screamed.

'Quinn, it seems like Cindy is in the same situation as us right now.' Vincent said. 'She hasn't had her powers for long, and she is still learning it as she goes, just like us. If it was the old king, we would have been dead by now. This might be a battle of who learns faster, and if there was one thing you were always good at, it's learning fast.'

Thinking back, Vincent was always impressed with how quickly he had learnt the vampire martial arts, using the shadow abilities and all the other things he was taught. In a way, Quinn was a blank canvas having no abilities, and he soaked everything in like a sponge.

Running ahead, Quinn showed no fear, he was sure his plan was going to work, and with each of the blood swipes, he held out his hand. Soon in front of them, small little portals of shadow opened up, stopping them mid-air.

For every blood swipe, he would make a small circle of shadow stopping it.

'This isn't the only skill I can use either.'

Then, little small shadow portals started to appear behind Cindy as well. They floated in place, but it looked like they were there doing nothing. Seeing this, Cindy attempted to hit the end of them with her whip, but as she did, she only saw her whip slow down slightly when the tip had touched the shadow, but it had done nothing else to it.

[Shadow sink]

Activating his next skill, Quinn made it so the blood swipes that had been stopped mid-air from the first set of shadow circles sunk into the shadow themselves, and soon they were reappearing from where the new shadows were placed all around Cindy. Her own attack was now being used against her.

A similar scene was witnessed not long ago. Where Bryce had to face hundreds of blood swipes raining down on him, and Now Cindy had to do the same. However, her strength was strong, and with a single swing of her whip, she managed to wipe out ten of the swipes she created.

She did the same with the other side, but soon some of the strikes had ended up hitting her. As they weren't the only ones, she had to focus on.

Quinn two wasn't going to just sit there and do nothing.

At that moment, everyone was left with their mouths wide open on the stage as it looked like the table's had turned.

"Is this something all punishers can do?" Kazz asked, witnessing the power.

"In my whole time as a vampire, I have never seen the shadow being used in such a way before. This kid is different." Bryce stated.

Moments later, the other leaders that were sent away had returned. After Remus had been defeated, it was easy to control the chaos, and things had returned to normal. Worried about what was happening, they returned as soon as possible.

Muka looked around and could see all of the leaders nearly perished, and out in the square facing Cindy, was someone covered in shadows.

"Is that Quinn?!" Muka said, "We should help him."

"Don't!" Bryce shouted. "Cindy is far beyond any of our levels, and if that boy still has a human heart, she could use you against him. Besides, you would just be giving her more blood to use."

"You forgot one more thing," Sam said, never taking his eyes off the fight. "Does it really look like Quinn needs help right now?"

Turning their attention back to the fight, it looked like Cindy had been roughed up a little. She was hurt, but it wasn't too bad due to the armour she was wearing. What their eyes were most drawn to, was what Quinn was holding in his hands. Although Holding wasn't the correct word.

Hovering just above them, two flat shadow disks in each hand were seen. In the centre of them, they were shining a bright red colour, shaped like a circular saw.

It reminded some of those of the scythes that Quinn would use, combining his blood with the shadow. He had done something similar this time only when they weren't attached.

He threw both of them out, and they came out lightning fast. Cindy tried to hit one of them with her whip, but when it touched the shadow, her attack stopped again, and soon Quinn moved the disk, and they continued to go straight for her waist, ready to cut her body in half.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 930: Glowing shadows

The shadow disk that was coming towards Cindy was quite large in size and had a width of around a meter. Depending on how strong the attack was, if it hit her, then her body would be sliced entirely in half.

'Wearing the armour, even if that hits me, it shouldn't be too strong. I still don't know how to use this thing properly, but it isn't an armour that has been passed down for no reason!' Cindy thought.

However, sweat ran down her face, showing that things weren't exactly going her way. Ever since Quinn had activated his soul weapon, he was doing things she had never seen before. She didn't know much about the Punishers like Bryce, but did study up on them after Arthur had returned last time. Expecting that she might run into some trouble.

The main thing that was worrying her was the purple glow Quinn's shadows were emitting.

Not wanting it to touch her, she lifted her hand, and a rush of blood came from underneath the ground. It looked like a small waterfall only in reverse. One of his disks was eaten up by the cascade of blood. It looked like with such a large attack, the little shadow that was around it wouldn't do much, but before his other one would have the same fate. Controlling the shadow, he managed to split the large blade into six individual smaller pieces.

The small blades moved faster, and Quinn was able to control each of them precisely as if they were an extension of his own body. Going around the waterfall, Cindy had blocked her own field of vision. The little blades had hit. Moving her body, they had touched nothing but the blood armour, and soon disappeared with the shadow disappearing in the air as well.

'Looks like I have nothing to worry about.' Seeing how the purple glow of the shadow did nothing when touching her armour.

'She's learning to use the blood abilities more now, Quinn. If you look closely, she is gathering more blood. Quickly you have to finish her off!' Vincent warned as he was observing the situation.

'What do you think I have been trying to do, woo her!?' Quinn shouted back.

At first, it looked like Cindy was only able to gather the blood that had been spilt in the square. But eventually, blood was seen crawling across the floor into the square area from all over the settlement. The more blood she had and could control, the stronger her attacks would be and the more things she could do.

'Then we're just going to have to get close!' Quinn shouted, running forward.

She was ready for a close confrontation with her two whips, and it was why Quinn hadn't moved in up till this point. On top of this, he had time to learn a little bit about his shadow staying away.

The whip was far faster than any movement he could produce. So even with unlimited MC cells to use with the shadow, he wouldn't be able to move the shadow in time.

However, watching Cindy strike the shadow portals before, he had memorised her distance, and she knew hers as well as she gripped onto the end. When Quinn got close enough, he opened up a larger shadow circle in front of him and ran right through it.

'Wait! He can go through the shadow himself as well!'

Before she knew it, Quinn was behind her, with two large shadow disks by his side. He swung his arm out at full strength, trying to cleave her head off, but she had ducked the first attack. The second one, she wasn't so fortunate, as the disk struck her in her arm.

The closer the shadow was to Quinn, the faster and better he could control it. It seemed to react to the strength he had in his swing. The second disk hit her, and a scraping sound against the blood chest piece could be heard, and he could feel the weight of the attack. Even though he wasn't making any physical connection, the force felt like that between two magnets.

She was soon sent across the floor, and as she landed, she kicked off the ground to create distance between the two of them. Looking up though, the area looked different as she noticed she was in a room full of shadows blocking out the sky and rain above. Soon, something was felt grabbing her feet from below and pulling her.

She looked down at her legs, but there was nothing there until she could see Quinn dropping from the strange ceiling above. Quinn had activated the shadow dome surrounding her so she couldn't escape. He needed to keep her in place, then using shadow hop, he came from above.

'Blood attacks like blood bullets, and the blood swipe won't work because of that armour, so I need to get it off her, or...' Quinn said as he came full force with a hammer strike.

Lifting up her forearms, she made it so the blood armour would take most of the effects, and for a second, the two remained still with Quinn in mid-air. The power of the hammer strike was felt as it sent shockwaves through the dome, and even the shadows were shaking.

"Arghh!" Cindy screamed, as for the second time, her arms had been crushed, as the hammer strike had done its work. Hurting her internally, with blood soaking through the armour. A few seconds after though, and the armour started to light up.

Still unsure what the strange armour would do if it hit him with its power, Quinn did the only thing he could do....

From the outside, they could only see a shadow dome. However, red lights could be seen piercing through the shadow. It looked like light rays were coming out until the whole shadow dome had disappeared. Standing still on the square was Cindy, but Quinn was now nowhere to be seen.

"The tenth leader!" Muka shouted, quite shocked at the outcome based on how well Quinn had been doing. Not seeing him there, he could only think that Quinn had died.

"No, that boy is still alive," Bryce said, knowing what Quinn had done, because he had done the same thing against him.

A portal of shadow opened. From Quinn's shadow lock skill, he had locked himself in the shadow space in order to avoid the attack. However, while Cindy was concentrating on the shadow he had come out of, she didn't see another portal opening behind her, and two large Shadow disks were ready.

Cindy was mid-swing of her whips, and as her wrist flicked, at the same time, the two large disks had hit her on the back, chucking her body forward towards Quinn.

Using all his strength, stepping on the ground and concentrating all his anger towards her, he swung his fist over his head. It was an overhand throw that allowed one to use all the momentum they could, and he had planted his heavy-handed fist right in her face.

As it pushed through, he could feel the features on her face breaking, first her nose, then the skull of her eye sockets. Her whole body nearly had flipped over due to the sheer power, but keeping up the momentum, Quinn wanted to slam her into the ground.

The only problem was, the blood whips had managed to hit his sides as well.

"You're dead!" Cindy managed to make a crooked smile through all her broken bones. Quinn was quite surprised she was still alive. This was due to her attempting to heal her wounds with her ability while Quinn had delivered her punch.

Still, his punch was far stronger than she had anticipated, and she was unable to heal the wounds as much in time, and something else had happened as well. The shadows that covered Quinn's hand, a few of them, seemed to be attached onto her face.

As for Quinn, the whips had hit his body of shadows, he braced himself for pain, the loud bang was heard at the tail end, and he felt the force in his body from both sides, but there was no pain at all.

'What's going on?' Quinn thought. As he looked down, and could see he was perfectly fine.

He looked at his sides, and the shadows seemed to move away from where the attack had hit, he could now see his clothing underneath. New shadows were now moving to the gap, and soon he was once again completely covered in shadows.

'Is this the power of the shadow body? Does it block my whole body from attacks as well?' Quinn thought.

As for Cindy, she had managed to get up but was suddenly in a panic as she touched her face.

"Whvt heie yve dene!" Cindy tried to speak, but her jaw, her nose and eye socket were broken entirely. Leaving her with a mangled face. The remnants of the shadow from his fist could be seen on her face as well.

For some reason, Cindy could not use her reverse ability on her face to make it back to what it once was, and she felt it had something to do with the strange glowing shadows.

'Now that I know my body is safe from her attacks, I can do this!' Quinn thought.

[Your time is up]

[Your soul weapon will now be deactivated]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 931: The debt

Quinn knew that his soul weapon wouldn't last forever. Especially since it seemed to have no downside while he was using it. He thought it was possible that it could stop at any moment, and it had done just that. However, the bad news didn't stop there as the system messages continued to pop up.

[Your soul weapon 'Shadow Overload' time limit has ended]

[Time limit for soul weapon depends on the number of MC points the user has]

[The shadow will now be returned to those that it was borrowed from]

The second line made Quinn wonder if the others were able to increase their MC points or if he had more than had learned the shadow ability if he could have used his Soul weapon for longer.

Still, the worst news was yet to come.

[You must now pay your debt for using Shadow overload]

[-40 total MC points]

[0/200 MC points remaining]

As expected, there was some sort of cost for Quinn using such a powerful soul weapon. He knew that once it ended, he would no longer have any MC points to be used, but for the cost, it had taken it from his total MC points.

Before when Quinn would check his stats, it would state that he had a total of 240 MC points. When using the shadow, this number would go down, and after some time, it would always recover back up to the max number.

It seemed the cost for using this soul weapon was lowering the maximum amount of MC points for his shadow ability. However, looking at it now, it didn't even look like he had enough MC points to activate the Enhancement soul weapon. Without the other shadow users MC points, it didn't look like Quinn had the requirements to use it again.

Looking at Cindy, Quinn could see that her face was still disfigured, but the shadows attached to her were still there, slowly fading away.

"We have to finish her off." A voice by Quinn's side said.

"The vampire settlement is in trouble. I just never expected it to be from one of our own leaders and one I trusted at that." A softer voice spoke. When Quinn turned his

head, he could see a woman with the most gentle eyes riding on top of a giant black wolf with a horn.

Looking around him, Quinn noticed that the leaders, Sunny, Muscat, Muka and Lee, had returned. They all were standing by his side, but it wasn't for long, as each of them went rushing in towards Cindy.

As they ran forward, there was one more which had crashed directly in front of her, breaking the ground beneath him as he landed.

"I still have some fight left in me!" Borden said, grabbing her by the arm and lifting her above his head, slamming her to the ground.

She soon got up, but then Muka was already directly behind her. Seeing a fist going towards her, she decided to rush the blood up from the ground once again like a waterfall. Still, as Muka's fist continued to go forward, it looked like the waterfall split apart, letting his hand go through, punching her in the c.h.e.s.t.

'His damn ability, what a lucky guy!' Cindy thought.

"Noir, Keep her busy!" Sunny shouted. The giant wolf responded, shrinking in size, and started to move just as fast as any vampire leader. It pounced in and out, striking at the armour, moving Cindy's body like a rag doll.

The only weapons she had on her that was possibly fast enough to strike the familiar was her wh.i.p.s, but Lee, using his strings, was keeping her far too busy for her to properly use them. As quick as Cindy was destroying them, Lee made new strings yanking her hand here and there.

Eventually, Cindy managed to find a break and took a step back, but her foot was soon found landing on something. It lit up, and her whole body was frozen in place. This was the power of the Muscat family. The ability to set up traps.

With her staying still, Borden didn't waste this opportunity to hit her as hard as he could in the head once again. Although she couldn't move her legs, she could move her hands and lifted them, protecting her face. What she didn't expect was just how powerful Borden's strike would be, crushing her arms, and the force continued to be felt through them.

Cindy was able to heal parts of her body with her ability, but the leaders and Borden were just dealing too much damage, not giving her enough time to recover.

"Cindy!" A voice shouted from the other end, all the way back from the execution stage. "It's time for your end. It's our win." The one who had said these words was Bryce. He was still heavily hurt from before and was using his sword and Kazz by his side to help him stand.

"Haha!" Cindy started to laugh. The shadow had finally disappeared from her face, and she was able to use her ability once more, and the first thing she did was return

her mouth back to what it once used to be. "A Dalki, a Punisher, ex-humans, and all the vampire leaders are working together. You know, if there was one thing I didn't expect, it was that under your rule, all of these types of people would be working together. You call this a win, I think if I was you, this would be a huge loss."

Using all the blood that had spilt inside her own body, she decided she wouldn't heal the wounds. Instead, she planned to activate the power in the blood armour. The others, seeing it light up, all leapt and stepped away.

Everyone could tell it was dangerous, however, this was just a trick on Cindy's behalf. The armour started to fade, and she quickly used this time to reverse the damage done to her hands.

"Screw you all!" She shouted, lifting her hands. At that moment, all the blood in the vampire settlement from the damage done by the eighth family was lifted into the air. It looked like red raindrops that were frozen in time.

"Not this move again!" Nate said. "This is what beat all those vampire leaders last time."

"And I can't use the shadow either." Wevil noticed attempting to use it there and then.

It seemed like letting Quinn borrow their powers made it, so he was actually using them, so they would have to wait for them to recover as well.

Before, it was just the square, this time, it was blood from the whole settlement, and no one felt like they could block this attack, or survive it this time.

"Leaders, stop that attack!" Bryce shouted.

Cindy's hands were trembling. It looked like she was struggling to hold such power, and she was still gathering it in order to summon the skill.

'Is she weak?' Quinn wondered.

Using her ability, she had used up MC points just like every other ability, so at some point, she wouldn't be able to reverse the damage anymore, and she had taken a heavy beating from the leaders and Borden, even Quinn before.

The sheer power of the blood ability wasn't the only reason she was struggling. She was feeling weaker than she had ever felt at the moment. She had used the last of her MC points to heal her hands and was planning to take everyone down with this last move. She didn't care if she died as long as she could pull off this attack, and Quinn had noticed this.

'If she's this weak, then there is one thing I can do.' Quinn thought.

A shadow skill that didn't require any MC points to use but was dependent on how weak the person was in front of him. It was a gamble because if Cindy wasn't weak, then the skill would be useless.

Gathering his hands together, a dense black blob started to form from his shadows, then when the time was right, he threw it out. From his hand, a giant ball came out towards Cindy, splitting open as if it had a large mouth ready to gobble her up.

[Skill Shadow Eater]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 932: You can rest

The large black ball that left from Quinn's hands came out fast, and it was the skill shadow eater. A skill that worked best the weaker an opponent was and if it was successful he was hoping it would be enough to stop Cindy.

Seeing the giant ball of darkness, the other leaders moved out of the way, frightened for dear life as to what might happen if the skill touched them. They had seen what the skill had done to Vadeen, when Arthur had used it, and they didn't want to suffer the same fate.

Cindy was holding on to so much power, that she had two choices; to cancel the skill she was doing, dropping the power to attempt to avoid the shadow, or continue on with the skill. In the end, she chose to continue on with the skill and the head of the large black ball split open creating a mouth shape, consuming her.

They could no longer see Cindy as the large shadows covered her whole body, but the black ball made of shadows, started to sink into the ground and when it touched the floor, it spread out making its way to Quinn.

'Did it work?' Quinn wondered, as the shadow scurried across the ground, and when it finally attached itself to him, he was in for a surprise.

[Shadow Eater skill was successful]

[You have gained 1000 MC points]

[Total MC points 0/1260]

[You have unlocked the Enhancement soul weapon 'Shadow Overload']

Not only was the skill successful, but Quinn had gained the most MC points from using the skill he had ever done before. He didn't know what to expect since regular vampires only gave him a total of ten, but it seemed like a vampire, at the vampire lord level, was worth using this skill on.

Unfortunately, Quinn wasn't planning for more instances like this one to occur. While Quinn bathed in joy of the skill being successful and the amount of MC points gained, there was still an uncertainty if it had actually done anything.

He turned to Cindy, who almost looked frozen in place, her arms were unmoving. That's when Quinn noticed that all the blood that was frozen in the sky from the whole settlement, had dropped and fallen to the floor.

The skill had worked and it had done its job.

Soon after, Cindy fell to her knees and was sweating radically. A pool of water was forming from her feet and a searing pain was felt throughout her body.

"Noooo! She screamed at the top of her lungs so loud that it was comparable to a small Banshee's scream.

The pain was unbearable along with the weak tired feeling. She felt like a newborn vampire sitting in the sun for the first time. Even though there was darkness all around, and she would have to live with it for the rest of her life.

Knowing this, she knew there was one way out from this pain, from this torture of a lifetime. Lifting her hand up she was ready, ready to finish herself off. When she lifted her hand though, she felt it quickly being yanked and hammered down to the floor on both sides.

"We can not let you off that easily." Muka said, pinning her arms to the floor. "You will not get off that lightly by just running away and not giving us an explanation."

She attempted to move her other arm, but it was being held by Sunny. No matter how much strength she tried to gather to pull herself away from them, she wasn't able to.

Quinn, seeing this, started to think that the skill Shadow Eater seemed to be harsher on those who were more complete on the vampire evolution scale. He remembered when he was a halfling he was affected by light, but the downside was worse with each evolution. Thankfully the rings saved him from that suffering, but even with a ring now, Cindy would feel no different.

Perhaps, being a vampire lord, the effects of the sun were even worse, and she might have been even weaker than a human right now. A horrible thought for a vampire leader.

At that moment, a leader who hardly had any damage at all came out, and threw her needles out on Cindy who was lying flat on the floor.

"Suzan?" Muscat said, surprised. "Where have you been?"

The questions asked almost seemed embarrassing for Suzan to answer, as her cheeks reddened. Especially since everyone was badly hurt and had fought a tough battle, while her clothes were all seemingly fine.

"I know how strong the second family's ability is, so I thought my ability would be important in this fight. So I decided to protect myself at all costs and only come out at the right time." Suzan replied.

"So you came out when we had already done the job?" Muscat replied, who was clearly annoyed. As a new leader he usually wouldn't have been so outspoken, but he was just expressing how the others were feeling.

However, they needed to ignore that for now, as there was a lot of work that was to be done. The vampire settlement had just suffered an attack. An original had been woken, and Cindy still had the blood armour on her body, and the blood power in her control. These things would need to be removed from her.

Thanks to Quinn's skill though, they shouldn't be too much trouble.

"Just kill me..." Cindy muttered out quietly.

A shadow was then cast over her, and when she looked up, it was an old man with a white beard, Bryce. He had healed from his wounds and now that Cindy had been defeated, Kazz was able to feed him some blood.

Still, the wounds from the fight seemed to still appear on his body, and even the blood wasn't able to completely heal him but it allowed him to move.

"This is another day that shall be remembered in vampire history." Bryce said, looking at her. "Although it is tough for the vampires. After going through an event like this, it will only bring us who have worked together, closer."

Hearing these words, Cindy couldn't help but smile, and she attempted to spit out a piece of blood that was felt in her mouth but being so weak, it had failed to go far and just dribbled down her chin.

"Screw you, and your vampire settlement." Cindy said. "What did you do exactly? Did the leaders save this place? Did you, as their King, save this place? No! The only reason why all of you aren't dead right now, is because of that damned outsider. Don't think I don't know how much you wish to get rid of him Bryce...and now he saved you all. This is truly pathetic, you are a pathetic King."

Bryce looked behind him, at Quinn who was huffing and panting. He looked exhausted and beat. What Bryce also noticed was there were hardly any wounds on him at all.

"Looks like I did a better job than you." Bryce said, looking back at Cindy. "We will pry into your brain, and find out everything you hid and how you tricked the whole settlement. Don't worry, your time is not over here."

Walking away, he let the other leaders deal with Cindy, besides Bryce had his own recovery to do, and there was a lot to be done after getting what they needed from Cindy. Walking past for the first time ever, Bryce placed his hand on Quinn's shoulder.

"You did a good job." Bryce said.

Quinn shrugged Bryce's hand off his shoulder. He still hadn't forgiven him for everything he had tried to do before.

"Me and you are not friends Bryce." Quinn said. "I didn't do this for you because you're my King. Let me get this clear on our positions. You are not my King, this whole mess I shouldn't have been involved with in the first place. I'm telling you now, I'm leaving this place and I'm taking them with me."

Saying these words, Quinn looked Bryce in the eye, and he looked back at Quinn as well. The others watching from the execution stage were nervous. Thinking that there might be one more last fight after all.

"You can rest now." Bryce said walking away, and a few seconds later, Quinn felt his knees wobbling, and his body tumbling to the floor, as he fell lying there flat on the cold ground.

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 933: SIDE STORY (MVS EVENT WINNER) QUINN**

MVS side story Quinn, (past)

Side story winner: Quinn. Due to winning the MVS Webnovel Voting Event, with over 200,000 votes.

A black space, shadows, a dark mind. The view inside of Quinn's mind was a little foggy and he wasn't quite sure what was happening to him.

'What happened? I can't remember, what was I just doing?' Quinn thought.

Asking these questions, he almost expected someone to answer, but there was no response, and he was on his own. Going through the dark space, wherever that was he could see nothing. Until eventually a mirror suddenly appears blocking his path.

However, in the mirror itself, Quinn could see quite the young face in the reflection. He had curly hair that had just gone slightly down to where his ears were, and he wore a black blazer with a school tie on himself.

'I'm in a school uniform, and I look so.... Young? Wait, why is that strange. I am in school after all, Wait, school!' Quinn remembered.

A few seconds later though, and his body felt a shiver throughout it. His hair was soaking wet and the whole world looked like it was melting.

Opening his eyes, Quinn could see a soaked desk directly in front of him. Water dripped from his hair and head.

"Sorry, I was just practicing my water ability, didn't mean to hit you, it was an accident." A female voice said.

Looking up, Quinn could see that there were three girls, and the one apologising had her hand over her mouth. The two girls next to her had turned their heads away, their shoulders moving up and down.

'Ah, again huh and water this time? You know, I can tell you're laughing. Just because I don't have an ability doesn't mean I'm stupid as well.' Quinn wanted to say, but instead he decided to just get up from his seat, and head out to the restroom to dry himself up.

"Hey I guess it's true after all." The girls started to gossip as he walked past.  
"Because he doesn't have an ability, he can't really fight back, can he?"

Although Quinn had tried his best to keep the fact that he had no ability a secret, it was obvious that it would be spread around the school sooner or later. After all,

nearly everyone had an ability and was willingly showing it off. Even during P.E. they allowed the use of abilities, so it eventually became apparent and that's when the bullying started from the others.

For now though he would soak it up, he thought it was best to ignore it as he saw all the other students who were low levelled, receiving the same sort of treatment.

'Why don't they fight back?' Quinn thought once, but soon he saw why when one of the students attempted too. He didn't even get a single punch in.

While at school, there was a natural group that had emerged. Those considered in his school with high level abilities, being Level Four students. Although being a high level in this school didn't necessarily mean much.

Their school was just a regular state school. All the high level students had rich families, high backgrounds and studied with private education. If any of these students went to those schools they would be nothing but flies. Although when it came to Quinn, he was even less than a fly.

A group of five kids were being used as their 'shuttles', which was the term they used. Each one being in charge of a different job for them. Some would do their homework, others would carry their things, and Quinn would be in charge of buying them their lunch.

What was amazing was how no one did anything about it? It was impossible for the teacher to not know what was going on, yet nothing was done about it because these higher level people were seen as essential in their world. While they on the other hand, were considered expendable due to their lower levels, or having no ability.

One day, outside on the school rooftop, all of the shuttles had been gathered apart from one, and Quinn was the last one to arrive of them all. He could see the four of the others on their knees and a couple of them had been beaten.

'What's going on?' Quinn thought.

All he could see was that Yuman, the school's second top dog was frantically banging his foot on the ground.

"That idiot, why the hell did he have to do that, and now he's in the hospital, and they're blaming me!? Is it my fault that he was so weak?" Yuman continued to complain.

Quinn had understood the gist of it, based on the angry outburst he could hear from Yuman. Although people could get away with a lot, if one was to end up in the hospital for going too far, or causing a death they would still be punished. At least the world is still a little fair.

"Come here Quinn!" Yuman shouted.

'Is he going to take his anger out on me?' Quinn thought as he clenched his fist. He could see that Yuman had already turned his own fist into a stone-like material, which was his ability.

"Do you think it's my fault? You don't, do you Quinn? It's your fault for being so useless. I can't believe his parents went and complained. I know he wouldn't have had the guts to tell his parents that I was the one responsible so it had to be one of you guys. But none of these guys have croaked yet, that's why I've called you. Don't tell me it's you Quinn. You're my favourite of these guys. You never say a word. You just do whatever I ask of you."

This was because Quinn had seen that it was pointless to try and argue, you just got hit more. He didn't understand why some people bothered to fight back. To try and change their situation when they couldn't.

They were just making their already hard lives even harder.

"Their parents didn't raise their kids properly. They didn't tell them that there is an order in this world, and we are above them. Maybe it's a good thing you have no parents, Quinn. That's probably why you're so-"

Suddenly, a fist flew out and hit Yuman right in the face. It was the first time Quinn had ever hit someone before, and the other shuttle students had their mouths left wide open in disbelief.

"Scum, you're freaking scum!" Quinn shouted. "Why the hell should we be treated like this!"

Yuman wiped his mouth that was bleeding slightly, and then went to throw out a fist. Swinging wildly at Quinn's head. He had activated his ability, so if the fist hit, Quinn would be in for some serious trouble. Ducking down, Quinn went and tackled him onto the ground.

Pinning him with his knees, Quinn didn't stop there and continued to unleash his fists open his face. He didn't even know when Yuman had passed out, but he finally stopped with his hands bloody and the skin having peeled off from his knuckles.

Looking up at the sky. "What have I done?" Quinn asked himself.

From that day onwards, Quinn's life was different. He was constantly targeted by those in Yuman's gang including the top dog, but something had changed. Quinn was no longer part of the shuttle group and did what he wanted.

Now he understood why people fought back, because the pain from getting beaten everyday wasn't as bad as the pain they felt from being treated like crap. The mental trauma of feeling beneath someone was damaging to their souls.

It felt like they were slaves almost. At least this way, Quinn felt like he had made his own choice. He made his own decisions to do what he wanted and he would face the consequences for it.

He thought back to all those celebrities with great powers that he saw on TV. The Big Four, the Military leaders and Head Generals. They had so much power, yet they did nothing.

Why? Why did they do nothing even though they had the strength to better everyone's lives? Was it because they couldn't see it? Was it due to them being at the top, so they didn't know what life was like for those at the bottom?

Clenching his fist, Quinn swore to himself as he made a promise.

'If one day, I ever get the power like those guys at the top. I will make a better life for those like me, and get rid of this whole trashy system!"

## Chapter 934: A vampire Hero

It was safe to say after the events of what had happened, everyone was exhausted, both physically and mentally. This time it wasn't just one family that had suffered losses, but nearly every single one had been hit.

It was tough to say how this would affect the vampire settlement and was too early to tell, but the one that would have to lead them out of all of this was their King, Bryce.

Trying to regather and create order for all of what happened, even though he was still recovering himself. Mainly, he used the Royal Guards to keep control of things, as they were used to help rebuild what was lost, make a count of all those who had perished, and keep guard in case there were any more nasty surprises for them.

This whole event was quite a shock to the vampires, and it would take time before they really understood what had happened and why. Especially the few that had remained from the eighth family, as nearly the whole of the eighth family had been wiped out.

A whole day had passed since the event with Quinn and the other leaders. Those from the tenth family had been standing there nervously on the stage as they saw Quinn collapse on the ground. They had just seen Quinn exchange some pretty heated words and were worried that Bryce had possibly done something.

Even though they wanted to move, they were cautious and didn't do so until they were allowed. At that moment, two people who had been away had now returned, and their appearance when returning had come as quite a shock.

Lifting him off the ground and placing Quinn over his shoulder with ease was Peter.

"What the hell are all of you standing around for? Quinn is exhausted, and no one's going to take him back to his castle?" Peter said, walking to the others and shaking his head.

Bryce did nothing to stop them, and allowed them to do as they wanted.

The group was left speechless by the appearance of Peter and Logan. Not because of their actions but due to how they looked. Peter's clothing was ragged and soaked in blood. Apart from his face, it looked like he had been dipped in a bucket of red paint, and as for Logan, he was missing an entire arm.

"What, what happened!" Nate couldn't help but ask, while staring at the wound, that had been seared off.

"I guess we both need to update each other on our situations," Logan replied. "The good thing is all of you are alive. I was sure by my calculations of probability, at least half of you would have died. You were one of those on my list."

After hearing those words, Nate was just left there in disbelief.

"What the hell is that supposed to mean?!"

Before leaving, Silver wanted to have a word with Kazz, and pulled her arm before she went off to look after her father.

"Kazz, you and Fex both lost your memories to Cindy, right? But you somehow got yours back. What happened? Can you do the same to Fex?" Silver asked.

"I'm sure the King is definitely willing to. He owes Fex and all of your family a huge favour, but please understand that there will be more pressing matters before this. I just ask you to wait patiently." Kazz replied, leaving to go with her father.

Leo, having recovered some of his strength from the fight, propped himself up using his sword's sheath.

"Everyone, we shall return to the castle and rest," Leo ordered. Usually, the family leader would be in charge of organising what happened to those in the tenth family, but as Quinn's breath could be heard going in and out like a baby. It was best if Leo took over.

After all of those events, the group had managed to rest inside the castle for the rest of the day. They excitedly talked to each other about what happened while they were away.

"No way, a hundred vampires?" Wevil made a face like he couldn't believe what he'd just heard. "If it was Borden, maybe?"

Peter shrugged his shoulders, for he really didn't care if they believed him or not. He just answered the question of what had happened.

"I never knew you were a Dalki!" Wevil said, walking up to the table Borden was standing on.

After about an hour after the fight, Borden had eventually returned to his small size once again. The good news was the liquid allowed him to stay in his true form for longer, and Logan said he should be able to make more for him as well.

Even give him an injection now if he wanted, but Borden was getting used to his small size. He was more bothered about being disadvantaged by a time limit during his fight.

'I never did try creating a solution with the vampire crystal. Maybe next time.'  
Logan thought.

"Don't worry about me being a Dalki. I am based on my brother over there,"  
Borden replied, pointing to Sil, who was in the corner of the room. Sil hadn't joined  
the others, and for a good reason as well.

Even if he had been there, he would have been useless and just used by the  
vampires and Cindy as another blood bank.

The tenth family were quite excited and upbeat about the whole thing. In a way, it  
was a relief. There was so much pressure going on about Quinn's death, it felt like  
for the first time since coming to the vampire world, they could finally relax. That  
was until Sam had brought up something.

"The words Quinn said to err... Bryce, at the end, do you think we can all go  
home?" Sam asked.

"We don't know yet," Paul answered. "At the moment, the vampires seem to be  
busy trying to extract information from Cindy, the person who caused all of this.  
As you all know as well, Quinn hasn't woken up. I'm sure there are many things  
they would like to discuss with him. However, Bryce is a strange fellow."

"Quinn's words could very well be treated as a threat. From the short time I have  
been here, it looks like the vampires have a lot of pride and demands for the King  
to be respected. Quinn is playing a risky game by requesting to not be part of the  
vampire settlement. As soon as one family leaves, then the other leaders will ask  
for special requests as well, and that's something the King doesn't want."

The others hearing this looked a little depressed. It sounded like there was a chance  
they couldn't leave this place, and if they did, then Quinn might be in some serious  
trouble again.

"Although I agree with my fellow Knight a little, at the same time, I don't," Leo  
said, placing his hand on Paul's shoulder. "You underestimate the power of a hero.  
Quinn has done something that the King could not. Shouldn't a hero be rewarded  
for his efforts?"

Some didn't understand what Leo meant by his words, but soon they all came to  
know exactly what Leo meant. Because standing outside of the tenth castle right  
now, were hundreds and hundreds of vampires, all wanting to enter the tenth inner  
castle area.

The only thing stopping them was the Royal Guards that had been stationed at each  
of the gates. The reason they were there was due to what they had heard. It was  
impossible for them not to find out what had happened, and now the tenth had a  
new reputation that was being spread.

The tenth that defended a strong attack from two families, and the leader that was able to take down the one that had caused all of this. At the same time, there were rumours of a Wight from the tenth family, heroically going around saving all the vampires.

The tenth family weren't aware of their sudden popularity just yet, but they soon would be. Although there was one more person who had found out about it even before them.

Inside the King's castle, on the top floor. Bryce was sitting at his throne. He was in the middle of many thoughts, as they had found out a lot in a short amount of time, and he was pondering about the many decisions he would soon have to make.

It was something that couldn't be delayed as people would want an answer and a forward action from him, so that something like this would never happen again.

While in the middle of his thoughts, the doors were swung wide open, and Kyle was seen entering. His cape was flapping, and knelt down.

"Is there something concerning?" Bryce asked.

"Not very concerning, but perhaps something I thought you should be aware of. I know you are struggling with what to do with the tenth family leader so I thought I should let you know." Before speaking more, Kyle gulped. "The tenth leader, Quinn Talen, is being hailed as a hero and saviour of the vampire race by the other vampires."

This piece of information certainly had made Bryce have to rethink what he had originally planned.

"A hero..." He repeated, looking at a newly placed painting, that was stationed just above the entrance to the throne room. It was large, and it went from the top of the doorway all the way to the end of the ceiling.

The painting itself was of Arthur standing there, having sliced his grandfather's head off.

"I will never forget."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 935: King is just a title

There were many things that needed to be done before Bryce could think about other things, but in his mind the top priority was obtaining the blood powers that he believed should have rightfully been his in the first place.

He wouldn't let anything get in his way and most of his resources were placed into this task.

Using the influence skill on Cindy was relatively easy and the main reason for this was due to Quinn's shadow eater skill. With that, she was no longer the vampire she used to be. It made her whole body weak and this also made extracting information from her quite easy.

With this, they had gotten information of where the book that would store the absolute blood powers was kept. Unexpectedly it was hidden in an expected place, in the second castle. It seems like Cindy was arrogant that either one, her plans would have never been revealed or the second, that she would succeed so there was no point attempting to hide the book.

A further investigation went into the second family's tombs, and although one of the tombs had been opened none of the others had been. This was expected because the person who had actually woken one of the leaders, was Bryce himself.

Going beneath the King's castle, with his two Royal Knights protecting him, Bryce was there to visit Cindy herself. Now that he had the blood book, the powers needed to be extracted to the book, and then Bryce would have to take the powers from the blood book again.

In a way he was thankful that she hadn't been killed, otherwise he wasn't sure what would happen to the blood powers, and there was no knowledge to date about that either.

When he arrived he could see Cindy there, a vampire leader covered in a plain brown top. Her eyes were heavily bagged. Even though vampires didn't need much sleep they still did on occasion, but it looked like Cindy never got to rest and it was all due to the pain she was suffering from.

Cindy had been confined in one of the cellars where a special combination would be needed, in order for it to be opened. The conditions inside the cell were better than what Quinn was kept in. Due to Cindy's current mental state they knew that they didn't have to worry about her breaking out. However, it was still unknown if there were other leaders who might still be working with her, who might attempt a rescue.

Although, it was still deemed necessary to bind her hands and ankles so that she was unable to make another suicide attempt. At least, not until they had extracted all the information from her that they required.

The blood armour had already been taken off, and was placed in the King's vault like it should have been. Only when needed would it be called upon.

"What do you want?" Cindy asked. Not even looking up, when Bryce had entered. The heavy cuffs that bound her hands and legs, prevented her from the freedom of being able to move around too much.

"The Punisher's power is certainly cruel and usually I would say no one is deserving of such a fate. But for you I think the punishment fits quite well. You know why we are here." Bryce stated.

Prima handed Bryce the blood book before he walked over to where Cindy was, and quickly made a cut in the palm of her hand. Bryce wasn't sure if she was resisting or not, even if she was, he couldn't tell based on how weak she was now.

He shoved her hand on top of the book, and then his eyes started to glow red, as he looked into hers.

"You will give up your absolute blood powers." Bryce stated.

At that moment, Cindy had no resistance as she had no choice but to do what he asked, and the book started to glow. A whirlwind of red swirls of energy surrounded her body, and the power had even lifted her up in the air slightly, but no matter what happened, Bryce wouldn't let go of the book.

As the whirlwind began to die down, all of the red swirls had entered the book, and the red gem in the center started to light up once again, showing that the power had been returned.

Prima went forward to grab the book off Bryce once more, but Bryce shook his head and placed it beneath his waist.

"This power has already fallen into the wrong hands once, it won't happen again. You can lock up the book once the powers have been transferred over." Bryce said and looked back at Cindy.

"We have been trying to run our investigation to see who is exactly involved in this. The eighth leader Jill keeps insisting that she was forced by you, and that even she doesn't have a clear picture or idea as to why you exactly have done all of this." Said Bryce.

"Now are you willing to tell us, or are you going to make this difficult for us?"

Whereas if Cindy willingly told them, then they could just use the influence skill to confirm whether or not what she had said was the truth.

"And will you grant me my wish if I tell you everything?" She replied, whining still from the pain.

"Which wish, your wish to become Queen or your current wish?" Bryce asked, thinking he knew what her current wish was.

"Hahah, I never knew you were a funny man, my wish was never to become Queen, Bryce. Although I still managed to accomplish half of what I wanted, I will tell you everything. As long as you promise to kill me after." Cindy requested.

Bryce had to think about it for a while, they could get what they wanted through the influence skill, so Cindy didn't really have a bargaining chip. In all honesty, after Bryce got what he wanted from Cindy, it didn't matter to him if she was dead or alive. As long as he could store her blood for other uses in the future.

"You have my word, that we will set a date for your death so you will not have to suffer forever." Bryce promised.

"Bryce, I don't know whether you will make a good King or a bad King, or whether you even care about hearing my story, but if the old King had listened to those beneath him, then maybe something like this would have never happened.

"Sometimes, when you try to fix the current problem and not think about the future, then the solution now might cause a bigger problem in the future." Said Cindy.

Walking up to her, adn staring her in the face, Bryce showed no fear.

"Cindy, let me tell you something, why would I take advice from someone who is in your position?" Bryce replied. "I am here where I am today because of my actions. At the very top of all the vampires, while you are stuck down here in this cell suffering. I would be mad to take advice from you."

Hearing these words, seeing that Bryce was so proud of what he accomplished, it made Cindy smile.

"Ah yes, you achieved this all by yourself didn't you, and you say you are top of all the vampires? King is merely a title. I can see you're afraid. It's why you won't let anyone touch the blood book anymore, because even you think deep down that there is now another one. Another vampire more deserving of that title." Cindy said.

Although Bryce didn't react, his body told a different story as the veins on his hand started to bulge once more. He and his Royal Knights knew who she was referring to. It was the tenth leader, Quinn. The one the people claimed was the hero.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 936: Cindy's darkness

After Cindy's taunting words, Bryce had eventually calmed down as he thought about a few things. He touched the book around his waist and he could feel the power seeping out from the book.

"You think the tenth leader will be a problem? I disagree." Bryce said, as he pulled out the book from his waist and a flask along with it.

"Your majesty, what are you doing?" Kyle asked. "You are meant to obtain the blood powers in front of all the other leaders." Although Kyle didn't question it, he also wondered where Bryce had retrieved another flask with all the leader's blood inside.

"And have more people question who has the right to this power? You know we are all far too involved in this already!" Bryce shouted back and poured the flask of blood over the book. The power that was recently bound within the book just a moment ago, was now seeping out again.

The red crystal on top of the book lit up brightly, and soon started to dim as the powers inside were transferred over to Bryce.

Bryce looked at his hand as if it was foreign to him, and started to move it like so as well. Then from the wound that had been cut on Cindy from earlier, he started to move his fingers, and blood started to move from her hand creating a small ping pong sized ball.

Eventually, he started to rotate it, spinning it around his hand.

"Cindy, with this power no one should have been a match for you. You were in such a rush to complete things. Now as King, I have time on my hands. That boy will not be a problem. Now, speak."

Cindy wanted to say more but she could tell that, now he had the blood powers, it had given him a sense of false confidence. She knew this best because she had felt the same way, yet she had still been defeated. Saying anything now would just be wasting her time, and the quicker she told her story, the quicker she could get rid of this pain.

Cindy had the respect of many leaders, and during her time she had helped other leaders as well as their people with many problems due to the powerful second ability. Because of this, she gained a lot of favour with certain families.

Part of this was also due to how hardworking Cindy seemed to be, and this was actually true of her behalf, but the reason why she was so hardworking was because of her father. The second family went through a rough period when her father, the old leader, had turned into a Bloodsucker.

When her father had left, she too naturally hated him for what he had become. Bloodsuckers, vampires who lost control to the bloodlust and couldn't control themselves, going against the wishes of the settlement. Because of this, she hated her father.

However, that all changed on the day that he died. Before he had died, he had restored a memory of hers. Cancelling the reverse skill used when she was a young one. At that moment tears started to flow down her face.

For hundreds of years she had hated her father, when in truth he was the one that had always protected her.

She never understood why, but even before regaining her memory back, she would feel a slight shiver run through her body when being around men. It naturally caused her to have a disliking for them, but still she would put on a smile.

She thought this was due to the abandonment of her father, but after learning the dark truth she realised it wasn't the case at all.

The truth of Cindy's past was closely related to that of the eighth family's and it wasn't a good relation. The eighth family seemed to be obsessed with a certain goal that would be passed down from leader to leader and this goal in particular was attempting to create a Dhampir. They had tried many methods for this but none of them worked.

This eventually led them to trying to cross humans with female vampires, and one of the people that had been selected to participate in this, was Cindy. When she was still very young. The second family at the time had many children and they thought that the family wouldn't care about such a thing, but her father Rowa did care.

Finding out about it, he had put a stop to it, however, after reporting it to the current King at the time and returning her, they had done nothing. Their answer was to simply start again, putting the current leader to sleep and selecting a new one. Cindy was traumatised for what she had been forced to go through and her father made it so she would never have to remember those events ever again.

When these memories resurfaced, she realised why she had a hatred for men, the past eighth leaders and for what had happened to her. The King, who had outcasted the only person who had protected her, and the eighth family who received next to no punishment.

Cindy wanted to get rid of it all, and she wanted to start with the eighth family. Supposedly, the eighth family Original leader had perished due to an experiment conducted from the tenth family, and she wanted to see this for herself.

Perhaps she could get an answer from him as to why she had been put through so much.

Obtaining blood from one of the eighth's heirs she had entered the eighth's family tomb and summoned the Original leader. They were right, what was left of him certainly wasn't a vampire, there was nothing left but a beating heart, linked to an outer shell of the brain. There was no flesh, or anything, or even a way for the body to properly consume blood.

She imagined they had put him in the tomb just out of respect.

However, Cindy hadn't exactly been honest about the strength of her powers, after spending some time, over the course of weeks she had eventually restored the eighth leader back to what he once was and he had remembered everything the tenth family did to him.

Although Cindy wanted to get rid of the eighth family, she also had the goal of crushing the whole settlement. The one that had killed her beloved father. Now, the Original vampire Remus owed Cindy a favour. What she was surprised by was just how much power Remus seemed to have over his ability compared to the previous leaders. How when using his powers, he could force those with more of his blood to do whatever he wished.

Since both of their goals were similar they had decided to work together and Jill was thrown into the deep end of things. However, Jill being a female of the eighth family, she had more of a soft spot for her.

And this was how Cindy's quest for revenge had begun.

"So earlier when you said that most of your goal had been completed, you were talking about how nearly all the vampires in the eighth family have now died." Bryce said, having listened to the story.

"Correct, but it's a shame I didn't take everyone else down with me." Cindy replied.

"Then answer me this, I understand why Remus had a grudge against the tenth family, but you could have still completed your revenge slowly. What made you attempt to frame Quinn and attack them? There must have been more to it." Bryce asked.

"Because I was selfish." She answered. "Quinn had things that I wanted. He had three beautiful girls that I believed needed saving. My goal wasn't to destroy the whole settlement, but create a new one where only females would exist, and the men would have to suffer the same punishment that I went through, and only to be used as tools for breeding." She said with a malicious smile.

Although this was true she hadn't told the whole truth. The original plan was to do everything after she had become Queen. Slowly getting rid of the families and building her secret army but there were a few unexpected things that had occurred.

The first one was receiving information from the Bloodsuckers after her father's passing, that in the tenth family there was Dhampir. The very thing that the eighth family had been attempting to create for so long, somehow the tenth family had managed to create one, and it was a female of all things.

Cindy wanted Erin for herself. Becoming Queen, she couldn't possibly just request that Erin come over to her side. She needed Quinn to be out of the picture and out of the way, and to somehow build trust.

Then what had further escalated her to commit to her plans was the vision the banshee had told her. However, Cindy was willing to take the fact that the tenth family had a dhampir with them to her grave.

'I don't know why the eighth family were obsessed with creating a dhampir, but I believe one day, it might be the end of all the vampires. I don't even think Quinn knows what he has on his hands yet.' Cindy thought.

"It seems like Jill was telling the truth after all, but it still doesn't excuse her for her involvement in things after the fact, and her continued involvement. Now that the eighth family has been destroyed including all of its previous leaders, there aren't many of them left alive. I will need to decide what to do." Bryce said as he started to walk away from Cindy.

"Wait, where are you going!" Cindy screamed. "You promised you would end my life!"

"Oh did I?" Bryce said, smiling back.

"Aren't you a man of his word? I thought you were a respectful vampire that followed the rules and took pride in things like this!" She argued.

As they left the room, Bryce had one last thing to say to her.

"Cindy, you aren't the only one that has been keeping up an image in front of others for the sake of their goal." Bryce replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 937: Returning memoires

It seemed like whatever Bryce had to do was finally complete, for he had sent a message to those in the tenth castle, to inform him of when Quinn was awake. He had been asleep for two days now, but his condition seemed fine and even Leo said there was nothing to worry about.

It was as if Quinn's body knew his duties for now were over and he could finally rest.

The message stated, after Quinn woke up, they would try to gather all of the leaders still left to inform everyone on the council of the decision to be made and agreed upon.

It was a good sign, unlike before where they were doing things and just treating Quinn as an add on; it now seemed he was more like a leader. One whose opinion they valued, or at least now they respected his strength, which was a big thing to vampires.

As for the one who came to deliver the message, it was none other than the first Vampire Knight Kazz. Before she left though, Silver had called out to her asking for the request she had made before.

For the past few days Silver had been staying at the tenth castle looking after her brother. After what had happened to him, she was a little afraid it might happen again. Lee, her father was happy for her to do this as well, and now Kazz had returned and Bryce was done with his tasks she could finally make her request again.

"Kazz, you said that Bryce would restore Fex memories the same way he restored yours, are you able to do it now? I'm afraid the longer Fex is without them, it might be harder to get them back, or the more he will feel lost. I'm sure you understand." Silver said.

"Sure." Kazz said, looking at Fex who was standing sheepishly beside her. Although Fex was getting used to everyone at the castle, he wasn't used to everyone knowing things about him that even he didn't know. "I have to warn you, you might not like the solution though but it's the only one."

"Anything to get my memories back, please." Fex said, giving a polite bow to her.

"Your little brother is a cute one, isn't he." She said walking over wanting to pinch his cheeks, but Kazz's hand was soon slapped away from Silver on instinct.

"I'm sorry." Silver replied as if she was shocked by her own actions. "It's just, after everything that happened."

Holding her hand, Kazz walked out of the room, and it was up to them if they wanted to follow her and the two of them did so quickly.

When leaving the castle, the inner area was quite busy, it looked like the humans that had been turned were busy organising something, but they had no clue what. Even Silver didn't know as she had been too busy doting and looking after her brother.

When they had finally reached the north gate of the castle walls they could see thousands of vampires outside trying to get in.

"What is going on?" Silver said.

"I guess you haven't left the castle?" Kazz stated. "Everyone is waiting to see the person who saved them from the attack. They know that the second family was behind things by now. Or at least their leader was. Anyway the important thing is they want to see Quinn, or even join the tenth family."

"Isn't that a good thing?" Fex said from what he understood. "I mean I think, there aren't a lot of vampires in the tenth family, so it's good that now all of these people want to join."

"Brother, I think that is a mistake. These people only want to join now, which means that they only care about themselves. Only after seeing how strong the new tenth leader is and his defences do they want to join. Do you think they would be willing to risk their lives for their leader, no they just want to save themselves." Silver explained.

What she said was quite true as well, Kazz noticed. Those standing outside of the gate were either from the tenth family pooling area, the few vampires from the eighth family and those from the second family.

At the moment, the eighth family and second family were being treated quite poorly by the other families due to what happened, while the tenth were now a family not to be messed around with. They were hoping by transferring over it could solve some of their problems.

Following Kazz, eventually Silver realised where they were. Standing outside the castle gate were Royal Guards stationed all over. They looked like they belonged at the King's castle, but this wasn't the King's castle they were at. They were at the second family castle.

The guards were stationed there, just in case any of the other family members wanted to get some personal revenge. After all, the other families had lost a lot due to Cindy. With her locked up, they could only focus their hatred and anger towards the family.

The other reason the guards were there was to not allow those from the second family to escape either. An investigation was still ongoing to which vampires exactly knew what Cindy was doing. After all, Silver had spotted a few of the girls from the inner castle taking the men to the unknown place.

"What are we doing here?" Why would you bring us to such a place?" Silver asked.

"Mine and Fex's memories weren't taken away using an influence skill but it was due to the second family's ability. So to get them back, we need to use that ability as well." Kazz replied.

There were quite a few vampires in the second family that had learned their ability. However, to get rid of an ability that a leader had placed, one would need to be even stronger or at least of equal powers to Cindy.

When Silver saw her use her powers that day fighting Quinn and the other leaders. Everyone saw that Cindy had been hiding the extent of her reversing powers. There were others who even thought maybe there was something she could do to help the past King.

Entering the castle, and walking up to the throne room, she quickly found out who was sitting in the current second leader's throne. As soon as she laid eyes on him, Silver bowed down, and so did the other two.

"Please you can stand, my family has already caused so much pain for the vampire settlement. Right now I don't feel like I am deserving of your respect." The man spoke, but he wasn't any ordinary man, and he certainly didn't look like it either.

The man was dressed in an all white robe, which stood out for a vampire since they often wore black. On his right shoulder he had an ancient armour piece that was silver in design with a gold trim going along the edges, and finally he had his long black hair tied up, but allowed two long bangs to go down the front.

When looking at her with his soft smile, Silver couldn't believe that Cindy and this man were related. For he was the Original vampire of the second family, Tempus Cha.

"Um sir," Fex said standing up. "I think someone from this family removed my memories and I was wondering if you could bring them back."

Silver, and Kazz couldn't believe how casually Fex was talking to the man just now, but of course Fex had no clue who he was.

The man looked at Fex for a few seconds who was rubbing the back of his head.

"Haha, of course, of course. It was my ability in the first place, so I should be able to remove it just like I did with Kazz."

"Remove it, so I'll still remember everything that happened right, I won't forget everything?" Fex asked, clenching his fist. He didn't want to forget what happened. He wanted to remember all the people from the tenth family including what his sister had done to help him.

"Of course." Tempus said, signaling for him to come over with one finger.

When Fex reached Tempus, he placed his hand on top of his head, and it only took a few seconds and the whole skill was cancelled allowing him to remember everything again. Immediately, Fex's eyes went wide, before immediately bowing down to the ground.

"I'm so sorry, I'm such an idiot for my words before. Please, please forgive me!" Fex said.

In the background Fex continued to beg, while Silver had her own thoughts watching everything play out. If Tempus was here standing now, it meant that the one who had awakened him was Bryce.

"Does Bryce plan to return him back to his tomb?" Silver asked Kazz who was still by her side.

"Originally, yes.' Kazz replied. "But it seems like Tempus doesn't wish to return to his tomb, instead he wants to build up the second family's name so they are trustworthy again before he leaves."

Silver didn't know why, she should be happy that the Original vampires were waking up and choosing to stay on their world during her time. However, she had a bad feeling about it all. Maybe it was because of her experience with Remus, but she just felt like the generations of vampires were too far apart, and their views were sure to clash.

With that said and done, there was only one thing that they needed to wait for, and Quinn had finally woken up from his long awaited rest.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 938: Juicy Rewards

Slowly opening his eyes, Quinn felt the best he had ever felt in a long time. It reminded him of when he was a young teenager and, on the weekends, would sleep in until three in the afternoon. There was no one to wake him up and nag him anyway like others had. Ever since turning, being thrown into all of this mess, it felt like he didn't even have a single day to rest.

'I thought life back then was hard, and now look at this.' Quinn thought.

He realised that he was in a bed, one that he had come to recognise as his own in the Castle. Although slightly different as it had been rebuilt after being destroyed from Borden's and Remus's battle. It was hardly noticeable since all the rooms were quite similar.

A large Victorian style bed, with old furnishings and rugs that had been there for who knew how many years.

"You're finally awake, sleepy head," Layla said, who was by his side and had the most genuine smile he had ever seen. It was clear that she was happy to see him awake.

Knowing that there were now people there for him and that cared for him, it was a reminder of why he fought so hard.

"What was that strange dream?" Quinn mumbled as he slowly got up. "I remembered being back at school." He said, touching his head.

"Do you want me to call over the others and tell them you're awake, or do you want to rest for a little longer," Layla asked, knowing full well that the others would barge in full of excitement if she told them the news.

The others were a handful, and if Quinn was half awake, it would be hard for him to handle them.

"Rest would be good for now. Just give me a little more time." Quinn said.

Saying this, Layla thought it was best she left as well. Of course, there was a lot Quinn wanted to know, but just for a few hours, she didn't want him to worry about being the leader of the Cursed family, or one of the leaders of the human race. She just wanted him to be Quinn.

Just as she was about to shut the door though, He had a few words for her.

"I'm sorry," Quinn said. "I think I know what happened to Cia. I'm sorry I wasn't there to save her."

Layla turned around and smiled while shaking her head.

"Quinn, you don't need to apologise anymore. We have been on this journey with you long enough. Besides Cia, she died happily. At least, I would like to believe that. And you did everything you could. Your towers and the defences you set up. We all survived that day due to your help."

"I think I realised we should start being more thankful for what we have, rather than what we have lost." Closing the door behind her, Quinn was finally left on his own.

He was sitting there in disbelief on his bed, thinking about what he had just been through. The fight he had just had trying to remember every single detail.

But what actually had him most excited, were the rewards he was about to receive.

While passing out from exhaustion, Quinn heard several pings go off in his head, and screens appearing in front of him, but he was unable to check out exactly what they were.

'So system, you didn't think I could beat her? So much so that you didn't even bother giving me a quest. At least it looks like you know when to reward someone when they are in the wrong.' Quinn thought over the moon, ready to open up the notification screens.

[The Tenth family thinks very highly of you]

[The Vampire settlement has learnt of your deeds]

[You have gained a total of 50,000 reputation points]

[You have reached the maximum amount of reputation points]

[You can now upgrade your Castle, to 'Level Two' in exchange for 50,000 points]

[Do you wish to proceed?]

Seeing all the information pop up in front of him, it was great news. He didn't know what it meant by upgrading his Castle, but if anything cost 50,000 points, undoubtedly it had to be good.

Seeing the temptation in front of him, he couldn't help but press the button at that moment.

[Your Castle is now being upgraded to 'Level two']

At first, it seemed like nothing was happening, and Quinn wondered if he could see some changes out of his window that showed the tenth settlement as a whole. As

soon as he got up on his feet. Rumbling started, and the whole Castle seemed to be shaking.

'What is going on, Vincent? What's happening?' Quinn asked.

'I have no idea. Your system's ability has gone beyond whatever I was capable of. It's far too advanced.' Although Vincent didn't say it, he was kind of jealous and wished he had the system when he was still alive. He would have loved to experiment in so many different ways to fully understand the system.

In a way, for the system to be handed to someone as young as Quinn, with a not so great of a mind, was a little bit of a waste.

Finally, the rumbling had stopped, and Quinn immediately rushed out to see if there had been any grand changes. The first he spotted was at the very edge of the inner castle area. All of the walls were larger and thicker than they once were.

The jagged black rock the wall's used to be made off was no more, and now the black material looked to have been turned into large smooth stones. Fitting for a real castle wall. It also was twice as high and nearly twice as thick.

If anyone was thinking of attacking the family, they were sure to have trouble now. Checking the system out as well, he now could see that the wall had a health bar and a reputation cost to repair it.

'I wonder how strong that wall is?' Quinn thought.

What Quinn failed to realise more than anything was the amount of attention this was having on the vampires in the settlement. It was sure to grab the attention of the other families as well. In a few seconds, grand changes had been made to the castle walls, and it stood out compared to the rest, even the King's Castle.

What Quinn also didn't know was that the Castle itself had changed as well. Like the walls, the Castle's material was now made in the same style, and it looked to have even grown slightly in size.

Quinn could already hear everyone in the Castle making a commotion from the others inside.

'Oh, this is going to be a headache and a half. I better check if there was anything else as well.' Quinn thought.

Scrolling down through the notifications, there was still more to come.

[You have done the impossible, the system is impressed]

[It is sorry for doubting you]

[Reward +10 levels]

[You are now level 51]

[Ten stat points have been received]

Seeing this, Quinn decided to use his stat points. He didn't know what trouble he might get into around the corner. Looking at his stats, he realised that he quite enjoyed being a balanced fighter.

Each stat was essential to him. Although lately, the charm skill seemed useless. It was strong enough to influence most humans and weak vampires, but now with the type of opponents, he was facing. It was nearly impossible to attempt to control them.

After putting in the stat points as he wished they now were as follows:

[Strength 70]

[Agility 65]

[Stamina 63]

[Charm 60]

These stats were without Quinn wearing any beats equipment. He decided to put his strength stat at the next stage since it was already the closest, and Quinn always saw the most significant jump every ten stat points.

Although, the higher the stat points, the less noticeable it was now.

[You have witnessed the use of Great blood control]

[Your knowledge of blood control has increased]

[You know have 50 points in blood control]

The good news seemed to keep on coming. The ten levels were the biggest increase Quinn had ever received, and he thought these were the best rewards he had gotten as well. He wanted to jump up and down in excitement, but at the same time, he just felt like it was embarrassing to do so.

'You deserve it, Quinn. That was a battle I don't think many would have been able to survive. Some might have said you were lucky to receive this system.' Vincent then cleared his throat as he was one of those people. 'However, I know that even if others were put in your situation, they wouldn't have achieved the same result, and I believe the system thinks the same.'

Hearing these words from Vincent of all people, for some reason, it made him feel the proudest.

"Thanks...Grandpa." Quinn jokingly said once more.

It was the end of the rewards for Quinn, but not the end of the messages, for there was one more, and this one was a new quest. He was quite surprised at this since he believed after getting the 'Become the vampire king' Quest, he wouldn't receive anything after, or at least until he had completed it.

[New Quest received]

[You have surpassed level fifty]

[The strength inside you is growing, and something is starting to emerge, but what is it?]

[Find out what lies beyond that of a Vampire lord?]

[Quest requirements: ????]

[Quest reward: ????]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 939: Answer them

Looking at the message that had appeared in front of him, Quinn was trying to figure out what the quest exactly was. The requirements for completing the quest weren't clear and had been blanked out with question marks. Meaning Quinn didn't really know how to complete it, but by the wording of the quest given, it was clearly alluding to something.

'Is it saying there is another evolution?' Quinn wondered. 'Is there an evolution past that of a vampire lord?'

This was the only thing he could think of as to what the system was getting at, but if there was another evolution then when would it be unlocked? He had already reached level fifty and he wasn't even sure if there was a level cap like there would be in games. 60, 80 maybe not until he reached level a hundred he would complete the quest.

'To my knowledge no. All the leaders, or at least all the current leaders during my time and yours are at the lord level. Although the Original vampires might be a bit different, they were born the way they were and don't go through an evolution like yourself and the others.' Vincent answered.

With no clue what the requirements were though, Quinn would have to put it in the back of his head for now.

'I wish the system could just stop playing games with me and be a little more upfront with me sometimes.' Quinn sighed.

'Well, that would defeat the mystery of the game after all. Remember the whole system was based on a game in the first place.' Vincent answered.

Just seconds after, the door swung open and a group of people were excitedly rushing through the door to see him. It looked like when they saw the change in the castle and walls, they all knew there was only one person possible for such a thing.

"Quinn!" Some of them shouted, rushing over giving him hugs, cheers and slaps on the back.

"It's good to see you all again as well." Quinn said.

There were many questions asked on both ends, as Quinn was unaware of what exactly had happened while he was in the cellar, and they too wanted to know what happened to him. This way everyone was getting more of a full picture of what was going on at the time and an idea of why things had played out the way they were.

"Well what a surprise." Sam said. "It looks like the one that clocked onto everything from the beginning was Peter."

Everyone turned to Peter who was in the room. He was leaning up against the wall at the very back with his arms crossed.

"I told you I had a bad feeling about her, maybe you guys should trust me a bit more." Peter said.

"Didn't he think Xander was a bad person when he first met him as well?" Timmy whispered over to Amy.

"Well, maybe he's not wrong." She teased, and the others who had overheard all started to laugh.

"I'm sorry to ruin this happy moment." Paul said breaking through and walking over to where Quinn was. "But there are some important matters we need to deal with. I've sent a report to the King that you are now awake as he requested, but before that, I really think we should deal with the matters outside."

"Outside?" Quinn said, confused at what Paul was going on about.

After some explaining, Paul told Quinn about those that now wished to join the tenth families and how many wanted to see who had saved the vampires.

"I didn't know what you wanted to do, but there is one thing for sure, we are certainly lacking people. Therefore while you were asleep, I started to organise them into certain groups. I had people test them on a number of things and categorised them, based on their skills." Paul started to explain.

"Wait, categorised based on their skills, do you mean like strength and fighting ability?" Quinn asked, and Paul didn't say a word after. "Don't Paul, don't do it. You're acting like you're in the military again. I have to admit your way has had its uses and I have come to understand why the military did the things the way they did, but I do not want to do what they did."

"I want you to make a new list. Take a look at those that have been in the tenth family pooling area the longest. Bring them in first, then I want you to make a list of skills they are capable of or best at. I want you to find out what they are talented at and then find a use for their talent. Those that aren't good at fighting won't just be chucked aside."

"I want you to work closely with Timmy, he came up with a good reward system before, but I want these people to be rewarded for helping, and their loyalty to the tenth family. Is that okay?"

Paul paused for a second, and looked at the table of information in his hand. He then swiped the information off the screen and started a whole new one.

"You're the leader Quinn, not me. I will do as you say, but I will make a suggestion. The momentum is in your favour now. You should go and answer those wishes, and let the people see who saved them. You deserve that much." Paul said.

The reason why Quinn wasn't so quick to take up this idea was because Quinn had decided already that he wanted to leave this place. He felt a little strange helping them and doing all these duties when he wasn't going to be here much longer.

'Do I take them back to the Cursed ship with me?' Quinn wondered.

'I think just like you see Earth as your home, these vampires see this place as their home as well. There will be many that do not want to leave Quinn.' Vincent explained. 'On top of that, would the vampires allow you to take that many with you? It would mean exposing their secret. Perhaps this is something you could discuss with Bryce but I don't think the humans are ready to know of the vampire's existence just yet.'

Honestly, Quinn couldn't agree more. Although Quinn did think humans could live along with vampires it would be a learning curve and take time. On top of this, right now the humans were on their toes, waiting for the Dalki to attack at any moment.

Perhaps once the Dalki threat was over, Quinn could attempt to do what Arthur had failed at.

"Come on then, let's go see everyone." Quinn said.

When leaving the castle, there were two more people waiting for him at the castle door. One of them Leo, his other Vampire Knight, and the other Peter.

"I understand why Leo is coming with us, because we should go out as the three of us, but why is Peter here?" Quinn asked.

"It seems that some of the people are also here to see Peter as well. He saved quite a bit of people while you were off fighting."

Walking through the inner castle area, Quinn could already hear the crowd of people talking. He had never heard the tenth area be so noisy before and with his super hearing he could hear and pick out certain sentences.

"I still can't believe how the tenth has been able to grow so quickly."

"Everything changed when they announced their new leader. I didn't think much of him at first."

"I always knew he was special, the tenth in the past always created great inventions that changed the vampire's lives and look at what he is making for his people now."

"Then shouldn't the tenth leader not be so selfish, he should share them with the other families?"

"After the other families attacked him, if he keeps everything for himself then so be it, I don't blame him. It's clear the new leader cares for all his people which is why he's built so much to protect them."

At first, Quinn was happy to hear all the compliments, but soon it was making him feel sick as he got closer and closer.

'These people, they rely on a leader.'

"Look, that's him, he's finally here everyone!" One person shouted, and they soon all started to shout and cheer seeing Quinn. There were far more vampires than Quinn had expected and every single one was there for him.

The Royal Guard made sure no one was to get through the front gate, and the vampires made sure to listen, but they continued to move their heads to get a look at the leader. Some of them hadn't even bothered to care to burn in the memory of the tenth leader when they had first seen him at the ceremony, so they didn't even know what Quinn really looked like.

Seeing the commotion, Quinn jumped up using his strength to the top of the wall in one go, and soon Peter, Leo and Paul followed him. The four of them stood there looking down at all the vampires.

"Thank you for protecting us!"

"It's the Wight, the Wight that saved you, look!" A mother said, pointing upward towards Peter.

'Do you still think you can just up and leave this place?' Vincent said. 'You remember, you promised me and said you would look after them, Quinn. You now have a connection with them.'

Vincent was right, Quinn had already promised to protect those in the tenth, but now other vampires also wanted his help, not just those from the tenth anymore.

'What am I meant to do now?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 940: Paul's Goal

After looking at all the people from the top of the castle wall, he could see everyone. They looked back at him as if they were expecting some type of grand speech, but he didn't really have one for them, nor was he expecting this in the first place.

They all thought he had saved the vampire race, protected them. When in reality, he was just protecting his friends and wanted to leave this place.

He then looked back at his own castle and started to look at the others in comparison. The towers, the upgraded walls and the castle itself. There was a huge difference now, and so much had changed in a short amount of time.

The last time he had come here, the castle was untouched, abandoned, and hadn't been worked on.

'Are they really here for me?' Quinn wondered and soon jumped back off without saying a word to any of them. He didn't know if this would be better for his position or not, but seeing what had happened, seeing them. He now had a better idea of what he wanted to do.

"The tenth leader has asked me to do a few things. If you wish to join the tenth family, then you should comply with the following rules..." Paul continued on giving the vampires a set of instructions. All of what Paul was doing, was based on what Quinn had requested from before. Soon they began to let in vampires slowly into the castle walls.

Through talking to the vampires, Paul found out that there were quite a few of those that had been in the tenth family for a while, and their reasons for staying and wanting to join were quite similar. They had respect for Quinn ever since he had gotten in power.

Many of those in the tenth family were criticised, and the other families used their powers to abuse them. Similar to what Timmy had gone through at school. Because of Quinn's request, before he had been accused of killing Dwight, the tenth family were already seeing improvements in their lives.

They thought that the new tenth leader was someone who actually cared for the family. Enough to even return to this place and come here when he didn't have to.

They didn't realise that Quinn had made that rule more so he would receive prisoners from the other families. In hopes to improve his own power. There was a selfish reason behind it, but it had done good in the process.

As things were rolling into place, Quinn noticed that there had been a summon. For the first time in a while, there was a voice, a message that had been sent in his head.

"This is a message from King Bryce. All leaders are to come to the King's castle along with their fellow Knights in the next two hours. All leaders must attend."

The voice responsible for sending the message, was from Jill. It didn't sound the same as she usually did. When delivering this message, it was far more monotone and spoken as if Jill had lost all hope.

Quite frankly, Quinn was surprised that she was still being used to send messages after what had happened.

Due to the message that had been sent, Quinn also called Paul and Leo back to the castle as well, as Quinn wanted to have his own meeting with all the others. Paul left the task he had assigned his men to Ashley, and they were off.

Due to Paul's background, he was great at getting things done and was extremely organised and efficient. He made it so whatever plan needed to be implemented could be done quickly and run like clockwork.

He only needed a piece to replace him in the clock with him away, and it could continue on working.

Finally, in the usual grand dining room that looked like it could seat around thirty or so people. Everyone that Quinn was close to had gathered. He deemed it important to him and those that were part of the Cursed ship.

"You might be wondering why I asked you all to come, but I have been summoned to the King's castle for a talk. It's what we've been waiting for, or at least I have been waiting for." Quinn said. "I'll be blunt. I'm going to ask if we can leave this place. Although ask isn't really the right word, I'm going to make it clear that I'm leaving this place, but I see that there is a lot to be done here, and there are those that care about this world." Quinn then looked at Timmy, Xander and Amy, who were originally from the vampire world. "I'm going to ask for a way, where I am still part of this crazy vampire ruling, but I have more freedom to come and go as I wish."

"From what I have seen outside, I realised that the position I'm in might be a lot better than we thought, and I can use this to my advantage. Honestly, asking just for permission to leave would be too simple for what we have done and what we have suffered through. I came to realise I have only been thinking about myself, acting on everyone's behalf without actually asking what you guys wanted. So I want you guys to tell me now, is there anything you need or would like to ask for?"

It came as quite a surprise. For one, they weren't sure Bryce was going to accept Quinn's request, and now Quinn wanted to ask the King for more, but for those that were able to see deeper than the surface, they realised that Quinn noticed the power of the vampires. The power of the people.

Using them, and his 'good deed' Bryce didn't have much choice. What could he do if he refused his request, and Quinn decided to leave anyway? Attack the family, attempt to attack Quinn? It simply wouldn't go well and cause another war.

The first to speak and wasn't shy about asking for something, was Logan. He raised his good hand up before speaking. "Can I request we keep the blood crystals we obtained from the eighth family attack? I'm sure when things settle down, they will ask for them back, but they are quite useful to power certain items and even my own. I would like to do more research if possible that would help us out a lot. I believe the vampires have deemed this as an illegal item."

"I think that will be fine," Quinn replied and looked at his seared off arm. "Do you want me to see if they have someone that can get your arm back, or maybe a new one? They should have those in the second family that might be able to do something."

Even though Quinn said this, he didn't really want to be sending another one of his friends off to the second family. If Logan did go through anything, this time Quinn would be right there beside them.

Shaking his head, Logan had no hesitation rejecting the offer.

"Don't worry, I don't see having fewer human parts as a bad thing for me. I can still use my ability just as well. Besides, I have other plans for this." He said, raising his stump. "If you get us back to the human world. I can work on something straight away."

Soon after, Logan started to mumble to himself, and had a slight smirk as he was thinking of the creations he could come up with.

Quinn looked around the room to see if there was anyone else, but all they really wanted was to go home. There wasn't anything that the vampires could give them that they wanted other than that, until Paul had raised his arm as well.

"I would like to make an offer, and also a request as well," Paul said. "I have spoken with my people before this, so do not think I am talking on their behalf when I say this. Like before, I would assume that if they do accept your request to leave, they will want you to leave someone behind."

"This is also good for us as we can keep an eye on things here. My people and I would like to be the ones left behind to look after this place."

According to the rules stated last time. Quinn had to leave a vampire knight behind. He had taken Paul with him last time due to them heading back to the second military base. It was unknown to them at the time the condition of the base.

However, now with Quinn's position in the human race, there was no need for Paul to be by his side any longer. Quinn knew that Leo wanted to do things as well. And felt a little bad for keeping him here.

Honestly, Quinn hadn't planned to leave any of the main group behind, but if Paul did request and wanted to, he wouldn't stop him.

"I see. Paul, I know you would only do this with the interest of your people, so what is it that you request?" Quinn asked.

"When you're in the meeting, Quinn. I want you to ask them, If there is a cure. A way to turn a vampire back into a human."

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 941: An old castle down, a new one in its place**

Finally, the time for the meeting had come, and the three from the tenth family that were due to attend were on their way. In order to avoid the commotion outside and being spotted by the other vampires, Quinn had decided to use his shadow travel and brought along both Leo and Paul as asked.

While using the shadow travel, Quinn noticed that he no longer felt like his MC points were draining. It was as if a specific part of his body no longer got tired when using it.

'So this is what having over a thousand MC points feels like?' Quinn thought. One of his main problems with using the shadow ability was how much MC each skill would use, it seemed to be more taxing compared to other abilities, but now Quinn could finally use his skills in more ways without having to worry.

While on the way there, Quinn's mind started to wander and focus on something else. It was the question Paul had asked not too long ago.

'About Paul's request, it should be possible, right?' Quinn asked. This was something Quinn had never really thought about himself, but it must have been natural for those who had been turned unwillingly to want to be turned back.

However, for Quinn, it was a new power, he always treated it like an ability and it was because he had become a vampire his whole life had changed. It was now a part of him. What used to be problems and difficulties were no longer there. Although he did miss the taste of normal food now and then.

'What makes you think that?' Vincent replied.

'When I lived your life, you placed your powers away in that book, you used your ability so you could become human and live with....' Quinn stopped there as he realised that talking about old memories may have not been the best or politest thing to do. It felt natural for Quinn because he had lived Vincent's life.

At the end of the day, Vincent never told him these things, and the two of them had never directly talked about Vincent's past before.

'That was due to my ability, the equivalent exchange ability. This is something that you don't have, Quinn. Perhaps there would have been something that could have been done, if I was still alive.' Vincent replied.

'Yes, but there are others with the same ability, remember. Some that are still out there even now.' Quinn replied, referring to the possibility of the original leader

Richard Eno, and Jim. 'So apart from that, is there any other way? After thousands of years, did they never figure something out.'

Quinn didn't hear from Vincent for a while, as he must have been thinking of something, and he eventually replied.

'Not that I know of, I'm not saying it's impossible. I'm just saying even when I was alive there was no research put towards such a thing. Even Vampires that think they must protect humans see themselves above them, so why would they ever want to become one of them?'

'But you did.' Quinn replied.

'I know, but I was certainly a special case. When I decided to, I used what tools I had available at the time. Anyway, my point is, there hasn't been any research done, which is why I said not that I know of. Perhaps after my time someone has done something. I'll be honest there is one family that might know the answer. The second family.'

It was an unexpected answer for Quinn.

'Did you remember when Leo told you about the subclasses that they found. What interests me is how they even created such subclasses? There are only two ways to create a subclass. Either be born, this means one of their parents would have needed to be a subclass, or the second, is to turn a human. They had far too many subclasses for me to believe that they were born.'

Vincent certainly had a point, and it was something Quinn had never thought of before. But with Cindy dead, who was there to ask? Still, he had made a promise and he would certainly pop the question.

Arriving at the King's castle the normal checks had been done, and it was time for the three of them to be led on inside.

'Well, at least the guards aren't acting strange like last time. Were some of them working for Cindy, or was it something else?' Quinn wondered.

As Quinn entered the castle doors, he prepared himself. His plan was to make it so his group could leave this world without fighting if possible, but in the back of his mind he had to prepare for quite the confrontation.

When Quinn finally arrived, the large wide doors were opened and the usual council room could be seen, although what he hated was the fact that it seemed like everyone was already there before him, and he was once again the center of attention.

'Why is it, every time I come here, they look at me?'

Although this time, it was for a different reason. Those that were there and had seen Quinn fight. They were reminded of his power and those who weren't had heard what he had done. Somehow a leader was able to go toe to toe with one that had the absolute blood power.

In a way, some of them felt fear, as they believed that this might be the coming of a second Arthur.

As Quinn walked past his seat, and his two knights stood by his side. He realised that there were some new faces in the room, and not just that, but Jill was not sitting in her seat. Instead she was standing by Bryce's side, her hands kept together, her back straight.

The most noticeable thing was her eyes. They lacked any form of emotion in them. It was as if she had now become a doll.

Following Quinn behind, Leo's attention wasn't focused on the same thing as Quinn. Instead, he was feeling all the different energies in the room, and there was one in the room that was slightly different from the rest.

A detail that only his ability could pick up, and even Quinn with his Qi control might not have noticed.

'The man, in the second seat? Is he like the one from before?' Leo thought. The person he was talking about was the original vampire Tempus.

"Now that the tenth leader has finally arrived we can begin this meeting." Bryce said, hitting his new cane on the floor once. A habit of his when he was leader but now he could do it even more so as King.

"There are many things that we are to discuss on the agenda, and I will go through them all. Once I have spoken the council table will be open for discussion about certain topics. I hope the recent events haven't made us forget what the courtesy and rules are in the council room."

The others nodded, including Quinn.

For some reason, he thought he would have felt nervous, but right now, Quinn was feeling quite calm. He was reminded of the first time he had come into the council room, how big everyone looked and the energy pouring out of them. Now though, he didn't feel afraid of them.

His calm demeanour also didn't go unnoticed, and it was putting the leaders next to him a little at unease.

"First I would like to introduce you to the new leaders that you see around you. First of all, we should all pay our respects to the new second Leader, Tempus Cha." When introducing him, even Bryce bowed down which Quinn thought was strange.

'Quinn, that's another original!' Vincent said.

Still, Quinn didn't act as if he was surprised. He knew something was up when he entered the room. There were only three people that were completely calm, their heartbeat beating as if it was just any other day.

These people were, Quinn himself, Bryce and finally Tempus.

"Tempus is the new second family leader, and he said he will do everything he can to build up the second family and right the wrongs his family has committed." Bryce continued to explain.

Standing up, the others gave the most respectful bow, nearly lacing their heads on the table in front of them. They could possibly do, and for now Quinn followed along.

"Next we have the new leaders replacing the seats that have been vacant for a while. From the seventh family, we have new Leader, Harlu Dawn." When his name was announced the young man stood up.

"After that, we have replacing the new twelfth leader, Kim Killton."

This time, a female vampire stood up, who had quite the baby face. As she had smooth chubby cheeks and wore quite young clothing. It was quite clear to Quinn which vampires were from a new generation and which were from an old.

It seemed like Leaders were a thing hardly replaced. Even if their face remained young their fashion sense stayed the same.

The new leaders gave a little speech stating what they planned to do to improve the family, and a little bit about their background, but what Quinn was concerned about was that no one stood by the eighth seat, where Jill should have been.

"As you may have noticed, the eighth seat is empty, and Jill is standing by my side. Now that all the past leaders no longer exist, including the original, we have decided that there will no longer be an eighth family anymore. The Original leader has betrayed the vampire settlement and I believe they no longer deserve to be a part of the council. This is the punishment the eighth family must bear."

Hearing this, the room was a little unsettled by the design.

"Moving on, the next agenda I would like to talk about, is bringing back the fourteenth castle."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 942: Revote the king!

There had been a lot of things that Bryce seemed to have skimmed over, not giving many details about, and it left all the leaders with great confusion. For one, Bryce was already taking up the role of King pretty well, even though there were some that didn't really agree with that either, but as he stated at the beginning, they would let him finish before he opens up a discussion.

"Since there is one less family, I think bringing back the Fourteenth family will strengthen us once again. On top of this, the Punishers, whether I want to admit it or not, kept the vampires of the past in line.

"In a way, too much control is now given to the families and those in the inner castle under them. Before, we didn't have anyone strong enough to take the role of the one that was lost, but now we do." Bryce said, looking towards Quinn.

Hearing those words, Quinn wanted to pinch himself.

'Did Bryce really just say that? Was he giving me a compliment?' A shiver ran down his spine hearing those words and Tempus was now looking his way as if he was trying to judge Quinn based on his appearance.

Tempus had been caught up on the details, but since he hadn't been awake for long, he had no clue about the current strength of this generation of vampires. So what if Quinn was able to defeat his bloodline, to him that could have meant nothing.

"Now that we have gone through with all the agendas, we may proceed with opening up the council floor for discussion." Bryce stated, and immediately there were a few hands that were raised, but the one who was quickest and most outspoken was Muka.

"Your Majesty, I have been fine with you running things for the time being, and I admit you did well looking into the things with Cindy and resolving this whole mess. However, don't you think a revote should be cast for the next in line?"

"Back then, the Tenth leader never got a vote, with everything that happened with Cindy, for the next candidate shouldn't we open up the voting once again? And what of the bloodling ceremony, what happened to that?" Muka suggested.

Usually, the other leaders would expect Bryce to be angered by these comments, but he seemed to remain calm as he replied.

"I partially agree with your suggestion. Due to what Cindy had done and from what we have learnt, she should have never been made a candidate in the first place. Let's say then all those that had voted for her are now void. We can even include Jill here, before we found out that the two of them were cooperating."

"If that were to be the case, wouldn't that mean the outcome would be the same? Unless you and Jin planned to vote for someone else? Allow me to put out another suggestion, say we do have a revote to start over and undo what has already been done. What would the people think? The ceremony has already taken place and I think it would weaken our resolve. Lately, is there another candidate here, at least one you could all agree on? If I'm honest, I think I am still the best candidate here but if anyone doesn't believe so, or if there is anyone else that would like to rise up to the task please feel free to speak up."

The pressure coming off Bryce as he asked this question was menacing, and that's when Muka realised. The reason Bryce was so confident was because he had already taken the blood powers away from Cindy.

Knowing Bryce, he already had an answer for all of this, and he was right. If there was a revote even those against Bryce couldn't all come up with a candidate that they could agree on. Those that supported Bryce seemed like they still did, and those against him had their trust broken from a previous leader.

Muka started to look towards the new Second leader, perhaps an original could win them over. However, Muka had no clue what this man was like, and they could just be digging another hole like they had done with Cindy.

The people wouldn't like that a Second family member, even if it was an original, were to become King after what had happened. Lastly, Muka looked at Quinn of all people.

'Maybe, maybe after what has happened the others would vote for him?' This thought quickly left Muka's mind. Even after what Quinn had done, he hadn't been with the vampires long. If he ever was elected, Muka was sure the vampires would rise up and try to challenge his position. The one most against the idea was probably Bryce.

'Is that why he is suggesting bringing the Punishers back, so Quinn can't become a candidate for the position?'

Although Muka didn't want Bryce to become King, he didn't want to cause a war either. He just wanted what was best for the people. Also, now that Bryce has the blood book, if it came to a duel it would be a tough fight for anyone to beat him, including Quinn.

"You are correct, your majesty, the people also already know you as King and it might be best this way. They need to focus on everything. Speaking of what will happen to the First family, you have mentioned other leaders that have been replaced but not your own family."

"You can't possibly split your focus on the two things."

"You are correct." Bryce replied. "However, Nicu who I have been nurturing to be the next leader is a little too young at the moment and naive. For now, I will let Kazz take over duties while I try to find a replacement. It is not too much of an urgent matter." Bryce stated.

The next to ask a question was Sunny.

"While I do think that the Eighth family should be punished, is there really a need for them to be removed from the council? There are still vampires that are loyal to them." Sunny asked.

"Jill is no longer who she was." Bryce answered back immediately. "All the past leaders are dead, including the one that they all originally stemmed from. Honestly at this point, there isn't much we can do, they would be unable to function as a family that could support the vampire settlement."

"Jill's ability has always been helpful, which is why she will continue to pass it down, and her family genes shall now be used as one will always assist the King or Queen with their tasks. Now we all should have a better line of communication with each other."

With the initial arguments sorted, Quinn felt like it was now his turn to question Bryce.

"What did you mean by bringing back the Fourteenth castle, what do you want from me Bryce?" Quinn asked in a calm voice, and it didn't sound like he was asking a question to someone of higher authority, it was more like Quinn was annoyed for putting him in such a situation.

'This boy, who is he to talk to the King like this?' Tempus thought as he smiled and was enjoying the current show.

"I explained this earlier, you are the strongest Shadow user belonging to the vampire settlement and we believe you have been teaching some of those in your family the Shadow skill. You will have a lot of resources at your disposal. You would have to find a replacement for the Tenth family, but it seems there are quite a lot of strong ones in the Tenth family." Said Bryce.

Thinking about the advantages, Quinn would be delivered a number of vampires to him, allowing him to use the shadow eater skill and improve them, but beyond this, he just felt like a puppet working for Bryce.

"Bryce, I told you back then and I'm telling you now again. I have nothing to do with the vampire settlement and I will be leaving. I came to this meeting hoping to ask you for a few favours but I see that me having saved all of you means nothing." Quinn said, ready to fight back.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 943: Deciding vote

Once Quinn had finished his turn speaking, the room was deathly silent. So much so that one could even hear the draft coming in through the small gap under the door. No one moved an inch, no shuffling of the feet or anything for fear it would make some noise.

The reason why? It was because of the words and tone that Quinn had used when speaking to the Vampire King. Bryce was a man that was well respected even before he had become King. The leaders like Muka who disliked him, even they had always respected him as the First leader.

He was organised, strong, and cared for the vampire settlement. Now that he was King, respect wasn't just expected but demanded. Some would even go as far to say that Bryce had earned the respect by being elected for the position.

But with Quinn, there were no fluff words like 'your Majesty' or beating around the bush. He was direct, to the point where Quinn may have come across as arrogant by speaking as if he was above him.

No words were spoken yet, the leaders had remained silent in shock with no idea how to break the awkward tension. They didn't want to set off anyone's anger at this moment, until finally Quinn was the one who had broken the silence himself.

"Bryce, remember you owe me, and more than once now." Quinn stated. "At least the people standing outside my castle know how to be grateful for what I have done. All I am asking is for you to do the same."

It was clear by the way Quinn was talking, the two of them had more history than the other leaders knew about. From Quinn's words they could gather that he wasn't just talking about what happened with Cindy.

Bryce sighed in resignation. "Very well. You are right. We accused you wrongfully and even then you were the one who got rid of the biggest threat to us. We still haven't even rewarded you for your efforts due to everything that is going on. What is your request?" Bryce asked.

Quinn was one step closer, but not the whole way, for now Bryce would have to hear him out, whether he would accept it or not was a different story.

"Whether I was forced into this position or not, I am the current leader of the Tenth family. The Tenth family, not the Fourteenth. It was by chance that I had got that power and my role was never to be a Punisher.

"At the end of the day, I can't let go of my past either or those I care about. I was originally a human and just like this place is your home, for myself, the humans,

and everyone with me, Earth is their home. I want to request the freedom for me and my people to move between the Tenth castle and the Cursed ship as we wish.

"The other castles already have teleporters linked to Earth, so I see that there should be no issue if we link one to the Cursed ship my group has created. I won't be taking all of the Tenth vampires with me, but just those close to me and who wish to go to Earth. However, like I said, I won't abide by my position.

"If my people need me, if you need to call me for duties that those left behind can't handle to do with the Tenth family, then you can call me. I think this is quite fair.

"And I have on more requests." Quinn said, turning to Paul. "I want to know if there is a way to turn a vampire that has been turned, back into a human. Even if you don't know of one, if there is any research that I can look into, it would be appreciated."

For now, Quinn thought there was no need to mention about Paul and his men wanting to turn back, and just would let them know he was looking for a cure. They might even think he was looking for one himself this way.

Although Bryce was allowing Quinn to speak to him the way he did so, the other vampires didn't like it at all, and now after hearing his request they couldn't take it anymore.

"Have you gone mad?" Prima shouted. "Just because you have gained a little power you think you can trample over the whole council with your request! What you're asking for is basically to disappear and do what you want in the human world, while still keeping a title here in the vampire world."

"Let me correct you." Quinn said, staring right at Prima. "I don't care about the title and I don't care about the council. The only thing I care about is protecting those from the Tenth, because it seems like all the other leaders have something against them. However I won't force them to leave their home in order to protect them. I am leaving this place, but I was also thinking about the vampires, something you guys should do more of rather than just thinking about your own families."

Prima was enraged and went to reach for his rapier by his side, but Quinn's eyes were already glowing red and Bryce had raised his hand to stop the tension.

"You are a Royal Knight Prima, and you can't act rashly like you just did right now. If you attacked, then Quinn would have had every right to defend himself." Bryce stated. "Firstly to address your requests, I do not think there is any trouble giving you access to our research facilities and library, including the King's library which has books that have been scrapped.

"Although the Tenth family are the ones that have the most research and skills to deal with this. So I would expect that there won't be much you can find there. This will be your reward for saving the settlement, as for your first request it is something we have never allowed before, so we shall deal with this the same way

we deal with problems undecided in the council room and we shall put it to a vote. All those that think Quinn's request is reasonable and he should be granted those privileges please raise your hand."

Quinn had predicted that it might come to a vote, but if it did he was unsure what the outcome would be. He just hoped it was in their favour, otherwise there was a lot of convincing he would need to do.

Muka, Jin, and Lee were the first to raise their hands for Quinn. They owed Quinn a lot for what he had done. Jin and Muka felt like if they hadn't taken his advice and not voted for Bryce they would have been in a far worse situation.

The next to raise their hand was Sunny. A lot of her people had been saved thanks to Peter, on top of this Leo and Borden dealing with Remus made it so her people could live. She saw the fighting first hand and thought her family would have suffered the most losses if Remus hadn't been dealt with.

The next one to raise their hand superseded them the most, as it was the new Second leader, Tempus.

"I like the kid." Tempus said. "Besides, he was the one that purged the evil from my family. He clearly doesn't want to be here, what is the point of stopping someone from leaving who wants to go? They will find a way out even without permission."

This meant there were now five votes in favour for Quinn's request being accepted. With Jill no longer being a leader, it also meant those against were the new leaders, Kim and Harlu, along with Suzan, Muscat, and David.

"A tie breaker?" Kyle mumbled.

If it was a tie, Quinn wondered what would happen. Would he have to fight some of the leaders to prove his strength like when the royalty were to be selected, or would it default and there was a majority rule in place? Also, didn't Quinn's own vote count?

"Not quite." Bryce interrupted. "Usually when there is a tie then the final vote lies with the King, at the same time, there isn't a current leader for the First family and I am still part of this role. My final vote goes in favour of Quinn's request."

It was safe to say, Quinn was gobsmacked. For some reason Bryce was on Quinn's side.

'First wanting me to become a Punisher and now this, what is he up to?' Quinn couldn't help but think.

## Chapter 944: A warning to you all

Finally, after everything Quinn had been through, everything he had done. It felt like for the first time, things were going his way. Although, he still felt like Bryce was up to something, because at this point it felt like he couldn't trust any of the vampires after what had happened. Just like Dwight had warned him. In the end, he did get everything he had requested.

'It looks like we can finally get ba-' Quinn thought as he was about to slump back into his chair, but of course, there had to be an outburst.

"This shouldn't be something that should have even been voted on!" Suzan complained. "How can a leader have so much freedom compared to the other leaders? Shouldn't we all be treated as equals? We didn't even bring up anything about the changes he had made to his castle and castle walls."

Due to the many concerns that the leaders had from Bryce's announcements, they had forgotten about this matter, and it was something each of them would like to discuss as well.

"First off, Quinn as someone who has protected this settlement does now have special rights, without him most of us, if not all of us would be dead." Bryce stated. "The council and you arguing, wouldn't even exist. Just as Tempus said as well, even if we wanted him to stay, clearly Quinn does not, but if you wish to stop him, then go right ahead."

Thinking about this, Suzan knew she wouldn't be able to match up to Quinn. Maybe through a surprise attack of some sort if she could get a few needles in, but not in a duel where he was prepared. His shadow skills were just too strong.

Reluctantly, she had to give up.

"I will speak to all you leaders together." Said Bryce. "It's clear the room is divided with the decision but let me ask you. Is it the fact that you think Quinn as the Tenth leader is needed for the settlement that you are annoyed he is leaving, or the fact that he is a leader that is getting special privileges that you dislike. Because if it is the latter, then you are not thinking about what is best for the settlement."

Bryce's words had hit some of them hard as they realised that they were just being selfish. Seeing Quinn's strength they should have wanted him to stay to make the vampires stronger, but that wasn't the case at all.

"As for the second matter you brought up, I am quite interested in this as well. Quinn, we saw how effective your towers were and now it seems your defences have improved even further. I am fine with each leader keeping some extra resources or powers for themselves, but I believe this is something that could be shared with all the vampires as a whole." Bryce requested

This was something else Quinn was expecting, after seeing what his system could do and the upgrades he had made, Bryce would want it for the rest of the castles as well. However, even if Quinn wanted to help, he couldn't.

The titles he had received made it so he could only build things within a certain area, and for now that area was only within the castle.

'Maybe if I completed the quest to become a King I would get a new title. One that would open up the whole area. Sure, I'll build it all for you, but you have to let me become King. Yeah, that wouldn't go down too well.' Quinn thought.

"Unfortunately, it is something I can't do. The things that happened to the tenth castle. It was due to the past Tenth leader's ability and not mine. Left behind by Vincent. I just activated them for defensive measures but there is no way for it to be used in other places. As all resources have been used up." Quinn said, shifting the blame onto Vincent for once.

"I see, if there is nothing to be done, then we can't go any further. I hope at some point you will at least allow us to study your walls and castle so we can try to replicate it." Bryce said.

Suddenly, Kim Killton, the leader who had replaced Prima, raised her hand.

"Your majesty, about what you said earlier. Although I am a new leader I hope I am able to speak my mind. I still think that everyone is putting too much emphasis on what the Tenth leader's achievements were that day.

"Weren't all the leaders there to stop Cindy? Didn't everyone fight? Without them, wouldn't the Tenth have perished as well? I just think, with so many strong vampires the families had, including myself, the vampire settlement is giving the tenth too much glory."

The leaders who were there that day, knew how much Quinn had done, and not just him, his knights and his people. Which was why they didn't say anything, but could understand why a new leader would feel this way.

Prima wanted to interject but Bryce stopped him once more, and he saw Quinn standing up from his seat instead.

'How will you deal with this young one?' Bryce thought.

"If you want, you can test my strength out for yourself?" Quinn suggested. "I want to test out a few things myself as well. If I beat her convincingly I guess none of the new leaders will have any more doubts about me?"

---

It was a strange request Quinn had made, but the one who actually suggested him to do such a thing was Vincent. He knew how vampires reacted to certain things. The vote was set and this didn't need to be done, but to make sure no one touched his family and for the new leaders to understand this would be the best cause of action. He would gain respect from the new and the old.

So currently, all the leaders had moved to a large training hall in the King's castle. It was a huge room with wooden floorboards. Empty apart from the large windows on either side letting in the moonlight. On one side stood Quinn, on the other the new leader Kim, who held a rapier in her hand, the same weapon as Prima used.

"How do you think this exhibition match will go?" Muka asked, standing next to Jin.

"I think it's obvious who the winner will be, but it will be interesting to see. I heard Prima has been raising quite the talent. Maybe one day Kim will have speed that even surpasses him. If anything, her ability might make Quinn have some trouble."

Watching over the match was the Royal Knight Prima himself. Being the fastest vampire, he should be able to stop anything if something was to happen. However, even though he didn't say it to Kim, even he believed she would lose.

"The match will now begin!" Prima shouted.

Kim and Quinn were standing at opposite ends of the halls, so they found it a little strange when Kim started to stab the air from such a distance away with her thin rapier blade. The movements were fast and soon they were seeing little red dots of blood energy hovering in place.

After several attacks, she swiped her blade and all of them shot out like bullets towards Quinn. When they turned their head to see how Quinn would deal with the attack, they could see he was just walking ahead, one foot ahead of the other. When the attacks came towards him, he continued to walk.

"Look under his feet!" Jin noticed.

The shadow had spread, and it was spread far and wide, around ten meters in all directions away from Quinn. When the attack had entered the shadow's zone, straight away it raised up, stopping the attacks.

Not only that, but once the attacks were stopped by the shadow, Quinn could now move the positions of the shadows and when dropping it redirecting the attacks. He did it in a way, so the attacks would just hit the side of the walls.

'This is a good test for my powers, I can do things I never even thought of!' Quinn was excited. Before holding attacks would take up MC points as well, being able to hold and move an attack was great for Quinn.

Finally as he went forward, he used shadow equip, equipping all of his beast gear including the mask. The attacks from Kim continued, and each time the shadow would raise blocking them, she started to vary up her attacks, performing larger and more powerful blood attacks but the shadow just continued to block them all while Quinn moved slowly.

'What is with this guy, we are both leaders shouldn't our strength be similar, then why do I feel so...so..scared.' She thought.

Some were even wondering if Quinn had gotten stronger now after the fight with Cindy, and they weren't wrong.

At first, Kim wanted to weaken Quinn before diving in, but with no choice she dived in with her weapon, moving faster than ever. She stepped into the shadow, but Quinn didn't raise them, or do anything to try to slow her down.

She thrust her rapier towards his head, at a speed that would even match Prima's.

"I got you!" She shouted, but the blade was grabbed by Quinn's b.a.r.e hand at the very end. Then before she could even blink, the blade was snapped, and Quinn had grabbed her neck.

"I got you."

"The fight is over!" Prima quickly said.

The speed he had witnessed displayed by Quinn, was something he didn't even see against Cindy. They were right, Quinn had gotten stronger after the fight with Cindy. What they didn't realise was during the fight with Cindy, Quinn didn't have his beast gear due to it being taken away from him.

Now with his beast gear, his mask and added stat points, he was stronger than ever.

With everything done and no leaders now set to question him, Quinn could finally prepare to go home.

"Is there anyone else that would like to challenge him?" Bryce asked but there were no objections.

As Quinn walked past Bryce and the other leaders he paused for a second and looked at them all.

"I am a fair person, you have accepted my request and I hope you treat the tenth family better from now on. Our relationship should be one that benefits each other. Bryce, I don't know why you have supported me so much but because of that, I will tell you something.

"Something you should all hear. I don't know why, or what you all did, but Arthur is coming for you, and he aims to get rid of you all. If you want to beat him, you have to get stronger, and you can't rely on me for help."

Walking out of the training room, Quinn walked past a frozen Bryce.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 945: Preparing for the future

There were no further instructions from Bryce or the others for what Quinn could and could not do. It seemed like his request went down quite well. At least well enough to do what he wanted. Upon returning, the group was ecstatic to hear the news. They could finally go home after being here for what seemed like an eternity.

There were ups and downs with the whole group and what started off as excitement and adventure, turned into one bad mishap happening one after another. They never thought they would look forward to returning so much.

It didn't take long for those in the tenth family to make preparations. Some of them had made friends with the vampire students and were saying their goodbye's, while others were collecting a few things from their room.

In the meantime, Quinn decided to do what he could, so the tenth castle would be well protected as well, after he left. There were the castle's towers and gargoyles, and even more were built before leaving. As for other preparations, one of the first things he did was request for Logan to make sure the teleporters worked well for travelling to and from the Cursed ship.

Although Quinn also made a separate request if Logan could pull it off, the request was if they could change the destination of the teleporters at a certain point and time. Logan found it interesting, and with the new information he had learnt while studying in the vampire world, he felt like it was something he could do.

He had taken a look at the Vampire teleporters, how they differed from the ones from earth. When inputting a code it would redirect you to a different location, and Logan believed he had found out how to work it, so Quinn's request shouldn't be too hard for him.

"May I ask, why do you want to request such a thing?" Logan asked.

"Things might be going well now, but preparation is the best prevention method as they say. If there was a storming of the Tenth castle that we couldn't protect, then that would mean that whoever attacked the vampires, or even the vampires themselves would have direct access to our ship. I don't want it to be a double edged sword."

"While we are away, I want the teleporters to take them somewhere else, and when we need to use them to link up to the Cursed ship. Of course, this stays between me and you. I have already instructed Paul about this, and we will communicate to him using the masks. Worst case, maybe we could make it so it requires a code as well and only tell that code to Paul, in case communications are broken again." Quinn requested.

Just like the other leaders it was time Quinn stopped playing things by the book. There was no need for him to inform them of everything he was doing, and it honestly seemed like Bryce didn't care too much.

'I'm sure he has his own worries to deal with after what you told him.' Vincent said.  
'I was afraid the old man might fall over from a heart attack.'

'Isn't it strange for you to call someone old? Anyway, I don't know whether it's a good sign or a bad sign that Arthur hasn't attacked yet, but until we find out why, the vampires deserve a chance. They're not all bad.' Quinn replied.

It didn't take long until Logan had returned with some good news. He was able to successfully accomplish Quinn's request, including that of a secret code just for Paul in emergencies.

Surfaces were flat and smooth everywhere they went, and the ground wasn't uneven as if it was something that had been built thousands of years ago. The only downside was the place seemed a bit empty, since it lacked furnishings that had been destroyed from Borden and Remus's battle.

Waiting to walk into the teleporter, it seemed there were more people returning to earth than those that had arrived. Leo and Erin had decided to come along this time. Quinn felt better about this, as he had felt awkward leaving Leo behind when he had so much he wanted to do, and even had his own goal. Now it looked like he could finally move towards it.

It was also nice to see Erin standing by Layla's side. Now with Cia gone, he would have hated for Layla to not have someone close to talk to. Quinn was just far too busy to talk to everyone like he used to in the past.

Quinn also asked if Xander, Timmy or Amy would have liked to come along, and although they said they would like to someday, they didn't want to leave the vampire world just yet.

They would do so after things had calmed down in both worlds.

With everyone ready, there were those who stood opposite them giving them a send off, who were the vampire students and vampires that were trained under Leo. It almost looked like they had tears in their eyes as they gave their two teachers a big goodbye.

On top of this, there was Paul, Ashley and a few of the other soldier vampires.

"Quinn, I know I haven't said this much to you, but thank you." Paul said. "After going through what we all went through this time, I can imagine how tough it must have been for you to even get them to spare our lives." He said bowing down.

"No Paul, you are also doing me a favour by staying behind here. You have proven that you are someone who I can trust, and the only thing I hope is that you treat all those in the tenth as well as you do your men." Said Quinn.

The reason for Quinn's words were because he respected Paul's decision to stay behind with his men. This was something that didn't actually need to be done. Bryce never made it a request. Of course it was better for a Vampire Knight to stay behind. Especially if matters got out of hand, and for a leader to give them orders.

However, for Paul to volunteer this position, it felt like he had decided in his own way to help Quinn and his own people.

"I hope this time when you return, it won't be as disastrous as the last." Paul said with a smile, one of the rare times Quinn had seen it on his face.

"Huh, yeah, maybe the Dalki have attacked earth this time or something." Peter said.

"Please, don't jinx it. I'm a little tired." Layla replied.

Everyone gave Paul a salute for what he was doing, and a wave goodbye as they entered the teleporter back to earth.

---

At the same time, Bryce had gone to a castle, however it wasn't the King's castle he was in. Instead he was in the First castle, and a meeting had been called.

Standing at the front, Bryce had his head held down as if he was full of thoughts and turmoil. Standing in front of him were the vampires that he had invited over to have a meeting, but they weren't just any vampires. Suzan, Muscat, Prima, Kyle and Jill were all there with him.

"I believe you all know why I have called you all here today." Bryce said, gripping his fist. The others didn't say a word, but they had sweat running down their faces as they thought about what was about to come.

"If what Quinn had said is true, it means Arthur has found out the truth. I don't know when, but we must prepare for his return, and make sure we come out of this alive." Said Bryce.

End of Arc five

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 946: An invitation

The latest ship created by the military, the Big Bertha, sleek in style and design while also being practical for warfare. Made of the strongest light material possible Glathrium. Only allowing them to create eight of these in existence. Although now only seven of them belonged to the military.

After the Civil War had ended, being on the cautious side, the Supreme Commander Oscar decided to utilise these ships. Two of the Bertha's were placed on the North and South Pole of earth, rotating around it as a protective measure.

The space station that would teleport one to the beast planet solar system had to be limited to one station. The other stations were closed down and it was agreed that the Graylash family and Cursed family would have equal rights to use the station at any point and time.

The rule was made as a precaution, they were sure the Dalki had their eyes on the humans. They thought that an attack would happen at any moment. That's why the rest of the remaining Berthas, including their fleets of ships, were sent out on the edge of the beast planets that they had owned.

What they couldn't do was just because they felt like war was upon them, was back down and stop hunting for the beast crystals. They were essential for powering items for war, on top of getting their people the beast gear they needed.

If the humans were to leave the area, or have it unprotected, the Dalki could easily take over the planets. Defending was always a lot easier than attacking.

The military was now mainly responsible for protection, education and training. While the Graylash and Cursed family were the two families that were out on the beast planets who were constantly hunting for crystals. Sharing a percentage of what they found and sending it back to the military.

For whatever reason, the Dalki never attacked, and they were allowing the humans to recover and stay in place from the war. Now on earth, Oscar stood there with a large grin on his face, for the project that they had been working on was finally complete.

"We have made a lot of mistakes in the past, I'm surprised the whole human race didn't collapse when Truedream disappeared. I hope we can make things better this time. Did you send out the invitations like I asked?"

"Yes, Commander, I'm hoping to get a reply from them soon. We should know what their decision is before the starting date."

Inside the Cursed ship, Megan had her head slumped down on top of the command center table. Her hair was frazzled and she was unmoving. The sound of the doors

opening made her move her head slightly up and one could now see the bags under her eyes.

Seeing who had entered, there was a spring in her step as she got out from her seat.

"Helen, thank you so much for helping me out all the time." Megan said, grabbing her two hands. "I'm starting to know why you and the Daisy faction were so popular."

"It's okay, I'm just completing my duties as asked." Helen replied. "I must thank Quinn as well. Some families after completing a deal like so would have treated us like slaves, or as lesser beings once joining, but Quinn allowed us to pretty much to operate the way we usually do, just under the Cursed faction name."

While Quinn was away, Megan, one of the heads of the old Crow faction, was left in charge. After all, nearly every single high ranking member of the Cursed faction had gone off had gone off on a mission. There really wasn't much choice, but someone had to be left in charge especially after the position the cursed family had achieved.

However, the faction was no longer small and there were multiple things that needed to be done. What Megan thought was just looking after those on the Cursed ship, soon became a much bigger task. Communicating with the other two families, on top of the smaller factions that had joined under the Cursed faction and even down to sorting out the forging, buying and selling process.

She was starting to realise just how much Sam did around the place. He was always busy in the command room, not training like the others, and now she realised he just didn't have the time.

Thankfully, Helen having led one of the largest factions Daisy, she had a lot of experience. When she had come to visit the Cursed ship one day. This was due to receiving a strange order. One asking them to forge new weapons and equipment.

She didn't think Quinn or the others would be that stupid to turn such a powerful faction into a bunch of forgers, who had no experience. So, she decided to visit and found a frantic Megan not being able to handle any of the pressure at all.

"Speaking of, I wonder how long your leader and the others will be on their little trip for, it's been a while hasn't it?" Helen asked.

Suddenly, Megan started to fidget as she had told a small little lie. Saying that Quinn and the others had discovered a Demon tier beast, which was what they were currently out exploring at the moment.

This was an understandable excuse for those in the Cursed as well as those outside the Cursed. However, a few moments later, one of the computer terminals inside the command room started to light up.

"Miss, we have a signal from a teleporter in one of the training rooms!" A member shouted.

"The training rooms, I don't remember there being any Tele-" At that moment she realised that it meant they had finally returned.

Inside the personal training room, Quinn and everyone else had finally gotten through the portal and had arrived back at the Cursed ship.

"Oh sweet metal ground!" Alex cheered as he started to kiss the floor. He never thought he would miss the bright lights and metallic floor of the ship, but he was so ecstatic.

"I mean I'm happy I returned but I'm not that crazy about it?" Nate whispered over to Sam.

"I don't think you're the best person to talk about other people's strange tendencies. Besides he went through a lot being taken away, and having to be hidden. It was a good thing they claimed that the blood fairy was planted by Jill and Cindy." Sam replied.

When Kazz had returned with Fex and Silver, she had informed them of what they had planned to do with Alex. The explanation given to the other leaders was that when Cindy had attacked the Tenth family, they had planted a blood fairy that they created there in order to frame Quinn.

However, an order from Bryce was given. That Alex, the real blood fairy, was never ever to set foot in the vampire world again, which he was more than happy to comply with.

'We finally made it back.' Quinn said looking around the training room and at everyone's happy faces. He could tell what they were feeling because he felt the same way. It was similar to when one went on holiday for a long time and returned to their comfy home.

What he started to think about though, was the tasks he still had left here and what to do now he was one of the world leaders. It was natural to prepare for war with the Dalki but there were other things.

Exploring Paul's request to turn him and his people back into humans, Quinn thought back to Chris. One of the members of Pure. How he was able to make it so the red energy didn't consume him. Perhaps with enough Qi control, something else could be done as well. Separating the two energies completely from one's body.

Then, Quinn saw Sil's back as he exited the room not really talking to anyone. The only people Sil talked to were Quinn and Borden, and Quinn didn't talk to him

much these days. It seems like Sil was still greatly depressed about losing Vorden and Raten. To the point where he hardly spoke to Quinn now.

Now with a large fleet it might be possible to try and find someone who had an ability that could help them.

Thinking about that, reminded Quinn of Hilston and the Blade island. The Blade island was located on Earth. Knowing now how much of a threat Hilston was, Quinn wondered if they were still there, if Hilston was still out there somewhere planning his move. It was a worry because this time, they didn't have Arthur.

There was also the search for Richard Eno and Jim Eno, with Logan. Although they couldn't do anything about this because they no longer had any clues or hints of his whereabouts.

The problem with all the things Quinn needed to do, was he had no information. He knew nothing about Pure or how to find Chris, didn't know if there was an ability to help out Sil, didn't know Hilston's whereabouts nor the Eno family.

'If I really can't progress I guess we could do one thing?' Quinn thought.

What he was thinking about was at least making himself stronger. With Logan's new device they could search for Demon tier beasts on other planets, but was wondering if they were ready to take on such a thing. Even with a thousand MC points, it would still be a struggle.

Exiting the ship, an announcement was made to everyone and a welcoming party was thrown in the main reception hall of the large ship. Everyone was full of smiles and more, and this time it didn't seem like anything serious happened to the world after their return.

It looked like those from the Cursed were just happy to see them. Leo and Erin were introduced as new members as well, but not just any members, as Quinn made sure they got the respect they deserved and announced them as part of the Cursed Leaders.

After that, the music and food began.

'I like this,' Quinn thought.

"Hey, this is great right?" Sam asked.

The two of them stood towards the side of a room by a table. Quinn stood next to all the great food but was unable to eat any of it.

"I want it to be like this all the time." Quinn said.

"Well it is for us, so you have accomplished a lot already Quinn. Sometimes I think you just need to be told that. You always seem to be rushing from one thing into the next, bulldozing your way forward."

"Trust me, that's not me, just everything was moving so quickly around me all the time." Said Quinn.

"I guess you're right, because something else has come up as well. I don't mean to ruin your fun, but once this party is over, I think we need to talk. There was a message from Oscar which I think you'll find pretty interesting, and it's up to you what you want to do." Sam said, giving a wink.

'A message, what could it be about?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 947: On my own

The party was a big hit, and it allowed everyone who was part of the Cursed faction, to have a good well deserved rest. There weren't many times they could celebrate things that happened in this harsh world, so they took advantage of it, and made sure to make it count. It looked like Quinn and his group weren't the only ones keeping busy. The faction members had been as well, constantly going out on quests keeping up with trade and more.

What seemed to go down well at the party most, was the alcohol, as those that had been turned into vampires found out that their taste buds for this were practically the same as before. Finally, it was something that they could enjoy from their human life.

Looking around the room, they could see a red faced Nate, trying to talk to a few girls in the faction. Most of those that were turned seemed to handle their alcohol well, better than when they were human, so based on Nate's condition he had either drunken a large amount, hoping he could build up the courage to talk to the girls or he was just one of those that couldn't handle their drink well, even as a vampire.

"I would have thought with our healing abilities it wouldn't let us get drunk, but it looks like I was proven wrong," Quinn commented.

Hearing this, Sam could see who he was talking about.

"I'll keep an eye on him and the others, make sure they don't spill the beans on our big secret. Although, maybe they will just think it's drunk talk. Have a rest for tonight and we can talk about it tomorrow." Sam said, rushing off and trying his best to get his friend away from the girls.

"Sam, my wing man! Come on and tell these girls how great I am." Nate could be heard saying in the background. Rather than Sam pulling him away, it looked like Nate had pulled him in instead.

"Wait a minute, you're not drunk at all, are you just pretending!?" Sam shouted back.

'Our secret huh, can we really just hide it forever with how involved we are in everything?' Quinn thought. 'The Cursed faction are now the centre of attention, someone is bound to find out about it one day.'

'And if they do, then you can deal with it as you have done most of your problems.' Vincent said. 'As Sam said you have done well.'

Heading on over, Quinn decided that he wanted to talk to Megan for a short while. The centre of the Hall was being used as a dancing space, with food and drink placed around the edges. It reminded Quinn of the prom videos he would see in old

movies, although it was something he never had, as prom had been stopped in his time and age.

Instead, when you turned sixteen and finished school, you were chartered to military school instead.

'Better times.'

Behind the tables of food there were also seats and a few tables, and on one table in particular there were a few girls sitting down along with Megan, but it wasn't the girls he was familiar with. Helen, her two sisters were sitting along with her.

"Do you mind if I take a seat?" Quinn asked, pulling one of the chairs back.

"Please Quinn, you don't have to ask." Megan said, as she couldn't help but stare at Quinn's face as he went to sit down. She had to often remind herself that this young looking man was actually a young adult, who was hardly eighteen.

However, his facial features and his handsome charming good looks were hard to ignore. It was even more picture perfect than celebrities. She was sure that if she saw Quinn in person, there would be sponsors all over the place wanting to grab him to advertise their beauty products.

All of this was even without using any of his Charm skills. It was through Quinn's evolutions.

'He's far too young for you Megan, and besides you have Dennis, where is Dennis?' She wondered and soon saw that he was on the dance floor having a little wiggle with Linda.

A deep fire started to burn in her chest.

"All men are scum." She blurted out.

"I'm sorry, did I do something to offend you?'" Quinn said. "I can leave, if you want me too."

Realising the words she was meant to say in her head had come out of her mouth instead, she felt extremely embarrassed, and her cheeks were getting redder by the second.

"No, Quinn I-"

"Don't worry about her," Helen said. "It just seems like her man is being taken by another woman over there."

Turning around, Quinn could see who they were talking about. It was Linda and Dennis. The two of them had always been close due to Blip being best friends with Dennis. After Blip's death they didn't spend much time together.

'Did they get closer in the castle together?' Quinn wondered.

"It's normal to feel this way." Quinn said. "I'm just glad you weren't turning into Cindy."

"Who's Cindy?" Megan asked.

"Oh, don't worry just someone I met while I was away. Anyway, the reason I came over here was I wanted to thank you for everything you did. I know it must have been hard." Quinn said.

"Oh no, please I had so much help from Helen here. She is the real superstar." She replied, grabbing her shoulders. "This is the one you need to say thank you to."

"Thank you, both of you." Quinn said with a gentle smile.

While at the table, the group started talking a little bit more. Quinn asked Megan to give him a small update on what had happened so far while they were away. With Helen here, he thought it would be good to be caught up as well.

Apparently not much had happened. The Dalki hadn't attacked, there had been a few scuffles with humans here and there on a few beast planets, but that always happened now and then anyway.

"Do you really have to talk about work right now?" Helen said, taking a sip of her drink. "I know you're the leader and everything, but you're not even eighteen yet, you should live a little. Do you even have a girlfriend, sometimes you just need to let out some stress?"

That's when Quinn noticed that he had soured the girl's moods. They looked to be having such a good time at the party drinking away. He had only come over to thank Megan but somehow the conversation moved onto the matter at hand.

"I'm sorry," Quinn said standing up. "I think I should let everyone have their fun."

And before the others could say anything, Quinn was no longer in the party room. No matter how hard others looked, they couldn't find him anywhere.

"Crap, Helen, did you really have to say that to him? I'm sure he's quite sensitive for his age." Megan replied.

"But, I was generally interested in the boy. Someone who has good looks like him, and is one of the leaders of the world. If he really wanted to, he could get anyone he wished." Helen said, thinking about Quinn a little more.

The reason why no one was able to find Quinn for the rest of the night, was because he had used the skill, shadow lock on himself. Of course he wanted to have fun, doing certain things, going out on dates. However, whenever he would think about those things his mind would always start to wonder.

He thought, 'couldn't I be doing something to better myself right now'. The reason why he enjoyed the game power fighters was because he felt like he was learning something from it and progressing his goal, but with other games or dates, he could just imagine his time would be better spent improving for what was to come.

'Don't worry Quinn, you're a vampire now.' Vincent said. 'Humans think this way because they have a short life span. They need to fit everything they can into that lifespan. I understand you more than the others. You have plenty of time now that you're a vampire. When everything is done, then you can have your fun.'

Although Vincent was trying to cheer him up, he didn't like that Vincent was comparing him more to a vampire than a human.

It was at that point he realised that Quinn always considered himself half and half. As a human who was turned into a vampire, but that wasn't the case at all. Quinn wasn't a dhampir like Erin. Her hair had returned blonde now she was amongst other humans and didn't need blood nor was affected by the daylight.

Quinn was a full fledged vampire, who used to be human.

'When Quinn had eventually gotten out from the shadow lock, he found that the party had ended. There was no one around and he was left on his own.

'If I live my life as a vampire forever Vincent, is this what it will feel like? Will I see everyone I care about grow old and leave me.'

For a brief moment, Quinn was understanding why Vincent had chosen to become human and possibly why Vampires in the end decided to go into eternal slumber.

Thinking about this, Quinn feared for the end.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 948: A date

It was the next day and the first thing that was on the agenda, was a meeting between the leaders of the Cursed faction. Heading across the bridge and over to the command centre, Quinn could see Sam standing there with a tablet in his hand. While the others sat all around the large circular holographic displaying machine.

"I expected to see you all here with a headache, or hangover but you all seem to be doing fine." Quinn commented.

"Yeah, it seems like alcohol doesn't really affect us like it used to." Nate blurted out.

Nearly everyone at the table had turned their heads towards Nate, because today there were some others at the table that were unaware of their secret.

For one, there was Megan, one of the only Cursed leaders that was still a human and also it looked like Helen from the Daisy faction had been invited along as well. She had stayed for the party, and had stayed for the night too. It looked like Sam must have invited her along.

Clearing his throat, Sam began the presentation as he usually would, once Quinn had sat down.

"As you know we have been away for a while, and I hope everyone had a good time last night, but we have to remind everyone of our goals and what we plan to do next as a faction and group."

Sam went on to update everyone of the events in the human world and how the communication between, what was now deemed as the three world leaders had gotten better. The Graylash family, the Cursed faction, as well as the military, all were working together now, and we're collaborating more and more.

"The reason why I have called Helen here today, is because I think it's important that we should give recognition where recognition is due. There are quite a few factions now under the Cursed faction name, including Daisy. Helen has done a great job in coordinating between them in order to get resources and any help needed.

"She has also suggested that there be a meeting between faction leaders once a month in order to bring everyone closer together."

From the way Sam was speaking, the idea sounded similar to what giant corporations would do. There were several smaller companies under one big one with different departments. Once in a while they would have a meeting in order to make sure everyone was doing their own part, in their own way all towards the same goal.

Next, Sam allowed Helen to speak a little and she started to talk about the accomplishments that the factions had achieved.

"We have stumbled across quite a few legendary tier beasts on our planet search, although have seen no Demi-god or Demon tier beasts. If we did anyway, I have asked the group to report back to us, since they are a high risk for our faction." Daisy reported. "For the legendary crystals, we have kept them so the leaders in the Cursed faction can get the best gear first."

"You don't need to worry about that." Quinn said, interrupting her midway. "The Daisy faction worked hard for the legendary tier beast crystals. I'm sure some blood was spilt and maybe even some lives were lost. For you to hand them over to us, it just feels wrong."

"While you guys are out on the front lines getting crystals, it is more important that they protect themselves first before thinking about us. Improve your gear, to improve the chance of you surviving, and in turn get more crystals. Then you can hand over whatever you have spare to us." Quinn said.

Everyone nodded in agreement because they thought what Quinn had said made sense. This was the advantage of having people in the faction that had climbed up the ranks themselves. Everyone at that table had been in a hunt and knew how tough it was.

For a second, Helen had lost her train of thought and just looked at Quinn.

"If I don't take my chance now, I may never know when it will come." Helen said not breaking eye contact away from Quinn. It looked quite fierce and the others were unsure if she was about to climb over the table and attack him. "I would like to ask you out on a date whenever you are free. Remember what I said before? Sometimes you need some free time to do things like this."

Everyone was stunned from what they had just heard. Helen was quite a strong person that wasn't used to taking orders. It was why she had made a faction trying to rise to the top herself not wanting to take orders from any of the other families.

However, the major shock was the fact that she had said these words in front of everyone during a meeting.

'How could she..' Layla thought, as she could hear her heart thumping louder than her thoughts. 'Isn't she shy, with all these people looking around. How could she say that? I haven't even..'

Now, what everyone was more curious about, was just what exactly Quinn's answer would be.

Clearing his throat, and making sure no one could read his facial expressions, he gave a reply.

"We can see if I have some time, at some point." Quinn said.

After his reply, Helen sat back down in her seat and continued as normal.

"Well, that was definitely interesting huh. I can tell you for sure that wasn't planned in the meeting or run past me." Sam said, trying to crack a joke to break the current atmosphere but he was never really good at those things.

"Now, let's move onto the main reason why I called you all today." Pressing a button on his tablet, the holographic display started to form something in front of everyone's eyes. A giant building started to emerge with a large circular design and square shaped buildings.

The design was modern, with lots of glass to let light in, while also being practical as they had bridges connecting from building to building. It was hard to get a scale of the size of the building until they could see the model humans walking through it.

It was bigger than any university they had seen in the past and looked like a miniature city.

"This is what the military has been working on for a while now and they say it's finally complete. What you are all looking at is the newly designed military school." Said Sam.

"A military school, but that thing is nearly as big as one of the military bases, never mind the school. I even thought the schools there were big." Nate said, amazed.

"You're right, this is a really big school but there is a reason for that. Rather than have eight military schools like before, now they only have one. I think you all remember the inter-base tournament, or at least have seen it broadcasted for those of you that are a little older." Sam mentioned, knowing there were those that had never attended one.

"The new military school has been built where the first military base was located. Now, the eight bases have been condensed into one. From what I have learnt most of the forces have moved along with it as well."

"The students themselves will be placed into nine groups which will be linked to their military group counterparts. These military groups are controlled by nine head generals now. Sounds strange right, why decrease the base but then increase the head generals. This is all due to Oscar's plan to collaborate with the Graylash family and the cursed family more."

"In these nine groups, three of them will actually be directly controlled by one of the three great powers. The Cursed faction, the Graylash family, and what is now known as the Earthian group, which was formerly the military.

"The idea is for the students in each of these groups to be placed under one of them randomly as a House. This will be used for sporting events and competition like the inter base tournament. When they graduate they are free to decide which group they would like to go to." Sam explained.

It was interesting and Sam felt like he could go on and on about the details and the plans for this project, yet everyone there started to notice something. For some reason, Sam was focused on the students more than anything, rather than the military group themselves.

"So why are you telling us all this, and what exactly does Oscar want from us? Other than looking after some of those in the military?" Quinn asked.

"Well, there are a few things. First, Oscar wants three members of the cursed faction to act as head general. They will be in charge of three of these groups linked to the Cursed faction. The Graylash family will do the same. This way, there is not one power that is greater than the other. Even in the military. Making it, so the military is more of one singular group but three forces.

"As for the second thing, he recommends that we send someone there as a teacher as well. The head general or whatever position he decides to give us, can also become teachers, but the reason I was telling you all of this was because, Quinn. I think it might be a good idea if you became a teacher for a while."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 949: A teacher

What was being suggested by Sam, was a thought that hadn't once crossed Quinn's mind. 'Become a teacher?'

Kids had certain dreams growing up, but Quinn being someone who had always hated school and the teachers around him that ignored everything that happened, never thought he would be put in such a position where he could become one.

Quinn himself was soon to only become eighteen and be considered an a.d.u.l.t by the world. It was strange to even think of himself as a teacher, and besides, he had more important pressing things to do. So why would he need to waste his time with this?

"I can tell what you're thinking, Quinn, but you should hear me out before you make up your mind. The meeting for everyone else is dismissed. If there is anything you would like to request, feel free to run it past me, and then I can run it past Quinn." Sam said, and soon after, everyone had left the room quite quickly.

They wanted to know the reason as well, why Sam thought it was best for Quinn to take on this role, but if he said the others shouldn't be there, they probably had an idea of what the reason could be.

For once, Linda was shoving Nate out of the room, even though he wanted to stay.

Eventually, the only two left around the table were Sam and Quinn, and Quinn had moved, so now the two of them could talk side by side.

"Look, you don't have to worry too much about the teaching part of this. There are plenty of courses you could choose where you could help them out. Combat courses, for one. You're better than any of the teachers that ever taught us hand to hand combat. Or if you wanted to, maybe you could teach them how to use Qi. I'm sure Oscar wouldn't be against that idea, after seeing what Pure could do with it." Sam suggested.

Quinn hadn't thought about that. Teaching the new generation Qi would certainly give them more chances against the Dalki. If everyone had it, then Pure would no longer have an advantage.

Pure was already advertising Qi to the world, so more people would choose to join their side, so maybe they could do the same.

"This can't be the only reason. I know you better than this Sam, come on, spill it all out." Quinn asked.

"Well, there are a few points. For one, with you there, I think you will see firsthand if the military has changed its ways. See if they align with your goals. Don't you

want to change the way the system works? To do that, the best way is to learn how it works, and being part of the system is a good first hand experience.

"Also, do you remember I told you how students would later select which group they would like to join after the military ends? Well, out of all of those, the Cursed faction is the newest and not the most popular. The only reason we have people joining us now is due to the Daisy faction's popularity. The students that have no choice will be sent out the Cursed fanfiction. People like you Quinn, with no ability.

"I saw you use that strange power against Cindy. When you used all of our shadows. The time limit seemed kind of short. The only thing I can guess is because the shadow you borrowed from us wasn't enough. Maybe you can find some students that could learn the shadow.

"We don't know if the shadow is a vampire only ability, and you can't use your shadow eater skill on non vampire subjects, but if you can find more people that can learn the shadow, then you can borrow the powers from those around you a lot more," Sam explained.

Although Quinn now had a lot more MC points, he understood where Sam was coming from. On top of that, he was sure Arthur, with his thousands of years of being a punisher, still had a larger amount.

With the enhanced soul weapon, Quinn could use the shadow just as much as Arthur could, but not for the same amount of time.

"I understand, and honestly, what you're saying doesn't sound too bad, but my worry is about the other things that need to be done. I feel like I can't just waste my time being a teacher, and maybe someone else could do this." Quinn replied.

"You don't have to worry. If you were to get a role, it would be as head general. Of course, your real title and rank are higher than that, but this is just for the sake of positions within the military groups. Do you remember Paul? I bet you hardly ever saw him during your time at school. It was the same for our military head, and It could be the same for you.

"If you have to deal with other matters, they will just get a substitute for you in the meantime. And if you worry about your position affecting how people will treat you, don't worry about that too much. The broadcast from the match you had when you became one of the major powers, you don't even look the same as that little twerp from before.

"I don't even think anyone would recognise you," Sam said.

It was true that there was quite the jump in appearance from when Quinn was a vampire Nobel to vampire lord, and he had also changed his hairstyle. People didn't

recognise Quinn unless he mentioned it to them. So to the outside, and others, they didn't know what he looked like.

However, the shadow powers and blood abilities would be a giveaway, but with a bunch of students, would he ever need to use them?

"So, I would be assigned as head general of one of the nine groups, and become a teacher. Doing all the things you mentioned, but have the freedom to come and go as I please?" Quinn said, and Sam nodded.

When it was put as simply as that, it really didn't sound like there was any downside to it at all.

"Of course, we would need people to fill up the other positions to run the school, to support you, so you wouldn't be on your own. They have even said we can send anyone there as students. I was sometimes thinking teacher's miss the things that happen in school, so we could send a few of our own in the Cursed family as students. It will also help your scouting job a little easier."

After debating internally for a while, there was something that drew him to the position more than others. It was the fact that he could see how the new school worked. His end goal was changing the system.

The Dalki were indeed a threat, but Quinn wasn't so sure people's lives could just change once the war was over. At the same time, he started to think back to when he was in school. Sam was right. Teachers did miss a lot of things that happened, and who knows if they were other teachers like Duke in charge of the other groups.

Oscar didn't seem like a bad person, based on Quinn's impression of him, but even he didn't know everything that went on. Lastly, Quinn was lucky to have a teacher like Leo there, one that he really needed.

"A teacher huh, I guess it doesn't sound too bad," Quinn said, agreeing to Sam's proposition.

Now, they just needed to decide who would be coming with him.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 950: Taking along

Walking around the Cursed ship, Quinn wondered who would be best to take along with him to the school. It was quite the head scratcher for a few reasons. There were a few positions that needed to be filled up.

Three head generals, taking charge of three military groups, one of them being Quinn himself. These would have the most and at the same time the least responsibility. According to Sam, they were more like a figurehead. Although they genuinely could be used in time of need.

'Paul and Helen would have been good for these types of things, even Sam, but they're already far too busy.' Quinn thought. Since Paul was already a head general and Helen was the leader of a large faction.

Thinking about it more, he wondered if bringing Helen was a good idea anyway, but she would have gotten the wrong idea if he did so. Perhaps she would force him to go on that date that he partially agreed to earlier.

'Why did you agree to that date?' Vincent asked.

'I didn't agree, I just came up with an excuse. When will I have time to do such things?' Quinn replied back and continued to think of who else he could bring along.

Other than those positions, as head general, Quinn could really bring along anyone from the Cursed ship he liked and just give them a position of sergeant or even as a student. The main thing was that they shouldn't currently be too busy or their task essential to something else, like Sam.

'It would be nice if we could bring everyone back together again.' Quinn thought, and with this in his mind, Quinn decided to visit one of the few people that he had first met while he was at military school.

This led him to one of the break rooms on the ship. There was plenty of space on the ship, and a lot of rooms were empty. Still, they couldn't just turn every large empty room into a training room, so they decided to renovate one into a breakroom.

Here there were pool tables, the block block game, as well as a little bar area for ordering drinks and sitting down and talking. What brought him to such a place was because he was here to find Layla, and he could see her sitting along with Eirin, who was covered in sweat.

'Did they just come out of training or something?'

Quinn thought as the two of them saw him and waved him over, it looked like for a second, Erin was about to leave to let the two of them be alone, but Layla quickly tugged on her sleeve, bringing her back down.

"Please stay." She said,

Even though Quinn had heard these words, he chose to ignore them and continued walking.

'Did I do something to annoy her?' Quinn thought.

But he continued on anyway and thought he would just try to be extra nice if he had done something.

"I know we haven't gotten much chance to talk, Layla, but I wanted to ask you something," Quinn said, as he continued to explain what Sam's plan was and what he was planning to do.

"So the reason why I came over to the both of you, was because I was thinking of getting the old group back together. I thought it would be nice, all of us that were once students to return now as teachers." Quinn said, in a happy tone, but realised that the two girls weren't reciprocating the same feelings back.

"I have bad memories of that place, Quinn. Unlike all of you that carried on to live a joyous life without me." Erin replied. "Besides, I think you should talk to Leo before talking to us. It sounded like he had something planned, and Layla and I were hoping to go along."

Quinn turned to look towards Layla, who could barely make eye contact and just nodded along. Realising that he couldn't convince the girls, unless he had talked to Leo, he decided that this would be his next destination.

Leo didn't know much of the crew on the Cursed ship, and he hardly knew the others. At the same time, it didn't seem like many would talk to him, but Quinn knew where Leo would be. For Quinn had given him access to his personal training room, and ever since it felt like it no longer was his anymore and now was permanently Leo's.

'I don't mind anyway. I can always use the shadow lock if I want to get somewhere where no one will disturb me.'

Entering the room, Quinn was right. He could see Leo sitting down, meditating and practising as he usually did.

"Quinn, I thought you would come to see me eventually," Leo said, and Quinn went ahead and sat down opposite him.

It reminded Quinn of the first time he had learnt Qi from Leo. Quinn went ahead and briefly explained the situation to Leo, and waited for a reply.

"I see. I think Sam is a great person to have by your side. He is knowledgeable and thinks for not only your best interest but the whole group as well. If you continue to follow his advice, you will achieve what you truly d.e.s.i.r.e, Quinn." Leo said.

"But, if your request is for me to come back to being a teacher, I can not. I simply don't think you need me there. I joined before because I thought it was something I could do to help the future generation. I believe you are now more suited for that position.

"While for me, I have something else I want to achieve."

Quinn thought that this might be the case when Erin and Layla had brought something up.

"Do you plan to try to find the high ranking members of Pure?" Quinn asked.  
"Layla and Erin said they would be coming with you."

"I haven't forced Quinn. This is your choice at the end of the day. Honestly, if you give a reason why you think they shouldn't, or you didn't even want me to go, then we will comply with your request, but you who believes in freedom, I don't think would do that."

Leo was right, If it was something they chose to do, as long as they knew the risks, then he would allow them to go, but Quinn just wished he could go with them.

"Leo, I trust you to look after them, but this time I want to be there as well. Pure is a dangerous group. They have a lot of strong people, I'm sure you know. Before you take any action, I want you to report back to me, and I will come and help. While you're on your search, I also want you to bring one of the shadow users with you. That way I can come to you at any time."

"I don't want to go on another rescue mission for you guys. We have been on far too many of those already." Quinn said, thinking about everything that happened.

"Well, neither do we. I assure you. We will inform you as soon as there is any problem at all. With your shadow powers, as long as there is one that can be used at the school, the Cursed ship, and with us, you will be able to go to all three positions at once, so don't worry about that."

Leaving the conversation there, it was just more people that Quinn couldn't take along with him to the school. He started to think about Logan as well, but his use was far more suited on the ship as well, same with Alex.

After racking his brain long and hard, Quinn finally decided who would be coming with him back to school.

"These guys!" Sam said, shaking his head slightly and placing his hand on his forehead. "Are you sure, Quinn?"

"I don't see what is wrong with them?" Quinn replied. "Besides, it's the best choice I have. I'm sure these are the ones I want to take with me."

## Chapter 951: My Choices

Sam thought leaving Quinn to decide who to take with him should have been fine. After all, Quinn was actually a good decision maker when it came to certain things. Sure Sam disagreed with his decisions at times and would have done things differently, but Quinn seemed to have this intuition style of leading that got them out of the worst of situations.

There were times that even Sam wouldn't have known how to deal with such things and Quinn's quick thinking would have helped them. Whether or not Sam would have gotten into such a dire situation in the first place was a different story, but people were different.

Still, none of this changed the fact that Sam didn't understand Quinn's reasoning to bring these people along with him.

"Can I please ask, why them? I mean.. yeah please Quinn?" Sam had to ask.

"Do you have a problem with me?" Peter said, looking at him while tilting his head a little to the side. His eyes looked like if Sam said anything, he would come over there and give him a slap at the back of the head.

"Peter is plenty strong, and his ability is extremely helpful in certain situations. We are no longer in the vampire world where they can smell he isn't one of them. If anything is going on, or we need to dive further to find out information, Peter will be our guy." Quinn answered.

Looking at Peter, he was nodding along to every word Quinn would say and kind of looked a little smug, hiding a slight smile.

"Peter, don't take this the wrong way, but don't you think he's a little aggressive. Are you planning to make him a teacher, or a head general?" Said Sam.

"I think Peter will do better than you think, his current difficult personality has been getting better with time. Also, he has this intuition where he can spot when something is wrong. You have to give him credit where credit is due. Peter was the first one to call out Cindy." Said Quinn.

"That's right, and this time if my intuition starts to ring, I'll slap them before anyone gets hurt." Peter said while doing the action of a punch instead.

Seeing this, Sam couldn't help but shake his head.

"Don't worry, Peter has a calm side." Quinn whispered to him. "If he was really quick to anger or aggressive then he wouldn't be able to teach the kids from the Blade island. He'll make a good head general."

"Okay, I'll give you a pass on the ability side of things, especially with his soul weapon, it means he isn't the one that needs to do the snooping. So explain to me, why you're taking one of the strongest humans with you. A lot of people saw him on the broadcast it will be hard hiding him." Sam said, looking towards Sil.

"Sil, never got to experience school properly." Quinn said in a softer tone as he lowered his voice. "I want Sil to get to know others, without an environment where they have to worry about their lives, or betray their friends. Also, new abilities are being discovered all the time and he's one of the best people to find them."

"Hopefully Sil might be able to find someone that can help him achieve his goal. Don't worry about his appearance, it's one of the reasons Peter is coming along as well. With the 'Mud Mask' soul weapon, we can change that for him. So I've decided that Sil will be attending as a student."

Looking at Sil, Sam noticed that he seemed quite nervous. He wasn't sure if he was only doing this because it was Quinn's request. Although Quinn might have not noticed it, Sil listened to Quinn a lot and would nearly do everything he asked. Even despite them not talking as much these days.

"Well, I mean my worry is that Sil is one of the strongest people in existence. Especially around so many ability users, having him as a student you won't be able to keep an eye on him all the time." Sam explained.

However, Quinn wanted Sil to get better, there was a chance Vorden and Raten would never be brought back, and somehow Quinn needed him to get out of this rut.

"Don't worry about that, I have thought of that as well." Quinn replied.

Finally, they moved onto the last three people Quinn had brought with him.

Sam looked at this person confused for a few seconds. It was a male who looked quite plain. He didn't have any memorable features on his face, he had a normal short styled haircut that was within time and he looked like a plain guy.

"Who even is this guy!" Sam blurted out, realising he was losing it a little. He felt like his brain cells were weakening as he couldn't figure out Quinn's decision making, but found out that everything he said made sense.

"This is Bucky!" Quinn said as he held out his hand introducing him.

"Chucky," The man corrected Quinn.

"Chucky? You're taking someone with you whose name you don't even know?" Said Sam.

"Well, he will also be attending as a student and will be looking over Sil. I plan to have them attend the same class. Sil's main weakness is he needs an ability to copy, you know why he can't do so with the others, so that's why I have brought Chucky along as well. I also picked him because he doesn't stand out so much. I mean it's almost as if this guy has a second ability." Quinn answered quite proudly.

"And next you're going to tell me you brought the troublemaker along just to make your life harder?" Sam said bluntly, looking at Fex.

"No, Fex I brought along because I just wanted someone by my side." Quinn said quite seriously. "I want people I trust. Fex and I share some good memories at school with each other, and I want to make more. Honestly, I wanted everyone who I used to go to school with to come as well. I thought maybe it would serve as a good break after everything we've been through, but they seem to be a bit busy."

Now Sam was starting to understand Quinn a bit more. Although the reasons did make sense, it was pushing it a little. There were better candidates such as Linda and Dennis to take over the role of head general. Both of these had experience leading factions.

They would be able to spot talent within the students and the military and if something was to occur they would also be able to lead them. That's when Sam realised, he had brought Sil, Peter and Fex. Sil was a replacement for Vorden back then.

However, Erin and Layla had refused due to helping out Leo. Quinn just wanted to take everyone back to those times.

Finally, they had moved on to the last person.

"And what about....Actually I think this is a good choice, but I didn't think you would pick her?" Sam said with his finger on his chin.

"That's because he didn't pick me, but I volunteered." Helen spoke. "I knew you guys would think I was too busy with Daisy and helping out with the beast planets, but my sisters deal with most of that stuff anyway, so everything will be fine even if I'm away."

For some reason, when Helen spoke, Quinn didn't say much either, even though Sam was waiting for him to say something. Placing his hand over his neck and pulling him over to one side Sam whispered.

"Hey, she isn't blackmailing you or something into this is she, what's wrong?" Sam asked.

"It's not that, I just don't really know how to deal with someone like her. She just came up and said, 'I know why Sam was talking about all that stuff. I want to be a

part of that school'. Then she started listing all the reasons why she would make a good head general and a teacher at the school. I just froze and said yes."

Shaking his head Sam didn't know what to do with this boy, or the strong headed girl, and was wondering if it really was good for the two of them to be working together.

"You're going to break a lot of hearts in the future Quinn, just be ready for some revenge from them." Sam said, patting him on the back.

"Huh, what are you talking about?" Quinn said, confused, as Sam returned to all the others.

"Alright, I guess that's everyone then, I'll send a message to Oscar and tell him who is coming. Everyone, it's time to get ready." Sam said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 952: Pure's secret weapon

In an open land where the floor was an iron red, structures that had been built were seemingly destroyed all over the place. Nothing left but rubble. However, a single one stood tall and strong out of them all. A tower larger than anything in the entire area. The tower itself had exactly a hundred floors and down below at the very bottom of the tower, the sound of fighting, and more could be heard.

Yet at the very top, on top of the tower itself looking down at everything around them, two men were sitting down.

"They sure like to fight, don't they?" Arthur said.

"Of course, it's in their nature you can't stop it, you should know that by now. I'm more interested in you though. Are you sure about your decision? You've spent enough time thinking about it, and I don't want you to regret your actions like you did before." The man by his side said.

Gripping his fist, the sword on Arthur's back started to vibrate.

"I'm sure." Arthur replied. "Do you think everything will go well on your end?"

"It depends, it seems like the humans have built this new school. They've gotten their forces together but honestly fighting together or apart they're no match for the Dalki. I'm sure you know that as well. My only concern is what he will do. He has been planning his move for hundreds of years, which is why I think your plan is best."

Hearing this, Arthur grabbed his sword on his back, and he was debating whether to go down to where all the fighting was happening below, or even enter the tower himself. He just wanted to get out all the frustration that was felt in his body.

"Remember, if you find him I want you to keep him alive. I have a lot of things I want to ask him."

"Of course, a deal is a deal, you have my word."

Somewhere in the deep, dark blue sea, was a state of the art submarine. Inside it, were the agents of Pure. The members were a little hectic and nervous today as the leaders had told them to be on their best behaviour and at the same time, had asked them to prepare for something.

Inside the submarine itself, they had a large dome room that acted as an arena. Stands for crowds of people to sit and watch what would happen down below. However, even the arena grounds had another glass dome. Created to protect the onlookers from above.

On the arena floor, inside the glass dome, stood a man with wild red hair. His shirt had been taken off and tied around his waist, showing his ripped body full of scars.

"Come on, hurry up and get this place ready! If they arrive and this place is not ready, who knows what they'll do to you. I'll be fine but you guys...I wouldn't want to be you in that situation." Chris shouted.

The shirt tied around his waist was flapping slightly, and the number one could be seen.

There were many members who were clearing the grounds, as it looked like a battle had just taken place. They were smoothing at the floor, filling in the cracks. It was a lot harder work since there weren't many ability users in Pure, so everything had to be done manually.

Finally, in the stands at the far end, the door slid open and five people could be seen entering the room. Unlike Chris who didn't like wearing his large white overcoat much, these members of Pure almost never walked around the base without them on.

The first two at front, one a female with a straight fringe that just reached her eyebrows, the fringe of her black hair followed all around and looked almost like a bowl had been placed on top of her head and the hair had been cut around it. On her overcoat the number three could be displayed largely on her back and the numbers on both of her shoulders.

The man next to her, wore a similar overcoat. Only that displayed the number two on it. His distinctive features were the pitch black sunglasses he would wear. As Chris looked at him, he was wondering if he ever saw Agent 2 without the sunglasses.

'Hey, maybe he's blind.' Chris thought.

Finally entering the room, everyone who was busy preparing the arena, immediately bowed down showing respect, while Chris just gave the man a wave. For this, was Agent 0, the leader of Pure.

Agent 0's hair was wholly white and it seemed it was naturally this colour from old age, but it was hard to tell how old he was due to their being hardly having any wrinkles on his forehead or eyes, but when one first would meet him, there was something noticeable about him that usually one wouldn't be able to keep their eyes off of.

It was the four lines scared on the top of his forehead, going straight down as if a chart or a counter of some kind. They looked almost intentional, but no one dared to ask Agent 0 what the lines were for.

Standing by his side, was someone Chris didn't recognize, but there was one more behind them, who was Agent 4. All of the single digit agents, the founders of Pure had gathered in this room, all because of the stranger Agent 0 had brought with him today.

'It's a shame that Lucy isn't here as well.' Chris thought, as Lucy was also one of the founders of Pure.

Looking around, the arena was ready and it was time for them to put on a show.

Chris went ahead, and joined the others up in the stand. Agent 0, along with the stranger they had invited was sitting down while the rest remained standing. Coming over, Chris decided to just sit down next to Agent 0, and took a peek at the stranger.

'We went through all the trouble because of this guy, why is he so special?' Chris wondered, and he couldn't help, but try to sense the man's aura.

"Don't," Agent 0 said. "It's very rude of you to do such a thing, and he is our guest. Let's just get on with the demonstration."

Chris agreed with Agent 0, and decided to not try and see the man's aura. He just thought if someone was so important, then Chris would have known who this man was based on their appearance, but he had never seen him before and had no clue who he was.

On the arena floor, two people stood opposite each other. Members of Pure, one ranked number eight, while the other, number nine. They were quite the high ranking agents within pure, and they knew all three stages of Qi as well.

A fight between the two had begun and they started to display all the different uses of Qi while fighting each other.

"Qi, the energy known as life force, it differs from person to person." Agent 0 started to explain while the fighting continued. "Throughout all my life I have studied this life force, and figured out it controls more than we think.

"During my time, we figured out that there are three stages of Qi that you are witnessing today, but the reason why I have invited you is to show a new stage of Qi. Something we call the fourth stage of Qi. A breakthrough if I do say so myself.

"We came to know that soul weapons are manifested in the body at a certain age, and their power and form is greatly dependent on the ability one will have, but members of Pure don't have an ability, so does that mean we are unable to produce a soul weapon? For years we thought that to be the case, until we finally made a breakthrough, and this is what we call the fourth stage of Qi." Agent 0 finished

explaining. And at that moment Chris raised his hand giving the two agents inside the signal.

A huge force could be felt, and everyone there couldn't keep their eyes off what they were witnessing. The whole room felt like it was shaking as the two powers collided, and finally, it had stopped.

Agent 0 looked towards his guest to see his reaction but even after witnessing something so great it remained the same.

"The good thing about the fourth stage of Qi is that it is not needed to know the third stage, which is arguably the most difficult and not every person can learn. The stage of Qi you just witnessed any members of Pure can accomplish. So, what do you think?"

The guest didn't give an answer straight away, and he looked down at the two humans below. He then closed his eyes and started to imagine. A few seconds later he finally spoke.

"Do you think this is enough to defeat the Dalki? They are far stronger than any of you can imagine." The guest asked.

Agent 0 started to chuckle.

"I brought you here and showed you one of our greatest secrets, hoping you would come over to our side and help us. I have shown you a few things already that show you our power. If you won't support us, then who will you support? The military, the Graylash family. You know none of them are strong enough to take on the Dalki."

Standing up, the guest looked uninterested. He then started to walk towards the exit, and no one tried to stop him.

"Richard!" Agent 0 shouted. "Tell me, what are you thinking?"

The guest turned around as he heard his name being called out.

"Right now, I need to decide who has the best chance of defeating the Dalki, and will support them. There is an interesting group I have been keeping an eye on for a while. Perhaps I should pay them a visit. Before I make my decision." Richard Eno said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 953: Planet Earth

Flying through space was a medium-sized oval spaceship. It had a clear front allowing one to look at everything outside. It was a vehicle designed to fit around fifteen or so people, one of the many aircraft onboard the Cursed spaceship.

Currently inside were all the members that were preparing to head back to earth and arrive at their new destination. On top of this, Sam had come along for now but would be returning after dropping the others off. A small brief was being given by him to everyone, and at the same time, they were making their final preparations.

Peter had formed his soul weapon in his hand, and Sil stood opposite him with his eyes closed and his body slightly shaking.

"What the hell are you scared of?" Peter asked. "The mask doesn't hurt."

"I know, but you're going to shove it onto my face. Anyone would feel uncomfortable about that. Why can't I just copy your ability?" Sil asked.

"Well, unless you want to come to see me every twenty-four hours, then I wouldn't recommend it. It wouldn't work anyway. Is there anyone you want him to look like, or am I free to choose?" Peter asked while looking over at Sam.

"Just don't make him stand out too much, and don't turn him into a girl. That would be a little uncomfortable." Sam said.

Before Sil could even get ready, the mask was shoved onto his face. Sil attempted to grab his hands, but when they connected he realised that for some reason, he couldn't copy Peter's ability. He didn't pay much attention in the past when Vorden was in control, but now he knew there wasn't much he could do. However, as his body started to morph, he realised the whole process was painless and let go. Once everything was complete, he took a step back, touching his face.

"Do I look different?" Sil asked.

The sound of a slap was heard, and when they turned around, they could see it was Sam. His forehead was bright red. He had slapped his head too many times recently.

"Didn't I say not to make him stand out?" Sam said.

"What? I just made him into a good looking chap. We want him to learn as many abilities as he can, right?" Peter said.

Essentially, there weren't any massive changes that had been done to Sil's body. He was still a tall good looking young lad. His facial features differed slightly,

changing the shape of his eyes and nose, but his hair remained the same, apart from a change in colour from blonde to a light brown.

With Sil's looks, he usually gathered attention anyway, and Peter didn't want to go to the effort of changing him much. It was nearly impossible for him to come up with an entirely new appearance, he had to base it off others and he did so thinking of some of the people he had seen on the Blade island.

"So, are you and Borden really not going to be with me?" Sil asked, looking at Quinn. He looked down with his shoulders slumped as if he was sulking.

"No, but remember I will be a teacher at the school so you can come to see me at any time. But honestly, I want you to talk to others and get used to it. It's what Vorden and Raten would have wanted. Remember, Borden is busy teaching all the Blade children you saved from the island. Think of it this way, the more people you meet, the more chances we have of bringing Borden and Raten back."

"Besides, Chucky will be with you most of the time. He's a member of the Cursed faction, so if it ever gets too much, just talk to him, and he will come over to us." Quinn answered.

When Sil turned to look at Chucky, he smiled back at him, but Sil instead just stomped the ground and walked away as if he was disappointed by Quinn's answer.

'Why are they putting so much attention on this person that is acting like a child?' Chucky thought. Not really knowing who Sil was. Only that he would regularly be invited to be at the table of the Cursed leaders.

Only those in higher positions had seen what Sil could do. Fortunately, the Broadcast also didn't show much either, apart from the world leaders not wanting Sil to participate in the duel.

"Okay, looks like we are nearly there," Sam said, looking at the map. He turned around to face the others. "Now remember, Quinn. You will not be known as Quinn when you arrive, but instead, you will now be known as Hardy."

Hearing the name and alias Sam had given him, he was glad that Logan wasn't the one coming up with them. Otherwise, he would have been stuck with the name Buinn.

"Remind me why I'm the only one using an alias?" Quinn asked.

"Because you're one of the world leaders, you have to know your position now. Even the other Head Generals need to treat you with respect, and that's not what we want. Everyone is on their best behaviour when they know they are being watched by the higher-ups. What we need is to find out the truth. They will just treat you differently if they know who you are."

"Everyone will think you are just a high ranking member from the Cursed faction having taken this position. The only one that knows who you really are is Owen and Oscar. Although Owen won't be there, only those he has sent."

"And you're sure they won't recognise me?" Quinn asked, attempting to look at himself, but just looking at his hands and legs, he felt hardly any difference at all.

"Quinn, I remember when I first saw you. Your appearance from back then, and the appearance you have now, are completely different. No one would believe the weak little nerd and the person standing in front of me, is the same person."

"He's right about that," Helen commented, who had been sitting down staring out the window the whole time. "I've seen the photos, and the boy from before would get a four at best. While the hunk in front of me would be getting a ten out of ten. Although, you did have your own charms back then."

"Wow!" Fex said, looking at Quinn. "I thought I was the playboy of the group and not shy to speak my mouth, but it looks like I got some competition. Hey, I forgot to ask but, if Peter and Helen are going to be head generals, then what about me?"

"You," Sam said. "Um, well you see, they have this class called arts and crafts, and I thought your ability really suited it, so I requested for you to be an arts and crafts teacher at the school. You know people need their hobbies as well."

"Arts and crafts?" Fex replied, his excitement quickly dwindling as he imagined a bunch of grandmas sitting around, knitting.

"Remember they're students, not grandmas," Sam replied as if he could see what he was thinking. At times he thought he was dealing with a Nate 2.0. The only difference was, Fex could get the girls he was interested in. "So, are you ready, Hardy?" Sam asked.

Quinn stood there confused for a second and then quickly replied, figuring out that it was his new name from now on.

"Yes, Head General Hardy is ready," Quinn said.

Looking out of the glass window, they could see countless ships leaving and flying through space as they all got closer to one area in particular, and that area was none other than earth. Even after all the planets they had discovered through the beast solar system, there wasn't one quite like earth.

With its blue water, clear skies and green landmass. Earth was a unique place, and seeing it like this, from a distance, he understood why humans fought so hard to keep this place.

"I guess we're finally going home," Quinn said.

As they entered the earth's atmosphere, the ship started to follow the flight path of the coordinates given. It flew over the blue sea, and the crashing waves could be seen, and finally, out in the distance, there was land.

On top of that land, a large school-like sculpture was seen. It was an incredible masterpiece that could be seen from afar. In the centre of all the square buildings, it had two titled large altars with a levitating circle ball in the middle.

Ships seemed to be lined up waiting to enter the island as strict border control was being implemented.

"It's impressive. I'm sure the military has some defensive measures as well, just in case the Dalki chose to attack. They wouldn't prepare all this for no reason." Sam said.

"Sure," Quinn replied, but he knew it wasn't a question of if. It was when. What Quinn didn't know was some extra forces would be working with the Dalki.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 954: The Head generals

Going through border control to get onto the island where the new base was located, was quite the headache in itself. However, while Quinn was away, special clearance badges had been sent to those in the Cursed faction. For Quinn, he had received two of these special passes.

One being a special platinum colour, this one was to be used for Quinn only, and was meant to be kept on him at all times. Although, one would think they would know what the world leaders of the world looked like. However, it was all for security in the end. It was common for those in high positions to either alter their appearance for certain reasons or many would attempt to imitate them.

What Quinn, Peter and Helen had also obtained was a gold pass that was given to Head Generals. What was unique about these passes were they were imprinted with the users DNA. Only when being touched by the owner would a small little symbol light up in the centre of the card to prove one was the owner and the card was meant for them.

The reason why the cards had to have such measures was due to the level of clearance and access they gave. Not only could they be used at this military base, but all the ones scattered on earth as well as on the shelters on other planets.

This was a way the military was claiming that they were more open compared to before, hoping that everyone could share information with each other. Now when attempting to connect to the server, they could use the special passes to access the server.

Not that this mattered much anyway, because the whole system had been created by the Green family in the first place, whatever information the Cursed family needed could be gathered by Logan, but of course the Cursed faction would keep this on the down-low.

As soon as showing the passes to those at the border, their treatment had changed immediately, and the guards on duty gave their ship a certain odd look before letting them pass and go on ahead.

"What was that about?" Peter asked. He was pretty annoyed that it had taken so long until they had shown the passes. As the ship continued onward towards the school. Now that they were in the city, the spaceship had transformed itself to a land vehicle and was being escorted between two larger vehicles towards the school.

"I think it's because of our ship." Said Sam.

"Haven't you noticed?" Helen said it, like it was obvious. "Now that all three families are truly cooperating with each other. It's time for influential families, and those with close ties to the top to show off what they have. All the other spaceships

are top tier. Basically, everyone is using this as a chance to show their wealth and power that they have."

Peter was wondering why they had chosen this ship, when they had so many nicer ones on board the Cursed ship, but he assumed that it really didn't matter. Who cared what spaceship one took, as long as it got you to place A to place B in a safe manner, what did it matter.

To him, it just sounded like a bunch of people who wanted to show off their connections and power.

"Should have shown them your platinum card, I bet then they would have all bowed down to you and had a big fuss." Peter replied.

Quinn, when arriving, had only shown them his gold pass, which still gave them grand treatment. No other ships were being escorted to the school, but as Peter said, if they knew one of the three world leaders were here, they were sure to give them more protection than this.

"It's fine, I'm still not used to all this leader stuff anyway." Quinn replied.

The school was seen up ahead, and as they got closer, the sheer size of it just seemed to get larger and larger. However, it made sense, since this was a place that was meant to harbour all the students from every facility, for training. They would even be living here for a short while.

However, it was clear they were caring about the students because the school itself looked to have more resources spent on it, than the rest of the place.

"You can thank Logan for that." Sam said, noting how much in awe Quinn was.

"What do you mean?" Quinn asked.

"The money and funding had to come from somewhere. Logan made a lot of money betting on you winning that fight that day, and a short while after he managed to recover the rest of the Green funds. He had more money than he could handle."

"This project has been in the works for a while, and Logan requested it would be put towards the students." Sam explained.

"More money than he can handle that's nice. Well, he has always sorted out the Cursed faction funding problems as well. Just how much money does that guy have?" Quinn thought, but quickly remembered that nearly every system they used today, not just games, had been created by the Green family.

And apparently they had some tie in with the Dalki as well.

After being led underneath the school to the parking area. The spaceship was parked with all the others. Now Peter had a better idea of what the others were talking about. The spaceship they had brought with them, only filled a quarter of the parking space they had received. And all the ships around them were grander and better than theirs.

Soon, the guards opened up a teleporter, and asked for all of them to step through.

"I guess this is my goodbye for now." Sam said. "We have the masks so you can communicate with us anytime you want. It would be best to talk to Oscar about setting up a teleporter in the school that only you can access. That way you can come back to the Cursed ship as soon as possible, and we can come here as well if there is any trouble."

With that, everyone gave Sam a wave goodbye, and Quinn now realised that everything from here on out would be up to him.

'At least you have had a lot of practice with the vampire council, all of this should be a walk in the park for you.' Vincent said, but it wasn't helping Quinn feel any better.

Each of them walked through the teleporter and they soon found themselves looking at a large desk in a room. Sitting behind the desk was the Supreme Commander Oscar. Behind him were several large glass pane windows. Through them one could see the whole school campus from above.

'These leaders sure like their views, I guess it makes them have a sense that they are in control of everything.' Quinn thought.

"Quinn, you finally made it." Oscar said with a cheery smile. It was strange to have someone happy to see him even though they barely knew him.

However, Oscar's personality towards Quinn was different compared to last time, and the reason was simple. Oscar knew that whatever Quinn did, whoever he had summoned that day, it was because of him that their lives were saved.

He owed Quinn and he would never forget that.

"I heard you had a lot going on, so I didn't get to see you or thank you, as you can see I have been busy here myself. I have to say I never expected you to become a teacher yourself." Oscar said.

"Neither did I, but I think this is important. This was where my life was changed, and I'm sure it will be true for many others as well." Quinn answered back.

"Don't be so uptight, there is no threat here, you can relax especially when you're speaking to me. You can leave the formal stuff for later.

"I see you brought a few others along with you. Sam has made the request and my personal assistant will deal with them. For now the Head Generals and Sergeants are all waiting in the meeting room down below. Why don't we all go and introduce ourselves? Don't worry, you're not the only new ones that have arrived. The whole military has had a lot of restructuring." Oscar said.

The head generals, Quinn hadn't seen many of them before, only once or twice during the inter-base tournament. He remembered that their school was considered one of the weakest of the bunch, and no one expected them to get far, but due to Quinn and Logan, their school had received a higher position than expected when the results came out.

'The head generals were quite strong. Even Paul, before he was turned, had gone toe to toe with Leo as a vampire. In fact, it was more like Leo was losing, until we had captured most of his men and he had surrendered.'

"I wonder what these head generals will be like.' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

# **Chapter 955: Getting rid of sc.u.m (Part 1)**

## **Chapter 955 - Getting rid of sc.u.m (Part 1)**

Sil, Chucky and Fex were carted away by some of the staff. They would be briefed on their lesson plan and schedule and everything they needed to cover for the semester as students and teachers.

The meeting that Quinn, Peter and Helen were to attend was one between the higher up staff of the group. Of course, Sam could have requested at least Fex to be a higher staff member but had completely forgotten. Not that it mattered much anyway. As a teacher, he would have plenty of freedom to see Quinn whenever he wished, just not to be in on the big meetings between others.

As soon as Quinn arrived, Oscar was escorting Quinn and his group personally down to the banquet hall where the other higher military staff were waiting. The reason Oscar was waiting for Quinn was because in reality, these two carried the same rank. Of course he would be treating Quinn better compared to the rest of the Head Generals and he would have done the same if Owen had arrived as well.

The automatic doors slid open, and the sound of groups of people talking was seen, and the first thing that had caught Quinn's eye was a giant chandelier. Everyone was eating food, while having gathered in groups. That's when Quinn also noticed he and the others were the only ones in their military uniforms from the Cursed ship, while everyone else was dressed quite formally.

"This looks like a party for rich snobs," Peter commented, and he wasn't shy about hiding his opinion either.

"Think of it as a more formal gathering. Not everyone in this room is from the military. We have sponsors from big families as well as merchants and more." Oscar said.

Quinn would often forget about this, that there were two forms of power, money and strength. Although usually having strength or a strong ability, money would naturally come with it. However, there were a few individuals that made use of their ability and were able to create products for everyday use in the current world.

The Green family was a good example of that, and there were a few families like the Green family that were protected by the military.

As soon as everyone noticed Oscar in the room, they stopped chatting and bowed down to him as a sign of respect.

"Don't mind me, please continue on. This might be the only time we get to relax before the semester starts tomorrow." Oscar said.

Everyone smiled and continued on with their talking.

"Alright, you three, first I'm going to introduce you to your co-workers. The three of you are in charge of military groups, as we call them, which were based on the old military bases of the past. Quinn, you are in charge of the second group, Peter, you will be in charge of the fourth, and Helen the sixth. To help you, you will all be assigned, six sergeants. Three of them will be in charge of the non-students, while the other three will help you with the students."

After the short explanation, Oscar walked over to a certain group who were talking with each other, dining on the small pieces of food. There were three of them in total, and as soon as one of them turned around to look at who was coming towards them, Quinn's heart started to beat louder.

"I would like to introduce you to the Head Generals that have come from the Cursed faction," Oscar said with his hand held out, presenting them. "These three are sergeants of the second group."

Although Oscar didn't need to say that, Quinn already knew who they were, for at one point, they were teachers that had worked in his school from the past. There was Fay, the sergeant from before who had the ability of superspeed. Hayley, the school doctor who was actually Paul's daughter and finally, Nathan. Who used to be one of the generals of the second military base.

'I guess the reformation was to make the ranking a bit clearer and easier, and because of the introduction of the Cursed faction and the Graylash family, technically Nathan has got a demotion.' Quinn thought.

The first thing they did was give a salute to show their respect to their Head Generals, but then their eyes all turned to Helen.

"I had heard of your feats before you became part of the Cursed family. Your power is nothing to laugh at." Fay said, shaking her hand. "It would be an honour to work under someone like yourself."

"It's unfortunate you lost the duel, I assume that Shadow power is an unpredictable power, so it would have been hard for anyone to beat it," Hayley said. Having witnessed the event first hand.

"Hey, calm down, you two. It almost sounds like you don't like the Cursed faction. Remember Quinn was a student from our school, and now he has become a world leader. It still seems so unbelievable. We should be proud, though." Nathan added.

What they didn't realise was that Quinn was right in front of them all. His nerves started to settle down a little after he realised that Sam was right. None of his old teachers had recognised him at all.

It also seems they had all witnessed the duel and had been fans of the Daisy faction, which was expected since some would even consider them the fifth strongest faction after the big four.

The Cursed faction winning that duel was an upset.

"Hey, you idiots! Don't you realise -" Peter was about to explode on them, but Quinn soon stopped him, pulling him off to the side.

"Oh, that's right, it's Peter isn't it? You and Quinn were always close to each other." Fay said. "Don't get it wrong, we weren't badmouthing him. It's just really unbelievable what happened. It was so sudden it doesn't feel real. While Helen had been running Daisy for years to get up to its position. It's natural that there will be more people in awestruck meeting her than if they were to meet him."

No matter how hard the sergeants of the past tried, they just couldn't get the student image of both Peter and Quinn out of their heads. Even though they both now had higher ranks than themselves.

"This is Hardy," Oscar said, giving Quinn a little nudge. "He will be the Head General you will be following from now on. He is also planning to teach some lessons. As you three are part of the student department, I imagine you will be seeing each other a lot. Do your best to get along.

"Once you guys are done introducing yourself, come meet me again. By then, I'll have all the other Head Generals together." Oscar said, leaving them be.

Once they had learnt who would be their Head general, it was hard for the three of them to hide their disappointment. Each military group wanted to accomplish great things. With the students and with the whole group, they found it hard to imagine they could do so with Hardy.

The conversation between them and the other sergeants continued. Although they were respectful, most of their attention was focused on Helen. It was words of praise for her past accomplishments and, at the same time, almost apologising for the fact that they had to work for the Cursed faction.

'Is our reputation really that bad, or is it just because of how quick we have risen? People think we still need to prove ourselves.' Quinn thought.

If this really was the case, then there wouldn't be many students who would choose to come to the Cursed faction once they had ended their military studies. However, they would get those that wouldn't be fit, or good enough for the other teams, and this thought in itself pleased Quinn a bit.

Finally, Oscar had gathered the other Head Generals and had come to get Quinn and the others. He had brought them together in a large circle, and it was quite obvious who was from what family just based on what they were wearing.

All those from the Graylash family wore their white robes they wore all the time, and one of them, who Quinn recognised, was Hector. One of Owen's assistants was in charge of looking after the Crow's faction. Quinn didn't know the other two but thought they had to have been strong to have been given the position they were in.

As for the other three Head Generals that belonged to the military, they would have had to have been the best of the best. Since the other head generals had been demoted to make room for the Cursed faction and Graylash family.

Each of them was dressed in formal clothing rather than military clothing, which was suited to their own taste. As soon as Quinn and the others joined, the three from the military had looked the Cursed faction up and down and almost rolled their eyes back.

The arrogance and air around them reminded Quinn a lot of Duke, and the vampire leaders, as if they were above others. A problem that seemed to be persistent with those higher up in the military.

'It looks like some people don't like us being here.' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 956: Getting rid of sc.u.m (Part 2)

### Chapter 956 - Getting rid of sc.u.m (Part 2)

Before Oscar could introduce everyone, it seemed like he had been called to handle something and had to leave the banquet hall in a rush.

"I hope everyone gets along. Introduce yourself to each other. You will all be working together quite closely from now on." Oscar said as he left everyone.

It seemed like the Graylash family and the military generals had been talking for some time before Quinn had arrived, so their attention was focused on them.

"So, Oscar said your name was Hardy, correct?" One of the male head generals asked. His hair was a reddish-brown in colour and was quite long for someone in the military, going down to his collarbone. However, every once in a while, he would have this slight twitch that Quinn noticed, moving his upper lip.

"I don't know much about the Cursed faction. However, I do know of Helen and of the Zombie boy over there, but you I have never heard of your name before?" The man said.

"I would have thought the Cursed faction had some old faction leaders they could have sent here. What are your accomplishments exactly?" The red-haired man asked.

Now that Quinn was closer, he recognised the three Head Generals a little more. Their appearance looked a little different to what he remembered, but that was due to him seeing them on TV when he was younger.

These three generals were also claimed to be part of the hero's of war. Having great accomplishments in the war against the Dalki. However, they weren't as famous as Leo or Oscar.

'Is that why they seem to be a little arrogant?' Vincent said. 'I think they are asking of your accomplishments only so they could boast about their own.'

Quinn agreed.

"I think this little trial Oscar is doing might prove to be a failure." Another general from the military spoke. His hair was green in colour, and when looking closely, one could see that their tongue was split into two halves like a snake. "They have allowed the Graylash family and the Cursed faction to make three Head Generals. They trusted the other powerhouses, and they have chosen to assign a nobody, or maybe this is just the next best person the faction have got!"

Peter's fist was clenching up by the second. He didn't care who they were. Right now, someone was disrespecting their leader, thier group, everything they had worked hard for, and after everything, they had gone through.

"It seems like you have got his tongue-tied. The man can't say anything because he hasn't even achieved any accomplishments. Everyone knows that the Cursed faction bullied all the other factions by using those beasts. That's how you rose to your position, and it doesn't sit well with us. I'm sure even Helen here despises working for you. Perhaps we could come to some sort of deal with you barbarians, so we can bring her over to our side." The red-haired man said, but he wasn't done thier. He could tell that thier were some onlookers around nodding in agreement with what he was saying, which just spurred him on further.

"Oscar, only has let you guys in, in the hopes to tame you, so that you don't attack the people. This is a time when we should be working together to fight against the Dalki. And your faction members continued to attack each other all for your own gains!" The man continued to shout.

"I am not being held against my will, and I would much rather work with the Cursed faction than a broken military that can't even trust the decisions of its supreme commander." Helen piped up. "The Cursed faction is stronger than you think. I'm sure you know of the strength of my group and my faction, and even then, the Cursed faction was able to beat us. I assure you, anyone they have assigned to the position of Head General, would be able to make each of you lie on your back. Perhaps they may even fix your broken tongue while they're at it."

"What did you say?! I dare you to try to prove those words right now!" The split tongued man shouted, and it looked like he was about to use an ability of some sort as he raised his hand, but before he could even do so, it had already been stopped being held in place.

"Arghh!" The man screamed, and a few cracking sounds were heard from his fingers as they were being crushed by the sheer pressure.

"What do you think you're doing? Did you just try to attack someone from our family!" Peter shouted at the man.

The scream and Peter's words were so loud, that the others in the banquet hall were now looking in their direction.

Usually, Quinn would tell Peter to stop, but from what he had learnt in the past it was best to put these people in their place when he could.

The third general was a female with a long black ponytail that nearly touched the floor. She noticed something at this point. She could see Quinn's eyes starting to glow red and took a step back from the other two, she was debating whether to warn them or not, but a shiver was entirely sent down her spine.

"You want to know what type of power the Cursed faction have," Quinn said, looking at the two of them with his eyes glowing red. At this point, Peter had let go of the man's crushed hand and smiled in anticipation for what was about to come next.

"Both of you, kneel!" Quinn ordered, and a few seconds later, as if their body was being forced, they dropped to the ground and were on their knees.

From the outside, the onlookers had no clue what was happening and only saw that two of the Head Generals were kneeling in front of another, but it was one that they didn't recognise.

"What is going on? Do they know that person?" Fay asked, looking from the side.  
"None of us recognised him."

"No, look at the struggle on their faces." Nathan pointed out, "It must be some ability of some sort. They're being forced."

"Should we go do something, isn't that our Head General?" Hayley asked.

However, Nathan was interested in the person he would be taking orders from, from now on and decided to let things play out.

"You talk about working together, and then you attempt to attack us before finding out more about us. You know nothing about the Cursed faction, and all of you tried to drag our name through the mud."

"Let me tell you, the reason we are here is to get rid of the sc.u.m in the military, and I haven't quite made up my mind yet if you two fit that role." Quinn continued to speak, but it wasn't in a soft voice. Everyone around could hear as well.

"The Cursed faction are here to get rid of sc.u.m. What do they mean?" People started to gossip around.

The two on the ground could be seen trying to struggle, trying to fight whatever was happening in their bodies, but they could do nothing as they were forced to stay on the ground.

"You, you are attacking us in front of everyone!" The red haired man continued to shout.

"Don't speak," Quinn ordered again, and now the two of them couldn't even open their mouths.

'This boy seems to have a darkside.' Helen thought, looking at him, and l.i.c.k.i.n.g her lips slightly.

Quinn had simply had enough of this behaviour through his life, and it was the same in the vampire settlement. The thing was now, there was no reason he had to take it. No one they had to complain to.

"I apologise on Head General Innu, and Head General Sach's behalf." The female general said, getting down on one knee. "You are right, I believe they were quite hostile towards your faction from the start. Please I hope you can forgive them and let them go. I hope that all the Head Generals can get along."

Hearing her say these words, calmed Quinn down a little. He turned around and decided to leave the room, while Helen and Peter soon followed.

Everyone quickly moved away from them, allowing them to pass for fear that they would be attacked as well.

"This might just make our reputation even worse, you know?" Helen said as they left the room. 'What was that ability of his that he used just now, it wasn't part of the shadow?'

"It's okay, people will find out the truth in the end, but I can't forgive anyone that tries to attack my family right in front of me," Quinn said.

The Cursed faction had made quite the impression on their very first day.

## Chapter 957: Disappointment

It didn't take long for word to get out about what the Cursed faction had done to the other head generals. Especially since it was done to those in the military. One of them had a crushed hand that needed to be healed, while the others were supposedly kneeling behind and looked like they were on the verge of holding back their tears, or so the rumours said.

Because of the news spreading around so quickly, the three head generals that had been involved were called into a meeting with Oscar himself. Currently, all three of them were standing in front of him having given their reports of the event that had occurred.

"Those people from the Cursed have no respect. We never raised a finger against them. Yet they go around abusing their power like that and at a gathering of all things!" Innu, the red-haired general, complained.

Oscar let out a big sigh. He didn't think there would be problems. It wasn't even the first day of the school semester. However, sometimes this is what happens when a bunch of hot-headed fools were placed in the same room together.

Oscar knew that based on the military. Due to them giving positions out based on strength and ability often things like this would happen. What they didn't know was the person they were messing with, Quinn, was far stronger than both of them.

"I have heard your complaints, both of yours. My advice to you both would be to ignore this event for the sake of humanity's future. The Cursed faction, the Graylash family, and the Earthborn coming together and cooperating is essential to our survival. Do you understand?"

Both of the men looked at each other, gripping their hands tightly. They were hoping Oscar might act out against them, do something like he would have done in the past. However, it almost sounded like they were the ones getting a slap on the wrist while the Cursed faction received nothing for their humiliation. They reluctantly agreed and nodded towards Oscar.

"We understand." they both said, leaving the room.

"Samantha, would you mind staying behind," Oscar ordered, and the other two left the room.

"I hope I can trust you to tell me the real tale of events. It seems you didn't quite agree with the story they told. I mean they didn't really let you speak." Oscar said.

Samantha, the third head general that was there at the time explained everything that had happened. She told them how the two were disrespectful to the Cursed

faction. However, what she didn't manage to catch was that one of her own, was about to use an ability on Helen.

In her eyes, the ones that had attacked first were the Cursed faction, with Peter having crushed one of their own fingers.

"Thank you, I thought it would be something along those lines." Oscar replied.  
"You are free to leave."

However, before leaving Samantha wanted to ask her own questions.

"Supreme commander, if I may speak." She asked, and Oscar was listening keenly. "The man known as Hardy. He was somehow able to force those two to do his bidding.. It looked like they couldn't move and everything he said it was as if their bodies were being forced to listen to that order. I was afraid at the time if he had told them to kill themselves they would have complied.

"It was the first time I had ever seen two head generals being so powerless in front of another. Who is the person the Cursed family has sent to us?" Samantha asked. What she was also thinking, was if the Cursed family had someone this powerful under their control, what of their leader.

Of course, Oscar had been told to keep Quinn's identity a secret and he actually thought this was a good idea himself. Ever since Truedream's disappearance, although the military had gotten their act together there were more cases of infighting than ever. As those with strong abilities refused to listen to those above.

Still, he was thinking about the multiple things he saw Quinn do, not just the shadow or the red aura ability he seemed to have but Quinn's background and identity was so secretive. Information could only be found out about him and his parents and never went further back than that.

Turning around, Oscar went to look at the whole school once more as he gave his answer.

"I don't really know who that person is, and I don't know much about the Cursed faction." Said Oscar. "However, I can tell you what I think. I think we should do everything we can to make sure that person is on our side."

The next day was the opening ceremony for the new school. All the first year and second year students based on their age had already had their introduction and had received their uniforms.

However, there was a big difference this time compared to the last, although each of them wore watches on their wrist, there was no power level being displayed for everyone to see.

At the moment, a large temporary stage had been built, one the size of a large concert. On top of that there were multiple screens all facing towards one direction that would allow everyone to see what was happening no matter how far they were.

The students stood in the centre of the school, where the large open field was surrounded by all the different buildings coming from different directions. To just get from one end of the green to the other it looked like it would take half an hour.

The students, and been split up into nine groups. They were unaware of why this was the case or what was happening today, only that an opening ceremony was to be held and to start it off, was none other than Oscar.

As he took to the stage the crowd of students cheered loudly. It seemed like his reception was mostly positive. Despite the fact that these students had come from all sorts of different factions. They still knew him as a war hero from the last war.

At the same time, out of all the forces, the military was probably the least aggressive during the Civil war. They mostly only defended attacks and were trying to deal with their own set of problems.

Oscar started to give them a grand speech about what war was like and why it was important for the students to attend. He also gave them a breakdown of what they would learn and finally he had mentioned about the housing system.

How the nine groups they were in now, would be split into three different houses. The Cursed house, Graylash house, and the Earthborn house. Being in a house didn't mean you would have to join that group once you left the military. It meant two things, points would be assigned to houses based on good behaviour scores and sporting events.

The second, was which head generals would lead certain houses, as the generals would correlate with the house they were in. For example if they were in the Cursed house, those students would either be under Quinn, Peter or Helen.

The groups of students were eventually told what house they belonged to, with house 2, 4 and 6 belonging to the Cursed house. Hearing this news, there were some students that were annoyed while others were indifferent as they realised it didn't matter too much.

Groups 1,3 and 5 belonged to the Earthborn house, while the last remaining groups 7, 8 and 9 belonged to the Graylash family.

"Now that all introductions are complete, it's time to meet your Head generals in person. Any problems, concerns you want to raise you need to talk to these people. They will help you carve your future." Oscar said, as he left the stage.

Soon, an announcer was being heard coming from the stage, and lights started to flicker in all sorts of directions as if a real concert was about to begin.

"First introducing your head general of the first family from the Earthborn group. Samantha Reeves!" The announcement said.

Coming out to the stage Samantha waved at the crowd below. She stomped with her feet along the way, and pieces of earth were lifted to the ground. Moving her hands she joined the pieces of earth to create a large dragon like sculpture. It seemed so real and so alive. Soon after she started to swirl it around her body and when her little show was done, she dropped it to the floor.

Cheers from the students came out again, and those from the first group were especially pleased.

"Did you see how skilful she was using her earth ability?"

"Yeah, she could carve and control the earth like it was a real dragon, it didn't even look to have any cracks in it or anything. How much control does she have?" The students were amazed.

This continued with each general of those in charge of the Earthborn group coming out, and each time they would display their powers in an amazing way.

Next, were the Graylash family, and they seemed to have done the same as well.

"Do we have to do something flashy?" Quinn asked, showboating wasn't really in his nature.

"I thought with you being closer to their age you would understand more." Helen replied. "They need to be inspired and amazed. What better way to make them listen, by showing what hard work and dedication can lead to. It's also a way to show our groups power. Just think, what would you have wanted to see when you were at school." She said, and soon her name had been called up as well.

Helen, seemingly walking on to stage as confident as ever, then raised her hands and at the same time, several plants had risen from the ground in place. The camera then revealed from above, that the plants had made a special love heart, while all the plants were different colours. To finish it off, she brought all the plants together, raising up a gigantic one behind her that looked like a serpent with a giant pink rose head.

"Ahhh!" Girls started screaming. "It's Helen from Daisy, isn't she amazing!"

The next name that was to be called to the stage was Peter, and as he walked over with his hands in his pocket. He stared at them all for a while, and the crowd had gone silent.

In a way, this act in itself was quite impressive, considering he was able to silence such a large number of people.

Finally, he started to do something, as he raised a single arm in the air.

'Maybe I can get an idea of Peter?' Quinn thought, but that idea was quickly chucked out of the window.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 958: A speech

Seeing Peter stand there giving a fierce look at the crowd, the students were wondering just what feat or show he would put on for the rest of them and Quinn was as well.

'I guess he would show his impressive transformation ability and start selecting students from the crowds. Although then the other heads would know that was something he could do, but Nathan should know his ability already based on what happened last time.' Quinn thought.

Nathan already knew of Peter's ability to transform into others, because he had once been caught being disguised as a student that was supposedly dead but when that dead student was found to be very much alive, Peter had a difficult time after that.

However, what they had also witnessed was his incredible healing abilities. Which was why back then Nathan, Duke and Truedream thought they had witnessed a first of its kind. A human that could hold two abilities or more.

For they had even given Peter the Earth ability book to learn and had seen him display some of those skills as well.

There were many theories of how this was possible, perhaps Pure had successfully created a unique body, Peter could have had a unique body himself or it could have been an ability like that of Vorden at the time.

'We may never find out now.' Nathan thought. "You have reached a position far too high, whereas previously you could have been forced to share your secrets, and your Faction sent a clear message yesterday, including you. You are ready to fight back at any time.'

Finally, Peter seemed to be doing something as he held one of his hands up in the air, and soon he grabbed it with the other. Within seconds, a cracking sound was heard, and his arm had gone limp, flopping about.

His facial expression never changed, even though he was now standing there with a broken arm, one he had broken himself.

Some of the students couldn't look at the flapping arm any more, imagining the pain it had to have caused and were forced to look away.

"Does this guy feel no pain? I mean could you break your own arm like that?"

"He's crazy, can't you see it in his eyes!? I knew something like this was going to happen when he stepped on the stage."

In mere seconds though, the arm started to heal in front of everyone and was good as new. They had just witnessed a healing speed that seemed impossible in front of their very eyes.

"Now, for my next display." Peter said, positioning his hand into the form of a karate chop.

'Is he going to cut off his hand?' Quinn thought, as he imagined the horror. "Peter stop." Quinn shouted. It was heard from those on the stage. But it was too far for any of the students to hear.

Not performing his second half of the trick, Peter started to walk off the stage and a round of applause slowly started.

Through his strange actions he had won the students over and they were quite impressed.

Sach, one of the Head Generals of Earthborn, looked at his fingers for a few seconds, and could remember the tight grip around them. 'He doesn't just have super healing abilities, was he wearing beast gear underneath his clothes?'

Although that night, it didn't look like anyone was wearing any beast gear, in his head it was the only thing that made sense.

Finally, the last announcement was ready to be made, and Quinn knew it was his turn to do something. He was hoping for some inspiration from Peter's act, but that didn't inspire him at all.

"Please welcome your Head General of the second group. Hardy Lynch!" The announcer said.

Hearing this name, the students tossed and turned their heads, to see if anyone in the crowd knew who they were. Although Peter hardly had any fame, there were a few that had seen him in the inter-base military tournament. Everyone they had seen so far at least one person had heard of their name, but for this person, it wasn't the case at all.

They thought maybe when they saw him, but when they saw him walk onto the stage, they were even more dumbfounded about who this person was.

The students had done research into the Cursed faction. There was some public information available and they knew that there were some faction leaders that had joined the Cursed, even those from the Bree family that had gone over to the Cursed side. They had fame and had made a name for themselves. So they were struggling to think why this person would be selected.

While the students seemed to not care for who this person was, they started talking amongst each other. It was the last thing before the ceremony was to end, and they

were excited to see their rooms and more, and since the last person didn't seem to be anyone of great importance the chatting had started.

However, the generals and sergeants that were all on stage were keeping a very close eye on him. After seeing what this person could do. Even the Graylash family were concerned after all, any human could become a possible threat in the future.

'Show us what you're going to do?' Innu thought. 'Are you going to get them all to shut their mouths, to stop speaking like you did with us.'

Looking at the students, Quinn could see that not all of them were chatting with their new friends they had made. Not all of them looked confident, some seemed frightened, nervous of their new school and Quinn had even spotted Sil out there amongst them. These students reminded him of how he had felt.

Helen's words played through his head. 'Think what you would have liked to have seen when you were younger.' With that, a smile spread across his face and he knew what 'He' would have wanted to see back then.

"School is a life changing place. At such a young age your actions now decide your future, but you are only young. How are you meant to know that now is the most crucial time of your lives, or how are you meant to know what you want to do when you are older?

"Your goals, your friends and the people around you will change as you grow up. These are things that you can change and there might be some things you can't change. However, when I was in your position, standing where you were today, I was a level one student who had no ability. And now I am where I am today.

"I hope you all can see that if someone like me can do it, then all of you can as well, and I will be here to make that possible."

As Quinn started to speak, the crowd got quiet listening to his words. His voice was being projected by special equipment so everyone out on the field could hear.

"A speech, a speech talking about how weak he was?" The students were disappointed to say the least.

"Does he not have any powers, or anything that he can show, is that why he wanted to talk about how weak he was."

"Maybe all the other generals showed him up so he felt like he couldn't show his powers."

Of course Quinn could have displayed his powers, he could have even shown his Shadow powers and claimed he was a student of the Cursed leader, Quinn. However, Quinn wanted to show that people in high positions of power shouldn't just have strong abilities.

He wanted to put hope in those that didn't have a strong ability. Of course, after the students had been told all their lives that their abilities matter and the stronger ones were important it would be hard to change this mindset.

Quinn didn't mind all the words that were being spoken about him, it was his goal to change their mind.

Soon though, the sound of loud clapping could be heard. Single claps coming from one person, and it was coming from the side.

"That was a great speech..Whooo! Go on, best performance yet I would say compared to all these guys that just wanted to show off. That's a real teacher right there!" Peter shouted loud and clear to everyone.

Although Peter was doing this in support of Quinn, he also did it because he was genuinely touched by Quinn's words. Back then, he too was frightened, nervous and felt like a path had already been predetermined for him, it felt like Quinn was speaking to him.

Soon after, Helen was seen clapping as well, and the students slowly began to clap, but it wasn't an applaud but rather just out of habit.

'Quinn I wonder if you really can do what you say. It might be a lot harder than you think.' Oscar thought looking at the students' disgruntled faces.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 959: Strongest Teacher

After introductions were complete, students were to return to their dorms to find out where they would be staying and it was a chance for a lot of them to communicate with each other and get to know everyone better.

In the meantime, Quinn was getting a briefing from Nathan, about what classes he would be teaching and when his schedule would be. He was given all of this information on a tablet screen he could access.

"It's pretty rare for a head general to also be a teacher, but Oscar has said that if you need to attend to any duties outside, not just for you but the rest of your Faction, just to inform us as soon as possible and we'll find a replacement." Nathan finished explaining.

Looking at the schedule, Quinn noticed a couple of things. He had been put as a Homeroom teacher, so he had his own class that he had to look after, on top of that he was allowed to teach one subject of his choice, and before arriving he had chosen to teach the beast weapon class.

Having attended the class in the past himself, and Leo being the one who had taught it, Quinn thought he could follow in his footsteps quite well. Due to him learning Qi, he realised teaching the process on how to activate a beast weapon was quite simple, and he could also teach things like hand to hand combat when one wouldn't have a weapon.

Looking at the list of students Quinn had, he noticed a couple of things. The first was the fact that Sil and Chucky were in his class as requested. This was good because although Quinn wanted Sil to stop relying on him, it was important to take small steps.

With someone as strong and unstable as Sil at times, it would also be good to keep an eye on the person, and he was sure Chucky wouldn't be enough to do that.

The other thing that stood out though, was the students' ability levels. Although the other students weren't able to see their power levels right off the bat, Quinn did have a list of information that had been given from their previous school.

The main shock was, apart from Sil and Chucky, there were no ability level users in his class above that of level three. There were even some level ones, and even a student with no ability at all.

'Did they stop handing out the earth books? Or did the student simply reject the offer?' Quinn thought. However, his main concern was with the amount of low levels in his class. Back when he attended military school, there was quite an even spread in all of the classes.

There were times when classes would have events against each other, and this would make it unfair. 'Is it a coincidence? It can't be?' Quinn thought.

At the same time, there was another person questioning Oscar's very decision. Standing by his desks was his personal assistant, Jane. Her old position was testing all the new students' power levels and she had even done so with Quinn.

She too had noticed that Oscar had done something with his class and had asked him the very same question.

"Don't you think it will be interesting?" Oscar replied. "Quinn who was once a level one and Peter, both of them weak, had gained a sudden strength out of nowhere somehow. So what do you think would happen if we put him in a class full of low level ability students.

"Do you think Quinn would be able to stand by and do nothing while the students in front of him are struggling with this world? We may even find out their secret." Oscar said, leaning back in his chair.

It took the entire day for students to have a tour around the school, being shown their living quarters and where every place was meant to be. Luckily, if they couldn't remember everything, their watches also acted as a 3D holographic map that would pinpoint where they were and would tell them where to go if needed.

After a full day of touring, it meant the next day it was time for the lessons to begin. Quinn had made way to his homeroom class which was labeled as 2A. As the head general he was technically in charge of all the classes labeled with a two at the front, but he was also the assigned homeroom teacher for 2A.

Looking at the door, he could see the digital number staring back at him 2A, and for the first time, he would be teaching. For some reason it felt a little more nerve racking than compared to some dangers he would face.

Opening up the door, the first thing Quinn could see in front of him was a levitating bucket of water, and in an instant it was chucked towards him. However, the water did nothing as it was splashed across the floor, and Quinn could be seen standing and holding the bucket.

'I guess the students have decided to play a little prank on me? I guess I can forgive them since it is the first day and all.' Quinn thought as he placed the bucket on the front of his desk.

Some of the kids that were behind the prank were quite amazed, they had done that trick with their old teacher but he would be hit nearly every single time, but they didn't even see Quinn move and he was suddenly holding the bucket.

"Did you see what happened?" Venus asked.

"No, but maybe it has something to do with his ability that he didn't show." Swin replied.

Swin, and Venus were two boys who saw themselves as the trouble makers of the class. Unlike before where students were sent to different campuses so they wouldn't know each other, now that everyone was part of the same gigantic school there was more of a chance that one would know their classmates.

This was true for both Swin and Venus. Of the two boys, one with long hair covering the front of his eyes, one would think he couldn't see through them, which was Swin. While the other, who had his hairline so far back, he might have not had any hair to begin with.

Quinn started with the first task which was to take the attendance from the register list, making sure everyone was present in class. There were roughly fifty students in the class, and he noticed while calling their names the students were awfully chatty and at the same time weren't really paying any attention.

'This is nothing like when I attended?' Quinn thought. 'Everyone was so strict and worried about what the other stronger students would do.'

Thinking about it, Quinn wondered if this had something to do with their behaviour.

'It would make sense.' Vincent said. 'Something similar has happened like this before when I was a leader. I believe this is a similar effect of what happens to some vampires in the pooling area. They don't care about school, or rankings anymore because they are so far down the ladder. They have no hopes of ever climbing it. So they resort to pranks and messing around as they see no hope in their future.'

Although Quinn thought what Vincent said made sense, he also thought they all couldn't have thought this way, or possibly some of them just needed a little push.

'Would I have felt the same way if I had never opened that book?' Quinn wondered.

At that moment, a pen was sent flying towards Quinn, as he was looking down at his class register list.

Out of instinct, as the attack moved towards him, he stopped it with two of his fingers holding it in place.

"Okay, so we're done with the register here, now who's pen does this belong to so I can return it to them?" Quinn asked with a short smile.

The other students, for some reason, could feel something sinister coming behind this smile, and Swin, who was sitting next to Venus, had pulled away, making it obvious who it was.

"Now, before I send you off to your next lessons, here are a few things some of you need to do." Quinn said. "You have to select what classes you would like to attend, and I just want to let everyone know that I will be the one teaching the beast weapons class."

Some students were surprised by this, as they thought someone like Hardy would never teach a combat class.

"Just to show some of you what I can do." Quinn said, as he hurled the pen back towards Venus.

It skimmed past his hair, and continued going forward until it hit the wall and was left there stuck in place.

The other students started to rub their eyes, as this looked like something that wasn't possible, but they could see the pen there, stuck in the wall.

"I hope I can see some of you there." Quinn said.

The introduction class continued for a while, and both Venus and Swin looked at each other.

"Hey, maybe we should give that beast lesson thing a try." Swin said.

'I think I might have this teacher thing down.' Quinn thought with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 960: No ability, take mine

After the incident with the pen, there were less disturbances and Quinn was allowed to go through and explain everything that was needed. He hated to admit it, but sometimes force, or a show of strength, was one of the best deterrents. At least it was for the way things were now.

Quinn went through the process of how school life would be for them, and the different classes they could attend. Explaining the benefits of each one and answering any questions the students had. Soon after, the students were to select what classes they would like to attend and if their request was accepted, then their schedule that was linked to their watch would automatically update.

After everyone had selected their classes based on the information Quinn had given, the sound for the morning class had gone off, and students were now free to head to their next lesson.

"Before you all leave, can I speak to Shiro please for a little bit." Quinn asked, and the other students soon left.

However, as they walked past their desk there were two students who had stopped to look at Quinn and they had stars in their eyes.

"Mr. Hardy!" Swin called out. "That thing you did with the pen was amazing. Can we do something like that as well if we attend your class?"

"Don't be stupid Swin, that was obviously an ability." Venus argued. "So do you mind telling us what your ability is? You hid it on the first day because you didn't want to show off right."

Quinn honestly didn't know how to deal with this. The two kids were leaning over his desk and couldn't stop staring at him expecting some grand answer. The truth was, even if they attended his beast weapons class, those kids probably couldn't do something like that.

He could do so just because of his strange vampiric strength.

"If you want to learn something like that, you will have to put in a lot of hard work." Quinn said with a serious face and his arms crossed, trying to give an impression of a teacher.

"That's amazing!" Venus replied as the two of them started to head towards the exit. "We'll see you at the beast weapons class then." They called out and waved goodbye.

'I guess inspiring some of them might be easier than I thought.' Quinn said, quite happy based on the reaction of the two students.

Once all the students had left though, Shiro was left behind. Shiro was a boy who had brown hair that stuck upwards with three large spikes, but from Quinn's first impression he didn't seem like a trouble maker.

While in class, he didn't speak to anyone and he seemed to be diligently taking notes, but there was a reason why Quinn had called him off. Sitting down so the two of them were more comfortable, Quinn decided to throw the question out there.

"There's no need to be worried, you're not in trouble or anything." Quinn said, noticing Shiro's nervousness over having been asked to stay behind. "I was just a little curious. It's actually rarer to have someone like you in the class than it is to have an original. I was wondering, didn't the military offer you the standard earth book? Your file says you have no ability."

Shiro, was the one student in Quinn's class that had no ability, just like himself back then.

"I rejected their offer." Shiro replied politely.

"You don't have to tell me, but may I ask why?" Quinn asked. There was silence for a few seconds, so Quinn decided to push it a bit further. "The reason I'm asking is because I was the same as you. Throughout my whole school life I didn't have an ability, and it was only midway through the military that I gained mine." Quinn led but it was almost the truth.

It seemed like Quinn's little push had worked, since Shiro had answered.

"I need a better ability than that if I want to get somewhere." Said Shiro. "Not to offend you in the Cursed faction, but I was hoping I could prove my way somehow so I could get the ability of the Graylash family."

Now it made sense why he would reject the ability, but at this age, it was almost impossible to prove one's worth without having an ability in the first place. Without connections or showing promise there would be no way for the Graylash family to recruit him.

If he had an ability, at least he could join one of the factions belonging to the Graylash family, and as a reward they might award his next of Kin with the ability. However, sadly it was unlikely that Shiro would ever get such an ability.

"I think I know the answer, but may I ask why?" Quinn said.

"Because, I need to become strong, and their ability is the strongest out there." Shiro replied.

Speaking to the boy, and seeing the determination in his eyes. It reminded Quinn a lot like himself at his age.

"Alright, you're free to go, but before you do I just want to tell you something. Maybe there are other abilities out there that are stronger than the Graylash ability, so if you can't get that far. Don't give up." Quinn said.

From initial impressions, the boy was a good candidate to attempt to teach the Shadow ability to. However, Quinn wasn't just going to teach him because he could. Quinn wanted someone who wished to join the Cursed group.

Right now, Shiro wasn't that person, but it didn't mean he would never be.

At the moment, Quinn had no lessons, and he was struggling with what to do with his spare time. So he decided to meditate and focus on increasing his Qi. Soon though, time started to pass by quickly and the bell went off once again, signalling it was time for lunch.

The food was provided by that of the school, but Quinn couldn't eat the food anyway. The only reason why he was actually heading to the canteen was to meet up with the others as they had agreed.

The teachers and students canteen were separated, so Quinn wouldn't be able to see how Sil was doing. But based on his class, all he had seen Sil do during Homeroom class was place his head on the desk and stay in the same position.

When entering the canteen, Quinn could see that Fex, Peter and Helen were sitting together, so he decided to go ahead and join them on the round table.

"Don't tell me you're not eating as well." Helen said, as she saw Quinn sitting down with no tray of food. "Are all the boys on a diet these days? It's going to make me feel shy if I'm the only one eating." She said.

Each of the boys didn't really know how to answer that, and Quinn tried to change the topic straight away.

"So, how has your first lesson been?" Quinn asked.

"The kids have been great with me, although they asked far too many questions about the faction." Helen replied, as she carefully ate her food making sure none of it would spill as to embarrass herself.

'I guess even she has her cute side.' Quinn thought.

"I didn't teach any lessons yet." Peter replied. "I think they said I was just going to be an assistant anyway, which means I will just stand at the back unless someone needs me."

In a way, the others thought it was a good thing that Peter wasn't the lead teacher. They hadn't been keeping an eye on him when he taught the Blade kids, but just assumed he had been doing well since none of them complained. However, after

witnessing his performance from earlier, they were a little frightened as to what he would do.

"I had my class." Fex said. "And it was actually quite interesting. It seems like a lot of girls had signed up, and well they just kept asking me to personally teach them so many things." Fex said, as he pushed his hair back and had a cheeky smile on his face.

"Oh I see, so you're taking advantage of these young girls just because you're quite the looker." Said Helen.

At this moment, Fex's face had gone bright red. He thought he was being quite sly, but he wasn't. Everyone knew he was bragging in his own way, but just didn't call him out on it, while Helen did.

"Hey, you have to remember, they're actually nearly the same age as me, and I'm not doing anything." Fex replied.

"Well, if you didn't think you were doing anything wrong you wouldn't have gotten so defensive just now, would you?" Helen replied again, and Fex had nothing to reply back to that.

After that, the group continued to talk and there was a relatively nice atmosphere between them all. For once, Quinn imagined his life as it was currently. Maybe being a teacher wasn't so bad of a choice for him.

If there was no war going on, if there were no abilities and he had a better school life, perhaps this would have been a career choice for him.

Quinn had one more registration to do with his homeroom class and soon after, he would teach his beast weapons class in the afternoon. Upon returning to his classroom, he could see his students were there waiting.

But some of the students were gathered around a few others, and when Quinn had entered they quickly left.

"What happened!" Quinn asked.

As he could see, several of his students were beaten and bruised, including the likes of Shiro, Venus and Swin.

"Oh this, don't worry too much about it, teach." Swin said, holding his eye, and speaking through his busted up lip. "Just kids being kids. We just got into an argument with one of the other classes, but don't worry about it."

Seeing them like this, had brought a wave of emotions and memories crashing down for Quinn.

"Tell me, who did this to you now." Quinn said, unable to control his anger and without realising it, his eyes were glowing red as he gave this command.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 961: The caring teacher

Quinn was so consumed with rage as the bad memories started to surface in his mind again, that he was completely unaware, that when he had asked a question to one of his own students, he had used the influence skill on him.

Being only a young student with hardly any mental strength, there was almost no resistance at all, as Swin's eyes appeared to hollow out and he answered.

"The students from class 3B, it was a group of six of them." Swin answered and soon his eyes regained colour once again.

'Quinn!' Vincent snapped at him in his mind.

Coming to, Quinn realised what had happened, it wasn't the first time his influence skill had leaked out when his emotions were out of control. It was almost as if his body was more in charge than his mind was when that happened.

"Oh, sorry about that." Quinn quickly apologised, but the students in the room were scared into silence. To a lot of them, their new teacher seemed calm, relaxed, and quite friendly. It was the first time they had seen him be so serious and many of the students had seen the red hue in his eyes.

There was no way of ignoring what had already happened unless Quinn wanted to mind wipe the students, but this was no longer an option for him because of what happened with Cia. He thought it would be best to apologise and have the others think it was just an ability of his.

"I will speak to their teacher, but before I do, I need to know if there was anything you guys did to set them off. You don't have to tell me now, you can tell me after class." Quinn said, as he realised the whole class was focused on the current situation.

Some of them felt like even if they told the teacher, it wouldn't change anything. In the past, they had told the teachers of their old schools multiple times and still nothing ever was done about it. The kids looked at each other and didn't say much.

That was until a female student with glasses sitting near the front called out.

"They went to the same school as Swin and Venus." She said, "I saw what happened, they were asking him to do something. I think maybe they tried to get them to help with a prank on one of the teachers, but they refused, and when they did, they started to attack, and that's when the boys from our class got involved as well."

Quinn looked at their battered and bruised bodies, and decided to give a quick call to one of his sergeants. A few moments later, Hayley was in the classroom dealing with each of their wounds.

"If you guys ever have anything like this again, you can come to the doctor's office straight away." Hayley said as she started to heal Swin's eye that looked the worst.

When the healing was complete, Quinn had approached Hayley and he had a bit of surprising news for her.

"I need you to teach the class for a little while, there's just a few things I need to sort out." Quinn said, and was already heading out the room leaving the students with Hayley.

Seeing Quinn leave the room and not in the best of moods, all the student's didn't know what he was planning to do. They had never had a teacher act like this before when one of them was hurt.

"Sergeant Hayley, what is General Hardy planning to do?" Venus asked, and the other students were interested to know the answer as well.

Thinking about the question that had been asked, Hayley thought back to the first meeting. She didn't know who exactly this person was but based on his actions back then, he didn't leave to do something small.

"I'm not sure, but you can let the adults worry about it, okay?" She said with a warm reassuring smile.

"I hope he doesn't get in trouble." Swin said. "I kinda like him."

It didn't take long for Quinn to find the room he was looking for, and without any sort of announcement whatsoever, Quinn had entered classroom 3B. The doors were opened and as he entered, he could see the homeroom teacher was in the middle of her lesson.

When she saw who it was she quickly stood tall and straight and gave a salute.

"Head General Hardy, is there anything I can do for you? If you need to contact any of the upper staff I'm sure I can contact the other general for you." She said.

Since the classroom started with the number three, it meant the classroom was under the control of the general in charge of group three, which was one of the Earthborn Generals who Quinn had already had a falling out with, but he wasn't thinking about this at the time.

Walking forward almost ignoring the teacher, Quinn stood by her desk and looked at all the students.

"I am Head General Hardy of the Second group, and also homeroom teacher of class 2A. In my class today, a few of my students returned to me beaten and bruised and I have found out that it was due to some students from this classroom.

"Now, those responsible, will they please come forward." Quinn requested in a deadly serious tone.

However, his request seemed to fall upon death ears, as no one replied and the students looked at Quinn like he was a mad man.

"General Hardy." The teacher called out to him softly. "I understand that this is quite the problem, but it's in the middle of class, was there really a reason for it to be interrupted for this? If you want, I can ask my students if they saw who was responsible and deal with them myself."

The teacher was already annoyed due to how Quinn had basically ignored her and taken over her class, and now he was still interrupting her. There were certain procedures that needed to be followed, and she didn't think it was right for another general to come in and interrupt her class like that.

'Of course they wouldn't just volunteer to come forward.'

Not getting the answer Quinn wanted, he made a fist and slammed it on the desk, which immediately crumbled beneath him.

The teacher immediately took a step back and almost panicked.

'Damn, that's right, I heard these people from the Cursed faction are crazy, I need to get some help.' She thought.

Although Quinn could have used his influence skill to find out who was responsible, even if he did, what could he do? These were still students, and Quinn wasn't exactly going to beat them to a pulp, that wouldn't solve the problem.

"This is a warning, I will not tolerate those who choose to abuse their power. Fights will break out every now and then, but just because someone doesn't want to do what you want, or you try to force them to do something and they refuse...these acts are unforgivable."

As Quinn had finished giving his talk, the door was opened once again and this time, Head General Innu had entered the room, and immediately saw Hardy in front of him.

"What are you doing here? This is not part of your group?" Innu asked.

Not saying anything, Quinn started to walk towards Innu

"Don't worry, I'm just leaving." Quinn said.

Innu wanted to say something but when the two got close, he quickly moved out of his way. This time he wasn't forced to but felt like if he didn't, he would have been again.

As soon as Quinn was out of the room, Innu approached the teacher to find out what exactly happened, while in the class, the group of six students who were responsible were sitting next to each other towards the back.

"Hey what the hell, could you believe what they told their teacher? Why would they do that?"

"I don't know, but even if they did do that I thought it was a surprise that the General himself would come in, why does he care about them?"

"You know what we have to do right? We just have to make sure those guys never say something about this again."

"But what happens if the Head General finds out, what if they tell him again? We could be in serious trouble."

"Don't you know, the ones that are responsible for our punishment will be our Head General, and with my connection and family sponsoring all his military projects, we will just get a slap on the wrist. Besides, who really cares about those low levels, they aren't ever going to help us in the war against the Dalki. They need to know their place."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 962: Reliving the past

On his way back to his class, Quinn's anger had calmed down a bit. However, his main worry was he wasn't quite sure about what he had just done. He wondered if it would even act as a deterrent for the students to stop fighting.

He knew from experience that even if a teacher gave a telling off to the students directly, they would just carry on doing the same thing again and again. As long as there was no real punishment for those students, then this would just carry on happening.

The school would never expel the students as long as they had an ability that was deemed needed.

'Should I talk to Oscar about it? But could he even do something? What would be the best course of action?' Quinn wondered and had finally entered his classroom once again.

Hayley had done quite a good job taking over, as she stood in front of the class. Everyone seemed to be keenly listening in on her, and he wanted her to continue while he was trying to think of something, but as soon as he entered, all the students' eyes were on him and they were far too distracted.

So instead, Quinn walked to the front.

"Thank you Hayley, for covering for me," Quinn said and turned to the students. "I just wanted to talk to you all. What happened today with your fellow classmates is not okay. Maybe you have seen it happen many times before, but why should people get hurt just because they have been put in an unfavourable position.

"If there are any incidents like today, or if any of you get hurt, I want you to tell me. If you can't confide in me, then confide in Hayley here. She might be good at healing the wounds on the outside, but we can't see the wounds on the inside."

There was silence after Quinn's speech from the students, as they didn't really know what or how to reply.

'Hey, you're getting a bit cheesy with your speeches Quinn, what do you want them to say?' Vincent said, trying to tease him a little, but knew Quinn meant well with his words.

Luckily, the students didn't have to react to what had just been said, because the bell had gone off, and it was time for their final lesson of the day. For Quinn as well, it was time for him to go ahead and teach his beast weapon class.

Some students from his class, couldn't help but talk about how strange Quinn was acting and how strange he was as well. It was weird because it seemed like he was

even more caring about certain things than his parents. The sad truth was, this wasn't unusual either.

The kids' parents knew that even if their child were getting abused, they were unable to do anything about it. Usually the ones that did the bullying, wasn't due to lack of self confidence, it was the opposite, they were overconfident and knew they could get away with it.

Usually, this also stemmed from their parents that acted the same way.

Taking a shortcut, Quinn decided to run ahead, out of sight to where the beast weapons class would take place. Seeing the large temple-like building, Quinn could tell it was modelled after the one that Leo had taught in as well.

Only this building was around four times the size. After all, it had to accommodate more students. The good news was that there were also several teachers. For example, Quinn wasn't the only one that would be teaching the beast weapons class. He was only to teach it to the students that were in the Cursed house.

He entered the large white room, which gave off the illusion it was bigger than it seemed, and the wall was filled with all kinds of beast weapons. Looking at them all, Quinn used his inspect skill and he could see the stats of every single item in the room.

"This really does bring back memories, it would have been a lot easier if my inspect skill was this strong back then as well." Quinn thought, rather than going around and inspecting every single weapon.

Before the students arrived, Quinn decided to shadow equip his gauntlets and boots onto the rest of his body. So he looked more suitable to at least be teaching the class and soon, the students started to pour into the room.

"As you enter the room, could you please select a space and don't let anyone get within a meter of you." Quinn instructed. "This will be your space and remember it well."

Eventually, the room started to fill up and it looked like there were over a hundred and fifty students inside. There would have been more, but Quinn had seen some students step into the room and when they saw who was teaching quickly left as if they were disappointed.

"Ah, it's taught by him, maybe I should go to the elemental class instead." Some students spoke.

Students were free to go between classes for the first few weeks anyway, as they decided what they wanted to excel in, so Quinn didn't really mind it.

What pleased him the most though, was the students from his very own class, had come right to the front where Quinn could see them. Venus and Swine were both

looking at him carefully and staring at the equipment on his body. What was a surprise for Quinn, was that Shiro had entered as well, and was standing beside them.

'Oh, I thought since he wanted to be in the Graylash family he would have joined the elemental class, but I guess since he doesn't have an ability there isn't much he can do.' Quinn thought.

"General Hardy, what level are those gauntlets on your arms?!" Swin asked. "I've never seen gauntlets so bright red before."

Quinn looked at them and realised he still had the emperor tier gauntlets on him. Although they had gathered some legendary tier crystals, they weren't the right crystals to produce an ideal weapon for himself.

"I guess they do need an upgrade at some point, there at the emperor tier level." Quinn replied.

Hearing these words, Swin placed his hand on his chest and grabbed Venus before he fell.

"Emperor tier! Does that mean you've fought against some emperor tier beasts before?" Venus asked.

Quinn didn't mean to blurt out the first part, but the cat was out of the bag now about his weapons, so he just went ahead and nodded.

Of course, not all the students were as excited about this. If someone was capable of killing an emperor tier beast, they would have at least been known, however Hardy wasn't. So they could only assume he was given those weapons, lying about them, or had fought with his faction to obtain them.

Students were shaking their heads, clearly regretting the choice they had made.

Now that all the students were ready, Quinn decided to start the lesson. He first went into explaining the different tiers there were and how some beast weapons had active abilities. Those that didn't would still need to be activated to gain a stat boost from the items themselves however.

He briefly went over all of this information and soon gave a display. Touching the ground made of concrete with his fingertips, he made a fist. With just his strength alone and no abilities, he grabbed the concrete, leaving markings on the floor, making a ball.

This small demonstration alone was able to get quite a few of the kids pumped up and ready to try things themselves.

In similar fashion to Leo. He had done the same thing as him. Saying to all the students that they were free to try all the weapons on the wall, to find which one

suit them. The students quickly began to take weapons down from the wall and try them at will.

Walking around the room, Quinn kept a keen eye on a lot of them, and even at one point a stray whip looked like it was about to hit another. The student tried to pull it back but Quinn had caught it in time, before it had hit another.

"Woah, calm down a little there, make sure you know your surroundings. Think about it, if this was a fight you wouldn't want to be hurting your own allies now, would you?" Quinn said.

The student apologised and went ahead to select another weapon. That's when Quinn noticed that there was one student who hadn't selected any weapons at all, and standing on his own, it was Shiro.

"Too much choice?" Quinn asked.

"I thought it would be best to pick a weapon that would go well with an ability, but since I don't have an ability..." Shiro stopped there.

"Well, you can always change your weapon, you know? Or you could do something similar to me." Quinn said. "You know, one of the reasons I selected just gauntlets wasn't because I was good at fighting with my fists. It was because even with them, if I wanted to I could grab and use another weapon."

Back then though, Quinn had mainly selected it due to it giving his bloodskills a boost, so he understood why Shiro was struggling. The more he started to remember about the past, the more Quinn was thankful for having the system.

"Teacher, I remember what you said before." Shiro replied. "About how you used to be a level one with no ability."

Shiro grabbed his arm, like it was in pain, and Quinn remembered he had a marking there before Hayley had healed it. Based on what the girl was saying, it was only Venus and Swine that got involved with the other classmates. So it meant Shiro was one of the ones from his class that tried to help.

"I wanted to ask, did you ever get bullied?"

"Did I ever get bullied?" Quinn chuckled. "Of course I did. But back then there wasn't anyone that would stick up for me. At least not at the beginning, but I found some people that helped me along the way, and I really meant what I said, I will help you as well."

Shiro's hand was shaking slightly, as if he was holding back something. He wanted to speak but couldn't and he soon ran off and went to grab one of the weapons off from the wall.

'That kid Quinn, reminds me a lot of you.' Vincent said.

"I know, and that's a problem."

Outside, not too far from the beast weapons class, a group of six students were patiently waiting.

"Are you sure they are in here?" One of them asked.

"Trust me, I have my connections," They said. Swim and Venus had signed up for the beast weapons class. Once this class is over it's the end of the day, and this is the only path someone can take from the beast class to head back to the dorms. We need to make sure they learn to listen, so they never ever think about telling the teacher again."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 963: A.d.u.l.ts are liars!

Although Quinn was a little worried about Shiro, he seemed to be doing better after their small talk. He tried out a few of the weapons as intended but it still didn't seem like he found something that he was used to yet.

It was either that, or Shiro was still holding out to learn the Graylash ability.

'Shiro, if you dived in when you saw your classmates were in trouble, you're going to do the same thing again. As sad as this is, without any strength or an ability it might be impossible to help them.' Quinn thought. 'Maybe there is something I can teach him which makes it so he doesn't have to learn an ability.'

'Quinn are you thinking of teaching the kid Qi, you know what will happen if you do that right?' Vincent questioned him.

'I know, the military are already interested in it, since Pure mentioned it, but I was debating whether it was something I should attempt to teach others anyway. Leo seems to also have a more open mind about it, and he's started to teach those on the Cursed ship while continuing his search.' Quinn replied.

If Quinn was going to open up Qi to the whole world, then he at least wanted those in his group to have a bit of a head start, besides Qi was a strong skill to use against the vampires, and with Quinn being closely related to these types of beings, he thought it might be best for the Cursed faction to learn something that could potentially be used against them.

It reminded Quinn though, that it shouldn't have to be this way, people shouldn't have to get stronger or better at fighting just for a better life. In a way, he was doing that all himself so others didn't have to.

The class was finally coming to an end, and Quinn said his goodbyes to them. Everyone was pretty drained, and there looked to be a couple of students who already knew how to activate the beast weapon to use it to its full potential. None from his class though.

Quinn wondered if all the students that had been placed in the Cursed house might have been all low ranking ones. However, it didn't seem to be the case for the other classes, as those from the other classes were quite balanced based on what he was seeing. It was only his class that was full of low levels.

'It still doesn't help me know if it is just a coincidence or not.'

Everyone had left the room quite quickly, it had been a tiring day after all, and while in the room on his own, Quinn thought he would take this time to perhaps figure out a few things. Thinking about Qi, he was trying to figure out the third stage of Qi.

The reason for this was because it might be Paul's answer to finding a cure as well. Qi, the human life energy, and the vampire energy didn't mix well, but Quinn had figured out a way for it to power his attacks.

From what he had seen Chris do, the third stage of Qi, was taking the Qi from inside your body and using it outside. With this concept, he thought that maybe if he learnt how to do this with Qi, he could do it with the vampire energy as well.

Similar to how he was able to turn into a Bloodsucker by filling his Qi ball with red energy, maybe there was a way to extinguish all the red energy from one's body.

'It's a long shot what you're thinking Quinn.' Vincent thought. 'I don't know much about Qi, but here is one thing, Qi only slows down the vampire's healing process, it doesn't stop it. Even when using your second stage it stops until the foreign Qi energy has vanished, or been removed. The main thing is your body is now different, so there are living cells in your body constantly producing this vampire energy. Yes you might be able to get rid of it temporarily, but eventually it will come back."

Although Vincent was a much smarter man than Quinn was, at the same time, even he admitted he didn't understand everything about Qi, so Quinn thought he would give it a shot. Besides, even if it didn't work it was another weapon he had in his arsenal.

Meanwhile, both Venus and Swin were happily walking back from their class together. They had stayed a little bit behind because they wanted to ask their teacher a few more questions, but it looked like he had a lot on his mind so they decided to leave it for another day for now.

Still, they were excited and couldn't stop talking about all the weapons they had both tried.

"I liked the spear the best, it really felt like I had a really long arm." Venus said, as he thrusted forward, imagining a spear in his hand.

"I wanted to try on some armour as well, but I guess that will be another class." Swin said.

"Maybe we can help you practice." A voice from behind was heard, and soon they felt their heads being pulled under one's arm by a few people, and being dragged along to a different location.

"Erlen, your, your, you're here." Venus stuttered.

"Your, your, your', shut the hell up Venus!" Erlen said as he chucked Venus from under his arm, across the floor. Soon after, Swin was chucked on the floor by his side as well.

As the two boys looked around, they could see that they had been dragged between two large buildings, between the beast weapons class, and the dormitory. There was a pathway with a glass roof over them that allowed them to see the orange sky created from the sunset, while they walked to their dorms.

With it being the end of the day, there weren't many students left that would walk this way, and there were only the students from the beast weapons class that would come this way to head to their dorms, which meant, it was unlikely they would be seen.

Looking up, Erlen's face had a creepy smile. He had black rough spiked hair, and the five behind him were his usual followers he always had throughout school.

"You of all people Venus, I never expected that you would tell the teacher about what happened. Doesn't your dad work for my company? That's right, a poor worker who didn't have a great ability, but worked hard to eventually give his son a level two telekinesis ability."

"We didn't say anything!" Swin objected.

"Hey, shut up! Even if your parents don't work for my company, we have connections with those above. I can find out where your family works too and make life hell for them." Erlen stated.

That immediately got Swin to shut up. He didn't mind taking beatings himself, but if it was his family. He didn't want them to get hurt or their life to be any worse.

"Even if you didn't tell the teacher, then you should have told him that it was a lie. Told him that what they said wasn't true or it was an accident. Now we are just going to have to make it so you never tell the others again. I believe I only punched one of your eyes last time, let's make that two this time."

Erlen said, as he made a fist and started to swing it towards Swin's face, but mid-swing a loud scream could be heard coming from the side.

"Arghhh!" A male student could be seen running towards them and a few seconds later, Erlen could feel a sharp pain in his side.

"Shiro!" Venus called out, but Shiro was too shocked to hear anything.

Usually one screaming before attacking their enemy would be a stupid thing, but Shiro had to scream, it was the only way he could go through with what he was doing. As he took a step back, a small amount of blood had gotten on his hands, and a dagger was stuck inside of Erlen.

'Did he steal that from the beast weapons class?' Venus thought.

"You, you really stabbed me, who the heck are you!" Erlen said, as he pulled the dagger out and threw it right back at Shiro, stabbing him in the shoulder. Soon the other boys had pinned him down.

Placing his hand on the wound, the area around Erlen's wound started to freeze over.

"This wound will heal." Erlen said, walking over. "But what I'm about to do to you; your whole life, and your family, that will never heal. You think you're some hero? Now I remember you from last time as well."

Shiro was struggling, trying to break free. Being powerless and knowing his classmates would be in trouble again. Shiro felt like he had to do something, but in his head even when he was stabbing Erlen he never knew what he was going to do after this.

'Maybe I deserve this after all, what the hell was I thinking. It was that stupid teacher's fault. Didn't he say he would help? That he would be there for us? Well, where the hell is he now?! Teachers, adults, they're all liars! I had to act myself!' Shiro screamed internally as he saw a frozen hand move towards him.

Once again, a projectile was seen having been thrown towards Erlen's hand and had hit it away.

"Those people, Quinn likes those people, so I can't let you hurt them." A voice said.

Turning around, annoyed at how many people were getting involved, Erlen went to look at this brave student, but it was one he didn't really recognise. It was a light brown haired boy, and standing next to him, was a plain guy that seemed almost invisible.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 964: Class of 2A

Looking at the two boys who were walking over, Erlen was wondering just who they were. He didn't recognise them at all. He thought maybe they were some of the students that had gotten beaten up the other day. He didn't recognise any of those that had helped before either but they were all pathetically weak.

However, he was a little worried that based on one kid's confidence that they might be someone from higher up or one with a strong ability, but Erlen had made note of all those that he should be careful to offend. After all, he too knew how the current world worked and didn't want to cause any trouble for the members of his family either.

'Why is the guy next to him not as confident?' Erlen thought.

Sil was trying to walk forward to stop the fight, but before he could, Chucky pulled him by the sleeve.

"Hey, I'm meant to look after you, I can't just have you going into a fight where there are six of them, we should call someone or go get a teacher." Chucky whispered to Sil.

It wasn't that Chucky was afraid of the students, after all, he was an adult that had gone on far more frightening things, such as battles with deadly beasts while being in a faction. But he was a careful person, and having to fight while protecting another he didn't know how hard it would be.

This was the first big mission he had been given by the Cursed faction and he wanted to make an impression. Although, unknown to him, Chucky wasn't selected for any particular reason, it wasn't because he was good, or strong, or had a good ability, it was due to his young looking face.

There weren't too many in the faction that would pass off as high school students.

"Chucky," Sil said for a second. "I don't like your ability." And after saying this he had his hand held out as if he was asking for something.

Reluctantly, Chucky handed Sil a round black ball from around his waist, a similar size to an egg, while keeping some for himself.

"You don't want to kill someone. If you can, avoid doing that as much as possible. Once you do, you can never go back." Sil said.

"Kill, I wasn't planning on killing him, I just wanted to make sure that he could never sleep in his dreams again without thinking about me!" Erlen shouted.

Chucky started to chuckle hearing this.

"Whoa, if you just wanted to ask him out, you didn't have to go through all this trouble, there are other ways." Chucky couldn't help himself but say.

Now in his hand, Erlen had formed two spears made of ice, and had a frown on his forehead looking at the two newcomers.

"Looks like we need to deal with some others first!" Erlen said throwing out the ice spears at both of them, soon the other students started to move as well.

The first thing Sil did was throw the black egg towards the spear and when it hit, the spear completely shattered and fell to the ground, the same happened with Chucky's throw as well, but soon the others would be upon him.

"What should we do? They came here to help us, should we help them?" Swin asked

Venus wasn't too sure, the last time people from their class got involved it ended in all of them getting beat, and the other kids now stayed clear of both Venus and Swin. They were honestly quite surprised to see Shiro come and help them again, and now two other students from the class.

"Why, why are so many people helping us?" Venus asked, wiping away his frightened tears, when he looked up, Sil was tapping them both on the shoulder, but he was looking straight past them and at Shiro on the ground.

"Those words I spoke before, they weren't aimed at him, they were aimed at you. Remember what I said." Sil spoke, and soon turned around to all those that were ganged up on him.

All six of them including Erlen had them surrounded.

"We have no choice, we have to fight!" Swin said, standing up.

However, Sil held out his hands, and a few seconds later, two of them were lifted off the ground. Putting his hands together, both of their bodies crashed into each other with such force, and flopped to the floor after. Straight after that, he lifted another one and slammed him against the glass ceiling, causing it to crack above and soon let go allowing him to drop to the floor.

Then when several ice spears came towards him, Sil held them mid-air, throwing them back and hitting them against an ice wall that Erlen had made.

"Whoa, wait what is this telekinesis ability! It must be close to level eight to be able to lift things so heavy!" Swin said, knowing full well due to him having the same ability.

"Now this is an ability I like." Sil said.

It made them wonder what those black egg balls were that they had thrown earlier, and if it was a beast weapon due to how it was able to smash the ice like that. What they didn't realise was it had something to do with Chucky's ability.

Looking around, Erlen noticed that all of his friends had passed out, he didn't even see the others get hit.

'The force from that student's power must have been strong to be able to do that!' Erlen thought. Even if he didn't want to admit it, he was a little afraid.

He had never heard, or knew of someone with such a strong telekinesis power in the school.

"Hey, look, you don't want to hurt me, you know my da-" Before Erlen could finish the sentence, he felt a strong thump at the back of his head and his eyes went white and fell to the ground.

"No one wants to know about your dad." Standing behind Erlen, Chucky could be seen holding one of the black balls in his hand.

"Where did he come from?" Venus asked.

"Yeah I didn't see him in the whole fight." Swin replied.

Chucky could hear every word the kids were saying and although he hated to admit it, as soon as the fighting started for some reason everyone's attention had gone straight to Sil, and they were completely ignoring Chucky. He practically was able to run up straight behind them without anyone noticing and had hit the back of Erlen's head. He had even taken out the other students with little trouble.

"Come on, let's get out of here." Chucky said, and he and Sil were seen leaving the three boys.

"Wait, you're in our class right!" Shiro called out to him, finally breaking out of his spell. "What's your name?"

"I'm Sil." He replied, as he walked back and the two of them headed out of the room.

'I guess no one wants to know my name, huh.' Chucky thought, feeling a little upset.

A short while later, the kids had gone over to Hayley to heal some of their wounds' though they didn't have any serious injuries due to what had happened, they were so small that even Hayley thought nothing of it.

When heading back to their dormitory, they were thinking about what to do.

"Should we tell teacher Hardy, he did tell us to tell him if anything came up?" Swin asked.

"No, teacher Hardy won't be able to do anything." Shiro said. "I know what those kids are like, they probably attacked us because teacher Hardy got involved in the first place. If we tell, something worse could happen to us."

Shiro, wasn't wrong either. As Erlen woke up with the rest, they were steaming with anger all over, and they felt like he had no choice, and he knew exactly what to do.

"Dad, there's something I need you to do.....yeah I'm being bullied. It's best if you come in."

It didn't take long for Erlen's parents to come to the school and call an emergency meeting soon. Erlen, the five kids who were with him, his parents and Head General Innu of the third group were all in a meeting room together.

"I understand." Innu said after listening to everything. "Don't worry, I will speak to the second Head General, and have these students that did this to your kids, and his friends come in here themselves and apologise to both of you. This can not be tolerated in our school."

"Good!" The father spoke, standing up and straightening his high end tailored suit. "I especially want the boy named Sil and Shiro to be brought to us. They could have killed our child!"

Two names in particular were mentioned with great detail from Erlen when he told his story. Towards the end of the fight, as everyone was leaving, Erlen had managed to regain a little bit of consciousness, and while Sil was still there he didn't want to get up off the ground, but he had heard the name of the student that had been spoken at the end, and he was sure to remember it.

Looking away from the parents, there was a smile on Inuu's face. He had been waiting for a way to get back at Head General Hardy but didn't know how, and he thought that this was now the perfect opportunity.

'Thank you kids of class 2A, and especially you Sil and Shiro.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 965: The Cursed faction Influence (Part 1)

The next day, in the early morning, the two kids Venus and Swin who were staying in the same room together woke up dreading heading into class. Based on how Erlen had acted before, they were worried that he might already be planning his next move, and they had seen this happen with other students in the past.

'Maybe if we get close with that Sil kid, Erlen will stop messing with us?' Venus thought.

He couldn't stop thinking about what great power, Sil had displayed. How he had completely overpowered a strong ice user. He was calm throughout the whole fight, and didn't get a scratch on him. They were surprised that such a strong student was in their class, even more so that he would help them.

'No, I can't get him involved. What if Erlen tries something worse?' Venus thought, and at that moment, Venus noticed that he had a ton of missed messages from his parents.

Before, in the old military bases, there were only certain periods when one could get in contact with their families. However, this year the military were trying to be a bit different, and this was also a request of those from the Graylash and Cursed faction if they were to send kids from their factions over to the military base.

Most of them were voice messages, and he thought that it might be nice to hear his mom's voice after a while, but when he listened to message after message, he was devastated about what he had heard.

His emotions were so mixed, he couldn't even blink and didn't know how to react at all. His body remained frozen in place.

"Venus I don't know why, but your father, he's been fired from the company!" His Mum sounded panicked and distraught on the phone. Usually, his mother would have tried to hide something like this from him, so that he wouldn't worry, however the last message made it clear why she had told him.

"I don't know what's happened, but they said that if he wanted to get his job back, then they should ask our son about it. Please, if you know anything can you tell us what happened?"

Venus sat there on his bed, playing the messages to himself over and over again, thinking about what had happened, and when he looked across the room, he could see that Swin had an equally shocked look on his face.

It turned out that Venus wasn't the only one that had been affected by this, but also Swin as well. They didn't need to put their minds together for this one, it was obvious who was doing it all.

"Erlen, he really did it..." Venus mumbled. He had to say it out loud to make sure that it wasn't a dream.

Of course, they both knew that Erlen wasn't lying about his father, but no matter what happened in the past while in school, he had never got his parents involved in such a thing. Who would get their parents involved when it was a problem between them. It made no sense to attack other people.

Unfortunately for them, the bad news didn't stop there, as the bell rang to their dormitory door.

"This is Sargent Himmle, please open up. You have been called into a meeting with Head General Innu." Himmle said, spoken through the door.

The two boys looked at each other and gulped. They truly didn't know what to do now and didn't know what to expect.

---

Being called by the sergeant, and having a meeting with a head general felt like a serious thing. They knew Erlen was influential but not this influential and they could see their whole lives being ruined. Neither boy said anything, as they moved from their building and headed towards where the third group's building was based.

They entered a medium sized meeting room, where there was a desk, and a bookshelf on either side of the walls. Towards the left side of the room, were two sofas and a table and on one of the sofas, was an older gentleman in a suit, and sitting next to him was Erlen.

Erlen's father looked at the students with disgust as they turned their heads avoiding eye contact.

From his seat Innu had stood up.

"Please take a seat, we are still waiting for everyone to arrive." Innu said, walking over, and standing on the other side. Even the sergeant that had brought them there was standing on the other side, and it really felt like everyone in the room was against them too, with no one to back them up.

Looking across them, seeing both Shiro and Sil, Erlen wasn't feeling the happiest seeing them.

'My father was able to do something about Venus and Swin, but these other three. Shiro, turned out to be an orphan so there was nothing we could do to his family, and as for the other two, known as Sil and Chucky, we also couldn't find any information at all. Oh well, I'll just have to be happy with what they're about to get.'

Innu wasn't the only one that was going to be a part of the meeting, eventually the other two Earthborn head generals had entered as well Samantha and Sach.

'Now the others can see me getting a little payback for the humiliation we received.' Innu thought.

"What's going to happen to us?" Shiro eventually said, his voice a little shaky.

"Don't worry, you're only students, but what you have tried to do to my son is a big crime." Erlen's father spoke, and that had quietened Shiro down a lot. "So don't expect a slap on the wrist."

He thought he might get in trouble or use the beast weapon on the fellow student. This would be placed on his record, and his chances of getting into the Graylash family might be stained. With a powerful family out to get him, they would make it so his report would deem him more useless than he already was.

'No one is going to help us.' Shiro thought. 'No one is on our side and even those two that helped us before can't do anything.'

He looked to his right, and could see Sil and Chucky sitting quite calmly on their seats. Did they really not fear what was about to happen to them, did they not care about their record or score they would get when leaving this palace.

'Oh that's right, these two are already strong, they don't need to worry.'

"I wouldn't be so calm if I were you two." Innu said. "A matter like this could very well mean an expulsion, and expulsion from the military may be a fate worse than the lowest grading students and we will be sure to let your faction, and everyone know about what you did today. Do you think anyone will be willing to take those in that attack their own?"

Still, Innu's threats did nothing, as Chucky remained calm, and even Sil gave a little yawn.

The door opened, one more time, and the last person who had entered the room was Quinn.

"Head General Hardy, it looks like you made it!" Innu said, being polite and putting on a smile.

Straight away, seeing Sil and Chucky involved in this incident, he was a little calm, but soon after he could hear the other students' panicked heartbeat. It was clear they were nervous and scared. Quinn walked over by their side and stood behind them.

"What happened?" Quinn asked.

Samantha, seeing this, could feel an immense pressure coming off him. She didn't know what Innu was planning to do, but in the end, thought that she should come along, just for his sake. From that day onward after the meeting with Oscar, she couldn't get his words out of her head.

'Don't do anything stupid Innu.' She thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 966: The Cursed faction Influence (Part 2)**

### **Chapter 966 - The Cursed faction Influence (Part 2)**

For a second, Venus and Swin were happy to see General Hardy, but soon after realising their dark situation, even they thought that it might be difficult for him to help them, and the intense energy radiating off from him was just scaring them even more.

"There seems to have been an incident involving your students here from group 2 and my students from group 3." Innu claimed. "The one that has been brought in has been hurt the most, but not only that, he and his family are an important asset to the military."

"They are a great sponsor of ours, which only makes matters even more serious to the point where we have had to call you in."

Saying these words. Erlen's father had a smug look on his face, as if he was proud. He sorted out and fixed up his suit a little more to make sure he looked the part. It was as if his looks were more important than the situation they were all currently in.

"Six of our students had been beaten by the five that have been brought in here today, they were the cause of all of this. The damage is as follows, a concussed head, several broken ribs, a twisted arm, missing teeth and finally to our student Erlen here. A stab wound in his side, and blunt blow to the back of his head, seems to have been done with a heavy object of some kind."

"I don't have to tell you that some of these wounds could have been fatal. If it was a simple fight then maybe it could have been overlooked, but something could have easily gone wrong and the outcome could have been worse."

Erlen's father stood up and pointed towards Shiro.

"This boy that stabbed my son, if it wasn't for my son's quick thinking then he might have died. Luckily my son is talented and had used his abilities to stop the wound from becoming worse." He said, sitting back down in his seats and straightening out his blazer once more.

All of them that were sitting in the chair, hearing the accusations made out as they were, didn't really know what to say. Based on what they had seen Sil do, it didn't seem like they were making any of the injuries up.

Although, Swin and Venus were wondering what to say themselves, after all, they hadn't hurt any of the pupils, so why should a punishment fall on them? And most of all, what of their parents if they did claim that nothing had happened?

Quinn had finally heard enough to speak up a little on his own.

"If I may ask, General Innu, did you know there was an incident involving some of the students here and students from your class before today? If I was a gambling man I would have to think that the incident that happened the other day, is linked to this one as well."

Seeing what Quinn was trying to do, Erlen was the one to first speak up about it.

"It's true." Erlen said. "Me, Venus and Swin used to be friends out of our schools. We knew each other and we had a falling out the other day, we got into a scuffle and we were both beaten, but I didn't expect them to ambush us the very next day and try to use a weapon. They even called their new friends they made."

Erlen, was putting on an Oscar worthy performance making it look like he was the victim in all of this. Quinn could imagine if it was another general, due to the other family's position and connections with the military they would take their side.

Looking over to Chucky, Quinn could see him shaking his head, calming what they said wasn't true at all.

Seeing how his son seemed to be quite upset at what happened, Erlen's father stood up in anger.

"I won't accept anything but begging from these students, they should be l.i.c.k.i.n.g the floor and apologising for what they did. If the military doesn't give them an appropriate punishment they can kiss their contracts goodbye! We, the Tiffle family, will not tolerate this!" The father declared.

Hearing this, for a second, both Venus and Swin wanted to immediately get on the floor and apologise, they didn't care if they were really in the wrong or not, but they needed to make sure. That their parents wouldn't be affected.

"If we do that, if we do that, then will you give our parents their jobs back!" Venus shouted, as he pleaded.

Everyone in the room was quite stunned by this, but the other Generals expected something like this might happen. Although it did not happen often, there were occasions where parents ended up getting involved in their kids' disputes.

However, what Samantha was concerned about was the strange atmosphere that had just gotten heavy in the room.

"What did you say he did?" Quinn asked, as his fingertips had dug straight through the sofa.

"Please, we're really sorry!" Swin pleaded. "We will do whatever you ask, but our parents already work so hard for us." Swin said, already on his knees on the ground.

"As you can see General Hardy, this is a serious matter for the military, I think if the students at least apologise we can lighten their punishment." Innu said, a bit worried himself, not realising that the father would go this far for his son. "I hope we do not need to escalate this to the point where Oscar has to get involved."

Quinn didn't look up, and lifted Swin off the ground. He felt so light as he placed him back in his seat.

"No one should have to get on their knees, especially if they did nothing wrong." Quinn said softly, while his back was turned to the others.

"Do you really think it makes sense for a bunch of low levels, who are even weaker than your son and his gang, to attack a group of high levels? You want me to believe that they were the ones that started this mess. That they would really instigate a fight knowing full well that they would lose?" Quinn questioned them.

"Who even are you, General Hardy?!" Erlen's father shouted back. "Don't you know how this world works? Who cares who attacked who first! The crimes committed by those children are unforgivable. They attacked some important people that are vital for our society. We should be respected for all we are doing for this war, and what have they done! They dare to even attempt to attack us or argue with us!"

Samantha urgently wanted to step in at this point. As she didn't know what General Hardy might do. She knew the connections the Tiffle family had with the military.

'Surely, just a random member of the Cursed family can't be that important? We can just comply for now and apologise to those in the Cursed.' She thought, but no matter what, she couldn't step in.

"So you people really don't understand or learn, until you get a taste of your own medicine." Quinn said, turning around and looking at Erlen's father.

Seeing General Hardy's eyes, she was just thankful that they weren't glowing red like last time. But why did he seem so confident?

"Oh, you're calling me while you're away. I assume that something has come up that you need my expertise with?" Logan said.

The others looked at this young boy and didn't have a clue who he was, or why Hardy had decided to make a call in the middle of the situation they were in.

"I don't usually ask you for favours Logan, but this time I had to-"

"Don't say anything else, you will upset me if you do. Tell me what you need." Logan replied.

Before saying anything, Quinn looked at Erlen and his father. He could still see that they weren't worried, or cared at all how they had just treated several lower ranking students and their families.

"Look into a family called the Tiffle family for me please." Quinn requested.

Some typing was heard, and it didn't take long for Logan to bring up their information.

"It looks like the family has a lot of connections with the military, they own a lot of manufacturing plants that mostly help produce the Mechs for the military amongst other things. What's the problem with them, are they causing trouble?" Logan asked, calmly.

"How long would it take to bring them down?" Quinn asked.

Hearing these words, nearly everyone in the room was stunned. The kids, the Generals and even Erlen's father. However, they all assumed it was merely a bluff.

"I think I can gather what has happened, let me sort it out." Logan said and the call had ended there.

"You think your little fake call is going to scare me. I've had enough, call the Supreme Commander immediately!" Erlen's father demanded.

However, a few moments later, his own watch started going off. Looking down he could see it was an important call that he had to take.

"Sir! Sir! We have a problem, our company, we've been bought out!" The caller said.

"How is that possible, our group would never have sold!"

"They had no choice sir. We no longer have access to any of our systems or databases. It was a complete take-over that happened in seconds, but somehow they managed to halt production immediately. An offer was then made from the Green family, that they wouldn't allow us to continue production, complete our contracts unless we sold. Even if we wanted to do anything we couldn't and Sir, I'm afraid I have even more bad news. The first decision the new director had ordered to be done, was to get rid of all the executive staff and other directors."

Soon there was more bad news as the Tiffle's personal accounts were taken over, and multiple pings from his accounts were being sent to him.

"What is happening!" Erlen's father panicked, as he went on the floor, grabbing his hair. Everything was hitting him at once and he was slowly beginning to make sense of it all. His stomach was churning and his head started to spin and the only comfort he had was being on the floor. Looking up, he saw Quinn, who was looking down at him. "Please! It was you, wasn't it? I'm sorry, I'm sorry!" He shouted.

Quinn stared at the man on the floor, who was almost begging, and stepped away before he could grab on to his feet.

"Father, I don't understand! What's happening?!" Erlen started to panic.

A ping was received on Quinn's watch, and it was a message from Logan.

"Your company and all of its productions will continue to operate as normal. However, you nor your family, will no longer own it anymore." Quinn read.

Turning away, he left the man. "Come on, let's go." Quinn said, as he walked out of the front door. Sil and Chucky stood up following him out, and the other students quickly followed close behind.

Shiro couldn't believe what he had just seen happen. Why would a General get so involved in all of this, just for a couple of students? Taking down a corporation of that size couldn't have been easy.

As Quinn left that door, everyone was thinking, 'who the hell was this person?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 967: Logan the real superpower

On the Cursed Ship, Sam was doing his daily duties, reading the reports sent in from all the different planets they now owned. Sorting of the beast crystals, allocating trade, seeing what was made and he even had to decide who in the Cursed faction would get what equipment first.

Since the attack on the forgery that happened on the Cursed ship last time, he had told those in the forgery to make equipment for themselves first. They needed something just in case of an emergency. Even though Alex could now use the shadow ability, it wasn't enough and they needed to be careful.

So strangely at the moment, there were some of those in the forgery with legendary tier armour.

Sam continued to look through all the reports, which was done at the command centre. He liked working here because it was where one could see the vast space out from the glass window.

That's when he noticed that he had received an additional report compared to usual, and it had come from someone who he didn't typically get reports from.

"This one was sent from Logan, was there anything I asked him to send me?" He wondered. He was pretty sure he would have remembered if he had.

Although Sam was mostly in charge of the Cursed faction, the leaders themselves were pretty much free to do what they wanted, and they did so with a few helping him here and there. Wevil, Nate, Linda, Dennis and Megan were the ones that helped out the most.

Opening up the report, it took Sam a second, before he thought his head was going to explode, he couldn't quite believe what he was reading and he needed an explanation immediately.

A short while later, Sam and Logan were sitting opposite each other and Logan had just given a full explanation to him about what happened, and what exactly the report was about.

"So, you're telling me, Quinn told you to buy out all these manufacturing plants. You essentially sent me the details of the whole company!" Sam said, still not understanding to the full extent of what he was being told.

"I just did what I was asked. There was trouble that was giving Quinn a headache. I thought the easiest way to get rid of that trouble, without putting up a fight, was to buy the company. Anyway, I have my own things to do so I can't really do much with it. That's why I have handed it over to you. Rather than be owned by the Green family, I want it to be owned by the Cursed faction." Logan explained.

Having looked through the report, Sam was able to see the contracts the company had on top of who their biggest client was, which was the military. In the past, The Cursed didn't actually do much trading with the military, and they were more focused on trading beast gear and crystals with other factions on different planets.

'I guess this could be our link to the military? All the employees are still there, it looks like just the directors and executives were the ones that were let go. It should be doable and will benefit us a lot. The mechs were handy when we fought against the Sunshield family as well for those that are weak, and they are great for construction.' Too many ideas were feeding into Sam's head at once as he realised how good of a thing this was for their faction, it just meant there was extra work to be done.

"How much did this cost?" Sam couldn't help but ask.

"Don't worry about that." Logan replied. "It's all my money. Remember my parents have passed away and I'm an only child. I also don't plan to have any children in the future, so the money needs to be spent somehow. If it's to help Quinn and those in the Cursed then I will have deemed it a good cause." Logan said.

It wasn't like the Cursed faction were poor. Ever since taking over the Daisy faction, and with Sam creating a good system they now had quite a bit of good stable income. Even then, if they had no credits as long as they had beast crystals that could be used, they could do something.

But thinking about the Green family's influence on everything, it made him think. Was it possible if Logan wanted to, could he take down the whole of the military's systems? In a way, the Green family had always been a powerhouse just not fighting wise.

'I guess that's why they never did, they kept a neutral relationship with each of the families, helping everyone and for the sake of humanity. It meant all groups were protecting the Green family, but now, there was a clear bias for who they worked for. Perhaps this may cause a problem in the future.'

Seeing that Sam no longer had anything to say about the subject, Logan decided to change the subject.

"Did you manage to send my request to Paul?" Logan asked.

This was something that Sam wasn't too sure was a good idea.

"I did," Sam said. "Whenever you want to come over, he will be happy to escort you to where you want to go, and then you are free to be sent back. He just informed the King about what you are doing, but it seems like everything will be okay."

"Good, this robotic arm is good, but I realised that it isn't the best, but I will use this opportunity to make something better than what I had before." Logan replied, swinging his robotic arm about.

"And how are your other projects going?" Sam asked. "When you talked to Quinn did you inform him of what you wanted to do? I know it's not really my place to stop you, but I will have to tell him."

There were two things that Logan was mostly focused on while on the Cursed ship. The first task was looking for any Demon tier beasts on the planets that they currently owned. They realised after finding out that some planets had an inner planet, that the device sometimes would have to be used in different places to get a fuller and more accurate reading if there was a Demon tier beast on that planet.

If they found one, then they would inform Quinn immediately, and Quinn temporarily would stop his duties as teacher to see what they should do about the Demon tier beast. After witnessing Hilston's power and knowing he was still out there, this was the quickest way to get stronger, but was also the most risky possibly taking most of their lives.

As for the second reason...

"I'm thinking about it, I'm not quite sure, and still trying to see if there is another way, but it's the only clue I have." Logan said while walking away.

What Logan was referring to, was the Blade island itself. No one knew if the Hilston family had returned to their island after what had happened, but in a way they were related to Logan's goal. Wanting to fulfill his parents request, he wanted to find Richard Eno, but there were no clues about him anywhere, apart from one.

On the Blade Island, there was a note left by Brock, one of the top workers for the Blade family, telling him to keep searching. Logan had a feeling that he knew where Richard Eno was, and there was a reason for him being on the island.

Trying to search for clues if Brock had left that place or anything else was almost impossible, even with his vast network, and 'borrowing' others' networks using his powers he was able to find nothing.

The only clue he had left was to go to the Blade island itself, and this was what Sam was referring to earlier.

At the same time, there were also others planning to make their move soon as well. Leo, Erin and Layla often met up with each other, for more things than one.

Layla using all of her knowledge of Pure had pinpointed all the bases on other planets she knew of. As she actually didn't know where or what the main base was located on.

Their search for Pure members and the Pure organisations had to start somewhere, and soon they would be going out on their first expedition.

Having just finished a meeting with the other two, Layla had gone to a quiet part of the training room; tired, panting and sweating. She had also been training with them as well.

While she rested up against the wall, she kept thinking of one person in particular.

'Quinn, I wonder how you're dealing with being a teacher?' Layla thought.  
'Honestly, I wanted to come with you like the good old times, but I have my own questions as well. Why did my mother decide to create Pure in the first place? Why did she hate ability users? Surely one of the founders knows? I thought she never cared about me, but in the end that wasn't true at all.'

Footsteps were heard coming towards her, and blonde hair flickered in front of her face.

"Come on, it's time we get moving, it looks like Leo is ready as well."

From behind, Leo stood up, who was in a sitting position the whole time, and he had a smile on his face.

"The third stage of Qi is a brilliant thing, I should inform Quinn about it once we are done." Leo said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 968: Two wrongs

Walking through the hallway, the kids were returning to their homeroom classroom wondering what they had just witnessed. Their emotions were on a rollercoaster ride during the whole thing. They were panicking throughout and all of sudden, they were now walking back to their homeroom class.

No punishment had been received towards any of them, and miraculously, they had just witnessed a worried looking Erlen, and his father who was kneeling and begging on the floor. All of this was due to their teacher, General Hardy.

The kids didn't say anything, as it was taking each of them a while to process what they had just seen. It was clear that Erlen had the head general of the third group on their side, but still when compared to their own teacher, it seemed like he was untouchable.

"Teacher, you're amazing." Venus mumbled.

At that moment, they had nearly reached their classroom, and hearing the words from the kids, he realised that he had better say something. He turned around to them and looked at Sil and Chucky. It looked like the two of them had got involved trying to protect the kids.

When they were listing out the injuries on all the students, Quinn could only assume that Sil had something to do with it, and he was thankful that Sil didn't go too far.

"I want to talk to you guys about what just happened. As a teacher, I think it's my duty to say that two wrongs don't make a right." Quinn said. "What I did just there, I abused my power and used it against them. I don't want you guys to grow up like that."

Swin and Venus looked at each other, as if they didn't understand quite what Quinn was saying.

"Teacher, we don't think you abused your power. You could have done that from the beginning but you didn't. Until it felt like we were in a corner. You used your power to help against what you thought was an injustice. They were the real abuse of power!" Swin said. "You only used it when you felt like it was necessary while those guys used it everyday."

It made him feel a little better that the kids didn't see him as the big bad guy in the situation, but he just wanted to make it clear to them.

"If you can keep what happened a secret, that would be for the best." Quinn said, giving them all a wink.

When they were just about to reach their classroom door, Shiro, who hadn't said a word, just felt like he had to say what was on his mind.

"General Hardy, who are you? I thought you said you were a low level like me...I know you're a Head General, but no Head General can do something like that..." Shiro stated.

Looking at the young boy, who reminded Quinn a lot like himself, he thought it would be good to have someone like him join the Cursed faction, before he could be ruined by the current society.

"The Cursed faction are stronger than you think." Quinn left it at that, entering the class and the lesson had begun.

It was safe to say that during class, the kids couldn't concentrate at all on what Quinn was talking about. They kept thinking about how they were saved, and so spectacularly.

'This guy, he is super strong, has high level beast gear, and was able to do something like that to Erlen's family?' Venus thought. 'He is not a normal person, but I've never heard of him.'

At the same time though, due to how quick those in the Cursed faction had risen, there weren't many that knew a lot about them. When the bell rang and it was the end of the homeroom class, Venus and Swin noticed that their teacher had requested for Sil and Chucky to stay behind.

They thought that their names might get called too, but it never did happen. They thought it was a little strange but nothing too out of the ordinary since they were also involved in the incidents the other day.

The reason why Quinn had called them, was because he wanted to hear the full story of what had really happened that day. Why the two of them were there and how everything had started.

"Well, it looks like you did a really good job, Sil. I'm proud of you." Quinn said, putting his hand on his shoulder.

Hearing the praise, made Sil act in a strange way, and he placed his head slightly downward.

"It's nothing, I just thought 'what would Vorden do' if he was here."

Hearing about this, reminded Quinn of when he was in school. Vorden would often come back beaten and bruised, and it was only later he found out that Vorden was going around beating all those that were abusing their powers.

"Yes, and hopefully Vorden will be back soon, remember what you need to do."  
Said Quinn.

However, hearing the full story there was one thing that was concerning, and it was Shiro. The fact that he had gone so far as to take a weapon from the beast weapons class, and pretty much had committed to wanting to kill Erlen and dealing with the consequences later.

'This isn't a good sign. It reminds me of how Peter was at one point, if he gets a strong power, he could very well attempt to use it to get revenge on all those that bullied him.' Quinn thought.

Although Quinn had to admit when he was younger, he had harboured these same thoughts as well. But he realised that most of the time it wasn't the individual's fault, but rather a problem with the whole system. It was a change that would take some time to achieve.

Later that day, when it was the school lunch break, Venus and Swin were both looking for somewhere to sit. After the incident, most of those in their class were still trying to avoid them. Afraid that they too would get attacked by Erlen and his gang if they got close to them.

They didn't know about the extraordinary events that had occurred and they were fighting everything in their body to hold it in. That's when they spotted Shiro sitting on his own and decided to sit with him.

The three of them now, although didn't have much in common before, now all shared a certain bond, and had one thing they loved to talk about. Their favourite teacher, General Hardy. It seemed like they had all come to the same conclusion, Hardy had to be a fake name.

"In this day and age, it's quite common for popular people to only be known by their name rather than what they look like, so maybe he used that to his advantage." Swin said.

"Ah, like those famous power fighter players. Some of them never reveal who they are in real life." Venus replied.

In the middle of their conversation, they spotted someone entering the room, and it was Erlen. It was still the same day that the incident had happened, so he didn't yet have time to take in everything that had occurred, and who knows how the conversation between him and his father had gone. But one thing was clear, he wasn't acting himself.

Usually, people would allow him to pass to grab his food first, but he just waited in line like everyone else, getting his tray of food like a zombie. When he sat down,

he didn't touch any of his food and just looked at it. His eyes were puffy and red as if he had been crying the whole time, and the side of his cheek was red.

Quite possibly, after finding out what happened and everything his father had built up, he had put the blame on his son for losing it all, and was now dishing out punishment on him.

It was hard for the others to feel sorry for him though, they had years of abuse, and their injuries were far worse. They were just hoping that Erlen would learn from this.

After what had happened today, there was another group that was stunned by what they had just seen. In Innu's room; Innu, Samantha, Sach and Hayley were all sitting down together.

"I just got an update from the company, it looks like all the contracts are going to be continued as per usual." Samantha said. "Also it seems to all be true, the Green family has taken over the company and now it belongs to the Cursed faction."

"Who would have thought?" Sach said. "The Green family and the Cursed working together!"

"The person who Hardy called, I've seen him before." Hayley mentioned. "When the fight was going on for electing the next big power, he was there along with the Bree family, working with Mona."

"Does that mean that the Cursed faction took him in after the Bree family disbanded?" Innu asked.

"I'm not sure, but the Cursed family seem to have a lot more allies than people think on the surface, as you can see." Hayley said, wondering herself as she knew her father, Paul, an ex-head general, was also part of the Cursed faction.

Everyone still underestimated the Cursed faction, due to them being the newest addition to the leaders table, but it was quite clear with their allies and consuming the Daisy faction, they were bigger than anyone imagined.

"I think I'm starting to understand why Oscar told us to try to get the Cursed faction on our side." Samantha blurted out.

Hearing this, set the other two aback a bit as well. They were hoping that Oscar might be a help to them, but if Oscar cared about the Cursed faction, then they might not see eye to eye.

"Yes, but did you see how he is acting? He acts like he owns the military and that he can come and do whatever he likes!" Innu shouted.

"Calm down." Sach said. "You had your chance and you failed, but I think I have something up my sleeve that might do the trick. He might have a strange ability,

and connections but he has never fought us directly. I think we can figure out something."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 969: Adapt to the situation

Later in the school day, it was time for the students to head to their classes, and currently Sil and Chucky had decided that they would hop over to the elemental class. The other day, they had joined a mental ability class and today they had switched to another one.

The two of them decided that they would continue to switch between classes while Sil would try to copy as many different abilities as he could. The goal was to try and find someone that could possibly help Sil bring the other two back.

Although it was unlikely they would find anyone in the elemental class that could help, they wouldn't leave any stone unturned, and this seemed to be quite the easy class for them to join.

The elemental class was filled with students and was always the most popular class in school. Students would attend it regardless if they had an elemental ability or not. Some just wanted to see displays of the most powerful abilities, while others were there to make connections with other families.

However, in the bright dome-like room, standing on top of a square stage structure at the very back was a special person. The usual teacher of the elemental class had claimed to have invited a special guest. Quite a young looking gentleman was standing by their side, and he was covered in white robes. The special guest was one of the head generals who was part of the Graylash family, named Robin Graylash.

Because of him, the already popular class was filled with even more students, and it looked like that's when Chucky noticed that Shiro, from their class, was here as well. Standing at the very front watching keenly on the demonstration.

"Come on Sil, you're not going to get a better chance than this?" Chucky said. "All of these people here and they're paying attention to the speech. I know you don't like approaching people but here you can touch whoever you like?"

When Quinn had called them after class, he had learnt of what happened, but on top of that Chucky had a question of his own. Just who was Sil? Sil had been able to copy his ability, and then soon after used the telekinesis ability. He was so strong and powerful.

The Blade kids that were on the Cursed ship were kind of a secret, always training on their own, and not many knew about Sil.

In the end, since Chucky had been such a good help to Sil, so far, Quinn told him what his ability was, and what their goal was. To try and find a certain person with a specific ability. He didn't go into much detail after this and he didn't need to.

Chucky, with a clearer goal in mind with what they were trying to do, was ready to help. However there was one problem.

It didn't seem like Sil liked people that much, nor touching them either unless he had to. In the last class they were in, they tried to think of several ways for Sil to touch others without it seeming weird. The easiest way was through an introduction and handshake.

Whenever it came to this part though, Sil just wouldn't stick out his hand, or say his name. It made the situation awkward eventually causing the other person to leave. So now seeing how things were, Sil could just go through crowds of people touching them.

"Okay, I'll try." Sil said convincing himself it was something he had to do, if he wanted to get Vorden and Raten back.

The two of them were at the very back, and not wanting to make eye contact or make it awkward. Sil started to walk through the crowds of people while the speech continued. While doing so he would let his hands out, and brush it past each person as he walked by.

There were two clear ways for Sil to copy one's ability. Through a brief touch of one's skin, or holding onto one's body. So in some instances if he grabbed onto another one's arm or on their shoulder, if he was holding onto their actual body he could still copy their cells.

Still, the easiest thing to do was just skim past their hands, as he did now, learning of other people's ability.

On the stage, Robin was demonstrating the after effect of the lightning ability. He was just moving his hands simply in a circle but a trail of lightning would be left behind and eventually he could make small circles out of this.

"You should use the tools you have learnt to be creative and come up with your own skills. Although our abilities may be the same, every person is different." Robin explained. "Even if your ability is not an elemental one, we are only limited to what we can create in our mind."

"There are two constant enemies you will face, one being the Dalki. They have a permanent form that we are used to, but with their human-like bodies and extreme strength they can adapt to the situation they are put in. At the same time, you must adapt as well.

"As for the second enemy, those are the beasts we face nearly everyday. Aggressive in nature as they attack on sight but more importantly, they come in different shapes, sizes and abilities. If you have utilized everything in your arsenal and still cannot defeat it, then you need to adapt and create something new. To do that you must all treat your abilities as part of your body. This is an...this is an..." in the middle of his talk, Robin started to stutter, as his concentration was losing

focus. But it wasn't because he was nervous or shy, it was because there was a distraction happening in the crowd.

A light brown haired boy was making his way through the crowd of people, lightly pushing others aside as he walked by. It was a big distraction, since he was the only one that was moving, but what was even worse, it seemed like the boy was uninterested in the lesson. He wasn't looking at the stage, and was just zig zagging through the crowd of people as if this was his goal.

The rings of lightning he had created disappeared and now a single finger started to spark blue.

"Now, once your ability is like a part of your body, you will have absolute control like so." Robin said, as he pointed his finger into the crowd and decided to fire a very small spark of lightning.

Still going through the crowd, Sil wasn't paying attention and was just focusing on his task.

'No, no, that ability won't help. How many earth users are there?' Sil thought.

Suddenly, he could feel a few hairs on his head stand up, and when he finally lifted his head, a blue spark of lightning had hit him on the forehead. His whole body stood shaking in place from the shock, for a short while. The others seeing his body shake had decided to move away from him.

"Did he just hit a student with his lightning?" Some of the students watched in shock.

'Is that Sil and Chucky?!" He thought, as he looked at them.

Chucky immediately went over to grab Sil, but then his body too was shaking from the shock, and eventually it had stopped.

In order not to cause a panic, Robin quickly informed the students what had just happened. "Don't worry, I didn't use a large amount of force. This skill isn't one that will cause a lot of damage, so it won't injure the student badly. However, it will paralyze a person for a few seconds." Turning his attention towards Sil, Robin spoke his next words directly to him. "Although, I do have to say that if you are not interested in the lesson, then rather than be a distraction the two of you should leave."

When the two had finally recovered, Sil's and Chucky's hair was both a little frazzled, and Sil kept his head down.

"Sil, are you okay? Hey, answer me." Chucky said, but Sil just continued to look down.

The two of them hadn't been with each other long, but from the brief encounter they had before, he was worried.

'No, he isn't planning to...' Chucky was preparing for the worst.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 970: What is the strongest ability?

The crowd of students who had attended the elemental class for the special demonstration, never imagined that they would have witnessed an actual skill being used, and against another student at that.

However, what was quite surprising, was while Chucky had only gotten second hand aftershock from touching Sil, he was down on one knee. As for Sil, he had remained standing.

'Doesn't hurt my arse!' Chucky thought. 'I feel like my whole insides have been fried.' His immediate reaction after receiving an attack like this one, was to pay back the person that had dealt it.

Maybe there were some that would be frightened, but Chucky's natural response was to fight. However, he knew who Robin Graylash was. One of the strongest members of the Graylash family, who's name had spread quite far and wide.

If he was to do anything, it would be pointless. Which was why, based on his own feelings, he couldn't imagine what Sil was feeling or would do. He was a person who was a little unstable.

Looking at Sil, it seemed like the worst was coming true, as Sil raised his hand towards Robin, with an open palm and looked at him. The students weren't stupid. If anyone did this it only meant one thing, Sil was planning an attack.

'He can't be thinking of attacking a head general?' Shiro thought, watching from the side.

Although, he didn't know Sil. Sil had saved him that day, and he had seen some of his strength. However, he couldn't imagine Sil beating a head general, and one of the strongest members of the Graylash family who had the strongest ability in existence.

Chucky, who was by Sil's side, was having the same thoughts as well. He tried to get up, but his legs didn't seem to listen. When trying to move his leg, it was as if the muscles in his arm would activate instead.

'Is this the general's skill, then how is Sil able to move?' Chucky thought.

The truth was, it was the same for Sil, but with years of training different types of ability, he had quickly worked out which muscles had switched to which parts. If moving his leg moved his right arm in a certain way, then he would just do that.

"Sil, think of Quinn, we can't cause a scene." Chucky desperately said, thinking it was the only words that would calm him down. For some reason, there was one

person that Sil always responded to, which was why he thought this might work, and a few seconds later, Sil was seen placing his hand down.

Through the whole ordeal, Robin had a smile on his face. He wasn't frightened when the student raised his hand.

"Good, now if you want to stay I hope there won't be any more distractions," Robin said and continued on with his show.

Chucky decided to move him and Sil to the back to check if he was okay. His body could now work as it seemed like the effect of the lightning was only a temporary effect. The students were now also staying clear of them, afraid Robin might just lash out at them again.

Which meant that Sil could no longer touch the other students.

'Maybe we will get another chance, another way.' Chunky thought.

Surprisingly, there was one person from the crowd that did approach them, and that was Shiro.

"Is he okay?" Shiro asked.

"I'm fine, like he said it didn't hurt, but it was annoying." Sil replied, folding his arms. Even if it didn't hurt he was clearly frustrated.

The speech continued from Robin and his demonstration was about to finish, so he decided to end the show off with a Big Bang, and started to show many different spectacles and skills, moving himself at the speed of lightning, creating thunderbolts to hit certain cards that he threw in the air. It was more similar to a magic show but it had done its job and the students were impressed including Shiro.

'I see, now I understand why the Head General agreed to do a demonstration even though this is the Cursed house elemental class.' Chucky thought. 'He wants to win over the students so when they choose to select a group to join, they will chose the Graylash family. Smart move.'

The demonstration was finally complete and Robin had a few last words.

"Now remember, although I said imagination is the most important thing, there will be things that I have shown that are just not possible without the Graylash family ability. After all, that is why our ability is the strongest ability in the world."

The students were ready to give a round of applause until they were interrupted once again.

"That's not the strongest ability in the world." A voice shouted.

When they turned around to see who spoke, they saw that it was none other than the student who had been attacked.

"Oh, I see it was the boy who had interrupted me before. Well, if you think it isn't true then do you mind giving me an example?" Robin asked.

At this point, Chucky didn't know what to do, but at least he thought a fight wouldn't break out this way, or he hoped.

Hearing these words, Shiro who was next to them was reminded of something general Hardy had said to him, about how there were other strong abilities out there as well.

"Of course." Sil replied. "The earth ability is well known to be a weakness of the lightning ability. If an earth user and a lightning user were of the same strength, most of the time the earth user would win."

The students also knew about this as well. They had seen this happen at the inter-base tournament last year. At the finals it was an Earth user against one of the strongest Graylash students and the earth ability user had won. They turned their heads waiting for an answer from the teacher.

"I'll give you half a point for that answer. Although what you say is correct, when it comes to cultivating the Graylash family is more advanced and has many skills. To put it simply, for every great earth user out here, there are about ten Graylash family members that could match them in strength. On top of that, the cap for the earth ability is far lower than what one can do with the lightning ability, no earth user, even the Supreme commander Oscar has been able to match up to our Leader Owen." Robin replied. "This is why I say lightning is the strongest ability there is."

The students then turned their heads, as they waited for Sil to reply next.

"There are still other abilities that are stronger, what about the Shadow ability?" Sil asked.

Hearing these words, the students started to gossip. Currently in the world the humans only know of one person with the shadow ability, and that was the Cursed leader, Quinn Talen. The students started to debate, but the problem was, no one knew the full power of the shadow ability.

They turned their heads once more expecting a comeback from Robin. But instead he just started clapping.

"Bravo, although I will not admit that the lightning ability is weaker than the shadow, I can not also say that it is stronger because I simply know nothing about it. It is a case that can't be proven." Robin replied

The students were quite surprised by the answer Robin gave, he thought he would have been smug or big headed but he gave an honest answer and because of that, they respected him.

"Enough arguments, let's get this lesson started." Robin said.

The students spread out, and started to practice their abilities, while the teachers and assistants would go around giving pointers. Some students were even able to do a light spar with each other, as there was a doctor on standby in the class in case anything happened.

During this, Sil wanted to attempt to ask some of the students for a light spar so he could use their ability, however, as soon as he moved a certain someone had approached them, and it was none other than Robin.

When he approached Sil, he held out his hand as if waiting for a handshake.

"I would like to apologise to you, I had hit you with my skill out of anger but I should have known to hold back. You are only students, of course you will talk and misbehave. This is why I'm not suited to be a teacher." Robin nervously chuckled to himself.

'Hey what about me? Is he not going to apologise to me?' Chucky thought. 'Well, at least this guy seems to be quite nice. I guess not all generals are bad people.'

Taking his hand, Sil decided to give it a shake.

"On top of this, I would like to give you a little personal lesson." Using his fingers to blow a whistle, in an instant a student appeared by the side of him.

"This is one of my best pupils, Lin. He studied at the Graylash household before we sent him here to the military base. To be honest looking over him is one of the reasons why I decided to join and become a head general here. It was impressive how you didn't fall from my strike earlier, I think you have some skill. Why don't you two have a little sparring match and then after I can give you some pointers. What do you say?" Robin asked.

Chucky was about to say no for him. But was interrupted before he could. Sil had already said. "Okay."

Still not having left their side, Shiro was amazed that the head general and one of the top members in the Graylash family was willing to give pointers to Sil. Because of this, he decided to stay close, with hopes to somehow prove himself to the Graylash family.

Both Sil and Lin were about to get ready in position, but before he did, Sil turned around and looked at Robin.

"I didn't finish answering your question before. I said that there were abilities stronger than the Graylash family, and one of them is mine."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 971: Who taught who?

Just when Chucky was beginning to think that perhaps the centre of attention would no longer be on them, Sil went ahead and said those words. A few students around had heard what was spoken as they were already looking in their direction.

After all, it wasn't everyday a famous head general would attend class like they had done. After seeing who was brought over and the words of a sparring match, nearly everyone around had practically stopped focusing on their own skills.

'Quinn, I thought you were giving me an easy job when I first met you, but this task is a lot harder than I initially thought. Now I know why you wanted me to keep an eye on him.' Chucky thought, but looking at Sil walking away and getting ready for his fight, he couldn't be mad at him. 'Well, that was a cool line you said at the end so I'll forgive you, now let's just beat this student and get on with the task.'

While Robin was making sure the area was clear and stood towards the centre of where the two were fighting, another visitor had joined the room. Walking in, wanting to have a look at how the class was going, was the head general of one of the Earthborn, Samantha.

She too had heard that one of the Graylash generals was having a demonstration today. Unfortunately due to her own duties in her own group, she couldn't appear at the start of the class, but still decided that it would be best if she popped down to see a first hand demonstration of a peak Graylash family member.

It was at that moment that she spotted him with two boys as if he was about to referee a match.

'Wait a minute, isn't that the boy that Innu brought into the meeting?' Samantha recognised, but didn't think much of it, and decided to stay by the sidelines and watch the sparring match play out.

Robin looked to his right, where Sil was. "Ready?" He asked and then looked to his left, where his personal student Lin was as well. "Ready?"

'Alright, so you say your ability is stronger than that of the Graylash family, let's see if you're all talk.' Ropbin thought, as he swung his arms down to signal it was the start of the fight.

In an instant, both of Lin's hands were covered in lightning, and placing them together the first thing did was fire them off like a lightning bolt right towards Sil.

'The activation speed of his ability is amazing for a kid at such a young age, the Graylash family seem to have gotten stronger since their new leader.' Samantha thought. 'I heard their leader had passed down some of his personal techniques. It seems they have been put to good use.'

Seeing how Sil had gotten hit by something similar last time, most of the students saw no hope for him. Even Chucky was a little worried.

Lifting his hands up, Sil was calm as ever as he brought up a wall of earth from the ground. When the lightning strike had hit, it smashed the top layer crumbling it to pieces.

'My lightning strike won't be stopped by just any mere wall.' Lin thought, until he saw the impact it had made. His strike had only managed to crumble off an inch deep off the wall. 'How high is this person's earth level?'

"Wait an earth ability?!" Shiro was so shocked, he blurted out the question. He truly didn't have a clue what was going on. The last time he saw Sil fight he had used telekinesis, so how was he able to use the earth ability?

Soon though, the wall started to move like a wave, and it wasn't the only one. The whole ground had formed into giant waves of earth. Lin tried his best to fire stronger lighting attacks, but when it hit the giant waves of earth it looked like it would do nothing.

Seeing this, he tried to use his speed to outrun the wave. Turning right, there was another wave taller than himself coming his way, and it was the same on the left.

'How much earth can he control?' Lin started to think. Seeing all this there was only one thing he could do, and running straight towards it he covered his whole body in lightning. Jumping off, he spun his body around, spinning forward making his whole body into a large lightning bolt.

"One of the signature moves of the Graylash family, although I haven't experienced it myself I have seen it in action a few times." Samantha thought. 'Still, that boy, how can he control so much earth?'

What everyone else around failed to realise, although what Sil was doing didn't look too impressive, controlling this amount of earth at once would require a huge amount of MC points. Points beyond that of a level eight user.

"He won't break through." Robin mumbled. When Lin hit the wall, although the damage created to the earth this time was stronger than his previous attack, it was useless when there were multiple waves of mud forming in mere seconds, and soon, it had collapsed on him entirely.

"Stop, the fight is over!" Robin shouted. "Get rid of all this earth."

Sil listened and soon, all the waves of the earth were returned to where it once came from, and Lin could be seen covered in dirt.

"I believe you already know I went easy on him." Sil mentioned.

Robin first made sure his student was okay, and he was completely fine. He knew what Sil had said was true. All he did was move large amounts of earth, he didn't really attack with it, but just overwhelmed him showing the extent of his powers.

"Don't worry about losing Lin, you just have to use this loss to get stronger, and I wouldn't be upset. It looks like you lost against a monster." Robin said.

After seeing to Lin, Robin walked forward one more time and he only had one thing on his mind.

"I said I would teach you a lesson, but it looks like you taught my student a lesson instead, so why don't we continue the lesson. Are you okay with giving me a go?" Robin asked.

The students who were pretending to still be focusing on the class, had now completely stopped, and the teacher and assistants that were giving them a telling off had stopped as well. They just couldn't believe what they had heard and now this was something they wanted to see.

"After all, I need to prove to you that the Graylash ability is the strongest." Said Robin.

At this point, Chucky thought that Sil was just going to do what he wanted anyway, and after seeing what Sil had produced with the mud, and the other members of the Cursed family, he was wondering if the members of the Cursed knew just how strong the members in their family were.

'I was lucky to join this team.'

"Okay." Sil replied calmly, and got back to the starting position he was in before. It was safe to say that, no longer was anyone paying attention to the lesson and instead was just watching the fight that was about to appear before their very eyes.

'That boy, he is incredibly strong,' Samantha thought, and she immediately decided to make a call to a certain high ranking individual. Soon on the other end, Oscar the Supreme Commander had answered.

"I'm sorry to bother you at such an important time, but I have just spotted a student that has an incredible talent, we must make sure he comes to the Earthborn group no matter what!" Samantha claimed.

"Oh, do you know the boy's name and class?" Oscar asked.

Thinking of the details she had gotten from Innu, she remembered the name.

"The boy goes by the name Sil." She replied.

There was a slight pause from Oscar until he eventually replied with a big sigh.

"That boy, I know he is talented, unfortunately he already belongs to the Cursed."

At that moment, the fight in which Lin was now signalling the match to start, had begun. As soon as he threw his hands down, Sil was this time the aggressor starting with the waves of mud the same as before.

As they came towards him though, from all directions, everyone was wondering just what was going to happen. At first, Robin attacked a wave of earth, but as soon as it crumbled it was quickly rebuilt.

Seeing this, even Lin was beginning to worry, thinking his teacher didn't have an answer.

'Destroying that wall will just be a waste of my time.' Robin thought.

Before the wall could reach him from all ends, his whole body started to illuminate in a blue glow, and soon all four waves from each direction completely consumed the spot he was standing in. As they fell to the ground though, there was no figure or person that could be seen, and when they looked up, Robin was already standing off to his side.

"Your earth powers are strong so I can see why you're confident. But the Graylash family also has speed." Robin claimed, as he fired off a lightning bolt directly towards Sil.

However, what happened next, no one had expected. Sil's body too started to light up blue, and it looked as if his whole body had vanished and the lightning bolt had hit nothing but thin air. When looking around the arena, Sil was seen in a different place, and now the entirety of his right hand was covered in lightning.

"Now he has lightning abilities as well, who is this person?" Shiro kept thinking.

All the students were discussing seeing him use multiple abilities trying to figure out who he was. As for Robin, after seeing this, his eyes widened and the lightning covering his arms immediately faded.

"I'm sorry, I apologize for everything I have done." Robin said. "If I knew who you were I would have treated you with a lot more respect." Robin then bowed down to Sil once again. "I hope the Cursed faction leader is doing well. The Graylash family owe you and him a great debt."

After that, Robin was seen leaving the entire place, and had completely left the training hall they were in, leaving everyone in a stunned confusion.

Samantha looked at Sil trying to figure out who he was but she had no clue.

"This student belongs to the Cursed faction, and the Graylash general just paid him so much respect like that. Why do we keep hearing about the Cursed faction members? The Graylash faction should be in higher positions and more respected than these strangers. Yet the Cursed faction keep being treated with this level of respect.

"Just what is the Cursed faction?" Samantha thought.

At the same time, Shiro too was starting to become more and more fascinated with the Cursed faction as well.

'The Cursed faction is a lot stronger than you think.' Shiro remembered his teacher saying these words.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 972: The missing person

The head general Robin had just left the room, not saying much, saying hardly anything at all, which just added to the confusion of everyone around.

"Did general Robin just lose a duel to a student?" One of them asked amongst the silence.

"I wouldn't say lose, but kind of refusing to fight him."

"Forget that, did you see what he did, he just used two different abilities at the same time. How is that possible?"

"It might be some type of replicating ability, or an illusion, but I don't think the general would act that way if it was an illusion."

The students had many questions to ask, but with the head general not being there, they all turned to look at one person who was. It didn't take long for crowds of students to start rushing over to where Sil was standing.

"That was amazing, who are you?"

"What's your ability?"

"Do you and the general know each other?"

Seeing the crowds of people rushing towards him, while asking a million different questions, Sil had just frozen in place and didn't know what to do. It looked like the wave of people would consume him just like he had done with Lin using the Earth ability.

However, before the crowds of people could get close, two people started to block them from getting to him. Shiro, and Chucky. Predicting something like this would happen, and seeing Sil's awkward character they knew he would freeze.

Stretching out their hands, they were able to block a few of the students but they would soon be trampled by the wave of people.

'Hey, you didn't happen to get an ability that can get you out of here did you?' Chucky asked.

Hearing this, Sil immediately closed his eyes, and soon he had completely disappeared from sight. No one could see him in the room, but he was still there. One of the abilities he had gotten was an invisibility one, thinking that it might come in handy when trying to get other abilities as well.

With that, Sil managed to get out of the interrogation from all the others. The students quickly gave up after not being able to find him, but when the class ended

they wouldn't let up, and soon the news of what happened started to spread around the whole school.

Details seemed to get exaggerated, tales of a student taking on the whole elemental class including the head general. It became so much so that the original tale of a student beating a head general was dismissed as just a rumour.

The rest of the day, the students who were looking for Sil never could find him, but there was one person who was more determined than all the others.

Shiro, while everyone was looking for Sil after the class ended, instead Shiro thought it was best to follow Chucky. The two of them had been together not once, but twice now and he didn't think it was just a coincidence.

Yet, for some reason Chucky was incredibly hard to find.

'What did that guy even look like again? Did he have wild hair, long hair? Wait, what colour is even his hair? Why is it so hard to remember that guy?' Shiro thought.

However, eventually he would run into him, as the two of them attended the same class. When having returned to the classroom, it seemed like news had reached the ears of the classmates as well. They twisted and turned trying to look for Sil but he was nowhere to be found.

"Hey Shiro, is it true that Sil beat Robin Graylash?" Venus asked, approaching him with Swin. The two of them always seemed to be together like another pair.

"Um, I mean not quite, the two did have a match, and the general all of a sudden forfeited, so I guess you could say he won." Shiro replied, but this wasn't why Shiro was interested in Sil.

It was his ability, somehow he not only had the Graylash ability he had another. Which meant there was a way to learn abilities without being a part of that family, Shiro thought. Or a stronger ability.

Eventually, Chucky had gone into the room but the lesson had begun. It was tutor time, so Quinn only needed to take registration and catch up on what all the students were doing or how their day was going.

"Teacher, where is Sil?" One of the students asked.

"Sil is sick for the time being." Quinn replied.

Hearing this, Shiro was starting to think something was up.

'Hardy is part of the Cursed faction and at the end, Robin said something about saying hello to the Cursed leader? Is Sil already a part of the Cursed faction?' He started to think. 'Maybe Hardy is covering for him.'

Shiro didn't want to admit it, but the Cursed faction was getting more interesting by the second. When class had ended, Shiro decided to stay behind, he waited and saw that Chucky was waiting as well.

In the end, everyone had left the classroom, and now only Chucky and Quinn were left there.

"Shiro, do you need help with something?" Quinn asked.

"I wanted to speak to Chucky if possible, it's about Sil. I know you guys are working together, you're all a part of the Cursed faction, aren't you? Including Sil." Shiro claimed. "You don't have to lie to me, and I just wanted to say thank you. Sil saved me back then and I wanted to know more about him?"

Both Chucky and Quinn looked at each other for a second.

"Alright Sil, if you want to, you can come out now, I think we need to rethink this whole plan in the first place." Quinn said.

A few seconds later, Sil seemingly seemed to appear out of nowhere standing by Quinn's side.

"Quinn, I'm sorry, things just got out of hand, I was trying to do everything I can." Sil said.

Now Chucky was visibly shaking his head as well, and Shiro took a step back while trying to look his teacher Hardy in the face.

"Quinn..." the name seemed to sound oddly familiar and it took him a minute until he had realised.

"Quinn? As in the leader of the Cursed faction Quinn Talen?" Now things were starting to fall into place about who he really was. Why did their teacher have so many connections and power?

Now, he was standing in front of the world leaders. Equal to a president or prime minister in past times.

However, it was only through the few interactions he had that he was starting to learn just why the Cursed faction was allowed to be on the leaders table.

The first thing Shiro did was get down on one knee and bow his head down.

"Thank you grand leader for looking after me as a student. You protected me from punishment and at the same time your men have protected me again."

What Shiro was doing now was all natural, he didn't know how to react but thought he should at least be this respectful.

"You can get up. Don't worry, here I am just a teacher, and I don't make those in the Cursed faction do that type of thing so why would I make my students? The only thing I ask of you, is if you can be a little tight lipped about this whole incident, as for Sil, well it seems like the whole school already knows about him now." Quinn said, sounding a little disappointed.

He wanted Sil to make some friends while being here, but he had only been in the school two days, and if others thought he was still a student after his display, it would cause a lot of problems for Sil.

There would be students challenging him to fights, others asking for details about his family and more, it just wasn't worth the trouble.

"Actually?" Quinn said realising there was another solution. "Why don't we start again, head over to Peter, and ask him to change your appearance. I'll have to transfer you to another class, I won't be your teacher anymore but I'll get Chucky to transfer as well. I'm sure no one will realise he's no longer in this class, he seems to have that effect." Quinn said.

They had talked about what to do when Sil had come to him. Sil was the first person to explain what actually happened before Quinn had heard the rumours and the two of them were trying to figure out what he wanted to do, and surprisingly, Sil had said he wanted to stay in school.

"If this is the best way, then so be it." Sil said, ready to go invisible once more and head over to where Peter was.

"Wait!" Shiro shouted, as he could see Sil's legs disappearing.

"I wanted to ask you, your ability is strong and I currently don't have an ability, so I was wondering if you could teach it to me?" Shiro pleaded.

Sil looked at Quinn who did nothing but smile back.

"Let me give you some advice. My ability is not suited for just anyone and I wish to never spread this further, but if you are chasing after my ability because of strength then don't. Remember what I said about there being abilities stronger than that of the Graylash family, well you have one of them right in front of you now." Sil said, pointing towards Quinn.

"The shadow ability?" Shiro said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 973: Shadow books

Shiro continued to look at Quinn, not asking him the question he had deep down. It was as if he was intimated by who this person was after finding out who he was. For Quinn though, seeing he was debating internally on what to do, it wasn't a good sign.

"Let me ask you a question." Quinn finally said. "Do you want to join the Cursed faction, or are you only interested in joining because you want the power that Sil mentioned?"

At this point and time, although Shiro was interested in the Cursed faction, he still couldn't get out of his head that his life would be better to join either the Earthborn or the Graylash family, he just didn't know enough about the Cursed, and ultimately he knew he was doing it for the ability, and it was an ability he really didn't know about.

He was just taking Sil's word that it was an ability that was stronger than the Graylash. The sudden opportunity that was now in front of him was tempting.

He wasn't the only one that was internally debating. Honestly, even though Sam had suggested trying to teach humans the shadow ability to further help increase his soul weapon, Quinn wasn't sure it was a good idea for one reason. The ability 'Shadow Link'. It was a worry that was always on the back of Quinn's mind, that the shadow users could travel to one another at any point and time.

In this case, there was one thing that Quinn did learn that was important when deciding on who to teach the shadow more than anything. Loyalty, someone like Arthur was able to even take others with him, so if Quinn ever made another 'enemy' that knew the shadow ability, if they weren't loyal in the future it could cause a problem.

With the vampires that had been turned, at least there was a connection that would make them loyal on a surface level.

Looking at Shiro and based on the fact that he hadn't answered quite just yet, it seemed like he was yet to make a full decision.

"I'm sorry for wasting your time." Shiro bowed, with his face almost red as if he was embarrassed and then began to walk out of the room.

Soon after, Sil went to see Peter along with Chucky, and Quinn requested the paperwork to allow the two of them to be transferred to another class.

'Those guys are a worry but they should be okay.' Quinn thought, but still had Shiro on his mind.

Thinking about whether Shiro did eventually make the request to learn the ability, Quinn had some questions of his own. The Blade ability that had been explained by Vorden at the start of his first year at military school, had the ability to copy the MC cells of humans. At the time, when Quinn had learnt the shadow ability, Vorden was unable to copy his ability due to the vampire's body structure being slightly different to humans.

This was why, even though an ability like Peter's, which was able to be learnt by both vampires and humans, Vorden and Sil had both been unable to copy the ability that belonged to Peter.

Just because Vorden was unable to copy the shadow ability from Quinn, didn't mean that it was impossible for humans to learn, but there were a few things that did make him think this. It was when Quinn had discovered the ability book itself.

Learning the ability, it stated that one had to be blooded, or rather the system stated that, but the system although mostly right, wasn't always right. There were always ways to bypass things, especially with an ability like Vincent's.

In the first place, it wasn't clear why certain abilities were able to be learnt by humans, and some by vampires while others both. It was clear more research needed to be put into this, but it just never happened due to humans not knowing about this, and vampires not caring.

'Maybe I could be the researcher on this subject, with your help, of course.' Quinn said, talking to Vincent.

'And I suppose Shiro will be your test subject? Careful with what lines you are treading on.' Vincent warned sternly.

Another reason, why Quinn doubted one could learn the shadow, was because the ability book was discovered locked up on its own, and Quinn had assumed at the time, it was due to them not being able to find a person that was able to learn the ability.

'Was that really the case though? Maybe they were attacked at the time when they had just discovered the book, or maybe it was at a higher level than the person was capable of learning?"

Thinking about this, Quinn wondered if he was to teach Shiro, would it be best to teach it himself like he did so with the others from the Cursed faction. Although they were able to learn the ability, it was learnt at an incredibly slow pace.

'Vincent, if there was one book found there, then shouldn't there be others, and are there lower level shadow books?' Quinn asked.

'I'm afraid you are asking the wrong person Quinn. The Punishers were always treated as a separate family; what they did was down to them. To be honest, the

other families haven't even created books for their abilities. There might be one book in secret in their possession in case the family dies out, but there wouldn't be multiple copies. Perhaps when Arthur was going into his slumber he had decided to do this, or it was a request made by someone else.'

It was too bad that Quinn, now with Arthur being against him, was unable to ask the person directly.

However, it did mean there were chances that there were other shadow books out there, and they would have the proper cultivation techniques and methods to teach one the ability. Even if he couldn't use it to teach Shiro if he decided to, he could use it to improve the others in the Cursed faction.

Now the question was, where would the possible shadow books be? In Quinn's mind there were three places most likely for this. The first one would be where he had found the shadow book in the first place. When he first had arrived at the planet the place was far too dangerous for him, now though he was a completely different person.

No intermediate beast and rats were going to stop him from looking at the place all over.

'However, the military did already search that place quite thoroughly, with Paul.'

The other option was where Arthur was first found. After all, the Punishers had been relocated to that planet. After Arthur decided to go into eternal slumber, it made sense for one to perhaps create books for the future. Arthur, having spent so much time with the shadow ability, would have liked to pass on the knowledge that he had learnt to those underneath him.

Maybe he even felt the same way as Quinn and wished to teach it to all the vampires that had left with him.

'Thinking about going back there is a little worrying though.' Quinn thought. 'There is a chance that Arthur could still be there, and I remember there was meant to be a human settlement there.'

The more Quinn thought of Arthur's past actions, he just couldn't think of him as a bad guy. Ever since waking up all he had done was help Quinn and help humans. It hurt him inside to know something had changed in him.

'Well, I guess that leaves one more place. The fourteenth castle.'

The castle that originally belonged to the Punishers and was still standing in the vampire world.

It didn't take long for Quinn to take action, there weren't too many important matters in the school. He enjoyed his time here, but he still trusted Helen and Peter to deal with whatever mess came at them.

'Well maybe not Peter, but he would at least inform me.' Quinn thought.

Quinn had decided to contact the tenth castle directly, and in doing so he had gotten in contact with Paul. He had made his request clear, that he wanted to briefly return to the vampire world for a short time, in order for him to search the fourteenth castle.

Although, he thought that he might be able to do this without much trouble anyway. He didn't want to waltz in unannounced, especially since it was something to do with the shadow users. He was sure Bryce and the others might be on high alert after his little warning message.

Surprisingly, it didn't take long for them to get an answer back either. The request had been accepted. Quinn could go back to the vampire world in order to search the fourteenth castle. However, there was one restriction that was placed.

While he was to search the castle, Bryce wanted someone to attend with him.

"So what's your answer Quinn? If you want, I could ask that I go to your place, you don't have to come back here." Paul said over the call.

"No it's okay. I don't think it will be a problem and I have nothing to hide anyway." Quinn replied. "I would like to search for it myself. I'm sure there might be some things that will need my ability, and I can handle Kazz, don't worry."

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 974: Replacement teacher

As stated before, Quinn being in the position he was in, was free to leave as he wished. Even if he had classes to teach, such as the homeroom class and the beast weapons class, he just needed to inform them beforehand and that's exactly what he did.

To his surprise, the person who would be taking his homeroom class was Hayley. Honestly, Quinn was quite happy with the choice, considering how well the class had reacted to her the last time she had taught. On top of this, he remembered the times when he was at school and would often have to come to the medical room.

Hayley never seemed like a bad person, and anyone who was a doctor for the students had to be a caring person, or at least he hoped so. Healers were highly sought after, and it would have been easy for her to get a position at any top faction. Perhaps she had other reasons as to why she had chosen to stay with the military, like her father being a Head general at the time. Still, she had even been there when Peter and Layla were injured and tried to help the best she could, but he didn't know if that was just because she was actually Paul's daughter.

As for the person who would be taking over the beast weapon class, Quinn didn't know who that was as he didn't recognise the name but thought it would be fine if it was only for a few days anyway. He didn't plan to stay on the vampire planet for long, not after he had just come back.

It seemed like every time he returned, bad things would happen, so he didn't exactly have the best of memories for the place.

It was the start of the day and while Hayley was fine with being a substitute she did wonder what General Hardy had that was so important that he needed to leave so suddenly. Currently, she was having a cup of coffee and was in the teacher's lounge. A room where the teachers could rest and take a break. They had coffee machines, snacks, sofas and all sorts. Even a nice relaxing pod for one to take a quick power nap.

Inside the teacher's lounge, Hayley wasn't alone as she was talking to her work colleagues, Nathan, and Fay. The two other sergeants that were under Quinn and in the same group as each other.

"What's wrong? Hayley, you have a concerned look on your face, are you a little nervous being a homeroom teacher after being a doctor for so long?" Fay asked.

She gave out a big sigh.

"It's not that, it's about the Earthborn generals. They seem to be quite arrogant and remember what I told you about what happened, well it seems like they still are

planning to do something. I can't believe they just openly were talking about it as if I wasn't even there.

"These are our students as well, how are they meant to learn when the adults are secretly fighting and plotting behind their backs?"

It had been something that was on her mind since. The order of the military had changed quite a bit due to Oscar, and many were displeased with it. In the past, Hayley would have to obey completely to any of the head generals, regardless if they were part of a different military base.

And, Innu, Samantha and Sach used to be some of the best of the best when it came to the strength of the military generals. However, now with the new structure, technically she was only to obey Hardy, who was her head general, and Oscar the overall supreme commander.

But she understood what Oscar wanted to show, that the military wasn't a single force, the military was a group composed of all these groups that would share resources and forces. Of course, some didn't like this and it was hard to get used to, but what kept them together was the idea that they still had Oscar at the very top.

After all, the other groups in the alliance had their own personal forces that were just as strong.

"From what you told me before, it seems like Hardy is no small fry in the Cursed faction. If he has that much power, then I wouldn't worry too much about what they plan to do with him." Said Nathan. "Honestly, sometimes these people need to be filtered out of the system whether it's through their own stupid actions or someone playing their hand, it was the same with Duke, and I know how we all felt about him."

Taking on what Nathan said, she just hoped this whole thing didn't get ugly, there had to be a reason why Oscar was letting things play out the way they were.

The homeroom class went on well for Hayley, obviously there were many in the class that asked 'Where did teacher Hardy go?'. But it was easy to explain since he was a Head general. They imagined he would be busy discussing deals, or even doing something with the military group rather than the school.

However, the beast class was a different story. For Quinn's replacement they had grabbed a teacher from one of the other groups in the Earthborn who went by the name Aden. It wasn't that he was a bad teacher, although the students still hadn't found that out yet, it was the fact that he kept complaining about Hardy's teaching methods.

"How could he just let you all try out any weapons you like?" Aden puffed. "You guys are only kids and hardly know much about our abilities and next to nothing about beast weapons. You, what's your ability?"

"Erghh telekinesis?" Venus answered.

"With your type of ability a ranged beast weapon is best, or at least a projectile that you can throw. There are some users that have a dagger tied to a strong piece of string and use that in combat as well."

Aden carried on this way, going from student to student asking what their ability was and recommending a type of weapon or would outright hand them one. The students themselves were conflicted by this method.

Some of them were struggling with picking a beast weapon to use, after all, there were so many and they liked that someone told them what was best. While others didn't like the fact that they had been shoved a weapon that they didn't particularly want, even if it suited their ability.

It was two different styles that left the classroom divided, and there was one particular problem when it came to one student.

"And what ability do you have?" Aden asked.

Shiro looked around for a few seconds, he didn't want to answer because he knew it would make him a target amongst others, but someone else who used to go to his school shouted out the answer for him,

"He doesn't have any ability, sir!" A student shouted out.

The others who didn't know about this started to gossip, as it was a rare sight and were wondering how he had gotten so far or his reasoning for not having one.

He was waiting for the teacher to say something, but rather than say anything, he just moved on, and Shiro could see the words he mouthed with his lips under his breath.

"Waste of time."

Seeing this, Shiro was angry, angry with himself.

'Quinn, did you really go through all this as well?' Shiro thought, as he was embarrassed and ignored as if he was just a piece of trash.

Using a teleporter at the school, Quinn was able to travel aboard the Cursed ship in nearly an instant. There was a quick hello to everyone as he walked past, but there was no time for idle chit chat as Quinn wanted to get this done as soon as possible.

From the Cursed ship, he would use the teleporter to head back to the vampire world. Although he would have to travel through two teleporters, it was better than having a teleporter at school that linked to the vampire world.

Once stepping through, he had finally appeared in the tenth castle directly into the new throne room. It was the normal dark colours that surrounded the large hall, with large stained glass windows overlooking the area. In front a red carpet laid out going all the way all to the arching doors. What did take Quinn by surprise, was that there were two people there to greet him. Paul for one, and the other was Kazz.

'Wow, Bryce really does like to work fast.'

"It's nice to meet you again Quinn." Paul said. "Things have been going well here, I hope they have been so for you on the other side as well."

Walking away from the teleporter, he walked forward and Kazz started to follow.

"A few small problems here and there, but nothing I can't handle, and by the way, your daughter is doing well. I hope you two can see each other soon."

Paul, had one of his few genuine smiles on his face after hearing this

Quinn soon left the room and his next destination was the fourteenth castle.

'I wonder what I will find there?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 975: Same same, but different

After Sil had visited Peter, once again using his soul weapon and putting on a new mud mask, Sil was able to change his appearance. This time, there needed to be quite the change to what Sil would look like, since others would know if he just changed something like one's hair colour. With Peter not being the best on the spot thinker, he could only produce what he could see in front of him.

A few seconds later, Sil looked like an almost identical copy of Chucky. A plain ordinary looking face with a short haircut. This time nothing that would make one stand out, however, there was one slight difference and that was now Sil's hair was jet black, while Chucky's hair was more of a darker brown.

"Why would you do that, we almost look exactly the same?" Chucky asked.

"Almost look the same?" Peter thought, and only realised himself that he had given the two of them a different hair colour. "I must have forgotten a detail while making the mask. Trust me, you don't stand out, and just because there are two of you, it won't make a difference. They might even think you're the same person."

Chucky knew who Peter was, he was meant to be a reliable person, named the Cursed ship protector. This was due to the incident that had happened right when the Crow's had joined, as Peter dealt with an annoyance quickly, but Chucky was beginning to realise that fighting might be the only thing he was good at.

What was worse, was the class that Chucky and Sil had now transferred to, was Peter's class. Although Peter wasn't the main teacher, he was an assistant. Someone who would often just sit in the back and stare at the students.

If anything, Peter was kind of a frightening figure to the students. When Peter had first joined, the teacher had asked him if he could help with several things, or what he was good at, but it seemed like Peter didn't know anything and everything he touched or tried to assist with would just end up being worse.

There were even a number of expensive items that when Peter couldn't figure out how to use, he would resort to hitting it, and breaking it altogether.

Therefore the teacher asked him to just control the class and catch the misbehaved kids that weren't paying attention. Chucky, watched Peter's method for this, and found him quite frightening. If a few kids in class would start to speak out of turn, he would appear out of nowhere standing right behind them, peeking over their shoulder.

He could keep eye contact, and wouldn't even blink until eventually the students looked away. There were then several students who had attempted to challenge Peter to a staring competition but no one succeeded and they all turned their heads.

The kids could feel a tingle in their spine and and heavy weight in the air. After that, they never spoke again.

"Is this why they call him zombie Peter?" The students thought.

"Look at his eyes, and even when we don't think he is paying attention, somehow he's able to hear us. He's always watching."

"I'm having nightmares. One time I woke up and I thought I saw him standing in the corner of the room."

"Yeah,I heard him shouting, don't look at me, stop stop!"

"It might have been him, I think he never sleeps, there's a bet going around that if anyone can get a photo of him sleeping, there will be a reward of at least 50,000 credits."

For Chucky though, this was just the tip of the iceberg. What was the worst thing, was when the two of them had transferred over, Peter was in charge of making the new name for Sil. After all, now everyone knew Sil and was looking for him, he needed a new alias and he had decided to go with Lis.

'It was as if he didn't even try, you think people aren't going to be able to work out that it's just Sil spelt backwards?' Chucky thought.

Nonetheless, he was happy that Sil could keep on continuing classes. After being with him a while he was also quite surprised that Sil still wanted to still attend school. He thought based on how shy and afraid of everything, he hated school but it didn't seem to be the case.

After Chucky had learnt this, the whole thing seemed a bit heartwarming and now Chucky wanted to do what he could to help him out.

Still he had to be careful to not make him angry, especially after witnessing his power.

---

Over where Shiro, Venus and Swin were, they were currently in another beast class lesson, run by Aden again, and today he seemed to be even angrier than yesterday.

Today's lesson was about teaching the kids how to activate the beats weapon, in order to draw the power from it. However, a lot of students were finding it difficult. Aden had gotten so angry at one, he had just whacked the weapon out of the students hand and caused it to throb bright red.

"I thought he was angry on the first day we met him, but now he seems like he was calm the other day, what's wrong with him?" Venus whispered over to Swin.

"I don't know, but I think he's pretty annoyed that he has to teach two classes now and cover for Hardy, at least that's what seems to be the route of the problem." Swin replied.

There were more reasons than that. It was true that Aden was annoyed that his workload had increased, but it wasn't like he wasn't getting compensated for doing so. At first he thought it would be as simple as just replicating what needed to be done in his own class.

Yet, the first lesson had to be spent reteaching them due to what Hardy had taught, and now they couldn't seem to progress with the second lesson either.

"What is wrong with you guys. The other classes have already all learnt how to activate the beast weapons and now are moving onto the next stage!" Aden complained.

What Aden didn't know, was that a lot of the students that were attending General Hardy's class were actually from class 2A. Knowing that they had weak abilities, or thier MC cells could never be improved upon, they had decided to take the beast class.

On top of this, his demonstration in class, his speeches, had actually inspired a lot of them. So a lot of low level students, who were slow or weak, were attending the beast class. Aden, was thinking that it was due to Hardy's bad teaching, not realising this was the case.

Still, at least Aden did carry on teaching them as he should, and a light slap on the wrist here and there from anger was as far as he would go.

"I feel bad for Shiro?" Swin whispered while the two of them were pretending to try and activate their weapons. They too didn't really understand the concept behind it, and were avoiding the teacher afraid of getting a slap themselves, at the same time it seemed like the teacher was avoiding them.

However, there was one person he didn't even try to look at even once, and that was Shiro. Who had been left on his own since Aden had become a teacher. He was on his own trying to learn how to activate the weapons, and unknown to everyone else, he had already succeeded, but Shiro wouldn't brag, because he knew it wouldn't get him anywhere.

'I'm one step closer to proving myself, if Quinn and Sil won't teach me their ability, then I still need to show through handwork that I can be put to use.' Shiro thought.

When class ended, Aden rallied up all the students and just shook his head as he looked at them all. Out of the hundred and fifty or so students, only twenty five were able to activate the weapons, which was appalling.

Due to how slow others were at learning, it took some time for him to even go around to reach everyone. Before he knew it, the class was over.

"Look, I'm not trying to be an angry teacher but I just don't want you guys to embarrass yourselves." Aden said. "After next week, all the beast weapon classes are going to have a joint class, and we're going to have a little competition. Based on how well you do, you will be awarded points that will go towards your Cursed house.

"Honestly, if you guys go out there now like this, you're all going to be slaughtered."

Some of the students were nervous after finding out about this news. They already felt bad not knowing how to activate their weapons and learning this just gave them more pressure. Usually in sparring matches, including beast weapons ones, they were allowed to use their ablates aswell. To simulate true warfare.

'Maybe this is my chance to show myself, if all the other generals from the other groups are going to be there.' Shiro thought.

While Venus and Swim had another thought.

'A week's time, I hope General Hardy is back by then, otherwise I feel like we're going to get nowhere with this teacher, maybe he can teach us a few things. Our whole class is going to become a laughing stock.' Swin thought.

'Hardy, Just what are you doing?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 976: The fourteenth castle secrets

While Quinn was at the tenth castle, he didn't want to be seen by any of the others. After all, he didn't plan on staying here for a long time. He knew how much the vampires respected leaders and how much a morale boost it would be if he was here, but he didn't want to get their hopes up. Learning that everything was going okay and there had been no problems was enough for Quinn.

"Bryce didn't inform the others of my return did he?" Quinn wondered, as he walked down the castle stairs with Kazz. It had been a while since the two of them talked, but ever since the fight with Bryce and the time he had spent with her, he felt like the two of them were now on neutral ground.

At least no longer enemies that were trying to rip each other's throat out.

"I don't know how much I'm permitted to tell you." Kazz replied. "However, I will say that Bryce seems to be doing more than he is allowed for you. Something like this would usefully have to be voted on by the council and then the king would get a say, or the King can ask for a vote, but no such thing happened. This agreement for you to search the castle is a secret."

Although Quinn wondered why such a thing needed to be kept a secret, he was fine if it did. He would rather not have the other family members know what he was doing in the first place. Because of this, Quinn carefully used his shadow travel to move between the tenth castle to the fourteenth castle.

From the outside, it was an impressive piece of work. Nearly all the castles looked identical apart from three. One of them being the king's castle in the centre, it was larger than the others but still fit in style, the other was the castle they were staring at now.

Rather than being created with rugged spikes and gothic features it had a more classic castle feel with several cylinder towers and long walls. One of the most noticeable things were the giant black chains that would lead up to the very top of the main castle.

"Do they have a particular use or are they just for show?" Quinn asked.

"Isn't that what you here to find out?" Kazz replied. She stood there looking at Quinn as if he was waiting to do something, but even he didn't know where to start.

The last castle that looked different from the others, was now the tenth castle with its new and improved upgrades from the system.

Before approaching the door, a voice in Quinn's head was heard.

'Careful Quinn, remember the tower that Arthur had slept in last time? He had set up a trial for anyone who dared to climb it, perhaps there is something similar in his castle.' Vincent warned.

Taking the warning onboard, Quinn proceeded cautiously.

"Has anyone else entered the fourteenth castle, since Arthur and us?" Quinn asked. Remembering there was one time that Quinn had been brought along, and that was when he had learnt of Arthur's tale as well.

"As I said before, Usually with these types of matters a vote would be cast. After all, one leader entering another's castle is the equivalent of declaring war. Whenever a vote would take place, the result was always the same, to leave it be.

"You see, some thought that maybe going inside the castle would activate something. Warn the Punishers out there that something was up, and the one thing many of the vampires didn't want was for them to come back. While others respected the Punishers and thought it should be left untouched for their rightful owners."

Now, Quinn was starting to understand why Bryce had decided to agree to all of this behind their backs, but as long as it benefited Quinn, he wouldn't care.

Going up to the door, Quinn could see the normal strange lock-like combination. One that was on all of the other castles.

"You don't happen to know the code do you? Or got it from Muka?" Quinn asked.

Hearing this answer, Kazz didn't reply but she was kind of disappointed. It didn't matter though, because with the skill shadow travel, one was able to travel on the ground and they could get past any wall. Another frightening thing about the Punishers to the other vampires.

After using shadow travel one more time, the two of them popped up in the castle, and the automatic light crystals started to light up as they entered each room and walked down each hallway. Although the outside might have looked different, the inside of the castle reminded Quinn a lot of his. Untouched, unused and not lived in.

The search through the castle was quite a tedious one, as there were many rooms and the whole place was vast and large. Quinn would have liked the help of others, but couldn't trust someone else in case they missed something, and at the same time, Kazz wasn't leaving Quinn's side even for a second.

Luckily, Quinn found that with his system, using the inspect skill would usually show him if there was anything worth looking at in certain rooms. Going through

each of the floors, searching them physically and using his inspect skill, Quinn was finding it hard to find anything.

'It would make sense, when the Punishers left this place they probably took everything important with them.'

Eventually though, near the top floor, Quinn had stumbled across something. It was either a library room, or an office. It was hard to tell because there was a desk but the room was filled with books from side to side.

Quinn remembered being in here before, one time when Arthur had brought them, there was a secret compartment that was used to hide alcohol. Using his inspection skill, he was able to spot the secret place, which pleased him. It meant, using the inspect skill, he was likely to find something else as well.

It wasn't long either until he stumbled across something. His inspection skill revealed that behind the bookshelf, there was something else, as if it was a hidden room. Using the great vampire strength. It didn't take much for him to move the shelf.

'That certainly seems a bit lax of security to be hiding something like this?' Vincent thought.

However, when they got inside and found out what was in it, Quinn understood why. There were no treasures, ability books or secret powerful weapons. Instead, it was more like another library inside the hidden room. A library where all the books were written by Arthur himself.

Going to the dusty shelf, Quinn had grabbed about five of them, grouping them together, and then sat on the floor crossed leg. Placing the pile of his books to one side and taking one of them.

"What are you doing, are those useful?" Kazz asked.

"Not really?" Quinn said as he started to skim through the first few pages. "It seems like all these books are Arthur's personal journal during his life."

"Then why are you reading them?" Kazz asked.

"Because I need to know what type of person Arthur is."

One by one, Quinn would read through the journals and as expected it really was Arthur documenting his life. What was even more impressive, was the starting journals were written about the time before he had been turned into a vampire.

How he had lived his life as King Arthur. From all the words Quinn read, one after another, he could tell that Arthur was a good king. A good leader for the humans

back in their time. A king who would fight on the front line for his people. Someone who cared about each and all of them dearly.

"Did the vampires do something to them?" Quinn wondered. "Is that what set him off? It would make sense if he learnt about the past or something like that?"

Still, only reading the starting journals, Quinn was unable to find out much. Only how Arthur felt, but soon they had gone into a time when Arthur had been turned into a Punisher. It seemed like it had become a habit for Arthur to document everything. They weren't details of everyday life, but details of crucial events or important memories for himself.

He even wrote about the day that he was turned, and when he found all his knights being hurt. Everything was how Arthur had described it to them, and what Quinn had seen in the vision the Boneclaw had given him.

'I guess when you have lived that long, it's nice to have a hobby and do something like this.'

Quinn sat down there reading every single little bit, going through all the journals. He was able to read at a faster pace than a human, as he could process information faster, while flicking through the pages and seeing the words, but it still took quite a long time.

Even Kazz had opened one of the books, but after reading it for a short while she closed it, realising there really wasn't anything important.

However, soon Quinn stumbled across an interesting subject that Arthur was looking into. It seemed like Arthur was researching where abilities had originally come from, and when was the first appearance of an ability, even among originals.

Linking to this, there were a few main things, one he had written details about the True first king, not the Eno family king, but the one before that who had the shadow ability.

'The True King was only captured and not dead. No longer has their ability, but could still be dangerous if woken up. Eno advises to never wake up the True King. Even without an ability he has the power to overcome them all.'

For some reason, knowing that this was written by Arthur, made Quinn shiver thinking about the true king's strength.

'The strongest of the original vampires, but where did he get his ability?' Arthur wrote.

Lastly though, it seemed like he had found a link, but was never able to explore it.

'First abilities, linked back to a giant stone tablet.'

Quinn had never thought much about the world learning about abilities, he just thought humans naturally evolved to learn them, and many kept them a secret, but now knowing what Arthur had found, it seemed like it was more likely to have come from something, or someone.

'Giant stone tablet, that reminds me a lot of that giant stone table that was on the Blade island as well...'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 977: The Punishers' leader

Quinn continued to read through Arthur's journals, he was starting to become fascinated about learning where abilities originated from. Arthur had written it in such detail that Quinn felt like he was learning about each detail himself.

According to the journals, there were times when Arthur would have a quiet period in his life. Depending on who the king was at the time, and as the Punisher's reputation grew among vampires, less crimes were committed and Eno's goal was starting to work.

These peaceful periods could last for years and due to the Punisher's special ability, even if Arthur was away, the vampires feared that he could come back at any time.

During his search, he had found that there were a few people with abilities starting to emerge. Arthur would be able to connect with them by showing off his own ability, sometimes he would use the shadow, other times he would just show his super strength or speed and play it off as an ability.

When asking how one had learnt of an ability, the answer was often someone taught them it, but this was quite vague as to who, or if it was a family member. The people who would know the real answer were already dead.

However, some people did have knowledge of what their ancestors passed on. Saying that an image of a giant stone tablet appeared in their head before the powers had come to them.

From the current set of vampires, none of them were the original ability carriers. No Originals were awake and at this point and time, Eno had gone into eternal slumber, and he didn't want to wake his friend from his sleep just to answer a curiosity of his that had become a hobby.

'It looks like there isn't any more information on abilities after this book.' Quinn said, placing it down and realised he was coming to an end of all the journals.

After reading the last one, it explained the war that was brewing between the Punishers and the vampires. Having finally decided to take his people and leave the place. The journals ended there. When the castle was abandoned and never updated.

'I wonder if he continued writing journals on the other planet in his tower. Maybe there were some places me and Fex missed, it would be interesting to know if he ever found out about the abilities, or discovered the stone tablet he was looking for.' Quinn thought.

'You have a point, it seemed he was quite intrigued by this. After a certain amount of years, still living becomes quite a chore for some, and I imagine it was even

worse for Arthur. Finding the origin of abilities could have been the only thing that kept him going.'

It looked like there was nothing left in the room, so getting up off the ground, Quinn was ready to move. He didn't know how long he had been reading the books for, but Kazz was no longer in the room. Exiting, he could see Kazz had her head on the desk with it tilted on its side.

'Is she sleeping? A vampire sleeping while on duty, her? I must have been in there a really long time for that to happen?' He thought.

Walking up to her slowly, Quinn could see her delicate face, her hair that was placed in two buns making her appearance seem a bit childish.

When Kazz first arrived she acted a bit like a child, but soon Quinn knew it was all an act to let his guard down, she was quite the clever girl, although a little lost.

'Who can blame her when you have a father like Bryce.' Quinn thought.

All vampires were extraordinary in beauty compared to humans, it was as if they didn't have a blemish on their skin. There was no need to put makeup on unless they wanted to make their pale skin seem darker.

Looking at Kazz's face he thought the same thing.

'I think she would look better with her hair down.' Quinn thought, as he got closer, but a crack in the floor caused her to spring up.

"What are you doing!" She said having already extended her fingernails. "Are you trying to kill me in my sleep?!"

"I was just walking around carefully because I didn't want to wake you." Quinn said, as he pointed to the side of her own mouth.

Kazz then could feel something on her chin a little wet and realised that she had dribbled a little while in her sleep.

"Come on, let's get out of here!" Kazz said storming out of the room.

'Isn't it her job to keep an eye on me?' Quinn thought, but admittedly thought the whole thing was quite cute.

'She is a woman who is many years your age Quinn.' Vincent chuckled. 'First Helen and now Kazz, I didn't realise you liked older women.'

'Wouldn't that mean you had also dated a woman who was many, many years younger than you?' Quinn snapped back.

'Careful, that's your great great, so many great grandmother's you're talking about.'

Hearing this, just made the whole thing awkward and Quinn continued his search, seeing that Kazz was outside the door waiting for him.

The search from room to room on each floor began again, and it truly looked like it had been cleared out. What was strange though, was some items seemed to have been moved recently.

'Is there a way for Arthur to return to this place as he wishes?' Quinn asked.

'As I said, I really don't know much about the Punishers at all, but perhaps there are skills that the system does not know of, and things Arthur created himself.'

Hearing this, Quinn was now a little on high alert. From the dust having been moved in certain places, and other things in other places, it certainly looked like someone had been here not too long ago.

If Arthur had returned, was Quinn ready to fight him? Thinking about this, his body started to feel a little sore, from the dreadful beating and state he was left in last time.

Kazz also seemed to be a little uneasy, and Quinn was wondering if she was speaking through Jill, communicating this all back to Bryce.

Nothing of interest was found, even in the throne room, which looked like every other throne room. However, one last room was locked behind another special combination lock. Judging by the size from the outside, it was as equally big as the throne room.

"What's wrong, is something inside?" Kazz asked.

"No, I just find it a little strange that this room is locked," Quinn said, as he used the shadow travel and took them inside.

Getting out of the shadow. The first thing that caught his eye was another throne. Each castle had one like before, but this one was different. The red carpet on the floor went from the doors leading up the small stairs and finally it reached the grand chair, a bright red chair that was quite clear in colour.

Seeing the chair herself, Kazz's heartbeat started to accelerate and beat a little louder. A thought had crossed her mind but she was unsure what the chair was.

Quinn using his inspect skill on the chair, he too was truly shocked.

"A throne made completely of blood crystals...How many vampires were killed to make that thing?"

It wasn't just a chair that had been crafted using blood crystals, like a blood weapon would be, it was as if thousands of blood crystals had been fused together to make such a chair.

"That man is sick!" Kazz couldn't help but say. "How could someone happily sit on a chair everyday that reminded them of what they had done, is he proud?"

No, Quinn knew that wasn't the case from the journals he read. Kazz was right about one thing, it was a reminder. A reminder to himself what his cruel job was. In his journals he felt like a villain at times, and the vampires sometimes saw him that way, and he had to stick to that role, even convincing himself.

Something was drawing Quinn to the chair, he started walking towards it, and was fascinated by the red colour glow. He didn't know what it was about the chair that was drawing him in. Then when he had reached the top of the small platform, he looked at Kazz who looked back at him strangely.

First Quinn, slid his fingers across the armrest, he could feel an energy but it was trapped inside the crystal, then finally, he decided to sit in it.

[The fourteenth castle has been abandoned]

[The castle wishes for a new leader]

[Would you like the accept the title, 'Leader of the Punishers?']

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 978: The Punisher Title

When Quinn had decided to come to the fourteenth castle, he expected to find some secrets. Either skill books or maybe learn more about the shadow. What he wasn't expecting, was to find a throne made out of pure blood crystals and once sitting in it, to receive a title.

'Leader of the Punishers?' Quinn read out in his mind. It was clear what the title meant, but unfortunately, Quinn was unable to see the details of the title or what effects it would bring. It looked like the system wanted him to either accept or decline the offer at this very moment.

Titles were very powerful things, given certain buffs when fighting and also other things. Allowing him to gain reputation points and even building the towers at the tenth castle, but this was why he was struggling with the decision.

'If I choose to accept this title, does it get rid of the one from the tenth family?'

So far no titles had been lost, there was even one that could be selected that was a stark reminder of his dear friend Edward, however it could never be used to its full capacity now. Still, it seemed this one would conflict with his others, but perhaps he could just switch between them when needed like the tenth title.

'I believe the system will possibly warn you like in a game.' Vincent chimed in.  
'Think about it, when you select yes on this title, it should proceed by saying,  
accepting this title will get rid of xx title. I played quite a few games in my past.'

'Vincent is a gamer, and he's clearly proud of it.' Quinn thought, honestly if the tenth title did disappear it would only be in the system anyway. Surely, Bryce and the other council members would still think of Quinn as the leader, regardless of what the system said.

The thing he would lose most was the towers. At this point, Quinn was leaning towards accepting the title, and he had nearly selected yes, but there was one last thing that was troubling him.

'What will happen to Arthur, what will he think? Will he know I have taken over his castle, or will he think I have decided to become a part of the Punishers and part of the vampire settlement?'

In the end, it was this thought that caused Quinn to push yes and accept the title. Arthur was coming and he needed every bit of help and power that was needed.

[The title 'Leader of the Punishers' has been granted]

[You have unlocked the fourteenth castle area zone]

[Reputation points will be granted based on how fellow Punishers respect you]

[The store can now be used in the fourteenth zone]

As soon as Quinn accepted the title, the seat started to light up slightly, and Kazz was getting ready to get out of the place, but soon the light dimmed and disappeared. In Kazz's eyes, not much had changed, but quite a few things in Quinn's system had been updated.

The first set of rewards were similar to what Quinn got when he had received the tenth title. He got reputation points that were based on how people from that family looked at you, although he wasn't sure what Punishers meant. Did it include Arthur, or all those that he had taught the shadow skill to.

The good thing was it looked like the reputation points earned from the tenth leader title could be used to build things in the fourteenth zone. On top of this, the titles were able to be switched out to each other. There was no loss of the tenth leader title.

'Maybe it's best not to build anything for now. Although I have accepted this title, I don't want the other families to know about it. Besides, who would attack a castle with no people, who or what do I have to protect?'

The next set of rewards were more based on skills that could be used while Quinn was in the fourteenth area and had the title active.

[While in the fourteenth zone, the user may borrow and give their shadow to other Punishers at will]

Before when Quinn had borrowed the shadow from the others, it was forcefully taken but after speaking to them, they willingly wanted to help Quinn out at the time.

It sounded like as long as they were in the fourteenth zone, Quinn was able to take the shadow regardless of where they were and give it back, or perhaps help those that were weaker.

'It's a shame that it's only limited to the fourteenth area, but it just means I have to increase my shadow as much as I can in the first place.'

Other than that, there didn't seem to be any grand rewards, so Quinn decided to check out the map that would show him to the area of the fourteenth castle. When looking through this, Quinn also noticed something else a bit off about the castle map itself.

When going to his location, he could see that even where he was right now, there was another room behind them, behind the throne.

Quinn immediately stood up, which caused Kazz to jump back a few feet.

"Quinn, tell me now, have you gone mad!" Kazz said. "Has that chair taken over your mind?!"

Quinn looked at her for a few seconds.

"I'm glad to know that you won't outright attack me and at least ask me first," Quinn replied with a smile.

Walking up to the wall behind the throne. Quinn could see a giant rug like material that had been hung behind the wall. Ripping it off to the side, another circle combination lock could be seen.

Going up to it, Quinn wondered something and grazed his fingers against the lock.

[The castle has accepted you as the leader]

[Would you like to unlock the door?]

Quinn didn't think much of it, and the wheel started to turn itself until it eventually unlocked for him on the spot, and started to push itself open.

"I thought you didn't know any of the combinations to the locks?" Kazz asked.

"This one didn't need one." Quinn lied and started to walk through the secret door.

Kazz was a little hesitant following, but soon did, and she stayed away from the red crystal throne, acting as if it was bad luck if it was to touch her.

When they had entered the room, she could see Quinn standing there still, and surrounding him were pieces of rubble all over the floor.

"What is this? Did you do this?" Kazz asked.

"You would have heard me if I did," Quinn said, lifting one of the pieces of rubble, and Kazz had done the same as well.

Quinn didn't know what he was expecting, but he wasn't expecting this. It seemed like the room had several walls that had certain things written on them, or illustrations but it had all been destroyed and quite recently as well.

With Kazz and Quinn trying to put pieces together, they could tell they were illustrations and writing, but it seemed like pieces were either missing or had been turned to dust. After getting most of the larger pieces together, Kazz had figured out what it was.

"Damn him!" Kazz yelled. "This was a training room, one that would teach the others how to use the shadow. Some of the other leaders have rooms like this as well, but it's useless like this."

Quinn had thought the same thing. The words didn't need to be written down in a book, but it looked like all the techniques that Arthur had learned over the years had been drawn out and explained on the walls of this large room.

'In the past, it was a quick way to teach one your ability. You would lock them in a room, and with all the illustrations and text with no distractions, the person would get into a certain state. They would feel as if the words and text from the walls were coming out to them.' Vincent explained.

'Why did he destroy it? Did he think the other vampires would come back and try to learn the powers? Was he stopping them from getting the shadow ability, or was he stopping me?' Quinn thought.

However, perhaps Arthur was missing one important detail about Quinn. He didn't know Quinn was different to other vampires, and different to the other Punishers. For he also had the system.

[Inspect]

Details of each piece of broken rubble were seen, and the system started to fill up a small progress bar.

[Gathering information about the shadow]

[You have successfully learnt more about the shadow.]

[New skills have been unlocked]

Although Quinn still was unable to teach others the shadow properly, he had gained far more than he had expected from this little trip.

'Whatever you were hoping to do Arthur, I'm catching up to you.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 979: The return of the king

After using the inspect skill on the pieces of rubble, Quinn had gained three new shadow skills in the system. He wondered if the entirety of the walls was present, and hadn't been destroyed if he would have been able to extract more information from the room.

Perhaps the system only gave him the skills it could figure out from what was there.

'Some large pieces are missing from the wall. Did Arthur take them with him so they couldn't rebuild it back together like me and Kazz was doing? Which means the other pieces of the shadow might be with Arthur, but why didn't he just put all the pieces of the walls into his dimensional storage?' Some things certainly didn't make sense, and there was always the chance that it wasn't Arthur as well, but who else could enter the fourteenth castle and would know about all these secrets.

Looking at Kazz she was frustrated. She was still trying to put pieces together but some of it was just small pieces of dust. She wasn't paying attention to him, but Quinn wasn't going to try any of the skills out, right now. He would do so in his own time, away from the prying eyes of others.

'I've learnt that I never know who will be my enemy in the future.' Quinn thought.

When Kazz finally gave up, the two of them decided to leave the rooms and Quinn also closed the door to the room behind them. Making sure it was locked up as well.

'If I was able to learn a few things from what pieces were present, if they did put it back together then maybe they could find something out as well.'

Having searched every area of the castle now, and Quinn knew this due to the new map of the castle he had obtained, it was time for him to return back to the school. His work was complete, and he would have to try to figure out another way he could teach the others the shadow.

Maybe the information from his system could be extracted somehow, but he could try to figure out that bit later. Walking past the red crystal chair, Quinn looked at it for a few seconds.

'Could we smash it up and take the crystals, maybe we can use it to create something. It's a bit of a waste just having it as a chair.'

'I think you should leave things as they are in the castle.' Vincent said. 'In the first place having blood crystals is considered a crime.'

'So you don't think that now Bryce knows about it due to Kazz, he won't take the crystals and claim it for himself?' Quinn asked, and to this Vincent didn't have an answer

'I believe the throne is somehow linked to the castle and the system. Destroying the chair could very well get rid of your title.' Vincent argued.

Now this was something, Quinn didn't want to happen. He looked at the door ahead, and looked at the lock on it. Looking at the lock behind him, he figured that Muka wouldn't have known the combination to the hidden room, since it was kept a secret, but maybe there was something he could do with the other one.

Walking up to the door, Quinn placed his hand on it, and soon had a smile. Now he was the leader of the castle, Quinn could open all locks, but not just that, he could also change the combinations on them, and he decided to do this very thing.

A clicking sound was heard, but none of the parts needed to be moved, so Kazz wasn't too suspicious about what he had done.

As long as they didn't have the shadow ability, or the combination to the lock it would keep them out. And even if they did try to attack, now as the owner, Quinn was sure the system would warn him like it had done so in the past.

However, Quinn didn't want to rely on the system. He was afraid that there might be times in the future where it wouldn't warn him. Then it would only be his own fault. Maybe one day the system would completely disappear just as easily as it appeared. For now, he would use the advantages it would come with, but try not to rely on it.

Before leaving, Kazz looked at the red crystal throne one more time. She couldn't stop glancing at it, and thanks to her being distracted. His actions with the door didn't seem weird.

"Come on, let's go!" Quinn shouted. "I think you might be the one who becomes possessed by it in a second if you keep looking at it like that!"

Running over to where Quinn was, the two of them entered his shadow and started to go through each of the floors heading down to the very last one.

Now, no longer needing to search each room they were able to go out of the castle far quicker than before, and once they were out, they appeared in the fourteenth inner area. Quinn cancelled his skill, and the two of them popped out, walking on the surface once more.

"So will you be reporting back to Bryce now? Is there anything I need to do or can I just go back?" Quinn asked.

Kazz waited a few seconds before replying and now Quinn was sure of it. Everything that was happening, everything that had been seen in the fourteenth castle was communicated back to Bryce. Through Jill, the two didn't need to be close, and it seemed even now she was asking him what he wanted to do.

"You are free to go back, if there is any trouble we can get in touch with you, and we will keep your Knight, Paul, informed and updated." Kazz answered.

Just as the two of them were about to part ways, a strange black smog in the air was heading towards them. It moved as if it was alive, searching for something and once it found what it was looking for, it latched on to a destination and headed straight towards the two of them.

'That smog looks the same as when the Boneclaw is summoned?' Quinn thought.

And sure enough, when the smog had reached an area around fifteen meters away from Quinn, it descended to the ground and the fog started to form into the Boneclaw it was. It stood there with its long dangling arms and its giant body.

"Hey, isn't that your familiar? What's it doing coming here now?" Kazz thought.

However, Quinn didn't know either, why didn't the bone claw just attach itself to him like it would do in the past. Was something wrong?

The Boneclaw then lifted one of its long dangling fingers that was like a claw and pointed straight towards Quinn.

"You..." A deep voice said. "Prove...yourself."

Quinn wasn't really sure what was happening and it seemed like Kazz had a better idea, as she quickly extended her nails and moved away.

"Quinn, get ready, don't you see what's happening!" She shouted. "The Boneclaw, it doesn't think you are worthy enough to be its master anymore. It's challenging you to a fight to the death."

Quinn had heard the stories about familiars, and how they would rather die than work for a weak master, and if the situation came to be they would try to kill their master. However, Quinn was much stronger now, than when the Boneclaw had first found him, so why would it attempt to do this?

A little dazed as to how this situation came to be, soon the system had given him the answers he was looking for.

[The Boneclaw has regained its lost strength]

[It no longer believes you are fit to be its master]

[Prove yourself and win back the Boneclaw's trust]

The last thing Quinn had expected was a fight with his own familiar. Something that had saved his life a couple of times in the past, but now it was trying to kill him.

"I guess I have no choice." Quinn said, as he activated the shadow and it rose behind his back.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 980: A tricky opponent

On Fex's execution day, Kazz had seen the power of the Boneclaw, back then, it was able to go toe to toe with her father, until eventually its energy was running low. She knew the Boneclaw was an incredibly strong familiar that not many vampires would be able to handle.

However, Quinn was someone who had even bested her father in a fight. Yet, for some reason, the Boneclaw had attempted to challenge Quinn now. When he was possibly at his strongest.

'Something had to have changed in the Boneclaw's reasoning, is Quinn's desire from before no longer matching up with its, or did something happen to the Boneclaw to make it feel this way?'

Finding out the answer to the question wouldn't help the situation. What she needed to do right now was decide if she was going to help Quinn or not.

'Is the Boneclaw underestimating me?' Quinn thought. 'It has been a while since we separated from each other and I assure you I have gotten stronger. Or perhaps it considers me weaker than its last master?'

[Shadow equip]

Not wanting to underestimate the fight, Quinn made sure to put all pieces of beast gear on his body, and that included the red oni type mask on his face. Making the first move, Quinn cast a shadow path along the floor, heading straight towards the Boneclaw.

'If I slow it down, then I can actually hit it dead on, and for the first time ever, I don't have to worry about killing you!' Quinn thought. As long as there was still a connection between Quinn and his familiar, it meant that if the familiar was to die, it simply wouldn't be able to be summoned for a while.

The shadow path was one of the slower skills of Quinn's, and seeing the attack coming towards the Boneclaw, it simply entered one of its black portals as it opened and disappeared before the shadow could hit it.

A strong claw came out towards Quinn's right side, but the shadow was able to move from his back to stop the attack. However, Quinn was unaware that somehow the Boneclaw was now attacking from his right side as well. He had no choice but to lift his arm to block the attack head on.

The claw scraped and hit his gauntlets.

'Damn, that attack is strong, I can feel the whole blow through my body!' Quinn thought. He knew he couldn't rely on just his vampire strength to push it back, and

started to concentrate and form his second stage qi towards his forearm area, and eventually pushed the claw back.

When Quinn regained his composure he could see the Boneclaw was once again, far away.

'The system wasn't lying when they said he's gotten stronger. His teleportation speed and strength, I'm sure, are packing more power and faster than before. If he keeps teleporting everywhere, how am I meant to get him? None of my blood skills will work.'

Kazz who was standing at the side was watching it all carefully, she wanted to step in as she had made the decision herself to help Quinn. But she saw what the Boneclaw had done. While teleporting its body to Quinn's right side and attacking it with one of its arms, it had opened another portal on Quinn's left side, and simply stuck its arm through another black portal it had created.

So the Boneclaw was able to attack two locations on Quinn's body at once. What was even more frightening was, as soon as Kazz took a step forward, another black portal had opened up in front of her, and a large dangling claw had appeared, grazing her arm, now throbbing with pain.

It was a clear warning for her not to get involved.

Trying to trap the Boneclaw, Quinn decided to open up a shadow dome, covering both of them. Whenever he needed to fight a person one on one, Quinn would use this skill and similar to the Boneclaw, he could equally go wherever he wished in the shadow using shadow hop, seemingly appearing out of nowhere.

Thinking he had trapped the Boneclaw, Quinn was getting ready to plan his next attack, but before he could. The Boneclaw created another portal, and now he was nowhere to be seen.

'It looks like he can also teleport outside of your dome.' Vincent said.

It looked like he was right as well, as his Shadow Mc points were going down by the second.

[MC 1200/1260]

[MC 1170/1260]

[MC 1140/1260]

Each hit from the Boneclaw was taking off thirty MC points, and it was rapidly going down as he had the dome up.

Closing the dome quickly, Quinn could see the Boneclaw just outside where the edge of it would be.

"Screw you!" Quinn said, opening his hand showing the palms and then closing it in a fist, the next second the Boneclaw had completely disappeared.

[Shadow lock skill activated]

'You know that won't stop him for long.' Vincent said.

'I know, but I just need time to think. I can't hit him with any of my blood skills, otherwise he will just teleport everywhere, so to be able to hit him I have to slow him down.'

It certainly was a strange fight for Quinn, although he didn't feel like he couldn't beat the opponent in front of him, it was the most trickiest fight he ever had, and just as Vincent said, it looked like the Shadow lock didn't hold the Boneclaw at all, as he seemingly appeared out of nowhere.

'So you can teleport out of that as well?'

Quinn thought that perhaps the Boneclaw would start to attack the shadow space, but there was no need for that.

Still, trying to come up with something that could hit or slow the Boneclaw down, it looked like it was time for the Boneclaw to attack instead. It didn't move from its spot and was still roughly ten meters away from where Quinn's position was.

Moving its large arms, each time a black portal would appear in front of it, and at the same time, another one directly in front of Quinn's face. He whacked it away out of instinct, seeing the long dangling finger.

"He can attack from that far away?!" But the attacks weren't over, as the Boneclaw kept striking the air around him and the attacks would appear in all sorts of different places around Quinn, from behind, from above, and below.

It was as if Quinn was playing the block block game again, striking each of the attacks, and avoiding the more dangerous ones, but there was a huge difference between this and the block block game. The strikes from the Boneclaw were heavier than ever, and he could see the endurance of his equipment were going down by the second.

'Damn it, Alex worked hard on these.'

Now watching Quinn block the attacks desperately, Kazz began to realise something. Quinn's combat skills for a vampire leader were quite poor. He had strong blood skills, but they were powered with a strange power and simple.

Perhaps one of his biggest advantages in fights was due to people not fully knowing what the shadow could do.

However, here, where his shadow and blood skills didn't work well against an opponent, one would be better off trying to use their hand to hand combat, but the Bone claw, who just did fast simple attacks was able to overwhelm him.

Through the barrage of attack, Quinn could see the Bone claw was unmoving, apart from its arms, and he saw this as an opportunity. He moved his shadow to block the majority of the attacks, leaving only a small hole, and through that hole a single finger could fit through.

[Blood bullet]

Firing off, a blood attack infused with Qi through the small hole made in the shadow, he could see it becoming a success. The blood bullet was the fastest attacking Skill Quinn had.

If he couldn't slow it down, then this would just have to do. The bullet went right through its shoulder, and a cloud of black smoke started to appear where the wound was meant to be.

'Did that really do nothing?' Quinn thought.

He came to realise that this time, Quinn wasn't fighting against a beast, or a vampire, where Qi infused attacks would do damage or the beast would feel pain. This was a different enemy altogether.

The next second, the Boneclaw disappeared and a large scratch was made towards his back, going through Quinn's armour and reaching his skin, tearing it easily.

His shadow was too preoccupied with the attacks at the front, and he hadn't moved it behind him in time.

'Is Quinn really going to lose? Someone who defeated my father, and Cindy with the absolute blood skill, to a familiar?' Kazz worriedly thought.

Just what was this familiar that was able to cause so much trouble for Quinn.

"I really didn't want to do this, and I didn't think I would have to use it again so soon. After all the work I did to get the shadow and now I have to use it against you." Quinn said, as he placed his hand on the ground, and all of the shadow sank spreading out.

[Soul weapon activated]

[Shadow overload]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 981: A waste of time!

Standing by the side, Kazz knew straight away that Quinn had done something. As the last time he had fought with Cindy he had done the exact same thing. When Quinn's soul weapon was active, a faint purple glow would appear around all of the shadows Quinn used.

One of the main benefits of using the soul weapon 'Shadow Overload' was the fact that Quinn could now use the shadow as he wished without the need to worry if it would run out or not. However, this wasn't the reason Quinn had decided to use it now.

The Boneclaw's teleportation speed was far faster than before. But there were more than just one benefit of using the soul weapon. Quinn's soul weapon would also improve his casting speed with the shadow when using skills, and the general movement of his shadows.

'Not that I'm going to need it, Quinn thought as he held out both of his hands, and started to create a dome of shadow over the Boneclaw. The Boneclaw would teleport out of it the same as he did last time, but seeing where it was now, Quinn would quickly summon another dome over it again, in an instant before it could react.

'It looks like my guess was correct.' Although the Boneclaw was able to teleport out of the shadow dome, it wasn't able to attack at the same time and it didn't seem to know exactly where it was teleporting to. It seemed like it would take a few seconds before it repositioned itself and noticed where Quinn was.

While in the dome, the Boneclaw was unable to see, so it couldn't focus where to place its black teleporters. The only thing it could do was look in a certain direction in the dome, and cast a portal to the other side to escape, and soon, when it was busy coming out of one of the shadows, Quinn was appearing directly behind it through his own shadow with a large hammer strike of his own.

However, the Boneclaw was fast, as it managed to create a large portal the same size as Quinn in front of him, and sinking through it, Quinn was redirected to another place, causing his hammer strike to strike one of the buildings in the inner castle area nearby.

A loud bang was heard as his fist went through a building wall, and a couple of the ones behind it crumbled to the floor. Still, Quinn wasn't worried. Compared to last time, he had more MC points to play with. What he didn't realise was although Shadow Overload allowed him to use the shadow as much as he wished, he could still only control only slightly more than his MC points allowed at one time.

With his MC points above a thousand, Quinn was able to control a larger amount of shadow. Having created several domes, he was still able to protect himself using the shadow.

"So you seem to be quite the quick thinker, but I have a lot of tricks up my sleeve!" Quinn shouted as he fired out a blood bullet into one of his shadows in front of him, and it appeared behind the Boneclaw, going through its forearm.

This was a skill that was too quick for the Boneclaw to react to, and when it turned around, it could see several circle shadows floating in the entire area. Quinn had spread them around, hovering as if they were land mines all over the field.

"I think I've got the hang of how far you can teleport at once. Try teleporting somewhere, and you'll run into any of these," Quinn said, as he activated a disk with a razor edge, covered in the shadow.

'If I throw it into any of these shadows, I can redirect it to try to follow the Boneclaw, and I can also throw blood swipes and even escape through them as well.'

In a way, Quinn was using the shadows as a better version of the teleporting skill that the Boneclaw could use. Quinn was able to go through one shadow, and appear out of any of the shadows hovering about at any time.

Quinn was ready to throw the Shadow disk into one of the shadow portals, but stopped himself just seconds before, as he saw the Boneclaw turning into a black mist, and it was soon heading towards Quinn.

"Did I win the fight?" Quinn wondered.

'I don't think you won.' Vincent replied. 'I just think the Boneclaw has accepted you again, for now.'

Hearing this, Quinn didn't like it one bit. Was Vincent saying that he might choose to challenge him again in the future? He already had a headache with Arthur and now had to worry about the Boneclaw as well. It was also safe to say that Quinn was beyond annoyed. He had used the Shadow Overload skill, and now he also had to face the backlash of using it.

He didn't even get to use it fully or for a long time. It was as if the Boneclaw said, show me everything you had, and then decided to just go away when Quinn did.

[Your total MC points are now '1150 points']

The amount of points lost wasn't a deal-breaker, but it wasn't like Quinn could easily obtain points through using the skill Shadow Eater either. Technically at the

moment each time he would use this skill his MC points would lower, so it was best not to use it for now.

The other problem was right after using the soul weapon, all of his MC points would go down to 0. Even though he didn't use much of the shadow in this fight compared to with Cindy. He would now have to wait for a period of time for them to restore. If he had used a skill like this against a demon tier beast and then ran into Hilston, he would have been a sitting duck not being able to use his shadow ability.

'Just a word of advice to you as a past leader.' Vincent said. 'Although I wasn't the best when it came to hand to hand combat, and you are currently better than me when I was your age, for a vampire your skills are quite poor. You only know the basics, something taught to the regular vampires, but you are a leader.'

"Since you use gauntlets as your weapons, it would be best for you to try and further develop your fighting skills. So far, you have done well, relying on powers such as Qi, and mixing it with your vampire powers, and also the shadow, but what if you are unable to use both of those things? Just like with the Boneclaw in the future, there may be an opponent that will need these set of skills."

Honestly, Quinn couldn't agree more, but it wasn't like he knew any grand martial artist. Leo was the closest person to one, but he was a master swordsman.

'I wonder if there's something I can do?'

'The second point.' Vincent continued, although we have already discussed this, it's about your blood abilities. It's all well improving your blood control, but just like with the shadow, you need to learn more advanced blood skills. They are currently quite simple."

'Couldn't you teach me, since you used to be a great leader and all.' Quinn said.

'I guess I could give it a go, but through words alone, it would be hard. It would be best for you to see the skills yourself. Maybe you should get friendly with one of the leaders at some point.' Vincent half jokingly said.

Still, Quinn didn't think Vincent was giving him enough credit. Quinn didn't show the Boneclaw everything he had, and there were even the new shadow skills he had yet to test.

Seeing the Boneclaw disappear like so, Kazz was relieved, but witnessing Quinn use his special power again, she truly did feel like she was looking at one of the strongest vampire leaders. Even if he was lacking in certain areas, no one could deny how strong he was.

"Well, let's forget about that little thing, shall we?" Quinn said, looking back at Kazz. "Let's get back."

The incident with Quinn's familiar wasn't something that needed to be urgently reported, since it was his own familiar and didn't involve others. No one had even seen the fight, but Kazz still reported the matter to Bryce. After all, she was loyal to him as he was her father and even more so her king.

Although, Bryce didn't think much of this, and was far more interested in the reports she had made earlier.

"You may leave now Kazz, you did a good job. Thank you." Bryce said, sitting down on the king's throne.

When Kazz left the room, out from the side as if he was almost invisible, Tempus stood.

"You heard about the wall, right?" Bryce asked. "Do you think you will be able to restore it to its former self?"

"Perhaps, we might not get the whole thing, but we should learn something, but I'm wondering what you plan to do with such a wall?" Tempus asked.

"I hate the shadow, but everyone has to admit their power, but the reason why so many people disliked the shadow in the past was because it belonged to the Punishers, a force equal to that of the king. This is something that should have never happened. It's time the king had its set of own shadow users." Bryce smiled. "I bet Arthur will be pleasantly surprised to see them when he returns."

"And how do you expect to get past the doors without informing Muka?" Tempus asked.

"Oh don't worry about that, I have more power than you think. Actually you might already know. Otherwise I doubt you would be standing by my side."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 982: The strongest fighters in the world

Upon returning to the Cursed ship and hearing nothing terrible had happened at school while Quinn was away, he was in no rush to go back just yet. He had time to think about what Vincent had talked about.

One of the most critical things Quinn had to worry about was getting stronger for the future enemies ahead. One of the easiest ways was to improve something he was severely lacking, and one of those was his combat fighting skills.

He never worried about this much before but did try practising a little when he had no abilities.

'I remember those days, Quinn started to reminisce. 'I thought watching a few martial arts movies and copying them would make me some skilled master, and then I would just get blasted with a green energy blast. Yeah, no karate-chopping skills are going to stop that.' Quinn thought.

However, things were different now. Quinn had a body that could put fighting skills to good use, just like the other leaders did.

Checking his system, Quinn could see the tutorial zone that displayed Vincent's lessons in the system.

'Do you have any more of these?' Quinn asked.

'I mean, I don't, but honestly, I think you're beyond anything that I could teach you through a video. At the moment, you have a body that would be good in any martial art. However, what you need is something that would actually be good in fighting against ability users. This I'm not the best at.'

Hearing these words while on the Cursed ship, Quinn went looking for Leo. Although he was a swordsman, he did know the martial art taught by the military quite well, and perhaps there was someone he could recommend.

While searching high and low around the ship, Quinn couldn't find him anywhere and eventually ran into Sam, walking through one of the hallways.

"Quinn, you still haven't returned. You know the students will miss you?" Sam said.

"It's fine. They have a good teacher. I was actually looking for Leo. Have you seen him anywhere?" Quinn asked.

"Actually, Leo wanted to catch up with you about something, but it looks like one of the planets that Pure has members on is close by, so they have decided to go there. Don't worry, they took Nate along as well, just in case there is any trouble."

There was no time frame for when Quinn needed to get things done, so there wasn't an urgency in him, but at the same time, there was the constant worry that the Dalki, a vampire force or even Pure, could attack them at any point.

Although Quinn was happy they had taken a shadow user along like he asked, he felt a bit unlucky that they had taken Nate. If he couldn't get an answer from Leo, he would have asked Nate, a great martial artist, what to do next.

'I guess I could just teleport there and then travel back, but they might be in the middle of something.'

"Go on. I can see you have something on your mind. What do you want?" Sam asked.

Quinn explained what he wished to do. How he wanted to improve his martial arts skills. Thinking about it for a while, Sam eventually gave an answer.

"Do you remember how the two of you first met through the Power fighters game? Well, there was a reason why Nate would constantly play it. Even for him, there were plenty of strong people there.

"You have to remember not everyone likes the limelight. Some people have strong abilities or are just strong that they choose to hide their powers when they join a faction. Before the civil war, although it was normal for others to fight and such, strong people didn't often fight each other due to fear of how much destruction and death it would cause.

"Do you think the Graylash family ever fought against the Bree family, or the Sun Shields without people getting hurt?"

Hearing this, Quinn thought it would be quite interesting. He hadn't played the game in a while. When he first started out, he used the game often to test out his blood abilities that could be used with no restrictions inside the game.

'I suppose if I play again, I can just not use my blood abilities. Before, I was obsessed with the exp, not that it would do anything for me now. But now I can just fight against ability users, just using my fists. If I lose, it won't really be a problem.'

Quinn thought it was a great suggestion and thanked Sam before leaving off to play the game. There were quite a lot of pods on board the Cursed faction, as the game had always been popular with people, including the Cursed faction.

However, there was one person he thought he should meet before playing the game, asking if he could work out some personal request for Quinn, and that was none other than Logan.

He was inside his usual research room, a room that was given just to Logan dedicated to him to work on whatever he needed. It didn't take long for Logan to

turn it into his own personal room, as it was filled with what Quinn could only describe as useful junk all around the room.

He was careful to use the word 'Useful' because often, things that looked strange and that he didn't understand would be quite helpful. A lot of the stuff in the room was brought over from the many locations the Green family owned, the projects his family were working on before they had passed.

"Quinn, that's you right? No one else has as light footsteps as you do. Also, I heard from Sam that you have just returned from the vampire world. Did he tell you about my request?" Logan said, as he was wearing some strange goggles and using his robotic arm, but soon the googles started to deform into the tiny spiders and created some shoulder pads instead.

"Request, I didn't know you had one? I was actually coming to you to ask about something. What did you want to ask?" Quinn wondered.

Logan looked at Quinn for a few seconds and didn't say anything.

"Logan, please, you already helped me a lot. Remember, even with the current situation, anything you need that I can help with, I will do it." Quinn said.

Then, as if Logan was waiting for Quinn to say these words, he gave a reply.

"Great, then I wish to go to the vampire world and go to the lab out in the mountains. I will take my leave tomorrow and make sure to take one of the shadow users with me. I will also take Borden along for protection, so you can't complain. A leader wouldn't go back on their word, right?"

For some reason, Quinn felt like he had just been tricked.

'This is what happens when you have people smarter than you helping you out.' Quinn thought.

"What do you want to do there anyway?" Quinn asked.

"I plan to visit the lab so I can clone myself a new arm. The lab had the ability to create a clone of Vorden, that's how I accidentally made Borden, so I should be able to create a hand for myself if I study the equipment myself." Logan replied as if it was no big deal.

"Wait! What happens if you make another, like a Logan Dalki? I know Borden turned out to be okay, but we can't guarantee that another one will be, can we?" Quinn said worriedly.

"Don't worry about that. There isn't enough energy to create another Dalki. That was the problem in the first place and part of the reason why Borden is so unstable.

Leave the thinking to me. If I tried to explain anything to you, then it would just be pointless. Fighting is your strong point. This is mine so leave that to me."

Although Quin didn't like it, visiting the vampire world last time, it seemed like everything had calmed down quite a bit, and as long as someone like Linda who knew the shadow went along with them, then Quinn could be there if there was any trouble, as for Borden. He was as strong as a leader, so no one would mess with him.

"Talking about fighting, there were a few things I wanted to ask you about..." Quinn discussed his plan and how he would like to join power fighters one more time, but he had some special requests.

"Sure, I can do that for you. As you know, the game ranks you based on your Traveller Rank. So you want me to put you as an A rank traveller, correct? That shouldn't be a problem. As long as you keep winning fights, the system will naturally put you against the higher Travellers and then you will enter the ranking system."

"Ranking System?"

"Each time you win, you get Elo points, which will rank you up and down, putting you in the top hundred of the power fighters game. This is only available to Travellers Rank B and upwards. Win enough times in a row, and you will eventually get put in the top hundred."

It sounded like Sam's suggestion was turning into a good idea, and there was even a goal to aim towards now.

"Wow, an online ranking, who's at the top, is it someone I know?" Quinn wondered. Being in the position he was in now, surely the top would be filled with people he had seen or at least heard off.

"Not really, at least I don't know who they are," Logan replied. "You have to remember a few things. Fighting in the game, although meant to simulate real combat, isn't the same. There are differences. Also, one can not use their soul weapon in the game either. And sometimes soul weapons are a big differentiator when one is fighting in the real world." Logan explained.

It made sense, and now for some reason, Quinn was itching to go into the power fighters game. However, there were a couple more requests Quinn had made.

"And about my other request?" Quinn asked.

"That's fine," Logan said. "I can put in a limiter just for you, so you will be limited to fifty percent of your body's strength. You can increase this in the game as you wish. As for your other request, usually, only one person can be linked with one I.D., but It's me after all, so I can do what I like. We will create a new I.D. for you."

The name Bloodevolver was too famous, and Quinn wasn't going to be using the blood skills this time around. He was going to be testing his fighting skills, so he wanted a new I.D.

"Do you want me to come up with the name for you?" Logan asked.

"No, no, please!" Quinn quickly said. "It's okay. I can pick my own." Quinn said, fearing he would be known as Buinn.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 983: Noob fighter

The VR game Powerfighters also could copy one's beast armour and weapon. Even though it was capable of doing that, Quinn really didn't want any advantages when fighting. He thought the quickest way to improve was through failure and learning through one's mistakes.

Luckily, there were no consequences for making mistakes in the VR game since it was just a game. However, even if he wanted to use his beast weapon, he really couldn't. Taking his gauntlets out of his shadow equip, Quinn looked at his gauntlets, and they were in a sorry state.

Several dents in places, gashes of torn metal. Quinn imagined that if he didn't have the shadow equip skill and he had to force the gauntlets on his arms, they would become a bloody mess from all the broken pieces hanging on it.

The durability was around that of ten percent, and all the boosted stats were ineffective.

'The Boneclaw's attacks were really strong, stronger than any beast I've faced. I wonder if he would be considered a demon tier beast or something similar if he was one?' Quinn started to think.

There was a feeling that the Boneclaw didn't really show everything it had either during the fight.

Because of this, before entering the game, Quinn decided to go with Alex for a visit.

---

"Nooo!" Alex screamed with the gauntlets laid out on the table. "What did you do? Did you chuck these things into a blender! Do you know how long it took to make these for you!"

Whenever Alex would work on a piece of equipment, he worked extra hard personally on Quinn's. It wasn't that he didn't equally put effort into everything he did make for the Cursed faction. It was just that Quinn would always be the first of its kind when making things, so it would take more time.

It was the first time he had to use fairy blood and the first time he had used king tier crystals with the gauntlets. He was already devastated when he had heard that his Emperor tier armour set was destroyed. Still, at least that had gone to good use, protecting Quinn's life from the Demon tier crab.

"I told you, it was unexpected. You know me, I wouldn't have let them get hurt on purpose." Quinn said. "Anyway, can you fix them?"

"Fix them," Alex said, slapping his head and still looking at the gauntlets on the table. "First, your gauntlets were made with specific beast crystals to give it the best active skill I could get. It would be quite hard to find those again, and honestly, creating a new pair would be easier than repairing the old ones."

Quinn thought about it for a while. It was time for him to have an upgrade in the first place.

"Do we have crystals to make a new weapon?" Quinn asked.

"Oh, I thought you said you talked to Logan before, didn't he tell you?" Alex replied. "It turns out that the original planet that the Crows occupied is filled with strong beasts in the new land. So strong that Logan was unable to place his device to check out if there were demon tier beasts in the area."

"I know what you're thinking. If you want a new weapon, then you at least want it to be at the legendary tier this time. Well, if you're looking for plenty of high-level beasts with certain attributes, then that's going to be your best bet."

Thinking about it, Quinn wanted another active elemental skill. The first advanced tier crystal gifted by Leo had the lightning elemental power, which gave him a great active skill, and the fire crystals after. It seemed like the elemental crystals gave him the best option in the end.

"I'll think about what to get. I'll ask Sam to send a team to the Crow's planet, and when they find something, they can contact me." Quinn replied.

This way, he could be optimal with his time. Quinn wanted to fight the beasts himself. For one, legendary beasts were quite up the tier ladder, and there weren't many in the Cursed faction that could deal with them. The other reason was Quinn wanted to see what skills the beast had, to see if it was suitable for making his weapon.

With his shadow skill, they just needed a shadow user.

'Maybe Wevil would be good to search the area.' Quinn thought.

With the request sent off to Sam, it was finally time for Quinn to play the game. Entering his personal training room, he could see a pod there waiting for him. He had made this request so the others onboard also wouldn't know what Quinn was doing.

Besides, his fame in the Cursed faction itself was growing and just walking around, he would get stopped several times, and his journey would be twice as long. Quinn didn't want to be one of those people that didn't reply back, and it was nice to get to know the people in the faction.

Although this Pod looked like any other VR pod, Quinn knew there was a difference. This one had been modded, added with the features that Quinn had requested from Logan.

'I remember entering the shop with Vorden and looking at the price tag of one of these things. I never thought I would own my own one. Now, there are several on the ships, and I even have a personal one made for me by the game's creator. When I think about it, there have been some amazing things in my life.' Quinn thought as he started to climb into the VR pod.

Just like when he had entered the other VR pods, the welcome screen appeared in front of him. Before though, after figuring out who the person was, the system would then log in Quinn to his user ID automatically and also use his traveller information, but not this time.

[Please enter your User ID]

'Ah, I really don't care about it this time too much. Last time I tried to write something cool, and that's never got me far,' Quinn thought as he just typed in some words that he didn't really give much thought to.

[User ID has been created]

[Welcome Noob Fighter]

It had been a while, but after selecting his name, his body was chucked into the white space.

'I guess I can't use the Bloodevolver appearance, can I?' Quinn thought and started decorating and altering his avatar. Giving himself spiky green hair, and a plain gold and black tracksuit.

He looked like he was dressed as someone a 1000 years past his time, but he thought it suited him. In a world of no abilities, back in the past when people his age would have fought with their fists.

Checking out the game system, he could see that now there was also a limiter that had been set to fifty., Quinn could even lower this, so he could use more of his strength or increase it.

Before going into a match, he tested out the limiter for a while, practising what martial arts moves he knew, and it looked like it worked.

'You never fail to impress me, Logan.'

Finally, he was ready to start his first matchmaking session. As an A rank Traveller, Quinn would get matched up with those at a similar level to him, but for

now, he would be put against some Rank B's while the system was working out his correct ranking level, so the matchmaking would be fairer.

When Quinn's body appeared, he could see himself standing opposite a man who was dressed entirely in black armour from head to toe and had a pair of small axes on his back.

"Noob fighter?" Chan read. "Is this my lucky day? I was on a losing streak."

Checking his opponent's stats, he could see that Noob fighter hadn't been in any fights, so he wasn't quite sure if he was lucky or not.

'I guess it's his first time playing, and I can take advantage of that.'

The match had begun, and Chan immediately threw out the small axe on his back towards Quinn.

Seeing it, Quinn decided to dodge the first axe as he was still trying to figure out what ability the person in front of him had. The next second another axe came towards him, and then several more were flying towards Quinn.

'Crap!' Quinn thought as he started to run around the place and head towards his opponent.

"Hey, this noob is quite fast," Chan said, continuing to throw multiple axes from his back. Although he only had two on him, his ability allowed him to copy and produce the same beast weapon he last touched.

He continued to throw them towards his opponents, dn when the two got close, Quinn managed to duck a wild swing from Chun and hit him in the stomach.

The blow had done damage, but while falling, Chun picked up one of the axes that were stuck to the ground and dug it into Quinn's foot. If he wanted to get out of this, he would have to forcefully rip his foot from the axe.

Picking up another Axe, Chun went to swing it towards his ribs again, but an elbow hit the side of the axe with such force, making it fall to the ground. While Chun was slightly stunned, Quinn went to punch him in the head again, but Chun quickly rolled, avoiding the hit and threw out an axe hitting Quinn's other leg.

"I'm a rank B Traveller for a reason, don't underestimate me!" Chun shouted. After a minute of intense fighting back and forth, a winner was eventually announced.

"Phew, that guy was tough for a noob. I'm surprised I won, his blows were so strong, and he was fast. I guess it had something to do with his ability? Wait, did he even use an ability?" Chun said, thinking about the fight.

Meanwhile, Quinn was back in the lobby and looking at his game screen.

"So my first fight was a loss, huh? Well, I guess setting it to thirty percent was too much to start with." Quinn said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my \*\*\*\*\*: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 984: The Dalki growth

After getting the go ahead from Quinn that he was now allowed to travel to the vampire world, Logan wasted no time making preparations. In fact, he actually already had everything he needed with him packed away in a special robotic backpack. He would 'Carry' this on his back with the support of his little spiders, making it pretty much weightless.

It was as if he always knew Quinn would say yes, but he was not to go on his travels alone. In a room placed away from the others, which needed a special pin to enter, was the new type of teleporter that would take one to the vampire world.

If someone was to stumble and open it, it would be quite troublesome for them, finding themselves in a strange place. Not that they could go through the teleporter anyway. This new teleporter was based on the vampire's teleporters. On Logan's side, a code needed to be input that would then activate the teleporter, and it was the same on Paul's side.

Communication needed to be made before Logan could come across. However, this time, unlike when Quinn had gone, they did not inform the king or ask for persimmon. Quinn felt like he needed to last time due to entering the fourteenth castle, which was a big deal.

However, Logan was going to a place that he wasn't even sure they were aware of or cared about. It also wasn't like what he was planning to do, had anything to do with them in the first place.

Standing by his side were the two that would be coming with him for this short journey,

"Hopefully, you can make some more of that green serum for me," Borden said as he hopped onto the right side of Logan's shoulder.

"I can try, but I wouldn't count on it," Logan replied. Knowing that there was hardly any energy left in the large tubes.

As for the other one, she seemed a bit nervous to be coming along.

"I kind of understand why you brought Borden along with you, but why did you choose me and not one of the others?" Linda asked.

Logan looked Linda up and down as if it was a pain to explain to her, but letting out a sigh, he did so anyway.

"Have you and I ever talked before?" Logan asked.

"A few times on occasion, but I don't; think we have ever had a full conversation," Linda replied, trying to figure out what his point was.

"And that is exactly the reason why I have brought you. Me and you haven't talked before, so we have nothing to talk about. Which means I can get on my task with peace." Said Logan.

Linda didn't know why, but she felt a little hurt by that comment, but Logan was just upfront and honest from what she had heard from the others. Speaking what he thought, sometimes it was better to have a person like this, rather than someone you didn't know what they were thinking, like Kazz.

Thinking of the vampire world made Linda think of her. She still held a grudge against her for what she had done.

With the preparations done and the very small chitchat made, all three of them went through the teleporter, finding themselves at the tenth castle. Unlike last time, Paul wasn't there to greet them, but Ashley stood in the throne room instead.

He was only there to make sure they had arrived safely and also to turn off the teleporter so it wouldn't be linked to the Cursed ship while they were away.

There were no words spoken, and Logan just continued to walk past Ashley as if it was something he did every single day.

'Well, I can't say the boy isn't efficient.' Linda thought as she was quite enjoying his style.

A few sprays of the special scent were placed onto Borden and Logan. Now they had no worry as they walked through the vampire settlement. Compared to before, the dark streets were full of market stalls, vampires talking and eating irregular meals at their restaurants.

It seemed like an old city in the human world, and Linda found it relatively peaceful.

"If we had seen this and experienced this when we first came, then maybe our opinion would have been a little different." She said.

What was most impressive was how quick they were able to recover as well. Soon though, leaving the settlement, they would walk through the forest, and from there, it was time to head to the mountain where the lab was found.

While walking through the forest, there was a single incident that occurred. It was when a snake-like beast came dangling from one of the trees. It swooped down on them.

Linda was ready to get in the way, but when the snake reached a certain distance. A claw-like machine came out from the top of Logan's back and held it in place, then a blaster formed around Logan's arm, and he fired it a few times, eventually killing the snake on the spot.

'Even though the kid isn't like us, he seems to be quite powerful with all his little gadgets. I guess he isn't just the inventor of the ship.' Linda thought.

Although the two of them didn't talk much, in fact, not at all during the walk, even Borden was just sleeping on top of Logan's shoulder. She quite enjoyed learning more and more about Logan.

Finally, after entering a series of caves, they had reached the lab that Logan was looking for. He had been here a few times, and every time he visited it, it felt less foreign to him. Maybe it was because of the lab's layout, where certain machinery was placed. All of it was suited to his liking.

'It looks like I have a similar taste to my parents.' Logan thought and soon got to work.

Linda and Borden were placed in the central room. They waited there patiently. They explored the place at first together, apart from one room that Logan told them not to enter, but soon found that not knowing what anything was, it was quite boring after a while.

So they remained in the main terminal room while watching Logan get to work. The backpack that he had on him turned itself into a workbench. The technical robotic arms that had stopped the beast from earlier, four of them were being used as legs popping it up like a table. Then the bag opened itself up and was able to supply Logan with every single tool that he needed.

After seeing him going back and forth in and out of rooms, Logan eventually asked Borden for a favour. Using a small syringe, he had taken some of Borden's blood.

"Do you need that again for me?" Borden asked.

On the table was a flask and a syringe red in colour, then using the small amount of blood he had gotten from Borden, he slowly dropped it into the red liquid. Soon, the green liquid started to take over, and made a dark green colour as they both mixed together.

Another larger normal-sized syringe was on the side, and Logan used that to bring up some of the liquid from the flask.

"No, this is for me," Logan replied. His right robotic arm disconnected and fell to the floor. He injected the syringe directly into where the stump of his arm was.

"Logan what are you doing!" Borden said, worried, now realising what he might have been doing all along.

Logan fell to the floor as if he was in pain. The plan was to create. Clone of his arm, like they did so with Vorden and Borden, but why didn't Borden realise it sooner.

The clone that was made was a Dalki, not another human, which meant that Logan couldn't make human parts with the things inside the room.

The pain counted, and sweat was running down Logan's face, but soon the pain would end, and when he stood up, he could feel something heavy where his right side was.

"I won't be useless anymore," Logan said.

Standing there, Logan's arm had fully regrown, but it wasn't what it once was. Hard scales ran all the way up it, and the fingertips were shaped like a claw. Logan had successfully created himself a Dalki arm.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 985: The martial art god

[‘Noob fighter’ losses]

How many times had Quinn seen this screen now? He had lost count. Due to him being a vampire, there wasn’t much sleep needed on his end, and the matches were ending relatively fast as well.

However, using no abilities, including that of the shadow and blood, limiting his physical abilities and having no beast gear proved to be a little too much of a disadvantage for Quinn.

However, it was safe to say it was working. Due to him not being able to rely on these things, he had to improve on the spot if he wanted to win. The only thing was. It was happening at a far slower pace than he had initially planned.

Quinn was losing matches using 30 percent of his strength. He thought the first few matches, his opponent might have been just strong, and eventually, he would find a way to beat them, but he never did and was getting tired of it.

In the next few games, Quinn decided that he would increase the limit by five percent each time until he eventually would win. At 35 percent his first match had hardly lasted longer than the others. He had, unfortunately, run into a speed user who was faster than him.

With Quinn’s current set of fighting skills, Quinn felt useless and was just frustrated. Soon after, he raised his stats to 40 percent. In his first match at this stage, he had lasted longer. His opponent had a growth ability, allowing them to grow the size of any part of their body and what they were touching at any point and time.

At this stage, Quinn was able to time his Flash Step perfectly to avoid the more vital attacks and had hit his opponents with well timed hammer strikes and kicks, damaging the body well and eventually got a win.

It seemed at 40 percent the increase in strength had significantly helped, but this wasn’t what Quinn was hoping for. He stayed at the forty percent range, and eventually won a few fights, but after winning a few fights in a row, the matching system had put him against some tougher opponents, and Quinn ended up losing again.

When he had reached a stalemate, Quinn raised his stats once more to forty-five percent, thinking maybe it would change the outcome. Which it did, but not for the right reasons, going back to his old ways of relying on speed and strength.

It seemed like the same pattern was occurring. Whenever Quinn would get stuck, he would just raise his limiter to beat his opponents and eventually, he had raised it to fifty percent. Winning nine fights in a row.

"No, this isn't what I wanted," Quinn said while waiting in the white room, pausing, trying to reflect back on the fight that had just happened. "I haven't really learnt any new fighting techniques, have I?"

"I would say so, but at the same time, I can't blame you for raising your stats," Vincent replied. "It hasn't been all for a lost cause. While forcing yourself to just use your body at that level, you used whatever you had to the max. I have never seen you have a better sense of timing, of when to attack and when to defend against your opponents."

"Which was why, whenever you raised your stats and went onto more difficult opponents, your fights seemed to be a lot easier. You are definitely improving, Quinn, but I would suggest you stop at fifty. From what I have gathered so far, at this point and stage, you should be able to defeat your opponents with this level of strength and speed."

Quinn agreed with Vincent, but it didn't mean he was any less frustrated. Losing all the time wasn't fun. He had a total of 32 wins while above three hundred losses on his record. As he got higher in the ranks, he was hoping that there would be those that fought better.

Instead, it was just those that were stronger with their abilities. There wasn't much he could learn from them, other than timing and when to attack. He learned how to analyse patterns better and read certain movements, but there was only so much he could do.

Quinn wanted to improve his own combat skills but had no knowledge or anyone to teach him.

Most of Quinn's current wins had happened while using fifty percent of his strength. Wanting to see how much he improved, Quinn decided that for the next fight, he would use no limiter at all. Even if he didn't learn anything, he just wanted a break from the neck and neck fights.

At that moment, his opponent appeared in front of him. It was Chun once again, with the black armour and Dual axes.

'Hey, wait, it's this guy again? Why am I fighting him?' Chun thought.

After beating the Noob fighter last time, Chun had been on a winning streak. He had been doing so well, he even thought that he might make it into the top 100 anytime soon. Once again, Chun decided to have a look at Quinn's stats.

'How many matches did this guy have after me, and look at how many losses he had. How bad is he?' Chun thought. Still, having between him once, he felt he could do so again, and it would just be a free win for himself. If Quinn was facing him now, it also meant his opponent must have gotten several wins in a row as well.

When this happened, the system would deem the player too strong for the opponents it was matching them up against, and Quinn had won nine fights in a row at his current level.

On Quinn's end, however, Quinn didn't recognise the person. After all, he had fought so many people in a row and was hardly paying attention to what his opponent looked like. In the game, many people had similar avatars.

When the match started, Chun went to grab his axe, but looking up, he couldn't see the person in front of him, and the next second he felt a punch hitting him right in the side of his face.

[Congratulations' Noob Fighter' is the winner]

"It looks like hundred percent of my strength is way too much, and I'm surprised the system was able to replicate my power. Still, it felt good to do that just once. I was starting to feel a little weak." Quinn said with an almost devilish smile on his face.

'What just happened?' Chun thought. 'Did the game bug out.'

Instantly, Chun decided to rewatch the gameplay repeatedly, and he could see from the footage that his opponent had moved so fast and had hit him before he could do anything.

'That guy! I knew he was hiding an ability!'

[You have now entered the rankings]

[You have now taken the 100th spot]

This was indeed quite surprising to Quinn, that using fifty percent of his strength with no abilities, he could take one of the top hundred spots. Although he was a bad fighter, he had enough skills to beat most strong opponents through what he knew.

'But still, I'm going to be fighting the strongest of the strongest, there properly even stronger than any rank 1 on this game. I should at least be able to get this far.' Quinn thought.

After reaching rank 100, Quinn was planning to take a small break, but then, there were quite a few requests for fights that had been sent his way.

'What is all this?' Quinn thought as he was reading all the messages coming towards him. Soon he realised it was due to the public leaderboards. Now that Quinn was ranked a 100, anyone could see his name, select him and send him an invite.

'I guess one more fight won't hurt.' Quinn thought.

Looking through the messages, Quinn noticed that some of them had their rankings in brackets next to their name. The numbers close to him had asked for a match, but Quinn went through and looked for the highest number that had requested him to fight as he could and could see one of them stand out above the rest.

A person who was ranked fifty, and also had the name Martial Art God.

'Now, someone with a User ID has to be good at fighting, right? Why don't we have a little go.'

Quinn thought as he sent his request out.

Due to Chun, having just lost his fight seconds ago, he was frustrated and had looked up to the Noob fighter he had lost to. Then when he saw the hundred ranking by his name, he felt like he could feel blood pouring from his ears.

'Wait, what! why is the martial art's god, and this guy fighting against each other? Who accepts a match from someone fifty ranks above you!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 986: Noob fighter vs God fighter

After accepting the request, Quinn was transported to the area where the two of them would be fighting. Stood opposite him was a man who had no top on, having his full chiselled six-pack out on display.

The man had what looked like a piece of red string around his arm and wore nothing but a pair of green shorts. The man wasn't even wearing any shoes and walked barefoot.

'I know this isn't the real world, but we still have a sense of feeling here.' Quinn thought.

It was true that the VR made one feel as if they were really there and they even felt slight pain. Although the pain sensor was set at an extremely low value and the pain felt was nothing like one would experience in real life. Instead, the computer would sometimes have to just guess how one's body would react when taking a hit.

Quinn also noticed that the stages for spectating that would often be empty were now full of spectators, something that hadn't happened until this fight.

'I haven't seen this many people since I was the Bloodevolver.' Quinn thought, looking around.

There were many people who would often watch those that were top-ranked. People liked watching battles between two strong opponents, that's just how it was, but in particular, more people seemed interested than usual.

The Martial art god gave a wave to the crowd of people. They all cheered in response as if it was something that he had done a thousand times. It was routine for him.

'Even if that Noob fighter was able to surprise me and got the upper hand, he won't be able to deal with the Gatekeeper.' Chun said as he watched from the sidelines.

This was another name that was given to the martial art god. The reason why he was called the Gatekeeper was due to his rank, being placed at fifty. All those above the rank of fifty constantly faced each other and the ranking remained unchanged for a long time.

Where as many would fall when meeting with the Gatekeeper, staying above rank fifty.

"It's been a while since I have seen a new person enter the hundred rankings, so I thought it was best to introduce myself to you first. See if you are worthy." The martial art god said.

'Is this guy role playing? I mean, I can't really make fun of him. I used to do the same thing when I was younger, except I had no friends to Roleplay with.' Quinn thought.

'And that is why the internet is a great thing, bringing all these strangers together who have similar interests. There is no need for others to judge you.' Vincent replied.

Towards the upper top ranks, closer to a hundred, they would change quite often with people coming in and out, but the martial art god had already faced them all, which was why when he saw someone new, he was quite interested in this said person.

Before the fight began, Quinn checked two things, that his limiter was now set at fifty again, which was all good, and as for the second thing. He bowed down, out of respect.

"If you are truly a martial art god like your name suggests, then it will be an honour to learn from you." Quinn replied, getting a little bit into the role-playing himself.

"It looks like at least this one knows how to show respect." The martial art god said, as he raised one of his knees and then slammed his foot on the ground.

He had simply gotten in a fighting stance, but even Quinn could tell something was different. For his last fight, he thought he might be able to take it easy, but it didn't look like he could do that at all.

The fight had begun, but the martial art god stayed in the same position, with his left leg slightly in front and both arms raised by his face.

'Is this Muay Thai?' Vincent said. Although Vincent wasn't much of a fighter, he did know a few things about fighting. During his greater years when he was younger, this fighting style was quite popular among young ones.

Since it didn't look like the martial art god was going to attack first, Quinn was going to be the one to instigate the fight.

'I'll figure out what his ability is first, and then flash step out of the way and reposition myself when I get the chance.' Quinn thought.

When Quinn was finally in range of the martial arts god, everyone thought the fight would be over in that second, just like all the others.

Suddenly, Quinn felt a throbbing pain in his thigh, making him stop in his tracks and soon, he fell to his knees.

'What happened, my leg? I didn't see him.' But Quinn saw the next one coming towards him. A lightning-fast kick that had hit his thigh was now coming at his

head. Seeing how the kick had affected his thigh like so, he thought lifting his arm to block the attack would do nothing.

He would still lose the fight, and even if his body was great at recovering, his legs weren't good enough yet to use the flash step, so he did the only thing he could.

Twisting his body, swinging out his arm, he attempted to punch the leg coming towards him.

"A mistake, my legs have been conditioned to take out tree trunks, and you think your fist is going to stop my legs!" Martial arts god shouted.

However, Quinn's fist was no ordinary fist. How many times had he punched until his fist broke, how many times had he broken his arms from fighting to the death? His body wasn't human, and his bones had significantly strengthened.

When the two collided, surprisingly to him and the others, the martial art god's thigh kick had been stopped. By now, Quinn had recovered and used his flash step to get behind his opponent and was ready. Learning his lesson from last time, Quinn attempted a kick instead of a punch, not wanting to get too close. Still, suddenly, a pivot from the martial arts god, and he was facing him once again.

He had ducked under Quinn's fast moving leg and then grabbed the back of his neck with both of his arms locking him in. Pulling his head down, Quinn's face was met with a knee, but it didn't stop there. The knees continued one after another.

Quinn tried his best to pull away, but the man had him locked in, and when he finally let go, Quinn's force of pulling away swung his head back and caused him to stumble, while the martial arts god spun around and hit the side of his head with an elbow.

[Winner 'Martial arts god.]

[You are no longer ranked]

As quick as Quinn had entered the rankings, he had left them too. Although Quinn wasn't helpless, the fight was clearly one sided.

The people who had watched the match were a little disappointed. Those that failed to reach the rankings, and even those that had wished to see someone for the first time, surpass and went through to the upper ranks, but it looked like this person would not be the one.

'What did you guys expect?' Chun thought. 'One was called Noob fighter, and the other martial arts god. I'm just glad that the guy that beat me got beat, and Martial art's god didn't even move from his position.'

After the fight, Quinn was back in the white room. Rather than upset by his loss, instead, he was pleased. Finally, he had found what he was looking for. A person who excelled at fighting that could teach him.

'Now, how do I convince him to teach me?' Quinn thought.

Just then, he had received a party invite. This was where people could enter the same white room together and use it as a training room, or one could search matches while others watched.

However, the invite was from the martial god himself.

'Looks like I might not have to contact him first after all.'

Accepting the invite, the man in the green shorts appeared in front of him and turned to look at Quinn.

"I wanted to ask you a question, during our fight, why didn't you use your ability against me? Did you think you could win without it?"

"That's how I fight, is there a problem? I don't believe you used an ability either?" Quinn asked.

"Yes, there is a problem. Fight me again, and use everything you have this time." The man said.

"Wai-"

"Fight me!"

"Just isn'tn-"

"Fight me!"

Quinn was a little frustrated with how this man was acting. He wouldn't let him get a word in.

'Should I just beat him and then ask him to teach me? Maybe he will respect me this way?' Quinn thought as he was getting ready to turn the limiter off.

'No, I have a better idea.'

[The Noob fighter is now offline.]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 987: Deadly kick

There was a difference in the VR game compared to the real world. When Quinn just didn't want to deal with people, he could simply just log off. In the first place, Quinn had been playing the game non-stop for a while now. Although he was the type of person who could repeat the same task over and over again and not get sick of it, this session had gone on for a bit too long.

'Quinn, I'm a little confused. Why did you suddenly log off like that?' Vincent asked as Quinn was getting out of the pod and giving his body a few stretches here and there. 'Wasn't your whole goal to find someone good at martial arts to teach you. He was right there?'

'Don't worry.' Quinn replied as he exited the room and decided to head off to his own living quarters. 'I've already figured out what type of person the martial arts god is. That person won't stop chasing me now until he gets what he wants. Even more so after what I just did, and I have an idea that just might rile him up even more.'

Once Quinn had entered his own room, he went to the desk that was placed in the corner. It looked plain as if there was nothing on it, but once he sat down, a holographic keyboard lit up in front of him, and a widescreen appeared in front of his eyes.

The first thing he did was search up videos about Muay Thai fighters. Quinn started to watch video after video on the subject. There were plenty of tutorials online, but it was safe to say that the martial arts god was leaps and bounds ahead of all of them.

It was a shame, but old traditional martial arts skills had diminished, especially since the introduction of abilities. Still, it had a bit of a resurgence based on other abilities, but new forms of martial arts were created to suit the beast weapons and take advantage of that power.

Very few people used their fists to fight. After watching some videos for some time, Quinn took what he wanted from them. Downloading them onto his little wristwatch, heading off to his own personal training room.

The videos that he had saved he played a few times while in the training room and slowly started to copy the moves bit by bit.

'Maybe there's a method to his madness.' Vincent thought as he watched him.

The fighting style was undoubtedly different from what Quinn was used to, and there were many points. The striking part wasn't so hard. Throwing out punches, he did this enough, and he was also quite good with his kicks due to the military-style of fighting.

However, there was something different about the kicks in the video. The amount of weight and power was like that of a gigantic whip. The main movement he decided to focus on was the thigh kick. Having experienced it himself, he knew how effective it was.

The other points of fighting style, such as using the elbows, knees and grappling, were a little harder for him to grasp, without a fighting power, and just through a video, he couldn't get the right feeling, as Fex would say.

Quinn went through each of the movements of the thigh kick slowly and made sure he was standing in the same stance as the person before him. He also remembered well the viewpoint of the martial arts god.

'Alright, let's do this!' Quinn said as he practised the kick over and over again.

While Sam was busy with his daily duties, he had heard about a complaint while being on board the ship. That there was a loud continuous bang. Worried that there might be some damage or something wrong with the ship, Sam had decided to go check out where the noise was coming from.

"Is there a reason you have brought me along?" Dennis asked as they walked towards the loud banging sound, which was getting louder, and had a standard beat to it.

"Haven't you seen those alien movies?" Sam chuckled nervously. "Maybe a beast snuck on board the ship and slowly is starting to turn everyone or is running through the vents."

Although Dennis would have liked to poke fun at this, it seemed like Sam was genuinely scared, and everyone had their fears. Finally, they had located the noise of the bang, which had led them to outside a locked door.

"Isn't this?" When opening up the door, another loud bang was heard, and a breeze was felt on both Sam's and Dennis' faces pulling their hair back a bit.

What they could see was Quinn drenched in sweat, so much so that there was a pool of water behind him, but he seemed incredibly focused, and his back right leg was all tensed up, that the veins were showing running up his calf like a root of a plant.

His leg was a foreign part of his body. Lifting it up, Quinn threw his leg and twisted his hips as hard as he could and once again, the loud bang was heard.

Quinn was throwing out his leg so fast, with such force it sounded like when one would swing a real whip. Imagining what would happen to someone's leg at the end of that, Sam gulped.

"I think I'm ready," Quinn said with a smile, only noticing the two of them now.

"Why do I feel like something like his has happened before?" Sam said and left the room so Quinn could continue doing his own thing. An announcement was made so no one would worry about the banging noise anymore. He would also request Logan to attempt to make the room more soundproof in the future.

'You keep getting stronger, Quinn.'

The next day, when Quinn logged into the game again, he didn't get a request from the martial arts god. When checking his status, it seemed like he was in his own fights, which was to be expected since the top rankings fought all the time. Still, Quinn wanted to get his attention another way.

Searching for a game after having come out of the hundred rankings, for the third time, he was matched up with someone familiar.

'This guy again!' Chun thought as he saw who his opponent was. He had been having a good day. Since he was on a winning streak again, and from his calculations, he only needed to win one or two more games before entering the top hundred rankings.

'Okay, whatever. This time I'm going to be prepared for you.' Chun thought

When the match started, Quinn decided to stay in position and just waited for Chun to make his move. He threw a few axes his way, but Quinn would avoid them.

'I know you have an ability, so I'm not going to do what I did the first time.' Chun thought as he took out both axes from his back and held them in his hands.

'I'm quite skillful at using these bad boys in my hand!' Chun thought, running forward, seeing that the Noob fighter was just staying in the same position.

With the first downward strike, Quinn flash stepped behind him, and the kick that he had been practising a thousand times was ready. He wasn't at full strength due to the limiter set on his body, but everything felt the same. Coming out like a whip, his leg had hit the back of Chun's thigh.

If it wasn't a game, he felt like his bones would have been crushed, and the system deemed it so as well since he could no longer move. With him on his knees, as soon as Quinn's leg was back in position, he let it fly out again, this time hitting Chun's head.

[Winner 'Noob Fighter']

After that kick, the match was over in an instant.

'Again! What the hell is wrong with that guy? He beat me twice now and two different ways!' Chun screamed. 'He's a curse, that guy is a curse, he shouldn't be called a noob fighter, he should be called a Curse fighter or something!' Chun continued to scream, but it was pointless.

'And what was that kick?'

Hoping to rub off some of his bad luck on the player, he decided to follow his matches, and what he proceeded to see next was a massacre.

The Noob fighter won his next four matches, only using mainly three moves. A flash step to avoid his opponent's blow, a kick, and sometimes a punch or two, but they were used primarily for blocking.

Soon, Quinn found himself rising the ranks, reaching rank ninety, and had once again caught the attention of the martial arts god.

Vincent had been watching Quinn throughout the fights and was just wondering how quick he was able to progress. 'Quinn, I'll say this again, even though you think you have no talent, I believe you always did. It's just that you never had the body to quite show that talent.'

'You have created a deadly kick without even realising it. Once you have finished and learnt these skills to their most potential, I can't imagine how powerful they will be adding in the vampire aura and the Qi you have learnt as well.' Vincent thought.

Finally, it was time for Quinn's and the martial arts god's rematch. At the same time, the name of the Noob fighter was starting to spread.

Inside his Office, Oscar was sitting down waiting for his daily reports.

"Hmm, what's this? A report from Sergeant Chun?" Oscar said.

"Yes," Jade replied, standing by his side. "You know he likes to play the game of power fighters a lot to look for new recruits, and he says he has found a gem that goes by the name of Noob fighter."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 988: Surpassing the Teacher

Quinn's little plan turned out to work more than he could have ever imagined. Videos would constantly circulate of those in the top one hundred rankings, of them fighting. Many players watched these using them as research. Thinking that they could emulate or learn from the best, perhaps one day, they too could join the rankings.

That's when Quinn's videos started to gain attention, not because of the difficult opponents he defeated but because of the style in how he defeated them. It was a reminder of how a certain someone named, Martial arts god rose to the top.

These videos also had caught the eye of the Martial arts god himself, and he felt like he had no choice but to send Quinn another request for a duel. He felt like he was being taunted.

In his mind, first, Quinn didn't use any abilities at all in their fight. Now, after a single match with him, he has risen the ranks again using the very attack he had used.

For the outsiders, they just saw another rising of a martial arts god. Now that the two of them were facing each other again, the spectators had increased significantly.

In the crowd watching from the sidelines, a lot of the onlookers weren't currently looking at the two that were about to have a fight, but those that had come to watch the match. The most famous among them was a rank ten.

He was quite the large male with red hair and had several scars on his body. To the audience, he was known as the Red Reaper, but in reality, on the outside world, his true name and position carried a lot more weight.

'Two fighters who don't use abilities and are in the top hundred rankings. Perhaps one of them is the Qi user that 'he' is looking for.' The man who was thinking this.. was named Chris. Although he held a rank ten position in the game, he held the number one position in the organisation known as Pure.

"I don't understand your actions?" The Martial arts god said. "You refused to fight me, and then you copied my technique like so. Even your stance right now is just a poor imitation of mine. Did you just want to get humiliated in front of all these people?"

"No," Quinn replied. "I just want to see how far I can go."

The response wasn't what the martial art's god expected. He shifted his feet and was ready.

The fight had started, but neither one of them ran towards each other. Instead, they inched closer and closer. Each of them waiting to be within range. The two of them were also of similar height and reach, so one didn't have an advantage over the other.

When they finally reached each other's range, in an instant, both of them went ahead with the same move, delivering the intense thigh kick.

'There both are just as fast as each other, and they both look just as strong.' Chris thought.

Due to them both using the same move, it meant that a certain part of their body would collide with each other, and that was their shins. Neither one of them was wearing armour, and when they both hit.

The crowd winced in pain. Hitting one's shin on something alone hurt greatly. They couldn't imagine such strong hits banging into one another. A bang was heard, and at the same time, their foot went back to the position it was in previously. Still, the second they landed on the floor, they both went at it again, throwing their legs out hitting each other's shins.

Each time their legs would hit, the crowd wanted to look away but at the same time couldn't keep their eyes off the scene in front of them. Neither person was backing down with each kick.

'What is this guy's leg made off!' Quinn thought as he continued. Even though his stamina wasn't taking a toll, he could see his game health was decreasing, and because of that, his strength was slightly suffering as well.

Knowing that he would eventually lose this battle, Quinn decided to use the flash step, to move behind.

'Even if you pivot now, you will be off-balance. With the kick, I practised thousands of times. It will reach him!' Quinn thought.

"Your kick is good. You must have practised a lot, but I have practised far more than you, and more than just one thing." The martial arts god said, moving back and causing Quinn's strike to hit nothing but the air.

Soon after, Quinn felt another kick hitting his back leg, the only thing holding up. He was off-balance, and his body had been swept off the floor, soon he saw the white ceiling.

Rolling off the floor, Quinn was ready for a close confrontation, as he knew the martial arts god was going to use this opportunity to clinch or do something else, and Quinn was right. As he got up, he could see him upon him and desperately threw out a punch, which was grabbed by the martial arts god.

Pulling Quinn towards him, he elbowed him in the face, then pulled his arm out, slamming down at the joint, popping it and breaking it. Right after a kick to the knee caused his leg to come out, and standing on top of that leg, the martial arts god lifted both of his elbows and slammed them down on top of Quinn's head.

[Winner 'Martial arts god']

For the second time, Quinn had lost, and the crowd cheered in response.

'That fight, although the Noob fighter isn't using any type of ability, I could be wrong, but I think the martial arts god was. He would have never won this unfair fight unless he had Qi, of course.' Chris thought, smiling to himself, wanting to seek out this Noob fighter.

After the fight, Quinn once again received an invitation from the martial arts god. This time, he was prepared for his stubbornness, and he was hoping their conversation would go the right way.

After accepting, he had been transported to the same room as Quinn.

"So, will you listen to me now?" Quinn asked.

Ignoring everything he said, he asked his own questions.

"Are you really dedicated to not using an ability?" He asked.

"For this game, yes, I want to only use my fighting techniques. I saw your skills and was hoping to learn them myself." Quinn admitted, hoping it was enough. "I hope I impressed you today with my skills." Quinn smiled.

Hearing this, The martial arts god smiled back.

"Maybe you're the one. Let's see how you will progress."

Quinn's plan had worked. Knowing his character and how he was into role-playing, Quinn just had to imagine him as some grandmaster. Even his user ID, meant that this man wanted to escape reality, so as long as Quinn did something extravagant to get his attention, he thought he would be pleased, and it managed to work out in the end.

The martial arts god explained to Quinn that his fighting style wasn't called Muay Thai like Vincent had expected but was something similar. Instead, his fighting style was something called Muay Baron. A very ancient fighting style used in war in the past.

It was a title given to those that were to protect the king, and a fighting style used to kill its opponents as quickly as possible. Later on in life, the sport was banned, so not many people chose to learn it, but the skills were continued to be passed on,

and the Martial arts god believed he was the only person who still knew all the skills of Muay Baron.

The teaching process, as usual for Quinn, was something he was able to catch onto quickly. The martial arts god, didn't say much, so Quinn didn't realise how much he had progressed until he had joined the rankings once more.

He fought using the techniques he had learnt, rising up through the rankings, and people wanted to know who he was if anyone had an idea about him.

But no one knew.

The more Quinn won his matches, exclusively using the martial arts gods skills, the more the person took a liking to him and eventually, after reaching rank sixty, the inevitable had happened.

For the third time, Quinn had been matched up with the martial arts god, who had been his teacher for the last couple of days.

It was unknown to those in the game that the martial arts master had become Quinn's teacher. They just suspected that the 'Noob fighter' Was some genius who had picked up the same fighting style.

So what happened next came as a surprise to everyone

"I forfeit the match." The martial arts god said. "I know when someone has surpassed me, and I know when someone has decided to limit themselves when fighting."

Although Quinn didn't know, during the first fight, the martial arts master realised something that Quinn didn't himself. His movements were slightly awkward. It was as if he wasn't used to the speed he was fighting at.

He didn't know why, and he didn't know how, but the 'Noob fighter' Was never fighting at full strength against him. It was because of this, and after seeing him learn the thigh kick so well, he wanted to see how far this person could go, whether they could go past the wall, he had hit.

"I have taught you everything now. My wish is for you to keep going up the ranks and reach the number one spot using what I have taught you. For me, this will be the biggest achievement." The man said, and soon the whole gaming area disappeared.

Exiting out of the pod, Quinn had quite the experience over the last few days playing the game, and he had achieved his goal.

"Thank you, martial arts god. I will help you achieve your dream...one day." Quinn said. "For now, I have some students that need looking after."

Little did Quinn know, how right he was.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 989: The fear of him

Before leaving the cursed ship, Quinn did his usual, getting an update status from Sam on things that were happening with the Cursed faction. After all, he was already on the ship to talk to them in person rather than through communication devices.

It also seemed like quite a few of the core team were busy doing other things, so it was good to know how they were doing.

In the command centre, Sam was a bit distracted. He was looking at files on the holographic display but at the same time seemingly doing nothing. Even when Quinn walked in, his face would have been seen through the files since they were slightly transparent, but Sam continued to stare at the screen blankly.

"Is everything okay, Sam?" Quinn asked, approaching him slowly. There were a few times he had seen him like this, but now Quinn was starting to wonder what could've happened that made him this way.

"Oh Quinn, yeah, everything is fine...I think anyway." Sam replied, gulping as well. He was a complete nervous wreck, and he had sweat running down his face. "It's just, I think it's too hard to explain. Why don't you just go see Logan? It seems he has come back from his little trip. Just don't attack him."

Now Quinn was really intrigued because Sam was simply making no sense. With the way he was, he wouldn't have been able to get a clear answer from him anyway.

'Don't attack him. Why would I ever attack Logan?' Quinn thought, walking ahead to the research lab. When entering, he could see Logan busy working away as usual, and at the same time, he had his robotic arm covering most of his right arm, although it did seem a little bulkier than usual.

'Didn't he want to get that fixed?' Quinn thought.

The next second, Logan found himself dropping several items due to his larger clumsy right robotic arm. Before it could fall to the floor, Quinn whisked to his side and caught several small parts, placing them back on his workbench.

"It seems you keep getting faster every time I see you," Logan said. "This arm is a little difficult to control."

"About that." Said Quinn. "Why did you make a bigger arm? Weren't you going to replace it?"

A few seconds later, small little parts of steam were seen escaping from the robotic arm. It split apart in half and fell to the ground, revealing what could be seen underneath. A dark black arm with several scales all over. His fingers were larger

than that of a human with fingernails that acted and looked more like dragon claws, although they seemed to have been shaven down for easier use.

"Logan, what the hell did you do! You said you had it all under control, and you would be fine. Are you now a Dalki!? Why would you do that to yourself!?" Quinn couldn't understand at all. Surely Logan would have been better with a robotic arm, and if he could recreate a Dalki arm, why couldn't he recreate a human arm.

"Quinn, I do have everything under control. I did this to myself on purpose, as to your question of why. Everyone has sacrificed so much. How many people have you turned due to them wanting power? Isn't this the same? This way, I can finally be of help. I haven't lost my ability either. They have made their sacrifice, and I have made mine."

In a way, Quinn understood what Logan felt, but he just didn't realise Logan felt this way. He never thought Logan wanted power, and he was always a big asset to the Cursed group, that he had failed to realise how much Logan felt like he wasn't a part of it.

"Besides, I am plenty human. I have put in measures that make it so the Dalki blood can't spread to my body. It also seems to be less contagious as your vampire blood, which rapidly changes one's body." Logan explained.

Looking at his arm, Quinn could see that halfway up past his elbow, there was what looked like a small little metal brace that was almost a part of Logan's arm. Below it, the arm was all Dalki, while above was the rest of Logan's body.

"I thought about it for a while, but perhaps if my parents didn't just rely on their brains all the time, they would have been alive today. I need something to at least protect myself."

Quinn couldn't argue with that. Although he wanted to protect everyone, there would definitely be times that he couldn't.

"So, how is the arm?" Quinn asked out of curiosity.

"Why, don't you see for yourself?" Logan said with a smile, and the next second, Quinn could see a fist coming towards him. His reaction was good, and he had blocked the hit holding his fist in place, but Quinn's hand was shaking from the sheer power.

'It's strong. It's been a while since I have taken a Dalki's power head on, but just how strong is the Dalki blood running through Logan, and does he still have the same effect as other Dalki?' Quinn wondered.

"I know what questions you want to ask, but I still haven't figured out everything myself yet. I need to get used to the arm first, and then I will be able to provide you with your answers."

Letting go of the punch, Quinn looked at the arm one more time.

"Your one crazy guy." Said Quinn.

"I believe that I am not as crazy as a certain vampire boy," Logan replied and got back to work.

Meanwhile, back on earth, inside the beast weapons class, Quinn's students had just entered and were a little depressed. The energy was low. Of course, they would be as their substitute teacher Aden had constantly been telling them every day how horrible they were. How they had weak abilities, and they were even useless at fighting.

Aden had his own methods, and he thought constantly telling them how bad they were would make them work harder to improve and surpass the others. Although that worked on some kids, that was slightly stronger. For most of those in the class, they were already feeling bad about themselves.

They saw the beast class as their one opportunity to still be seen as an asset to the outside world, but now they were being told they were horrible at this as well.

Aden, was in charge of two beast classes and was in charge of the Earthborn classes, so for today he decided to bring in five students from his main class.

"The reason I have brought these guys in today is to show you all just how far apart you are from them. You guys need to work harder, remember you will be fighting soon for points for your house. In return, these points will be used to upgrade your dorm facilities, and those who contribute the most points for their houses will be gifted with high-level beast crystals."

Just as he had finished his speech, it looked as if Aden had gotten a call.

"What happened!" He shouted over the receiver.

He quickly walked over to the five students that he had brought with him.

"Alright, I have to go for just a short while, but I'm going to leave you in the hands of Zhen here and the rest of them. Show them what you got." Aden said, quickly leaving the room.

The kids stayed in their positions, waiting to see what the kids upfront would do. There were three boys and two girls. Zhen looked the most confident out of all of them, he had bushy but straight eyebrows, and his hair was neat, sticking outward slightly to the side.

He had a pair of strong shoulders on him and always had his beast sword by his left side. As for the others, one of the boys who were with them was Erlen, who was no

longer his former self. His eyes looked dead and didn't even look like he cared that he was there.

"Alright everyone, you heard what the teacher said, but let's be honest, what can we really teach you in such a short amount of time?" Zhen said, raising his shoulders. "Let's face it, if you choose to fight, then you will only get a beating, and the last thing we want to do is be called bullies. So I have an idea. There will be three groups, the Earthborn group, the Graylash group, and yours, at this event. So what I'm going to ask of you guys instead is to just lose convincingly to us on the day. We won't hurt you guys when there is no need to, and you can let this just be a competition between the Earthborn and the Graylash group."

"What do you say?" He asked.

When speaking, Zhen didn't say these words in an arrogant tone. Instead, he was talking as if he was genuinely concerned for the students and was doing them a favour by coming top with this deal. Because of this, a lot of the students were starting to think it was a good idea.

They didn't know the strength or skills of the other students taking the beast weapons class, but due to how much Aden complained about their skills, they thought it was a lost cause.

"Are you really that strong?" A voice from the students said. "You don't even know if we are weaker than you. You just looked at us and assumed. Besides, isn't this military training for fighting against the Dalki? Do you think we can really just say to them it's okay, we will let you win? No, we can't, we fight so we can get better." Shiro said.

The smile on Zhen's face stayed present.

"I just wanted to help you guys." He said, "You don't need to take us up on our offer. And about what you said earlier. Let's see then, why don't we have a duel if you really think we are on the same level. Maybe you are right, and I was just being too cautious."

As Zhen said these words, Erlen walked forward and grabbed Zhen by the sleeve.

"Don't do it, leave that kid alone Zhen, trust me, it's not worth it. You don't know what will happen if you mess with these kids."

Pulling his arm away and out of Erlen's grasp, he whispered in his ear.

"You've changed Erlen. I know you were some big shot in the elemental class, and I don't know why you decided to move into the beast weapon class, but me and you are not the same. I don't rely on my family's power." Zhen said, walking away and up to Shiro.

Erlen started to shake again, not because of what he thought Zhen would do, but because of what he feared Hardy might do.

"Hey, you two girls, you saw that I took no part in this right, make sure you remember this." Erlen said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 990: Activating new power

In the beast class, Erlen and Zhen seemed to be having a disagreement about something. Shiro had confidently walked up to the walls and went ahead, grabbing a pair of dual short blades. One held in each hand and walked to the centre of the room where everyone had already spread out.

To Zhen, it was clear that he had accepted his challenge, and he too decided to ignore the warning given and walked out to the centre of the room. There was no officiator, no ref for this fight, just a match between students who were using beast weapons.

"Hey, don't you think we should try to find a teacher or something? This could go bad. There is no one here to stop the fight if anything happens?" Venus asked.

Venus was with Swin as usual, and the two of them looked around the room to see if anyone else was going to get a teacher. At the same time, they were worried if they left, that things might just get out of hand, and backup from the two of them was needed.

"If anything happens to Shiro, we have to back him up like he did for us at that time," Swin replied.

Pulling out his own sword from his sheath. Zhen held it in his hand. It was made with good quality materials. The hilt's beast parts showed that it was most likely an intermediate weapon. Compared to all the basic tier weapons that had been placed on the wall, this was quite an achievement, as it meant that this was Zhen's own proposal weapon he had brought in.

The swords were something between that of a short sword and a longsword. Not too heavy, but still carried decent range ready to be held in both hands for extra power, or a single hadn't for more options and flexibility.

Activating the beast weapon, new energy was felt moving into his body. He was now stronger than before. Activating a beast weapon to be used to its full potential and gain its stats didn't always show a sign.

However, some weapons would light up when active. They even had beast training balls that would change colour once they sensed the person had activated them already.

Seeing the weapon in Zhen's hand, Shiro's confidence swayed a little, but he gripped both of his swords tightly and knew he had to have confidence in himself.

After meeting with Quinn and Sil, Shiro's opinion did change a little. He no longer worried about which weapon would suit the ability he would get, and just tried

using the best weapons or weapons he could at the time, and that's when he had found the dual swords.

Activating two of them gave a slightly better boost compared to other weapons, and although the strength given when using them wasn't much, the speed made up for it.

The fight had begun, and Zhen was seen walking up confidently to Shiro as if he didn't have to worry about a single thing.

"Let me show you the difference between our class and yours. There is a big difference between us. We know how to use the active skills in our weapons. This alone gives us a huge advantage." Zhen said, using his top speed to dash towards Shiro.

To the students watching, this was impressive, and it was the first time those from Quinn's class had seen a beast weapon fully active.

'This is how much speed one can gain from beast weapons?' A student asked but was more amazed at the same.

However, when Zhen got close and swung his sword, sharp fast and confidently, what he didn't expect was it to be blocked by one; of shirts swords, and before Zhen knew it, the other hand that was free and had a sword, was swung at his side hitting him against his armour.

Even though he was wearing armour, the strength of the strike hurt him, and Zhen couldn't help placing his hand over where he had been hit.

"You lied. You already know how to activate your best weapon." Zhen complained, still holding onto his side.

"I never said that we didn't know how to activate the power of the beast weapon."

Hearing Shiro's reply, they had an idea of what had happened. Although Zhen had activated his, and he should have had more power and strength, so did Shiro, allowing him to block the attack and hold it.

"You," Zhen said, placing his other hand free forward. "Do you know why I only hold my weapon in one hand? It's so I can still use my ability."

Before Shiro could move, he felt something wrapping around his arms and legs. Soon he couldn't move at all. The vines wrapped around his arms tightened until he eventually dropped both swords, no longer being able to use them.

"I'm really going to enjoy this," Zhen said, with the same smile he always had. Throwing out his fist, he had the sword guard covering his knuckles and hit Shiro right in the face giving him a bloody nose.

Then, he continued to punch Shiro on his sides and went back to the head again, as if he was a boxing bag.

"Hey, stop, what are you doing!" Venus ran out, and so did Swin straight behind him.

He ignored their words and didn't even care if they were about to interrupt. Shiro looked almost unresponsive, but when Zhen threw another fist until it was eventually stopped by Erlen himself. Holding onto his arm, it started to freeze quite quickly.

"You need to stop!" Erlen said.

"What the hell are you doing?" Zhen asked.

"I'm protecting you. I'm protecting all of us. Please just stop hitting these students." Erlen pleaded.

Zhen looked into his eyes for a few seconds, and he could see worry. This person who is this strong was worried about something, but what were they worried about? He thought.

Because of this, Zhen decided to stop, letting his ability go and dropping Shiro to the floor.

"I guess there is no need for us to show you anything," Zhen said, walking back to the others. "You already have someone that knows how to activate beast weapons, so why don't you ask him?"

Soon, all five of them had left the room, and Shiro was left there on the floor. A busted lip, probably a broken nose and a few ribs, with only Venus and Swin by his side.

The students didn't really know what to do or what to say to Shiro, but they actually thought for a brief second when Shiro had gotten the first strike in, they had a chance, but it all quickly vanished.

"Come on, we have to take him to the medical room," Venus said, lifting him up on his back.

"Let's go," Swin replied.

Just as the two of them, along with Shiro on their backs, were about to exit the room, the door had opened, and the first teacher to walk in was teacher Aden, but the one that followed him was general Hardy.

"Hardy, your back!" Venus said with a smile.

For Quinn, he couldn't; keep his eyes off the injured person who was on Venus's back. The main thing was the smell that was coming off his body. Even a single drop, he knew the student was bleeding.

What shocked him was seeing that it was Shiro who had been beaten once again, but he was in a worse condition than before.

"Venus, take him to the doctor's office and have Hayley heal his wounds," Quinn ordered. "As for the rest of you, I want you to tell me what happened now."

Hearing everything, Quinn wasn't angry. He was more upset with himself due to allowing things to happen while he was away. He wondered what to do. There was a big event coming up, and his class was at the bottom of the barrel.

However, what he was most concerned about, was that Shiro had been beaten up a second time.

'Didn't everything end with that last event? I guess there is more than one rotten apple.'

'I can't do what I did last time and get too involved like that. Clearly, it hasn't helped Shiro as he is still being bullied. I need to come up with something, so none of those in my class gets hurt.' Quinn thought.

## Chapter 991: Best in the world

Not too long ago, Aden had gone running out of the classroom and had left Quinn's beast class in control of the other students. His reasoning for doing this was because of the call he had received, informing him that the teacher 'Hardy' Had finally returned and would be taking over the beast class lessons again.

Thinking that his days of teaching the class were over, he rushed out personally to find Hardy. That's when Quinn had finally returned to see his students in their current state.

Venus had done as asked and went ahead to take Shiro to the doctor. However, there was still half of the lesson left. Quinn knew that the incidents wouldn't stop, and dealing with one problematic student wouldn't stop what went on between students.

'So they decided that all these kids will be fighting against the other beast classes. I wonder how much they have progressed?' Quinn thought.

"I'm sorry I have been away for a while. I had some important matters to attend to." Said Quinn. "I have heard about the upcoming beast class event. If you guys can, feel free and show me what you have learnt over these past few days."

The idea was to get the students to try to forget about what happened, call them down, and see where they were currently. The atmosphere in the room was heavy, and one of Quinn's speeches wasn't going to fix that.

Eventually, the students grabbed their weapons and attempted to activate them, while others seemingly had given up and just practised improving the skills with the weapons.

Walking around, Quinn went to those that seemed to have a hang of activating the beast weapon and decided to give them a few more tips. In the past, when Quinn had first touched a beast weapon, his system had activated it all for him, but learning Qi helped him understand the process more.

With the second stage of Qi, Quinn could feel those who were able to summon the energy to use beast weapons, but something wasn't quite there.

He knew of a way to help them but was careful. What Quinn was careful of, was touching the students in case he turned them accidentally.

'Maybe, it won't be a problem anymore. I can not only control the Qi energy but my red aura as well, perhaps..' Quinn thought, as he walked up to a student who was close to activating his weapon and had their eyes closed.

Quinn placed a single finger on the back of his shoulder, closed his eyes and could feel his energy. Immediately it looked like the red energy was attempting to do

what it did best, entering the human's energy and taking it over, but Quinn had practised controlling it, and with his new Blood control stats. He was able to move it away, eventually switching it out, and placed a small bit of his regular Qi into a student.

With that small bit of energy, Quinn then started to help the students.

"Can you feel the warm bit of energy that has entered your body? That energy is mine. I can tell you have a sense of feeling for yourself already. You need to follow that energy, and you will be able to activate the weapon." Quinn explained.

A few seconds later, the students had activated the beast weapon and felt the power energising his body. Not wanting to touch the student for longer, he let go of him, just in case something went wrong.

"I did it!" The student yelled. "I finally activated the beast weapon."

Everyone could see the student shouting with joy and the teacher Hardy behind him. So many of them had struggled for so long, and after one lesson of Hardy returning, a student was successful in activating their beast weapon.

"Is he a miracle worker? Maybe he can help me as well?"

"Ah man, I liked Aden at first, but he turned out to be an arse." Another student commented.

Soon, all the students were calling Quinn, asking him to help them out next, but there were over a hundred students, and some of them weren't quite at the stage this student was.

'Even if they all learn to activate their soul weapons, they won't be ready for the fight in time. I need to do something else.' Quinn started to think.

'Don't you think what you had done was a little dangerous?' Vincent asked.  
'Touching that boy, you could have turned him here in front of everyone.'

'I know, which is why I only helped him activate the weapon and not anything else. Perhaps if I was to move the boy's Qi, the red aura would try to act more widely, but I have been practising my control of the blood and Qi energy every day. It seems after the blood control stats improved, I can control it pretty well now.'  
Quinn replied.

Going around, Quinn helped more students that were already close to activating their weapon, but after just a couple more, the class was over, and they only had a total of three days until the event was to start.

Sitting in his homeroom class, Quinn started to think about what would be the best thing to do. While doing so, he had a visit from one of his students.

"I brought him here because I thought you should know he is all healed up," Hayley said, as she pushed Shiro forward. She looked at Hardy for a few seconds and wondered if she should warn him about how the other teachers were planning something.

'No, it's not my place to get involved. Those generals aren't idiots. They wouldn't do something that would hurt the students.' Hayley thought and was off.

"Shiro, you are free to go as well you know? You don't have to give me a report. Swin and Venus already explained what happened." Quinn said.

However, Shiro stood there by the door, not moving forward. Although Shiro and Quinn were similar in many ways, Shiro lacked the confidence that Quinn had. Maybe Quinn would have been the same if he had never gotten the system, just getting frustrated more and more as he felt helpless each time he was beaten.

Standing up out of his seat, he started to walk over to Shiro.

"You know, when I went to military school, I also joined the beast class, and although you were in a bad state, I believe I was in an even worse state than you. I had been stabbed right through my stomach. The other students had staged it to look like an accident, but luckily the teacher I had at the time knew otherwise."

"Stabbed, really?" Shiro thought, imagining the pain. "How did you survive that?"

Quinn gave a nervous laugh.

"You know who I am now, so you should also know that I'm not that much older than yourself. I just look kind of old. The doctor I had when I attended school is the same one that you have now."

The more Shiro learned about Quinn, the more he couldn't believe it. Of course, after he had found out that Hardy was actually the leader of the Cursed faction, Shiro went to do his research. A student who had no ability rose to the top in such a short amount of time.

It was a tale one would only read in fairy tales. It just seemed impossible.

"Teacher...please can you teach me the shadow. I promise I will be in your debt and will join the Cursed faction. I just...want to have a better life than I have now. Where I don't have to worry about someone else attacking me."

Quinn could understand the frustration, but teaching Shiro, a student the shadow now, would bring him more trouble. Maybe he could teach it to him when he actually did join the Cursed faction and was onboard the Cursed ship.

For Quinn knew there were hungry people out there who wanted to get this power for themselves.

"I can't teach you the shadow," Quinn said. "But maybe I can teach you something else."

The next day, early morning during Quinn's break periods, he figured out a way to help all of the students. Not just learn about activating the best weapon but also how to get better at fighting with the weapon they were using.

The only thing was, he had to ask Oscar if he could get permission to do such a thing.

"Of course you can," Oscar said. "You should never be shy about this sort of thing. If you can do anything to make these students stronger and their lives better, then go ahead."

With the request made, it was now time for the beast class to start again. The students heading towards the class were more excited than usual, having their teacher back, and some of them thought that Hardy could help teach all of them how to activate their weapons.

However, there were digital posters and splattered throughout about the big event of the beast classes in the hallways. They were inviting anyone to watch. It reminded them that even if they did learn how to activate their weapons, it wouldn't be enough for them to win.

"Hey, do you think Hardy will teach us first if we ask him nicely?" Swin asked.

"There are too many students, though. He only got through a few yesterday. Even if we have the whole lesson time today, I just don't think he will be able to see everyone." Venus replied.

When the two of them walked forward, the door slid open. All of the students were stunned at what they were looking at. They were still standing outside and hadn't gone in because they were unsure about what was happening.

"Don't be shy, come on in, we don't have time to waste. For the next couple of days. Everyone here will be your teacher and will teach you to use your weapons." Quinn explained while standing in front of those in the Cursed faction.

Quinn had decided to invite those in the Cursed faction that were excellent at using beast weapons, and they would teach the student one on one, the best way to use them.

"Each one of these are high ranking faction members from all over, from Daisy, the Black rings, and even those personally under the Cursed faction." Quinn said,

pointing at Wevil, who was holding two daggers. "Now, let's get on with it, shall we."

Both Venus and Swim looked at each other.

"I think we might have the best teacher in the world," Venus said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 992: A touching leader

The class was busier than ever today. It was no surprise as there was double the number of people present in today's lesson. Trying to rack his head for helping his students, Quinn had come up with a solution. It was impossible for him to teach them all personally one by one in such a short amount of time.

This was often a problem when teaching a large group. Different people learnt in different ways and at different speeds. He would need to decide whether to just move on and forget about those that didn't understand or focus on the talented students.

If he did that, it would just be him going against everything he was working so hard for. Instead, Quinn asked Sam for a favour this time, to send over the best beast weapon users that the Cursed faction had.

Surprisingly, or rather unsurprisingly at this point, Sam had gone beyond what Quinn had expected him to do. There were more than just those on the Cursed ship that was part of the Cursed faction. A message was sent out that their leader was asking for the best of the best beast weapon users across all of the factions that were under the Cursed group.

This was their answer, and there were more than enough teachers for every student. They were versatile when it came to teaching. More importantly, they could teach students about their weapons that Quinn had no idea about.

'Things are going well. Some of them are even better at explaining how to activate the beast weapons than I am.' Quinn thought.

'That is a given. What works for one person may not work for another. With the number of people you have brought, every experienced person is able to share their knowledge. I am quite surprised that you came up with this plan yourself.' Vincent replied.

Quinn was quite pleased, he wasn't sure this was enough, but at least the students seemed to be having a good time.

In the corner of the room, Quinn walked up to Shiro, who was there waiting with his duel blades in his hands.

"Alright, should we continue with what I was teaching you before then?" Said Quinn.

---

The day had ended, and there were still two more days until the beast weapons class event would start. There had already been a few events that others could watch, and points to the houses had been applied.

The students now had a general idea of how events would work and play out.

However, it was almost impossible to hide a hundred and fifty people that had come over to help out the Cursed faction. Complaints had started, with one of them being Aden. He had kept an eye on the class and had heard what general Hardy had done.

In the end, he decided to make an official complaint to his head general of the Earthborn group, Head general Sach.

"This is unfair!" Aden complained. "My students haven't had professional help and personal tutoring from others. It's clear that General Hardy is just doing this before the competition to give his students an unfair advantage. You have to speak to the supreme commander about this."

General Sach, was relaxing in his own office. He was twiddling with a toothpick in his mouth, trying to control the split part of his tongue, and soon broke the toothpick in half.

"Oscar won't do anything. It seems he already received permission beforehand. Oscar claimed that it was something that we could have done to help our students at any time as well and thought it was actually a good idea. Remember, we are not attempting to fight against each other. This event is just in good spirits for the students.

"Are you really that worried that your students will lose?" Sach asked. "Skills take years to learn. There won't be much that they can learn in just a couple of days. I would know better than most."

They weren't the only people displeased with what was happening either, as the students from the other classes felt it was unfair. All of their complaints had fallen upon Aden's ears.

"Teacher, can't you do something like that for us, invite some of the strong ones from the military?"

"Yeah, aren't you some respected sergeant like you keep telling us? You should know some people, right?"

However, it was harder than one thought to just invite people. Even people in factions, those in the military, they all had important jobs to do. The only thing Aden could think of was to try and hire some people from a faction linked to the Earthborn group.

However, to hire a personal tutor for each student would cost a fortune and would just be a waste. He couldn't even imagine how much Head general Hardy was paying those people who missed out on two days hunting.

'There are probably just some F and D rank Travelers from the factions.' He thought.

"Don't worry about anything," Aden said. "The reason why they need to do this in the first place is because of how bad they are. You guys will win this with ease. You can even ask Zhen and the others. they saw what they were like."

Zhen nodded confidently. Teacher Aden never heard about what he had done. Quinn didn't bother to report it, for he and Shiro were planning their own personal revenge.

It was the last day before the event, and Quinn could see that everyone had improved by leaps and bounds. Having a personal tutor was like a shortcut. Making sure the students didn't make the same mistakes they did when they were younger.

The most important thing was that they were all experienced fighters teaching them fundamental ways of fighting.

"Are you sure what you've taught me is enough for me to beat an ability user and one for the top ones as well?" Shiro asked, losing a bit of self-confidence as the days leading up to the event were upon them.

"Of course, I can't guarantee you will win," Quinn replied. "But that is the same if you had any other ability. Just because you have a strong ability doesn't guarantee one to be better than others, but what I have taught you is something that can match against any top ability users. You want to make an impression and prove everyone wrong, right? Then what better way than to beat one of those high ranking ability users without an ability at all."

"Let's show the whole school that they are wrong to look down on those with no ability," Quinn said with a smile.

With the final day of training done, Quinn had all the students thank everyone for their hard work. After all, they couldn't stay teaching the students forever, but it was a great start. The tips they learnt today would help them grow in the future, and now not a single student didn't know how to activate a beast weapon.

Once all the student's left, Quinn also didn't forget to thank everyone in his faction as well.

"All of you have helped me when asked, and I don't want you guys to think that I have done this without paying any of you a favour back," Quinn said. "If any of

you ever need help in the future, please don't be shy to ask. I can't help if I don't know what the problem is."

Those who didn't know Quinn that well and were from the other factions were starting to respect him more, not just because of what he had just said but because of the actions he had taken. Some of them thought they were being tasked with taking on a strong demon tier beast. Sam had even agreed to compensate them as if they were doing so with credits and beast crystals.

When they learnt what they were actually doing, they wondered what leader or person would take their time to personally do such a thing. Quinn was on top of the world, and he was here teaching students personally. Something about that touched them more than the leaders who just ordered others to do their bidding.

When returning, Quinn had received a request and learnt of a few details about tomorrow's event. He was to select five of his top students and then one at a time, they would battle it out in a three-way duel. Fighting against the beast class from the Graylash family, and from the Earthborn group.

There would be refs on the side, wearing top beast gear and with the speed ability. They were to stop any serious injuries that were to happen to the students. If a ref was to stop the match, they would then declare the winner and why the match had been stopped. Strikes to the heads were not allowed.

'Five people, it reminds me of the duels we had when I got my seat of power. Tomorrow is going to be an exciting day.' Quinn thought.

Finally, the day was upon them, the beast weapons class event would be starting.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 993: Three classes

All of the school buildings surrounded the large green field that was placed in the centre. It was where the students had their opening ceremony and also where they had met their head generals for the first time.

Last time, a makeshift stage was built. Even in the past things like this were constructed quickly but with ability users even more so. Today when the students woke up, and looked out of their window, they could see a large almost coliseum looking stadium.

It certainly wasn't there just the day before, but the students knew why it was there today. Because the beast weapons class, would be having an event to display to all the others. All students were told to attend, it was compulsory even though there were some that weren't particularly interested in the event.

Such as those in the elemental class who rarely used beast weapons, still it would be quite the spectacle to watch, and events were always entertaining.

Early morning and the seats in the stadium were starting to be quickly filled. Each section was filled with certain classes and their homeroom teachers would be there to lead them. Not everyone who was in Hardy's homeroom class was part of the beast weapons class and they were being led by Hayley today instead.

As for the teachers who didn't have a homeroom class or were in a higher position, they were told to enter at a later time, and wouldn't be sitting in the stadium seats, but instead would be in a special area right on the ground floor of the arena.

Here, they could see all the battles up close and personal, behind strong reinforced glass. This glass screen and area went around the entire stadium letting one view from any angle they wished.

"Hey, there are a lot of people here today. I kept my eye on some of the teachers that work at this school but some of them I've never seen before." Fex said, who was currently in the special glass area hoping to mingle with others, but he ended up walking with Peter and Helen as usual.

"That's because not all teachers are there. They have invited some of the higher military personnel that aren't part of the school, and it looks like some small faction leaders as well." Helen explained.

"Who cares about them? We are just here to watch Quinn's class perform." Peter said.

"Hey, aren't you meant to be in the stadium with your homeroom class, since you're a teacher's assistant?" Fex asked.

Peter shrugged his shoulders.

"The teacher never asked for my help, so I guess I'm not needed."

For a brief moment, Fex felt sorry for Peter's students.

Not too far from where they were, there were also the head generals of the Earthborn group, Samantha, Innu and Sach.

"Any ideas as to when you plan to do something to that General Hardy?" Innu asked, still feeling anger in his body every time he was reminded of the humiliation he had received in front of all the others.

"Patience." Sach said. "We can't just go after him, remember all of us are meant to be working together and that wouldn't exactly promote unity. If I see the opportunity I will make sure to take it."

Hearing all of this, Samantha wasn't exactly pleased that the other two were still planning something. Of course, what happened to them was humiliating and embarrassing. Maybe she was only okay with Hardy because she hadn't been humiliated.

She understood that, if a single head general as well as a nobody from the Cursed faction was able to do that to the head generals of the new Earthborn group, it would cause a power shift. However, maybe that was just how it was meant to be... After all, the strong ruled over the weak in this world, right?

And she was starting to think with everything Hardy had been able to do so far, she was afraid he would be strong as well.

Currently, inside the arena, now that all the students and guests had arrived, Oscar was giving a speech about what would be happening today. While also generally surveying his audience, to see how the students were doing.

"Some of you may not realise the importance of beast weapons, but today I hope this will change your mind. After all, remember," Oscar said as he pulled out the Demon tier ice sword from his back. "It was because of these beast weapons we are able to match the Dalki in strength."

The students were amazed as they saw Oscar bring out his Demon tier weapon. It was as if they were looking at a grand treasure. Although some students didn't care much for beast weapons, a Demon tier beast weapon was something that everyone could respect, because it even increased Oscar's strength greatly even though he was an elemental user.

"Now, let me introduce you to the three teachers of the beast weapons classes!" Oscar shouted.

The first one to walk out onto the arena floor was Aden and behind him was his class of beast weapon users. They had literally come out from the arena floor, as a hole in the ground was seen, and slowly rising to the top was him and his students.

When they arrived, they decided to put on a little show. With several sword users, spinning their bodies in synchronization. Ability users casting their powers above displaying a vast amount of different colours, and even more with students using their weapons together.

It was quite the show and when they were done, the students watching all clapped in appreciation of the display.

"Next, we have the teacher of the Graylash house, Aysel!" Oscar announced, and through the floor once more a female teacher who wore fishnet stockings and had her hair cut short, came up on the stage with her students.

"How come the Graylash family are even teaching beast class lessons?" Fex questioned.

"Remember, these are just houses so it's not like all the students in the Graylash house are a part of the Graylash family." Helen explained. "Also the Graylash family is large, just like the Cursed faction. Over time they had absorbed strong factions to work under them, just like the Cursed have the Daisy faction."

"So, of course, they would have weapon users under them."

The Graylash house didn't put on a show like the others, but instead they were all lined up perfectly, not moving out of position. Although the students practiced this as part of the military from time to time, the others could tell something was up.

It was almost as if the students were afraid to act, thinking something might happen to them.

"Lastly, coming onto the stage, is the class led by the head general of the Cursed house. Hardy!"

Lasty, Quinn and his student were raised up, but unlike the other two houses, his students seemed more normal. They didn't have a fancy show, and just were nervous looking at everyone watching them from the stage.

The three refs from each house walked forward. On Quinn's side there was Sergeant Fay, who had the speed ability, and two others from the houses Quinn had never seen before.

Soon after, Quinn was to leave the area, and he would take all the other students to the class viewing area with the other teachers, while those that were participating were to remain on stage.

"Good luck guys, remember everything everyone taught you, they will be watching." Quinn said walking away.

What he said was true as well, the event was being broadcasted to others outside of the school, to other factions and on the Cursed ship. Those that had spent time teaching the students were currently watching the event live.

Out of the five students Quinn had picked, they consisted of Venus, Swin, Kim, and the student who he had first taught how to activate his beast weapon named Ru. The last person who had also been selected was Shiro.

The five students walked towards the centre and all fifteen students could now see each other eye to eye.

"Now, each of you will have a number displayed on your watch." Oscar explained, Shiro looked at it for a second and could see the number five.

"When you are not fighting, you are to wait with your teacher in the viewing area. When your number is called, a countdown will begin. All those students with the same number will enter the arena, and the duel will begin immediately. So remember your number well." Oscar said.

As Shiro was about to walk away, he could see Zhen, showing his watch across to him proudly, displaying the number five.

'It looked like fate wanted the two of us to fight again.' Shiro thought. 'This time, I won't lose.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 994: Thumbs up

The students who weren't participating in the fight went back to their teacher, watching the match behind the glass screen. Quinn would have been with the others, but he had an obligation to look after the students and watch it with them.

Still, it didn't stop Fex from breaking away from Helen and Peter, who were a bore in his eyes and coming over to where Quinn was.

"Hey, Qu- I mean Hardy, I guess you must be a little nervous, seeing your little runts out there fighting," Fex said.

The students around could hear every word Fex said and looked up at the loud teacher.

"Who's that? Is he someone important?"

"Not really. I think he just teaches that sewing class or something."

"We can ignore him then. Well, I'm just glad I'm not a teacher like him." The students spoke, not caring if Fex heard them or not.

"Hey, hey, my sewing class is great!" Fex said, but seeing all the students looking through the glass screen ignoring him, he knew it was pointless to say anymore.

"I'm nervous, but not for me, for them." Quinn said. "I can imagine for them they think that this moment means everything for their future lives, but honestly it doesn't. I want them to just have fun if possible."

The first number was called out, number one. All students with number one would soon be entering the fighting field. Looking at his wristwatch, Venus noticed that he would be the one going first.

A countdown timer counted down from twenty seconds in the glass room, which just made the pressure even worse. Now he had to watch the count down before the glass door would open and the fight would begin.

"I think you almost forgot this," Quinn said, handing over a grey spear with a sharp blue tip at the end. It was Venus's beast weapon, which was an interesting choice considering his ability. He was so nervous that he had almost forgotten his weapon.

Finally, the number had reached zero, and the doors opened. Venus immediately started to rush out into the open, and the two from the other areas, who were marked number one, had also entered the arena.

"Stay calm!" Quinn shouted, but he was afraid that even if Venus could hear him, he had already blocked out everything and was focused on the fight.

Venus was just imitating what the other students were doing. He saw the two of them rush forward, and so did he. The audience's cheers were carrying the students to do crazy things and not act straight. It wasn't until he reached the centre that he realised who exactly was going up against.

Although he didn't recognise the male student from the Graylash house who wielded a spear as well, Venus did know the student from the Earthborn house. For the two of them used to go to the same school as each other.

It was Erlen, when Venus looked him in the eye and could see the sword being held in his hands, his body started to shake. The three of them were running towards the centre at this point, but suddenly. Erlen took a turn and went towards the student in the Graylash house instead.

'Why is he going for me? Shouldn't we take out the weak one first so the two of us can have a proper match? Isn't that what Zhen told us?' The Graylash member thought.

Taken by surprise, he thrust his spear half-heartedly, and the attack was parried by Erlen's sword. With his other hand free, he grabbed onto the spear, and it started to freeze in place, making it heavier. Charging in more, Erlen started to hit the student with full force using the side of his sword. It had hit his ribs. Then when he was up close, a punch to the cut.

Before he could recover, Erlen had grabbed the student and started to freeze his body all over, attaching him to the ground. While the Graylash students body was frozen, Erlen went to hit the large block of ice with his sword again, but before he could, the ref on standby for the Graylash family stopped Erlen by the arm.

"The Graylash student has lost this match." The ref said. They broke the ice safely and brought the student back to where they were.

It was a completely one sided fight that was over in just a few seconds. People knew Erlen was strong with his ability, but it seemed like he wasn't too bad with the sword either. It was no wonder they had decided to use him for the event.

With the Graylash student out of the match, only one person left, Venus.

'Crap! Is he going to try to pay me back in this arena for what happened to his family, but the ref will stop the fight if that happens, right? They'll stop it before I get seriously hurt, just like what happened now.' Venus thought.

However, the question in his head was: What if they didn't stop the fight in time?

"This is bad!" Swin said, being concerned for his friend. "Venus's ability is water, while Erlen's is ice. It's going to be a hard battle for him to win unless he uses his weapon."

The others hearing this agreed with Swin as well, and from the look of it, Venus was still suffering from past trauma dealt by Erlen.

However, his next move surprised everyone as he placed the sword away.

"I beat the Graylash family member for you, I hope this is enough for you to forgive me, and I will forfeit from this match," Erlen said, raising his hand. "In return, all I ask for you is that you at least let my parents work at the company again."

Erlen was bowing down to Venus, something never seen before, and the students watching in the seats had no clue what was going on. Still, Quinn could hear everything, even through the glass with his super hearing.

"They don't have to be in the same position they were in before. It's just they built that company up from scratch, and I can see it's killing them every day to not be a part of it, and it was all my fault. Please, I'm sorry! I don't know why General Hardy looked out for you or what your relationship is with him, but please ask him this favour!" Erlen went on his knees, and he placed his head on the floor, begging him.

Honestly, Venus didn't know what to do. He wasn't practically close with teacher Hardy and didn't have a clue why he had gone so far for them. If Venus wanted to, he couldn't really do anything, and he didn't want to agree and then not follow through with his request.

Hearing everything, Quinn thought about it. Erlen clearly was affected by his ways, and he wasn't like some who could never admit their wrong doings. People could change, and in this instance, what Quinn was most impressed by, was the fact that Erlen didn't seem to be doing this for his own benefit, he could tell.

Erlen was asking for his parents more than anything.

Lifting his head off the floor, Erlen knew that maybe Venus couldn't do anything, but he couldn't ask Hardy. Sometimes asking those you did wrong or the cause of this would make it worse.

Just as he was about to walk away back to his group, he could see a thumbs up from Hardy himself in the distance through the window.

'Wait, is that thumbs up for me?' Erlen thought. Venus was still looking away from him, so it couldn't be towards Erlen. He then pointed at himself to make sure, and he could see teacher Hardy giving him a nod.

'How...how could he hear me through the glass and from so far away!' He thought, but it didn't matter. The emotions started to build up in Erlen, about how stupid he

had been. In his whole life, he had gotten away with everything he had done. He had never suffered from the consequences until that day he had learnt a lot.

"Thank you!" Erlen shouted, bowing down and heading back to his classmates.

"Ladies and gentlemen, it looks like we have a winner!" Oscar announced to everyone's surprise. The boy who looked nervous and did nothing had won, giving the first win to the Cursed house.

'I don't know who you are, Hardy, but thank you.' Erlen thought.

## Chapter 995: The Turnaround

When Erlen returned to his classmates, it was safe to say that he wasn't exactly welcomed with open arms. They couldn't hear what he had said, and we're all confused why he had quit the match.

When Erlen went through the glass door, he had returned to the others, and everyone was staring at him.

"Tell me now Erlen!" Aden shouted. "Why didn't you attack the student from the Cursed house and just forfeit the match like that. Did Hardy pay you off!?"

With everything going on and what he had seen and learnt of Hardy so far, Aden was starting to think he was just some person who had money. One who had reached such a position in the faction due to connections or something else, and now he was suspecting that Erlen had been paid off as well.

"I just thought I was going to lose a lot more if I attacked him," Erlen said, walking past Zhen, who glanced at him from the corner of his eye. Erlen had wholly ignored him going forward.

This just rubbed something inside Zhen, and soon he turned and grabbed Erlen by his collar, lifting him in the air. Zhen was quite a tall student and had a macular frame. Picking up Erlen wasn't hard, and Erlen's feet were just tip toeing off the ground.

"Zhen, clam down, we aren't the only ones here!" Aden said as he started to panic and looked at everyone looking around them. Technically the glass tube was connected all the way around the arena. Although all three houses were placed in separate parts, one could walk through the whole glass area and see all the other teams.

This meant there were plenty of people walking around at this moment that weren't students or teachers.

Seeing the teacher panic like so, Zhen let go of Erlen's collar.

"Just remember that we are all part of the same house. Your actions affect the whole team. No one will want someone like you to join if you're not a team player. You're selfish." Zhen said, looking away.

"I know I am, which is what I'm trying to fix, and my family is more important than a bunch of fake friends at school," Erlen mumbled, but no one had heard him.

The next fight had progressed, and the student known as Ru from the Cursed house was called and the other number twos. The fight was underway, and something

strange seemed to be happening. Those in the Graylash house as well as the Earthborn appeared to be ignoring each other and focused entirely on Ru.

It was as if there was a pact made between them before the match. What managed to take them by surprise was how much more skilful Ru was than they thought. He was being overwhelmed by two sets of attacks but had held his ground for a while until eventually, Fay intervened and declared it a loss for the Cursed house.

"That's not fair!" Venus shouted. "If they hadn't tagged teamed Ru like that, then he would have had a chance at winning."

That's what many people thought as well. Upon his return, Quinn would make sure to give him the praise he deserved for doing well. With Ru out of the picture, the other two fought, and it was a slim win, but the Earthborn student managed to claim victory.

The results were one win to the Cursed house and one win to Earthborn. With three matches remaining. Even if there was a clear winner, all matches would progress for experience and the event, so Shiro knew he had to fight either way.

He just was hoping that his team would win before then, so the added pressure wouldn't be on his shoulders.

Despite having lost twice in a row, the teacher for the Graylash house looked unfazed, and when number three was announced, a smile appeared on her face, as a female student had entered the stage.

'The first match the Cursed were only able to win due to us forfeiting, and the Graylash have some skilled people but not enough to pull this win. We have this in the bag.' Aden thought.

However, when the match started, the female student from the Graylash family threw her sword in the ground and opened up both of her palms. She fired a lightning bolt hitting the students from both families. Then picking up the sword, she ran forward, placing it against the student's neck, causing him to forefeet and did the same with the other.

"Should that even be allowed?" Fex wondered. "I mean, she didn't really win using her beast weapon skills. She just used her strong ability."

It was true, but using an ability wasn't against the rules. Since they were hoping to promote some use of weapons along with an ability. In the end, the win was awarded to the Graylash family, making each team even with one point each.

Finally, the number four was called out, and for this one, on the Cursed house team, Swin had two daggers held in his hand. He didn't say much as he was waiting for the door to open. Everyone cheered him on, and unlike Venus, who was nervous, Swin seemed more steady and ready.

"That's the person I taught. So he's definitely going to win this!" Wevil said, watching from the large screen with hundreds of people from the Cursed faction who had gathered in one of the rooms to watch the event.

The main thing that Wevil had taught Swin, was his state of mind while fighting.

Just like last time, the student from the Graylash family and that from the Earthborn family had gone after the Cursed house. It was obvious what was happening at this point, to where the others were starting to discuss if something was up.

The stadium started to boo. After all, a lot of the students were part of the Cursed house and wanted them to win points for their team.

One of the fighters from the Graylash family was using a staff that they were able to extend and shorten at will. It was a weapon that worked well with the person's ability. This person extended it hoping to hit Swin in the stomach, and at the same time, the student from the Earthborn group leapt up in the air.

"The two of you may be working together, but you don't know how to work together!" Swim said, throwing a dagger off to the side, completely missing the Graylash student. Then with his other dagger, Swin had hit the staff slightly upward so he could protect himself from the large axe the other student was using.

The axe fell down, hitting the pole. The other student was getting ready to retract the pole when he felt a tap on his shoulder.

"You have been eliminated. Stop fighting at once."

The student turned around, confused, only to see that the referee had a dagger held in their hand. Swin didn't miss, but using his telekinesis, he was able to control the dagger and aim towards the student's back, attempting to pierce the heart.

Swin being confident that he would have the Graylash student eliminated from the match, straight away went forward to the Earthborn student. Rolling on the ground, going past the student's legs slicing him on his way.

He quickly stood up and stabbed him in-between his shoulder guards again. There was a wild swing of the axe, but leaving the dagger stuck in the student's shoulder, Swin let go and duck down.

During the fight, Swin had retrieved the other dagger using his ability back from the referee and charged in straight away again.

"Idiot, running straight at me!" The Earthborn student shouted, swinging his axe down, but while it was mid-air, with his hand held out, Swin started to use his ability to dig the dagger deeper into the student's shoulder. It caused immense pain,

and for them to stumble missing with the axe swing. At that point, Fay held Swin's hand in the air so the last dagger wouldn't hit, intervening with the fight again.

"I think it's safe to say that the student from the Cursed house is the winner," Fay said in quite an angry tone, wondering why the referee from the Earthborn house didn't intervene.

Oscar agreed with the decision, and in the end, the Cursed faction had been awarded their second win.

"The Cursed house are the winners!" Oscar shouted.

Cheers from the crowd and those watching in the glass room were going crazy. It was the same on the Cursed ship as well. Swin had done far more than anyone had expected. He was just like Ventus, a nobody with a weak ability, but he had defied the odds by defeating two students at once.

"I guess you're a good teacher after all," Linda said, hitting Wevil on the shoulder.

Linda still couldn't control her strength well, so Wevil was rubbing his arm from the pain, but he didn't care much. For he had this overwhelming feeling seeing a student of his win. It was a warm and fuzzy feeling he had never felt before.

With the Cursed faction now having two points, they were the only possible winners of this event, or a sudden draw. It had been a complete turnaround and was unexpected by most. Still, the event would continue on with the final number being called, Number five, which meant Shiro and Zhen would finally be meeting.

'Are you sure he will be okay?' Vincent asked. 'You didn't really teach him much from what I saw, at least not enough to beat a strong ability user.'

'Oh really, is that what you think?' Quinn replied. 'I guess I really didn't teach him much, but that's because of him, not me. Go surprise everyone, Shiro.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 996: Own Talent

In his hand, Shiro was holding onto both of the duel blades tightly. His hands were slightly shaking, showing his nerves. He would have still been nervous if he was just to fight against Zhen again, but there was the one from the Graylash family as well, and everyone was watching him and counting on him to win.

'If what I think is happening, is happening, Then as soon as this door opens, both of them will come charging in at me.' Shiro thought. 'Can I do it?'

"You are stronger than you think," Quinn said. His final words as the countdown had ended and the glass door opened.

Rather than rushing in, Shiro decided he would observe the situation from outside. As he decided what to do, it would be his thinking time, but then what he saw next came as a complete surprise.

At first, the student from the Graylash group came running forward, and Zhen too seemed to be walking, trailing behind. There was a concerned look on the Grayish student's face as he noticed Zhen not doing anything. Still, as they continued to run forward, they were suddenly stopped in place, feeling something tug against their leg. Looking down, they could see a root had wrapped around their ankle, making it hard for them to move, and when they lifted their head, a blade was already pointed at their throat.

"Forfeit this match, now," Zhen said.

Gulping, the student did as asked and gave up. It was a victory that was even quicker than Erlen's.

"You didn't think I would let anything ruin our little reunion, did you?" Zhen asked. "You must have known that this would happen if you decided to participate again. I wonder what your teacher was thinking, sending in someone like you. Maybe he has a screw loose in his head as well." Zhen continued to taunt.

Shiro didn't let it get to him. Maybe in the past, it would have, but he was too focused on his breathing right now. Taking in a deep breath at the right time, he charged forward, cutting the distance between the two of them far quicker than Zhen had expected.

He quickly got in a stance seeing this and soon was parrying the attacks from Shiro away. He hit them one by one, not having time to recover or get a solid footing to strike back.

'What's going on? His attacks weren't this strong before? And he wasn't this fast. Is he wearing beast armour, or is it something else?' Zhen thought.

Eventually, Zhen had found the root that he had grown from earlier that had been used on the Graylash student. He was able to quickly cause this to rise and grow in front of them, blocking the path between the two of them.

Shiro cut down a few branches, but the tree was growing at a fast-rate, creating more different components that would wrap around. Still, he continued to attack them one by one, hitting all of the branches and not losing his breath until the entire root was destroyed.

Once again, Shiro charged in, and this time he delivered a powerful blow hitting the sword, making Zhen's arm feel numb. A hit was made towards the side of his chest, but a clanging sound was heard as metal struck against metal.

At this point in one's school journey life, it was rare for a student to have beast armour unless they had a strong family backing, and it looked to be the case here.

Still, even with the armour on, the damage could be felt. It even chucked Zhen's body off to the side. Quickly wasting no time, he built up giant tree trunks, wishing to get more distance between the two of them.

"What is going on? Is Zhen running away?" The students wondered.

"But isn't the other person just using a beast weapon? I haven't even seen him use an ability."

"Wait, that's that kid called Shiro, right? I don't think he even has an ability!"

Word was getting around about Shiro, and now they were wondering if the reason for his vast improvement was due to the beast weapons itself.

'I don't understand. You didn't teach the boy Qi did you? So how did he get so strong?' Vincent thought. He had watched him, so he was sure he had never taught the kid Qi.

'Your right, I didn't teach him Qi, but I helped his body figure it out for himself.' Quinn replied. 'This is all because of Shiro's own talent. When talking to the others, it seemed like Shiro had managed to activate the power of the beast weapon before anyone else. I started to realise that those that could, had a stronger sense of Qi within their body, and it was true for Shiro as well.'

'I remember Sil explaining his family's strange bodies. They too seemed to be infused with Qi, but when I asked him about it, he never knew what it was. Qi is life force, according to Leo, so everyone has it, but maybe through the struggles that Shiro had been through, just like the life and death situations the Blades' go through, he was able to summon some of it.'

"What I just did was show him what he had. Show him the energy around his body. The rest was down to Shiro himself."

Right now, Shiro's body was infused with Qi without him even knowing about it. He would simply think it was the breathing technique Quinn taught or due to the beast weapons he was using. The reason why Quinn wasn't afraid others would find out was due to the small amount of Qi and he also knew that the others would think it was due to the weapons as well.

The match continued, and Zhen's panicking caused him to use far more MC than he realised. Shiro was like a beast, having locked onto his prey chasing after Zhen, and whatever would be used to try to slow him down, he would cut them down.

Eventually, the inevitable had happened, and Zhen had run out of Mc points, no longer being able to use his ability.

He gripped his sword.

"I am Zhen. Who are you!" He shouted, attempting to strike back with all his force holding his short sword with two hands. The blow was blocked with a single hand from Shiro, and then another kick was made to Zhen's chest. Shiro continually attacked at the armour on Zhen's body.

It would bounce off each time, and it was hard for Shiro to know if it was doing any damage or not. However, he thought they would eventually stop the fight and Fay, who was by the side, was wondering why that still didn't happen yet.

'Although students are allowed to wear armour, we are still meant to judge the fight as if they haven't got any on. So why hasn't the referee from the Earthborn group stepped in and stopped the fight yet? Clearly, the boy has lost.'

Fay took a slight step forward but then saw a faint smile coming from the teacher Aden.

'Is this their plan? Do they want me to come in and stop the fight? Maybe then they will say I have stopped the fight too early, and it will give the other student time to rest.'

If this was the plan, it was a crafty one. Because anyone could tell by the way Shiro was striking, he couldn't keep it up forever, and even he could tell.

However, the others didn't know he had one more trick up his sleeve. He knew he couldn't fight on like this. Placing both of his duel blades together. Shiro struck at the sword in Zhen's hand once again. By now, the damage had been building up over time, and as it hit, he had let go of the blade, causing it to fall to the floor, but Shiro had done the same, dropping his blades.

The next step he took, he slammed his foot on the ground and pulled his left fist back.

"Wait, isn't this one of your moves?" Fex asked.

The others knew this strike well, as Shiro threw his other fist out, hitting the centre of Zhen's chest piece like a hammer. It was the hammer strike. Blood sped out from Zhen's mouth as the attack went entirely through the armour.

'Are they still not going to stop this fight? I need to go in now!' Fay thought.

Putting on a brave face, Zhen made it look like he wasn't hurt at all. The rest of the blood in his mouth he attempted to swallow. He stood up fine as if the attack didn't hurt him.

'The attack had to hurt him, I can tell, one more hit, and he'll fall over!' Shiro thought as he went to perform a second hammer strike again but in the middle of its moments.

The blood from Zhen's mouth had finally given in, pouring over Shiro's face. He stopped the attack midway and lost concentration, and in that second, Zhen had picked up his blade again and struck it towards Shiro's heart.

In the last few seconds, it was stopped by the Earthborn referee, and Fay wasn't too far behind, having already pulled Shiro out of the way as well.

"I guess this is a win for the Earthborn group then?" The referee smiled at Fay.

The students never expected to see a fight go this far. Especially between first-year students who were just beast users, but seeing such a spectacle, they cheered louder than any of the previous fights before.

"The winner is the Earthborn group!" Oscar announced.

The cheers continued as the students were taken back to their groups, but there was controversy about who the real winner was. Shiro was walking back fine on his two feet, not having been damaged, while Zhen had to be carried back.

"I lost," Shiro said as he walked through the glass doors.

"Hey, are you crazy? Of course you won that. They should have stopped that fight long ago." Venus said, trying to encourage him.

For the first time, Venus and Swim weren't the only ones talking to him, as everyone started to rally behind Shiro. They stated that he had clearly won the fight bringing a smile to his face.

The real question, was now that there was a draw between two groups, what would happen next.

"Everyone, as you know, there are two points awarded to the Cursed house and two Points to the Earthborn House. I have just been given a suggestion from the Earthborn leaders that maybe we should make the tiebreaker a little more interesting.

"But I want everyone's opinion here about it. How about for the final point, we have the two teachers of each class face off in a duel!" Oscar asked.

Hearing this, the students got excited thinking about seeing two experienced supposed fighters going toe to toe. The crowd roared in response.

'Wait, does this mean they want me to fight?' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 997: Hardy strong?

The teachers that were teaching the beast classes were meant to be quite skilled using beast weapons themselves. Otherwise they would have never been selected to teach those classes in the first place. The students were excited after just witnessing a spectacular match to see real beast weapons being used by the two teachers. Which was why the response was so great for this change of events.

"Wait, isn't the beast weapons teacher for the Cursed House, teacher Hardy? Isn't he the one that just made that speech at the opening ceremony. If he fights, will we even have a chance of winning?"

"Maybe he doesn't have a good ability, but that's why he teaches the beast weapons class?"

"I heard that he was meant to have Emperor tier beast equipment, one of my classmates told me."

"Emperor tier, that has to be a lie."

"We'll soon find out, right?"

Behind the glass area, all the students were looking at their teacher, Hardy, wondering if he was going to take part. They had mixed thoughts about whether he should go and fight or not. They had grown to like him as a teacher after he had helped them all so much, and they had seen him do some amazing things. But whether he was a good fighter, was a different question altogether.

What they were more concerned about now, was if their teacher went out there and lost, the others would say bad things about him.

"Hardy, you don't have to fight." Venus said.

"Yeah, can't you call and ask Wevil to come and replace you? You have the connections and called him before, right?" Swin asked.

The students continued to comment on their worries, and Quinn soon realised why they didn't want him to go out and fight. They were worried about him, all of them.

"Don't worry guys, I will go and get a win for the Cursed house." Quinn said.

Even if their teacher's words were confident, they couldn't shake this uneasy feeling. They had seen the other teacher, Aden, show off his skills. While teaching them, he had shown off so many times during their lessons.

'Wait, he said he had Emperor tier beast equipment right? So he should have better beast equipment than Aden, so there is a chance he can win this!' Venus thought.

Then, he saw Quinn go over and pick up a pair of basic tier gauntlets and placed them on his arms. At the moment he didn't have any gauntlets on him since giving the ruined ones to Alex.

"Didn't you say you had Emperor tier equipment? Why are you just using the weapons we use?" Venus asked.

"My equipment is a bit damaged at the moment. Don't worry, these will do." Quinn said, putting them on. They felt light, as if he was wearing nothing, but in this situation he thought it was a good thing anyway. Since he would most likely need to hold back in the fight.

Walking out from the glass door, the students still cheered, as they had expected Hardy to not participate. Even if he didn't win, they at least honoured the fact that he chose to not run away, although many in the Cursed house thought it was a loss already. Especially after seeing the equipment on his body.

'Damn, I guess that stuff about defeating Emperor tier beasts and having Emporeir tier equipment was a lie then.' The students thought.

At the other end, Aden walked out from the other side, but he didn't have a beast weapon or any armour on, and he wasn't alone. Standing by his side was Head General Sach, who wore a monstrous looking pair of boots. It appeared as if they were made from bones, stuck together with a black substance.

It was quite a horrifying thing to look at.

'As I said, if you are patient enough, the time will come when we can show him up.' Sach thought.

"This is fantastic, I never thought we would get to see such a thing!" Innu was excited. "This is perfect. We will be able to humiliate him, and get him back in front of everyone!"

Samantha wasn't too sure about that though. There was a certain confidence that Hardy always carried and even more so, she was wondering if Oscar would do anything to stop such a thing that was about to happen.

"I request that I substitute for teacher Aden." Sach requested. "You see, Aden is just a sergeant, a beast weapons teacher, while Hardy is a Head General. We all know a head general's strength, so the match should at least be against someone of his own strength right, don't you all agree?" He lifted his hands, and those that were in the Earthborn group cheered as loud as they could.

A head general fighting for them would increase their chances at victory, not that any of them thought they were going to lose, before.

Oscar looked at Hardy for a second, who seemed unchanged about who his opponent was going to be.

'A head general is no easy opponent. This might force you to use your ability and reveal your true identity to everyone here, but if you haven't got a problem with that.'

"Agreed, I think this is a fair request!" Oscar shouted, and everyone cheered as the decision was made.

Aden was a little annoyed that Sach had decided to come and replace him. He thought this was going to be his chance to show off, especially against a useless teacher like Hardy, but he had to comply, as Sach was his boss after all.

On the Cursed ship, everyone was surprised to see their leader walking out and was about to participate in a match.

"Quinn's really going to fight. Is he going to use the shadow?" Wevil asked.

"I hope he doesn't. It would ruin the whole purpose of why we sent him there in the first place, but Quinn is Quinn." Sam replied, almost sulking.

"Don't worry." Logan spoke calmly. "Do you really think he will have to use the shadow against someone like that? Quinn's enemies are a much higher level than anyone here. If he has to resort to using the shadow here, then he would consider himself a failure. Besides, what do you think he had been doing on the Cursed ship the past few days?"

Although Logan didn't tell anyone, he had watched a few of Quinn's matches in the VR pods. Of course, when one would become popular in the game, Logan would hear about it, being a moderator as well as the creator. But there was one thing that he had found out during his search, something he thought about telling Quinn.

'It shouldn't matter too much. If those two are meant to meet, then they are meant to meet.' Logan thought.

Walking towards the centre, Sach could see the poor equipment Quinn had on his hands, while the pieces on his legs were at the Emperor tier level.

"I don't want to face someone when they are at their weakest. I hope you aren't taking it easy on me?" Sach asked.

"Don't worry, I will not be taking this match lightly, but I can't use my full strength. After all there is no one here who will be fast enough to stop me if I were to kill you by accident." Quinn stated.

Sach was unsure if he was joking or not, but assumed that the words spoken were just there to unsettle him.

"Then I hope there won't be any excuses when the match is your loss." Sach spoke.

"Can I ask you just one question?" Quinn asked. "You have a strong chest piece underneath, right?"

"Yes, all my equipment is at the Emperor tier level." Sach replied.

Quinn said nothing else, and even used his inspect skill to confirm it with his own eyes.

"Let the fight begin!" Oscar announced.

The first thing Sach did, was charge in with his strong Emperor tier boots. With each step, the arena floor was crumbling and being lifted off the ground, while Quinn remained unmoving and still.

'You might think your ability will save you? As long as I don't make eye contact with you, then I should be safe from your mind control.' Sach thought. He believed this was the main reason Quinn was acting so confident.

When Sach finally got in range, Quinn took his stance that he had been taught in the VR game by the Martial Art's God. When the timing was perfect, he swung his right leg out, pushing his hips, and trying to hold back some of his power. He hit Sach right in the ribs with his bare foot, slamming the chest piece, and cracking it slightly.

Sach, was flying through the air, and was heading right for the reinforced glass, but standing in front of it was Peter, who held his arms out ready to catch him.

One second, the students could see Sach charging forwards. The next second, a devastatingly loud bang was heard and Sach's body was limp being held in Peter's arms.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 998: Respect for you

'Oh no!' That was the first thought that came to Quinn's head after delivering his kick. He had performed the thigh kick. A move he had practised many times, but everything he had initially planned had gone wrong or different to how he had expected.

For one, Quinn had only planned to use half his strength, hoping to match what he had done in the game. He thought he had the speed and strength down so he could imitate that quite well. However, this was real life and not the game.

For one, Sach was far faster than Quinn had anticipated, so while he was getting prepared, Sach was already upon him. Lifting his leg, if he was to hit him, he would need to move his leg faster, and with that, more strength was added into the snap. The last thing, due to the way Sach ran forward, he had his body bent slightly downward and instead, the kick was meant to be sent to the thigh, which had hit the side of his body.

'The kick was stronger than I thought it would be as well.'

The crowd was cheering just moments ago, expecting to see a tough fight, or some even expected to see a one-sided, but not in the way they had panned out, had gone silent. The result was unexpected, and they weren't quite sure what happened. They didn't even see what Quinn had done.

Very few people had seen Quinn move his leg, but what they could see was Sach being held up by Peter, holding him by his armpits like a child who refused to go to bed. His legs weren't standing firm but were being dragged on the floor.

"This can't be real! Did General Sach just get beat with one hit!" Innu shouted, not being able to hold in his shock.

"It looks to be that way, and it seems we have underestimated him," Samantha added. "From now on, I think it might be best that we leave him alone. If this wasn't an official match and we got on the wrong side of him, we could very well end up...." She didn't continue, but she was shaking inside.

From everything she had seen General Hardy do, she just couldn't make sense of who he was from the Cursed faction. How could someone so strong, with so many connections, be kept secret from the world.

At one point, she had made a guess as to who exactly this person was. One of her main guesses was Quinn Tallen, the leader of the Cursed faction, a person could change their appearance or find a way to if they wanted, but there were many reasons why she thought it couldn't be him.

Quinn Tallen was a person who had the unique shadow ability, something not seen by others, a mysteriously strong ability, but she had seen Hardy use some form of

mind control on that day, and now had also seen him use feats of strength beyond human capability without beast gear.

One of these things had to have been an ability, so it couldn't have been Quinn. The fact that the Cursed faction had someone this strong on their side was a frightening thing and Samantha was starting to understand why Oscar wanted them so badly on their side.

A few seconds later, Sach was seen moving about.

"What happened?" Sach said.

"Wakey wakey sleepy head, you were just knocked out for a few seconds, that's all," Peter replied.

Quickly getting away from Peter, Sach noticed a piece of his chest piece had fallen on the floor, and when he looked to his side, he could see that it had cracked all the way up. He looked at Quinn's legs which seemed fine, and could only see the gauntlets on his hands.

What had surprised Quinn and Peter was how Sach was walking. He didn't seem hurt or in pain and was walking towards Quinn like he was fine.

"Stop, I know you are okay Sach, but it was clear that you were knocked out, and Hardy chose not to attack you further," Oscar announced from a special area that was in a glass box shape designed for him in the stadium. "I'm afraid even if you can continue to fight on, I have to give the win to the Cursed house."

Hearing those words, the crowd from the Cursed house section broke their silence as they cheered with joy. They didn't quite understand what was happening but were just pleased that their House, who they never expected to win, was able to pull the victory. The left side of the stadium was rumbling and shaking with excitement while the others sulked, still confused at just what was going on.

Usually, an attack using half of Quinn's strength would break some bones. If something was strong enough to destroy emperor tier beast amour, Sach should at least be hurting with each breath he took, but he walked over completely fine.

He stopped about two meters away from Quinn and smiled.

"It seems the two of us got off on the wrong foot. I just want to apologise for what I did." Sach said, still having the biggest grin in the world.

Based on his scary looking appearance, Quinn found it a little creepy, and with the sudden change in attitude, it felt like he was talking to a different person.

"You know, I always knew you were holding back. I just never knew by how much, it's why I never chose to fight you, but I guess now I know. I'm glad I picked the right person." Sach walked up to Quinn and placed his hand on his shoulder.

Quinn could tell there were no longer any intentions for him to hurt him, so he let it be.

"I hope you can make my dream come true," Sach said, walking off to his side, leaving Quinn standing there in the centre of the arena.

'Why do those words sound so familiar?' Quinn thought when it had finally hit him.

Those words about making someone's dreams come true were spoken by the martial arts god.

'Wait! That person is the martial arts god, the green-haired split tongue dude? That can't be possible!' Quinn thought, as his mind was blown away. 'But their personality, from when we first met, and the person in the game. They're like two different people. Even his movements just then.'

'Do you remember what I said to Quinn?' Said Vincent. 'About how it seemed like the man was roleplaying. In the game, he probably chose to act a certain way, and when people respected him for that, he kept that act and image up. It is the character he has chosen to be.'

There were a few things the others didn't know about Sach, but he was actually recruited from a recommendation from sergeant Chun after playing with him in the game. Only Oscar knew his skills with the Muay Baron, but he also was able to fight in several different styles, and he had done so in the past against others.

He never chose to display his Muay Baron skills against others. When asked why his answer to Oscar was he didn't want to kill anyone by accident. It was a martial art meant for killing. Of course, there were some moves that could be used, such as the thigh kick that Quinn had performed, but moves like that could be part of any martial art.

Another fact was he had also been discovered by Logan, who had checked the game logs. When he found out Quinn was training with the martial arts god, he found that it was linked to someone in the military base but didn't know who.

Now that Quinn had found this out, and how he managed to beat his gaming teacher in the arena with one hit, he wondered what rank he would be in the game if he allowed himself to use his full strength.

"Innu, I won't be taking part in your schemes anymore. Everything that happened to us that day was deserved by us." Sach said as he went ahead and joined Samantha.

Innu couldn't understand what was happening. It was as if Sach had been hit by some enlightenment when he had been kicked.

'So what if he's strong, so what if he has money? There have to be ways to get at him.' Innu thought.

"I must now call to the end of the event and thank Hardy for a spectacular ending. The winner of today's event is the Cursed house!" Oscar shouted and looked at Quinn as he had headed back to all the others.

'Quinn, you managed to do that without any beast gear on? How many secrets are you hiding? If we want to win this war against the Dalki, we are going to need your help. "

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 999: Hypocrite

There was a brief moment when Quinn returned to his students, where he could celebrate the victory with them. Walking through the glass door, unlike the others who were stunned and didn't know what to say, his beast class immediately gave him a cheer seeing their teacher.

"Hardy, you were always so coy about your strength, why didn't you tell us how strong you were?"

"Yeah, you just went on with that lame speech at the opening ceremony. You could have just kicked a rock and smashed it to pieces or something."

"So what's your ability, or is that all to do with beast gear?"

For the military, these students had an odd relationship with their teacher. They felt like they could freely speak to him, cheer him on and ask personal questions without getting in trouble. If this was another head general, or a person with high power, none of them would have openly spoken to him like so; but Quinn made their relationship like this.

"Everyone, remember what I said, if there are any problems, you can always talk to me or any of the Cursed house generals about it." Said Quinn. "I hope you all realise that the Cursed faction is a great place to be, and if you want to join it after your training. I will happily accept you all with open arms."

Saying these words, Quinn thought that Sam would be proud of him. It was the perfect opportunity while everyone was caught up in the moment, to advertise the Cursed faction to them and it seemed to work, as the response was great. The kids shouted 'Of course!' and 'I want to see Weevil again.'

It wasn't just his efforts that made these kids want to join the Cursed faction, but those of the Cursed family as well.

"The event is over, and it has been a long and tiring day, so all of you get some rest." Quinn said.

Returning to the dorms, the students couldn't stop talking about three fights in particular. Swin who skilfully took on two people at once. Shiro's fight, a person who had no ability beating Zhen, but at the same time people thought he had lost, and finally Head General Hardy, whose identity was still a mystery to all.

However, with good rumors, soon bad ones spread about him as well.

"If he was so strong and had that much power, where was he during the Dalki war?"

"I think it might have something to do with his ability, perhaps he learnt of it only after the war."

"Then what about the Civil war? He could have stopped or saved a lot of people's lives then."

"Remember he is part of the Cursed faction, and their leader doesn't exactly do the best of things. Do you remember the beasts he would unleash upon shelters and force the people to join his group?"

Despite all the negative rumors going around, there were those students whose minds couldn't be changed, because they knew the Cursed faction first hand. Quinn's homeroom class and also those who took Quinn's beast class.

Later that day, as the sun was starting to set and the black sky would soon be upon them. Quinn had received a call to head to a certain place.

'I was expecting this to happen, but so quickly?' Quinn thought, as he headed over to the main centrepiece building and headed to the top floor.

Entering the room, Quinn was in the large office and could see a female with a green outfit and glasses on her head. Wherever she would be in the school, Oscar would be next to her.

"Quinn, you put on quite the show, I was honestly surprised you accepted at first and I thought you were going to reveal your identity to everyone there." Oscar said.

"Of course I could have declined, but I think you know what you were doing by asking me to fight." Quinn replied with a smile back.

The atmosphere between the two was quite light, even if Oscar was scheming or trying to get Quinn to do things, it just didn't seem out of ill intent which was why it never made Quinn angry like it would do with other things.

"You've grown stronger Quinn, stronger than the last time I saw you. To be able to beat a head general with no beast gear on and pure strength. Then to have one of your students, who had no ability, able to beat one of our best students. I know all the equipment was basic tier and they shouldn't have that much effect.

"Quinn, I'm not forcing you to tell me what you did, what it is or how you did it. These are your secrets to keep. Just like how originals hide their abilities and don't share it with the rest of the world. I'm not going to force you, not that I could anyway." Oscar jokingly chuckled.

"However, I will say this. Our scouting teams have monitored that the Dalki are starting to make unusual movements, now this could just be a false alarm like the times before it, but I have a feeling this time it isn't. We are running out of time. If

war breaks out, these students will have no choice but to fight. Don't you think they all deserve an equal chance to live?" Oscar said.

Quinn expected something like this to happen, the good news was Oscar wasn't trying to force him, but in a way he was emotionally blackmailing him.

"Did the military care about everyone when there were those who were weak and useless in our fight against the Dalki? Why is caring about everyone such a big concern now? I'm not saying I won't do what you say." Quinn said as he turned around and walked out the door. "But Oscar, even you are being a hypocrite."

When Quinn left the room, Oscar let out a big sigh.

"Well that meeting went better than I thought, what do you think Jane?"

Pushing up her glasses, Jane answered.

"Of course, there is some truth to his words, but people's views change based on the situation, and circumstances. When the war broke out, there was no time to focus on the weaker ones, and soon after the war, the system naturally fell into place. I don't believe this is what you're doing.

"To control the whole human race as a single person is an impossible task, I think even as he rises he is learning of the struggle. Not everyone thinks the same way, and one person's definition of right, is not the same as another." Jane answered.

While Quinn was enjoying his life as a teacher, there were others in the Cursed faction that were not quite in the same boat. On planet Tryneve; currently Leo, Erin, Layla and Nate were walking through a busy street filled with people.

It was one of the more modern planets that they visited. Well developed with skyscraper buildings, and spaceships flying in and out of the planet, could be seen in the air above them. Even the ground they were walking on was made out of metal, while the sides were covered with greenery that was clearly put there just to give the place some colour.

Planet Tryneve was a trading planet, the most popular trading planet due to its location. It was a planet that wasn't owned by the military or one of the big four powers of the past. This was due to the many rich corporations that would choose to make their base of operations there.

Each of them had hired their own mercenary group to protect their companies. Making it well guarded. At the same time, due to its location being in the middle of all the beast planets, the place was also used by all factions. So it was in their interest to not cause any trouble.

"Pure has to do trade just like everyone else, so they have quite the base of operations here." Layla explained. "I wouldn't be surprised if they take a cut, or are even protecting some of the big merchants in exchange for things, but here is where

we might be able to find out the most information. After all, whatever they get here, they have to send it back to the base somehow."

"They are here." Leo said. "I can sense strong Qi users all around us."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1000: Familiar name

Those from the Cursed faction had been roaming the trading planet for a while now. The three young ones, Erin, Nate and Layla, were treating it as a nice little break. It was good to not worry about things and just enjoy looking at the shops and everything else the street was filled with.

After all, Quinn had stated that if they found out anything, they should contact him first before acting, which is why they weren't so uptight and worried.

Layla, who had learnt a lot about the planet when she was at Pure, explained to them what she knew and why Pure had even chosen to establish such a place. The atmosphere was still relatively light until Leo had mentioned that he could sense Qi users in the area.

Ever since learning the second stage of Qi, and now after figuring out the third stage, while using his ability, he could sense others around him to a finer degree and from a greater distance.

"Qi users, doesn't that mean that they are in the higher rankings of Pure?" Erin asked. "How many of them are there?"

"At the moment, I can sense two people, and they are about to head into that grand hall over there," Leo explained.

The four of them were standing on a busy shopping street, and at the very end of the street was a large building. A hall that many people were entering and leaving, but those that were entering seemed to be dressed somewhat differently compared to the rest of the public.

"The auction house?" Layla said, wondering what members of Pure would be doing heading into there.

"Doesn't it make sense? It might not be their base, but maybe they want to buy some expensive beast crystals or something else." Nate commented. "And we don't really know if they are high ranking users in Pure. Don't you remember they said that they would eventually be teaching all their members Qi?"

"What you say is correct, but I assure you, these aren't weak members of Pure. Not unless they have managed to learn this Level of Qi quickly." Leo said, noting that it wasn't impossible as one student of his had learnt it at an extremely fast rate.

Leo started to walk forward and head into the auction house while the two girls decided to follow.

"Wait!" Nate called out. "What are you guys doing? Don't you remember what Quinn said about how we should notify him if something happens?"

Layla and Erin both looked at Leo for answers as they had decided to just follow his decisions while they were with him.

"I promise I will notify him if the matter turns into a big one, but these two won't be any trouble," Leo said as they continued to walk forward and try to enter the auction house.

At first, the four of them were stopped just outside the entrance by two guards. All of their weapons and armour were being kept in Nate's shadow space as to not make them suspicious and seem like they went a threat. Still, the reason they were stopped at the gate wasn't for a reason like that. Instead, it was because they didn't exactly recognise them as their kind of clientele based on what they were wearing.

"Not just anybody can come into the auction house. The public can get an advanced booking if needed." The guard said, who was wearing decent beast gear on his body but no weapon, making them appear to be elemental users.

"Don't worry," Leo replied. "We are here from the Cursed faction, hoping to buy a few things."

The two guards looked at each other and were unsure about what to do. The Cursed faction was one of the great powers. However, people tried to claim they were from all sorts of groups just to get in. The problem was the Cursed faction was relatively new, and no one knew of their identities well. Especially of the higher-ranking members.

Knowing this, the guards would ask them to come back at another time, when they had proof or at least could confirm their identity. However, just as they were about to speak, they had received a message.

"Let them in." A voice spoke into their ears. A second after, they had no trouble and were let in.

The place was filled with expensive things, the floor and walls made of marble, a material that was harder to come by these days and chandeliers. The whole city smelt like money, but this place was a little over the top. Following the Qi users, eventually, they were placed in the auction house. There were several seats and many people wearing strange masks to hide their identity.

"Maybe we should have put ours on as well," Nate commented, and when he turned to look at the others, he could see they all already had their masks on, and he was the only one who hadn't put on his yet.

"What the hell? You guys don't tell me anything!" Nate complained.

The group was on a higher level, looking down at the stage. They were in the standing area since all of the seats had already been filled, but the good news was that the Qi users who they assumed were from Pure, were also standing.

The auction had begun with an announcer coming onto the stage, and items were called out one by one. Beast crystals and beast weapons were the most common items being bid on, and they were of quite a high level as well.

The next set of popular items were ability books and skill books. Seeing all of this and how much money was being thrown around, the young kids felt it was quite a sad sight to see.

Books that should be available to everyone and anyone were being hoarded and not shared by these rich people. Once obtaining one of these books, they could make as many copies as they wished, or none causing the price to rise or keeping the power.

"So much money is being spent here. There are too many zeros that I don't even know what number that is." Nate said, looking at the screen above that would show the number as the bidding increased.

"Whoever owns this place must be getting quite the profit then," Erin said.

The two men from Pure didn't bid on a single thing, and it looked like they were communicating with someone on the other end as each item came up. However, whatever they were looking for never did appear, and when the auction ended, the two men left as well.

Leaving the auction house, they followed the two men, hoping to find out where they were going. They walked through the shopping district they had come from and saw them enter a few shops before coming out again.

"So, what's the plan?" Nate asked. 'We can't just keep following them like this. This is getting us nowhere.' He complained.

Still, they continued to follow the two men and moved closer and closer as they tailed them. Which was just making Nate more nervous that they would be found out. He couldn't understand what Leo was planning on doing.

In the end, the men left the main busy district and started to head out to the more quiet areas. Finally, they could be seen walking into a jungle area that took them away from the city,

'This is it. This must be a pure hideout. It makes sense for it to be all the way here.' Nate thought.

When the group followed them into the jungle, they could see the two men had turned around and held weapons in their hands. One with two scimitars, while the other had a large silver chain in his hand.

"Why are you guys following us? Do you know who we are?" One of them said.

"You thought we didn't know? That's why we brought you out here."

"I knew we would get found out, we were following right behind them for so long, and we didn't even try to not make it look obvious!" Nate complained. "What kind of plan was this?"

"What are you talking about?" Erin looked at Nate. "This is the plan all along. Out of their own will, they have taken us to a quiet place, where we can ask all the questions we want."

"Of course, we know who you are," Leo answered. "Otherwise, why would we be following you? Now I'm just going to ask you some questions." Leo said, and for the first time, his eyes were glowing red.

The men took a step back as Leo's eyes looked devilish, being mostly white with a circle red ring glowing around it.

Just as it looked like the two groups were about to clash, the sound of clapping could be heard off in the distance.

"Excellent, I see you certainly do have a certain style. However, while you guys were concentrating on following them, it seems like you didn't realise that you were being followed." A voice said.

The direction of where it was coming from was hard to tell, and Leo hearing this, decided to expand the range of his ability. Even he couldn't sense the person, but when he did, he could see who it was, and it confused him even more.

'What are they doing here?'

The next second before the men could react, both of their heavy bodies fell to the ground, and now standing in front of them was a strange man in a butler suit.

'Did he just knock those two people out, but they were high ranking members of Pure?' Layla thought, trying to figure out who this person was.

Erin's eyes started to glow yellow as she looked at the man, and Nate had an odd sense of familiarity like he had seen him somewhere before, but that wasn't quite right.

"Let me introduce myself." The man said, bowing down. "The names Brock."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1001: The grand master

Hearing the name Brock didn't ring any bells to any of them. No matter how hard they tried they just had never heard the name before. Instead, they were trying to see if they could match his appearance to someone they knew, but again, other than his butler outfit he was wearing they didn't recognize anything else.

Yet, for some reason, Nate was the only one that felt like he knew this person.

'Why is my brain having a big massive fart at a time like this?! I hate when I can't remember things.'

What was worrying Layla, was the reaction Leo and Erin had towards this stranger. Leo was clearly on guard and Erin's eyes wouldn't stop glowing yellow. The only time she had seen Erin like this was when she was about to face a vampire.

"Wait, is he a... a.. vampire!" Layla asked. Now she was understanding why the other two were on guard and how he was able to defeat two Qi users so easily like so.

Leo nodded, giving confirmation. He could tell by his aura and more importantly both Erin and Leo could tell due to his smell. Sniffing the air a few times, Nate too could smell the difference now that Layla had said what had happened.

"It's a little upsetting that you don't remember me." Brock said, looking at Nate.  
"It's because of me that you're still alive."

Finally, something clicked in Nate's head, he knew why he recognized this person. It wasn't his looks or his outfit, it was his voice. When Nate was on the verge of death, he could hear someone instructing Sam on how to turn him into a vampire.

"So it was you that told Sam what to do?" Nate said, shocked.

The others now, were even more cautious, and gave the signal so Nate could use the shadow to allow them to equip their weapons. It was a skill that was later developed. Depending how far away people were from a shadow user, they could also use shadow equip on their allies.

After the shadow disappeared the weapons were now on display and they were ready for a scuffle.

"Wait guys! Nate you know him, is he friendly?" Layla asked.

"I'm not sure myself, but he did save mine and Dennis' life back when Hilston attacked us, but other than that I have no clue who he is."

"Oh, that's a shame, I thought I might have met one of the others from the Cursed faction here. Honestly, it was a complete coincidence that the two of us were after

the same set of people." Brock tried to explain. "I assure you though, I, or we, are not an enemy, not unless you see us that way. My master is hoping to meet with Quinn, and I'm sure Quinn would like to meet him as well. So it's in our best interests that the two of us work together."

What was worrying for Leo at the moment was he couldn't gauge the person's strength in front of him. Some of the vampires were able to suppress their auras strength. From his experience the only vampires that could do this were either vampire knights or leaders, and during Leo's time as a vampire knight he got to know all of them well, but this was a person he did not recognise. What Leo didn't like doing, was getting into scuffles or messes that he didn't know much about.

"You said you wish to meet Quinn, and you're on our side. Then why did you knock out those two before I was able to extract information from them?" Leo asked.

Brock took a step forward, and before his foot had landed on the ground, his whole body disappeared, and soon he was seen walking out from where they had come in, behind them.

"It's up to you if you want to follow me or not, and I can explain on the way." Brock said, as he continued to walk.

Leo was sweating, and the others were a little startled as well. The level of skill that was being shown was that of a vampire leader. They knew that if this person wanted to escape, or not be seen he could have well chosen to. Which made them trust the stranger a little.

"Can you tell us, who is your master, that you were talking about before?" Erin asked, as the group followed him.

Brock walked with his hands behind his back with his back straight up and wore a pair of white gloves. He was confident when he walked and he was certain where he was going as well.

"Me and my master have been trying to decide who to team up with to help the humans fend off the great Dalki." Brock started explaining. If they weren't sure if he was a vampire before, from the way he called them humans, it was obvious he was one now. "We had already done an evaluation on the military. We knew the group wasn't strong enough, and at the same time, their system was broken. The way they were handling things, soon they would self-destruct and it seems like we were right when Civil War broke out.

"However, what we never expected was for the human race to recover from the Civil War and be more united than ever before. For what we have found, it's all due to you guys from the Cursed faction. You were what our calculations never predicted.

"Still, before that, we had originally thought about the idea of teaming up with Pure. They had a much higher chance of defeating the Dalki, they were confident and seemed to never worry about them as a threat, so we tried to find out why.

"They showed us many different things, but it still felt like they were hiding something, and along the way an option to team up with another had come up that wasn't there before." Brock said, glancing at those still following behind.

"We wanted to look into Pure a bit more and it turns out they were hiding something. Through my own investigations it led me to this place."

Before they knew it, in another part of the jungle, the group had reached a large facility that looked almost like a factory. However the strange thing about it all was how quiet the place was, and as soon as the others had arrived they could tell something was up, because they could smell blood.

Walking forward, Brock pushed the double doors open and it was a sight they never expected to see. Human bodies were seen laying on the floor, glass tubes broken and equipment destroyed. However, what stuck out most was there seemed to be beasts that were dead, lying on the floor as well. All of them were the same type.

"As you can see, I have already been making progress and have stopped them from their wrongdoings. It turns out that Pure were running their own little experiments. They were trying to create their own type of beasts. A beast that would listen to them.

"When I arrived, I found that they had strapped many stray members of the Bree family. They had been trying to extract MC cells or use their powers to control the beasts. With cloning technology they wanted to create something that is completely loyal to them."

"Pure....was doing all this...but how? They couldn't have known about this. My mother would have never let this happen!" Layla shouted, in disbelief.

"When an organisation gets too large, sometimes not everyone knows what is going on behind the scenes." Brock replied. "Your mother could have very well known nothing about this. Still, we decided that this needed to be stopped. After all, it would be horrible if humans were the ones that created the next Dalki, wouldn't it?"

The group started to look around, as Brock just stood there in place while they did. They were trying to see if they could find anything, any information. The only thing that was found was some more numbers on some of the members' backs, guaranteeing that they were members of Pure.

Even Layla had recognised some of the lower ranking members from when she was at the Pure base. However, other than that, they were unable to find anything at all. No additional information, nor a terminal unbroken.

"You destroyed everything, and took all the information for yourselves." Nate said.  
"We can't learn anything, it's like you're blackmailing us."

"Blackmailing?" Brock replied. "Definitely not. Like I said, I wish for all of us to work together. Go ahead, tell me what exactly you were hoping to find from these people and I will help you."

The group paused for a second. They were still wondering if all of this was some trick or setup. Even the information they gave there was no way to tell if it was true or not, but Leo, unafraid compared to others, spoke up.

"There are two things we want to know. Where is the Pure base located, and who is the leader of Pure?" Leo asked.

Hearing this, Brock smiled.

"If that is all you are asking, it seems like the Cursed faction isn't up to date with events as we thought. If that's all you wanted to know, then I am happy to answer both of them for you."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1002: Important date

It seemed like a normal day for Sam on the Cursed ship, there were no panicking events going around on the beast planets. No internal disputes he had to solve over where certain things should be placed, or a different department asking for a big budget. It was peaceful.

It was these moments that Sam liked best when everything seemed to be going smoothly all over. Signing off the last thing that needed to be done, Sam sat in his chair which was at the head of the meeting table for the Cursed faction leaders.

The table was on a slightly raised platform with spiraling stairs that would go downward to the control centre of the whole ship, the good thing about Sam's seat was he could swirl around and see outside the glass while also looking below at all those working hard away.

"I guess I should just double check there is nothing important, or maybe something in the future that needs to be done so I can free my work up later." Sam said to himself.

Without a doubt in anyone's mind, Sam was a workaholic. Even though there was nothing to do, he still felt like there were things needing to be done. When opening up the calendar, Sam looked at the current date. It was July 23rd, yet for some reason it was marked red.

'Did I do this, I wouldn't have marked it for no reason?' When sweeping through the date though, there were no notes like he would have usually done for other dates.

He tried thinking what the event could be, but he could think of nothing, nor why the date was important. If it was such a big deal, surely someone else would have contacted him about it. Closing the calendar, Sam looked out the window once again.

"Argh! This is going to drive me crazy. If I don't find out why that blasted date was written down!" Sam thought in anger. He gave a call to those in the Cursed faction that were currently on the ship.

Going through each one of them though, none of them seemed to know anything, until eventually, he had decided to contact Logan. Logan was often busy so Sam didn't like to call him, but it was bugging him even more that no one knew why he had marked this date down, and he was sure he hadn't done so by accident.

"Sorry, I don't know why either. Although I can try to cross reference some systems to see if there is anything going on." Logan asked.

It seemed to be a lost cause but Sam asked him to do it anyway. If Logan couldn't find anything then he would just have to give up and assume that either someone else had tampered with his calendar or he had mistakenly done something.

However, it didn't take long for Logan to call Sam back.

"I believe I have found the reason why that date is so important. When cross referencing those things I looked for all events on our field to do with that date. I then matched it to events related to those in the Cursed, and sorted them by-"

"Err Logan, I know you work really hard, but do you mind?" Sam interpreted.

"Oh sure, it's Quinn's birthday today." Logan said, and quickly hung up the call.

Now Sam realised why he had marked the date down. It was a rare occasion anyone got to celebrate their birthday, but for Quinn, last time he had been so busy that it went past with no one noticing. Because of that, Sam wanted to plan a big event for him, but got interrupted before he could organise anything and write down any notes.

Immediately, Sam got to work. Quinn was still at the school teaching, although it was the weekend so he shouldn't have been too busy, but for what he wanted to do, they needed to get someone on the inside to distract him. At first Sam was about to contact Peter, but instead he decided to contact someone else.

"So you want me to distract Quinn for half the day or at least for a few hours because it's the boy's birthday." Helen replied.

"Yes, and make sure he doesn't find out about it either, can you do it?" Sam asked.

"I have the perfect thing in mind." She replied.

When the call ended, Helen immediately decided to try and locate Quinn, and surprisingly she had found him in his classroom doing some paperwork.

"You seem to be quite the hard worker no matter what you do." Helen commented. "You know, you don't have to do that, you could ask one of your assistants to do that for you."

Quinn didn't look up at who it was but could tell from their voice, it was Helen.

"It's okay, I enjoy doing this. When I'm here, being a teacher, it makes me forget about everything for a second." Quinn said, placing the tablet down and looking at Helen with a smile.

"Be careful there! Give any girl a smile like that, with the light shining on you in the background, and they are going to eat you up." Said Helen.

"Eat me up?" Quinn replied. "So what did you want exactly, other than food." Quinn misunderstood.

"You owe me a date, and I think it's the perfect day for a date, don't you think? Birthday boy!"

"How do you know?" Quinn replied, surprised.

"I should know everything about my future husband, right?"

Quinn never thought this day would come, he always thought he would be too busy but things really had calmed down a lot. Although he could have been training or thinking about other things, he was just so caught up in his life as a teacher, he just wanted a break. Especially on this day.

Right now, he was riding the levitating tube that was taking them out of the school and into the main city area. A place for the military family to relax, play and enjoy life. A modern city for fun and entertainment, with games, movies and more.

'Well, I did say I would, but I just never thought she would be so aggressive.'

While on the train, Quinn stood up, as the train was busy on the weekend. He was trying to be a gentleman and let Helen sit, but instead, she stood up as well and pushed her body towards him.

She was a few inches away from his face, and now he was able to get a closer look at her. Her long straight legs, her plump plum-like bum, and her current pink hair that went with her red lipstick she was wearing.

Her hair colour would often change but Quinn quite liked it pink, it made Helen look a little dangerous.

'Into the dangerous type, huh? Don't you get into enough trouble? I can hear your heartbeat inside here.' Vincent teased.

They had finally reached their stop and Quinn quickly got off from the train. He didn't know what would happen if he continued to stare at her longer.

'Is it like a reverse charm effect or something?' Quinn thought.

'You're a teenager who has just turned eighteen. These feelings are normal.' Vincent argued.

The rest of the day went as planned, as they went to watch a movie together, took a walk in the park where they fed some pigeons and got to look at the smiling faces of family members. Finally, they managed to get to a restaurant and eat a large meal.

"Were you not hungry? You hardly ate anything." Helen noticed.

In fact, Quinn was starving, but not for what she thought. Luckily the restaurant had some meat that he ordered quite rare, allowing him to be satisfied for the time being .

"It's okay, I just prefer my own home cooking." Quinn replied. "I was wondering, Helen. You're a good looking girl, strong and was the leader of a strong faction. You could have anyone you wanted. Why do you like a boy like me?" Quinn asked.

Helen placed her spoon down that she was digging into her ice cream with, and looked at Quinn like it was a stupid question to ask.

"Quinn, do you not know who you are? As you said, I should have high standards right, because I can get anyone. You are the leader of the Cursed faction and one of the world leaders. But it's not just because of that. You're different from the ones that have your power, Quinn. A lot of people make promises, but when they reach the top they fail to deliver them, or give up when it gets too hard, but not you Quinn. That's what attracts me to you." She said taking a big scoop of ice cream.

"But I'm only eighteen? Isn't it strange?"

"And I'm twenty-four. What does it matter? You look like you're in your mid twenties, and you certainly don't act your age at times Quinn." Said Helen.

"You're only twenty-four? I thought...I thought you were..."

"Older? A lot of people do, because of the position I was in. I didn't start the Daisy faction. My sisters are older than me, but later on my talent was discovered and my sisters who always looked after me. They put me in the position and gave me the place."

It was a completely different upbringing to what he had suspected. At a loss, now that he looked at Helen, she really did look her age. It was just because of how mature she acted, that Quinn thought differently.

"So do you like me now then?" Helen asked.

Quinn thought about it, but there were a few things hitting his mind at the moment. There were others appearing in his head and on top of that Helen was human. Could a real relationship work between a vampire and a human, and if Quinn told her now, what he really was, would she run away?

At that moment, a message was received on Helen's communicator. It was time.

"Alright, you don't have to answer me now. Let's head back."

On the journey back, Quinn didn't speak much, as he had a lot on his mind again. But he had enjoyed the day out, and it was a lot better than his last birthdays. All the previous ones he had before that, there was no one around him.

When they reached the school, Helen said that one of the teachers had asked him for something, and to meet him in the beast class teaching room.

As they were approaching the building, Quinn could hear several heartbeats inside, and the light scurrying sound of several feet as it quietly ran across the floor. He was wondering why he would be called at such a time, and why there would be so many people in the room.

Walking up to it, the doors slid open and several bangs and pops were heard all at once. Balloons flew in the air and there was a giant "Surprise!", everyone shouted at the same time.

Everyone who knew Quinn, had come to throw him a surprise birthday. There was cake, tables set out, and a load of gifts in the back as well. For the first time since Quinn was a young boy, he was having a birthday party.

Not for a second, even after hearing the heartbeats, did Quinn expect a surprise birthday party. He just thought that no one would care, and to see how much effort had gone into such a thing...

"Thank you so much, everyone. This is the best birthday I have ever had." Quinn said.

During the party, as Quinn mingled with everyone, Sam noticed that he had received a message from Nate, stating that they were on their way back and they should arrive in a few days,

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1003: Sil's anger

It was another regular school day. Although another and regular were rarely put together. With everything happening so far, a regular day seemed strange for Quinn and the gang. He had a great birthday party which he would remember for the rest of his life, but soon everyone else had left to do their regular duties.

'I guess it's a good thing that they can work so well without me.' Quinn thought as he reminisced about yesterday.

In the homeroom class, he noticed that the students were full of life and excited unlike before, and none of them seemed to be covered in bruises and marks. What happened to Erlen had gotten around and seeing Swin and Shiro put on a great display of skills, made the others no longer view their class as weak.

Although it wouldn't completely get rid of the problem, all of Quinn's actions so far had certainly helped. Still, there was one thing he was debating about and that was teaching the students Qi.

'Is it really a good idea to teach everyone it, just like abilities there are some that are talented in Qi and others that are not, it might just cause another problem.' Quinn thought.

'You have to remember there will always be others that are better at certain things. Some kids are better at writing, while others are better at maths. This might be something that you just can't stop. And remember, Pure might be teaching all their members soon, the military at the moment is weak.' Vincent explained.

'Yeah, but you can't kill someone with maths...I think. My point is if I teach these kids Qi and it gets out of hand it will be all my fault.'

It was a tough one for Quinn to figure out, he agreed with both Oscar and Vicnent's reasonings. Everyone seemed to think it was a good idea to teach others Qi, at least for their own sake.

'Maybe I should wait to counsel Leo when he's back, it still doesn't feel right for me to just teach others without asking him first.' Quinn thought.

In the school the students were currently having their lunch break, Sil with his new disguise looking like Chucky, didn't stand out anymore. As expected it was as if he was an invisible person.

This was good for two reasons, the first, no one would attack them. Before when others learnt of Sil's ability or thought he was a weak boy, people would try to take advantage of that, but they couldn't even remember Sil was in their class now.

The second reason, being invisible allowed them to attempt to copy as many abilities as possible, but the ability that was needed or one they thought would help was just never found.

The two of them were sitting opposite each other on a table alone. Chucky was taking a bite into his sandwich as if he had no worries while Sil was ripping up the pieces of bread and eating it slowly.

'This kid, he's usually in a mood but today...' Chucky thought.

"Hey, I don't know much about what we are trying to do, but we will find the ability you are looking for eventually. We have Logan, who has access to all the databases. So any new abilities that are recorded he will be able to find out, and Quinn is one of the World leaders now so getting information will be easy."

Hearing this, Sil just nodded and continued to shove a small piece of bread into his mouth. Chucky's attempt at cheering him up had failed.

A few seconds later, Shiro, Venus and Swin were seen taking the seat next to them. Ever since Sil and Chucky had saved them, they had been thankful and if they saw Chucky on his own. They would come over to sit with him, even though they didn't know who the other person with him was.

The three boys were excited as they seemed to have earned new fame. Passing students in the hallway would talk about them all the time which was a first for all of them. After excitedly talking and boasting, they noticed the boy's depressed mood.

"Hey, is your brother okay?" Venus asked.

"My brother?" Chucky replied back, and he noticed they were talking about Sil, since his appearance was now similar to his. "Oh yeah, he's just upset about not getting something."

Shiro would guess based on the fact that this boy had the same demeanour as Sil, and was hanging around with Chucky, that this was Sil. He wanted to do something to cheer him up, after all, the words Sil said that day had really hit him.

'I wonder what type of life Sil lived to think like that?' Shiro thought. When Sil looked back at him, he turned around to avoid eye contact and knocked his carton of juice on the floor. Going down to pick it up, something had gone past all the, at the table and due to Shiro ducking at a particular time the object had whacked Sil right in the face.

"What the hell happened, did someone just throw something at us?!" Venus said, looking at where the object was thrown from.

"Shiro, let's fight again right now!" A boy shouted, from across the canteen hall.  
"I'm sick and tired of everyone saying I lost to you when I won. Come on, if you're so strong we can fight right now!" Zhen shouted.

With how students were talking about Shiro and the others, whenever they saw Zhen it was the same, but they didn't speak positively about him and instead thought he had received a fake win. In fact, Zhen was getting paranoid over this himself. While walking around he thought he could hear everyone talking about him, lips moving into the words winner and loser, and he thought they were being directed at him.

'Haha, I didn't even lose a fight and everyone is talking about me like this! Well fine, I know exactly what to do!' Zhen thought, as he carried around with him, one of the practise beast balls for activating one's ability. A large round black heavy ball. A few seconds ago, he had hurled it towards Shiro as he could see him smiling happy and smug.

Zhen had good aim, but what happened was unfortunate as Shiro had ducked down from dropping his juice box on the floor, and instead the ball had hit another. It had hit Sil who had been lost in his own world.

"Are you okay?" Shiro asked, as Sil was standing up and blood was falling to the floor, dipping from either his mouth or nose but it was hard to tell since Sil was looking at the floor. What was strange though, was Shiro could see pieces of dirt falling to the floor as well.

"Come on Shiro, fight me here and now!" Zhen continued to shout.

Those next to him tried to calm Zhen down, while Shiro was more concerned for Sil at this moment, but when he lifted his head, he took a step back slightly. For Sil's face was disfigured, half of it seemed to be falling off, cracked from the top right and around the mouth area, where it was bleeding quite severely as a couple of his teeth were broken or made loose.

'Is it some type of mask?' Shiro figured it out.

Sil, immediately picked up the back ball from the ground, then placed his hand on Chucky, Sil and lastly Venus as well. He walked forward and his mask started to crumble away as it would no longer work and a bloody faced Sil could now be seen.

"What the hell, are you his pet boyfriend or something, get lost? I don't want you!" Zhen shouted.

Everyone around was taking a glance at Sil and that's when some people started to recognize him. "Hey isn't that the guy who managed to beat the Graylash head general in the elemental class?"

"Yeah he went missing and no one could find him."

"I think I just saw his face change."

Zhen could no longer take it and started to charge forward, but the second he did, the black ball came hurling towards him at an incredible speed and it had huge weight behind it. As it hit Zhen's chest it cracked his bones inside, and pushed him back through the air. The ball continued to move, pushing him more, his body hitting other students as he was thrown through the air, until eventually he was slammed into the wall and the black ball fell to the ground.

However, it wasn't over yet, as Sil walked forward and used his telekinesis ability to pull Zhen from out of the wall, and bring him towards him, hovering in the air.

"People like you never learn, and now you have broken my mask!" Sil shouted. Soon Sil was pulling at each of Zhen's limbs, as if an invisible force was stretching him. Zhen started to scream in pain, and no one wished to get close.

"Sil, you'll kill him stop!" Shiro shouted.

"He had a chance, and now he is running more than one person's life. If he continues to live he will just ruin more!" Sil shouted.

The teachers who were in the canteen were soon on the move. Seeing the students fighting they were attempting to jump in and stop it, but they just found themselves being hit away by several lashes of water that would appear out of nowhere.

All of this was being done by Sil.

Now all of the students were staying well clear of Sil and Zhen, and soon a big pop was heard as Zhen's shoulder had been pulled out from his socket.

'Damn, if Sil is like this, then no one can stop him.' Chucky thought.

"Quinn, answer me, come to the canteen straight away, something has happened with Sil, he's out of control!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1004: Spoiled Brat

A desperate call was made to Quinn, but Chucky was unsure if it had gone through or not. He was too panicked and just shouted a message down his receiver, hoping it would go through and Quinn would know what to do because if someone didn't step in to stop what was happening, there would be a dead student on the canteen floor.

If this was to happen, Chucky truthfully didn't know how the Cursed faction would recover from such a thing.

He knew that Quinn was making great efforts to convince others that the Cursed faction was the right place to be, but once this got out, that the Cursed had sent their own men in the school under disguise and ended up killing a student. No one would want to join a group like that.

Grabbing the black balls around his belt, Chucky threw them, aiming for Sil's legs.

'I'm sorry, Sil! But my job is to protect you, and this might hurt a little!'

However, as the black balls got close, they were stopped mid-air, and with the hand that was free, he slowly made the balls come towards the palm of his hands and held them in place. While the others continued to hold up Zhen.

Once again, another pop was heard as Zhen's other arm had been dislocated.

"He can do that with one hand. Just how strong is Sil?" Swin thought, now he was starting to think that the rumours of when Sil had defeated the head general weren't exaggerated at all. With this level of strength, he could tell Sil was immensely strong. No one currently in the room could stop him.

The reason Sil's telekinesis was strong was because not only had he gathered the powers of those close to him, but in the morning, still sticking to his task, he had touched other students as well, attempting to find their ability, so Sil abilities were amped up to the maximum.

"Did you forget I have your ability as well?" Sil said, holding the back balls.

"You're not going to hit me, are you!?" Chucky shouted. "We're on the same side."

"Really, didn't you just attempt to hit me?" Sil replied.

After hearing this response, Chucky knew he was in for a load of hurt. Something had snapped to Sil, and he was beyond reasoning. The balls had left his hands, and the speed accelerated, hitting him in both of his thighs, crushing the bones underneath his muscles and causing him to fall to the floor.

All thought of Venus and Swin intervening and trying to stop Sil had gone out the window, but not Shiro.

"Sil, what are you doing! Didn't you tell me not to kill someone before? How I would regret it for the rest of my life. You would too, wouldn't you!?" Shiro shouted out and pleaded.

"You're right, because look at what's happened to me," Sil said in a voice that sounded like it was in pure pain. Shiro didn't know how heavy Sil's words were.

"Where the hell are you, Quinn!" Chucky shouted.

At that moment, the doors opened wide, and someone could be seen running through all the students.

"I'm not Quinn, but I'm just as good!" Peter shouted as he jumped up in the air and entered the open area where the two were fighting, but he stood there still for a couple of seconds as he was confused.

"Wait, what?!" Peter thought.

'Did he not get my message? I thought Quinn had sent him, I guess it was something else, and he doesn't know what's happening.' Chucky thought.

"Sil, stop Sil, he's gone crazy!" Chucky shouted.

The reason why Peter had arrived in the canteen was due to his soul weapon returning to him. Peter could only create one mud mask at a time with his soul weapon, and when it was destroyed, Peter knew something was up.

Based on the current time, he realised that all the students would be in the canteen. However, he thought Sil would be the one that was hurt and not the other way round, hence his confusion. Seeing Chucky on the floor hurt, and everyone spread out everywhere, he was trying to figure out what happened.

"Sil, put the stupid student down, I know they're annoying, but this is too far!" Peter demanded.

"Isn't this our goal? Isn't this what we should be doing? Getting rid of these people that make the world worse. This is the easiest way. People like him made Vorden and Quinn's life harder at school. I'm helping everyone even if they don't realise it." Til said.

Hearing these words, a vein started to stick out from Peter's head, one of his hands opened wide, straightening his fingers, and he began to walk forward.

Seeing this, Sil attempted to use his telekinesis power to slow down Peter, and it worked, but Peter pushed through with his strength.

"Sil, let me go and give you the slap that you deserve, you spoiled brat!" Peter shouted, stepping through the force. It felt like he had an elephant that weighed several tons on his back, and it was attempting to drag him back, gritting his teeth, he continued to move forward. "You think people can't change, especially kids? What about me!"

"You must have known what I did to Quinn back then. According to you, I deserved to die as well! And I might agree with you, but I try everyday to make up for what I have done!" Peter shouted, moving forward again.

Now, Sil had no choice but to drop Zhen to the floor and use both hands to stop Peter back, who was now around two meters apart from him.

"General Peter is strong." Swin thought, knowing how much power Sil had to be using right now, and Peter was walking through even that.

'Sil, I know you're upset, I know you want Vorden back, I know you're angry, but don't take it out on these students. Take it out on me! You think you're the only one that doesn't miss Vorden! He and Quinn were the only friends I had during school. I would do anything I could to bring him back right here, but I can't!

"You doing any of this crap is helping no one and is only bringing more trouble to the people that are still here!" Peter said, finally raising his hand above his head, and moving it slowly down. Sil stood there still using his ability as Peter's hand touched Sil's face.

It was hardly a slap, as there was no speed giving no power into it, but it was the only thing Peter could do as his fingers brushed his cheek.

"Sil, stop it now!" Quinn said, having rushed in.

Everyone seeing General Hardy now arrive were relieved, but after hearing the rumours and witnessing Sil's power, they were all still afraid.

Quinn looked at Peter, who was still, and the student on the floor. He couldn't imagine what happened, but when he looked at Sil now, his face was full of tears.

'Did Sil do all of this? Did I make a mistake thinking that he was ready to be with other kids? I thought that bringing him to school would make him better, but it might have made him worse. I shouldn't have forced him into a situation he didn't want to be in. Part of this is my fault.'

"I'm sorry, Quinn, I don't know why...." Sil managed to blurt out and finally dropped his hands.

In dropping his hands, the powers that were being used on Peter were finally free, and Peter could move again.

Everyone seeing Sil cry in place was wondering just what was going on. Was it all over? Or was he soon going to attempt to blast everyone in the room? No one dared make a move in a situation like this. It was just common sense.

Lifting his hand up again, Peter swung with a strong force and slapped Sil across the face, sending his body spinning a couple of times before he eventually fell to the floor and had passed out.

"I told you I would give you a slap!" Peter said. "The crisis has been stopped."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1005: Young master

It was a daring act, to say the least from Peter. The students thought that what he had done was reckless, and at the same time, they were touched. For Peter had risked his life getting in the middle of a crazy student to save all of theirs.

A round of applause had started as the students thanked him for saving their lives. However, there was one little slip up that had occurred.

"That was the one that defeated the head General, right? Well, I kind of believe those rumours now. He could have killed everyone. Was he really going to pull Zhen's limbs off?"

"Thankfully, General Peter was here. The Cursed faction really has some strong people."

"Speaking of, did you hear what Sil said at the end? He was saying sorry to Quinn?"

"Quinn...Quinn Dilfus? Wait, you don't think he was saying sorry to the Cursed faction leader, Quinn Talen, did you, and he was looking at...."

A few of the students had caught on to what Sil had said at the end. Many people were named Quinn, but the one person he was looking at when he said these words was General Hardy, when he had entered the room.

'It looks like my luck is up. What else can I do now?' Quinn thought.

However, before he had revealed himself to all the students, another person had a brilliant idea.

"Did this student say, Quinn!" Peter said out loud in a booming voice so everyone could hear clearly. He even stood facing the crowd as if it was a theatre performance. "Could he mean the 'Cursed leader' Quinn Talen, but that's my faction leader." Placing his hand on top of his head, Peter started to look through the crowd and looked past everyone.

"I don't see my faction leader anywhere. The boy must have gone mad!" Peter said.

Seeing what he was trying to do, another student decided to help out. Shiro walked up to Sil and started to kneel by his side.

'Here it goes.'

"Oh Sil, you always wanted to impress Quinn from the Cursed faction. I guess you felt guilty that he might find out about what you did. Now you will never be able to join them!" Shiro said.

Although the students found it weird how they were emphasising certain words, they could see no signs of Quinn when looking around. At least they were unable to see a young seventeen-year-old boy with curly black hair in the room.

They didn't have much time to think about it either. It didn't take long for Hayley, and a few other teachers to enter the room, and they were starting to deal with the problem. Healing the injured students and getting a report of what exactly happened.

'Well, let's hope that works. I might be out of trouble. But I can't say the same for Sil.' Quinn thought.

A lot of students were at the canteen when the events had happened, so it was impossible to hide, and everyone had already learnt of what happened. There were two key factors that were being passed around.

Sil really was as strong as the past rumours said and was a frightening uncontrolled, unstable student. Peter was a fearless god in their eyes. The said general who went up against that exact person.

The good news coming from this, was the Cursed faction's reputation had increased once again with people looking up to Peter, deciding that they wanted to join and follow someone like him.

The bad news, as expected, Quinn was called into a meeting with Oscar. The two of them were in the office, and they were sitting opposite each other at a desk. For some reason, Quinn felt quite embarrassed. Last time, Quinn had said some words to Oscar, and now he was in here because of one of his problems.

Oscar had just finished giving Quinn a detailed report of everything that happened. The injuries caused to the members of staff, students hit that were in the crossfire and even Chucky's injuries.

"Quinn, I believe I am quite the reasonable person, despite what you may think," Oscar said. "I understand, after what I had seen those Blade's do, I know how hard it must be to control someone like that, but when you asked him to be a student of ours, I thought you would have at least had him under control."

"Now, if you insist on him staying, I will have to -"

"It's okay, Sil will leave," Quinn said, as he was already prepared for all of this. "Honestly, there is no other choice. I already tried to cover up his tracks once. If you're going to ask me to make sure this won't happen again, I can't say I can, unless he is by my side twenty-four seven, and if that's the case, then there is no point in him being here." Quinn said.

"That's good to hear, and it makes it easier on us," Oscar replied. "Honestly, Innu was already blaming all of this on you. When they found out that this involved

Shiro and Sil from your class and you had tried to hide him, he thought you had planned this.

"Thankfully, since Zhen is actually under head General Sach, he decided to not get any more involved in this matter. This answer should satisfy Innu." Oscar claimed.

---

Back in the classroom, it was the end of the school day, and Quinn was standing while Sil was sitting alone on a single desk amongst many others that were all empty.

"Are you going to tell me what happened then, or is it going to be a silent match between the two of us?" Quinn asked.

Finally breaking the silence between the two of them.

"It's been building up," Sil said. "I keep hearing things, things I don't like, things that Vorden hated in the past. Things that Raten would have dealt with if they went too far. When I got hit today, I just thought..my mind went black...I was asking for answers, but I never got a reply."

"You mean you were asking for answers from them, inside your head? Are you talking about Vorden and Raten?" Quinn asked.

Sil nodded in response.

"When I didn't get a reply, and there were no answers, I didn't know what to do. I wanted someone to just tell me what was right and wrong. I thought if I just kept doing something, anything, they would come back."

It appeared that Quinn had made a mistake. It was too soon for Sil. There hadn't been enough time, time spent where Sil was alone in his mind.

"I think you know that you can't stay here any longer, but I don't want you to think that your time was wasted here. Before you go, there are some people that want to say goodbye." Quinn said it was the signal for the door to open, and three students were seen walking in, Swin, Venus and Shiro.

"We heard that you won't be at the school anymore," Shiro said.

"Yeah, Hardy said that the Cursed faction has agreed to take you in and they're going to teach you personally. If you ask me, that's a lot cooler than staying here. You're getting a head start!" Swin said excitedly. Venus hit him with his elbow, as this wasn't meant to be something exciting.

"Sil, thank you," Venus said. "Just don't beat yourself up over this too much. If I had your power, there were times where I would have probably done the same

thing to people who were picking on us, or worse. I think we've all had those thoughts."

"We also want to say it won't be goodbye," Shiro added. "If you're going to be in the Cursed faction, then we will see each other soon because when we finish school, we want to join the Cursed faction as well."

Sil didn't say anything, but he did smile, which warmed Quinn's heart a little.

With the goodbyes said, it was time for Sil's journey at school to end, but Quinn would still remain for the time being. Escorting him back to the Cursed ship was Chucky as they flew through space.

"You know, going back to school was kinda nice," Chucky said while flying the ship. "It was different compared to last time, and it also reminded me of all the stupid things I used to do at school."

Of course, as usual Sil said nothing, so Chucky was just left to talk to himself, but when they had finally landed and docked into the Cursed ship, Sil said something that caught his ear.

"Thanks for helping me while I was at school," Sil said, walking forward.

Just ahead, not too far from where they were, they could see that another ship had docked not too long ago. In fact, the people still hadn't left the landing bay, as for who was there, it was Leo, Erin, Nate and Layla.

"Oh, hey guys," Layla said with a smile. "What are you guys doing here?"

"It's a long story," Chucky replied and then noticed someone he didn't recognise.  
"Who's he?"

Turning around, in his butler suit, his eyes fell upon Sil.

"Now, this is a surprise to meet you here, isn't it, young master?" Brock said.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1006: Who is the strongest?

When the others had heard what Brock had said, they were confused for a second. Throughout their whole journey, Brock had been avoiding a certain question. Whenever speaking, Brock would constantly talk about his master, and now when he saw Sil, he was referring to him as little master?

They were wondering what exactly Sil had to do in all of this. Looking at him for some answers. Sil had already lept back several feet and had both his hands out in an attacking position. He was constantly darting his eyes around the room.

Sil recognised him instantly, from when he was younger to his times when Vorden was in control of his body. This man had worked at the Blade mansion and wasn't just anyone, but was the head butler there as well.

One of the strongest members outside of the main family, but this wasn't Sil's concern. If Brock was here, he feared that perhaps Hilston was here as well.

"Worry not, young master," Brock said with a smile. "Hilston and the others are not here. In fact, although I am the Brock you know, I am not the same Brock that they knew."

Tapping his face, in almost a second, Brock's appearance had changed, and now instead of the dirty blonde hair colour he had before, it was greyed out, and a scar had formed over his right eye. His neat look from before was gone as his tangly black hair was flowing from both sides.

"I can see you are shocked, but there is too much to explain, and I would hate to have to explain myself twice. Besides, before that, didn't you lovely ladies say you would give me a tour?" Brock asked as he bowed down to Layla and Erin.

Even they couldn't get used to his sudden change. The ability that was just used had to be something similar to Peter's transformation ability.

"Come on, let's get to it!" Brock said. He was tired of standing around and was now ignoring Sil. "Remember, we still haven't decided what to do yet. This is your chance to impress my master and me."

The others all awkwardly looked at each other, and Sil had eased up a bit, but before doing anything, they thought they should call for one person first, Sam. He had been given a few details about this man, that he was a vampire, and Sam was told everything that Leo and the others knew about him.

It was only because of his okay that they let him on this ship. When Sam finally arrived, he looked at Brock.

'If I'm right, then this man is related to him.' Sam thought as he gave a smile and started the tour around the place.

It might not have been the wisest choice to show an enemy the base of the Cursed faction along with all their powers and supplies. Still, Sam knew that this man was alone, and even if he was strong, he wouldn't be able to take them all out.

Besides, that wasn't their goal anyway. If they truly wanted to team up with them and wanted to defeat the Dalki, then they would want to keep them alive as long as possible.

The tour seemed to be going well, or at least Sam thought it was as Brock didn't say anything and just nodded. Sil, although he wasn't meant to come along initially, had decided to tag along at the back.

He was still worried that something might happen, and if so, he would be there to stop it. However, things went a little strange when they entered a particular room.

Sam thought this was a must on the list if one was to impress someone because people were consistently impressed by his skills. They had entered Logan's research room.

The sound of clanking and tinkering was heard as they entered the room. As usual, Logan wouldn't look at them until he had at least finished what he was currently working on.

While they were waiting for him, they looked around the room, and that's when Brock noticed a few things, such as a teleporter designed after the vampire ones. As well as a particular device.

"So this is the device that might cause us a heap of trouble," Brock said, looking at it.

Although Logan wasn't finished working on whatever he was working on, hearing the voice, he had stopped in the middle of doing something for the first time. A first for everyone. He lifted up his goggles and dropped the tool in his hand.

"Oh, false alarm," Logan said, getting back to work.

"I guess we have both changed a bit since you last saw me," Brock said and tapped his face again to change it back to his butler appearance from before.

After having just picked up the tool, Logan had dropped it again.

"Brock, Brock from Blade island, is Eno with you!" Was Logan's first words.

Sam and the others didn't quite understand why Logan had said this, but it looked like Sam's guess was partially correct. Brock did have something to do with Eno.

"Wait, is the master he keeps referring to is Eno? The same Richard Eno that Quinn has been looking for, for so long!?" Layla figured it out.

Back when Logan was on the Blade island, he had been set free by Brock and even told where to go to escape the island. He didn't understand then, but he did know that Brock was trying to keep him going. He told him to search for Richard Eno.

In fact, with Brock being his only lead, Logan was thinking about going back to the Blade island to find him, but he never thought that he would see him on the ship.

"I guess now you all have too many questions to ask that we can't continue our wonderful tour," Brock said. "Very well, you guys have been patient enough. Let's have a little chat, shall we?"

Inside the command centre, for the time being, the place was cleared. All those that would usually be sitting away at their terminals had been asked to take a break. This ship could mostly run on autopilot anyway, and Logan was there if anything serious happened.

Not everyone in the Cursed leaders had been called, only those that were present at the time. Sam still didn't know what information should and shouldn't have been shared. So currently present was Nate, Leo, Erin, Layla and from the other group, Sil, Sam and Logan.

"I know you have a lot of questions, and I know a lot of you are interested in who I ...Who we are, so I would say please hold any additional questions you have until I have at least told my whole reasoning for being here, and again Sil, as I told you before you can relax. I assure you I am not part of the Blade family. In the first place, I am a vampire and always have been."

"However, my relationship with the Blade family is genuine, and I know everything about you, Vorden, Raten and all of the other kids at the temple."

The piece that they finally needed was here. Logan wanted to know the truth, the truth of why his parents trusted Richard Eno, and what they have exactly been doing this whole time.

"First, I think it's only right of me to answer the questions you have about Pure first. as stated before, me and my master work together, and you are correct. He is Richard Eno. We were deciding who we should put all of our resources into helping out."

"After all, the humans strongest forces were divided, and while they should have been fighting together against the Dalki, they were split. So Eno had no choice but to stay out of the limelight for a while, figuring things out as they went along.

"Also, there are far more moving parts than everyone here at the table probably realises. One change could affect a whole leap of change going on. Now about Pure, unfortunately, their base is located on a giant submarine, and their location is always on the move deep in earth's waters.

"However, now that I have provided you with this information, then I'm sure you can figure out a way to track them. At least Logan can. If he could finish creating that Demon beast locator, he can create something that would be able to find a device as large as a submarine.

"As for the other question you had, I'm sorry about this, although we do know the answer, I do not. That will have to be a question for Richard Eno, as he is the only one that has personally met him.

"I only follow what he says, so I only know so much."

Clenching his hand, Leo was a bit annoyed by his answer. He was expecting to find the person but now was told to wait even longer. However, after taking a deep breath, he realised being impatient would change nothing. He had waited so long, and finding out if his suspicions were correct or not, wasn't a big deal. He would continue doing what he had been doing, assuming it was that person.

"Now, what I'm about to tell you all next is very important, so listen up. This is about the Dalki, the vampires and the humans. If I was to ask you the question of who the strongest human in existence is, what would your answers be?" Brock asked. "Don't worry, you can speak."

"Oscar, the supreme commander," Erin said.

"Owen Graylash," Nate answered.

"Quinn?" Layla shyly answered.

"Quinn is no longer human," Leo answered. "For this question, I would have to have faced every human in existence to know it."

"No, you are all forgetting someone, someone that we don't even need to fight to know that they are the strongest human. Hilston Blade of the Blade family." Sam said.

"Correct, Hilston Blade, The Blade family," Brock said, looking at Sil. "They play one of the biggest roles in all of this, and they don't even know it."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1007: Protect the Blade family?

After meeting Brock and finding out who he is, or who he was as well, Sam had his suspicions that the Blade family would be involved in all of this somehow. Due to Brock working at the Balde family. The fact that he was using some sort of disguise and how long he had to have been there for it just made sense.

Richard Eno, just didn't seem like the type of person to do things on the whim. Everything he did, everything that happened was done with caution. In a way, it reminded Sam a little of himself, but the difference was, while Sam was playing chess with one opponent, it felt like Richard Eno was playing with four at the same time, and each one of the moves he made was intertwined with the others.

"We as a group over the years have worked very hard to make sure that we have eyes everywhere." Brock continued to explain. "We have eyes in the Human world. We know everything that happened, from the start of the Civil war to before most of you here were born. We have kept eyes in the vampire world. We know what happened with Quinn, and Fex. However, we are unable to get involved so much there.

"Last, we even have eyes in the Dalki world as well, which is why we have decided that we can't just sit back and watch to see how this plays out, we have to act now. Some things that Eno had predicted didn't come true, and at the same time, unpredicted things have happened."

Sam being the type of person he was, so badly wanted to interrupt Brock at this moment. For each thing he was telling them there were hundreds of questions he wanted to ask, even things about the past before he was born.

However, he wouldn't do so, and he had a feeling Brock had already been told what he could and couldn't tell the others.

"For now, I will tell you what you need to know." Brock said. "From the beginning the Blades were an exciting group of people. From generation to generation they had the goal that was passed down of becoming the greatest human ever alive, and even before abilities, they had somewhat achieved that goal with their super being bodies.

"They would even give vampires a run for their money. However, our interest in them grew, not when they had discovered their ability, but when they had discovered a giant stone tablet. "

Hearing this, Logan and Sil knew exactly what they were talking about. Anyone who had been to the Blade island would. For the giant tablet could be seen when approaching the island, and Sil had grown up on the island itself.

"That tablet was special, I thought it was just a giant rock?" Sil interrupted.

Brock didn't give him a telling off, but instead smiled at Sil. It seemed like Sil probably was the only person who would be able to interrupt Brock without him making a fuss over it.

"That rock is more special than any of you know, but again, the details about that will not benefit you in any way." Brock said. "What is important is that the Blades decided to set their base of operation around the giant tablet. Building a castle and a place to call home. Due to them finding the tablet, Eno had kept their eye on them, on top of that they were extraordinary humans that seemed to keep getting better by the second.

"At the time, the tablet was important to Eno's research and what he wanted to do was keep an eye on it. So he asked me to personally infiltrate the Blade family. With my abilities it was an easy task to do. I could change who I was at any point. My main goal was to keep the Blade family a secret so no one would find out about the giant stone.

"I believe I did my task quite well, silencing anything about them and as generations passed it became a practice within their own family to keep it a secret. Even though they didn't know who or why someone was doing it before.

"However, this didn't become an important factor until a later time." Brock turned to Logan. "Logan, if you have discovered the base then I believe you already know the answer to how the Dalki were created. From a great demon tier beast that was shaped like a dragon. I don't know if you know the details. Still, the demon tier dragon originally had two heads, and it had a special ability, allowing it to split its body into two.

"The vampires had only managed to capture half a demon tier beast, and that is why the Dalki are incomplete."

Logan knew most of these details already thanks to the logs his family had left him. It seemed he was correct and the reason the Dalki were attacking earth was due to the search of the other half of the demon tier beast.

"The Dalki have been searching for the other half of the demon tier beast, that is why they haven't given up on attacking, and they never will until they run out of their lifespan. That other half of the dragon one day had actually arrived on earth, and the people who had dealt with it were the Blade family. Before anyone could even attempt to see it. But they didn't defeat it, instead, it's under their control and is still at the Blade island."

"Wait!" Logan interrupted. "We were on the Blade island, but me, Peter, Quinn and Borden, we never saw the Dragon!"

"The dragon was there." Sil said. "It has always been there, they keep it by the giant tablet."

Now Sil understood what Brock meant. The Blade family just saw the Dragon as a pet. They had no idea that the Dalki were after it.

"One half of the dragon is in the vampire world, one half in the Human world. The Dalki already have found out about the one in the vampire world, however they still do not know the location of the one in the Human world." Brock said. "The Blade island was meant to be kept a secret to all except a small few."

"But then someone had gone searching for the Blades. Someone that shouldn't have known about them and succeeded in finding them."

The others could only guess that this was referring to Quinn.

"Now, with Hilston in control of the Blades, he no longer cares about hiding himself from the world. Even worse, our line of protection is no longer there.

"That day when Hilston went to search for you Sil, I was on board that ship as well. I knew that the Blades had decided that they would no longer be hiding themselves, so we needed to come up with a new plan.

"I was the one that had chosen to advise you Sam, and Paul, on how to turn your companions. At the time I also took Mona from the Bree family, she is safe with us. We did so, because if need be, and we need someone else to move the dragon, there needs to be someone who can control the dragon and copy her abilities."

At that moment, everyone on the table looked towards Sil. Even Mona didn't have the power to control a demon tier beast. Which meant the only person that could was one that had an ability as strong as that of Hilston.

The fact that Mona was still alive and was with Eno came as a shock to a lot of them, and they needed time to take everything in.

"You have always been an interesting person Sil, and we have also kept our eyes on you, just in case something like this has happened. The only thing we didn't expect was Hilston to lose that day and go into hiding, and for you to be taken away by someone else. The Dalki are going to move soon, and we need to protect the dragon at all costs."

When Brock said he had a lot to talk about, he wasn't wrong. Still there were many things everyone wanted to ask him. Logan wanted to ask about who killed his parents, what their relationship was, but before all of that, Sam had another question before everyone else.

"I don't think we have the right to go ahead and be making decisions on our leaders behalf like this. I know everyone wants to ask questions, but there is one person that needs to be here, and that's Quinn." Sam said. "He should know about all of this."

Brock started to smile again.

"I'm afraid I have already told you everything that I can say. So any question you do wish to ask I will be unable to answer them. However, if you wish for me to clarify on some things that I have already spoken about then feel free. As for Quinn, you do not need to worry about him. I'm sure, Eno and Quinn will be talking right about now. And when everything is settled they will either return here together, or apart."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1008: Visiting an old planet

Quinn had been in a bit of a sombre mood after what had happened to Sil. He couldn't help but feel bad for his situation, but there was really nothing they could do for now. In a way, he also didn't think that just bringing back Vorden and Raten would help things.

It would undoubtedly stabilise the situation with someone as powerful as him, but from the way Sil spoke, Sil was the original owner of that body. At any point and time, he could take over if he wanted to. So if in the future, even with Vorden and Raten, something terrible happened, Sil would still need help.

'Maybe we can figure it out with Raten and Vorden when they are back, but we still haven't found anyone with an ability that could help.' Quinn thought. 'Even if that ability has reappeared in someone, it could be dormant in their body, or the person could just be a baby. I wish I knew more about abilities and how they worked because right now, it's like looking for a needle in a haystack.'

Today, before school was to start, the homeroom teachers had been called in for a meeting. It was a bit more casual as the meeting took place in the Teacher's lounge, where teachers generally just relaxed on the sofa or prepared for their lessons.

The one who was giving the meeting was Samantha. Quinn went ahead and sat down with Fex and Peter, who were both teachers. But Helen wasn't one so she hadn't been invited.

"I've called you all here today to talk about the first portal outing that will be taking place," Samantha announced. "Now, as you know, we fear that the tensions are quite high at the moment. So we have banned portal outings to orange portal planets for students, so they will only be able to visit the green portal planets."

"However, since there are larger groups and far more students this time, there will need to be more teachers. Now Head General Innu has agreed to go on the expedition for support. I will also be heading out, despite neither of us being teachers."

"All homeroom teachers must attend with their classes for this expedition, and students will only hunt within an area with their teachers. This is just for them to experience hunting. We will still award points for Beast crystals that will go to certain houses, but students will not just be able to go off and explore on their own. Does everyone understand?"

Quinn was actually quite pleased with the new measures they had put this time for the hunt. Although the students wouldn't have a real-world experience compared to when he went out, it was safer this way. If they had done this last time, then maybe fewer students' lives would have been lost to the Dalki.

"Are other teachers allowed to come on this trip if they wish?" Fex asked, raising his hand.

"I don't see why not. The campus will mostly be empty, so if you wish, you may." Samantha replied.

Fex was happy that at least he wouldn't be left out of this one.

With the meeting over, Quinn returned to his class and delivered the news. After doing so, a lot of the class was quite depressed.

"What's wrong? Did something happen?" Quinn asked.

Venus looked around at all the unhappy faces and decided to answer for them.

"Teacher, we aren't stupid, and we honestly don't know why the school has decided to do this, but each of us was the weakest of our schools, and they've grouped us all together. Doesn't that mean our class will do the worst?"

It seems that self-confidence was a huge issue, but rightfully so because what Venus had said wasn't a guess. It was a fact. Even with beast weapons, it only gave them a fighting chance. Perhaps they would survive but to beat the other classes in a hunt was another story altogether.

On top of that, not everyone in Quinn's homeroom class was part of the beast class. Only about half of them attended, so they were in an even worse position.

"Okay, listen up, if you want to get stronger, then when your lessons are over, instead of heading to your dorms, head back here to your homeroom classroom. I'm going to teach you all a little something." Quinn said with a smile on his face.

He had finally decided that these kids at least needed a fighting chance. Oscar was right, it would be best to prepare everyone for the war upon them, but there was a problem. Teaching everyone Qi wouldn't change the balance.

The strong would possibly just get stronger, making the gap between students stay the same. Although it might be unfair for now, Quinn had decided to teach the weakest kids in his class Qi so that they would be on an equal level as everyone else.

'I think Leo will understand what I have done.' Quinn thought.

When the lessons ended, Quinn expected a few of his students to return to him, not all of them. However, every single one was now in his classroom, wanting to see what he wanted to teach.

"Today, I'm going to teach you something that will improve your natural body strength. Your punches will be stronger, your body will move faster, and when you

get hit, it will hurt a lot less, but there's one thing I want you all to promise me now." Quinn said.

"I don't want you to try to get revenge after this. If you become stronger than those that used to bully you, then take pride in that. Don't become what you hated."

Some of the students started to talk to each other, wondering why they would ever do that? But Quinn knew that some people would, and he hoped when they were put in a similar situation, they would think back to what he said right now.

"Also, it's safe to say what I'm about to teach you all should be kept a secret. Otherwise, others outside of this class might abuse the power." Quinn explained.  
"What I'm teaching you all today is called Har..."

When teaching the kids Qi, Quinn had chosen to rename it to Har. His reasoning for this was that he didn't want the military to know what he was doing just yet or Pure members. Word would get out of what was happening eventually.

Unfortunately, Qi had a negative stigma of being attached to Pure, but at the same time was highly sought after due to the display of its powers.

Naming it Har, a technique that would just improve one's body, didn't sound that great, and that was exactly what Quinn was aiming for.

Over the next few days, the students began practising every day. There were even some students that decided it was a waste of time and had stopped showing up. Still, those that continued to learn the techniques and, using Quinn's guidance, had prevailed. It was finally time for the class to go out on their first outing.

Quinn looked at his class all geared up, ready to go through the green portal, while Peter and Fex were by his side.

"Ready class," Quinn asked, and they nodded.

Going through the teleporter, when they arrived, it was a place that Quinn recognised quite well. The shelter was larger than it was before, but there was an unforgettable feeling of the planet.

"Do you remember this place?" Peter asked.

"How could I forget? It was where we first ran into the Dalki back then." Quinn whispered back.

It was a primarily desert planet all over, and the orange buildings made from sandstone stood out. In their memories, an unforgettable place.

Samantha made sure everyone was present from Quinn's class, and then they would head off to a specific hunting area together. Classes were sent in hour intervals to not overwhelm the hunting areas and give everyone an equal amount of time.

While Peter had decided to go off with Quinn and the students, Fex chose to do a bit of exploring.

'I originally came here to explore what Human life is like, and all I've done is hang out at schools. Let's experience real human life.' Fex thought.

Walking away from the training area and he headed to the main Shelter centre, where the place was filled with shops and merchants but what Fex was looking for was something else.

"That's it, this place called a bar? There's meant to be some really good drinks in here." Fex said with a smile, but he stopped for a few seconds as he pushed the door open.

'No, it can't be. Why do I smell a vampire here, and it's not Quinn.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1009: Something in the air

The destination had been set for Quinn and his students to leave. He had been given a map and was to guide them to a certain area, on the map one could also see the other areas and the other users with a map as well. Some of the other areas were fairly close, with the borders touching. Quinn was a little worried that this might cause some trouble, but this would always be the case with how many classes were hunting on the same planet.

It was vastly different to before when Quinn had to do his assessment. In the past, one would have to do everything on their own. From researching the best areas for hunting, to gathering the map themselves.

He had learnt a lot from those days, but it looked like the military were fast tracking things with the new students and being extra cautious. Once researching the area, Quinn was then to start a device that would time them. Then, the students in his class in groups of five, were free to hunt.

"Hey, won't this be a little unfair?" Shiro complained. "I mean, what happens if there's just more beasts in the other area."

"The other teachers have assured me that they have attempted to make this as fair as possible." Quinn replied. "However, I do have to admit, that it's nearly impossible to make it entirely fair. Take this as a lesson Shiro, nothing in life is completely fair."

The students got to work, and were fighting basic tier beasts, some of them were frightened of the beasts unable to perform well. Just like before, the class were currently going against the sand worm, who were a similar size to regular humans but had razor sharp teeth spiraling on their insides when they opened their mouths.

What surprised the students was the fact that they fared better than they had expected. Even when scared, they were able to dodge the oncoming attacks, and using their weapons they were able to tackle the beasts with ease.

'Looks like they are using Qi quite well.' Quinn said, as he felt a bit relaxed compared to his usual tightness from before.

'I have to say, I am quite surprised as well.' Vincent added. 'The Qi that you have taught them isn't so noticeable when they are fighting. I suppose when you used it, it had more of an explosive effect due to combining it with your blood powers, but with the kids, unless they were to physical show off their superhuman feats, it doesn't stand out too much while giving them an edge at the same time.'

'Yes.' Quinn replied. 'We can actually thank Shiro for that, I noticed it after his fight, that no one really seemed to notice his change so much. Students and others

are used to seeing incredible humans due to the beast gear, and beast gear isn't always visible on the outside.

'Of course, this would be different if I was to attempt to teach them the second stage of Qi, but there is no need for that. At the same time, I feel if they are relying on Qi then it means that they will no longer focus on their abilities when they need to.'

Shiro, Venus and Swin were doing well using a combination of their abilities. Venus was using his ability to lure our the Sandwomrs while Shiro would then pluck them into the air, lastly the one that would attack them was Shiro with his duel blades. The other two students in their group, would be protecting the ability users.

Swin and Venus could also use weapons if need be when they were in trouble.

While Quinn was in the middle of watching this, he had heard a massive scream come from his left side. In an instant he had appeared by where the screaming student was, and could see that a worm had latched onto a female student's arm. Quinn quickly with his bare hand dismembered half of the Worm's body, then grabbing onto the other half, he used his second stage of Qi to create a very thin layer around where it's teeth would be. It was like one was putting a thick piece of cloth under the teeth. Now Quinn could safely pull it off and cursed the worm with his bare hands.

"Are you okay?" Quinn asked. He could then see that the worm was unable to pierce through the students armor, the girl was completely fine but she had just screamed from fear.

However, what Quinn didn't realize, was that he had just gone from one side of the hunting area, to another in an instant.

"Hey, wasn't general Hardy on the other side of the hunting area just now, how did he get here so fast?"

"I don't know maybe he ran, or he was actually closer then we thought."

"No, I'm sure he was just with Shiro and there group, and there literally on the other side."

Hearing these comments, Quinn just noticed what he had done.

'Damn, I guess I'm still worried about the students. My own experience from last time is effecting me.'

Quinn wasn't relaxed at all, this place had brought a lot of bad memories for him, and he just couldn't shake the felling that something was going to happen.

Over where Fex was at, he decided to enter the bar anyway. Inside the place was dimly lit and there were tables with stools placed all over. It was meant to be designed similar to the bars around a thousand years ago.

The people inside all looked to be middle aged men, with a few females here and there. However, he wasn't in the happy mood he was expecting to be, instead Fex was on guard. For the smell from earlier was coming from this very bar.

Fex looked around, but he mostly let his nose lead him, and that's when he found himself at a table with two dark red sofas either side. A man wearing a type of cowboy hat could be seen covering most of his face, and he had a drink in front of him.

Without saying anything, Fex sat down opposite the strange man.

"Before I would have probably dragged you from the bar, and taken you back to the vampire world myself." Fex said. "But the new me is going to ask what exactly you are doing here. There are a lot of human students on this planet and as a teacher if your going to cause trouble, I can't just turn a blind eye."

The man took a swing from his drink, and then placed the glass down, he then lifted his hat a bit so he could have a look at the youngster opposite him.

"You seem quite strong, for someone so young, but if you think you could drag me out of this place, you would have to be dreaming." The vampire stranger replied, then he took off his cowboy looking hat and placed it off to the side.

It was a vampire with a twirling gray mustache and long gray hair in a ponytail could be seen.

Seeing the vampire clearly, Fex didn't recognize him at all, and it was blatant by the look on his face. The man then lifted up two fingers.

"It looks like either the vampires no longer teach about me no more, or you aren't one to study." The man said.

"I was never the studying type at school, but I can tell by your smell your just a regular vampire." Fex said. "Now, I'll ask you again, what are you doing here, or do I have to take you back myself?"

The man picked up the glass one more time and took a swig until it was empty, then with the glass he slammed it on top of Fex's hand that was placed on the table.

The glass had crushed Fex hand showing the man wasn't messing around.

"Very well, why don't you teach me a lesson. I wanted to get an idea of how strong the new generation are anyway."

\*\*\*\*

A different message than usual. My story My dragon system is ending tomorrow with an event. If you guys didn't know it is the prequel to My Vampire system set many years in the past and has a lot of links that people have already found interesting.

## Chapter 1010: No big event?

Time was going by quite quickly for Quinn, and now he was more cautious about when he would use his skills, or at least his full power. At the same time, he took this as an opportunity to practice himself. With the second stage of Qi, he was able to sense others' Qi more clearly, and could even stretch it out from his body.

However, he couldn't separate it from his body, which was what Quinn assumed was the third stage of Qi. Quinn was careful closing his eyes, listening and watching his surroundings. Seeing the flow of everyone around him, if a student's energy was disrupted or afraid he could tell they were more likely to make a mistake compared to others.

'These are the ones that need help the most, and if I can help them before there are any problems that will be great.' Quinn thought.

Acting before needing to act. It also seemed like the students had mostly forgotten what he had done, since they were far too concerned with the task at hand. As time went on, the student became better at hunting beasts.

"Hey, I think our group may be able to do something, and get a decent spot." Venus said as they were taking a break looking at everyone around them.

There was another advantage Quinn's class had over other classes and it was the fact that they could hunt for longer without stopping. Some students had already figured out that when their MC cells were up, they could fight with Qi instead, and when their Qi was depleted they could switch to their MC cells to defeat the creatures.

Of course, not everyone could do this, as others needed both Qi and their abilities to defeat the basic tier beasts, and although Quinn thought this was an advantage, it really wasn't. As those with a higher level ability tended to have more MC points to use their ability for longer in the first place.

The good news was, that Quinn had to get involved less and less with his students as they gained more confidence. However, that didn't last forever. As people were actively defeating more beasts in certain areas, they were becoming more scarce.

So, Shiro and his group decided to move towards the outer edge of the hunting area. After all, this wasn't just a competition between classes, but even in their classes, their groups would receive a certain amount of points.

When going towards the edge, they found what they were looking for and continued their hunt once again. The five of them were on a large mound of sand, killing sandworms rapidly, when something unexpected had happened. A worm from their left side leapt in the air towards them.

The worm seemed to already be injured with wounds on its body, but not wanting the beast's teeth to dig into his flesh, Shiro ended up cutting it on the spot.

"Hey, that was ours!" A group of kids said, yelling as they ran over, but when they saw who was on the mound they stopped for a second and started whispering to each other.

"What do I care?!" One of the boys said as he walked over. "The beast was already nearly dead and was from our area, so hand over the crystal."

Like a magnet, Shiro and the others seemed to attract trouble.

"Wait, were you guys attempting to steal it!" Another boy said coming up from behind and could see a girl from their group had already carved the Crystal and had one in her hand.

"You know you're not meant to get involved with the other hunting areas. I'll tell you what. You hand us three crystals for that one and we'll keep quiet about this whole thing." The boy said.

The girl's hands were shaking and she had pulled out two more crystals from her pouch and was ready to hand it over to the other boys, when Swin stepped in front of her, blocking their path.

"No, if you had just asked for one crystal then we might have given it to you, but you can't just bully and demand a crystal. We won't be pushed around anymore."

The boys started frowning as if they were annoyed at what they heard. They thought just like in the past, if they were to ask someone who was weaker than them to do something, it would be done, but they were actually arguing and fighting back.

However, a smile soon appeared on one of the students' faces.

"Teacher, these kids were hunting in our hunting area and won't give us our crystals!" One of the boys shouted.

It didn't take long for their homeroom teacher to appear. A male with glasses but he looked like he permanently had a vein sticking out of his forehead.

"What is going on, the rules were made clear from the beginning, I didn't think I would have to deal with this stuff." The teacher said. The man took one look at the kids from the other class, he didn't ask any questions at all and had already made his decision.

"You guys, hand over all the crystals that you hunted in our area."

"Another one of these teachers?" Venus sighed.

"Don't worry, I can't believe they called the teacher because they can't deal with the problem, but the two of us can play that game. Hardy we need help!" Swin shouted.

A gust of wind blowing up the sand in the air flew about everywhere. They covered their eyes to see a figure appear through them, and Hardy was there. Seeing how fast Hardy was appearing to all the students, Swin knew saying they needed help Quinn would be here in an instant, and he was.

"What exactly is the problem?" Quinn asked.

As soon as the teacher saw who it was, he started to sweat.

"Oh no, there's no problem at all, I think just both groups were hunting near the border so there was a little disagreement about who's beast belonged to who. I'll take these guys a little more in and keep an eye on them."

Before Quinn could even say anything, the teacher was already off.

"Well, that wasn't what I was expecting, where was the big fight, the epic moment where Hardy shows them how much better he is than the others." Swin asked.

"I guess it's no longer needed, after what Hardy did to Head general Sach, I think no one wants to mess with him now." Venus replied.

In a way, the students thought that perhaps the pressure they received from other students might have been over for them.

In the middle of the shelter, people were seen scrambling out of an establishment that was simply named 'The bar'. They were unclear what was happening, but just knew two people were inside having a fight and the whole place was completely wrecked.

From outside several crashes and bangs were heard and the noise continued to be heard from within the bar, until eventually someone was seen being kicked through the air. Breaking the doors on their way out and landing on the hard orange ground.

"Frick this guy is tough." Fex said getting up and wiping the blood from his mouth, his hand had already healed from the first wound. "After talking all cool like that, and then I get kicked on my backside. No this ain't happening, not to a nobody."

A few seconds later and the man was seen coming out from the bar.

"Whoever the owner is, I'm sorry for all the damage we have caused. I promise to pay it in full whenever I can."

"Hey everyone!" Fex shouted standing on his two feet. "You're kind of distracting staying here, do you mind if you scoot out of here a little bit so I can take this guy on?" Fex said.

"Oh, still haven't given up. It's good to know that the new generation have heart. Even if they are weaker, but it seems like after so many years no improvements were made. Weren't you meant to be a direct descendant of the thirteenth family? If this is a direct descendant power, then the vampires may not exist for much longer." The man said.

Fex was a little annoyed, after the man had pretended to not know him at all, now he was telling everything about him.

"That's right, sorry, you now belong to the new tenth Cursed family is it, well it seems they are clearly the weakest of the families. " the man said.

"Really, well let's see if you've seen this before." Fex said, as he concentrated and in his hands a giant needle was starting to form,

"A blood weapon and without using a blood crystal, now that is impressive, maybe I was wrong after all. Let's go for round two then." The man said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1011: Can I stab you?

It didn't take long for the mysterious Vampire to figure out what had been summoned seemingly out of nowhere from Fex. However, it did seem to surprise the Vampire as well.

"I'm interested in finding out if this was something you found out yourself or a technique shared amongst the new generation." The Vampire said.

This gave a brief break for the moment. Right now, the two of them weren't being confrontational. In all honesty, Fex's mind was racing at the moment.

For one, his wounds were healing slower than his opponents. He had gotten a few hits in while fighting in the bar, but there didn't seem to be a scratch on the man.

The second reason was what he was now holding in his hand.

'What the hell am I meant to do now!' Fex thought. 'I summoned my blood weapon in a panic, but there's no one to use it on.'

Fex's blood weapon, which was black in colour but clear like glass, needed blood to activate it. This was true for all blood weapons, but Fex's needed blood as an even bigger requirement. The needle itself had to be filled with blood, and then either injected into humans to empower them with strength, or the needle could be injected into himself.

'I can't exactly just stab my needle into one of these random onlookers. They would never let me do such a thing, and it's wrong if I just force them.'

"Is something wrong, or do you need me to attack you first?" The Vampire said, charging forward and now was directly in Fex's face. Lifting up his fingers, red blood strings rose, tangling the Vampire's legs up.

"I wasn't just doing nothing but standing still!" Fex shouted. Using his blood control, any red string left on the ground could be moved slightly without requiring it to be attached to his fingers. Then grabbing the needle, Fex stabbed it right into the Vampire's shoulder, digging in a few inches before it had stopped entirely.

"It's weak, but perhaps because you have no blood, there are plenty of people around you. Why don't you use one of them?" The Vampire said, taking a step forward with a smile.

Looking into the Vampire's eyes, Fex could feel something odd, and at the same time, no regular vampire should ever be this strong. He was one of the strongest nobles. Why was he afraid?

"And what the hell is with this taunting!" Fex said as he pulled his needle out with his string attached to the little loop at the end and started to swing it wildly like a windmill in the air.

Once again, Fex swung out the needle straight, and it came out fast and heavy. This time the force seemed far more substantial than before. Still, the strings seemingly around the Vampire started to disappear, and the Vampire had avoided the attack.

"Yes! That's it! You have a difficult opponent in front of you. Use your mind to evolve more. One can't magically get stronger in the middle of a fight, but they can use their mind to their advantage!" The Vampire shouted. "You need to show me everything you have."

At that moment, through the crowd of onlookers who still had refused to run away, a female in military uniform was seen running in.

"Teacher Fex, what is going on here? Who is this man you are fighting?" Samantha asked.

While head general Innu went out with the students, he would be in charge of the teachers and the students, and Samantha was left behind to stay in the Shelter. Coordinating if anything was to happen. She had been alerted that there was a commotion going on but didn't expect to see another teacher in the middle of a fight.

"This is.." Fex was struggling to come up with an answer. He had actually started the confrontation, but he couldn't exactly just say he was a vampire, but what reason could he give.

While Fex was unfocused, a fist came out from the Vampire, but a wall suddenly rose in the middle of the two of them. Samantha immediately decided to act once she saw her teacher was about to be hurt.

However, the fist had gone through the wall, breaking it to pieces, but it allowed Fex enough time to avoid the punch coming his way. Instead, he wrapped the arm with string, and then using all of his strength he lifted the Vampire in the air, and slammed him into one of the buildings on the opposite end of the street they were fighting in.

"He's from Pure!" Fex finally figured out a good excuse, and saying those words finally got most of the people to clear the area.

Samantha rushed over to Fex's side and looked at him for a few seconds, up and down. She even patted him in certain areas, which made Fex blush a bit while smelling the scent coming from her hair.

"Good, it doesn't seem like you're hurt," Samantha said.

The sound of rubble could be heard moving, and the Vampire stood up with his head bleeding, but the rest of his body looked to have hardly been injured. Fex didn't think it would be over for a second, but just wanted a small break from the constant fighting.

"Hey, do you mind if I ask you something?" Fex said as he pulled over his black needle with a piece of string towards his hand. "Can I stab you with this?"

"What are you crazy!" Samantha shouted. "A person is attacking us right now, and you want to stab me?"

"Wait, let me explain! Think about it. There's a reason I asked. I didn't just want to stab you!" Fex argued, but the Vampire was increasingly getting closer. That's when Fex noticed, the Vampire wasn't charging forward.

In fact, the Vampire hardly charged forward during the fight, as if he was always waiting for Fex to show him something.

Then for a brief second, the Vampire looked up towards the corner of the sky and looked back down at the two.

"I still don't know if you are ready for what's about to come, but it seems somehow you truly are united with the humans, but that will soon be put to the test." The Vampire said.

"What do you mean!" Fex asked, no longer wanting to engage. If the other Vampire wasn't attacking, it would give him at least time to recover.

"Sometimes, people are unable to see what's right in front of them." The Vampire said, looking at Samantha this time, and feeling a little uncomfortable, she shifted towards Fex, but then seeing the black needle in his hand, she moved back away.

"Around two years ago, the Dalki came to this planet. It was an event that was recorded and spread to the whole world. It would be impossible for you to not know of it."

Of course, Samantha knew exactly what event the man was talking about. At the time, the student known as Quinn and a few others had run into a Dalki here.

"Do you think that was a coincidence, that a stray scout would just land here for no reason? Did no one stop to think if there was an alternative task, a mission that it was sent here to do?" The Vampire continued.

Of course, the military had done some research into it, but it really looked like a stray scout from the Dalki had attacked, and they were unable to find anything else.

"The Dalki are smarter than you humans take credit for, especially with him pulling strings. They will soon be upon us. It will be interesting to see if you still keep your

resolve to not hurt humans when it comes to their life of yours." The Vampire said. "I have run out of time." and as quickly as he appeared, he promptly disappeared as well.

The two of them were left there to take in the mysterious person's words. The one thing that stuck out to them was that the Dalki was coming, and it was quite clear he was claiming that they would be coming to this planet.

The question was, when?

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1012: Who, who, who

Out in the hunting field, it was almost time for the students to finish up with their first hunt. They were down to the final fifteen minutes, and even though it was exhausting for them, they needed to slug through if they had any chances or hopes of becoming one of the top classes.

After the hunt was done, they would go to meet Head general Innu, who was in charge of the expedition.

Innu wanted to count the number of crystals each class got in front of them all to see how well each group did. The Shelter didn't have a space large enough for all the students and teachers to gather, so instead, Innu had picked a different place for them all to meet. It was located outside the Shelter not too far from it, a zone that was void of beasts, and even if there were some, basic tier beasts would be too afraid of a gathering of that size to do anything.

During this hunt, what had surprised Quinn was the fighting that had happened moments ago between his students and others. When he had been called, he expected one of the teachers to talk back to him. However, everything was solved with him just appearing.

Even he was surprised about this.

'I guess showing your power off once in a while can be a good thing.' Quinn thought with a smile.

'Careful there.' Vincent said. 'You don't want to turn into them, do you? It would be best if you also heard both sides of the story before just claiming your students were in the right, no matter how likely it might be the other side.'

'I know, I know, it's just nice to not have any arguments for a change.' Quinn replied, but his voice at the end started to trail off. The reason being, a scent had entered his nose. It wasn't just any scent either. It was clearly one of another vampire.

Turning his head around, he attempted to see where it was. Maybe Fex had come back or someone else, but he didn't see any of them. Eventually, Quinn spotted someone in the desert off in the distance. Slowly making their way to Quinn and the students.

'What do I do? It's a vampire, all the way out here. Why would one be here, and he's coming towards the students. I have to stop him or see what they're doing here.' Quinn thought.

However, he couldn't just leave the students alone unattended.

"Peter!" Quinn shouted. Although Peter wasn't acting as Quinn's assistant in this little assessment, his hunting ground wasn't too far away from theirs, and he was hoping he would hear his call.

It didn't take long for Peter to be running across the desert, kicking up piles of sand as he ran heavy-footed towards Quinn's side.

"You called me?" Peter asked, but it didn't take that long for him to see what Quinn was looking at. Although, it was hard to make out precisely what the figure looked like due to the heat waves warping the image of the man.

"I need you to look after the students while I go and see if this is trouble," Quinn replied.

"That's okay, my teacher doesn't need me. I kept looking for a chance to leave." Meanwhile, Peter's teacher was actually tossing and turning, looking everywhere for him. He hadn't said a word about leaving. Still, she wasn't worried. He was the unkillable zombie, after all.

"But Quinn, let me know if you need back up," Peter said.

Walking out into the desert, Quinn was wondering who he would meet. For some reason, his heart was beating rapidly.

'I think I caught a glimpse, but I can't be sure.' Quinn thought.

The students who saw their teacher Hardy leave, when he reached a certain point, it was as if Hardy had just disappeared, and it was true for Peter as well. Looking out in the desert, he now couldn't see a thing, the man he saw before or Quinn.

"Don't worry everyone, get back to work. You guys want to win this beast hunting coalition, right!?"

When Quinn had finally arrived, he was standing opposite the man, they both looked at each other, and he could now see who it was clearly. The man had a curly moustache, and his hair was done up in a ponytail, but everything else Quinn had seen before.

The deep wrinkles on his forehead, the narrowness of his eyes and the confident look he had with him at all times.

"At least you aren't quick to act and attack me like that other one, so should I introduce myself?" The man asked.

Quinn shook his head.

"There is no need. I already know who you are, Richard Eno."

Finally, Quinn had met the mysterious man after all this time, the grand scientist of the human race and also the first king. So many questions were running through Quinn's head he didn't know which one to ask first.

Why did he decide to trick Arthur, why wasn't he asleep in his tomb, what was his goal in helping Vincent create the vampire system, and was he on the humans' side, or the vampires' side. For all Quinn knew, he could be working with Jim in helping the Dalki, stringing them all along just for some sick game of his.

"Close." The man said. 'But I'm not really Richard Eno, so all those questions you have you can keep in your head for a second while I explain what I'm doing here, and you should hear me out because I don't have much time. "

Even though Quinn didn't understand what Eno was saying, everything seemed like a wild goose chase. He wanted to do everything he could to just run over to Enos' side and strap him in before he could run off, but his first line had shocked Quinn a bit.

'He isn't Richard Eno?'

That didn't make any sense. Quinn was sure of it, he certainly looked like the Eno he had seen, and even Vincent had confirmed that he looked similar to the man in the books. Still wanting to find out what Eno at least had to say, he kept his mouth shut, for now.

"What you don't know, is currently at this moment, there are three others with a very similar appearance to myself meeting with others and delivering a message. This is a test Quinn, a test to see if you can succeed."

At the same time, over where General Innu was, a man with a similar appearance was standing in front of him. One of his sergeants who was by his side had gone to try and intercept the man from getting closer, but after grabbing his wrist, twisting it and kicking him at the back of the leg, almost too fast for them to see, they were sure to listen to what the man had to say.

And he was saying similar words to Innu right now, but for Quinn, there was an additional message.

"You have managed to accomplish what I never thought was possible, but somehow currently, the Human race is working together again, and without realising it, I think the Cursed faction is the glue that is holding it all together.

"With all three of your forces, I see a chance of you defeating the Dalki. Alone it is impossible. I need to see how strong that glue is, Quinn, how strong, and how long do you think that glue will last? You are hiding secrets from them, deep dark secrets that if they found out about them, would they see you as a friend or an enemy.

"Maybe, we'll find out today," Eno stated and moved his arms, dragging them across the desert.

For a second, a screen appeared in front of Quinn, but it was distorted. It was the system screen, but it looked as if it wasn't working correctly and was struggling to do something. Finally, the screen appeared, but the surrounding areas were all flashing red.

[Your system has been overridden]

[Unable to restore original system settings]

[A quest has been granted]

"Protect as many lives as possible, Quinn."

[New quest received]

[Defeat the incoming Dalki invasion]

[0/50 Dalki defeated]

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1013: Taking over

It was the first time Quinn had ever received a message about his system being overridden, and he was wondering just how it would have affected such a thing. After the system had been overridden, the main thing that had occurred was receiving a sudden quest, and it was a quest Quinn wasn't expecting at all.

'Did he override the system just to give me that quest?' Quinn thought as he lifted his head to confront the man who had dropped this giant of a bombshell, but he was no longer in front of him.

"Damn you, Richard Eno! You can't just go off and treat everything as if it's a game. People's lives are at stake!" Quinn shouted in anger, but there was no one to hear his words.

Without the man responsible to ask any questions, Quinn now had to figure out things for himself. Usually, Quinn would receive a quest when he came face to face with an enemy, but this time was different. There wasn't a Dalki in sight.

He could only assume it had something to do with the system being overridden. Still, he knew that they would be coming soon, because Eno had used the words, 'Running out of time' And if he had disappeared so quickly, it was most likely the case. The main worrying thing was the apparent invasion that was coming soon were a group of 50 Dalki.

It was only two years ago that Quinn had come face to face with a single Dalki. With him and his group of friends, they still didn't kill the Dalki and had to rely on Leo to save them.

Thinking about this, the first thing Quinn attempted to do was pull up the system to see if everything was working all okay. It seemed to be fine from a few test abilities he had activated using the system, and it looked like he could use it combat wise.

'With fifty Dalki, depending on the number of spikes they have, I don't think everyone that is here is currently going to be enough, not when the students also need to be protected.' Quinn thought.

The beast hunts were done in phases, and currently, two groups of classes were out together. In total, that would amount to 30,000 inexperienced students. The last thing Quinn wanted to see was all of them lying on the floor dead.

'To save as many lives as we can, I'm going to need as much help as I can get. If I can call Sil, Logan, Linda and all the others, we can stop this.'

Straight away, the first thing he attempted to do was get in contact with Logan through the mask. However, after several attempts, there was nothing. Not even a

connection or signal had been made. No matter who Quinn tried to get in contact with, it just wouldn't work.

'Is this Enos' doing, or the Dalki?' Quinn thought, but he couldn't get Enos' words out of his head that this was all some test. Right now, Quinn was afraid, if he used a shadow link to travel to one of the Cursed on the ship, how would he get back?

And he was right to think this way because all of the teleporters and communication devices throughout the whole Shelter had been jammed.

There was one more thing Quinn thought he could try, and that was summoning his vampire knights.

'I'm sorry Leo, I know you're busy, but you will understand.'

[Error]

[Override in place, this skill may not be used]

When using the other skills throughout the system, no such message had appeared. It was only when trying to use this skill.

'It has to be Eno, because of what he did. When he said this is a test, does it mean I'm not allowed to get any outside help?'

'This truly meant that Quinn was now alone. He didn't hesitate and, using all his speed, ran back to where all his students were and surprisingly they had already been gathered up by Peter. They all saw Quinn come in at super speed but hiding his powers was the least of his worries right now.'

"What's going on?" Quinn asked.

"It wasn't too long ago, but while you were dealing with your thing, I received a message from Innu, telling everyone to meet up at the arranged location immediately. It sounded pretty urgent, but we wanted to wait for you." Peter said.

He was curious and wanted to ask Quinn some questions, but from the serious look on his face, he thought it was best to ask a little later.

'Innu asked to meet up quickly. I remember Eno saying something like he was delivering the message to three other people, was Innu one of them? If he's gathering up all the students, is he trying to get it so all the teachers can protect them or head back into the Shelter?'

'If all the students are gathered together, this might be a good thing, it's going to be difficult, but if we can defeat the Dalki without having any of the kids get involved, I can protect them all if they're in one place.'

Peter and Quinn were both off, and the students didn't dare ask questions about what was going on. It was the first time they had seen Head general Hardy have such a severe look. For Swin, Venus and Shiro, it was the same look he had when he was filled with rage at Erlen.

On the way there, Quinn informed Peter of the possibility of what they could be going up against and soon they had arrived at the meeting point.

Quinn's group were one of the last ones to arrive, and he could see all hundred teachers equipped with their best gear on and had a concerned look on their faces.

Using his inspect skill, Quinn was trying to see what help he had. Honestly, the teachers were a mixed bag. There were a couple of sergeants that Innu had brought with him, but the teachers, some of them were only a little better than the top students when it came to fighting, and Quinn wouldn't doubt that there were some strong students as well.

Quinn had asked his students to line up, in their position with the other students, while in front of them, all hundred of the teachers had huddled in a type of group while talking to each other, and Innu was taking the lead.

"Now that all the teachers are here, I can go through everything from the beginning," Innu said. "We have just been informed that there could possibly be a Dalki invasion on this planet any second now. We don't know if this is true or not, but I will treat it like the truth. We have to for such a big threat."

For once, Quinn was thankful that he was being reasonable.

"I have tried to communicate with the Shelter, but it seems like no one else or I can get through. We don't know where the Dalki will show up, but the Shelter is probably what they will be looking for and is the most essential thing that needs protecting.

"I want everyone to remember that we are soldiers, and even the students out there have trained so they can fight as well. I can't imagine the Dalki sending a force larger than ten to deal with this planet since the forces are low, but I bet they weren't expecting us to be having our expedition out here at the same time as their attack.

"We don't know where they will be attacking, so I suggest us teachers split up into groups of ten, taking a squad of your strongest students, and a core of us will stay behind to protect the shelter."

Hearing this, Quinn thought he had spoken too soon. There wasn't enough information to be making risky moves like Innu was suggesting, and at the same time, Innu was wrong. There were fifty of them coming.

"Innu, we shouldn't do that." Quinn interrupted.

Innu looked at who was speaking and saw that it was general Hardy, he didn't like him in the first place, and now he was interrupting him while this was a chance for them to claim glory against the Dalki.

"We don't know how large or strong of a force the Dalki will be, and the students at the moment haven't graduated. No matter how much we treat them like soldiers, this is only their first outing. You put them out there to rely on, and they will freeze. All of their blood will be on our hands as teachers!" Quinn shouted.

By now, the students at the front were able to hear everything that was being said, and they were nervous talking between them as they heard the words Dalki. They were already shivering with fear.

"Look what you have done!" Innu shouted, "Of course, the students will be frightened to do battle now, but when forced, humans do extraordinary things."

"So you weren't even going to tell the students what they would be up against? What they would be risking their lives for! You're sick Innu. I don't care anymore. You are to step down, and I will take command from here on out!" Quinn demanded.

Innu started laughing.

"You think the teachers here will agree to that? Do you think anyone will follow you? Who are you, Hardy? You are a nobody. I personally fought in the last war and rose to the rank of head general. You may have the same rank as me in name, but it means nothing. I don't take orders from you!" Innu shouted back.

It was clear Innu wasn't going to listen, and with him taking command, he was sending all the students to a bloodfest, Quinn had no choice.

"I order you to listen to me!" Quinn shouted. "I will now be taking command of everyone and all the students here."

"You can't do that, you fool! Didn't you listen to anything I said?" Innu shouted again.

But Quinn's eyes started to glow a ferocious red, making him back away and remembering their first meeting.

"I did listen, but I'm not a nobody," Quinn said, looking at all of the teachers. There was one thing Innu was right about, that they respected and trusted Innu more than him. He could see it in their eyes. So he only had one choice.

"I am Quinn Talen, head of the Cursed faction and one of the three world leaders. I will be taking over as commander from this point onwards!"

"He's who..." Innu said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## **Chapter 1014: A mistake!**

It took a lot for Quinn to finally reveal himself. He didn't want to but what was the point when his main goal was changing the system so people's lives would be better. If the people were dead, then it didn't matter how much he changed the system.

After announcing his name, he thought that would be the end of it, but suddenly some of the teachers started to crack. They let out a few stifled laughs and even Innu started to laugh hysterically.

"We know you're just some unknown from the Cursed faction!" Innu laughed. "To actually claim that you are their leader, what would a world leader even be doing attempting to be a teacher? Even a head general being a teacher is a stretch!"

However, the students from Hardy's class weren't so quick to judge. They knew that Hardy was from the Cursed faction and knew that he had done so many amazing things, so they had tried to do their own research to find out just who Hardy was.

When looking however, they didn't find anything, but when they started to search the Cursed faction and watched videos of the leader fighting, although Hardy and the leader from the videos weren't exactly identical, they did notice some features that were similar.

However, Innu disregarded that a world leader would ever become a teacher and put their senses straight.

From the odd looking eyes of the teachers, Quinn was annoyed.

"Do I really need to prove who I am by showing you? I guess even showing you the shadow ability wouldn't be enough." Quinn said, as he entered his shadow space and shadows started to surround his hands.

The second Innu saw his ability, his eyes widened and his heart began to thump so incredibly loud that a pain was felt in his chest for a second. Innu was so confident that this person wasn't Quinn and this was just an excuse. He believed he already knew what his ability was - a form of mind control, but now seeing the shadow there was a possibility he was telling the truth.

The shadow soon disappeared and now held in his hands in front of everyone, was Quinn's platinum ID card, placing his fingers on the front, the card started to light up slightly proving that it was him.

In nearly an instant, the teachers who were making fun of him, all started to bow down out of respect and fear. They had to treat him just as they would treat Oscar, after all he supposedly controlled a force that was equal to the military's in strength.

Quinn was a single person who had so much power that no one would dare cross them.

Innu took a good look at the platinum card and stumbled a few steps back before eventually falling on his backside. He got up quickly and also bowed.

'Damn him, is this a trick! It can't be, that's the platinum card only given to the world leaders. What the hell was a man like that doing being a teacher? What happens if my words and his make it so the two groups clash against each other!' Innu was panicking, but Quinn didn't care for all that now.

"Wow, so he is the Cursed faction leader. We had the leader teaching us this whole time!" Swin said with a big smile on his face.

The students under Quinn were even more impressed that the Cursed faction took so much time to look after students at the academy. The world's opinion of the Cursed faction was bad, but perhaps Quinn in the few weeks he had spent as a teacher had managed to change some minds.

"Okay, everyone listen up!" Quinn shouted in a voice so loud and booming that it could even hit the students at the very back of the thirty thousand student group. This was because he was able to use a form of Qi to project his voice louder than humanly possible.

"The Dalki are coming to attack this planet. It is not a question of if but when. They are coming and we need to prepare. If you want to live, I need you to do whatever you can to listen to me, does everyone understand!"

"Yes sir!" All of the students shouted in unison.

For some reason, the students were empowered knowing that a world leader was with them. Still they were frightened, they had only just fought against beasts not too long ago and now were supposedly going up against the Dalki. They could have never imagined such a thing just a few hours ago.

Quinn continued to give instructions, organizing the students based on what abilities they had, trying to set up a strong formation. He had the teachers help him, including Innu. Surprisingly to Quinn, Innu was good at something as he had the information of the strongest students and more in his head that could be put to good use.

'It was clear Innu didn't like being ordered around, but even he understood not to question Quinn.'

While the students were getting ready, Quinn wondered if they should head back to the shelter as it could possibly be a better place to protect, but it was some distance away from where they were currently.

'Eno, just what is your goal in all of this? If you knew the attack was happening and you wanted to save humans lives, then why won't you let me get any help? Are you trying to reveal my secret to everyone?'

There was also another question on Quinn's mind, there was the possibility that depending on what happened, his secrets would be revealed. But right now that wasn't his main concern. If his secret now had to be shown to the whole world, of what he could do and who he was, as long as he could save the others lives then that was fine with him.

At the same time, Oscar, who was still at the newly built school base in his office, had received an urgent report from one of his head generals that was in charge of the scouting section.

"Supreme commander, we have a problem. A ship has suddenly just teleported in the area of planet Caladi."

Oscar knew straight away it was where Quinn and the other students were currently.

"Send them support immediately, we can't let those students be harmed, and get everyone to return to Earth as soon as possible." Oscar ordered.

"Sir, that's the problem. All of our teleporters on the planet are currently not working. We can't get through on any communication devices either. I have sent a support ship with my own strongest men, but even going through the teleport station it will be a while for them to get there.'

This had never happened before, even the Dalki in the first war and when having confrontations on other beast planets had never been able to jam their teleporters. It was a first for the human race going up against this type of thing.

'So the war has started and Quinn, you are in the middle of it. In a way I am thankful that at least you are there. Please Quinn, I am counting on you to make this the first victory for the human race. It will give us great morale as we go forward.'

'Also, protect as many lives as possible.'

Back in the sandy desert, after organising the students into certain squads and assigning teachers to lead them, Quinn was ready to move out. If possible Quinn didn't want any of the students to fight, but with fifty Dalki, even Quinn couldn't guarantee that they wouldn't get past him.

The aim was with a teacher leading a squad of students they could fight at least one until Quinn could come and help.

'I still haven't seen them arrive yet, we might have time to head to the shelter.' Quinn thought as he was ready to make the announcement.

At that moment, all of the students could see behind Quinn something falling through the sky. Turning around after seeing their concerned faces, Quinn could now see it too. There were black pods falling from the sky, burning as they went through the planet's atmosphere.

Most of them were heading towards their direction and that's when Quinn had realised his mistake.

'Wait, Eno said he spoke to three people? If that includes me and Innu, then that means he spoke to another. Were they in the shelter?'

The pods came crash-landing in the desert ahead of where the students were, each landing created giant piles of sand thrown in the air, and the force shook the ground violently.

The number of pods didn't stop falling into the ground.

"How many Dalki are invading?!" Innu said as he saw the pods land, knowing full well how tough of a battle this would be.

At the same time, several pods had also crashed into the shelter.

'Damn it! They landed at the shelter as well! I just hope there is someone there that can deal with them.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1015: The Noble vampire

Inside the Shelter Fex and Samantha were left standing there looking at the destroyed house in front of them. The onlookers that had gone away for a few seconds, soon returned to have a look once again.

However, making sure no one was being nosy with what was going on, Samantha quickly built two walls at the end of the street so no onlookers would come to where they were.

"Okay, it's time for you to explain yourself." Samantha said.

"Me explain myself, what do you mean by that?" Fex asked. He thought he had just gotten out of the fiery pit of trouble, and now someone else was giving him a grilling.

'When I wanted an adventure this wasn't what I had in mind.' Fex thought.

"What I'm talking about is what that stranger was saying. He was saying some things that sounded a bit odd, as if he knew you? At least he made it out that way." Samantha questioned.

"How am I meant to know what he meant?" Fex said, getting defensive and moving away from Samantha. "There's a bunch of crazy people in this world. He literally slammed a glass on my hand out of nowhere."

Seeing Fex lift up his hand to show the wound, Samantha looked at it strangely, scrunching up her face, because she saw no such wound on his hand at all. It looked completely fine.

"I'm starting to think maybe you're the crazy one, when I get back I'm going to request that a psych evaluation be put on all our teachers to check your mental health. We can't have someone like you teaching our students. What do you even teach anyway?"

Even though Fex thought he was a little in the wrong for what had happened, he started to get annoyed at how this girl was treating him.

However, soon his eyes were locked onto something else, high up in the sky and coming towards them.

"Look out!" Fex shouted, using his strings, he soon wrapped Samantha up in them and pulled her towards him, carrying her under his arm. A few seconds later and a loud bang was heard. Following it, a violent shake of the ground with parts of dirt falling from the sky like it was raining.

When the shaking had stopped and the rain of dirt ended, she could see that her and Fex were on a house roof quite away from where they were before.

'How did we get up here so fast?' She thought, but soon her thoughts were concentrated on something else.

"What is that black egg looking thing?" Fex asked, looking down at the destroyed Shelter. It wasn't just where they were, there were five space pods in total that had landed in different places around the Shelter. Causing a large crater and destroying everything within thirty meters as it landed.

A few seconds later, and a piercing siren noise sounded, going off. Loud enough for everyone in the Shelter to hear.

"What's that sound?" Fex asked, still startled at everything happening.

"Didn't you go to school, and you're a teacher!" Samantha said annoyedly, hitting Fex on his thigh so he could set her free. "That sound, it means the Dalki have arrived. The Dalki are attacking!"

The sounds of screams filled the air, from panic, as they headed to the emergency protection zones, and Samantha, just hearing them started sweating frantically. In the distance she could see mechs being piloted, landing where the other pods were. She then jumped down from the building, and created a platform for herself with her ability, moving it towards the black pod.

She got in a fighting stance and was ready. The black pod started to produce steam as its front doors were being opened up. She knew how hard the outside of the Dalki ships were and the pod looked to be made of the same material. It was pointless to attack such a thing, but she was prepared.

The ground around her was raised into nine different moving forms of tails. They swirled about in the air moving far more flexibly than any earth ability. At the tip, sharp pointed ends all pointing at the pod.

Then, when the door started to lift itself open, a hand could be seen reaching out with a claw on the end, it pushed itself forward and its large body with its scale-like features could be seen.

'That thing, it looks like Borden, so these are the Dalki that Quinn is always talking about. If they are as strong as Borden, and there are five of them. We're in trouble.' Fex thought.

As soon as its upper body was out from the shell, Samantha moved all nine of her sharp tails and shot them straight towards the Dalki. The tips of her tails suddenly changed a slight colour as she activated her soul weapon wasting no time.

The Dalki still wasn't completely free from whatever it was trying to get out of, and was a sitting duck to the spikes as each one pierced its body. Green blood then started to ooze from the attack, and it shouted in pain.

"You bitch!" The Dalki groaned and soon kicked open the bottom part. It was at this point that Fex noticed the strange egg looked like a type of ship inside, but the black material was something similar to what the vampires would use as well.

What was strange, was even though the Dalki was full of holes from the tails that had impaled its body, it was smiling. At that point, it lifted its arms and swung them down smashing all of the tails, breaking them leaving the pointed parts in its body. Pulling one of them out that had dug into its shoulder, it threw it towards Samantha, and then pulled out the rest, throwing them all towards her.

Her own attack was being used against her. Raising a wall was the only thing she could do, but the attacks had gone through them all, which came as a surprise to her, but the very last wall it looked like it was losing momentum.

"No you idiot, the Dalki is still coming towards you!" Fex shouted as a fist was seen breaking through the last wall, ready to grab Samantha, but she suddenly felt her back bend slightly, it wasn't an action of her own, and the Dalki could now see some red string wrapped around its hand.

"Screw you!" Fex shouted, pulling himself towards the Dalki, and kicking it in the chest away from Samantha. It stumbled a little backwards, but soon pulled on the red strings that Fex was using, dragging his body upright.

The two of them now were in a tug of war match with Fex's string, with the Dalki's hard skin the string was unable to pierce through like it would usually do, as for Fex, although the string was being produced from his fingers, he felt like his hand was going to snap off at any second.

'He's holding his own in a battle of strength against a Dalki?' Samantha thought.

A human couldn't match the strength of the Dalki. Even some with the best gear couldn't, so how could an ordinary teacher.

What she was surprised at was how her initial attack hadn't killed the Dalki in the first place.

If it was coming from another earth user she would understand, but Samantha was a head general. One of the strongest people the military had to offer. If they couldn't kill a Dalki, the human race would have already lost this war. When looking at the Dalki closely, that's when she noticed it wasn't a one spiked Dalki, but two.

Soon, Fex knew he would be pulled forward so he had no choice.

"Hey, can you promise me something, you have to keep this a secret okay?!" Fex grunted, and then with his other hand free, he fired off a single large blood swipe towards the Dalki. Taking the hit on, it pierced the Dalki's skin slightly. While having the Dalki in place, Fex continued to use the red aura strings on the Dalki.

It was risk he had to take. He knew the opponent in front of him couldn't be beaten with just his physical strength and string. He needed to use his abilities.

The red strike hit the Dalki again and again, and more blood was being spilt, but Fex just felt that the tugging was getting stronger, not weaker. Eventually, he had no choice but to let go of the string holding the Dalki.

"This guy just won't fall. He was already injured by you? What's it going to take to kill this guy?!" Fex said.

"Watch out!" Samantha shouted, but it was too late. The Dalki had already hit Fex straight in the face, sending his body flying and hitting a building crashing through the walls.

Seeing it, Samantha partly felt like it was her fault. After her initial attack had failed, she had done nothing to help while he was busy fighting. But it was safe to say that no human would be able to recover from something like that.

The two spiked Dalki, now on the verge of death, were moving faster and stronger than ever.

"ARGHH!" Samantha screamed as she summoned the nine tails again and attempted to hit the Dalki. Still, it managed to avoid the first two attacks and avoided the sharp coloured tips. It then punched the earth part of the tails, destroying them.

The Dalki had already figured out that only her soul weapon, part of her ability, was what managed to injure it.

'A two spiked Dalki, are the rest of them two spiked as well? Why would they send such a large force to deal with us? On a small planet like this?'

Not giving up, Samantha summoned her tails again, draining her of her MC points. She attempted to move her tips faster, then when all nine of them came at the Dalki at the same time, she saw something else speed past her.

The Dalki smashed through all of the tails with his hand, but a black haired young man, with a black needle in his hand, had pierced the Dalki right in the stomach. Soon it started to fill up with green liquid.

Taking the needle out, she was wondering what the young man was going to do next, lifting up the needle, he stabbed it into himself.

"What the hell is he doing?!" She thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1016: The power of green blood

The Shelter was dealing with more trouble than they could handle. It was chaos inside, but most of the citizens had managed to go to the underground emergency locations in the Shelter. They were built in case anything like this did occur.

There was also a teleporter in these locations, but today they did not work, and they just had to hope that the glathrium metal bunkers they were in, would hold. The Shelter just wasn't that well equipped to deal with this type of attack.

Even though only five black pods had landed in the Shelter, the Dalki that had emerged from them were stronger than they had expected. Two of them were one spiked Dalki. The military personnel, including the Travelers, were fighting against them.

They were slowly damaging the Dalki, but it was only making the situation worse. Thankfully the mechs were able to hold them where they were. The travellers that were assisting weren't high level and didn't even have decent beast gear on. This was because it was a green portal planet.

The only beasts that would appear on such a planet were basic and intermediate tier beasts. Attracting beginners and those who wished for a safe life.

However, the situation was a lot worse in another area. For a two spiked Dalki other than the one Fex was dealing with was causing a rampage. The mechs that had come to deal with it had already been destroyed, along with the buildings around it.

Civilians that hadn't escaped were crushed, and those hiding in their homes had no chance of surviving.

In the centre of the Shelter, standing on top of a tall building on a flat surface, was a man with a grey ponytail.

"The military is doing as expected, but that vampire boy is doing better than I thought. This is quite interesting. Still, a head general and a vampire noble who is a descendant required to take on a single two spike. This was not the hope I was looking for." Eno commented, at that moment, something large landed behind the man. He could feel the vibration of the ground he was on.

Eno turned around and could see another two spiked Dalki standing behind him, staring at him.

"Did you think you could hide up here?" Dalki spoke.

"I should have known," Eno said. "There were five pods, so three of them were two spikes and the other two, one spikes. I underestimated the level of forces that you

would send. Three two spiked Dalki will be too much for them, I guess I should attempt to help them out a little bit."

Charging in, Eno's hand was covered entirely in red. It looked like blood hardening but soon shaped itself into a spiral and spun like a drill. The Dalki didn't know what to do as the movements were far faster than it had expected.

It raised its hands, but the blood drill went through the hard, almost impenetrable skin, and once it went through its arms, it continued to go through its chest, spinning the blood in all directions and even landing back on Eno's face.

"There is a great weakness you Dalki have," Eno said. "Your race may be a threat to humans, but you're no threat to me. Do you know why? Because your blood was meant to empower us."

He placed his bare hand on the wound of the Dalki and licked it, allowing the green energy to empower his body. Then jumping up in the air, he punched the Dalki as he went back down, causing the two of them to crash through the building, going down from floor to floor.

However, with the Dalki's wound being a serious one, he too was getting stronger mid fall. The Dalki grabbed Eno by the legs. Before he landed at the very bottom, he swung his body like a baseball onto the ground.

Now, Eno's body was unmoving, but his eyes were still alive.

'Maybe me trying to help has just made the job harder since I could not finish the job. It looks like my time is over, but I will report everything I have seen to the others.'

The Dalki, standing up from the ground, roared in anger before stomping on top of Eno's head, spattering it like a tomato.

Over where one of the other two spiked Dalki was battling for its life, Fex had just stabbed the needle into himself. The power from the Dalki was injected into him, but the energy inside him was far more than he expected.

'What is this, what is going on.' It was almost too much for him to comprehend.

What Fex didn't realise was his blood weapon already increased his abilities when used with human blood. Putting Dalki blood, he was having not just the effect of his blood weapon but that of the blood as well.

The Dalki wasn't just going to stand there and decided to throw a punch towards the boy standing in front of him, but his arm had been stopped by red pieces of string. It was coming from the boy, but he was a lot stronger than last time.

Pulling strings with his hand, he was able to pull the arm away, and then punched the Dalki in the chest. It took a step back, but that wasn't the only hit, soon after, a

flurry of punches came towards the Dalki's chest as Fex felt more powerful than he ever did before.

"It's like I'm super Fex!" He shouted punch after punch. Now the green liquid was spewing as its hard scales were doing nothing. Fists of green blood were now splurging out.

'No, you can't injure him slowly like that.' Samantha thought, watching. 'The Dalki, it's hard to tell when one is on the verge of death. At this rate, if the Dalki doesn't die, then it means it will just get stronger until it can match up to that teacher again.' Samantha thought.

This was why she had attempted to finish off the Dalki right away, always using her most powerful skill.

What was working was, for now, Fex was completely overpowering the two spiked Dalki with his bare hands. Seeing this as an opportunity and not making the same mistake as last time, Samantha was going to help this time. The nine tails of earth grew behind the Dalki, and just when the Dalki could feel his energy rising to make a comeback, the nine tails had pierced it right in the back.

It hadn't gone through deep enough, but Fex, having seen the tails moments before, put all of his strength into punching faster and harder, hitting the body further into the tailed spikes until eventually, the Dalki stopped moving.

"We did it!" Samantha shouted.

At that moment, Fex's legs felt like jelly as the powering effects of his blood weapon and Dalki blood were over.

"Those things are so hard to kill." Fex said, gasping for air. While punching, he didn't take a breath, afraid that the Dalki would have attacked back if he did.

While the two of them were taking a short break after their victory, the sounds of screams could be heard, rumbling and buildings being destroyed. The fight was far from over, and they had only defeated a single Dalki.

"Can you still fight?" Fex asked.

"I'm completely drained of MC. I will need time to recover." Samantha replied, knowing that their best chances of defeating the rest would be with this strange strong teacher.

"Well, you saw what I could do once I stabbed myself with this needle, so will you let me stab you now, and let me control your body?" Fex asked.

Although she was reluctant at first, she had no choice but to agree. Before leaving, Fex stabbed the dead Dalki with his needle once more, filling it up. The two of them then went to high ground on one of the few uncrushed buildings to have a

look at the situation. Although Samantha was looking at where to go next in the Shelter instead, Fex was looking far off into the distance, far further than human eyes could see.

That's when he spotted that an army of Dalki were heading towards a group of students.

Quinn and the other teachers were staring at the trouble they were facing out in the desert as they could see the Dalki were marching through the sand towards them.

"If the Dalki gets past me, survive, survive long enough for me to come and help you!" Quinn shouted.

"If the Dalki gets past you? What are you talking about?" Innu asked.

In a split second, Quinn had left his position, and he was running straight ahead into the forty-five Dalki. While the students and teachers were to remain where they were.

"That person's a dead man." Innu could only think.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1017: A single warrior

Charging into a group of Dalki would be frightening for anyone. If someone had told Quinn in the past that he would be doing exactly that in the future, he would have never believed them. Yet here he was, charging straight towards a deadly enemy.

For some reason, his mind was completely clear; he knew what he needed to do and he wasn't even shaking.

'Is it because I know the lives of everyone behind me count on it? Or is it something else?' Quinn wondered.

Looking at all of the Dalki in front of him, he used the inspect skill. It scanned the whole field and condensed it into information that was useful to him.

[Total number of Dalki: 45]

[Number of two spiked Dalki: 10]

[Number of one spiked Dalki: 35]

At first Quinn was surprised to see some two spiked Dalki among the group. Other than Borden, he had only fought against one spiked Dalkis in the past. Even back then he was helpless against them. Yet now he wasn't just facing one, but many two spiked Dalki.

'I'm not the same as I was back then, things are a lot different now.' Quinn reassured himself and he was right.

His stats back then were nothing compared to what they are now. Before he was only a vampire but now he had evolved into a vampire lord, he also didn't have great equipment back then either. At the moment, although he didn't have a pair of good gauntlets, the rest of his equipment was still leaps and bounds ahead of the past. His blood skills, fighting skill, and everything about him was a different person.

Standing roughly twenty meters away from them, Quinn took a firm fighting stance, pushing his leg out forward.

"Is he planning to do that same kick as he did on Sach?" A teacher commented, watching Quinn bravely stand against the Dalki.

Even if Innu didn't like him, he had to admit that not many people could stand there as the humans greatest threat in existence stood in front of them.

"If he is, I don't think it will do much against them."

Quinn wanted to damage the Dalki as much as he could before they would reach him. Moving the Qi to his back right leg, the power was rising inside. The red energy was being prepared and at the same time, the second stage of Qi was being produced as well.

"HUH!" Quinn shouted, as he lifted his leg off the ground so fast and shot out the blood crescent thigh kick infused with both stages of Qi. Unlike with the kick against Sach, this time the kick had the intention to kill.

Quinn had the intention to use as much power as he could gather while also using the blood crescent kick with it.

A loud bang was heard as if a gun had been shot out, and a giant line of red aura had left Quinn's leg. It moved so fast through the air with so much energy it looked like a red lightning strike.

[A significant amount of blood energy has been used]

[Minus -20 HP]

[80/100 HP remaining]

The blood crescent kick usually took 2 points of Hp compared to the blood swipes singular one, but without realising it, while having more control of his blood, Quinn was also able to pack more of his blood power into the attack.

Some of the Dalki attempted to dodge the attack while others knew it was hopeless and took on the strike head on, but for those that did, it was a big mistake. Their bodies were torn in half immediately, limbs separated from their bodies and some were heavily injured but still moving forwards.

[6/50 Dalki have been defeated]

Quinn's attack had only killed five of them, he could tell using his inspect skill so he could only assume that the other one had been killed inside of the shelter.

"That kick, what was that and that loud bang!" Swin said shocked.

"I don't think some of the Dalki are moving." A teacher spoke and they were right.

"You're telling me with a single kick, he managed to kill the Dalki just like that!" Innu grunted, as he also gulped, thanking his lucky stars he never tried to go further against this person.

"Wait, didn't you see that red aura attack, I think I've seen it somewhere before." Another said.

"Yeah, it looks like the same type of thing the Bloodevolver from power fighters produces." Erlen spoke, leaving his mouth wide open.

Just who was Hardy, no, who was Quinn?

"The Bloodevolver, now that you mention it, those attacks do look the same."

Before the Dalki had reached Quinn, his leg was temporarily out of commission and he was using the blood bank to heal it. The rebound from a strong attack had affected his leg slightly, and it was something Quinn hadn't expected since it was his first time using it. So instead, he was throwing out blood swipes as much as he could towards them, hurting them as much as possible.

"Yeah, it's exactly the same, so Quinn is the Bloodevolver from power fighters!"

Not everyone knew what the students were talking about, since the Bloodevolver's fame was short lived, still, it brought confusion to those that did know him. How did Quinn, the leader of the Cursed faction, have two abilities?

However, they soon didn't care and were just happy that he was on their side.

The clash between the Dalki and Quinn had started, as he lifted his leg kicking one right in the chest pinning him to the ground, another threw out a fist towards him that was blocked by the shadow, and Quinn blasted him away with a blood spray filled Qi fist.

The students were seeing a single person knocking Dalki away one after another. Once in a while though a hit would go through hitting Quinn, but he wouldn't let it affect him and continued on. However, then they could see he was starting to get overwhelmed.

No longer could they see Quinn, but just a bunch of the Dalki around him.

[Blood hammer strike]

Two Dalki were chucked in the air, even if they couldn't see Quinn anymore they could see what he was doing and he was hanging on. Mainly thanks to the shadow and the new Muay Boran skills he had learnt. He had locked a Dalki down by the neck and shifted his body, causing the Dalki to hit their own, before kneeing it in the head away, and finishing it with a blood crescent kick.

However, even with Quinn doing so much damage to them, he had only done that, 'damage'. His attacks were only making them stronger while only a couple more had been killed.

[8/50 Dalki have been defeated]

Quinn then saw one of the Dalki, moving away towards the group of students and teachers, throwing his shadow path on the floor. He slowed down its movements and wanted to stop the Dalki, but another jumped in front of him before he could.

The teachers, and students were prepared, although at first they were impressed by what Quinn the Cursed faction leader had done, and they knew how strong he was, the Dalki would be coming towards them.

Going past Quinn, they started to head towards the teachers and students.

"Everyone, prepare yourselves, they will soon be upon us!" Innu shouted.

"No! If I let them pass me like this, the students they'll be killed. These Dalki are too strong, I can't defeat them slowly like this, I can't let them get past me!" Quinn screamed, and soon his arms started to go bloody.

Five of the Dalki had run past the ones that were huddled on Quinn. A smile appeared upon one's face as he continued to run towards the frightened humans. Then, he felt something hit the back of his legs causing him to fall over, several more cuts were made on his hands. The others felt something wrap around them as they were pulled back, and Quinn finished it off with a hammer strike right at the top of its head.

Leaping up in the air, standing in front of the Dalki, Quinn was now in front of them once again.

"I will not let you get past that easy." Quinn said.

"What is that?" Shiro and the others said, looking at Quinn.

Standing there , Quinn's arms were bloody as strange blades were sticking out along his forearms and long razor-like chains were dangling on the floor, dripping with blood.

Quinn had activated his Item type soul weapon, the Twin Tail chain.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1018: A bigger enemy

Although Quinn wasn't getting badly hurt and he could still fight on against the Dalki, there was another issue. He couldn't stop the Dalki that would ignore him and continue to charge on.

He needed a way to fight more of them at once to defeat them quicker. There were quite a lot of Dalki still there and Quinn believed he had hurt them as much as he could using some of his blood skills, so he had no choice but to use his soul weapon, the twin tail chain.

The others watching could see it in sight for a second and it looked like Quinn was in considerable pain. His blood began dripping onto the floor as the blades could be seen piercing through his skin. The blades even seemed to move as if they were alive, constricting and tightening around his arms.

"What is that?" A teacher asked. "A beast weapon?"

"I have no idea, but based on it appearing out of nowhere, I can only assume it's a type of soul weapon." Innu guessed.

It wasn't long until they could see it in action, for Quinn had no choice but to start slaying his enemies as quickly as possible with the weapons. For every second he used the weapon his life would be drained, but after hitting the first set of Dalki from behind, Quinn realised something.

The blood of the Dalki that was consumed by the bladed weapons also empowered him. He had gained a boost in his stats more so than ever.

Swinging out the one of the twin tails, it lengthened and hammered down, hitting a few of the Dalki. Some attempted to grab on to stop it, but as Quinn pulled it like a ripcord, it shredded the Dalki's hands, causing some of them to lose their fingers and the top half of their hands.

[You have received a twenty percent power boost]

One of the Dalki that had been hit was a two spiked Dalki, which gave Quinn even more strength. Although the ten percent and twenty percent boost didn't seem to stack. Realising this, Quinn knew what he needed to do. He ran through, searching for what he needed and when he had found the two spiked Dalki, he would hit them slightly causing light scratches on their bodies. Green blood would splatter but they wouldn't be severely hurt.

'If I hurt these guys too much, they'll just get stronger.' Quinn thought. 'But they give me the strongest power boost, so with the extra power, I'll finish off the ones that are the weakest first!'

Jumping up in the air, Quinn spun his body like a tornado, spinning the twin blades around him. Any of the Dalki that got close would be cut apart and they were quick to learn their lesson. Now seeing them from up high in the sky, Quinn used his inspect skill.

Since it had levelled up, Quinn could tell which Dalki were fine and which were in a critical state. Some looked more injured but were actually better off than others. With this, Quinn was able to pick and choose the Dalki that he could finish off in a few hits. Coming down, he swung his blade as hard as he could, tearing off one of their arms from their shoulder.

When a Dalki attempted to punch him, his other twin tail retracted, making it smaller but more solid and the blades laid flat on its side, creating a type of shield taking the brunt of the attack. Kicking the Dalki away with his empowered attacks was enough, and he continued his plan of getting rid of as many of the one spiked Dalki as possible.

[12/50 Dalki defeated]

[13/50 Dalki defeated]

[14/50 Dalki defeated]

At the very back of the group, one of the Dalki who hadn't quite rushed in with the others seemed to be concerned by what he was seeing.

'The commander didn't come with us, he went to the shelter.' The Dalki thought.

"Be careful of the man with the strange weapons, continue charging forward!" The Dalki ordered at the back.

Hearing this, those that were the weakest had caught on to what Quinn was attempting to do. Due to them feeling stronger as they got weaker they were fearless, but the Dalki that spoke seemed to help them realise it wasn't working out.

However, when one Dalki attempted to avoid the strike of the twin blade, it had fallen on his shadow instead. After hitting the shadow, the Dalki still fell to the floor feeling a great pain in its head where it had landed on the shadow.

The other Dalki were stunned by this and they didn't know what to make of what had just happened. What were they feeling right now, they truly didn't know.

[16/50 Dalki defeated]

Still, with the Dalki's orders some of them were now ignoring Quinn and were attempting to run past him. Quinn, upon seeing these, went ahead to strike his twin

tail on them, but was kicked in the side of his rib in the process, causing his twin tail to hit nothing but the sand.

Ignoring the kick, Quinn got up and wrapped the twin blade around the Dalki next to him and hurled him at the Dalki running away, before leaping forward in the air and blocking their path again.

For a second as Quinn had landed, he stumbled onto the ground and was now on one knee.

'This damned soul weapon, why does it hurt so much to use it, and they're digging into my arm even more!' Quinn thought.

Even though he was fine health wise and was stronger due to the Dalki's stats, the soul weapon hurt more than ever to use and he was unable to take a break, otherwise his weapons would eat him alive.

"He needs help!" Shiro shouted.

"Shiro's right, Quinn is out there fighting on his own, what are we doing just standing here? Look, he's hurt trying to protect us, are we just going to wait for him to die first?" Venus pointed over to Quinn.

Innu and the other teachers were still shell shocked witnessing what Quinn could do, for the first time. For a second they didn't even feel like they were in their own bodies, it was as if they were watching a movie of some kind. They never thought they would see anyone survive that long against the Dalki.

A single person was fighting against forty-five Dalki, it was a tale that no one would believe unless they witnessed it and something that deserved to be passed down in history books forever.

Gritting his teeth, Quinn stood up on his feet again.

'If it was Arthur, he would have been able to deal with this many, he could have protected them all, right!' Quinn shouted in his head, which spurred him to continue swinging the twin blades as fast as he could at the oncoming enemies.

Another Dalki had run past him and as Quinn turned to stop him, the pain was too much and he had to pause for a short moment, but that was enough time for a two spiked Dalki to hit him breaking his ribs in the process, blood spewed from his mouth.

It was then that Quinn had a realisation for the first time that he was facing a different type of problem. It wasn't that Quinn was unable to defeat the fifty Dalki. If he had enough time and no one to protect, he had many ways and techniques that he could have used.

However, the problem now was that he was unable to protect others.

'Is this what Arthur felt like when he woke up to find all his people dead? What was the point of having all that power, if you can't protect the people you care for.'

Quinn thought.

As Quinn was ready to get up and try to fight the Dalki again, he could see one had been sent flying past him. He was shocked to see its body laying there on the floor.

[20/50 Dalki have been defeated]

Immediately after, abilities were seen firing off from behind, hitting the Dalki and sending some of them back, while others brushed off the attacks like they were nothing. The important thing wasn't that they were being injured, but that they were being kept busy.

"I'm sorry we waited too long, you did a lot better than I ever could have thought!" Innu said, standing by Quinn's side. "I don't care what happened between us in the past. Even if I think you're an arsehole, right now there are even bigger arseholes in front of us."

Smiling, Quinn couldn't agree more.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1019: A order powered by will

Away from all the fighting, standing on his own in the middle of the desert was the man known as Eno, but at the same time claimed not to be him. He was so far away from the battlefield that if a human was to look out to the desert, they wouldn't be able to see him. As for Eno though, when he looked at the battlefield, he could see everything that was going on in the distance. Everything he needed to see.

'The humans have decided to come and help you, but this will be where the real test happens, Quinn.' Eno thought. 'As for the shelter, with how many strong forces they sent, I'm surprised that it's still standing. It's a shame the other one is no longer there to send information.'

'Did they send this many people because he knew I was going to be here?' Eno thought.

'Maybe I should send the other one to the Shelter to help the others, if any of them are still alive.'

---

Out on the field, the students who had ranged abilities were firing off non stop. The ranged ability users were targeting the Dalki that were on the far edges and towards the back, while the stronger ones had formed units with the teachers to fight them toe to toe.

The teacher that seemed to be the most effective out of them all, was Peter. He had equipped his beast weapons known as the Tonfa that had been especially made for him. It was a strong baton-like object that would be placed under Peter's forearms and also stuck out a bit longer than his arms could reach.

With this, he was able to strike the Dalki at full force without having to worry about his own body taking damage. Even if he didn't feel pain, at times when using his full strength it would break his own limbs. This object had solved most of those problems and he was able to do more damage than before.

Shiro, who was fearless, had dived right in with the teachers even though he was asked to stay at the back. However, when he had reached a Dalki and was staring one down, he froze for a brief second. The Dalki swiped and Shiro attempted to dodge but through his movements he knew he would be too slow.

Before the hand could reach Shiro, Peter had slammed it down with his weapon to the ground and then put both of them together and hit the Dalki in the stomach like a baseball bat. Soon several ranged abilities were also hitting the Dalki in the head, causing it to stumble backwards.

"All students, do not engage!" Peter shouted. "They're faster, stronger, and will kill you in one strike!" Peter shouted.

With the help of everyone, the Dalki forces were quickly dropping.

[24/50 Dalki defeated]

However, this wasn't what Quinn wanted. Having used his soul weapon for too long he had no choice but to cancel the soul weapon. The pain was affecting his whole body and was making it hard for him to even move. Now he was left fighting using his shadow and his fists like before.

Quinn had quickly thrown out a blood swipe and caught it with his shadow creating the shadow scythe. Swinging it outward, he had hooked a Dalki by the neck and slammed it down into the ground.

Now that he had the second stage of Qi, if Quinn coated the red aura with it, it would last until the Qi vanished as well. This would give Quinn a permanent shadow scythe to use. He hadn't brought out two since he needed to use his other hand from time to time.

When the Dalki was pinned to the ground, that's when Quinn could see the chaos that was happening. A teacher had been slashed by a claw of a Dalki, and had split through the beast armour slicing them in half.

Another Dalki had jumped over the line of support, ignoring the teachers and was just hitting the students left and right. Each hit was devastating and it was clear the students wouldn't recover from the strikes. They all continued to blast and hit the Dalki, but the abilities did seemingly nothing.

'The students are too weak to even do any damage to them!' Quinn thought seeing this. 'As soon as we knew the Dalki were going to attack we should have sent them off somewhere.'

But where could Quinn send them? Even at the shelter the Dalki had landed.

'Eno, what the hell are you doing!' Quinn shouted with anger.

A group of students were currently on the floor, shaking and they had wet themselves making a puddle in front of them. Their teacher had just died trying to protect them and a Dalki covered in blood was looking at the three of them.

Seeing this, Quinn placed out his hand and when the Dalki was ready to attack, they disappeared into the shadows. At the same time, another Dalki took this as an opportunity to punch Quinn in the head, knocking a tooth out.

Most of the Dalki were still centred around Quinn, they knew he was the biggest threat. What was distracting him more than ever were the Dalki who were jumping into the centre of the students just to hurt people that stood no chance.

Continuing to try to protect the students around him, Quinn used the shadow lock skill whenever possible, putting them into a space where the Dalki couldn't get to. At the same time, Quinn also raised shadow domes over other students. Although this wouldn't do much in terms of helping him attack or get rid of the Dalki, it made some of them hesitant to move forward.

Each time Quinn would be distracted, he would be hit by the Dalki as he was not able to raise his shadow in time, and his health was getting lower and lower by the second. When it got to a certain point, Quinn went searching for a weak Dalki. Upon finding one, he made his hand in a claw-like shape, then performed the hammer strike.

This time, due to his hand being in a claw-like shape, his entire arm would go through the body. It was a move that wasn't focused on being an internal attack. Once he had their blood on his hands, Quinn would take it in, giving him another power boost and healing him slightly.

[29/50 Dalki defeated]

'Damn, I'm surrounded again!' Quinn noticed and was getting frustrated that there was a certain group of Dalki that wouldn't get off his back. To make matters worse, they were all two spikes as well. Their hits hurt and he couldn't slack while fighting them. Whenever he did to save a student, he would pay for it.

"Get out of my way!" Quinn shouted, swinging his scythe and stretching it out, he planned to hit all four of the ones that were constantly on him. Three jumped out of the way, while the last one took the hit. It had pierced his hands and they were bleeding, but at the last second while being skidded across the room, he let go jumping and Quinn could see his scythe heading straight for the student. He quickly had to get rid of his shadow, dropping the red aura from the end of it to avoid touching the student.

In seconds the other Dalki were upon him again.

"I can't do anything!"

Whenever Quinn attempted to fight the Dalki, even if he couldn't see the students the worst thing for him was that he could hear their cries.

"I just wanted to see my parents one more time before I go. "

"Why did this happen to us, will someone stop them?"

"It hurts, it hurts so much."

Gritting his teeth and blasting blood sprays of fists at the Dalki, Quinn was beyond frustrated.

"Attack me, fight me! Why do you have to go for them!" he screamed, punching his enemies in front of him, hoping they wouldn't get back up, but they did.

Looking around, Quinn was trying to figure out an answer. The Dalki weren't fighting this smart before so something had to have changed, and that's when he noticed that a Dalki at the very back hadn't gotten involved.

'It's him!' Quinn thought, staring at him. 'I have to kill him, I need to get to him!'

Quinn was punched but he blocked attacks with his shadow and continued to use Shadow lock on more students. However his MC points would soon run low if he continued to do that. It was a demanding skill, and blocking the strong attacks even with his newly acquired 1000 Mc points, were going down fast.

"That guy..he needs to die!" Quinn shouted at the top of his lungs, Quinn shouted covering up his head as two Dalki punched him at the same time.

Blood spilt from his mouth, but he continued to stare at the Dalkii at the back, focusing on all the cries of pain, all the words he heard towards him.

'Get rid of him!' Quinn said almost as if it was an order.

At that moment, a black mist appeared from his body and started to float through the sky. It went over all those that were fighting and a black portal started to appear behind the two spiked Dalki who had yet to move.

From the portal. A large claw came out, striking the Dalki. At the last second they had spotted the creature but even lifting their hands, the claw shed through their strong skin. Jumping back quickly, the Dalki thought it was safe, but the Boneclaw appeared through a shadow behind it and stabbed it through its body with one of its hands before swiping with its other giant clawed hand, hitting its head. The claws went through easily and the head was no longer attached to the body falling to the floor.

"The boy still has the Boneclaw." Eno said, surprised and still watching the fight from a distance. "I knew he had obtained it, but to still have it at this stage. In that case, maybe Quinn isn't too innocent after all." Eno said with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1020: Fex's Secret (one)

While running through the destroyed shelter, Fex and Samantha realised that more destruction had been done than they first thought. There was hardly a structure that was still left standing in the area they were in. Even if one of the buildings hadn't been directly hit, the shockwaves of fights and ability users all over had caused them to crumble.

The only thing that was still holding strong was the shelter walls that surrounded the whole place. This was due to part of them being built out of Glathrium. However, for a shelter as unimportant as this one, there wouldn't be much put into the walls.

While running through the destruction, Fex could suddenly hear someone shouting for help, the voice was weak and faint. He quickly changed direction from where he and Samantha were heading and headed to where the noise was coming from.

"There's someone under this rubble!" Fex said.

'How did he hear that? We were so far away and there was so much noise around us.' Samantha thought, but carried on helping Fex. She was going to use her ability to move some of the rubble, but before she could, using his bare hands, Fex had moved the rubble until he had eventually found a mother and a young boy.

'I almost forgot that this boy had strength to match the Dalki, there's also the string ability he used, his strong red aura along with that soul weapon of his. This teacher, he's from the Cursed faction, right? Why is everyone from that faction so... strange.'

Fex didn't know the way to the emergency centre but lifted them with ease and went to Samantha who was deep in her thoughts.

"Tell me where I should take them." Fex said in a rush.

"Oh, follow me." Samantha led the way. Even if Fex was strange, at least he seemed like he wasn't a bad person.

When arriving at the emergency centre, Samantha noticed that there were a couple of Mechs there standing guard next to a giant trap door that led underground, and there were a few men in military uniform dotted around.

"Head General Samantha!" The general said after one of them went to guide the injured into the emergency centre. "We couldn't locate you so we thought something happened, I'm glad you're..." Before finishing his sentence, the military man noticed that General Samantha wasn't okay at all, she was out of breath and sweating with torn clothes.

If they didn't find her straight away, it could only mean she was dealing with a Dalki of her own and now the soldier was reluctant to tell her, but continued anyway. It was his duty.

"Report, the Mech's along with sergeant Mark of the shelter have been able to defeat one of the invading Dalki. They are currently moving onto the next. However, there is an issue. A two spiked Dalki has destroyed all the forces we have sent out to it.

"We haven't been able to get in contact with Mark since he went off, we are hoping for some orders based on the situation. For now, we have guarded the two emergency centres." The soldiers said.

Guarding the centres was good and a bad thing at the same time, Samantha thought. In a way it was telling the enemy that all the humans were hiding in this place, but if they didn't defeat the Dalki, how long could the humans survive in the shelters without the teleporters being turned on?

Because of this, Samantha took charge and made the decisions.

"You guys, come with us and we will head off to face the two spiked Dalki."

When she said these words, she could see the worried look on the soldiers faces.

"But Ma'am, are you able to fight? I know you are strong, but against a two spiked Dalki you will need to be in top shape."

For a second, Samantha looked at Fex.

"We can both fight," she said. "We just need you for support."

Soon, the group of them were off. Two mechs, five soldiers, Fex, and Samantha were heading to deal with the two spiked Dalki. While two remained to help any more injured that would arrive.

While running ahead, Samantha had many questions on her mind.

"When you stabbed yourself with that black needle, you got stronger and you said the same thing would happen to me, right? Then will it give me a little boost with my MC cells?"

Samantha had recovered some of her cells, but not all and she was afraid of just how long she could fight for.

Fex looked at the needle in his hand with the green liquid. He was sure the green liquid would do nothing to empower her, so it was best he injected the liquid with the needle in himself first and then used the needle to control Smantha.

There was one big problem however, even if the needle did give her additional MC points to use, Fex couldn't make much use of her. The main reason for this was because having the needle in the human also made it so he could control that person from a single point.

However, controlling Samantha wouldn't do much at all. Since she wasn't a physical fighter and was one who relied on elemental powers. Fex couldn't control how one could use their elemental powers but only their body.

This was why he preferred hand to hand combat, or weapon fighters like Erin and Dennis.

"The Dalki, you were trying to kill it in one shot right?" Fex replied. "When I stab this needle in you, you will be on your own. You will have enough energy to use your nine tail trick one more time. At that point, you need to do what you can to kill it." Fex said.

It didn't take long for them to find out where the two spiked Dalki was, as the ground started to rumble as it caused meaningless destruction. It had punched a partial building causing it to completely collapse. It also hadn't moved too far from the crater of the black pod that it had landed in.

Fex went ahead of the others and the first thing he did was stab himself with the green needle. The green blood effect would last a while but the power of the needle would only last while it was in one's body, so he couldn't have both effects of it while using it on Samantha.

"Fire shots only when you think they are necessary, try to injure it as little as possible!" Fex shouted.

The soldiers and the two mechs looked at each other.

"Listen to him, he will be in charge of this fight." Samantha said.

No questions asked, if Samntha ordered it they would follow this stranger to them.

"So I'm really going to be doing this again." Fex said, walking forward and looking at the giant Dalki that had lifted both its arms in the air and slammed it into the ground.

Fex had moved out of the way and placed red pieces of string on the ground, there was the perfect chance to hit it but he didn't and the others in the mech and soldiers were itching to fire.

"Don't, trust him!" Samantha said, seeing they were about to attack.

Fex then climbed on its back, passing red string over the back of its body and attempted to go through the gap between its shoulders and arms. However, he

wasn't quick enough as his legs had been grabbed and he was slammed to the ground.

The Dalki was then ready to stomp on Fex, but the ability users and Mechs fired first, hitting the Dalki. Even if it didn't pierce its skin or hurt the Dalki much, it did give a split second so that Fex could move out of the way.

The others seeing this were surprised. A human had just been slammed into the ground by a two spiked Dalki and was fine. Taking the flask out on him, Fex drank a bit of the blood he still had left. He had injuries and he needed blood to heal them.

"Why is he taking a drink during his fight?" A soldier asked. When the Dalki prepared to kick Fex, he managed to dodge this time, moving to the side and getting closer. When he reached its body he slid underneath the Dalki.

'The big guys are fast and strong, but with the power of the needle I'm just as strong!' Fex thought, finally his preparations had been made, to take down the Dalki.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1021: Fex's Secret (two)

Everything Fex had been doing so far was for this moment. Red strings came from his fingers, and at the same time, red strings formed all over the Dalki. On the floor, the string also rose as he controlled it with his blood. So much red string had been created while Fex was busy avoiding its attacks and had tied up the Dalki in crucial places.

Now taking the needle out of himself, he chucked it towards Samantha. She knew what she needed to do and ran forward, allowing the needle to stab her in the back.

The soldiers were confused by this, but as she spun around and clapped her hands she commanded.

"Get ready to attack!" The nine tails with her soul weapon the hardened tips rose. Fex now no longer having the needle in him was finding it hard to hold the Dalki in place but he just needed to for a few more moments.

His muscles felt like they were tearing apart and his whole body was shaking trying to hold the Dalki in place. The nine tails had struck all towards the head, stabbing into the Dalki. The sheer power from the elemental users and also the Mechs continued to fire in as they charged forward.

No one had stopped attacking, but Fex felt his arms give out and the string was released, the Dalki wasn't dead yet. In fact, it was getting stronger as it was getting weaker.

"Arghh! Screw you." Fex said, leaping up into the air. Using his blood ornament to cover his hand, it was covered in a red aura and with all his might he had jumped into the line of fire, getting hit by the mech and a few elemental shots from behind. Squinting and grunting, fortunately he still managed to deliver his punch right to the Dalki's head.

He cried in pain, tumbling to the ground with his back wounded and fell to the floor, where he just laid there.

At the same time, the Dalki too had fallen to the floor and had been defeated. Samantha, upon seeing this, immediately ran to where Fex was. His wounds were bad and she could see his back had been quite hurt from the mech's beast laser shots.

"Damn it, I'll get help, I'll call a healer!" Samantha shouted.

"It's okay." Fex grunted.

"It's not okay, come on, don't die. You need to live, I don't even know your name."

Fex smiled.

"It's Fex." And pointed to his flask that had skidded away from him.

She looked at what he was pointing at and dashed over to reach it thinking it was something important. When she picked it up the lid was open and she could see that blood had fallen from the flask.

'It was blood inside that flask? Why would he be drinking blood?'

Nonetheless, she brought the flask back over to Fex, who attempted to pour it into his mouth. With only a few drops coming out he needed more.

For some reason, he had attempted to drink the blood and she didn't understand what was going on. However, seconds later and a loud crash was heard. She turned her head and seemingly out of nowhere another two spiked Dalki had arrived and smashed one of the Mech's with a single hand.

The soldiers attempted to attack it but were killed in an instant and the other mech was picked up and lifted into the air before being smashed into the ground. The mech was punching back, trying to fight, but it was clear there was an easy winner that would be decided between the two of them soon.

What was noticeable about this Dalki, was the fact that it had green blood all over its body. This meant that it had been in a fight before, and whoever had fought it had managed to injure it greatly.

If it was a beast this would be good news, but not for a Dalki who got stronger based on these types of things.

"No, crap! What should I do?" Samantha asked, slamming the ground out of anger for how weak she was at the moment. She had counted that there were five pods and this was quite possibly the last of the Dalki in the shelter, but she couldn't do anything.

Her MC cells had been spent and when Fex was injured, the soul weapon had disappeared.

"Blood...." Fex called out, as he looked from the corner of his eyes and could see the Dalki heading towards them.

"Blood, what are you talking about at a time like this?" Samantha shouted. She was wondering if she should try to flee on her own or grab Fex and flee with him, but it would be impossible to outrun a Dalki.

"If you give me blood, I can fight again!" Fex shouted. Although Fex had to hide his ability as a vampire, at the moment, he knew that both of their lives were at stake. He knew he was the only one that could save them.

'This boy, he keeps saying crazy things, but he did drink that flask in the middle of the fight, so maybe he's telling the truth!' She had to gamble, and that's exactly what she did. She quickly formed a sharp dagger with her earth ability, cutting the palm of her hand.

"This is what you need right, this will let you fight. Then please help us!" She shouted at Fex, allowing the blood to fall from the palm of her hand and drip into Fex's mouth.

Almost instantly as the blood entered Fex's mouth, his wounds on his back healed at a fast rate.

"Just what is going on, it actually worked?"

However, there was no time for celebrations or explanations as the Mech that was fighting with the Dalki had finally stopped moving, and now the Dalki's attention was only on the two of them.

"Was it you two?" The Dalki asked. "Were you two the ones that killed the others!" The Dalki shouted.

At that moment, Fex managed to stand up. Although his wounds had healed, it was a different story about everything else. He was completely drained after having two tough fights in a row, and he wasn't even sure he could produce string anymore.

The Dalki screamed loudly, making a roar similar to a dragon. The gust of wind was felt from his roar and was so strong that it knocked Fex and Samantha over.

Attempting to do the same, Fex took a deep breath in, and shouted back.

"Roarrhh!" Fex screamed at the top of his lungs. When he did so, he wasn't the only one that had screamed. He was confused and thought he was going delusional with tiredness, but Samantha had heard it too.

"Fex, you can rest now. Don't worry, leave it to us." A voice said from behind but it wasn't just one person, it was five of them.

"You guys, you're here, how did you make it here?" Fex said, as his eyes were slowly fading. Just as he fell, Linda managed to catch him and slowly put him on the ground.

"Do you mind looking after this idiot for a while?" Linda said with a smile, putting her next to Samantha. "I think we have something else to deal with."

Seeing these people, Linda wondered who they were. From the way they were speaking they clearly knew who Fex was. Which had given her a hint.

"Wait, are you from the Cursed faction?" Samantha asked.

Nate gave a thumbs up without turning his head, thinking that he looked cool and it would impress the pretty head general.

Members from the Cursed faction had arrived, and it wasn't just any members, but some of the strongest from the Cursed faction.

"Be careful, it's at its strongest at the moment." Samantha warned, but it seemed like her warning had no effect on them whatsoever as each of them stood there confidently, ready to take on the Dalki.

'The Cursed faction...Fex, just who are you guys?' Samantha thought as she looked down at Fex's tired face.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1022: Cursed teamwork

On the Cursed ship, when Brock had revealed to the group that Quinn would be talking to Eno right now, they didn't take that as a good sign. Instead, Logan and Sam were thinking along the same lines.

They were worried. Richard Eno wasn't someone they could fully trust yet despite what Logan's parents told him, or believe that he was the great scientist that helped out the human race in times of need. There were just too many secrets for things to go smoothly.

After learning of this, Sam suggested that they keep a close eye on Quinn and find out where he was. They knew the schedule of the military and what planet they would be on, and because they had an inkling that Eno would try something, they were ready having organised a few things beforehand.

Of course, as soon as the communication devices were down and the military had put out a report for anyone in the nearby area to be careful of the Planet Caladi, they were already one step ahead of everyone else.

This allowed them to arrive before anyone. Linda, Nate, Dennis, Wevil and Sam had teleported to the planet closest and already had a ship prepared to head to planet Caladi.

"Remember the plan!" Sam said, and at that moment, the Dalki came rushing forward. Wevil, Sam, Nate, and Dennis stood in front of Linda and each one of them raised their shadow. They used their abilities to equally take part of the attack.

Alone, their MC points were probably enough to just block a single attack from a Dalki, but then they wouldn't be able to fight using their ability anymore. However if they mixed their shadows together, they would contribute evenly to the attack and it wouldn't drain them so quickly.

'The shadow ability, isn't that Quinn, their Cursed faction Leader's ability? Does this mean that he taught it to others in his faction as well?' Samantha wondered. In a way, one wouldn't think this was too surprising - it was a strong ability that should be shared. However with such a strong ability, some people might have decided to keep the power only to themselves.

It was strange but humans were quite jealous beings, if someone was seen as stronger than them they would try to trample them down. People always wondered if there were others in the Cursed faction that knew the shadow ability and it seemed like today they had gotten their answer.

However, with the shadow ability alone, this couldn't be the only reason why they were confident.

Samantha had noticed that Linda didn't use a shadow ability, but instead started to grow in size while being surrounded by shadows. As she began growing slightly larger than the Dalki, her beast armour was being equipped through the shadow equip skill.

Then when she was ready, the others quickly moved out of the way and the Dalki and Linda clashed. Their hands netted closely together, pushing against one another hoping for one to give in.

For the second time today, Samantha had seen another human match a Dalki in terms of strength.

'Do the Cursed faction have a lot better beast gear than we thought?' She wondered, and she soon started to move Fex and herself away from the danger zone.

"Everyone quickly, get to it!" Sam ordered and Wevil's body started to transform into the dangerous bug man he was, turning into his tiger beetle form.

At the same time, Dennis had moved his shadow to form small wings on his back. Sam, using his own shadow, had somehow allowed it to also attach to Dennis, letting his wings grow bigger.

Dennis hopped onto Nate's broad shoulders and soon added his shadow too, making it so Dennis had formed his own pair of shadow wings. Using his strong thighs, Nate crouched down before jumping up and pushing up Dennis into the sky.

He flapped his wings giving him extra air time and speed, and then he stayed still for just a second as he looked down at the Dalki.

"I never thought I would ever be able to fly again after losing my ability, it's not quite the same but this will have to do." Dennis said as he started to descend, spinning his whole body. At the same time he activated his soul weapon, creating a golden aura around him.

Soon, Nate and Wevil launched forward to the Dalki, attacking its legs as hard as they could. Nate had formed a blood punch of destruction and Wevil now transformed into his tiger beetle-like form, he charged forward and with his strong claws smashed into the other leg.

The Dalki tumbled to the ground and Linda at that moment quickly let go of the Dalki's hands to give it an uppercut, hitting its head upwards. At just the right time Dennis used his soul weapon and at high speed he came spinning down, slamming onto the Dalki's head and crushing it within its own body. The sand on top of the hard ground blew out and Samantha had to cover her eyes before she was hit by the aftershock.

'Is he okay?' She thought, for one to land with such force it was almost a suicidal attack.

The wings on his back had spread out onto the ground creating a soft landing for Dennis so he wouldn't be hurt further from the initial impact. The five that had arrived seemed perfectly fine after their turbulent entrance and the Dalki was no longer moving.

'Did they just manage to kill a two spiked Dalki that was on the verge of death?' Samantha thought, as she saw them walking towards her.

She could see that Dennis also seemed uninjured after her initial worry about the impact of his attack. In the last war they had mainly only fought against one spiked Dalki. Two spiked were a very rare occurrence and three spiked were the highest that anyone had ever encountered.

Even back then it would take a great force to kill a Dalki. Some even thought it was just because of the humans' sheer numbers that they were able to somewhat win the first war, but the human race's numbers had greatly dwindled after that.

If the Dalki actually had stronger forces than that then the humans would have no hope, which was why the military were being so strict on gathering tools to defeat the Dalki as well as training the students.

'How powerful is the Cursed faction for only five of them to defeat a Dalki without getting hurt? And if they have the shadow ability, how are they able to do things that would require an ability? It seems like we hardly know anything about them. I don't even recognise any of the people here and the same goes for teacher Fex back there.'

"If you don't mind, I think we'll take him." Sam said with a smile as Linda lifted Fex and hurled him onto her back.

"I think you should head to the others, and it looks like your own commander has arrived." Sam said, pointing to the sky.

Looking up, one of the Bertha ships that was operated by the military could be seen entering the planet's atmosphere with several smaller faster ships around it.

At that moment she realised that the shelter probably wasn't the only place that was attacked, there were the students out on the expedition.

'What if five or more Dalki came to where they were, I have to get in contact with them.'

"You guys, you need to make sure the students are okay, the Cursed faction-" Samantha was trying to explain, but Sam just placed his hand on her worried shoulder.

"Don't worry. The fight is over, we can tell." Sam said, and he wasn't wrong either.

With the connection they each felt with Quinn, they could feel when he was fighting close by, but they could also tell there was something else going on, but what could it be?

Standing out on the sandy desert, Quinn was surrounded by several bodies of Dalki he had defeated, the Boneclaw that had come out to help had done half the job for him and soon disappeared right back to where Quinn was.

When the students and teachers realised there were no more Dalki left, they all started to cheer, roaring with happiness and relief.

But as Quinn stood out ahead of them and looked around, he could see the students and teachers who had been injured and killed. Many lives had been lost in this battle.

'This isn't the victory I wanted.' Quinn thought.

[Quest has been completed]

[50/50 Dalki have been defeated]

[Rewards will now be given]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1023: Sacrifice continues

A few moments before the fight with the Dalki had ended, Quinn had successfully summoned the Boneclaw out. Vincent, who was watching everything in the system, was unsure if even Quinn knew what he was doing or not, as he had just given a command from his darkest will and the Boneclaw had answered coming out to his call.

With the Boneclaw out, it dealt with the Dalki giving orders at the back relatively easily. The Boneclaw had its full strength compared to what it was in the past and it was able to attack the Dalki army from behind, giving less pressure on Quinn.

Still, Quinn was worried about those around that were still getting attacked while fighting the Dalki. He raised his hand and used shadow lock again, protecting a bunch of students, but he had nowhere near enough MC cells to protect them all and the Dalki were taking advantage of these openings. Getting hit each time his focus strayed.

"Quinn, you need to listen to me. You can't save them all, some of them have already died and that's a fact!" Vincent said. "What you need to do now is focus on defeating the Dalki as quickly as possible. This is the best way for you to save the most amount of lives."

Quinn didn't want to admit that he wasn't strong enough to protect everyone, but he knew Vincent was right. He knew a change of strategy was needed.

There were still four Dalki that had surrounded Quinn and he was away from where all the teachers and students were fighting. Quickly, he placed a large shadow dome over the four of them.

Using the shadow hop, Quinn was able to sneak around the dome and hit them with blood crescent kicks and more, even raining down on one of them as he dropped from above blood swipes. Before landing, spinning his body he hit the side of a Dalki's head with his elbow, a fatal blow for the Dalki after all the punishment it had already received.

Throughout the whole fight, Quinn had been pacing himself so he could fight against the fifty Dalki, but now he had another goal - to defeat them as quickly as possible. The Dalki had hard skin, especially where their scales stuck out more such as their forearms, chest, and head. These were the attacking parts of the Dalki and the more critical places that needed more protection.

Firing off a blood bullet from his fingers and hitting the forehead of a Dalki, Quinn realised it wasn't enough to defeat another, but firing off five of them at the same place and then charging in, Quinn was ready with a hammer strike towards the head, weakening the scales and defeating yet another Dalki.

At this point, the other two that remained inside started to punch the walls of shadow around them hoping to get away. Quinn knew this because with each strike his MC points would be depleted and too busy dealing with the Dalki that was nearly defeated, his MC points had finally hit 0. The dome was collapsing but Quinn wasn't relying on just the shadow anymore, he had his Muay Boran skills, and his different stages of Qi with blood skills.

Finally, after defeating the last two Dalki, Quinn stood there with several dead Dalki lying around him and the quest complete sign had popped up on the system, telling him the fight was over.

The rewards started to come in, but Quinn didn't care about that for now. While the students were everywhere celebrating, Quinn was looking at those that were injured and being looked after. He could hear their cries of pain.

Going over to where he could hear a student screaming, several wanted to thank Quinn for what he had done.

"General Hardy, I mean Talen, thank you for saving us."

"You were so strong, I just can't believe we are still alive."

"I want to be like you someday."

Ignoring them all, Quinn eventually managed to reach the student whose mouth was filled with blood, their friend was next to them holding his hand.

"Please, please live!" She shouted.

The boy wasn't dead yet, but he was in a critical state and Quinn went down to his side.

Innu who was also looking for Quinn had rushed over to where he was to see what he was doing, and could see him making a cut on his hand.

'Quinn, what are you doing, think before you act!' Vincent shouted in his mind.

'What do you think I'm doing, I'm saving his life, I'm going to turn him!' Quinn shouted back.

'So you're going to turn everyone who is on the verge of death? Have you taken a look around to see how many people there are? You can't save them all, and how are you going to pick those that deserve to live and those that don't?' Vincent questioned.

'But how, how am I meant to just stay here and do nothing when I know I can save him?' Quinn asked.

'A life of a vampire isn't for everyone, and you can only turn a finite number of people. What happens in the future when you want to turn someone you truly care about, and you can't save them? I know you care for these students a great deal, but in every war you face there will be casualties and if you are going to go against the Dalki in a full out war, they will be forced to fight again and even more people will die.'

While he and Vincent were busy arguing away, the boy had passed, taking his last breath. It was too late for Quinn to do anything.

Innu was actually hoping to come and congratulate, even praise Quinn for what he had done. Being close to someone with that much power would be a good thing, but after seeing the student die and how Quinn and the others were so upset, he realised how selfish he was being.

'How the hell can there be this good of a person in the world?' Innu thought, as he looked at Quinn crying tears over a student that he didn't even know.

However, those tears soon started to turn into anger, as he grabbed the floor and pulled the ground into his hand, turning it into fine dust.

"Eno, if it wasn't for him overriding the system then we could have saved more lives. Did these kids really deserve to go through all that?!"

Getting up off the ground, Quinn started to look around, tossing and turning his head to see if Eno was anywhere near. He then ran through some of the students at a quick speed not holding back and looked out wide, before running through them again and searching in another place.

Quinn was moving so fast that Innu couldn't even keep track of him.

'He can move so fast and he has so much energy. This person, with mind control and more.' Thinking about all the things a single person could do, Innu's body was shaking. He wasn't sure if they should get someone like that on their side, or if knowing there was such a strong person, that it should be something they should get rid of.

Making a note of everything he saw, he was sure to report it back to the Supreme Commander Oscar including the concerns he had.

Eventually, looking out north, Quinn had spotted Eno, or at least the vampire he had talked to before off in the distance.

"Peter, make sure everyone is okay. This might take a while." Quinn said, as he dashed off into the distant sand dunes and made sure not to get too close to Eno this time.

"You don't trust me now?" Eno asked. "Well I don't blame you. It's a good way to live through this world, not trusting anyone. I'm also surprised that you're not attacking me on the spot, or are you afraid, after using that much energy that you might lose?"

Quinn gripped his fist even harder, it was true most of his energy was spent. If he had to have another big fight then he would need to gather more strength, but if that did happen he still had one more move that he could rely on, the shadow overload skill that was still available.

"I think I still have enough to beat you, but that wouldn't answer any of my questions." Quinn replied.

"Very well. You have passed my test for you, and as a reward I think it's time for you and I to speak. Do you have somewhere more private?" Eno asked.

Opening up his hand, Quinn and Eno disappeared into the shadow lock space to have their one on one conversation.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1024: A dangerous man

The large Bertha ship didn't land on the planet as they had expected. Instead, it stayed hovering in the sky like a giant island. However, smaller ships did depart and immediately descended to two locations in particular, the shelter and a short distance away where the fighting had taken place in the desert.

Support had arrived, only it was far too late and all the damage that could be done had already happened as the Dalki had been dealt with. Oscar had personally decided to arrive along with the support team.

It was the first full scale attack from the Dalki since the peace treaty and Oscar was pretty sure that after the investigations of what happened, that an announcement would have to be made to the whole human race - that they were in the middle of a war.

Inside the shelter a few medium sized ships had landed. Deboarding from the ship was Head General Sach and his trusted sergeants that were usually helping him organise his platoons when he was doing school duties.

What was noticeable about them, was that they had no beast weapons on them, but did have high level beast armour. Along with them each ship carried around twenty people and a total of twenty ships had landed in the shelter. More were to be sent from the large Bertha ship, but when they noticed that there was no longer any trouble, the other troops were sent away.

The first team had even carried with them the portable teleporters. They weren't quite sure if they worked but if so, they could get others to escape or bring more support with them. What was interesting was that the teleporters started to work as soon as the Dalki were defeated.

The Head General, Samantha, and the Cursed members were ready to head out of the destroyed shelter, with Linda carrying Fex over her shoulder. That was until suddenly five ships had descended in the area. A male and female sergeant deboarded from one, while the captains and their squads rushed to Head General Samantha's aid.

'That wasn't too slow of a response from the military.' Sam thought. 'But if we didn't arrive and Fex wasn't here, they could have lost a head general today.'

Sam walked forward and the rest followed him, when a female sergeant with an eyepatch covering her right eye stood in front of them with her sword. Her ten men from behind also surrounded them.

"Halt!" She stated. "No one is to leave this area. We are to take you to the emergency centre with the others and shall take your weapons. There you shall give a full report of what happened."

"Is this seriously happening right now?" Wevil said, as he looked at the others who just shrugged their shoulders.

Dennis tried moving forward and ignored them, but soon he found one of the men attempting to stop him. It was a larger man than Dennis, who looked strong and had tried to bully him back, but the second the man's hand touched Dennis' chest, he grabbed it and threw the large man to the floor.

"What are you doing, are you disobeying orders right now!" She shouted as several men were preparing to fight.

"We don't belong to the military. We work 'with' you, not under you." Dennis said.

"He's correct, we are part of the Cursed faction." Sam answered.

"Even so, we have to make a report and learn of what happened here. Surely the Cursed faction aren't so foolish to not even know the basics of war." The sergeant replied.

Sam walked forward, unafraid of the person in front of him, it was the first time he had felt this way. Before becoming a vampire he had felt weak and powerless but something had sparked in him when he looked at the girl.

"Look. I don't know if you know this, but someone very important to us is on this planet and doesn't appear to be in this shelter. Until we know he is okay, we won't listen to anyone's orders. Not even the supreme commander himself." Sam said, as a single eye started to glow red, but before they completely turned, Nate cleared his throat, bringing his friend back to reality.

A shiver had gone completely down the sergeant's spine, but still she wanted to make it clear that nobody could bully her, not when they had important duties to attend to, so she had planned to retaliate.

"Let them go." Samantha said from far away. She had received minor first aid by some healers and many of her injuries had recovered. "They can make a report when they come back. They are free to leave and make sure no one stops them. That's an order." Samantha said.

Hearing this, Sam walked forward and the rest of the group followed as they left the shelter. As quick as they had arrived, they seemed to disappear just as quickly.

"Are you sure that was the right thing to do, Head General?" The sergeant asked.

"Yes." Samantha replied. "I know now what Oscar was talking about when he said we should be doing everything to get them on our side. The Cursed might be what we need if we have even a chance of winning this war." She then looked at the multiple dead two spiked Dalki.

It was clear that the forces they had used in the first war wasn't everything they had, either that or they had evolved and gotten stronger.

Sam and the others had eventually arrived at where the other students and teachers were recuperating. Here several ships from the giant Bertha had landed as well and this was where Oscar had decided to arrive.

The students thought that those from the Cursed were either just travellers or more military personal, but then some of the students had recognised Wevil.

"Hey, isn't he the one that helped us in the beast weapons lesson?" One of them commented.

"Wait, so are those people from the Cursed faction? It would make sense why they are here if their leader is here."

Overhearing what the kids were talking about, Sam had an idea of what might have happened, it looked like Quinn had to reveal himself to the others.

'Those are the guys from the Cursed? They don't look impressive, I don't even recognise any of them.' Innu thought. 'They took over so many big name factions after taking over Daisy and the other beast planets, and they sent these guys to pick up their leader? If it was Owen, a whole platoon of the Graylash' strongest would be sent and they would have made quite the entrance.'

Turning around, Oscar managed to catch his eye on one of the Cursed members and walked over to greet himself while his assistant stood by his side.

"It's great to finally meet you in person after talking over video all this time. You're a lot smaller than I thought." Oscar said, looking down at him.

"Do you know where our leader is?" Sam asked to keep it short, because he was afraid that something else might have been revealed other than Quinn's true title.

"We don't actually know much about that. I think it's best if you talk to your other head general, Peter. He seems to know more and just said that he would return eventually." Oscar replied. "Before you go, I know you're in a rush but I just want you to think about something. You seem like a smart and capable person based on our previous communications. You don't have to answer me now, but why do you think the Dalki attacked this place?"

"I'll be sure to think about it." Sam said as he walked off towards Peter.

Honestly Sam was already thinking about this question himself. He could see in person the amount of Dalki that had attacked. At first he thought that it might have been Eno's doing, but from the information they had learnt from Brock it would make no sense for him to do that.

'Did the Dalki come here because they were after something, or someone? What if they were after Eno, maybe he's been hiding on this planet this whole time and someone finally found him. Why would the Dalki be after him though?'

The second reason Sam could think of was more likely to be the answer, but he was worried if this was the case. Eno's goal was to protect the demon tier beast that was on the Blade island. If he knew the Dalki were going to attack, did he use a plant? Maybe he gave fake information that the demon tier beast was here. It was quite possible he also knew the movements of Quinn. Tying the two things together he used it as a test for him, and a way to throw the Dalki off the real scent. If Quinn had failed, he still would have killed a lot of Dalki and their goal wouldn't have progressed any further.

Looking around, Sam could see and smell how much blood had been spilt from the students. Hundreds of them had been brutally murdered.

'If that's the case, then Eno is a really dangerous man.' Sam thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1025: Three questions

The shadow space was filled with pitch black shadows so that nothing was visible but their own bodies, which would illuminate slightly while they were inside. If one was to walk through the vast space it would feel like they were walking forever with no destination.

From the inside, one could destroy the space but from the outside, it was nearly impossible for others to interact with. Now inside the safe space, Quinn and Eno were standing opposite each other.

A lot of pent up frustration was already aimed at Eno before what had just happened, but now even more anger was pointed towards this mysterious person. What Quinn needed more than anything however, was not revenge but answers.

"Richard Eno probably doesn't know about me putting myself into the system, even though it does seem quite likely that he was the one that helped me create it." Vincent said. "So I think it's best if we keep it a secret."

Still, Vincent was unsure about this. It seemed like Eno had installed a type of backdoor without him even realising it, allowing him to do things like he had done before. The worrying thing was to what extent could he control Quinn's system.

Could he make it so the bonus stats Quinn received from blood were worthless, or was his control only limited to system only related skills that Eno could stop? Because of this uncertainty, Vincent wanted Quinn to be more on the cautious side.

"Vincent, thanks for the words of advice. You have always been a great help." Quinn replied.

"Hey, even though he is related to me, you are as well. This is one crazy family, and he's the start of it." Said Vincent.

"I know you must have a lot of questions and since you have successfully passed my test, as a reward I will be happy to answer three questions on your mind, and I will answer them fully for you." Eno said. "You might think you have me trapped in this place, that you could fight me and force me to tell you more, but this is not my real body. At any point in time I can leave this place whenever I wish."

Quinn never thought Eno would be straightforward, he never had been, but he also could have left during the battle with the Dalki. It was clear that Eno stayed because he too wanted to talk to Quinn and had questions of his own for him.

"Why only three questions?" Quinn asked.

Hearing this, Vincent wanted to go out of the system and start shaking the boy, but all he could do was shake his head.

"I haven't had enough time to evaluate what you have built up." Eno answered. "You are a person that was never originally in my plans. I had an inkling about what Vincent was planning to do when he had made his request to help him, but I had no ulterior motives when helping him.

"I helped because I sympathized with Vincent's situation a lot and I thought it made sense to help out in this way. Also it was an...experiment. How strong would a vampire with a system get? Anyway I'm derailing from the original question now. But it is related. At the moment, I don't know how strong you or your faction is, nor how strong you can get.

"I believe you not knowing everything and trying to find out the answers yourself has made you even stronger."

Eno then lifted his hand and placed one of his three fingers down. It was at that moment that Quinn realised his general question had been counted as one of his three permitted questions. He thought he had shot himself in the foot, still Eno was giving a lot of information in his answers at least.

The problem is, did Quinn believe him?

With only two questions left, Quinn was really limited to what he wanted to ask. He wanted to know why Eno had made it so he couldn't summon or call the others for help, but that would have been a waste of a question.

"What is your reason for doing all this, what's your goal, what do you get out of this?" Quinn asked.

"A good question." Eno smiled. "It's broad but I'll give you an answer. To put it simply - I care about the humans, maybe even more than Vincent did. During my time as king, the vampire race was doing well, but how could I confirm that would be the case once I slept? Could I go peacefully knowing there was a chance all the hard work I did would have gone to waste? Absolutely not.

"It looks like there are some vampires who are doing everything in their power to crush everything I have built up, and there's a chance it could still fall. As for what I'm doing right now, my goal is the same as the humans, to get rid of the Dalki.

"Right now, that is an impossible task for humans to do without a bit of help, and this is where I come in. If you don't believe me, you don't have to. But I have always been helping them even during the last war and I will continue to help them. The Dalki are stronger than anyone knows, even the vampires should consider them as a threat with the way they are at the moment." Eno answered.

Placing another finger down again, Quinn thought he was pretty serious about only answering three questions which was now making him a little nervous about what

to ask. Based on how elusive Eno had been so far as well, he was most likely telling the truth about not being here in person.

'What do I ask about, the system? About Jim and the Dalki? The Green family? What he plans to do now?' There were just too many questions on Quinn's mind and it was driving him a little crazy.

Until he thought of one thing. What Quinn needed to figure out more than anything was what type of person Eno was and whether he could just trust what he was doing. If he was against the Dalki, at least for now the two of them were possibly on the same side.

"Why....Why did you lie to Arthur?" Quinn asked.

When asking this question, Eno's face changed a little.

"I'm afraid you're going to have to be a little clearer on that one, what do you exactly mean? Why did I give him the Shadow ability, why I chose to make him a punisher? Remember although I have an idea of your movements, even I don't know exactly what you have done." Eno replied.

"Why did you frame the original First family leader for killing Arthur's men? Do you know how much that must have hurt? Do you know he's even looking for you right now?" Quinn asked.

For the first time when answering a question, Eno was quiet for a moment beforehand.

"So you managed to learn the truth somehow. I don't know how you got this information, but it seems like Arthur now knows as well." Eno said, sounding remorseful about it.

"Remember what I said before, I would do anything to protect the humans. Now let me make this clear, Quinn. I will do anything to protect the human race. When you have lived as long as me, you realise that individual lives in the total scale of things don't matter.

"The First family leader always wanted to rule over the humans. I saw the opportunity to get rid of someone who would constantly be trouble, and the best way to do it while restraining the vampires by giving Arthur his shadow power.

"Perhaps you are still young and haven't lived long enough to understand what I mean, but you now control a force and even in the small fight you just had then I'm sure you understood. I saw what you attempted to do, so let me ask you. Why didn't you save that boy's life when you could have?

"Quinn, don't you hate the system that values strength over everything? Were you worried that in the future if you needed to turn a friend that you wouldn't be able

to? In a way, now those that have a closer relation to you are allowed to be saved, while those that don't can't.

"Does that mean that the boy's death was only because you didn't care about him?" Vincent asked.

Hearing this, the image of the student that was about to die appeared in his head again, and Quinn was feeling slightly sick.

"Quinn, don't listen to him. There were more reasons than that as to why you didn't save him and remember, we couldn't have been able to save them all. You weren't controlling the Dalki, you didn't tell them to attack. It's not your fault."

"I know his death is on my hands," Quinn said, "and I've accepted that. But can you say the same? You say you care for humans, but what about the vampires? I'm sure there are some vampires you care for. Otherwise you would have just attempted to massacre the vampires to extinction. But that was never an option for you, was it? You picked Arthur to restrain the vampires, to stop them from attacking the humans, but now that's pretty useless right? I don't know what happened, but now Arthur doesn't want to restrain them - he wants to kill them all and that's all your fault. You made Arthur into what he has become."

"What do you mean?" Eno asked.

"I guess you really don't know everything. Did you think I learnt this shadow ability from Arthur? No, he beat me near to death and he left me with one last message, that he was coming for all the vampires."

Eno's eyes widened as it was made clear. This was something Eno had no idea was happening, that Arthur had joined the Dalki's side. Perhaps this information had just thrown a giant spanner in all of Eno's plans.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1026: A condition

Outside on the field after getting their reports from the students, they were the first ones that had been sent back to the school base located on Earth. Their treatment wouldn't stop there.

They knew there was more work that needed to be done, not just treating physical injuries but it was important for the students to recover mentally as well. Seeing your friends and fellow pupils die in front of your eyes wasn't something every single person could cope with in the same way.

Oscar had remained out on the field with a few other soldiers who were taking the Dalki bodies in for research. His reasons for staying were the same for the Cursed faction members who continued to stand in the heat.

\*Ding

A ping came in on Jane's tablet, Oscar's assistant who was standing right next to him.

"The reports have come in from the Shelter and Head General Samantha, would you like to read them?" Jane asked, since Oscar for once was seemingly doing nothing.

Whenever she saw him like this, she would remind him that there was always work to be done around the place.

After giving it a detailed read, Oscar was quite surprised about what the reports said.

'In the report, Samantha makes note of the teacher Fex using string abilities and a strange red aura as well. The aura that is described is almost exactly the same as what Innu described, and the same as what I saw Quinn do previously.'

'Also, it states that there were other shadow users in the Cursed faction. This red aura that keeps getting mentioned, it seems to be quite powerful. It seems like Quinn isn't just hiding one or two things but is holding more cards than he has let on. This could be a problem.' Oscar thought.

The reaction that Quinn was seeing after what he had said was not what he had expected. Throughout the whole conversation, he was the one on the back foot and Eno was the calm, all knowing one. However, now it seemed like he didn't know every single little thing that was going on in the world.

For a brief second, and it was only once, his heart beat had beaten out of sync from the regular pattern it had before.

'I realise now, in my head I was building up Richard Eno to be this untouchable God pulling the strings on everything that was happening, but now I see that's not the case at all. He is just another person.' Quinn thought.

After regaining his composure, Eno finally spoke again.

"You have just provided me with additional information that I did not know about before." He admitted. "You seem to have been more valuable than I realised, and now there are questions I even want to ask you. You keep surprising me even after I have raised my expectations. I hope you can continue to do that."

"Because of this, I will grant you to ask one more question." Eno said.

It was already a head scratcher coming up with the last question, perhaps he could ask where Eno really was, but he could always move after that happened. Or he could ask why the Dalki have decided to attack now and here.

Thinking about what to ask, Quinn started to think about the students, and that led him to think about one more person.

'How could I forget? He has waited long enough and has done so much for us.'

"I know what I want to ask. There is a boy with me that you might know, he goes by the name Sil. His situation is a little... complicated." Quinn went on to explain the details of what happened to Sil, not the full story but just enough for him to know what he needed.

"Yes, I actually know a lot about the Blade family." Eno replied. "What did you want to ask, did you want to know if I knew a way to bring back the other two?"

Quinn nodded.

"I do know, but remember I said you could ask three questions, not three favours and this would be a favour if I were to help you with this, wouldn't you agree?" Eno suggested. "If you wish for me to help, then I have a favour I need in return."

Watching carefully, the Cursed members were starting to sweat buckets with the hot sun scorching them. They hadn't moved and just looked out in the desert waiting for Quinn.

"Can't they upgrade these rings a little?" Nate asked, playing with his finger.  
"Maybe make something that can also make the heat not affect us."

"We are all experiencing the same thing, Nate." Sam said. "And you don't hear us complaining. Why don't you just imagine that a girl is waiting on the other side of that dune for you, then you would stand there for hours."

A few seconds later, two black portals opened in the distance and they could see Quinn emerge.

"It looks like Quinn didn't need my help after all." Peter said.

When Quinn moved closer, Oscar was happy to know that he looked to be fine. He actually had a lot he wanted to ask Quinn. That's when he noticed that he wasn't alone and a strange man was standing next to him, it was someone that Oscar didn't recognise.

The others wanted to run up to Quinn, but didn't as Oscar was the one who walked forward first and Sam had stopped the others rushing up, to remind them that Oscar was a world leader. Besides, they were just happy that Quinn seemed to be fine.

"Quinn, a lot has happened here today and it's because of you so many people could have survived." Oscar congratulated him. "We have to have a party in your honour to celebrate."

"A party, for what happened?" Quinn replied back, not really understanding what a party would be intended for. People had died at the end of the day.

"Quinn, I think it would be good to celebrate. There are many things to be pleased about and the people need a break before they hear what is about to be announced." Oscar said. "I think your days of being a teacher will be over, so it would be nice to celebrate your time here. Most importantly, it is to announce the achievement of getting a first victory against the Dalki before war is declared."

Meeting Richard Eno, Quinn had kind of forgotten what had happened since he was blaming Richard for everything. But if it really wasn't Richard's doing moving the Dalki, it meant that this was the first official attack from them.

The whole world would soon find out about this and when war was declared, all factions and groups would be on the move just like before when Quinn was a kid.

"If it's something that has to be done. You can organise it with Sam later." Quinn said.

"Yes, you deserve rest, feel free to go back to the others, but before you go, I don't want to be rude. Do you mind introducing me to the person next to you?"

Quinn looked at Eno and was wondering what to say about him, but he didn't have to, because Eno stood forward himself and gave a bow.

"I believe you may know me, but have never met me. My name is Richard Eno." He said bowing down, and walking off with Quinn.

'Richard Eno!' Oscar shouted in his head, even Jane nearly dropped her tablet. Richard Eno was a man everyone was searching for, just as much as they were

searching for Jack Truedream but no one could find him, and now he was right there in front of him. The question was, why was he with Quinn? Had Richard Eno been with him the whole time? What was their relationship?

All sorts of questions were running through Oscar's mind, but they had already left and the moment was lost to ask.

When Quinn arrived with Richard by his side, everyone stared at him like he was insane. They could tell it was a vampire standing by Quinn's side due to his smell, and they could also guess who he was.

"It's nice to meet you all, I'm sure we will all get to know each other quite well." Richard said.

"Erhh Quinn, what does he mean by that?" Peter asked, unafraid and ignoring Richard.

"This is Richard Eno, and he will be staying with us on the Cursed ship for a while." Quinn said.

On the condition of helping out Sil, Quinn was to grant Eno a favour back, and he had asked to observe the Cursed faction.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1027: Help from an enemy

A special event had been announced the next day. Inviting all the important figures around the world. Giant corporations, manufacturing companies and more. On top of that all the teachers at the school, and high level military personnel had also been invited. Those from the Graylash family weren't left out, including the family head Owen Graylash and finally those from the Cursed faction.

Quinn was ready to head back with the others but when he had received the invitation to the event and told how soon it would be, he decided that he would stay at least till the event was over. Considering how many important people would be there.

An invitation was extended out to those Cursed that had also arrived before the others who were on planet Caladi. The invitation that stuck out the most though, was one that was given to Quinn claiming that they wished for Richard Eno to come along as well.

Before leaving the planet these invites were all given to them in person by Oscar, and now they had arrived back at the large new school and had been given top of the line rooms filled with everything they could ever need to stay in for the time being.

As for Richard, he said he would be coming, but he would be there when he was needed, and seemingly disappeared without saying anything else, he didn't go through a teleporter with them, and just disappeared into the desert, so he was not at the school with them.

Everyone would freshen up, and take a few minutes rest, before Sam requested for all of them to meet up in the same room. Sam wanted to know more about what happened between Quinn and Richard, as well as the fight between the Dalki. It was time they knew more about the bigger picture and all this vampire stuff so they had a better understanding. Through that, they could help out Quinn more.

At the same time, Sam wanted to inform Quinn of everything they had found out from Brock, to do with the Blade island and the role of the Blade family.

Lying in his bed staring at the ceiling Quinn was wondering what was going on.

'Richard Eno, why would you reveal yourself to the world like that, in front of Oscar. Everyone's been looking for you. Are you just trying to cause more trouble for me, or is this one of your tests again.'

Thinking back to Enos' personality, when Quinn had asked for the request to help Sil, he had come back saying that he wanted to stay with the Cursed faction for a while. It had come as a complete surprise to him.

Eno could even tell Quinn was struggling with the request when he had spoken about it.

"Are you worried that I will learn about all of the Cursed faction secrets? It would be the perfect way to destroy a faction from the inside out if you were a thorn in my side, but trust me that is not my goal. If you do think I'm an enemy, have you ever heard of keeping your friends close but your enemies closer?

"Besides there are a lot of people that want you dead Quinn. If they knew everything about you, and how much of a threat you could possibly be they would be hunting you down quite quickly. I don't think anyone ever expected you to get as strong as you have done."

In the end, Quinn had decided to accept Eno's request. He had a feeling the whole time Eno was telling the truth. Even if he was still acting in his strange ways.

'But I remember you did the same thing back then as well, and you even gave the same reason.' Quinn said.

'That was because I thought it would help with your progress, and I was just trying to get you to avoid certain dangers that were out of your power for the time being.'

Vincent argued.

'Do you think that's exactly what Eno is doing then? He states the same thing. Perhaps he thinks at the moment I, or the Cursed faction isn't strong enough. If he told us all the information, or the Humans, they would try acting on it when they couldn't.'

Still it was impossible to figure out without knowing everything. While waiting for the others, and thinking about getting stronger, Quinn did decide to check out one thing, all of the rewards he had received due to completing the quest.

To be honest, Quinn thought the rewards were a bit lacklustre, especially considering what he had done or been through. He could only assume this was because it wasn't a quest given by the system and instead was one given by Eno when his system was overridden which was a scary thought in itself.

[Level 62]

Quinn had levelled up a total of 9 times to reach level 62. It was quite the amount of exp he had gained for defeating the Dalki. He didn't get any instant level ups, so all the level ups he did achieve were from pure exp, but now since he didn't level up every ten levels the exp requirement was just getting bigger and bigger.

At this point, Quinn thought there were only three ways he could now level up. From defeating Demi-god, demon tier beasts or the Dalki. Through defeating beasts and the Dalki he could gain a level up through exp points, or if they awarded him

an instant level up. The other way, would be receiving an instant level up quest from the system itself.

'I wonder what level I need to be to complete that Quest.' Quinn thought.

He was thinking about the quest to find something beyond the level of a vampire lord. Would he reach it at level 70, 80 or maybe even a hundred he didn't know. What he did know was with each level up he could feel his body changing into something.

With the stat points awarded Quinn did his usual. He tried to keep his points as balanced as possible, raising them all up to the nearest ten bracket for the best effect. His current stats were like so.

[Strength: 70]

[Agility: 70]

[Stamina: 69]

[Charm 60]

On Vincent's advice Quinn had stopped increasing the charm stat, since he was told at this level there would just be people he could control and people he couldn't, no matter how high his charm stat was.

The following stat was the interesting one, and it had risen to be his highest.

[Blood control: 164]

Steadily Quinn's blood control would grow as he used his blood abilities more often and it was the same during the Dalki fight. After fighting Cindy and Bryce it had increased a lot and using it inside his body all the time he did the same.

'I wonder how high someone's stat would be if they had the absolute blood book?' Quinn wondered.

'Now that your blood control is high enough, it would be nice if you learn some new blood abilities, apart from the basic ones you have been using this whole time.' Vincent said. 'You've trained in fighting and it has reached a good level. If you're going to be fighting using your full strength a lot more, you will no longer be able to hide the fact that you have blood powers, so I think this should be your next step into growing.'

'I remember you saying this before.' Quinn replied scratching his head, a habit when he was struggling. 'But you also stated you couldn't really teach me anything and that I should find a teacher. I think I'm already past the point where Fex could teach me things, which means the only people that could teach me better skills are

vampire knights or a leader and I don't think any of the leaders are willing to teach me.' Quinn replied.

What Quinn also noticed when checking his system was while not in the vampire world, he didn't gain any reputation points from his family. So they wouldn't continue to build up while he was away and he couldn't just come back and start making all sorts of improvements using the points.

It was one of the reasons; why Quinn was a little upset with the rewards, he was expecting to get a new title like 'Dalki killer' or something that would help him in the future.

'There will be one person next to you that seems willing to help you. I'm sure they could teach you some new blood skills.' Vincent suggested.

'Are you crazy, you can't be suggesting what I think you're suggesting? You want me to ask Richard Eno to teach me?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1028: Quinn missing?

By now, Quinn knew to take Vincent's silence as a yes and honestly, he didn't think it was a bad idea. To ask Eno to teach him a few things. Eno was a vampire who had lived longer than any of the leaders, a vampire original. He was sure to know of all the tricks the vampires had come up with when using their blood powers.

The problem was, the type of person that Eno was.

'I'm sure even if he did want to teach me, because I asked him for a favour he would also want one in return, and based on what the favour is, it might just not be worth it.' Quinn thought. Talking to him for a small amount of time was difficult enough, and he couldn't imagine him as a teacher.

A short while later, the rest of the Cursed faction had finally entered Quinn's room.

"What the...I thought our rooms were amazing but yours is as twice as big as ours and is even fancier. Is that a golden tap?!" Nate said excitedly, as he started to play with the tap expecting something else other than water to come out of it.

"Our rooms are nice as well, but it makes sense for Quinn to be treated this way, now that he is a world leader and all." Sam said.

Quinn didn't actually notice that his room was any different than the others. He had been used to the simple life so much that he was happy with just a bed, kitchen and bathroom, he didn't really need anything else. It was a shame that he didn't really have the time to appreciate the luxuries around him.

"This isn't the room they usually give me, I think they just put me up in here for now." Quinn replied modestly.

"Yes, Oscar told me about that." Sam replied. "It looks like our plan worked somewhat, you made quite an impression on those kids and they have been asking non stop to see you. Not just because of who you are but what you did for them. Oscar couldn't just let you stay in the normal teacher dormitories now everyone knows you're a world leader."

After their little chat, it wasn't long until they got down to business. Inside Quinn's room there was even a dining table that was large enough to seat them all and that's where they decided to sit for the time being. In Quinn's room were Sam, Wevil, Linda, Nate, Dennis, Peter, and Fex. In other words, it was all the leaders of the Cursed faction that were on Earth at this moment and time.

Quinn started to first explain what happened with the Dalki attack and how he had met Eno beforehand. He didn't see any need to talk about the system as that was his own business, but he would speak to Logan about it later on.

He then went on to talk about what was discussed with Eno when he had asked his three questions and also his request with Sil. The others already knew about Arthur and more, as they had to learn about the situation from Leo and the others when living in the vampire world. Now they had a better understanding of what was going on, and from what they knew about Brock, they were able to put the two things together.

"I see, well that might make things a little difficult with your request." Sam said, as he went on to explain what they had also learnt from Brock, that the Dalki were after the second half of the demon tier beast and it was on the Blade island.

"So you think that Eno is going to want to use Sil to copy Mona's powers and help him move the demon tier beast?" Quinn asked.

"Honestly yes, otherwise Brock would have never told us about it. From what you have told me, maybe Eno's condition would be to help you only after Sil has helped him." Sam said.

Quinn nodded as he understood, but Nate looked around the table and he wasn't the only one confused. "Why?" Nate had to ask.

"Because of the way Sil's ability was before." Sam answered. "When Raten and Vorden occupied his head, Sil was only able to use three abilities at one time. To control a demon tier beast is something that not even Mona can do. Once Sil copies the ability he also needs to find other high MC cell users to power up the ability. With three abilities it's a gamble whether or not he can control the demon tier beast.

"However, with six abilities it's probably easily done. If Eno brings back Vorden and Raten, Sil could lose his ability to copy six abilities and will be back to the three, same as before. I'm sure due to Brock having lived on the Blade island he knows about this as well and he will use this information and the fact that Quinn wishes to help him against him."

Now everyone had a better understanding of what was going on but there were still many questions on everyone's mind.

"What happens if Bryce finds out about this?" Fex asked.

This was something that Quinn hadn't really been concerned about. He was treating the vampire world and the current war with the humans and the Dalki as two different matters.

"I don't know." Quinn replied. "The other half of the demon tier beast the Dalki are looking for is in the vampire world, I don't even think Bryce and the others know about it, nor that the Dalki are looking for it, and it's the same for Eno. The only one that I told about Eno still being awake was Arthur, and we know what he plans

to do... At the moment, we can't protect two places at once and for now nothing has happened in the vampire world.

"Although I don't want to say this, if something does happen, we just have to trust that Bryce and the others will be strong enough to fight off whatever attack happens to them." Quinn replied.

Although, even Quinn was concerned with what Arthur would do, did he really wish to kill all the vampires including those from the tenth family. If so, maybe he would have to step in and get involved.

After the meeting was over, the rest decided to head back to their rooms for a good night's sleep, including Quinn. The next day would be the event where everyone from all over was invited. When the morning sun rose, everyone was dressed in their most formal clothing.

They were already woken by the ships that were constantly flying all morning to the new school. Some of them were nervous, others were excited to be meeting people they saw on TV all the time.

When everyone was ready, they met up in the hallway and headed towards Quinn's room. Upon entering however, they found a note that had been left behind.

[I will be a little late to the event. All of you head on without me, there's something I need to do first.]

"If we turn up without him, I'm sure there will be a lot of people who will be asking us questions nonstop." Linda commented.

"Quinn will be there." Sam said. "Besides, I'm sure it's something important to him."

Nearly all of the teachers and important figures were invited to the ceremony and the students' training would be cut short. Today, after the special announcement was to be made, they would be sent off to join the factions of the different squads in the military. Their training would continue there as they prepared for the fight ahead of them.

Right now though, all the students were to stay in their classrooms where a substitute homeroom teacher would be looking after them. Here all the students could watch the event and announcement live on TV. An exclusive crew had been allowed to enter and they would go around talking to guests and interviewing them to broadcast to the entire planet.

All of the students were in their seats, patiently waiting and wondering what the event was, but they weren't in the best of minds. It wasn't too long ago they had just come back from a devastating event.

"Alright, kids the event should start in the next hour or so, you are allowed to eat snacks during the event, but talking has to be kept at a minimum so everyone can hear, okay?" The teacher said.

"Man, I can't believe we didn't even get to say thank you to Quinn." Swin said.

"I know, after everything he has done for us. I still don't understand why a world leader would care about our class or kids like us." Venus replied.

"I think I have an idea." Shiro said. "Quinn said that he was like me. He had no ability and was weak. Remember all of his speeches? I don't think that was an act, but you're right, I wish I could at least say thank you."

Suddenly, the students started to talk loudly amongst each other as they pointed to the front.

"What's he doing here, isn't he meant to be at the event?"

Shadows started to disperse as the shadow cloak skill was cancelled and Quinn had appeared in front of his old homeroom class.

"Before I go off to this god awful event, I just wanted to say one thing. It really was a joy for me to teach all of you. I wish I could have taught you for longer. I promise I will remember these days for the rest of my life and I hope you can remember me as well. I know not all of you will join the Cursed faction, but it would be great to see your faces again." Quinn said.

As quickly as he appeared, he had vanished and was off to the grand event.

"Quinn! Wait, you were the best teacher we had!" Swin shouted.

"Seriously, how can you leave without us saying thank you to you properly!" Venus said.

More of the students shouted as they truly were thankful for Quinn saving their lives that day. Without him they all knew the situation would have been devastating. They would never forget him for as long as they lived.

"Thank you, but this won't be the last time I see you. I will return the favour when I join the Cursed faction." Shiro said.

"I look forward to it." Quinn whispered.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## **Chapter 1029: The most important figures in the world**

Despite what Quinn's note had said, the group decided that it might be best if they tried waiting for him for at least a little while. They headed to the location that they had been instructed to go to and up ahead they could see what could only be described as a grand mansion.

It was only a short way from the new school that had been built but was also out of sight, covered by a few of the main buildings. It made people who worked at the school wonder if it had always been there or if it had been built just for today's event.

Regardless, it had a grand finish. The mansion had two huge spiralling staircases that would lead up to the balcony on the second floor, which was large enough to fit a few hundred people. On the ground floor at the entrance there were pillars laced in a special glowing silver substance and even had the most beautiful of beast crystals wrapped around it.

The dozens of people walking past them were wearing much more glamorous clothing than any of the Cursed group, so much so that some of them started to get cold feet as they felt they didn't belong there.

Leading up to the mansion was a stone walkway and a wide red carpet had been laid out for the attendees. The arriving guests walked in on the red carpet while hundreds of camera and video drones were flying through the air, snapping the event.

The Cursed members knew that no one cared about them coming to this event, it was all about Quinn. They also knew if the Cursed faction turned up without him, there would be questions.

"What a waste of beast crystals." Peter said, looking disgusted at the ostentatious pillars.

"You have a point, we risk our lives fighting beasts so we can create better weapons, not so they can be used as decorations." Wevil added, looking at an obviously rich couple walk past. The woman had a timeless black dress on and on her ears she donned earrings with a beast crystal on each.

In a way, the rarer the beast crystal someone had showed how much power a certain family had. Powerful beast crystals would go for a lot of money mainly so they could be turned into weapons, but if someone could purchase them and use them as a fashion accessory, it would show the world how little an expensive beast crystal meant to them.

"I don't think we can wait much longer. Most people have arrived and if none of us enter, then it might be a problem." Sam suggested and reluctantly they all followed him walking along the red carpet.

While doing so, some of the other guests who were also walking started to stare at them. They could see they were trying to guess who they were, if it was anyone they recognized. However no matter how hard they tried, they couldn't figure it out.

"It must be some of the teachers that worked at the school or a captain of a squad." One of them whispered to another.

"They could be from the Cursed faction, not many people know what they look like." Another replied.

While making their way along the red carpet, they did spot two people they did recognise, Bonny and Void, the two reporters that they had met when facing the demon tier beast.

It was the reason why people were waiting to get inside, Bonny and Void would interview each person as they entered. They were standing just past the red carpet at the entrance of the mansion into the main hall, and quite a lot of figures were nearby grabbing drinks and listening to who was at the event.

When Sam and the others walked through, Bonny recognised them immediately and gave them a smile, before placing a microphone in front of Sam.

"Now we have approaching the door, finally some high ranking members from the Cursed faction. Please could you introduce yourselves to those watching at home and also tell us your role within the Cursed faction." Bonny asked in her best interview voice.

For the first time ever, while Sam stared into the lens of the camera, he froze. It was half because it was unexpected and half because the Cursed faction didn't really give out roles, everyone kind of just did what they wanted. On top of that, there were a lot of ears listening in.

"The leaders of the Cursed faction... where's the leader? I don't see the person named Quinn?"

"He is meant to be here today right?"

"Of course, Owen and Oscar are at this event too. This is meant to be a gathering of the Earth's strongest powers. The Cursed being one of the new powers should have arrived before everyone else to make an impression."

Listening to all these comments was making Sam stumble even more. That's when Linda decided to step in.

"This here is our trusted Vice leader of the Cursed faction. If Quinn isn't present then we follow what he tells us to do. Then we have Peter, who is not only the Head General, but is in charge of our defences on the Cursed ship.

"Wevil and I work together in communications with the other factions. We work closely with Helen from the past Daisy faction who you might have already met before us. We try to make it so if any of the other factions have a problem they can talk to us. Finally, Nate is in charge of our hand to hand combat division. As you can see, we have brought quite a few of our high ranking members here because we understand how important this event is." Linda answered proficiently.

The others were quite surprised that Linda was able to give them all roles so easily, but now that they thought about it, she really did just describe what a lot of them did for the Cursed faction. Although Peter's position was a bit of a stretch, at one point he did protect the ship alone from several attacks.

"That's great to hear. A lot of people don't know about the Cursed faction since they managed to grow so quickly, but Oscar has said that they helped greatly during the demon tier hunting expedition, and Owen has always spoken great things about your leader, Quinn Talen. I have to ask, will we be seeing him tonight? He hasn't made an appearance yet."

Finally, Sam was ready to speak.

"He said he will be here so he will definitely be here. If there is one thing the Cursed faction is good at, it's doing what they say they will do. He just has important matters to attend to." Sam said, while walking off and the others soon followed him.

With seemingly everyone having entered the large hall they could now rest for a little while. The announcement would be made later on and it was time for everyone to mingle and get to know each other, although it was harder for some. Owen stood next to Oscar and there were many that were afraid to even get close to the two of them as they talked.

Meanwhile others were talking while looking their way. Bonny and Voiid continued to go around interviewing others, asking them questions about what accomplishments they had done and more.

When together the group were standing awkwardly to the side of the room. They clearly felt like the odd ones out as everyone seemed to know each other.

As for Nate, he was looking at a certain person in particular. He was looking over in Helen's direction.

"Hey, you know that she likes Quinn, right? I don't want you to cause drama." Sam said as he spotted Nate staring at her.

"No, I'm not looking at her, she brought her two sisters along to this event as well. Is it alright if I go over?" Nate asked.

Sam looked at the time and the mingling session was apparently meant to last for an hour, then Oscar would finally make an announcement and congratulate people, calling them up to the stage that was placed in the room.

After that, there was meant to be an after party where there were no cameras.

"I think it's fine, but just be careful. Bonny and Void might come to interview you at any point and you need to be careful if you answer their questions. Everyone is out to ruin our reputation at the moment. Let's meet back in an hour." Sam suggested, but Nate was already off before Sam had finished speaking.

Peter was fine doing nothing, just leaning up against a pillar looking at everyone. Wevil and Linda were enjoying each other's company. They talked to each other a lot these days, while Sam had plucked up the courage to try and make a few connections.

It was important after all, unless the Cursed faction were planning to take over the world which wasn't Quinn's intention. Sam thought it would be nice to talk to the people they would be working with for the foreseeable future.

At the same time, he would keep an eye out for when Quinn arrived, and when Eno did as well.

This left Fex on his own, who had managed to spot Samantha trying to grab some appetizers from the waiter's walking around, but there were people standing in her way.

A large man, who wasn't paying her any attention had blocked a special seafood dish she was just dying to try. Then suddenly, it started to float in the air, before it landed in her hand.

"Was that what you were trying to get?" Fex asked with a warm smile.

When Samantha turned to see who it was, she was quite startled.

'I knew I might run into him here, but I didn't expect him to come up to me like that.' She thought, as she started to panic.

"Oh thanks, that's exactly what I was looking for." She replied, and was now trying to make a quick exit from the awkward situation, but she could feel Fex's eyes not moving from her.

There was a reason Fex had approached her and when the two made eye contact his eyes started to glow red.

"Do you remember what I asked, I said to make sure you didn't tell anyone about what I did back against the Dalki. Now tell me, did you keep our little secret?" Fex asked.

"Now it's not very nice to speak to a lady like that, is it?" A voice said from behind Samantha.

Seeing the man's red eyes reflect back at Fex, he straight away knew who this was.

"Richard Eno..." Fex replied back.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1030: Close connection

Hearing the voice closely behind, Samantha had no choice but to turn around. For a second, she wanted to thank this person for getting her out of such an awkward situation, but then when she saw who it was, an older looking gentleman with a grey ponytail who was largely smiling back at her, she took a step back and immediately went on guard.

"You, you were the person who attacked us at the shelter!" Samantha said, recognising the man.

"Oh, I thought you didn't like the boy, but when a dangerous situation occurs you go jumping to his side. I see how it is. One should be more honest with their feelings, especially since human lives are so short." Eno said. "Besides, I believe I only attacked the man behind you, I never attacked yourself, and I didn't even get to explain my own position, anyway I guess I'll leave you two for now."

Eno started to walk around the place, and Samantha was getting ready to stop him. He was a member of Pure after all or so Fex claimed, but just as she was about to run, she felt Fex grab her arm.

"What are you doing?"

"Leave him." Fex said. "He was invited here."

At the time, she hadn't really processed what Fex had first said when he had met the man, but now the words became clear, he didn't just say any name. The name that was spoken was the one and only Richard Eno.

"Wait! is it true? He's the great scientist known as Richard Eno, the one everyone has been looking for?" Samantha asked.

Based on how Quinn said Eno had already revealed himself to Oscar, and the fact that he was here, Fex thought it wasn't really a problem telling her the truth.

"He is." He answered.

The fact that he was here, Samantha quickly realised that Oscar must have already known who he was, but the question was, why were the two of them fighting when they first met then, and why did Fex lie. This popped her to think about the question Fex had asked when the two of them just met.

"I'm sorry." Samantha started off. "I know you told me to keep what you said a secret, but I read the reports about your leader Quinn Talen, it says he too used a special Red aura, and one of the men that was presumed dead was actually still alive and had seen everything as well. So I had no choice to tell them about it."

She was still taking in the fact that the Head General Hardy was actually the Cursed faction leader Quinn.

Hearing about this, Fex tutted and kissed his teeth. His plan was to wipe her memory before she could say anything else, but if a report already stated that Quinn had used the red aura, then it didn't seem like it would be something he could avoid.

"About the other thing, I didn't tell anyone about that. I didn't tell anyone about what was in your flask or what you told me to do." Samantha whispered. "You saved my life, so of course I would keep it a secret, and who cares what strange things you do if you are helping save our lives."

Although what Samantha said was true, she actually thought there might be more to it. Fex had healed due to her blood and also was able to use a red aura, the same as their leader Quinn Talen. She was afraid that blood was the answer to how they were able to do these things.

It could have very well been a Cursed faction secret. If she told people this secret she didn't want to end up disappearing in the middle of the night.

'She didn't tell anyone about the blood, maybe it's best if I remove her memories now then.'

"Richard Eno, you have finally arrived!" A loud deep booming voice spoke.

Hearing this, everyone turned their heads at hearing the name for two reasons. The one speaking was Oscar, and his voice tended to carry across the room, the other reason was because of the name that had been mentioned, Richard Eno.

When Fex looked back, he noticed that Samantha had already made a break for it, in the confusion.

'Damn, I guess I should leave it for now, she hasn't told anyone yet, but I can clear up the misunderstanding later.' Fex thought, while he went to where everyone else was standing, for they wanted to listen in on the conversation and have a look at the great Richard Eno.

Richard Eno walked over to where Oscar was, he had formal clothing that matched everyone around them so he didn't look out of place at the party. While everyone else had been afraid to walk up to where Oscar and Owen were, Richard was not as he approached them with ease.

What was surprising was the first ones to show respect was both Owen and Oscar as they both bowed.

"You are a difficult man to find." Owen said, lifting up his fan to cover his face as usual. "You have achieved great things for every family, and it's great to finally

meet you. When Oscar said he had a surprise guest, I never thought it would be yourself."

Not failing to get a scoop, Void and Bonny had quickly stopped interviewing Head general Innu, who was in the middle of bragging about his group's achievements and rushed over to listen in and record the conversation between Eno and the great leaders.

It was the first time that anyone had also got him on video, so it was an opportunity that they couldn't miss.

"If you're not too busy these days, it would be great if we could have a formal meeting at some point. Perhaps you could even stop by some labs of ours." Oscar suggested. "I promise we will do anything to make you feel at home."

Owen started to chuckle and gave a glance at Oscar.

"You should enjoy the event, there is no need to talk about work. I'm sure looking at the military labs might even bore the great Eno. He is a man that loves seeing new discoveries. There are many things the Graylash family have that haven't been shared with everyone yet, that he might prefer to see."

It was as clear as day to everyone there. Even though they might have been playing it off as just simple invitations, they were both trying to win him over by making it so he came over to their side.

"In due time, I think it would be great to see both of those things. Although I'm surprised you don't have more questions for me?" Eno replied.

Hearing this, one pushy girl reporter shouted out from the crowd that had surrounded them all.

"Um, I have some questions for the camera if you don't mind." Bonny said.

"Bonny, Richard Eno is a special guest and I'm sure he has his reasons as to why he has kept himself quiet this whole time, I don't think it-"

"It's okay." Richard replied with a smile. "I'm sure there are questions people want to ask."

By now, all of the Cursed members at the party had gathered and were watching what Eno was doing, unclear of what his aim was.

'Why accept an interview?' Sam thought.

Bonny and Void had come out of the crowd to go closer to the area they were in. When they got closer, Oscar was giving them a stare while Eno was giving a giant

smile. It felt like she was stuck between a devil and an angel, but she had to get an interview with Richard Eno, no matter what the cost.

"You are the Great Richard Eno, who helped the human race figure out how to create beast weapons, and even gave us technology such as teleporters and more. They say you are one of the great heroes of the past war. Which is why a lot of people were wondering, just where were you during the Civil war?" Bonny asked.

It was a direct question that not many thought Eno would be happy answering, but he continued to have a smile on his face making it look like he didn't mind the question at all.

"The world was in a bad place at the time. Although I worked mostly with the military in the past, it was never my intention to be linked with the military. It was just at the time every one of the other strong families worked for the military.

"I didn't want to take sides or ruin my relationship with any of the families. At the same time, you have to remember that I am just a scientist, not a fighter. I was afraid for my own life as well. At times there may be groups who think if we can't have him, then it may be better to kill him. I care about my own life as well, of course."

Bonny had been given an answer far greater than she had anticipated, and the others thought it made sense as well what he was saying. While he was still here, she had to continue to question him.

"Then why the sudden return now? We heard that you had been invited by Head General Oscar. Do you have any plans at the moment?" Bonny asked.

"I'm sure a lot of you will find out that Oscar has a serious message for you all, that will affect everyone else's lives, as for me. I have decided at the moment I will stay with the Cursed faction as I have a close relationship with them." Eno said.

This was the type of thing Sam was worried about. The others were already learning that the Green family, one of the strongest non fighting families, had a close connection with the Cursed faction, and now if Eno was to say this, the others would fear that one of the great powers had too much power compared to the others.

Even in the past, they would stop corporations from having a monopoly over things.

"Close relationship with the Cursed faction," Bonny repeated. "Do you mind elaborating what you mean by that?" She asked.

"Of course," Eno replied. "Quinn Talen is my grandson after all, wouldn't you consider that a close relationship?"

Hearing this, nearly everyone's jaws dropped to the floor. Bonny didn't even know what to say after that. She had prepared many questions in her head for what to ask next but had no clue. At that moment, shadow started to disperse right next to Eno, and Quinn could be seen appearing out of them and held Eno by the shoulder.

"What do you think you're doing?" Quinn said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## **Chapter 1031: Announcement to the whole world**

A few in the room thought they might have misheard what Eno had just said, but when looking at each other and sharing their whispers, they came to the realisation that they hadn't misheard at all. Not only that, but the Cursed faction leader, Quinn Talen had appeared out of nowhere.

Of course, not everyone knew this was Quinn as his new appearance still had yet to be shared around the world, but there were two things that gave it away. The first was the shadows that briefly flickered when he had appeared, and the fact that Quinn was now grabbing onto the shoulder of such a great person, with no trouble at all.

Not anyone could do that.

"Wait, is what he is saying true?"

"The Cursed faction actually have a close relationship with the great scientist Richard Eno. Is this why they were able to progress so fast? Maybe that's how they funded themselves to grow so quickly."

"But, I also heard that the Green family were sponsoring the Cursed factions as well. It seems like those rumours are true as well. I heard the green family recently bought out a manufacturing plant but when I went to do business with them, some of the personnel working there claimed to be from the Cursed faction."

As for Oscar, he was more stunned than the others. Because he knew about Quinn's upbringing.

'Didn't his parents die in the war, he also was meant to have no known relatives. Wait...' Oscar thought as he remembered one crucial detail. 'There was something that was strange about Quinn's upbringing that stood out.'

'It was true that on Quinn's file it claimed him to be an orphan, but he had his own apartment growing up. He was getting financial help from someone during his time at school. They paid for his apartment, food, clothes and everything. Could it be Eno was the person responsible for all those things? And why would Eno need to lie in front of everyone about having a close relationship with Quinn.'

At this moment, even though Quinn's hand was on Enos' shoulder, he didn't really know what to do. On his way here after saying goodbye to his students, as soon as he saw the red carpet and floating drones, he had activated his shadow cloak skill.

Using this skill, Quinn was planning to join the party, then naturally blend in. Cancelling the skill and acting as if he was always at the party. When he heard what Eno had said, his instinct kicked in to reveal himself and stop Eno, but now he was unsure what he wanted to do.

"What's wrong Quinn, did you want to give your grandfather a hug, in front of all these people?" Eno said. "Don't tell me you're shy, that I'm your grandfather, are you?"

'This crazy old man, what the hell am I meant to do with him. He's too unpredictable, and he's just making my life harder!' Quinn thought, but took a few deep breaths and smiled.

"As you can see, with his age this old man has got a few screws missing in his head. I think it might be time for me to put you in a home." Quinn replied.

There were gasps and even more from the crowd as people heard Quinn say this. How could someone say this about the genius of their time? What could this person be thinking? On top of that, based on how Quinn was treating this person, it only made it clear that the two of them must have a close relationship.

Sam off to the side was just shaking his head, if only he could go in there and drag the two of them out, but in a way he was hoping the situation would somehow resolve itself.

"Quinn, don't be embarrassed. You see everyone." Eno spoke facing the crowd. "We didn't want to make our relationship clear for a simple reason. We didn't know we were relatives for a while. In fact, Quinn had achieved everything he had built up with the Cursed faction even before we knew of our relationship."

"He was afraid you see, afraid that if people did find out, that they would assume I was the one sponsoring and helping him out this whole time, but that's not true at all. Anyway, let's all continue to enjoy this party." Eno said, lifting up a glass that seemingly appeared in his hand like a magic trick.

Lifting it up, everyone else in the room lifted their glasses as well, and as they took a drink. He gave a quick wink to Quinn.

Seeing this, Quinn really didn't know what Enos' game was nor what he was planning. He decided maybe it was best for him to leave him alone and went ahead to join Sam.

'Didn't help him get the position to where he is now? Who is he kidding?' Innu thought. 'Obviously even if Quinn didn't know about it. Richard Eno being who he was pulled the strings for him, now I understand why Oscar let him become one of the world leaders so easily.'

"Are you still thinking like that?" Head General Sach said, as if he could read Innu's thoughts. "Remember what he did out on the field, how he saved your lives. He is strong, and even with the great scientist Richard Enos' help, I don't think everyone could reach the position that he has done. You have to give the young boy some credit."

Bonny and Void wanted to go ahead and interview Quinn next, but unfortunately they had run out of time, as Oscar had climbed up the stairs, and invited Quinn, along with Owen with him. The stairs led to a podium that was inside the grand room.

Floating drones were hovering in the air capturing everything and standing in the centre was Oscar with a serious face, and Owen and Quinn on the either side.

"I hope everyone has enjoyed the celebration today, and I hope the whole world is celebrating with us, because today there is an announcement that is to be made to the whole world. After I inform everyone of what has happened, and what will happen, I want you to continue to party until the night is over." Oscar stated, as a drone moved and zoomed into his face.

"I'm sure many of you at home will already know what has happened. As your children have called you soon to let you know of the tales, and some of you had been informed with bad news.

However, this day was always coming and in my eyes it should be celebrated as a victory."

Behind Oscar, a display started to appear showing a map of planet Caladi.

"A few days ago, the students were on their first hunting expedition on planet Caladi. This is when an invasion of fifty Dalki had come to attack them."

The simulation showed the black pods hitting the planet from out of space and made them realise it was quite real.

Those below that were smiling just seconds ago, stopped drinking their drinks and were listening intently. Not everyone had children, or children who were going through military training so this was new news to them.

"Fifty Dalki, it was the first time a force had been sent out to attack us. Of course there have been scuffles when fortresses have been found on Beast planets before. But ever since the treaty this is the first time that a force has been sent out to a beast planet that is clearly owned by us.

"What was worse, no teleporters and communication devices were responding, so the students were left stranded without help other than their teachers there for support."

The others thought rather than a story about a great victory, it was a horror story. They couldn't imagine themselves being in that situation nor what they would do.

"Now how is this a victory, you might ask, because we managed to defeat the force of 50 dalki, with a little over a hundred casualties. Their names will never be

forgotten, and have been engraved in the school walls. The teachers and the students, and their families will be looked after."

The chatter in the room started once again, as they came to the realisation of how impressive the victory was. Fifty Dalki, yet only a hundred or so students had died. How was that possible in the situation they were in.

"There is one person we must thank more than any other, and that is Head general Quinn Talen, the leader of the Cursed faction." Oscar announced pointing towards Quinn, as military personnel came up and placed a medal over his head.

On the Cursed ship itself, nearly every room was watching the broadcast and as soon as they heard his name, they were cheering for their leader. It was the same for those on the planets that the Cursed faction owned.

They knew how well they were treated and it was all thanks to this person.

Lastly, the students in Quinn's class couldn't help but shout at the top of their lungs at the screen, even the substitute teacher was blown away at how passionate the students were.

"A lot of you may not know this, but some of you at home do. Quinn Talen was a teacher at our school, and I am thankful that he was there at the time. Without him, there would have been many more casualties. Alone he managed to defeat over half of the oncoming force, and I know he did everything in his power to protect the students."

No matter what thoughts people had against the Cursed faction in that room at the time. They couldn't help but congratulate this person who was practically a stranger to them. They all started to clap and looked up to the young boy. His achievement was not something many could have done.

"Today is a celebration for the human race, for we have achieved victory over the first Dalki attack, and it might be the last one we have in a while. Because after today, I will declare that the whole world, the whole human race, is now in the middle of the second war with the Dalki race."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1032: Rude or a pass?

The announcement had spread, that war had finally been declared. It was something everyone knew was just over the horizon, it felt so close yet at the same time so far away. Constantly mentions of tensions brewing between the two sides, of small scuffles with the Dalki here and there.

Everyone had been on edge for so long waiting to hear this news, which was why it was such a big deal for everyone, to finally hear these words.

Now that war had been declared, the day after everything would move into motion. The shelters on every one of the planets that was owned by the humans would be on high alert. Drills after drills of what the military and factions were to do if an attack would happen, would now be practised on the daily, rather than once in a while.

And of course, all of them had to be prepared to attack and be on the attack whenever possible. Today was the last day of peace for everyone as they knew it. After dropping quite the bombshell on the whole world, OSCar went on to explain what the military had been doing in the meantime and how they planned to win this war this time.

They had attempted to contact the Dalki like they would with any other attack but there was no response at all. In the meantime, they would be on the defensive while looking for opportunities to attack where and when they could.

What Oscar didn't mention was the main reason why they were on the defensive. This was due to the most recent attack. Where they had found many two spiked Dalki in their forces. Based on this, it was assumed the Dalki hadn't attacked with the full strength of their force during the first war, but Oscar wanted to encourage everyone and would keep these worries to a select few people.

Once the announcement was all done, Quinn was descending from the staircase, it would soon be time for the cameras to be turned off, but before that. Bonny and Void would be able to broadcast peoples reactions to the news that they had just heard, and her aim was to grab the person who was currently everyone's centre of attention.

"Quinn, would you mind me asking a few questions?!" Bonny said, bombarding him at the bottom of the staircase. "The medal around your chest, is the same medals that were given to the people deemed the Heroes of the first war. It's quite the accomplishment to be receiving that right out the bat at the start of the second war.

"Could you please explain to us how you feel about receiving such a thing and how you managed to kill so many of the opposing Dalki." Bonny asked.

Quinn didn't reply straight away, but he had stopped. It was at this point that Bonny was able to see how much he had changed since the last time they had met. For some reason, every time she met him he looked more handsome.

Last time, something had urged her forward to kiss him out of the blue, but this time her heart was beating quite loudly on its own.

After hearing no reply for so long, Bonny decided to order Void to place the camera down, and she approached him gently.

"Quinn are you okay, sorry if I asked something that brought up bad memories. I was just trying to do my job." She said.

Seeing that this might be an intimate moment, Void decided to continue to go off and film Eno, who was also surrounded by several others.

Still not answering now, Bonny was feeling a little bad.

"Let's just forget about the question, okay. I hope we can meet at the after party?"

At that moment, Bonny could see another female approach Quinn and gave him quite the slap on the back.

"Answer the cute girl," Helen said. "Don't worry, this one isn't used to all this stuff, you have to remember it's a lot to deal with someone who is his age."

Bonny had almost forgotten due to Quinn's appearance of a young middle-aged man, he actually was a young adult who had just turned eighteen. Of course, this was a lot for anyone to take in.

"About your question." Quinn finally answered. "How do I feel about it all?" Quinn lifted up the medal around his neck, and pulled on it, breaking the strap. It was gold in colour, a rarer material than ever nowadays. Grasping it in his hand, he started to squeeze on it until the edge began to bend inwards, and finally he crushed the entire medal in his hands.

Some of those that were around seeing him do this, were quite shocked. It was a reward of honour. It was something that everyone in the military greatly respected.

"How many of these do I have to get? How many of these do I have to get to bring all those that died back to life?" Quinn asked, but of course Bonny didn't have an answer.

As things were getting interesting again, Void turned on the camera and zoomed into the crushed medal in his hand, and then back to Quinn's face which was one not quite of anger, but not quite sadness either.

"The only thing I wished I could have done, was saved more lives." Quinn said, leaving the room, and Helen followed after him.

Walking through the crowds of people, they started to make their way to the exit, and soon those in the Cursed faction joined Quinn as well to walk out of the place.

"Hey wait, aren't you going to join the after party?" Bonny shouted.

Sam who was at the very back turned to everyone.

"I am very sorry, but the Cursed faction have to make preparations for the announcement that has just been made. I'm afraid we won't be joining the after party."

Soon after, Eno had joined the back of the group as well.

Those in the room were unable to hear what Quinn had said, and thought the Cursed faction were now quite arrogant. Having thrown their reward given to him like so. Treating it like it was nothing.

However, those that had watched the program and had fought side by side who had lost those close to them understood what Quinn was going through right now. No amount of rewards would change how he was feeling at that moment.

With war happening, Quinn wanted to continue on and improve so the same thing wouldn't happen again.

---

Right after the event, those from the Cursed faction had got onto one of the ships that was docked for them in the new school, and was off, along with Helen and her sisters. They would come along for now and then use the teleporters to go back to their faction and planet making preparations.

What Sam said was true as well, he needed to organise the Cursed faction well. Including the three platoons that would be given to him by Oscar to command. They had quite the large force and that many people in Sam's hands, the pressure was already getting to him a bit.

While flying through space and heading back to the Cursed ship, everyone noticed that Quinn's mood was still quite sombre, and what was worse, Eno wasn't talking to anyone or saying anything to Quinn either.

It was like they had made a pact to not talk to each other.

"So is Eno really his grandpa, or was that just some kind of act?" Helen asked Sam who was at the front of the ship looking out into space.

"I believe, it's quite complicated. I don't even think they know what their relationship is quite like" Sam replied.

It was a long and tiring trip, and while the others were sleeping. Sam decided to watch the recorded event back to see how they were portrayed. Bonny had asked many large figures what they thought of the Cursed faction, and some of them gave quite political answers.

It seemed like what they had done so far was sit on the fence. Neither saying negative nor positive things about them. Whereas before they were outright against the Cursed faction. Still, there were those that still seemed to hate them. People didn't like change, and the Cursed faction was doing a lot of that.

What was most important to Sam though, was how Eno and Quinn had come across when the two of them were arguing, and when Quinn had crunched up the medal. Judging by the comments from the video he was watching, it was mixed.

Some agreed with what Quinn had said, while others just thought he was being ungrateful.

'I'm glad that the microphone was able to pick up what he said, otherwise that would have been another PR disaster.' Sam thought.

Eventually, setting it to autopilot and swapping out with Helen, they were able to get some sleep, and after a short while they had arrived.

The first one to stand by the exit of the ship was Eno, and no one wanted to step in front of him either. It just felt awkward and even more awkward he was already treating like he owned the whole place.

Once the railing had gone down to the floor, Eno took a step on the Cursed ship for the first time.

"Alright, let's go and fix this Sil boy you were talking about earlier. You kept your side of the deal, so I will do mine as well."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## **Chapter 1033: You should be dead**

When getting off the ship, some of the others thought they might have some time to rest. Even though they had slept on the ship it wasn't the same, their bodies were sore and their minds still weren't prepared for what was about to happen.

However, Eno seemed to be ready for action as soon as they had landed.

"Do not worry, you guys can relax for a bit. I can take care of Eno while he is here." Quinn said. "Besides, I'm sure the rest of you have some important things to do, we don't all need to be keeping an eye on him twenty four seven."

Although Quinn said this, a lot of them felt too uncomfortable leaving a stranger in the Cursed ship, especially one that was a vampire. However, whatever Quinn wanted they would do so and Quinn was right, they did all have their own things to do.

Now that war had started, some wanted to contact their parents and get them to move from whatever planet they were on and have them come on board the Cursed ship, where they believed it was the safest place for them to be.

"Correction, you don't need to keep an eye on me at all. I won't cause the crew any trouble, I want everyone to do things how they would do as if I wasn't here. Remember, I am here to observe just how great the Cursed faction is, I don't want you to put on an act." Eno said.

Sam gave Quinn another look, trying to see if he was really okay leaving the two of them alone. Eno hadn't exactly been staying out of trouble, but was being nothing but trouble so far.

"It's easier this way, I wanted to get straight down to business." Quinn replied. "I had my rest at the school, so don't worry too much about me."

Even though Quinn reassured him, Sam was worried. Also what type of rest was Quinn even talking about? While at school he had run into so many troubles and even was in the middle of a fight with deadly Dalki, if anything he should be the most tired out of all of them.

Still, Sam couldn't babysit Eno all the time, and there probably weren't many on the ship that could either, so he thought this might actually be the best course of action if he and Quinn were together all the time.

'I just hope those two don't get into some type of huge argument.' Sam thought, leaving the two on their own.

As the group split off to do their own thing, Quinn went ahead in order to look for Sil, getting straight down to business.

'I wonder how Sil has been since he was sent back?' Quinn thought.

Remembering that he was a bit unstable, but it was the only thing he could do at the time.

However, while on his way to the school centre on the ship, where he thought Sil would be, he could see a small boy running towards them out of breath.

He had his hands on his knees and was gasping for air, it was clear the person didn't do much physical activity often.

"You...You...you're Eno!" The boy said, lifting up his head, and Quinn could see that the person who he thought was a young boy, was actually Logan.

"Ah, I know you. You are the one from the Green family, correct? Brock has been keeping quite the eye on you and your development has been exceptional." Eno said, looking at the boy with a smile, but Logan wasn't smiling back.

Now that Logan was looking up at him, the person he had been looking for this whole time, he had frozen. His mouth was twitching but the questions just wouldn't come out, until, he eventually said a few words.

"My...My parents...did you kill them?" Logan eventually managed to stutter out.

Eno then knelt down to eye level with Logan and looked him in the eye.

"Tell me. If I said I did, what would you do?" Eno taunted him.

Quinn knew all about the situation with Logan's family, their past and their history with vampires. He was now wondering what the hell Eno was doing, saying these words.

What happened next, Quinn didn't expect at all. Logan swung his right hand out, it was his new Dalki hand that was encased in a special metallic material in order to cover it up. However, as soon as Quinn saw the movement from Logan, he didn't know why but he had moved forward.

His body stepped in front of Eno and he had blocked the attack, lifting up both his hands to do so.

'Damn, this hit is heavy, it really does feel like I'm getting hit by the Dalki.' Quinn thought, but had successfully protected Eno.

"What are you doing Quinn, after everything I have done to help you!" Logan shouted. "Why are you getting in my way, didn't you say you would help me?"

Honestly, Quinn didn't even know what he was doing. When he saw Logan attack he felt like he should have stopped it and he did.

"Logan, think about it, this isn't like you at all. You never usually act on emotion but probability, correct? So think about it, what are the chances that Eno is really the one that killed your parents. Can you be hundred percent sure it is him?" He asked.

"I can answer that for you." Eno said, putting his hand on Quinn's shoulder.  
"Thanks for taking that hit for me, it would have left quite the bruise if you didn't. I didn't realise you cared for me that much."

Hearing this, Quinn wished he would have just let Logan punch him up a couple of times before stepping in to stop him.

"I didn't kill your parents. The Green family has been supporting me during my entire lifetime, I'm sure you know. I was the one that had given them their power and in return they were to help me."

Now Logan was sure of it, this man really was Eno because he would be the only one that knew about this fact. Unless of course Quinn had told him, but why would he have done that?

"I am deeply sorry for what happened to them. I should have kept a better eye on them. Both your parents were smart people, I'm sure they knew they were in trouble. I thought if they did they would have tried to seek me out before anything had happened, but for some reason they never did."

Hearing this as an answer, Logan stood there not really knowing how to feel. This was the person his parents had told him to seek if he was in trouble, but now that he had finally met him, the only words he can say is sorry.

'What did I really expect though.' Logan started to think. 'That he would bring them back, was I hoping he was my parents' killer so I could exact revenge?'

It was then that Logan realised he didn't really know the answer he was looking for. This whole time he was just following his parents wishes and directing his anger at Eno, but now, he was completely lost.

'No, I can't just take what this person says as the truth. We know nothing about him. My parents might have trusted him, but they are dead because they did. I will learn and find out everything about him.' Logan thought, as he turned around and could see him walking ahead.

"Logan, if you need to speak anytime, please come and see me." Quinn said. "I am always on your side, and I have never forgotten how much you have helped me. No matter how busy I am, there will always be time for you." Quinn said.

Walking ahead, Logan wiped his face, he wasn't sure if he had shed tears or not, but did so out of reaction.

"Wait Quinn!" Logan shouted. "I'm coming with you, just for the time being. I also need to make sure it's a hundred percent not this man, and if it is, I will be sure to let you know first." Logan said. He would not make the same mistakes his parents did of trusting this man or putting the lives of his friends with this man.

Following behind, the three of them continued to walk forward and finally had entered the classroom where Borden could be seen with the kids, along with another person Quinn didn't quite recognise, but they were busy teaching the kids math.

'Well, I'm glad they found someone normal to teach them.' Quinn thought.

They saw Brock sitting at the back of the class in a seat with his arms folded. He was still wearing his butler uniform, and next to him, sitting at the very back was Sil as well. He was sat upright but his eyes didn't seem to be focusing on the lesson at all, they looked a little hollow.

As soon as Eno entered the room, Brock shot up like a rocket and gave a bow.

"Master, it is a relief to see you in such good health." Brock said.

At the same time, for a second Sil's eyes lit up as he saw Quinn, but soon they seemed to die down again, as if he was lost in his own head. It felt like not even he could cheer up or get through to Sil anymore.

'Did going to school really make him worse? I guess it was going to school and then taking him out of it.'

After exiting out of the room, Borden had decided to come along with them and instead of looking at Sil, Eno's eyes couldn't stop looking at the short man who had hopped on top of Logan's shoulder.

"Hey, why does that man keep staring at me?" Borden whispered inside Logan's ear.

"It's because you." Eno said, not taking his eyes off Broden. "You should be dead." Eno said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1034: The real Eno

Everyone standing in the hallway just outside the kids' classroom had a knee jerk reaction to what Eno had just said. Apart from Brock that was, who kept his hands behind his back and was just keeping an eye on everyone's movements.

"Hey, who the hell is this guy saying I should be dead!" Borden said. He was so angry that he had jumped up and down on Logan's shoulder but was careful not to use his strength.

Honestly, he wasn't the only one upset by the words, Sil had a brief reaction, as did Logan. For Quinn, he was starting to get used to Eno just saying what was on his mind without thinking of the consequences, and he was also starting to think his words weren't so serious, that he was just trying to stir up trouble in the Cursed faction.

If Quinn really thought what he said was true, and Eno was anyone else, Quinn would have reacted as well, and not in a small way either. Borden had been a great help in saving Fex, helping on the Blade island to save Sil, and even himself. Quinn owed Borden a lot and for someone to insult him in front of him, he didn't want to see that.

'Quinn,' Vincent called out to him. 'You might already know this, since you haven't said anything, but I believe that Eno is trying to test the Cursed factions bond. Your group has come together in strange ways and haven't exactly been together long. Maybe he is trying to test your group.'

Even if this was true, Quinn thought this wasn't the right way to be doing it. He did say he would just be observing for a while, he certainly didn't mention anything about causing friction on the ship.

"I'm just saying what will eventually happen to him." Eno replied. "The Dalki race is something that needs to be exterminated at all costs. If you knew what I knew, I'm sure you would all be thinking the same way. Not a single one of them can live, and that includes this one." He pointed at Borden.

"I'm actually surprised you could even have a Dalki on board this ship, how do you trust him?"

After hearing what Vincent had said, Quinn managed to keep himself quite calm. After observing his actions it really did seem like Eno was only doing this to ruffle up some feathers.

'Also, why don't you just tell me what you know about the Dalki then?' Quinn thought.

"Shut up!" Sil shouted. "Who are you? Why would you say that to him. Borden is like a brother to me!" Sil shouted.

It was surprising but it was actually the first time Sil had spoken since he had gotten back to the Cursed ship from the school. Before being sent to school there were two people that Sil could interact with, one of them being Quinn, and the other one being Borden.

"Eno, how can you even question our group when you know nothing about us." Logan said. "You might think you know everything due to watching us from behind the scenes, but not everything can be sorted into groups and piles of information."

It was clear that Logan was still upset with Eno, because he was the type of person to sort those into groups and piles of information.

Sil had stepped forward and looked like he was about to do something he may later regret, but before he could, Brock had stopped him.

"I understand how you feel, young master." Brock said, speaking to Sil. "However, Eno was just pointing out a decision that you might have to come across in the future. Of course you will have to face the decision and he is not forcing this decision upon you, only prompting you to think." Brock tried to explain and be the moderator in the midst of it all.

However, Brock's words seemed to fall upon deaf ears as Sil was still breathing heavily. Seeing this, Quinn thought he was about to act out and who knew what abilities he had and didn't have at this moment.

"Sil, this man might be able to bring back Vorden and Raten." Quinn eventually said.

Out of all the things, this had gotten through to Sil the most. His heavy breathing had stopped, and he looked at the man differently. "Really.." Sil spoke quietly.

Even Borden, who was still angry at Eno, was happy that perhaps the one who he deemed as his real brother, could be returning.

There was silence between the whole group as they moved from the hall to one of the training rooms. There were a few people inside, and when Quinn entered they all congratulated him. Quinn asked them nicely to leave the room for the time being and of course they obliged, heading to one of the other rooms.

The boys were all standing next to Sil, checking if he was okay and he seemed to be, as he continued to stare at Eno.

Eno and Brock appeared to be discussing something together once in the room. Quinn found it strange while looking at the two of them, he couldn't hear what they

were saying. He didn't realise it at first because they were standing quite far away and seemed to be whispering. In the past, even if people were whispering, Quinn's sensitive ears should have been able to pick it up, but he couldn't.

'Is this a type of skill, or something to do with Eno?' Quinn thought.

After their discussion had ended, Eno walked up to the rest of the group along with Brock who was by his side.

"Brock has explained to me and caught me up with what has happened. I already knew of some of your situation but now I understand it a bit more. Still, I'm sure Brock has already explained to your group what we wish Sil to do."

This was what Quinn and the others had expected Eno would do, he needed Sil and his ability to move the demon tier beast and he wouldn't bring back Raten and Vorden until Sil did his task for him.

"Because of this, I want Sil to first agree to help us with our task. I don't want to force the boy and I am a fair person. A favour for a favour." Eno said.

This had come as a surprise, Quinn hadn't expected this but he was a bit annoyed, wasn't this his favour to help Sil? And now he was getting Sil to do another favour for him in return.

Before Quinn could even voice his concern though, Sil had nodded immediately.

"I will go through anything to bring them both back." Sil agreed.

Still, it was unclear if Eno would keep his side of the bargain after Sil had done the favour.

"Now, just be patient. I just need to touch your head for a second." Eno said as he walked forward.

Quinn found this a bit weird, but didn't think much would happen.

'Quinn, I think that's the real Eno that is on board the ship right now.' Vincent suddenly said.

'What do you mean?' Quinn thought.

Due to Eno claiming that the one he was speaking to before in the desert wasn't the real Eno, Quinn assumed this one wasn't the real one either.

'Because right now, by touching Vorden's head he is activating part of his ability.' Vincent replied.

A few seconds later, Eno had let go of Sil's head and had a concerned look on his face.

"Is that it!" Sil said in an excited voice. "Are they back, Vorden, Raten!" He called out, but he couldn't hear or see anything.

"It won't be that easy." Eno replied. "The conditions to bring back the other two are a little difficult." Eno explained. "I will present to you two options in order to bring your friends back and it is up to you which one you choose.

"Many of you may not know this but I will let you in on a little secret. The abilities that humans have learnt, nearly all of them in our current world have descended from one thing, a giant stone tablet. I have investigated this tablet and I am not sure how it really works but, when it finds someone suitable and deems it necessary, the ability will be passed on to a human.

"When one dies with their ability, it returns back to the tablet and will only leave once again once it finds someone suitable. If the tablet still has not found someone then the ability can very well still be in the tablet. If so, then I will be able to give it to someone with no ability.

"For this to work though, you would first need to go to the tablet, and secondly find someone with no ability. I did the same thing for the Green family long ago, so I have done this before." Eno stated.

Quinn knew what the problem was straight away, the tablet was on the Blade island and they didn't know if the Hilston family still occupied it, or if the dragon was there. While there, it was most likely Eno would want them to move the dragon first.

"I'm sure you already know the problems with this by the look on your faces, and now I actually plan to bring back the other two before asking Sil to complete my request. After all, what if I was to fail?" Eno stated.

'Did he just say to bring them back, before Sil was to help him with his request?'

"Wait, Eno." Quinn said. "I'm sure you know this and I don't want to stop you from helping Sil, but I also don't want you to bite us back later. When Raten and Vorden were in Sil's mind, he was only able to copy three abilities at one time, it wouldn't be enough to move the demon tier beast."

Sil thought about this as well and so did the others, which was why they thought that Sil would have to complete his favour first.

"Who said I would be bringing them back into Sil's mind?" Eno answered.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1035: Another option

If Eno was planning to bring back Vorden and Raten and not by bringing them back into Sil's mind, Quinn and the others were starting to think of what Eno was exactly planning to do. That's when it hit them, that maybe Eno already had something in mind.

After talking to Fex, and learning of what happened to Innu before Quinn had arrived to the others on the desert that day. Quinn realised that just as Eno had said, three people that looked identical to him had appeared in front of each of them.

At first, Quinn thought maybe they were using an ability of some sort, but it seemed to be something beyond that,

'Does that mean that Eno is able to create clones, or something similar with his ability?' Quinn thought. It certainly wasn't out of the realm of possibility. After all, Borden was created and he was nearly an identical copy of Vorden before he transformed into a Dalki and used up all his power.

Also, the Dalki were created trying to find a replacement for their blood source problem, and sometime later, the vampires eventually managed to create a blood replacement. However, Quinn never found out how that replacement was made exactly. When using his inspect skill though, a lot of the blood was sourced from the same people.

Thinking about his led him to another thought. At one point and time, when Quinn was trapped in one of the labs that he assumed was owned by Eno, there were human body parts that were used to feed the Wendigos. When they went up through the caves above they had discovered a large glass container which contained countless human bodies, yet all of them looked similar to each other.

'Were they all clones as well?!" Quinn thought. 'Is that how the vampires are able to get a constant blood supply without having to rely on the humans anymore?"

This in itself was a scary thought, and Quinn thought surely there had to be a downside to using clones that Eno was perhaps not telling him. Just like there was a problem with the Dalki.

"Are you talking about, creating bodies for the two of them?" Logan was the one who had eventually asked, thinking along the same lines as Quinn.

"That is certainly one option, but if you were to obtain the ability you wouldn't even need to do that, you would just need to have two empty bodies prepared, or they don't even have to be empty. Just move their minds to somewhere else and place the others in the other bodies instead. Although, bare in mind that the new bodies cells would be different. So if you wanted them to have the same ability as

before, they would have to have no abilities or have already learnt the abilities," Eno explained.

Quinn didn't know why, but going down this path seemed like quite the dark one, and it just sounded like there were too many risks on top of risks. Esseintley in the first place they would need at least three people, possibly five. One person who would obtain the mind swapping ability, and then two bodies to move Vorden and Raten into, while moving the other minds out of that body.

The whole thing just seemed beyond what Quinn was happy to deal with, so perhaps creating the clones would be the best thing.

"Wait a second." Quinn said, "Earlier you said that there were two options, what about the second option?"

"The first option doesn't require me to use much of my ability which is why for me it's less trouble, but the second option isn't easy either. There is actually no need to obtain the ability at all. I am able to use my own ability to transfer both Vorden and Raten out of Sil, if they are still there."

"However, with my ability there is a cost, and that cost is either two Demi god tier beast crystals, or another Demon tier beast crystal." Said Eno.

"But even if we don't have someone learn the ability, does that mean you would have to prepare two bodies for them to be transferred into?" Quinn asked.

"Correct." Eno replied.

After learning of the two options, if they wanted to attempt to solve the problem quickly the first option was a good one for them. However, they needed someone to learn the ability from the tablet, but who would be loyal enough to help them and had no ability,

It was Rare for adults apart from those from Pure to not have an ability. Then a certain student came into his mind.

'Shiro...but could I really do that to him? I could always give him the option.'

Even if Shiro accepted Quinn's request, he didn't want to force it upon him on top of that there was still the problem of where the tablet was. It was on the Balde island, and there was a huge risk the Balde's were still there.

Although they would rely less on Eno with this option, it was just too risky. As for the second option, even with all the planets they owned they had yet to come across these sorts of beasts, and Quinn still remembered how much effort it took to take down a single demon tier beast.

"Let me think about this for a little while." Quinn said.

It was getting late, and it was a decision that needed to be slept on.

"If you speak to Sam, I'm sure he will have a room and place for you to rest for the night." Quinn said, and both Brock and Eno were ready to head off, but before they left the room, Eno turned around to say one last thing.

"Quinn, I am a man of my word, I understand that your favour has turned into Sil's favour, so feel free to ask me for anything that you might need." Eno said leaving the room.

"Quinn, do you really trust him? I know you were thinking what I was thinking." Logan said. "It seems like Eno had the ability to also create clones. We're not sure how this works, and I'm also not sure if Eno plans to include this in his deal to help Sil, or if we requested bodies from him he would ask for something else."

"I'll take a look into what I can do in terms of that situation as well, but it might be best that I head back to the vampire world to find out more at the lab." Logan suggested.

"No, I don't want you to go to the vampire world for the time being. Not without me anyway." Quinn replied. "Not when the Dalki war has already started, I'm sure that Arthur is planning to make his move and I don't want anyone to be caught up in the middle of that."

"I think for now, we shouldn't worry about the 'bodies that are required'. I'll ask Sam to see if he can send a scout team to the Blade island, to see if the Blades are still there. For now, I think we should get everything that is needed to set up the transfer then we can decide."

"Besides, even if we don't use the Demon tier or Demi-god beast crystals we can still use them for other things, so it won't be a waste of our time, and we will need to check out the Blade island anyway, if Eno is planning to use Sil to move the beast."

Looking at Sil, Quinn could tell he was frustrated. An impatient person that just wanted to bring RAten and Vorden back. He was quite surprised that Sil didn't say anything during the whole conversation, but Quinn knew what Sil was like.

If it was for Vorden and Raten he would do anything, which meant he didn't care about the lives, or bodies of the people Raten and Vorden would live in if he got to see them again.

"Sil, you just need to wait a little longer. We need to make sure that Vorden and Raten can return safe and sound." Said Quinn. "If we get the ability, then we don't have to worry too much, we can always keep moving them...."

When Quinn said this, something struck him, a third option that Eno didn't think was possible, something that didn't require extra bodies and would keep Sil's powers.

'But will it work? I just hope Vorden and Raten don't mind what I'm thinking of doing.' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## **Chapter 1036: Making a deal everywhere**

Quinn wanted to act without Eno knowing what he had planned for now, that way he couldn't play any of his games on him. At the same time, choosing either of the options relied on Eno quite a bit which Quinn didn't like.

Still, for his new plan to work there were many moving parts he would have to do himself, and he also needed to check if it was possible. He and Logan would have to work closely on this one, while making it seem like Quinn had chosen one of the options for now.

As for Eno, he had been left to his own devices, allowing him to travel around the Cursed ship along with his 'friend' Brock. Although the relationship between the two still wasn't clear. The Cursed leaders apart from Megan who was still in the dark about the others' secrets, were to keep an eye on Eno when they could.

Although, ever since the broadcast, everywhere Eno went it was hard to not know where he was, for even the Cursed faction members wanted to talk to him and knew who he was.

When talking to the regular members on board, he had asked simple questions about the Cursed faction, such as when did they join and what do they think of the group. It didn't seem like he was stirring up trouble like with the main leaders.

After so much observing, they found out that Eno was really doing what he said, just wandering around and observing. Quinn couldn't stay with him forever so It was deemed fine to leave him alone.

Of course, one of the only reasons this was allowed was because of Logan, who had access to the cameras around the Cursed ship, and also had one of his small spiders following Eno at all times, but he wasn't an idiot. He knew most likely Eno and Brock had an idea they were being followed, and could turn off or interfere with his equipment.

Eno was one of the few smart people who could actually go against Logan, but if anything strange did occur, then that would also be a sign and Quinn would be informed straight away.

Currently, Logan while working away on what Quinn had tasked him with, was watching what Eno was doing. The pair of goggles he would usually wear over his eyes while he did work, was showing a video feed that allowed Logan to see everything in the top left hand corner.

At the same time, he could concentrate on doing his work, and through his ability the spider would inform him if it thought it had seen anything suspicious as well, in case there were a few things he had missed.

As for what Eno was doing at this very moment, he had entered a training room that was producing noise even through the soundproof rooms. It was also clear that the other members of the Cursed faction were avoiding the room, so naturally Eno was interested.

When he entered the room along with Brock, the sound of constant clashes could be heard even clearer now, and in the training room, sparks were flying off while two swords were doing battle.

The two that were currently training were both Leo and Erin.

"Did you sense them?" Leo asked, as he continued his strike and it was blocked by Erin.

"Of course!" She shouted back, trying to swing a heavy strike of her own, but she was tired and overextended, allowing her body weight to shift for a brief second. Leo used this to move in and gave Erin a shoulder barge as she came in, knocking her to the ground.

Both of them were completely covered in sweat. For vampires, this was incredibly rare as it took a lot for them, based on how large their stamina was. Even when training, hardly anyone pushed their bodies to this point.

"Let's stop for now." Leo said, it wasn't because their tank was empty, but he just didn't like the fact that the guests were watching their every move, and Leo and Erin had some secrets they didn't want to particularly share with outsiders.

"Oh, you two don't have to stop just because we came in, it was just getting good." Eno said with a smile. As the fight ended as well, Erin's hair started to change back from the black colour going to its original blonde.

This was something that she had eventually learnt to control based on who she was around at the moment. However, when battling using certain strength it would change to black. Eno looked at this and it looked as if he wanted to say something but had decided not to.

"Brock." Leo called out. "Is this the master that you spoke of before?"

"It is." Brock replied.

Leo started to walk up to the two of them, and was cautious while Erin followed from behind.

"Although the two of us have not met, I hope I am not rude by requesting this." Leo bowed. "I was hoping you could help me with some information." Leo asked, looking towards Eno.

"Ah yes, Brock did inform me that someone was quite interested in Pure, I assume that you would be the one, but you must not know me very well and if you don't you will do. I only tell people what I wish, if they are to do me a favour or have something that I want in return. An equivalent exchange.

"Information on the Pure leader's appearance is very valuable information, which means you would owe me quite the big favour." Eno said with a smile. "So I would be happy to tell you, as long as you comply with one of my requests."

When looking at Eno, something was sending goosebumps inside Erin's body. She didn't like this person. She had felt this way when seeing someone else from the vampire world, which was Bryce. Someone who didn't seem like an outright bad person, but it didn't mean they weren't a bad person.

"I'm sorry to hear that, but then I must decline," Leo replied. "If it is information worth warranting a deal over, then perhaps I shouldn't know about it in the first place."

Brock could tell that his master was quite surprised by this person's response. It was clear that Leo was very interested in knowing who the Pure leader was, but then why wouldn't he attempt to make a deal?

"Maybe you can help me with another thing," Leo said. "Perhaps you could inform me and tell me, who do you think is stronger? Surely you must know the Pure leader's strength?"

"I would say I have a pretty good idea, but I do not know your strength so I would be unable to find out that answer." Eno replied.

After that, Leo didn't say anything else, and just decided to walk past Eno with Erin following behind him, leaving the room. For a second, Eno was left there in his own thoughts, thinking about what had just happened.

Later that night, nearly everyone on the cursed ship had fallen asleep. Even Logan, who was a late worker had fallen asleep, but not without ordering his spiders to continue to follow Eno and to see if there was anything strange.

It followed him into his room and followed him everywhere, not noticing anything out of the ordinary, and Eno had gone to sleep.

Meanwhile, in the hallway itself, another figure that looked exactly like Eno was standing outside of a certain door.

'The Green boy is suspicious of me but I don't blame him. He is doing well and this is how he should act. However, he is unaware of what I can do, and that is where he will fail.'

Seemingly entering the room, he was silent, walking towards the bed. The person's blonde hair could be seen, trailing off her bed.

'A Dhampir is no one's friend. It might be better off to kill her now before she causes more trouble for everyone.' Eno thought.

Taking a step forward, his hand was glowing red, and his eyes at the same time, but he stopped. Almost hesitating with what to do.

'Should I really interfere? The Cursed faction has done well because of the group of people Quinn has managed to surround himself with. This may ruin everything.'

Letting the red aura go, Eno turned around, only to have a blade pointed towards his neck, and the one holding the sword was the bald blind man he had seen earlier.

"Maybe we will find out the answer to my question."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1037: Trapped between two

"I have to ask." Eno said. "How did you know I would be here?"

With a blade pointed an inch away from Eno's neck. He seemed pretty calm and it didn't look like he was fazed at all. Judging by his aura, Leo could tell this as well.

"Was that a question?" Leo asked. "I thought you only answered questions if you got something in return. You seem to be quite the composed person but unfortunately for you, I can see more than others ever could with their eyes. For a brief moment, perhaps you didn't react but your aura did when you saw Erin's hair colour change."

"It is my duty to look after those in the Cursed family."

"You have the right attitude to be a vampire knight. If you were a real vampire everyone would be fighting to have you as their knight." Eno said. "It looks like Quinn has found a good one, but my question wasn't directed towards you."

At that moment, shadows started to disperse and another person was seen present in the room, and that was Quinn. He had been in the room from the very beginning and was ready to jump in to save Erin at any moment, but what had surprised him was Leo being there as well.

"Coming from someone who made those comments about Borden, I don't see why you wouldn't feel a similar way about Erin either. Besides, for someone who had put me through a pretty cruel test, do you think I would trust you on the ship so easily?" Quinn said.

It was at that moment that Eno realised that Quinn wasn't as naive as he thought. He had given him an illusion that he was free to do as he wished while continuing to follow him.

"Congratulations, but what will you be doing to me now then, seeing as I attempted to kill one of your precious members? Don't you still need me?" Eno said.

At this point, Quinn was sure that Eno was trying to get him to act out for some reason, and even Eno was wondering why Quinn was so calm even though one of his friends had nearly just been killed.

He looked over at Erin who appeared to be sleeping away, even through all of their talking. She was either quite the deep sleeper, or exhausted.

"What's the point of getting angry at you?" Quinn said. "After all, you're not the real Eno, right?"

Eno's eyes widened.

'How did he know? I'm sure he couldn't tell the difference before. How was he able to catch on so quickly?' Eno thought.

Even Leo wasn't sure how Quinn knew. The aura that Leo was sensing now, and the one from before were identical to the one he had met earlier today. Unless even from back then, it had been the fake Eno as well.

The truth was, Quinn didn't know. The person who had informed him, was Vincent. He was the real person who was able to tell which one was the real Eno and which one was the fake. It was all based on the action he had seen partake with Sil.

Vincent couldn't quite explain it, but what was clear was, the clones didn't have the same ability as Eno. Even if they were vampires, and could use blood skills they didn't have the equivalent exchange ability and this was what tipped Vincent off.

"Well then, I guess it won't be a problem if my blade were to pierce through his neck." Leo said casually.

Hearing Leo say these words, were even frightening Quinn a little. He had never seen him so aggressive, but lately Quinn hadn't even had a chance to catch up with Leo. At the moment, he seemed to be on edge far more than usual.

"Let's see you try!" Eno suddenly said, stepping forward having encased blood around the tip of the blade. Even with Leo pushing his sword forward a stream of blood hardened around it and it was unable to do anything.

The next second, Eno lifted his hand, and controlling the blood around the blade he lifted the sword up and away from him. However, a few seconds later, and using the second stage of Qi, Leo was able to surround his blade and take the blood off to attempt to attack again.

"Interesting, no wonder you are so interested in Pure, you share the same power as them!" Eno said, soon covering both of his fists in spirals of blood.

When Leo went to attack again, the spiral flattened out like a shield blocking the attack, and even with Qi disrupting the flow of blood, the shield would constantly regenerate itself holding the sword in place as it spun around.

With his other hand free, Eno attempted to attack, but soon felt a kick to the back of his leg, causing him to fall to one knee.

"You getting involved in our fight, I thought you were just going to stand there and watch." Eno said, looking at Quinn behind him.

"Leo, don't kill him. Capture the clone and I'm sure we can learn a lot about him." Quinn said.

He didn't know how strong this clone of Eno's was. Perhaps it had equal power to Eno, or a little less, but with the two of them, he was sure they could capture Eno quite successfully.

While down on the ground. Eno attempted to spin around and kick the back of Quinn's leg. But Quinn naturally lifted it up, and when he put his foot down he stomped on Eno's leg. A strike from Leo's sword came from above, and Eno combined both spirals of blood surrounding his hand, to block the attack once again.

Then, after stopping the sword in place, the blood started to move upward, branching off like tree branches and was heading straight for Leo. Quinn was trying to hurry and pushed his shadow over to help Leo, hoping it would get there in time, but it wasn't needed.

As a strange invisible force, soon pushed all of the tree branches of blood back to where it was. Seeing this opportunity, Quinn stomped the back of Eno's legs two more times, and then pulled both of Eno's arms back.

At that moment, abandoning his sword to be held by the blood, Leo rushed to the side and grabbed Eno's head. A strange sudden burst of energy was felt, and soon Eno's eyes were closed as his body went limp.

"What was that?" Quinn asked. "Did you kill him?"

"That, I guess I haven't had time to tell you, but I think I have managed to perfect the third stage of Qi." Leo answered. "Don't worry he is not dead, but why did you want to capture him?"

Quinn suspected that capturing the real Eno would never be as easy, but in truth he actually wanted one of Enos clones. "Let's take him to Logan and have him do a little check up, we just need to find what exactly this, or he, is."

'I would be a little careful Quinn. Remember, the real Eno is still out there, and we don't yet know what these other Eno's are capable of.' Vincent warned. 'They might have some way that they are able to communicate and pass on information to each other. Or perhaps they each have a mind of their own, similar to Borden.'

It wasn't that Logan was prepared for restraining Eno if something was to happen. The way he explained it, was that he just happened to have been working all day today, on special restraints that would be able to hold a vampire leader.

It was based off the black material from the vampire world, and glathrium. They were similar to a pair of cuffs but far thicker and gave no space for movement of one's hands or legs at all. Making so one couldn't build up power to break them.

At the same time, the strongest sedation that Logan had was being pumped into the Eno clone, not that they knew if it worked or not anyway. Besides if that all failed, Leo and Quinn were ready at any time to restrain him once again.

At the moment, a blood sample was being taken and all sorts of body checks were being done on the Eno clone. Hoping to find out if it really was a clone, or something else, and maybe they could help Sil without his help.

Quinn never planned to resort to anything like this, but after what Eno had done he felt like he had every right to do what he was doing at the moment.

The spider that Logan had continued to monitor what they believed was to be the real Eno, who was currently wide awake himself.

'Should I let things just play out as they are going now? So far they are doing expectantly well.' Eno thought. 'Perhaps they deserve a few rewards.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1038: The secrets of a clone

What everyone assumed to be a clone of Eno, was strapped up into a chair with the special restraints on his arms and legs. Logan was quite confident this could hold a vampire but would constantly look back, wondering when he would wake up. Needles had been injected into him for sedation while Logan was running a few tests.

When looking at what was happening to Eno right now, even if it was a clone, Quinn felt a little bad. He somewhat used to imagine this was what his life would be subjected to if they ever found out about his secret.

'You can't feel bad Quinn, remember you would have never done such things if for one, Eno was straight up and honest with you.' Vincent said. 'And two, Eno attempted to attack those in your group first.'

It was true, Eno actions in the end had led Quinn to do this, and in a way it wasn't like they were torturing him. In fact, Logan wasn't doing much to Eno, other than taking a few samples here and there, what was clear to them was that this Eno was a vampire and was treated like one.

Any wounds that would be made on his body would heal at a fast rate, and his cells had a reaction to human blood. After testing for a few hours, it looked like Logan was finally done, but he wasn't jumping for joy or had much of a reaction.

"I guess you didn't find the answer you were looking for?" Said Quinn.

Logan shook his head.

"I can answer a few of the questions we might have had, but I don't think it was what we were looking for Quinn." Logan answered. "It's quite clear that this Eno is a clone. Based on what you have told me. When looking for MC cells there seems to be none. What I'm not sure about is if it's because the body can't produce MC cells or if it's out of choice."

"When trying to reverse the process or create a cloning process similar to this clone, it seems to fail nearly every time. At least when trying to create a clone with another clone. I tried using the techniques I learnt from the vampire lab, the same way I created Borden and the same way I created my Dalki hand. I used my own blood but the cells just deteriorated too fast."

"I assume this was the original problem in the first place when creating a clone, and that's why they needed to mix beast blood strong enough with human blood to sustain the clone. So I'm afraid I can't create a body for Vorden and Raten. Maybe the way Eno does it now is different."

"What if you were to use my blood?" Quinn asked.

Perhaps they couldn't create another human, but what about using vampire blood.

"I already attempted something like that at the vampire lab, where there were samples of vampire blood. It won't work."

"If you were looking to find out anything else from this clone. Whether information is passed through each other or something else, I'm afraid I won't be able to tell just with this equipment."

From their investigation at least they had gotten one answer. That Eno was somehow able to create clones of himself, which meant he probably could do something for Vorden and Raten. Looking at Logan now, he seemed a bit defeated, he didn't turn his head away from the lab screen while talking to Quinn at all.

As if it was annoying him that he couldn't figure out something that someone else could.

'The struggle of geniuses.' Vincent sighed. 'You wouldn't understand Quinn. Would you mind asking Logan if I can take a look at the data?'

When Quinn lived Vincent's life, there were some things he experienced but he didn't understand the way Vincent's mind worked. He was able to see him experience and do things, but it was far too advanced and was just a bunch of numbers and strange letters to Quinn. Which was why he often forgot that Vincent was actually a great mind himself.

"Do you mind if I have a look at what you found out?" Quinn asked. Of course Logan was fine with letting him have a look, but didn't have much hope that Quinn would spot something that he hadn't done.

After reading through everything for a while and letting Vincent look at things, all Quinn kept hearing was a 'Ah I see' or 'that makes sense.' But nothing else, until eventually he explained what he had found out so far.

"It seems like your friend is facing a similar problem that I faced when I was also trying to create a blood substitute. There was a time when I also was trying to clone certain parts of a human but it wouldn't work out, even with my ability it was quite impossible." Vincent explained.

"I think that your friend is missing one key bit of information here. Remember Eno is an original. Vampires may live a long life but they don't live forever, even their cells die, but as for Originals, they can live on."

"Perhaps this is what Jim had thought back then as well. Using an original's cells. Something that wouldn't die would allow a person to create a perfect clone."

While Vincent explained this, Quinn also spoke out loud for Logan to hear as well, and due to the way Quinn was saying these words, Logan knew it wasn't coming from him but from something or someone else. Perhaps his system.

The problem was, they didn't have the real Eno in their possession at the moment to test out that theory.

However, Quinn was thinking about something else. It made sense that the Dalki were a failed experiment, but at the same time somewhat successful, but then how were the vampires able to create a blood substitute then?

This was something even Vincent didn't know the answer to, due to it being after his time.

At that moment, Eno started to wake up, or more so he started to speak.

"Well, did you find everything you wished to find?"

Immediately, Quinn went up to Eno and looked at him. Quite frankly he had enough, he had kept his cool for too long, and didn't want to keep messing around with another trouble.

"Eno enough playing games." Quinn said. "I know you might have been a king in the past. You're some great original vampire that created the tenth family but right now I'm telling you two things. I'm the current leader of the tenth family and I'm the leader of the Cursed faction and everyone on this ship."

"To me you are none of those, and you have been messing with us for far too long."

"Are you saying this to me because you now know I'm the clone?" Eno replied.  
"Don't you want to go and speak to the real Eno?"

"Quite frankly, I don't give a crap." Quinn said. "I know you know everything that the original Eno knows, and I just want you to answer some of my questions. You are on my ship and if you want to stay here you need to start following my orders."

"We have been doing well without you so far, and the Cursed faction can continue, you have been more trouble than good, I'll find my own way to bring back Vorden and Raten. You can't keep using that as blackmail."

The room was silent, with only four of them present and with Eno saying nothing. Quinn got up and gave out a sigh.

"Leo, do whatever you want with him." Quinn said. The next second, Leo drew his blade.

"Okay!" Eno shouted, giving out a big sigh after like it was tiring. "Okay, so that's what you want right, just for me to answer your questions. Then fine, let's talk

about everything. Whatever you want to ask I'll happily answer. I think I have tried to break your bonds for long enough. I never thought humans, vampires, and human turned vampires who barely knew each other would honestly care for each other that much.

"But Quinn let me tell you this to start with. I decided not to kill Erin because you're right, she is part of your group and you have been doing well so far, but do you even know why Dhampirs are so dangerous?" Eno said.

"From what I know, it's just because the vampires are afraid. Afraid that there is a race that is stronger when fighting them, and can stay out in the sun." Quinn replied. "The vampires believe they are the strongest race and would never want something stronger than them to live."

At least, this was partly from Quinn's own views from what he had learnt.

Grand laughter started to come from Eno's chair.

"Is that what you believe, who told you all of this? Although this is somewhat true, that's not the reason at all. You remember when you asked me about protecting vampires and humans? Well, you're right. I do want to protect them both, and I believe that's possible. However, if a Dhampir exists, that will never be possible. Let me tell you the real reason why the vampires are so afraid of the Dhampirs." Eno said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1039: The final deal

Quinn knew that it was important to keep what Erin was a secret, due to it being one of the 'Kill on sight subclasses.' Similar to the blood fairy. However, Quinn thought it made sense since their blood was deadly, and even he and his group were able to benefit from the use of the fairy blood.

As for Erin being a Dhampir, there hadn't been any stand out signs why they were treated in a similar way.

"Say whatever you want, but no matter what, I'm not getting rid of Erin." Quinn said. "She has done nothing wrong."

"I understand that, but you should at least know the time bomb that you are holding onto." Eno replied. "You being a human turned vampire, you will probably understand this more from your perspective. The urge a vampire gets when they smell human blood for the first time. The first time a vampire gets a taste for the blood.

"It's something so powerful that one loses their mind, not knowing what they have done."

Quinn remembered this well, because in the process, he had taken the blood of one of his now closest friends, Layla.

"Now as you said, the Dhampir are a superior race, they don't need blood, and they can live in the sunlight without having to use rings like us, but they don't come without their own faults either.

"I'm sure you've noticed your subclasses evolving in certain ways, and it's the same for a Dhampir. Only, they grow through killing vampires not their blood, but from killing. The lust they feel is the same as a vampire's for blood, but there is a big difference. Vampires don't need to kill humans to satisfy their lust and hunger. So tell me, how would you be able to satisfy her needs?

"If she's already killed a few, then slowly over time that lust will grow stronger, just like a vampire lust for human blood grows over time as they starve for blood."

Now it made sense, why the vampires were afraid of them. According to Eno, their lust was only satisfied by killing vampires. It was like a bloodsucker but one who hunted vampires instead.

"But Erin's never shown any signs of anything like that!" Quinn argued back. "And, if there are vampires that can control their lust for blood, then I'm sure that Erin can do the same."

"You make a good point." Eno replied. "Perhaps there is a way for 'One' to control their lust, but eventually there will be those that can't, and from the looks of it, your vampire knight has already noticed a few things."

Turning to Leo, Quinn was wondering what he was on about. Leo looked as calm as he did before, but that's when Quinn noticed it wasn't his facial expression that changed. It was his heart beat.

Knowing the cat was out of the bag, Leo spoke.

"Erin is learning Quinn." Leo said. "She is learning to control it, and I have promised her if anything happens that is against her own wishes, that I will be the one to stop her. I will make sure she doesn't hurt any of her friends."

Hearing this was not what Quinn was expecting. Even more so, he didn't expect Leo to hide something like this from him. Was it when Erin had done battle in the vampire world? Now that she had killed a vampire, was that lust growing by the day? It was now another problem that he had to deal with, and this time, he didn't have to worry about the humans of the group.

"She will learn to control it Quinn, just as you said, trust her." Leo reassured him.

"I wouldn't see this as a bad thing, if it was me, why not make her stronger? Make her evolve and control her powers just like you did Quinn, and soon you will have someone fit to be by your side equal in strength, or maybe even surpassing the strength of any vampire ever seen."

'Train her?' Quinn thought. How would that even be possible? If she had to kill vampires to evolve? It wasn't like Quinn, who could level up through killing beasts. Thinking about this was annoying him more and he just wanted to move on from the subject.

"Enough!" Quinn shouted. "Now it's time for us to do the questioning. Tell me, why did the Dalki attack Planet Caladi, and why didn't you let me call for help?"

"You haven't guessed that by now?" Eno replied. "I have a network and I have been feeding the information to the Dalki for a while now. There's a reason why they weren't so quick to attack earth after the first war."

"They assumed that the beast was secretly on plant Caladi thanks to me, at the same time I knew that you would be there Quinn. Remember, I created the system with Vincent and the Green family, I knew what it was meant to do. Vincent probably had no idea that I knew who he was at the time, but I knew everything and I chose to help him."

"Through the system, By completing quests it would gradually give you Vincent's vampire strength from the book and increase your own as you learnt yourself what

being a vampire meant. I wanted to put you in a dire situation so you could grow and improve but you impressed me Quinn.

"I underestimated your strength. Either you are a talented boy because of the Eno bloodline that runs through your veins, or the system has somehow become more powerful than I ever predicted."

This was something that Vincent had guessed as well. The system was growing. There were some things that had been set up by the three creators but when Vincent gave his powers to the book along with the system, they were unaware that his soul would be bound to the system. Vincent had a theory that perhaps his own ability was being used by the system which was how it was surpassing everyone's expectations. Rewarding Quinn, like it had its own ability of equivalent exchanges.

Quinn didn't like the answer Eno had given, but it was one he had expected at least. He had already told him how he didn't care for the individual lives of humans.

"Jim, is he the one that created the Dalki, is he still alive and helping them?" Quinn asked.

"I'm suppressed you learnt of that name. It looks like you have been doing your own research together. Yes, in fact I assume that Jim was also the one behind the Green family's death. I don't quite understand his emotions behind helping the Dalki, but I have been in search of him since. At the moment, he is untouchable." Eno replied.

"What do you mean?" Quinn asked.

"Haven't I been saying this the whole time, the Dalki are a dangerous threat, why do you think I keep repeating this fact. Because the simple truth is, if the Dalki right now were to attack the human race you would lose the fight.

"You must know what Dalki blood does to vampires, so it isn't the same for the vampires but even they are blind to their growing strength and their desperate measures. However, if Arthur has joined their side for whatever reason, perhaps it is my own doing, then it means the vampires will definitely lose."

Of course, Arthur was a force equal to a king, and even Quinn knew that Borden was strong against the leaders, even without Arthur he thought the vampires would have a hard time.

"About Sil, you said that you could make two bodies for him, what were you planning to do and how were you planning to do it?" Quinn asked.

"I created the clones using part of my power. There's indeed a way to create human clones at the moment, but there is a catch that I was only going to reveal until later. If I was to create a normal human clone, at most with my abilities subsidising the cloning process, they could live for two years."

When Eno said this, Logan was expecting Quinn to be more angry, didn't this mean they actually couldn't bring Raten and Vorden back. At least not permanently. Yet for some reason Quinn was calm.

'It looks like we are going to have to go with my third plan anyway.' Quinn thought.

"Are there any more questions, what about you Logan? I can talk about the days I knew some of your relatives, although I didn't know your parents well so I guess it would be useless, and as for why Jim killed your parents you would have to ask him that question yourself." Said Eno.

"I do have a question." Logan said. "In the vampire world, we know of Jim's lab but we also found another lab. One where there was a test, a trial almost. One where after completing each quest there would be a special red pill given to each of the participants. The teleporter that you made found on earth sent us to that Lab. I know it's yours and not Jim's. What was that used for?"

Logan had been curious about them ever since, in truth he had found a way to recreate the red pills, but there was a reason he didn't want to distribute them to all those in the Cursed. Something just felt strange about them.

"Ah yes, the blood pills. You see I was testing a certain effect with them, a way to make humans stronger by mixing in parts of vampire cells. The pills worked of course but there was a large problem with them.

"If a vampire was to take the pill, it would have no such effect, but if a human was to take one, it would permanently increase a certain attribute. What I found out later was these pills borrowed from the future. For each pill taken, it would drastically shorten the lifespan of a person. My goal is to make it so humans could survive.

"If a pill like that got out, there would be a war between each other as they overdosed attempting to kill each other."

Finally there was quiet in the room. Quinn had gotten the answers he was looking for, but there were still a couple things that he hadn't learnt about. Eno didn't really know why Arthur was against the vampires, and the strength of the Dalki. There was also what Eno meant when he was referring to his people that he had working for him everywhere, were they more clones? But these were things they could find out with time, as long as the relationship between them grew.

'Are the humans and vampires underestimating the Dlaki, or is Eno overestimating them, and can Arthur be convinced not to kill the vampires. If these things are true, then I still need to get stronger, and quickly. I still need Eno.' Quinn thought.

"I'm going to call in that favour you owe me. For answering everything, you can stay on the ship, but no more trouble Eno. I mean it. You really want to help the humans, and so do I. In theory, we have the same goal. You think I'm not strong

enough to go against the Dalki. Then make me strong enough. Teach me how to use my blood skills.

"And we will have the best chance against the Dalki race. Do we have a deal?" Quinn asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1040: Evolving the blood

Things were getting busier than ever around the Cursed faction. Usually there would be some members that were left to do nothing but look at reports all day, but today many were busy moving back and forth using the teleporters frequently.

However the busiest of them all was without a doubt, Sam. The reason for this was due to the influx of things he needed to deal with immediately after Oscar had declared war.

As soon as this happened, the Cursed faction were given two field armies to deal with consisting of around a hundred thousand troops each. He had to get in contact with all the lieutenants, majors, and colonels so that he could pass down what information they needed to know.

They had now left Earth and were being spread out based on Sam's command to the planets that the Cursed faction owned. The Graylash family had been given the same amount of troops, while the remaining six field armies were kept under Oscar's control.

Organising the troops was harder than Sam first thought. One of the reasons was due to suddenly gaining another commander. The army had never been split up in such a way and when Sam suddenly chuck in an additional position, soon he realised that factions and military were run quite differently.

Fortunately there were people there to help him who were more experienced and he was thankful for this. After several hours of dealing with that, Sam also had to deal with something else. On top of all the work he had so far, he had also been given three corps groups that each consisted of around fifteen thousand soldiers. What's more is that the soldiers in these corps weren't just any soldiers, they were students that had been taken out of school early.

Within that group there were those that had decided to join the Cursed faction. Not knowing their skills too well, it was a tough thing for him to do and there were even some he wanted to bring on board the Cursed ship, and he was also looking for certain individuals.

Finally on top of all this, there were even the many factions and the Cursed group themselves, but at least Helen was mainly looking after this side of operations.

Standing by the command centre, Sam was finally getting some rest in his chair. Although he didn't actually have to physically do much and just sent orders to everyone else, no one really knew how tiring it was to oversee so many people.

"I'm sorry for putting so much on your plate, Sam." Quinn said.

"It looks like you have another job for me?" Sam said with a weary smile.

"Not another job, I'm just checking up on you. I think Paul would be a good person in a time like this to help things along, but I know you're a fast learner." Quinn said. "I know it might not be the right time, but I was just checking up on that other request of mine."

Sam tapped away on the computer in front of him and brought up a holographic report.

"There's been nothing yet, but I'll get someone to come and inform you if we find something. You don't have to come and keep meeting me like this, Quinn. I know you're busy doing your own things. You leave this stuff to me and when the fighting starts, I'll leave that part to you."

This was actually the real reason Quinn had come to meet Sam, to make sure he was okay before what he was about to do. He felt selfish at times like this, and Sam never complained about a single thing, no matter how much work he had to do.

"I'll be doing just that, so you might not see me for a while, but I'll always be able to keep in touch with you." Quinn said before heading out of the room. He walked to a large reinforced door and stopped in front of it.

'There's been a few upgrades to this since the last time I used it, Sam did say there were some complaints from those on the ship.' Quinn thought, entering the code to the door and then entering the room, but when he did he wasn't the only one standing in there.

"I hope you're ready, my teaching methods might not be the most ethical, but I will always guarantee results." Eno said with a smile.

Quinn didn't say anything but stepped into the training room and stood opposite him. After Eno had accepted the deal, his clone was sent away but Quinn also made him comply with one more condition - that none of Eno's clones were allowed to be on the ship either.

Complying, all he asked for was a ship in return, and in total two of them had gone off somewhere, while Brock remained.

"Now, I know you wanted me to teach you more about blood skills, and of course I will happily do that. I see my job as making you the best you can be, the strongest you can be to defeat the Dalki." Eno explained. "However, we will be using the system to our advantage to make you progress faster than ever, tell me, what level are your blood abilities at?" Eno asked.

"Level?" Quinn asked, and pulled up his stats screen. It was strange talking to someone other than Vincent about the system, but it just reminded Quinn there was one more person who knew a lot about the system and probably more than Vincent.

"Why is this important?" Quinn asked.

"Just tell me what your highest level blood skill is and I can explain after." Eno replied.

Opening up his system and selecting the blood skills tab, Quinn could see his six skills present.

[Blood swipe Level 4]

[Blood spray Level 3]

[Blood Crescent kick Level 2]

[Blood wall Level 1]

[Blood bank Level 2]

[Blood bullet Level 1]

Seeing these, Quinn was thinking about when the skills levelled up. Not every skill seemed to be treated as equally, but through repeated use they would eventually level up or even be levelled up through a rare quest reward.

However, something like the blood bank that was used in every fight took longer to level up and then there were skills he hardly used like the blood wall, because he found his shadow was more effective and only used the wall as a replacement at times.

"I guess that would be my blood swipe skill at level 4." Quinn answered.

For the first time, Eno had been given an answer that disappointed him.

"Only level 4?" Eno replied. "And you still managed to kill that many Dalki, that's your highest skill? Well, I guess it only means you have huge potential to grow. Have you ever wondered why the other leaders seem to have more skills than you? Of course, they spent hundreds of years learning certain blood skills but we don't have that much time. Now that the system knows you're a vampire lord it should have at least given you the same skills."

"Well the answer is quite simple, the system max level for each skill is level five, however skills can evolve and turn into something else. For example, the blood cannon skill the leaders know is just another version of the blood bullet and so on."

"As for Qi and the shadow fighting techniques, you have learnt a lot in a short amount of time. Because of all these things you have tried to learn, you were unable to specialise in the blood skills like the system originally intended."

"So we need to learn these skills quickly, we need to get your skills to level five as soon as possible. Whenever we train together, I want you to only use the blood skills. Think back to all the fights you had in the vampire world, I want you to fight like a vampire." Eno said, as his eyes started to glow red, and the red hardened blood started to cover his arms, spiralling above his clothes he wore.

The pattern almost looked like he had moving flames running up his arms. Eno came charging in at the speed of the other vampire leaders and threw out a fist. Seeing this, almost on instinct Quinn wanted to activate the shadow, but remembered what Eno had just said.

[Blood wall] Quinn activated his skill, putting in ten points of his HP, but as the fist hit the wall it smashed through it in seconds. Quinn was ready to dodge the fist for he too had speed at the same level of the leaders and thought he would at least be able to avoid this. Blood started spilling out from his hardened arms and latched onto Quinn's shoulder like a sticky glue substance, he attempted to pull away but by then a fist was planted in his face and his body was thrown into the ground.

"This will be the second part of your lesson, learning how to control the blood. Remember, if you can't beat me by only using your blood skills, then you have no hope of saving the humans or the vampires."

Feeling the punch still ringing in his head and thinking about how Eno had only fought him for a few seconds, a few thoughts went through Quinn's mind.

'Richard Eno seems stronger than any of the other vampire leaders I have faced before, and he's saying even he can't stop the Dalki?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1041: The Blade's power

Running through the large Cursed ship after just leaving the medical bay, everyone's head was turning at a panicked individual. It was Wevil. He had sweat running down his face not because he was tired, but due to him being concerned. He went through people one by one dodging them as if they were attacking him like his favourite game of block block.

While doing so, he was holding something particular in his arms, tight like a baby, it was several blood packs.

'They told me to head to Quinn's training room as quickly as possible with this. Did something happen? Who needs blood, or is it something else?!" Wevil thought.

All the Cursed leaders by now knew the combination to Quinn's personal training room. From time to time they would even use it to practice, things they didn't want other members to see, but Wevil knew who was in it at the moment, so he made sure to run as fast as he could.

Eventually, when he reached the room, he proceeded to enter the combination, dropping one of the blood packs on the floor. The doors started to open as he went to bend down to pick up the blood packs. When he lifted his head, he almost immediately dropped the blood packs again.

"Quinn!" Wevil shouted, rushing forward.

The room was a complete mess. It looked like a slaughterhouse. Where hundreds of dead bodies would have been torn apart with their blood squirted all around the room. However, what Wevil was concerned about was the person, who looked near passed out on the floor, with the most blood surrounding him.

"Oh, you got here incredibly fast. good job." Eno said. "It means we can get back to training as soon as possible. With this guy's fast legs there's no need to panic."

Kneeling down, Wevil could see the wounds on Quinn's body, and couldn't imagine how much blood must have been used, but Quinn wasn't the only one that was hurt as well. Even though Eno appeared to be fine standing, he too had wounds on his body that hadn't exactly healed yet, with blood all around him as well.

After feeding Quinn the blood, his wounds started to heal, and his eyes were looking more alive.

"Pass me one of these blood bags, Boy." Eno demanded.

"Why should I, what did you do to our leader!" Wevil shouted back.

"Just give him one." Quinn said. Now standing up, taking a blood bag from Wevil and throwing it to where Eno was.

"Don't worry, most of this was done by me not him, I'm just trying to learn my limits. Wevil, see if Logan can create a special icebox like the ones the vampires use. Then you won't have to keep running back and forth." Quinn said.

Hearing this, Wevil was a little more relieved but still couldn't imagine what type of training the two of them were doing to just warrant this huge amount of blood, but if Quinn said he was fine, and Eno wasn't attacking him while he was in the state he was in. He guessed that it was safe for now.

Once leaving the room, Wevil wondered if he should report this to Sam, thinking he would know best about what to do, but Sam was a little busy these days.

'Quinn, you don't have to keep pushing yourself so far! Is it because you think we can't help you enough?' Wevil thought.

While Quinn's and Eno's wounds were healing from their fight, Quinn had a few questions on his mind.

"You want to ask me something don't you?" Eno said. "I wondered why you didn't ask me more things back then, but it seems you know that perhaps it will just be a distraction for yourself, but if it is really playing on your mind then that too can be a distraction, so ask away if you really want."

Quinn was thinking about many questions he wanted to ask Eno, but he thought he would do so when the time came to it. For now he had asked everything that was needed to be asked for the time being while they were still in the middle of the war with the Dalki.

"I know your goal, or so you say. You want vampires and humans to both live, correct? I've met some people like you, Arthur was one of them who cared for humans a lot, you could even say for me it was the same, but there is a difference between me and Arthur and you. The two of us were humans, had human lives before we were turned, but what about you?

"What are the original vampires, were you always vampires, and why do you want to protect the humans so much, what's your reason?" Quinn asked.

Eno didn't reply immediately, and when looking at Quinn it didn't feel like he was looking at him at all rather through him.

"If I told you about the vampire's origin, it wouldn't change much Quinn. In fact, it wouldn't change anything. The important thing is how people deal with vampires now, how they view themselves.

"I bet even you saw it as a curse when you first got it, but have your views changed? As for the second question, is it wrong to care for humans? Must there be a reason for wanting to protect someone or something when you see them getting hurt?" Eno replied.

This answer wasn't the truth, and Quinn knew it. There were times when Eno spoke about humans, and whenever he did there was so much passion in his words and actions. He was going far and beyond to protect the humans. Quinn almost believed if Eno was to choose out of the humans or the vampires, he would choose humanity.

'It's a shame we did not hear an answer.' Vincent said. 'Even I would have liked to know how the first vampires came to be. I have had a few theories myself. Especially since we also know that Arthur had been turned as well, and it wasn't the regular way either making him have the same body as an original. We must be careful not to push him away though, his secrets seem....painful.' Vincent said, reminding him about his own past as well.

While the others were training, Logan was busy working on duplicating the demon tier finding device. He was also hoping he could create something that would be able to gauge the beast crystals of other tiers as well.

The problem he was facing was the group didn't have any Demi-god tier crystals. Without a certain number of Demi-god tier crystals it would be impossible for one to create a device to find them based on their energy. The only reason a demon tier device was able to be created was due to how much larger of an energy force they produced compared to other beasts.

So for now, he would just be creating more devices so their group could search for demon tiers a lot easier. At least they knew where there would be demon tiers, there would also be high level beasts on those planets as well.

All of this was being done, because of Sil, but more so so that they could farm for better equipment for the rest of the faction as well. However, the beast expeditions have been roped in a bit, due to the war.

"Tell me, why did you choose to make that arm of yours?" A voice said.

Logan continued to work on the item, but wasn't ignoring the person.

"I needed a replacement for my arm anyway, and I'm not good enough." Logan said.

"Not good enough? I think you're mistaken. You are far stronger than you know. I wanted to ask, I remember at one point and time you trained with the Blade twins on the island. You fought, and learnt a lot there, you were a talented individual and you even unlocked your soul weapon."

"You say you're weak, but since then have you even fought using your full strength? Or are you scared of something?" Brock asked.

For a brief second Logan stopped working on his items as Brock got up to leave the room.

"When you're done with that, if you really think you're still weak, then me and you should train sometime. Remember how long I stayed on the Blade island for? If you want I can make you as strong as them.

"I'll make sure Logan, that you never think you are weak again."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1042: Cleaning job

It had been a while since anyone had seen Quinn. The leaders of the Cursed faction knew what Quinn was doing, but they at least expected to see him around the ship from time to time. Still, they hadn't seen him at all, and it had been several days now.

Some were getting worried but there was one person that assured them that everything was okay, which was Wevil. Like asked, Wevil had informed Logan of Quinn's request and it didn't take him long to create something that could do the job.

There was just one slight problem. Heading to outside the training room, Wevil couldn't even remember when he had last seen the door open.

'Have they really been in there training this whole time, are they sleeping in there as well?' Wevil thought, as he pressed the round button on the special machine that looked like a giant box and the door opened. The cold air would form a mist as it opened and when looking inside it was just as Wevil thought.

"It's going to need filling again." Wevil said, as the blood packs inside were down to the last few. "At this rate, I might have to ask Sam to see if more people need to donate blood."

The rate that blood packs were being used was unimaginable, and only Wevil knew the true number, as he was the person who would constantly have to go back and forth.

Inside the room itself the room was even redder than before. Marks of dry blood all over. It looked like a war had taken place in the room constantly with no one to clean it up, and both of them could only smell one thing, blood.

This time, both Quinn and Eno seemed to be huffing and panting, neither of them badly injured.

"The skill has finally levelled up." Quinn spoke, taking a breath in between.

"Good, because I was getting tired myself." Eno replied.

'I can't believe it, this boy has been able to progress so quickly. Is he talented, or is the system beyond my expectations?' Eno wondered.

"We can now stop focusing on trying to level up the blood abilities now you have learnt a few new skills." Eno explained. "However, what is important in the next step, is learning how to use your blood control with said skills. As you know the king of the vampires will receive the absolute blood control book. Once a vampire

learns of this, they can do whatever they wish with blood as long as their imagination allows it."

This was true from what Quinn had seen and what had been explained to him. Cindy had used a whip made out of blood, he had never seen any of the leaders do this before. From the way it was explained, each user of the blood book created their own techniques using absolute blood control, so the next king could learn them.

However, not every leader liked to use the same techniques as the last, and Cindy had just favoured the whip at the time.

"For now though, it is best we get some rest. Even if you don't feel tired, pushing a vampire's body this much will cause one to age quicker. This is why even when a king has the absolute blood control, they are reluctant to use it unless necessary. I am not worried for myself, but I am for you Quinn." Eno said, for the first time showing some concern, but it was hard to tell if it was genuine or not.

Quinn decided to take a break, he didn't know how long the two of them had been in the room for, and although Sam didn't contact him on any new information, it didn't mean nothing had happened, just nothing urgent enough for him to warrant being called.

Now that the two of them were to take a short break, Quinn was able to look at the room they were in.

'I can't make someone else clean up this mess, that's just not right, and it's mostly my blood.' Quinn thought.

Leaving the room, Quinn had gone to a cleaning supply closet, the first thing he wanted to do was get some cleaning done, and with his speed he should be able to get it all sorted out pretty quickly. He could have asked a water user to clear it quickly but he couldn't subject them to that, and then they would be asking questions later on.

'They're going to start thinking I'm a mass serial killer if they see that room.'

With a red bucket in his hand, and a few sponges, Quinn thought maybe even if he was quick he would need something more than that. As he turned around in the hall that led to all the training rooms, he managed to spot Logan walking behind him.

"Logan what happened to you, is someone bullying on the ship, who would do such a thing!" Quinn said, as he started to rage in anger. Logan was covered from head to toe in bruises and cuts.

"Quinn don't worry, I did this to myself. It was through my own choices, no one is bullying me." Logan said as he continued to walk.

Who could even bully Logan in the Cursed faction?

When saying those words, Logan's heart didn't flutter so it must have been true. Unlike the others, Logan wasn't a vampire so when he trained to fight, the marks, cuts and bruises would show, unless he went to a healer.

He was just unlucky to catch Quinn at a certain point and time.

'If he doesn't want me to know about it, maybe I should respect his wishes.' Quinn thought. "Just..be careful." Quinn shouted.

After cleaning up his bloody mess, Quinn finally decided to meet Sam who looked a lot calmer than the last time he had seen him. This was because he was finally getting the swing of things, and was understanding who the key and reliable people were that he needed to talk to. People he could trust to pass on his messages and see his vision, giving him a lot more free time to now focus on other things.

"You look to be in a really good mood." Quinn said, as he exited from the transportation bridge.

"Quinn, you're finally out but you smell a bit like chemicals." Sam mentioned with his now sensitive nose. "Anyway, you came at the perfect time. Thanks to Logan creating more of the Demon tier hunting devices, we should be able to cover more ground and have your request come in."

"The problem is though, there have been a lot of reports coming in from Oscar and the Graylash family, even a few from Helen, of Dalki ships in the nearby area. The Dalki seem to also be hovering around all the orange portal planets the human's own at the moment, so it's going to be risky even if we do find one." Sam explained.

Quinn wanted to find the demon tier beast before even attempting to go to the Blade island. Not just because Eno needed it for moving and helping Sil, but because if they were going to go to the Blade island, Quinn wanted to be prepared.

After all, Hilston was a man with a full set of demon tier armour, and had one of the strongest abilities in the world. He would at least need a single item at the demon tier level to compete with that.

While discussing things between each other, and Quinn getting briefed on the news of other things, like certain students coming on board directly to the Cursed ship. The door opened from the bridge again, and the person who had entered was Sil.

What was surprising was the fact that Sil had entered on his own, when usually he would be the one to follow Borden around the place.

"Quinn," Sil called out. "When are we going to go to the blade island? When are we going to get back Raten and Vorden?!" It sounded like he was almost complaining.

"Soon," Quinn answered, as he was in the middle of talking to Sam and wanted to finish what they were talking about.

"Soon, do you even want them to come back?! You've been stuck in that room for so long and I've been waiting for you, and now all you're doing is talking. When you found out Vorden was on the blade island before, you dived in with just the three of you. Why can't you just take the whole Cursed faction to Blade island this time if you're so scared!" Sil shouted in anger.

These words had caught Quinn's attention.

"Do you think I don't care! I'm scared! Are you crazy Sil?!" Quinn shouted. It was the first time he had done so like that, and was also the first time he had called 'Sil' Crazy.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1043: No longer getting through

It didn't take long for Quinn to regret the words that had left his mouth. As soon as he said them, he realised the mistake he had made. He knew what Sil's mindset was like, how he had grown up. Anyone would be affected by what he had gone through. Now that he was so close to getting his long lost friends back, those feelings were just amplified.

The thing was, Quinn was trying harder than he could imagine. He often put on a brave face but what he was doing wasn't easy. His training was one of the toughest things he had to bear and what he was going through wasn't fun either. The other thing that upset him, was what Sil had said. Did he really think they were doing nothing, he wasn't the only one working hard for Vorden and Raten, everyone was, and Quinn knew that.

Sil was acting like Quinn didn't care or anyone in the cursed faction. It felt like all of their work wasn't appreciated. Making it so Quinn had just lashed out. He was tired, exhausted and still hadn't rested, causing the words to just slip from his mouth. Looking at Sil, after hearing those words, he immediately placed his head down and was looking at the floor.

Sam was a little nervous, as he was unsure whether or not Sil was angry or upset. It could go either way since Sil was someone who respected Quinn's words and listened to him more so than others. Because of this, Sam gave a quick tug to Quinn, to try and quell the situation before it became a big deal.

"Quinn, say something?" Sam whispered.

"Sil, I'm sorry I didn't mean that. I know you have just been so worried. I think I'm just the one going a bit crazy here. Let's talk about it, and I can go through the plan, and what we plan to do, okay?" Quinn asked.

At that moment, Sil lifted up his hand, and a ball of water was floating about.

"Quinn, stop him! We don't know what abilities he has or how many strong abilities he has stored. If he fights in the command centre, the whole ship could go down!" Sam yelled now, afraid.

Quickly trying to sort out the situation, he could see Sil already getting ready to do something.

"Quinn, I never thought I would hear those words from you," Sil said, lifting his head, with a face full of tears, but soon his eyebrows frowned inwards. "If I'm really crazy, then I should start acting like it then shouldn't I!" Sil shouted, about to use the water ability.

Quickly though, Quinn raised his hand.

"You need a time out. Think before you act, Sil!" Quinn shouted, closing his hand, and a shadow was seen quickly engulfing Sil, and when it disappeared, Sil did with him.

Sam was nervous, and he was wondering if the situation was over.

"Did you use the shadow lock skill on him?" Sam asked.

"Yeah, hopefully he just needs to calm down. We have to remember on the Blade island, Sil didn't have much chance to interact with anyone past a certain age. It's like he's a child sometimes, and sometimes I don't think he knows the dangerous power he holds." As soon as Quinn finished this sentence, he could see his MC cells going down by the second.

'Is he attacking the space in the shadow lock?'

It seemed like Quinn's little time out hadn't worked, for currently inside the shadow space, Sil was attacking everything around him, hoping to break out of it.

"Damn Sil! Don't worry Sam, I'll be back." Quinn said, as he cast another shadow lock on himself taking him inside the black space.

As expected, he could see Sil using a number of abilities, green strange energy crashing about, at the same time water waves bashing into the shadow around. Each time lowering Quinn's MC.

"Sil what are you doing!" Quinn shouted.

"I'm crazy right! Just like my family, I can't help myself but fight and destroy everything I see. After all, that's how I was brought up. To kill everyone around me! To make sure I was always the one that survived!"

It was clear once again something had snapped in Sil, and now this was the second time. Words were becoming harder to get through to him.

Getting closer, a large wave of water came crashing towards Quinn, but it was easily avoided. Soon though, green beams of energy shot out towards Quinn, however the same thing again, as Quinn was able to avoid them.

"Look at you Sil, do you really think you can go to the Blade island in the state you are in now? Remember, the Blades have the same ability as you, even stronger ability users locked up. We can't just fight them with power against power! It won't work!" Quinn shouted.

However, Sil just decided to shoot a bigger energy beam, and at this point Quinn was frustrated. He avoided the attacks with a flash step and when his foot hit the

black shadow ground, he leapt off it, dashing forward reaching where Sil was in an instant.

Although Sil had strong abilities, there was a huge difference between him and the others in the Blade family. Sil's body wasn't up to par. Thanks to the red pills and the training of the Blade island, Sil's body was perhaps at the same level as a vampire, perhaps slightly higher.

With good beast gear on supporting him, he could get up to the point where he could match a vampire knight in certain aspects, then with his abilities he was a dangerous force, but Sil had no decent beast gear on.

And if one was to compare a vampire's speed with Quinn's, it was the difference between night and Day. Quinn quickly was in front of Sil, and he could see him throwing a fist made of metal. A hardening ability. Grabbing it, Quinn had no problem lifting Sil up in the air, and slamming his body into the ground. It wasn't a light throw either.

"Stop this now Sil, you can't keep acting like a child!" He shouted. "I know how you feel, you're frustrated right? Because we're so close, but you're just sitting around doing nothing."

While saying these words, Quinn thought about the time when he saw other weak ability users being hurt, yet Quinn could do nothing to help them.

"If you're frustrated, then take it out on me. Don't let it bottle up inside. Come and see me, and me and you can fight it out anytime, Sil!" Quinn shouted to his face.

Sil shouted in anger, placing both palms on Quinn's chest and shot the beam of energy in rage. It lifted Quinn's body slightly off the ground and into the air. Soon, a red blood aura started to surround his body, and covered him like a cocoon. The blood started to move and push the green energy back and when it landed back down the blood had disappeared and Quinn was beside Sil again. Making a fist he punched Sil in the gut.

It was a hard blow, and Sil felt like he couldn't breathe. He fell to his knees trying to breathe in but it was impossible.

As for Quinn, the green blast had damaged his body as he hadn't put any of his armour on. It was a good thing as well, otherwise he was sure that he would have to give another job to Alex. The attack was a strong one, as could be seen by the wounds on his chest.

Quickly though, they started to heal, and the pain shown on Quinn's face was minimal. Once Sil could breathe again, he laid on the floor out on his back.

"Do you feel better now?" Quinn said.

Covering his face with his arm. Sil was trying to hold back the tears.

"Yeah, but I...I...I can't just keep saying sorry Quinn. Why am I like this?!" He asked.

"It's not just you." Quinn replied. "Everyone feels this way, we just have our own ways of dealing with the problem. Come on, let's go back. I'm sure everyone is worried about us."

Walking over, Quinn offered his hand lifting Sil up, and when the tears finally stopped, the two of them exited from the shadow space, to enter the ship again.

In the command centre, when Sam saw the shadow, he ducked for cover for a few seconds, under the table. He and many others knew Sil's strength and quite frankly, depending on what abilities Sil held, he thought it might be a tough fight for Quinn, especially after coming back from all that training.

When he saw Quinn look completely fine, apart from a burn mark in the chest of his clothes, and Sil with red eyes, it seemed like everything was fine.

"I'm going to go talk with Borden for a little bit." Sil said, as he was about to leave.

Looking at him, Quinn just didn't know what to say or do anymore. He was out of ideas. If Sil exploded one more time, maybe he couldn't get through to him.

"Wait!" Sam shouted, as he cleared his throat and stood up straight again.

"Actually, while you two were in the shadow lock place there was a bit of good news that came through." Sam explained. "We have finally located another demon tier beast."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1044: Complications

After hearing the news that Sam had delivered, Sil had decided to stay instead. After all, a Demon tier beast was one of the requirements from Eno to use his abilities, at the same time, if the group were planning to hunt a demon tier beast then they would also most likely need his help.

Before the meeting was to take place, all the leaders on the Cursed ship had been called in early to the meeting room and Sam would go on to explain the details. On top of this, Brock and Eno had joined one of the meetings for the first time as well.

"The reason you have all been called here, is because another Demon tier beast has been discovered." Sam explained. "However, there are a few complications that I need to explain first - this won't be like the last demon hunt that everyone went on.

"The reason being, is because the Cursed faction and the Graylash faction will be the only two groups participating in this hunt. To make matters more difficult, Owen, the Graylash leader, won't be there to help either. Therefore authority and control over how to conduct the hunt has been handed over to us."

Hearing this, there were mixed reactions around the table. Some were happy to hear that a demon tier beast had been found, but many of the leaders still had bad memories of the beast hunt from before.

"Whoah!" Nate said. "Isn't that a good thing? Doesn't that mean we can basically do what we want to get the crystals?"

"A good thing?" Linda repeated. "Last time Owen and Oscar were both there with the Demon tier weapon. Even with all those resources and people we were hardly able to defeat the creature. It means we have to defeat the beast with less than we did last time."

"Correct." Sam replied in a very serious tone. "As we all know, we're in this circumstance in the first place due to the current Dalki war. Oscar is of course still sorting out the military and tracking the Dalki's movements, which is a time demanding task. In addition to this, the Dalki have been moving awfully close to the Graylash beast planets. Therefore Owen has stated that he will not be taking part and I can't argue with him there.

"Which brings me to my next point, the reason why we will be working with the Graylash family. Thanks to Logan and the fact that now the Earthborn, Graylash, and Cursed faction are in alliance, a Demon tier location device was awarded to each of the factions. Of course, receiving this device comes with the condition of us informing one another as soon as we find a demon tier, which is a standard practice anyway.

"The demon tier beast has been located on one of the planets owned by the Graylash family. Now if we do decide to proceed with the hunt, we will be working

together closely with one of their head generals as well as the faction leader of the shelter.

"Bear in mind though, that the Dalki at the moment seem to be keen on invading the Graylash planets. Anything can happen at any moment and we might have to pull out and cut our losses when we see fit."

Despite all of Sam's dire warnings and the downsides of proceeding with the hunt, Quinn still wanted to go ahead anyway. They were running out of time, mainly for Sil, and for Quinn to get some good equipment before there was a full scale war.

"I still think we should proceed." Quinn replied. "However, I don't want to take a large group with us like last time. I think a core group of our strongest members will be able to deal with the demon tier and less lives will be lost that way."

"The problem is if it's a large demon tier beast or it has an ability to call other tiers to its help like the last one, won't that cause a problem?" Linda brought up an important point.

"Unfortunately, we don't have any details on the demon tier beast, but remember that they can come in all shapes and sizes with unique abilities. Of course you would need to bear that in mind, but for this one, I actually agree with Quinn. At the moment we are spread thin and mass transportation of an army through the small teleporters takes too long."

"If the Dalki were to attack one of the Cursed faction planets and aimed for the teleporters, it would be hard getting support there in time. I already know you plan to go Quinn, so the question is who do you plan to take with you?" He asked.

Looking around the room, the strongest of the Cursed members were already currently sitting at the table with him. This made it easy for Quinn to pick the people he wanted. However, unfortunately, there were two people that were currently not present which he hoped to pick.

One of these people was Leo and the other was Erin. The two of them were attached at the hip and wherever Leo went, Erin did as well. At the moment, the two of them were on Earth trying to locate where the real Pure base was, and from time to time would travel to the other bases that Layla had told them.

Leo claimed that if Quinn really needed him, he could use the summoning skill if need be. All of this information was passed on from Sam as it all happened while Quinn was busy training with Eno.

Once realising that Eno would no longer be a threat, it seemed like Leo was happy to leave the place and come back as he wished, and honestly Quinn didn't want to restrict him, he had his own things going on.

"Of course, all of you are free to decline the invitation if you don't want to come. I never want to force you guys." Quinn said. "Since we don't have much information

on the Demon tier beast, I would like to take a mixture of those that bring different skills to the table.

"Linda, you have great strength that is nearly unmatched. I also wish to bring Fex, as his strings have always been able to help with disabling and slowing an enemy's movements. Wevil, with your great speed I'm sure we can always rely on you.

"Sil will be coming along as well, we both have already agreed to that." Quinn said, giving him a wink.

He thought that perhaps if it was something to do with getting the other two back, then Sil would be more inclined to work for it without any complaints. It also may help Sill feel like he was helping out in some way.

Some of those who weren't selected seemed disappointed that they weren't coming along, while others breathed a sigh of fresh air.

"Quinn, can I come?" Peter asked.

Looking at Peter, Quinn knew he was strong, but there were those that needed to remain on the ship to protect it just in case. At the same time, he already had Linda so he thought there was no reason to bring Peter.

There were now plenty of strong people left on the ship, and with Nate and the others Quinn could always come back when he wished.

"I don't see why not, of course you can come." Quinn replied.

At that moment, a shy hand had been raised from the group. When they all turned to look at who was volunteering, they were all quite stunned.

"Layla, you want to come as well?" Quinn said, surprised himself.

Honestly, he didn't know why this time Layla didn't go with Erin and Leo, perhaps they had a falling out or something else had happened. Ever since the incident with Helen, Layla hadn't spoken much to Quinn at all.

"I have to be there, I didn't get to help you at school Quinn, and Leo and Erin said that they would inform me if they found the Pure base before doing anything. It's why I asked to stay behind, because I want to help you and I want to bring back Vorden again." She said, with her fist clenched and a determined look on her face.

Usually, Quinn would have outright said no. Layla was strong, but against a demon tier beast, he wasn't sure she could handle it. Still, with confidence growing in his own powers and not bringing so many members along, Quinn thought that perhaps he could at least still protect her and it would be good exposure for her.

He also didn't know how to say no to the determination he could see in her eyes. Even if he could say no, it didn't look like she would take that as an answer.

"You can come along, but if the demon tier beast proves to be difficult Layla, you have to understand if I ask you to stay back." Quinn said.

Hearing this, for a second Layla's eye twitched. The others, noticing this, wondered if something was wrong. Letting go of her clenched hand she replied.

"Thank you."

"Okay, so it looks like we have the Cursed faction demon tier hunt team!" Announced Sam. "Going along with Quinn we have Linda, Wevil, Fex, Peter, Sil and Layla. If everyone is okay with that, I will start going through the rest of the Cursed faction agenda."

Just as Sam was about to move on to his next point in the meeting, another hand was raised.

"Of course, I think I will need to go along with them. Don't you think so?" Eno stated.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1045: The special set

After deciding what to do, it didn't take long for Sam to get in contact with those from the Graylash family. They needed to send some orders across, to organise and prepare a few things. Although, when he mentioned how many people they were planning to send, and who would be taking charge, they didn't exactly seem pleased with them.

At the end of the day, they had no choice. Even Owen had told them to leave everything up to the Cursed faction. In the end, Quinn had allowed Eno to go with them, but Quinn didn't really say yes.

He still felt like Eno was more like a guest on the Cursed faction ship, rather than a part of it. If he wanted, he would leave whenever he wished. So if Eno was planning to follow them to this planet, what was stopping him?

Telling him he couldn't go, Quinn was sure Eno would do anyway, and it would only sour their relationship.

'Maybe I can learn a bit more about Eno on this trip as well.' Quinn thought.

On top of that, Sam had added one more person to the group, but they would be meeting them in the faction base along with the Graylashes. This person, was sergeant Hayley Snelleart, Paul's daughter. The reasoning, was because she was a healer.

With some people having witnessed a few things and rumours already surfacing about the Cursed faction using strange powers, Sam didn't want more to spread. It was always normal to have a healer on the team.

At the same time, they could improve relationships with the new army groups they had received.

A ship was being prepared, but before heading off, Quinn wanted to visit a certain person.

Entering the forging room where the sound of clanging never seemed to stop, he could see quite the tall, small framed but muscular person known as Alex.

"Hey Quinn." Alex said as the wings on his back started to flutter a little bit. "It's been a while since I've seen you here."

After Alex had saved the forgers from the attack with Pure, the others knew about his wings. Quinn didn't attempt to remove their memories or anything like that. In fact, he didn't want to take it away from Alex as many of them felt indebted to him and were more loyal, and even worked harder compared to before.

Luckily, nearly none of them knew what Alex's ability was before he had been turned.

'Wait, I don't even know what Alex's ability was?' Quinn thought.

However, it didn't matter now and while in the forgery he was able to let his red blood wings out freely. Hardly anyone ever came down here now. Requests were instead sent to their platoon leader, who would then file a report until it eventually got to Sam. Who would then talk to Alex, and decide where things needed to be distributed first.

"I'm sure you have heard what I'm about to go do." Quinn said, knowing news like that would have travelled fast. Even on his way to the forgery, everyone was wishing Quinn good luck. The more he heard those words the more he felt like something was just going to go wrong.

"Anyway, I was wondering what to do with a Demon tier crystal. I know certain crystals are more suited towards certain items. So I don't have a choice in what it can be turned into, the best thing would be gauntlets or a weapon type to increase our strength, but is one Demon crystal enough?"

"I'm glad you asked." Alex smiled. "Actually a demon tier crystal is a little different to all the other tiers. It has so much energy that only one is required to turn into a piece of equipment. Of course, you could probably use some Demi-god crystal or legendary crystals to enhance certain bits, but honestly you would have to get the demon tier crystal first before finding out what could be added."

"Speaking of, I know you haven't upgraded your equipment in a while and you might be annoyed at me but I made you a few things." Alex said, as he started to pull things out from underneath his workbench and placed them on the table.

It was an armour set that looked to go pretty well together, as if each one was created from the crystals of the same beast. It was mainly silver in colour with blue spiral patterns twirling through each piece. On certain parts, grey fur could be seen.

"Last time, I had no experience when making your emperor tier equipment and I know it was a disappointment, but this time we had more experience with the legendary tier crystals given to us by Helen and the others." Alex explained.

"Didn't I tell you guys to use all the Legendary tier crystals on yourself first? And then focus on the main hunting teams like the Daisy group?" Quinn replied a bit annoyed.

"Quinn, you're about to go fight another Demon tier beast, and this time alone!" Alex said. "Do you really think I could let you do that, as your personal forger? If you died due to a lack of protective armour, when I could have done something

about it. Do you think I could ever sell my equipment? They might even blame me for your death!"

"I'm glad that's your main worry." Quinn commented.

"Besides, the legendary tier crystals were actually donated by Helen herself, and she said that she wouldn't hand them over unless it was something made for you. I don't know what you did to get a girl to give over these crystals. I know some who would kill their husbands to get them."

"I acutely heard that Daisy had these legendary crystals from a long time ago, but never made anything out of them. I don't know how they managed to get so many from the same type of beast, but it only means better things for you."

Quinn looked at the set, and even without using his inspect skill he could tell they were of the legendary tier. Equipment made with higher grade crystals just had a different shine to them when they were mixed in with the other materials.

'Did she really just hand these over, instead of using them for herself?' Quinn thought.

'I guess she's pretty serious about trying to win you over. Maybe this is a pre-wedding gift? Or an anniversary gift you two don't know about.' Vincent said.  
'When did you two first meet again?'

Quinn knew Vincent was joking, but he still couldn't believe what was in front of him. The equipment had already been made and was here, so of course he would use it. He would just have to give them something in return when he next saw them.

"There is only one disappointment." Alex said, rubbing the back of his head.  
"There are no weapons. I couldn't even make any gauntlets. All the crystals were used up. I did however, have a spare set of emperor tier gauntlets made, but once again they don't seem to have an active ability."

Saying this, Alex almost sounded embarrassed. First, Quinn took a glance at the Emporer tier gauntlets. Even though they would improve his stats overall, it wasn't worth it at the moment. And there was a reason for that.

In his dimensional space, Quinn still had the advanced tier gauntlets that had been made by Alex from the crystals gifted by Leo. Although the stats were nowhere near comparable, the active skill was one of the best Quinn had ever come across.

Since his Qi had improved drastically, when supplementing his Qi into the gauntlets the active skill also gave a more devastating shock compared to before, and for now, he would rather have them on him.

"I'll take them as a spare for now." Quinn said, placing them in his dimensional space, and heading back to the table.

[Inspect]

Using the inspect skill, the three items information were shown. The chest piece, the legs, and the shoulder guards. None of the pieces of equipment had an active skill on their own. However, they did have an active skill when placed together.

A special set active skill.

Looking at the improved stats and active skill, Quinn couldn't help but smile.

"I might have to get her a really good present after this."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1046: Working together

The group were travelling in a medium sized ship towards their destination. The planet was owned by the Graylash family so they didn't have a teleporter on board. Of course, they could have traveled to a closer planet owned by the Graylash family and teleported from there, but at the moment most of the factions were traveling using space ships.

This was apparent just on their journey, nearly every planet they went by had large forces of ships protecting them, ready to act on a moment's notice. This was actually advice given by Oscar. After not being able to use teleporters on planet Caladi, they feared that the Dalki now had some sort of teleportation jamming device.

With the information Sam knew, knowing that the vampires had the same type of technology, and one of the great vampire minds was working with the Dalki, there was a good chance this was true. Sam took this more as a fact rather than a guess, and told everyone to start using ships more rather than the teleporters.

"It looks like we're nearly here." Linda said.

Looking out the window, they could see a large space ship nearly as big as the Bertha the Cursed faction used, if not bigger. It was a strange design making it look more like a floating island. Not fast moving but looked impenetrable at the same time, a place suited more for defensive measures than anything.

It was quite the distance away, so it was hard to get a scale of the actual size of the thing, but even though it wasn't near the planet they were going to, they could see it off in the distance.

"What's that thing?" Peter asked.

"That's the Graylash family's main ship. It looks a bit odd right. It looks like a city with temples built on top of it. I actually heard that it was an island that was part of earth, and it used to be placed there. I guess Sam was right that there worried that an attack might happen." Linda replied.

"The Graylash family, that Owen is certainly an interesting character." Eno commented from the back of the ship. Currently, he wasn't looking like his usual self. His face was by far younger, a young middle aged man, he had changed his hair to a dark blue and his moustache was no longer there either. The only thing that was similar was his ponytail hairstyle.

"Out of curiosity, was the Graylash family never an option. I know Owen is strong, couldn't he and his people get stronger with your help though?" Quinn asked.

"Ah yes, the Graylash family is an interesting one. As you may know with each of the families I have aided them for a long time, to the point where they are today.

Even that damn Trudream you seem to hate so much, but as for the Graylash family, I didn't play a part in it at all.

"They have since the beginning naturally evolved on their own. I still don't think they will be enough, but it is one of the families where my influence would have not helped at all."

Taking those words in, Owen did always seem like a strange character but at the same time never a threat to Quinn. Although there was one thing troubling him when they fought against Hilston together.

'Why didn't he use his soul weapon back then, even though we were in such a serious situation?'

Finally, the ship was preparing to enter the planet's atmosphere. From the outside it looked to be green in colour. The water seemed to reflect this, shining in the same way. As they got closer, giant strange plants that were all sorts of strange colours started to appear in their view.

Purple, red, yellow, while the ground was covered in tall brown grass that looked as if it was almost dying. There were ships stationed outside the planet as well, but an access code had been granted and the others knew that the cursed faction were arriving.

Finally, after descending and flying for a short while longer, they came across the shelter. The outside of the shelter was similar to ones they had seen before. With a large reinforced wall on the outside.

Only, on the wall there were far more faction members and mechs than usual, and direct members of the Graylash family could be seen standing on part of the walls. With this shelter, it seemed like they were unable to avoid some of the plantation or there were reasons as to why they couldn't cut them down, so it was built partly into the shelter.

Quinn thought it looked quite nice, as some of the shelters were plain looking, but here there was a large pink tree in the centre with purple leaves fluttering about in this one. The size and equipment of the shelter classified it as a Rank A shelter.

It was placed on an orange portal planet. Only strong factions and Travellers would be able to venture out to hunt beasts. Although the Shelter wasn't the largest one they had come across, there seemed to be a good population living here, over ten thousand or so people.

Off to the side, there was a large field that was used for ships to land, and there were already quite a few there, as well as a group of people ready to greet them.

Walking off from the ship, they could see a group of people. Three of them in white robes belonged to the Graylash family, and as for the other group of five, they were wearing a mixed match of beast gear, and looked to be travellers.

"Welcome Quinn, I believe we met before while you were working at the school." One of the men in white robes said walking forward. "It's also nice to see you again." The man smiled.

When Sil looked up, it took him a few seconds but he really did know this person. This was Robin Graylash. One of the head generals that had been invited to do a little demonstration in one of the elemental classes.

From Quinn's duties he had met the other head generals from time to time, but didn't talk with them much. The two of them shook hands and smiled at each other.

"I see the Graylash family didn't just send anybody in either. It will be great to have your support." Quinn said.

While those from the Graylash family were respectful to Quinn and seemed to be happy to see him, the other five Travelers that had been brought along with him weren't exactly welcoming him with open arms. Although they knew their place and soon came over giving a bow down.

"These people are from the Orbus faction that was stationed here." Robin explained. "They work for the Graylash family and will be the ones looking after us while we are in the shelter."

All of the men had bowed down to Quinn to greet the world leader, apart from one. A young man who had his arms crossed and bags under his eyes as if he had been having many sleepless nights.

"Please allow me to say what's on my mind, sir." The man said, looking at Quinn.

He still wasn't used to this, but now as one of the world leaders, he realised that others couldn't just say what they wanted to him, unless they wished to start a war.

"I hope you won't go back on your word and I am free to say what I want. I am Ko, leader of the Orbus faction. However, I don't like the fact that the Cursed faction seem to be having so much free time that even a world leader is able to come down here.

"I feel like this is just putting pressure on the Graylash family to hand over the beast crystal to you once it has been obtained. At the same time, you are a person younger than myself, and you are meant to take command?"

"At your age, how many battles have you fought in? Do you even know how to lead or do you just rely on others around you."

As the man continued, Quinn could see that a temper was rising in Robin, it almost looked like he was going to zapp the man to stop him, but Quinn nodded in his direction when the two of them made eye contact. It was okay, this man just didn't understand and people shouldn't be punished because they had different views or thoughts.

"On top of that, I have heard about your unhandled methods, summoning beasts on the other Shelters. If things don't go your way, will you be doing it he-" Ko's speech had stopped while he was in the middle of talking.

While Quinn had made sure Robin was not to get involved, he had forgotten about another person, who currently had his hand wrapped around Ko's mouth holding his jaw in place so he couldn't say another word.

"Don't you think it just got a bit quiet around here?" Peter said, smiling at the other men behind him.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1047: Tired eyes

Everyone watched as they saw Peter lift up Ko's body in the air from his mouth. The grip around his jaw was just hard enough to not allow him to move it, or say anything else. While at the same he wasn't using his full strength. Otherwise, his jaw would have been crushed by now.

The other four men that had come with him were also members of the Orbus faction, and seeing one of their trusted allies being hurt by what they only saw as a stranger, they immediately started to pull out their beast weapons and activated their abilities.

"Put your weapons down. It's an order!" Robin shouted, having enough.

At the same time, Quinn quickly had gone over to Peter and had his hand on his shoulder.

"I think it might be best if you let him go as well."

It wasn't a telling off, as Quinn knew why Peter had done what he did and the others weren't going to stop Peter either.

Peter looked at the man for a second, before releasing him, allowing him to fall on the floor, but as soon as he was let free. Ko attempted to grab something from his side, but before he could, Quinn held onto his hand.

"Are you sure you want to do that?" Quinn said. "Your life was just spared and think about what would happen if you were to act out again."

When the tension and pressure from Ko went away, Quinn let go as well moving back to the others along with Peter.

"Ko, that was completely out of order. If you were to act like this with Owen here, I would have hit you myself." Robin said.

Hearing this, Ko immediately bowed down.

"I apologise to the Cursed faction leader. What I said was out of order." Ko said, but the apology didn't exactly seem urgent or sincere. It was more like he was forced to do it.

Peter was tempted to go in again, but this time, Linda grabbed him as she kept an eye on him.

Stretching his Jaw, Ko felt a bit of pain and that wasn't the only area either, it was the same with his forearm as well.

'I'm an A class Traveller and have been protecting this place for years and this is how we get treated! The Graylash family are treating an outside faction better than their own.' Ko thought. 'And that guy, I didn't even see him move and he grabbed my Jaw, I thought the Cursed faction only had a few strong ones?'

Trying to forget about what happened, Ko was asked by Robin to lead the way, and give the group a tour around the Shelter. At the same time, they would ask details about the Demon tier beast or any information they had on it.

As soon as they entered the Shelter though, the others with their great hearing couldn't help but listen in on what the others were saying about them.

"That's him, the Cursed faction leader!? He's also one of the world leaders."

"Don't you think he looks a bit young? How can someone like that have the power to control one third of the human forces?"

"He is young, didn't you know, even if he looks young his actual age is a lot younger, he would have only just graduated from the military school, a genius in the rising."

"A genius huh, so much so that they have decided to send him here rather than deal with the Dalki?"

"Stop being stupid, are you really a Traveller? You should know how difficult a Demon tier beast is, would you rather fight a Dalki or a Demon tier? The weapon created will also help support us for the rest of the war."

What Quinn was pleased with, was that at least some people seemed to know the importance and dangers of the task. However, if they knew what they had planned to do with the Demon tier crystal, then maybe more would be upset about it.

'Even with an adult face they are all calling you baby face.' Vincent commented. 'You know with your Qi control, and control of your body maybe you could make yourself look older, or you could always use the earth mask from Peter to change your appearance.'

'It's okay, I think it's important that people know it's really me here.' Quinn replied. 'Could you imagine what they would have done if they thought I was someone else, there would have been a fight back there.'

"This place is cool," Fex said. "It reminds me of the familiar world with all the colourful plants."

"It certainly is different." Wevil replied. "Have you noticed the buildings though, and the outside walls."

"Yes, and even the people, although they were interested in us at first they seem to be concerned about something else. A little on edge." Linda said. "Is it the demon tier beast?"

"I also recognised that some of them have bags under their eyes, like the faction leader, Ko. Are they all having trouble sleeping?" Layla whispered.

Quinn had noticed it as well, although from the outside the place was well guarded and there were plenty of strong Travelers and faction members of Orbus. The people were wearing their beast gear even inside the Shelter. This wasn't too unusual if it was a few but nearly every single person, even those that looked like civilians. Some of the buildings appeared damaged, as if they had just suffered an attack not too long ago.

After walking through the large Shelter and being shown the main places, they finally went towards the centre where the large tree with pink leaves could be seen. It was taller than the shelter walls and was as thick as a truck.

From the tree, a pathway where the long grass was cut led up to the faction hall.

Heading inside the Faction building, the reaction was pretty much the same from all those outside, but they quickly headed to a room where they sat around a round table and could get straight to business. Quickly moving towards Quinn, Layla decided to sit next to him, even though she hadn't said much on this trip, and Eno decided to sit on the other side.

They had asked if Hayley had arrived yet, since she was meant to meet the group, but it appeared she still hadn't done so.

"So there are a few things that will need to be discussed today," Robin stated. "First, we will let you know everything we know about this planet and about the Demon tier beast. After that, we need to discuss how we decide fairly who will get what rewards. After all, three groups in particular will be part of this hunt, and everyone deserves their fair share. The Orbus faction, the Graylash family, and the Cursed faction. Yes, the Orbus faction are part of the Graylash group so we will need to take that into consideration as well."

"Now, thanks to the device the Cursed faction has given us we were able to discover the energy of a Demon tier beast present on this planet. Unfortunately, somehow the Demon tier beast appears to appear in certain spots and then disappear."

"These spots follow no pattern, so it will be quite hard trying to find it. At the same time, according to Orbus, this Shelter has been facing its own problems, and I'll leave it with Ko to discuss the rest."

Ko stood up and looked at the others before replying.

"First, before we do anything, there is a serious problem plaguing this Shelter. I'm sure some of you have noticed the destroyed buildings and such. That's because this Shelter seems to be targeted.

"The beasts have been coming here often in waves, and all of the Travellers have had to defend it. Now, this has happened since the existence of the Shelter. It became popular with Travellers since they could hunt without having to move far away, but recently higher and higher tiers have been coming along with larger forces. Recently we even had an attack from a legendary tier." Ko Explained.

"How frequent are these attacks?" Linda asked.

"The time frame has been getting shorter and shorter, but at the moment, it seems to be every week or so. We have a theory that it is possibly the Demon tier beasts doing. Perhaps it's moving into other beasts territory and sending them here. Another important factor that we are unsure is related or not, is that every time we are attacked, people from the Shelter appear to go missing." Ko replied.

"Missing?" Wevil said. "You don't mean killed, but you just have no trace of where they have gone?"

"Maybe they were eaten," Peter said, saying it like it was no big deal.

"Maybe you ate them, am I right!" Fex joked, raising his hand expecting someone to high five him, but then when he was the only one laughing, he realised that for one, no one else from the other groups would know what he meant by this, and perhaps his joke was a bit too far.

"You guys need to take this matter more seriously," Ko said, shaking his head. "Because of this, we can only send a small team out to look for the Demon tier beasts, and with more beasts and more dangerous beasts coming, we might need more help from you guys here."

"Can I ask, when is the rest of the Cursed faction coming?"

The others looked at each other, and even Robin was pulling an awkward face.

"Actually, this is everyone that will be taking part in the hunt from the Cursed faction," Quinn replied.

"What, you only brought seven of you! How are you meant to take on a Demon tier beast with just the seven of you?!"

"I assure you that the people I have brought aren't ordinary people," Quinn said.

"We can come up with a way to track the Demon tier beast," Eno spoke. "We can do all the hard work, and you guys can stay here and look after the Shelter. We

came here to hunt for the Demon tier beast, not to protect the Shetler. Who knows, maybe the Demon tier beast will make its way here." Eno smiled.

After he finished speaking, a vibration was felt in the rooms, and a loud explosion was heard outside. Soon the sound of multiple explosions could be heard.

Storming into the room was one of the faction members covered in sweat.

"Sir Ko, we need your help urgently. Outside we are being attacked again! The beasts are raiding us right now! And sir, they have a Demi-god tier beast with them!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1048: The best place to be

The meeting was halted at that moment, as the Orbus members quickly ran out without thinking much about it. While Robin had remained calm, talking to his men to report on the full situation just so they knew exactly what they were going up against.

"Sir, it seems like our members are having trouble dealing with the Demi-god tier beast." One of the Graylash said, coming back in after seeing what the situation was like.

While the Cursed members were left in the room on their own, being the last ones to act.

"Quinn, are we going to help them?" Layla asked.

"Of course we are. Find whatever beasts you can deal with and try to save as many lives as possible. There are a lot of fighters in this Shelter, so I'm sure they can handle themselves. We will mainly look after the families." Quinn ordered.  
"However, the most important order of them all is to not to die. If you die, then many lives will be lost. Remember that"

"Strong words," Eno said.

The others nodded, and those with the shadow power used their shadow equip to put on their high level beast equipment.

Once outside, they could see flying beasts in the air hovering around the Shelter. They would swoop in from time to time, planning their attack circling around. There were so many that a large shadow was cast over the Shelter. Some beasts with powerful legs were able to leap up in the air and attempted to enter the Shelter that way, while others had found ways to bypass the walls.

It wasn't long since the attack had been announced, and yet already many beasts had entered the place. On the walls of the Shelter, there were around ten Graylash members stationed on all four walls. They were using their lightning abilities well to stop the beasts from outside, and also those from above while ignoring those inside.

When they said the Shelter had frequent attacks from beasts, they imagined that maybe a group of ten or twenty of them, but this was in the hundreds. At the same time, the level of beasts varied from the intermediate level, going all the way up to king, and there were even a few stronger ones mixed in.

The group were hesitant about where to go or what to do, Then suddenly leaping up in the air a giant frog like beast with small arms, and a long neck came towards

them, before it could reach them, a single line of red aura had hit the beast and sliced it in half.

The others looked at Quinn, but the attack hadn't come from him. It was from Eno.

"Are you really just going to stand around? Can't you hear the cries of the people? You are all lucky that it is just beasts attacking, for if it was the Dalki, everything would have been destroyed in seconds."

Eno was right, and everyone else knew it. Soon the others went to help the people as best they could, and were aiming for the higher tier beast as the Travelers were able to handle the others.

"Wait, Sil you come with me," Quinn said. "I'm sure they're going to need your help."

Looking over, Quinn could see where Ko, the Orbus faction leader and Robin, the Graylash Head genreal, had gone.

It was towards the North wall, that was where the most energy was being felt. Which most likely meant it was where the Demi-god tier beast was as well. On top of that, there was no one in the Cursed faction at the moment Sil could copy abilities from. If he wanted to help, he needed powers and strong ones at that.

---

The Cursed faction members had decided to split up into two groups. Wevil and Linda had gone off together to reinforce one of the walls where it looked like most of the beasts were coming in from. When they reached the wall they could see why they were facing trouble.

Most of the guards there were having trouble with two king tier beasts, which allowed for the rest of the beasts to scale the walls. The gate had partly been destroyed and beasts were pouring in from there as well.

"We have to kill the king tier beast quickly and block the entrance!" An Orbus leader shouted. He was in pain, fighting against a large minotaur. The beast was larger than a Dalki, and muscular beyond belief. A king tier beast that was filled with rage and had massive amounts of brute strength.

The problem was getting close to the thing, without dying from one swipe of its large hands. The two king tier minotaurs were the ones responsible for destroying the gate in the first place. From a distance they had knelt down charging the muscles in their legs, before blasting off banging into the wall not caring about their bodies.

However, the faction members were able to survive against the minotaurs thanks to their slow movements. Unlike their initial attack it looked like the other movements were quite slow but their hides were tough.

Seeing all the beasts go past them, they couldn't help but feel pain as they saw the amount of beasts pouring in through the gates.

"I'm sorry!" The commander at the gate shouted, as he was ready to risk his life to take down the beasts, but suddenly. He saw a group of beasts fly through the air getting knocked back meters away.

"What happened?" When turning around, he could see a large woman in beautiful crimson red beast gear holding a club in her hand. Linda had transformed and was using her great strength to not allow any more beasts through the gates. With every swing she would be able to kill a group of them, and even the force caused the beasts to hesitate moving in any further.

"Who is that? I don't remember anyone from the Orbus faction having that ability or that strength. I will have to thank them later, for now I need to fight what is in front of me!" The man said turning around, but then could see a slight small haired green man touching his body.

"I just need a little boost." Wevil said, as the man felt the energy leaving his body through the touch of the person, another one he didn't regaonise.

Wevil, absorbing a little bit of blood through touch, knew he would need a boost. It was only later he found that unlike vampires that just used blood for feeding. Wevil could also use it to power his transformed state.

Running forward he avoided the beast's swings with his great speed, and jumped onto the minotaurs arm running up it. Pulling out his daggers, the head and his body started to transform into the tiger beetle form. When he leapt up in the air, his body had finished its transformation. Midway up the air, they were wondering what would happen, but one of Wevil's legs kicked at a speed impossible for the human eye to see, and a bang was heard.

Somehow, the force of the air itself was hit, speeding Wevil up and holding his two daggers he had gone right through the minotaur's head through to the other side, killing it.

'Good thing that beast was distracted.' Wevil thought.

Inside the Shelter itself, Layla, Peter and Fex, were together. Peter was able to deal with most beasts using his fists. Ripping them with his bare hands. There weren't many strong beasts inside the Shelter and he thought it was quicker to deal with them with his hands rather than use his weapons. It looked like it was working. As for Fex, he was by his side pulling the beasts in the Sky down, and doing more of a

rescue job when he could. Some of the people were trapped under buildings, and needed help.

At the same time, using her arrows, Layla would focus on the flying beast heading there way. With Peter's strength and speed, there was no need for her to transform into her other forms.

'I can still help, I can still save people lives!' Layla thought as she fired off an arrow, and using her ability she changed its direction so it could go through a gorilla looking beast's eyes, stopping them before they were to slam down on a traveller which had fallen.

---

Back at the north gate, Eno, Sil, and Quinn had arrived. Grabbing Sil, Quinn quickly jumped up the wall and now they could see everything. Ko, and Robin were still on the wall planning what to do as they watched the Demi-god tiers movements. They hadn't gone into battle just yet.

The second Quinn saw the beast, he could tell it was at the Demi-god tier level, having met one once before. It had two giant wings that were covered in a soft white fur, and both of them looked to be glowing in a strange light. It looked like a giant white furry moth.

With a single flap of its giant wing, there were those that were unable to get close, and what was worse, it seemed to leave behind little fluff balls, that when touched by the Travellers, would cause them to become drowsy, some even falling asleep.

"I think we have watched the beast long enough!" Ko shouted. "With the three of us here, we should be able to beat it!"

However, Eno looked towards Quinn.

"Quinn, are you sure this is the right place to be? Sometimes the loudest place is not the one a person should focus on."

n was wondering what Eno was talking about, there was a Demi-god beast in front of them. If not this place then where would he need to be, in the Shelter with the people? Helping the others.

Because of this, Quinn closed his eyes and tried to listen out, to see if there was anything else. Then, from the forest just outside the east gate of the Shelter. He could hear it, feel the loud vibrations coming from that direction.

"Sil, Eno, help them and deal with the Demi-god tier beast here. I am needed somewhere else!" Quinn said, and using the shadow travel he had disappeared.

"Hey, what are you doing!" Ko shouted as he was ready to just jump in. He was confident in his strength but had never fought against a Demi-god tier before. He

thought at least with the Cursed faction leader who had supposedly killed many Dalki, and the Graylash head general who he already knew their strength, they could deal with it quickly, but now he had just run off.

"That damn coward!" Co shouted.

Meanwhile, Quinn had already exited out of the Shelter and had equipped on his new Legendary tier gear, covering his whole body in silver with spiralling blue armour. The fur could be seen in certain places, and he looked a bit out of place in the colourful forest, but it didn't matter.

"Who would have thought that there would be two Demi-god tier beasts attacking this place."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1049: Nitro accelerate

With Quinn having left the north gate, it left Ko, Robin and Sil to deal with the Demi-god tier beast that had the appearance of a giant white furry Moth. The three of them needed to act fast, as they could see a number of their people who were fighting the beast collapsing onto the ground.

They weren't dead, as they could still be seen breathing, but they still wouldn't wake up despite what was going on around them. One had even been hit while asleep. It was an attack that was partially deflected off one of the Moth's large wings. Yet, still they didn't wake up.

"We can not allow that thing to get into the Shelter. If it does, it will cause everyone else to fall asleep, then the rest of the other beasts will cause even more mayhem!" Robin claimed.

"What are we meant to do? Whoever gets within ten meters seems to be hit by the beast's fur that's shedding from its body. It looks impossible to avoid and hard to see. All our ranged attacks seem useless as well." Ko explained.

The other Graylash members continued to fire lighting at the giant Moth, but it was seemingly doing nothing. As if it just tickled the beast. This was meant to be one of the strongest abilities out there.

Looking at the beast movements, Robin had noticed something. It hadn't taken flight even with the two giant wings. An aerial beast sometimes was more difficult, so why was it on the ground?

It looked like it was constantly moving, every time someone got close to a certain part of its body, protecting a certain place. At one point, one of the travellers had gotten close to its under part as it ran under its head, fighting the loss of energy. When this happened, it leapt back for the first time swinging its powerful wings forward. As soon as it was in the air, it spun so one could only see its back.

"It's the underbelly. I'm sure that is its weak point. With my soul weapon. I can create quite the powerful attack to damage it, but we will need someone to get close to it, and force it to show its belly" Robin explained.

Now the men that were continuing to fight the Moth were down to five. Pulling out his regular sword Ko had enough, and was about to jump off the wall, until he felt Sil grab his arm.

"What are you doing kid, get off me!" Ko shrugged it away. "If you're just going to stand here and be useless, be useless somewhere else!"

Ko then lept of the wall, and stood in front of the gate, waiting for the right time to go in.

"Sil, is your name correct?" Robin said, turning to him. "Your power, if I fail, we might need to rely on you to finish the job. Owen told me a lot about you." Saying this, he held out his hand allowing Sil to touch him, and soon after he had leapt off the building as well.

Spirals of blue lightning started to surround Robin's arms, and legs as he activated his soul weapon, but this was only one part of it, he needed to activate the second part of it to truly use the move he wanted and he was relying on another for this part of the plan.

As for Ko he was watching the Moth carefully. The Moth seemed to have just flapped its wings releasing its fur out to those nearby, This time the white fur spread further than those before. Its attack had never had such a range before this one.

"Damn it, it looks like it was holding back on what it could do, but this is the only chance I'll have!" Ko shouted as he lifted his sword back in the air above his head, tilting his back.

The other men were quickly falling asleep after being hit by the fur, so he had no choice but to use this opening. Activating his ability, his weapon grew in size. Becoming almost as big as the Moth itself.

It was strange how one could still wield a beast weapon with its sheer size but the weight of the weapon had remained the same for Ko the ability user, only the size had changed. Swinging it down with all his might, hitting the Moth with a weapon this large would do something, and the Moth seemed to think this as well as it leapt backwards in the air.

The attack from Ko was fast, but the Demi-god tier beast was faster avoiding the blow. However, this was the plan in the first place. Now it was showing its white belly. It looked as if it was ready to turn around like before. Still, before it could, a large human sized blue lightning went straight past Ko's head and straight to the Moth, hitting it in the centre part of its belly just under its head.

An explosion of blue occurred with lightning strikes firing off into the air. More of the Moth's fur had been chucked everywhere. It fell to the floor rolling on the ground.

While Robin's arms and legs were glowing in blue colour and slowly fading.

He was huffing and panting as his soul weapon had taken a lot out of him, but what was worse, for him and Ko both of them had been hit by the explosion of fur, and they could feel their bodies getting tired by the second.

It was a strange force like a spell draining the energy from both of them, making them incredibly tired.

"What is this, I thought it might have been a sleeping effect, but that's not it at all!" Robin realised.

The Moth had gotten back up, and black blood was continuing to drip from its underbelly, but soon it was starting to slow down, and finally, the blood had stopped.

"It's what I thought, this Moth is draining the energy from everyone to heal itself and make itself stronger. This fur, there has to be a way to get rid of it!" Robin started to think. Making a quick decision he placed both of his hands on himself.

Usually, users of the lightning power coated themselves with lightning to avoid getting hurt. After all, their bodies were not made of lightning itself. This time he had done no such thing and shocked himself repeatedly, making the pierces of fur from the Moth fall off his body.

His drained energy hadn't returned, but it had finally stopped leaving him. Seeing Ko's eyes, starting to become drowsy, he quickly fired and shocked him as well. He screamed in pain, but the pieces of fur that covered his body had fallen.

"What do we do!" Ko shouted, leaning on his sword stuck in the ground. He hadn't used a lot of energy, but a lot of it had been drained, and he was relying on Robin for an answer. "The Moth looks like it's fine to me," Ko said.

The truth was, using a soul weapon took a lot of energy, and it was the same for Robin. It was meant to be a trump card in a fight, but he had wanted to get rid of it quickly. In the past, Robin had always fought with others to help him along the way but now he saw no way of getting out of this one, until several lightning strikes seemed to hit the Moth, and unlike the others, with each one, it was creating a wound on the creature no matter where it hit.

Walking past Ko, Sil was seen with his hands out.

'He has lightning powers? But he isn't part of the Graylash family! Didn't the Cursed bring him along?' Ko thought.

"Where have you been?" Robin asked, smiling back at Sil.

"I had to get a few more abilities to make your powers stronger. It's not the same as the world leaders, but it should be enough!" Sil shouted, firing off a constant stream of lighting. Now the whole of the Moth's body was lighting up blue, and the blood was oozing from the beast's body.

Robin had never seen such a powerful lightning attack being constantly used like it was being used now. Someone would have run out of MC points by now, but not this boy.

The lightning continued to leave his arms, and Ko couldn't believe what he was seeing and eventually when the lightning had stopped. The beast was no longer moving in a pool of its own black blood.

It usually would have been a cause for celebration, and Robin was happy, but not Ko. He looked at his fallen comrades.

'If he could have done that from the beginning, then why? Why didn't he come in earlier instead of waiting for everyone to get hurt!' Ko thought angrily.

And there was one more person he was annoyed at as well, Quinn who had seemingly disappeared and ran away, just where the hell was he?

At that moment, in the forest, Quinn with his special armour, was standing there waiting to see the beast, as trees were being broken down one by one, and the sound of the beast's roars was getting closer.

"I have the new shadow skills I have learnt, the new blood skills, and even a new armour set. I would have liked to have used you to train even further and test these skills out, but I can't waste any time on you." Quinn said.

[Activating: The Blue fang Armour set]

[Skill activated: Nitro accelerate]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1050: The Blue Fang Armour

The legendary tier equipment that had been created by Alex and was a gift from Helen, all the pieces had been put on. All armour pieces were created using the same beast crystals from a legendary tier beast, called the Blue Arctic Wolf. Found on a plane covered in snow.

Usually, beast crystals could only be used to create one piece of equipment that, that type of crystal was suited to, but the Arctic Wolfs crystals were unique. It could be turned into any part including different weapons. Unfortunately, what this meant was that the stats that came with it weren't so specialised, or so this is what people assumed.

The legendary equipment created with the Arctic Wolf crystals wasn't on par with other legendary tier items but was highly sought after due to its adaptability. Legendary tier beasts were, after all, hard to come by, so finding one that could be turned into anything was seen as a big advantage to have.

However, when creating the crystal, Alex was able to uncover something else. The reason why the Arctic wolf crystals could be turned into anything, and he didn't seem to be the first one either. He wondered why the Daisy faction had gathered so many of the same beast legendary tier crystals, without using them to turn into anything else.

Hoping to find something, Alex created two different sets of armour with the Arctic Wolf crystals and when he created his second one, he understood. The Arctic wolf equipment was meant to be used as a set. An armour set that would have a special active ability for one to use.

With the armour equipped, Quinn could feel the effects of each item as the power of the beast equipment entered his body, improving his overall stats. Even though the legendary tier items were said not to be on par with others, it was still a huge improvement from what he was wearing.

[Blue Arctic Wolf Chest piece: +20 to all stats]

[Defence: 40]

[Blue Arctic Wolf Shoulder pieces: +10 to all stats]

[Defence: 20]

[Blue Arctic Wolf leg pieces: + 30 stamina]

[Defence: 30]

[Blue Arctic Wolf boots + 30 agility]

[Defence 20]

Although the defence that each of the items gave was less than the emperor tier he had received from Alex before, that didn't matter for how great the equipment had improved his stats.

[Strength: 70 (100) ]

[Agility: 70 (130) ]

[Stamina: 69 (129) ]

[Charm: 60 (90) ]

It was the first time Quinn's stats had reached such numbers.

'This is what can happen with a full set of legendary tier equipment? And I also have the mask as well.' Quinn thought, as he couldn't imagine how much stronger he would be with Demi-god tier or Demon tier equipment.

As the beast was getting closer, Quinn was preparing for the tough fight ahead. When he was with Chris, with the two of them. He was confident that they could both beat one, but even Chris seemed a bit weary of the Demi-god tier beast.

However, he saw the chaos back there, and he needed to deal with this beast fast. He would have no time for training sessions.

Equipping the red demon-like mask, Quinn was ready.

When the beast was finally in view, Quinn could see coming through the forest was another Moth like creature. It too was covered in fur, only this time it was purple in colour. The trees were the only thing slowing it down as it hit them away, but that's when Quinn noticed something strange.

He could see that when the creature would hit the plants with its fur, and it would rub off onto the plants, it would slowly start to weather away.

'That fur, I have to try to keep it off me.' Quinn said.

When the beast got closer, something seemed to come off from it, small particles of fur, even without intentionally spreading it. It was walking and constantly shedding its skin, creating the air around it to turn purple. Small fibres that were nearly invisible had already entered the air.

[Warning - the Demi-god tier beast is emitting a deadly poison]

[Your HP is decreasing]

[Estimated time till death: 5 minutes]

[New quest received]

[Defeat the Demi-god tier beast in five minutes]

[Rewards ???]

"As if I didn't have a good enough reason already to try and defeat this thing quickly," Quinn thought.

Now he was sure what the right thing to do was. To activate the set armour ability.

[Activating: The Blue fang Armour set]

[Skill activated: Nitro accelerate]

All the energy that Quinn had felt from the boost in wearing the equipment was suddenly going into a different area. He could feel the energy moving around, as the set of silver armour started to light up, in a shining blue.

Looking at his stats, there was a drastic change that proved that the active skill had worked.

[Agility: 220]

When activating the armour set skill, all the bonus stats that Quinn would usually receive from wearing the equipment, was all directed into one thing, making Quinn faster. His agility was now above two hundred, nearly doubling his already fast self, of course there were a few downsides to this as well.

For one, the active ability would only last a total of two minutes, the second was after the skill was activated, it would be on a one hour cooldown. During this cool-down period, all the stats the equipment usually gave was nullified. It was like he was just wearing pieces of scrap metal during the cool-down period.

This didn't matter so much for Quinn though, because with his shadow equip skill, during the cool-down period while mid fight he could change his armour.

Something that wasn't an option for him. The disadvantage of using such a powerful skill has been negated like that.

Quinn's health was already deteriorating, but he wanted to kill the beast before even the time had run out. He charged forward, moving his legs, and everything around him started to look like a blur. Through focusing, he was finally able to see things, but it took a lot of mind power. The beast couldn't even keep track of where Quinn was, nor could he himself, as he had accidentally run straight past the beast, colliding into a tree, but breaking it in the process.

"Crap!" Quinn thought as he brushed a few branches of himself, and looked at the back of the beast. "I can't just use my body's full speed just yet, but I can still control it, so I'll just have to get used to it slowly."

Charging at the beast a little slower this time, Quinn had punched one of the beast's legs, using a blood spray filled fist. It had torn off part of the beast skin but hadn't created a wound. As expected one would think a Demi-god tier beast couldn't be taken down with one blow, but while he was like this. That didn't matter.

He punched at one of the many Moths' legs multiple times using his full strength, and the faster his hits were, the stronger they would be as well. When the Moth eventually turned around, Quinn had already ran underneath it going for the next one.

The Moth screamed in pain and anger. Its purple fur was being thrown about everywhere, even attaching itself to Quinn. His health was still deteriorating and he could see the timer on his quest going down.

'It's poison must be strong. I can see why it's a Demi-god tier beast. I bet if it was fighting against anyone else, it would have poisoned and killed them in seconds. But vampires seem to have a better resistance, and with my Blood bank I can continue on for a lot longer, regaining my energy!'

Quinn Slid underneath the Moth's belly, and jumped before hammering both elbows into one of the Moth's eyes. Three of the beast legs had already been destroyed, including one of its eyes now. The beast truly felt like it could do nothing.

Its poison wasn't working, and Quinn was strong enough to continue to use his speed and skills to his advantage. Getting behind to its next leg, Quinn then proceeded to produce his well learnt thigh kick.

The first kick didn't work as it slammed the beast, but it had a clear effect as its body wobbled. Not giving it time to recover, producing five in succession, the last kick had snapped the leg and sent it flying through the forest.

'This is great. I don't even have to use my blood abilities or shadow powers. This armour has just given me another way to fight!' Quinn thought excitedly.

However, his time was running out with the active skill, and his other set of equipment wasn't exactly the best at the moment. If he didn't finish off the beast in two minutes, then it would have been better for him to not use the skill at all.

Knowing this, Quinn could see the beast was mostly crippled. He leapt onto the beast's head and stood strong. It swung its large body in an attempt to swing what was on its head off. Quinn raised his hand, and blood started to gather around it,

flowing down from his fingertips down to his elbow. Soon it started to spiral like a type of drill, covering a single arm.

It was one of the blood moves he had learnt from Eno himself. Mixing this in with his already known Hammer strike. Quinn was able to create a new move. He started the motions slamming into the beast head. Using Qi that force alone was enough to jolt the beast, then pulling his arm and snapping it forward, the Blood hammer drill had been executed.

Slamming the drill into the beast head, a loud bang was heard and the blood drill was able to pierce through it easily. Creating a large hole in its head and even going through to the ground. A few seconds later and the beast had instantly stopped moving, and had fallen to the floor.

At that moment, the famous ding was heard in his head, and the blue armour on his body started to dim once again.

[Quest completed]

[You will receive the following rewards]

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: [jksmanga](#)

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: [jksmanga](#)

## Chapter 1051: A diffrent skill?

After defeating the Demi-god tier beast, the sound of battle inside the Shelter was still ongoing. Those from the Graylash family stationed on the wall turned around and started to direct their lightning strikes towards the beasts inside the Shelter. While two of them jumped down to aid their Head General.

"Is everything okay sir?" They said as they helped lift him off the ground by his arms. Even with the beast dead, he was still feeling the fur's effect on him. Some time would be needed before his MC cells would make complete recovery as well, but gritting his teeth, and through sheer will, once he was helped to his feet not wasting time, Robin ran through the gates with the others.

Sil had decided to do the same, heading back in. Although his concern wasn't for the people inside the Shelter, he wondered what was so urgent that made Quinn leave so suddenly like that.

That left all the men who had fallen asleep or perished along with Ko outside the gates.

'How could they just leave my people like this? What if more beasts start to come from the north forest? All the people will die.' Ko thought, but his eyes weren't looking at his men. Instead, they were locked onto the Demi-god tier beast that had perished.

Walking over to the beast, Ko took out his sword and started carving away.

'Who could be so foolish to leave such a thing behind.' Ko thought.

---

Inside the Shelter, most of the high tier beasts had been defeated, and even Linda and Wevil had returned inside to give back up along with the other faction members. Now only hundreds of weak beasts remained, but they still continued to attack.

"This is strange," Linda said, now in her smaller form. Her larger self consumed too much power. If she needed to recharge it, there was only one option, which she wasn't exactly pleased about doing.

"Are you talking about the beasts?" Wevil replied, as he too had gone out of his transformed stage and continued to slash at the creatures coming towards him. They were mainly bug like creatures from the looks of it, but were roughly the size of a basketball.

"Yeah, usually different types of beasts don't coordinate an attack like this. It's as if something is making them stay here."

As they continued to fight, eventually the beasts started to change their course of action. It was like a switch inside them. Now nearly all the beasts were attempting to escape from the place. While their backs were turned, the angry Travellers made sure to make them pay and attempted to kill as many of them as possible.

Eventually, when all of the beasts including the ones above had left the area, the sound of fighting and crying started to calm down and the fighting had stopped.

"The beasts have retreated!" A large man shouted, raising his battle axe.

Soon after, everyone in the faction cheered and shouted as a sign of relief. The Cursed members had all gathered to see if each of them were okay, and other than being exhausted and a few scratches here and there they seemed to be fine.

"When they said that the beasts attacked this shelter frequently, I never expected something like that." Layla said, putting her weapon away.

"I don't think that was a normal attack." Linda replied, looking at the condition of the Shelter buildings. They were crumbled and destroyed. It was clear that the last attack wasn't on the same level. This much destruction would take a while to repair without many earth users.

Entering the place, Robin could see that he didn't need to do much. He had used the last of his strength to zap a few creatures but soon found them retreating. At the same time, Ko had entered and a few of the Travellers that were standing by the gate, he ordered them to bring the others inside.

He looked at all the destruction around and the blood that had been split, and then his eyes went towards the Cursed faction in the centre.

'Did they fight? Or did they run away like their leader?' Ko thought, not seeing Quinn anywhere. 'They hardly have any scratches on them.'

Ko didn't realise that he had hardly been hurt either, since his only part in the fight was being a distraction, but he had a lot of black blood on his armour making it look like he had fought many beasts.

Walking over, Ko was ready to give the group an earful. He was going to complain about them not helping while also asking where their so-called leader was, but eventually Travelers and civilians started to surround them.

"Thank you, thank you so much for helping us. You lifted that rubble off of us."

"Thank you for helping at the gate as well. If it wasn't for you guys more of the beasts would have got in."

"You were amazing, I never knew the Cursed faction had such strong members. Having you guys it felt like we had a hundred extra people helping us."

Ko could hear it all, for some reason. Not just the civilians but even members of his own faction were praising them for what they had done.

'So they come in, and protect us from one attack and they get treated like gods?' Ko thought. 'What about me, me who has been protecting this place all on my own since the beginning. When the Graylash and the Cursed weren't here.' His fists were shaking. 'Where the hell is my praise you ungrateful brats. I was the one who made the Orbus faction and even stationed our base here, protecting all of the Travellers and people!'

He wanted to say all this, shout it out to everyone, but decided to keep it bottled in. It would have been impossible for him to come in and say that while they were all being praised. It would have just been a bad long on his part.

'At least, I got some reward out of this damned attack.' Ko said, touching the side of his pouch.

---

In the forest, Quinn had just defeated the Demi-god tier beast, and his health was still being affected by the purple fur, that was until he had received the quest rewards from finishing off the beast in the requested time limit.

[Instant level up received]

[You are now level 63]

Since Quinn was at such a high level now, killing beast hardly put a dent in levelling up his exp, so he had to rely on the system granting him special quests like this one, or a force that was so strong that he could level up from.

With the stat point, he had placed it into his stamina stat, finally getting it up to seventy with the rest of his stats.

He was happy that he had received an instant level up, because even though he had defeated the Demi-god tier beast quickly, he wasn't sure if he could have done it within the five minute time frame without the new armour set.

'Did the system know what equipment I have? Arghh I'm treating this thing too much like a human. Still, the system does seem to be quite clever, at times.' Quinn thought.

However, the reason why Quinn's health stopped going down after the fight, was because of the next reward, for the first time ever, he had received a passive skill.

[Passive skill unlocked - Immunity to poison]

[This skill is unable to be levelled up. The user will be immune to all types and kinds of different poison]

Now he understood why after completing the quest even though the purple fur was still floating about in the area, he was now no longer being affected.

'A passive skill. I've never heard of a vampire even having such things.' Vincent said, sounding genuinely shocked rather than his usual sarcastic self. 'I wonder how far the system can go?'

Quinn was wondering the same thing, he even wondered what it meant to be immune to all poisons, would this also include the fairy blood that was poisonous to vampires, or was that counted as a different substance?

Nonetheless, it certainly was a handy thing to have. There were poison ability users out there, and many strong foes unstoppable in fights had fallen to poison.

'The real question is what to do with this.' Quinn said as he held the Demi-god tier crystal in his hand. Right now, he had half of the answer to solving part of Sil's problem. However, there were two Demi-god tier beasts that had attacked, and he was wondering how willing the others would really be letting him keep such a thing, or even having both.

'This area is pretty far out from the Shelter, and it looks like the fur is slowly starting to fade away. I just need to move the body deeper for the beasts to come and get rid of it for me. What they don't know won't hurt them, and maybe this will give us more of a chance to get the other Demi-god tier crystal.'

'Which means the demon crystal can be used to be turned into a weapon. I can feel it, the fighting has stopped inside the Shelter, so I still have time. Looks like things are going our way after all.' Quinn thought.

At the same time, the Graylash members had gone to check up on the other demi-god tier beast. They could see that several cuts had already been made on the beast, and when they searched, they couldn't find the crystal at all.

"Where is the Crystal? Did another beast take it?" A Graylash member said.

"No, can't you see? It looks like the beast has already been carved. Which means it's already been taken by somebody." Another replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1052: Missing people

Upon returning to the Shelter, Quinn could smell the blood in the air. It had upset him a little but he knew it was inevitable for no one to get hurt. He had learnt that from the past. What he was thankful for was the smell wasn't too thick, meaning that the damage had been kept to the minimum.

Entering the Shelter, he could see there were guards from the Orbus faction placed on the outside who let him past with ease. Every abled person was already being put to work. A part of the Shelter and the open area near the pink tree was being used as a healing centre. Those that had been injured were gathered and were getting treatment along with food supplies. Temporary beds had been laid out for them all as well.

However, one thing was clear, that they were understaffed. There were plenty of people to help them, but healing injuries wise, the faction didn't have many healers in their group. They were highly sought after anyway and it looks like no one had predicted this amount of damage. The Graylash family didn't bring support other than fighting power.

'Remember Quinn, don't think of the ones you couldn't have saved, but the ones that you did save, thanks to you killing that other Demi-god tier beast.' Vincent tried to encourage him.

He knew this, but he was a bit disappointed in himself because there was another person he needed to thank, and that was Eno. Eno was the one that made him aware that perhaps there was something else out there. If the purple furred Moth had reached the gates like the white one, the situation would have been far worse.

"The Cursed faction leader has returned!" One of the leaders of the Orbus faction that had greeted Quinn shouted.

Hearing this, the other Cursed leaders turned and rushed to where he was standing. Nearly everyone had gathered under the large open area by the pink tree to help with the injured. Quinn couldn't do much but he was planning to do something.

"Quinn, maybe it's best if you try to stay calm for this one." Fex said, reaching him first rushing over, and soon Peter was by his side, "Maybe keep Peter in check as well."

"Quinn, permission to pound that damn Ko into the ground!" Peter shouted.

Quinn was truly baffled and had no clue what was going on. Soon the Graylash family were also upon them while the Orbus leaders seemed to be talking amongst themselves away from the rest of them.

Robin, with two other Graylash members, arrived around the same time as the rest, and was hoping he could give a clearer picture of what was going on.

"I'm sorry Quinn." Was the first words that came out of Robin's mouth as he shook his head. "First, I assume you went off due to your own troubles?"

"Yes," Quinn replied. "I sensed that there were many beasts coming from the east gate, and went ahead to stop them before they reached the area. You may check the forest if you wish."

"No need. I believe you," Robin replied, letting out a big sigh.

Quinn had decided not to tell the others about the Demi-god tier crystal. That way there would be no arguments over such a thing. Of course, Quinn would have probably argued that he was the one who had defeated it but just to avoid headaches, he thought there was no reason to. Perhaps others might still think badly of the Cursed if he did such a thing. A world leader who pushes his weight around.

There was also the fact that Quinn knew there was another Demi-god tier crystal to be obtained. If they already had one in their possession, their case would be weaker when trying to claim why they deserved the second one.

"Thanks to the Cursed faction, we were able to fend off the attacks with minimal casualties and a few serious injuries here and there." said Robin. "The most impressive of them all, was Sil. It was because of him that we were even able to defeat the Demi-god tier beast in the first place."

"The discussion had started off with what to do with the Crystals. However, those in the Graylash and even members of the Orbus faction had already decided that because of all of you and what you had done for the Shelter, the Cursed faction should keep the Demi-god tier crystal. The problem is..."

"The problem is that bastard Ko stole the Demi-god tier crystal!" Peter shouted. He wasn't shy about it either, making sure everyone heard him.

Hearing this again, Robin let out a big sigh, as he had done everything he could to stop the Cursed and the Orbus faction having a big fight just seconds ago.

"I'm afraid it is true that the Demi-god tier crystal seems to have disappeared, but we don't know who took it," Robin said.

'Don't know who took it? So the only other guy who still had energy to fight and was the last one seen next to the beast isn't the main suspect? Quinn, you got to believe me!' Peter shouted.

At that moment, Quinn could see the faces of the others around and could even hear their whispers. Even though the Cursed faction had helped them, they still

thought well of their leader, Ko. These accusations were making them think that the Cursed were just pinning the blame on Ko.

"I think it's true, Quinn." Fex whispered. "When he was being accused, I heard his heartbeat rapidly changing. You know how we can usually tell when humans are lying. I didn't use my influence skill but I'm confident that if he didn't take the crystal, he has something to do with it being missing."

Hearing this Quinn was wondering what to do. Of course, he could use his influence skill and hope it would work against Ko, but the others would see it as him bullying the weaker faction, or maybe even claiming they planted it.

For now, it was not the right time to get into a big fight. While thinking about this, the leaders of the Orbus faction including Ko had come over.

"I'm sorry." Ko said, bowing down. "I really don't have a clue what happened to the crystal. We have asked everyone but no one knows anything about it. We have been dealing with a bigger concern."

Tensing his fist, Peter wanted to do something, but Linda once again, moved him off away and off to help the others. Quinn couldn't help but smile, Peter had a gift, an intuition that couldn't be matched.

"It's okay, tell me about this other matter." Quinn said, showing that he didn't really care about the crystal.

In truth, Ko wanted to know where the hell did Quinn go during the battle and was hoping to turn the Graylash against him somehow, but Robin seemed to be more on the Cursed side than he had initially thought.

"It's about the people in this shelter. Once again after the attack, ten people have seemingly gone missing. We have counted those that had died, but again ten more people seemed to have gone missing." Ko explained.

Quinn didn't really think much of the people gone missing, but he was more thinking of the reason why. Was it really the beasts doing? He had never heard of beasts using humans before.

"I'll try to put my best people on the job." Quinn said. "Fex is a great tracker, someone with a nose as good as a dog."

Fex at first was happy about the tracker compliment, but pulled a face when he was called a dog, but he knew what Quinn was saying.

"Maybe we should organise ourselves in case there is another attack. You said they have been becoming more frequent, so we need to decide what to do and use this time to recover." Quinn ordered.

A meeting would be called once they organised and gathered the rest of the people. For now, Quinn wanted to make sure that everyone forgets about the Demi-god tier beast crystal. If Ko really was the one that had stolen the crystal, there were other ways of getting it without having to cause a fight in front of everyone.

"If he stole the crystal, then we will just have to steal it back. Thank you for making it easier for us.' Quinn thought.

A short while after, another large ship was seen docking in the ship area, and exiting from the ship was Hayley, but she wasn't alone and had a group of ten others were with her. The reason why she was later than expected was due to her waiting and gathering a group of certain people. The ten people with her, were all healers like herself.

Each one got straight to work and the patched up first aid jobs were getting healed. Queues were formed for those with the worst injuries, and everyone was getting healed one by one.

"Thank you." Ko said, standing by Hayley's side talking to the people as they got treated. "I'm glad the Earthborn group have some sense and have sent healers along, unlike the Cursed faction. Their leader wasn't even here during the fight."

Hayley finished healing the person in front of her, and looked at Quinn. He was talking to the people with a smile, but it wasn't a happy smile. As he saw someone with injuries, it almost looked painful.

"The Earthborn group isn't the one you should be thanking." She replied. "Sam, the vice leader of the Cursed faction, sent me here along with all the other healers. The Earthborn group had nothing to do with it. So if you want to thank anyone, you should thank them."

Hearing everyone talk so highly of the Cursed faction was just annoying Ko even more. The fact that the Cursed group were also the ones to accuse him of stealing the crystal. Did no one have any respect for him?

"Sir, urgent news!" One of the Orbus faction members said running. "Some of the missing people, from months ago. They have finally returned, but something is strange about them."

"They returned." Ko replied, visibly surprised and rather than pleased, he looked almost frightened as his eyes had widened. "Inform Head General Robin immediately about this and see what we can do."

"Wait." Hayley said standing up. "Take me with you."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1053: The red mark spreads

In total three people who had gone missing months ago, had returned to the Shelter. Apparently, they had been found as they wandered through the forest and stumbled upon the gate. Those at the shelter recognized them as one of their own straight away.

When the people had gone missing, Ko had ordered the guards to remember their faces, so if they were spotted at any second, they would be recognised. Out of the three people, there was one young female, an older male, and a Traveler. They had been brought into the faction and had been placed in Ko's office for his return.

Entering the room with Hayley following him, Ko saw the three of them and looked almost disappointed.

"We have tried speaking to them sir, but none of them remember anything about what happened. They don't know where they went or anything about the others that went missing as well." One of the men said.

"If they can't remember anything, then these people are useless!" Ko shouted.  
"How are we meant to find the other missing people? Those idiot muscle heads, they don't even care about this Shelter or anyone inside, instead they're just obsessed with finding the Demon tier beast."

Hayley, watching this bi-polar act coming from Ko, thought it was quite strange. Did he care for the people or did he not? When he first came in, rather than pleased, he seemed upset. Shouldn't he be happy that at least these people came back, or was there something else on his mind?

"Before, you said there was something strange about them." Hayley interrupted. "Is it just the missing memories, or is there still something else?"

The men looked towards Ko, who gave the nod to tell her all the details.

"Although the memories are a concerning thing. Each of their responses varies from different levels. The young girl can communicate with us fine. The older gentleman seems to understand what we are saying but when ever he tries to speak he struggles, while the last one..."

Hayley could already see what they were about to say. His eyes looked dead lost, while his pupils were enlarged. He was staring at the wall in front of them while dribbles of saliva were falling from his mouth.

"And there is something else as well." The man said, as he lifted up each of their shirts. Going around to the back of them, Hayley could see what the man was referring to. It was a strange red marking on their back starting from the very bottom.

It branched out like a tree route spreading branches across the back.

'Is something taking over their body?' She thought. The young girl who was still able to speak, the marking was the smallest having only traveled part way up her back, while the others had progressed more, with the Travellers nearly reaching the top of his head.

Seeing this, the girl started to burst into tears.

"Am I going to end up like him?" She started to cry.

"You have help now. We are going to try our best, okay." Hayley replied, not wanting to make any promises. This was something she had never seen before in all of her time working as a doctor and when she had learnt the healing abilities.

It didn't look like an ability or an injury. She pressed her hand against the young girl's back, and started to touch the area. When she touched one of the red-like branches, it moved slightly.

"Ahh!" The girl screamed and was already covered in sweat from the first touch. Even now without touching the marking, it appeared as if the girl was in pain. The older man was in a worse state, constantly wincing as he stood, however the Traveller looked as if he felt nothing.

Placing her hands above, Hayley started to activate her ability. Trying to heal the wound. A soothing feeling came over the girl and she slowly lowered her hands attempting to heal it again.

"Tell me what you feel?" Hayley asked.

"The pain is going away." She replied.

Although the pain was going away, the marking still appeared to be there. Stopping her ability, the mark still remained and the pain had returned. This didn't look like it was something she could remove with her ability.

"I think it will be best to keep an eye on them. See how much time we have and how quickly the marking starts to spread. In the meantime, I will ask one of my people to come and give them healing from time to time. It won't do much, but at least it will stop them from feeling too much pain." Hayley said.

Soon after, Robin had entered the room, and took a look at the three people who had returned.

"Ko, I think me and you should have a talk about what the next move is to be." Robin said, and the two of them had left the room to have their own private conversation.

Now in a room a little further away from where the patients were, the two of them could talk.

"Did you manage to find out anything from the three of them?" Robin asked.

"No, it seems like all of their memories of when they were taken away were gone. They can't even remember their family members that are in the shelter, and only one of them knows how to speak." Ko replied.

Robin gave out a big sigh again.

"I'm afraid we might have to stop focusing on those missing from the Shelter. At the moment we have other troubles that are a bigger priority. I believe you have people outside of the faction searching for the lost ones now, correct? It would be best if you ask them to return and prepare to defend the place."

"With all of the Orbus faction and having just successfully defended an attack they shouldn't come back any time soon. My plan is to suggest to Quinn that the Graylash family and the Cursed faction hunt the Demon tier beast as quickly as possible."

Biting his lip, Ko couldn't believe what Robin was suggesting.

"Weren't you the one that put my faction in charge of this place!" Ko replied.  
"When the Graylash family are done hunting this Demon tier beast, are you going to help us search for the missing people, are you going to protect this place?"

"Are you really being so foolish right now!?" Robin replied. "We are in the middle of a war. That Demon crystal would help us turn the tide even if it's just a little bit. If the Dalki aren't dealt with, then you won't even have a faction to protect." Robin shouted, slamming the door as he left the room.

Ko was left there in his own thoughts. He knelt down and screamed in anger, grabbing his hair wanting to pull it out.

'That marking, I know I've seen it somewhere before, but where?' Ko thought.

The rest of the Shelter looked to be in better spirits, and the rebuilding of the Shelter was now taking place. Although it was being rebuilt in a different way based on Robin's orders. It was now being changed into more of a defensive base. Building certain walls and towers for points of attack. While a large building for non-fighters would be placed so they could stay there for the time being.

Just as everyone was getting ready to move from the giant pink tree, there was commotion as people started to talk to one another.

"They returned, the missing people! Some of them have returned!" A gentleman shouted, pointing to the direction of one of the gates.

"Is it true? But no one has returned after months, and now they are returning!" The people spoke.

Some of them were happy that their family members were safe, but they could see that not all of them were quite there. In total twelve of the missing people had returned. The faction members guarded them and escorted them to the Shelter.

Ko knew that this would cause a panic and was why he had kept it a secret about the first three people returning. Now that some had returned, the others who had lost their family members would be asking about where they were as well, and right now they didn't have answers.

Also the strange marking was worrying him.

"Strange, isn't it?" Eno said, as he and Quinn were standing there looking at the people trying to take a look at who had returned while they were walking towards the shelter.

"Do you mean their eyes?" Quinn said, noting something was off about them from a distance.

"Not just that? Some of these people had gone missing for months." Eno replied. "They had to have come from the forest, and while outside how did they survive. Sure there are some Travellers among them, but not all of them are travellers. What about the deadly beasts we just fought, how are these people still alive?"

When the people were brought in, Hayley had taken a look at each of them once again and it was the same thing. Every single one of them had the strange marking on their back. All at different stages, and their state was the same as the other three.

Returning to the girl, she could see that the girl was in more pain than before.

"It hurts.." The girl said quietly, squinting looking up at Hayley.

Looking at her back once again, she could see that the marking had grown.

At a loss of what to do, she didn't know why, but she had decided to call in a certain person.

"Me? But you know I'm no doctor, right?" Quinn replied, as he walked through the faction halls.

"I know, but I know you have secrets. Maybe you've seen this marking before." Hayley said, knowing it would be a long shot.

Still, Quinn was curious about the people as well and he felt like Hayley was always nice to him during his time in school so he could at least take a look at it.

Entering the room, Quinn looked at the three that were there. Seeing them up close he could tell something was seriously wrong. Then looking at the middle aged man, Hayley lifted up his shirt to show the strange red marking that had several branches going off it on his back in all different directions.

"So, have you seen it before?" She asked.

"No, I haven't." Quinn said, but decided to use his inspect skill to see if there was any other information.

[A powerful mark that continues to grow]

[A mark from a Demon tier beast]

[?????]

[?????]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1054: The mark activates

After using the inspect skill, a lot of the information seemed to be still hidden. Still, Quinn had learnt a lot by looking at the marking.

"Do all the people that returned have the same marking?" Quinn asked.

"Yes," Hayley replied. She could tell that maybe he didn't know what it was initially, but something had struck him now. His whole demeanour had changed, and he had to have an idea of what it was.

Now knowing that the marking belonged to a Demon tier beast, Quinn was a lot more interested in these missing people and where they had exactly gone. The question was, why had they returned, and what exactly did the marking do?

'If I find out where the missing people are going, then it will probably lead us to the Demon tier beast as well. This might be a bit too dangerous to just leave up to Fex to do.' Quinn thought.

"If I had to guess, it looks like you know a little bit about this marking now?" Hayley asked.

Quinn stayed silent for a while, this alone had already answered her question, but he still didn't know whether to say anything or not. This information he had was powerful for more reasons than one. If they learnt the marking was from a demon tier beast, perhaps they would execute all of those with the marking or do something else.

It was important that this information wasn't shared with others.

"I don't actually know what this marking is, but there is someone I brought with me who might. I was just wondering if they would help me or not." Quinn lied.

"Someone who can help?" Hayley, though surprised. Other than healers, was there really someone who could get rid of this thing. Whoever it was, she wanted them to act quickly. It was breaking her heart seeing this young girl in constant pain, and it was getting harder for her to speak by the second. The older gentlemen as well, his marking had spread to the point where his pupils were becoming larger, and he was about to turn into the same state as the Traveller next to him.

Walking out of the room, Quinn went to fetch the said person.

"What do you think Vincent, do you have any idea?" Quinn asked, wanting to bounce off someone else for ideas.

'My research was more focused on vampires, so I never learnt much about the beasts, especially the Demon tier ones. Although I have to admit, everything so far has been strange from what I do know. People going missing and now returning.'

The beasts attacking this Shelter and the forces are getting stronger by the second. If I was to guess, it would all have to be related.' Vincent replied, and Quinn couldn't agree more.

When returning to Hayley, he had brought along with him a man who had a long ponytail. She looked at the gentleman for a few seconds but didn't have a clue who he was.

The gentleman looked at all three with the markings and placed his hands on them before turning to Quinn.

"My question to you would be, do you wish to save one, or do you want to save them all?" Eno asked.

"Save them all, of course!" Hayley shouted, even though the question wasn't directed at her. If this man had a healing ability or knew how to heal one of them, why couldn't he heal all of them? She thought it was a stupid question to ask.

"If you want to save them all as well, then there is only one way. The marking is linked to the thing that caused all of this." And that was all Eno had said.

Quinn thought he understood since he was starting to understand how Eno worked a bit more now. Using his abilities, he most likely could get rid of the marking, but he would only be able to get rid of one or two due to the cost of his powers.

It was probably something that Quinn and the others were unable to pay for him to use his ability, which was why he had asked the question. As for the second part, in order to not reveal that it was a Demon tier beast's doing, Eno was saying that the Demon tier beast needed to be killed to get rid of all the markings.

Walking out of the room, the two of them knew what needed to be done. Quinn was getting ready to head over to Fex to see if he had found anything yet.

"Quinn, wait!" Hayley called out. "So, can you help them?"

"If you keep them alive long enough, then yes, I can help them," Quinn replied as he closed the door.

As time went on, Quinn had talked to Fex about what he had found, but he had come up with nothing. More people seemingly were appearing in the Shelter with the marking, and now there were a total of fifty that had returned.

All of them had been taken into the faction building, inside one of the large training halls to be looked at. The people inside the Shelter seemed quite pleased about the people returning, having hope that maybe their loved ones would have returned.

While others were on edge, wondering just why the Orbus and Graylash faction weren't allowing them to see their loved ones.

The main problem was, no one new in the Shelter was missing. According to Ko, it happened each time a beast attack occurred. So, Fex and Quinn would have to try and keep an eye on everyone during the next attack, which would be a challenging task for anyone.

"Quinn, I have been looking for you," Robin said as he approached the two of them. "I have a suggestion I would like to make for the Demon tier beast. I know that the Shelter is busy with the missing people, but I believe the Demon tier is the main priority."

Quinn would have probably agreed with him. In the end, he could have left, or asked Sam to send more of the Cursed faction members to protect the Shelter if need be while they went to search for the Demon tier beast. Still, now knowing that the marking on the people and the Demon tier were linked, he wanted to find out what was happening to them first.

'But how do I tell Robin without actually telling him.' Quinn thought.

Back in the private room, Hayley was still observing the three people carefully. She watched the markings as they grew, and now the older gentlemen and the Traveller were in the same state.

Their minds seemingly gone, not responding to any questions or words. The only one that was still partly there was the young girl.

"You can still understand me right, you're fighting against this thing?" Hayley asked, looking her in the eye.

The girl was still covered in sweat, and she couldn't even open her mouth. She was in so much pain. Now the marking had reached her shoulder blades and was still crawling.

"You're a brave girl. I can tell you're fighting against it." Hayley said. Based on the others by now, she knew the young girl should have changed state, but she hadn't.

She couldn't imagine the pain she was going through fighting against it when she could have just given in. Giving in was always the easy option. The only thing she could do now, was have constant communication with her, to try to keep her there.

Pulling out her watch, a digital keyboard was being projected in the air.

"I know it's hard for you to talk, so all you need to do is nod. Tell me, what's your name?" Hayley asked. She moved her finger through each of the letters, and when the young girl nodded, she would say the letter out loud and go through them again.

Eventually, she found out her name.

"So your name is Wendy, correct? It's a good name." She said with a smile

Wendy had her eyes squinted so she could hardly see, but she wanted to have a good look at the person who was with her. The talking and communication briefly made her forget about the pain. When she squinted them open, baring through the pain. That's when she spotted something. Wendy then pushed Hayley to the side, causing her to fall on the floor.

"What the hell happened?" Hayley thought as she looked at what was going on. Right now, Wendy was holding onto the Traveler's arms up in the air, and it looked like the two of them were struggling in a battle of strength.

'Wait, did she just stop the Traveller from attacking me?' Hayley thought, and soon she could see that the other older man with the marking was on the move as well. He leapt in the air towards Wendy as if they were a wild animal, but Hayley quickly got in between the two of them.

"I'm not just some pushover doctor!" Hayley said as she avoided the two hands, and grabbed them, twisting them behind the man's head before kicking him in the back and on the ground.

She turned around and could see Wendy was still struggling. Quickly, Hayley acted again by kicking the Traveler in the stomach, but it seemingly did nothing. So she kicked him at the back of the knee, causing him to jolt, and Wendy then could hit him again, pounding his head till he was knocked out.

The two of them were huffing and panting.

"Wendy, you saved me...thank you," Hayley said, but could see that Wendy was still struggling to fight off whatever was trying to take her over. That's when Hayley had a thought, Whatever had happened to these two? Was it currently happening to all the others that had returned as well?

At that moment, the two that had been knocked onto the ground started to rise again.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1055: The infected

Inside the Shelter itself, Fex, Linda and Wevil had decided to head inside. At the moment, Fex was continuing his investigation into what had happened to those that had gone missing. Linda and Wevil had agreed to come along to see if they could help. While, Peter and Layla had remained outside, still helping out all around the Shelter.

The Shelter was pretty large, but they could always communicate with each other through the masks if anything happened. Besides, according to the information they had learnt from Ko, an attack from the beasts wouldn't happen for a while now.

There were only a few people out of those that returned that could still speak. Still, so far, not a single one could remember anything. Until he had managed to come across one person whose mark had hardly developed at all. A young male with a scruffy beard and messy hair.

"I do remember a few things." He said. "I remember we were being led somewhere. I think we were in a group being taken away."

"Do you remember what they looked like?" Fex asked, now using his influence skill. Human minds sometimes recorded things even unconsciously, so Fex thought it was worth a shot.

"No." The man replied and soon went out of the trance. "I do remember hearing a voice, something telling us to come here." The man said.

Fex decided to take note of this. It was interesting to know that he had heard a voice.

'Maybe the beasts are hearing the same thing. I already checked the bodies of the dead beast but can't see anything on them. Maybe if we were to capture one of them alive? Considering they're beasts, the markings could also be in some other place.'

In the middle of his thoughts, a loud scream was heard through the whole room.

Turning around, it took a few seconds until he could see and smell a splatter of blood coming from one of the faction members. He was on the floor, and one of those with a mark had leapt onto the Traveller and dug their teeth into their arm.

What was impressive was the power of the person's jaws. The faction member was wearing beast armour, and still, someone was able to chew through to get to the skin.

"What is going on over there?" Wevil asked as he saw more Travelers coming to aid the person being attacked. They attempted to pull the person off but were flung away, getting hit by a single arm.

"Hey, that's some super strength crap right there," Fex said nervously. "They don't happen to be like us, do they?" Fex asked.

"I don't think so. Otherwise, you would have smelt it." Linda said.

The three of them rushed over and could see the Travellers continuing to struggle to deal with the attacker. They could see that they were being cautious, as they didn't want to harm the person.

Suddenly, the crazed human had been wrapped around in red string, and with a yank, they were pulled up, and their arms were wrapped up like a cocoon. The person continued to struggle and bend their body. Wiggling it towards the others.

"That bastard!" The Traveler said, as his arm was covered in blood when he stood up. "They bit me."

Seeing the string react and bend that way, Fex had an idea of the person's strength. He was right. It was beyond what a regular human could do with no beast gear on. Maybe if they were someone who practised Qi or were like the Blades, it would make sense, but the person didn't look like the fighting type in the first place.

"I think we might need you to tie up a few more people," Wevil said.

When Fex looked up, he could see that those that had the markings, nearly three-quarters of the ones being treated in the room, were standing up. Their eyes were starting to glow in a slightly white-yellow colour.

"What the hell is happening? What's wrong with them all!" The Travelers said as they pulled out their weapons.

At that moment, Fex heard a slight snapping sound that only his ears could pick up, and that's when he noticed that that the person he thought had been dealt with had used their extraordinary strength to break free from his blood strings.

Soon, all those standing with the marking with glowing eyes looked towards the Travellers. The others with markings were even frightened at what the others had become, but it seemed like they weren't interested in them at all.

The sound of fighting down a hallway not too far from them was heard and bursting through the doors, Ko had come rushing in with a few others.

"Something is happening to those that are marked!" Ko shouted. He had been busy escorting more that had returned to the Shelter, and some of them had started to attack his own in the middle of thier return.

Seeing that it was a similar situation here, he had to make a quick decision.

"Remember, they are still people. Make sure that you don't kill them, but don't die either."

"What an easy thing for him to say?" Wevil said as he avoided a powerful punch that hit the ground and destroyed part of the hard flooring beneath him. He then grabbed his daggers and cut the back of their feet to slow down their movement.

Seeing the floor, he could tell a hit from something like that would even hurt him.

Somewhere inside the Shelter, Hayley and Wendy had escaped from the room. It looked like no matter how many times they knocked the other two down, they would get back up. The only other option was to kill them, but the words of Quinn rang through her head.

'Keep them alive, and I can help.'

Running through the hallway, she decided to head for the training room where the others were gathered, hopefully looking for someone, but when she took a turn around the corner, that's when she could see the chaos had already started.

Even in the hallway itself, the Orbus faction members were fighting against the marked, and it was the same in the training hall. She stood there stunned, when the sound of the wall next to her started to break as two men came flying through the wall.

Once again, she found herself on the ground, with a marked and a faction member on top of her. Soon though, they were lifted up and flung back into the training hall. The person who had thrown them was Wendy.

It was clear that the faction members could not deal with this mess, especially since Ko had given the order that they weren't allowed to kill them. They were practically fighting against superhumans.

Although the Travellers and faction members were stronger, they were running out of stamina quickly.

Seeing the other Cursed members, she could see they were faring a bit better. Linda would outmatch them in strength. Even Wevil had equal strength, doing his best to make them immobile while giving them wounds that could eventually be healed.

The most helpful one of them all was actually Fex. Not all of the marked could break out of his string, so he decided to tie up the ones that he could, leaving them there on the ground.

Seeing this, Hayley thought maybe going to the others would be better in the centre. Taking a few steps into the training hall, another marked stood in her way

but was quickly punched and knocked to the side again. Wendy was continuing to protect her, and it looked like she, too had received a power boost.

"Doc, what's going on!" Ko shouted as he went to reach her side, and quickly saw Wendy there as well. "Is she-"

"She's fine," Hayley replied. "I'm not sure. The ones who are acting out have marks that have travelled all the way up their neck. It must be some type of infection or parasite that has taken them over. I've never seen anything like this. Unless we can remove it, then they might continue to act like this."

Ko could see his people were exhausted, huffing and panting. Some of them even had wounds. For some reason, the marked were more like beasts as they bit and scratched them. He clenched his hand as he was finally ready to give the order, the order to kill.

"Arghhh!" Wendy started to scream, she tilted her head backwards, and the marking could now be seen visible on the back of her neck as well.

"I told you she was one of them!" Ko argued.

"No, she fought it so well. She couldn't have turned as well!" Hayley shouted.

When Wendy placed her head back down, her eyes started to glow as well. She had fought the mark for so long, even until the last second, to protect her new friend, but it had finally taken over her.

Something inside Hayley thought that maybe Wendy wouldn't attack her, she stepped close, reaching out her hand, and Wendy leapt up in the air, baring her teeth towards Hayley.

"No!" She shouted.

From behind, black shadows appeared, and the next second, her whole body was consumed by the shadows, and she was gone.

"Shadows?" Hayley said.

Entering the room, Quinn had arrived with his hand held out.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1056: Over a 1000

It didn't take long for Quinn to hear the cries of the others but at the same time, he could tell that these weren't moans and groans from beasts, but from humans. As Quinn went through the hall, he struggled to figure out what to do as he saw those that had been Marked, attacking everyone else around them.

'This has to be related to the strange Marking from the Demon tier beast. Is it able to control the people or can it only give them simple commands?'

From what he was seeing, it seemed like they only had one goal: attack all those who were unmarked. Seeing them like this, Quinn didn't want to kill them. When he had entered the training hall and saw that Hayley was about to be attacked, he instinctively placed Wendy inside his shadow lock.

Turning around, Ko could see Quinn with his hand held out.

"What did you do to her!" Ko shouted. "You ate her with your damned powers. I told everyone not to hurt them. Where is she? Where is she!"

There it was again, Hayley thought. The bi polar act of Ko, who seemed to care and not care about these people at the same time. But Hayley had an idea of what Quinn was doing,

'Wait, maybe this can work. It doesn't appear like the girl that was marked is attacking in the shadow space.' Quinn thought. 'If I'm correct in thinking that all the Marked ones are only attacking the unmarked people, then I can put them all in my shadow space.'

Working quickly, Quinn used his shadow lock on the next Marked that was attacking the faction members behind him. He waited for a while and his MC cells had remained the same, but it still wouldn't show if they were attacking each other.

Seeing that the other Cursed members were doing just fine, and everyone could last a little while longer, he used the shadow lock on himself, and for a second he had disappeared from the room entering the black space.

Here he could see Wendy and a male Marked standing in a certain spot doing nothing. As soon as he entered, they both turned to look at him, and immediately started to charge towards him.

Getting out of there quickly, Quinn was now back in the training room.

'The two of them, it didn't look like they were fighting each other and they didn't seem to have any fresh wounds. This could work. My Mc cells go down depending how much is held in the Shadow lock.'

'Keeping them there will mean some of my MC points will be limited, but at least it will give me time to figure out just what is behind all of this mess!' Quinn shouted in his mind, as he quickly started using shadow locks on each of the Marked.

Shadows were popping up in the training hall everywhere and in seconds the Marked people were disappearing into them. For each person that was locked in the shadow lock, it would take around 20 points of MC. With the group that Ko had brought along with him there were seventy or so Marked people in the room, but not all of them had gone mad just yet.

Doing his best, Quinn continued to put them all in the shadow lock until finally it seemed like the whole area had started to calm down. Those that were marked but hadn't gone crazy had huddled up in the centre, hiding away from all the fighting. Their bodies were shaking.

While the others who were injured and had just fought, were looking towards the centre where the other Marked had gathered, as if they were a bunch of beasts.

'I need to keep an eye on them to see if any more have changed, but I won't be able to put them all into the shadow space.' Quinn thought.

Out of the seventy people who were marked, forty two of them had gone mad and were currently in Quinn's space. This meant that 840 of his MC cells were locked away, limiting the amount of shadow he could use. Quinn could tell that putting them in the shadow lock wasn't a permanent solution.

"You!" Ko shouted, stomping his feet while he walked forward. Ko himself seemed fine, but his men and the rest of the people in the training hall were not, having large wounds. This suggested that Ko had some skill, which was expected of a faction leader. "What did you do to all those people, tell me now." He demanded.

At this moment, it seemed like he didn't care who it was, but soon he found his footsteps stopped, and a few people around him.

"Do you really think you can just approach our leader like that?" Fex said, as he had tied his red string around Ko's arms and legs, pulling him with great force. Linda and Wevil were also in front of Quinn, almost protecting him, even though Quinn wasn't the one needing protection.

Ko grunted and was expecting his faction members to do something, but they did nothing and there were more than one reason. Just like the attack with the beasts, those from the Cursed had helped out the most when subduing those that were Marked. On top of that, they were injured, tired, and exhausted. They couldn't believe that the Cursed hardly broke a sweat. It was as if they had unlimited stamina, able to fight on forever.

"Ko, what are you doing, Quinn just saved all those people!" Hayley said, having an inkling to what he had done.

"The Marked people are fine, I have put them all in my shadow space. I saw that they aren't attacking each other. So I thought if I put them in the same area away from everyone else, they would be fine." Quinn replied.

"How am I meant to believe that? Am I just meant to take your word?" Ko said.

Tired of having to explain himself to Ko, Quinn lifted his hand up and pointed it towards him.

"What are you trying to do? Are you going to silence me because I'm the only one calling you out? Go ahead, show them who you really are!" Ko shouted, as if he had gone mad.

"No," Quinn replied. "I'm going to show you." Making a fist, a shadow appeared behind Ko, and soon his body had disappeared. One second he was in the training hall, and the next he was in a dark space, but he wasn't alone.

He could see all the Marked that were in the room were just standing there, lifeless, until they noticed him. They turned their heads and all their eyes started to glow as they charged towards him.

"No!" Ko screamed, but then, he could see himself in the training room again.

"Do you believe me now?" Quinn said.

Everyone had to get quickly organised. Robin remained outside, helping out business in the shelter and was protecting them from any more oncoming attacks, while Quinn and Ko were working inside together in the Shelter. Layla, Peter, Sil and Eno had come inside and learnt of what happened.

All those with markings were placed in a makeshift Cell, created by one of the faction ability users, who could produce wood. But everyone knew that, if they went mad, that the wood wouldn't be enough to hold them back.

Of course, Hayley started to focus on those that were injured and that's when she discovered something devastating. An emergency meeting was called by her and it was taking place in the training room. This was where the other Marked were being held and they made sure to stay close.

Ko and Quinn glanced at each other for a second, or it was more right to say, Ko glanced at Quinn until Peter stepped in between the two of them and stared back at Ko until he finally gave in.

'These people from the Cursed faction are crazy.' Ko thought.

"Hayley, I assume you have some important news." Quinn asked.

She looked almost frightened and nervous about what she was about to say,

"Yes, some of those that had been attacked by the Marked, who received deep wounds. It appears that they too now also are showing signs of the marking as well. Although it has hardly developed."

"Are you saying that it spreads, like an infection?" Layla asked.

"I believe so. For now, I have made a list of all those that have shown the marking." Hayley replied, bringing up the list.

Over thirty of the faction members' names were written on the list. Including the ones that were kept in the makeshift wood cell, at any time, they had around sixty more people that could turn mad.

"Hey, this can't be good, right?" Fex said. "Shouldn't we put them with the other Marked, inside that wooden prison you made."

"Do you really think that will hold them?" Linda said. "Their strength is nearly as strong as mine. If they get out and hurt more, then we will just have more to deal with on our hands. Sil has bored the power for now, but even he can't just keep making the cell forever."

"Then can't you just get Quinn to do what he did with his shadow to do the same to the rest, until we find a solution to this problem." Ko said.

"I can't. My Shadow can only hold so much and I'm already at my limit, there are just too many marked people." Quinn replied.

However, Fex at that moment realised something.

"Hey wait, Ko. I've been looking into the people who have gone missing and from what I've found out, this has been going on since the Shelter was first established on this planet. How many people have exactly one missing?"

Sure enough, at that exact moment, another leader of the Orbus faction came bursting in.

"Sir, we have a report from the Graylash team. More people are returning and they are bearing the mark."

"Tell us then, how many people have gone missing?" Eno asked.

Thinking about the answer, Ko gulped.

"Over a 1000."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: [jksmanga](#)

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: [jksmanga](#)

## Chapter 1057: Working with a Demon

As expected, more people started to return to the shelter that were missing, and despite Ko's orders to keep what happened into the faction base a secret. Word had gotten out to those in the Shelter as well. Rumors of a strange infection that took over peoples minds, making them attack anyone they could see.

Although the people were frightened by this, what it did do was stop them from asking questions about what happened to those returned. When they saw a group come back, now they had an idea why they were taken to the faction base.

However, the number of people that had returned was now over three hundred, and every single one of them had the mark on their body.

"Ko, what are we going to do?" One of the Orbus faction members asked while in the main office. "We are holding onto a ticking time bomb. More and more will eventually come. I know that we still outnumber them even if they all were to come, but the fact that they can infect others as well."

"Don't you think I know that?" Ko said, looking at the list of names of the people that returned, he looked through each of their names diligently, but it didn't seem like he had found what he was looking for.

"Thank the stars we still have the Cursed faction," the man blurted out, but quickly regretted saying those words, as he saw Ko's eyes twitching.

Still, Ko couldn't get too angry at the man, even he had to admit so far they had been a great help in more ways than one. When one of the Marked had gone mad, Quinn would place them in his shadow lock.

At the same time, Fex would tie up some of them with the red string. It seemed like not all the Marked had the same strength compared to each other. Some could break from the string while others couldn't.

Testing this, Quinn let out some of them from his shadow lock space, and allowed for Fex to tie the ones that were weaker up, giving him more room for his MC points, and to lock those that were potentially more dangerous.

Although, due to the sheer number of people being turned Quinn still was very low on MC points. Eventually, what they had predicted had come true as well, as one of the Faction members who had gotten bit, had been infected and turned into a mad Marked.

The idea was to capture him, so Hayley could study him, but it was impossible as the faction member was the strongest Marked they had come across by far. He had been wrapped in string that broke immediately, but Fex quickly overpowered him, hitting him a few times, before flipping him onto the ground.

Now he was one of those who were in Quinn's shadow space. Then finally another problem occurred. Quinn no longer had any more MC points to use the shadow lock skill, at least he wouldn't put anymore in as he wanted to keep some MC cells so he could still use the ability. Thankfully most of the ones that had progressed the furthest had already been put in his shadow lock so they had some time, but he had informed the others of this as well.

Inside the training hall, Hayley had just got out of the makeshift wooden prison cell created for the Marked.

"Did you find out anything at all?" Quinn asked.

"Yes, but it's not good news. There seems to be no relation on when someone disappeared and how far their marking has progressed since it depends on the individual. However, the main thing I have found, is for some reason those that have the marking passed on, the mark is spreading far quicker."

"In fact, it doesn't make sense, but I can only assume that since they have come here, the markings on their bodies have been progressing at a rapid pace." Hayley explained.

It was a tough situation they were all in, and there was one option they did have but no one had suggested it so far. To kill all those that were infected. This would solve a number of problems, they didn't have to worry about an attack from the Marked, they also didn't have to worry about others being marked and it would give them more time to find the demon tier beast.

As for Quinn, due to everyone he was holding in his shadow lock, it meant he could no longer use his shadow abilities. Even if he was to face the demon tier beast, could he do it without his shadow abilities? The whole thing seemed a little impossible.

'We don't have time, I have to find the demon tier beast today.' Quinn thought.

Looking around, all the faction members and even those from the Cursed were quite concerned. Quinn had already given them the orders that if it got too much, they were all to leave this planet.

They would have to give up on the people and give up on the idea of the Demon tier beast. He would protect them all from the Marked, as they got on the ship and flew out of there. Then using his powers he would travel to one of the shadow users on the Cursed ship.

The only person that seemed to be calm about the whole situation was Eno.

'That guy, does he know where the Demon tier beast is? Even if he did, I don't think he would tell me? What am I missing?' Quinn thought.

Finding no answers, Quinn had no choice and he felt like he needed to go on a search. Robin had already decided that they would protect the place, and Ko wasn't going to leave the shelter, which meant the Cursed were the only ones with free movement, but bringing along the others he couldn't see how it would help too much.

The night sky was upon them, and as Quinn informed the others of what he was going to do, he decided to take investigating the missing people into his own hands. Fex was left behind with all the Marked, since his ability came in handy the most for restraining the others.

They had found a bit of a pattern with those who were stronger and weaker. It seemed to correlate with how strong the person was before the marking. Which was why Travelers and Faction members were the most dangerous.

With this, they could buy more time.

In the shelter, Quinn could see a lot had changed. They had built several walls between the gates of the Shelter, going towards the faction building where the giant pink tree was. In total there were now five walls surrounding them, and on these walls were the Graylash faction members.

At the same time, behind the faction building, a larger place was built that would keep the rest of the people who weren't fighters and were unmarked inside.

Standing on top of the faction building, Quinn was looking out far and wide. People were still trickling into the shelter. He thought maybe he could try to follow them back. If he could locate where they were coming from, with his eyesight and hearing maybe he could track even more people further.

As he was looking out and waiting for someone to return to the faction, he heard some people exit from the building.

"Do you think this is a good idea, boss?" One of the men said.

"Do we have a choice? If I don't do this, then this Shelter is doomed. I have protected it for this long and will continue to protect it." A voice said.

Hearing the voices, Quinn recognized it was two males, and he knew the other voice quite well. Hopping over to the back of the building, he could see that it was Ko, with one of the other Orbus leaders, and also two others were with them,

"They don't look like faction members? They don't even have any beast gear on. What is he planning to do?"

The other two that were with them, had brown robes over their heads, and were being held by the arm by Ko and the other Orbus leader. It looked almost like the

two of them were captives. While walking, they looked around carefully, and Quinn continued to follow them from above.

It being their shelter, they knew all the secret paths, entrances and exits, until eventually they had exited from the shelter, and started to head into the woods.

'Now what the hell is the Orbus faction doing?' Quinn thought, as he continued to follow them, deep into the woods.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1058: The Demon's trick

'So there really is something going on.' Quinn thought as he continued to follow Ko and the others deeper into the forest. Before leaving, Quinn had released a few more from his shadow lock that could be tied up and left them to Fex. This gave him at least a hundred MC cells to play with and use his Shadow.

He needed something just in case of emergencies. It reminded him of the time when his MC cells were incredibly low, and the Shadow needed to be conserved more. At the moment, he was travelling up the tree's placing the Shadow around his footsteps, making them silent. While also using the Shadow cloak to make himself appear invisible.

'For people to constantly go missing in the first place, I thought those in the shelter would be involved. Who else could pull off such a thing, other than the faction leader.' Quinn looked at them in disgust.

'If I keep following them, then maybe they will lead me to the demon tier beast.'

'But are you planning to fight the Demon tier beast alone?' Vincent replied. 'Even with so few MC points. I think this might be impossible even for you.'

'I have an idea, but I should at least be able to escape if it's not the case. I remember learning about Demon tier beasts. How the higher tier beast seemed to have something similar to the abilities. Why would something as powerful as a Demon tier beast need to use humans to attack us? Either one, it's an intelligent beast, such as a humanoid one slowly weakening us bit by bit or two. It's the only way it can attack us.' Quinn explained.

Eventually, Ko and his group had stopped in a strange place. The tall grass they would usually walk on was flattened, and the peculiar trees looked to have been bent out of place. It was strange to see such an open area in the middle of the forest.

"Is this it? Where is everyone? I can't see them!" Ko shouted, looking around.

"This is all we can remember. I'm sorry." The men in the hooded robes answered.

Ko pulled the person's hood down out of anger and went right up to their face.

"You need to think harder! You have to. Where are the rest of the missing people!" Ko shouted.

Of course, Quinn could hear this all and was now slightly confused, but in a brief second, he saw it. The marking that wasn't visible on them before, suddenly shot up their neck. It branched out upwards into the back of their hairline.

At that moment, the man's eyes started to glow, and it looked like the one next to him was turning as well.

"You're dead!" The Marked man said as they started to laugh hysterically.

'They can speak!' It was the first time Quinn had seen one of those that was Marked showing any sign of communication. He still hadn't decided whether to jump in or not, but it was clear his initial thoughts were wrong.

Coming out from different parts of the woods into the open space were several beasts. The same type that had attacked the shelter. They had green skins and were long and tall like a giant stick insect. While having several sharp razor limbs, three on each side.

Most of them were at the advanced tier level. Still, there were also a couple of King tier's who had a black exoskeleton instead of green. Quinn knew all of this information due to his inspect skill.

"Enjoy!" The Marked Man said as he was ready to escape with his partner and allow for Ko and his teammate to be killed by the beasts. They pulled out their weapons, and Ko went ahead to try to stop Marked.

'He has to know something. That's the first Marked that has been able to speak!' Ko thought, but as he rushed forward, not caring about his teammate. One of the black-skinned beasts went along, blocking his path. He hit the beast with his weapon, and a clang was heard as if he was striking against metal.

The other six limbs came towards him, and Ko quickly jumped back.

'No, they're going to get away!' He thought but soon saw shadows appear in front of the two of them, and they were quickly consumed.

Then the beast standing in front of him was sliced apart, and all that was seen was an afterimage of a red aura. The top half of the beast fell to the ground, and Quinn could be seen standing behind them.

For the first time, Ko was happy to see Quinn here.

"Damn it, now I only have sixty Mc cells to use, but it looks like we might find some answers," Quinn said, as he quickly went forward, defeating the beasts with one hit each. A strike with his hands, and legs covered in the strange aura, would blow or cut the beasts' body apart.

The other two didn't even have to do anything. They just watched Quinn display skills they didn't even know he had.

Punching them with a strange red aura, not getting hit once, and moving incredibly fast.

'I've never seen anyone deal with beasts so easily. I thought the rumours about his strength were...exaggerated. Is there any human in this world stronger than him?' Ko thought.

All of the beasts were dealt with and Quinn, covered in black blood, walked towards them.

"You two, you need to explain yourself now. What are you doing out here, and why did you bring the Marked out with you?" Quinn's eyes were glowing red, not wanting to waste any time, and his influence skill was activated.

"We came out here looking for the rest of the missing people," Ko answered. "I thought they might lead me to my family." When the question was answered, Ko finally came to and wondered why he had just responded to his question.

'It looks like I was wrong. Ko was just using the Marked that seemed sane to try and find the rest of the missing people. He was just a man on a hunt for his family members.'

"Please, Quinn, I know I have mistreated you, but that Marked you captured. It seemed like he could speak. We have to ask him where the others are. Please, my wife, and my daughter. They have been missing for the last six months now!" Ko pleaded.

Quinn was going to attempt to talk to the strange Marked man anyway, so he didn't really see it as him granting this person a favour in the first place.

Bringing out the Marked that spoke, Quinn quickly grabbed him, pulled his hands, kicked the back of his legs, and stepped on them. With his strength and the armour set, he was sure there would be nearly no one that could overpower him at the moment, and it looked like he was right.

The Marked man's eyes were glowing, and he was constantly chomping towards Ko and the other men in front of him.

"Speak, where are the others? What did you do to them!" Ko shouted.

However, the Marked was now acting like all the others. Dribbling from his mouth and constantly biting away, trying to kill what was in front of him. Quinn had already attempted to use the influence skill on the Marked before, but it had no effect, and he knew it would be useless now.

'Do you think that the Demon tier was possibly the one that was communicating through the person? Perhaps the demon tier has more control over the Marked than we thought.' Vincent said.

At that moment, something had come to Ko's mind as he looked at the dead beast behind them.

"The Marked, I finally remembered where I have seen the marking before!" Ko said as he rushed over and pulled his blade over to the dead beast on the ground. He started to carve away inside its body, and finally showed part of the shell, there it was. Inside the body of the beast, the same strange marking could be seen. However, it was slowly starting to fade away after the beast was killed.

"I remember, when I was carving that moth beast, looking for the crystal, I saw the marking just above. They're controlling the beasts as well." Ko also realised that he had outed himself as the person who had stolen the crystal, but Quinn would leave that matter for another time.

'The beasts that are attacking carry the marking as well?' Quinn started to think. 'I thought that the beast was being attracted by something, but not also working with the Demon tier beast. Then is it possible that the demon tier beast were taking the people after every attack and then taking them somewhere to be infected?

'Why are they desperately trying to kill all the humans in the shelter? Beasts attack humans, but I've never heard of them going after humans before.'

Quinn desperately felt like he was missing something, and Ko and the other faction leader couldn't figure it out either,

"The demon tier beast. It can see everything we are doing. It knows we are out of the shelter right now. It was even trying to get rid of you. What Hayley said, about the marking growing quicker in the base!" Quinn said.

"Demon tier beast!" Ko repeated. "Are you saying this is all the Demon tier's beast doing?"

\*Ding

The sound of the system message was shown, but coming up now, Quinn didn't think it would be good news.

[New quest received]

[Defeat the demon tier beast before the whole shelter is infected]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1059: Killing the Marked

The night sky was out in the Shelter. Still, the unique glow from the plants inside the Shelter and outside gave everything a mystic feel and glow. There were all sorts of arrays of colours that would radiate from them and reflect.

The giant tree in the Shelter was shining the brightest. It was so luminous that no beast crystals had to be used as lightning in the Shelter. Everything had a slight pink hue as one would look around. Usually, if people were visiting the Shelter for the first time, they would admire such beauty, but everyone in the Shelter didn't have time for that.

The normal civilians were held up in a large emergency centre. At the same time, many faction members and Graylash members would be guarding on top of the wall. They assumed that with the number of missing people returning, they might have gotten some visitors even at night.

However, there seemed to be a little bit of a dry spell. Almost a couple of hours had passed with no new people coming to the Shelter.

Inside the faction base, all of the Cursed members were waiting in the training room, with around a hundred other people. Split between regular Travellers and Faction members. There was more than usual that would be inside of the room, but that was because they were afraid that an attack could happen at any moment.

"You look a bit worried and a bit tired," Layla said as she went over to Hayley's side, who looked disheartened. She was taking a break and having a cup of coffee to give her energy. It was the only thing keeping her going at this rate.

"I'm not like you guys," Hayley replied. "I don't know how none of you are tired. Even the faction members are rubbing their eyes, but all of you seem fine, even after fighting all those...Marked as you call them."

Layla gave an awkward smile and didn't really know what to say. Of course, none of them needed to sleep as much as humans because they weren't humans. They could go a few days without any sleep and function just fine, but they still needed their rest now and then.

"You know you can rest if you want. It doesn't look like any more Marked are coming in. I will look over you if anything is happening and wake you up if you are needed." Layla said.

"Thanks for the offer," Hayley replied with a smile. "Don't you think it's strange? That you're the one comforting me. I still remember when we were at the school and Quinn had come running in looking for you, and now your position is probably more respected than mine."

"So much has changed in so little time that it feels so unreal. I never thought the day would come where Layla Munrow would offer to protect me."

It certainly was odd, but Hayley had no idea what all of them had been through.

"So tell me, have you two made any progression?" Hayley asked.

Layla's face started to turn a bright red.

"What do you mean?"

"Come on, do you really think I wouldn't know? I'm a lot older than you. It's a shame to hear that you two haven't progressed further. Maybe that's what happens when you have too much going on, but to me, it looked like he liked you as well. At least back then.

"We have to be brave in these times, Layla. With the war going on, who knows if this is the last time we will see anybody. Do you really want to leave this world holding onto words you wished you had said?" When Hayley spoke of this, she was also talking about herself.

There was someone else she also wanted to speak to, afraid that she might never see them again.

"Your right," Layla said, clenching the bow in her hand. "I've been too afraid, waiting for the right moment, but it seems like there may well never be a right moment."

Entering the training room at that moment were twenty Graylash members. The others thought that they perhaps had more people to bring in and join the makeshift cell, but they had no one along with them.

"Don't mind us. We are just taking a break for now and having a look at the Marked." One of the Graylash members said at the front.

Hearing this, most of the people chose to ignore them. Peter, Eno and Sil were near each other. While Wevil and Linda were close to each other as usual. The only one that was apart from them was Fex, who stood outside of the makeshift cell.

Three faction members were standing in front of the cell door. Whenever one of the people inside would be turned. Someone inside would call Fex to tie them up. They would then be moved to another part of the cell where there was a wall between them with all the other tied up members.

The Graylash members started to walk up towards the cell entrance, and the guards assumed they would be going inside. As they walked closer to Fex, he began to sniff their air as he smelt something.

"Peter, Sil, it looks like we might have a job to do soon," Eno said, sniffing the air as well.

Eno hardly said anything to them, so they were sure to pay attention when he did speak.

Fex, thinking that something was about to happen, decided to move away and head over to where the girls were. As he walked past and through the Graylash members, they met eyes before he continued walking.

"Hey, do you know how long Quinn is going to be?" Fex asked.

"He didn't give me any time. I doubt he would be back until the sun rises. Why, what's going on?" Layla whispered, knowing something had startled him.

"It was hard for me to smell it at first because it looks like they've tried to cover it up, but those Graylash members that just came in right now, smell of blood," Fex said.

"Blood?" Hayley overheard. "Wait, aren't you going to stop them. Does that mean the Graylash members are going inside to kill them? Is that why no new people have come by? We have to stop them!"

"That's why I was asking when Quinn would be coming back. If the Graylash members are acting this way, it means it has to be an order from Robin. The only person that he will probably listen to is Quinn. Perhaps he believes the threat of the Marked has become too big and decided to take matters into his own hands. Let's just see what they do for now, and if they try anything, we'll try to stop them with words. If that doesn't work...we might have a tough fight on our hands going up against the Graylash family." Fex explained.

The guards willingly opened the door, so the Graylash could inspect the Marked.

"Be careful in there. There are quite a few that are about to be- "The guard's speech was stopped midway as he felt his head being grabbed.

"We know." The Graylash man said.

The guard's body shook as lightning was running through his whole body, and the other two guards were dealt with as significant lightning strikes had struck through them two as well.

"What's going on? The Graylash members just killed the guards!" Layla said, confused.

"The blood, it wasn't from the Marked, but it must have been from other faction members outside!" Fex shouted so everyone could hear, but they were all soon on

alert. The door to the cell was opened wide, and the Graylash members stood to the side.

Coming out from the small door, and breaking through it, the hundreds of captured Marked seemed to have all already gone mad and were already attacking the faction members close by.

"What is happening?" Peter asked. "Are the Graylash working with the Marked? But why? Is Robin behind this as well?"

Eno, stood there and looked at the Graylash members, a mad Marked came up to him, but he quickly placed his hand on its head and pushed them down to the ground as hard as he could, until the person's legs had snapped and bent outwards. The Marked was still moving but was only able to crawl with its hands.

"It looks like Quinn has been going after the wrong person," Eno said, shaking his head.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1060: Give us the boy

The faction hall had turned into a complete mess in mere seconds. When the Marked came rushing out of the room, some expected only a few to have gone mad. After all, they were really being checked on, and they even had a list of which markings had developed more.

Now they realised that the whole thing was useless. Every single person they had captured looked like they had already been taken over by whatever the marking was. What was worse, is how the faction members needed to deal with them.

They were unable to kill them, and at the same time, they were being cautious about getting bitten or hit, as they knew the infection would spread to them as well.

"We need to get out of here!" Layla said.

"I don't think that's an option," Fex replied. "Looking at how many Graylash members are in on this, I'm afraid it might be the whole lot of them. Do you remember what they were doing outside?"

The Graylash faction was in charge of defending the newly built shelter walls. They had just reinforced it by surrounding themselves with five layers. Most likely, they were trapped and had already dealt with everyone outside.

Fex was shooting out strings using all of his fingertips, trying to tie up as many of the Marked as possible. At one point, one of the Marked had come close to a faction member, but their body was pulled back just at the right moment.

Layla saw how hard Fex was trying and wouldn't just stand there either. The Marked seemed to be unintelligent and uncaring about everything. So she would fire off her arrows, hitting them in the legs with ease.

While Hayley just stood there shocked by the whole mess. She could help. She was quite a good fighter, but without getting bitten it seemed impossible. This fear was running through her, and not just her but the rest of the faction members as well.

Looking at the situation, Eno could see that the Graylash members were attacking the faction members with their lightning strikes but weren't aiming to kill them like they did with the guards. Instead, it looked like they were aiming for certain spots causing minor injuries or just to distract them.

It looked to be working, as one of the faction members raised a shield to block a lightning strike, but then was jumped by one of the Marked, and it bit through his shoulder guard.

"Are they trying to increase their numbers?" Eno thought. "And it looks like the Marked aren't going after those from the Graylash. Do they have something that even I don't know about?" Eno thought.

The man who had been hit, only seconds later, his eyes started to glow, and he too had become one of the Marked as well. Unlike before, the markings were seemingly turning people mad in seconds rather than hours or days.

"I was wrong. It looks like everything I was doing was wrong. Was it tricking us?!" Hayley said, seeing the situation unfold, as slowly more and more of the Marked were being created, it would only be a matter of time before everyone became a Marked.

"This is not your fault. None of this is!" Layla shot out a black spiritual chain hitting one of the Marked and wrapping around him.

'This form isn't strong enough, but luckily there is a lot of negative energy in this room. It will be useless to evolve into my third form, so my second form will be best.' Layla thought, as her body started to change.

She grew slightly taller, the horns hidden behind her hair started to come through, and the fangs on her face were becoming enlarged. She had become far more fighting than anything in the room.

In her second form, she could use the emotions around her to power her, and the more negative emotions there were, the faster and more powerful her strikes would be. The next second, Hayley saw one of the Marked get chucked across the room into the others.

Looking up, Hayley couldn't help but stare at what was in front of her. It looked like Layla, but at the same time, it didn't.

"Layla, what are you?" She asked.

She wasn't the only one that decided to get into action. Peter was being himself, hitting and chucking the Marked all over the place, slamming them as they came at him. This had gotten a lot of attention from all the Marked around, and he was probably one of the only ones that didn't have to be afraid of being bitten.

He already had received several scratches and bite marks, but they would heal up, and he wouldn't feel any different. It was clear he was immune to it, just like he was resistant to other things as well.

This was also true for Linda, who had grown in size and had decided to grab as many of the faction members as possible and place them behind her, the number was already dwindling to the last ten, and she could see they could really do nothing.

Wevil seemed to be in his element, attacking while not getting hit. He was treating it as a game, only transforming his legs. At the same time, the Marked were still human, so he could get blood whenever he wished.

Sil, no longer had the lightning powers. It had been too long since he used them, but he still had the wood power that was made to create the Cell. He could grow wood from underneath to wrap around the Marked, but those that were faction members and wearing beast gear were able to break free from the wood. Still, Sil had plenty of MC cells to continuously wrap around their legs over and over.

Eventually, all the cursed members fought the Marked while heading towards the centre of the hall, but it seemed endless. Hitting them down, they would just get back up. Even with the leg injuries, they would walk on the broken parts as if they felt no pain.

Now in the centre of the training hall stood all the Cursed, six surviving members of the faction, and finally Hayley.

"Stop!" The Graylash member said, who spoke when they first entered. He was wearing a bright white robe as usual, and it looked as if all the Marked listened to him as they stood still.

"Look at this, isn't all the fighting pointless? Why don't you just give in and come over to this side? We won't kill you, we promise." The Graylash member said.

"You're Crazy! Why are you doing this!" Hayley shouted.

"Why, you humans were the ones that invaded this place first. Isn't it right for me to get rid of you?" The Graylash member spoke, and soon his eyes started to glow like all the others as well. Pulling down the top of his robe, his muscles showed, but what they could see now was the marking having developed all over the person's body.

It went up along their chest, down their arms and on their back.

"They were already Marked, possibly from the beginning," Eno said. "Now it's starting to make sense. The one talking to us is not the Graylash family, but the Demon tier beast."

"Demon tier beast, what do you mean, where is the demon tier beast? Is it here?!" Wevil was confused.

"No, the Demon tier is somewhere else, but it's using them to fight us," Eno replied once again. "However, it looks like it doesn't want to kill us either. Perhaps it realises that our strength is far greater than all these around us. If it was to mark us like it did the rest."

The twenty Graylash members lifted their hands up, pointing them towards the group of people. While all the Marked moved to the side, clearing a path.

"Are we just going to stand here and let them attack us?" Linda asked, ready to transform once again. Right now, it looked like the members of the Cursed faction were the only ones that could fight.

"Let me ask you?" The Graylash member said. "If I ordered all of these Marked here to jump at you at once, while we used the Graylash's ability to attack you, do you think you would survive?

"You probably haven't noticed since we don't want to injure you, but the marking allows us to increase the human's power by sharing my own with them. You still haven't had a taste of what we can do." The Graylash member said, licking his lips.

Frustrated, Fex summoned his soul weapon, the black needle and threw it into one of the Marked nearby, pulling him over to their side with his strings.

"You ain't so special!" Fex shouted. "You're not the only one that can control people."

The Graylash started to chuckle.

"You are certainly an amusing one. I would love to see what's inside your brain."

While Fex was taunting the person, the others were looking for a way out of the place. They were all strong, but their main issue was they were unable to kill the people in the room. The only other option was to escape, but they were surrounded. They were also sure that the Demon tier wasn't bluffing about the Graylash's power.

"You look like you want to leave this place." The Graylash member said. "Why don't we come up with a deal? Give us the boy, and we'll let you go."

The Graylash member was pointing towards Sil.

'Sil, why would they want Sil?' Layla thought, but it hit her. If the Demon tier was able to control Sil. The strongest ability user there was. With the extra power it could give him, it would make the Demon tier beast unstoppable.

"You have been holding back while using your powers, haven't you?" Eno said, looking at Sil. "Why don't you get rid of them?"

"Because, if I was to use my powers, they might die by accident, and Quinn wouldn't want me to kill them," Sil answered.

The Graylash member, seeing that Sil and Eno looked unfrightened, was getting frustrated. Of course, even if they gave the boy, they were never going to let them

go. It wanted to watch the humans as they had hope and then take it away from them, but the hope had never left any of their eyes.

Still, at least it was enjoying the despair the people felt, but why? Why did the blonde-haired boy and the old man next to him look unfazed?

"My patience has run out." The Graylash member said as his hands started to light up blue, and lightning struck out, not just from him, but from all twenty of the Graylash members straight down the middle.

The power looked far stronger than anything they had seen before, and the others weren't exactly sure they were going to survive this one. Linda raised her shadow but couldn't spread it beyond anyone else.

The others were ready with an attack of their own, but a single man stood in front of them all, and the only thing they could see beyond the bright light of the attack, was his ponytail hair.

He placed his hands on the floor, and a flash of white light shone so bright nobody could see anything. When they peeked through as the white light seemed to fade, they were wondering why didn't they feel any pain, what had just happened.

"I was planning to stay out of this whole thing, but when you almost hurt me like that, then I will have to take part," Eno said. His eyes were glowing bright red.

"Unlike the others behind me, I have no problems with killing humans."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1061: Uncovering the Demon tier beast

At times, Quinn would be delighted to see a quest pop up. It was a chance for him to evolve, and grow stronger, which was exactly what he needed. The most common way for him to get a quest from the system was when he was facing a strong opponent.

However, this one, and lately the quest he had been receiving of late, were involving others, and he didn't like it at all. His body was screaming, telling him he needed to return back as soon as possible and the system message wasn't the only reason he knew he needed to.

It was also due to the connection he could feel. He could tell that the others were locked in some sort of combat.

'I have confidence in their strength, but who or what are they fighting? The Marked?' Quinn thought.

'It looks like the Demon tier is able to take over the human hosts whenever it wishes based on what we have seen. Perhaps, the Demon tier beast has turned all those captured already.' Vincent added.

"We need to go back now, the base is in trouble." Quinn said.

"But you said this is a Demon tier beast's doing, correct? Shouldn't we focus on that, maybe we can find the others as well?" Ko replied.

Ruffling of leaves and trees being pushed over were heard from the forest. Quickly using his inspect skill, Quinn could see many different beasts hidden, coming towards them at all sorts of different levels.

"Are those beasts, how many more are coming over to us." One of the Orbus leaders said.

There were a lot, and even with Quinn taking them all out with a single hit, it would delay their goal of getting back to the base.

'Wait a second, all of the beasts, they're coming from the Shelter. Is that what they are trying to do, slow our return back? If the Demon tier really knows I killed that Moth on my own, then it would make sense. Does it have an idea of my power?'

"I can't waste anymore time convincing you guys, you just have to believe me that the base is being attacked. You can either come with me, or stay to fight those beasts." Quinn said, as he activated his shadow travel and hopped into it.

As the ruffling of the trees got louder, knowing that the beasts were nearly upon them, it didn't take them long to hop into the shadow and come with him.

Traveling through the shadow they could avoid everything. It was fast and while in his shadow space, they could head directly to the shelter.

"Is this the same place as last time? I don't see anyone else." Ko said, thinking about the place where Quinn had trapped all the other Marked.

"No, this is different, you can see where we are above." Quinn replied.

As they looked up, they could see the trees and ground. It was like they were traveling in an underground vehicle with a glass roof above them.

If Quinn wanted to get there urgently, he could have used his shadow link to transfer himself to Linda, but he had a feeling that as time went on, the problem would increase. He could see on his quest bar that the number of those infected were rising.

The only thing he could do was find and defeat the Demon tier beast as soon as possible. Still not being able to get it out of his head, he decided to use his mask to call the others, and specifically called Linda.

"Linda, you answered, I guess that means you guys are okay for now, what's happening over there?" Quinn asked.

"Quinn, you need to come back as soon as possible, I believe the whole shelter is in trouble. The Marked have taken over the Graylash family members and they are stronger than ever. You need to be careful." Linda replied.

The other two could hear everything, and they couldn't believe that the Graylash family had been Marked. She continued to explain what had exactly happened, how much they knew of the events so far, but also said they were unaware of the situation on the outside.

'So the Graylash members might have been infected from the beginning?' Quinn thought. 'And they have no clue where Robin is or if he has been infected as well. The inspect skill only worked when I looked at the marking directly, so the clothes might have covered it up.'

"What about you guys, are you okay, can you hold out for a bit longer or do you need me there?" Quinn asked.

There was silence for a bit on the other end, as Linda was a little nervous, but she finally replied.

"Yeah, don't worry about us. We are going to be just fine, I don't think this Demon tier beast knows exactly who he is messing with, you do what you need to do." She replied, and hung up there.

Thinking about the call, he wondered what she could have meant by that. Was she talking about Sil? With Sil there, as long as he had strong abilities, he would protect them all, even from the Demon tier beast itself.

Eventually, Quinn had reached the shelter. They could now see it from a distance. He exited from the shadow, and quickly pulled the other two up with him, scaling a tall tree.

The others were about to complain about what Quinn was doing to them, when they could see it now from up high. Walking through the forest from all directions of the Shelter, were humans. Or, to be more precise, it was the Marked, but it wasn't a small number of the Marked.

It was the rest of the missing people. They were all plodding along, moving slowly towards the Shelter. When they arrived with the gates open, they could enter with ease.

"What is going on, why are they all heading towards the Shelter?" The Orbus leader asked.

"I guess you were right, something really is going on at the Shelter. Everything we heard seems true. Even the Graylashes on the wall seem to be doing nothing." Ko said. "There are thousands of them, and nearly everyone inside the shelter has already been infected that will be tens of thousands of people."

"Why now?" Quinn mumbled, looking at everything.

"What do you mean?" Ko asked.

"The Demon tier beast, you said people have been going missing since the start of the shelter. You've suffered from attacks time and time again. We have figured out that it's due to them already being Marked by the Demon tier. It was almost as if the Demon tier was waiting to build up an army large enough to get rid of you."

"There were other Shelters on this planet before, right? Did they suffer any of the same attacks?" Quinn asked.

"No, not that I know of." Ko said, figuring out what Quinn was getting at.

"So why does the Demon tier want to so badly get rid of you all? Why is it still sending everyone to this place now? Did you take something from it, did you anger it without realizing it from the very first day since you got here? No, that makes no sense, and considering the type of demon tier beast it is, my bet is that the demon tier has been in the shelter the whole time."

"It's the only way to explain how the Graylash family were Marked as well."

"A Demon tier in the shelter, are you crazy!" Ko shouted. "We would have found it by now if that was true, and what about all the signals that we receive from your device are you saying they were faulty?" Ko argued.

"Signals, didn't you see what they did to the Marked, and didn't you hear what my people said earlier. That they can control a Marked to the point where it can communicate, even empowering them. Perhaps it was giving fake signals powering beasts they had captured or the missing people, and if you want to know why? To take us further and further away from the goal."

Quinn had an idea what the demon tier beast was, but he wasn't quite sure yet, and he was sure there was one way to find out.

"You two, you are on your own from here. Make your way inside or stay here until it's safe, that's down to you, but I can't protect you guys." Quinn said as he got in his shadow travel, and headed towards the largest thing he could see in the centre.

Due to shadow travel, he could go under the walls that had been built and all the Marked seemingly ignored him until he had finally reached the largest thing in the centre: the giant pink tree.

Getting out from his shadow, Quinn was ready to take this thing down, at the same time falling from the top of the tree, something could be seen and as it hit the ground, lightning flew up in the air all around it.

"Very impressive, but I have to ask, how did you know?" The person standing in front of Quinn said, who was none other than Robin. He too had the top half of his robe taken off, and the red branch markings could be seen everywhere.

Quinn smiled.

"Honestly, I didn't but there were a few guesses I had made, there was something I noticed when I was shown a beast with the pattern before. It's not every day that a human gets turned upside down, but with the beast's skin, I saw it.

"The red marking, the branches that stem out on everyone, it looks exactly like this tree, but of course that could have just been a guess. Then, with my keen eyes and senses, I looked for the strongest power in this area, which led me to you, Robin...or should I call you a Demon instead.

"It would make sense for the Demon tier to put most of its power into the strongest human it could find. I heard that you failed to get my friend Sil, so why not stick to Robin, but that still doesn't answer your question.

"From the way you have been acting so far, you seem to be very cautious. I judged from the way your powers work that perhaps you weren't able to attack yourself.

It's a very strong power you have. Now, if one couldn't defend itself, where would it place its strongest piece.

"Putting all these things together, it was just making my guess seem more true, and in the end. If I took down a giant tree and it wasn't the Demon tier beast, then that's no harm done, is it?" Quinn explained.

In his mind, Quinn could hear the sounds of clapping.

'Brilliant deduction Quinn.' Vincent said. 'I've never seen you use your small brain of yours so much. Damn, someone should have recorded that and played it back to the rest of the Faction. Unfortunately, figuring out where the Demon tier beast was, is the easy part.'

'Now the hard part begins. Without your shadow powers, this will be a tough battle.'

"You are right, I have been cautious." Robin replied. "And maybe that made finding me easier, but it doesn't matter."

Falling from the tree, even more Graylash members were seen and in total, including Robin, there were now ten of them.

"You think I didn't know they were up there as well?" Quinn replied as he prepared himself.

"I have a good guess of your power Quinn from how you defeated my pawn of a Moth but if that is all of your power, then this will be a walk in the park." Said Robin.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1062: Level up Blood

A distance away from the Shelter, inside the forest, a couple of men could be seen up high in one of the tree's that emitted a green hue. These were Ko and Ely. They were both from the Orbus faction and had started it together. Ko became the head of the faction, while Ely became a vice leader.

Right now, it was heartbreaking what they were seeing. As they watched the Shelter, the two of them built up being overtaken, but they weren't being overtaken by beasts or anything like that. It was the Marked. More missing people continued to flock in, and the small sparks of fighting around the Shelter were dying down bit by bit.

"What are we going to do?" Ely looked at Ko. "I've followed you for this long and will continue to do so,"

Ko didn't answer and continued to watch the Shelter. He still couldn't believe that somehow the Graylash had been Marked. When did it start? They had been at the faction for a while now, coming and going, and even more of them had come before the Cursed faction due to the war.

'What started all of this?' Ko started to think.

They couldn't see what was going on in the Shelter. It was too far, but what they could see was the giant pink tree, and suddenly. Several lightning strikes started to fall from the top of it, then a few seconds later, they shot up from the ground one by one.

"Quinn, he said he was going to deal with the demon tier beast. Are they fighting near the tree? Why were they in the tree?" Ko said out loud to himself.

It was at that moment he remembered something when Robin had first arrived. He seemed to be fascinated by the large tree. He would continually look at it, even attempted to study it, but then that fascination one day just disappeared.

"The tree, that Damned tree has been the Demon tier beast this whole time, the thing that we built our Shelter on! Just because...we thought it would look nice." Ko shouted in anger, but Ely quickly placed his hand over his mouth, warning him that there were still Marked and others in the area.

'It's my fault. Why didn't I notice sooner? Wasn't it my decision to make a Shelter and the faction base here as well? And now everyone is getting hurt.' Ko thought.

"I'm going to destroy that damned tree!" Ko said. "I hate to admit it, but Quinn is strong. Stronger than anyone else here, but it also means that the demon tier will do everything it can to stop him from killing it. We need to use this chance to destroy

the tree ourselves! We know all the routes to the Shelter. If we're careful, we can get through without being spotted." Ko said, looking at his friend.

His friend looked nervous. Ely had already seen his life flash before his eyes when they were surrounded by the beasts. Still, now they were charging into danger.

"I already said, didn't I, that I would follow you," Ely replied.

The two of them quickly descended from the tree and were careful about their steps. It looked like the area they were in had the least amount of Marked. It made Ko wonder if Quinn had put them there on purpose or if it was a coincidence. He also didn't understand how someone was able to tell all those beasts were coming towards them from so far away.

Nonetheless, he was happy about the situation he was in currently. The Shelter gates weren't the only entrance. There was also a particular underground tunnel that he had created. Originally it was meant to be used as a tool for escaping, not breaking in, but it could be used both ways.

They headed far out from the west wall as Ko searched through the forest for the escape route. Finally, they spotted the special entrance in what looked like a giant stone.

"Wait!" Ely said, pulling Ko back before he charged into the underground tunnel.

Their secret tunnel didn't seem so secret as Ely spotted that Marked was already entering.

"If that demon beast really is a giant tree and is controlling the others, it will know about all of the entrances and secret places we built. It might even know this Shelter better than us." Ely explained.

"Damn it, then we're just going to have to sto-" Just as Ko was about to make a reckless decision, his grip on his sword loosened, and his body stood upright, looking at the two about to enter the tunnel.

He was staring at two women who both had long brown hair. One looked like a teenager, while the other was an older woman covered in mud marks and ripped clothing.

"Cammie! Carole!" Ko shouted and soon went running after them.

'What is that idiot doing!' Ely thought.

As if the two of them could hear their names being called, they turned to see off in the distance someone with their hand reached outward. The girls opened up their mouths' and dribble started to fall, and soon their eyes started to glow brighter.

The next second, both of the girls were charging their way, running towards the both of them.

"I knew, I knew they were alive!" Ko said.

"If you don't snap out of it soon, then you'll be the only one that's dead!" Ely shouted as he kicked his friend in the back to cause him to stumble before pulling out a crossbow and firing two beast arrows towards them.

"No!" Ko shouted. He pulled Ely's leg causing his shot to go off balance slightly.

"You can't hurt them. They're my family!" Ko said.

However, Ely knew that at the moment, they were not the family he remembered, and if they were to progress forward, something needed to be done.

"I'm sorry," Ely said.

Just under where the pink tree was, Quinn could see what he was up against. Strong members of the Graylash family were chosen to fight against the demon tier beast, and on top of that, a head general of the Graylash.

'Careful Quinn, I'm sure you can feel it with your Qi, but all of these have been infused with the Demon tier's beast power. Just like the Marked, they will be several times stronger than they were before.'

Quinn didn't resort to activating his beast gear just yet, he had the legendary set on, but for now, he wanted to use the stats they were currently. After all, activating his active skill could only be used once every hour. After that, there would be a significant drawback, and the armour would be useless.

He needed to gauge their power, but he couldn't use the shadow either.

"Looks like I'm going to have to fight like a vampire!" Quinn said as he ran forward and went for the Graylash members towards the sides.

"You're a fast one, but I already knew you were fast, and I know you can get faster from when you killed the moth," Robin said.

The next second, lightning strikes came out all over, aiming towards Quinn. At first, he thought he would have been able to avoid all the strikes with his current stats, but the lightning strikes were coming out far faster than he had predicted.

"These guys are juiced up!"

Thinking fast, Quinn could only do one thing, based on the number of lightning strikes coming his way. Throwing blood swipes at them would only block a few of the attacks, while he would get hit by the rest.

His fingers started to glow red, and the blood was seen rushing to his hands. On his skin, his veins started to shine slightly red, running up his forearm.

[Skill activated]

[Half of your HP will now be consumed]

[50/100HP]

[Blood barrage]

Throwing his hands out, with the stored energy, and using his own blood, a barrage of smaller blood swipes came splitting out. Soon they could be seen multiplying as they went through the air, each one of them hitting the lightning strikes dead on.

The attack was a lot weaker than that of a regular blood swipe, but it covered a far wider range, and Quin had another advantage. He also could power them with Qi making them stronger.

Hitting the lightning strike dead-on, the first line of blood barrage only stopped the attack, but as more came, they pushed forward and would overpower them, pushing it back and continue going forward.

Robin seeing his men about to get hurt, decided instead to step forward.

"What that move this guy has....Lightning Storm!" Robin shouted as he punched both his hands into the ground. Lightning shot up like roots in front of his people. It was like a wall of lightning strikes, and the red aura would fade as they continued to be hit.

"It looks like you don't just have fast legs and have been hiding a few things," Robin said.

The skill Blood Barrage was learned after Quinn had managed to upgrade his Blood swipe to level 5. Just like Eno had explained, Quinn's skills could level up to 5, and once they did, they could evolve into new skills like blood barrage, and at the moment, blood barrage was too weak only being at the level one stage, and using it took a lot of HP.

'That lighting is strong.' Quinn thought. 'And I can see he is even wearing beast armour underneath those robes. Suppose the Demon tier really is making their body superhuman. In that case, this is going to be like fighting a vampire leader with the power of lighting, one of the strongest powers the human race holds.'

'The good news is, blood barrage wasn't the only thing I learnt!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1063: Two strong forces

Slowly opening his eyes, Ko could feel a constant, dull pain on the top of his head. When they were finally fully opened, he could see the dark sky.

"What happened?" He slowly asked, lifting his body up and looking around. As the pain went away, Ko also started to remember what had happened just seconds before.

'I was on the ground, and looking at Ely. Wait, my family. What happened to my family!' Ko thought.

He could find no traces of his wife and daughter. His head twisted and turned and eventually he could see his friend Ely huffing and panting.

"You!" Ko shouted as he ran towards his friend.

"Wait, Ko, what the hell are you doing!" Ely said as he turned with the crossbow still in his hand. It was loaded, but he didn't want to shoot his friend, especially if he hadn't been marked.

"Your family, they're fine!" He said as he quickly pointed a distance away.

Ko looked at where he was pointing at, and ran over to see that the Marked were crawling towards the two of them. His wife's legs and arms had been badly hit with arrows and it was the same for his daughter.

One would have been in immense pain from the wounds alone. Falling to his knees, Ko wished he could have been in their position instead.

"I would have never killed your family, Ko, but I knew that you couldn't hurt them either. The only thing I could do was slow down their moments. The Marked, even if we take out their legs, they can crawl incredibly fast with their arms. I'm sorry. I didn't want you to see what I was going to do." Ely said.

Ko was left crying and even with their hands and legs badly injured, they were crawling on the ground with their glowing eyes. That's when he noticed that their wounds, although their muscles had been injured, it looked like Ely had attempted to patch them up at the same time.

"Ely, did you?"

"I know these beings seem to have a stronger will to live, but when we kill the Demon tier beast, who knows if their wounds will kill them or not. I needed to be sure. We have a job to do, you were the one who said it, kill the Demon tier beast and everyone will be free from this mess." Ely explained.

Picking himself up, he looked at his daughter and wife's face one more time. The Marked in the area didn't seem to get hurt by the beasts or anything else, and he wanted to stay by their side. He wanted to make sure they would be okay.

However, if Ko didn't act, then they wouldn't be okay. The people he was looking at right now were not his wife and daughter, and it took a lot of self-convincing for him to move his feet and head down the tunnel into the Shelter, on the way to the pink tree.

Inside the faction hall, currently, there were over three hundred or so marked, ready to jump on the large group that was in the middle, but they stood still, and so did the Graylash members that were there, as well as a single man who had just stopped their attack.

"If you kind people would be able to deal with the Marked, then I will take care of the troublesome ones." Eno said, and before they could say anything, they could no longer see him in front of them.

The next second, a Graylash member had been kicked in the head and sent flying across the room. They turned and fired lighting towards Eno, but spirals of blood from his hands would spin, blocking the attack, making it seem like it did nothing.

"You will need to try a lot harder than that!" Eno said. "I know plenty of people who could take you on with ease."

lightning strikes appeared consistently. Without a second thought, Eno pulled a Graylash member directly in front of him. His body took all of the attacks instead. When being struck by the lightning the body was shocked for a couple of seconds but the person seemed to still be conscious and moving, still trying to break free.

Seeing this, Eno kicked the man's legs before chucking him over to the other side, and soon noticed that the first one he had hit was walking again.

"Hmm, so your power really has made them resilient." Eno said.

While Eno was fighting the Graylash family, he had the attention of all of the members and sure enough, the Marked had all charged forward. At first, the faction members were scared, but it looked like they had no reason to be at all. With their backs facing each other and with them in the middle, they were being protected by what could be described as a wall of muscle.

The hardest part for the faction members when fighting against the Marked, was their overwhelming strength, speed and the fact that they never seemed to tire, but looking at those in the Cursed, they seemed like monsters themselves.

Peter, and Linda both had the strength of several of the Marked, and could continually use their strength to throw, break their enemies bones and make it so not a single person could get past. The others were far faster than any of the

Marked as well, with Layla, Fex and Wevil having superior bodies, it looked like they didn't need to do anything at all.

It was so calm that the others could see what Eno was doing while fighting. The Marked just seemed like an annoyance for them. That's when Linda saw it.

'It's annoying how you keep getting up.' Eno said. 'So I will just have to see if this works.' His body moved away from one of the Graylashe's again, and this time, Eno was directly in front of the leader. His hand was already covered in the blood aura, spinning like a drill.

The next second, the Graylash member was lifted into the air as his hand went through his stomach, and then chucked over to the side. The Graylash member was now no longer moving.

"You killed your own!" A Graylash member said.

"My own? Do you think me and them are the same?"

It was clear that the Demon tier beast that was controlling the people was taken aback by this. One of the main reasons the Marked could spread around so easily, was because the humans were afraid of killing their own.

Even the faction members, and Hayley were stunned by this. However, they didn't blame Eno for what he had done. At this moment, it truly felt like it was either the Marked lives, or theirs.

Moving onto the next one, Eno was ready to shove his blood drill through another. Until the man's eyes were no longer glowing, and the markings on his body started to fade.

"Wait, no, the demon beast is no longer controlling him!" Hayley shouted, paying attention to what was going on.

The man's eyes were now sane and as he saw the attack coming towards him, he saw no sign of it slowing down.

At the last second, a strong lightning bolt came, shooting out, hitting the blood drill away, flinging Eno's hand in the air.

"Now you choose to come in?" Eno said.

"Quinn wouldn't want us to do this. We can beat them without having to kill them!" Sil shouted.

"Why make the task more difficult? And how helpful can these people really be if they have allowed themselves to be taken over by a demon tier beast?" Eno asked.

Sil now had both of his hands wrapped in lightning. Eno chose to ignore him and moved to the next person, but taking a step forward, he was hit again, this time hitting his body.

The strike was so strong, a hole had been made through his bicep, but it soon started to heal directly on the spot.

"Very well!" Eno said moving forward.

Moving his hands, each time Sil would produce a lightning strike towards Eno. The two of them were now suddenly fighting against each other.

The clashes between them were so strong that the Graylash members were unable to act, every time they tried to, they would be hit by a stray attack, flinging them off to the side. Two great powers in the room were colliding, and the enemy could do nothing to stop them.

"What! Now the problem isn't the Marked or the Graylash, but we have to worry about these two trying to kill each other!" Linda said.

"I think the bigger worry is if they kill us in the process of their fight!" Said Fex.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1064: What would they do?

The power of the Demon tier beast was running through every single person that had a mark. Quinn could feel the energy being spread out to each of them. Still, he also could tell that most of the power was being concentrated on Robin and the other Graylash members by his side.

'I'm starting to understand why Demon tiers can be seen as so frightening. If it was patient, it could have taken over everyone slowly, and if it wasn't for the system, we would have never found out about the marking. Everyone could have been marked, and then it could have attempted to take them all over at once.'

'And just how many beasts are under the control of the Demon tier?'

It was undoubtedly a frightening thought, and it made Quinn reluctant to go out hunting and to search for these Demon tier beasts. Thinking of Hilston having a full set of Demon tier armour meant he must have at least defeated four of these things.

'Just how much of a monster are you? Would he have been able to deal with this easily? Am I still that far off from the so called, Strongest human?'

Thinking about this, it was only encouraging Quinn even more. He couldn't just win this fight by the skin of his teeth. He needed to evolve and become stronger so Demon tiers would no longer be a problem for him.

With his HP at fifty percent, Quinn aimed to get rid of the troublesome ones first. The lightning strikes were fast, but he had an attack that could do something similar, but the move took up too much blood.

A flash step was used at the right moment to avoid a strike, and the second Quinn landed, he held out his fingertip like a gun firing a blood bullet.

[Level 3 blood bullet activated]

As the bullet went through the Graylash member's hand, he felt great pain, and there was hardly any residence at all, but Quinn wasn't done yet. After using the blood bullet, his finger would be out of action.

Unfortunately, Quinn couldn't level up the blood bullet to level five and unlock the blood cannon, but there were a few changes to the skill.

After levelling it up, the blood bullet, rather than taking 1/5 of his total health, it would now take up 1/5th of his current health when in use. Which meant the lower his health was, the less it would take up.

Firing off the bullet in succession, Quinn aimed for accessible spots to hit all ten Graylash members, using every single one of his fingers.

As a bullet went towards Robin though, his body seemed to be encased with lightning striking the bullet, not allowing it to get through.

His health was now incredibly low. He used the blood bank to its fullest, healing him and his fingers up once again.

[Level three blood bank activated]

[100 millilitres of blood consumed]

Through testing with Eno, Quinn had learnt a lot about the blood blank. Even though he didn't need to consume 100 millilitres of blood for his health to completely regenerate, this amount was what gave the quickest results when healing.

His fingers were back to what they once were, but now the blood bullet could no longer be used for another twenty-four hours regardless if his fingers were healed. The good thing about the new levelled up blood bank was now Quinn could store 300 millilitres of blood. Essentially giving him three lives in the middle of a fight, and it was more opportunity to use his stronger skills that took up more blood.

The Graylash men that had been hit weren't out of the fight, but they were hurt, and Quinn wasn't done yet. They continued to fire lightning towards Quinn, and he could now see Robin charging towards him as well.

'Isn't he afraid of getting hit by the lightning?' Quinn thought.

However, even if the strikes from the others would hit him, they would do nothing, being reflected from the lightning off his own body. His power would just strike the other strikes, and he would continue to charge forward. Faster than any human he could see. Quinn couldn't avoid all the attacks, so some would hit him from time to time, but there was one person he needed to avoid, and that was Robin.

He was moving too fast for Quinn to even have time to use his flash step; he knew a collision was incoming. Moving his blood, it started to harden. Blood hardening was another skill Quinn had learned from Eno, but he could only get it up to the second level.

Moving his second stage of Qi to reinforce it, he took the blow head. It looked like a rocket had collided straight into Quinn's stomach as the two of them were dragged through the air.

[-40HP]

'Even with the armour on, the hardening, and Qi, it still does this much damage!'

Robin's body was all encased in lightning, but Quinn was able to slip away from him as the blood started to move, creating a barrier between the two of them. With

the Qi helping out, he could detach himself from Robin's attack, and fell to the ground.

"My target was never you in the first place," Quinn said, breathing heavily with his chest full of pain from the attack. He held out both hands and looked at the nine others.

[Blood expand activated]

Suddenly, all of the nine Graylash members had parts of their bodies explode, blood ripping out from their skin. Some had been hit in the leg. Others had blood gushing from their arms. They weren't dead, but they certainly were now heavily injured that they couldn't fight like they did before.

Blood expand, wasn't a skill that vampires used, but something Quinn had learnt to do after figuring out his blood control. After firing off the blood bullets, Quinn had to use an immense amount of control to control the shots so they would remain inside the Graylash members. It had entered a part of their body but never left it.

The blood bullet was a condensed form of Quinn's aura, and through blood control, Quinn was able to make the blood bullet inside their body expand and go wild. Destroying a part of a person from the inside out.

[Blood bank activated]

[100 millilitres consumed]

[100 millilitres remaining]

"Now that these annoying guys are out of the way, I can finally deal with you!" Quinn shouted, looking at a furious Robin.

[Activate Nitrate accelerate]

This was the opportunity Quinn was waiting for. He knew the annoying members of the Graylash would soon be able to attack in some way. He needed to finish this battle now. Activating his armour sets active skill. He now needed to finish the fight in two minutes.

Pressing off his foot, he dashed left, right, and then straight towards Robin.

Sending out a strike from each of his fingertips, Robin still had an answer. His first attack had missed, but the following nine somehow managed to hit Quinn.

It zapped his body, sending him spinning in circles through the air. The next second, Robin was above him and slammed two fists filled with lightning hitting Quinn into the ground.

Using the last bit of his blood bank, he quickly used his new speed to get away but was now constantly running in circles around Robin. It just looked like a blur was running around the place.

'What happened? How did he attack me when I'm moving so fast? Was it because I stopped moving? Then I'll just keep moving so he can't hit me.'

"You're a fool, I have to admit you are fast, and maybe the move would have worked on me if I hadn't seen it before, but do you really think that you can outrun the power of lightning? The attacks may be weaker, but I can hit you anytime I want!" Robin said, now throwing out more little sparks of lightning in all directions.

He didn't know where Quinn was but just needed to hit him once for him to slow him down as his body reacted to the hit.

'If only I had my shadow!' Quinn gritted his teeth. 'I can't win without using it, I can only do one thing then. I have to do it!' Quinn thought.

A wall of red blood aura was raised in front of him, blocking off the first wave of lightning attack. It was smashed in seconds. Quinn knew that Robin could just make the same attack again, but that wasn't what he was aiming for.

[Shadow lock, release]

All around, shadow portals opened up, and the hundreds of Marked that he had in there, were all released from the shadow space. In an instant, they all turned to attack Quinn, but with his speed, he could avoid them all without them ever seeing him.

The small lighting strikes would hit them, hurting them, but wouldn't kill them, and now Quinn had Robin in his sight.

Bending his knees slightly, Robin got into a strange position. He looked like a sprinter and lighting started to run up his arms and legs. The Demon tier beast was activating Robin's soul weapon.

"You have to attack me at some point, and even if you touch my body, you will be zapped before anything can happen!" Robin shouted. The lighting continued to grow and was now wholly surrounding his body.

It truly did look like if anyone touched him, the fight would be over. Then Quinn suddenly appeared in front of him, standing there.

Without hesitation, Robin charged forward using all of his power to hit Quinn's Body. The two of them collided, but something was strange. There was no weight

when Robin slammed into Quinn. The lightning from his body struck Quinn many times, and his body soon turned into nothing but shadows.

When Robin's acceleration started to slow down, he was at a speed where he could no longer stop himself, he could see another Quinn directly in front of him a distance away. His hand was shaped like a drill covered in the red aura.

He stomped his foot on the ground, and timed the punch perfectly. The only thing Robin could do, was to lift his body slightly to avoid the attack. With the last of his powers, he struck the floor, lifting him slightly off the ground, but it wasn't enough. There was too little time.

The hammer blood drill slammed into Robin's stomach, his arms, legs and head swung forward from the sudden stop. His body was thrown halfway up stopping at Quinn's shoulder and even caused his feet to slide across the floor. The veins on Quinn's neck showed as he fought against the velocity and weight until they eventually stopped, and Robin's body was no longer moving.

When comparing himself to Hilston, and Arthur, he knew this was what they would do, and was most likely the only option.

"I'm sorry...I couldn't keep you alive..." Quinn said.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1065: The ultimate choice

The sounds of people huffing and panting were echoing as Ko and Ely continued to run as fast as they could through the tunnels. The place was similar to a maze with many variations where one could turn at, that would lead them to different areas of this tunnel.

Luckily, Ko had remembered the way back to the most important place, which was the one directly in front of the faction base.

"It looks like there aren't any Marked around here. Do you think they already got to where they needed to be?" Ely wondered.

That's when Ko suddenly stopped moving, making Ely bump into him. Just as he wanted to complain that he stopped, he too saw the silhouettes of two people turn around and start heading towards them.

"You just had to say something! Of course there would be Marked down here!" Ko shouted at him, as he pulled out his weapon. He was quite skilled with the sword, but he wasn't sure it would be enough to fight off the Marked. His ability was also rather useless in the small cramped space.

Unfortunately, retreating wasn't an option either. The Marked were fast and strong and now that they had seen them, they wouldn't stop chasing them. He would have to at least injure them to the same degree as his family members if he wanted to escape.

Ko punched the first Marked in the face and sent him stumbling back a few steps. He was ready to stab its companion, but before he got a chance to attack the second Marked who had opened his mouth wide, ready to dig into Ko's shoulder, Ely barged into it, making it fall to the ground.

However, it wasn't the only one sent flying. Having used too much force, Ely tripped over. The next second, the first Marked that had already recovered from the earlier hit, lept up but instead of trying to get revenge against Ko, it bit Ely into the side of his arm.

"Arghhh!" Ely screamed in pain. "Screw you, you bastard. Ko, just run, I'll hold these two back and any other! You have to get to that damned tree!"

Ko wanted to save his friend, but he knew that after being bitten, Ely would soon turn into a Marked as well. Gritting his teeth, Ko left the trio behind. The Marked who had just bitten into Ely wanted to give chase, but he felt something grab its leg and yank it back.

When he turned around he saw Ely with one of his eyes glowing.

"Now have a taste of your own power huh!" Ely screamed at it.

The process of turning was usually rather instantaneous, yet the one before it had somehow managed to delay it, giving him time to fight it.

Ko continued to run, until eventually reaching a hidden escape route. Wasting no time he pushed the trap door up and slid it off to the side before pulling himself up. Exiting from the doors, he could feel waves of energy hit him.

Something was going on and sparks of lightning were everywhere. Ko wanted to ignore it, so he turned to look around and thankfully no one seemed to be next to the pink tree, at least the back of it.

Running forward, Ko could now hear that the sounds of fighting were turning more intense, curious he couldn't help himself but to take a peak around the corner.

Head General Robin had blue lighting covering his whole body from head to toe, seemingly powering up for a massive attack, yet Ko was unable to see who exactly he was currently fighting. Once he was done, a big clash occurred, revealing Quinn who had been invisible before that. Now he stood in front of Robin open for an attack.

"Don't tell me he's been fighting against Robin this whole time?!" Ko mumbled in surprise to himself.

'Damn it, I cursed that guy, and his whole faction and now it looks like he's even risking his life for this place... what the hell kind of leader does that make me?' Ko thought as he stopped spectating and gazed at the giant tree.

He didn't really know where the crystal would be located, as he had never had the chance to fight against a Demon tier beast like this, so he grabbed his sword and swung it as hard as he could sideways like an axe.

During his swing, his weapon sword grew in size until it overshadowed the trunk itself... Yet after it landed there was no damage. Grumbling, Ko went over to inspect the tree, only to discover that his attack had barely left a scratch, yet on the blade itself a black substance could be seen, which looked exactly like beast blood.

Unsure what to do, Ko started to experiment with the way he attacked it. At first he attempted to take it down from the bottom, making it topple over, but that turned out to be ineffective.

Then he started to cut off the bark of the tree as he made his weapon larger. He managed to remove some pieces of bark and they left behind a pink glow underneath, proving that it was no ordinary tree at all.

After removing most of the bark from one side, he now could just see a large pink glowing substance but no crystal.

'It must be an outer layer or something, I just need to destroy this thing.'

Holding up his sword one more time, Ko swung it with all his strength again. As the two collided a loud clang resounded, and once again a small amount of black blood was seen seeping from the pink crystal. However, as if reacting to the aggressor, the tree let out a large energy, blasting Ko away and sending him flying across to the other end.

The leader dropped his weapon and was kneeling down on the floor. He could tell instantly that he had been marked and that something was trying to take control of him.

"No, I'm not letting you have your way, not when I'm this close!" He screamed in defiance, thinking of everyone in the shelter that had been hurt by this thing.

"I think you might need a little help, that sword just ain't going to cut it!" Suddenly, he heard a voice from behind, and what greeted him was the sight of the entire Cursed faction, Hayley and the faction members that had survived had come out from the faction base and made it to the large tree. However, they still had plenty of Marked chasing after them.

Peter and Linda were at the back, they had closed the door, and now were holding it steady against the onslaught of enemies, but it didn't stop them from breaking part of the door. As for Sil and Eno, the two of them looked injured as they stood on opposite ends from each other. Clearly avoiding each other's gaze.

Hayley knelt down by Ko's sides and looked at the marking on his back, noticing that it was progressing faster than what she had seen but the marking was growing and then subsiding at the same time as he thought against it, indicating that Ko must have had a strong will to resist the turning.

Fex, Sil, Eno, Wevil and Layla walked forward ready to destroy the tree.

"Wait!" Ko shouted. "If you touch that thing you'll be Marked as well!"

"Don't worry, we're not exactly 'ordinary' people?" Fex chuckled.

But when they turned back around they could see someone else standing in front of the tree, where the exposed pink crystal area was, and it was none other than Quinn.

'How did he manage to survive against Robin?' Ko wondered.

After defeating Robin, Quinn placed the forty or so Marked back in his Shadow lock to not cause any more problems. With its goons dealt with, he was ready to

take down the tree as well. With the bark exposed and using his inspect skill he could tell that this was indeed the Demon tier beast.

Both of Quinn's legs started to be covered with a red aura, he then quickly ran back to where the others were.

"I still have about thirty seconds left of the active skill," Quinn informed them. "I'll take it down in one go."

Running at top speed, his vampire powers allowed Quinn to jump up and spin his body as he swung from his hips, to throw out his right leg as hard as he could to activate his active skill. This move had been taught to him by the martial arts master.

The spinning tornado kick!

The blood aura around his legs were now spinning like a drill once again, and at such a speed it slammed into the crystal. The entirety of the shelter and the ground it was on jolted forward a few centimetres due to the power behind the attack.

The roots that had been deeply dug in shifted forward and everyone lost their balance for a few seconds. When they looked at the tree, the pink crystal started to crack slowly, until eventually, it shattered. Black blood began oozing from it and the pink power started to fade.

The bright coloured leaves started to fade, adn all the colourful trees on the planet started to fade with it as well.

[Congratulations]

[The quest has been completed]

As Quinn landed and saw the system notification screen, he thought he could finally rest, ready to check out the rewards.

"Argh!" A scream could be heard from behind him, and all of them could see that Ko was rolling about on the floor. He continued to scream in pain at the top of his lungs.

"I don't know what's happening, I can't heal him!"

Peter and Linda noticed that the door was no longer being pushed back, and when they opened it up they could see that all the Marked were similarly rolling about on the floor in pain.

'What happened? Didn't we defeat the Demon tier beast? Shouldn't the ones marked return to normal?' Quinn wondered... before he realised that this very information had come from none other than Eno.

Looking up, he tried to see where Eno was, but he was nowhere to be seen.

"Now you have a difficult choice, Quinn," a voice said from behind. Turning he could see Eno, with a pink crystal that was almost see through in his hand. For a second Quinn was having a sense of Deja-vu, when Arthur had stolen the Demon tier crystal.

"With the power of the Demon tier crystal, I can use my ability to get rid of the markings on everyone here, thus saving their lives. However, you saw the power of this Demon tier crystal. Using it, you could create a weapon or a piece of armour that will undoubtedly bring us one step closer to defeating the Dalki race."

"I have given you many warnings Quinn, and after today's events I can confirm it even more. At the current rate, the human race is doomed to lose the war against the Dalki."

"It's up to you. Do you wish to save the ones afflicted, forsaking the rest of humanity, or shall we lament their sacrifice for the greater good?"

"You must now choose?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1066: Live on to the end

Quinn wasn't sure why, but for some reason Eno seemed to disdain making a decision on his own, rather opting to let others decide for him. It seemed like he was either afraid of having to take responsibility for the consequences of such an action... or perhaps he simply didn't care about the outcome either way.

'What's up with having to decide? Didn't he say that killing the Demon tier beast would get rid of the Markings?' Quinn wondered.

'Indeed, he did,' Vincent confirmed it. 'I'm afraid that technically speaking he isn't wrong about that. The Markings do seem to disappear from their bodies, but they also seem to be taking their life force away as they do.'

'It's hard to say whether he knew this would be the outcome, but if he told you about this possibility I'm certain you would have attempted to try and find another way to help those that have been Marked without killing the Demon tier.' Vincent added.

'I was an idiot to just trust him that defeating the Demon tier beast would be the end of it!' Quinn replied, pissed, 'Now it's too late to look for another way!'

'Quinn, now is not the time for regrets. As far as we know, this might have very well been the only solution. Just look at the current state of the Shelter! It has been taken over to this degree, despite you having acted as soon as you did! Barely any survivors are left standing. Do you really think we had the time to look for another way?'

The screams of people throughout the Shelter continued and Quinn had to agree that Vincent was right. He had to make a choice about whether or not to help them. Regardless of what could have happened, what Eno should have told him, he had to solve the situation their actions had led them to.

Originally, they had intended to use that Demon tier beast crystal on Sil. This was the exchange that was needed to use his power, but Quinn had other ideas about this in the first place, this was only his back up plan.

He never wanted to rely on Eno using his powers, but when he came across two Demi-god tier beasts as well, he now had enough to use Eno if he wanted to, which meant the Demon's crystal could now be used to create a weapon.

Until, Eno had just dropped this bombshell on him.

"Quinn, you can continue to hesitate but that will also have been your decision then," Eno stated, holding up the crystal.

Rolling around on the floor, Ko was barely conscious enough to register the conversation around him. Naturally, he wanted Quinn to use the Demon crystal to heal him, but more so he wanted his family members to survive this ordeal.

Alas, he was also aware just how precious a Demon tier crystal was. Factions would have wars to obtain such a thing. At the moment, the human race only had two Demon tier weapons, one belonging to Pure and the other to Oscar.

A third one would be of great help against the Dalki.

'After everything we have done to treat the Cursed like crap, they don't owe us anything,' Ko sighed, as he fought through the pain. He pulled out the Demi-god tier crystal from the side of his pouch and passed it on to Hayley.

The veins on his neck were showing, and it was hard for him to even speak. He was going through intense pain.

"Give it...to them." Ko requested through gritted teeth.

Turning, Quinn could see this... and it helped him make a choice.

"I can't do it! I can't be the selfish person you seem to want me to be Eno!" Quinn stated. "We can always find more Demon tier crystals, but we can't bring back the dead."

"Are you sure about this, Quinn? You know how long it has taken to find a crystal like this, and even though there are more, there isn't a lot of time until the Dalki will arrive," Eno questioned Quinn's determination.

At the moment, although Quinn looked to be strong standing there, his leg was throbbing with pain from the attack. His health was low from using the blood technique, and all he wanted to do was rest, but hearing this a new energy was rising in him.

"If the Dalki attack, and we don't have a Demon tier weapon, then I'll just find another way to defeat them! I've come this far without having to rely on them!" Quinn shouted.

At that moment, the crystal was seen as it was chucked in the air, and landed straight in Quinn's hands. He was confused, as the crystal still had its glow and power.

"Wait, Eno, I said save them, I told you to use the crystal!" Quinn said.

"Quinn!" Hayley shouted with tears running down her face. "He's getting better!"

Although they had gone through a lot of pain, the Marking had disappeared and Ko's breathing had slowed down, returning to normal. He was still weak, but his health had visibly improved.

'Did he use his ability without having to use the crystal?' Quinn wondered.

'No that's not it, we can't activate our ability like this,' Vincent clarified.

"I see you're confused." Eno said. "That crystal is rightfully yours to keep. Do what you wish with it, I told you before didn't I, defeating the Demon tier beast would get rid of the Marking. Everyone should be okay now."

"I just wanted to know, Quinn, what your answer would be when you would be faced with such a situation. We can always ask people these types of questions, but only when they are faced with the real situation is it possible to discover someone's real character."

"This time, you didn't really have to decide, but in the future there is no guarantee you will have such a luxury. It might be better for you to get used to this!"

Eno then started to walk away from Quinn, who unsurprisingly wanted to smash his face in for putting him through something like that, but Vincent, as his voice of reason, told him that Eno had a point of doing all this.

Although Quinn wasn't particularly listening to Eno, he chose to refrain from hitting him, if only due to how weak his body was currently feeling. It would be impossible for him to defeat even a regular vampire at the moment, much less one like Eno.

Before Eno was out of sight, he suddenly stopped for a few seconds and turned around.

"Your earlier decision... it reminds me of Arthur ."

'I'm like Arthur, what does he mean by that?' Quinn thought.

After a while, everyone who had been Marked and turned woke up again. Those that had been afflicted were aware of what they had done. Although they had not been in control of their body, they still felt responsible, which caused quite the awkward situation for many of them but the main issue was the Shelter that had suffered severely from all their scuffles.

Ko, Linda and Hayley were in charge of organising things to restore it to its former glory.

The first order was to heal all those that had been injured, including Ko and his family members. He wanted to have the sweet reunion and talk with his family he

had desperately longing for, but it was time he did his job as Faction leader and head of the Shelter.

The Graylash family had been given their own room in the Shelter. Due to what had happened they didn't want to make a report back to Owen just yet, and waited for Quinn's order before proceeding to take any type of action. For the time being they just retrieved General Robin's body, which they respectfully put into a coffin.

When Quinn entered the room, everyone was surprised to see him.

"Is it okay to get some time, with just me and him?" Quinn requested politely.

The Graylash members of course obliged and quickly headed out of the room. Quinn went up to the coffin and lifted it up. The large wound on Robin's stomach had expertly been patched up. Nevertheless, the colour of his skin looked pale, yet they had managed to work around it, giving his lifeless body some grandeur for its final rest .

"I'm sorry..." Quinn apologised. "I couldn't even save you by turning you. I just wanted to tell you that from the time I met you, I considered you to be a good person and that I never wanted to do this to you. I'm sure you wanted to protect those in the Graylash family. From what I heard, some of those Marked claimed they would have been happier with death than to continue hurting innocent people."

"I wonder if you were the same and you wanted me to stop you like this? Or if you would have wanted to live, but I guess that will be something I'll never know now. I will make sure that you shall be able to live on within me. I have a job to do now, and I shall honor all the lives that have been lost and make sure their sacrifice wasn't in vain," Quinn vowed as he closed the casket and started to walk away.

Once he was out of the room, he took a deep breath and the others quickly went back in.

"Can I even be happy about this?" Quinn wondered, as he selected a certain icon from his system.

[Quest rewards received]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1067: Best rewards yet

Quinn could still vividly remember the euphoria he had felt the first time he had received a reward from the system. Now it seemed as if that was another lifetime ago and the difficulty of the tasks he was receiving nowadays was also worlds apart from what it had been in the past.

The system worked in strange ways, and in the first place he couldn't really complain about getting rewarded for things he intended to in the first place.

In his possession, Quinn now had the pink Demon tier crystal, as well as the two moth crystals that were at the Demi-god tier level, yet there was no smile on his face nor any other sign of appreciation or happiness.

'These rewards... they will help me to grow stronger,' Quinn thought to himself.

The first reward was, as usual, an instant level up. Coincidentally, Quinn had also received enough Exp from killing the Demon tier beast to manage to level up twice.

[Quinn Talen: Level 66]

Three level ups translated into three more stat points for him to use. Quinn no longer thought it necessary to increase his Agility since his new set of armour provided him with enough speed.

Besides, after that value had crossed the 100 mark, he noticed that the difference was getting less and less noticeable. Although 200 was 2x 100 his speed didn't actually double, nevertheless it made him incredibly fast and he doubted there was a vampire faster than him when using the active skill.

[Stamina 73]

As such, he ultimately decided to put all three points into Stamina. Although his current stats already allowed Quinn to fight for what felt like a week straight, after increasing his Stamina through the legendary gear, he noticed that it also seemed able to affect his vessel inside him.

The vessel he was referring to was what held his Qi. After learning how to properly control Qi, he had never increased Stamina by a lot, so he only recently stumbled upon this knowledge.

However, in hindsight, given that using Qi had always tired him out, he should have come to that realisation earlier.

Quinns blood control remained his highest stat by far, and thanks to the quest and defeating the Demon tier beast mostly using his blood skills the system appeared to have chosen to reward it.

[Your blood control has increased +20]

[Blood control 184]

'I did have to use one of my Shadow skills at the end, Shadow clone. Perhaps it was a good thing that the Demon tier never saw my shadow skills in the first place.'

The skill Quinn used against Robin, Shadow clone, allowed him to create another version of himself out of shadows. Currently his double was unable to persist for long, nor could it really attack anyone.

Still, it was just at level one at the moment, so Quinn hoped that by using it often, it would eventually improve and become more useful.

The last few rewards were things Quinn had not really expected. It wasn't some title, or a passive skill like he had received with the moth, but something else entirely.

[High-tier Instant Upgrade Crystal]

Quinn had never even heard of such an item before, but then again he was no forger. Perhaps on some planet somewhere, certain beasts carried those type of crystals within them.

[The high tier crystal can be used to upgrade the tier of any weapon or by one rank. The highest tier of equipment this crystal can be used on is legendary tier gear]

Based on the description, if Quinn handed this crystal over to Alex together with a piece of his legendary tier armour, the smith should be able to turn it into a Demi-god tier level of equipment. Alternatively it should allow him to turn an Emperor tier piece into a legendary piece, but that option seemed like a waste in comparison.

'Hold on a second? Didn't Alex tell me that he had problems creating gauntlets from certain crystals? What if I had more of these upgrade crystals? Couldn't I just keep using them on the advanced tier gauntlets I have with the lightning active ability? Then I could just get them up to the legendary or demi-god tier level.'

Still, for some reason, that felt like a bit of a waste as well. This was the first time he had received such a crystal and who knows when the system would decide to bless him with another.

As for the last reward Quinn received he didn't know what to do with it at all, as there was really no explanation for what it did.

[Demon tier seedling ]

[A seed from a Demon tier beast. This item can be planted. It is uncertain what it will grow into.]

It seemed quite strange that even the system seemed unsure what exactly it would become. Still it was certain that it should be something amazing, one way or the other.

Nevertheless, Quinn was a bit frightened that if he planted the seed then perhaps another Demon tier tree might pop up... but was that such a bad thing?

'I could just clear one of the Cursed planets, and when it grows up, attack it again to farm for a Demon tier crystal. If that's what it actually does.' Quinn thought.

Looking at the rewards Quinn couldn't help but think back to his fight with the Demon tier beast. It was hard to say how difficult it was because he didn't really fight with the Demon tier itself. The most troublesome part seemed to be its ability to power those it turned and perhaps it could have turned an infinite amount of people.

It was still hard to tell whether Quinn would have had a chance against a Demon tier beast on his own or not. When fighting Robin, although it had the Demon tiers power in him it wasn't the same.

In a way the Demon tier crab was more difficult to fight, were as the Demon tier tree seemed to be far more dangerous.

Still, Quinn could use this for future reference, that Demon tiers were strange as they had all sorts of abilities.

---

The Shelter was in the middle of being rebuilt, and Quinn had decided that the Cursed faction would stay here for a while. He had even called up Sam to make a couple of requests of him. First was to send over a group of people form the Cursed Faction that could help with the rebuilding of things.

He also asked if there was any progress on a little favour he had asked, and judging from the grin on his face, the answer he received was exactly what he wanted to hear.

'Looks like we'll be able to use all three Crystals as items then,' Quinn thought, as his secret plan to help Sil was progressing.

Apart from that, he asked Sam to update the Graylash family on what happened, Quinn wasn't going to shy away from the truth, and told him to explain why he had to kill Robin with his own hands.

With the Cursed report and the other Graylash members who were present he was sure that Owen would understand, he seemed to be quite the reasonable person, as for the last request....

Standing outside, Quinn could see that a ship was coming towards the planet. Sam had sent over a team immediately to help out with things. As it landed in the ship area, Quinn, Peter and Sil were there to greet them.

"Come on, come on!" An impatient voice as the ship's door slowly slid open. When it finally opened, a person was seen flying straight towards Quinn, and stopped just seconds away from his face blowing his hair slightly.

"Let me see it, please let me see it! Show me the crystals, that's why you told me to come here, right?!" Alex pleaded excitedly, with his wings flapping widely, reminiscent of a dog's tail.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1068: Important question

Alex's hands couldn't stop shaking as he carefully held all three crystals in his hand. He had even taken out a pair of special white gloves that looked like they had never been worn before to handle them. When Quinn finally placed them in his hands via his shadow, the crystals continued rattling against each other.

"Careful, I have to be extra careful with my precious, can't let them touch the dirty ground!" Alex mumbled, as if possessed.

"Just put them in your shadow for now, they won't get dirty," Quinn advised, giving Alex a meaningful look. Although they looked fragile, it was impossible for them to shatter, even if he were to throw them against the ground. Besides, wasn't he going to pound them with a hammer soon enough?

Nevertheless, seeing the excitement in Alex' eyes put a smile on Quinn's face, strengthening his conviction that he was the best person to handle them.

"Look at these wings, they're so red, and they're flapping about so fast." People who were watching whispered.

Noticing that they had attracted a crowd, Quinn decided that they should head inside the Shelter and perhaps continue their talk inside the faction base. While walking, he shared some insight about the Demon tier, and Demi-god tier beasts' abilities, powers and such.

Forgers would usually do this kind of research into the crystal, as it made it easier for them to make the most out of their crafts.

"I've decided that we are going to stay here for a while," Quinn shared his plans. "The Cursed faction, along with Sam, will take care of things. Once we have everything we need, we can head on to Blade Island. I invited you here so we could get a head start. If you find the forgery here good enough, I was hoping you could start on the weapons right here."

The best decision was to make Sil wait, whether that was an option or not was the real question. But the last time Quinn had called upon Sam he had received some good news, which meant they could perhaps progress to the Blade Island sooner than he had anticipated.

The only problem would arise if the Blades were still on the island. According to Sam, Brock had already been sent out to scout the area, so they should soon find out. If the Blades were still on there, they would only proceed after Quinn had procured better equipment for his family members, if not then they would go out immediately.

It was as simple as that, yet either way, Quinn would prefer to have the new beast gear ready, so they could react to any unforeseen circumstances.

"I can't give you an exact time, but it will definitely take longer than anything else I made," Alex said nervously, feeling the pressure his task involved, before he added, "I don't want to do a bad job like I have done with the Emperor tier crystal and I've already asked Logan to try and locate the person who has made the Demon tier weapon for Oscar. Having someone who is more experienced with higher tier crystals by my side should help in bringing the most of those crystals."

"Alex, you're the main forger for the equipment for our Cursed faction, and more importantly, you are the only one I can fully trust. I don't mind you getting tips from someone or even a helping hand, but I won't accept something created by anyone else!" Quinn stated.

"Of course!" Alex replied, and Quinn could tell how happy he was due to his wings falling about. Sometimes his facial expression and his wings didn't match, but Quinn knew which one to believe.

"Once we have figured out what will be best for the crystals it will also take some time to actually make the items," Alex reminded Quinn. "Speaking off, how was the set I made for you last time?"

"Your set is one of the major reasons I trust you so much, it's the best equipment I have used till date. I guess I will need to thank Helen in person for that one," Quinn answered with a smile.

The two of them had eventually reached the faction base, and the forgery turned out to be more than adequate. Although a lot of the Shelter had been destroyed the damage to the faction building was mostly concentrated on the hallway and training hall.

Due to it being a Tier A Shelter it had equipment just as good as on the Cursed ship, so Alex could get to work as soon as his assistant would arrive.

"Before I go in, I need your expertise on something. Have you ever heard of an 'upgrading crystal'? Something that can be used to increase a weapon's tier?" Quinn asked, curious to see how rare the thing he got actually was.

"An upgrading crystal?" Alex put his hand on his chin as he pondered over the question. "Can't say that I have. I know it's possible to upgrade a weapon's tier by using higher tier crystals, but at that point it would be better to just forge something out of those crystals. One would usually only resort to that for a lack of higher tier crystals and a very urgent need for such a weapon upgrade."

"But who knows, we haven't been exploring beast planets for that long, so maybe there is something like that out there. I can only tell you as a forger, if such a thing exists, it would be priceless."

Quinn nodded, as that was exactly what he had feared, before his thoughts revolved around finding a way to make the system reward him with more of those upgrade crystals, not just for himself, but also for the rest of the team. It would certainly give them more of an advantage when hunting.

'What exactly should I use the upgrade crystal on? I'm hoping that the Demon tier or the Demi-god tier will be enough to forge me a new set of gauntlets to use, if so then the crystal would be wasted on them.'

'Then I wouldn't need to waste it on the advance tier gauntlets. I could use it on the armour set, but it remains to be seen what upgrading the set will do to the active skill. Will it be strengthened? Perhaps replaced with something else? ... or in the worst case, it might be completely removed...'

Quinn shook his head, as if that would somehow negate the last possibility. Still, he chose to trust in the system's reward being an overall good thing.

The last thing that he considered for an upgrade was his Emperor tier mask. The red coloured mask that would fill up an adrenaline bar, and allow him to boast a singular stat.

For now Quinn decided to keep the upgrading crystal with him. With the risk involved, he preferred to think about it some more and once he had made his choice, he would see if Alex could use it in some way.

Leaving the foraging area, when exiting out of the door, he unexpectedly bumped into Sil who had been waiting outside. Sil was looking downward and it appeared as if he was gathering his courage to say something as he was twirling his fingers.

"You look like you want to ask something. Let me guess, is it about Vorden and Raten?" Quinn asked.

"Now that we have the crystals... do you think we can really get them back?" Sil asked politely this time. He didn't seem angry but of course Quinn could see that this question was gnawing at him, and if it were up to him, they would have set out long ago.

"Let me ask you something Sil, I heard you and Eno had a fight, do you trust him 100%?" Quinn asked the other instead.

"Definitely not!" Sil replied instantly. "I hate that guy."

"Well, that makes two of us," Quinn admitted with a smile. "That's why I don't want to rely on him. For now, I have some good news. We have someone who is

willing to learn the same ability as your friend, so we hopefully will be able to deal with things without having to overly rely on Eno. We're close, Sil, just a little longer I promise."

It seemed that was enough to cheer him up, and the fact that Quinn was still thinking about Vorden and Raten made him happy, just for how long he didn't know.

While walking away, there was still one problem that they had yet to solve.

'We still need to find bodies for Raten and Vorden. Logan hasn't been able to find any yet, and who knows what drawbacks there could be if we use the one's Eno has provided. The short life span is just the only one he admitted to, but knowing him there could be a plethora of other things he just didn't mention. I can only count on you, Logan!'

Finally leaving the Shelter, Quinn stretched his arms, things were going good and it was rare for him to have some time to rest like this. In fact, he had grown so used to doing things, that his hands and legs were itching a little for something to do.

"Should I play more of Power fighters, I did promise the martial arts God I would get to rank one. Or maybe I should focus on levelling up all my skills to level five, but without fighting anything it would be quite difficult.' Quinn pondered over his next course of action.

At that moment, a certain person approached Quinn. He could tell who it was straight away by their scent. Without turning around, he was aware that it was none other than Layla. Her hair blew slightly in the wind, and her face was a little red.

"Quinn...it's been a while I was wondering if we could talk," Layla spoke in a somewhat embarrassed tone.

"Oh.." Quinn replied, not really knowing what else to say. "Is it something important, or did something happen?"

"It is important....to me." Layla said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1069: I like you

Moments before Layla came to interact with Quinn, she was busy going around the Shelter checking if there was anything she could do to help.

Initially, she went over to members of the Cursed faction that were in the midst of rebuilding the Shelter. Layla thought she could at least help them via her telekinesis ability.

"Miss Layla, we appreciate your offer but we are fine on our own. What would people think of us if they were to see one of our leaders having to help with this kind of manual labor? They would think that the Cursed faction was either weak or lacked members! Please get some rest, and leave this work to us! One of the men quickly prevented her from helping.

She was about to insist until she saw how great a job they were doing. Ever since the Cursed faction had received military personnel from Oscar, the one thing they didn't lack were earth ability users, especially since the earth books were no longer guarded as a secret by the military.

Nowadays, people from all factions were able to learn the ability up to their limit.

Layla sighed, aware that if she were to try and help she would most likely just get in the way. As such, she continued further into the Shelter on the lookout for any odd jobs she could help with. However, no matter where she went, everything was running at full capacity with maximum efficiency.

'I guess I'm just not really needed around here,' Layla thought dejectedly. 'Was there even any point in me coming here, if there's nothing I can help with? How can I just laze around when there should be so much to do? I mean I saved some people's lives, but Nate or Dennis could have helped fight the beasts as well. I just feel so....Useless.'

"Hey, Layla, you look free. Mind helping me out a little in the medical centre?" Hayley suddenly appeared behind her with the request. She was carrying around large boxes of supplies, yet the very next second they started to float up in the air.

"With pleasure," Layla smiled at her, happy to finally get something to do.

Inside the medical centre, Layla was hitting her stride as she talked with the patients that were awaiting their treatment. Their injuries varied a lot, from simple scratches, to broken bones, yet by far the most common ones were the bitemarks.

Everyone found Layla's presence quite welcoming, and from time to time she would help Hayley out whenever the older woman decided against using her ability. After all, MC points were limited and it would take time to recover them.

As such, Hayley saved it for patients with more severe injuries, whereas the ones that could heal on their own, would be treated the traditional way.

'Should I just transform into my third form? I would just need to hit them with some green fire to help them,' Layla wondered when she watched yet another injured person getting stitched up.

'No, what am I thinking? This isn't the Vampire World, so if they were to suddenly see me transform into a giant snake, they might mistake me for a beast and I could trigger a panic.'

Even though Layla was contributing to the common good, her mood started to dampen. How much was she really helping? Wasn't her role something that could be filled by someone else once again? In comparison, Hayley had a role that only she could fulfill.

'Even Cia was able to see the future. Who knows if she had been alive, she might have been able to warn us about the Demon tier beast. Maybe even told us how to defeat it to save many lives, or at least limit the damage,' Layla thought.

Just then, a new patient came in. It was a young woman who was scared and frightened to the point she was shivering. Since Hayley was still busy, Layla stood up and led the newcomer to a free bed. Once she was settled down Layla offered her some water, before she asked her for the reason she was here.

"I haven't been able to sleep. I keep thinking that I'll be attacked in the middle of the night, or turned. I can't even look at my own family because I'm scared that they might attack me again," the girl explained amidst her sobbing.

Although Hayley could heal the body of those who had been injured, the same could not be said for mental wounds the people suffered from. Seeing this, a strange purple smog appeared.

'This is something I can do, even if it's just a temporary solution,' Layla started to consume the purple fog in the air. Once she was done the girl's mood was elevated. It felt like all her worries and everything that was around her had suddenly gone.

Her eyes brightened up, and soon after a brief chat she was left to sleep in the bed for a while, since it was the first time it seemed she felt safe.

"Oh my, you haven't been here too long, but you already know how to deal with patients without me," Hayley commented from the side.

"W-what do you mean?" Layla asked nervously, turning away trying to avoid eye contact. She was unsure how much the other woman had seen.

"Come on Layla, did you forget I saw you grow horns the other day? Don't worry I'm not scared I'm just....worried." Hayley whispered next to her ear.

Layla looked up, unsure why Hayley would be worried about her.

Since this wasn't the best place to discuss things, Hayley went to the entrance and turned the sign from "The Doctor is in" to "The Doctor is on break", before she gestured for Layla to follow her into the back. Pulling out a seat, Hayley patted it a couple of times, for Layla to sit next to her

"I can't imagine what you have all been through but it's clear something is going on. Back when you and Quinn had been at the school you only had basic abilities. But look at you guys today, shadow, telekinesis and from what I saw you are able to do even more incredible things."

"Working in my field, especially as part of the military, I've learned that oftentimes when humans take a shortcut, there are large drawbacks involved. I just can't help but think, Quinn, everyone is taking on far more risks by not telling anyone what is going on, while putting the whole burden on themselves."

When Layla listened to Hayley, she could tell from the older woman's tone that she was genuinely concerned. A lot of people forgot that the very same 'Cursed faction leaders' were agewise nothing more than young adults who would have just left school.

Given their positions they were treated like adults, whereas Hayley still saw them as slightly older children that needed help and guidance wherever possible.

In honesty though, Hayley was also very concerned for her father who she hadn't seen very much ever since joining the Cursed faction.

"We can handle it," Layla replied like some sort of preprogrammed answer.

Hayley leaned forward and started to rub her finger up Layla's cheek.

"Like hell you can!" She insisted as she wiped the tear falling down from one of her eyes, and then moved her hair out the side to see the two little bumps.

"Wow, so these things are real, does it hurt when I push them in? Oh, maybe a third one will come out in the middle?" Hayley joked around.

The visual image made both of them laugh and Layla confided in the other, telling her a bit more about herself and what she could do. Nevertheless, she abstained from revealing anything about vampires in general or who exactly it was that had turned her, despite the other one probing her.

While talking, Layla did notice however, that she would often try to ask about her father.

"Let me ask Quinn to set up a meeting for the two of you," Layla suggested. "I know Quinn is super busy at times but he is sensitive to these types of things."

"Thank you," Hayley gave her a bigger smile than the ones before..

Someone knocked on the door, before coming. "Sorry for the intrusion, but I've been told that despite the sign Hayley is here"

Seeing the girl who had entered. Hayley stood up and almost had tears in her eyes herself.

"Wendy, you're all good!"

Although the two of them hadn't really spoken much, Wendy had protected her and there was a link between these two people. As they ran up to hug each other.

'I guess it's my cue to get out of here,' Layla decided and was about to leave.

"Wait, Layla, I nearly forgot what I wanted to tell you!" Hayley called out to stop her for a moment. "Earlier you said that Quinn always seems to be busy and that there never seems to be a right time to talk to him, right? Well, he seems pretty free at the moment, so you should go and talk to him. Who knows when you get another opportunity like this?"

---

As if to prove Hayley's point, shortly after she went out, Layla saw none other than Quinn.

'I don't want to have any more regrets,' Layla, perhaps still influenced by the pep talk she had just received, decided to approach Quinn.

"Quinn...it's been a while I was wondering if we could talk," Layla spoke in a somewhat embarrassed tone.

"Oh.." Quinn replied, not really knowing what else to say. "Is it something important, or did something happen?"

"It is important....to me." Layla said.

However, she suddenly noticed that the stuff she wanted to talk with him about was rather private, so she asked him to accompany her out of the Shelter. Since he was done with his business and Layla wouldn't just come to him without a reason, he agreed.

The duo headed through the forest. There was an awkward silence between the two of them throughout the whole walk. Eventually the duo arrived at a lake that was green in colour, making for an idyllic scene.

On the other end, they could even see a beast drinking from the lake itself. It was too far to be any concern for them though.

"Quinn, is there anyone you like?" Layla asked, finally breaking the silence.

"Anyone I like?" Quinn was shocked by the sudden question. He had been wondering what she might want to talk about, but his thoughts had mostly been about something Pure related.

However, after thinking about it, he was quickly reminded of how Vincent would constantly tell him to have some fun with certain girls.

"Like, what do you think about Erin? She's a beauty that everyone liked at school?" Layla continued, since Quinn didn't say anything.

"Erin? Well me and her don't really talk much. Besides, she's quite scary when someone upsets her," Quinn replied, before he added. "And between the two of us, it's not particularly hard to upset her accidentally."

He thought that might break the ice a bit, but Layla didn't really react. Instead she continued questioning him:

"Then what about that Bonny girl? I mean you kissed her on live TV. Isn't an adventurous girl like her your type? Someone who is always doing exciting things and stuff on her own?"

"Please, how many times have I tried to explain that that whole thing was all a giant misunderstanding? I was just trying to do something with my vampire powers and it backfired spectacularly. Also, I don't think I would like someone like her as my girlfriend."

"I mean, I would never be able to see her, unless I accompanied her on one of her adventures and with the type of responsibilities I have now, I can't really afford to do that. Sometimes I wished all of this was over, and I could return to being a normal guy. If I wasn't the Cursed faction leader, I would just finish my military training, look for the right woman to settle down, have a family, a house, two kids, maybe a dog," Quinn shared his thoughts.

At his point he didn't really know whether was saying but the image of when he lived his life as Vincent, with his family had appeared in his head.

"Then what about Helen? She made it clear that she liked you. A strong beauty that probably is matched with your talents and could give you the kind of life once all of this is over?" Layla asked.

"Helen... I think she is a good person... but I can't help but be cautious towards her. How can I date someone if I don't even trust them?"

Layla was a bit surprised after hearing the answer. The others Quinn had disregarded quite quickly, but with Helen he had hesitated. Did that mean that he did have some feelings for her, but chose not to act because he couldn't trust her?

Perhaps he didn't trust her due to how much time they had spent together. But didn't that mean, that if he were to trust her, then there was nothing stopping him from pursuing her?

Once again, Layla was thinking of pulling back, but clenching her fist she told herself that she couldn't give up this time. She walked in front of Quinn, standing at the very edge of the lake and turned around, placing her hair behind her ear.

"Since you've been so honest with me, I only have one more question for you, Quinn. What about me? Quinn, I... like you....I like you a lot, but what do you feel towards me?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1070: The answer

'D-did Layla just confess to me?' Was Quinn's first thought after hearing those words.

'Ah, to be young and innocent again. Quite the man you are, to force the girl to make the first step, then again, otherwise I bet you would have never realised that she liked you, even though it's been pretty obvious from the beginning if you asked me. Heck, I haven't even been with you the whole time, yet it was obvious.'

Vincent teased Quinn.

Quinn still had trouble wrapping his head around it. Sure, there had been times some girls had shown interest in him in a certain manner, but those had been far more sexual than anything and could mostly be attributed to his Charm. As such, he had never regarded himself as the type to well... be popular with girls.

In his entire life he had only been confessed to by Helen before today, but even then, he was still unaware whether Helen genuinely liked him or was merely after the position he had ended up in.

"What do I think of you?" Quinn repeated her question as if to find some deeper meaning behind it. Unlike the others, it was far harder to answer the question, not just because the one in question was right before him, but more so because he himself was unsure what the answer to that was.

Thinking about it, Layla had helped him from the beginning, even long before she had been turned. She had always been there and was one of the few people that actually knew nearly everything about him, what he was going through and was of similar age.

When he thought up to this point, he wasn't exactly against the idea, but didn't the fact that he had to ponder over all these facts bear testimony that he himself wasn't entirely sure about it?

Alas, her intense gaze made it clear that she would like an answer now and not some other time, however there was one thing he felt he had to address first....

"Layla, a-are you sure you want to be with me? You know I'm the one responsible for your mother's death, right? Back then you used your ability to save her, but then she used her Qi to save your life. The thing is, my attack would have undoubtedly killed her... she would have died by my hands if she hadn't saved you. Do you really want to be with someone who is responsible for the death of someone so close to you?" Quinn asked.

He didn't choose to ask this question to suddenly change the topic, but he felt that such a thing wasn't exactly something they could both overlook. Perhaps part of

him also wanted to show her that she deserved better, that there was someone better for her.

"I know you aren't like that, Quinn. You are one of the most righteous persons I know. I have grown up with my mother, so I know that she herself acted for what she perceived would be for the 'greater good'. She was a woman who cared more about her ideals than her own feelings, even if it was towards her own flesh and blood."

"I was raised by her, so for the longest time, I believed in those ideals. That my personal feelings would have to take a step back if it was for the sake of others... but I don't want to live like that any longer! I'm aware that you were partly responsible for her death, but in the end my mother chose to save my life and I decided that I wish to find happiness in it, for her sake as well as my own."

Suddenly Layla came closer and grabbed Quinn's hands.

"I just didn't want to hide my feelings for you anymore. I want to be with you and I don't just want to be by your side. I want to grow old together with you, and enjoy our lives once this whole thing is over." Layla declared confidently.

Looking into her eyes, Quinn's heart started to beat faster, and his hands started to heat up, but it was only for a few seconds, as a strange energy came over him, and by the looks of it, it came over her as well. The two of them almost pulled away as they both felt a pain in their heads.

'Vincent, what's going on, what's happening to us?' Quinn asked in a panic.

The headache went away as quickly as it had appeared, but the rosy feelings, and his heart beat had returned to normal, and he wasn't being swayed by his emotions as much as he had been before. Even Layla, when looking at Quinn, her feelings seemed a little dulled.

A big sigh could be heard from Vincent in his head.

'I'm sorry Quinn, I had hoped that since you used to be a normal human, it wouldn't affect you. This was actually one of the reasons why I had tried pushing you towards trying to find happiness with others so much. It's to do with the family bond.' Vincent explained. 'Part of your bloodline, the Cursed family bloodline, now runs inside her veins... which means it will be impossible for you two to truly be together.'

"If it had been anyone else in the Cursed family it would have been a different story, but as for Layla... The one who turned Layla was none other than you after all. I'm afraid there is no solution, otherwise I would have told you as soon as I saw her feeling like that for you.

Quinn didn't know why, but he wasn't relieved, in fact he felt greatly saddened by it. It would have been one thing for him to reject her, but for a vampire thing being

the cause for this... 'Did I actually have feelings for Layla as well then?' Quinn wondered. 'Are you sure, there is no way?!"

'... I mean, theoretically there is. Either you or her would have to return to being truly human. However, you better than anyone else should know what an extremely difficult thing that is to do. I do not know of another way.' Vincent answered, in a sombre tone feeling bad for the one having given him this news.

Layla, once she had cleared her mind in the few seconds he had conversed with Vincent, felt the same way about Quinn as she had always done. She let out a deep sigh, but when she looked up, she still had a smile on her face.

"I can see that this whole situation seems to be a bit much for you. You are taking a long time to think about this, but perhaps that is a good thing. At least you haven't instantly rejected me, unlike the others. I don't know who or what is in your mind Quinn, maybe you're just too busy at the moment, but I will fight against my rivals, just as you are fighting against the Dalki."

"This means war!" Layla said, pointing to Quinn and giggling a little at the end.

'She seems so happy.' Quinn thought as a warm feeling was felt all over his body, he too couldn't help but smile back at her.

"Yeah, I'm sorry, I guess I can be a real klutz in that field. I am truly happy that you confessed to me, it really is just that before today, I have never thought about that possibility. ... So how about a date?" Quinn suggested with a shy smile. "Don't you think it would only be fair that the two of us get to know each other properly, outside of this vampire stuff, outside of all this school mess, before I decide whether we would make a good match for the rest of our life, especially given how long it could be?"

Layla put out her hand again, and raised her little pinky, Quinn understood she was going for a pinky promise. He didn't hesitate, yet as his pinky touched hers to confirm the promise, the headache the two of had suffered earlier returned, forcing them to let go.

"Quinn, what is that?" Layla asked, stupefied, as she held her head.

"Don't worry." Quinn replied, not wanting to break her heart. "It's vampire stuff. I'll sort it out. I've sorted everything else out so far haven't I?"

Walking back, Quinn was determined to get an answer more so now about turning vampires back to humans, and there was one person who knew the possible answer, even if he was the last person Quinn wished to talk to.

Richard Eno was the original who had turned Arthur into a vampire, so perhaps he also knew a way to be turned back. Still, based on Eno's personality it was clear he

wouldn't just comply, especially for something that might drastically lower their fighting power.

After moving the Demon tier beast and bringing back Vorden and Raten, it might prove to be a better time to ask the old-timer.

Returning to the Shelter, all the faction members and the few Graylash members that had still been there seemed to be quite on high alert. Even the kitchen staff looked a little worried. Entering the faction base, Quinn was told that the Cursed and the others were currently in a meeting.

"Sir Quinn, if the two of you could head that way, I believe this matter is something of utmost importance." One of the Faction members in the base spoke and led them to the meeting room.

"Quinn, you're here just in time." The hologram figure of Sam greeted him, from the centre of the table. He was green in colour which looked quite menacing in its own right, quite the contrast to Sam's own figure.

"Unfortunately, I do not bear great news, but it falls under my duty to inform you all of the current situation. As you know, the Dalki have been quite active in the area, and at the moment, Owen, along with the Graylash family, are engaged in combat against them."

"I'm calling you right now to tell you that Owen seems to be in trouble and I'm not sure how long they can hang in there!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1071: An intruder

With war having been declared, all of the planets that the human race lived on were on high alert, especially those in the Graylash area. The Dalki had been making very strange movements from what they had been able to monitor.

Bit by bit, they would be testing the waters, as small scuffles between certain spaceships, as well as on orange portal planets had occurred. There was a reason why the human race wasn't so quick to give up the beast planets and were still hunting for beasts daily.

For one, they acted as the fuel for the powerful Mechs that would be used by those who weren't strong ability users, giving them a fighting chance against the Dalki. The second reason, which was true for both sides, was they would be used to power their spaceship's weapons.

The large ships created by both sides were strong and resilient enough that only a Demon tier weapon would be able to harm. As such, the most common way for a fight to occur in space was to send out fleets of smaller ships, in order to eventually invade the larger ship from the inside.

Alternatively, smaller fleet ships would act as a mothership and land on the planet, forcing the other side to protect it. The weapons on board were to destroy these smaller ships.

In the current situation, Bonny and Void had decided to go and film the fights up close. After all, they were war reporters and the best ones at that. Humanity needed to know what was happening and they couldn't be scared.

At the moment the two of them were on board one of the larger Graylash ships, led by one of the top Graylash members named Hermes. It was a ship with a force of a hundred thousand on board. Thirty thousand of them consisted of those from the Graylash family and their follower factions, while the others were from one of the military groups given by Oscar for Owen to command.

The reason they were on this ship rather than the one Owen was on, was due to the latter acting as an important figure in this war. He himself wouldn't get involved in fighting unless he had to. Yes he was a powerful person, but that was also why he couldn't be the first one to charge in when there was trouble.

As such, Bonny had made the decision to go on board another Graylash ship that was more likely to experience combat first.

In one of the training rooms, the Graylash were currently on their next course of actions, figuring out the best way to protect certain planets in case the Dalki would attack them. They also went through drill's and more. There were even teams that

would be sent out from the ship, to the faction basis on the beast planets just in case they were needed to help with a hunt.

"As you can see behind me, everyone in the Graylash group is working diligently to protect our front line. So far there have been a total of four skirmishes between us and the Dalki. For now we have claimed victory, as we have successfully been able to defend all of the planets. We will continue to bring you news as it develops." Bonny reported, ending the recording there.

Void gave a nice little thumbs up, noting that they were off the air.

Bonny gave a sigh, as she went to sit down in the corner of the room with Void, there was a little bar refreshment area that would serve snacks and drinks for the team every time they were done with training, or had a tough meeting.

Since the meeting was still going on in the main area, Void and Bonny were sitting on their own.

"Do you think what we're doing is right?" Bonny suddenly asked her colleague.

"You mean about the report we just made?" Void wondered as he was checking the footage back from his camera. He also had a strange set of glasses that were green. They would be linked to a few drones around the Graylash ship. So he wouldn't miss if anything big was going on.

"Yeah, although I said we successfully defended against their attacks and it's good to make sure that the people don't panic, the truth is, there still hasn't been a level of attack similar to the one on Planet Caladi!" Bonny clarified.

"Yes, it was a good thing Quinn was there at the time. Otherwise that would have been a loss, but I don't think what you're doing is wrong to answer your question. We have been in this business long enough to know that. Currently, there is nothing to panic about. Speaking of, did you hear the Cursed have managed to hunt down a Demon tier beast? It seems like we might have picked the wrong thing to film."

Void replied.

Hearing this, Bonny did regret that they chose not to follow the Cursed, but at the time she had no clue what they had been up to. Besides, it just felt a little awkward between the two of them, ever since the last time she had tried to interview them, almost as if she was afraid they would have proven to be a nuisance if they had followed them.

"Don't worry, my instinct is telling me something big is going to happen here."

Just then, as she said those words, the ship's alarms had sounded. The whole ship broadcast a special announcement for everyone to hear it.

"Attention everyone. A large main ship has been seen heading to Planet Genentech. They have sent fleets to the beast planet and it looks to be a force of around two hundred strong."

'Two hundred, that's four times the amount of Dalki that have been sent to Planet Caladi. Why are they moving this many Dalki for one beast planet? Is it a distraction, to send an even larger force to defend the planet while they attack somewhere else?' Bonny couldn't help but think, but that wasn't her job, she was sure that the Graylash had already gone through every scenario they could think of.

"The main Graylash ship is the closest to the planet, and due to the size of the force, our family head Owen Graylash himself has decided to engage in combat, sending out a strong force. He wants us to stay on standby and act as we see fit if there is no response from his end."

This was it! Bonny could tell that this would be the first great clash of the second war with the Dalki race. Although Quinn had participated in the first 'battle' that started the war, it was hard to call that a battle. However, with how strong a force of two hundred Dalki represented and depending on how many spikes there were, there could be many lives lost in the battle.

"Come on Void, let's take the ship, and make our way down to that planet." Bony ordered in a rush.

Void quickly packed his things, and was already calling his drones to return to him, but then he had seen something devastating on one of the drones in his glasses. Down one of the hallways, a person covered in blood could be seen.

Trying to find them, Void looked through all the drones possible and could see what looked to be a human walking in blood, in the ship's docking area. He then walked up to the leaver, and looked at the drone directly. His face and clothes covered in blood, something was chilling when Void looked at this person who didn't look human. The one thing that was noticeable about them more than anything, was the red piercing eyes.

'He knows I'm filming him.' Void thought as he stood still in fear.

"What's wrong? We have to go!" Bonny hurried him.

"No." Void replied. "We need help, we need to hide!"

The man with the red eyes who was being filmed pulled the leavers and soon the bay started to open, allowing several small fleets of dark black ships to land inside.

"The Dalki, they have boarded this ship!" Void shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: [jksmanga](#)

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: [jksmanga](#)

## Chapter 1072: A how many spike?

Arriving on planet Getentoch, was Owen Graylash, and with him, he had a strong force of fifty thousand. If one was to see this, who had never seen a Dalki before, they would have said it was overkill, sending that many people for only a force against 200 Dalki?

For those that had faced the Dalki before, they would have thought it wasn't enough. Very few people could take on even a one spiked Dalki, which was why even with ability users, the introduction of Mech's and beast weapons was a game-changer.

Before, a single one spiked Dalki could have taken on thousands of people, and even more before the introduction of abilities and beast gear.

However, the force brought wasn't just ordinary people. They were All Travelers, and there wasn't a single one under the Rank of B, but there was a reason why Owen had to come himself, why he felt like he had no choice.

Planet Getentoch was a red coloured planet with a vast wasteland with deep trenches here and there. It was also a strange planet that would suffer from lack of rainfall for half a year or so and then be plagued with rain for the next half a year.

Currently, the Graylash group had sent all the civilians off the planet, and we're making upgrades to the Shelter. A few of the earth users were building several walls, so they could form a tight defence.

Owen was standing on top of a large tower at the very back of the Shelter, with his usual fan covering his face and his long straight hair.

"If we were here during the rainfall, it would make the task quite easy. However, it seems like luck isn't on our side today." Owen said. "Still, when have I ever relied on things such as luck." Owen turned to one of his men by his side and smiled.  
"Right?"

"Of course, sir!" The man replied. "We will win this fight, even if the sun scorches our bodies like lava!"

Although they had prepared for situations like this, they were having more trouble than they had expected for many reasons. It turned out that it was true that the Dalki were able to create some sort of teleporter jamming device. The teleporters on the planet itself didn't work. They had to escort the citizens off from the planet over to the Graylash main ship nearby.

However, worried that these might be attacked, quite a large force was sent with them, diminishing the forces that would also be on the planet itself. While they were unsure if the Dalki were affected by this teleportation device.

Lastly, the real reason why Owen was here was because of the rumours, rumours that the Dalki forces this time, we're being led by a four spiked Dalki. Owen had to come no matter how small the number of forces being sent from the Dalki side.

'Back then, the four spiked Dalki that appeared was what made even my grandfather come out of hiding.' Owen started to remember. 'It was a great struggle, but the current world leaders at the time had managed to defeat it. His advice to me was if I ever saw a four spiked Dalki and I was to face one on my own, then I was to run.'

Closing his fan, Owen looked off into the distance. Multiple black pods were sent down from one of the large Dalki ships a few hours ago. They were quick and small, making it hard for them to shoot down before they reached the planet.

"I'm sorry, I won't be taking your advice. Let's see if you were the right grandfather." Owen said.

"Sir, I have just received a report. The Dalki, some of them seem to have boarded on the second ship!" The man reported quite urgently.

At the same time, in the distance, movement could finally be seen.

"It looks like they have chosen now of all times to attack. It can't be a coincidence. I assume the forces sent to attack the fleet aren't weak either. Is there anyone close by that can help?" Owen asked.

Usually, he would have gone back as quick as anything to help his own people. Yet, something in Owen's mind was telling him he needed to remain here. Otherwise, it would be a loss for the human race.

"I have already sent out the message to the nearby planets in the area as a warning for the other planets to be careful. Although I did not send a request for help. The nearby forces are weaker than what is currently on the ship, so it wouldn't make sense. The only one that could help in such a situation would be Head General Robin, but I have received news that he passed away. I would give you details, but we are running out of time." The man explained.

"Passed away, Robin was a good man, and strong. It looks like the Cursed faction had quite the trouble defeating the Demon tier beast. Give the Cursed faction all the information about the current attack and details of the second fleet. I will let them decide what they need to do." Owen Said.

---

"And that is the current situation the Graylash family are facing," Sam said as he finished his report.

Those in the room were frightened. In the report Sam gave, they even talked about the four spiked Dalki in the attack. It made everyone feel goosebumps on their body for fear of what might happen to Owen.

Owen was strong, all of the leaders were strong, but the only reason the human race stood a chance last time was more due to their sheer numbers. Of course, their numbers now dwindled in comparison compared to the last time. However, they had focused on building up strength but have they managed to close that gap to the point where Owen could defeat a four spiked Dalki? That they didn't know.

"Would you like my opinion on the matter, or do you have something you wish to do?" Sam said.

"We should send people to help Owen fight against the four spiked Dalki," Ko announced. "That's the only reasonable thing to do. The second fleet of the Graylash will have to take care of themselves. I can't imagine the attack on them will be as bad as the one that Owen is facing. If we win this, then it is a big step forward."

"But don't you think the current fight with Owen is just a delay?" Linda replied.

"I have to agree," Sam said. "It is possible that they leaked the information on the four spiked Dalki to us. That way, they knew we would send a strong force to help them, such as Owen. While Owen is caught up, they are able to send forces to destroy the other forces, slowly taking our numbers down, while Owen continues to be caught up."

Quinn had been silent as he was thinking of what to do, and he had finally come up with his answer.

"We should trust Owen. He's strong, and I think he knows what he is doing. Just now, you told us he had given all the information there was about the Graylash second fleet and ship. I don't think he is an idiot. He trusts his own strength, and we need to trust he can deal with the four spiked Dalki on his own."

Although Quinn said this, he was slightly worried, a four spiked Dalki was something he had never faced, and their strength grew exponentially with each spike. Even Borden was impressive as a temporary three spike, so who knows what a four spike could do.

"As for me, I will head to the second fleet, alone." Said Quinn.

"Alone, are you crazy!" Ely stood up from his seat. "It might not be a four spiked Dalki, but there will be more on board. You can't take them on alone!"

"I think it might be the best thing to do." Sam agreed. "You see, we don't know how strong the Dalki are that have been sent to attack the second fleet. What we do

know is they are in great trouble. However, the Cursed forces are in an entirely different place. Sending everyone here to fight them would be useless."

"Not only that," Quinn added. "I'm the only one that can return with no problems. It seems like the Dalki can block the teleporters, which means that the second fleet are unable to escape. If they are too strong even for me, then I'm the only person that can still get out of there with my ability.

"I will be going alone, and that's an order," Quinn said, which was now the second time he had used his authority as one of the world leaders.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1073: The city of Zoo

While Quinn and the others had been busy hunting for the Demon tier beast, other members of his family hadn't exactly been lazing around either.

Despite the war declaration, Erin and Leo had gone out on their own, continuing the search for the Pure base or at least any of their members. They had already learned that the Pure base was supposed to be on earth, information given to them by Eno.

According to the intel, Layla provided. One of the main bases on earth was located in a well known city by the name of Zoo. Similarly to the Truedreams, another Big Four family had founded the city and located most of their members there, only in this case the one responsible had been Mona Bree.

The reason for the quite bizarre name of the city was due to the many beasts that were roaming around freely. While it might seem dangerous at first, all of those beasts had at one point been tamed by members of the Bree family thanks to their ability.

Apart from the beasts there was one other thing that led to the city becoming a famous tourist attraction and that was Mona's fascination with the architecture style of ancient times, in particular the Roman Empire. The city had been constructed with antique looking buildings, giant pillars and large statues of prominent figures of the Bree family. They even had a giant colosseum in the centre.

Even though Mona herself had disappeared, her family members had continued to follow in her footsteps. Many of them had joined the military, with a few branching off here and there, but overall Oscar had left them to their own devices. Nowadays the Zoo city is heavily guarded by strong members of the Bree family.

Walking down the streets Erin felt as if she had travelled back in time, she wouldn't have even been surprised if at any moment someone would appear in a toga. Meanwhile Leo was just appreciating the structure of the architecture he could 'see' with his ability.

"I'm not sure whether I should praise Pure for choosing such a place to have a base, or call them daring," Erin commented after the first shock had settled down.

"The best place to hide a tree will always be in a forest. Who would think to look for them in a city controlled by one of the Big Four?" Leo replied. "If Pure hasn't given up on the idea of creating a manmade beast for them to control, then this would seem like the perfect location. Come to think of it, perhaps the members we found from the Bree family last time would have been taken from this city."

Just then they saw someone walking alongside a two horned walking beast that was a little larger than a human, it must have been at the advanced tier level. It was quite an amazing ability for them to control the beasts.

"Hmph, I could take out every single one of these with a simple swipe of my paw," Ovinnik commented lazily from atop Leo's head.

After seeing so many wild beasts walking around freely, the cat familiar had suddenly decided to come out and explore the Human World a little bit and Leo saw no problem with that at all. The only 'issue' was that every time they encountered a beast that looked somewhat impressive, Ovin seemingly felt the need to remind them that he could beat them with a single swipe if he just chose to act.

Erin just stared at the cat, that for some reason had decided to include her in its thought talk, rather than just speaking to Leo directly. The only thing that worried the dhampir was whether this allowed Ovin to read her thoughts as well, but so far it hadn't shown any signs of it.

'Can that fat cat really be that strong here?' Erin wondered. 'I mean there has to be a difference between his strength in the Familiar World and this world, right?'

At that moment, as if Ovin had read her mind, he stared towards her and raised one of his chubby paws, seemingly ready to attack.

'Did he actually hear me? Whatever, I won't back down from you! If one cat is all it takes to make me cower, how am I meant to face the Dalki?!' Erin thought as she stared back at the cat and moved her hand towards the sword hilt by her side, ready to defend herself at any moment.

Ovin moved and Erin was halfway through drawing her sword, until she saw... that the familiar was merely licking its paw, before letting out a big yawn. From the looks of it, the cat looked far more interested in taking a big nap over getting into any fights.

'Yeah, I must be imagining things, no way that cat can hear me,' Erin breathed out a sigh of relief, shaking her head over her previous behavior. However, the next moment she received a thought message that sounded like a sneer...

Before Erin had any chance to react to what she perceived as a sort of provocation, a man shouted from their side: "Attention, Attention! Last chance to register for this month's Beast Battling Games! Riches and fame await you, as long your beast is the strongest!"

Behind the man there was a table, and quite a queue of people who looked eager to participate in that event.

"Are you interested?" Erin asked, since Leo had stopped to have a look.

"Such an event should be the perfect place to scout for strong users with the beast taming ability, so there is a good chance that someone from Pure would be there," Leo replied and walked towards the shouting man.

"Oh my, what a pleasure to see such beauty. Are you here to register for the Battle of the Beasts? I'm afraid you will have to line up if you wish to," the man was too smitten by Erin's appearance to notice Leo next to her.

"It's our first time here, could you tell us more about this Battle of the Beasts event?" Erin asked in her cold voice, emphasising the 'us' part.

Only then did the man notice Leo's presence, as well as the fact that the only beast the duo had on them appeared to be a fat cat that for some reason was napping on the bald man's head. He would have normally dismissed them, but the level of beast equipment and beast gear told him that both of them were either very powerful or quite influential.

"Oh, so you are newcomers! Each month, Zoo is hosting the Beast Battling Games in the coliseum. This month's attraction is the so-called Battle of the Beasts, a tournament in which tamed beasts compete against each other. This time's winner gets to walk home with the grand prize of a Demi-god tier crystal, courtesy of the Bree family," the man enthusiastically explained.

The price was certainly enough to garner a lot of attention. The question was whether the Bree family was just generous enough to continue certain traditions or whether this time's event was somehow more special.

'Leo seems to be correct once more, with such a price it's practically guaranteed that the strongest ability users would participate to show off the power of their beasts,' Erin thought. 'It would be a wonder if Pure doesn't show up.'

"Do you happen to sell tickets or could you tell us where we could purchase any?" Leo asked the man.

"Apologies, but our Beast Battling Games are quite the attraction for our city. They are sold out well in advance. If you are interested in attending one, then you should try to purchase some tickets in front of the colosseum. If you are lucky they should still have some for the show in half a year," the man explained.

"I'm afraid we don't have much free time," Leo stroked his beard. "Looks like we will have to enter as participants."

"My colleague will be happy to register you, but one of the requirements is that your tamed beast has to be present during the registration process and it has to be at least at the advanced tier level," the man had still been polite, but it was clear that he was getting impatient explaining everything to the duo.

At that moment, Leo lifted Ovin from his head.

"This here is a beast at the Legendary level. I'm sure he will do well in the competition," Leo stated with a smile.

'If this fat cat is a Legendary beast, then I am a member of the Big Four,' the man was sure that the other party was pulling his leg for some reason. 'This is a serious tournament, but I suppose the crowd deserves some laughs. If someone of that caliber wants to sacrifice a cat to enter it, who am I to stop him?'

Leo and Erin went in line to enter the so-called tournament, with Ovin as their contender.

Inside the city of Zoo, below a certain tavern, a certain meeting was being held.

"Now, do you understand what we have to do? Although I don't particularly agree with this, we have no other choice. We have to keep an eye on the Bree family and keep a tab on all those who are able to control high and strong tier beasts," A red haired man explained to his listeners.

"Yes, Sir!" The group replied back

As the group prepared themselves, the red haired man couldn't help but wonder.

'Is this really the right thing to do? Lucy, would you have tried to put a stop to this if you knew what we were going to do?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1074: The Mighty Cruncher

Inside a dark cave-like room, there was a table set up that seemed to have naturally formed from the ground. It was large and round but not smooth and the surfaces were uneven and bumpy. If a human hand was to drag their hand across they were sure to get cuts and marks.. Currently, it acted as a meeting room for the Dalki.

Graham, a Dalki that had a strange obsession to wear human clothing was inside dressed in a smart shirt and some trousers. It would have looked quite odd on most Dalki due to their muscular body sides, yet Graham was quite thin given his race.

He wasn't alone in the room, for there was another Dalki at the other side of the table. The other part only had a single bent horn that was sticking out from the top of his forehead.

"Graham, I know you are the smartest one out of all of us, but don't you think your plan this time puts too much trust into that man's will? How can you be certain that he won't suddenly turn on us?!" One Horn shouted, clenching his fists.

"Because he isn't doing this for our sake. That much was clear from the beginning. His desire just happens to coincide with ours. I can see that much and I'm sure he also knows that we must realise that. In other words, we are just using each other, so as long as he thinks that he can achieve his goal by working with us, he will do his part." Graham explained confidently.

Although One Horn and Graham tended to often disagree with the other's method, the two strongest Dalki nevertheless respected each other as well. More time than not One Horn would actually let Graham have his way.

"Fine!" One Horn stated, still annoyed he slumped back into his seat as if he no longer cared about the matter.

"It seems too late for regrets anyway, but I still don't understand what you're thinking by sending out Green Horn to face that lighting user?" One Horn asked, as he touched the top of his horn. He could still feel a phantom pain when thinking about the time he fought against someone with that ability.

"The man that you fought against is no longer there, and if they were to see you again, then there would be an even larger panic. Besides, if they saw you with more spikes on your back then they would know the truth about us. The fact that we are still evolving and getting stronger." Graham explained.

In the past, One Horn was the main person who had led the Dalki during their first war. At least to the humans it appeared this way. Graham had always been there but he had never shown himself.

The treaty that had been signed and more, the public figure of it all had been One Horn, but back then he hadn't been seen, since everything was signed, and there was a reason for that, the number of spikes on his back had changed.

"Those lightning users mean trouble, I should know. Green Horn might not be enough to handle him," One horn stated. "If it was me I would have sent Dred instead. He is a true master of war. I wouldn't even have to worry if it had been him. Where is he anyway?" One Horn asked.

The sharp teeth on Graham revealed themselves, a Dalki version of a grin, although it was hard to recognise as such for any member of another race.

"Don't worry about Green, I haven't sent him there to win the battle. If he does, it would just be a bonus, but if he doesn't it won't matter. Not every battle has to be won to win the war. As for Dred, I have told him he can do as he likes. I thought it would make things interesting. If an unpredictable Dalki is doing things that even I can't predict, I doubt the humans will have a clue as well."

Even One Horn, the most aggressive Dalki, was shocked to hear what Graham had just said, but soon his shock turned into laughter.

"Ha, ha, this is great! Soon the humans and the vampires will be gone!"

---

"It's okay Leo, you don't have to worry about me. I doubt that there is anyone here that will be a match for me thanks to your teaching," Erin said to Leo, after she had been denied entry to the colosseum with the excuse that only participants and their tamed beasts could enter.

"That might not be the best mindset to have," Leo cautioned her. "If we believe we are the strongest then we will no longer strive to improve ourselves. Remember to be humble. If anything goes wrong, you are to contact me through the mask immediately!"

"I don't think Pure will act until after the tournament, but just in case don't stray too far from the colosseum, and try not to do anything on your own. How is your lust? Are you able to deal with it?" Leo asked.

Erin looked at her left arm. Underneath her clothing there were chains wrapped around it, with the purpose of suppressing her desires. Something that Leo had given her, she wondered why he had such a thing, and how it even had such abilities, but it seemed like it wasn't the right thing to ask at the time.

"It's okay, it hasn't caused any problems so far and it's better now that we're no longer on the Cursed ship. It tends to react more when there are other vampires around," Erin answered her teacher.

Leo nodded, before heading into the colosseum through the participants entrance. Halfway through his journey one of the guards finally noticed Leo's white eyes.

"Sir, do you need help?" The guard rushed towards him.

"I appreciate the kind gesture, but I am completely fine. Do you really think someone entering the competition would need that much help," Leo snickered as he sent the guard on his way.

At that moment, he heard loud footsteps behind him, telling him that it was a man of significant weight. "Don't be such a stubborn old man, we can't have anything happen to you before the start of the event." The voice said.

"Sir, you are a sponsor of our event, there is no need for you to go to so much trouble." The guard quickly intervened. He had been warned by his superiors that the other party was prone to act as he pleased.

"Don't worry, I was heading to see all the participants anyway." The man chose to ignore the guard, and signalled for him to go back to fulfill some other duty, while the man walked side by side with Leo.

"Is that your version of helping out a blind man like me, simply walking by my side?" Leo questioned, somewhat surprised given the lack of action of the heavy man. He had expected him to either help him, or act unreasonably in some way, yet the other just did nothing but walk with him.

"You don't look overly frail to me in the first place. Besides, didn't you claim to be fine on your own?" The man laughed and apart from some glances of his self-assigned 'guard' the two continued to walk in silence until they reached a waiting room for the participants.

"Good luck, although given your partner, you might not even need it," The large man bid him goodbye, walking off to look at the other participants.

'At least he seems to have a discerning eye,' Ovin purred in satisfaction. "How come you have been hiding your Qi presence ever since you got in here?'

'We are close to finding Pure's leader, and with how big this event is, I have the feeling they won't just be sending some footsoldier, but someone higher up who would be able to feel it. The goal is to find them before they know we are looking for them, so it's best to hide it for now.'

While Leo and Ovin had their little conversation, the other participants were checking the blind man out, as well as his 'Beast'. An advanced tier level beast was not an actual requirement to participate in the Battle of the Beasts and more a recommendation to prevent the loss of life. After all, nobody should be crazy enough to bring a lower tier beast to the Beast Battling Games, least of all when it

was time for the Battle of the Beasts... and yet somehow this man appeared to have brought along a basic tier beast.

"The guy seems to be blind, do you think someone has tricked him by selling him that beast claiming it was something special?" One of the participants whispered to his neighbour.

"Maybe he needs the money? Could be that he has someone betting on the other contestant that he's going to lose." The neighbour answered back in a hushed tone.

"Isn't that dangerous though? Some constants end up losing their lives to the Battle of the Beasts." Another mentioned, worried about Leo.

'Pray to your ancestors, you won't have to face me!' Ovin was furious as he remembered all those who were underestimating him like that, but outwardly he continued to stay on Leo's head, pretending to be nothing more but a lazy cat.

---

"Greetings everyone, to the Beast Battling Games! This month we have everyone's favorite... The Battle of the Beasts! Many of you already know the rules, but for our newcomers, let me enlighten you!"

"The beast tamers will enter the arena with their tamed beast once their name has been called. Once there, a fight will begin between the beasts. However, although it is called the Battle of the Beasts, the tamers are able to participate in it as well."

"A fight lasts until one of the tamers surrenders, a tamed beast dies... or a participant dies. While the last case is rare, nobody can predict the outcome of joining a fight between beasts."

"Now before I announce the first participants, first a word from our sponsor! (Raid Bshadow legends! Editor's note)"

The hype up from the host was streamed to a TV in the waiting room, and Leo recognised the sound of the footsteps as the one from the man who had walked alongside him.

"Ladies and Gentleman, a big applause for Chris Red! He has come here today as the representative of his wealthy merchant family and we have him to thank for putting up the Demi-god tier crystal."

Chris started to wave to everyone out there, as the contestants looked at him strangely trying to guess who he was.

"Don't be surprised if you don't recognise the name, as it's not my real name since we would like to keep our real business private," Chris explained, leading to murmuring in the spectating ranks. "Today's price is a kind gesture from us who had been helped out by the Bree family many times in the past without bringing

attention to ourselves. As you all know with Mona missing it hasn't felt quite the same, but we appreciate her family members who have kept up the traditions and wanted to encourage them."

"To all of you participating today, I'm looking forward to a good show. Try your hardest out there and as long as you impress me, I promise there will be even more rewards for you all!"

Hearing this, the waiting room was quickly filled with cheers. Nobody would say no to extra rewards, especially for something they had intended to do in the first place. They no longer cared who that man was, or what his real name was, as long as he fulfilled his promise.

"Now, please give a big round of applause for the first participants today! Beast tamer Leo and his mighty beast Ovinnik against beast tamer Max and his beast 'The Mighty Cruncher'! " The host announced.

'Does this mean it's time for me to wake up?' Ovin yawned, as he jumped off Leo's head and stretched out his body.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1075: A Crossover?

After leaving Leo to head into the coliseum, Erin had left feeling a little disheartened in a way. She had wished to also perhaps participate in the event. She was sure it would have been an experience she could learn from.

She also felt like kicking herself after saying what she had done in front of her teacher and mentor, Leo.

'He's right, where did I even get that confidence from? It's okay to be confident in oneself, but I have to know there are plenty of people out there stronger than me, and not just my enemies, either.'

The one who came to mind was Quinn, whenever she had an image of catching up to someone, it wasn't her teacher, Leo, but Quinn instead. She had seen him improve beyond belief. Although she knew Leo's strength, it was hard to relate because, in her eyes, Leo had always been strong.

As for Quinn, she had seen him grow in leaps and bounds, and at one point she could defeat him with a single hand.

While walking around, she spotted a digital scrolling advert on top of what looked to be an entertainment establishment. It was hard for her to figure out, but she could hear people laughing inside, and the words written on the very top were tavern.

It was strange seeing a mix of new and old in a city like that, but the digital advert was what had caught her eye as it informed her that she could watch the battle of the beasts inside. Entering the place, the smell of alcohol had hit her nose, and it was more sensitive than usual.

As alcohol was one of the few things that vampires still could taste, not that she had this problem anyway, but some things seemed to still affect her differently. The place was pretty busy and pretty dark inside. All the tables and chairs were facing towards the back where a large Digital screen was showing the battle of the beasts and that's when she saw Leo enter the arena with Ovin and his opponent.

His opponent looked like a decent Traveler with good gear at the advanced level, and the beast was one that walked on all fours with a body similar to that of a crocodile, however, its head looked like a giant plant with giant razor-sharp teeth.

Even as it was being brought out, the beast kept hammering its jaws shut, smashing its teeth and with each one, a loud clang was heard. It made Erin wonder if they were adding sound effects to the video to make the beast look more menacing or if that was really the case.

As for Leo, he stood there with his beast gear on, hiding some of the more higher-tier parts under a black robe that would swirl around, in particular, his chest piece.

Still, those with a keen eye would be able to notice that the level of his other equipment was at the emperor-tier level at the moment.

However, what caught everyone's attention, of course, was the black cat that seemed to waddle as it took steps forward in front of him.

"Is that a beast! I've never seen one that looks like that!" The viewers started to communicate.

"Didn't they say that only advanced beasts and up that were tamed could enter? Does that mean its an advanced beast cat."

"The only thing advanced about that cat is it's belly. I haven't seen one as fat as that."

"Perhaps, Sir Connel put them in as a joke, he does like doing things like that.."

"That would seem far too cruel, he would be eaten in minutes by that Cruncher. I'm afraid seeing a cat get crunched up might not be as pleasant as a strong battle."

Honestly, Erin had similar thoughts. According to Leo, he said that his familiar was a strong one and not to worry. She knew not to judge by appearances, but when one looked like that, how else was she meant to act?

While in the middle of her thoughts she felt someone approaching her from behind, and she swiftly moved away. Looking back, she could see a hand mid-air moving from below.

"Oh, what a quick lady, I wonder how you were able to move so fast." A man chuckled, who stunk of booze.

The temper in Erin was rising, but with the amount of people in the tavern, she didn't want to cause a scene and cause more trouble. However, if she hadn't moved, that hand clearly would have been on her bottom.

"Come on don't be mad, with a bottom like that, it was practically made for squeezing!" The three men chuckled to each other.

Walking up to them, Erin was now underneath the man.

"Very well, you can touch me, but are you prepared for the dangers that you will face?" Erin said, still not looking the man directly in the eye.

Still, he seemed to ignore her words as he went forward again and attempted to latch onto her. But before he could, with the palm of her hand, she had struck his chin. He could feel his brain rattling against his skull, and a dizziness coming over him.

As he was about to fall, she grabbed him by his shirt as he hung there in place, then, turning him around, she kicked his back side so hard, his friends thought they heard his pelvis crack.

The man was then chucked over to the other two of his friends. Everything happened so fast, they were at a loss at what to do.

"Don't worry, your friend won't need to use his hips. Any spawn he creates doesn't deserve to be raised by scum like him." She said, and the fierce look she gave the two of his friends frightened them so much that they made a quick exit out of the tavern running.

Luckily, because of how quickly she had dealt with things, and how noiseless the whole thing was compared to the noise in the room, it didn't seem like anyone noticed, for they were too busy still joking about the cat.

However, one person at the bar area was heard clapping.

"Bravo!" A female said, who had light blue hair and didn't seem to be dressed in any beast gear, which was odd. However, she did have a staff in her hand that stood out to Erin. It had what looked like a crystal at the top, but it would be useless as a weapon to just use a normal staff with a crystal attached.

"You dealt with those annoying men beautifully, I thought that perhaps I would have had to come and help you, but you had it all settled. You are a strong one." The girl said.

Erin didn't know how to act. Most of the time it was males that approached her, as for females, they would stay away due to her attitude, or dislike of her looks, however, other than Layla, this was the first time someone seemed to be talking to her.

"Come here, sit, I assume you are here to watch the event?" The girl said. "It's always more fun to watch something together don't you think?"

Looking around, Erin could see that there weren't any other seats available, and she didn't want more incidents like the one before to happen. These slime men would usually approach singular girls. Although Erin could deal with them, it was just a problematic thing to deal with. In the end, she decided to sit with the kind stranger, although she felt awkward at how she was staring at her with a smile.

"You are not much of a speaker are you?" The girl said, looking at the screen as it looked like the fight was about to start. "Who do you think will win? The cat duo certainly seems interesting, don't they?"

It was clear that if Erin didn't say something, this girl would be asking her questions all day, so, giving out a sigh, she decided to reply.

"The man with the cat will definitely win, the rules state that either the man has to surrender or his beast needs to be defeated. However, even if his beast is unable to fight, then that man will finish the beast and the opponent before they get close."

Erin replied, confident in her teacher.

"You have a good eye, I'm surprised you would go for the man with the cat, not many would in this situation. They would think you're crazy, but I don't. However, you are wrong about one thing. That man won't have to do a single thing in this fight, the cat will take care of everything himself. I know, for I have already seen it happen."

Erin was wondering what this girl was talking about, and was now a little worried she was sitting next to a person who wasn't all there.

"Just like I know me and you would meet." The girl said as she turned to look at Erin.

Now Erin was on edge, but at the same time, not as a soothing energy was coming from this person. 'Who is she?'

"Would you like me to tell you about your future, Erin?"

Getting up from her seat, Erin was ready to get out of the place. She was afraid this was some type of trap. There were only a few people who knew her name. Those from Pure who she had worked with, the vampires, and those from the Cursed ship, but Erin didn't recognize this girl at all.

"Who are you?" Erin asked.

"Me, I'm just someone who is able to see things that others can't, but if you were asking for my name, then it would be Bliss." She said standing up now as well.  
"Erin, heed my warning, while two sides that didn't know of each other will come together to defeat an enemy the other one created, the whole world will learn of the other side.

"At that moment, the trust and bond between those two will be broken, and a new chaos will destroy the other. You will become that Chaos." Bliss said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1076: The fat cat

Erin felt a headache coming up. Not only had that strange girl called Bliss come up to her without being asked, now she was speaking in riddles. It was hard for her to judge whether the girl was just someone crazy, or perhaps someone affiliated with Pure. But if it was the latter, then why would she have willingly appeared in front of her?

"Don't you think it's pretty rude to tell someone you have just met something like that?" Erin questioned her with a nervous smile. "How about you start explaining yourself, for example who exactly you are, before I really might be causing some chaos here."

Looking around the room, the dhampir checked if there was anyone else in the room with her. There was no scent of a vampire or such, else her body would have reacted strongly by now, and her own ability couldn't sense any Qi apart from her own... unless someone here had an even greater Qi control than herself, which would mean she was in great danger.

Raising her hand, Bliss pointed towards the screen at the back, it looked like the fight was about to commence.

"I'm not here to hurt you, Erin, so why don't we just enjoy the match and see if my little prediction turns out to be correct." Bliss suggested. The dhampir was still sceptical, but if the other party had wanted to hurt her, would she have shown herself so willingly and openly?

For now, she decided to remain vigilant, but also check out the spectacle.

---

Both Leo and his opponent had stepped into opposite sides of the ring. Leo placed his hand on the hilt of the sword and was ready to draw it.

'I will take out the beast and not harm the man by his side to make quick work of this.' Leo informed his familiar on what to do.

'There is no need.' Ovin replied. 'I didn't choose to follow you so I could just laze around all day. I could have done that in the Familiar World as well. Besides, if you were to act now, won't that reveal who you are to the others?'

Leo trusted Ovin quite a bit, the connection the two of them had formed allowed them to understand each other, yet the blind man couldn't help but think that his partner was contradicting himself. Since he had come here, all it had done was laze around.

"Let the fight begin!" The host announced and rang a bell.

As soon as the match officially began, their opponents, beast tamer Max, as well as the 'Mighty Cruncher' showed off their teamwork. Max jumped onto the crocodile-like beast's back, as the creature charged towards their opponents at a frightening speed. Its jaw was opening and closing just as fast as its legs were moving.

The cat just stood there, and soon its eyes started to glow in a fierce yellow. The next moment yellow mist started to surround it.

'You lowly creature, how dare you bare your fangs at me?!" Ovin shouted, yet to the outside world it sounded like Ovin had let out a loud bark. That's right, the fat cat hadn't let out a cute meow but a fierce bark like a dog.

Those watching the transmission found it hilarious, but those inside the colosseum regretted coming here. The bark was deep and menacing, and struck fear into all those present, most of all Max on top of his beast as he was the closest one. The beast tamer felt his whole body shake and his instincts told him that the fat cat was far more dangerous than any other beast he had ever encountered.

He pulled out a beast spear from his back, too afraid to get close to the cat. His plan was to stab it while riding on top of his beast, but the next moments, he leapt through the air as his tamed beast had stopped moving, frozen in fear.

'Did I lose control, because I was too scared?' Max wondered. However, as soon as he tried to reconnect the link he had with the Mighty Cruncher using his ability, nothing seemed to work. He didn't even notice when the cat had lazily hopped on top of the other's beast to whack it with its paw.

'Now sleep!' Ovin shouted into the poor creature's mind. It looked like a cute action, but the force behind the action was enough to slam the reptile head into the area and leave an imprint. Nobody was surprised that all of the Mighty Cruncher's teeth had shattered in the process.

'This is your punishment for not knowing your place!' Ovin harrumphed and looked over to the beast tamer. Fear overcame Max and he quickly knelt down.

"I give up, please let me get out of here!" He begged shamelessly, afraid what might happen to him if the cat could deal such damage to his beast with a simple cat paw.

It was dead silent and everyone just watched the fat black cat leisurely walk back to its owner. As if everything before that had been a mere illusion, and yawned once more and laid down on its stomach.

'This body is tired. Pick me up, please.' Ovin requested as he rolled around on his back. Leo didn't hesitate to comply. The familiar had done a great job, so he put him back on his favourite spot, his own bald head.

"What just happened, did we just see a cat defeat an advanced tier beast in a single hit!"

"Yeah, I thought it might have been a joke candidate or something, but that's not the case at all. Do we know what tier it is? It has to be Emperor tier at the very least, right?"

"We should never judge a beast by its size."

The spectators in the crowd were the first to recover and they instantly started to talk about what they had just witnessed. The host was the next, who hurriedly declared Leo the winner, as everyone was already cheering for him.

---

"That little cat was even more impressive than I thought. I knew it would be strong but it surpassed my expectations." Chris said, as he was watching from a special area with other members of Pure.

"Do you still not have any information on the bald guy and that cat? Focus on it, and tell me as soon as you find out." Chris ordered, and started smiling.

'That man, it looked like he was going to face the beast on his own at first, I wonder if he's strong as well.' Chris thought.

---

Back at the tavern, most were ecstatic that the cat had won. Apart from those who had bet on the Mighty Cruncher to earn a pretty penny, everyone else found it quite hilarious and frightening at the same time. Many were even wondering if they had one beer too many.

"I think you might believe a little more about what I have to say now." Bliss said, smiling at Erin.

Usually, even after something like that, Erin would have walked away, but for some reason the advent glow of energy was coming from this person. It reminded her of her long lost mother. It felt so warm, that she just felt like she could trust this person's words.

The two sat down, as neither one was too interested in seeing the other matched. They both turned looking towards the bar.

"Alright, I can listen to you, but you better start to make more sense than your chaos stuff. Only a few people should know about that cat, so did you just guess that it was powerful? More importantly, how did you know about me?" Erin asked.

"Straight to the point." Bliss replied as she sipped on the drink she had ordered. "As you know, people have abilities, and I guess you could say that my ability allows me to see great catastrophes that will happen in the future."

"My visions show me bits and pieces, and it eventually led me to staying on this planet and finding you. I've foreseen the two of us meeting in this bar and speaking, just as we are now"

It seemed pretty hard to believe that someone could have such an ability that would allow them to see that far into the future. If the military knew about this, they would have snatched this person, and used her to prevent many catastrophes.

The only reason why she was inclined to believe this girl a bit, was because Cia, who was a banshee also shared a similar ability.

"Let's say I do believe you having this ability, what did you mean earlier when you told me I would become 'chaos'? Are you saying that I'm going to be the one that ends up killing everyone? How can that be?" She wondered.

For a brief second, she saw Bliss looking towards her left arm that had the chains underneath her clothes, and naturally Erin tried to pull it away.

"It's a conclusion I came to after gathering all the small pieces." Bliss admitted. "I'll be honest with you, I have long since attempted to interfere in the things I was shown, but I'm afraid that interfering has done no good so far. It seems like the visions even include my future involvement. I have also tried not to get involved, but then my visions seem to still come true anyway!" Bliss sighed as if she was annoyed by this whole thing and she really did look troubled.

Thinking about what Bliss had said before, Erin wondered if Bliss could be a subtype of vampire like Cia. It was hard to say based on what visions exactly she saw.

"If that's the case, then why have you come here? If the outcome will be the same either way?" Erin had to ask, wanting to get a clearer picture of what she meant by those words.

At that moment, Bliss stood up and grabbed her staff as if she was ready to leave but then looked at Erin one more time.

"The content of this vision is too great to not do anything as the consequences are too far reaching. I'm taking a bit of a gamble by not telling you everything I was supposed to say according to that vision. I can't say for sure that it will work, but you should know enough to try and prevent it from happening."

"Only once in the past have my visions been circumvented." Bliss revealed as she walked past Erin. "Trust the Talen family, they have something special going on with them. They were the only ones who had ever proven me wrong."

'Trust the Talen family?' Erin thought. 'Talen, as in Quinn Talen?'

Erin wasn't content with knowing just this much. Seeing Bliss go away, she wanted to stop her, but as she tried to stand up, she felt that her feet were stuck in place. She opened to shout at this person but the words from her mouth wouldn't leave either.

'Is this her doing? What sort of ability can do something like this!' Erin was panicking.

From a distance, she could hear Bliss mumble a few words with her advanced hearing as she left out the door.

"If he was here, then none of this would have been a problem. Is this really what you wanted to happen? Is this why you placed everything in that giant tablet?"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1077: I've found you

On their way back into the waiting area, Leo couldn't stop being praised as soon as the other contestants saw him. All of them were staring at him in awe.

"How lucky must he have been to get such a cat?"

"I wonder what his beast's level it's at? Maybe we'll get to see it fight even more beasts."

"I want to rub its belly." A man said with pink rosed cheeks, and there were a few more that agreed.

"Just to be clear, we are talking about the cat, right?"

It was unusual to see such small, powerful beasts, and especially with a person none of them knew. Those who had the beast taming ability would usually be part of the Bree family somehow, which was why they were so surprised to see someone else with strong ability.

Although no one questioned it for a few reasons, there were always those who might have learned the ability and left the faction, especially after Mona left. There was also the chance that it was taught to outsiders. Now with Mona gone, there wasn't such a tight leash on the ability itself.

The other thing they thought, it was possible that this man was a nobody in the faction before and had just come across the cat. Taming a strong beast was a quick way to go up the ranks in the Bree family, so there would often be many who didn't have one to start.

The way the Bree ability worked depended on their MC cells. They would form a type of link over the beast. In a way, rather than taming the beast, it was more similar to controlling its mind to the point where one would become its owner.

However, a person's MC cells were limited. Some would have the strongest beast. Their ability allowed them to, while others would control multiple weaker beasts. Still, if they came across a beast that was stronger than their own and wished to tame it, the only thing they could do was get rid of the current ones they had.

'I'm glad that they are all finally seeing my worth.' Ovin said, laughing inside Leo's head. The black cat sure liked to showboat. Leo could tell there were other ways for the cat to have won that fight, but he just had to show off.

Although Leo didn't think of it as a bad thing, initially, he wanted to stay hidden so he could look for those in Pure without them knowing about him. Still, since that wasn't working, perhaps the best approach was to make them come to him.

Since Leo's fight was the first match, everyone saw what had happened, and the rest of the matches continued. At the same time, contestants and their beasts received healing. Of course, Leo didn't need any healing, and neither did Ovin. Still, Leo was also worried that they might just find out Ovin wasn't a beast if he was seen to.

Eventually, everyone who had survived the first round stage had returned, and coming in last into the room, was a Traveller with shining bright blue beast armour that looked like a knight in the olden times. As they took off their helmet, their long blonde hair could be seen.

Soon the man went over to another. This one looked more like a gladiator appropriate for the setting they were in. He had spikes sticking from his shoulder pads, and his chest was bare, while he wore a strange helmet that pointed outward like a beak covering his face.

"It looks like that one might be our biggest threat, Pine." The blonde man whispered, looking at Leo, who was leaning against a wall in the room.

"Yes, I thought I might have been me and you, battling out till our claws went bloody inside. I didn't think someone would interrupt us to get their hands on that Demi god crystal!" Pine replied.

The blonde-haired man's name was Yell, and before Leo had entered, he was one of the favourites to win this event, and this was true for Pine as well, but at times when a strong unknown foe they didn't know about appeared. Two enemies would become friends.

"I have a plan, he has strong beasts, but the Traveller himself might not be strong. I would say try to ignore the cat and go straight for the man." Yell said with a smile.

With Leo's hearing, he knew everything that was going on, but he didn't mind. They could plan all they want. No matter what they had prepared, he would win all of the matches and claim the prize. Not that he wanted it anyway.

'Perhaps I could get some good equipment out of this event. To become the sponsor and give something like that so easily. They must have great power. Perhaps he is involved in all of this as well?' Leo thought, thinking about the large man.

The matches went on, and once again, Leo dominated his battles with his cat, hitting the opponent's beast with one hit every time. They had fought everything up to an emperor tier beast. The same was for Yell and Pine, but something unfortunate had happened, and Pine was eliminated by someone else.

'That useless man, I wanted to see what he would do against the blind man first.' Yell thought.

Now they were into the semi-finals of the tournament, and Leo was to go against Yell this time. The cat stayed on top of Leo's head as they came out, and surprisingly decided to talk.

'I'm afraid that I might not be able to help you with this one.' Ovin said.

Leo looked at the beast and could sense it was at the Emporer tier level. It was a bird type beast that was large and had its two legs grounded on the floor. Its wings were razor-sharp, which were used to slice the opponents it faced.

It was strange to hear Ovin say this, for Leo was sure he should have been able to defeat something like this.

'I'm not weak. I'm just weak at the moment. When connected with our hosts, we familiars aren't meant to stay out this long, but because you had me pretending to be a beast, I stayed out for you. Finish this as quick as possible, and then let me rest.' Ovin said, jumping off his head and pretending to fight once again.

Leo didn't really understand the familiars that well. If they suffered so much connecting to a host, then why did they choose to have one in the first place. Was it the desire that Ovin had talked about?

Still, the fight was to continue, and Leo wanted to return the favour to Ovin.

"I will finish this as quickly as possible," Leo stated.

At the same time, in the special booth Chris was watching from, one of the Pure members had eventually returned and had some information he wanted to deliver.

"Sir, we tried looking into that man that you spoke of. There was no information about him concerning the Bree family." The man reported. "However, when we continued digging, we did find someone that thought they might have recognised him. They believe that he is under the Cursed faction at the moment, the man who is known as one of the Heroes of the war, the blind swordsman."

As Chris heard this information, his heart beat faster than ever. He looked down at the arena floor, and Leo had drawn his sword. The beast was coming straight at him, ignoring the cat, and Ovin had even jumped out of the way.

"Yes, I will win this thing!" Yell shouted.

Lacing his weapon with as much Qi as possible, Leo struck once, cutting off the whole of the beast's wing cleanly as it went past. It immediately fell crashing onto the floor, and before Yell could do anything else, the blade was pointed at his neck.

"I surrender!" Yell shouted.

The crowd cheered once again, and when Yell had finally stopped shaking and looked up at the man who had his sword pointed at him, he noticed he wasn't looking at him.

'Is he looking at someone in the crowd, but I thought this man was blind.'

At that moment, Leo was looking directly at Chris, who was standing up, letting all of his Qi energy out as well.

"Looks like I've finally found you." They both said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1078: The feeling of red

When Bliss had left the tavern, the effects of whatever was stopping Erin from moving her body were still there for a few seconds. She looked down at her arm, and was tempted to take off the chain. Her hand hovered over it for a few seconds but quickly decided against it.

Waiting a short while, she eventually could move just like before, and of course, by now, the girl known as Bliss would have been long gone.

'Who was that crazy girl, should I believe everything she said?' Erin thought. But she knew the name Talen, and that little passage she spoke or riddle, it didn't sound like the best of things.'

Knowing that Bliss was out of reach, Erin looked at the ground where she was, and it was only then that she could see a giant circle that had been drawn underneath and inside that circle there were several patterns. The patterns were other shapes and objects inside the circle.

The floor was quite dusty and the circle itself just looked like it had been drawn, with someone wiping their finger against the dust. Whatever the case was, the circle definitely wasn't there before when Erin came to sit down with the girl, she was sure of it.

'This looks like some creepy magic stuff, maybe she had it set up from the beginning.' Erin said, touching her head, as if it was giving her a headache. 'I'm acting like what she said was true, but what if it is true? No, even if it is true she said that not all of her visions had come true, and decided my own fate. I don't believe in that crap in the first place.' Erin then walked out of the tavern, heading towards the colosseum.

She was wondering if she should have contacted Leo via the mask, but whatever danger there was, it had already come and gone. Instead, she would head to where he was, who knows if someone came to visit her, perhaps someone had come to visit him as well.

---

After the semifinal match had finished in the battle of the beasts, there was a break before the final event would happen, the last two contestants had even been placed in different rooms as they recovered.

As for Chris and the others, they too were taking a break as they waited for the final event to begin, and were in a break room inside the coliseum. The room had been created for Mona Bree, as the colosseum was one of her most favorite places to visit.

However, at the moment it was occupied by six members of Pure, as well as Chris, who was sitting down on a sofa.

"Sir are we not going to do anything about the Blind swordsman?" One of the men asked. "It's clear that is him after his display of skills. If our research is correct, he shouldn't have the beast taming ability. He should be disqualified from this tournament."

Chris was relaxed and he couldn't stop smiling since returning from the arena, every so often, once in a while he would laugh randomly as he was deep in his thoughts.

"Are you saying that a small cat isn't a beast? Then what would you have me think it was? Even if he doesn't have the beast taming ability the fact that he is able to control a beast means he is doing the same thing. Is he not?"

"And whether he is using his own skills or the beast that is completely up to him and within the rules."

Although the other Pure members didn't say it, they were wondering what Chris was thinking. Did it matter if it was against the rules or not, had he forgotten their real reason for coming here and supporting the event, it wasn't to find a winner, or to see who was the strongest, but to bring those with high level beast taming abilities back with them.

However, none of them would say a thing to Chris, after all, he was rank 1, and there was only one person in the organization who could truly overthrow his order.

"Then answer me this, do you not think that man might run away if he finds out who we are?"

Chris scoffed at this thought-like the man was a fool.

"Do you really think it was a coincidence that the blind swordsman has come all the way here? No trust me he won't run away. I'm sure he has plenty of questions to ask, and I have my own as well." Chris tapped the sheath of his strange-toothed weapons a few times as he said this.

"The two of us shall meet when I hand over the prize to him, he just doesn't know that there will be one more opponent for him to face."

---

Meanwhile, in Leo's resting room, away from the eyes of others, he had finally paced Ovin back into his own body, giving him time to rest.

'Ah that's much better.' Ovin said.

It was also the first time that Leo had felt a significant amount of his Qi energy being taken from him.

'Are they not able to consume Qi as well while they are out?' Leo thought.

Sitting down, Leo concentrated to try to recover as much energy as he could. From what he had lost giving to Ovin. Now Ovin's power had returned, he was sure that he could deal with the final competitor. However, one should never be contempt and Leo wanted himself to be at full strength as well, ready for anything.

Now that he had learned the third stage of Qi, Leo could extract small bits of Qi from the outside world. Sensing Qi not just from life and beasts, but in the air around them. Earth, unlike the other planets, seemed to have quite the bit of natural Qi flowing around.

Still, it was a difficult thing to do, and the amount that could be extracted was minimal. It felt like a straw had been strangled and Leo was trying to drink water from a pool with that said straw.

'That man from earlier, he purposely showed me his Qi, he knew straight away that I could use Qi in an instant, and he was able to hide it from me before. I can only assume that he is a member of Pure, and a high ranking one at that.'

'He will be able to give me my answers.' Leo thought.

---

The stage was set, and everyone was ready for the final match that was about to take place. Ovin was out once again and on top of Leo's head, but he was slumped over more than he usually was.

'I know I recovered some energy, but fighting these guys is a bit of pain. I think it might be good if I didn't use my full power.' Ovin said.

However, Leo was ignoring the little black cat, and even his opponent, who stood opposite him. He didn't even register that his opponent had a high-level Emperor tier beast with him, one that had black skin and even had what looked like beast armor on themselves. A humanoid type beast.

'Show me what you can do.' Chris said, staring eerily back at Leo at the same time.

Everyone was at the edge of their seat, waiting to see what would happen next. They were excited to see the black cat pound all of its enemies in one hit, and a few from the crowd since Leo's last display were recognizing who he was, still, they didn't care. They had come here for entertainment purposes.

"Everyone, the final battle will now begin!" The announcer shouted.

At that exact time, something large fell from the sky. As it landed, the whole area shook and cracks in the ground had formed, splitting out, destroying even the seating area in the coliseum. When the dust finally settled, they could finally see the black-skinned humanoid beast.

However, it was just the tip of its head and that could be seen through the dust. With more of the dust moving down, they could now see that the beast's head had been removed from its body and the figure that was holding onto the head itself.

"I am Dred! And I'm here to get rid of you all!" The Dalki smiled.

A Dalki had invaded the collusion, a place on earth, and a single one at that, but this event would send shockwaves through the whole human race, for it was a four-spiked Dalki.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1079: Taking off

\*Bang

A loud sound was heard throughout the whole giant ship, and even at the very end, vibrations could be felt. However, the Dalki on the ship continued their work as usual. It seemed like it was an everyday occurrence for them.

As for where the bang came from, it was none other than the cave-like meeting room. Where One Horn and Graham were in the middle of conversing again. One Horn's two fists could be seen on the black table, and small cracks had formed in the top of it, but not much damage had been done to the table or the room itself.

"Do you not remember our warning to you One Horn?" Graham said. "If you break this room one more time we will be banning you from meeting with us. I know you struck that way on purpose but you are testing the limits of this ship."

"Do you think I care about something like that!" One Horn shouted, waving his arms about.

Although Graham didn't really react much to One Horn's cries or shouts, it was an everyday occurrence at this point.

"You must have gotten the report. I know you said Dred was free to do what he liked, but I bet even you didn't expect him to go to earth at this crucial point and time, and on his own! If it was you or me, we could have gotten out of there, but Dred will fight until all of his blood has been split!" One Horn shouted. "If we lose him!"

"Are you doubting our commanders?" Graham replied, as he looked into One Horn's eyes across the table. "You're right, I didn't expect this. Did you forget what I said before though, if we didn't expect this, then neither did they. It will be a long time until they will send anyone of significance to help. He will definitely be able to cause quite the carnage. But this will give us a chance to see just what we are up against. Besides, remember although Green horn and Dred are our two weakest commanders, we will not have to worry." Graham said.

This answer didn't really please One Horn, but he knew now there was nothing he could do. Sending out a force to help Dred would be useless in their situation. For now, before the Dalki fully acted they had to wait for one of two things to happen, which was why he was so aggravated.

The Dalki were waiting for something to occur in the vampire world, before they made the moves they wanted to on the humans, putting so much trust in people he didn't even know about was what had worried him.

"Don't overthink too much, that Vampire is strong." Graham said as if he could tell what One Horn was thinking. "Remember how he was able to beat both Dred and Green Horn. He will succeed, if he wants us to keep up our end of the deal."

The giant dust cloud was lifted so high into the sky that nearly everyone from the entire city could see it. The coliseum was placed in the centre of the entire city after all. Even if they had happened to miss it, they sure would have heard the screams coming from the place as people ran outward, warning everyone.

Erin, seeing this immediately made her way to the coliseum thinking something was up with Leo, and quickly grabbed one of the people that were running away.

"Tell me, what's going on inside!" Erin demanded.

It was a woman, who was completely shaken, even while Erin was holding her now she was shaking,

"It's a Dalki, the Dalki have invaded! And it's a four spiked one!" She shouted back.

Now she understood why everyone was running like it was their last days. A four spiked Dalki in a place of little significance like this, no one probably expected this.

Soon Erin's grip had weakened, letting the girl go.

"A four spiked Dalki, invading here?!" A shiver ran down her spine, and seeing the shocked look on peoples faces reminded her of a past, a dreaded past when she had lost all of her family.

'Don't fear it, Erin. You have to turn this fear into a strength. Remember!' She told herself as she took deep breaths.

However, back then, she could do nothing when a Dalki had attacked her planet, and when the Dalki had attacked her and her friends she had failed again. Would she fail this time? These past experiences were severely clouding her judgment on what to do.

"Sister, Sister, you have to run!" A little boy shouted at Erin as she stood there, before her mother picked up the boy and continued running.

She wasn't sure if she would be much help the way she was at the moment, but she couldn't just stand here while other people were getting hurt inside. She grabbed the chains on her left arm for a few seconds, and when she did a memory had occurred to her.

Back on the cursed ship a while ago, Erin and Leo were in a training room together. The one who had called the meeting was Leo himself. He had caught Erin's aura

acting widely, and he noticed it was every time she would get close to a vampire. Especially when the two of them would have training sessions together.

"When have you been experiencing these urges?" Leo asked.

"Ever since we returned from the vampire world, but I have never acted on them, and I won't!" She said in a panic.

"Are you sure? You should know we don't know much about vampires. The urge of the blood was something even I couldn't completely control when I was in a dire situation. Sometimes, our will isn't all that is needed. We shouldn't feel bad about using the tools around us to help us."

"Otherwise, I would have never picked up the sword to help me in the first place."

Erin understood what Leo was saying, and more so, she actually felt the urge growing stronger as days went by. Sure she could control it for now, but could she really keep it in forever. Would the urge continue to grow?

"Shouldn't Quinn be able to feel things like this? And I thought we weren't able to attack our own family members in an attempt to do harm. The bond would stop us!" Erin pleaded, hoping to find some answers.

"Erin, I know you are afraid. In an unknown situation like this one, most people would be. Don't you remember Quinn telling you that you are different? Perhaps the normal rules don't apply to you, as you are different to all of us."

At this point, it felt like Erin was going to give up at any moment now. She had been through so much, losing her family, then having to hide from the Trudream family joining Pure and even know she was different compared to everyone else.

Why did it always seem to be her?

Placed in front of her, Leo had laid out a set of chains. With her ability she could sense that they were beast weapons, but something was different about them, they also had a different aura attached other than the beast aura, something similar to Qi.

"This item has a passive suppression skill," Leo explained. "It's only at the advanced tier level so it might not be able to keep you at bay all the time, but I'm sure you have noticed that there is something else in there as well."

"Yes teacher, I can sense a different aura, is this your Qi energy?" She asked.

"It is not." Leo replied, shaking his head. "I have a number of weapons that have been cursed. Some people think I'm crazy when I tell them this story but you should be able to see the truth. When my friends died, they all wanted me to complete a wish for them, to defeat the Dalki at any cost. Their souls went into those weapons, cursing them. Making them more powerful."

"If ordinary people tried to use those weapons, the curse inside will attempt to take them over, however, if you can control your Qi then you are able to repel it, like I do. However I believe that with you, the curse can be used in a different way. Increasing the suppression powers."

Placing the chain around her arm, the passive skill could be felt instantly, and Erin could feel the energy trying to take her over, but she attempted to fight it. Until eventually she had it under control and what Leo had said was true. Her urge had been suppressed. She just wondered for how long.

What she did notice, was while wearing the chain, it made her feel weaker and she was unable to use her full extent of her powers. For now though, she would just see this as a training method to make herself stronger.

Back at the front of the coliseum the area was clear now, as nearly everyone had run away from the area, and Erin was left there with her hand over the chain's.

"If it's a four spiked Dalki, I'm going to have to use everything, otherwise I'll just get in the way!" She said, unravelling the chains.

At the same time, her normal, usual blonde hair, started to turn to black, and her eyes started to glow yellow.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1080: The old vs the New

On planet earth, the new school base that had been built was redesigned to serve its purpose as the central hub for the main military. This was always the plan once the students were to leave, so it was easy work converting the rooms as they saw fit.

Here, Oscar was currently in some type of command room. Several computer servers were running, and each worker was monitoring something on their screen. All the information from the different beast planets, the Cursed faction, and the Graylash faction would come back to here.

"I need a report on how Owen is doing out there!" Oscar demanded. It was rare for those to see him the way he was currently, a little agitated and shouty. Usually, Oscar was always calm, but his frustrations were led by the fact that Owen was out there on his own.

"Sir, we can't get in contact with Head leader Owen. From what we can see, he has already engaged in combat personally with the Dalki!" One of the men shouted from their seats.

Holding onto an oversized chair that was in front of him, Oscar gripped onto it so tight that the plastic on the chair was starting to crack.

'Owen, I know you're strong, but before in the past, it took all of us to take down a four spike Dalki. You never experienced what we did back then. Do you really think your life is worth it? You should retreat!' Oscar thought.

Knowing that Owen was facing a four spiked Dalki, Oscar was debating whether or not to go out there himself. They had a low chance of winning the battle otherwise. However, he didn't understand why the Dalki were attacking with such a strong force this early on, and what significance that planet held. It was the only thing that was keeping him back.

He needed to stay on earth in case anything else happened here.

'Owen, I hope the god of luck is on your side.'

On the red surfaced planet, Owen had recently come down in the centre of the Dalki force like a flash of lightning. His white robe lifted, and his eyes were glowing blue. There was not white seen at all.

The Dalki closest to him attempted to grab him, but before they could get close, he was lifted into the air with a constant flow of the lightning. Once he stopped, the Dalki fell to the ground and didn't get back up. The others now had him surrounded. Using his fan, he threw it up in the air and struck it with lighting once again.

For a few seconds, the metal fan stayed floating in the air, and soon it rained thunder like a tent covering Owen's body and hitting all the Dalki around.

'I need to deal with them as fast as I can and get to that four spiked Dalki!' Owen thought as he stepped forward and leapt up with his two feet spinning his body. With lightning shooting off from his feet and covering his body, he was able to make himself become a giant lightning bolt, hitting three of the Dalki along the way. Finally, when he landed, he was standing in front of the Dalki leader.

This one looked different from the others. His skin was greener in colour instead of blackened scales like the other Daki, and running up his back, it was clear as day. Four spikes were sticking out. However, there were no other Dalki around him. Instead, they ignored him and chose to go straight for the people behind him.

"Do I really look that weak!" Owen shouted. He was currently on one knee and was huffing and panting. He had used far more of his MC points than he had wished to get up to this point. The forces consisted of plenty of two spiked Dalki that were resilient. At first, Owen was testing how much power was needed to kill them.

When not killing them in a single strike, he only made them stronger and was surprised by how resilient they were.

"You are already tired, and you haven't even fought against me yet. You are just a single human, but I have to admit you seem to be the only one that has caused me some trouble." Dalki said.

'Although this is the person with lightning abilities, is this the man that hurt One Horn? Which means I should be careful.' Green Horn thought. 'Wait, that can't be right. He said that was an old man. This doesn't look like an old man to me. The Humans are getting weaker after all.'

"You know nothing, do you!" As he pushed himself up, Owen smiled and opened up his fan to cover his face as usual. His breathing now seemed to be under control.

"You know, I was hailed a genius even among the Graylash family members. I was able to progress faster and teach techniques to my people to help them grow." Owen said. "Our lighting abilities seem to be different compared to the other powers out there. For us, it's all about the breath."

Soon something started to glow in front of Owen, as his soul weapon was starting to activate.

Back in the command room, Oscar was still waiting for something to happen, and suddenly, a beeping coming from one of the corners of the room could be heard. It quickly went onto the main screen as an energy source was being felt. It was the strongest signal they had seen had landed on a specific place on earth.

"Sir, an urgent report!" A man said. "It appears that a Dalki has entered the city of Zoo. They have invaded earth!"

"How is that possible? We have been keeping track outside. There have been no ships and no pods!" Oscar shouted.

It was true. Even from all the footage they had, they could see nothing from space. Until one of the cameras caught something. It looked like the Dalki had just fallen out of the sky. There was no pod, nothing, as they fell straight to the ground, but a few seconds before landing, they did see something, wings.

"This reading, it looks like it's another four spiked Dalki! It seems to be the only one as well." They reported.

'What is going on? In the first war, we only faced one four spiked Dalki, and now there are two! And what is their goal of landing in Zoo of all places? There is no one there that can handle a four spiked Dalki. Mona Bree is still missing!'

"We need to move out as quickly as possible and head to Zoo immediately!" Oscar ordered.

Inside the coliseum, the dust had settled entirely, and the head of the emperor tier humanoid beast was chucked to the side by the Dalki. As it hit the wall, it splattered into pieces, only leaving black blood on the wall.

The human who controlled the beast had long run out of the arena, but instead, another one had jumped in. The red-haired man, with his two weapons drawn.

Leo too, had his weapon drawn, and even Ovin was on high alert as its eyes started to glow, forming the trail of yellow mist. Every single one of them was looking towards the Dalki in the centre.

They didn't need to communicate. They didn't need to say anything. They just knew that they would need to work together to take this Dalki down.

'Should I contact Quinn and inform him of what is happening here?' Leo thought. 'If the Dalki is here, perhaps the teleporters aren't working either. However, how would he get here? He can summon me to his side, but what about Erin, and there are no shadow users here either.'

"Who would have thought the two of us would be working together," Chris spoke. "You know, when I first met you, I thought that maybe we could be friends, talk about a few things together, looks like that might have to wait. I can feel your bloodlust and the bloodlust coming from your sword there as well."

"You hate these giant lizard's don't you? Well, a good thing for you. I hate them too!" Chris said, as he activated all the Qi that he had contained in his body, there was no use hiding it now.

Unlike Leo's, which was calm and controlled, Chris's was wild, and his body was reinforced with it everywhere. It was the largest amount of Qi Leo had ever seen.

Cutting his sword through the air, Leo smiled.

'Since when did I start becoming reliant on the boy. I will solve this matter with my own hands, and I shall get revenge for everyone.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1081: All together

The first one to throw an attack out against the Dalki was Chris. He swung both his blades out to the side, unlocking all of the links, extending his weapon. It then laid there flat on the ground like a snake. Lifting them high into the air, he then slammed them down onto the Dalki.

Chris didn't need to move his arms much, for he could control and change the blade's trajectory with his own Qi. He could also use this to extend and shorten his weapons at will. All of his attacks at the moment, he was pushing his Qi to the limit, not holding back.

Three of the weapon's teeth sank into the either side of the Dlaki's shoulder, digging in, oozing the green blood, and both of the Dlaki's feet sank a few inches into the ground.

Seeing this as an opportunity, Leo leapt close towards the Dalki, ready to strike at its head.

'It seems like this red haired man doesn't know that we need to kill it in one shot, otherwise it will just get stronger!' Leo thought.

Ovin, the black cat, also had leapt onto Leo's heads and started powering up and looking for the right opportunity.

"Careful!" Chris shouted. "My weapons are stuck in him, and I think he got hit on purpose."

Chris was trying his best to pull back his weapons so the teeth could rip the area of his shoulders. However, the Dalki was holding onto part of the weapon, and the two of them were in a battle of strength.

'Ha, I never thought someone would actually beat me in a battle of strength like this. Especially a damn lizard.' "It just means I have to use more power!" Chris shouted as he yanked the chains, and viable energy could be seen leaping from his skin, he was covered in a strange yellow energy.

The teeth on the weapons had moved a few inches, but that was all as the Dalki pulled on them again.

"Weak!" The dalki said as it bent its knees, ready to do something.

Ovin seeing this, let out a mighty bark once more, producing visible sound waves that would ripple through the air. This one was much louder and fierce than the one before.

'I bet they've never felt something like this before!' Ovin proudly said. 'Use this chance while he's stunned, to take him out!'

It was true, the Dalki could feel it, and Chris could suddenly pull out his chains as they continued to rip through the Dalki's body but then the Dalki had tilted its head back and when it threw his head forward an almighty roar came out. It was nearly twice the strength of what Ovin had produced. Ovin's yellow mist started to shrink, as if a sign that the Cat was afraid.

'Me, afraid of this. I'm one of the great kings of the familiar world! Damn him!'

Even for Leo, he was frozen slightly in place. His mind was clear, and unafraid, but it was human instinct, when hearing something that menacing, to not proceed any further. The Dalki grabbed the weapons before they had retracted back to Chris, and then lifted them up in the air along with Chris.

Then, swinging him in circles around the coliseum, Chris was thrown into the stands. His body dragged across the seats as they were being destroyed, using his body. Then when the Dalki finally let go, it looked like Chris was no longer moving.

The Dalki turned back to the bald man, but he was no longer there. The next second the Dalki could see something coming towards its neck. It lifted its arm, and a large slash of red aura had pierced its hard-scaled skin.

"You're fast, too fast for a human!" The Dalki said. "It can't be, why would the two of you be working together!" The Dalki was about to hit Leo with its other arm when it felt another strike hit it from the other side, this one slightly yellow in colour.

It wasn't as strong as the first one, but it still managed to damage its scales somewhat. When he turned to look, he could see a female with black hair holding a giant sword. Leo could sense Erin coming, but it was never part of his plan, he continued to attack with his sword in different places.

Hitting parts of his leg's and more, and Erin also charged in from the other side, doing the same. She had improved greatly, faster than she was before, faster than she had been in any type of training, and she was avoiding every one of Dalki's blows.

'She took off the suppression, has it made her even stronger, it's almost like she's a completely different person. Perhaps, she's...evolved.' Leo thought, but he had to focus on the battle in front of him.

A few hits from a Dalki with this much strength, and both of them weren't sure how much they could recover. What Leo was surprised about was how fast the Dalki

was moving, even able to keep up with the vampire's speed. Leo was only faster by a little bit, and it would always protect its vital points.

Getting up from the broken seats in the stands, Chris could see what was going on. Suddenly, a new girl had joined and was fighting as well. Even the cat could be seen leaping and giving it a few swipes.

They are all so fast, and what's this yellow and red aura coming off from them? Concentrating, Chris tried to sense something and though he wasn't quite sure what the girl's energy was, he could feel Leo's energy even from here.

'It's just like that boy, Quinn. They're using that same energy to fight. Do they know each other?' Chris thought.

Still looking at the fight, he was noticing, something else as well. The Dalki Dred was smiling, it was usual for the Dalki to smile while fighting, but this one looked more sincere. It might have not been clear during the fight itself, but one could notice it from the outside.

The next second, the Dalki curled up into a ball, and suddenly wings sprouted out from its back. It covered both sides of the attacks from Erin and Leo. Then flapped them with strength, pushing back their swords, and causing them both to go slightly off balance.

At that moment, the Dalki stretched its long limbs, hitting both of them at the same time.

'I thought I had improved, I thought we could beat this thing, but that fist is so fast!' Erin thought as she mustered all her will to pull her large blade in front of the attack. When it hit, the blade immediately broke in half, and she was sent flying into the arena wall.

As for Leo, Ovin could see what was about to happen.

'I can't let you lose this fight! My partner still has a desire he needs to achieve! Leo, I will give up here, let me leave you with one parting gift!'

Ovin leapt in front of the fist, and then turned into bright yellow flames surrounding the Dalki's arm. The heat was so immense that the Dalki's hand was dissolving in seconds and Dred had no choice but to cut it off from the top of his shoulder to stop the flames.

The flames had stopped, and Dred flew up into the air with his wings, hovering above the arena, blood dripping down to the ground from his wounds, while Ovin was nowhere to be seen.

Chris had leapt up from the arena floor and landed near Leo's side. His body was quite bruised, but he mostly looked fine.

"Who would have thought that bastard could fly. I guess they look like dragons so it would make sense for some of them to have wings." Chris said. "Sorry about your beast, it looks like it sacrificed itself in that attack."

Although Ovin was gone, he would return, for familiars never died once attached, but he wouldn't be able to be summoned for a while.

"You're strong, your Qi is the sharpest I've ever seen. It's no wonder you could do all those attacks." Chris said. "But there's a big problem, your weapon is a piece of crap. Who is using a king tier weapon in a fight against a four spiked Dalki. You can only hurt that thing because of your sharp Qi otherwise that thing would be useless."

Leo gripped the hilt of his sword tighter.

"It may seem useless, but this has the will of my fallen comrades inside, the ones that were killed by the Dalki. They will not let me down no matter what, each strike will be stronger as we get closer to killing it."

Breaking their conversations, a large bang was heard from the wall as rocks went flying into the air, and Erin was seen coming out with her fangs baring out, something that hadn't happened before, and now she was looking straight towards Leo, rather than the Dalki itself.

She went from one side of the arena to nearly to the other in an instant, and Leo had no choice but to activate his soul weapon for her speed was unexpected as she thrust her other katana style blade.

With his soul weapon, he could force her strike to miss.

"Dman, what the hell is happening." Chris said as he had leapt off to the side. "I thought she was on our side? Did the Dalki do that."

Right now, Leo and Erin were locked in combat, leaving only Chris on his own, but as he looked at the Dalki up in the air, he couldn't help but feel that with its missing arm and the other two having already done too much, he could at least finish it off for them.

"Do me a favour, just don't kill me after this okay." Chris yelled over, directing it at Leo.

"I have no choice, I'm going to have to use the fourth stage!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1082: A better pair of weapons

The frequency of the swords clashing against each other made it seem as if someone was conducting a military firing drill. The sounds originated from the battle between none other than Leo and Erin.

Erin was being the aggressor in the fight, as she constantly pushed forward, swinging her blade time after time again, but no matter how hard she tried Leo managed to block each strike with a little assistance of his soul weapon. However, he didn't just block them, no he simultaneously guided Erin's aura to focus on certain areas.

'My guess seems to be correct, I have never seen Erin move this fast before. As a vampire knight trained in Qi my speed doesn't lose out against the other vampire leaders, yet somehow she is able to keep up with me, which can only mean one thing. She must have evolved!'

'Was it due to having been suppressed and then taking it off? Her overall appearance has barely changed, except some minor changes here and there. I doubt anyone would notice, unless they had spent as much time as me with her, but the energy inside her is running wild. I need to do something.'

As her mentor, Leo had instantly noticed that her swings today were wilder than usual, focusing on speed and strength rather than technique. However, what he couldn't see with his blind eyes was the color of her actual eyes... or more the lack thereof.

At the moment, her black pupils weren't visible, and she was completely unconscious. Her aura alone this was something Leo couldn't quite tell, he just thought that she had just given in to the urge.

Using his soul weapon, Erin's sword got sucked into a spot just underneath his armpit by his ribs. The thrust had missed its target and he quickly hit it down into the ground, before barging into her with his shoulder knocking her away.

"You fell for that move again!" Leo chided her. "Even if you have evolved and are faster, what's the point if you haven't learnt anything?"

The sword was stuck in the ground, and it looked like Erin had nothing left to use, yet she suddenly held a chain that she swung out and that wrapped around Leo's sword. The blind man quickly felt the Qi energy that he had infused into his weapon was being suppressed by it.

'The suppressing chains? She still has them with her? Good, this means there is a chance now!' Letting go of the weapon, Leo allowed it to drop to the ground, and he quickly slid on the floor hitting both of Erin's legs, toppling her.

While on the floor, Erin snarled and yanked the chain with the sword attempting to grab Leo's weapon in her hand, but her wrist was soon stepped on, and Leo had grabbed the weapon.

"Nothing that I say seems to go through to you, but still I'm sorry about this." Leo spoke.

Erin got up from the floor, and Leo had let go of her wrist, now she had nothing in her hand, neither the blade nor the suppression chains. Then diving in head first, Leo went to strike with his weapon, or so she thought, what he actually did was simulate one of his attacks with the third stage of Qi.

As Erin tried to dodge it, she missed the fact that the chains had also been sent out and were now wrapping around her legs. He then continued to run around Erin in different areas as fast as he could, wrapping parts of her body, and finally grabbing her sword. He had stuck part of the chain deep into the ground along with the sword, through the links, until only the hilt of the sword could be seen, making it so Erin could no longer escape.

Parts of her body had been wrapped by the chain, and it seemed like the suppression skill was working as her screams were lessening.

"I know you just wanted to help." Leo said. "And you did a fine job. If it was just me fighting against the Dalki it would have been a lot of trouble."

Going up to the chains, Leo skimmed his hands on top of them, and pushed Erin so she toppled to the ground, looking like a mummy on the floor.

'Keep her bound my friend.' Leo ordered, as he needed to focus on another enemy. During the fight, Leo was nearly fazed, distracted because he had felt a high source of energy, but he hadn't had the leisure time to split his attention away from the fight against Erin.

Now when he looked over at Chris who was standing opposite the Dalki, his skin had turned almost red in colour, matching his hair. The energy was seen coming off his body at the same time.

'How much Qi does that man have? No, this is slightly different, the energy dispersed around his body is coming from somewhere else.' Leo thought as he looked on.

"You look confused." Chris grinned at Leo's wondering face. "It looks like you haven't been taught this yet, so I guess that means you really are the person he was looking for. You should already know that every human's body forms a soul weapon during their teenage years and that it takes shape with one's ability?"

"However, what do you think happens to those who never got an ability? Does that mean that they can no longer use a soul weapon? Well that part may be mostly

correct, but the energy inside the body will still be there and as such, with the right training, it can be used in many ways. I suppose the ability users just all focus on using it in the form of a soul weapon."

The weapons that Chris had in his hands were turning red at this point. The Dalki stayed high in the sky thinking that it was safe, but with a single push of Chris' legs, he crushed the ground beneath him and now the two of them were at equal height as well.

Chris first swung his chains across from one another, and the Dalki easily flapped its wings to avoid the blow, then started to fly straight towards the aggressor. It was flying at an incredible speed, but Chris was unfazed and suddenly, the Dalki felt something on the top of its wings. It was the weapons. Even though they had missed, they had chased after the Dalki from behind, attaching to it.

Moving his hands down, it lifted the Dalki's body up so its body could be seen. Chirs jumped using the ari, and lifted his two legs, kicking the Dalki in the chest. Dred's body didn't move much, but Leo saw two shockwaves come out from his back and green blood started to drip from the invader's mouth.

'It looks like he is producing internal strikes, but is he focusing on that aspect?' Leo pondered on how Chris was using his weapon.

Next, Chris clenched his fists and hammered down on top of the Dalki's head, sending him back down to the ground. A large crater formed where Dred landed and he spit out even more of his green blood.

With the weapons still attached to Dred, Chris was able to retract them, propelling him forward to where Dred was and slamming his two feet towards the Dalki's face to finish him once and for all.

"What would your comrades think about you, knowing you lost against a 'weak' human, especially one without an ability?" Chris taunted the dying creature, only for his smirk to vanish the next second. Instead of feeling the impact of the other's head, his foot had been grabbed by the Dalki's good arm.

"You should have kept your distance, vermin!" Dred replied with a smile on his face, blood dripping down his chest, as he lifted up Chris and flung him into the ground holding him by his one leg.

Dred continued to slam Chris, from side to side into the arena ground, causing more and more cracks in the colosseum and from the looks of it, it might have collapsed at any second. Suddenly, Dred stopped, coughing out even more blood than the Dalki had before.

'Chris is neither faster nor are his strikes any more powerful than before. The Demi-god tier weapon and his Qi trained body already made him as fast as the Dalki and

allowed him to compete with a vampire of my speed.' Leo continued to observe the situation from the side.

'It seems like he is currently burning through his soul weapon's energy inside of him, and it has allowed him to reinforce his Qi, to the point where even a single punch acted as an internal Qi strike.'

A simple way to put it, would be that every single one of Chris' normal punches and kicks was like a hammer strike from Quinn. Even if the Dalki didn't have external wounds, his insides were being destroyed by the second.

Wiping the green blood away, the Dalki threw it out onto the floor, and could see that Chris' skin was starting to fade in the colour as well.

"So that's it? Your little show is over!" Dred spoke as he stopped his assault on Chris. "I have to thank you, your attacks have allowed me to grow even stronger. You're the first one to push me to this point! Let that be your last solace! After this, I'm going to kill every single person in this city, before I go back to where I was meant to be!"

Chris smiled, still holding onto the two Demi-god tier blades. His body felt incredibly weak as using the fourth stage of Qi wasn't something even he could handle for a long period of time. He had long since crossed the safe period and now his body was paying the price. If one person was to use it too long, they would have to fuel it with real life energy, and it would be a wonder if they were to see another day.

As a desperate last resort, Chris threw both of the Demi-god tier weapons with all his might. Dred was able to evade, without even having to move. They just skimmed past his shoulders.

"A weak final attempt." Dred shook his head in disappointment.

"This wasn't aimed at you, I just wanted to pass him a better pair of weapons." Chris explained, smiling.

The next second, the Dalki suffered two slashes on his head... it was the last feeling he would ever experience. His head was no longer on his shoulder and rolled out onto the floor, blood started to squirt out from its neck on to Chris and its body followed after falling to the ground as well. Leo now stood in front of the bloodied Chris, holding both of the Demi-god tier weapons.

The four spiked Dalki, was finally defeated, thanks to the help of the number one ranked Pure, a little help from a blonde girl that just wanted to prove her worth, one of the kings of the Familiar World, and finally, the hero of war, the blind swordsman.

"I guess that's it. You're going to finish me off then?" Chris asked, looking at Leo, unable to move. "Teacher told me that me and you would have to fight one day... I just never thought it would be like this."

"Who exactly is your teacher?" Leo questioned, in anticipation.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1083: The leader of Pure, Zero

Perhaps at one point Leo would have needed to fight the man for information about Pure, but the two of them had just fought on the same side to defeat an enemy that neither one felt like they could have defeated on their own.

"Do you think just because you are a member of Pure that the two of us are automatically enemies and we are unable to talk things out?" Leo questioned the man lying on the ground. "I won't harm you. As a fellow warrior, it would be shameful to attack someone in your condition, especially since you ended up like that for the sake of humanity."

For a long time Chris had imagined meeting the other party. In the past, whenever someone would discover his affiliation with Pure they would immediately treat him as if he was a villain and proceed to attack him on the spot. And yet, this man, who his teacher had imprinted so strongly into his mind as someone that he was destined to fight against...

Leo had simply judged him by the few moments they had known each other for instead of what group he belonged to.

"You really are completely different from what I have been led to believe. I'm sure you have a lot of questions on your mind. After all that's why you're searching for members of Pure in the first place, so let me at least thank you by answering those." Chris offered, as he attempted to move his pinky finger. He started to regain a slight feeling in it, but he would need a long period of rest until he could think about fighting again.

"I will be happy to take you up on that. I just hope you have the answers I ask. Let's start by who exactly your teacher is?" Leo asked, also having noticed the slight movement of the other. He placed Chir's weapons next to him, on the side away from Chris. After all they weren't rightfully his in the first place, but there was no need to return them until after their talk.

'He is a very cautious man and even now he seems to be on guard from any attack. He must have lived through quite a lot even after the war.' Chris noted.

"Who else could it be than the leader of the Pure?" Chris answered, not shying away from the question at all. "That person didn't just teach me how to use Qi, but all of us that know Qi was from him."

It looked like Leo was on the right track. He had already amassed enough clues to guess who the leader of Pure was, but this was the confirmation he had needed deep down inside.

"And does the leader of Pure also happen to have a name?" Leo asked.

"We only know him as Zero. Whatever his real name might be, he has never shared it with anyone..." For a second Chris paused for he recalled one person who might know their leader's name. Zero hadn't started Pure on his own after all, but that woman had already passed on, so there was no reason to mention her.

"You wish to fight him, don't you? Just talking about him has made your aura perk up in anticipation, but let me burst your bubble. You will be disappointed. For as great a man and mentor Zero may be, personally he is... weak. Ironic, isn't it? Guiding others to a treasure he cannot possess... He knew that you would come chasing after him at one point. That's why he trained me."

"He wanted me to get strong enough so I would fight you in his place. I don't know the story between you and him, but he's the saviour of my life and he turned me into Pure's sword, so I have always considered it a small price to repay him. He had once promised to let me know the full story after he passed, but that hasn't happened yet."

For the first time, it seems as if Leo didn't understand anything at all. He had an idea of why Pure was behind everything, but why would this master go through all this? Why did he train someone for Leo to fight against? Alas, the person in front of him didn't have the answers to that either. It seemed like there was no way to find out apart from asking him directly. The memories he had of his master and Chris's story wasn't adding up.

"Why did he create an organisation like Pure? Was it really just to purge the world of ability users? Even he should realise that doing so would hurt humanity. He should be focusing his anger on the Dalki, those that killed all of our friends, or even me, the reason everyone was exposed to the world in the first place." Leo spoke, as he had been left confused.

"How would I know? Everyone has their own reasons for joining Pure. Most of them had been hurt by ability users in the past, however nobody is forced to align with Zero's goal. We are not like that. We just all have the same wish and are working together towards that wish."

"Of course we aren't stupid, as you can see, even I know we need to work together to get rid of the Dalki, but for the longest time during our 'peace' it looked like as long as humanity continued to rely on abilities... we would have managed to kill ourselves even without any outside interference." Chris argued, mulling towards the end.

Due to how weak Chris was, he was unable to hide his energy as well as he had before. It seemed like Chris was struggling with his beliefs as he once did. His energy was all over the place as he said those last few words.

"If you don't have any other questions, would you mind answering one of mine?" Chris requested. Leo was hesitant at first, but ultimately decided that it would just

be fair. As long as it wasn't too deep of a secret he could entertain the other, as such he nodded.

"How come you and that boy share the same strange red energy?" Chris asked.

"Boy?" Leo repeated, surprised at the direction of the question.

"The boy known as Quinn Talen." Chris clarified.

Now it made sense who this man was. He was the same Chris that Quinn had met on the island, and also the one who had taught him the second stage of Qi.

'Who would have thought that everyone would one day meet each other? I suppose that will happen when the strongest powers need to act.'

"That boy and me are close, I am...was his teacher but we both belong to the Cursed faction."

Leo walked away with his answers being answered. After seeing Chris perform the fourth stage of Qi there was one thing Leo was clear about. In a fight with Chris at the moment he would lose out.

He wasn't sure if what was said about his master was true, but before he came to look for Pure once more, he would need to get stronger again.

Seeing Erin, Leo started to unravel the chains, and placed them around her arm, only this time, rather than wrapping it up her forearm, he wrapped the chains to the top of her shoulder.

'It should restrict her movement but the suppression should work better from here.' Leo thought.

Returning to the arena was a large group of members who had beast gear on. It wasn't clear who they were but as soon as they spotted Chris they had come running over to see if he was okay.

"Didn't I tell you guys to run away? Did you disobey an order?" Chris questioned the members of Pure in an authoritative tone, despite his injuries.

"Sir, we apologise for that, but there wasn't much we could do but hide somewhere in the city. The teleporters weren't working, so there was no way for us to leave. Once the fighting and rumbling stopped we believed that you must have successfully defeated the Dalki, so we came to check on you." The man admitted honestly.

Chris looked towards where Leo and Erin would have been, but they had already vanished.

"I didn't defeat the Dalki on my own." Chris mumbled as the members carefully helped him stand up. He started to absorb the energy of the two users next to him. He didn't take too much Qi, just enough so he could walk on his own.

As he walked along, some members stood in front to the side, and towards the back of Chris, and one in particular started to move close to Chris, his eyes glowing red. Pulling his hand back, it started to be covered in a red aura, and the man thrust his fist straight towards Chris' back where his heart would be.

Chris, being his weak self, hadn't even been able to muster up any Qi to protect himself, and only became aware of the attack at the last moment, but the arm had fallen to the floor before it could even reach Chris.

And standing there with a blade in his hand was none other than Leo.

"It seems like you never expected another one to be here. My nose seems to be a bit stronger than yours and I could smell you from a while away. Tell me who sent you." Leo demanded, looking at the vampire that had just attempted to take Chris' life.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1084: Assassination failed

It took a few seconds for the smile on the man's face to disappear, as he realised that his hand had not only failed to pierce through Chris, but was also no longer part of his body. Right now, it was lying on the floor. Now all of his anger was aimed towards the one who had interfered in his assassination.

However, the moment they looked at the offending party, there were two things the assassin noticed straight away. Leo's red eyes, as well as his smell. Both confirmed that he and the man were the same.

'No that's not right,' The man thought as he held onto the seared part of his hand. The blood flow was slowing down as he did his best to preserve himself, using what skills he had. 'The smell is slightly different.'

"What the hell is a Knight like you doing in a place like this?!" The vampire man demanded to know as he took a step back. He didn't recognise what family he was from and since he had already defended Chris, it was apparent that they were not on the same side. As long as he was there, it was impossible for him to accomplish his mission, so he was looking for a way to escape.

"What are you idiots doing? Capture that traitor!" Chris shouted towards the other members of Pure who were all too startled at their companion having gone rogue.

Closing his eyes, Chris was trying to focus. He might have been exhausted but as the number one in Pure it should have been impossible for someone to get so close to him without him noticing. The important part now was to apprehend him, so they could find out more about the assassin.

Even in his weak state, it should have been impossible for a normal person to kill him with their bare hands. His body was naturally hardened and trained beyond belief. The man must have had a trick up his sleeve, or at least known Qi. On top of that, he seemed to know Leo as well.

It was then, that Chris could tell, that the internal red energy inside of their bodies, of Leo and this one was the same.

'What the hell is going on? How come those guys with a different power source of Qi are popping up all over the place? If I remember the boy, it was quite infectious and rapid. Does this mean that not everyone who has the same Aura is on the same side? Things are getting pretty interesting.'

However, Leo was already in front of the man before anyone else had moved, his eyes were glowing red, as he stared directly into the man's eyes. Leo intended to find out why the man had tried to assassinate Chris just now.

"You won't get a thing from me!" The vampire said defiantly, he lifted his arm up, and without any hint of hesitation slit his own throat, deep enough so he died instantly on the spot as he fell to the ground creating a pool of blood.

'Did he know I was going to use my influence on him?' Leo thought. 'It is clear that he was harbouring great secrets that he didn't want anyone to find out about, but who was the one that sent the vampire? He didn't seem to recognise me, so he must have been in the Human World for some time now. Was the one who had sent him someone from the thirteen families, perhaps the former King? ... or could it be that there is someone else out there?'

With the only suspect now dead, Leo looked over the other Pure members. None of them seemed to be another vampire, so there was nothing for him to find out. As such he started to leave once again, only this time for real.

"Wait! That person seemed like he knew you! We have some questions you need to answer!" One of the Pure members attempted to stop him.

"Leave him be!" Chris interfered immediately. "He didn't take my life when he had the chance and on top of that, he just saved me when one of my own already tried to kill me! Right now I trust him more than you." With that, Leo was gone.

'It looks like I owe you one, and I need to start being more careful about who is around me.'

"Why would Dillan do something like this? He's been part of Pure for longer than I can remember." One the Pure members wondered out loud as they inspected the body.

'This must have something to do with that strange red Aura! Dillan didn't have that red aura before. Or is it something else? I would have noticed it. Did it happen not long ago, does that mean there is someone who can pass on that aura? Things are certainly getting interesting.' Chris thought with an intrigued smile on his face.

Moments after, the vampire's face started to change from the Dillan they did regaonise, into someone they had no clue about.

"Let's take that body with us, it's clear that's not Dillan." Chirs ordered.

Not long after, multiple ships with military personnel arrived at Zoo. They immediately began questioning the local populace as they tried to figure out what had happened. The information they received was the same from nearly everyone.

Upon entering the arena, they were quite surprised to find a four spiked Dalki's body lying on the floor, with its head chopped clean off.

Of all the people they had interviewed, no one had seen who had been capable of fighting against the Dalki, or who had killed it. As was to be expected everyone had run away, fearing for their own life.

"We have discovered multiple sword marks on the body, a broken beast weapon that has been left behind. Ashes, and scorch marks across the floor, and finally the head of the deceased Dalki itself. From the looks of it, it was one clean strike that has separated it from its body." Jane reported as she stood by Oscar's side in the arena.

"The head was chopped off in one clean strike? How many times have you seen that happen on a Dalki before?" Oscar asked.

"To our knowledge there are only two people who have reportedly defeated Dalki in such a way. One of them is the leader of Pure. We do not know his identity, but when Dalki had attacked certain areas we found them with their heads chopped off in this type of manner."

"We can only assume that it was the Pure leader themselves who have done that. The second was one of the Heroes of War, the Blind Swordsman." When saying those words that's when she had figured something out. In the report, it had stated that someone with the appearance of the Bline Swordsman had participated in the event in the arena.

"Sir, I know what you are thinking, but do you really believe that the Blind Swordsman could have defeated a four spiked Dalki by himself?" Jane asked.

"No, I don't. It is clear by the state of the area, that there were multiple people fighting, and the rest of the Cursed faction seem to be too far away at the moment. Continue the investigation here, and leave one of the generals to look after this place. The people should still be in shock after having been dragged into this mess."

Oscar ordered as he started to head back towards one of the ships.

'For a four spiked Dalki to suddenly appear here... we were lucky that the Blind Swordsman happened to be here at the same time. Otherwise who knows how many people would have died?'

'Would this have been something possible if it had happened in the first war? No, Quinn I don't know what you and your people are doing, but keep doing it. We might need to rely on the Cursed faction a lot more from now on.' Oscar thought.

"Sir, where are you going?!" Jane asked.

"This wasn't the only four spiked Dalki. It's clear now, the reason this man attacked by himself and why they didn't bother sending any other forces with him. It's because we have been underestimating their power. We have been told that Quinn

Talen is going to help those on the Graylash ships defend against the invading attack." Oscar answered. "It seems like every world leader is taking responsibility and fighting apart from me. I've decided I need to go help Owen."

'We may have underestimated you, but it looks like you have done the same for us. This time, we will win this war!' Owen thought, clenching his fist.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1085: The glowing eyes

The second fleet of the Graylash family was currently being attacked and boarded by several Dalki, and on the main ship alarm bells were ringing throughout.

Despite all of the drills they had gone through in case of such a situation, panic spread around various places of the ship. Usually even with an attack they would have a few moments to brace themselves of what was to come, but they did not enjoy such luxury this time.

[Breach in Section D]

[Section D will now be locked]

[Breach in Section F]

[Section F will now be locked]

Messages of this type were constantly being announced through the intercom, informing everyone that areas were being lost left and right.

Commander Hermes, who was in charge of the second fleet, along with over a thousand of his men had gathered inside one of the largest training rooms.

"Sir, we can't seem to get any communication through whatsoever. The Dalki seem to be in possession of not just teleport jamming devices but also communication ones!"

Hermes was just shaking his head in frustration. They didn't know the exact number of Dalki that had boarded the ship, how many spikes they had, nor anything really about the enemy's equipment.

Information was crucial in any battle, yet they were completely lacking in that department. Should he send too few of his men to deal with the enemy, he would just be sacrificing them in vain. Should he send too many, they would be vulnerable to an attack from sides they would not cover.

At the same time he couldn't do just nothing.

"We need to prioritise defending the most important parts of the ship! These Dalki need oxygen to survive as well, so the life support system should be safe for the time being. However, I wouldn't put it past them to sabotage it, if they feel threatened. Hopefully as we travel through the ship we'll gain a better grasp of the situation."

Hermes then turned to Void and Bonny, who seemed to be in the midst of an argument.

"You two, I don't want your death to be on our hands. Given the circumstances it's too dangerous to leave you behind. Come along with us and try to hide in the back."

The group was prepared to move out and the men had split up into squads with Bonny and Void heading off with Commander Hermes. In theory it should be the safest place for the reporter duo.

"Void turn on your camera. I know we can't livestream right now but we need to capture everything." Bonny whispered as she was continuing on from the argument before.

"Don't you feel any fear, Bonny? Sure we've filmed lots of stuff in the past but that was mostly scuffles between other factions and families. Nothing like this. The Dalki will tear us to shreds, they won't care that we are reporters." Void whispered back, annoyed that his partner seemed to prioritise a scoop over their own safety.

Bonny wanted to slap some sense into Void, after all she needed her cameraman, however she understood his fear. Of course she was frightened as well, but she had already prepared herself for something like this. If they were to perish here, at least they should leave something for the sake of humanity!

"Why do you think we came here in the first place? Did you think there wouldn't be a Dalki attack? This is exactly what we came to film and the people deserve to know! Who knows, our footage may prove very valuable to whoever is coming to save us. At the very least they will find out what's happened, that's the least we can do!"

Although Bonny wasn't talking a lot of sense to Void right now, he took a deep breath.

"When have I ever won an argument against you?" Void sighed in defeat as the little beep from his camera was heard as it was turned on.

His glasses that he used to monitor the drones were turned on as well but none of them was giving him a signal.

Thinking about this, Void was reminded of the person that had let the Dalki on to the ship in the first place. It had been a humanoid figure and the most prominent feature had been the red glowing eyes.

'What if the Dalki aren't the ones behind the jamming devices, but humans? But who in their right mind would choose to assist them? They would have to have been on board already... could it be that there are even more traitors on board?'

Void wanted to get Bonnie's opinion on his theory, but at the moment there were far too many eyes and ears around them. What if he was right and one of those traitors was in their midst?

'He knew that I was watching him through the cameras and he decided to pull it anyway.'

"Alright it's time to head out everybody." Hermes said and at that moment, all of the lights on the ship had shut down.

[Power systems failing]

[Emergency life support has now been activated]

They were now almost in complete darkness, only able to see a small outline of the people around them and blurs as they moved.

"The lights? Why would they go for the lights. I don't recall Dalki's having night vision?" Bonny questioned.

The crew members with the lightning ability activated it slightly, allowing for a soft blue glow in front of them. Their vision was better now and doing something like this didn't take up too many MC points.

This made it even stranger that they would target the lights.

The squad walked through the hallway but due to their large number, not all at the exact same time. If a Dalki would have come they would have been cramped and easy picking for them.

When it was finally time for Hermes and his group to move forward, around twenty of them started to walk through the dark halls.

Void was lifting up his camera and frantically moving it each time they heard a noise. With the sound of fighting throughout the area it meant he was turning quite often.

Walking through, those at the front heard something, a small splash when they moved their foot down. Void knew what it was straight away. The others moved their sparkling fingers to give them a better view and they could tell it was blood.

"Those damn Dalki seem to have already engaged in combat, we have to go help the others!"

One of the groups that had gone ahead in front of them seemed to have been ambushed. What was strange about their bodies were the wounds. Although the crew members were under the impression that it was the Dalki, Void was able to see more thanks to his camera's night vision setting. He zoomed onto their bodies

and looked at their wounds. The markings on them were too small to be done by a Dalki and even a couple of them had teeth marks on their neck.

He might have not thought much of it, if he hadn't seen what he had beforehand. Void quickly grabbed Bonny's hand letting the rest carefully go in front.

It seems like the fear that the Dalki could be around the corner made them forget that they were meant to be looked after.

"Bonny I need to tell you something. Before we were attacked, the one who let in the Dalki, they seemed to be human! Also those wounds... I don't think the Dalki are the ones responsible." Void shared his opinion with things.

"You think there's a traitor among us?" Bonny was quick on the uptake.

The two of them then could hear a scream coming up from the front and saw several lighting strikes being fired off.

Pulling his camera up and looking through the lens Void saw what they were going up against. There were two Dalki but they weren't the only ones attacking.

Putting his camera down and squinting to check if he wasn't seeing things, he still ended up seeing two humans attack their group, the only discerning thing being that their eyes were glowing red in this darkness.

□□□□□□

In the canteen of the ship, several members were trapped in the room with a Dalki. Hiding under tables, and in corners of the rooms, they were shaking, praying for the enemy to not see them without the light.

They tried to hold their breath to decrease the chances of being noticed. This wasn't like facing any beast, and for a lot of them it was the first time they had even seen the Dalki.

'Hiding is useless!' One of the Dalki shouted. He, alongside another one-spiked Dalki had remained behind, while the stronger ones had already left to do something else.

Hundreds of innocent humans were in the canteen, hoping for someone to come save them. Wishing that all of this was just a nightmare.

The canteen's double doors were audibly swung open, and glowing red eyes could be seen floating in the darkness.

'Oh is it time to go already? Can't we stay a little longer? This is fun!' The Dalki bellowed in laughter.

The person with glowing red eyes approached one of the Dalki, his hand quickly covered in red aura and spun like a drill. It then slammed into the Dalki's chest and went right through its heart.

'I don't know who you think I am, but I ain't your friend!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1086: Strong red eyes

The Dalki were known for having almost impenetrable bodies. Even shells shot from tanks wouldn't necessarily harm them, yet the young man's hand managed to pierce through it as if it was nothing.

'What is this? Why is my body moving away on its own? This has never happened before.'

The other Dalki in the dark canteen had instinctively distanced itself from Quinn. Dalki were battle hungry beings, carelessly diving into a fight at the first best opportunity not caring for the risk of getting hurt, as that would only further their growth.

However, for this reason Dalki were often unaware that they also had a human side in them. After seeing its companion getting killed with such ease, for the first time it experienced the feeling of fear.

Alas, it was far too late for it to flee. It didn't take long for Quinn to move on to the confused creature and before it could react, its chest had been pierced in the same manner.

"Y-You're not... one of them." The Dalki let out with his last breath as he had the chance to take a closer look at its killer.

The survivors in the canteen were still shaking in the room, unable to believe what they had been barely able to see. Most of them had just heard two loud thuds as heavy objects had hit the floor.

When they peaked over, they could see a prominent dark shadow with red eyes standing there, yet it wasn't large enough to be another Dalki. Eventually, one of the closests survivors who had seen everything came running out.

"They're dead! HE SAVED US!" The young man cried out with tears in his eyes. There was blood on his body, but it was hard to tell whether it was his own or not.

'What is that idiot doing?! Did he already forget that our group got attacked by a group of humans beforehand? What if that's one of the traitors and they just had a falling out? How could you leave your hiding spot?!!' Many of the cautious survivors couldn't help but think.

Nevertheless, the red-eye shadow didn't attack him. In fact, he appeared to help the young man up.

"Hey, I-I know you." The man proclaimed since he wasn't attacked. He even created a spark with his finger, lighting up the place so everyone could see better.

For a second Quinn flinched from the sudden light. As a vampire he had been able to see perfectly well even in the darkness.

"You... you're Quinn Talen! Leader of the Cursed faction! So those weren't just rumors about you being able to take out an army of Dalki on your own!" The man called out in awe.

Instantly, many of the hiding survivors started to murmur amongst themselves and some of the braver ones also came out once the newcomer had been identified as someone they felt they could trust.

Despite the praise, Quinn was not smiling. From the moment he had entered the ship he had been able to smell the stench of blood in the air. Most importantly it hadn't just been the blood of humans and Dalkis.

"There was a report from Owen calling for help so I got here as fast as I could." Quinn explained himself loudly. "I've just arrived, so I would welcome any information you could share with me. Like how many other Dalkis have you seen so far?"

It took a while for Quinn to process the information, as many people started to speak at the same time, and their accounts were also contradicting each other at times. Many had been unaware about the reason for the chaos until later on, with the majority having run away as soon as they had seen how powerful the Dalki truly were.

From what Quinn could gather, none of the ones in the canteen had made out a Dalki with a spike count higher than two, but perhaps even more importantly he had learned the fact that there were humans who had attacked each other. The common trait between them were their red eyes...

'Just like I feared, somehow vampires are involved in this whole mess! Based on what that first Dalki was saying he must have mistook me for one of them.' Quinn thought. 'Are they working with Jim?'

Armed with new information, Quinn suspected that the Commander would head to the life support system based on the drills they had gone through so far, so that's where he would head as well.

After all, the goal was to try to save the people on the ship.

Now he could try and help them evacuate... or he could take care of the root of the problem by killing off the invaders. But first, Quinn quickly disappeared into his Shadow space.

His gauntlets still had some of the green Dalki blood on and he didn't want others to see what he was about to do. Licking a small part of the green blood the system granted him a temporary boost.

Once back, he was ready to head out, yet as he walked forward he noticed that a hundred or so people seemed intent on following him, a couple had even stumbled. Turning around Quinn saw that many of them were too injured to even move properly.

"I know that all of you must be afraid that Dalki on the ship, but I'm going to take care of them. I'm afraid that where I'm going, I won't be able to protect you all. Honestly, coming with me is probably just going to put you into more danger." Quinn explained. "I cleared out the area on the way here. For the time being, this canteen should serve you as a pretty good place to hold up."

"Please, make room for those who are really injured. I'm unable to heal you, but I have a way to alleviate your situation." Quinn stated as he used his Shadow lock on five of the most injured people in the room. They were now safe from harm and wouldn't slow down the others in case of trouble.

"Wait, let us come with you." A man who wore white robes with the insignia of the Graylash family stopped him. He introduced himself as Fow, and he had a brave face. Behind him stood five others, seemingly his bodyguards.

"This is our faction and our ship! It's our responsibility to protect this place." Fow said.

At first Quinn wanted to reject them, but he could see that they weren't doing it for selfish reasons they were good people. He then walked up to them and placed his hand on each one of them.

"You're right, do as you like. I'm not your leader after all." Quinn agreed with a smile and ran off.

'They won't get a chance to fight, but just in case.'

Void and Bonny were at a loss as to what to do since the fighting ahead of them was coming to an end. The fact that they had been able to last for so long was undoubtedly due to Commander Hermes' prowess.

However, there was a clear disadvantage between the two groups. It was hard to tell apart friend from foe for the crew members, yet that didn't seem to apply for the invaders. In fact, it seemed as if they could see perfectly fine.

Void continued to film everything despite his hands shaking, and he was able to watch the red-eyed humans jump and run across the side of the walls at great speed. Without even having to come off them they were able to throw red lines of Aura.

"Is it an ability? But where have I seen or heard of something like this before?"  
Void thought.

"I'm afraid this is going to be a failure of a mission!" Hermes shouted. They had managed to kill three Dalki so far thanks to their strong drills, however there were still three more on the other side and on top of that five men with glowing eyes, while their side had dwindled down to five, not counting Bonny and Void.

"Everyone retreat, their forces outweigh us! Head back to the training room! We'll barricade ourselves in there until help arrives." Hermes' ordered.

Even if they managed to outrun the Dalki somehow, Hermes wasn't sure help would arrive in time. They knew that Owen was busy dealing with the Dalki himself. If anything, the leader's situation took priority over theirs.

The group continued to run as they threw lightning behind them. This time rather than strong attacks, they were firing off lighting sparks that would spread out to increase the chances of stunning the others for a short amount of time, buying them some time. From the looks of it, it seemed to be working.

"Void, don't you dare drop or lose that camera! Make sure to record every single moment of this." Bonny reminded her cameraman, yet he suddenly stopped running.

Seeing this the others also slowed down and they could finally see what Void had seen up ahead. More pairs of glowing red eyes. At that moment, a couple of vampires that were clung to the walls by the side of the wall had leapt towards the group.

Before they could lay a finger on the group, two large slashes of red aura hit them larger than the ones before.

'All those guys with the red eyes seem to have that weird red aura ability. And this guy seems to be even stronger than the rest, but did he miss? What's going on?' Void wondered.

Pulling up his camera he looked through the lens to get a better look at who this stronger red eyed human was and once he recognised him, he couldn't help but shout out in glee.

"Quinn!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1087: The Recording

The rattling of Void's hands hitting his camera wouldn't stop. Void had seen who was on who were on the other side. Those that they had been fighting against, the humans with red eyes, and yet, he had just seen Quinn, the leader of the Cursed faction, have the same glowing red eyes.

'I'm sure of it, he used the red aura power as well, but he seems to be on another level compared to the others.'

"It's Quinn. Are you talking about who you think I am? What's he doing here?" Bonny asked.

She was surprised, and for a split second, she had forgotten about the dire situation that they were in.

A few seconds later and the wind was felt going past both Void, and Bonny's faces as thier hair blew back, and Quinn had disappeared entirely from their front, too fast for them to see.

' I have to record this. I have to find out what is going on!' Void thought as he spun around and turned his camera in the direction Quinn had gone.

The first set of vampires Quinn had hit were no longer able to fight, and quickly realising that they now had some form of backup, Hermes turned around to try and hold off the Dalki with his other men, firing out thier lightning abilities.

"I can smell it, it's a lord. What is such a high ranking one doing here of all places!" one of the men standing behind the Dalki said.

Quickly four more men jumped and ran on each side of the walls, heading straight for Quinn.

"If you can no longer fight, then you know what to do!" The man commanded.

At that moment, after hearing those orders, the first vampires that had been struck and were on the floor had raised their hands and slit thier own throats, killing themselves instantly.

'They know I'm a vampire and that I'm a lord. Are they killing themselves so I can't gather any information from them? I was going to use the I influence skill on them, but now this has become troublesome.' Quinn thought, as one vampire went to strike him, but Quinn, even though moving his hand later, then the vampire had grabbed the man's face before reaching him and started to scrape it along the side of the walls.

'I learnt a lesson from Arthur that day, that I don't need to be nice to those that are trying to kill me!' Quinn said as he lifted the vampire's body at the right time as another one struck, allowing him to dig his sharp claws into his own companion.

Quinn then kicked their legs, breaking them. And with his other hand free, he grabbed onto the other ones face.

'I need to help the others as soon as I can. I can't try extracting and asking questions now; otherwise, it will put others lives in danger. I guess there's only one thing I can do.'

From his gauntlets, blobs of shadow came out and covered the entire heads of the two vampires and soon, the shadows had returned to him.

[Skill shadow eater activated]

[10MC points gained]

[10MC points gained]

"Now, you can do what you want with your lives," Quinn said as he left them screaming in pain. With only one outcome.

Something was strange about Quinn, his eyes were more determined than usual, and he had his goal in sight.

Some might have thought that Quinn was exceptionally cruel in this instance. However, this was all due to what he had seen when he had entered the ship.

The crew, the mechanics that worked on the docks had all been slaughtered. Most of them were not even fighters who had families, the people who worked as cooks and more. Every single one of them were killed.

Some were done by the Dalki, but it was clear from the teeth marks left on thier bodies that vampires did others.

The vampires coming from the other side, Quinn leapt from one side of the wall to the other, and while mid-air, he swung both his legs firing off two blood crescent kicks.

They came out faster than any blood swipe they had ever seen, and they fell to the ground immediately.

Quickly, Quinn used the shadow eater skill on the two on the ground once again.

'What is going on?' The vampire at the back thought. 'He was confident due to the two spiked Dalki by his side, and his turner had assured him that this would be an

easy job. However, for a vampire lord to come out of nowhere was something he was never expecting.

'Most of the lords are vampire leaders. Did he come from one of the castles, but I don't remember them? And they have the power of the punishers. Who is this person?!" The vampire couldn't help but think.

With the other four vampires gone, Quinn threw out another swipe towards the vampire, who seemed to be their leader in the back. He quickly raised a wall of blood. The wall was shattered, but using blood hardening, he was able to stop the blood swipe.

'I stopped the attack. With the Dalki by my side, we should be able to take him down. I'm a vampire noble not too far from becoming a lord, I think, I can do this!' He thought and started laughing.

"Just because you're a lord, you think you can win this. You're too arrogant." He said as he pointed towards Quinn.

"Why are you so confident? Is it because you blocked my swipe from earlier?" Quinn asked. He then raised his hand and threw out the attack once more, it looked similar to before, and the vampire was ready.

"I'll warn you the first attack. I wasn't using my full power because I wasn't trying to kill you." Quinn said.

The noble was confused I. He had seen a red aura, but suddenly it was no longer there, and soon he could no longer think as his body was split in half.

"I wish you could have been useful and at least given me some MC points," Quinn said.

After Quinn's arrival and dealing with the vampires, the two spiked Dalki were quickly taken care of, and everyone was beyond amazed at how easy Quinn had made it look. The five men that had travelled with him had only just arrived through the halls as they had lost him long ago. Although they were happy to know, the fighting was over.

Everyone alive wished to thank Quinn for what he had done, but instead, he had decided to go around the ship, searching for any more vampires or Dalki. If he found a lone vampire, perhaps he could restrain them before they killed themselves to ask them a few questions.

Unfortunately, although a few more Dalki were found, there were no more vampires.

Even searching the dead vampire's bodies, there was nothing noticeable on them. They were perfectly disguised as faction members and according to others, they

had been part of the factions for years which was why no one had suspected a thing.

It didn't take long for power to return to the place and everyone to gather in the canteen. Here Quinn released the injured for them to get a looked at.

While in the canteen, despite him wanting to leave as soon as possible, tears of joy and thankful words spoken by the others were unable to make him go. People constantly approached him, thanking him for saving their lives and eventually, part of the Earthborn group had arrived.

Leading the Group itself was general Innu.

"You seem to be in a rush," Hermes said to Quinn, who was stood off to the side with the more senior members of the Graylash family.

He wasn't particularly in a rush, but his next step was to head to the planet where Owen was on. In the canteen itself, Innu and his people were doing the usual running an investigation.

There were a couple of glances between Quinn and him here and there, but Innu seemed to be more respectable when meeting him this time.

In the corner of the room, Void and Bonny were a little worried about something. After the fight on the ship had ended, they had decided to film the wreckage and carnage of what was on board, and during their tour, they had run into Innu.

"Hey you, is that a recording device. we will have to take all the footage you have on there as evidence." Innu said, pointing at Void.

"Wait." Void said, worried about what exactly was on the footage. At the moment, Quinn didn't have any glowing red eyes, and he didn't really know what it meant. He was unsure if it was a good thing or a bad thing, but it was already too late as one of Innu's people had already taken the camera.

'I hope this doesn't stir into something big.' Void thought.

After Innu had finished barking out orders, he started to walk over to the others and Quinn, who looked like he was ready to leave.

"Quinn, where are you planning to go, you did a good job here, but it looks like you still have something on your mind? Innu asked.

Quinn was about to ignore Innu anyway, despite him asking in a more polite way than he usually would, and was to head out on the ship he had come in.

"If it's about Owen, don't bother. I think I know you by now. the fight...is already over." Innu said, and the next bit of information he told everyone had caused thier jaws to drop to the ground, and Quinn's heart beat faster than ever.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1088: Owen's Soul weapon

The four spiked Dalki known as Green Horn and Owen were quite a distance away from the others. The remaining Dalki were seemingly ignoring the battle between the two powerhouses. It was hard to tell whether this was due to the high trust of the Dalki in their commander... or the lack thereof.

Behind him, Owen could hear the sound of fighting from the people he had trained, looked after and had asked to fight by his side. He desperately wanted to turn around and help them against their enemies, but he recognised that the biggest threat that they needed to get rid of was the four spiked Dalki in front of him.

The reason why Owen took a glance behind him was to make sure that he had ample room without having to worry about injuring some of his men with his soul weapon. Concentrating deep within, a glow started to appear in his hands. His long hair that was normally so defiant to remain straight no matter how much he used his powers was now standing and spiralling out of control.

The thing forming in his hands resembled a ball at first glance, making it hard to tell if it was an item based soul weapon or an enhancement type. Either way, it was clear to see that the ball contained several sparks of lightning inside, making it fizz like crazy.

Green Horn attempted to take a step forward, but the very next second, lightning shot out. The Dalki was barely able to move his foot back, before the shot collided with the ground, scorching it black.

'What is that thing? Do I need to break his form of concentration to get rid of it? But if I get too close to it, it will just hurt me like it did before.' Green Horn pondered over his next course of action. He was more cautious than the typical Dalki, but this was mainly due to knowing what had happened to One Horn in the last war.

Looking past Owen, Green Horn started to grin, bearing his sharp teeth he stormed forward. He seemingly charged at Owen, but then abruptly changed direction to go around the other.

"I was right!" The Dalki started to laugh as he saw the desperation on the other's face. "Your attack might be powerful, but it requires you to remain standing on your spot! Your strikes may be dangerous, but I don't need to go after you just now, I can always deal with you later!"

As for where Green Horn was intending to go, it was naturally towards the rest of the battle that was taking place behind them.

'My soul weapon might have some downsides, but there are ways to make up for it!' Owen thought as he threw the ball as hard as he could into the air. When it was

around ninety meters up in the sky. He then threw his fan up in the sky piercing the strange lighting ball, and attacked it with his blue lightning.

The ball seemed to be charging up, and when it reached its peak, it exploded into a group of clouds. The clouds were dark and full of power as they spread out striking the ground beneath them constantly.

Green Horn, seeing this was in range of the clouds, and was avoiding some of the strikes that came from above, by the skin of his teeth, until eventually one hit him. It shook his whole body with great power. It was painful but the lightning strike hadn't dealt him a lethal blow.

The main problem was that it had stunned him for a few seconds. Trying to avoid the lightning strikes while in the middle of a fight would be extremely disadvantageous for Green Horn.

'That guy, this is what he was cooking up! Didn't he look back for a few seconds before activating it? With this far ranged skill, why didn't he activate it in the middle of the fight?' Green Horn thought, and he had managed to come up with an answer.

'The lightning strikes must hurt his own people as well, so all I need to do is continue on with my plan!' Greenhorn made up his mind. The distance between the two were quite far and the clouds didn't reach the rest of where the others were fighting,

If the two of them were to run forward it was clear who would get to the others first.

Green Horn turned his head to look back at Owen, but soon his smile disappeared, as the other had disappeared without his knowledge.

A lightning strike, larger than the previous ones, appeared from the clouds, and suddenly right in front of the Green Horn was Owen himself.

"Breathe!" Owen said, as he took a deep breath and then extruded it out at the same time, he then threw out a blue fist filled with lightning hitting the Dalki in the stomach. Blood immediately came out from Green Horn's mouth, and he attempted to hit Owen once again, but lightning striking from above had hit Green Horn paralysing him in place.

Owen took another breath, lifting his leg up high, and throwing a kick to the top of the Dalki's head, leaving a trail of lightning behind.

The Dalki's body was nearly lifted off its feet, but Green Horn had remained on the ground. Still, Owen wasn't done yet, taking more breaths, each time he would continue to hit the Dalki, with his body covered in lightning.

To the chest, a kick to the legs, then kicking the Dalki's chin, he spun up in the air, and as soon as his two feet landed, he threw both of his fists, hitting the Dalki in the stomach. In the middle of their fight, the Dalki as its power was rising, was hoping to ignore the pain and strikes it was receiving to attack back, but he was contently being hit by the lightning from above.

Then when he had gotten a grasp on where Owen was, he would disappear and reappear in a different place.

'Damn it, I'm losing control over my breath! I can do twenty strikes at most with my lightning powers, and he has already endured sixteen. Just how durable is this damn Dalki!' Owen cursed internally, but made sure to keep on a brave face.

Hoping to recover some energy, Owen moved into the clouds with his soul weapon. Allowing him to move as a lightning bolt itself, and then reappear away from the two of them as he tried to recover some of his breath.

However, what happened next had come as a complete surprise. The Dalki started to run in the opposite direction. It was running away from where his companions were battling and out of the clouds. As soon as Green Horn was in the clear, he spat his wings from his back and flew up high in the sky.

'Did he just retreat, in the middle of the fight?'

Not quite sure what was going on, Owen had to make a decision. Since the Dalki had run away it should mean it was quite possible on its last legs. Could he really afford to let it go? On the other hand, how much could he do with his soul weapon nearly exhausted?

Besides, what about his own people that were still fighting the Dalki before him? Falling from the sky, Owen's fan fell into his hand, and soon the clouds started to disappear. There was no sign of Green Horn anywhere and it looked like he had successfully fled.

Immediately, Owen seeing this, using the last bit of his strength, turned around and decided to help out his companions. He was strategic in the way he had helped them, due to already using much of his power during the fight, but there were situations where Owen had no choice but to jump in and fight. He even slipped up, getting hit in the legs and he could feel the bone in his thigh break.

Pushing through, he continued to fight, and his people started to keep an eye on him more. To them he was invincible, but it was the first time they had seen Owen pushed to this point, No longer calm and collected, and breathing heavily as he attacked Dalki after Dalki, but eventually large ships seemed to appear, and from them, Oscar and others came out.

With the help of Oscar, Owen was able to ease up and the battle was over.

The invading force of the Dalki were no more, but it didn't come with ease, as the loss on the Graylash side was quite significant. Owen was surrounded by a group of his people, who had formed a circle around him, letting him use his powers without worrying about more Dalki attacking him, and he was so drained he had fallen to his knees.

At that moment, his people who had been protecting him turned, and looked at Owen. They all rushed to help him up, but one person had gotten there before the rest, faster than the others, and stood in front of Owen.

"Too easy" He said, as his red filled hand of aura went straight for Owen's heart. He could see the attack coming his way, and with what little strength he had he had hit the hand slightly, but it wasn't enough, he was too weak.

The attack had pierced right through Owen, and the last thing he could see was the smile on the person's face, and his red eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1089: A sick leader

Owen's men had successfully survived one of the first battles of this new Dalki war. What's more everyone had worked together to protect their leader behind them. Now that the fighting had come to a complete end, each of them had a large smile on their weary faces.

Knowing how exhausted their leader must be after his fight against the four spiked Dalki, the men turned around intending to celebrate with Owen, only to see that one of their own was already standing in front of him.

'How did he reach the head that fast? Did Anderson hold back in the fight?' One of the Graylash members wondered. Still, he wasn't worried. Anderson was one of their own, someone they had known for a number of years already. Belonging to one of the factions under the Graylash family. He had been with them through a lot and all of them would entrust their lives to him... However, his next actions proved that doing so would be a big mistake.

Everything seemed to play out in slow motion in front of their eyes. Their faces went from smiles to disbelief as they watched Anderson's hand pierce through Owen's body. The look on the latter's face spoke volumes as he had not expected this betrayal after they had just beaten back the enemy.

"Noooo!" The people screamed as they rushed forward, but before they could even reach the person, a tunnel of ice shot straight past them and the edge of the walls hit the attacker, freezing him in place.

Oscar quickly ran forward, and when the arm that was lodged through Owen's Boyd started to freeze. He pulled him, breaking the arm off and placed Owen on the floor while he placed his sword on top of him as well.

"Damn it! ALL HEALERS IN THE AREA ARE TO COME OVER ASAP!!" Oscar shouted, as his sword was freezing the wound to prevent the other from losing too much blood. Honestly, he didn't know how much it would help. He was no doctor, but blood was filling up Owen's mouth, whose eyes remained closed. The blow was awfully close to one's heart, perhaps even a part of it had been hit.

---

Back on the second fleet's ship, Innu had just finished telling everyone the tale of what had happened to Owen.

"Someone betrayed the family head!" One of the Graylash men shouted who was close by, but Hermes quickly moved his hand over his mouth, telling him to keep quiet.

"Did you forget what happened here? How many who we thought we could trust betrayed us today? The one who did that must have belonged to the same traitorous

faction! The important thing is to prevent this news. We can't risk morale dropping even lower right now. Is Owen....." Hermes gulped down before he could finish the question. "Is he alive?"

Quinn couldn't believe it. Owen was the ideal world leader. Someone he himself regarded as strong and wise. Alas, it seemed like he had been forced into such a miserable situation. If the one responsible was really the same as the 'humans' on board... then it would mean that the ones responsible were once again, vampires.

"His condition is critical at the moment." Innu answered. "They have healed the wound to the best of their abilities. Unfortunately some of his wounds refuse to heal. Luckily the blow had only taken out part of his heart, and they were able to use artificial parts to help him get through it. Still, he is in a very weak state right now and any complications could be deadly."

'Can't heal the heart? Is this something similar to when vampires suffer Qi attacks? Did vampires have such an effect on humans?' Quinn asked.

'I can think of two things.' Vincent replied. 'Either that vampire has a certain ability that repels the healing effect, or something has entered Owen's body. Perhaps, their true goal was never to kill Owen.'

If their goal wasn't to kill Owen, then Quinn could only think that maybe someone was trying to control him. It made sense, all this time Quinn was thinking that this was a war with the Dalki, and not the vampires, but somehow they had gotten involved, and unfortunately not as humanity's allies.

As long as humans remained unaware about the existence of vampires, they would just think that there was a faction of humans out there, working with the Dalki for some reason. Also if they were going up against vampires, then they could do vampire things, such as turn people.

If someone had successfully managed to turn Owen, then the turner could get them to follow his commands to a certain extent, and with Jim working with them, who knows what else they were planning on doing.

"What happened to the assassin?" Quinn asked.

"For now, he remains frozen. They carved him out carefully and have imprisoned him on one of the Bertha ships. Oscar is planning to interrogate him, but they need to make sure that the person won't be able to kill themselves, so we are being extra careful." Innu replied.

'Is the world going to find out about vampires? Should I tell Oscar? No, not yet, for now I need to get information from that vampire first and I need to do so before anyone else!'

"I'm going to visit Owen!" Quinn said. "Please inform Oscar that I wish to talk to the assassin as well. Also it's vitally important that he doesn't go in there without me. I'll explain later why.."

And with that, Quinn used his shadow to connect and transported himself back to the Cursed ship to inform the others about what he was going to do.

---

Thanks to Quinn's position as a world leader, it didn't take long for him to hear back. On top of that, they were happy to hear that he had successfully saved the second fleet from the attack. Oscar had agreed to his somewhat strange request and promised not to interrogate the man until his arrival.

With this deal accepted, Quinn decided to head to the Graylash family's main spaceship base. The others were still on the planet where the Demon tier had been, and Quinn asked them to remain there. He told them that he would go to Linda with the shadow ability, once he had dealt with this.

Honestly, the main reason Quinn wanted them to stay there was to keep an eye on Eno. Quinn wished to find out everything he could himself without Eno having any chance to play any of his tricks, and it was safe to say Quinn still didn't trust him a hundred percent either.

If Owen really was in the middle of turning, then Eno might perhaps decide to kill him on the spot. Before leaving, Quinn had made one specific request to Logan as well, and after what he asked for was completed, it was time for him to get to work again.

Quinn didn't arrive at the Graylash base on his own, he brought along one important leader, Sam.

The two of them walked across what felt like a giant place that was built up in the mountains. Their main spaceship was as large as an island, and was actually made from a piece of land from earth.

They walked past temples and were being escorted by Hermes at the same time, until they eventually reached the golden palace where Owen lived.

"Wow, is this whole place made out of real gold, this place is so...fancy." Sam couldn't help but say, but the other two weren't in the best of moods to be amazed by everything around them.

Entering the palace, they were allowed to head to the top floor, where several guards and doctors with medical abilities were watching over Owen. He was lying in a large bed that had pillars on each side, and the room itself was as large as a training room back on the Cursed ship.

At the moment, Owen was sitting upright. He looked thinner than the last time Quinn and the others had seen him. It was obvious that it was hard for Hermes to see his leader like this. He clenched his fist, and hated the fact he hadn't been by his leader's side to have shielded him.

"Hermes, I'm glad to see you alive, it looks like the Cursed faction got my message after all." Owen spoke weakly. He waved his hand telling the doctors and guards to give them some privacy as he called his visitors forward.

Now that they were closer to Owen, they could see the large hole that was in the centre of his chest. A strange device was placed in the centre made of mechanical parts making him look like a certain superhero with a full body iron suit.

"I'll have to apologise that I can't get up to greet all of you properly, but the doctors have instructed me to restrict my movements to a minimum. My heart is still weak and I can't even use my powers at the moment." Owen explained with a thin smile.

Quinn could tell it was a painful smile.

"Quinn, I owe you a lot for saving my second fleet. I don't even want to think what would have happened if you hadn't been in the area. These are not your people, yet from what I heard you personally went to save them. Thank you." Owen looked at Quinn, deep gratitude in his eyes.

"I'm sure you would have done the same if you had been in my position." Quinn replied. "About what happened to you. I have some questions. However they are rather sensitive, so do you mind, if it would be just the two of us."

Owen looked at all the others, and Quinn looked at Sam as well who nodded to leave the room. However Hermes had remained.

"Hermes, I think he means you as well. Don't worry, I'm certain he will not harm me." Owen instructed his subordinate.

When everyone had finally left the room, and Quinn and Owen were finally the only ones in the room, Quinn decided to ask Owen to personally recount what exactly happened. Owen went into detail about the fight, how strong the four spiked Dalki was, and even talked about his own skills, as if he was showing off to Quinn.

He paused for a brief moment, before he spoke about the betrayal at the end.

"And when that person attacked me, all I could remember was the smile on his face, and his glowing red eyes." Owen concluded his recounting.

After listening to everything, Quinn now needed to confirm it.

"Owen, can you please let me have a look at you? It's hard to explain, but I need you to trust me. I have a hypothesis why you aren't healing and if I'm right, I might be able to help you in some way." Quinn requested.

"Go ahead." Owen shrugged his shoulders. "It's not like my life is worth anything anymore."

Quinn pressed his hand against Owen's chest and closed his eyes. He started to sense the energy inside the other's body. The powerful strong yellow Qi energy that humans had. Even Owen seemed to have quite a significant amount of Qi, despite never having studied it, but then around the chest Quinn could see it, the red aura that only belonged to vampires, and it had spread out slightly from his chest.

'So it's true, they were trying to turn him.' Quinn thought worriedly. 'But why hasn't it worked? Did Oscar interrupt him in the middle of it? Does that mean he is safe? Will he turn eventually... or could he be somehow immune to the process perhaps?'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1090: A Special Power

'Do you make it a point to forget everything I told you?' Those were the first words from Vincent after he had listened to Quinn trying to figure out what was happening to Owen.

Quinn honestly didn't understand why the world leader was currently in the state that he was in. In the past when his own red aura had entered someone else's such as Leo, it had immediately infected them, so he couldn't figure out why it didn't happen in this case.

'I'm sorry, but can we skip the lecture part and get to the you helping me figure out the answer part?' Quinn hurried Vincent along. 'Time is a bit of the essence... I think.'

'Regular vampires can't just turn someone by biting them, or injecting their blood into their body. Remember when you first bit Layla? She didn't turn because of it, now did she?'

'So just because a regular vampire struck Owen, and part of his blood is inside Owen doesn't mean he will necessarily turn. Still, at least in this case the process has already been initiated. Just as you need to complete the ritual to turn someone, the same thing needs to be done here.'

Quinn understood what Vincent was saying, but that led to just more questions. Why attack Owen just when the battle was concluded? Sure he had been weakened, but there were so many that had him surrounded. It had always been impossible to turn Owen in the short time before someone would have intervened, even if it hadn't been Oscar.'

'Was the vampire prepared to sacrifice himself from the start? Did he pay with his life so someone else could finish what he started?' Quinn wondered.

"So can you do anything to help me, or did you just get my hopes up so you could rub my chest?" Owen questioned, since Quinn had been quiet for an awkwardly long time with his hand placed on his chest.

"Umm, yeah sorry, just give me a few moments." Quinn apologised, as he closed his eyes again.

Thinking back, there was a time when the red aura energy had entered Chris and he had been able to get rid of it before it had taken over his body. When teaching the kids at the school how to use Qi, he was also able to control the red energy, so perhaps, Quinn was also able to remove the energy from Owen at this moment, allowing his body to heal again.

Being careful with the task, Quinn raised his other hand and now both were placed on Owen's bare chest. The robes were moved to the side to make it easier for Quinn to feel and control energy when there was skin to skin contact.

"How fortunate that you made everyone leave the room. If anyone were to see us like that, we would probably make many BL fans quite happy." Owen joked nervously.

'What the hell is BL?' Quinn wondered.

"Umm, I kinda need to concentrate on this." Quinn replied with an awkward look. He might be unaware of what the abbreviation stood for, but judging from the tone it was nothing he would enjoy.

Seeing that Quinn was serious and seemed to have a way to potentially help him, Owen immediately shut up and closed his eyes as well. There was a dull pain that was constantly around his chest. He could feel it, especially when the healer tried to do something about it. No matter what method they had tried, the pain had remained.

... and yet he could suddenly feel the energy moving.

'Quinn, you can actually do something about this?' Owen was flabbergasted. 'Just where did you learn how to do that when even the professionals were unable to help me?'

At first it was just a little painful, as if someone was poking him with a needle, but soon enough it felt as if someone had stuck their bare hand inside his body. Then the pain worsened and if he didn't know any better he would have sworn that Quinn was ripping out his flesh.

Owen gritted his teeth during the procedure, doing his best to fight through the pain. He trusted the Cursed faction leader was not just torturing him for fun and that it would help him, so he did his best to endure.

'The family still needs me!' Owen repeated like a mantra.

"ARGhhh!" Eventually he couldn't take it anymore. It might have been different if he had been in peak condition, but he had barely recuperated.

"Sir, is everything okay in there?!" Hermes shouted from the other side of the door, ready to burst in at any second.

"Don't you dare come in, or I'll shock you myself!" Owen shouted back, feeling that whatever Quinn was doing, was working. He grabbed the pillow behind him and bit on to it, to muffle his cries, worried that it might break the other's concentration.

Owen was huffing and panting, covered in sweat but after what had felt like an eternity to him the pain was subsiding. Looking down, Quinn's hands left Owen's chest and now a red aura could be seen spiralling around floating. Quinn just chucked it to the side, and it splattered on the floor like blood.

Throughout the procedure Quinn had felt like a surgeon performing surgery and he was relieved it was successful.

"I think if you get someone to heal your heart now, that they might be able to do something about it. Once you recover you should also be able to use your powers again." Quinn said.

Owen wasn't completely out of the woods yet, his body was still weak, and he felt like he was part machine, but he could tell that Quinn wasn't lying. Doing his best to move the bed sheets and get out of his bed, he bowed down to Quinn. He slowly placed his knees on the ground and placed his head on the floor.

"I owe you so much Quinn. The first time I met you I knew you were special but I never imagined you would ever save my life in such a manner. You not only saved my people, but you also saved me! If there is anything I can do for you, just ask and I shall see it done at a moment's notice!" Owen promised, still keeping his head on the floor.

"Please get up." Quinn quickly requested. He didn't need to be a doctor to know that Owen should remain in bed for the foreseeable future. He even helped him off the ground and as he carefully pulled him up Quinn inserted some of his Qi energy inside of Owen, to make him feel better and stronger.

"You are just full of all sorts of tricks aren't you." Owen mentioned, noticing the slight change in his condition. "I'm very tempted to ask you about your methods and about the person attacking me, but if you wish to not tell me I'll understand."

Quinn was happy to see Owen back to his cheeky self once more, always pushing the boundaries. Although the two of them had different goals of changing the current world, Owen had never treated him badly.

Alas, sharing the fact that there was a secret race of vampires out there and that they had attacked him, seemingly so that they could convert or at least control him, Quinn didn't really consider this to be the best time to tell the others all of that. Even if it was, he needed to speak with Sam over the best way to reveal this information, so they didn't get chucked in the middle of the mess they were already in.

"About that favour." Quinn deliberately changed the subject to avoid the question. "I happen to be in need of some crystals. Do you think you could supply me with two Demi-god tier crystals? It doesn't matter what type."

He knew how rare Demi-god crystals were, and not even the Graylash family had a Demon tier crystal, so he was unsure whether Owen could complete the request.

"Done." Owen said. "You will have them before you leave my home. But that can't be all, or do you wish to say that my life is only worth two such crystals? No, I still owe you, consider the crystals are a gift for your faction."

This was a surprising outcome that Quinn had never expected, now the Cursed faction was in possession of one Demon tier crystals and four Demi-god tiers. The reason why Quinn had asked this was to improve his own equipment. There was a chance that only two crystals would need to be used on Eno, and now the rest could be turned into equipment.

Once the two of them were done, the others waiting outside were able to enter once again. All of the guards, Hermes and doctors rushed into the room. The subordinate could instantly see the colour had returned to Owen's face.

"What happened?" Hermes asked, noticing the pillow that looked as if a dog had chewed through it.

"Nevermind that, just get those healers in here and let them try healing me once more." Owen ordered.

The best healers that the Graylash faction owned were called and everyone was waiting for their arrival.

"It looks like things have turned out better than you thought." Sam whispered over to Quinn, while they waited for the result of the healing.

"Yeah, but, but things like this might keep happening if we don't decide what to do next." Quinn replied.

A total of four different healers affiliated with the Graylash family in some way entered the room, and they immediately went to Owen's bedside. One of them was quite the old man, who rubbed his hands together, before he was ready to activate his ability.

He reached out his hand, but before he could touch the world leader, someone grabbed them mid air, and started to squeeze them quite tightly,

"What do you think you're doing, young man?" The old man cried out in pain, looking at none other than Quinn.

"You sure have guts showing up here. Do you honestly think I wouldn't notice?" Quinn answered and increased the pressure.

The guards were getting ready to defend the healer, while the others had moved away, but Quinn quickly grabbed the other hand as it started to move.

"Oh no, I won't allow you to kill yourself too. You will have to answer my questions." Quinn said. "The rest of you can continue doing what you are doing. I'm going to speak to this one in private."

A shadow soon opened up, and Quinn and the healer disappeared.

"What the hell just happened?" Hermes asked, confused.

Taking a look at Owen though, his face was one of anger once more, and the veins could be seen running up his body. He had an idea why Quinn had done what he had done.

"It looks like Quinn has taken care of yet another traitor!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1091: A struggle Within

Of course, when Quinn and the mysterious old healer had disappeared, they hadn't actually vanished, instead they had both appeared inside of the Shadow lock. Quinn didn't want any spectators for what he was going to do next, otherwise he was afraid that it would just make things more complicated.

He still held on to the man's arms, preventing him from taking his own life. After some initial confusion about how and where they had landed, the man concentrated on trying to free himself by attempting to kick Quinn off. However, the latter noticed his hostage's intention and made the first move by hitting the other's shin, breaking the bone immediately. The force was strong enough that his leg had banged into the other dealing some excruciating pain.

"It would be for the best if you didn't move." Quinn instructed the man, whose eyes started to glow red. There was no point pretending to be a healer when it was just the two of them, so he was revealing his true colours.

"Let go of me!" The vampire demanded, looking into Quinn's eyes, yet a few seconds later the smile that had appeared on his face was gone, since nothing had happened at all.

"Oh, are you surprised?" Quinn questioned in amusement, before his eyes started to glow red as well. "Was this what you were trying to do? KNEEL!" He used the influence skill, and the vampire who had tried to get to Owen, immediately went down on his knees, despite his injury, while his hands were still being held up.

"You....You're a vampire as well! But how can that be? Your smell is that of a human!" The old man spoke in confusion.

"You're right, this smell is the exact reason why I was able to spot you before you could spot me." Quinn explained.

Before leaving the Cursed ship to head to Owen, this was the favour he had asked Logan about. Back when they had headed to the Vampire World, Logan had been able to create a smell that had managed to make the ones who had not been turned, smell like vampires.

If a fragrance could be made that made one smell like vampires, then surely Logan should be able to create one that could do the opposite as well, Quinn theorised and his friend hadn't disappointed him. It hadn't taken the inventor long to mix up such a request, so before coming over Quinn and Sam had both sprayed themselves to mask themselves as humans.

Since they knew that vampires appeared to be working within many different locations, they thought it best to hide themselves and allow the vampires to come out on their own.

After Vincent told him that another vampire would be able to complete the ritual to turn Owen, Quinn had figured out their plan. With so many traitors showing up, it wasn't that surprising anymore that another would be working in the Graylash family.

However, there was one confusing thing about it all and that was the fact that none of the vampires had been able to recognise who Quinn was so far. Any vampire from the Vampire World would know him as one of the leaders, yet these vampire spies didn't.

Quinn could only assume that this meant they were on Jim's side.

'I guess my presence in the Human World is only as one of the world leaders, and Jim doesn't have as much insider information about the vampires as he thought. Otherwise he should have been able to put one and one together to know that Quinn Talen, leader of the Cursed faction, is also the leader of the Tenth family.'

At least this was Quinn's theory on the matter. Additionally, from what they had found out, those vampires had seemingly worked in their factions for years, so did that mean that they had been vampires all along, or had Jim been going around, turning people this entire time?

Fortunately, Quinn had someone right in front of him who should be able to answer some of those questions. Since he had followed his command, Quinn was sure he could get him to talk via his Influence skill.

"Answer my questions." Quinn demanded as his eyes continued to glow red. "Tell me, who do you work for?"

The man's eyes started to fade, and he began to talk in a monotone voice.

"I was an agent working for the Vampire King, but later I was approached by someone who did something that changed me. Now I work for someone else."

'An agent for the old king? Are these the vampire agents that I was meant to be looking for? So originally they were vampires sent by the king, but then he said someone changed him.'

"What do you mean changed you? Who did such a thing, was it Jim? Was it one of the Enos?" Quinn asked in a firmer voice.

However, the old man didn't reply, and his mouth just continually twitched. This was something that hadn't happened before.

"Answer me!" Quinn nearly shouted, but nothing was working.

'Quinn, I think it's pointless.' Vincent intervened. 'It appears that something has been done to these vampires, something beyond a simple Influence skill. I can only

assume that it has to do with our ability. Only the caster will have an idea of what they have done to the vampire.'

'Usually, if someone knows about the question you ask them they will still answer, but he is not speaking at all as if there is a type of block.'

Getting rid of the influence skill, the vampire's eyes came back to life, and he realised that he had been put under a spell.

"I feel bad for you." Quinn spoke. 'I'm assuming that you didn't choose to join Jim out of choice, but instead he came to all the spies and did something to you all."

Although the vampire couldn't speak, or make a type of signal that would indicate that it was true. He did wonder. 'How does such a young vampire know that it was Jim? And who exactly is this person, I don't remember anyone like this back in the Vampire World.'

"Look, I'm willing to help you. As long as you cooperate there might be a way for me to break this spell from you." Quinn tried to convince the other. Although he wasn't referring to himself, but instead he was referring to Richard Eno. He was the one person that should be able to do something about it.

Still, the frightened look on the vampire's face said it all. Even though Quinn was strong, he seemed to possess a deeper fear for whoever changed him.

"You see this space here? You can stay here and you will travel with me. No one will be able to find you, and trust me the person who I am thinking of, will be able to fix you. He's one of the Originals." Quinn revealed, reassuring the man.

For a second, the fear had diminished quite a bit, and Quinn could feel the resistance in his hands going away. Because of this, Quinn decided to let go, and the vampire smiled.

"I really didn't want to do any of what was happening, but I had to! Orders just seemed to come to me-" in the middle of speaking the old man's hands raised to his neck, yet from the look on his face he didn't even seem aware of himself doing it. They moved, slitting his own throat, killing him instantly.

"Damn it!" Quinn shouted, rushing over to the vampire, but he had died too fast for Quinn to do anything about it.

'What was that just now? He seemed to have been convinced, so did Eno just control him? But how? What the hell kind of overpowered ability is that that your family had!' Quinn asked in frustration, mad at himself for not having taken precautions and crushed his hands beforehand.

'I don't know what that was. Perhaps there was a condition, a broken rule, or at worse.... Jim might have been able to see everything and control him at any time, similar to the Demon tier beast you just faced.' Vincent stated his own theories on

how it had been possible. It was a long shot, but their family members had used the equivalent exchange ability in different ways, and there was always the chance they had gotten certain abilities from someone else somewhere.

'I guess that's all we can do for now.' Quinn replied, as he looked at the vampire, who had died. Ironically, he had died with a smiling face. For a second Quinn had given him hope, telling him that he could help him, and then he had made the wrong decision, allowing the man to unwillingly end himself.

Returning back to the room, Quinn held the old man's corpse in his hands. It seemed like Quinn had come at an awkward time as everyone was celebrating, and Owen was standing on his two feet.

The healers had managed to finally heal Owen, allowing him to make an almost full recovery. He would still need to have plenty of rest, and more time for healing, but it was a big step in the right direction.

As such, Quinn coming up holding a dead body in his hands was raining down on everyone's parade.

"So he really was a traitor?" Owen questioned in a serious tone.

"I'm not too sure about that now." Quinn only mumbled.

With the lead on Jim gone like that, there was still one more person that he could go talk to, hopefully without messing up again. The assassin that had been caught in the ice, that was currently with Oscar.

However, what Quinn didn't know was that a certain video tape had ended up in the hands of Oscar. One that the Commander was currently watching with mixed emotions.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1092: The secret of the red power

The second fleet of the Graylash family had been reorganised and then merged with one of the Earthborn groups. Although Quinn had managed to come in time to save the main ship of the second fleet which had the most people on board, many of the smaller ships in the fleets hadn't been so lucky.

By combining Innu's Earthborn group with the Graylash second fleet, they now were able to establish a precedent that was just as strong as before. Oscar and Owen had agreed that just because of this initial Dalki attack, they couldn't falter and back down.

Perhaps it was their plan in the first place, who knew what the Dalki were thinking, and maybe they would come back to the same spot once again.

As for Innu himself, there was no need for him to personally be around. At the moment there were no signs of another Dalki attack happening anytime soon. Instead, he had returned to one of the Bertha ships that was under his control, which was currently making its way back to earth.

'Even if we help protect the Graylash planets, once this war is over it will only remain in their hands anyway. Why is our group sacrificing their lives for no return? If the Dalki now attacked the Earthborn planets I doubt the Graylash could send us help, especially with the sorry state Owen is in now.' Innu sighed while relaxing in his office.

The thing Innu was worried about was highly unlikely to happen due to the way their planets and the Dalki planets were set up. At the moment, there was only one active space station that would take them back to the human solar system and back to earth, and all of the Earthborn beast planets were close to this station.

The Dalki would have to get through the Graylash family first to even get to the Earthborn or earth. Still, there was the mystery of how a certain Dalki had actually managed to land on earth undetected.

Although Innu liked to complain, he was quite the diligent worker. After all that's how he had gotten to his position, and currently he was looking through all of the footage that had been captured by Void.

The camera that they were looking through didn't contain footage from the destroyed drones. Innu was unable to see what the person who had started everything looked like. Either way, he did learn that the said person who had let in the Dalki, was already dead.

Going through the footage, Innu got to the point where he could see humans walk alongside the Dalki, and the night camera had only managed to catch their eyes seemingly able to reflect more light back than usual, yet not the colour.

'So these are the traitors to humanity that are working with the Dalki? Now what could anyone gain from working together with those beasts? If I remember correctly the reports said that many of those on the ship could remember them having red eyes, and that they moved incredibly fast. That reminds me of someone else.' Innu thought, as his body shivered remembering his first meeting with Quinn.

His eyes had grown red as well, and at the time his body had listened to every command Quinn had given him. He still held a slight grudge due to it, but he had to remind himself that he actually was the one in the wrong at that time, for he had been speaking to a world leader without realising it.

Pressing play on the video, he thought he could forget what happened, but then a few seconds later, the camera was able to record the fighting that was going on, and now Innu's hand was shaking. He started to play it frame by frame and he thought it was impossible.

'Their attacks... they look exactly the same as Quinn's fighting when he fought the Dalki!' Innu was alarmed. Playing the video further along, he eventually reached the point when Quinn had arrived, and also attacked with the same red aura only slightly larger.

With the camera catching everything at a high frame rate, Innu was able to see everything, and now after watching it several times, without a doubt he could tell they were using the same moves.

'Wait, those red eyes, doesn't that mean that these guys have the same power as him? I thought it was strange, everyone knows he has the shadow ability but he also has the strange red power. Of course Oscar never questioned it, but now a group of people that are betraying the human race are using the same power!'

Innu made sure to make copies of everything on this file, and he immediately began to write a detailed report. He was already on his way to see Oscar, but he thought he should send it beforehand so they could discuss this matter further.

A short while later, Oscar called for a meeting between the Earthborn leaders, Samantha, Innu and Sach.

When they finally arrived there were now three large state of the art Bertha ships directly in front of the space station. Oscar was remaining in the area, cautious after what had happened with Owen, but he planned to return back soon once he had completed what needed to be done.

The head generals had decided to head to the Bertha ship that was controlled by Oscar himself, and they had quickly gone to the command centre to have a meeting.

Here, Oscar shared Innu's report after he had verified the video himself. Although this came as a surprise to him and Sach, there was one person in the room that didn't seem surprised at all. That was Samantha.

"Samantha, are you hiding something from the rest of us?" Oscar asked as he could tell something was wrong. "This is an important matter for all of us. A world leader was nearly killed and another world leader appears to have the same abilities as the traitors. Since there are humans working with the Dalki we need to know everything about them!"

Samantha was quiet because she had already figured out that the others had something in common. When the Cursed group had saved her from the last Dalki attack, she had seen their moves and it was indeed identical to the one on the video.

"Before I say anything, I want to stress that I don't think the Cursed faction is deeply involved with those that attacked the Graylash family! Didn't Leo, the Blind Swordsman from the Cursed family defeat the four spiked Dalki? If the Cursed faction was an enemy to humanity, he could have just let it rampage about, and why would Quinn take them all out?" Samantha began.

"Fine, your statement has been noted, but I still think we all need to know what the Cursed faction has been doing!" Oscar pressed her. "In your report, you stated that there was another with the same power as Quinn, who could use the strange red energy, and now those working with the Dalki can do the same."

"I'm not claiming that the Cursed are the root of the problem, but clearly they know something that we do not!"

"Maybe the Cursed faction are behind everything and are just playing us for a fool!" Innu stated. "This would be a great way to get us all to drop our guard, and then what happened to Owen would have happened to all of us."

Although Oscar understood what Innu was thinking he personally didn't believe that to be fact. Quinn was plenty strong, and they had already trusted him with so much, there were so many situations where he could have discreetly killed the others, but more so than anything Oscar wanted to know if they knew something, why not share it with them.

'Have the Cursed faction been playing god? Doing the Taboo on human's creating a new source of power. I heard of rumours of Pure experimenting with humans, it would be a shame if I was to learn the Cursed were doing something similar.'

Taking in a deep breath, Samantha finally let it out.

"When me and the teacher known as Fex had been fighting against the Dalki, he displayed a strong ability, but he also had red aura ability as you all know, but something strange happened. He had been badly injured and it looked like he could no longer use his powers, but then he asked me to get him something, a flask that

he had dropped. Unfortunately the contents of the flask had been spilled, but I later noticed that every single one of the Cursed that helped me had the same flask with them."

"With the flask contents having been spilt on the floor, he had told me to do something else. To give him my own blood." Samantha explained. "After giving him my blood, his body started to heal up on the spot, and it appeared he could fight again."

"Blood... What madness is this?" Innu said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1093: Falling blood

Now that Owen's condition had improved, Quinn and Sam were getting ready to leave. Their next destination was the Bertha ship that Oscar was on. It was the final stop before they headed back to Alex to check up if he had made any progress on the beast equipment.

Before they left where the ships had docked on the strange giant island-like ship, Owen was there to see them off and by his side was Hermes and another.

'Looks like now that they know that there might be traitors hidden among the Graylash family members, he is bringing less people with him.' Quinn thought, and he was correct.

Ever since that event, Owen would limit his bodyguards to only those that he completely trusted.

"Quinn, you have done me so many favours in such a short timespan that I don't even know how I can repay you for all of them. I still haven't even had the time to thank you for the situation with Robin." Owen spoke. "He was a good person, but I heard that there were complications... I don't doubt you have tried everything you could to save him, but I guess that just means that even the strongest of us can be taken over. All I can say now is stay safe out there."

Giving a small bow, Hermes walked forwards and in his hand were two green coloured clear crystals, which were handed over to Quinn, who placed them in his system for safe keeping.

"Now that I can walk around again, it seems that there are many meetings I will have to attend to make up for lost times. Still, we won't be too far behind, so I'll see you in a bit" Owen bid him farewell.

In Quinn's eyes, since everyone was going to be at the same place, it made sense for a meeting to take place so he wasn't surprised by this.

When they entered the ship though, they could see someone else inside waiting for them, who was casually sleeping on one of the chairs allowing it to go vertically down.

"Please tell me, you stayed on the ship like you promised." Quinn sighed at seeing the old man.

Opening his eyes, Eno stopped pretending to be asleep and replied: "Of course I did. I merely insisted on coming because I thought that you may have had to depend on me again, but by the looks of the Graylash leader, you managed fine even without my help. Are you sure you don't have the same ability as me?"

However, Quinn wasn't in the mood for jokes. Although he had succeeded in helping Owen, he had failed in extracting information from the vampire spy. Fortunately, there was another one waiting for them, but he would probably need Eno there to find out why they were killing themselves and also to prevent the spy from doing so.

'Eno, why do you make asking favours from you so difficult?' Quinn thought, as Eno's attitude was making him want to ask for help even less.

'It's not his fault, in a way after learning our ability our minds kind of become like that.' Vincent shared some insight. 'Remember our ability is 'equivalent exchange', and we can use it to help us in our daily life. As long as there is an exchange, eventually everything becomes like that. A favour for a favour.'

For once, even though the Eno family ability seemed ridiculously strong he was glad he didn't have it.

Since the use of teleporters was being discouraged for now, and Quinn had arrived via ship in the first place, they were now flying through space as they headed to see Oscar.

"Quinn, I think we need to talk about what happened with Owen." Sam suggested as the ship was left on autopilot. Quinn quickly glanced at Eno. "I think it would be good if he was here as well. That way there won't be any sudden rejection on his part."

The three of them entered the break room, which was connected to a very small kitchen on board the ship that allowed them to prepare some simple food. As vampires they didn't really need to eat normal food, so the fridge was mostly filled with blood packs. Aside from that there were a few raw bits of meat in case they wanted to try something different.

The three of them sat at a rectangular shaped table, with Quinn on one end, Eno on the other and Sam in the middle. Although tensions were always high with these two, there was no better seating arrangement than the current one.

'I couldn't stop these two if they did decide to have a go at each other.' Sam thought as he let out a big sigh.

"The reason I was saying we need to talk is because of what has happened with Owen and the Graylash family. We already knew that they had experienced two attacks due to vampires and that they even caused great problems with the second fleet. However, it was only after meeting him that I found out that their goal wasn't to take Owen's life, but to convert him into a vampire."

"If we don't tell Oscar and the others about vampires soon, it will only make the situation worse in this war. Without that knowledge humans will start to turn on each other, and then when they find out the truth, they will point their finger at us."

"In essence, I'm suggesting to be upfront about the secret we have been hiding from them. As long as we are honest and not hiding anything from them, I think they will be more inclined to understand why we have hidden it for so long as well."

The room went quiet for a while, of course Quinn had thought about this. Maybe if they knew about vampires beforehand then they would have been more on guard and this wouldn't have happened to Owen.

Even more so, now that Jim seemed to have vampires stationed in high places in the different factions.

"I think it was always inevitable that humans would find out about vampires." Eno was the first to speak up. "I think now might indeed be the perfect time for you to tell them. After all of your endeavours Quinn, you currently should be in the best position for them to have to listen to you without too much prejudice.

"With the Demon tier crystal obtained, the people you have gathered, they have no choice. If humans want to survive then they will have to rely on you."

Both of what Sam and Eno said were true, for so long Quinn had been afraid of what if the others found out about his secret, but now it wasn't so much of a problem.

"I was thinking the same, but I'm not sure whether I should mention all the vampires to them." Quinn continued. "The Vampire World has stayed out of the mess with humans for so many years. It has become that way for some reason, so I think it might be better to not tell them that there is a planet full of them."

"In the first place that decision should be up to Bryce, and if he was to find out that the humans knew about them I'm worried about what plans he might have in the future."

"For once I agree." Eno nodded. "But not for the same reasons as you. If humans learn that there has been a secret world of vampires, I fear what might happen after the Dalki war ends. At the moment although both matters have to do with the Dalki, one side would not help out the other. There is no reason for vampires to help out humans, nor humans to help out the vampires so it's best to keep them separated."

"Of course, for people like us that have an interest in both worlds it is different. On top of that, I would suggest we don't mention about the demon tier beast that the Dalki are looking for, either. The less people know about it the better. If

information got out, where exactly the Demon tier beast was, then a vampire could easily influence and extract the information from them." Eno said.

With the small talk over, it looked like Quinn and Sam had a plan on what to tell Oscar, and for once, the conversation between Eno and Quinn didn't turn into a full blown argument.

Finally, they could see the large Bertha on site, and when they landed, Quinn showed his credentials via his platinum badge. He was greeted, and the others quickly directed him around the ship.

"This way, sir." A man bowed down, as a group of around twenty started to escort them.

"This seems a bit excessive, even if we are on the ship." Sam said. "Even when Oscar greeted us himself, there weren't this many people there to escort us."

"Did you notice?" Eno whispered, quietly so the three of them could hear but the others couldn't.

"Yeah, their heartbeats are beating like crazy. Something's wrong." Quinn whispered back.

Eventually they were led into a room, and they could see Oscar, Samantha , Innu and Sach all there in front of them. However, it wasn't a meeting room but a training room. When they entered the room, the door had closed behind them.

"What is the meaning of this Oscar?" Quinn asked.

"I'm sorry, Quinn, I didn't want to do things this way, but I agree that there is something we need to test out." Oscar answered, as a bucket full of blood seemingly fell from the ceiling and onto the ground.

"Well, well this is getting interesting. It looks like they already know about us and have prepared a trap." Eno spoke in amusement.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1094: Admitting the truth

From the second the three of them had gotten off from their ship and had entered the docking bay of the Bertha, Quinn had been able to tell something was up. From the person who had been assigned to welcome them, to the excessive amount of people that had come to escort them it wasn't hard to tell.

Their eyes had been constantly darting around the room, their heartbeats had been frantic and lastly, as vampires all of them had noticed the blood being stored in the ceiling above.

'Just like Eno said, if they decided to drop a pile of blood in front of us, then that means they know something.' Quinn thought.

At the same time, Sam was looking at the men who were now behind them, and although they hadn't quite pulled out their weapons just yet, their fingers were twitching while watching them for any sudden moves.

"Come on, isn't this what you guys are after?!" Innu shouted, smiling like a mad man.

However, the reactions of Quinn, Sam and Eno were not at all what they had expected. The trio of guests just stood there, looking at each other and their hosts.

"What are you talking about? Do you take us for some hungry beasts?" Sam questioned as he looked towards Innu who he took for the one to come up with this idea. Still, he had to admit he was a little nervous. While Eno and Quinn could handle themselves if a fight was to break out, Sam wasn't confident enough that he could do the same, so he would rather not reveal their secret right now.

'They've found out somehow, so if we come forward with what we know now, it will just sound like an excuse.'

"Well, things certainly seem to be fine for now." Oscar cleared his throat, his face had actually turned a shade redder as he was quite embarrassed that the three had reacted as any normal person would have in such a situation.

After learning from Samantha about Fex, and his desire for blood, they started to focus on witness accounts on the second fleet which had led to some very interesting information. Multiple of the crew survivors had stated that they had seen those with red eyes latching onto humans and biting into their necks. Licking the blood of their hands as they killed their enemies.

At first it had seemed like they had been exaggerating or perhaps their attackers had gone mad, but now the reports were starting to add up. What if this new source of power was powered by blood, which was why the Cursed faction had always carried a flask with them that contained blood inside?

Eventually, after finding biting marks on some of the victims' bodies and talking to many established minds they had come to one fairy tale conclusion. About the mythical beasts known as vampires.

Although it seemed ridiculous, Innu had been the first one convinced that this was the right answer, and had somehow managed to get Oscar to play along with this little test. The books stated that they were beasts that would do anything for blood, that they would crave it and go out of control at the mere sight of it.

Now, Oscar felt nothing but embarrassment, and didn't really know how to progress things forward.

"With all this blood, It looks like you figured out the truth, well should we have that talk you were talking about earlier, or should we just show them our fangs." Eno asked out loud and clear so each one of them could hear.

Sam started to laugh trying to play it off as just some joke from the old coot next to him, but it was clear he was nervous, and Quinn was just there shaking his head, probably regretting not having told Eno to stay back.

Meanwhile, outside of the room, Owen Graylash had just arrived along with Hermes not too long ago. For now, he would only allow Hermes to be by his side, and his more capable men, that he did trust would be in control of the fleets while he was away.

The first thing Owen had asked about upon his arrival was Quinn, but for some reason they quickly changed the topic. Even after he asked again, they just did the same. Eventually, in the middle of their walk, Owen had had enough and grabbed his escort by the arm.

"I'm warning you, you better answer my question." Owen threatened the man. "I have had my fair share of traitors recently, and I wouldn't be surprised to find out that everyone on this ship is one either. One of the only few people I trust at the moment is Quinn Talen, so you better tell me where he is. Don't think just because I recently came out of hospital I don't have the power to electrocute a small fry like you!"

The man looked around nervously, but this just infuriated Owen more. The next moment the captured men felt a tingling sensation go up his arm. He might have been under orders, but with this kind of pressure, he confessed to everything. After going to the training room, where Quinn and the others were meant to be, Owen didn't slow down with his intimidation.

"What is that old man thinking to lock up Quinn in such a room?!" Owen couldn't believe Oscar's action. "Open the door now, before I break it down! This is an order as the head of the Graylash family and one of the world leaders!"

The two guards that were standing behind the large closed door looked at each other, and then heard the sound of Owen's ability activating, and soon the doors opened.

"What's going on now?" Oscar asked, as he could see the doors opening. "I told them to not let anyone inside!"

When they finally opened up, Owen barged into the room, and could feel the tension between the two sides, as well as everyone who was getting ready to fight.

"Well, looks like I came just in time to help you out." Owen said, standing by Quinn and the others.

"Graylash!" Innu shouted. "Don't you know what they are, they just admitted it as well...they're vampires!"

There was silence in the whole room, and even a sweet soft smile had come from Owen's mouth, but when he looked at Quinn. In a defeated kind of way, all Quinn could do was nod.

"This is actually bad timing." Quinn sighed. "I don't know how you guys found out, but after what happened with Owen, I was going to share some things with you during today's meeting."

"However, if this is the way you were planning to treat us after finding out the truth, then maybe it's a good thing that we didn't tell you anything." Quinn spoke and at that moment his eyes started to glow red.

Honestly, Quinn didn't like the way they were treated after everything he and his group had done to help Oscar and the others. Were they honestly thinking of them as some kind of savage beasts who would have gone crazy over the sight or smell of blood? Had they intended to put them down if that had truly been the case? Had everything they had done up until this point been meaningless?

Seeing the red eyes, Owen understood that Quinn was being dead serious. They were the same type as the ones he had seen before he was stabbed, for a second Owen flinched. It was hard to get rid of a trauma like that and so soon. However, he also remembered how much Quinn had done for him and placed his hand on his shoulder.

"I don't care what you may be, to me you're Quinn Talen of the Cursed faction!" Owen stated. "I will stand by your side."

This had managed to quell Quinn's anger a little, but he still was looking towards Oscar and the others.

"We're sorry Quinn." Samantha apologised, as she stepped forward. "We're sure you're not like the ones who attacked us. I had my suspicions, ever since Fex made

me save him using my blood. I saw him heal after consuming it and he also used your red powers. We never planned to hurt you, it's just that the Graylash family aren't the only ones that have suffered from attacks, and we're confused and scared about such a thing popping out so suddenly."

It was a plea, and Quinn could tell that she was generally serious.

"Let's try calm the tension down on both sides, huh?" Sam suggested. "Let us share what we know, I think it would be good for us to sit down, and maybe hold the meeting later after everyone had time to digest the new information." Sam smiled.

"I agree." Oscar nodded. "Perhaps our test was just a show of fear for us. My daughter is right though." Oscar placed his hands on top of Smantha's shoulder. "It's fact that you guys always have helped us and nobody will be able to claim otherwise. Everyone clear out, we shall head into the main command centre." Oscar ordered.

With everything cleared up, Quinn was still partially in a sour mood, but he knew that he should look at it from their point of view. Had he reacted any better than he was turning into a vampire back in the academy?

Walking to the command centre, from behind though, Oscar had his own thoughts.

'Quinn, I'm not a fool, whatever you and your group have become, whatever you have done I know we need you to defeat the Dalki, but knowing that there is another race out there, one that feeds off humans, this is a dangerous matter for all of us humans.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1095: Call them V

Without the large number of escorts Quinn and the others were now following after Oscar to the main command centre. The place felt quite familiar to Sam and Quinn. As they looked around they were unable to find any differences to the Bertha ship that they had themselves. After all, the ship had originally belonged to the military, yet Oscar had never asked for it to be returned.

There was one thing that was a little worrying while the group was walking and that was just how dead silent everyone was. It couldn't be helped, before they had just suspected Quinn to be different, but now he had admitted to it himself, and the possibility that the two next to him could be vampires as well, didn't make things any better.

'The man next to Quinn looks very similar to Richard Eno.' Oscar thought. 'He did state that the two of them were related, so could Eno also be one of these... vampires? What can they do? How troublesome will they be, and how accurate is our knowledge of them based on pure fantasy books?'

'So that's what the boy has been hiding this whole time.' Owen thought. 'His growth has been remarkable, however it doesn't seem that he got where he is without his own hard effort. Apparently those that attacked the Graylash family with the red eyes were also these vampires, but they didn't seem to hold a candle to Quinn. A whole new world, interesting.'

'I knew it!' Innu thought. 'They are deadly animals! They must have sold or experimented on their own people. No wonder that kid who barely passes for a young adult has been able to accomplish so much! This must also be how he made me obey him! If all of them have that type of ability to control others, this is a huge threat that we must get rid of as soon as possible!'

'No matter what or who he is, if he can achieve my goal of reaching Rank one in power fighters, spreading the martial arts of Mauy Boran then I know I have selected the right person, but if people were to find out that he wasn't...human what would they think.' Sach thought.

Everyone had their own opinions, and they were thinking heavily about what to do with this newfound knowledge. However, all they could do was speculate for none of them had an inkling of the whole truth.

"Quinn, before we go and visit the captured... vampire, there was something else I wanted to talk to you about." Oscar spoke, breaking the deafening silence. "I never got the chance to thank you for what happened in the city of Zoo."

Quinn had absolutely no idea what Oscar was talking about, however it did hit a spark with Sam. It was just that he had been so busy that he hadn't had an opportunity to mention it to Quinn. It was crazy how many things had happened in

such a short amount of time, that the fact a four spiked Dalki attacking earth would just be brushed off.

"I can't believe Leo has grown so powerful, that he is now able to defeat a four spiked Dalki on his own." Oscar explained after noticing Quinn's confusion on the matter.

"A four spiked Dalki!?" Quinn blurted out, unable to hold in his surprise. It was now clear for all that this was the first time he heard about the matter.

"Well we assume that he wasn't alone." Oscar continued. "However, the only person that was reportedly seen in the area at the time was the Blind Swordsman, and last we knew about him, he was under the Cursed faction. I'm amazed at his growth..." And then Oscar started to trail off there as he was starting to realise something.

Quinn, the Cursed faction's power had all grown out of nowhere, and seemingly it was the same for Leo, could it all be related to the matter they were about to discuss.

"He is indeed amazing." Quinn agreed. "You will have to thank Leo himself. He has his own matters to attend to, so him being there wasn't under my command, so it feels wrong to claim his credit."

Quinn was still trying to process what he had just learned. He himself had never fought against a four spiked Dalki, so he was trying to imagine its power. Even though Leo most likely had the power of a Vampire leader, he still didn't think it would be enough to kill one on his own.

'Erin was with him as well... Did something happen to her? And there is also the third stage of Qi he has learned recently. If he really did manage to kill it on his own, it might be worth taking a break and learning the third stage as soon as possible.'

It was unfortunate, but Quinn and Leo's schedules just didn't seem to add up. The two of them would always miss each other, but neither one wanted to interrupt what the other was doing. Besides, it wasn't like what Quinn was doing at the moment wasn't helping him to get stronger in his own way.

He had trained his new Shadow skills, acquired new blood abilities and control with Eno, and had obtained crystals to create top level gear.

Finally, all of them had arrived in the command centre, and when Oscar entered he had told everyone already in there to clear out of the room, as he knew it was a sensitive matter that would affect each person differently. Even amongst his own head generals it turned out that everyone had a different opinion of the matter.

Quinn's group sat together, while Owen and Hermes sat down on another side, and finally all of those in the Earthborn group. Sat at a large round table where they were unable to reach each other.

"Quinn, you said you had a few things to tell us, but as an apology allow us to tell you first what we have found out and feel free to correct us." Oscar offered. "There is a group of people that are currently working with the Dalki. They share a few similar traits, one being their glowing red eyes, the other the power to control the red aura."

"This hasn't been confirmed with all of them, but they seem to react in some way to blood according to eyewitnesses. These people with red eyes are able to learn abilities similar to ours, their eyes can change colour at will so it's hard to spot who is a..ermm shall we call them the 'Vs'?" Oscar suggested as he still found it quite childish to use the word vampires.

"The Vs have infiltrated high level factions, and because we are unable to tell them apart from our own until the moment of attack it has made things very difficult for us. Now from the video footage we have obtained, as well some from testimonies we have received, many members of the Cursed faction appear to be able to use this same red power, and at least in your case, Quinn, we have seen you possess the same red eyes." Oscar said as he finished off his report.

Quinn first turned to Sam, who nodded his way, a gesture that Quinn was to do the talking. He then looked towards Eno, who just seemed calm as ever unfazed by everything going on. It didn't look like he cared what Quinn would say, as long as they could defeat the Dalki somehow.

"You're correct, it's as you guess all of us here are what you guys can call the 'Vs'." Quinn answered, but they already knew this much. "However we are not exactly the same, and we don't belong to the same group. For one, not even everyone in the Cursed faction knows what I am."

"What happened to me... wasn't out of choice, I personally consider it to be more of a curse...saw it as a curse. Firstly I will explain to you what the Vs are, and then I will let you know our story." Quinn proceeded.

"The Vs are like those that you have read in your books, yes they do feed on blood, and they are affected by sunlight, but over the years they have managed to find a way to overcome this weakness of theirs."

"Only when they activate their powers do their eyes start to glow red, which is what you have all seen so far. Some can control this better than others. As for the blood lust, as you saw with your little test we are different."

"We can control ourselves and don't need to feed on blood but they might not be the same. We wanted to tell you all because of how dangerous this has become. V's are faster, stronger, have their own set of powers and can still learn abilities, giving

them huge advantages over regular humans, but perhaps the most worrying thing of them all is their vampire abilities."

"They are able to turn other humans into the same thing as them, and each person who falls under their control will follow their commands, even if they wouldn't do so under normal circumstances. Friends that you might have known for decades might stab you in the back. As long as their master orders it, they will obey the command."

Everyone was listening carefully to Quinn's words, yet it still sounded like a fantasy. At the moment it sounded like the vampires were by far a superior race especially if they were able to overcome the supposed weakness their race was known for.

"I have a question." Owen asked. "I assume that the one that attempted to attack me while I was weak in my bed, is a V as well? But you have managed to stop him. If we are unable to tell a V from appearance, how were you able to tell?"

Quinn then raised his hand, and Innu jolted back in his seat for a second, but all Quinn did was tap his nose a few times.

"Their smell. The V's have better senses, smell, sight, vision, reflexes, everything. A human will be unable to tell the difference, but the V's are able to smell who is one of their own and who isn't. Since I suspected that more of them were hiding, I had used a spray to mask myself. When he approached you, I was able to tell that he was one of them, so I apprehended him."

"Thank you for explaining what the V's are to us, Quinn." Oscar said politely, being careful with his words. "However, there are still a lot of questions we have on our mind. You said you were different from the other V's. So I ask, why are these V's working with the Dalki in the first place? And what about all of you? what happened that made you become like this?"

Quinn had thought long and hard what story to tell, there were some details he wanted to avoid. He didn't want them to be aware of the Vampire World, he didn't want to tell them everything about them and the requirements for blood or that he was a leader of a vampire family.

All of this would overcomplicate things. It would be similar to when a civilisation discovered another, and if what they had learnt from history was true, that never ended well for either side.

"All of what has happened to us, and with the V's is this man's fault." Quinn pointed towards the person sitting to his right. "Richard Eno."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: [jksmanga](#)

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: [jksmanga](#)

## Chapter 1096: Eno our saviour?

At a glance it was hard to tell that the old man who was by Quinn's side, was Richard Eno. However, Oscar had long since felt that he looked somewhat familiar. Being told who he was, he couldn't deny a certain resemblance to the image he had seen of a younger version of Ricahrd Eno with different coloured hair.

'Richard Eno, one of the great saviours of humanity... is a vampire? What do they mean by this?' Oscar was baffled at the implication.

"How dare you?!" Innu wasn't so chalant to hold back his reaction. He almost stood up, but was quickly kicked under the table by those sitting next to him. It was an offence for those of a lower ranking to stand up without permission.

Innu coughed before he corrected himself. "Are you really telling us that Richard Eno, the great scientist who made it possible for us to activate the power of the beast weapons, and the inventor of the teleporters that aided us in the first war is that very man sitting next to you?! What's more we are to believe that he is responsible for all those V's we have to deal with now? I'm sorry, but that sounds like a lot of bogus! Heck, that man doesn't even look like Richard!"

Rather than looking at the person who was throwing out accusations, instead Richard was looking directly back at Quinn and it appeared as if the two were in the middle of a staring competition until Richard finally spoke.

"My 'Grandson' is correct." Richard said putting a lot of emphasis on the word indicating their connection to each other. "You see, I am one of the first vampires known in existence, something we call an Original. You want the truth, then I shall tell you the truth."

Richard stood up from his seat, and even Quinn was on guard. To be honest, he didn't exactly know what the right words to say were, but he had somewhat hoped that Eno might have a better way of phrasing things to the humans, in a way that would allow all of them to work together... and not just until the Dalki were dealt with.

'After all, that's his goal right? I mean I did want to annoy him a bit, but now I'm worried about what he's going to say!' Quinn was worried how things would play out. Was it the right call to bring him along? Should he make sure to silence him before it was too late?

"All of this is simply a family feud that you have been caught up in." Eno started to explain. "I have lived for many years, and have tried my best to make sure that humans continue to live as well. During my time, I had many children, and those children had children of their own."

"After living for countless years I eventually chose to seclude myself and went into something you may think of as a form of hibernation. Now during the time I was

asleep one of those distant descendants of mine created the Dalki, which he is now using to kill all those on earth."

"When I woke up, and learned of this, I of course wanted to put a stop to this. Judging by the fact that the person who caused all this belongs to my lineage I felt responsible. Lacking the means to deal with the Dalki on my own, I introduced new technologies to the world with the goal of ensuring humanity's survival. And here I am again, doing the same thing, but this time I needed more help."

"I turned my grandson into someone like me, and through no fault of his own, he had no choice but to turn some of his companions as well. I'm sorry to say, but humans have just been caught in the middle of all this mess."

Quinn was utterly surprised by Richard Eno's response. It was actually quite accurate to the situation they were in, and he actually hadn't over complicated things either. On top of that, he made sure to mention that Quinn had been pushed into a situation he didn't wish to be in.

His story also made it sound like there weren't many vampires out there, and that he had turned Quinn just to get some allies on his side.

As for the others, they were struggling to take it all in. The Dalki, a mysterious force that was large, more powerful and had better technology than them, had attacked them from space. What else could they think other than they were aliens trying to invade and attack them.

'The Dalki were created by vampires.... And a descendant of Richard Eno is the cause of all this.' Oscar repeated in his head to make sure all the information he had was right. 'Now it makes sense why there are vampires helping the Dalki, but there's no way to confirm if any of this is true.'

"Why have you been quiet this whole time? Why did they create something like the Dalki? Why are they attacking us?" Samantha bombarded him with questions.

Eno shrugged his shoulders as he sat back down in his seat.

"Even parents are unable to completely control what becomes of their children. We are merely able to guide them on their path. Keep in mind that I am old, very old and I have no idea why my descendant chose to do what he did. Maybe you guys did something to annoy him, or perhaps it's something else?"

"Are you trying to pin the blame on us?" Innu questioned in fury. "Do you know how many humans died because of the Dalki? Family members, soldiers, students, everyone got dragged into this mess through no fault of their own. And right now, the person who caused all of this is in front of us! "

Quinn could sympathize with how Innu was feeling at this moment. He had felt the same way. However one person's actions didn't dictate a whole race of people.

Even Quinn had seen that there were bad vampires and good vampires, just like people.

"What exactly do you want me to do about it, Head General Innu?" Richard asked back. "Am I not already doing more than what should be expected of me? I introduced technology that wasn't ready for your world, and even more. Once again I have come forward fighting, and I have turned to my precious family who had no part to play in this originally just to fight by your side."

"Let me tell you something, you are not in the position to complain about what has happened. We don't have to help you." Eno stated as his eyes started to glow red, and like a turtle, Innu's head naturally started to sink down into his body, as he felt the strong presence coming across the table.

"That's enough." Oscar interrupted. "I understand the situation, and you are correct. I am very grateful that all of you are helping us, Quinn I can't imagine what you must have gone through because of all of this, and Richard we still haven't forgotten all the great feats you have accomplished. As you said you are not the one to blame."

"I wish you could continue to share whatever information you guys know about the Dalki and more, but I assume you have already done as much as you can. From what I have gathered there are two sides to the vampires, one that is under your control Eno, and the ones under control of your descendant."

"However, we have also learnt that their numbers may be able to increase as we go on. Can I ask, I assume that the vampire we have captured is from your descendant. Quinn, you asked me to keep him here, what exactly do you plan to do?"

"First, as this meeting is coming to an end. I think we should keep most of what we said a secret. It won't improve their morale or change the goal in the end. I think the most important part is that everyone knows the traits of the V's. For now we can explain that a human who is working with them has a certain ability.

"As for your question, That's what we want to find out." Quinn replied. "Where is his creator, who sent him, and where the hell he is so we can put a stop to this whole thing once and for all."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1097: The missing man

Due to high rising tensions between certain members of the Earthborn group, Oscar sent Innu and Sach off on some menial tasks, checking on their fleets and so on. Once they were done, they were to start coming up with a brief on how to explain the current situation with the V's to their members.

They would then have to make a choice between informing everyone of the trait of the V's or only a select few. Oscar was leaning more towards the first option.

Even if they were to limit it to a select few, there was no telling who was, and who wasn't a V. Unless of course, they had one themselves. As such, telling everyone would allow for the groups to be more alert and aware, however it would increase the chances of the V's finding out, and possibly make them go into hiding. Still, it was the option that should lead to them being able to save more lives.

At the moment, Owen, Hermes, Oscar, Samantha, Eno, Sam and Quinn were heading to a special area in the ship. For once they had entered a room that Quinn didn't recognise.

"I can see you looking around." Oscar mentioned. Their group was walking across a dark corridor with nothing but small LED lights on the ground. "This spaceship is a little different compared to yours for a few reasons. Right now, we're headed towards the interrogation room."

"Don't you mean a prison cell?" Owen questioned. "You don't have to be koi with us. I mean we are going to see a prisoner after all."

Finally they had reached the end of the hallway, and entered through the doors.

"I assure you, this is an interrogation room, but I guess it could double up as a prison." Oscar answered.

The room was rectangular and quite large. There were computer terminals and advanced equipment in the room but what stood out the most was the large glass panel window. It covered the entire length of the room and on the other side they could see the person they had come down here for.

Only they could see inside, not the other way round. The prisoner was no longer stuck in a wall of ice, and instead his limbs had been spread out cuffed around his wrist and ankles. He was clearly awake as well.

Looking at this, reminded Quinn of when he had been trapped as well. It made him feel somewhat bad for the person, especially since he was sure that just like the one he had captured, this one also shouldn't be following orders out of free will. Although for Owen who didn't know this, the look on his face told a different story.

Small little shocks were coming off his body, it was unusual since he mostly kept a calm demeanor. Still, it was undeniable that his life had nearly ended because of this person in front of him. After taking a few more breaths, Owen eventually calmed down.

"I guess this is good practice." Owen mumbled as he continued to breathe. "For our ability, anger is never the best thing. It's harder to control the lightning that way." It was unclear whether it was an explanation for the others or a reminder for himself.

"Alright Quinn, let's go with what you proposed, you and Eno can enter and ask the questions you need." Oscar said. "Just so you know, everything will be recorded and filmed while you're inside, and we will be able to see everything."

Now that there wasn't much left to hide, Quinn didn't mind that, and in the first place, he knew that his Influence skill was unlikely to work. A door to the side, just where the mirror ended, was opened, and Quinn followed behind Eno.

The second they entered, the vampire in the room could smell them.

"I knew something was up, I was wondering why they decided to chain me up, so who sent you here then.. was it the ki-"

"Shut your mouth!" Quinn ordered, as his eyes glowed red and in seconds the vampire felt his body being controlled. His reason for doing such a thing was because he was just about to mention the word 'King'. Quinn had just finished a bunch of questions and he didn't want more to pop up.

"Those red eyes, it looks like they can also be used on other V's then?" Owen noticed. "Even if they weren't created by Quinn? How does that even work?"

Sam was left in the room looking through the glass with the others. Even though he thought it was best they didn't learn too much about vampires, it was clear that the way things progressed they would notice things the group had been hiding from them.

"The power Quinn is using right now is a type of mind control. Most vampires can do this to a certain degree but it varies in power. However, it only works on people with weak minds. The only reason it's working right now, is because Quinn is a strong V." Sam answered, using their term for it.

Hearing this made Owen wonder just how long Quinn had been a vampire for. Even with Quinn looking like a young adult, the vampire they held captive was clearly older, yet Quinn was stronger?

'If it worked on Innu and Sach, doesn't that suggest they have weak minds? ... It's a good thing they aren't here right now, otherwise Innu would be throwing his toys out of the pram.' Smantha thought.

"Tell me who do you work for?" Quinn demanded to know.

Just like last time, the captive's mouth started to twitch but nothing was coming out.

"Where are they?" Quinn asked again but no reply.

"It seems like not even Quinn can get an answer out of this one, even with his unique abilities." Oscar sighed.

Quinn hadn't expected for it to be so easy after last time, but fortunately the next person who had walked over, was Richard Eno. He had his hand tightly gripped onto something that the others couldn't quite see, not even Quinn.

Then placing his hand on his head, he stayed silent for a few seconds.

"I accept the trade." Eno mouthed with his mouth, but no sound had come out. A few seconds later and a bright light started to shine beneath his feet. His hair started to float along with the man he was touching, and whatever had been in his hand, had disappeared.

The man who had been tied up had come to again, and looked around for a few seconds.

"What did you do to me? What have you all done to me?!" The man shouted, and the next second, Eno moved his hand, slicing the man's throat. Blood poured out the ground and he was dead.

"What the hell was that?! That was our only lead!" Oscar shouted through the room.

Eno was already making his way out, and so was Quinn, since quite frankly he wanted answers as well. Before leaving the room, Eno flicked his fingers, throwing the blood onto the floor and walked inside.

'Eno, how could you do something to a vampire like that and be so...heartless? You must know like I do that all these vampires were old spies for the king. Do you care so little about them?' Quinn thought.

"We have already gotten all the information that is needed from him." Eno explained. "What is happening to the vampires is my descendant's doing, but he isn't the one actually doing it. The power that is being used on them to stop them from talking and controlling them, is just a normal ability. No information was able to be extracted from him, so we are back to square one."

"Human's best chance of survival is to continue to wait out their time, defending as they can." Eno added as he left the room, as if he owned the ship himself.

With only Quinn left in the room with the others, they didn't really know what to do or say.

"Your grandfather seems like a hard person to control." Oscar eventually mentioned, noticing that Quinn too had been shocked about what the old man had done inside the interrogation room.

"Indeed, worst of all, I don't even know what's going through his head most of the time." Quinn replied.

"Isn't that a problem?" Samantha interrupted. "If what Eno is saying is true, that these people were benignly controlled by an ability and not by some V? Doesn't that mean that they can control anyone, even regular humans?"

The realisation of this was frightening. The only thing they could take comfort in, was if it was an ability that was capable of such a thing, then it would also mean that there was a condition that would need to be involved as well.

The look on Quinn's face said that he wanted to chase after Eno. Oscar wanted to talk about a few things with Quinn, especially about what he was going to do now that he had successfully beaten the Demon tier beast. Now learning that perhaps he and Eno had different goals, he allowed Quinn to leave and chase after him.

'It looks like they have their own way of stopping this war, we will just have to continue doing our best.'

'Quinn, I'm confused.' Vincent said. 'If what Richard said is true and this really is an ability and not a vampire power... in all my years as a vampire leader, and despite my research, I have never encountered such an ability that a vampire would be able to learn.'

As he and Sam were catching up to Eno, Quinn eventually managed to stop him in one of the halls.

"What you said earlier, there is no ability like that in the Vampire World." Quinn stated, being upfront about what he had just learnt.

At this point, Eno turned around and looked at Quinn.

"I never claimed there was, which means that there is something else going on. Just like there are abilities that only vampires can learn, there are also abilities that only humans can learn. In between there are also abilities that are shared."

"However, did you know that there is one ability that crosses these borders? A person who is able to transfer any ability into themselves, and give it to however they wish. I believe at one point and time you met them, the Truedream family."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1098: A pick up

Quinn had been under the impression he knew everything about vampires and humans. However, humanity had lived for thousands of years, and yet they continued to discover new things like abilities and vampires. It hadn't even been long since they were discovered both, so of course things like this would come up.

It was only now that Quinn was starting to realise the true danger that Trudream and his ability represented. If he was able to pass abilities over from vampires and humans, it meant that humans could also learn the shadow powers that Quinn had obtained.

At the same time, the opposite should be true as well. What if a person was to kidnap a Truedream and use them? Perhaps they could even take an ability like Sil's and place that into a vampire.

'That's a really scary thought. One of the strongest abilities in the world inside a vampire. It's almost like creating a super vampire.' Quinn's mind started to wander.

"So is Jack Truedream still alive? Is he really with Jim?" Quinn asked.

"From the way you are acting, it seems like you have caught onto what I was saying, but you are asking the wrong questions right now." Eno shook his head.  
"Do you know what actually happened to Jack Truedream?"

"They had gone to Blade Island, in search of the shadow ability that you had shown off. However, Jack had vastly underestimated the true powers that the Blade family held, and it didn't take long for them to overpower him and his men, but during their little battle the Blades revealed something to them. They had used the Demon tier beast. Can you guess what happened next?"

Quinn was a bit slow on the uptake but Sam was a little quicker to understand. Brock had been a spy of the Blade family, he would have known all of the details of what was to happen. So if Eno was saying the Demon tier beast was used, then this would be true. If that was the case, then Jack had also seen the beast being used.

If Jim Eno has really captured Jack, then they may already know where the other half of the Demon tier beast they were looking for was. However, there was also the chance that Jack had no clue what level the beast was atm and that's why they still had yet to do anything.

Finally Quinn had realised this as well.

'But is Jack working with Jim willingly, or has he been captured?' Quinn thought.  
'Also their network of information doesn't seem to be as large as Richard's.'

'Especially if they don't really know who I am. So unless Jack tells them, or Eno assumes something is up, they may never find out.'

"We have to move the Demon tier beast now before it's too late. Even if they don't have Jack, we still need to be cautious. I'm afraid bringing back your friend's partners might have to wait a little longer." Eno said.

Quinn needed to think fast. It was true that they might be running out of time, but for the whole Dalki to appear, they would have to enter through the space station, which was being guarded by the Earthborn and the Graylash family.

They still had some time until he needed to be there. At the same time, the Dalki should be more cautious after nearly losing two four spiked Dalki. Before heading to the Blade Island, Quinn, who thought it was vital, picked up something.

"I know there is a chance, that the Dalki and vampires have a way of appearing on Earth, but I need to quickly check something." Quinn said. "Sam, you head off with Eno, and make preparations for everyone. Let me know when you plan to head to Blade Island."

"Tell Sil what needs to be done, and bring whoever you think we'll need. Also, remember to bring along him as well. He is vital for this whole thing to work."

Sam nodded and understood the instructions well, and for the first time, it seemed like Eno was taking things seriously. He didn't joke around and had headed off with Sam.

'If everything works out, then maybe we will just need to put Vorden and Raten in a temporary place for now. If we move the Demon tier beast first, maybe we can even put them back in Sil's mind for a short while, and then move them back to their own bodies.'

'Im sorry Sil, but it's just bad timing. The one thing I am sure about, is Eno wants to defeat the Dalki, so if he thinks it's important to move the Demon tier, then this is something we need to do.'

Before going off to where Quinn needed to be, he had brought out his mask and attempted to get into contact with one of his strongest fighters, Leo.

As he answered, Quinn explained the current situation to his Vampire Knight, and asked him if he could join him any time soon to help out.

"I'm sorry Quinn." Leo apologised, after hearing him out. "I said I would be there if you needed help, however the outcome at the moment was not what I was expecting."

For some reason, Quinn's heart started to thump as he heard these words. It sounded like Leo was troubled, but if he was in trouble, would he be too stubborn to ask Quinn for help?

"I know what you might be thinking, but everything is fine with me. It's Erin I am worried about. I promised you that I wouldn't let her harm anyone, but I'm afraid that if I come back now with her, I might not be able to keep that promise."

Of all things to happen, it seemed like Erin was facing her own problems as well.

'Is this due to her being a Dhampir? Did something happen when she thought the Dalki, or could it be Eno was right and the bloodlust in her has been growing day by day and is about to be too much for her to bear?'

"I will solve this Quinn. Erin is my student, I won't allow her to be harmed and I will not make her do anything that she will come to regret. I have done that myself once. Please Quinn, I ask you, if you want to help Erin, do not summon me unless your life is on the line." Leo answered and the call ended right then and there.

Quinn initially wished to head on over and see if there might be a solution, if somehow he could help Erin, but he also knew that most likely the only person that could help, wouldn't be him. Eno would most likely just kill her, saying she was a threat they had to get rid of.

Just like how he had killed the vampire in the interrogation room.

'All I can do is complete the tasks in front of me as soon as possible.' Quinn thought as he activated his Shadow link. It soon connected to Linda. In a few seconds, he arrived right where she was.

"Quinn!" Linda exclaimed, her face all red.

Quinn looked around to see where he was, and they seemed to be in one of the shelter rooms.

"Sorry Linda, I'm in a bit of a hurry." Quinn apologised, as he quickly went out through the door.

Suddenly, a gasp of air was heard.

"Do you think he saw me?" Wevil asked, whose face was just as red as hers.

"No I think his mind was too busy on something, come on we can't keep messing around." Linda replied.

Back on the planet where the Demon tier tree had originated from, Quinn was heading towards the faction base, looking for a certain individual.

With so much time having passed, Quinn was hoping that Alex would have figured out just what could be done, with the Demi-god tier crystal, and the Demon tier crystal. These were the things that he needed, before heading off to Blade Island.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1099: The return of a trio

With Quinn gone, it made for a slightly awkward ride back to the Cursed ship with just Richard and Sam. Only a few people interacted with Richard and even then it was mostly out of pure necessity than an actual choice. As for Sam he had actually never regarded the old man to be that bothersome, but that was probably because Eno didn't regard Sam as someone who would, or for that matter could, disrupt his grand ambition of getting rid of the Dalki.

The reason why Sam was feeling a bit tense now was due to what they had all witnessed in that interrogation room.

Doing his best to avoid the other, Sam would just stare out of the large window of the ship, looking out into the vastness of space while thinking of all the important matters he would have to deal with once they landed. At the same time he was consistently responding to all the emails that had piled up, but he also couldn't help but try to keep one eye on Eno at all times.

'Eno, you say you're on the side of humans, but what about people like us? Humans that have turned into vampires but don't really fit into the vampire society?' Sam wondered.

What's more he was curious what Richard Eno was planning to do once the Dalki had been dealt with. He was someone that had faked his own sleep and was now meddling with the affairs of later generations. Did he see himself as some type of god, someone who was meant to create harmony?

Despite Eno claiming he cared for humans, he was not one to shy away from ending their lives in a heartbeat, claiming it was for the overall picture, and it seemed like he also felt the same way about vampires.

'Is this what happens when one has lived for far too long? After one has seen all those close to oneself die?' Sam started to question. These thoughts in itself were troubling Sam.

If it ever came to the point that he would do something Eno didn't like, would the other even hesitate to get rid of him? What about the Cursed faction? Would he want to get rid of them as well after their fight with the Dalki, since they might not fit in with the rest of humanity?

"Sam." Eno suddenly spoke his name, which jolted the young man. "There was something I hadn't had the chance to tell you, but now that it's just the two of us together, I thought it might be best for me to speak my mind."

'Did I mess up somewhere?!' Having just thought about all these things, Sam's hands were shaking and he didn't want to turn around. Instead he tapped his watch

bringing up a report like it was something very important that could not wait. Alas, the Eno either didn't see it or simply didn't care.

"I wanted to thank you. In my evaluation of the Cursed faction, you are one of the major factors of why it has been able to progress so far." Eno explained. "In all honesty, I never thought someone like Quinn would actually be able to grow in time to become one of the major tools to stop the Dalki. I didn't quite understand how he was able to build up such a strong faction around him, but after looking at his surroundings, I came to learn that it was because Quinn didn't do everything on his own."

"He did so with the people around him, and with the help of others, especially you. You are a hard worker and you should be credited for that." Eno said, and with that he headed off into the break room.

'Did he just... compliment me? What was that all about?' Sam tried to comprehend what had just happened. Still, he couldn't help but feel a little proud. It wasn't that Quinn had never thanked him, but for someone else to see and acknowledge his efforts really did remind him of his roots and where he had come from.

As someone who had hit the cap on his MC cells rather early, he had eventually accepted that he would be unable to get any stronger, so for a long time he had feared he would amount to nothing. His younger self would have never imagined that in the future he would be the second in charge of a faction that would be one of the great three powers that made up the group of world leaders.

'My parents are still on earth... once all of this is over it would be nice to bring them on the ship.' Thinking of this, it reminded Sam of something, and he went ahead to check if the request he had sent out earlier had come through.

Finally, Sam and Eno had returned to the Cursed ship, and there were a few things they both needed to do. First Sam immediately called a meeting between the Cursed faction leaders. Apart from updating them on what had happened when they had been out with Quinn, he also intended to inform them on their movement to Blade Island.

They would have to decide on the members that would be going with them. After all, a core group of people always needed to be left behind to look after the Cursed ship, but due to how dangerous Blade Osland or the Demon tier beast could be, they also needed to take a substantial force.

While Sam was in the middle of setting up the meeting, Eno had gone off to find Brock, who had also returned, and the two of them were talking to one another in one of the individual sleeping rooms.

"I am here to bring you my report, Sir." Brock bowed down before the other. "It turns out that the Blades have completely abandoned the island. They have taken everything with them, however I have been able to confirm two things."

"The tablet has remained untouched, so it still has plenty of power within it. You should be able to use it as you wish. However, there is a slight problem. They seem to have left behind the Demon tier dragon."

"I can only assume the dragon had no desire to leave the island, which is a good thing, but it may be harder to control it if that is indeed the case. It's unclear if it is waiting for something on the island or if it's merely its whim. I have some people looking over it for the time being who will report as soon as possible."

"It means we have to move as quickly as possible." Eno replied. "Still, I don't think the dragon will move anytime soon, their ability has a lasting effect. Depending on when the Blades had left the dragon it should still be a bit confused, and it probably considers the island its home."

"But what would happen if we tried to remove a beast from its home?"

Eno knew that perhaps even with Sil using all his abilities, this wouldn't be so easy.

"Another point if I may add." Brock said. "Although I can confirm that the Blades are no longer on the island, I have been unable to track them down anywhere, which is worrisome. If preparations have begun, I assume it's time I bring her over?"

After the meeting between the Cursed leaders was over, many of them were left dumbfounded. Finally, Megan, who had been the only leader who was human, had learned the truth about who they all were. Of course, it came as a shock, she had been sure they were joking about everything at first, so some of them showed her that it was very, very true.

She had reacted as one might expect... by fainting on the spot, so she had been taken to the medical bay. Dennis had volunteered to look over her, and to make sure she understood and knew everything.

Now, Sam had something else to attend to, as he had been informed that he had visitors that had also arrived on the ship. Exiting the command centre, Sam was taking the electrical bridge to move him to the large hall.

'That was quick work by them, I guess they might be excited to finally be here again.' Sam thought.

Stepping off the bridge, Sam continued to walk forward, until he could see three people surrounded by members of the Cursed faction. They stood tall and strong and looked a little nervous.

"It looks like you have finally all made it here." Sam greeted them, putting on a big smile. "Please state your names."

"My name is Swin, Sir!" The boy shouted, giving a salute.

"My name is Venus, Sir!" Another shouted.

'Which means..'

"My name is Shiro, Sir!" The last one replied.

The three boys were students from Quinn's homeroom class. They had decided to join the Cursed faction and had been sent to one of the safer portal planets, but Quinn had requested for the three of them to be brought on board the ship instead.

Naturally he would never force anyone to come, but upon hearing that Quinn had personally asked for them they had been more than happy to accept, especially since this meant they would get the chance to go to the main Cursed faction ship!

"I have to thank you, Shiro. You have a big job ahead of you. I, Quinn and the whole Cursed faction will owe you a lot." Sam bowed down before the other, despite his high rank..

"No problem, Sir! I will do anything if it's in regards to helping out Quinn, the Cursed leaders, the Cursed faction, and definitely to help out Sil!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1100: A crystal problem

Thanks to Quinn's shadow abilities, and the fact that other users with shadow abilities were all over the place, it was as if Quinn had access to his own personal teleport array. Whenever he wished he could move himself to their location without the need to rely on technology.

Whatever jamming equipment the Dalki had was useless against Quinn, allowing the Cursed faction leader to meet up with Alex who was hammering away in the forging room of the Orbus faction base.

'I guess he's always busy hammering away, even when he's away from the main base.' Quinn thought as entered the forging room. Alex seemed too focused on his task to notice his arrival. 'I would love to give him a break at some point, but it seems like none of us can catch one at the moment.'

It was far smaller than Alex' personal forge on the Cursed ship, with only a total of three forging areas, whereas the Cursed ship nearly had four times as many forging stations and extra space for everyone to work in. The first thing that caught Quinn's eye though, was the smile on Alex's face as he forged away.

'He doesn't seem to regard it as work. That is probably his secret, how he can do it for so long without complaining.' Quinn thought.

Soon though, his eyes started to wonder as there was someone else in the room next to him. It was hard to tell the man's age, but judging by the few gray hairs in his beard and curly hair, Quinn could only assume he was quite the old fellow.

However, his body told a completely different story. The man was shirtless with nothing but a pair of tight brown trousers that looked two sizes too small. He was built like a tank with muscles over muscles, and was watching Alex carefully perform.

He had the standard look one would expect when they were to see a forger who worked on creating beast weapons, unlike Alex whose body frame was small but still strong.

Since he was only overseeing the work, the large man noticed Quinn's arrival. However, he didn't say anything, just put a single finger against his lips. A sign that it was important to remain silent.

Quinn carefully nodded and they both proceeded to watch Alex, until he was finally done crafting what needed to be done. It looked like a regular sword but clear attention was spent to crafting the sword to the best of its abilities. It was only an advanced tier weapon so it was surprising that Alex still worked on things like this.

"Quinn!" Alex exclaimed shockingly, as he moved the sword ever so slightly to see the other in the sword's reflection. "When did you come back? Couldn't you have at least given me a heads up before coming out here?"

"Sorry." Quinn replied, scratching the back of his head. "Things have moved along quicker than I thought."

"Oh, I almost forgot, this here is Andrew!" Alex introduced the large man to his side. "He is the forger that Sam and Logan found for me, the one who worked on the last Demon tier weapon for Oscar, and he'll be helping me create your Demon and Demi-god-tier equipment for you."

"It is a pleasure to meet you." Both Quinn and Andrew bowed down at the same time. It made Quinn have a good first impression of the man and it was quite respectable as well.

"As the leader of the Cursed faction I can only congratulate you for having such a talent under you. Alex is one of the best forgers I have seen in decades. Despite his tiny muscles, he is able to hammer for twice as long as I am, yet he is so young. I can't wait until this man grows into a fine large forger like myself!" Andrew started to chuckle, knowing that it probably wasn't possible with how small his body frame was at the moment.

"Yes, I'm glad I had a good eye to catch his equipment back then, and that's why I fully trust him to make the best out of the crystals that I have bought." Quinn nodded, happy to hear the other praising Alex.

From meeting Andrew Quinn could sense that there was a large amount of Qi in his body, and his image reminded him of another muscular red haired man he had met before. Although forger's weren't necessarily Qi users, Leo had explained to him in the past that there were people who knew how to wield this form of energy subconsciously without ever having received any training in it.

Those that used Qi without their own knowledge were more likely to activate active skills in weapons, and it seemed true based on Alex's skills so far.

'Although he is under the Earthborn group, it would be great to have someone like him on our side.' Quinn thought.

"Andrew, thank you so much for taking your time to come here, I was wondering if there is anything that we could help you with. It would be the Cursed faction's pleasure, and hopefully we can build on our relationship in the future." Quinn offered.

It took a while for Andrew to answer as he stroked his large bushy beard, it seemed like he was seriously thinking about something.

"Don't worry too much. It is not everyday that a forger is able to work on a Demon tier weapon. If you hadn't asked for me, I would have probably paid for the opportunity to come work on this myself. However, there is one thing that I would like to mention, but there might be nothing you can do about it."

"Currently, all groups, including your own Cursed faction, are facing a crystal shortage. Due to the Dalki attacks, the groups aren't able to hunt as freely as they did before and many of them are being used to stay on guard and defend. On top of this, what crystals the groups do have, are being used to power the ships, mechs and all sorts." Andrew explained.

"Due to the special nature of the Cursed faction, I was wondering if there was anything your group could do to help us combat that issue."

It was a tough situation, and Quinn had been unaware that even his group was being affected by such a thing. Most of the hunting had been left to Helen and her group, but it would make sense that the collection of crystals would be at an all time low.

"Maybe Alex and I can try to work something out." Quinn replied as an idea popped in his head.

Noticing what Quinn was saying, Alex popped up.

"We will try our best, Andrew! Do you mind fetching Ko, and ask him to come here? I think that all of us will need to talk about a few things."

Andrew of course agreed, and he left saying goodbye to Quinn.

"Alright Quinn, it seems like we have some time to talk now, go ahead."

Quinn smiled, noticing that Alex was getting rather smart these days.

"If it's true that the Cursed faction is also low on crystals to forge more weapons, then there is one option." Quinn suggested. "Ever since the 'little' battle the tenth family had in the Vampire World, we have had a lot of blood crystals. I'm sure you know that they can also be turned into blood weapons. If we use these and give them to the faction members it could help us out greatly."

"Wait what!" Alex was baffled, his eyes nearly popping out of his head. "But blood crystals are illegal? Well I guess he did give them to us, so then the King really can't say anything. Besides that, don't they need blood to activate?" Alex asked.

"What you say is right, but at the moment, I'm not really concerned about what Bryce thinks, we just have to focus on protecting our people and fighting off the Dalki. The green blood from the Dalki, can also power up the blood weapons, so it

will be a big advantage in the fight. Of course, the blood crystals will vary as well, but it will be better than nothing." Quinn explained.

After visiting the Vampire World last time, Alex wasn't overly eager to do something to displease them, but he knew how dire the weapon shortage was at the moment. The constant fighting would also make it so their weapons durability would fade, and without beast crystal or weapons, if the war was to be drawn, they would definitely end up on the losing side.

"Alright." Alex answered. "Anyway, I can guess the real reason why you're here. You want to know what the Demi-god tier crystals and the Demon crystal can be turned into, don't you?"

Hearing this, a wide grin on Quinn's face appeared. "Please, indulge me!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1101: The passive effect

Quinn was excited to find out what the crystals he had gathered could be turned into. Especially since he had managed to procure two extra crystals from the Graylash family. Before he had been worried he might have to deliberate over two Demi-god crystals, or one Demon tier depending on what they could be used for but now he could keep both.

With the new armour set, Quinn was hoping that at least one of the Demi-god tier crystals could be turned into a new pair of gauntlets for himself.

"As usual, I guess you could say I have some good news and some bad news for you to choose from. Although this time, I think you could say it's all good news." Alex said, even confusing himself with his own words.

"In the case of the Demi-god tier crystals you left me, they're both suited to be made into gauntlets. If I use both, we won't even need to use the energy from any other lesser grade crystals to power them. These will be the top end of the line of Demi-god tier crystals!" Alex explained with great detail and a smug smile on his face.

"Of course, I can't tell you what their active skill will be, or what the equipment will be like until I actually make them."

Quinn was certain whatever it would be as long as Alex made it, it would end up beneficial. Ever since his last pair of gauntlets had broken he had been using the Advanced tier gauntlets. As such, he was looking forward to using gauntlets made by such high tier crystals.

Quinn then pulled out the other two crystals from his system and handed them over to Alex.

"Please check these crystals as well and see if they could be useful to make something even better." Quinn requested, yet after just a glance, Alex started to shake his head.

"Andrew has taught me a lot, so I can already tell you that these crystals don't have the same quality as the ones I planned on using. I would have to check further to see what they could be made into, but I think it would be better to make the gauntlets out of just the Demi-god tier crystals." Alex shared his professional opinion.

Placing them back into his system, that was a good enough answer for Quinn.

"Now, I'm sure you're wondering about the Demon tier crystal, and unfortunately here is the bad news. I can't give you much information, other than it can be turned into an accessory item. It's up to you, whether you want me to make it into a

specific form, or I could just trust in my forger instincts while hammering it down to craft the crystal." Alex offered Quinn a choice.

Quinn didn't know if Alex was being serious about the 'forger instincts', or if he was just saying to leave it up to him if he didn't have anything in particular he was looking for.

'An accessory item? It will add to my overall equipment I have on me without having to replace anything, so in a way that could be a good thing, and accessory items tend to have an active skill ninety percent of the time. If that's the case, it could very well be a great active skill.' Quinn pondered over his choice.

"In that case, I shall leave it up to you. I am fine with anything as long as it won't be another mask since I already have one. Also, I was hoping you could use this." Quinn pulled out a special type of crystal. It was shiny and had a silver colour, but it wasn't clear like a regular beast crystal. It was the upgrade crystal Quinn had received from completing the quest.

"Remember when I asked you about crystals being able to upgrade equipment? Well that's one of them. Feel free to study it as you wish." Quinn explained.

Alex's eyes nearly grew twice the size as he stared down at the crystal in amazement.

"I can't believe something like this is actually real! How can you just hand me something so valuable like it's nothing? Do you know how much this could change things? Where did you get this from?" Alex bombarded Quinn with a load of questions, not containing his excitement in the least.

Alas, Quinn had no actual answer to that question, because his system had just magically given it to him as a reward.

"I found it inside the Demon tier beast, alongside this strange seed, but it was the only one I could find." Quinn lied, and put out the mask from his dimensional space onto the table.

"I wanted to save it, but I was thinking of upgrading the emperor tier mask I have. I remember what you said, and if I upgrade one of the set pieces of armour that you gave me, It could ruin the active set skill, so I thought it would be best to leave it as it is. At the moment, I need to improve everything I have as quickly as I can." Quinn explained.

Alex started to nod frantically as he continued to hold the crystal in his hand, only now he was making sure not to hurt it, aware of its actual value.

"The gauntlets will be my priority, since they will be easier for me to make." Alex informed Quinn about his next plan of action. " The crystals don't take as long to

form, however the Demon tier might take quite a bit of time. Fortunately, with Andrew helping me it will be quicker than if I had to do it on my own though."

Quinn didn't understand the whole process of making weapons, so he just decided to leave it to Alex. There was no need to tell the other he was in a hurry, or that they were running out of time, because Alex would always try his best no matter the circumstances.

A few days passed, in which there had been an update from Sam that the students had finally arrived on the Cursed ship and that a team of potential people had been chosen. It was up to Quinn what he wanted to do with those that were still on the planet he was currently on.

Those that had come with him had been quite the great help, and Quinn was starting to realise just how strong the members of the Cursed faction had grown, even without his help. He also wanted to know if leaving them on a planet next to the Dalki fleet was a good idea. In the first place, this was a Graylash family, and not a Cursed faction family.

Quinn was currently outside the shelter and he could see families peacefully walking around, even Ko and his wife, along with their daughter were walking with smiles on their faces.

'I guess I can't be that cruel, else I'll just be turning into the other leaders... Am I just going to forget about everyone on this planet because they are weak? Should I not help just because their allegiance isn't to the Cursed faction?. What if I was a child raised on this planet? Expecting help from those that could?'

Just then, Quinn received a message that the gauntlets were finally ready. Heading back into the forging room, Andrew and Alex both stood proud over the forging table, and they had the standard cloth out covering the items for the grand reveal.

"From the looks on your faces, I'm going to be quite pleased with this one, aren't I?" Quinn asked, feeling like a little kid about to open a present.

The two of them just continued to grin at Quinn, as he walked up to the table, and pulled the cloth down. Underneath he saw two masterpieces of gauntlets. Impressive in design.

They both were more simple than the other gauntlets Quinn had in the past. Usually they would be covered in scales and bumps indicating the beast they had been made from, but instead these tow for cleanly flat, with a black rim around the edges. It looked like it would be a perfect fit for anyone who was wearing it.

What stood out was how they were both different in colour, one a light soft blue colour, the other dark purple in design. On the fingertips, small little tufts of fur could be seen floating.

Quinn picked them both up and immediately equipped them on, then using his Inspect skill he checked what the system had to say about them.

[You have obtained, the Demi-god tier gauntlet (Toximo Gauntlet)]

[Passive skill: Poisonous blood]

[Each strike has a small chance of poisoning your enemies.

Once poisoned the victim's speed will decrease, they will lose health gradually, suffer from delusions, blurry vision and more.]

[ - Warning - ]

[With each strike there is a small chance that the wearer will also get poisoned]

[Passive skill: Immune to all poisons]

[-Warning removed-]

There were quite a few things to take in, but Quinn could see that the first passive effect seemed to be quite a strong one on the gauntlets. However, he was worried that the system didn't give him a percentage of how likely it actually was to poison his enemies. In a way it wasn't something he could really do.

On the plus side, it seemed like the passive effect of the gauntlets that would poison the user had been removed due to the passive skill he had earned from defeating the moth. IN a way, it was an item that only he could use.

As for the stats, Quinn first wanted to see what the active skill of his other gauntlet was from. He assumed that this gauntlet was created using the crystal of the Poison moth he had fought, so he wondered what he would get from the other crystal.

Using his Inspect skill he discovered that it did indeed have an active skill, he just couldn't believe how effective it was.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1102: Two active skills in one

The Gauntlets were a strange item that would come as a set. Which meant to get the full effect of the stats from them, one would have to wear both at the same time. Otherwise the stats would be halved.

Usually, several crystals would be used to make a set of gauntlets, which all had the same attribute. The good news was, according to Alex the Demi-god tier crystals were enough to make the gauntlets, having obtained two of them. At the same time they were similar and different which was why the colours were different as well.

So it was a rare thing what Quinn was holding onto right now, two gauntlets that worked together, yet somehow they had two complexly different active skills.

[You have obtained, the Demi-god tier gauntlet (Drainimo Gauntlet)]

[Active skill: Energy sap]

[When this skill is activated, as long as the gauntlet touches an entity containing energy, that energy will be drained and added to the wearer. Alternatively this energy can be used to re-energize the wearer's stamina.]

'An energy drain and it can restore stamina?' Quinn thought as he read the effects. He remembered what Sil had told him about the Moth beast they had defeated, how it had caused everybody who touched its fur to fall asleep. Seeing the active ability that must have stemmed from it, it appeared the Moth had actually been draining their energy.

'If I can stay close to my opponents, doesn't this mean I can keep on fighting, while weakening them at the same time? With these two active skills, I will be able to improve myself drastically! Although I would have to hold on to them, so it's not as effective as the beast itself.'

His stamina seemed to be closely related to using his Qi powers, which had often been a problem when he had ended up using it. He would have to test it out, but if Quinn's hypothesis was correct, the gauntlets might allow him to also restore the Qi during a fight.

However, there seemed to be one clear downside the Demi-god tier gauntlets had compared to the Advanced ones. The latter's active skill allowed Quinn to infuse his Qi to make the active skill even stronger, whereas it didn't seem like adding Qi to them changed anything.

The chance that the poison would be triggered might increase, but it was seemingly impossible to actually test it since he didn't even know the actual percentage chance. Adding Qi to the active skill when it was supposed to be a way for him to recharge it, also seemed counter productive.

However, overall he couldn't complain about them. On top of everything, the stats they granted him were nothing to scoff at.

[+50 Strength]

[+5 Agility]

[+5 Stamina]

He was surprised about the power boost, seeing as neither ability had anything to do with Strength. Quinn already had 70 points in Strength, and with the gauntlets alone that would bring it up to 120.

'If all Demi-god tier equipment gives their user this much of a boost in stats, then it's no surprise how Hilston, who is already plenty strong, can be a match for nearly anyone.' Quinn was starting to understand why Hilston was called the world's strongest human, although there had still been one person who had managed to defeat him... and Quinn now needed to be even stronger than that.

"It looks like you are happy with the job the two of us did. These might be the most powerful gauntlets in existence." Alex boasted. "After all, there aren't too many people that choose to fight with their fists or have it as their weapon but you are certainly unique. It's a bit of a shame that it doesn't match your armour set though. If you want, I could certainly dye them, make both gauntlets have the same colour as well."

Quinn looked at them, one had a dark purple colour, while the other side was a soft blue almost white. In a way the gauntlets were the same yet so different at the same time, and working together reminded him of himself.

"There's no need, I happen to like how they are. What about the other stuff?" Quinn asked, seeing there wasn't anything left on the table.

"Unfortunately, the other Demon tier crystal will take some more time due to the uniqueness of it. However, I can promise you that you can look forward to the weapons I will make. You're free to wait, but I thought you had plans."

It was true, he was sure that if Quinn didn't hurry that maybe Eno would rally up the crew somehow and head out without him.

"You're right, carry on working on the mask upgrade and the Demon tier weapon. Send me a message as soon as they're ready. Make sure to keep your Shadow skill active! That way I can hop to you to collect the equipment once it's ready." Quinn suggested.

"Wait, so you want me to stay here and carry on forging, I don't mind but.."

"I think it will be for the best." Andrew interpreted. "I have been informed that there will soon be news that will be passed on to everyone, and it might shake the world a little. So these people need some order."

Hearing this, Quinn wondered if Andrew already knew about the announcement that Oscar would soon release, about the Vs that were amongst all of the factions. As someone who had been tasked with creating the Demon tier he had to be a VVIP.

"Just for now." Quinn replied. "I know it might not be safe, but I have a feeling that the Cursed ship might be moving more often soon as well. I'll be asking for Wevil and Linda to stay behind, just in case anything happens here. Make sure the people can relax for a while, I think they deserve it after what they have been through."

Since there was nothing else for Quinn to do aside from waiting, he rounded up the rest in preparation for leaving. Ko the leader of the orbus faction could see this, and just before Quinn left the faction he had called out to him.

"Quinn, wait." Ko said. "I still haven't been able to thank you. When you came here I was just stressed about everything that was going on. My family had gone missing and more people were disappearing. I thought I would never see them again."

"If you want, you can hit me. Hit me for everything I said." Ko then closed his eyes bracing himself ready to get hit.

"If I did hit you, you might go flying out of this whole Shelter." Quinn joked but was very serious at the same time. "Ko, if anything your frustration was due to you not being able to help the people around you and those that had gone missing, That wasn't a bad thing in the end. It's better than the people who choose to ignore it. Like those who were at the top. I hope you continue to stay this way."

Quinn headed off, as he went to return to the ship, but Ko couldn't help but get a few last words in.

"Quinn I will make sure everyone knows what type of person you and the Cursed faction really are. I won't let anyone say a bad word about you!"

As the others traveled through space, on the Cursed ship itself in one of the training rooms. There was drastic huffing and panting coming from a small person. He could barely stand and held himself up with his Dalki hand facing the ground.

"Come on!" Brock shouted. "This is the last day the two of us will be training together. Do you really think if you were to run into the Blade twins again that you could beat them? Heck, even slowing them down will be a miracle unless you get stronger!"

After a few minutes and having banged to catch his breath, Logan raised his head and his eyes were glowing green. Around him, there were several pieces of scrap devices and his body was cut all over in different places.

"You have a unique soul weapon, one which is undoubtedly strong! However, you need to learn how to use it better! For most their soul weapon is their last resort in a fight, but for you this will be your constant weapon! Now come, attack me again!" Rock demanded.

Pushing himself off the ground with his large Dalki hand, Logan flew a few meters into the air, and let out a scream. His eyes grew even more fierce.

"I won't drag the others down!!!"

\*\*\*\*\*

For those who don't know you can now buy the Kindle versions of the first 86 chapters on Amazon! Support the story if you can! Also, me and my partner are working on a story called first love leap check it out.

## Chapter 1103: All our strength

When Quinn and the others finally arrived back on the Cursed ship, all of them shared a sense of returning to somewhere they belonged. It was a bit strange to call a ship that constantly moved through space and could therefore be anywhere at any time 'home', but they all felt this way.

They knew that here none of them would be judged for what they had done in the past, they didn't have to watch what they had to say, and could mostly do as they wished. Everyone knew that with the situation with the Dalki there was a lot to be done, but it didn't hurt to take a breather or two for a second.

The people around the base greeted Quinn as usual, respectful, with many congratulating him on saving the Graylash family and acquiring the Demon tier crystal. The atmosphere was still light, so it seemed that Sam had yet to inform what most of the Cursed group were. He was sure that once the truth was out, the treatment wouldn't be exactly the same.

He asked around whether Leo and Erin had come back, but it appeared that they were still dealing with their own troubles.

"Hey Quinn, can you show me what Alex created for you?" Nate requested as he approached the Cursed faction leader. "Ever since I've heard the news that you guys managed to defeat a Demon tier beast I've been waiting for you to come back and show your new toy!"

Whenever Quinn was walking around the base, he would put all of his beast gear away, only equipping it when needed. It was the same for all those with the shadow ability.

"Believe me, I would love to, but it's not ready yet. Alex is still busy making it." Quinn answered, not bothering to tell Nate about the new gauntlets he had.

"This sucks." Nate complained out loud. "I get why you want me to train the people here, but I've already taught them as much as I could about hand to hand combat. Initially, it was quite enjoyable watching them learn it quickly and improve themselves, but to carry on and improve even more just takes time. They need experience, and fighting against each other can only get them so far."

"What I'm trying to say is, Quinn, I'm bored," Nate openly complained.

Quinn felt bad, Nate was one of the strongest people in his team, but he had felt that the Demon tier beast would have been too dangerous to take everyone. In many ways, he thought where they were going to go next was also a place only for those who had already proven themselves capable

There was also the issue that they needed to leave behind a strong crew on the Cursed ship, just in case they got attacked. At the same time if he would avoid

taking new people with him, then they would really stagnate and would be unable to fight the Dalki when they arrived in full force.

At the moment, there were only small battles, but everyone could feel that there would be a full scale war soon. Both sides were just testing the grounds figuring out each other's strength.

"Maybe there is something I can show you before I leave this time." Quinn suggested. "I'm sure it won't bore you anytime soon and once you get the hang of it perhaps you could show it to the others as well."

Quinn then pressed his hand on the other's chest. In the past Quinn had been afraid of doing this, due to him accidentally turning others. The easiest way to show people Qi, was by making their bodies feel it moving around.

Vampires seemed not to have this Qi force on their own, yet those that had been turned did, so someone like Nate should be able to learn it. Nate closed his eyes to concentrate on the feeling, and Quinn started to swirl around the energy in his body.

"Try to follow along with me, focus on the energy and try to push and move it yourself." Quinn instructed.

It didn't take long to feel it. He wasn't very bright, but when it came to fighting instincts, something like Qi was perfect for him, and he could feel it almost instantly.

Then, Quinn's hands were no longer touching his body.

"What was that?" Nate asked.

"I think you already got a feeling on how to use it yourself. Perhaps your years of studying martial arts have already allowed you to experience it, you just didn't know the name for it. That was Qi. Leo was the one to teach me. Just remember this feeling and practice it. Also, try to come up with a way of teaching others without doing what I just did."

"Otherwise, there is the risk that you might accidentally turn them." Quinn said.

At first, Nate thought it was a joke but realised that Quinn was completely serious when he said those last words. Quinn had wanted to teach those on board Qi for a long time, but the only way he had learnt it, was through feeling the process through his body, and that was the only way he had taught it to the other students at school as well.

The thing was, Quinn didn't know of a way to teach the others, and he didn't have the time to go around touching everyone.

'Nate, hopefully you will become a better teacher than I.' Quinn thought.

Suddenly, a meeting had been called as all of the cursed leaders were called to head to the command room.

When Quinn arrived along with Nate, he could see that most were already there, thankfully that included Eno as well, but his calm face from before looked to be more serious as he displayed a constant frown and his arms were folded.

Next, Sil entered with Borden on his shoulders into the room, and his walking was fast paced with excitement, meaning he had an idea of what this whole meeting was exactly about. As for the last ones to enter, they were Logan and Brock. It was strange to see the two of them together.

Quinn didn't even know when they had grown close and the strangest thing was actually the fact that Logan had wounds all over his body.

'What happened to him, did one of his inventions backfire or something? When was the last time I have seen him hurt this badly? Why didn't he go see a doctor?' Quinn wondered.

"Is the meeting going to start?" Dennis asked.

"Soon." Sam replied. "There is still one more person that needs to be here."

As the doors opened one more person walked in on his own, Shiro. He looked frightened as everyone stared at him, but when he saw Quinn, he tried to pretend to be confident and started walking over.

"It's good to see you again, and I have to thank you for accepting my request." Quinn greeted him.

Shiro looked over at Sil, and then back at Quinn. Before he had been a power hungry person, but now he had a debt to pay. These people had saved his life multiple times, and he just wanted to be by their side and help them.

The lives of Shiro and the others had changed at school after meeting Quinn, and he knew that as long as he helped the Cursed faction, everyone's lives would also change for the better.

"Okay, it's time that we talk about Blade Island." Sam announced.

---

Somewhere a great distance away, in the beast solar system, a man stood in a large hall. His large frame was covered in diamond like armour from head to toe as well as a helmet with slits to allow him to see through it.

The man turned around and looked at the large hall behind him. Inside there were around a hundred people. Every single one of them attached to a metal rod sticking out of the ground, chained up.

"We have prepared for long enough. I never thought that I would meet someone beyond me, but that is why we must continue on. No matter what we must get Sil back, and this time I will use the power of all the chained here!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1104: Changing the future

On the planet that never saw sunlight, preparations were being made. Ever since learning that Arthur would be coming for him eventually, Bryce had been more focused and determined than ever before.

Right now he was in the throne room while Kazz stood by his side.

'I did everything I could to finally obtain the King's seat. Others might just enjoy having fulfilled their grand ambition, grow lazy, while letting things play out until it would be time for their final rest, but how can I?' Bryce thought as he clenched his fist and the veins on his hand showed themselves.

'How can I give up, when the Punisher, that bastard responsible for killing my family, is still out there? Fortunately, I won't have to go out and find him, now that I know that he will be coming for me!'

Kazz couldn't hear what her father was thinking, she could only see him act restless, making her worry for him. However, over the years she had grown somewhat used to it. She was aware that around a certain time of year Bryce would act like that. At some point he would proceed to enter the room where the dreaded paintings were and come out more determined.

She was unsure whether he was going there to remind himself what he had achieved so far, or if there was a deeper meaning behind it. Whatever the case, what used to seldom occur, had become far more frequent in recent times.

Today was another such day and she no longer knew what was the right thing to do.

"Don't you think it will be beautiful?" Bryce asked as he started to walk forward. He suddenly stopped as the shadow of an item went over his face. "When Arthur comes back to exact his punishment, his very own powers will be used against him."

Stroking his hand over the wall in front of him, he could feel how smooth it felt. With how perfect it was, aside from a few missing pieces here and there, it was hard to believe that the wall used to be full of cracks.

"That kid must have taken part of the wall with him." Tempus said, moving from behind the wall. "Using my ability the whole thing should have returned to what it once was, but it doesn't seem to all be here."

Kazz didn't say anything. She was one of the people who had gone in with Quinn, but she had never expected her father to raid the Punisher's castle after his disappearance. When they found the wall, Kazz had never seen a creeper smile on her father's face before.

"Don't worry, it seems we have been able to decipher enough information from this to figure out a few things, bring them in, Kazz." Bryce ordered, and she quickly left the room.

A few moments later, she returned with three vampires, all of them looked tired, exhausted. Sweating nervously, they were afraid of what was going to happen to them.

"Your Majesty, I think you will be quite pleased with our results, today will be the day that we are able to show you something." One of the vampires said as he remained on the floor with his head bowed down.

"Are you sure this is a good thing, your Majesty?" Tempus questioned. "If they learn the ability, it also means that Arthur will be able to use them in some way as well."

"Show me what you have learnt." Bryce ordered, ignoring Tempus' warning.

The three stood up, and stayed in position for a short while. As they closed their eyes, soon the shadow underneath their feet started to move, and then it could be seen hovering over their back. Finally, weeks after discovering the tablet, it looked like they had learnt how to use the Shadow ability.

The tablet that had been left in the fourteenth castle, which showed one how to learn and use the Shadow ability, had been moved to the King's castle, and now Bryce had his first set of shadow users.

However, even though Tempus had agreed to help the king, he was unsure what the other was thinking. Why would he be creating his own shadow users? One of the main abilities of the Punishers were that they were able to travel to each other with their shadow as they wished,

He could only see this causing more trouble than what it was worth... that was until he saw the next set of actions from the King. He walked up to the three of them, and then placed both hands on the shoulder of the vampire centred in the middle.

"You three have done an excellent job, the vampire race will be proud of you, and your names shall be forever remembered." Bryce said, as a sudden blood spike appeared from Bryce's stomach piercing the other vampire's stomach.

At the same time, from his forearms two more blood spikes had come out, killing the other two vampires as well.

When Bryce let go of the one in the centre, he fell to the floor and a shadowy mist started to spring from their bodies.

"Vampires have existed for a long time, but we did not always have abilities." Bryce narrated as he carefully watched the smoke make its way towards him. He

then pulled out a clear transparent crystal and the mist started to enter into the crystal. Soon the clear colour started to fill up.

"The world is a complicated thing, and even we don't know all of its secrets." Bryce continued. "But it looks like the gods are on my side, and wish for me to achieve my goal. Kazz, bring me more people. We must gather and teach the shadow ability to as many people as possible."

However, even though her father had ordered it, she was frozen in fear. Was that her father's plan? Raise more shadow users, only to then kill more of his people? Sacrifice the lives of his own vampires just to store some strange shadow in a crystal?

She had seen him go too far at times but this was far beyond anything before.

'God's on your side, you say?' Tempus wondered.

After Bryce had learned that Arthur was coming, he had initially been struck with a bit of fear. Although he had the Absolute blood control from the book passed on by kings, whenever he thought back to the execution platform, and what Arthur had done, anger and fear were the two emotions that entered him at the time.

While stuck in his throne room, trying to clear his head, he had received a certain surprise visitor, one that smelt like a human, a strange thing in the Vampire World to say the least. Being able to make it to him without being stopped, was the best evidence that the girl was not normal.

"I won't waste your time by introducing myself, just know that I have come to help you." The girl had told him cryptically. "There is great trouble in your future and without help you will only fail. As such I have brought you a gift. The origins of the shadow will originally wish to return to the place where it came from."

The girl had pulled out the clear crystal, and placed it on the ground. In the few seconds Bryce's gaze had been on the crystal, she had already disappeared, leaving the Vampire King with an empty crystal and a ton of unanswered questions.

For a day or two, he had tried to ignore this mysterious meeting, but eventually the lack of any solution, as well as curiosity, got the better of him and he decided to verify how powerful the crystal was. Just from them using the shadow powers there was no such reaction, the crystal was on Bryce at all times, but then a sound, as if something was calling to him told him what he needed to. The test with the shadow users and crystal wasn't over yet.

Not too far away, the very person that Bryce was prepping for was thinking about him as well. He was sitting on top of a large building with the night sky, although there was another man behind him.

"We are meeting here again, I guess you have finished with your preparations and It looks like you have made your choice. It's time for you to move, isn't it" The man told him.

"I still couldn't find him, but he is definitely out there, but I can't keep looking. Indeed, there is no better time. But shouldn't you worry about your own side? It looks like to me things haven't gone the way you thought they would. I told you that you would have troubles with them. You shouldn't have underestimated them." Arthur replied with a cheeky grin.

"I hate to admit it, but you're right. Make sure to not repeat my mistake, I would hate to lose you. Who knows how strong they have gotten since we have been away." The man cautioned Arthur.

"Strong? No, the way I see it, they have just gotten weaker...well, maybe not all of them." Arthur corrected himself, as he stood up.

"Once everything is over, remember to keep your promise!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1105: Challenge for the seat

Arthur leaped off from the top of the tower and the next moment his body was covered in shadows.

'I disagree Arthur, although it might not look like it, but things are going perfectly at the moment. My initial plan had never accounted for the fact that you may ever wake up, so thanks to your presence everything will proceed far more smoothly than I could have ever hoped for. Vincent, if only you were still here to see everything your uncle is about to achieve."

The man behind Arthur was none other than Jim Eno, former leader of the tenth family, who not only disgraced himself, but also used his chance to redeem himself as a vampire knight to escape with the Dalki.

Left alone on top of the building, he started to smile to himself, before he broke out in laughter. His imagination had begun to run wild, dreaming about what the future would hold, but then anger struck him, and he punched through one of the wall's at the very top of the tower smashing it to pieces.

"The human's need to be gone, and then they will understand the mistake that they made. I just have to continue being patient, we still have plenty of time." Jim spoke to reassure himself.

Just as he was about to repair the tower, a large horn sounded throughout the entire place. Large speakers would echo it so it could be heard all over the ship like planet.

'They are at it again? It's truly amazing how quickly they have become a civilization with traditions of their own.' Jim thought. 'I should head on over and see for myself how powerful the newly evolved one is...'

---

The place most Dalki called home was a giant ship that had been repurposed to suit their needs. Just like its inhabitants it was constantly improving and had changed drastically once again. In the centre was an energy core that would power the large thing 'Ship' but it was large enough to be recognised as a small planet as well. It was something the humans had yet to see, always being on the defence.

By extracting the different lands from the beast planets that they had conquered, the Dalki had been able to create their own land. It made for different terrain throughout, but was nothing a Dalki couldn't handle.

On the outside, a large ring like tube made of what appeared to be a type of metal and extended tubes went directly through the land leading to the core, as well as to the large castle-like shape where the so-called Dalki leaders resided in.

Despite being called a 'castle', in actuality it was just a crude mountain top with a few towers built here and there. The Dalki didn't really care too much for architecture due to their beastly nature and had merely built the structures they had been told to. Most of the living areas had been made with the same materials that vampires had discovered to create. The black like hard substance that was equal to galthrium but harder to mold. The entire man made planet had mainly been created by two people, Jim Eno, and the Dalki known as Graham.

Standing outside the entrance to their castle, three Dalki could be seen walking out, all of them sharing looks of irritation. One was a female Dalki, with an extra long tail named Slicer, the other two were One Horn, and Graham.

"It appears another member of our race has evolved and wishes to join the table." Graham stated.

"Can't they at least stop obsessing over who is stronger at a time like this?!" One Horn openly grumbled.

"Oi, have you already forgotten who the idiot was who proposed the stupid rule that any of the leaders could be challenged at any point and time for their position?" Slicer criticized the former, as she wrapped her tail and rested it on top of her shoulder.

The three of them jumped up several meters into the air with their powerful legs, and each time they would land, they jumped again, covering great distance and moving fast, until eventually they landed in a deep giant crater away from their castle. It was in an empty red wasteland. It looked similar to an opening of a volcano with the way the edges were bent, yet it was on felt ground.

Once the three of them arrived, they could see that there was already another Dalki standing opposite them in the crater, and at the very edges up top, several Dalki had gathered to watch the spectacle that was about to occur.

The Dalki turned around proudly showing off the four spikes on his back.

"I have finally obtained my fourth spike! According to the rules, I have come to challenge one of you for the leader's position!" The Dalki announced, and the rest of the crowd watching above cheered as well.

The three Dalki leaders looked at each other to decide what was to happen next.

"It's up to you two." Graham shrugged his shoulders as he took a step back. "I have already made my stance clear about this entire thing being barbaric. I only agreed to it because it seems like the best method to cause the least amount of infighting as possible."

"Dred is no longer with us, so he needs to be replaced, and Green Horn has returned to us barely alive, so it would be good to test him to see if he can replace one of their positions."

"Fine, I'll deal with him." One Horn sighed, as he walked forward, but before he could take another step, a large tail blocked his path.

"Allow me to remind you that this is our home and I'm worried you will only destroy it even more. Have you forgotten who created this giant crater in the first place?" Slicer said as she walked forward.

As the Dalki saw who he was about to go up against, he wanted to make a complaint.

"Graham, I don't mean to challenge you, where are the others?" The Dalki complained, but before Graham could reply, Slicer was already coming towards him.

The Dalki was forced to defend himself. He went to throw in a punch, but it completely missed Slicer, and the next thing he knew was that he felt a sharp pain on his back.

"Oh, what's this? Didn't you say you had four spikes on your back? Why can I only see three then?" Slicer asked, as she brought the other spike to her hand with her tail.

The crowd who had been cheering from above had started to disperse as soon as they saw who had come forward. They were already making their way back to return to what they had been doing before.

As the four spiked Dalki took a step again, Slicer jumped up in the air, doing a backflip, and her large tail went out ward hitting the Dalki from between his legs, all the way up to his head. The hard Dalki skin was unable to do anything as he was sliced in half by her tail.

"You were meant to keep him alive! How do you suppose we can fill in our rank if you test them like this?" Graham complained as he sighed about the loss of life.

"We don't need such weaklings who can't even touch me. Since they managed to defeat Dread, he would not have fared any better." Slicer explained herself, as she walked off, displaying the five spikes on her back.

'Even if he wasn't as strong as Dred, that doesn't mean he couldn't have been useful in other ways. Everything we are doing is just for the sake of us being able to continue living, yet there you go killing him for nothing. Slicer, with Dalki like you around, it's no wonder the humans wish to get rid of every single one of us.' Graham thought bitterly.

"It seems like Slicer is tired of playing games, let's send her out to make the next move."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1106: A detour

A banging headache was the first thing she felt, and then pain rushed through her body until it eventually disappeared. However, the thing that caused Erin to finally open her eyes was the smell of something burning, as the scent wafted into her nose.

All she could see was a brown ceiling wall with the light shining in from one direction. No, the ceiling was bumpy and the ground was hard. She tried to get up, but as soon as she moved she heard the sound of chains rattling by her side and she felt the heavy weight on both of her arms.

'The chain is on both of my arms now?' Erin wondered, as she looked to her left and right and could see that they had reached the top of her shoulders. Before she could only remember them being on one arm, and she wasn't even sure how there were enough of the chains to wrap around both of them.

Looking ahead, she was happy to see the person who would be able to answer everything. Leo was sitting by a fire he had made, and was in the middle of roasting a few fish over it. That's when she noticed the two of them appeared to be in a cave of all things with a nice lake seen in the distance.

"Looks like you're finally awake. I thought you might be hungry as you've been asleep for a few days now." Leo informed her. "No need to hold back, as you know I don't really eat this type of thing. Oh and if you're wondering about the chains, I had always carried around a spare with me just in case it got up to this point."

Hearing Leo's words, she was still confused about how they had gotten here or where exactly 'here' was. Her head was still hurting, but slowly images started to flash into her head.

She saw the four spiked Dalki, and herself getting hit. That was pretty much the last thing she could barely remember. At the time she hadn't been in control anymore, but she had somehow retained the memories. Looking at them felt like she was seeing a doppelgänger act, but she knew that this had to have been her.

"I...I tried to hurt you." Erin said, her voice croaking a little. These words were painful for her to say. Leo had always tried to help her, yet she had only gotten in his way and she could only blame her own weakness.

"No one has died, and as you can say I'm. There's no need for you to shed a tear for me. You might have tried to hurt me, but ultimately you failed. Perhaps it means I didn't train you hard enough." Leo chided her playfully.

Erin's body was fine, she didn't experience any difficulties moving it. In fact, after a while she realised that she could move it now even better than before. That wasn't

all, she also noticed plenty of other things. The power in her body had increased, but at the same time they were being drained.

'Did I hit a breakthrough, when I took off those chains? Or was it after I got hit by the Dalki?' Erin started to wonder. The conclusion she eventually reached was that her body hadn't simply improved but that she herself was slightly different. She had spent enough time with the vampires she had trained before to understand that she had undergone an evolution.

In the past she would have been happy about something like this, after all this was the fastest way to grow stronger, and she was sure that this evolution would allow her to do some things she might have been unable to before, but a fear had taken over her, as she thought about this, the words of another.

'That girl, she said that I would become 'chaos'.' Erin repeated in her head. 'If I keep getting stronger without learning how to control this power then the thing happened to Leo... what if I attack the others as well? What if it hadn't been Leo but Nate, Sam or even Layla with me?'

These disastrous thoughts of hers were filling up in her head, spoiling her appetite to the point that she was unable to even eat the fish that had been cooked for her. Of course this didn't go unnoticed by Leo at all.

"Erin, without your intervention we would probably be dead by now. You saved me, that stranger and countless others. You were fast, skilled and calm during the first half of the fight."

"At the time, your body must have been urging you to go after me, but instead you focused on the Dalki and did great. I believe you will be able to control the powers inside of you. Back then you were just unlucky enough to become unconscious from your injury, allowing your instincts to take over." Leo explained. "The person who attacked me wasn't the real Erin."

She appreciated what Leo was trying to do, but for some reason it just made her feel even more guilty. "What if it gets worse? We know that if a vampire consumes too much blood they can become one of those monstrous Bloodsuckers. Maybe I'm the same. What happens when it isn't enough?!" Erin questioned Leo as she stood up. Surprisingly, she felt the chains falling off her as well.

"What are you doing?!" Erin couldn't believe that Leo would release them like this.

"Can you feel it? The only way to fight your fear is to face it head on! You can't allow it to take over you. Do you think I'm frightened of you?! You are far too young to be worrying about me!" Leo shouted back and soon Erin swung her blade towards him and a large splash of yellow energy came out.

Jumping out of the cave they were in, Leo struck the slash with his own power, deflecting it into the air, and making it so it hit nothing.

Erin was huffing and panting, and she slowly walked out. With his ability, he could see the struggle she was facing, this strange energy that wanted to constantly lash out at him, while the girl on the inside was trying to suppress it.

'It's strange... this isn't a lust for blood like other vampires have, and when I attempted to give her vampire blood it did nothing for her. Is it a lust to kill?' Leo worried about that possibility. 'The best course of action seems to be to allow her to slowly adjust herself to this feeling, so she learns how to control the urge.'

'The way she currently is, it's too dangerous to bring her back on the Cursed ship. How can I help her control it without allowing her to kill enough vampires until she's satisfied?' Leo thought.

He kept his distance from her as he waited and then when the energy seemed to get too much, and her consciousness seemed to be slipping, he immediately dashed in, and ran straight past her, picking up the chains, and wrapping it around both of her arms again.

Soon, the power within her was dwindling down again, and Leo was left with an exhausted Erin. "You did well, have a rest and I will decide what to do."

Back in the cave, Leo finally came to a tough decision of what they needed to do, but he still wasn't sure if it was the right thing or not.

'There are plenty of bad people in the world, and there are also bad vampires that have attempted to kill us. Perhaps, the only thing we can do is head back to that place... where you will be surrounded by them. Quinn, I wish I could help you, but I fear if I don't do something about Erin now, that she will be a far bigger problem in the future.' Leo pondered over whether or not he should inform Quinn about his choice.

He played with a Demi-god tier crystal that was in his hand, gifted to him by a certain someone. It looked like it had been slipped in and given to him at some point.

'My preparations for meeting your master will have to be put on hold, first, some preparations are in order.'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1107: A stronger Qi inside

In the command centre of the Cursed ship, all the leaders of the Cursed faction were present. Sam had just stated that he would be talking about what the Cursed group would be doing next, their journey to Blade Island.

"I'm going to explain everything from the beginning, just so everyone is clear why we are doing what we are doing and so we are all on the same wavelength." Sam stated. "After all, as leaders of the Cursed faction it is important for all of us to know what's happening just in case we need to support each other, and so none of us feel like the others are slacking in their areas."

"At the same time we have a new guest that also needs to be briefed on everything." Sam explained looking towards Shiro with a smile. He had been told a few small details, but through messages alone it was hard for him to understand everything that was happening.

"Blade Island is owned by the Blade family. For those who aren't aware, the Blade family is a strong family that has been controlling the Big Four families from behind the scenes for years. Each one of them has the ability to copy other abilities, and if you haven't guessed by now, Sil is also a member of that family."

Some of this was quite shocking for the others to learn, that there really was a family that was stronger than the Big Four. How had they managed to keep it a secret for so long? However, some things were also starting to make sense to them now. The way people acted once they had learned of Sil's power and discovered his last name.

"As you probably have guessed since Sil is with us, they don't particularly get along, and the Blades aren't the nicest of people. They have abused their strength, and for whatever reason they didn't even help in the first Dalki war."

"The main person to watch out for is Hilton Blade, the leader of the Blade family. Thankfully, we have learnt from Brock that they are no longer on the island. This means we should be able to complete two of our objectives easier than originally planned." Sam pointed to Shiro, signalling him to stand up. He shot up straight away, nervous as all the eyes were on him.

Usually, when one would join a large faction they would do simple tasks and work their way up, but for Shiro' first mission, he had practically been thrown into what looked like a very important mission.

"The first part of our task is to head to the giant stone tablet where Eno will see if the tablet contains the ability we are looking for and pass it onto Shiro as agreed." There was a slight pause as Sam was waiting for Eno to raise a complaint, yet the old man did no such thing. After all, this was one of the options Eno himself had presented.

"With that, there is a second part of the task, and that is to use Sil and his ability to try and tame the Demon tier beast and move it."

Hearing those words, Shiro spun his head around and looked at Sam, his whole body shaking.

"Di- Di- Did you just say- say a Demon tier beast?!" Shiro stuttered and felt like he was about to collapse. He was someone who had no such ability, and could barely fight Intermediate beasts, and now he was meant to confront a Demon tier beast.

"I have to add that moving the Demon tier beast may not be an easy task." Brock interjected. "If Sil's ability is enough then perhaps there will be no need for us to do anything. However, if it rejects or wishes to fight, then we will have no other choice but to weaken it for Sil's ability to work."

"Although Hilston was able to control the beast, he has what he calls the 'Chained' with him, and it appears he has evacuated them all off the island. Most of the high level ability users who are here, Sil can not copy their ability from. It would be great if we could call Oscar or Owen for Sil to touch, but they are doing their own thing, and if possible we would like to refrain from letting them know where the Demon tier beast is."

This was something Quinn hadn't thought of, it meant that they would need to take six humans along with them, for Sil to copy their abilities from, adding more risk to the mission.

"As long as I can place them in the Shadow lock, they should be fine, and if the Blades aren't there the only thing we have to worry about is the Demon tier beast. Well I say 'only', but that's still a big thing to worry about." Quinn said.

"Which moves us on to the next point, for who you wish to bring along, I believe that Nate is already busy teaching the others. I have sent a message to Helen, and asked her to come along since we will need her to give Sil a boost while leaving her two sisters in charge." Sam said.

"Is there anyone who wants to come?" Quinn asked, looking for a show of hands, but nearly everyone had raised their hand. As usual most of the Cursed leaders were fearless, and Shiro looked at this just through one thing.

'These people are so awesome!'

Knowing what they were about to go into, many would have backed out, but for some reason, all this group trusted and relied on each other. This was what Shiro was looking for, and he didn't even know it before. In the past all he had cared about was power, but why did he need that power in the first place?

Brock, Eno, Sil and Shiro were already a given since they had to come. When Quinn looked around the room, he was trying to think of who would be suitable for the task. Last time the group he had brought along with him had been a great help.

"The names I say will be coming along with us." Quinn said after making a decision. "Richard, Brock, Sil, Shiro, Fex, Logan and Borden. Helen will be joining us as well." Quinn said as his final choices.

"Peter, I know you are strong but that's why I want you to remain behind and continue to look after the Blade kids. I'm worried that while we don't know where the Blade members are they might come out and attack us at any point and time." Quinn explained.

Of course, Peter wasn't delighted hearing he wasn't allowed to come along, but he couldn't exactly go against Quinn's orders.

When facing a Demon tier beast, large forces were never a good idea, least of all with this type of Demon tier beast. Quinn was worried that a similar situation that had happened to Owen could happen to the Cursed faction as well. Sam was right, even with his ability to travel to their side instantly, now situations were starting to arise where he had to be in two places at once, and that was impossible. He had to rely on the people around him.

"Please remember that we have to wait for one more." Eno finally spoke. "She has still yet to arrive, but I assure you she is on her way. Aren't you also waiting for more candidates to come?"

Quinn had almost forgotten about it, but to use Sil's ability they would need Mona.

'With Mona coming, then that's one last person that we need to find for Sil. I chose Logan because he's a high level ability user, I don't plan to use him much for the fighting side of things. With Helen as well, that's three abilities that Sil can copy from."

"Sam, will try to find three more members with a high level ability for Sil to copy, in the meantime we will wait for Mona and Helen to arrive. With this the meeting is over." Quinn announced and everyone was ready to get up to head their separate ways.

Just as Quinn was about to leave the meeting room though, he felt someone strongly grab his hand and yanked him away.

"What are you doing, why didn't you pick me?!" Layla asked him directly, the anger in her voice apparent. "It's one thing for you to avoid me ever since, but now you don't even consider me for such an important mission?"

It was then that Quinn noticed that touching each other didn't give them the headaches that they had before. Perhaps it was something to do with the feelings he

had felt at the time. Which made him wonder internally what his feelings were for Layla if they weren't constantly going off, or maybe he just had too much on his mind at the moment.

"Layla, this is a Demon tier beast, and the Blade Island. You weren't there last time, but I was nearly killed. We all almost died." Quinn stressed the seriousness of the situation.

"But it was okay to take me to hunt with you for the other Demon tier? You're not making any sense right now. Why are they so intent on avoiding me?" Layla pressed him for an answer. At the moment, she was filled with anger. She hadn't worked this hard, come this far, just to be chucked to the side, and forgotten about.

While feeling her hand on him, Quinn noticed that her grip was incredibly strong, stronger than usual. Layla's vampire subclass shouldn't grant her extreme strength... not unless she had evolved into her second form, so what was powering her at this moment?

"Do you mind if I take a look at you?" Quinn asked and Layla started to blush. She wanted to let go, but Quinn held her hand tightly and closed his eyes.

'What is this in her body? How does she have such a strong Qi? It seems to be even bigger than mine.'

According to Layla she had never learned how to use Qi from Pure, she had never reached the ranks to be taught it in the first place. There was only one explanation how she could have such a large Qi capacity then.

'I knew that her mother had passed Layla her Qi, but I was sure that it would fade away once she healed and time went on, but this is still as strong as ever! If Layla actually learned to use Qi, she could be as strong as her mother, perhaps even stronger due to her vampire powers.' Quinn concluded as he smiled.

"Alright Layla, I will permit you to accompany us, but only if you manage to learn something before it's time for us to leave." Quinn offered.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1108: Two heads collide

Quinn wasn't a master of Qi, nor did he understand all the things it could do. He was even unaware of how Lucy, Layla's mother, had been able to give up her own life to heal Layla at that time. He had been sure that all the effects on Layla would only be temporary.

However, since it hadn't disappeared after all this time, it should be safe to assume that it would stay with Layla. Additionally, since she had never trained her own Qi apart from what little she had done with Leo, there should be room for her to improve. From what Quinn had heard, Leo had said that she was a slow learner.

Even with him using all his knowledge, it would have taken her half a year to show any type of results. Which was why Quinn had set up a test, a test for her to fail.

Right now, checking her, it looked like the Qi vessel was ready to burst at any second.

With this new knowledge, and knowing how frustrated Layla would be if left behind, Quinn stipulated this condition to allow her to accompany them to Blade Island.

She was to go find Nate, and learn how to use Qi with him. To see if maybe a second teacher would fare any better. If before it was time to leave, she could learn how to use Qi to a degree where it would be useful and strengthen her attacks to a certain level, then she should be able to take care of herself on the island.

'I didn't take you for such a cruel person.' Vincent commented, after Quinn had presented Layla with a new goal. She had immediately accepted it and before he could ever say anything she had rushed off to Nate.

'How is this cruel, if I simply don't wish for her to get hurt? I might be unsure what exactly I feel for her, but there is one thing that's crystal clear. I don't want to lose her.' Quinn defended his actions. 'I know Qi can take a long time for some people to learn, but there's still a chance and she has tried before. With her mother's power inside her, it might even cause us to have another Cursed monster on our team. We will just have to see how she does.'

Left alone, Quinn decided to head off and look for Sil. He was wondering what state of mind he was currently in. He had seemed mostly fine during the Demon tier hunting expedition, but with them soon returning to his birthplace it would be normal for him to be nervous or feel all sorts of emotions.

Quinn headed to the school area on the Cursed ship, a frequent place for Sil to relax at, due to him getting along with the other kids from Blade Island. Before he turned around the corner, Quinn happened to overhear a conversation.

"I just want to say... thank you, Shiro." Sil said. "That ability will help me bring back my friends."

"Please, you don't have to be like this, Sil." Shiro replied, sounding nervous like he didn't know how to react. "I'm just happy to help anyway I can. You know the second they said it was to help you out, I agreed in a heartbeat."

"You saved me back then. If I had gone too far....I don't know what would have happened to me, but your words, everything you said and everything you did has made me who I am now. So no matter what, I will do everything in my power to help you get your friends back! Afterwards... Maybe I can also become friends with them."

Hearing this, gave Quinn a bit of peace. Sil seemed to be as calm as ever and even thanked Shiro first. Something that Quinn had never expected from a child like Sil. It seemed that knowing that Vorden and Raten were coming back would please him, although this was only the first step.

Even if Shiro did get the ability, they still needed bodies for the two of them, and Quinn didn't want to use the so-called clones that Eno would create. That would be a temporary fix to the whole solution, if anything. They needed Shiro to learn the ability so they could rely on Eno less, but it was impossible to completely not rely on him.

From the sounds of it, Shiro and Sil were about to take a tour of the ship and with Quinn's worries settled, he could go off to do his own thing. As he walked around the ship, he heard the announcement that the docking bay for the spaceships was opening up.

"Someone arrived?"

Knowing this, he thought it would be best for him to also make his way and meet them there, and along the way, he bumped into Brock and Eno.

"Quinn, I have to say so far things have been going very smoothly for you, but that's because it seems that Jim and the Dalki are completely unaware of you." Eno said as they continued to walk.

"At the moment, the Cursed faction is just another group that Jim has to worry about, but once he learns the truth of your identity and the reaction you have to all of us, I'm sure you will become a bigger target than anyone else. I just hope you're ready for that."

However, Quinn didn't feel the need for it to be mentioned, he was already preparing for the Dalki or Jim to come after him at any second. Especially since it seemed like there was a chance that they already knew about Blade Island.

When they arrived at the docking bay, Quinn could see that the guests had already exited from their ship, and he could smell it instantly as they walked off, four vampires were guarding a female in the centre, who was dressed in dark clothing and had a large pointy hat on top of her head. It was Mona.

'So there are vampires working for Richard, after all... but just how many people does he have under him?' Quinn wondered.

"Have you forgotten that I told you that I had eyes and ears in all sorts of different places? You didn't think all of my work was just done by me and Brock. However, don't worry, nearly all of them are just clones of myself, with the transformation ability. Allowing them to change their appearance at will."

"It would be creepy if I just saw myself this whole time."

Quinn understood the logic behind that, but if 'nearly' all the vampires that worked for Richard were clones, who was Brock?

"Who is, Brock?" Quinn asked, not being shy about the question.

"Oh I thought you would never ask, Brock here is an ex Royal Knight. He was my Royal knight during my time of becoming king, and he had helped me a great deal throughout the times. Of course, he used to have a different ability but I changed it to help us more with our situation."

"Changed it? Like with Truedream's ability." Quinn asked, since Richard appeared to be in a sharing mood.

"Not quite, as you know we have already talked about the tablet more than once. It is a special thing, more so than you know, and it can do amazing things." Eno explained, as they continued to walk forward.

Quinn already knew that the tablet was indeed special. He had read all about it in Arthur's journal who had been obsessed about it at one point. That the probability that all the abilities that were currently in existence had originated from there.

"Finally, it looks like I'm out of that place. I never thought you would let me leave." Mona said when she looked at Richard and Brock, then she finally laid her eyes on Quinn.

"I'm surprised you are involved in all of this." Mona said.

He was unsure how much exactly Mona knew, did she know Richard Eno and the others were vampires, what they had planned to do, or was there something else. Through a brief conversation while he was escorting her on her way to Sam, he found out that Mona had been brought up to speed.

She didn't know anything about vampires yet, just that the man who had saved her from Hilston, was Richard Eno, the great scientist, which was why she didn't fear for her life and felt indebted towards him.

When she asked about his relationship to Richard Eno, Quinn claimed that he was his grandfather, the only reasonable thing he could say, and she was starting to get a better picture of everything. The details of what they were about to do, and why they needed to do so were also shared with Mona, and once this was all done, she would stay by Richard's side, at least until the war was over and done with.

"That damn Hilston, that kid has one crazy grandfather!" Mona said, referring to Sil. "I can't believe what he did, but it sounds like he at least got some sort of payback from you guys. I just hope we don't run into him again."

Quinn also hoped the same, but he knew that they would have to face him eventually. The best thing to hope for was that it wouldn't happen right now. It felt silly to worry about a human, of all things when they were in the middle of a war with the Dalki.

With Mona now here, there was only one person left that they needed to wait for and that was Helen, which meant they didn't have a lot of time before they were to head off. A short while later Helen finally arrived.

Once again, Quinn had gone to greet Helen as she had gotten off from her ship.

"I'm thankful that you have managed to come here, on top of all your duties." Quinn said.

"Don't be silly." Helen replied. "You're my leader and future husband, after all. I'm not just going to be one of those wives that just sit back and let others do all that work. Whenever you need me, of course I'll be there."

As usual, Helen was quite headstrong and upfront, and it was a type of personality that Quinn didn't mind, but just didn't really know how to deal with. Now that Helen was here, it meant everyone was there to embark on their Blade Island trip.

It hadn't been long since Sam's announcement had passed, perhaps eight or so hours had passed, but Quinn had no choice.

"Do you mind if we make a stop?" Quinn asked, as they took a detour and Quinn headed to one of the training rooms, where Nate and Layla were both in. As soon as the door was heard sliding open.

Layla could see Quinn, and Helen by his side. Seeing this, Layla stormed forward forgetting what she was doing, and headed towards the both of them, before stopping directly in front of Helen.

"You." Layla pointed at the woman. "I challenge you to a duel and the loser will have to submit to one request from the winner!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1109: Battle for Romeo

Everyone who was needed for the Blade Island mission was now present, so Quinn had gone to the training room to see whether by some miracle Layla had learned how to use Qi. However, he had never expected her to completely ignore him, instead storming right up to Helen and challenging her to a duel like that.

'Layla has never been this confrontational in the past, she is usually quite the calm and chilled girl. Just what's gotten into her?' Quinn wondered.

Noticing the puzzled look on Quinn's face, Nate moved over to where Quinn was and pulled him back away a little from the invisible sparks that everyone could feel between the two girls. Everyone who had been training just moments ago, stopped after hearing Layla's loud challenge.

"You look like you don't have a clue what you've just done, do you?" Nate asked Quinn in a hushed tone.

"What do you mean?" Quinn whispered back.

"Honestly Quinn, how can you be that dense? It doesn't take a genius to see that Layla obviously has had feelings for you for a long time, but we were all there when Helen declared that she wanted to go out with you. So what do you think Layla feels towards Helen?"

"By bringing her here, you've just added oil to the fire and now you have two gorgeous and perfect girls fighting over you! Well, Romeo, you should have decided which one to pick." Nate explained as he punched Quinn on the arm hard.

Just like any single guy, it was hard for Nate to keep his pent up frustrations under check when seeing that the girls who had feelings for his friend were even ready to fight for him. Besides, if anyone could take a hit, then it would be Quinn.

After staring at each other for a few seconds, Helen turned away to look at Quinn, who didn't know how to deal with the situation, before she turned back at Layla smiling.

"Hmph, I can already guess what you want me to do if you win. Fine, I accept the duel." Helen declared.

At this point, Quinn couldn't imagine a worse outcome for this situation. No matter who won, he would be the one who would need to deal with the aftermath. However, before he could do anything about it, everyone else had moved aside. Meanwhile Nate, continued to drag Quinn away letting the two girls conclude their business without him.

Helen stood on one side while Layla stood on the other as well.

"I don't want to bully you, so this is your last chance to back out." Helen offered.  
"My Daisy faction used to be one of the strongest factions before we were taken over." She was confident in her words.

"I have been with the Cursed faction for a long while, the very group that took over and beat your Daisy faction!" Layla snapped back, as she checked her bow.

"Easy there ladies, we're all friends here. It looks like you might need a little ref to settle your differences. Since I can't afford to see you two girls get hurt, It will have to be me." Nate decided as he stepped forward, and raised both of his arms.

"Before you begin, here are some basic ground rules. No strikes at the other's head or heart area. The match is over when one of you surrenders or I declare that they can no longer continue." Nate stated.

"Agreed." Both of them nodded.

"Begin!" Nate shouted as he swung both arms down, and quickly went back to where Quinn and the others were up against the wall.

"So, who do you think is going to win?" Nate asked, as Layla placed five arrows into her bow, and was pressing to fire them off, while Helen threw several seeds on the ground which immediately sprouted into the deadly plants that would fire off spikes.

"Or perhaps I should ask who would you prefer to win?" Nate asked with a cheeky grin. He didn't even try to hide the fact that he was enjoying every single bit of the situation. He felt like Quinn deserved this, being the playboy he was without realising it.

"If I had to answer honestly, I see no way for Layla to be winning this. Even Peter had struggled when we fought against Helen." Quinn answered, not letting Nate's teasing get to him.

"Oh really? Well, I think you might be in for a surprise then." Nate said, as he looked towards a part of the wall. Quinn followed his gaze and found several cracks on the wall, with small holes in them as well.

'Layla's telekinesis ability was never strong enough to accomplish something like that, She also doesn't have the best beast equipment on either. Could it actually be that she managed to learn how to use Qi in such a short amount of time?!'

He briefly recalled that Leo had once tried to teach Layla the basics of Qi, but according to him, Layla's aptitude for it had been frankly horrible. She had been an extremely slow learner and even his best estimate had been that she would need at least half a year of intense training before she might be able to learn the first stage of it.

Under his tutelage she had constantly tried, but she just didn't seem suited for it. It also had not helped that Erin had quickly shown off her own talent in that regard, further crushing Layla's ego.

As Layla's fingers let go of the arrows, moving after what anyone had expected, they started to spin and the top of them were infused with great power. The flowers shot out their spikes trying to hit the arrows but when the two collided there was a clear difference in which was stronger, and the arrows continued going forward piercing right through the stems causing them to shrivel.

Even then, the arrows continued as they went and hit the wall behind them, but a single one had changed direction and was going straight for Helen.

"You have some fire in you I see!" Helen praised her, as she pulled out her whip, and snapped it, hitting the arrow by the wooden part, breaking it in half. Her whip was fast enough and strong enough to destroy the arrows without hitting the sharp head.

Something that if Layla wanted to win, she had to figure out how to get past. Soon, she started to run but it was at her usual speed. She didn't slow down, and continued to pull the arrows firing them.

'My best bet is to confuse her. I need to concentrate and use my ability at the same time, but it's hard to do that while also focusing on the fight. Is this what you've been doing all this time, Quinn?' Layla thought.

The thought only continued to spur her on, as she saw Helen, snapping all the arrows in place, and planting seeds at the same time.

"How was she able to learn to use Qi so fast? It doesn't look like she can use it throughout her body yet, otherwise she would be able to move faster, but she's able to transfer it from her fingertips into the arrow? This should only be possible with the second stage Qi, rather than the first."

Was it really possible to outright skip an entire stage without any mastery in Qi?

"Look at her fingers. You should also be able to smell it." Nate pointed out.

Sniffing, Quinn could certainly smell something, blood. It wasn't human blood either. When looking at the training room floor, he could see small drops of blood around the place, and he then noticed the state of Layla's fingers. They were heavily bleeding, each time she pulled the string on the bow.

"That my friend, is the power of love, REAL LOVE. For someone to go that far... She must have never stopped. She seems to know that she doesn't have talent in this area, but there is one thing she certainly isn't lacking. Determination. Ever since

coming here, she hasn't stopped pulling that string, and firing those arrows. She would constantly ask me for pointers, time and time again."

"I didn't understand why she was so desperate, but now I think I understand. Some idiot must have said something to her without thinking about it and now she has to prove herself." Nate commented, as the fight continued on.

The arrows were still moving at a great speed, and they were coming out as fast as ever, but the pain on her fingertips was growing, and her accuracy was starting to take a toll. It might have been different if Layla had taken a break before the fight, but after nearly half a day of training her concentration was waning.

Unlike other abilities, the telekinesis ability was one that took huge amounts of concentration, especially to move around as many arrows as she was doing.

"Don't think all I can do is stay still!" Helen shouted, as she dashed forward, running past the arrows and hitting the ones in front with her whip. They were destroyed in seconds, but there were still more coming from behind.

With the beast gear on, Helen's speed was greater than Layla's and throwing out her whip, she tangled the other's leg and pulled to drag the body forward.

"I win, little girl." Helen said as she stood in front of Layla.

However, Layla wasn't done yet. The arrows from behind were still coming towards Helen. As they inched closer, a wall of vines were raised. Although the arrows hadn't stopped, they had been slowed down.

Helen had already grabbed Layla by the neck with her other hand, lifting her and using her own body to stop the arrows. From the looks of it Layla still wanted to control the arrows, so Helen put some slight pressure on her throat, making the other stop her feeble resistance.

Before the situation could escalate any further Nate came forward and declared Helen to be the winner. The next moment, Helen let go of her.

From the look in Layla's eyes, Quinn could see how disappointed she was in herself, but he was extremely proud of seeing her improve to this degree.

'Layla, you shouldn't be sad that you lost. You managed to fight to this degree without being able to properly use Qi, and you also didn't use any of your vampire powers or take on your other forms. Although Helen didn't use her soul ability either, if the two of you had truly gone all out, with a little bit more time of training, it's hard to say who would have won that fight.'

"I'll think of what I want you to do some other time." Helen said as she walked off.

Layla felt frustrated. She had finally felt as if she had made a breakthrough with her powers, but the result spoke for itself.

'Everyone around me is improving so fast, but me....'

Just when Quinn was ready to go up and console her, a certain alarm was heard through the ship.

"Everyone, World Leader Oscar has an important message to announce. Please stop whatever you're doing and listen closely. The World Leader has an important and urgent message to announce."

In every room on the Cursed ship, large hologram screens appeared and Oscar was there from the chest up with a serious look on his face.

"I hope everyone is doing okay. You all must be worried about the Dalki attack, but at the moment I have come to share an important message and warning with you all. News should have already spread of what has recently happened to the Graylash family. We have made the decision to make everyone aware of what exactly has been going on."

Hearing these words, Sam and Quinn already knew what this message was going to be about. Oscar was going to inform the world about the existence of Vampires.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1110: Everyone knows

At this time, Oscar's message was being played for all of humanity to see. Wherever there was a faction base, a spaceship out far in the sticks, or even if you were currently in the school toilet. If one didn't have a screen ready where they were, then one would appear from their watch, and if they didn't even have that, then it was still impossible to miss the message since it was being played over intercoms everywhere.

'Why does he have to send out this message now of all times?' Sam thought as soon as he heard the introduction. 'I was hoping for Quinn and the others to be gone by then, and I was going to explain everything to the faction myself in the meantime. Now it's going to look like we were trying to hide it from our own people.'

Whether they liked it or not, they were about to be thrown into a rollercoaster of a situation and there was nothing they could do to stop it.

"As if the war with the Dalki was not enough of a problem, a certain group of people have decided to make use of this chaos for their own nefarious goals." Oscar continued. "This is an important message to everyone out there, as before we had believed that the Dalki were our only enemy, yet those people have actively allied with them! In a time like this we should have been able to unite and fight together for the sake of humanity!"

Although this message had already spread amongst those in the military and those fighting, the general public didn't yet know about any of this, and it was already starting to worry them as they looked at each other.

"We have come to learn that these people aren't exactly the same as us. They may look like us, act like us, use abilities like us and they have even been living peacefully amongst us for at least the last few years. We refer to these people as the 'V'. So far, we have only discovered a few things about them. At the moment, there does not seem to be a surefire way to tell them apart from us under normal circumstances, only when they use their powers. Their eyes start to glow red, allowing them to use a special red aura which grants them access to their weird powers."

With this information, people on the Cursed ship were starting to suspect something was up. Helen's head immediately turned towards Quinn. It was no longer a secret that he had used certain red aura powers to fight off against the Dalki in the war.

"The reason why we are telling you all of this is because recently our own groups have suffered multiple attacks from people who they had been certain they could trust. Perhaps if they had known a bit more they would have been able to avoid the outcome that has happened so far. We want everyone to be wary as the V have a

way to convert others into one of their ranks and some of them also seem to be able to control others actions to a certain degree."

"I understand that this news comes as a shock to everyone, but we have to stay strong, now more than ever, and all of you deserve to know the truth of who we are facing! Although it won't work on every V, we know that some of them have a strong reaction to blood. If there is someone that you feel is suspicious or you don't trust then I suggest a little test, but this is still not a sure way to deal with the problem."

"Lastly, I want to inform everyone that the V are not a unified force and have split into at least two groups. Just like they are those who have allied with the Dalki, the other group has come forward in their wish to help us in the fight against the Dalki! The latter group are those that are part of the Cursed faction. Their help so far has been enormous and they intend to use their extraordinary powers to continue to help us fight out there!"

"Please everyone, stay safe, and stay on guard!"

For a brief second, it felt like on the whole of the Cursed ship there was silence between everyone, and even where Quinn was there was no sound at all.

In the command room, Sam was banging his fist on the table.

"Oscar I understand your situation, but did you really have to do it like that?!" Sam shouted. "How is the human race supposed to stay calm when they don't know who to trust? The way you explained it, the main finger and all questions will now be pointed towards us!"

Soon, talk started amongst those on the Cursed ship.

"Hey, you're not a V, like what they said, right?" A member asked his buddy.

"No, I'm not, are you?" The other questioned back, only for the former to shake his head. "But didn't he say that the Cursed faction had Vs? What do you think he meant by talking about blood, betrayal? This doesn't make sense."

On the Cursed faction ship, the general consensus was confusion and for Quinn, he was left in a training room with all eyes on him.

"If I was to guess, V is just a codename that would stand for vampire." Helen stated her own thoughts on the matter. "Beings that react to blood, wield a strange red aura and have powers on top of their ability."

These statements were clearly being directed towards Quinn, and he could hear the heartbeats of all those who had not been turned, beating rapidly, a sign that they were frightened by this possibility.

"React to blood, what do they mean by that, and is the leader one of them?" One of the trainees whispered to another.

"Look at him standing there, he's not saying anything to deny it, so he has to be one." Her friend whispered back.

"Shut up! All of you!" Nate ordered, as he went to stand by Quinn's side. "So what if we are humans, vampires or werewolves for all you care?! In the end, shouldn't it matter what actions we have done? Have you already forgotten what we had to go through to save you all?! Not only did we bring you and your families here, we shared our home and our food with you, made sure to protect you and even helped you all grow stronger, but suddenly because of some message you started to doubt us?!"

"Fine, whoever feels that we don't deserve their trust, get out and leave this place!" Nate now shouted in a furious tone, making all of the trainees and even Helen drop their heads in embarrassment and shame.

"Come on Nate, it's not like that! How are we supposed to react after hearing such news? We just know that the Graylash family got attacked by one of their own and now suddenly we have to come to terms that the same type of people are hidden amongst us! We're just scared." One of the braver trainees defended their actions.

Meanwhile, Sam went around to get a picture of what the general thoughts were after everyone had heard the message. Just as he had suspected the hushed comments weren't really in their favor. The people talked about another race of people that they had never known about, and some others had already figured out that the codename V was just a substitute for the myth known as vampires.

They wondered if those of the Cursed faction might actually be working with the Dalki to secretly take them, and how could they trust each other now. How could they trust that the Cursed faction were really on their side and weren't planning on turning on them eventually.

'I knew something like this was going to happen!' Sam thought, his fists tightened in fury. 'We'll be lucky if even half of our own faction continues to trust us for not having come out ourselves earlier.'

A few seconds later and all the screens that had turned off seconds ago, all lit up once again, this time the one that could be seen was none other than Owen. As World Leaders, they were able to send out an emergency message like this whenever they wished.

So even though Owen was nowhere near Oscar at the time, he could still send out a message to everyone, and it looked like he was in the Graylash base.

"Greetings, everyone. I wouldn't be surprised if a lot of you are currently frightened after hearing what has happened and learning of the existence of a new race.

Personally, I don't know why they decided on the stupid name V, so let's just call them by the name most of you must have already figured out. Vampires!" Owen began in an unexpected way that was guaranteed to get him an earful from Oscar later.

"First of all, let me start by saying that they aren't like the stories you might have read in books and such. Not all races are like the Dalki, and we have already come to learn that not all of them are bad. I have decided to come out like this, because I felt that Oscar's message has left out too much. I wish to rectify that, by publicly stating that Quinn Talen, the leader of the Cursed faction, has saved my life on multiple occasions. Not just mine, but many of those on my fleet owe him for that! We all owe the Cursed faction."

"You may have your doubts, but there is not a single doubt in my mind that Quinn and his Cursed faction are on our side! Right now, I trust them more than even my own family members, which is why if anyone from my family has anything negative to say about the Cursed faction in my presence, they will be severely punished!"

"As one of the World Leaders, and leader of the Graylash faction, we completely stand behind Quinn and his Cursed group of vampires!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 1111: Can thank me or not**

"I think it's only right that if we stay on this ship, that they should at least tell us every one who is a vampire and everyone who is not, don't you think that's fair?" A member of the cursed faction asked.

"I think that's reasonable, after all Oscar told us to look out for them, but did you hear what Owen said, it seems like he has a lot of trust in our Cursed faction."

"I think that's bull, why didn't they tell us, if they weren't planning something they should have told us from the beginning."

"Yeah, like that would have worked. Would you have believed them if it wasn't such a serious message, and would you really say you were okay with it? The only thing I do agree with you on, is that they should at least tell us who and who isn't a vampire."

There was non-stop talking around the whole world about the two messages they had received, and especially those on the Cursed ship. The first mention of the V's had sprouted a doubt in many minds, not trusting those next to them, but there were two parts to this message, as the second one delivered by Owen, tried to make sure, and make everyone know full well that the Graylash family were on the Cursed side.

It was because of this, that while opinions were originally one sided with fear, they were now equally split down the middle, but there was one thing they were all waiting for, that was an answer. An answer from the Cursed faction leaders themselves.

"Quinn, what are you doing?" Helen said as she went to approach him, while everyone else stood back. "Is what everyone is thinking true, that you're not really a human?"

Quinn clenched his fist for a few seconds, the reason he was standing still was because he continued to listen to everyone's opinions before he was going to decide what to do, and he had finally come up with his answer.

"I'm not human?" Quinn replied back to Helen. "Is that what it looks like to you, do I really look any different? Does that change how you look at me, how you will treat me from now on?"

Helen paused for a few seconds, and looked at Quinn's face. His face wasn't one of worry, but instead it looked more like relief. Relief that a long secret that he had been hiding had finally been revealed.

"No." Helen stated. "I was shocked of course, but as long as the you I know so far has been the real you, then nothing has changed."

With this, Quinn decided to walk past Helen, and Nate, with Layla following him along as they were sure he was about to do something, whether it be a good thing or a bad thing, they did not know.

"Helen, I never got to thank you for the beast gear that you handed to me, it was a nice gift." Quinn said. "It helped me out a lot, and I hope none of this changes our relationship."

Before she could reply Quinn had already left, and for the first time, Helen was left there without knowing what to say.

'Did I say the wrong thing, I thought I was getting closer to him, and then this happened...but the others, they walked with him, and never were worried for a second, even that block head boy.'

While questing her own thoughts, soon an announcement was to be made.

"All members of the cursed faction, please meet in the main hall. There is an announcement to be made, where Quinn Talen will be present. Please make your way to the main hall immediately." Sam stated.

Those on the Cursed ship were a bit nervous, they had no idea what was about to happen, but at the same time they couldn't exactly just leave either, but as they saw others confidently heading to the main hall without any problems, they too did the same.

A few wanted to leave, attempt to go through the teleporters or steal a ship, but there were those that stopped them.

"Let's at least hear what they have to say first, and we don't know who is who at the moment or what." some members said.

Most of those that headed to the hall without hesitation had been directly saved by Quinn. There was a time when the whole Parasite faction was poisoned, and Quinn was the one that saved their lives, never forcing them to do something they didn't want to.

There were those who had lost their lives, but their families continued to be supported by the Cursed faction, through credits, beast crystals, and housing. Quinn had made sure that everyone that fought for him, and had lost their lives would be compensated.

At the moment, Quinn, and the rest of the Cursed leaders who were present, were standing on top of a platform, where the bridge would be used to travel between the main hall and the command centre. Below were all the members of the Cursed that were on the ship.

"Sam, let's send the whole world one last message." Quinn said with a smile.

Sam knew what Quinn wanted to do, and he was already prepared. On the platinum card given to them, this was what could be used to send out a message to everyone. The same way Owen and Oscar did.

Sam nodded, and Quinn pressed a button, holding it down, and soon his face and everything was being displayed to the whole world.

"I think after getting a message from two of the world leaders, it's only right that you get another one from the last world leader, the one that somehow has ended up in the middle of all this."

"I'm going to just say it to you all now, what you have heard is all true, but I want you to think about it. Oscar, Owen and myself. We are the three that you trusted to lead you up till this point, and they still trust me despite knowing what I am."

"That's right, I am a V, but I wasn't always a V. I was human, a weak human who was bullied everyday in their school life for never having power. Abused by the military system and shut down for never being of any use in this war. Just like many of you out there."

"Yet, now that I have power, I am in the position of where I am today, but my goal from the beginning has been to change the way the system was. In a way, I believe the system treated those that were weak inhumanly. Yet ever since I became a V, I was treated more like a human than ever before."

For those listening, some of them were confused, and it didn't really answer their question whether they could trust the Cursed faction or not, but at that point that Quinn didn't care. He wasn't there to change the minds of everyone.

From being in charge of his own faction and more, he realised it was impossible, all he could do was try his best to help those around him, and those that wished to help him. These were the people that he would fight for, and continue to fight for.

"For those on the Cursed faction planets and on this very ship. You are free to leave, you always have been and that will stay the same. I, with my group of people, will continue to protect all of those in the Cursed faction, to me nothing has changed."

Soon, Quinn's eyes began to glow red and everyone could see it on their screens, but it wasn't only his eyes. Sam, who was standing next to him, activated his powers, Layla, Nate and all the other vampires from the Cursed faction stood there with their eyes glowing red.

At that point, the broadcast had ended, but those in the Cursed faction were left confused. With Quinn taking a back seat. Sam walked out instead.

"We understand you are all scared, and the unknown would scare anyone, but Quinn here saved all of our lives. Like he said, we weren't originally V's. We aren't some blood sucking monsters and everything will remain the same.

"If there is anything, any request people wish to ask, then feel free to do so. However, while most of you will be busy deciding whether to trust us or not, we'll be busy trying to end this damn war for your sake, and you can thank us later or not."

It took a few hours for everyone to calm down and it even seemed like there were a few arguments and scuffles on the Cursed ship, as they argued over who to trust and who not to trust. However, eventually there were those that just couldn't stand to be on the Cursed ship anymore, and had decided to leave to join other factions.

What came as a big surprise though, was how little people had decided to leave, fewer than a hundred or so. Those on the Cursed ship, worked with the Cursed leaders, the closisist, and it actually helped their cause when they learnt that not only Quinn was a vampire.

The bond they had built while living on this giant ship called home, couldn't be broken too easily, but it was hard to tell if the rest of the world would think the same.

"Quinn, you just leave everything to me." Sam said. "Go out there and do what you need to do."

As all of the preparations were ready to head to the blade island.

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 1112: It's not easy**

Of course a few hours after the announcement, and a few speeches wasn't going to settle the hearts and minds of the restless. Nonetheless, Quinn and his group of people still had their own things that needed to be done.

Everyone, who was told to go to the blade island, was told to head to the ship docking area, where they would then take a medium sized ship with all of them on, and they would then head off to the Blade island together.

When Quinn had arrived, he didn't expect for him, Eno, Brock and Mona to be the first ones there, while the others were still busy getting ready.

"It seems like the world is getting surprise after surprise." Mona said. "And assuming since you are related to him, you guys are part of this V group as well." She sighed and placed her hand on her head as if everything was giving her a headache.

"Honestly, with everything going on, aliens, beasts and super abilities, vampires existing in the world just isn't too wild in my book. I'm just glad you're on our side." Mona said with a smile.

Seeing Mona's reaction had settled Quinn a bit. Of course he was worried about people's opinion; it was hard for him not to be. Everything that he had managed to build up could have crumbled just then, and he had no idea if it was currently crumbling at the moment or not.

It seemed like the people who were in higher positions of power, those who had some type of control over their lives, were less afraid.

"This is what you wanted, right?" Quinn asked, looking at Eno. "You've been pushing for the world to know about vampires, so you must have an idea of what's going to happen."

Looking back at Quinn, Eno's face seemed quite surprised that he had asked this type of question.

"This is what I wanted? If it was, then I would have revealed to everyone that vampires existed a long time ago. Different situations require different solutions and it seemed like it was inevitable that something was going to occur.

"However, I must say that the reaction wasn't not what I was expecting, but I still have many things to see until I make up my mind. Perhaps their reactions haven't been so drastic because there is a common enemy, and remember the human's aren't the only ones that you need to worry about."

No matter how much Quinn hated Eno, he was right. One of the things that hadn't been revealed to them all, was that there was a whole society of vampires on another planet, and some of them didn't exactly want to get along with humanity.

For now, while they were preparing against Arthur, or debating with each other, things were okay, but if Bryce, or another vampire was to act, Quinn would need to step in.

'Will I have to take the role that Arthur gave up, the role of the Punisher?' Quinn thought as he looked at his system title. Even though he was the tenth leader, he was also classed as the leader of the Punishers.

Soon everyone started to arrive together. Sil had come along with Shiro, and both of them seemed to be smiling. It made Quinn feel at peace. After all, he wasn't sure if making Sil go to school at the time was a good thing, but now it seemed like he had made a new friend, outside Borden and himself.

Logan had entered along with little Borden on his shoulder. It looked like once in a while, Logan was still trying to find out a way of either prolonging Borden's human-size fighting state, or making more of the solution from before.

In a way, if they could control the demon tier beast, there was a good chance that as long as the beast was still alive, Logan could continue to create a serum for Borden. Fex had wandered in on his own, which suited him in a way.

A person who got on well with everyone, but wasn't particularly close enough with anyone to click with them. Then, the last two had arrived, Helen and Layla. Quinn didn't know if it was a coincidence, or if the two had met up and decided to come together. The latter was very unlikely, especially with the way the two of them were looking at each other.

As they walked towards him, they were power walking, one person trying to get in front of the other.

"Do you really think you can win him over, because you two are similar." Helen said. The cat was out of the bag, and from the announcement, it was clear Layla was also the same as Quinn. Which meant in a way, she had one up on her.

'Are you sure bringing both of them along is a good idea?' Vincent asked. 'The two of them are already butting heads and we haven't even left yet.'

'A promise is a promise, and Layla actually far exceeded my expectations in that fight. How am I meant to say no to someone who tried that hard?' Quinn said, looking at Layla still having the same fire in her eyes.

After seeing how she was so upset before, Quinn was a bit worried it would take her long to recover. Especially considering her subclass that was more emotional compared to others, but she was back up on her feet and more determined.

Shoving Layla off to the side, Helen had eventually won the barging match and now stood in front of Quinn.

"Quinn I realised that before I didn't really show you how determined I was. Look, I've said how much I like you and I mean it, and I'm not the type to beg." Helen explained. "But if you really think for a second I care about you being a vampire, or that will change how I think, then you are wrong. You can turn people right, then turn me, turn me now." Helen said, as she pulled her shirt slightly and started to bare her neck.

Quinn briefly looked round and could see that everyone was looking at him.

"Well she is feisty and might turn into something good, it might not be a bad idea." Eno suggested. "You will need a queen to tend to your needs someday."

"Look, it's really not like that, besides we don't turn people by biting them." Quinn nervously started to speak fast, trying to get all the information out at once. "You could also turn into something dangerous. You can't eat your favourite foods..."

At that moment, one person had stood in-between the two of them, one and one no one had expected, and it was Fex. He lightly pushed Helen away.

"Do you think being a vampire is easy?" Fex asked. "This isn't something that you should choose on a whim just because there is a boy you like. As much as we didn't want to tell others, we are dangerous beings, and we can turn into monsters."

"I....I couldn't do anything, I couldn't control myself as my body called for blood, and then I killed one of my best friends. One of the leaders of the Cursed group. Even though I knew what I was doing, I could see everything I was doing and I couldn't stop it.

"Being a vampire is not easy." Fex said.

The tension in the air was heavy after that, and it was a reminder to everyone there that being a vampire wasn't a pleasant thing. There was a reason Quinn had called it the Cursed family in the first place.

The doors being heard open had broken the awkward moment in the room, and instead of embarrassing herself any further. Helen chose to just walk past everyone and head into the ship, as she waited for it to leave.

'What has gotten into you Helen, you have never acted like this before, is it because of that brat. I need to stop seeing this as a competition.' She thought, as she began to cool her head down.

The one who entered was Sam.

"Before you guys go off, these are the other three people that will be joining you on your trip." Sam said.

"Bucky?!" Quinn called out.

"Can you at least remember my name?" Chucky replied.

After releasing the report to the whole world, and having two additional world messages being sent out, Oscar was sitting in his seat, shaking his head. He had deliberated when would be the best time, what would be the best thing to say, but in the end it looked like it still wasn't good enough.

"Sir, I know you have multiple requests coming in about the V's, and I have filtered those messages off to the side as you have requested. However there is a report about multiple Dalki being seen in a certain area." Jane reported as she scrolled through her tablet, and brought up the report in front of him.

"It seems like a group of Dalki have been spotted on an ex orange portal planet of ours." Jane reported.

"Ex orange?"

"Yes. The second base at the time had sent out their students to do an expedition there. It turned out that there were advanced tier beasts and possibly more dangerous beasts on there, so the portals were changed to a red portal."

"Soon after our soldiers experienced an attack and decided to abandon the planet, but we still had some surveillance technology left on there. While one of the groups was going through it, they found that a small faction had taken base there."

If the Dalki had gotten on the planet it must have been through a different method compared to usual, and the fact that it had gone unnoticed. The main issue was the old orange portal planet was one of the planets that the human's claimed to own, and it was in the middle of their other beast planets.

"Are there any humans on the planet?" Oscar asked.

"That's the strange thing sir, it seems like the Dalki, they are protecting the shelter that has been built there. It looks like some survivors had decided to make it their base after they had survived. We are unable to confirm whether or not they are V's or not. What would you like to do sir?" Jane asked.

After thinking about it for a while, Oscar had made a choice, due to how close the planet was to the other forces, it was dangerous if they were to attack, they had to get rid of the Dalki.

"We will get rid of the Dalki, it's time for the Earthborn to move." Oscar ordered

\*\*\*\*\*

Golden ticket rank Mass release!

Rank 1 = 6 end of month

So your tickets actually contribute to something, hit rank 1 at the end of the month, 6 mass release chapters.

## Chapter 1113: Taming a beast

It was a tough ride as they went from the large Cursed ship, all the way back to earth. Not because they had run into any problems on their way or anything, but just because the group of people going this time weren't exactly the friendliest bunch, nor did they get on well with each other.

The two girls who were interested in Quinn had spent most of their time being petty towards the other, while also trying to avoid each other. Making sure to shut the bathroom door, even if the other was waiting outside. Leaving the kettle empty if they knew who the next person was.

At least Brock and Eno kept to themselves, although whenever Quinn did stumble upon the duo they seemed to be scheming things on their own.

Then there was also the group of three people who Sam had introduced. The first person was Chucky, whose ability hadn't been high levelled originally, but after the mission of looking after Sil he had been well compensated. Thanks to that money he procured the ability books he had needed and had managed to raise his ability to level seven.

The next one that had come on board was another of the Cursed leaders, Megan. According to Sam, Dennis had been completely against the idea. If she was going, then he wanted to come along, but Sam had reassured him that with Quinn, she would perhaps be more safe from an attack then if something was to happen on the ship, and they needed a certain amount of power to defend themselves.

As for the last person Quinn recognised her, but he was unable to put his finger on where and when they had met. Hana was a girl with short spiked hair, who had her hands banded up all the way to her forearms, reminding him of the martial arts god in ways. She was a person who was close to Wevil and part of the Parasite faction and had a level six ability.

Although there were those from their faction that had higher levels, Sam admitted that after the announcement many had asked not to be sent, now that they knew who they were. Although they didn't want to leave the Cursed faction, and would have gone with Quinn if ordered, he could tell they felt uncomfortable.

'It might be just me but this whole atmosphere reminds me of school. People always had their own little groups there as well.' Quinn thought.

"I wouldn't worry about anything." Logan spoke up, as he could see the concern on Quinn's face. The two of them were at a side table that was similar to a bar bench. They could sit on the edge, and watch everyone else as they did their own thing. Little Borden was on the table, and looked to be doing some stretches.

"I think with Brock and Eno, we can lower our guard a bit. It's been a while but they haven't done anything out of the ordinary, and it seems like they really do want to make sure the Dalki don't get their hands on that dragon." Logan explained.

Just then, Fex decided to join them, and before sitting down he raised his hands in the air above Borden nearly three times his height. The next second, Borden bent his knees and leapt up, touching the top of Fex's hand, even hitting it away.

"I see you're just as strong as ever, I'm glad not all the Dalki are as strong as you, otherwise I might not be alive standing today." Fex said, as he sat down next to Quinn on his right side. "You might be right Logan, but I still think we should be careful.

"He is the one that told everyone he was going into eternal slumber but never did, the person who tricked Arthur, and also the one that justified everything he did with I Quinn by calling them tests." Fex argued. "So although we can trust that he might not be out there to kill us, I still think we need to be careful. On top of that, what about the Vampire World?"

"The way I think Eno sees it, is that the Dalki need both parts of the Dragon, correct? But then aren't both halves equally important as well? In some ways, I think we should at least warn Bryce that the Dalki may be coming after them as well."

"There might be a lot of vampires I don't get along with there, but there are few I really care about. Most importantly my sister, my father, the thirteenth family and other people I still care about are also there." Fex explained.

Fex was right, but there was a slight reason why Quinn wasn't too worried, his system. Perhaps he was being over reliant on it, but if anyone attempted to attack the tenth castle or the fourteenth castle, he should get a message, and he was sure he would do so if the Dalki did come to attack.

"I don't think the Dalki forces are large enough to go after two places at once." Logan replied. "There can't be too many of them, especially since they can't make anymore, the energy from the first dragon was almost all used up, that's why I couldn't create enough of the green liquid injection for Borden, however it sounds like this green one is alive and kicking."

Eventually, Helen had shoved Layla while trying to get a snack from the table, and Layla once again, was thrown to the side and had fallen into Mona. Hitting her on her back, making her drop her purple lipstick she was placing on her lips at the time.

"Will you stop it?! I feel like I'm on board a ship full of children!" Mona shouted in annoyance. "I'm going to go mad if this continues. Quinn, aren't you the leader around here? Punish them or at least say something before I will!"

"Erghh..." Quinn hesitated as he didn't know what to say. "How much longer do we have until we arrive?" He asked meekly.

"It looks like we're nearly there." Shiro said as he pointed at the vast blue ocean. They had already gone through the space teleporting station, and had arrived at earth, but seeing the water was making Quinn's stomach act a little strange. He tried to avoid looking at the sea, while placing his hands on his stomach.

"Are you getting sick just looking at the ocean?" Logan asked. "I understood when we were in the small submarine but we're simply flying over it now."

"It's not that." Quinn replied. "It's just I'm starting to remember the last time... who knows what creatures are in there?"

Thinking back, Logan did recall that they had run into a giant beast that was also located in the water.

"Are you talking about that giant beast in the water? That beast should also be at a high tier, and might be quite handy to have." Logan said.

"Maybe it will serve as good practice." Eno interrupted their conversation, it appeared that despite him talking to Brock he had been listening in the whole time, but in some ways Quinn wanted Eno to know what he thought of him and the words spoken about him

"Should we really exhaust ourselves like that? We don't even know what level it's at?" Fex argued against it.

"Not for fighting, but we can use this beast to test just how strong Sil's abilities are after copying everyone." Eno explained.

"Oh, that's how his ability works." Chucky commented, listening in on everything, but he might as well have said nothing, because no one had heard him.

Soon the eyes turned onto Sil, who looked a little shy raising his shoulders trying to block the eyes on him.

"I can give it a go, but I don't really know how the taming ability works, like what happens if I can't tame it, didn't you say we have to beat it up or something?" Sil questioned.

"It looks like you might have to learn on the go!" Brock shouted, as he quickly steered the ship to the side. A large tentacle had appeared out of the water. The tentacle's width was as big as the ships and if it had hit, then they would have all been slammed into the water.

"Get to land, hurry!" Quinn shouted, a little more afraid than usual.

After staring out of the way, Brock landed the ship quite quickly on the sandy beach, and soon, the large head of the giant creature, that was pointy shaped, and a large singular eye could be seen, poking out of the top of the water. It looked quite similar to that of a giant squid.

Everyone quickly got off from the ship, and as long as they stayed on the beach it looked like the squid was going to continuously attack them.

[Inspect]

[Demi-god tier beast]

'I knew it was strong, but I didn't think there would be something that high tier still on earth, surrounding the island. Just what is this place?!!' Quinn thought.

Stepping in front of all the others calm as ever with her pointy hat was Mona.

"You need to learn how to use the ability, right? Well I guess this is a perfect way to show you, and it looks like I might be able to get myself a new pet while I'm at it." She said with a big grin.

"Remember, I too was one of the leaders of the Big Four, my strength doesn't just rely on the beast I have with me. You guys stay back!" She said, as she charged forward.

\*\*\*\*\*

Check Author notes for information on MVS Mass release! bringing it back for the new voting system.

## **Chapter 1114: The god of the sea vs a human**

The initial reaction in most of those that were there, was to run in and to try and help Mona, not because they thought she was weak, but because that was what they had always done since the beginning.

They had fought against beasts time and time again, that it was now almost a natural instinct to them, however, not all of them had faced a Demi-god tier beast before, and its sheer size had made others think twice.

Although not all of them felt the same way, as Chucky, Megan and Hana had decided to pop off into the jungle, and hide behind some of the large leaves next to some Palm trees, they couldn't help but watch what was about to happen.

"Hey, they're going to be okay, right?" Hana asked, since she really hadn't seen any of the Cursed faction fight for a long time. The last time she had seen Quinn take on an emperor tier beast in the desert, but this beast seemed to be a completely different story.

"Don't worry, Quinn, and Sil are there, and I think with them two it will be enough, let's just try not to get hurt." Chucky said, as he carefully touched one of the black balls he carried with him, just in case they did need to do something.

Then there was Megan, who was shaking. She didn't want to get involved at all. She had gone away from the fighting scene and had mostly helped out Sam with his duties in the command centre. This was due to a dear friend of hers, Mitchell dying while trying to fight a humanoid legendary tier beast, back when she was still part of the Crows.

While everyone who was a leader in the Cursed had improved, she hadn't.

"I'm not suited for this stuff. I can't, I'm not like them. I didn't change, I'm still human." Megan mumbled as she covered her ears.

"Sorry about that." Quinn said, with his hand held out and stretched towards her. "I'll leave you in a safe place where you can't get hurt." Closing his fist, the shadow lock was soon activated and Megan could no longer see the beast.

As Quinn was going to move onto the other two they soon stood up and protested.

"No, wait!" They both shouted.

"We won't get in the way, but seeing you guys, the best of the best out like this, we don't want to miss it either." Hana said, speaking for both of them, but Chucky seemingly agreed as he nodded his head up and down.

Quinn placed his hand down as he thought it would be okay. The two of them weren't weak travellers by any means. It was just with the job they were doing, only the best of the best could face such things.

"Wait a second, Quinn if you're here, who's helping out Mona in the fight?" Chucky asked.

As he stopped to the side, they could soon see Mona battling against the Demi-god tier beast and she was doing so alone, without the help of the others. They were all ready to rush in, but Mona had made it clear that she could battle the beast on her own.

"I think she will be okay." Eno said and hearing him say these words, they had slightly agreed to stand by for the first few moments.

One of the large tentacles came down, ready to crash down on Mona chucking up a large amount of water. When it was about to hit her, raising her arm a small type of purple see through shield appeared out of nowhere, like magic. The tentacle had swung hard trying to smash her but it looked like it had almost bounced off.

'That's not an ability since she has the beast taming ability, so it must be an active skill.' Quinn thought. 'It looks like a strong one as well, even though her clothes don't look like the usuals type of beast gear.'

Mona was cohered in thin cloth, at first he thought it was just a fashion statement along with the hat, but it wasn't the case at all.

Next though, Mona, leapt up in the air dodging another tentacle swipe, which summoned up a wave of sand in the air, she was then soon hit from above with another, but it seemed like she was expecting it, as the purple shield had appeared above blocking that as well.

However, the force from the hit above was used, and as Mona allowed it to propel herself into the beast's other tentacle on the ground. Throwing out a fist, she had made impact to the tentacle piercing its skin causing black blood to fall. Soon she started to run up the tentacle.

Now the beast was weary, as it had felt pain, and was unable to attack Mona while running up it's arm. Instead it flung it's tentacle high trying to shake it off, but as it did, she lept off and hung onto another one.

"What in the world is she doing? That looks so scary!" Hana said with her mouth left open, It was strange it looked like a small human was going up against a god of the sea, and somehow she was able to avoid the giant tentacles while going from one to another, and hurting it along the way.

"Those world leaders wouldn't get far with just their powers." Eno started to explain. "Think about it, in their family they probably have many who have similar

levels of ability, but what makes them different, allowing them to grow compared to others?

"For Mona, she is fearless when in battle, and will do anything to control a beast stronger than herself. Watch carefully Sil. To use the tame ability, one must touch the beast on top of its head. However, if it's too strong or your MC points are too low, then it will do nothing.

"You are able to weaken the beast, and hope to tame it once more, using your MC cells. Once a link is successful, then those MC cells you have used will be permanently lost in your body, connecting you and the beast at all times.

"However, there are some beasts that will just refuse to connect, but Hilston managed to tame the dragon, so you should be able to as well."

Although Mona hadn't damaged the beast much, she had tired it out, and it looked like soon, it would dive into the water. Seeing this, Mona then leapt onto the top of its large head, and made sure to dig one of her hands in its skin to hold on.

A few moments later and the waves started to settle, and the beast's arms were lowering, they were no longer frantically moving about in the ocean. It looked like Mona had successfully captured a beast for herself.

While riding, its large head she slowly made her way to shore, and stopped. Lifting Mona off its head with its tentacle, it then placed her on the sand once again and she had a large grin on her face.

"After my last Demi-god tier beast was defeated, I thought I would never see one again, looks like i'm in luck." She said, "Although, if it needs to be in the sea, it will be quite hard to move it, and use it outside of battle. I wonder if it can survive on land?"

"That was really impressive." Layla said, as she had eyes of admiration. She couldn't believe how fearless Mona was. "Your beast equipment, it seems to be at a high level to block the beast attacks, it must also be at the Demi-god tier level."

Mona looked at Layla and was about to ignore her, but she had these large puppy dog eyes that nearly made it impossible for her to do so.

"My gear is impressive, but if I hadn't used my active skill to block one of those attacks I would have been done for. I don't usually like to do that type of thing, but after seeing it move like so, I thought I could do something and no Demi-god tier beast has never rejected my powers before, so really all I needed to do was get on top of its head."

Saying all these things, just made Mona sound more impressive, and made Quinn wonder how many MC cells she must have to be able to control a Demi-god tier beast.

"Are you able to control a demon tier?" Quinn asked.

Mona took a while before answering the question.

"Well if that was the case, then we wouldn't need this fella here would we. Honestly, I don't know. I haven't been lucky enough to ever meet one, but the person before me, who was once on this island, was said to have the same level of ability as mine.

"The one that Hilston took as a chained, and I don't think she could control the beast you are looking for."

It was hard to imagine how much of a difference a Demon tier beast really was compared to a Demi-god tier. In all honesty, the tier with the most varying powers of strength was the demon tier beast, because human's hadn't made a rank higher than that.

Perhaps one demon tier beast could be twice as strong as the other.

What Quinn did realise, was the fact that the ability Mona used, worked similar to his shadow eater skill. The weaker the vampire was the more chance the skill had of working, and this was the same with the beast.

'Let's just hope Sil can do this without us needing to fight it, then we don't need to find out how strong it is.' Quinn thought.

"This dragon is far stronger than that guard of a beast Quinn, I think you should prepare yourself, for a full on battle if need be." Eno said, as if he could read his mind.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1115: The Tour of Blade

Leaving the sandy beach meant that Mona would have to leave her new beast that she had just tamed behind. She did a few tests with it, and called it up onto the land. This was when they realised the sheer size of the beast, as a giant shadow had been cast all over them.

The water had made it look a little smaller than they had all imagined.

However, it was clear to Mona and the rest, although it could stay out of the water, it couldn't move as fast nor did it look too well. The good news was, it meant that she could transport it and bring it along with her, but unless it is in the water it would be difficult to actually use it for combat purposes.

So in the end for now, Mona would leave it in the water, while keeping the connection with it. According to Mona, she could give it simple commands and although no words were communicated with the beast, she could tell how it was feeling. When giving commands, these feelings would be passed on and she generally knew what it wanted to communicate.

Now walking through the forest, most of them couldn't stop talking about Mona's actions against the beast.

"I can't believe I got to see one of the big four fights." Hana said. "She's an inspiration to us girls everywhere. I knew there had to be a reason beyond her ability. She was the only girl that was accepted into the big four."

"I always thought she would be more like a...like a witch." Chucky couldn't help but say. He hated to admit it, but he had judged a book by its cover.

'Those skills she used, they had nothing to do with her ability. She actually fought and swung, diving in against that beast on her own.' Layla thought. 'I hope maybe one day people can look up to me like that. I wonder if Quinn likes those types of girls.'

"Come on, if it was me, I would have just tied the beast's limbs up, piece of cake." Fex commented, while pulling back his hair, that had gotten a little wet in the fight.

"I could have blasted it with my thorns exploding them on impact, I wouldn't have had to even get close to the beast." Helen said as well.

"Ah yes, but then you two would have killed it, wouldn't you? But now I get to use it as I wish to help me by my side." Mona replied, hearing everything as they continued to walk through the jungle.

Eventually they started to come to a point in the jungle, where there were pathways leading to different areas, and they now had to choose where exactly to go.

"Whoa, is that a castle, it's like those really old style ones." Shiro said as he pointed towards the top of the hill it was based on. "Wait, Sil is from this place, right? So is this where you grew up?"

Sil didn't answer, of course he didn't because they weren't exactly pleasant memories that he had of this place, and Shiro noticing this now felt kind of bad. After all, they had only come to this place because the Blade's currently weren't here, and he had been told they weren't the best of people.

"Quinn." Sil finally said, as he lifted up his head. "Do you mind if we look around the place, see if there is anything before we head to the tablet. I just want to check if there is anything?"

"I assure you, I checked out the whole island before you got here. I even went to the large tablet where the dragon seems to be remaining." Brock said.

Even with that answer, it seemed like Sil wasn't satisfied.

"I think it will be okay." Quinn said. "After all, it doesn't look like the Dalki are here, maybe we jumped the gun, but I don't think a couple of hours looking around will hurt us. If it does, well then it just means we would be in an even worse situation fighting the Dalki and the Demon tier beast."

After hearing this, Sil's face lit up, and everyone else seemed to be fine with looking around the island. They were in no rush to face the Demon tier beast.

The first place that the group decided to stop at, due to it being close, was the Temple. It seemed to be still partly destroyed from when Vorden and Peter had fought here, against the others.

"What is this place, it looks like some type of school, and a fight broke out or something?" Helen said, as she looked at the giant hole through one of the doors.

"As you all know, the temple is no longer in use." Brock explained like he was some type of tour guide to the rest of them. "During my time here I witnessed everything that went on with the Blade island, those that were children of the Blade would learn their abilities and be sent here for training."

"Then when they had trained for long enough, they were faced against each other in a battle royal, until only one survived. The last one remaining, would be allowed to enter the castle."

Everyone was stunned by Brock words and how they were spoken so casually as if he was talking about a movie, but then realising that he was telling the truth, and noticing the blood marks in certain places they were devastated. They couldn't help but look at Sil in a different way.

Quinn wanted to stop Brock from speaking more, but Sil pulled him away.

"I can't run away from my past, it's okay, I need to be reminded, let him continue on." Sil said.

"Wait, so all those kids with the same ability as Sil, are you saying they came from here?" Chucky asked.

"Yeah, that's right. Actually the one that wanted to save them all no matter what, was Vorden." Quinn said. "And that's why we're going to get him back."

Although some didn't know who Vorden was or what they were talking about, it seemed like a sensitive matter so they chose to avoid it. They didn't stay at the temple long, so the next place they went along to was the Castle.

As they entered they looked around at how grand and vast the whole place was. It seemed impossible for just a single family to live in such a huge place.

"As you are aware this is the Blade castle, where the main family members resided. I was under disguise as the head butler here, and was in charge of all the Blade servants that would work here."

As they continued to follow Brock, he had eventually taken them down to the dungeon, but it wasn't a typical dungeon. It was more of a large empty space, with hundreds of metal spikes that were dug into the floor.

"What...is this place?" Layla said as she looked in horror, all around her. It looked like a room that was designed for torture.

"This is what the Blade refers to as the chained. If you can't guess, this is where they would chain up those ability users they thought were useful to them. Not only top abilities but unique original ones as well."

"Since the Blades could only copy so many abilities at once, they wished to overcome that weakness somehow, and this was what they had found. Still this was a temporary measure. It always seems like Hilston was searching for more, but he never did explain what it was." Brock continued.

"You mean, even you don't know why he did all this?" Quinn asked.

"Yes, I have no idea. Why he had created so many children with his own DNA, hoping to look for someone stronger than himself. It made no sense to me, and it was almost as if he was beyond obsessed."

"When Sil eventually appeared, that obsession died down a little, and instead he chose to go after Sil. I'm afraid, no matter where Sil is, eventually Hilston will try to find him."

If this was the case, then Quinn needed to be ready for him. As they were to leave the dungeon, Mona stayed there for a few seconds. Her family members had also spent some time down there, and she couldn't imagine how they must have felt.

'I hope you're still alive, and I promise I'll pay back that man for what he did.' Mona thought as she went out of the dungeon with the rest.

The last place left to visit in the castle was the throne room. Here they could see a large dining table. Sil remembered this table well, as it was where the family at all times had to eat together, pretending to be happy.

At the side of the room, at the very back, there seemed to be different pieces of a mannequin. One that just had a chest, others just a leg and so on, of every part of the human.

"What's all this?" Fex asked, as he picked the mannequin that only resembled the chest of a human, which fell over instantly onto the floor. He quickly picked it up, just in case it was something important, and just gave a cheeky smile at the others.

"That was what was used to display Hilston's Demon tier beast armour. He had managed to make a full set of it, from multiple crystals and at one point, had one of the best forgers in the world create it for him.

"That was until he had killed the forger shortly after, making it so no one else could create a set just like it."

"A set of demon tier armour?" Mona replied, thinking she had misheard. "You mean it isn't just a random demon tier beast equipment placed together, but an entire set? Did he come across a group of Demon tier beasts or something?"

"I don't know the full details, as I wasn't with him, but it was the most hurt I had ever seen Hilston before, and even his old Demon tier equipment seemed to be quite damaged." Brock replied.

At that moment, everyone's body started to shiver as a natural response. Just how strong was Hilston, and was what Brock saying true? Back then, Hilston was never able to activate the Demon tier equipment he had used against Arthur, but what if he had? Would it have been a different story?

"Come on, we can't be that scared, Quinn and the other leaders managed to defeat him after all, you guys can just gather up and beat him again." Mona said, in a half joking way just to calm herself down.

"We weren't the ones that beat him.." Quinn replied. "It was an old friend of mine...."

'A friend, I didn't hear of this, did he die, judging from how Quinn is speaking of him.' Mona thought.

Come, let's go to the tablet if there is nothing else here." Said Quinn.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1116: Two problems at once

The giant stone tablet was located at the back of the castle which was partially built on a hill. However the tablet itself was even bigger than the castle, so it was pretty easy for them to see where they all needed to go next.

Currently, they were making a slow climb up the hill. The terrain was still quite green as they fought through the overgrown trees but at the same time a clear wide path could be seen, as if people had been here multiple times.

The reason why they were moving slowly, was due to the Demon tier beast that was said to be by the giant tablet.

"Why can't my body stop shaking, we haven't even reached the top yet?" Chucky asked, as his legs continued to feel weaker the closer they got.

"Many people are unable to handle the pressure of seeing a Demon tier beast with great power. Faced with one, they would just freeze up and would end up in their belly." Brock explained. "However, in your case, I believe you are just worrying too much."

The girls chuckled at Brock's observation, but that didn't change the fact that they too were a little worried. For they knew that the Dalki themselves that were so strong had come from this Demon tier beast, so they could somewhat imagine its powerlessness.

"I did say you didn't have to come along." Quinn reminded Chucky, as he turned and looked back.

Quinn and a few others were completely fine, unafraid, even Sil because they already knew this was something that needed to be done. "The castle looked like a safe place for you to stay at, that's why I let Megan out and told her to stay there for now." Quinn said.

"Come on!" Chucky shouted, as he punched his leg a few times, straightening it out and continued to walk forward. "I told you already, there's no way I can miss this once in a lifetime opportunity! A tablet that might be the cause of why the whole world has their abilities, and a legendary Demon tier beast that guards it! I would regret it for the rest of my life if I hadn't come along!"

On their way, Brock had spent a little time explaining why they were going after the tablet. Eno's ability should allow them to transfer one of the tablet's abilities into Shiro, who had never learned any other ability before.

What was troubling Quinn though was the senses in his body and head. Ever since they had gotten on the island, his body didn't quite feel like it was working the way it should.

'The same thing happened last time as well. If it wasn't for this I wouldn't have struggled so much to find where Peter had been on the island back then.' He then went to turn to look at the others with him, but they didn't seem to be feeling anything strange, even when looking at the other vampires.

'Is it just affecting me then?' Quinn wondered.

Finally, the hill started to level out, and the path was winding, but at this moment Brock, who had been leading the way so far, decided to stray from the path and enter the jungle itself. His footsteps were almost silent, and everyone else followed him as well, and that's when they could see it. Not only that, but could hear a loud constant crackle, that would disappear going in and out.

A large open area... and the tablet in sight! Alas, that wasn't the only thing that was there. In front of it, they could make out the large black dragon, the crackling sound seemed to be coming from the Dragon due to it being asleep.

"So we have finally reached our goal, and both of them are in front of us, but this brings us to quite the troubling predicament." Logan stated in a quiet tone.

"Indeed, since we hadn't seen the dragon in any other areas, I assumed that it might be here, but I was really hoping that it wasn't." Brock sighed.

Heading away from the edge of the green area, they walked further into the jungle, hiding from the beast, while they decided what to do next.

"I think this whole thing is quite simple. Sil has already copied everyone's abilities." Eno said. "So he should be able to just walk up to the beast and tap it on its head, attempting to control it. If it works then we can move it away from the area."

It seemed like the obvious choice, especially if they wanted to avoid fighting, but Quinn had a different idea.

"No." Quinn argued against it. "Eno, you need to complete your part of the deal first. For one, we don't even know if that tablet has abilities in it, much less the ability that we actually need. I want you to pass the ability onto Shiro first, and once we know we can bring back Vorden and Raten, then we will move the dragon as you wish."

After saying these words, Quinn stared directly into Enos' eyes, and the Original stared back. The others started to move away as they were afraid that a fight might break out any second now.

"Do you understand how important this beast is?" Eno questioned, the look on his face for once changing into sheer annoyance.

"And do you understand how important my friends are to me?" Quinn replied, unwilling to take a single step back. "Or has the lack of having any distorted your mind, old man?!"

"Whoah, Quinn is being a bit feisty, don't ya think?" Fex whispered over to Layla, but she paid less attention to what was being said, instead concentrating on Eno, ready to jump if he made any sudden moves at Quinn, prepared to use the chain lock skill to hold the old man down.

In a similar fashion, Borden had leapt onto Sil's shoulder as well, pounding his fist. It was clear that no one other than Brock was on his side.

"... Fine, have it your way. I did promise you that I would help after all, but I still think the easiest way is for us to have Sil move the beast." Eno conceded eventually.

"Perhaps, but you can't fault me for having trust issues regarding you given your history. We still need to build on our relationship." Quinn said with a smile, that he was sure was going to annoy the old man, but he just ignored it and continued on.

"Now that we have decided to try to reach the tablet first, that still doesn't help with our first problem." Logan pointed out. "The dragon is in the way of the tablet, and although we can sneak past it, it will be a disaster if that fails, and there is a very high likelihood of it somehow being able to sense us, once we are closer to it."

"How about a distraction?" Helen suggested. "One group will make some noise in the vicinity. Once the Demon tier beast chases after them, another group goes to the giant tablet."

"I think the lady has made a fine suggestion." Eno agreed. "It will take me a few moments to complete the transfer, so it would be best if the beast was taken as far away from the tablet as possible."

After much discussion the group had decided that they would be split up into two. One would be the distraction of the Demon tier beast, while the other would protect Shiro and Eno while they were doing their tasks.

This team needed to be equally strong, as they were worried that as soon as Eno touched the tablet or if they were noticed, the dragon could possibly sense it and return. Chucky and Hana, since they were only there to provide powers for Sil where to remain in the Jungle area, as they were still persistent they didn't want to go in Quinn's shadow.

The group that would be working to protect Shiro and Eno consisted of Brock, Sil, Borden and Helen, while the distraction group included Quinn, Mona, Logan, Fex and Layla. Before leaving, Quinn tapped Shiro's shoulder and activated his shadow on, incase of an emergency situation.

"Sil, if you see anything suspicious coming from the two of them, I'm counting on you. I know how strong you are, and how much you don't like Eno." Quinn whispered.

"You know with age my hearing doesn't get any worse, I can hear just as well as you." Eno commented.

The group went back to where they were originally, so they could peak through the greenery and stepping out was the distraction group. The reason Quinn wanted to be part of the distraction group was because he was worried about just how strong this Demon tier beast might be.

Stepping forward, when they were around 100 meters away from the beast, Layla placed her arrow into her bow, and stretched it as far as she could.

"Should I use Qi?" She asked.

"We need to get it annoyed so go ahead." Quinn replied.

She let go, and her powerful arrow was sent flying filled with energy, and was going right for its front leg that was covering part of its face. As it hit, the tip was stuck on the hard skin and the wooden part of the arrow seemed to callpose in on itself breaking it, as the force carried forward, but hadn't pierced the skin at all.

'What the, I used quite a bit of my Qi. The same amount that destroyed the training room wall, but it can't even pierce it's skin.' Layla was flabbergasted.

Since it had done no damage, they were unsure if it was enough, but they didn't want to get any closer, they needed a head start if they were to stand any chance of avoiding a full on confrontation. Seeing the arrow didn't work, Quinn stepped forward, and instantly, the eyelid of the beast opened, and a sharp shaped yellow eye could be seen.

"I think it's awake now!" Fex shouted, as he had already started to run away.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1117: The strongest beast yet

Although it might have looked as if Fex had just fled at the first sign of the Demon tier beast waking up, the vampire had done something before his strategic retreat. He had carefully timed it so his red aura string would shoot out wrapping around the dragon's legs, buying the rest of them additional time.

While running, he was also leaving behind several needles on the ground with string attached to them. As long as he used his blood control, he could make the string rise and wrap around the beast's legs.

Unfortunately, the effectiveness of that was vastly limited. As soon as the dragon stood up on all of its four legs, it immediately snapped as if it wasn't even there in the first place.

"These days as the beasts we fight get stronger and stronger, it's like my string is becoming more and more useless. Isn't there any way to increase its strength?" Fex wondered, but now was clearly the wrong time to think about anything but the Demon tier beast on their heels.

Fex wasn't the only one who had gotten a head start. Logan had made sure to stay further in the back, already equipped with his speed suit, and had passed Fex on his left.

From the higher tier beast crystals he had been able to upgrade his three different types of suits, and his speed suit had improved significantly, but there was one thing different about it. The spiders that had transformed into the suit had done so around every part of his body except for his Dalki arm, leaving it in place.

Soon after standing up the Dragon let out an almighty roar that felt like it had the power to shake the entire island. At least the ground beneath their feet had started to vibrate and they had no choice but to cover their sensitive ears as they felt like they were going to burst.

The pain they experienced from that single roar alone had been sufficient to make them collapse on the floor for a few seconds, even those that had run away quite a distance already.

"Hey, kid!" Mona shouted as one of the few that hadn't started running yet. "You wanted to find out if I can control that thing, right? If I succeed then we won't even need the help of the blonde boy, so throw me out!"

Quinn was still recovering from the effects of the roar, and had already summoned his shadow to defend him, on top of everything he had the suit of armour that had been gifted to him by Helen, which improved his speed greatly.

He had stayed behind for two reasons. One, in case the dragon would have continued to guard the tablet instead of chasing after them, and to chase after them,

he would need to do more, and two, he was the fastest out of everyone there so he could cover the most ground.

Yet Mona, who was quite fast with her beast gear on, had just asked to be thrown towards the dragon.

"Are you crazy, that thing will eat you up!" Quinn argued.

"Just throw me, you wimp!" Mona shouted back. "Don't hold back on your strength! As long as you throw me fast enough, I'll be able to make it to the beast! "

Quinn thought this to be the craziest idea he had ever heard, but there was one thing that made him consider it for the moment, and that was the system. Why hadn't the system given him a quest yet?

This was a Demon tier beast, sure it didn't seem like it had any special abilities like the Demon tier tree, but this was clearly a powerful thing, so why didn't it give him any type of quest, even one to survive.

It seemed like the dragon was still gathering its bearings, and Mona was already by Quinn's side ready to be thrown.

'With the new gauntlet strength I can do it!' QuInn thought, as he picked up Mona by her two feet with one hand, and then pushed her forward as hard as he could. The veins were popping from his neck, and he made sure to continue with all 200+ stats of his Strength, to push through till the end with his fingertips.

'You asked me to throw you as hard as possible, then I'll do just that!'

Even Mona, had never expected to be launched at such a speed, and so far forward, the G-force was hitting her like crazy.

'That damn boy, just how strong is he to have such inhuman strength?!" She thought. 'Oh that's right, the boy isn't human anymore.'

In an instant she had been launched at the large dragon's neck, and with her hands she held onto one of the dragon's scales. The force from the throw was so strong that she needed to grip onto the scale tight to not fly further. Her fingertips felt like they were slipping.

'Damn you Quinn, that was a bit too fast and hard!' She thought as she finally pulled herself onto the dragon's neck just under its head.

Then quickly acting fast, she pulled herself up onto the dragon and was now on its head.

"Let's see what I can do!" Mona hyped herself up as she touched the beast on top of its head with an open palm.

"Whoa is she really going to control it?" Chucky thought, as they continued to watch everything from what they perceived to be a safe distance. Perhaps there wasn't a need for the plan after all.

However, all of that changed a few seconds later, as soon as Mona activated her ability. She had used it dozens of times, but this time something unexpected happened. A shooting pain went straight to her head, and her vision was turning black. She had passed out within seconds and was now falling off the dragon to the ground.

'Falling from such a height unconscious will kill her!' Hana thought, as she looked over to the original team to see if they could do something to help her, but they knew there was no need, because the best person to help her was already closeby.

Before she touched the ground a shadow portal had opened and Mona's falling body quickly disappeared inside, now in the shadow space.

'You're a brave person. I understand why you were a World Leader and you had so many people following you. Maybe I can be the same.' Quinn thought, as he looked the dragon in the eye.

Using all his strength, Quinn threw out his arms in an X shape and fired off two large blood swipes which went straight for the dragon. Unfazed, the dragon started to run towards Quinn, not caring for the attack.

However, as it hit the dragon's upper body, where its chest area was, it could feel something for a few seconds, before the attack went away.

"Did it work?!" Chucky exclaimed excitedly.

However, when looking at the dragon, the beast looked absolutely fine.

'How can its skin be as hard as the Diamond crab? I thought since this was just half a Demon tier beast it might be a bit weaker.'

After it had stopped for a few moments, seemingly surprised it had been able to slightly feel the attack, it resumed its charge towards Quinn. Each step was heavy, and shook the whole place. Seeing such a colossal beast charging forward, Quinn no longer tried to fight it, but made use of his great speed.

He was glad that the others had taken the chance to get a head start, for the beast was fast despite its size.

'I need to slow it down, or it will catch up to the others as well.' Quinn thought as he turned and activated his shadow path skill.

It went out spreading on the ground, wider than usual, but as long as it hit one of the dragon's legs it should slow it down, but it was at that moment that it leaped in the sky, avoiding the shadow completely, and was now flying up high in the air.

"... Was I the only one who forgot dragons could do that?" Fex asked, but judging from the silence and the blank faces of those next to him, he wasn't. 'I mean just because a creature has large wings doesn't mean they can always use them.'

With its targets locked on, the dragon was ready to punish whoever had disturbed its sleep. The group continued to run, and as Quinn went by the others, Layla hopped on Quinn's back.

With his Strength, she was practically weightless, and she could continue to fire arrows up high in the sky at the beast. She tried to aim for its eye, but a flap of its powerful wings would make the arrows useless.

"Any ideas on how we're going to beat this thing?" Fex asked.

"Remember, our goal isn't to beat it, but just to buy time for the other group." Logan said. "So far, I think we have achieved our goal."

Their distraction group had successfully lured it away from the tablet and if its desire to punish them wouldn't have been enough to make it follow them, Layla continuing to harass it with arrows certainly did the job.

Quinn just hoped they could keep this up without anyone getting hurt.

"Looks like it's our time to move." Eno said and everyone in their group hurried towards the tablet, aware that time was of the essence. The longer they took the higher the likelihood of casualties in the other group.

"Shiro, you need to press with both your hands. I will do the same. Don't worry if you feel a strange sensation in your body, that's just the MC cells inside your body adapting to the ability." Eno instructed. "Now, let's see if the ability we're looking for really is in here."

The two of them pressed their hands on the tablet, and Eno quickly began to search for the ability. It took some time, but a smile appeared on his face as he found it.

"Bingo, looks like we are in luck! It's time to give you your ability."

At the same time, as this process was going on, the distraction group had noticed that the Dragon had turned its head, and it was looking right in the direction of the tablet.

"Crap! We have to stop it from getting back to the tablet, no matter what!" Quinn shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1118: The active power

A little while before Quinn and the others arrived at Blade Island, there was a certain question that had been on their minds. 'If the Demon tier beast was so important to the Dalki, then wouldn't it be better to just kill it?'.

If they managed to kill the beast or at least one half of it, wouldn't that stop the Dalki from prolonging their life? Wouldn't it turn into a 'simple' waiting game for the human race? All they would have to do would be to outlast the Dalki until they would die by reaching the end of their lifespans!

However, according to Richard Eno, doing so was practically impossible. In the first place the Demon tier beast used to be a two headed dragon, which had the ability to split itself into two. This was what it had done when originally fighting against the vampires.

Naturally the vampires had done their utmost to kill it, but all attempts had ultimately ended in failure. It seemed that the only way to kill the beast was to either kill both halves at the same time, or it needed to die when it combined into a whole again.

Unfortunately, the beast would always split into two halves when it was on the verge of dying and then flee in opposite directions. Even after managing to kill either half, the other had somehow been able to sprout its second head.

In the end, they had just captured the one half, without killing it.

All of these thoughts were currently running through Quinn's head as he saw the dragon turn towards the tablet. He was reminded that even if they were able to kill the beast then, there was no guarantee the other half of it in the Vampire World wouldn't regain consciousness and become whole once again.

'Still, this beast is too dangerous, and I have to stop it somehow!' Quinn thought, but the dragon was high up in the air.

"Quinn!" Fex called out. "Follow me."

As quick as he could, Fex threw his needles into the trees and also made sure pieces of string were left behind so they could be used as platforms. Quinn quickly followed until he reached the top of the tallest tree.

Layla was still riding on Quinn's back, but even from this distance it didn't look like she could reach the dragon with her arrows.

"Quinn, let me give you a boost!" Logan shouted, as he quickly followed after the two of them.

"Drop me!" Layla requested. "Fex will catch me!"

Everything was happening so fast but he needed to trust his teammates. Doing a small jump, Quinn was in the air for a few seconds before he landed on Logan's Dalki hand. Then with all the strength Logan could muster, he threw Quinn as hard as he could, while Quinn also pushed off kicking from his feet.

Even with Logan's strong Dalki hand, his whole body was flung backwards as a result.

"Damn you guys for making me do so much work!" Fex complained as he quickly used his string to grab his two falling friends. Layla hadn't even looked behind, instead stretching out her hand toward Quinn.

'I know it won't be much, but I'll do what I can to help you reach that dragon as well.' Layla thought, as she pushed herself to the point where all her MC cells ran out.

Quinn looked like a shooting star through the sky, but there was one giant problem. He couldn't exactly change his direction mid-flight and the dragon was slowly turning its body away.

'It's about to fly off, I have to do something!' Quinn thought and extended his shadow to latch onto the dragon's tail. By shrinking it afterward he was eventually able to reach the Dragon's back.

'I have to figure out a way to slow it down somehow.' Quinn thought. 'Or make it plummet down. Wait I second, can't I do that?!" He looked at his white gauntlet on his hand and pressed it down.

Back at the tablet, the process had been completed and Shiro was standing there looking at his hands in shock. "It's... over already? Is it really done? I don't feel a difference yet!"

"That isn't too surprising, I practically added a part to you that you have yet to become familiar with. Normally, you would have an ability book to guide you, but since we have neither that nor someone who could teach it to you, I'm afraid you will have to undergo quite a bit of self discovery. It will depend on your talent as to how fast you will be able to help your little friend there." Eno explained.

Shiro looked at Sil and smiled. "Come on, let's give it a go." He said excitedly, as he reached out towards Sil, but soon his hand was knocked away.

"No." Eno said. "Just like I held up my part of the deal, Sil needs to hold up his as well. He needs to move the dragon first. Your little actions could possibly make it so Sil goes back to the way he once was."

"Brother, look above!" Borden shouted as he pointed towards the sky, and that's when they could see a dragon coming their way. However, it wasn't flying straight towards them, instead it seemed to be flying... drunk?

It flew in circles upside down, and then left to right as it made its way towards them. It would have been hilarious to see if that monstrosity wasn't coming closer with each passing second, despite its questionable style.

"Everyone move!" Brock shouted, and it didn't take long for all of them to split. A few seconds later, the dragon smashed into the ground where they all had just stood, throwing up dust and dirt everywhere.

Fex, with the others, had already been in pursuit of the flying beast. Despite its giant size and ferociousness, they were all worried about Quinn. As for the person in question. When the dragon had crashed, Quinn had tried his best to hold on but the force of impact had thrown him quite a distance off.

'Damn, I think my plan worked out a little too well, and this energy I'm feeling inside me, it's so wild and strong.' Quinn looked at his hand.

While on the beast, Quinn had come up with one of two plans. Plan A had been to attack the dragon repeatedly, until it would eventually become poisoned through gauntlets' passive. The problem with this was the hard skin the dragon seemed to have. He had been unsure he would have been able to succeed in time before the dragon had reached the tablet.

As such he had gone with Plan B, which had been to use his other gauntlet's active skill, the energy drain. He didn't think it would work so fast or well, but he also had nothing to lose by trying it.

At first, Quinn had felt his whole body return to peak condition. He hadn't used much of his stamina so far, but what little he had, had been refilled. After that though, his body had entered into some type of overdrive as more energy was flowing into him, the energy of the beast itself.

At first Quinn didn't think it was having much of an effect, but being powered up, he thought he could at least deal a large significant blow to it, but then something strange started to occur.

The dragon had started to spiral out of control, as if it was doing anything it could to get Quinn off its back. Most likely it was experiencing something it had never felt before, its power being sucked away, so it had wanted to get rid of the tick responsible.

In the end, the two of them had crashed together and Quinn got chucked off to the side. He was in the middle of making a recovery getting up, and when the others

had arrived from the other direction, they could see the dragon, creeping towards Quinn with its large head moving towards him, fury clearly written on its maw.

Quinn backed up a few steps, and realised that the tablet was behind him and that's when something strange happened, the dragon stopped in its tracks and stayed there. It blew out air through its nostrils which hit Quinn like a wave of great heat.

'What's going on, why isn't it moving closer? Why did it stop its attack?' Quinn wondered. The good news was, it didn't look like it was going after any of the others as well and was just continually staring at Quinn.

He took a few steps to the left and the dragon's eyes followed after him, ignoring the others. He then took a few steps to the right and it did the same.

"Why, aren't you attacking me?" Quinn asked, thinking the dragon could answer, but it couldn't. For it was nothing but a beast. The others watching were wondering what to do as well. Was this the perfect opportunity to attack it all together or should they let it go?

Turning around, and feeling the strange energy he felt before Quinn realised , that maybe, just maybe everything had something to do with the tablet.

'Is that why it doesn't attack? Is it worried about destroying it?' Quinn thought, as he walked up to it. He was scared to turn his back on the dragon at first, as he turned his head around a couple of times, but it looked like it wasn't going to move anytime soon.

"Just what is going on, I need to find out." Quinn mumbled, as he pressed both hands against the tablet and then the whole tablet began to light up.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1119: A family reunion

As soon as Quinn laid his hands on the tablet, it began to shine in a bright blue colour, lighting up the place around them. The others were in shock about all the things happening. First the dragon, a beast that was known for its violent nature to kill anything in sight, had not attacked Quinn and now this.

The reason why they were so surprised was because even when Eno had touched the tablet to grant Shiro his abilities, nothing of the sort had occurred. Logan and the others had reunited with the other group in the jungle. They had a good view of things since the dragon wasn't blocking their vision.

Logan looked at Eno for a possible explanation, but the look on the old man's face was genuine. For once, he was as clueless as everyone else.

Quinn continued to leave his hands on the tablet, as an energy he felt was connecting with him from the inside.

'This feeling... It was so disturbing at first, but now it helps me keep calm. But why does it feel so familiar? Is this how everyone feels when they touch the tablet?' Quinn wondered since he hadn't been there to witness Eno before. 'I guess nothing will happen though since I already have an ability.'

"This young one already has power, and he is unlike the man from before, so there is nothing he can gain from me here." Quinn heard a voice that he was unable to recognise.

Turning his head around, Quinn was looking for where the voice had come from, but everyone was just looking at him, none of them had uttered so much as a single word. The voice echoed a bit, similar to when Jill would send him messages via the telepathy ability, so he tried to direct his thoughts at the tablet. 'Who are you?'

"You... you can hear me?" The voice asked in shock.

'Damn it, it's like speaking to Vincent all over again!' Quinn thought in mild annoyance. All those around him continued to watch him. It was clear to him that he was the only one able to perceive this voice.

"I don't know who this Vincent is, but you're the first one I'm able to converse with." The voice replied, now curious why that was the case.

It seemed like just like with Vincent, that the voice had access to his thoughts while he was touching the tablet. Since Quinn had only been able to hear the voice after touching the tablet, he could only assume it was either the tablet itself or someone or something left inside it.

'Are you the tablet?' Quinn asked as it was the fastest way to find out, instead of racking his brain.

"Do you really think tablets can speak or were you just born like this?" The voice asked in derision. Listening to it for a bit it sounded as if it might belong to a middle aged man, not too old nor too young.

"No, the tablet is merely a tool. I don't know how much you know, but all the abilities that humans currently possess originally came from me. At one point I decided that my time was up, and my final gift to the world was this. My mortal body should have long since perished, but I never expected to still be somewhat conscious when I gave up everything to be placed inside of here."

It was pretty hard for a person to believe, but Quinn had read the diaries of Arthur and heard Eno's explanation. All the abilities supposedly had come from this tablet, and now Quinn was hearing the voice inside confirm pretty much that to be the truth.

'Are you some type of god? How did you leave the world with so many abilities? Did you really come up with every ability, even the shadow ability I possess?' Quinn wondered.

For the first time the tablet seemed to pause before answering.

"Shadow ability? I'm afraid I did not possess such an ability, but someone I knew back in the past did. You must have received it from him somehow. As to your question, no I am not a god, although I managed to become far stronger than any of the gods during my time." The man started to laugh.

This made him seem to be quite the arrogant person in Quinn's eyes. While it was interesting to talk with him, he really didn't know how much this person could help him. Perhaps it was time to think of a way to deal with the dragon. It might have stopped its attack because of the tablet, but there was no guarantee it wouldn't revert to a wild beast, once they were further away from it.

"Wait!" The tablet spoke out. "While I have your attention I must tell you something very important! Leave that dragon be. That dragon, it came here on its own. Weak at first, but its energy slowly recovered. It must have been attracted to the energy of the tablet without realising it. However, now that he has mostly recovered, I've been able to communicate with it somewhat. Maybe because we are similar..."

"For now, the dragon has agreed to protect the stone tablet. You see if the tablet gets destroyed then that also means that all abilities will be lost. The way the system has been set up, the tablet will grant people a suitable ability. When the last person with that ability dies, then it gets sent back to the tablet. Then it will be passed on to a new person who is suitable for that power."

"However, if the tablet gets destroyed, then there is no place for the ability to come back to, do you understand? Earth has gone on a long time without trouble and in doing so it has forgotten its roots, its powers, so this is the only way."

He understood, but Quinn now had a new problem. They had come here to move the dragon beast so the Dalki would be unable to find him, but at the same time, it seemed like the tablet was of utmost importance to humanity. While the dragon was one thing, the tablet would be near impossible to move. The better option would be to protect this island at all costs.

"Honestly, you wouldn't be able to defeat the dragon even if you tried." The voice in the tablet said. "I assume you being here means you know a bit about this island, but not even the man who was here before had a way to control him. I don't have complete control over the dragon either, but at least it listens to me somewhat. Although it's hard to say how much he listens to me and how much he just instinctively chooses to hunt down intruders on the island."

"I know you are young so you might think you are strong and invincible, but believe me you are not strong enough to deal with it. If you try and force the dragon to move elsewhere then I will be unable to help you. You can be sure that it will fight you with its full force!"

'The dragon hasn't been taking us seriously yet?!" Quinn was shocked. 'If that's the case then it's no wonder how the Dalki could be made from the dragon.'

What was even more amazing was that the vampires had somewhat managed to defeat it. It made him wonder what type of forces had been sent out by vampires to deal with the beast.

'I was wondering, since you seem to have been this all powerful special being and all, can you help us? I mean, you gave everyone the excuse that you wanted to save them. Right now, we're in serious trouble and it might end up with the extinction of the human race, so is there perhaps anything you can do to help me?'

For the second time the tablet paused again.

"I'm afraid there is not. You already have an ability so I cannot give you another. I was born strong so there is nothing for me to teach you in terms of skills, magic or the sort. The only thing I can give you is information, but I fear my information stems from so far back that it would hardly help you. What I can do is convince my scaly friend to let you pass unharmed though."

It was a bit upsetting in a way. Usually with such a big event, a big discovery Quinn had expected something more. An opportunity to obtain some rare powers, but if there was nothing that could be done, then he would just be happy with the 'get away from the angry dragon' card.

'Why did you choose to speak to me?' Quinn asked, before letting go of the tablet.

"I didn't choose to speak to you. There was a reaction when you touched the tablet. It has never happened before. As I said, you are the first person to be able to hear my voice. As to why you? Your guess is as good as mine."

Quinn didn't know what really came over him at that moment or what answer he had been expecting, but he had thought that maybe there would be something to it. Perhaps he had read too many fantasy books about a Chosen One, or a prophecy that needed to be fulfilled to vanquish the evil of the world, but it was nothing like that.

"Before you go, I would like to ask you for one last thing. Since you're the first person who I have been able to speak to, it would seem rude to not even learn your name." The tablet requested.

'My name's Quinn...Quinn Talen.'

"That name....it's a very good name." The tablet replied. Quinn had the feeling it had more to say, but it had apparently chosen to keep those secrets to himself. Alas, there was nothing he could do to pry it open.

Letting go of the tablet, the bright light dimmed down until it eventually disappeared. Quinn turned to the others and now he had one more thing to do. Somehow, he needed to convince Eno that moving the dragon wasn't the best choice.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1120: A third body is needed

Naturally, Quinn had also wondered about the name of the mysterious 'being' he had been talking to. With how boastful the voice had been earlier, it was actually quite surprising that he hadn't introduced himself. However, the tone of the other's voice after Quinn had introduced himself, had made it clear that the conversation between the two was over.

There had been no way for the others to hear what had just been going on. They had only seen Quinn place his hands on the tablet, it lighting up, and after a while he had let go.

Walking away, the dragon continued to survey Quinn with its eyes, but the vampire felt far less nervous. The voice in the tablet had seemingly kept his word and the dragon didn't attack him.

The others could see how calm Quinn was walking over to where they were, so eventually they came out to meet him, worried that the dragon might suddenly change its mind.

"Quinn, are you okay? Did you hurt yourself when you fell from the dragon?" Layla asked immediately, and Helen soon stepped forward as well, but both of them were a little frozen in place, for they could see the large dragon's head staring at their group. It didn't do anything else, but the gaze was enough to tell them that it wanted them gone.

"I'm not hurt, you don't have to worry about that, but there are a few things I need to explain." Quinn said and shared the details of the conversation that he just had with the person in the tablet. He didn't leave out any details either, as he saw no need to. The group gave a few odd looks here and there, but they certainly didn't think it was completely impossible.

Case in point the Demon tier beast, that was tolerating their conversation.

"Someone with so many abilities had to have been one of the strongest beings in existence. In history we never learnt of such a person." Logan stated. "If he really did have all those abilities, then what you are saying and what this person has done shouldn't be too much of a surprise. However, the only thing I can't understand is why did he choose to speak to you?"

Unfortunately, this was something that Quinn had no idea about, although he would have loved to know.

"We've managed to get to the stone tablet and grant Shiro the ability, so I would like to suggest that we listen to the 'being' and leave the dragon where it is for now." Quinn said. "I don't see any reason for him to lie to me. Honestly, with how powerful only one small part of the energy I absorbed from it was, I don't wish to fight it. If we try to make it move, some of us might get seriously hurt or outright

perish. Besides, since the Dalki know about this island, they might destroy everything on it trying to look for the beast, including the stone tablet."

"You're really going to listen to some strange voice you heard in your head?" Eno asked as he stepped out of the trees. "You do understand the consequences of Jim getting his hand on the Dragon, right? He will be able to create even more Dalki, everlasting beings that could wipe out everything this whole universe has to offer!"

Taking one step too close to Quinn, the dragon moved slightly forward and now its large head was hovering over the Cursed faction leader. It was no longer looking at all of them as a group, but its yellow eyes were now directly staring at Eno, perceiving him as an intruder. It was so close to Quinn that he could feel the heat radiating from its large body from his back.

"Is he controlling it, like the same ability that Mona has?" Chucky wondered.

"That would make Quinn the first person to have more than one ability." Hana shouted back as if it was an obvious answer. "I, for one, believe he's told us the truth this whole time! Why would he suddenly make up having talked to a being if he had the power to control it the whole time? That voice must have told the dragon to protect Quinn for now."

Still, despite the large dragon being behind Quinn's back, it didn't look like Eno was going to back down, or at least he wasn't afraid.

"It looks like this is the second time today, that I will have to concede to you, but hear my warning, Quinn. Humanity's sake is no longer just in my hands. Now you hold a large enough position of power that you will have to play your part in all of this as well." Eno pointed at Quinn.

"We still need to figure out some things." Quinn mentioned, with the dragon backing away. Sensing no more hostility from Eno he returned to his role as an annoyed observer. "Just as the voice said, the tablet is one of the most important things here, and if the Dalki come here we need to protect this place!"

"Eno, I was hoping that we could use your army to station a few here, so they could inform us whenever there will be trouble. We can try to build a teleporter, but that might not work. However the good thing is, the island is on earth, so any attack should be spotted before they come here giving us enough time."

Eno didn't give Quinn an answer nor did he show any signs he was going to agree. He was a stubborn old man after all, but by now Quinn knew him long enough that he would at least do this much, especially since he would have an interest in keeping on the dragon at all costs.

"Can I request something?" Logan asked. "Since the dragon seems to be a bit tamer compared to before, do you think we can attempt to take some samples from it? I wish to use its blood to try and create more serums for little Borden."

"I mean I can try." Quinn thought, as he went back and placed his hands on the tablet once more. Unfortunately for some reason nothing had happened. The Tablet didn't light up like last time, and he was starting to wonder if he had gone mad just seconds ago. Until...

[New quest received]

[Learn more of your past and return to this place once more]

[Learn of the Talen families history]

'Huh?' Quinn thought the last thing he had expected was the system to give him some type of quest. After all, what did his family's history have anything to do with the tablet?

"I guess we can try and see if something will work?" Quinn said nervously looking at the dragon.

"I don't mind staying here for a couple of days, we can use the castle as a base." Shiro suggested. "And I can use that time to try to learn how to use this ability. It looks like it will be a while before I'll be able to help out Sil anyway."

After much discussion, they had decided a few things. Eno had agreed that he would send a few of his 'own' vampires here, and they would look after the place, keeping them updated on any changes to the island. In the meantime, Shiro would practice the use of his ability, at least sensing how to use it, since Eno was keeping a close eye on him and Sil.

Lastly, Logan was busy trying to extract a few samples from the dragon. Now that there was no longer a misunderstanding between them and the beast, Logan was able to extract a sample, directly from inside the Dragon's mouth.

Of course, he hadn't done it alone. Since it seemed to have been instructed to protect Quinn, or taken a liking to him, Logan had asked Quinn for his cooperation. The beast had turned out to be smart enough to understand that they wanted and after an annoyed puff of air through his nostrils he had opened its snout.

Quinn entered the dragon's mouth first. When they saw it didn't shut on him, Logan came over. This was one of the few areas that didn't have its hard scales that seemed unbreakable, otherwise Logan would have never been able to get a sample.

Meanwhile, the rest had decided to rest inside the castle. They felt far more safe, staying away from the Demon tier beast. Heading over to the large canteen, Quinn had decided to pay Logan a visit, who was currently using it as a lab.

"I hope everything is going okay." Quinn asked. "Don't worry once Eno comes here with his people, we can head back to the Cursed ship. I know there is only so much you can do here."

The frustration on Logan's face was visible, because he had gained something that he had been looking for, for so long, yet none of the equipment to properly look at it, so he felt far more impatient compared to the others.

"If you're not busy and have nothing to do, can you carry on with that request of mine from earlier? We need to keep looking, and hopefully by then Shiro will have mastered the ability somewhat." Quinn said.

"Are you planning to go behind Eno's back then? If we find what you are looking for before moving the beast?" Logan asked.

"You have to remember, if this works the way I think it works, then Sil will still have all of his abilities in place." Quinn answered before he left to check up on how Shiro was doing.

While walking over there he did have a thought in his head about Shiro's new ability.

'If Shiro is able to extract minds, or spirits whatever it is and place them into other bodies for Borden and Raten, does that mean something can be done for Vincent as well. It would be nice to get you out of my head.'

Vincent seemed silent about this request, because he honestly didn't know how to feel. He had already made peace with the world and spending time watching over Quinn had been a pleasure he couldn't have imagined to get.

'It would be nice to speak to you person to person.' Vincent replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1121: Lumped together

For a long time, the tension hadn't been quite the same in a particular shelter. A shelter that looked unusual compared to others, for the houses, people and shops lived high above the trees. However, if one was to look at all the people walking around, none of them had a smile on their face.

Instead, their faces showed great concern. If they had the choice, they would try their best to stay inside in their homes. At the moment, many people were outside, and this was due to a meeting that was to take place in one of the larger houses.

It was the highest house in the Shelter and also the largest. Using the bridges that would take them from one platform to the other, a group of people were now heading their way there. Inside the place, the leader of everyone, who was named Ruby, stood on a small raised wooden platform.

She had dark coloured skin and curly hair that was braided down to her waist. She stood there holding a spear with the head of it stuck into the ground. As the room was getting filled, mumbling between everyone started already.

"What are they even doing here? Do we know yet?"

"I can't sleep well at night knowing that they are just right outside our doors."

"But they don't seem to be attacking us. Has there been some type of deal that has been set up? And they have been here a while without saying much at all."

"And where is Arthur, wasn't he meant to protect us from things like this?"

"Silence!" Ruby shouted, her voice carrying loud over everyone. After hearing that name, she immediately wanted to end the discussion there.

"I know everyone is scared, worried and has a lot of questions on their mind. The worry has only been building up, it feels like we can't catch a break, and everyone who we have ever trusted has abandoned us."

As soon as Ruby started to speak, the rest immediately shut up. The way Ruby spoke, she took control of the room in an instant with her voice.

"The Dalki, I don't really know why they are here. The human race has been at war with them for so long, we have learnt that they are the enemy, but we have seen what they have done so far." Ruby continued. "The beasts that regularly attack us, they have for some reason defended us. They have stayed near our borders of the Shelter but haven't harmed a single one of us."

Saying all this, Ruby had to pause, and her fist could be seen tensing over the spear.

"But they are the enemy. How many of us have known someone that lost their lives in the first war. I know the army abandoned us, but we wouldn't be in this place if they never attacked us!" A man shouted and argued, and it looked like a lot of them agreed.

"I know!" Ruby shouted again, silencing them all once more. "But tell me, do you all trust Arthur? He told us that no matter what, they will protect us from whatever is to come whatever the outcome of the war..."

While she said these words, her voice cracked a little, and they realised that the one person this had to affect most of all, was her. Knowing this fact, if Ruby could put up with the Dalki being here, then they could as well.

"As long as the Dalki do not harm us, then I think that we should leave them-"Just as she was about to finish her sentence, the whole room started to shake, and a loud bang was heard from the outside.

Immediately they all grabbed their spears and started to rush outside the world.

"I knew that the Dalki would eventually attack. We have to defend ourselves at all costs."

"It might just be a beast. They have been coming more often lately." Another one said.

Ruby knew that this wasn't an attack from the beast nor the Dalki. It sounded more like someone had fired a type of laser of some sort. When they finally went outside, they could see the chaos that was unfolding.

Mech's dropping in just around the outside of the Shelter where the Dalki were protecting, and ability users nearby outside firing off their powers fighting against the Dalki.

"It's the military. They have come back to save us!" The men shouted.

It certainly seemed that way. There was no reason for them to arrive after all, but Ruby disagreed that they had come to save them. They could have come a long time ago and transported them to another Shelter or planet, but that never happened.

She feared that the actual reason the military had decided to come here was because they wanted to get rid of the Dalki, which would be bad news for her.

'Why, why couldn't you just leave us in peace.' Ruby said as her face was full of tears, and she just wished one person was still here, Arthur.

---

On the ground floor, two head generals had been sent to get rid of the Dalki force. They were unsure how many Dalki were at the Shelter, but the order was quite clear. They were to suspect that the humans with the Dalki were part of the V's.

The head generals that were down there were head general Sach, along with Samantha.

"It looks like this might be quite the easy task," Sach said. "Bringing both of our forces in, it looked like Oscar wanted to deal with them quickly. I guess it makes sense because of where the Dalki are. How did they even get here in the first place."

"Sach!" Samantha shouted. "We are both head generals, and you decided to go against my suggestion. I suggested it would be best if we could find a way if the humans really were V's or not."

"And risk our people getting caught?" Sach replied. "Then the enemy would know about us, and a whole platoon would have died for no reason. This was the best decision, as you can see."

Even though Sach had his reasons for doing things, she didn't like it. After Oscar had released the information to the whole world, there seemed to be two types of reactions. Either those who are cautious around others or those who trusted no one, and Sach clearly preferred to trust no one.

Soon, the humans had realised this fact as well, as a Mech had dropped down on top of one of the wooden platforms and was pointing its laser arms directly at the humans.

"Watch out, the army. They are attacking us as well!" Ruby shouted, but no warning would save their lives.

Then a large black fist that looked like a claw could be seen sticking through the Mech. the insides were destroyed, and in seconds, it was chucked off the ledge allowing it to fall to the ground. The Dalki was covered in green blood and looked at the humans in front of it for a few seconds, before leaping off and continuing to join the fight.

"The Dalki, they really are protecting us for some reason, and the army, why are they attacking us?" The people thought. "What do we do?"

All of those in the Shelter were now confused. The ones meant to be protecting them were trying to kill them, and those they knew as their enemies for a lifetime were now saving them.

In the end, what choice did they have? They could only join the Dalki as they fought for their lives.

"I guess it's time we finish this up. Why don't me and you join the battle." General Sach said as he looked over to Samantha. "We could have a friendly competition. If I kill more than you, then why don't you take me up on a date?" He asked.

"I would like to take you up on that offer." A voice said from above, and soon the Dalki had landed on the ground shaking the whole area around them.

As they quickly recovered their balance and looked at what had landed in front of them, they could see one thing, a single horn sticking out from its head.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1122: One Horn evolving

"What did you say?!" Oscar shouted , echoing through the office they were in. The reason for his cry was the new report that had just come in.

There was a nervous look on his assistant's face as sweat was running down her face. Jane was afraid to repeat the content of it again, for the matter was disbrastly serious.

"We have received an urgent report from the first Earthborn group, they have encountered the One Horned Dalki. The leader in the last war has not only been spotted but appears to have already joined the battle." Jane repeated.

At the moment, Oscar was still on one of the Bertha ships that was nearby the teleporting station. The main reason was due to his gut feeling. It had told him that something would be going on, on that planet.

After hearing the news of the Dalki leader being there, he could only imagine that they were planning something disastrous and if worse came to worse he would have to join in the battle as well.

"Quickly, I must prepare to leave. Samantha and Sach won't be enough to deal with him. It took all of the four leaders to take him on, and even though we have grown greatly since then, I fear that there may be a larger force than we first thought."

As Oscar was getting ready to leave to head out to the battlefield himself, he couldn't help but think this planet or base that the Dalki had created, must somehow be crucial to them. There was no other explanation as to why One Horn would be there personally.

'Could this be the base that allows them to communicate with the V? If so, we have to capture it at all costs. Winning the battle might be the key to ending the war!' Oscar thought, as he rushed over.

At the same time, in the Dalki mountain-like structure that they used as their main base, Graham was the only Dalki present today, only he wasn't alone for there was a vampire sitting opposite him.

"Do you think it was the right decision? You have sent out two of your strongest forces, Slicer and One Horn." Jim asked.

"Of course, else I wouldn't have sent them out." Graham replied matter of factly.  
"You should worry about completing your own job. I have already given you a force to help you with that, have I not?"

"Yes, but you see I have lent that force to another, so once again I am left on my own, well not without my own people." The vampire stated.

"Jim, you are a smart person, I'm sure you can guess what will happen. One Horn was sent out to fulfill the deal we made. Consider it our way to prove to you that we are indeed trustworthy. He won't fail his mission and neither will Slicer."

"The humans are still unaware of our true strength. There is no single human in existence that could defeat Slicer or One Horn at the moment. Perhaps if all the powerhouses were to come together it might be a different story, but that is why I instructed them to strike two different places at roughly the same time." Graham explained.

"Not a single human? I guess you believe the vampires are stronger then." Jim spoke. "However, if not a single human can beat them, then what about you? Does that make you invincible?"

"If only we didn't have one defect when you created us." Graham answered with a smile, which showed his vicious sharp teeth. No matter how much he dressed in human clothing, or made himself appear human, his teeth would forever reveal what he truly was.

Seeing the partly broken single horn on the Dalki's head that had landed in front of the two generals, they immediately recognised him. It didn't take long for Samantha to activate her soul weapon. Bringing up the nine tails of earth that would come out from the ground and stay around her.

As for General Sach, his power stemmed from his nearly invincible body, and he needed to get up close to the Dalki. Charging in, Sach leapt forward pushing from the ground throwing out his knee with full force.

As it hit the Dalki, the force could be seen coming out from the other side of his body, and Samantha thought this was the perfect chance for her to use her soul weapon, throwing out all of the nine tails with the pointed tips towards the Dalki's back.

'Please be hurt enough so he says still for just a second!' She silently prayed.

The tails were inches away from the Dalki's back, and were aiming right where their heart would be. It looked like they could possibly deal with this quickly.

"You've underestimated us! You're not the only race capable of growing stronger!" Sach shouted, as he prepared to perform another kick.

The tails had hit the Dalki, but they all smashed at that point including the tips, breaking and chucking up piles of the ground falling to the floor. Samantha's eyes were spread wide open as it was the first time her soul weapon, the sharp tips she could place on her earth ability had failed to pierce anything. It would even work on the Dalki.

Sach went to kick the Dalki's head with all his strength. Although the beast gear he was wearing didn't particularly have any active skills, it was focused on the strength aspect more than anything. Having great strength and speed already, Sach was expecting to kill the Dalki with a single hit.

But, all he could see was that the formerly unmoving Dalki, finally acted, by grabbing General Sach's leg with a single hand. The kicks the military man had trained for a number of years had been stopped just like that.

And that's when Samntha realised they were in for a world of trouble, as she stared at the back of the Dalki. Seeing the horn they had already gauged how much of a threat he would pose, so they had acted fast. One Horn, a strong four spiked Dalki, they assumed him to be the leader of their race, however the number of spikes coming from his back, no longer matched their intel.

'Is this the power of a five spike? Even us head generals seem to stand no chance.' Samantha thought.

"Run! " Sach shouted. "Get out of here and warn everyone!"

The next second, Sach's body was slammed hard into the ground while being held by his ankle. The ground broke beneath him, but his body was fine. Thanks to his ability he was pretty resilient.

"Oh, I think you are the first human I have met whose body didn't suddenly splat into red liquid from doing that. I think I'm going to have a lot of fun with you!" One Horn grinned as he looked over Sach.

When being told to come here by Graham, One Horn was against the idea. He had thought this job would be pretty annoying and he didn't quite understand why they were going through with this 'Promise' of theirs anyway.

As such, the Dalki was now quite excited to find someone that looked like they could put up something. When the Dalki attempted to swing Sach, again into the ground in another area, he tried his best to press off the ground, kicking off using a force equal in power.

'It's going to be hard with one leg, but I have to use everything I have.'

At the same time, the ground beneath him rose and shot up, and the one doing the work was none other than Samantha. With the forces joining together and all of Sach's beast armour powering him, he was somewhat able to equal the force of the Dalki, and was now head height with the Dalki, but One Horn refused to let go of the leg.

Spinning his body, not caring for breaking his bones, Sach kicked the forearm of the Dalki, not once but several times. Each time the air rippled on the other side of the forearm.

"You want me to let go that badly, then be my guest!" The Dalki said, as he swung Sach up high in the air letting him go, and he was soon sent flying, as he continued to go higher and higher into the sky.

"Sach!" Samntha cried out. She needed to save him somehow, catch him or create something to cushion his fall, but she knew the Dalki wouldn't allow her to move.

'But what can I do!' She thought, and it also looked like the Dalki forces were getting a second wind, as the humans from the shelter were starting to support them. Fighting against the military power that was attacking them.

"I...."

"Back down now!" A voice ordered her, and a tunnel of ice shot out, heading straight for the Dalki. This attack made it clear that he had arrived. Oscar, the supreme commander of the military and leader of the Earthborn group.

'A five spike here of all places. This wasn't in the report.' Oscar thought. 'It looks like we need to call for help as soon as possible. Quinn, Owen, I can't do this alone.'

Alas, for now he would have to.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1123: Two vampire knights

There were no set schedules between vampires when one would sleep or stay awake. Unlike the humans they didn't follow the sun, nor did they need as much sleep as humans. Then there were also sub classes that didn't require any sleep at all.

As such, it wasn't too surprising that at any time of day, one could see lights all around the place and people coming and going around in the Vampire World. Today though, Bryce had given an order to a certain number of vampires, to gather in the castle once more, to hold a special meeting.

He wasn't in his usual throne room, instead he was in the dungeon of the castle where prisoners would often be kept before heading off to the fourteenth castle or for execution. One of these deep underground tunnels led to a certain place.

A special room that Bryce had created once he had become king, putting a special type of combination on the door. For this door, he didn't even allow Muka to know the combination, and Muka wasn't even made aware that such a tunnel existed in the first place.

Going through the tunnels, the special leaders that had been invited could go and visit Bryce, without the others knowing.

"This certainly seems more fun than the time when I was alive." Tempus said out loud to himself as he walked towards the special door. Giving a type of knock on the door that only he would know, it was soon opened from the inside, and Tempus could now see the other leaders that were there.

"You invited the second Original!?" Suzan, the leader of the third family exclaimed, the shock being so great that she had jumped out of her seat. If it had been any other time, she would have shown the vampire great respect but today things were different for a reason.

"Calm down, he is already aware of everything that is going on and everything that has happened. I know the second family wasn't involved back then, but after what happened to Cindy, it was impossible to hide it from him. Besides, he has been a great help so far."

Learning of this fact, the rest of the leaders in the room stood up and bowed to him. The ones attending were Bryce's two Royal Knights, Prima Kilton, ex leader of the twelfth family, and Kyle Harlu, ex leader of the seventh family.

On top of this, Jill, the ex eighth family leader who still had her dead eyes, was standing rather than sitting at the table.

"As you all have been made aware, Arthur will come to pay us a visit. And there is only one reason we can all think of, he has come to get revenge for what we have

done to the other Punishers." Bryce stated. "I don't regret what we did. We needed to make sure that they would never come back, but because we didn't finish the job properly the first time, we still have troublesome people coming back now."

"To rectify our past mistake, I have gathered you here to ask for your help. I know a lot of you have not informed the new leaders in your family about your past, and I don't blame any of you. If we had succeeded in the past we could all just bury this event as a part of history, but since our 'old friend' will come to pay us a visit we will have to deal with him."

"Any vampires that you see as expendable, please send them my way. I have already exhausted my connections to the first family, and I'm aware that Muka already knows that something is up. If the first family's number gets any smaller or we go out to create more newborns, people will certainly start to ask about it."

The room remained silent after Bryce's request. This group of people had hardly met up before Bryce had become King, but at least then, the ex first family leader had treated them as equals.

All of them were here because they had committed the same sin, but now that Bryce was King, although he had 'asked' them for this favour, his tone had made it clear that it was just for appearance's sake. In reality, it was pretty much an order.

"What do you plan to do with these people?" Suzan asked. "It sounds like they may never be brought back. I'm fine with sending you criminals or people who disobey rules, but if you can promise me they will come back, then I'm happy to send you others as well."

Some of the others agreed with this. They too feared that maybe the vampires that they would send to him would forever disappear. It certainly sounded like that based on the way he was talking about the first family.

"Arthur is strong. Have you forgotten how much so?" Bryce replied to them all. "It would be great if that man would only believe himself to be untouchable, but he came at all of us at the same time. We would all be dead by now if he hadn't left of his own free will and even the old King had been unable to do anything about it!"

"Our only hope to stand up against him is that he will believe that we are still weak, that we won't have any solution to stop his shadow powers, but with your help, I will! As for your people... no they will not return." Bryce admitted. "I will make sure that they will be remembered as heroes, but without sacrifice we can't win this upcoming battle."

It worried them a little, the way Bryce was speaking. As the King shouldn't he care for the well being of the vampire race? Didn't they all agree to get rid of the Punishers, so that no more vampire lives would have to end? So then how could he so easily ask for the lives of their fellow vampires?

Still, it also felt like they had no other choice now. After getting involved in the past they could no longer be forgiven. Arthur as the leader of the Punishers might have chosen to postpone punishing them for their crime once, but it was nigh impossible for something like that to happen again.

"If only there was a way to convince the other leaders that Arthur is the villain we should be fighting against." Tempus spoke. "I think it would increase our chances, don't you? Besides, then there would be no need for you to worry about certain leaders teaming up with the Punisher."

The others found it odd that the second family was working with Bryce. After all, the second family had not been involved with the matter of the Punishers back then.

"Oh, if you have a suggestion, please share it with us all." Bryce said.

"I think he will be surprised by seeing some old faces reappear in front of him again." Tempus said.

Over at the tenth castle. Paul had been doing his duties as the Vampire Knight quite diligently. The human soldiers had built up a good relationship with those in the tenth. It seemed like most of the distrust had gone away after Quinn had been hailed a hero.

This had made Paul's job a lot easier than before. Sitting at his desk inside the castle, Paul was going through paperwork, reminding him of the days when he had been in the military without any abilities. It was one of the reasons he had been able to adapt to the situation quicker than most. He also had the likes of Xander and Timmy helping him out.

'Quinn, there has been no report from you. I hope you still remember the request I have made. I know you will look after all of our families, but I can't help but worry that the war has already started. I'm not sure how busy you will be whether you can still protect them all at that time.' Paul thought.

At that moment, the mask that he mostly kept around his waist started to vibrate and he was wondering who could be calling him at a time like this. Sam had given him a few updates about the current situation of the world, but also missed out on many. Perhaps it was because he knew that Paul would want to get involved if he knew too much.

When answering the call, it had come from someone unexpected.

"I see, I think that is possible." Paul replied, as he stood up from his seat, and started to head to the throne room of the tenth castle. There, Paul stood in front of the teleporter.

He pressed a few of the buttons on the front, activating the teleporter and soon it started to light up as it was activated, he waited a few seconds, and coming through the teleport two people could be seen.

Although, one of them looked quite different compared to before.

"Welcome back, I didn't expect to see the two of you return first before the others. Is everything okay?" Paul asked.

"It was an unexpected return for us as well, but necessary." Leo replied, with Erin following him from behind.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1124: A ticking bomb

It came as quite a surprise to Paul that the one who had requested a return to the tenth castle, was none other than Leo. He was sure that the other Vampire Knight would be helping Quinn out to the best of his abilities, especially since they were going up against the Dalki.

Who better to have by your side than someone who had the experience of fighting them in the past? However, as soon as he saw the other person next to Leo, he was beginning to get a rough idea what led them here.

Erin's usual blonde hair had turned black, but that wasn't the most prominent thing that stood out about her. That would be the pair of chains that were now covering both arms, clearly tied up in a restrictive way. On top of that, he could see that Erin's arms were still twitching.

'What's happening to her? Is it some type of disease?' Paul wondered. 'Leo has always had a soft spot for his students, but Erin seems to go even above that. I just hope nobody will ever use that against him.'

Paul knew this well, it was the whole reason he had given up his humanity in order to protect his platoon that he had originally arrived with him.

"There are some matters that I need to deal with. You haven't told anybody about our arrival here, have you?" Leo asked.

"No." Paul shook his head. "You wouldn't have asked me to bring you cloaks if you wanted your presence to be known, now would you? Ever since that event, our faces are quite well known all over, so take these and cover up." Paul handed over the cloaks, but as he was about to present it to Erin, Leo snapped it from Paul instead.

It was just the confirmation he needed to know that something was definitely up. Perhaps even Quinn didn't know what was going on judging by the strange way Leo was acting.

"Thank you." Leo said hastily. "I'm sorry to have left you here with all this burden on your shoulders. If there is anything I can help you with, I will be happy to do so once I'm done with my own task."

"Perhaps this is payback for me not looking after the second base so well." Paul shrugged, smiling back at him. Although Paul was the one who had originally hired Leo, they hadn't really gotten around to talk much like this, and who would have thought they would be in this situation at the moment.

"The leaders are seemingly preparing for something and there has been less infighting than usual, so there actually hasn't been much to do. Just concentrate on

whatever you came here to do and perhaps after that it would be for the best if you go and assist Quinn."

"The fact that things are that calm is a little unsettling in itself." Leo commented, before he and Erin quickly wrapped themselves in the cloaks to set off.

'Why was I so on guard when I looked into that girl's eyes?' Paul wondered. All the cells in his body had been screaming to either kill or be killed.

Since they wanted to exit the castle in secret, the duo had to scale out from one of the windows, and down from the castle. Then once they were in the tenth area they could relax a little.

Finally away from their family members, the two of them decided to go down an alleyway that was between two large houses. The good thing was that the inner castle area was a little quiet around the tenth area. It looked as if Paul had kept the requirements for entering the inner area quite strict.

"How did you feel when you met Paul? Was it similar to when you are around me? Or is being around more than one of us worsening your condition?" Leo asked.

"Worse." Erin kept her answer short as if talking alone was taking a toll on her while she was holding down her urges. "Ever since we entered I can feel everyone. Imagine the entire place being filled with blood."

Although it was impossible for her to make that comparison because she didn't know what it was like to be addicted to the blood, and Leo didn't know what it was like to be like Erin either.

"For now, try to get used to the feeling. This might be the quickest way for you to learn to resist it. Here in a world where it's plentifully easy to get, then when we are back on track you should be...fine." Leo tailored off, because he could tell the energy inside her was growing by the second.

This was the only choice he had, and if this didn't work he needed a backup plan. Leo didn't know much about the Vampire World, and he didn't know many people he could trust either that might be able to help him in the situation he was in, but there was one person.

In the thirteenth castle, Silver was performing her normal duties and was walking down a grand hallway. Suddenly, someone appeared directly in front of her, someone who she hadn't seen for a while now.

"Leo?" Silver asked, a little stunned. She hadn't gotten any news about him returning and in the next moment she saw the cloaks. Since they had come unannounced then they didn't want anyone to know that two Vampire Knights were meeting informally like this.

"Since when were you on a first name basis?" Erin grunted.

Ignoring Erin's sass, Silver pulled the two of them into the closest unoccupied rooms, which happened to be one of the bedrooms. The female Vampire Knight quickly locked the door behind her, not that it would stop a vampire from coming in, but would give them time to escape, or Silver could just answer saying it was her inside taking a rest.

"What are the two of you doing here?" Silver asked in a hushed voice staring at Leo, but she couldn't help but notice the wincing, and twitching that was coming from Erin either.

"I'm sorry, but there are not many I can trust in this place. The King and the others do not know of our arrival and I would like to keep it that way. We have a problem and I hope you can help with that." Leo explained. "You are trustworthy, skilled, and I'm guessing a beautiful person who wouldn't mind helping an old man, correct?"

"Old?" Silver chuckled. "Perhaps you look old before, but with your evolution you look like a fine man, also agewise I am probably four times your actual age." Silver stated with an amused smirk.

"The bloodsuckers are seen as enemies of the vampire settlement, and I believe that King Bryce had said that he has destroyed all the ones that were being made by Cindy, but I was wondering if they were still more out there, and if they would still count as being a vampire?" Leo asked.

It was a strange question to ask, but maybe Leo wanted to catch the Bloodsuckers to find out more about the second family. Silver too, didn't like the feeling she was getting from the Original second leader Tempus.

"There might be some out there, and there are always vampires that seem to give in to the blood. Although far less than in the past since we have taken measures against them now. However, it might be a struggle to find them. As for your other question, of course they are vampires. Some even believe that they are the vampire's true form, and choose to turn into one out of choice and leave the settlement."

This was a bit of a problem, they could go hunting in the vampire world to try to find the Bloodsuckers, but there was no guarantee that they would be successful, and Erin might explode by then.

Bringing her here was a risk as well, as the vampires could possibly find out about her.

"What about vampires that commit severe crimes, or are to face execution? Does the thirteenth family have any?" Leo questioned.

Now, Silver was at a loss, but since it was Leo she decided to answer.

"There are vampires that break the code, commit sins, and fight against each other. There are even vampires that talk back to their Vampire Knights and leaders and that in itself is punishable by death."

"As long as the vampire being punished belongs to that family, the leaders are usually left to deal a punishment they believe is fit. Unless it is quite a serious matter. This is why even though we are limited to a number of vampires per family, new vampires are born to keep up the numbers."

"Although, I believe some leaders also use this as an excuse to off vampires, in hopes that a stronger one may come from a new line. As for vampires that commit crimes, they are mostly dealt with by Muka, it might be best if you talk to him if you are trying to find someone."

During the whole time the two of them were talking, Leo had kept turning back his head looking towards Erin. They needed to move fast.

"Thank you for your help, it's time we leave. I shall repay your kindness in the future." Leo promised, as they quickly opened the window to the room, and the two of them were ready to jump off from the ledge.

Erin was to climb on to it first, but she soon turned her head to look at Silver, and her glowing yellow eyes were seen. Leo quickly gave Erin a little nudge before jumping off as well.

'Yellow eyes, a search for vampires or Bloodsuckers... no this can't be!' Silver thought, as she had figured out why they had asked those questions.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1125: The first loss

A few days had passed since Quinn and his group had arrived on Blade Island. They had learned quite a few new things during their stay and some dynamics had changed within the group.

For one, Quinn had no idea what was taking Eno's people so long to arrive at the island. Whenever he had asked the old man, the only answer he would get out of him was they would be here eventually. It appeared that they had to either be coming from a very far away destination, or were making sure that no one could see them while on their way there.

The Demon tier beast had returned to his original spot in front of the tablet. For most of the time it seemed to be napping, only waking up briefly whenever Quinn would visit to see if there was any information he could get about his family, or if the tablet would speak to him again, but it never did happen.

Since the plan to move the Dragon had been abandoned, Helen had decided to leave ahead of everyone else. Quinn had instantly agreed that it was vitally important for her to head out there. After all, just like Owen was out protecting the planets the Graylash family owned, it was the same for her. Helen was the one that was in charge of protecting most of the Cursed faction planets.

Who knew when the next large-scale attack from the Dalki or the Jim would occur?

Mona had been let out and was updated on the situation. She seemed okay but still didn't really know what happened. Usually, if she couldn't take over she wouldn't pass out like that, but she wasn't keen to try out again so soon.

However, their days on the island weren't totally wasted. The island was full of strong beasts that the others could use as a form of training.

Currently, seen coming out from the forest area that was just an in front of the entrance to the large castle, Fex could be seen dragging a beast that looked similar to a boar. Its tusks were nearly as large as its whole body. Whoever ended up on the wrong end of those would never be able to get off them.

Fex continued to drag the boar that was wrapped with his red strings across the ground, and eventually cut off the string from his hand, leaving it to wiggle around a bit on the floor.

"Few, finally the second one." Fex said, wiping the sweat from his head. "I don't know what you want to do with these things, but it would be a lot easier if I was allowed to just kill it before bringing it over. Trying to capture a beast alive is a massive pain."

Standing in front of the castle were Quinn and Shiro, while Sil and Layla sat on the grand staircase that led up into the castle. Everyone else seemed to be relaxing in

the castle itself doing their own thing, not really interested in much. They enjoyed the empty rooms, and this welcomed rest from their duties on the Cursed ship.

"Alright Shiro, it's now your turn." Quinn said, as he gave him a small nudge forward.

On the ground now, there were two different types of beast. One was a giant frog, with six eyes on its head that was also wrapped around with the same red strings. Both of them were Advanced tier beasts.

Even if they were to escape it wouldn't be much of a problem for the people there to deal with them, but Shiro still looked nervous. To him these were deadly beasts.

He inched closer and closer with both his hands out walking towards them.

"You can do this, they need you to do this. You've been practising a lot and I think I got the feeling down." Shiro mulled to himself. "Remember what that book said."

While searching the castle, the group were in luck. For when the Blades had left the island, nearly everything in the castle had been left behind as well. It seemed kind of sad in a way to see so much history left behind in such a place, but it looked like Hilston didn't care about it at all.

There was an entire grand library filled with information on top of information. After searching through the books, they had managed to come across a type of diary. It had details reporting how certain abilities functioned as if they were testing things and one of them, was Shiro's current ability.

It seemed like every chained ability they had was stored in that library filled with these notes and it contained crucial information about each ability. After handing the book to Shiro, Quinn had asked Sil if he could keep all the information. It felt wrong to just take something when it wasn't his and a member of the family he was taking it from was right beside him.

Sil hadn't even hesitated to agree. He didn't care for the books and he wanted to forget everything about the place anyway. Doing so, Quinn had put all of the books in his dimensional storage. These weren't ability books, they didn't tell the user how to cultivate the ability, but did tell them what the abilities were capable of.

Still, Quinn decided in his free time he would read the books as much as he could, knowing your enemy would give a person an advantage in a fight, and at some point Quinn felt like he would need to fight Hilston. Hopefully, however, it would be later rather than sooner.

Thanks to Shiro learning Qi, he was more in tune with his body than the average person. He could feel the changes that were happening as he activated his ability and thanks to the information in the book about what was possible, he could already do a few things.

It made Quinn wonder, if Pure ever did learn abilities it could make them stronger than others. While thinking about this, suddenly the frog beast shot out its tongue straight towards Shiro, and wrapped it around his wrist before it could touch him.

In less than a second though, Quinn was there to slice its tongue off. Immediately he went to look at Fex, who looked like he was trying to shy away.

"My bad." Fex mumbled an apology. "I just brought them here and that thing never used an attack like that when I was fighting it."

"Isn't it a frog though?" Layla questioned. "What else can a frog do?"

Since the danger had passed, Shiro soon walked forward now armed with the knowledge that Quinn would be there if anything similar should occur. Placing one hand on each of the beast's heads, Shiro concentrated. The palm of his hands started to light up slightly in a soft glow, and that was the end.

"Did it work?" Shiro asked

"Let's find out." Quinn said, as Shiro went to run where Layla and Sil were sitting. Quinn then cut the strings that were made by Fex and the two beasts were free. As they stood on their feet something felt strange about both of them.

The boar beast attempted to jump on its back legs, hardly making any distance whatsoever. It also would constantly pull out its tongue as if it was tasting the air. As for the frog beast, it looked like it was trying to figure out how its leg's worked.

It was wobbling side to side pushing its back legs while using its upper body to charge forward which just caused its head to hit the ground.

"Bwahahaha!" Fex burst out laughing, and so did the others by the seats. It was quite a funny scene.

"Well that's good, it looks like you're getting the hang of using your ability. Now let's try to put them back, their minds into their original bodies. After that we can try to just transfer the mind of one into the body of the other." Quinn suggested, as they continued to test out Shiro's ability.

But before that, Quinn could feel that he was getting a call from a certain someone. Placing the mask on his face he answered.

"Quinn, this is Sam, and I have an important report to make." Sam said over the voice in a serious tone.

"Go on." Quinn replied, worried about what might have happened for Sam to react in such a manner.

"Dalki were discovered on one of the planets owned by the humans. Oscar sent out two of his forces and in the end he even had to join the battle, because One Horn was there as well."

'Two groups and Oscar went there himself. How many Dalki were there?' He thought. One Horn was probably the most described Dalki to all of humanity and he was the personification of why they feared the race.

"Does Oscar need help? Has he asked us to come to the planet?" Quinn asked, but there was silence for a few seconds.

"He did, but there was nothing we could do. Before we could even send out reinforcement the fight was already over. ... Humanity has lost their first battle against the Dalki."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1126: Plan coming together

In the first major attack of this second war, Quinn had successfully defeated the invading Dalki with minimal losses on the human side. A four spiked Dalki had invaded earth, yet had been unable to progress further from the original spot of where it had landed. Another four spiked Dalki had been beaten so badly that they had been forced to run off, while the rest of its forces had been dealt with, and of course the Cursed faction leader had saved the second fleet of the Graylash family.

All of these battles could be considered victories of the human race, despite the losses they had suffered on their side. So what did a loss mean?

Due to how important this was, and wanting to know more details, Quinn quickly gathered everyone on the island. They moved into the main castle throne room and sat around a dining table that was already placed there.

Next, Logan placed a device in the centre of the room, and a holographic display of Sam appeared in the middle. With it everyone would be able to hear the message and receive the details of what had occurred without the need to repeat it over and over.

"There's quite a bit to explain and soon this information will be revealed to the public. Quinn, you and Owen were asked to be the first people to be contacted and this information to be passed on, so I want you to think carefully about what you want to do next." Sam said.

Everyone in the room was seriously listening in, including Eno and Brock.

"It all started when some Dalki were discovered on one of the beast planets owned by earth. It is centred quite fairly in the middle and not too far away from Earth's Portal Station. Because of this, Oscar decided to treat it as a serious matter and sent out his men to deal with it."

"Quinn, Fex, Layla and Sil, you should already be familiar with this planet. It's the Orange portal planet you all had gone to on an expedition."

Immediately, both Quinn and Fex looked at each other. For it wasn't just the planet that their school had gone on an expedition for, but it was also the planet where they had awakened Arthur from his sleep.

'The Dalki were found there? And the Dalki are there as well. Does this mean... could Arthur really be working with the other side? Just what could they be doing there?' Quinn wondered.

"Why didn't the Earthborn group ask for the Graylash faction or the Cursed action for help?" Chucky couldn't help but ask.

"It's a good point to make, but it was because they didn't think they needed to. Their scouts estimated for there to be only one or two dozen Dalki, a number that two fleets should have been able to beat. There were also rumours of humans living at the settlement in peace, which made the Earthborn group assume they had to be Vs. They sent out two head generals to deal with the situation, Samantha and Sach."

"In the end, the Dalki known as One Horn showed up there as well. Oscar had already predicted something like this might have happened, so he had stayed in the vicinity. The next thing they knew the humans were retreating from the settlement, Sach is in the hospital and Samantha has come out relatively fine. As for Oscar... It seems like he is on his last legs."

"By the time we received a request for help, he was already facing One Horn to allow everyone else to escape. He barely managed to escape, but his arms, legs, and limbs were ripped from his body. His heart has remained intact, and same with his brain, but he is unresponsive at the moment."

"They are keeping him alive, but are unable to perform surgery on him, for fear it might end his life. Now Innu is all that's left really for the Earthborn group. Samantha can't focus her attention due to her father's situation and refuses to leave his side."

"Sach will live but might never be able to fight again, so Innu is panicking and has called for help from the Graylash and the Cursed faction otherwise things might seriously fall apart. I concur with his opinion that this base has to be important to them. The plan is to launch a coordinated attack with you and Owen. And for Owen's response he is waiting for your reply first."

'Didn't Erin and Paul tell us about the people in that Planet, they are not vampires. They were the people that Arthur was with at the time. So why are the Dalki there as well, and why haven't they killed them?'

'Maybe if we go to the place, I'll find out why Arthur did what he did.'

"Decline the request to attack the Dalki!" Was the first words out of Eno's mouth after hearing what had happened. "Quinn, perhaps you're curious why they are on that planet, but it is not worth the risk if One Horn is there."

"One Horn, even if he isn't the strongest Dalki in existence, he is at least the primary reason why the humans, or even vampires for this matter, have little hope of winning this war. Think of what happened to Oscar! He had a Demon tier weapon with him, and two head generals by his side and still ended up in that state."

"I agree." Mona said, who had mostly been recovering in the castle after suffering from trying to take over the demon tier beast. "All of the leaders in the past fought

against One Horn, and we still weren't able to kill him. However, he must have gotten stronger to be able to do something like that.'

Although two people were warning him, Quinn felt like they were overreacting. Whenever he had been fighting he had gotten through tough situations and the only opponents that were able to completely overpower him had been Hilston and Arthur.

Were they claiming that One Horn was on their level?

Still more so than anything, Quinn wanted to go there, hoping he might discover something about Arthur. Maybe the people he had protected would know something.

"Perhaps this isn't my place to speak." Layla chimed in. "But I think that Innu is obsessed with revenge at the moment and since he can't do it himself, he wants to use us to achieve his goal. I think the more important thing is what to do with Oscar. Since he's still barely alive shouldn't we help him?"

'Did Layla really just suggest that?' Quinn was baffled.

If a person was on the verge of death, what could they do? The only thing they could do was...to turn that said person into a vampire.

"She's right, this could be the chance to have someone of great influence under your control, but what would the people think, if all of their leaders were suddenly something...different to them." Eno commented with a smirk.

"Can't I help somehow?" Shiro asked, raising his hand. "If I can move Raten and Vorden into a body, doesn't that mean I can do the same thing to Oscar?"

"We haven't tried your ability on humans yet though. We don't know what you can do, especially on someone who is unconscious or brain dead. Maybe Oscar is still alive, but his head is gone" Fex replied. "We don't know until we test the situation ourselves, but using a World Leader seems like a bad place to start. The easiest way might indeed be to convince humans that vampires are good if we turn him in."

Now the humans in the group were starting to catch on, what exactly Layla was getting at.

"He should have a choice in that matter." Logan interjected. "It's unfair to turn someone against their will. I'm sure many people would jump at this opportunity if it was to become a vampire or death, but I for one don't think it's right to just turn someone because it's more convenient to us."

"Also it's not clear yet if he can't be saved another way. Technology has advanced very well. Even without limbs, if he wakes up he will be able to do everything he could before."

In the middle of their conversation, the device in the centre of the table started to vibrate once again, noting that there was an incoming call. When answering they could see Sam again.

"I know I haven't given you enough time to decide what to do, but that is not why I called. Quinn the request that you have asked, we have finally been able to find one. A humanoid Demi-god tier beast."

'Finally.' Quinn thought, as he looked towards Shiro.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1127: The strange plan

Sam's second message kind of flew right above everyone's heads. Barely anyone had paid it attention due to the first message pertaining to such a serious matter that they were all still thinking long and hard about before.

"Sam, while you are still on the line I have made a decision. I want you to report back to head general Innu, and Owen Graylash." Quinn said in a serious tone after having listened to the opinion of all those around him. Everyone turned towards the centre of the table to listen to their leader's next words.

"Tell them that the Cursed faction will not participate in the mission to get rid of One Horn." Quinn stated.

A lot of them were holding their breaths, but in all honesty they felt relieved that Quinn had decided to abstain. Most of them had been worried about what would become of the Cursed faction if Quinn might suffer a similar fate to Oscar.

"I would also like you to convey my personal advice for Owen and Innu to refrain from attacking the place. If my hunch is right, the Dalki there won't be doing anything any time soon. Attacking them will only cause more trouble, but I also want to make one more thing clear."

"The Cursed faction is not going to completely leave them be forever either. We will deal with them, just not now." Quinn added.

There had to be a reason why Eno was so sure the human race would lose against the Dalki without his help, and it seemed like the Dalki known as One Horn was a major one.

Perhaps in the past Quinn might have rushed in, wanting to learn the truth quickly, wishing to avenge Oscar. However, now as a world leader, he was aware that his decisions didn't just affect him but the whole world.

Although not now, he still intended to find out just why the Dalki would appear near a human settlement without killing the inhabitants and how exactly Arthur fit into the whole picture.

Innu was currently on one of the Bertha ships the military owned, yet not the same one as Oscar.

Sitting at his desk, he was biting away at his fingernails, not in fear or anxiousness instead it was in excitement.

'I can't believe such an opportunity has actually come my way.' Innu thought to himself. 'I saw how strong Quinn was against the Dalki. If it's just one of them, and

with Owen who has already faced a four spiked Dalki, in the mix we can definitely defeat it with the three of us!"

'As long as the three of us can get rid of it, what the other two head generals and the Supreme Commander couldn't, just what position would that put me in? I will be at the top of the ladder! A world leader, the next to become Supreme Commander! Oscar was getting old in the first place, and with how things had been going it's clear that he was most likely going to pass on the role to someone like his daughter Samantha, or that head general Paul of the second base.'

'However, after seeing the way she acts now it is clear she is not fit to be leader. There will be public outcry if she was to be chosen. Everyone will be on my side.' Innu was already dreaming about donning the mantle and receiving the praise and admiration of everyone.

The much awaited call finally came through, and Innu answered it rather quickly. However, it was nowhere near what Innu had hoped to hear. It also wasn't so much a conversation between the two of them as Sam merely passing on Quinn's message on the Cursed faction's stance.

"Let me speak to him! LET ME SPEAK TO QUINN RIGHT NOW!" Innu shouted down the receiver, holding back his anger to not crush it with his hand. Sam of course had half expected this reaction when delivering the message forward. He understood why Quinn had left him this task to handle instead of doing it himself.

"I'm sorry, but Quinn is extremely busy at the moment. He is currently undertaking a secret mission and is unable to get out. I would also like to remind you that we from the Cursed faction do not work under the Earthborn group so you have no jurisdiction over us. We have our own people and planets that need protection. Sending in more people could just cause more deaths." Sam tried to give Innu a professional reply to get him off his back.

"LIES! I know why you won't attack them! It's because you're working with them! The reason why the Dalki are leaving them alone are because they are Vs just like you all! I knew we couldn't trust any of you! Hear my word, I will be sure to let everyone know about this!" Innu complained.

"HEAD GENERAL INNU GET A GRIP ON YOURSELF!" Sam cautioned the other. "I understand that you must be emotional right now, so I shall pretend you hadn't said any of that. Let me repeat, our Cursed faction merely said that we won't attack the planet right now. As soon as Quinn is done—" Sam was trying to fix things diplomatically, but from the other end he heard Innu continue his angry rant. The other seemed unwilling to listen to a word he said, so Sam eventually just ended the call.

'How did someone like him ever become a head general in the first place? I guess this is what happens when you choose the people in high positions based on power over brains. Argh, we still need to keep a good relation with the Earthborn group. I have a feeling that all three groups will be needed to save us all.' Sam thought. He

sighed and opted to call Innu back later once he might have calmed down to smooth things over.

Fortunately, delivering the message to Owen was a completely different experience.

"I'm sure he has his reasons." Owen had said in an understanding tone. "I also was contemplating on what to do after what has happened to me but I think the Cursed faction might know more about this Dalki situation than us. So I will trust him."

Back on Blade Island. After the call had ended, Quinn had wanted to do a few more things with Shiro. They were still waiting for Richard's people to arrive after all, and after a series of tests he thought that Shiro was truly ready.

Nearly the whole group were back outside in front of the castle, and had continued where they had left off with the tests.

"The only problem is that you need to touch the person in order to use your ability. It's similar to the beast's taming ability, and Sil's ability as well." Quinn summarised, as he had some concern written on his face.

"Quinn, I have to ask. What was Sam going on about before?" Layla asked. "About how he had found a humanoid Demi-god tier beast? Do you need its crystal for some reason?"

Quinn looked around to check if Eno, or Brock were nearby and then sniffed the air, but it didn't seem like they were around. He then smiled and shook his head.

"I don't need the crystal." Quinn replied. "I wanted to use their bodies and I'm not just looking for one humanoid beast, but two."

At that moment, Sil sprung up like a bamboo shot.

"Quinn are you..."

"If you're okay with it." Quinn smiled. "I've been thinking of a way we can do this for a while now, a way to bring back Vorden and Raten without relying on Richard. You see, his clones would be a temporary step anyway and I don't trust him not to have some sort of power over them. Besides, they would have had to learn the ability of the Blades again."

"I don't feel comfortable using another human's body either, and I don't think Vorden would like that either. So I asked Logan and Sam for a request and they have been searching for a long time now and it looks like they have finally found one."

"Why do you think I've been asking Shiro to do so many tests on the beasts here? I needed to know if his ability would work on beasts just as well as they did on humans. The worry was if we were to put a human mind in a beast, since there not

like for like maybe that would cause some problems. If it did then we would just have to get Shrio to put them back.

I thought, what's the closest thing to a human that could survive for a really long time? Why not a humanoid beast? Their intelligence is great, similar to humans and some can even speak especially at the higher tiers." Quinn shared his thoughts on the matter.

Everyone's mouths were left wide open as they couldn't believe their ears. Quinn was really suggesting that they put both Vorden and Raten into the body of a humanoid beast!

"Now all we need to do, is check if Raten and Vorden are still in your head." Quinn said looking at Sil.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1128: Going a bit crazy

A lot of time had already been spent waiting on Blade Island, but there didn't really seem like there was anything the group could do. Quinn was getting more and more frustrated with each passing day, especially now that there was a potential way to help Vorden and Raten.

He kept himself busy during his free time by reading through the notes that had been left behind about the abilities that Hilston had kept. Since they weren't ability books he was unable to use the system to instantly learn the information and had to go through them the old-fashioned way. In those peaceful moments, Quinn felt reminded of being a student who was cramming to prepare a presentation for class.

Still, they needed to progress and move forward, so Quinn eventually went to Eno with a request.

Eno and Brock would usually spend their time on top of one of the castle's four towers; today's choice had been the east tower. As far as Quinn could tell the two older men seemed to be just staring up into the sky.

"The Dragon no longer needs to be moved, and a lot of time is being wasted. While we are just waiting here the Dalki out there are constantly out on the move. I think it's best if we leave this place." Quinn said after he had arrived.

"Have you come here to ask me for my permission?" Eno asked without so much as changing his lying posture. "In case you've forgotten, you're your own leader. The goal of this mission was to complete your side of the deal, but we have already agreed that it's for the best to let the Dragon remain here. At least for the time being."

Quinn hadn't forgotten the supposed hierarchy, but due to Eno being with them for a while, and him being the person Quinn had searched for for the longest time, it felt weird to just decide to do things without him. Besides, Eno always had something to say about Quinn's decisions, so he was surprised to hear this now of all things.

"I've come here to inform you about our next course of action. So what are you planning to do? Are you going to come with us, or do you want to wait for the others?" Quinn asked.

"We will stay here." Brock answered as he sat up to face Quinn while Eno continued to stare out towards the sky. "Me and Eno have evaluated the Cursed faction long enough. There won't be much of a difference with us being there or not, and at this point I think my master has something he would like to say."

Brock, then bowed down and stepped aside holding his hand out. Eno took Brock's hand and got up, facing Quinn.

"Congratulations, Quinn. It looks like you're indeed the one I have been waiting for. Now I don't want you to get too big headed." Eno 'praised' the Cursed faction leader. "After watching you for a while, you seem to have the talent to end up in all sorts of situations. Although I'm still not sure if I should say you've been blessed by a god of good luck or one of bad luck considering the constant things that you face."

"Now with the state the human race is in, you are really the only person I can trust to stop the Dalki. You've heeded my warning and you have many people around you that will help. You know what you need to do, when the time is right, I will have someone come out and seek you, but remember Quinn, you are to complete your side of the bargain no matter what!"

"When we need to move the dragon, you will do so with Sil's ability or without it!"

The conversation was over, and Quinn was free to leave, but as he did, he couldn't help but wonder what Eno meant by his words. Did he know what Quinn was planning to do? That he was going to try and bring back Vorden and Raten before moving the Dragon tier beast?

He somehow had known many things before that he shouldn't have been aware of, but at the same time that knowledge hadn't been omniscient.

'Richard did help create the system with me and Logan's family.' Vincent commented. 'He was also able to override it that one time, which means that perhaps he has a way to access your system and see everything you are doing. In some type of way.'

If that was true, then that was a scary thought to have. This system was what had allowed Quinn to grow stronger in such an incredible fast way. It had helped him along the way, but it was a fact that he didn't have complete control over it. Perhaps one day it could be used against him, which made Quinn think if he would have to look for a way to get rid of it at some point.

'I'll need to learn to be less reliant on the system. Even without it, my body can still work using most skills. Still there are some things like the soul weapons and more that I can't use without it yet.'

In the past, it had been beneficial for Quinn to learn how to use the skills himself anyway, rather than relying on the system. It would solve the light delay in time that he had when activating skills through the system.

So it just made more sense for him to learn how to use the abilities properly. Unfortunately that required a lot of time, and how often was he really granted such a luxury? Not to mention there was so much for him to learn and do.

Now knowing that they were to head off the island, Quinn decided to head for the tablet one last time without everyone else. The dragon had remained there and now

only half opened one eyelid to see who it was. As soon as he recognised Quinn, he closed it again and continued his slumber

'Who would have ever thought I would make a Demon tier beast grow so accustomed to me that it would just sleep around.' Quinn thought amused.

He started at the tablet and checked his Quest log. There were two main quests still available for Quinn. One to find out what lay beyond a Vampire Lord, only levelling up was taking an incredibly long time these days.

He was also worried that this was something no other vampire had ever reached or heard of before, so when would he evolve again? Level 70? Level 80? Level 100? There were perhaps any other conditions the system wanted him to fulfill?

As for the second quest that was to find out more about the Talen family.

'How do I even start that?' Quinn wondered.

When checking out his system, his eyes went towards one of the items that were there, something he still had no idea what to do with.

'The seedling from the Demon tier beast. I was thinking about putting it somewhere on the Cursed ship so I could observe it, but that might be too dangerous. It would be a catastrophe if it turns into the same Demon tier tree again.' Quinn thought.

He could just try to plant it on the original planet it came from, but none of the inhabitants would want that for obvious reasons. Then there was Blade Island. Currently it was inhabited by no one but a large dragon and beasts.

In the middle of the open ground, Quinn dug a hole, and planted the seed in place covering it up. He really didn't know what to do, or what he expected to happen from the seed now. He just watched it for a few seconds, and then, the ground where it was buried started to light up, glowing slightly pink.

A strong life energy could be felt from it, but at the same time it was only a baby.

'Will this really grow into another Demon tier beast? I guess this island will be the best place to put it, it won't do harm to the tablet, and even if the Dalki attack they would be in for a surprise.' Quinn smirked at the thought.

For a second the dragon turned its head and got up on all fours looking at the area the seed was planted, it looked like it was about to do something, but then soon sat down.

'Did it not like that to put the seed here, maybe that guy from inside the tablet told it to calm down.'

"Hey big guy, I'll be leaving now. Make sure you look after this little seed for me alright. You already protect the tablet so that can't be too hard of a job for you, right?" Quinn asked.

The dragon blew through its nose once. Quinn had no idea if that was supposed to be a yes or no, but one thing was clear, it could somewhat understand what he said.

Going back to the seed Quinn placed his hands on it once again. The higher tier a beast was, the more advanced its intelligence seemed to be, so maybe it was the same with this seedling even though it was a baby.

"Grow up big and strong okay, and when I come back, try not to kill me." Quinn spoke to it softly.

The pink lights shined brightly for a few seconds then dimmed down again.

"I must be going crazy, talking to a seed." Quinn mumbled once he was a bit away.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1129: Always getting in the way

After more than a week of relaxation on Blade Island the Cursed group had finally headed off again, back to the main Cursed ship. There they wanted to retrieve further information from Sam on the details of the Demi-god tier humanoid beast.

Humanoid beasts were said to be the strongest type of beast for that specific tier. Not just because of their powers but more so because of the level of intelligence they displayed. Quinn had now fought against two Demon tier beasts, but neither of them had been the humanoid type, so perhaps this would prove to be more difficult than that, in fact he was sure of it for a major reason.

Their goal was not to kill the beast but to capture it. What's more since they planned to use its body, they would have to make sure to keep it as intact as possible. Sure, a healer might be able heal some of its wounds, but that was under the assumption their abilities would work on the beast's body.

Chucky was the last one to enter after taking a toilet break. The room was mostly silent and Quinn could be seen reading a book, as for himself though he didn't really have anything to do, so decided to go to the bar-like setting area and chat with the others.

"So I heard that the Demi-god tier crystal is also near the earth station, right?" Chucky asked. "Does that mean you're going to pay Oscar a visit before landing, or on the way back?"

Quinn placed his book down after folding a corner of the page to remember where he was, and looked up at who had asked the question. Chucky didn't exactly have a memorable voice.

"We will make a stop before confronting the beast. Perhaps Shiro might be able to do something after all, and we can also take the chance to take a look at the others." Quinn replied. "It should further prove that our relationship is not just a superficial one. There is just one troublesome person I would like to avoid."

That person was naturally Innu, the head general that was currently in charge of the Earthborn group. Despite Sam doing his best to smooth things over, it had been apparent that the other didn't trust them for refusing to get revenge on the Dalki.

Shiro was still practising using his ability. He had yet to manage to communicate or wake up Raten and Vorden in Sil's mind. Without that, the whole mission would be useless. The only problem was, that this was considered a different skill to swapping minds and such, and one couldn't really practice this on beasts either, so Shiro was left to read the notes left behind carefully.

'How did they get this much information? They must have really put the Original user of this ability through a lot.' Shiro thought as he looked through the pages, seemingly hoping it might reveal something new to him.

Going by the dried blood stains, he could imagine them practically torturing the man, putting him in life and death situations while another person sat down and wrote notes.

Finally, the ship had arrived at the Cursed base, and everyone was free to relax again once more. A quick update showed that nothing bad had happened to the ship while they had been away, still Quinn wanted everyone to keep on their toes just in case anything was to occur.

However, there were a couple of people that Quinn didn't expect to be around. When he was walking through the halls, he could hear a particular voice from quite a short distance away.

"So how much has changed for you ever since you found out about the existence of the V?" Bonny asked.

"Honestly, not much has changed around here. We continue to operate just as we did before. I trust the leaders, they pay well and so far they haven't shown any signs of planning to break their promise to look after our families even after anything happens to us."

"That's a benefit that not everyone can guarantee, which is why I decided to stay in the first place. The only thing I will say is we don't really interact much with the leader Quinn and most things are done through..." As the man was about to finish his question, the very person he was speaking about was approaching the two of them.

---

The two that had arrived on the ship in Quinn's absence were Bonny and Void. They had gone to the break room and had explained to Quinn exactly the reason why they were here. It was due to the recent reaction and announcement of the Cursed faction having V amongst them, most prominently Quinn himself.

"Don't you think this is a good idea?" Bonny asked as she took a sip of her coffee. "People are scared after the reveal of the V but as if that wasn't enough, they have also been told that you are our supposed allies. Is it any wonder that most don't know who they are meant to believe now? Showing them the daily life of those in the Cursed faction and telling them what you guys are planning to do, this way people will be less fearful of you!"

As she was saying that, Void walked over and passed a coffee over to Quinn, and his hands were shaking as he handed the cup over. Of course, Quinn placed it right

down onto the table. He knew Void was just trying to be polite but he didn't drink that stuff.

It was at that point that Void started to realise all the different small actions of Quinn and certain other people on board.

"If you are wondering, I just drink blood and meat that has been cooked quite rare. We can also taste alcohol as well." Quinn said with a smile. "You can put that in your little interview if you want to spread the word out."

Quinn was trying to be a little playful and it driving home how people viewed them. The fact was even Void was scared of him right now, so he couldn't imagine all the others that were out there as well.

"I assume Sam has already given you permission, so I don't see any reason to revoke it." Quinn sighed. The secret was out, so what was the worst that could happen?

"Actually I was kind of wondering about Quinn. We heard the news about Oscar, it hasn't been announced yet, but are you going to go and try to save him?" Bonny asked.

After what had happened with Owen, Bonny and Void actually had paid a visit to him first, and Owen couldn't shut up about the apparent miracle that Quinn did on him. How he had saved him when no one else could.

So they assumed that perhaps Quinn would be going to Oscar next, and perform something similar. Catching this on video would be sure to change the opinions of everyone around the world.

"Unfortunately Oscar's situation is completely different to Owen's." Quinn admitted. "I will certainly pay him a visit, and there are a couple of things we will try to do to help him, but we have already talked about it and we will make sure that nothing will be done against his will."

---

In order to travel to the Bertha ship where Oscar was currently receiving medical treatment, the Cursed faction needed to ask for permission and make them aware that they would be coming for a visit.

Of course at the moment the person who was incharge was displeased.

'You're saying those Cursed bastards are planning to visit the Supreme Commander? Do they really expect me to comply when we know what they are?! What if this was all a plan, what if he strikes him on his deathbed or worse, he turns him into one of them?!"

'It could be the end of the human race as we know it, I have to put a stop to the two of them getting it.' Innu worried.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1130: Bringing one back

While waiting for a response from the Earthborn group, there was something that Quinn needed to do beforehand anyway. Inside his own personal training room was Logan, Sil, Shiro, Peter, Fex and Layla.

These people were in the room due to their connection with a particular person they were planning to bring back.

'This room looks a lot better than the last time I was in it.' Quinn thought as he noticed the walls were no longer covered in blood.

Shiro was standing on one side of the training room, with Quinn just behind him. While standing opposite the two of them was Sil. Everyone had gathered because today was the day where they were going to run a little test. A test to see if they could wake up Vorden and Raten, who were inside Sil's head.

"If it doesn't work, I won't blame you," Sil said. This had come as a surprise to everyone. Sil was actually the one trying to comfort someone else for a change. Hanging around with Shiro and making a new friend really did help him out.

'I don't want Sil to go back to the way he used to be, if we get back Raten and Vorden, only one mind can be present at a time, and maybe Sil will just go back to the way he was before. This is just a test for now, and we will definitely move them later.'

"Right, I think I have the hang of it now, but it might take a few tries for it to work. I've never done this before." Shiro said. He wasn't worried about using his powers. It was more that he was concerned about disappointing Sil and everyone around.

"We have analysed that there should be less risk at this point," Logan stated. He was looking at some information on holographic screens that would appear in front of him. A copy of the notes was on display, giving him everything he needed. Placing it in his database to bring up whenever he wished.

"Using this type of skill with his ability only requires you and another user. There is little room for problems to occur. Perhaps the worst thing that could happen is that the two of you switch minds, then we would have another problem on our hands.

"Still, we wouldn't have lost the ability. Since even if you were to end up in Sil's body, due to the two of you touching, you would still have the same ability to fix the problem that has occurred. In a way, doing this with Sil due to his ability is probably the safest person one can do it with."

It was clear that Logan's explanation was meant to calm Shiro down, but it didn't help one bit. Still, he had practised for this day and placed his hand on top of Sil's

head. Everyone waited silently for a few seconds, and Shiro's hand started to glow slightly.

"It... didn't work," Shiro said, looking at Sil's disappointed face, but Quinn quickly placed his hand on Shiro's shoulder.

"It didn't work yet," Quinn said.

They repeated the process over and over again, and Shiro carefully tried to remember how to use the skill. Even Logan would reiterate the words and how the ability user of the past felt when using this skill.

After several tries, it seemed like Shiro had finally gotten somewhere. His body was currently in a dark room, or it was safer to say that his mind was. He had done this several times and had gotten to this step, but before, he couldn't see anyone. Now he saw something for the first time.

Two glowing lights out there in the Dark space. As he reached out to them, his hand went through it like it was nothing.

'I thought that would work. What should I do?' Shiro thought.

He was unsure if this would work, but maybe things were complex because several minds were in one. Instead of swapping minds like he had done before. On the outside, he was already using the ability and had to concentrate. Focus on using the body while exploring the black space.

But what if this version of him, the one in the black space, also needed to use the ability. Shiro held out his hand again, touching the bright ball of light. Then his hands started to glow, and he was transported inside of another Dark space.

Only he wasn't alone, and another could be seen.

"What is this?" The person said as he turned around. Am I dreaming? I've been alone in this place for so long, but I've never seen anyone before, and I don't even recognise you?"

The speaking boy looked identical to Sil, only he stood quite confident, tall and had a calm look about him.

'Based on what Sil said about the other two people, this one should be Vorden. He said Raten would start cursing at me the second I entered.'

"My name is Shiro, and I'm part of the Cursed faction. Quinn sent me here to see you. He's been looking for you for a long time now." Shiro said.

At first, Borden was taken aback, but then the largest grin possible on his face appeared.

"They've been looking for me, and this whole time as well? What good friends." Vorden replied as he wiped his face with the sleeve of his shirt.

"My ability has allowed me to come into here. I think we can bring you back to the way you were before so the three of you can occupy Sil's mind. Right now, the group is looking for a body to transfer you into, and it looks like he might have found something..."

Shiro explained Quinn's plan, how he wanted to move him into a humanoid beast. Initially, when Vorden had made his decision, he did so for everyone. Not just Sil, but he wanted to protect them all and knew he wasn't strong enough to do it.

At the time, he really didn't know what would happen to him. He was stuck in a black room similar to the one before, only he was alone with no way to see or do anything. In here, he had a lot of time to think, and he missed his friends dearly.

"I can wait a little longer," Vorden said. "I don't care. Quinn can put me in a regular beast for all I care if it works out. I just want to see everyone again, but I think it would be best to leave me be for now. It sounds like that they might need Sil if they plan to capture this powerful beast alive. Our reunion can wait."

When speaking, Shiro could tell Vorden sounded like he was in pain. He knew he desperately wanted to get out of this place. Shiro had never seen a stronger person in his life. Despite all this, he was still willing to make a sacrifice for the whole sake of the Cursed faction.

"I promise, I Promised Sil and Quinn I would bring you back, so I will be back!" Shiro shouted.

"Oh, before you go, don't worry about the other one. If he knows, he will just complain about it and make him even madder. Let it be a nice surprise for when he's finally free." Borden said, speaking about Raten.

Finally, leaving the Dark space, Shiro was now in Sil's Dark space, then he had to leave once more. Opening his eyes, he was finally back in the regular room.

"I did it!" Shiro said with excitement, but his forehead and the side of his head was sweating, sweat dripping onto the floor, and Quinn was right behind him, having caught him. Not even Shiro had noticed he had expanded all of his MC cells and a lot of energy doing such a thing that he had fallen over.

"I spoke to Vorden...both in there." Shiro managed to say before passing out and going into a deep sleep.

Sil had already summoned a wave of tears from his eyes, and he was drenching his shirt sleeve, trying to cover it up.

'It looks like they both are still there, now we just need two more humanoid beasts, and we can get all of them back. Just you wait.' Quinn thought.

'Two more?' Vincent replied.

'Don't you remember what I said before, Vincent? We're getting you a body as well.'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1131: The Green's power

If Quinn had claimed he wasn't worried about the whole Vorden and Raten situation, he would have been lying. He was incredibly worried as he had no clue what had really happened to them, only Sil's account on the matter.

Finally Shiro brought them the confirmation they needed, that the two of them were both still present in Sil's mind. Now, everything they had done and everything they were going to do wouldn't be in vain.

The one most happy about it was undoubtedly Sil. Ever since he was practically walking around the base with a hop and skip in his steps. He greeted everyone that walked past. It was almost like he had turned into a completely different person, on top of that, he would constantly ask Shiro, what Vorden said, and how he was doing, even asking Shiro to speak to him again.

Shiro would have been happy to oblige, but using his ability had taken a toll on him and Quinn had ordered him to rest for the time being. Every human was born with a certain amount of MC cells, and it looked like Shiro had almost hit his maximum with doing what he needed to do.

Still, Sil wasn't the only one that was over the moon with this information. Little Borden was as excited that he would finally see his brother again. There was also other good news for him as the syringes of serum were able to be made from Logan. Right now it was just a temporary measure though. Logan was still trying to further improve on it, so that they could bring Borden back to his full size.

Finally, with all that done on the Cursed ship it was time for the group to move out again. The original gang who all knew Vorden was insistent that they wanted to come with Quinn. Logan, Fex, Layla, Peter, Sil and of course Shiro.

However, due to Wevil and Linda still being away with Alex who was crafting the Demon tier weapon, Quinn had asked Peter to stay behind once again.

"I'm sorry that it's you again, Peter, but you have to understand I'm only asking you to stay behind because of how strong you have become. You've been training with Nate, right? Improving how to fight?" Quinn tried to explain the reason behind his choice.

Peter ultimately agreed to follow the order and was currently seeing Quinn and the group off as they were boarding a medium sized ship. One that would be used for commercial flights. They weren't traveling far or heading into battle so it made sense for them to not waste resources.

"You know I was told that a normal Wight's stats usually hit a limit, and that they are able to be as strong as the leader to a certain extent, but you keep on improving and you are just as strong as me. With your healing abilities and if you carry on

improving your martial arts, I think anyone that tries to take over this ship will regret it." Quinn said, giving him a few pats on the back.

In the past Quinn used to be worried about Peter a lot, especially after turning him since his personality had changed quite a bit, but lately, as he got stronger bit by bit, his friend became able to display more emotions, and he could tell these few words that Quinn said had pleased him.

Regardless, whether Quinn said them just to please him or not, he was very serious about his words.

"Take this Quinn, maybe you'll need it." Peter said as he handed over the Mud mask, Peter's soul weapon. "You don't have to put it on straight away, and who knows when you might need to use it. People don't exactly like us at the moment."

Of course, Quinn took it and thanked Peter for the gesture. It was indeed a valuable item and thing to be able to change into another. Using his shadow, the Mud mask was one of the things that could be stored just like any other regular item, so Quinn could equip it on when needed.

"Just wondering, don't you have to decide who will disguise me as before you make it?" Quinn asked.

"It was.....what was his name again?" Peter thought. "Bucky."

Quinn smiled, and gave a wave to Peter as he walked towards the ship.

"I think it's Chucky."

There were two more that were on board that weren't exactly a part of the Cursed crew. There was Bonny and Void, who wished to document everything he was doing, at least him meeting Oscar.

The ship was off and started to head to the Bertha ship that Oscar was apart on. The message had been sent and the Earthborn group had already accepted their request. Getting some information from Sam. The Demi-god tier humanoid beast had been discovered on one of the Earthborn planets.

'Just our luck that the Demi-god tier had to have been found on an Earthborn planet... couldn't have been one belonging to the Cursed faction or the Greylash.' Quinn sighed internally.

Although the good news was everything they needed to do was close by.

During the trip, Bonny and Void were looking over the video that they had uploaded. It was doing well and was currently the most watched and hot topic at the moment. The small little documentary they had done on the Cursed ship, asking

about how the crew had felt living alongside the Cursed faction's V. The only problem was, the comments weren't exactly positive about the whole thing.

"Of course those from the Cursed faction are going to talk good things about them."

"Maybe they have some blood plant going on where they take their blood, or they're being forced to give those types of answers."

"What was the point of this? This whole thing feels like propaganda. Why are we just getting the view of the people from the Cursed ship? Did anyone else notice that the leaders hardly said anything?"

The Cursed faction was a strange group that always seemed to gather attention in one way or another. There were always people that felt their methods were contradictory so they didn't have the perfect record. Bonny honestly wanted to change that, but one video alone wasn't enough.

'The whole world is watching and wanting to know what you will do next, Quinn. You need to make them believe you can help them.' Bonny thought as she looked towards him.

Finally, the ship had arrived in the area of where the giant Bertha ship was, and it could be seen ahead, but there was something strange going on. As a fleet of ships had also come straight towards them, around ten small ones. These weren't regular ships either, or a commercial one like Quinn was currently flying with no weapons, these were ones that were agile and used for combat.

Then in front of them, there was a larger ship that was currently a quarter size of the big Bertha one. It was what the military had used in the past before the Bertha to transport a number of troops.

"This is Sergeant Malkuris of the Earthborn group speaking. I have been instructed by Head General Innu for you guys to make a little detour before heading to see the supreme commander. Please land on the ship in front of you beforehand."

Looking at the situation Logan went to console and looked at the radar around them. They could see that the fleet of ships went from the front and began to surround them in a type of circle.

"Quinn." Logan turned around to tell him that this whole thing reeked.

"I know, something is up." The other casually replied. The two of them were already making preparations to prepare for what was about to come. As Quinn went to grab something from a different room.

Then, all of the ships had finally circled around them. The lasers had lit up from each of the ships as they powered on.

"I will get rid of the V!" Innu shouted. "Fire!"

Seeing this, everyone on board was in a state of panic. Right now they were in the middle of space. If the ship was destroyed and they got shot down, they would all die in an instant. They needed to protect the ship, or Quinn needed to protect the people at all costs.

'How the hell do I do that!' Quinn thought, while he was still in the middle of getting ready.

"Doesn't this ship have any weapons?" Void panicked as he ran up to the command console as well, but it really was just a commercial flying vehicle. Since they were travelling to a friendly zone, Logan had suggested they keep all the battleships on the Cursed faction.

"Don't worry Quinn, I can deal with this one!" Logan said, as his eyes started to light up green, and a light was shining from his chest as it went all over his body.

'Is this, Logan's soul weapon?' Quinn wondered.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1132: Logan activate

With the amount of lasers that were pointed towards them, their small little ship would be destroyed in an instant. Quinn could probably save himself somehow using the shadow ability and at most a few others. However even that was a big if, and he didn't intend to leave anyone behind.

"These bastards, why are they attacking us?!" Quinn shouted in anger. He had already expected Innu to pull some stupid stunt to harass him, but he hadn't thought a head general could be crazy enough to outright execute the visitors.

Quinn quickly went to grab one of the space suits. It was quite fitting to the skin allowing the person to move about as they would do on earth. They also used a special jet pack of sorts on the back, that would allow for movement in space as well, but still the moment wasn't quite the same, and it would be near impossible for a single person to go fighting them all, but Quinn had to do something.

After putting on the suit that was all white in colour, he came back out and could see Logan at the console, his eyes glowing green, and the centre of his chest glowing.

'It's his soul weapon.' Quinn thought.

When the light diminished, Logan's hair was standing up and his eyes lit up green. His soul weapon was an enhancement type, which powered his abilities greatly and due to his ability it was quite unique in its own way.

"Quinn, I'll help you out!" Logan shouted, and soon Quinn was seen going through the airlock space, and exiting out of the spaceship. He quickly used the jets to propel him forward, and climb himself up onto the ship landing there.

'Damn it, it would have been useful to have learned how to use this thing during my second year of school.' Quinn regretted not having had this opportunity, as he slightly overshot where he wanted to go, but seeing a piece of the ship sticking out, he was able to grab on and pull himself forward.

A normal person with their strength wouldn't be able to hold on, as the force from the jet pack was too strong, but Quinn managed to do so with a single hand. He pulled himself forward to see all the ships surrounding them, but he noticed something else as well.

The outside of their ship was almost transforming into something. It started to resemble one of Logan's robotic spiders and then started to take shape in the form of a turret. This didn't just happen in one area but multiple areas.

Back inside the ship, Logan was concentrating hard.

"Bring me as many beast crystals as possible, I need to use them to power my weapons." Logan instructed, and Layla and the others were moving as quickly as they could as they headed into the storage to bring out the crystals.

Logan had figured out how to use his soul weapon a while ago, but the problem was it didn't seem that useful so he didn't really know how to use it for combat. His natural ability already allowed him to communicate with machinery and order them around.

Which was why he could show great power when he was surrounded by different types of technology and made it so his suits were made up from the small spiders. However, he couldn't do the same with other equipment.

He couldn't change or transform a computer into something else. His soul weapon allowed Logan to have complete control of the matter that he was touching, and also to turn it into a computer like system.

With Brock the two of them had practiced, to find a way this could be used. The easiest thing that Logan could do was to transform something electronic into his little spiders and then use them to form into something else.

Logan always had his own type of computer system with him at all times in the form of his suits. Which carried vital information with him wherever he went. He had multiple blueprints and designs of things he wanted to create.

Simply bringing up the blueprint and commanding the robotic spiders, Logan could turn these into them. What he also found was just like his suits which could be powered using the crystals, as long as he was touching crystals, he could also power whatever the small spiders turned into.

Temporary giving them the same effect. Whatever his spiders created, while holding the beast crystal it would essentially be the same level of beast gear for it.

On top of that there was one more thing his soul weapon could do, and that was transform non objects temporally into computerised objects. Something as simple as a book he could turn into a computer system to then be broken down into the spiders, either adding it to his own suit to create something significant or more.

This would use up more of his MC cells though, and would mean he would have less time to control things. For this reason, while he was on the ship that was already controlled using a computer system Logan was completely in his element.

He had transformed it to create five cannons, to combat those that were against them. He also changed his suit into a fourth form, which created a large thick tube on his back that would directly touch his skin as well.

This form was for when he was using his soul weapons. The others were placing the crystal into this tube and Logan was able to use the power of them all. As soon as the enemy fired out there shots. Logan did as well.

They both hit mid-space causing huge explosions. The attack was a little too close to the ship and it looked like they were going to get hit slightly, but with Quinn at the top, he had spread his shadow all along the ship, covering it from the explosion, then soon let it go again.

'If I didn't have as many MC cells as I do now, this probably would never work, and what the hell is Logan's soul weapon?' Quinn thought.

Still, they needed to focus on the problem ahead of them. The ships were too far for Quinn to hit with any type of attack, and the cannon's seemed to be equal in power.

However, when Quinn noticed that some of the turrets started to turn into something else, something Quinn recognised quite well.

'Are those... Mechs?! Is Logan controlling unmanned mechs now?!"

Half of the turrets were still on the ship, while the Mech's began to fly into space. While Logan was continuing to fire shots after his first attack, the shadow from Quinn could protect them like some type of shield, and the mechs could do the rest.

This made it so the enemy had to focus on one of two things. Either firing off and hitting the Mechs that were flying about, or the Cannons. No matter which one they would choose to focus on, the other would destroy their ship.

This had worked out perfectly. Some of the ships started to move to avoid the Mechs, but then a shot from a cannon destroyed it.

Quinn was blocking some of the shots being fired from the other ships with his shadow, while Logan continued to fire, controlling everything at the same time.

Since Logan's ability allowed him to communicate, he could program the mechs and turrets to act in a certain way, so there wasn't too much control he needed to expand on this part, other than the distribution of energy.

Eventually this continued, as the fleet's ships were destroyed one after the other, and finally only the large ship remained.

"Logan, can you hear me? Dock on board the large ship." Quinn ordered. "Bring back the Mechas. Let's take down whoever pulled this crap on us in person!"

Everyone inside the ship, as they watched what had happened, were relieved. They still couldn't believe how they had just managed to get out of that pinch. As for

Bonny she was worried because she had never heard Quinn sound so furious before.

'I remember what Arthur told me. I can't allow myself to remain soft to the people who actively try to kill me!' Quinn reminded himself, as the ship rushed forward. It looked like the two were going to crash, but with Logan in control and with his soul weapon out, it seemed he could do all sorts of things.

As it slowed down and the two of them were connecting. Logan could override the other ship's system, and forcefully opened the docking bay. Then finally they had finally landed inside.

Still on top of the ship, Quinn looked at all the panicked workers who were inside.

"SPEAK!! WHO THE HELL ORDERED THIS ATTACK?!" Quinn demanded to know.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1133: An upgrade in powers

Inside the ship, many of those around Logan wanted to hug him as he put his soul weapon away. He was kneeling on the floor, gasping for air. In fact, Fex actually went up and hugged Logan in a bear-like grasp.

"We made it man, you are the coolest little guy out there!" Fex said, but it was clear that his shaking of Logan was just making him sick, and Layla eventually had to tell Fex to stop.

"I hope that idiot didn't shake you too much," Layla said as she placed Logan in one of the operating seats near the command centre. "Seriously though, you were really amazing. I've never seen you do something like that before. Was that your soul weapon?" She asked.

"Yes, any object I can control with my body, after breaking them down into my little machines. They can then be used to create whatever blueprint I have." Logan explained. No matter how tired he was, he was always willing to tell people how his little inventions worked.

"Wait, anything? So those little mech robots we saw, could you have created a bigger one, or even made the whole ship into a giant fighting Mech!" Fex shouted, still having not calmed down.

"Yes," Logan replied. "The only reason I didn't was because everyone was still inside. I can use those robots to even improve my suits, just as long as I have the crystals to back them up. I guess it's an advantage because I can keep changing the forms, unlike when beast weapons are produced, but a disadvantage since the beast crystals energy will be completely used up."

They understood what Logan was saying. They could see that the crystals they had given Logan no longer had the bright glow they usually would have. They were the crystal that was also meant to power the ship as well.

While everyone was busy celebrating, the ramp could be heard being dropped from their ship. Two people on board were eager to go out. Bonny and Void who had their camera and his drone rolling.

"What are you doing? They just tried to kill us?" Shiro said, still not understanding why the Earthborn group would have attempted such a thing. He was a little afraid to step off the ship.

"That's why we need to catch everything," Bonny replied. "Quinn is still out there, and if I was him, I would be pretty pissed at what just happened. If that's the case, then who knows what is going to happen to whoever is responsible. If we don't get the truth out, then the world will only know that the Cursed faction had attacked the Earthborn when that is not true at all."

"Don't worry about that," Logan said, having recovered a little as he got up from his seat. "This ship has an auto-record function. I thought something like this might happen eventually. I managed to record everything. Including their voices on the intercom before the attack. I'll pass you the video along, and you can make a nice edit."

With the ramp down, everyone decided to head off the ship along with Bonny and Void, and they could see Quinn standing there with his shadow behind his back.

Fex was carrying Logan on his back. They couldn't leave him behind in the state he was in. He had his Dalki hand, but who knows what could happen.

"Is no one going to answer me?" Quinn asked, his voice echoing off the metal.  
"You just attempted to take our lives, and I can't even see the person responsible?"

The men were unsure how to act at that moment, but there was one thing for sure. The fleet they had just sent out, all the men on board had been killed, and they knew what Quinn was. They started to remember the speech Innu had given to them all beforehand.

"They are not like us! They are not human but V!" Innu said. "If you give them a chance, they will take not only your life but that of your family as well without a second thought! Look at what happened to Oscar, to Sach. This was all because they chose to trust the V!"

Due to these words ringing in their head, they immediately started to attack with their multiple abilities. The Earthborn group was composed mostly of the original military personnel, so the majority had the once military exclusive earth ability.

However, they could do nothing but watch their attacks hit the large shadow that seemed endless to them. They could see everything sinking into it and then being redirected to a different place. They attempted to even attack those behind Quinn, but the shadow would rise behind them before they could do anything.

"A monster, we can't hurt him! He's a monster!" They shouted as they continued on.

Quinn then looked at them all with his eyes glowing red and was suddenly in front of two of them up on a ramp above.

"Sleep!" Quinn commanded. The two felt drowsy as something took over their heads and collapsed to the floor.

"Get out of the way!"

"Move!"

Quinn continued with simple commands as he walked from the docking bay and continued to head towards the command centre. He would continue to use his Influence skill controlling each one of them while at the same time not lifting up a finger. Only the shadow would be used to stop the attacks.

"Hey, are you getting all of this? He is somehow able to control them all with just simple words." Bonny whispered over to Void.

She was worried how this would play out if the world saw how strong Quinn was, but at the same time, something else stood out as well, and it was the fact that Quinn hadn't hurt a single one. He just had just incapacitated them via his orders.

[Your Influence skill has levelled up]

[When using the Influence skill no longer requires you to keep eye contact]

[The skill can now be used in a wide range]

[Its effectiveness depends on how close one is, how fearful they are, and the user's charm stat point.]

It was a skill Quinn didn't even know could level up, part of the reason he hadn't used it that much in the first place, but on this ship, he had used it more than he had expected.

'It's a bit vague with its explanation, but let's see how it goes.'

Finally, he had arrived in front of a sealed door that led to the command centre, but with Logan, it didn't matter; he could unlock it. Even if they couldn't, Quinn could bash it open with his fist.

As the door was unlocked, the open area of the command centre could be seen. Inside, there was Innu in his full beast gear surrounded by ten men, ready to use their abilities and weapons.

"Attack him!" Innu shouted.

"Everyone, lie on the floor!" Quinn commanded, with his eyes glowing red, and in an instant, everyone in front dropped to the floor, as if an invisible weight had been put on their shoulders.

All but one. Innu was resisting the command, his legs shaking.

"You can stay up," Quinn said, looking towards him.

"Haha, I knew you were like this. I knew it was right to try and get rid of you!" Innu said, looking at them all. "I'm trying to save all of our lives. I will gladly sacrifice myself and all these men again if it's to save the human race!"

"Has something gone wrong with him?" Shiro said as he could tell something wasn't quite right. It was like he was almost purely afraid of Quinn and the others.

"From the first time we met, I've never liked you," Quinn revealed. "But back when the Dalki attacked, before you knew what I really was, you had come by my side and helped me fight them. We both worked together side by side, killing the Dalki."

"What's so different now? Shouldn't the enemy of your enemy be your friend? Why should it matter if I'm human or not?" Quinn asked.

"Isn't the answer obvious? You were working with the Dalki! Who would believe you could kill that many? Now I also understand, why you came to the school! You knew they were going to attack. You even told us beforehand! I should have known then. That fake Richard Eno you sent... the two of you... no, ALL THE V MUST BE WORKING TOGETHER!" Innu shouted and continued to laugh while shaking in fear.

He knew at this point that he could do nothing to stop Quinn.

"Back then, I saw you save the children and help me fight against the Dalki," Quinn said "Deep down, you must have thought to have done the right thing for the sake of humanity. I can't exactly fault you for that."

For a brief second, Innu had stopped shaking as there was a sign of relief ahead.

Was Quinn really going to let him go? Maybe he had been too rash with this attack, but he could build up trust in the future. He could get rid of the V easier then. His only mistake had been that he had never expected them to fight so well in space, but as long as he was kept alive, he could come back again.

Quinn looked him in the eye again and clenched his fist.

"However, when you attacked our ship, you didn't just go after my life. You went after the life of everyone on that ship. My comrades who are all dear to my life and I can not allow that to happen again!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1134: Defeated by fear

Right behind Quinn, everyone was watching him waiting to see what he would do. It was an important moment, but they trusted Quinn with whatever decision he was about to make.

At the same time, Bonny and Void were hot on the group's heels, filming every moment of what was happening. So far, Quinn had been calm enough to not kill anyone on board the ship.

'Will he also let Innu go, even after attempting to kill us all. Honestly, if it wasn't for Logan and Quinn back there, me and Void would have died as well!'

Quinn was furious, he could have snapped Innu's neck there in front of everyone, and he was angry enough to kill everyone involved as well, but he also knew that somewhere deep down, the soldiers were just scared and felt like this was the right thing to do in their minds.

However, a certain person had told them to pull the trigger, amplifying the fear of them all, and that was Innu himself.

With him being filmed, Quinn had to be careful how he acted. He couldn't just act on rage. Sure he could ask Bonny and Void to delete this part of the video since it wasn't broadcasted live. They would probably comply as well, but then there would be questions.

Either way, people would find out about what happened today, and if they only had footage of the first half, then rumours would start to spread. Often rumours were worse than the actual truth.

'What do I do with him! I can't just let him go free!' Quinn thought, his eyes still glowing red. The anger and fear were being directed to Innu. No words had been spoken, so he wasn't silent due to the influence. Innu knew that if he made a wrong move or tried to escape, he would be finished off in a second.

'Do I let Oscar deal with him, but we don't even know if Oscar will wake up again? I could use his body, then we wouldn't need to hunt for another humanoid beast. This person is trash and useless anyway, but that would mean Shiro would have to get involved. I wouldn't want to put Shiro through that.'

In the end, Quinn thought it might be best to allow Oscar to deal with this one if he was awake, but Quinn looked into Innu's eyes one more time, and he could tell. The hatred in his eyes was the same way people felt towards the a and how Quinn felt towards those who had bullied him for a long time.

Inuu wouldn't give up here. He would continue to fight. For some reason, he truly hated vampires.

"You really hate us that much?" Quinn asked as he walked over to Innu, and whispered telling him to kneel. Due to them making eye contact, the influence skill was a lot more powerful, and Innu couldn't fight it, falling to his knees.

At this point, Innu knew that perhaps his time was up.

"I'll kill-

"Shut up!" Quinn said as he walked over and leant down to eye level with Innu. At the same time, he made sure to use his body to block the camera. Quinn had then cut the tip of his finger and shoved it quickly into Innu's mouth before the camera could see anything. Then just before leaving, he stabbed the top of Innu's thigh with his clawed hands, falling to the ground. Not a large enough wound to kill him.

[The Blood ritual has been activated]

"Let's see what you are like when you become the thing that you have grown to hate," Quinn whispered.

Innu's eyes opened wide, and he wanted to shout, to say something but the order from before had kept it shut.

"I wondered why you hated us so much," Quinn said out loud, standing up and making it clear so everyone could hear him, including the camera. "Oscar and Owen have both claimed that the Cursed faction, although we are V, we are on your side. So why did you suddenly attack us? Why did you disobey Oscar's order?"

While Quinn was saying all of this, something strange was happening to Inuu's body. He could feel it changing inside him as he spoke. The pain was real, but the influence skill was still working, and his mouth refused to open.

"However, he didn't tell you one thing, that us V who are on your side can tell if there is another one among us. Of course, we have been open in telling everyone who we are. Now that we have come here, I have come to realise that the reason you so badly wanted to make out why you were against the V, is because you are one yourself. You were trying to fool everyone!" Quinn said.

He walked up to one of the men who was on the floor and lifted him up. He then cancelled the influence skill on all the others that were on the floor as well. They were slightly confused by Quinn's words, so they didn't act out.

Quinn's plan was working, and he waited just for the right moment when the evolution was complete.

He cut the palm of the soldier's hand, the blood dripping onto the floor.

"Do you remember what Oscar said, that the V reacts to the scent of blood? You see, we V of course are not affected by this, because we did everything we could to stop ourselves from being consumed by this curse, but some of the other V that are working with the Dalki, are consumed by blood like a lust."

Breaking the influence skill off from Innu, his eyes started to glow red, as he became a vampire for the first time. He had never experienced the smell of blood before. Quinn had purposely made wounds in his thigh so he would experience blood loss, craving for the blood even more. At the same time, due to what had happened, he was consumed with anger, unable to control his emotions.

His eyes had turned red, he could feel the fangs on his body, and immediately he started to run towards the soldier by Quinn's side.

Quinn, doing nothing, watched the shoulder, drew his beast sword, and was ready to attack Innu.

However, before he could get close, one of the other soldiers blasted Innu with an energy blast, an ability.

"It's true, Head General Innu was a V in disguise!" He shouted.

Innu didn't know what was happening, but he just wanted to get the blood in front of him. With his mind a little clear, he attempted to use his ability, but nothing was working. His Mc cells were gone.

"Everyone, fire!" the soldiers said. They threw and used their abilities one after another. With Innu having nothing, he was hit over and over again. It didn't take long until he eventually died there on the spot, falling to the ground, unable to heal.

'He was the one who had planted the fear of the V into his own men, and now he has died due to that very fear they had. Although a bit cruel, this death is fitting for him. I can't say it wasn't deserved.' Vincent said as he tried to rationalise why Quinn had done what he had done.

The others were left a bit stunned, they were unsure about what to do, and due to Quinn turning Innu, they thought maybe he would get him to work for them. They could also feel the bond activating as they were near Innu, but the ten high-level ability users that were at the level of sergeants had defeated Innu far too quickly for them to be able to do anything.

"Did you get everything?" Quinn asked, turning to the camera Void was using, and Void just nodded along.

"Remember, although we are V, we are on your side, and we are also the best in fighting against them. You may not like us, but we are something that you need. Let's go see how Oscar is doing." Quinn said as he went off.

Bony and Void stood there along with the sergeants, not knowing what to do, who to trust.

'How will the people react to this?' Bonny thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1135: Finish the story

It was clear that the soldiers in the room were at a loss of what to do. They stood there staring at each other, waiting for the next one to speak up, someone to take command. It was a rare sight, seeing their feelings were clearly being put out on display.

Right now, the reporter inside of Bonny wanted to speak to each of them. To see how they were feeling, but this story wasn't over yet. Sure she could make a video about the Cursed with what had happened so far, but she had a feeling that there was still a little more that Quinn was going to do.

"Come on, we have to film the rest of this story." As the two of them turned around, she said to Void and went along to catch up with Quinn and the others. Who's next destination was the Bertha ship to see Oscar.

They didn't have long to travel on the ship. They could even see the Bertha through the window ahead of them. Yet, there was still this awkward silence between all of them who were there until Layla had to say something.

"Quinn, he tried to kill us. I don't think what you did was wrong, and I guess you did it for us. A way so our hands wouldn't get dirty." Layla said. Trying to cheer Quinn up, but honestly, he wasn't thinking about Innu too much, but what would happen after.

"What will become of the Earthborn group, right?" Logan said as he was enjoying a nice lie down, making his chair vertical so he could see only the ship's ceiling. He was hoping that they wouldn't get any more surprises along the way.

"The main leaders of the Earthborn group, there is a good chance that none of them is fit to lead anymore." Logan went on to explain. "We don't know what state Oscar is in, but apparently such a bad state that he allowed something like that to happen. Then his daughter Samantha is probably heartbroken, and Sach, we don't know what he is like either."

"From Sam, it sounded like Innu had temporarily taken control of the Earthborn group, and Quinn... sorry not Quinn, but due to his own actions, Innu has ended up dead. There is no leader of the Earthborn group currently, at least no clear one. What tends to happen in a situation like this is either someone takes over they can all agree on, or there are internal disputes until a new leader rises."

Internal disputes at a time like this. The Earthborn group was the largest group out of the three. If they were to fight internally, then a large chunk of their attack force against the Dalki would be gone. As usual, sooner or later, the blame would get pinned on a particular faction.

"I wanted to ask this question as well." Bonny piped up. "Sure, we all know that Innu was the one that attacked us first, and although I don't believe in killing others,

he did attempt to take all of our lives. You handled it well, not harming the crew members and only dealing with the single person responsible.

"But I can say this because I am looking through things with a clear mind. During times of war, people's minds aren't so clear. Did you have something planned for after dealing with Innu? You must have known what state the Earthborn group would have been in."

"Cool your head and just chill with all the questions, hot stuff." Fex said, as he went over to Quinn and wrapped his arm around his shoulder, "And you did good dealing with the situation. If you had done it vampire style, every single one of them would have died, so they should be thankful.

"The Cursed group can just take over the other army groups. We already have two of them, and Nathan and Hayley trust us, right? So why won't the others?"

Bonny scoffed at the naive thought from Fex, but what she didn't realise was that, unlike the others, Fex was a vampire from birth, not understanding how humans felt.

"You saw how Innu reacted. Do you think he's the only one that feels this way?" Bonny asked, "The Dalki are an alien race, and for some people, they view the V as the same. Do you think they would be happy with the Cursed faction taking over? You should see the comments on the videos I uploaded if you really want to see what people think about you."

Tapping her watch a few times, a large holographic display appeared, and then several smaller screens filled with comments had come up. Everyone could now read them and see what the world thought of them.

It was heartbreak for the group to see the comments. All they had done was risk their lives fighting in hopes to save the world for these people, and this was their reward.

Sam knew that seeing such things would demoralise them, and he also knew that their group was far too busy to even have time to look at such things. This was why he had kept it to himself. The only other person who knew about the negative comments was Logan.

"Screw them all!" Fex said. "Quinn, you do this to help all of us. You know what you're doing is right, and we know that everything we have done is for the sake of these people. These keyboard warriors can shove the damn thing up their backside."

"So this is what people think about me?" Quinn was relieved and just smiled. "You know, for some reason, it doesn't hurt too much. Maybe it's because when I was a level 1, I would be called trash, worthless, an oxygen stealer, but now there is

attention on what we are doing, I will take this as a good thing, and Bonny, don't worry about the Earthborn group.

"We will solve this issue one way or another."

When they had finally arrived on the large Bertha ship, their treatment compared to what had happened with Innu was utterly different. There was a group of people there to welcome them, but something odd was going on.

"Quinn, I am so sorry!" A man said as he charged in with a few others. Pushing past the initial introduction group. This man was someone that Quinn hadn't seen for a while and was one of the generals at the second base, Nathan. He now also worked under the Cursed faction and was in charge of one of the army groups given to them.

"We could see what had happened, on our radar, but Innu's rank, he's.." Nathan said in a panic. It was clear that perhaps there was already infighting going on in the Earthborn group with Oscar gone. Sooner or later, if nothing was done, there would be a collapse.

In the first place, the two army groups that belonged to the Cursed faction were given by Oscar. They weren't wholly loyal to the Cursed faction. If it wasn't solved, the Cursed wouldn't know who to trust either.

"It's okay, Nathan. We could tell that Innu had used his own personal group for the attack. I will just assume that no one else knew about it." Quinn said.

When he finished, Nathan was peeking his head, looking at those coming off the ship as if he was expecting someone.

"Where is Head general Innu? We will bring him in and give him the appropriate punishment. I will talk to Samantha-"

"He's dead," Quinn said. "Bonny has the video of everything that went on and can explain things later. Please take me to the others right now, we should worry about those who are alive:"

Although Nathan was shocked, he felt like it had to be true. He wanted to ask more questions, but there was a certain air around Quinn and the others. It was as if the group were in business mode.

"I understand," Nathan said.

The group were quickly brought to the medical bay. It was mostly filled with white light, and the walls were coloured the same. There wasn't a single speck of dirt anywhere in the rooms, and they were now walking down a hallway with several large oval doors.

"First, I will take you to see Head General Sach since he is a bit more responsive," Nathan said. Putting in a code by the side of the oval door. A beep was heard, and the door slid down into the ground.

They could see that Sach was being cared for by machinery mostly, while only two people were left to monitor him, but he was conscious as he turned his head to look at the others. Still. His body was not in a good state. His arms and legs were completely wrapped up in metal casing.

"Quinn," Sach called out, a little excited, but then his mood seemed to dampen just as quickly.

"It looks like you put up quite the fight against the Dalki to end up in this state," Quinn said, trying to lighten the mood. Although Quinn wasn't close to Sach, he was close to his other side, his role-playing teacher in the power fighters game.

"I wish. I tried everything on that Dalki, but there was nothing I could do." Sach replied as he tried to move parts of his body, but it was useless. "You know, I thought my martial arts were the best in the world, and when I saw you using them, I felt even more so.

"As long as someone could keep advancing the martial arts, improving upon it, nothing could stand in my way until I met the five spiked Dalki. My ability strengthens my body, and since then, I have never broken a bone in my life.

"Now, look at me. My whole body has been shattered, and they say it's due to my ability that they can't heal it or put it back together? Nothing can work."

It was a sorry state to see someone like this, and all of them imagined if they were put in the same situation, they would feel the same way.

"Quinn," Sach said as he looked up at him. "I....I already asked you one favour, and it's shameful for me to ask you for another, but I heard you were able to heal Owen. Can you heal me?"

For a second, Quinn could see the hope in Sach's eyes. Quinn placed his hand on top of his legs to see if Sach was suffering from the same thing as Owen was, but this was different. He wasn't partially infected. As the doctors said, it looked more like his indestructible ability made it so healing techniques wouldn't work.

Abilities and the human body were a strange thing, and honestly. The way his body was, he wasn't sure that technology could heal this unless he was to turn mostly into a robot man.

From the look on Quinn's face, he could tell that it wasn't an option. He hadn't given up yet.

"I heard from a report from Samantha," Sach said. "That the teacher known as Fex was badly injured, and when he was given blood, all the wounds on his body had healed. I'm assuming he is a V. If I was turned, would I be healed?" Sach asked.

This was the second part of the story Bonny was looking for, as she and Void continued to film it all.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1136: The odds

After seeing how Innu reacted after finding out about what the V were, Quinn had been sure that most other people would share his underlying fear of the V. So much so that he never imagined that Sach would voluntarily ask to be turned.

Unfortunately, there was an underlying problem even if Quinn did agree to Sach's request. He had plenty of spaces left to turn others, numbering 18 as of now.

Whenever someone Quinn had turned died, one of the available slots would return to him as well. Turning Innu hadn't caused any problems in that department, but the troublesome fact was that he had no way to control what Sach would turn into.

'You were a little lucky when you turned Innu, but you can't guarantee that Sach will turn into a vampire as well. He could turn into something else.' Vincent cautioned Quinn, just reconfirming his worries.

During the mass turning of Paul's men one of them turned by Quinn had ended up a Wendigo, and they had no choice but to put him down before he could cause any damage to those around him. From his experience the most common results were Halflings and Vampires depending on the strength of those turned.

Still, there had been a few who had turned into something different. In Innu's case, Quinn had already been prepared to use his mind control to make him act a little crazy should he have turned into anything but a vampire.

The only rare form that could be explained away was something like a Dhampir, but so far Erin had been the only one which meant the chances were incredibly low. Either way, the problem was that there was no guarantee that Sach would turn into something that was more helpful to him.

"Sach, you are a skilful person and you taught me a lot." Quinn said. "I've used your techniques to help me get out of quite a few pinches lately. The thing is, there are a lot of things about us that the world doesn't know or understand. If I turn you into one, it means that you will be thrown into that world."

A huge grin appeared on Sach's face hearing these words. "The fact that you said that, means you can heal me if you turn me, you're just worried about what comes after that fact. Quinn, look at me. Does it look to you that my life could be better if I stay in this state? Whatever happens to me, I can't imagine it being worse than not being able to help the people around me. No matter the result, I won't blame you!"

Putting himself in Sach's shoes Quinn would have requested the same. He often wondered what would have happened if he would have had a choice in the matter of accepting the vampire system. If Quinn had been asked whether he wanted to accept it, especially with what he knew about it now, if he would have agreed.

The answer was of course he would.

It was thanks to it, that he could play an active role in deciding humanity's future. Something he always wanted to do.

"Before we do anything, I'll explain everything to you, includings the risks, and only then should you make your decision." Quinn stated as stretched his shadow across the floor and it had risen in front of Void blocking the cameras view.

"I think that means he wants you to turn it off for now." Fex whispered to them.

Bonny looked at Void and nodded. They had already gotten a lot, and she couldn't fault Quinn for wanting to keep some things hidden from the whole world. She just hoped that at some point she would be allowed to show these things.

At the same time, the two doctors were told to leave the room as well, with Nate escorting them outside and making sure they didn't listen in.

"Some important things to note." Quinn started to explain. "Once I turn you, I will become your turner. That means you will be directly under me and part of my family. There will be a connection between us that you will be able to feel. If I order you to do something it will be nearly impossible for you to disobey, even if it might be something you might never do as you are now."

"The reason why I'm telling you this, is because of your position in the Earthborn group. If they find out I've turned you into a V I'm afraid it will sour our relationship with everyone. Right now, there is a good chance that Oscar and Samantha can't recover, and I doubt they would be happy with you taking up such a position."

"So you want to keep this a secret?" Sach addressed the core of the issue. It was tough because if he did get found out, it would be natural for them to assume he had been a traitor all along and there would be no getting out of that one for him.

"Indeed, although in your case it might be easier than with others." Quinn replied. "I healed OWen with my Qi, and I can claim I did the same to you. You see, once I turn someone, their abilities disappear. Due to your ability being so unique the others shouldn't notice that it has disappeared. On top of that, there is a good chance that if your ability is an original that you might still be able to relearn it, but I can't guarantee that. As a silver lining, you will be able to learn another one if you wish, as long as you are compatible with it. Finally, for the last part, let's talk about all the bad things that come with being a vampire."

Everyone was listening in carefully, Bonny and Void couldn't believe the changes that someone would have to go through. Losing the ability one had built up for so long, would be heart crushing for many.

Quinn went on to explain, about the bloodlust he would feel, how they would help him with that, he then later whispered how they would overcome the weakness of the sun. The reason for whispering this was because he still couldn't fully trust the

reporters that were behind him, and if they knew about this large weakness it would be trouble for them in the future perhaps. The last thing the two of them talked about were the possibilities of what he could turn into.

"I see." Sach said after taking everything in. "So you can't just go around changing people as you like. The bad types of vampires...have you ever seen someone turn into them before?"

"Yes." It was clear that this one single word was connected to painful memories, but he needed to make sure that Sach knew what he was getting into. It would also be unfair to give him percentages of how likely it was to be turned into something bad or good.

"Let's do it. It sounds to me that there are more upsides than downsides to this." Sach answered. "Perhaps I can surpass a point I could never before. On top of that, if I do become a vampire I can sniff out all the traitors that are within the Earthborn group."

Although this was something Bonny desperately wanted to report on, she knew for the sake of humanity, she shouldn't. This would help the two groups come closer together. It was better for people to believe the Cursed faction leader was also able to help Sach get back on his feet like he had done Owen as well.

Initiating the blood ritual, Quinn did the same as he always had done. When the process had begun there was something different this time compared to all the rest before. There was no screaming coming from Sach on his part.

It was clear he was in pain, but fighting throughout it, he didn't want to make any noise.

'He shouldn't become a ghoul or a wendigo, but I can't guarantee that to be the case. Most likely if he is like Leo, Paul, and Innu, then he should turn into a...'

[Blood ritual successful]

[You have successfully bled a vampire]

The tension from Quinn's face was gone, as he saw the successful sign, and that there was going to be no trouble from what Sach would turn into.

"You have a really strong will, all the others screamed at the top of their lungs when they were turned." Quinn praised him.

"With that kind of willpower, I'm sure it should be easier for you to fight against the craving for blood. Take this." Quinn handed him a flask that appeared from his hand through the shadows. "Drink a little bit of I , and you should start feeling better. It doesn't look like your body has healed yet. Drinking a little bit at the time will help with your control. At first, you will want to gobble the whole thing up

with the state you are in now, but if you can resist it, then in no time you will have no problem being around others even when blood has been split."

The group were quite pleased and glad that they now had another strong new ally that could probably help them just as much as Paul and Leo did, maybe even more so working in the Earthborn group. Just as they were getting ready to leave, Sach called out to Quinn.

"Please, try your best to save Oscar, but honestly with the state he is in...you might not be able to." Sach said.

All of them had left the room, and now it was time for Nate to lead them into the next room. He typed in the code by the oval door once more, and there they could see it instantly. A large glass tube, similar to what the Dalki had been kept in.

They could see Oscar's head floating, and his life's heart beating, with only half of his torso remaining. With the state he was in, it was questionable if he could even be turned.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1137: The Supreme commander's fall

From Sam's explanation and the words that everyone else had said, Quinn and the others had believed to have a rough idea of Oscar's current state. However, confronted with the reality of seeing Oscar float about in a strange green coloured liquid, it was beyond all of their imaginations.

The Supreme Commander had no limbs, a strange mask covering most of his face that was meant to help him breathe. Only the left side of his chest was intact, his neck still connected to his head, which had to have been the only reason he was somehow still alive in that condition. Quinn wasn't even sure that with what was left turning him was an option, much less if it could help him recover.

Upon entering the room they noticed someone else as well. A girl with long hair, who was sitting on a chair with a table in front of her, her head knelt down on the table facing away from them.

"Samantha hasn't left this room ever since she got here. She's convinced that her father will just wake up at some point and she's determined to be there when it happens." Nathan explained as he sighed. Samantha didn't seem to have noticed their presence. From the looks of it, she was either asleep or too lost in her own thoughts.

"He's still alive, right?" Layla questioned, since it was hard to believe anyone could survive that much damage.

"We... actually aren't one hundred percent sure on that. We've put him through various tests, but there seemed to be no more activity in his brain. Honestly we aren't even sure what happened that day. Sach seemed to have seen everything, but still hasn't spoken about it much. Our best guess is that One Horn has allowed him to live. Perhaps he got bored playing around with him, or this is some sort of sadistic ploy to let us watch Oscar die, we don't know."

'Live' seemed to be a strange term given Oscar's situation. They had already thought Sach had it rough but if there was no activity in one's brain, it also meant the only thing that was keeping him alive was the machine.

Suddenly a thought went through Quinn's mind. The Dalki not finishing him was possible, but there was no way they would allow the humans to keep his weapon.

"His Demon tier weapon?" Quinn asked, he knew it was insensitive to the situation, but it was something important for all their survival.

"Lost. It's either the hands of the Dalki or the V now." Nathan looked down as he explained the situation.

One of humanity's strongest weapons, was now in the hand of their enemy. Before the news wouldn't have been so bad, as it was well known that the Dalki were

unable to activate beast gear. They could still wear the items or use them as weapons, but they were unable to bring out the full power. However, things changed with the V joining their side as they did not have such a weakness.

Eventually, the group started to walk forward, even Bonny and Void put the camera down. It felt insensitive to film Oscar in the state he was in. They didn't want to shatter his image as the Supreme Commander and as the one person who had done the most for everyone in the battle with the Dalki.

Stepping forward were Quinn and Fex, while the rest followed behind, but at a distance. It would be quite intimidating for a single person to be faced with so many new faces all of a sudden.

Shiro started to speed up, as he walked behind Quinn. From what he had heard so far, there was a good chance that maybe he was the only one that could help Oscar in his situation.

As the footsteps got closer, Samantha finally turned her head. She had dark heavy bags under her eye, they were puffy and swollen, and the white in her eyes was all red.

"Fex?" Samantha uttered the name of the first person she already knew. She spoke in a tired voice as if the girl had just woken up. "I'm sorry for telling everyone, about your secret, I didn't keep your-"

"It's okay...the whole world was going to find out sooner or later anyway." Fex shook his head as he gave her a light smile. The news had already gone out and Samantha obviously had far bigger problems to deal with. He went a bit closer to see how she was dealing with things.

"When's the last time you've eaten anything?" The vampire asked as he noticed how frail she looked compared to the last time he had seen her. Hearing this she soon realised that it wasn't a dream she was in, and looking next to Fex she could see Quinn, the leader of the Cursed faction.

'Food, energy, wait, are they really here!' She thought, as she picked herself up from her seat, but her vision was going dark from standing up too fast and having stayed in one position for too long. As the closest one to her, Fex gave her a helping hand.

"Help him, please!" Samantha 'shouted', but even her voice lacked any indication of strength. She sounded sore from the endless amount of crying and screaming. No one should have to see their father like this, and she also blamed herself for being there, but unable to do anything when everything had happened.

"You can do it, right? Quinn, you can do anything. Please help him!" She pleaded again, moving to Quinn and she practically threw her body weight on him, she was so weak but it did nothing.

He looked at her. He had never seen someone in so much pain before. A bond between family, one from a daughter and her father was something he never had.

The problem was, Quinn didn't wish to give her any false hope. Honestly, he didn't know if there even was anything he could do. Before coming here, he had agreed that if Oscar didn't want to be turned then they shouldn't do so against his will while he was unable to make a decision.

"I'll try!" Shiro said, clenching his fist and he looked motivated. "Quinn, please let me give it a shot."

For a brief second there was hope in Samantha's eyes, but what could this little boy do that all the learned doctors and those with healing abilities couldn't?

Quinn nodded as this was the best method. A way to get to Oscar without having to turn him. A small part of Samantha had already given up on ever seeing her father saved, but the bigger part of her clung to hope. She was willing to try anything.

For Shiro to use his ability, he needed to touch the head, which meant he also needed to get into the glass tube container. Nathan ordered some men who were stationed outside to help out, as they brought in breathing equipment that looked similar to a diving suit, but there was no gas tank of sorts, since everything was done through the large helmet he had on his head.

Then from above, he was elevated by a platform, like an elevator. All Shiro did was take a step forward, as he splashed into the liquid and now was face to face with what was left of Oscar.

"I don't know if I could do that, being chucked in like this." Layla mumbled as she realised how brave Shiro was. He hadn't been in the battle long and had only recently learnt the ability. Then, he was thrown into the deep end, with one tough request after the other and Shiro was the one who had actually volunteered this time.

Pressing his hand against Oscar's head, Shiro closed his eyes and concentrated. His hands started to glow as they did before, and a few seconds went past. Which soon turned into minutes, and then finally....

"Get Shiro out of there Quinn!" Logan shouted. "He's going to kill himself if he uses his MC points for too long and runs out of energy like last time!"

Quinn quickly went to grab Shiro out from the container, jumping and hanging onto the edge, before reaching his hand and pulling on him. Just as Logan had suspected. Shiro had already passed out from overusing his ability.

The rest of them waited for a while for Shiro to wake up, as they took him out of the strange wetsuit. During the time, they kept monitoring Oscar, but no change was showing up on the equipment at all.

Eventually Shiro started to come to, and he could see all the others had gathered around him. He looked towards Oscar in the container, and his face started to be filled with tears.

"I'm sorry... I tried... I tried to find him, but I couldn't." Shiro cried. He could see how much pain Samantha was in and he wanted to do his best to help her father. He had been quite confident he could do something, but after saying all that, he had done nothing but waste everyone's time and give them false hope.

"You tried your best, don't cry, I know...my father would be happy to see this many people try their best to save him." Samantha said in an attempt to comfort Shiro, but she was now sobbing too by his side.

'Is it really the right thing to do?' Quinn thought. 'To just sit here, and do nothing? Wait until his mind comes back. What if it never comes back. What if he's like this until the end, unless I try to do something?'

'Oscar, would you be happy seeing your daughter in this state? Sach, told me to do what I can to help you. It's okay, right? You can hate me later if you want, but I can see that the world still needs you!'

Quinn climbed into the tank, and this time he was in the liquid, but he wasn't wearing any special type of suit like Shiro, nor did he need the mask as he simply held his breath shut. It didn't even feel like much of a problem to him and it was possible he could have stayed in the water for hours.

Quinn then released his blood intending to start the blood ritual. When a sudden message appeared.

[Error]

[Blood ritual is unable to activate]

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1138: Use my body

[Error]

[Blood ritual is unable to activate]

[It is not effective in this situation.]

Despite Oscar being in front of him, this was the first time that Quinn had gotten this type of message. He had been worried that turning him might not be enough to save him, but he hadn't been mentally prepared that it was actually impossible.

He tried a second time just for good measure, perhaps he had done something wrong. Unfortunately, it only resulted in the same error message appearing once more.

'Again!' Quinn repeated in his head, as he attempted to activate it through the system, yet nothing changed.

'Quinn, I don't think it will work no matter how many times you try. It is clear that there is some type of underlying problem, just like when Shrio tried, in this type of situation there is nothing we can do.' Vincent said.

Hearing these words from a man Quinn knew to be many times wiser than him, who also knew far more about the Vampire World, his hands started to feel weak as he started to sink down in the liquid. There were those that could possibly help, like Tempus or the second leader's ability but there were reasons problems with getting the vampire world involved.

From the outside, Samantha could see this and judging by the lack of any change in her father's condition as well as the defeated look in Quinn's eyes, she understood that all hope was lost.

Immediately, she fell to her knees, there was no more energy in her body and they slammed into the hard ground. This time not even Fex was ready to catch her, but as her body was becoming limp, he did manage to catch her with his strings before her head hit the ground.

"We need to get her some food and energy. I don't think staying in this place is helping her at all. Force feed her if need be, just make sure she gets it!" Fex shouted, as he ordered the other soldiers as if they were his own people.

Due to his assertive tone the soldiers didn't even question Fex' order. A doctor who had been on standby came to look over Samantha. Her diagnosis was that Samantha lacked enough sleep, hadn't eaten or drank anything and was mentally exhausted.

Since there was nothing they could do for Oscar, the group had followed into a larger part of the medical bay, where there were several beds laid out, but at the moment there weren't any other patients currently being treated. It wasn't like the private rooms that had been used for Sach and Owen.

Here, a lot of them sat on the seats that were spread around the room, thinking about what they had just seen. Others were trying to comfort each other at the same time as well. While Quinn, and few continued to stay by Samnatha's side, who had a drip that had been placed inside of her body.

"You really couldn't turn him?" Fex asked, breaking the silence.

"I don't really know what happened. I don't know if it's my fault, or maybe something else. I was sure since he wasn't completely dead, that there should be at least a chance to turn him. Perhaps he would have turned into some type of undead class, but as long as he would have improved we would have been able to deal with it then." Quinn replied, yet all those worries and thoughts before seemed to have been for naught.

When the door was heard opening again, the person who was entering came as a surprise to them. It was Sach who was already back up on his feet and was moving about. He quickly threw the flask over to Quinn who caught it with ease.

"Nice reflexes." Sach said with a smile, but it soon went away when he looked at Samantha. "I heard what happened when you went to visit Oscar. I assume you all being here means you couldn't do to him what you did to me?"

"Quinn, I'm sure you tried your best. Nobody will blame you for it not working this time. All of this isn't your fault in the first place. It's mine. If only I was stronger, he wouldn't have had to try and hold off the Dalki on his own. Oscar wouldn't have to have gone through all of that."

Shaking his head, Sach went to take a seat along with the others.

"Sach, Nathan told us that you were there when this all happened. Maybe you know what was going on. How did the three of you even survive such an attack?" Quinn asked. "If even Oscar ended up in that state, surely he could have killed you all, and why didn't you tell us before."

Right now, certain pairs of eyes were gone. Bonny and Void, the reporter duo, were currently going around looking at the ship and conducting more interviews. Nathan and his group were back to doing their duty, as they had a ship to run, and temporarily he was taking the commanding role.

"I didn't want to say much before because honestly I don't really understand it myself." Sach replied after he made sure nobody was listening in. "You see, me and

Samantha were both fighting One Horn. It was clear from the beginning that we were no match for him, but at the same time we were unable to turn our backs."

"At this point the humans who we assumed were V and the Dalki were both fighting against us. If we ran away, then it meant everyone else would have died as well, and I'm not sure One Horn would have let us in the first place. That's when Oscar showed up to reinforce us."

"He told us to run away, but we didn't listen. After seeing Oscar fight with the Demon tier weapon against the Dalki, it quickly became clear that they were stronger. I ended up in the state that I was in, and Oscar was getting pulled apart by One Horn, while Samantha could do nothing but watch."

"He had a giant grin on his ugly face, like a young boy enjoying the fact that he was ripping the wings off a fly. He could have killed him straight away, but he didn't. Samantha eventually got the courage to charge forward, hoping to somehow stop the Dalki from killing her father, but I knew it was useless."

"Honestly, I had accepted that we would all die down there, but then someone had picked up the Demon tier weapon. It was a girl who looked to be from the shelter. She had long black braids, and she held up the sword pointing it towards the Dalki."

"She told One Horn that he should let us go. It didn't make any sense, but for some reason he complied. He had just defeated Oscar wielding the Demon tier weapon, but for some reason he didn't seem to be willing to defy that girl."

"It was then that I noticed that none of the humans that had been attacking us had any of the traits that were described as the V. I didn't understand anything, which was why I didn't want to say anything to anyone yet. The fact that humans were working with the Dalki, and that they were listening to them no less."

"After that interaction, all of the Dalki stopped attacking, allowing us to retreat, and barely come out of it alive. Eighty percent of our forces had already been dealt with."

Hearing all of this, Quinn couldn't quite put his finger on what was going on either, but if those groups of people were really the ones that Arthur had stayed with, then maybe there was a reason why they had listened to the Dalki.

'Are the humans living there actually working with the Dalki? But then why did they save Oscar and the others? Why would someone as powerful as One Horn listen to a girl... unless she was perhaps the only vampire there?' Scratching his head, there was just too much to think about.

After the conversation had died down a bit, they started to ask Sach more details about the fight that went on. Their number of forces, the Dalki's strength and more, but Shiro and Sil were busy having their own conversation from before.

"It doesn't make any sense." Shiro said as he looked at his hand. "I went into the black space, just like I did with you, so doesn't that mean I entered his mind? So why couldn't I find his consciousness? Did I not go deep enough?"

"The others said you were drained Shiro, your ability probably won't let you spend more time in there or go deeper." Sil said. "Your ability seems strong but maybe it needs to be even stronger."

Hearing this, Shiro was kicking himself for being overconfident. He still couldn't believe that he had given them all hope, and he felt like he was to blame. But through their conversation and seeing how Shiro was, it had given Sil an idea.

"Remember what I just said, about how maybe your ability wasn't strong enough, what if I said there was a way to make your ability stronger, by using my body." Sil offered, placing his hand on his own body.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1139: Switching bodies

It took a while for Shiro to process what Sil had just said. What exactly did he mean by 'his body'? Whatever it was, he had certainly caught his attention.

"Do you mean, you're going to try and use my ability to search for Oscar instead?" Shiro asked, still a little confused. He did know that Sil could copy his ability, and amplify it by using the MC cells from other powerful users.

"That won't help in this situation. Your ability is too unique. It doesn't share any similarities to any elemental ability or anything else I've used before so I would have to learn how to use it from scratch just like you. You're the only one with experience." Sil shook his head as he explained.

"No your cra...it might have some problems." Shiro stopped himself mid way as he was about to say the forbidden C word among those from Blade Island. It was a warning that Quinn had given him, and he was glad he caught himself.

"Are you saying that you want to copy my ability, and then switch minds so I'm the one that is controlling your body?" Shiro asked to confirm whether he had correctly understood Sil's intention, since he considered the plan to be very risky.

Sil just nodded, in place. "I can guess that Quinn wouldn't allow this, so we have to try and do it without him. Look, even if it doesn't work, you need to practice your powers on human bodies, including moving their minds. It's not like a mind can just get lost. Worst case, I get put somewhere but you will still have the ability to help out."

Judging by how quiet Shiro was, one could tell that he still wasn't convinced to give it a shot. Sure, if it did work, Shiro felt like he could do something amazing, but he had already failed once. He was afraid that he would fail again and that something could happen to Sil if it did.

"There's already three of me in this body." Sil continued to persuade Shiro. "If you don't want to switch minds, then just temporarily go into mine. The worst case scenario then would be you being in my head and together we can always put you back. I know you want to help, and I want to help you Shiro!"

An internal debate was going on in Shiro's head, and that's when he heard a few groans coming from the side. It was Samantha as she was finally waking up after resting and getting some needed nutrients in her body.

"What happened, where am I?" She asked as she touched her head. Samantha had a huge headache and it felt like someone was pounding the inside of her brain with a hammer. Everything that she had put to the back of her mind was coming back to bite her at once.

Then when she saw everyone who was in the room, she started to remember what had happened again. "No. No, no, no." She repeated, readily shaking her head. It was as if saying that word over and over again might allow her to escape the reality she was currently facing.

The others ran to her side to try to calm her, but nothing they were saying or doing was having an effect.

"She's just going to hurt herself more if things carry on like this!" Fex sighed, as he bound her arms and legs with his strings, but through her struggling the needles from the drips had been displaced.

"I'll help!" Layla offered. At least in these situations she had a surefire way to deal with the problem for a short time. Seeing the fog above her head and surrounding her body, Layla consumed it all, placing it inside of her. Unfortunately, it wasn't a permanent fix. Hopefully as time went on they could help her quell the negative emotions that would be returning in due time.

Having absorbed her emotions, Layla now experienced the same pain as Samantha. As for the previously struggling girl, she felt at peace for a few seconds which was enough time for her mind to relax and once again return to sleep just like before.

"Is that going to keep on happening?" Quinn asked, frustrated that he had been unable to do anything for her father.

"Different people deal with trauma in a different way." Layla answered. "Honestly, she was already beaten down before all of this. I guess she was holding out still hoping in some way, but now..."

Seeing all of this, Shiro had made up his mind. He felt partly to blame for getting her hopes up, so he wanted to fix the problem.

"Let's do this. Do you have enough abilities already stored up for your MC cells?" Shiro asked.

"It's become a habit since school, to touch people as much as possible so I can see their strength and what abilities they have." Sil replied.

"Wait, don't Quinn and the others have super hearing? Wouldn't they have just heard everything we said? How do we keep it a secret?" Quickly shutting his mouth, Shiro realised that their 'secret' plan had long since been foiled.

"Don't worry, I have been around them long enough to know how good their hearing is. One of the abilities I've obtained was Sound barrier. It's been active the moment I came to you." Sil replied with a light smile at Shiro's antics.

With the two of them agreeing, they left the room making an excuse that the two of them needed to go to the toilet. Quinn, seeing this, just thought it was a little cute,

that the two were now attached by the hip together, although he did feel it was a little strange for kids that age.

'Guess girls aren't the only ones who go together.' Quinn thought, his mind occupied with other things.

Finally out of the room, they immediately headed towards where Oscar was being kept. There were guards standing outside the door, and Shiro was struggling with what they would do, but Sil didn't go into the room, and instead walked past the door and took a left turn down the hallway.

When Shiro followed, he couldn't see where Sil was, until he popped half his body through the wall.

"Another ability?" Shiro asked, thinking that it was kind of cool to be able to use so many different abilities at once. Deep down, as someone who had only recently learned an ability, one which wasn't really suited for fighting, he still wished he had learned the Blade's ability and this was just making him even more jealous.

With the two touching hands, Sil was able to make the two of them phase through the wall allowing them to enter the room from a different side to the entrance. There they could see Oscar, still floating.

"Alright, it's time." Sil said, walking up to Shiro and closing his eyes, unafraid waiting.

'Why is Sil so unafraid of doing this?' Shiro wondered. Still, Shiro had to remind himself why he was doing this.

Pressing his hands on Sil's head, they started to glow. Trying to do what he needed to do seemed harder than just entering one's consciousness, where he had to connect the two dark spaces in their heads together.

It was as if he had to activate his ability twice, and then shove one room into another so now they both shared rooms. Then when Shiro could see Sil, he tried explaining to him, asking him to move far away from each other.

When they were no longer at a distance where they could see each other. Shiro now had to also disconnect these two rooms.

When Shiro had opened his eyes, the first person he could see was him, or more accurately his own body that he just had never seen in this way before.

"It worked!" Shiro said, pointing and now looking at himself from all sorts of different angles. "So this is what it looks like when people look at me through their eyes. It's nothing like looking in a mirror at all. Do I really look so...wimpy?"

Sil looked at himself and could tell that it had worked as well, and just gave Shiro a thumbs up.

"I knew I could trust you. After all you were the person that promised to bring back Vorden and Raten."

Now the real task awaited them. Doing the same thing as before, Shrio put on the wet suit that was still in the room along with the helmet, and was ready to dive in. Activating the elevator he was raised to the same height as the tube, and walking forward he let his body sink in.

At the same time, the alarms started to ring, the whole room started to slash red.

"Quick Shiro!" The others will be here soon.

As he said that, mere seconds later Quinn and the others had entered the room. They could see Shiro on the ground floor next to some type of control panel and someone else in the glass tub.

"What is Sil doing in the container?!" Fex shouted.

Touching Oscar's head his hands started to glow.

"Come on, this has to work!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1140: Do you want to live?

Ever since the Earthborn group had learned of the V, safety measures had been put in place. Guards stationed on the outside and an alarm system set throughout the private medical rooms, which was why as soon as the alarm sounded, Sach knew straightaway what was going on.

At the time Samantha had been so worried about her father that she had requested that only a certain few people would be allowed in. After the group had left, only the patrolling guards were allowed on the inside. As a second precaution the alarms had been reactivated.

When they barged into the room, everyone had expected to see some of the crew members who turned out to be one of the V, but they were now shocked to see two of their own, Shiro and Sil. Making the scene even more bizarre was that Sil was the one inside the tank full of water, pressing his hand against Oscar.

"What are they trying to do? Is someone controlling them?" Sach asked as he was ready to rush forward and pull Sil out of there. Before the group could move though, a certain boy stood in their way with his hands spread out.

"Stop, Shiro is doing something incredibly important right now. We can trust him!" 'Shiro' explained.

Some of them were left puzzled over 'Shiro's' words. Did he hit his head and mistake the person who was with Oscar? But how could he mistake it for himself? At the same time, Sil realised that he couldn't do much if he did want to stop them.

Shiro's body was weak and the only ability he possessed wasn't suited for combat. However, lucky for him there was one brainiac among their group who was quick to put the clues together.

"Did the two of you swap bodies?" Logan asked. Judging by the situation the two of them were attempting to bring forth Oscar's mind. Either Sil had copied Shiro's ability, but in then the mix up of names didn't make sense, so it could only be that Shiro was currently inside Sil's body and was making use of it.

"What! Are you planning to try again?" Fex asked, and all Sil did was nod.

After activating the ability Shiro could see himself in the black room alone. There was no one around and he was able to walk more freely without much trouble. Before he could feel some part of his energy slipping away the longer he was in the space for.

If he was concentrating too hard, it would be unnoticeable which was why he would often push himself past his natural limits causing him to faint on the outside.

'Is this because of Sil's ability? It feels like I'm not being affected using my powers at all, I could stay in here forever.' Shiro thought.

Without the burden of a time constraint he could focus more freely on trying to find out just what had happened to Oscar. He tried to search for the black space. He looked everywhere, even moving his body to different areas but he saw nothing.

Unlike with Sil, where he could see two floating balls of energies that contained their own spaces inside, it truly felt like Oscar's mind had just gone. But if that was the case, then why could he appear here at all?

'Is there really nothing we can do?' Shiro worried. 'Even after going behind Quinn's back, and using Sil's powers?'

Trying to think hard, Shiro eventually needed to try something, and for some reason although he didn't think it could help, he started to activate his Qi energy. Something that every human had, and something he had been practising.

Even though it wasn't his body, Shiro knew the process, allowing him to access a bit of Qi energy inside of Sil's body.

It was strange because technically his body wasn't in the blackspace only his mind, so he wasn't sure if it would work, or how useful it was. When activating it outside though, a connection was made as his hand was touching Oscar's real body on the outside.

For a split second, something appeared in the black space for the first time, or more correctly he felt the presence of something, albeit very vaguely.

'It's over there!' Shiro instantly moved to where the anomaly had occurred. It felt like a sense of hot and cold, as he moved further away the energy was weaker, moving to the right area the energy was stronger but still nothing could be seen.

Until he had reached a point where the energy felt strongest in the black space.

'But there's nothing here?' Shiro couldn't see anything, but he was certain the energy was here.

'No, I need to think of this another way. If this would be all it takes, then I could have done it with my own body, I need to use the ability better.' Shiro started to think back to what the notes had listed. The connections inside that he needed to make to travel deeper into the consciousness,

He focused on activating his MC cells even more, going deeper into the person's mind. On the outside his hands were glowing so bright, that the light was blinding the view of the others from the outside.

Then there was finally a change of scenery for Shiro. He was no longer in a black space but was in a white space. In front of him was Oscar in all his glory. He had no injuries and was in his usual military uniform.

"I don't quite understand what is going on." Oscar said. "But at the same time I feel I do."

"Oscar!" Shiro shouted, ready to hug the Supreme Commander. All of his efforts weren't in vain, he really was somewhere inside the mind of his but it was deep. Too deep to control his body.

"I work for Quinn, he sent me here to come get you, we are trying to save you!" Shiro said everything at once, afraid that any moment the other could disappear again. Oscar lifted his hand to stop him there and started to shake his head.

"I assume if you are here you have an idea of what happened to me. You seem to have some type of ability that accesses one's mind, but even if you do bring me back, what of my body. It is beyond healing." Oscar sighed as he looked down on himself. Right now his appearance was pristine, but he remembered that had happened to him on the outside.

"Quinn!" Shiro replied quite confidently. "He managed to save Sach even though he was in a bad state! The doctors couldn't help him but Quinn did, I just know that as long as we can bring back your consciousness, Quinn will be able to get you back!"

There was a slight pause from Oscar before answering and then a small smile as if he had made up his mind.

"I assume, his way of saving me isn't by usual norms. If others couldn't and he can, does that come at the cost of turning me into the same thing as him?" Oscar questioned. "When the others around him claimed they had been turned, not out of choice, I assume Quinn had been put in similar situations?"

"I'm honored that you must have put in all your effort to try and save me... but I do not wish to be saved. Not like this."

For someone who was as young as Shiro, nearly seventeen years of age, he couldn't understand. Why would someone refuse getting saved when there was the possibility. Oscar could tell this from the look on his face as well.

"I have grown tired of all this fighting. I have given it my all, throughout my life and now... I just think now it's my time to go. I hope you respect my decision."

"What about Samantha? Do you have any idea how heartbroken she is? Don't you want to at least see her for a final time, say some words or see her off?" Shiro asked, hoping to convince him.

"I can't deny that seeing my daughter again does have a certain appeal. However, because she is my daughter I know that she is far stronger than she looks. I know she will come out better from this. I understand that you are trying to convince me, but I have already made up my mind."

"However, there is one request that I have now that you have presented me with the opportunity. It has been a long time coming, but if possible, I wish for a final talk with Quinn. That boy has a lot of questions on his mind, and he deserves to have them answered, especially as he is this world's future. I need to pass the mantle." Oscar requested.

Shiro was trying to think of other things to say to convince Oscar, but if his daughter wasn't enough to get him to reconsider, he didn't know what was.

'How can I face the others again? This time I was actually this close, but I have failed again.' Shiro thought. Still, there was one more chance, as Oscar had requested to talk to Quinn and he was hoping at least Quinn could talk some sense into him.

'It's all up to you Quinn.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1141: Passing on the Mantle

With everything done, Shiro returned back to Sil's body inside the container. He easily pulled himself out, noticing his well developed muscles.

'Oh yeah, that's right, this isn't my body. I always thought he was more scrawny like me, but boy was I wrong.' Shiro then tensed up Sil's muscles and pressed on his hard abs, his finger was practically hitting a solid wall showing he was in top tip shape. 'It's so much different than when I use the ability in my own body. I don't even feel tired after having to search for Oscar. How can one person have so much power?'

After experiencing it for himself he was starting to understand how the Blade family had been able to secretly rule over the Big Four in the past. The things they could do with all those different abilities and the fact that their powers could multiply meant that they would be scary enemies.

'There is still that Hilston guy everyone is worried about out there. If Sil is already this strong, does that mean he is even stronger?' Shiro gulped as the thought crossed his mind. The Blade family leader would not only have had decades more time to gather multiple powerful abilities but also that extra time to have experience with them.

When Shiro went down he was expecting for everyone to start yelling at him and to get told off, but it appeared that Sil had already made everyone aware of what they were attempting to do. When Quinn walked up and held out his hand, he squinted, almost flinching.

"Are you okay?" Was the first question that came out of Quinn's mouth. It wasn't a telling off like he had expected and Shiro nodded in response.

"Wow, that's kinda cool that you can make people swap bodies, and they can use the ability in that body?" Fex questioned. "Does that mean I can see what it's like to be a...a girl for one day?" Now his imagination was running wild.

"Does the ability work on Vampires, maybe it's like Sil's?" Logan theorised.

Despite everyone's comments, Quinn was just happy that there weren't any problems between the process. In all honesty he had been afraid that something might have happened to Shiro and Sil when trying to do something like this, which was why he had only made him run the tests on wild beasts, rather than humans.

However, it was inevitable that at some point Shiro would have had to attempt to do this, and for someone to do it with their own mind, Quinn couldn't imagine how scary that would have been.

"You should have said something instead of running off." Quinn berated Shiro.  
"You were lucky that it worked out, but what would you have done if something

went wrong? If something happened to you, then it would have been my fault for getting you dragged into this whole mess in the first place. Promise me that next time you try something like that you do it under supervision."

Shiro understood his concern, but didn't really know what to say. He understood that just seeing Samantha in that state and wanting to help her wasn't a good enough excuse. Fortunately, she didn't seem to be with the others either. In the end, Shiro just nodded weakly.

"What's done is done, but we need to make sure we don't have to take these huge types of risks in the future. So did you get any results?" Quinn asked the question that was on everyone's mind.

The conversation between the others in the background died down after this as they were listening in carefully.

"I...I connected to him." Shiro answered, which sounded like good news, but Quinn could tell by the sound of Shiro's heartbeat that something was up. If Shiro could have connected to him, then why was there still no active signs on the monitoring equipment.

"He said...he wanted to speak to you, Quinn. I think it might be for the best. Right now I can use my ability to touch both of you at the same time, and pass you on along with me, so you can have a conversation. It was his... he said that was his last request."

At first Quinn thought that it was quite a risky thing to do. Shiro hadn't figured out everything about his ability yet, since he hadn't been using it for too long, but he did have Sil's powers at the moment granting him access to far more MC cells than he could imagine, but what confined him was the fact that Shiro had stated it was his last request.

'Why would he say that? Unless...'

It was because of this, Quinn nodded. His last request wasn't to talk to his daughter, or anyone else, but to Quinn. The two of them hardly knew each other.

The others knew that once Quinn had made up his mind, he would go through with it, so they sat back and just waited. At this time, arriving into the room were Bonny and Void. From the sound of the alarm they had known that something would be up, but instead of an attack all they could see now was Quinn and 'Sil' entering the glass container, with the younger boy floating in the middle of the container touching both of them.

While activating the ability on Quinn, something else could be felt by Shiro for a second, but choosing to ignore this he continued with his task. Having done it once, it was easier than before and with Sil's power supply it really felt like it was no trouble at all bringing along Quinn as well.

In barely any time they reached the white space, and Oscar was seen smiling as he looked at Quinn. "Young boy, thank you for fulfilling my last request." Oscar said, before turning to Quinn.

"Last request? Do you really not plan to come back?" Quinn asked Oscar. "Even if we can save you? Even if the people out there need you after everything you have already done? Don't you want to watch the end of this all? You could be there when we get over that last hurdle!"

The tone of Quinn's voice was surprisingly aggressive. Shiro hadn't expected him to be like this, so what was the reason?

"Quinn, I have done my duty ever since the first war. I'm not the first one to fall in battle nor do I have grand hopes that I will be the last one. You can't even imagine how many of my friends, peers and subordinates I have outlived ever since. I have done everything I could to grow stronger to save even one more person. Every time I have fought I have done so with my life on the line knowing the risk and the consequences and I ended up like so. I'm just glad that my sacrifice at the end could save my daughter as well."

"For me, my time is over. My fight is finished, even if that means I don't get to see the end of it. I hope that my will, and what has happened to me will encourage others just like you to pick up my mantle and continue the fight. I know why you're upset, I looked into your past, Quinn."

"As a person who has grown up with no ability, your life must have been tough in the world we currently live in. I wouldn't be surprised if at some point you would have blamed me. As the Supreme Commander I must have appeared as the living embodiment of how the world had turned out, but the truth of the matter is that the people decided it to be this way."

"With the war against the Dalki upon us, the strong stood out, the weak relied on us and some people decided to take advantage of that. As a single person I was unable to change what everyone wanted and expected, so I did my best to contain the strong, so the war between ourselves wouldn't break out when it mattered most, but we all know how that went when Truedream disappeared."

"That was the moment I realised I needed to change things to make up for what I have failed to do beforehand, but then like a shooting star, I could already see the younger generation attempting to fix the problem I was responsible for creating. And I am glad you all did a far better job than I ever could." Oscar looked deep into Quinn's eyes, as one of these new people he was referring to was him.

"This is my answer Quinn. I do not wish to be saved." Oscar explained.

Having been around many different types of people, Quinn could tell that at this moment, Oscar had steeled his resolve. Much like himself, he was stubborn and it looked like he had made this decision since long ago.

At the same time, Quinn now was struggling with what he was trying to fight. The person at the top wasn't Oscar. Wasn't he meant to be some type of evil controlling villain that was forcing the weak ability users to live through hell, only caring about the strong? Yet, it just didn't feel that way. The end of his goal, was this...

"Quinn, I wanted to speak to you, because you are one of the people that everyone will have to rely on in the future. As such, I wanted to inform you of a few things. Given your special position, I have naturally looked into your past, trying to find out who you really were, but I have come to the conclusion... that even I was unable to unearth anything."

"For example, the apartment, school fees and your allowance you received when you were younger were all actually provided to you by an anonymous donor. I only later found that some of my people had been told to tell you that we were the ones providing you this service but that's not the case at all."

"Ever since you were young, someone has been looking out for you. It is said that you have no living relatives, so why would someone go that far, but I recently learned that there is one."

"Richard Eno..." Quinn mumbled. Was it really him? Did that also mean that the military weren't the ones that complied with his family wishes and had given him the system book. Did Richard actually have it all along? Had Richard been watching him since he was young, a child even, then what about his parents? If he was watching them, why didn't he protect them and give the book to one of them during the first war?

Thinking about this, Quinn thought about the Quest he had received, to learn more about the Talen family.

"Do you have any more information?" Quinn asked.

"I tried to search for what was relevant, but as someone who didn't really leave behind a strong impression until after military schools there was not much I could find. I am sure that Samantha must be struggling at the moment, but I know she will come out stronger from this. Take this as a selfish request of a father, but try to help her cope with this until she gets better. Perhaps you can ask her to help you retrace your past for you afterward."

"I also have to burden you to explain to her that my wish is to say goodbye to this place. The longer she tries to stay attached to this form of me, the harder it will be for her to pull away, which only delays my peace." Oscar requested.

Shiro now knew this was the real end of Oscar. Not even Quinn would be able to convince someone like that to come back to them all. These were the final words of the war hero, and Shiro was there to listen to them, even though he felt like he was unworthy of it all.

"Goodbye, Oscar. You can rest now, you did what you could, and I will try to do the same." Quinn said as he offered the man one last handshake. Both looked each other in the eye, Oscar with the kind smile of a senior and Quinn with the bitter smile of someone, who wasn't ready to let go of the hand.

Alas, eventually Shiro reminded Quinn that using his ability took a toll on his body, even though they both knew that shouldn't be the case since he was currently in Sil's body. Still, Quinn let go and both of them left the white space.

When Shiro made the disconnect, they found themselves in the liquid again, and raised themselves out of it. Both of their faces were filled with thoughts, and even though the others were dying of curiosity to know what happened they let them be until they talked on their own.

However, Shiro was left wondering one more thing as he looked at his hand, and looked at Quinn's back. 'I'm sure of it, after seeing inside of Sil. Why were there two consciousnesses inside of Quinn?'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1142: After the same thing

The conversation with Oscar had left Quinn with quite a bit to think about. Especially the information he had learned from him about his past. There had indeed been times when Quinn had questioned his upbringing, the things he had been told and how his parents had left him with a book he had never seen or heard of before.

'Did Eno really support me during that whole time? It wouldn't be the first time he had hidden things from me.' Quinn wondered. Of course asking Eno was an option, but since Quinn didn't fully trust him and the old man hadn't come forward on his own to share that information, it would be safer to find out about his past as a member of the 'Talen family' on his own. If he was unable to find anything in the end, it would mean he would have to prepare himself to confront Eno.

'I really don't want to do that.'

Speaking to Samantha would be the best next step, although that would have to wait until she was in a better state of mind. He didn't know how long it would take and the need to tell her that her father had requested to be put off life support would surely not expedite the process. Unfortunately, the Cursed group still had other things they needed to attend to. This short stop had turned into quite the event already.

'I wonder, is Richad still on the island? Or would his helpers have arrived by now? I could send someone to the island to look for him, but there is no guarantee he is still there. Mona has also returned to the place she was kept before, yet I have no idea where that is. Damn, why didn't I make sure I had a way to reach out to him?' Quinn thought, conflicted that he had completely overlooked that issue up until now. He was just so overjoyed to finally get rid of him.

He looked up to the others who had so far been waiting for him to speak and began to recount his conversation with Oscar. He told them all about Oscar's wish and Void filmed Quinn conveying Oscar's last words, while the remains of his body eerily floated in the background.

The reactions to this were mixed. Some were able to sympathise with how Oscar felt, while others, albeit not openly, chastised him for having given up too soon. To them it felt that as one of the World Leaders he wanted to run away from his final duty. As for Sach, he was full of tears and he swore to himself to do everything in his power to make sure the Earthborn group would continue to fulfill their duty, even without Oscar.

Despite Quinn wanting to move on, there were a few pressing matters that needed to be solved before they left, so he proposed to hold a meeting. Sach and Nathan, representing the Earthborn group both instantly agreed. Technically the two of them were also part of the Cursed group now, but in a way this would just make

things easier to control and should ensure that no more incidents like Innu's attack would occur.

Samantha had woken up again, but everyone felt it would be better to let her rest some more. As such, nobody had told her anything about this meeting. It took place in one of the many empty rooms of the ships, but it was apparent that this was an impromptu occasion. Some were leaning up against the wall, with most just standing as they talked to figure out everything that they would need to do.

"I think it's a good idea, but we'll need to find someone trustworthy to organise the rest of the Earthborn leaders for now." Sach said after they had come to a conclusion.

The plan they had agreed on was to have Sach board the Cursed Ship and stay there for a while. Sam would then get someone to teach him everything there was about being a vampire, controlling the bloodlust, getting his sun ring and learning a few of his new skills.

It was the best place for him to learn all of these things. The excuse they would give was that there was a need to discuss the future of the Earthborn groups now that Oscar and Innu were gone.

"I can keep everything we said here a secret." Nathan said. "But what about the reporters? They will eventually have to break the news to everyone. It's clear that they wish to show the Cursed faction in the best light but there needs to be a good timing for all of this. At the same time we can't wait too long, otherwise rumours will start to spread and people will find out that way."

So much had happened, and so much shaking news would have to be shared with the public. Head General Innu trying to kill the Cursed group, turning out to be a V and perishing, yet that all paled to the revelation about everything pertaining to Oscar.

"The Earthborn group is still in your hands." Quinn stated. "I will let you and Samantha decide when she is full of mind. I think it would be for the best to only inform the public about Oscar, once there is a proper replacement for him. Someone the people will be able to accept."

"That being said, we will have to tell Samantha sooner rather than later if we want her to recover from this. We also need her approval to turn off the machines for Oscar. She at least deserves to say her goodbye to him, while he is still with us. As for the reporters, they should reveal the truth of what has happened with Innu first. That will keep the public busy for the time being."

"They have decided that they will be travelling back to the Cursed ship, just to film a few more things before doing so, I have left it down to them to coordinate with Sam. He is the best person to figure out the timing and what to show and what not to show."

With all the things worked out, the group were now moving on quickly. Bonny and Void had gotten on board one of the military ships to head to the Cursed faction ship alongside Sach. The Head General had left one of his trusted sergeants who would be working closely with Jane, Oscar's top assistant in charge.

He had also requested to receive regular updates on Samantha's situation, and wanted to inform her personally about Oscar's choice. Before they left, Quinn checked the ones that were left in charge just to make sure they weren't V. Even after sweeping the whole ship, they couldn't find any at all.

Still, Quinn reminded them that it was possible they had someone with an ability that could control others. This meant they still needed to remain vigilant even if there weren't any V on the surface.

For this reason Sach left one of his people behind to look after the base. There was no problem with that approach, since he would have been the next best person for the job anyway. After all, ever since Nathan had been asked to work for the Cursed faction, there had been a general dislike for him among those from the Earthborn group.

Everything was just better this way, and so the group was ready to focus on their original task, the hunt for the Demi-god tier beast.

Shiro and Sil had returned to their original bodies, and they were now all on the same ship they had arrived in. The reporters had left, but Nathan had chosen to accompany them.

"You guys will need to be careful once we arrive there." Nathan warned. "I know we're all on the same side, but this shelter originally belonged to Head General Innu's people. It's a military shelter so there will be mostly military personnel and their family members. Even though the news hasn't been spread publicly, I'm sure that someone must have already informed his people that Innu is dead. So don't be upset if they start treating you a little rough."

Quinn pulled out the mask from his dimensional space and held it in his hand. It was the Mud mask given to him by Peter.

'I guess it might be time to use this. It would be troublesome to get into any more unnecessary fights. Especially against people who are meant to be on the same side.' Quinn thought. After speaking to Oscar and having Sach on his side, he now felt that the Earthborn group was more so a part of them. They weren't the enemy, there were just a few bad apples that had spread their thoughts to others.

"Also, they seem to be suffering at the moment. It's one of the few planets where the shelter is still hunting and collecting crystals. But their collection rate has been dropping. On top of that they have been getting into skirmishes here and there." Nathan explained.

"Skirmishes, with people?" Logan asked, overhearing the conversation.

"Indeed. For some reason there are members of Pure on the island as well."

The others looked at each other, and Quinn had a dreaded thought on his mind. According to Leo, Erin and some information from Brock. Pure were trying to create a beast they could control.

If this was true, did that mean Pure were after the very same beast they were?

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1143: Chasing i

It had been a while since Quinn had heard any news from Pure. He had been far too busy dealing with his own problems. The last time had been concerning a matter that Leo had been personally dealing with, so for the longest time they had been at the back of his mind.

'Are they really going down this path? Making the same mistakes the vampires did?' Quinn thought, but then again, they probably had no clue that the Dalki had been the result of the vampires trying to create a food supply for themselves. 'This Demi-god tier hunt might be harder than we thought if they are also involved.'

Quinn was still internally debating whether he should appear he should disguise himself or not for when he arrived at the Earthborn shelter. In the past it would have been fine for him to turn up and they would have respected him as a World Leader. However tensions were currently skyhigh between all groups after the reveal of the V's existence, especially among those belonging to Innu who had just lost their figurehead.

The final nail in the coffin was the fact that Pure was there. Their movements might drastically change if they were to learn that the leader of the Cursed faction would be turning up, since they still should hold a grudge for Quinn killing one of their single digit leaders.

Ultimately, Quinn went to the toilet on board the ship and placed the mud mask on his face. It started to wrap around him and change his body. A few seconds later, the one who exited the toilet wasn't Quinn, but 'Chucky', a person so plain that he wasn't memorable to all but his close friend.

He had pondered over what the others should call him now. Just calling himself Chucky would be confusing, and looking in the mirror, Bucky was the name that kept repeating in his head for some reason. Bucky cleared his throat so everyone turned around and could see the new improved him.

"What do you think of the new Bucky?" Quinn asked the group.

"Shouldn't you have picked a different name than the person you look like?" Fex asked.

Shaking his head, Quinn was getting quite tired of answering this question, but he couldn't blame the other since he had made that mistake a few times himself.

"His name was Chucky, so Bucky is indeed a new name." Logan clarified in Quinn's stead.

When things were starting to quiet down, Shiro noticed that Quinn was looking in the mirror quite often to check out his new appearance. Shiro understood that feeling well since he had recently been in Sil's body. It was an indescribable feeling

looking at oneself and to see someone else entirely. However, that wasn't the reason why Shiro was closely watching Quinn. When the other turned he suddenly saw Shiro standing right behind him.

"Quinn, I was wondering if you had a bit of time. I would really like to talk about something, just the two of us." Shiro requested. Seeing the look on his face, and with them having nothing else to do Quinn accepted. The two of them entered the eating area, which had a see through automatic glass door, however it was sound proof. Allowing them to talk and eat if they wished in peace.

"What's on your mind, Shiro? You aren't usually the secretive type, so it must be important." Quinn honestly asked the other.

"Back when I helped you speak to Oscar I had to use my ability on you as well. I felt something strange inside of you, it felt like there were... two minds in you. It was similar to Sil, but since I was busy connecting you to Oscar I didn't really get a good look at the situation. Do you mind if I check again?" Shiro requested.

This had come as somewhat of a surprise to Quinn but not a complete one. The way Shiro had explained it, he already had a couple of ideas of what the boy might have seen.

'Do you think that the other mind he saw was me?' Vincent asked, who sounded far more shocked than Quinn. The old man knew that it couldn't be the Boneclaw. Familiars didn't occupy their partner's mind but left behind a permanent summoning seal on the body of those they had made a contract with.

'I mean it's either you or the system, but I have a feeling it's more likely to be you.' Quinn replied.

In a way to Vincent it somewhat made sense. These were the two possibilities but either one would work. Either Vincent was part of the system, and the system itself had already bonded with Quinn. It worked using his mind, so it wouldn't be too surprising if it had formed a pseudo consciousness, which was what Shiro had seen.

Alternatively, Vincent came with the system when Quinn had obtained it. Coming together but not really being a part of each other. The logic here stemmed from the time the vampire had lost Vincent for a brief period of time. Back then his ancestor had remained in the tombs below, while Quinn still had the system in full use.

If it was the latter case, then there was a higher chance that Vincent could be removed from the system without Quinn suffering any side effects. This was one of Vincent's other concerns when Quinn had offered to help him gain a body of his own using Shiro's ability. He had never really brought it up in the meantime, because he had honestly thought it would be impossible.

Now that the truth was getting closer and closer it felt unreal.

"Shiro, thanks for telling me that, but that won't be necessary. At least not now." Quinn replied. "You're no longer in Sil's body, so it will just tire you out, and we will need you at full power soon. I already have a good idea of what you saw, so you don't have to worry. It's something or rather someone that won't harm me. I will tell you about it when the time is right, okay?"

Shiro felt relieved after hearing this. He had been worried that it might have been something Quinn might have been unaware about. The boy had theorised that it could be something that all vampires had, another darker side deep down. Perhaps it could have been the mysterious ability of their enemy, who apparently could implant orders into others.

It would have been disastrous if whoever it was, had somehow managed to implant a timebomb into Quinn. Fortunately, it appeared that all his worries had stemmed from an overactive imagination.

When the two of them exited from the lunch room, they could see that they had almost reached their destination.

Planet Humding, a dark brown planet that had hills of mud, and long plots of land with little greenery in the area. It was a harsh planet where one could sink into their footing at any moment in certain places, but if one did they wouldn't suffocate.

Instead they would fall underneath into the planet's ground, where the vast tunnels and beasts lived and worked. In one of these tunnels was a group of people.

One man had an eyepatch over his right eye and a scar beneath it. He also had another scar that went from his chin to his lip. He was dressed in a large black overcoat, but his chest was showing his chiseled abs clearly. The clothing and his style suited his long blessed torso, with his long spiked hair that would always stick up.

"Have we still not been able to capture the humanoid beast?" The man with the scars asked one of his subordinates as he impatiently tapped his right index finger against his thigh.

"Sir, we have located the beast's trail once more twelve hours ago. Unfortunately, every time we come close to cornering it, the Earthborn group gets in our way, making us lose sight of it!" The subordinate explained.

"In other words, we've failed again? Is this what our group is known for? For failing time and time again?" The eye patch man questioned and in the blink of an eye he appeared before the one who had given the report, towering over him as he looked down.

"If the Earthborn group keeps getting in our way, then we will just have to finish them off." The man declared, as he turned around. The subordinate let out a sigh of

relief as he looked at his superior's black overcoat with the large Number 2 stitched on it.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1144: Evolution tiers

A medium sized ship approached the Shelter on planet Humding. Usually Shelters would be built on flat ground, in a square type shape with walls on all sides. Soldiers, Mechs or Travellers would be stationed on top of them to protect those inside.

On the other hand, this planet's Shelter had been built on top of a large hill, or more accurately the main base was located there. There were several large tubes that had vehicles passing through them.

These would descend down the hill into different areas that had small bases of buildings and people around them. Shockingly there were no walls surrounding them like the main Shelter at the top of the hill, instead there were people protecting the entrance to these large tubes.

"Humding is a little unique for more reasons than one." Nathan explained as everyone was staring out of the window looking at the unique architecture.

"Although there are beasts on the surface you have to watch out for, the greater danger comes from the countless sinking spots all over. The tubes you can see down there lead to some sinking spots the main base has discovered and deemed relatively safe since they are being cleared regularly to use them as entry points."

"Humding is rich in crystals, making it a very important place for the military. Unfortunately, the majority of beasts are also subterranean and don't like it when the military tries to mine those crystals."

Quinn remembered seeing places that were filled with the natural blue crystals, but there was one planet where he saw them more than ever. The Vampire Planet. It was even more reason to keep it a secret from the humans, especially since they were running low on the ressource.

Flying past, they could see many things being transported through the tubes. Vehicles carrying such crystals, and more. The other common thing they saw were Mechs. There seemed to be more here than the standard. It looked like the machines themselves were used to mine for crystals at a faster rate than human hands could.

"Are those robots fun to pilot?" Fex asked. "It would be cool if we could try one out."

"If you want to try it out, we have some back on the Cursed ship." Logan replied. "However, for someone like you it won't be much help. They are mainly given to those who have weak abilities and show no promise in battle or to fulfill menial tasks such as you are seeing them do right now. If Sam hadn't joined the Cursed faction, he might have been given one of these machines."

Quinn had a wry smile on his face when he thought about it. It wouldn't have just been Sam. He, Shiro, Peter. All of them would have been asked to fight against the Dalki, and without his system they would have all been considered too weak and would have had to learn to compensate by using the Mechs.

When they had reached the main Shelter on top of the brown dark mud hill, they noticed something else going on as well. Two Mechs seemed to be battling it out against each other, while wielding giant beast weapons. Surrounding them was a crowd of soldiers who continued to cheer at the top of their lungs.

"The Colonel is a bit of a mech enthusiast, so if you want to try one then he might let you." Nathan said.

The Shelter had been made aware of their presence since Nathan had called ahead of time. They knew that the ones that were coming were part of the Cursed faction, but they had naturally not been made aware that the Cursed faction leader himself would arrive, nor that those who came were particularly close to Quinn.

Once the ship landed, there was the normal greeting that was to take place. Nathan saluted a man, who was dressed in black army uniform and had a golden badge on his side.

"I am Colonel Molitar Longblade." The man stated, looking at the others behind Nathan, although his greeting to Nathan wasn't as formal as to the others. Instead it was as if Longblade was just talking to his own soldiers.

'Looks like Nathan was right. Since these guys were under Innu, it's already great that they aren't too openly hostile towards our Cursed faction. I'm glad Peter isn't here.' Quinn thought.

"While you are here, you are under my command! I run this Shelter, I make the rules for this Shelter and everyone has to obey, understand?!" The Colonel commanded.

The others looked at each other for a second. They certainly weren't used to this kind of managing style. They were actually all leaders of a faction that was of equal size, yet it wasn't something that anyone of their Cursed faction imposed.

Still, they all looked at 'Bucky' who quickly replied by saluting. "Understood, Sir!" Instead of openly challenging his authority, it was smarter to play along for now and let Nathan handle everything later. Seeing their leader act like that they all mimicked him.

According to Nathan, Longblade used to be a Head General under the old system. He had been in charge of one of the eight bases, but after they had reconstructed the system to just three Head Generals, his group got put under Innu.

After their display the Colonel seemed to be in a better mood and he personally showed them the place where they would be staying while on Humding, also providing them with information for what they needed. Walking through the Shelter, they could feel the eyes of everyone staring at them.

"Hey, aren't they from the Cursed faction who harbor those dangerous V?"

"Yeah, I recognise that girl. How can we allow such criminals to just walk out here so brazenly? Head General Innu wouldn't have attacked them for no reason."

With Quinn being disguised, the only V they could identify from the broadcast were Layla, and Fex, who therefore naturally got the brunt of angry and evil stares. The others had gotten a pass.

"We have to deal with this in that other place, and now here too?" Layla weakly complained to those near her. Their current treatment was very similar to when they had been to the Vampire World. To now suffer it in the Human World as well, did they truly not belong anywhere?

While walking around, they could see a group of soldiers who had entered the base, and were injured. They were being rushed to one of the large buildings which appeared to be their medical facility. The wounds though, didn't look like ones that were made from beasts. Some of those looked like powers and beast weapons.

'I guess it's true that Pure really is here.' Quinn thought.

"Hey do you notice something about all the soldiers here? They all have swords with them as their beast weapon." Fex whispered.

"That's because the sword is one of the best weapons out there." Longblade clarified, overhearing them from the front. "I'm a master swordsman myself, and my skills have saved me time and time again on the battlefield. As the one in charge of this Shelter I have been teaching everyone how to defend themselves with the best weapon."

Longblade sounded proud of that fact. Quinn certainly understood how strong a great master swordsman could be, but he also thought of somebody who could probably put all of the people here to shame.

"On an individual basis or preference that's fine, but don't you think that's a bit stupid for a battle or war?" Logan, in his usually charming manner, questioned him. "It helps to have a variety of beast weapon users. What happens if your opponent can fly and attack from the sky? What about support from your ranged users, and protection from each other when fighting in a group?"

"There is a reason why there are multiple weapons in the first place."

Suddenly, Longblade stopped and turned around. "Oh really? Then what beast weapon does someone so scrawny as you use? Talk is cheap, so any of you can challenge me to a battle of the sword and I would be happy to demonstrate which weapon is better."

Out of the current members of the Cursed group, none were sword users or had beast weapons in the same style as it was being used here.

"Say, Molitar, could you give us more information on this humanoid beast that has been spotted? How did you come to find it, and why haven't you been able to defeat or capture it?" Nathan asked, trying to break the just created tension.

"Have you ever hunted underground? It's completely different terrain and the beast is smart enough to be able to use it to its advantage. It's easy enough to track it at any time we wish, though. It leaves behind a certain trail." Longblade answered. "Wherever it goes, it leaves behind dead beasts and all of them have one thing in common. The humanoid beast has killed them in one strike by targeting where their beast crystals were."

The others were in shock. Was the Colonel claiming that a beast was killing other beasts and taking just their crystals?

"It doesn't seem to care that this makes it easy to find. Although it hasn't confronted us, it also doesn't seem to be too afraid of us. We have already made a plan to capture it, by using that arrogance."

'Quinn, did you know that there are some beasts that are able to evolve?' Vincent asked. 'It's only natural for beasts to kill those who enter their territory, but they usually don't consume the crystals. Beasts seem to know about their own limits in evolution. However, if this one actually hunts other beasts for their crystals, it can only mean that it's capable of evolving further and going up in tier.'

'Are you telling me, the humanoid Demi-god tier beast is killing other beasts because it's trying to evolve into a Demon tier beast?!'

If that was true, the simple task was getting more complicated.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1145: The fear of the V

Colonel Longblade continued to inform them about the annoyance the humanoid Demi-god beast posed. Although it wouldn't outright confront them, every so often, when they tried to mine, it would come and stop their mining process by destroying the Mechs. It was apparently utilising guerilla tactics and would disappear as soon as it had finished its tasks.

Because of this, Longblade had taken an interest in taking down this Demi-god beast, and it was what had led to the discovery of the dead beast bodies. Following its trails had eventually led them to certain previously unexplored areas in the tunnels where they had found a mountain of dead bodies, all at different stages of decay, but none of which had a beast crystal.

Making things even worse for the military was the fact that members of Pure had recently gotten involved. It had devolved into a battle between three fronts, which had made capturing the beast nearly impossible. Whenever they had gotten close, Pure would foil their plan, although the same had happened vice versa too.

After listening to everything, they arrived outside the main base building, which was placed towards the back of the camp. It was a dull looking rectangular building that was focused entirely on pragmatism over aesthetics. The Shelter was very much like a military base compared to others which felt more like cities with military presence.

There was a lot of open ground, vehicles moving, and it was well organised. Turning around, the Colonel looked over his reinforcement. He checked each one up and down, analysing their equipment. In Bucky's case, he spent only a fraction of a second.

He came to the conclusion that it would be a waste of his breath to even say anything to them. It looked like the Cursed faction had mostly sent over some peons. Perhaps as some stunt to influence public opinion, they had sent two people who were known V, but they didn't seem too strong either.

"Due to everything I have told you so far, that is why our group is suffering from a crystal crisis. We are unable to mine for crystals because the Demi-god tier keeps attacking us when we do. We are unable to hunt for beasts because four out of five we do find, are already dead."

"The key to solving this problem is simple, we need to get rid of the Demi-god tier beast. Unfortunately, we can't do that because Pure keeps on getting involved. I called for help from headquarters to get someone to occupy them long enough to capture it. I just didn't expect them to call the Cursed faction." Longblade looked at Nathan as if this was all his fault.

The truth was, Logan already had access to most of their files, so once the report had been made, the Cursed faction had been made aware of the existence of a humanoid Demi-god tier beast.

"Nathan should know where the living barracks are, the bases are set up in a similar way and most of the people here already recognise him. Make yourself at home as much as you can for now. We will move out, and inform you when the Demi-god tier beast has been found." Longblade said. And he was already walking into the building.

Originally, Longblade was meant to show them where they would be staying, but instead, he had brushed this off seemingly to Nathan.

"Huh, so they aren't just going to let us go out and explore this place on our own?" Fex complained. "I thought we were going to go into those tunnels and explore underground or something searching for the beast. Damn it, would they still treat us like this if er...Quinn was here?"

"I'm afraid so, actually their treatment would very likely be even worse," Nathan answered. "The good news is that the Colonel doesn't think you guys will be able to be of any help, so he hasn't imposed any restrictions on you. If he thought you were too strong or good, then maybe he wouldn't want you to solve the problem. It would look bad on them after all."

"Although those living in the Shelter idolise the late Head General Innu, the same can't be said about the other Generals. Although he shouldn't know about Oscar yet, Longblade surely knows about Innu, and must be hoping to rack up accomplishments to rise up the ladder."

"What about you?" Logan asked. "Aren't you a high ranking member as well?"

"I have no right to be a leader." Nathan smiled bitterly, looking at Quinn. "Just take a look at my history. Back at second base, I was in charge of the first-year students. I knew something was up, but I had no idea that everyone was being treated that badly."

"Even then, I couldn't stand up to Duke for what he was doing. I had been hoping to rely on Paul, until a certain individual came and defeated him. I couldn't do a good job back then, so how could I accept to do a better job in an even higher position with even more responsibility?"

"I tell you now 'Bucky', I don't envy your position, not at all."

Heading to the sleeping barracks, Nathan was to show them where they would be staying. So they could then all go off and do their own thing. The others didn't mind that much because they were sure that there was a chance that Quinn was

going to act behind the scenes anyway, and that was what was currently on his mind as well.

'Vincent, if you're correct, then we need to act sooner rather than later. If it evolves, who knows just how powerful it can get?'

Speaking of beasts, on their tour they had encountered several captured beasts of all different shapes and sizes being carted around in special cages. Some of them had been asleep, most likely drugged, while others were banging against them trying to escape, and they were all heading to a certain place. A facility where there were a few men standing outside in lab coats inspecting the beast with special tools and such.

"What is that for?" Layla asked.

"I'm not entirely sure. It's not normal by any means for beasts to be inside a Shelter. This is usually considered a large risk." Nathan replied.

With it getting late, it was time for the others to get some sleep. When they entered the barracks, they realised it was just a large hangar with several beds lying on the floor. Soldiers were sleeping together side by side, and it was obvious that they weren't being treated as important guests at all.

From the right, suddenly Fex started to sniff the air. He immediately turned his head to where the smell was coming from.

"Is someone hurt?" He thought, but instead, all he could see was a person who was a couple of rows over from where they were with a blade in his hand. He had cut the palm of his hand with a beast weapon, and was smiling towards them.

"Did you see that? He could tell straight away? I guess it's true they really are sensitive to blood."

"And we're meant to sleep with these people. General Innu sacrificed his life to take out these guys, and we should be doing the same!"

Due to their sensitive hearing, they could hear all that was being said to them as well.

"Do you really think it will be safe if we stay here?" Layla asked. "What if they attempt to do something?"

"I don't think they will have done anything. If they did plan on it, they would have done it when we first arrived like General Innu did." Quinn replied.

The smell of blood was getting stronger in the sleeping area. Which was strange since the injured would stay at the hospital to be treated. There shouldn't be any open wounds either because they had healers.

That's when Quinn noticed that more and more people were playing tricks on them. Cutting themselves. It was a strange resolve, it took a lot for a person to cut themselves, especially due to something as petty as this, but it was the fear in them. They were doing it as some type of test that would make them feel better.

\*Grurglel

A rumbling noise had come from one of the group, and the one it happens to be from, was Fex. His body was reacting to the sweet smell of the blood around him, whether he liked it or not, and the looks of everyone around them was filled with fear.

'What's going to happen now?' Layla thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1146: Inspect skill secre

"Yeah, now of all times, you know what, if I put a bunch of freshly baked cakes in front of you, wouldn't your stomach rumble? We practically starve ourselves every day to get used to this empty feeling." Fex said.

When Fex spoke, he was speaking quite loudly due to his anger. Layla was trying to get him to shut up, as there was a horrid look on the faces of the soldiers closest to them, to the point where they had their fingers twiddling over their blades.

"Hey, just leave some cake for the others, okay?" Quinn said, smiling at Fex. If they were going to be scared anyway, they might as well have a little fun with it.

Because of all the stares they were getting from the others, Fex, who didn't need much sleep, had agreed he would keep an eye out for them while the others could get some shut-eye. Then in the middle of the night, Quinn wanted to do some investigating on what he had seen earlier. He was planning to see just what they were doing with all those beasts in that lab.

[Shadow cloak activated]

Quinn activated Shadow cloak, making it easy for him to escape and get out without anyone noticing him. It was the same for entering the facility. All he had to do was enter when someone else was walking inside or coming out, and that didn't take long at all, as a beast was being carted and dragged by three men through the facility.

Following where they were taking the beast, eventually they arrived in a room, where a man in a white robe and heavy grey beard and hair had a digital tablet in his hand.

"This is the last one for today, Sir!" One of the soldiers reported and quickly left the room after.

The doctor went up to the beast in the cage, which looked like a giant dog the size of a tiger with bulging muscles and fur going along the top of its head all the way to its back. According to his Inspect skill, it was an Intermediate tier beast.

Quinn followed the researcher to the corner of the lab, where there was another beast. It also had the appearance of a dog, but it was half the size of the first one. It looked similar yet at the same time different. Using the Inspect skill he was told that this one was apparently a Basic tier beast.

"Let's hope it works this time." The old man mumbled to himself, as he started to play with his two fingers, and hovered around the right spot closing one of his eyes as if he was aiming something. A second later and all of his fingers extending

outward, piercing right through the Intermediate tier beast. Turning his hand left and right, the old man yanked his arm and held a beast crystal in his hand.

"Studying to see if the Crystals freshness affects the beast in any way." The old man spoke into a recording machine, as he went over to the Basic tier beast. As he got closer, the beast started to act more violent and wild, growling and attacking his case.

'Do beasts eat crystals then?' Quinn wondered while looking at this site. It seemed obvious that the doctor was attempting to feed the Intermediate crystal to the smaller beast. Perhaps it was trying to do the very thing that Vincent had talked about with the Demi-god tier beast.

Seeing that the beast wasn't inclined to eat the crystal, the doctor then started to close one eye aiming again for a certain spot. Then his fingers extended again, placing the crystal in a certain area that looked to be where the beast stomach would be.

After exiting from the beast with his fingers, the doctor had stitched up the beast using his long fingers. Even when the beast would try to hit them, they would stay there strong as if a baby was trying to whack away an adult's hand.

"It appears that despite the difference in tiers, a single crystal of a higher tier beast is insufficient to force an immediate evolution in the lower tier beast. The Basic tier beast will be put under surveillance for the next forty-eight hours, to check for any changes indicating a possible evolution."

"Should there be no signs of evolution, the experiment will be repeated to see how many crystals are required for an evolution to occur. Personal thoughts; As of now it does not seem practical to use higher tier crystals for lower tier beasts. Using the crystals of the same grade might mean the process will take longer, but could be more cost effective." The researcher recorded his findings, before he yawned.

Soon after, the researcher left the lab, leaving Quinn alone with the Basic tier beast.

'Pure, Earthborn, it's like everyone is running their own experiments. Some people might even think the Cursed faction are doing the same with vampires the way things are going on.' Quinn thought.

He searched the room for anything of use, but it seemed like most of the information was stored on computers and more. It would have been more useful if Logan had been here instead of him.

Then there was the basic tier beast lying on its side and looked in great pain as it moaned there. It looked sick, unable to move, and only its belly was moving up and down.

'Maybe I should use my inspect skill again, it will tell me what state it's in.' Quinn thought.

[Inspect]

[Basic tier beast]

[Condition weak]

[Evolution available]

[Current progress 48 percent]

'The Inspect skill, it actually worked like that! This means that it's true that beasts can consume other crystals in order to evolve, but I have no clue how many crystals they used. Even with the intermediate tier crystal, it didn't evolve. But then why didn't it show its progression the first time. Is it only after consuming the crystal and while it's in this state that it's being affected like so?

When first entering, Quinn had used his inspect skill on both of them. Both of the beast's states were green in colour and in good condition. Now the beast was in a weak state.

Quinn looked around and pressed his ear up against the wall. It didn't sound like anyone would be coming back soon, and the doctor even seemed to be done for the day. Because of this, he decided it was best if he just observed the beast for a little while.

In doing so, he had learnt quite a few things. For one, the beast evolution progress wasn't yet complete as the percentage bar had increased during his observation. It had reached 52 percent. Then something strange happened.

Quinn could no longer see the percentage of the beast's evolution when using his inspect skill again. Not only that, but the beast was now also recovering until eventually, its state was good again.

'This information, it could be really useful for us when trying to catch the Demi-god tier beast. If it really is trying to evolve, then it also means it's not consuming the crystal immediately. Because during the evolution process, the beast appears to go into a weak state, but Longblade must already know this.'

'Is this what he meant when he said he had a plan to trap the beast.'

It seemed like this lab of sorts was filled with vital information. It wasn't something that they had suddenly started to do overnight. Now he really wishes that he had brought Logan along, because there could have been heaps of information they could have learnt from this.'

Still trying to search for something, anything, he did come across something else.

Eventually, he saw a familiar device. It was circular in shape, with three buttons on the side, another recording device. Pressing one of the buttons, Quinn played back the latest message that had been recorded.

"Why do you people keep on killing us? This is not your planet! If you carry on, this whole planet will cease to exist! Go back, or I will make you stop!" Quinn heard the voice, only it didn't sound exactly...human.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1147: Giant Robots

Just to make sure he had heard correctly, Quinn played the recording back a couple of times. The voice was distinct, deep dark and a bit heavy. It was as if the one speaking wasn't quite used to the act. In a way it sounded similar to the way the Dalki would speak, yet this voice had a different tone to it.

'Is this a recording of the Demi-god tier beast?' Quinn wondered. It was the only thing he could guess since he was still unable to access files or any information on the terminals, nor did he have much experience with the higher tier beasts.

After all, it wasn't that long ago that he became able to defeat them and that kind of information should only be spread among those that had already reached such a level. Still, he had once heard about a Demon tier humanoid beast that had been capable of speaking the human language. Quinn might not have believed such a thing, if the one who had told him wouldn't have been Oscar.

'If a humanoid Demon tier beast is able to communicate, then it might be safe to assume that an evolving Demi-god tier beast can do the same.' Quinn justified the recording. 'But what about that message? It sounds like we are the bad guys here.'

Beasts were known as aggressive beings. They would attack anyone who would enter their territory, be they fellow beast or human. However, this one sounded sad and angry at the loss of its fellow beasts. What's even more interesting was that it hadn't outright attacked them, but had apparently given the Earthborn group an ultimatum.

'Are humanoid beasts that different due to their intelligence? It wasn't just worrying about the other beasts, but about this planet as a whole.' Thinking back at what Colonel Longblade had said, he mentioned that the Demi-god tier beast would come and go, destroying the Mechs and equipment. It didn't outright kill humans and even the beasts it hunted had been killed in one fell swoop.

Could it be that it was its version of kindness?

It was certainly something for Quinn to think about. He then spent some more time watching the Basic tier go through its evolution process, before Quinn decided it was time to finally leave the place. He was sure today wouldn't be the last time he would come visit this lab either. Only next time, he might bring Logan along.

Getting out of the building was no problem at all thanks to Shadow travel. The ability allowed him to pass through walls. He had followed the beast in the cage to find out where exactly it was going in the first place. Once out of the building with Shadow cloak he could go back to the sleeping quarters without them ever realising he was gone.

"Was there any trouble?" Quinn asked, as he appeared behind Fex.

"Damn it, wh-!" Fex was about to shout as jumped up from his position, but Quinn had barely covered the other's mouth. He only removed it once his friend had seemingly calmed down, realising who he was.

"Did you have to sneak up on me like that?" Fex angrily asked.

"I was sure you would have sensed me coming." Quinn explained, since even some humans could detect him when using Shadow cloak, much less a vampire of Fex' caliber.

"Yeah, well I'm tired. The air here is horrible and our roommates aren't much better. There were a couple of guys who kept on coming over, pretending to have some business here. In the end I got pissed and used my Influence skill to make them stop. Don't worry, it doesn't seem like they've noticed anything, but unless we teach them a lesson or two, more will come to bother us."

"Are you sure, we can't just give one of them a crude beating, set it as an example to not mess with us. That's how a vampire would do it?" Fex suggested.

"That might be the vampire way, but we aren't in the Vampire World, now are we? I don't want to rule these people through fear. The people are divided, because we dropped a bomb on them. It might be inconvenient for us, but we need to earn their trust again and beating up some random nobodies won't really help us with that." Quinn disagreed. Fex didn't look quite convinced, but at least Quinn was sure the other vampire wouldn't look for trouble either.

The next morning the sun rose, and the first thing the soldiers did once they woke up was to check their necks. Each one was loudly announcing that they were 'safe'. What's more they even did a headcount to check if any of them had gone missing. Of course this was all due to the new visitors there. When they looked over at them, Fex who had already been annoyed couldn't help but shout: "I might be hungry, but I still have STANDARDS!"

This resulted in some strong gazes, but ultimately nothing else came of it. They started to leave the area and do their own thing while the Cursed group could do nothing but wait. Quinn informed Logan about the lab and told him that he should come along, but the best time would be at night fall again.

With nothing else to do, their group walked around together and they were quickly drawn to the sound of loud cheers coming from a certain place. Loud bangs followed and the sound of something heavy was heard crashing to the floor.

Breaking off from the group, Fex was the first to run around the corner, searching for the origin, and the next moment he stood there with his eyes lighting up and shining stars.

"Hey, there's a freaking giant robot fight happening here! Come on!" Fex enthusiastically shouted. There were just some things that a vampire couldn't experience in the Vampire World, and this was one of them.

When the group caught up to Fex they could see it as well. It was a repeat of what they had seen from above in the ship. However now they were closer they could see things that they hadn't been able to before.

There were makeshift stands where the soldiers stood and cheered for the fighters. It looked like it had been made via the Earth ability, but then in the centre, there was terrain unlike anything on the planet itself.

A large square field the same size as a soccer field was present, yet there was a strange forest in place there. That was the arena for the fight. They would use the trees for cover while firing at each other, dashing and running through, then when they were within close range, all the Mechs seemed to be equipped with a giant sword.

"Wait, what's with those capsules at the end, don't they look like the VR capsules?" Layla pointed out.

At either end of the giant battle there were two pods stationed, and they looked exactly like the one Quinn would often use to play power fighters.

"That's because they are." Logan clarified. "What you're looking at right now is an augmented reality field. The terrain they are fighting on, the Mechs themselves, it's all generated by holograms. Even the sounds and the vibration you are feeling are simulated."

"There are two people in the VR capsules who are controlling the Mechs. It also allows them to train and practice in as many different terrains as they wish."

"How do you know all of this?" Fex asked.

"Because my company is the one that sells these products and I was the one who helped develop them. It's expensive to use actual Mechs in combat. Could you imagine how much that would cost? This is the perfect way for them to experience all the different types of terrain outside the live situation."

"The added benefit is not every person has to be in the VR capsule to watch or experience what is going on, they can all watch, coach and give each other tips on the go. It's too expensive for consumer use, so it's no wonder we haven't seen one until now. " Logan explained.

Entering the crowd, the Cursed group were interested in getting a closer look. They were allowed through and as they walked through the stands it didn't come as a surprise when people started to notice them.

The cheering turned to stares and grunts, as they whispered hoping that they wouldn't choose a seat next to theirs.

"Let's just stand by the railing." Quinn suggested, as they went to the seats that were closest to the area where the show was going on, and were able to just stand and watch.

As they were watching Fex started to imitate the robots, as he imagined polishing one of the things, and the others around found it quite hilarious as they giggled.

"He's like a child, has he never piloted one of those things before?"

"I doubt the V have such advanced techs as mechs? And the Cursed probably don't train there now in things like this." Another said.

Although Fex chose to ignore it and started to root for one of the other members.

"What are you doing, you should dodge to the left, and then slice that other one in half."

Fex's comments were starting to annoy some of the nearby soldiers, as it sounded like he could have done a better job and in the end, the one Fex was rooting for along with many others in the crowd had lost.

"What the hell was that guy doing!" Fex complained with his hands held over his head.

"Shut your mouth you brat!" One of the soldiers shouted. "I don't think you have any idea how to even pilot one of those things! You would lose to any one of us, so unless you want to put your words into action then zip it!"

Quinn didn't like the way this person was speaking to one of his friends. His anger was boiling at this moment, but Fex's reaction was unexpected.

"You mean you'll really let me pilot one of these?!" Fex asked with a giant grin.

---

They didn't know how, but somehow Fex got pushed to the front of the waiting participants and was ready to head into the VR capsule to have his first match.

"Do you think he'll be okay?" Layla asked.

"I have no idea." Quinn shrugged his shoulders.

The ones in the crowd were cheering as they recognised the person standing next to the other VR capsule. It was Avion Bon, the best Mech pilot they had.

"That kid is in for a world of hurt!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: [jksmanga](#)

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: [jksmanga](#)

## Chapter 1148: The vampire boy's dream!

The two of them entered the VR capsules and soon Fex watched a digital version of himself being created on the same field. As he turned around he could see the VR capsule behind him, his opponent standing on the opposite side of the field and everyone in the crowd including Quinn and the others.

It was as if a digital version of his body had gone outside. Soon the AR field started to generate new terrain. An orange dry desert with several large cannon openings and closings.

Then finally, the large mechs had been generated. Fex' design had a slight red armour while his opponent's was in blue. Fex excitedly leaped to the cockpit with no trouble and entered immediately.

"Did he just casually jump that high? It doesn't even look like he's wearing much beast gear?" The soldiers were wondering whether they were seeing things.

It was a grim reminder that Fex wasn't exactly human.

Although Fex wore some beast gear at times, more often than not he would follow vampire tradition and forgo using it. It seemed to be ingrained in their mentality that the strongest weapon would be their own body. Using his powers would allow him to advance his blood control and skills without relying on equipment. Then if there was ever truly the need to use beast gear he would be even stronger than at his best.

Compared to Fex, Avion used the Mech's legs to climb up to the cockpit that was located in the Mech's chest area. Once inside, there was room for one to fully move their body. The Mechs that the VR machine were simulating were both top of the line.

In the past, one would have to learn multiple controls, and the ins and outs of each button, but these days the interface was a lot easier to use. As long as one put on a certain set of gloves and boots, they would be able to control it similar to their own bodies.

On the gloves themselves there were several buttons one could press and each one did something different. This was one thing every Mech user would have to learn, so Fex naturally had no clue what they did at all.

"Fex will struggle." Logan stated as he stood on the outside observing. "At least at the beginning stages he will have to get used to this new experience. Not only does he need to figure out what the controls exactly do, but he will have to familiarise himself with the Mech's response time."

"Every Mech has a delay between one's movements and the machine itself. The soldiers train to the point where this delay doesn't really matter to them. A skilled

Mech user is someone who is able to predict the others' movements in battle and is able to react accordingly."

"Not only will Fex struggle with it, as a vampire his reaction speed is superior to a human's. The normal delay should feel like an entirety to him."

For once it sounded like being a vampire was actually a disadvantage rather than an advantage.

With both fighters having entered their respective Mechs, a holographic countdown started at ten .

"Alright, let's do this!" Fex shouted.

When the countdown finished, the first thing Fex did was press one of the buttons on his left glove. An energy blast left the palm of his hand hitting the ground.

"Okay that's what that one does." Pressing the next button, Fex mech suddenly had a blade in its hand, and now in the cockpit there was a holographic blade as well.

"So cool, this is why we need to keep humans alive?" Fex giggled to himself, as he swung the sword about, moving his hands at great speed, and that's when he noticed it. The Mech was moving far slower than he had expected. Inside the cockpit Fex had moved at his vampire natural speed, he had even finished his set of movements, and then the Mech emulated them later.

"Oh crap!"

While Fex was still trying to figure out the Mech, Avion was already on the move. He was no longer at his starting position. Seeing that Fex had moved the giant machine to a position where he could find cover, standing behind one of the large orange walls.

'Damn it, I can only hear what the giant robot hears! So I can't locate where he is.' Years of fighting with his supersenses it was hard to break the habit.

Taking a peak around the corner, for a split second Fex could see his opponent firing his way. He pulled back his head, but naturally, he hadn't accounted for the delay yet, so the energy blast sent his giant robot flying through the air.

Moments later, he could see the blue Mech having jumped towards him with a blade in his hand.

Lifting his hands up, Fex tried to blast his opponent in the air. He was sure that the other would be unable to move mid-air, but using a thrust, Avion was easily able to avoid it all.

"Poor kid, I thought that your enthusiasm stemmed from being confident. Here I was looking forward to you showing me a good time, but I guess not!" Avion shouted, as he thrust his sword down.

Knowing what was going to happen, Fex had already pulled out his blade though, and swiped. He was slowly getting used to the delay, or so he had thought. His sword swung to the side, but the only thing it hit was air. The next moment Avion fell down and his sword pierced the centre of the cockpit.

The fight was over, the VR capsules opened up and a disappointed Fex left it.

"Hahaha, see boy, it's not so easy, is it?! You didn't even get a single hit on him?" One of the soldiers shouted in glee. "If all the people in the Cursed faction are this useless, maybe we don't have to worry about the V after all!"

However, Avion didn't share that opinion. His thoughts were still on the last move of their fight.

'He would have hit me, if he had reacted a moment later. Was this coincidence, or did he know what he was doing?'

The crowd's laughter and mocking continued at Fex' expense as the vampire made his way back to his friends and colleagues. Since he didn't react some of the rowdier soldiers started chugging items at him. However, Fex just moved his head slightly to avoid the water bottle. Soon a few more came, but he avoided them all.

No matter what or how many items were thrown at him, Fex didn't even break into a sweat, but eventually he grabbed one of them midair.

"I may be useless in the giant robot, but I could beat you all in a fight anyday!" Fex shouted back, clenching the water bottle and bursting it into pieces.

At that moment, the VR machine had activated again creating a new field. This time it was the same forest that they had seen before. This would only happen when someone had entered the VR capsule, but who would do such a thing?

Until the other person entered the VR capsule, they wouldn't see who had exactly entered on both sides, and they were wondering just what to do.

"Why didn't you stop him?" Shiro asked. "You saw what happened to Fex. Do you think this would be any different?"

"Of course it will." Quinn replied leisurely.

At that moment Fex had returned and he noticed that one of them was missing.

He wasn't the only one, the soldiers as well as Avion noticed the same. Quickly his peers were cheering for their best pilot to teach them another lesson.

The pilot had no problem with that. He turned around and entered into the capsule, and the soldiers began to cheer him on even louder than before. Finally the machines started to do its thing as it created digital copies of the two of them.

That's when the whole crowd could see what looked like a middle school boy out on the field.

"It might be a different story for anyone else, but how can Logan lose when it comes to a fight in machines?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1149: Is he Cheating?

'I hope the soldiers went easy on the Cursed group. I don't need any of their blood on my hands right now. Not unless we are underground and there is plausible deniability at least.' Colonel Longblade thought as he left his office in the main base Shelter in the morning to enjoy the nice day.

'Besides, I should even thank them for getting rid of Innu. I always knew his own incompetence would be the end of him one day, just never thought it would be like this. It's a bit strange that they still haven't made an announcement about it yet. Could there be something else going on? Although it doesn't matter since news has already spread around this base.'

Until his scout teams returned from the tunnels to report back there was not much else to do for the military leader, so he decided to visit a certain place. One of his favourite pastimes was to head down to the AR field.

As soon as he arrived, the soldiers immediately saluted their superior and let him through to the special seating area reserved for him. It was located midway down the stands and the seat had a special red cloth with a gold outline placed on them, similar to a makeshift throne.

The surrounding seats were also free, because they all knew who the main seat belonged to, Colonel Longblade, the Mech enthusiast who spent most of his days watching battle after battle whenever he wasn't leading any expeditions or teaching swordsmanship.

"Oh, how come Avion is down there? Did he change his mind or did one of our soldiers actually grow competent enough to be worthy of him participating again?" Longblade asked one of his favourite subordinates.

"Negative, Sir. One of the Cursed faction members has been complaining about the performance of one of our pilots, so we invited him out to the field to teach him a lesson. Due to the disrespect that was being shown we requested Avion to show off the difference between both our factions! As expected he defeated his opener swiftly!"

The man who had answered him, stood to his left, with another one to his right. These two were in charge of the AR matches which was why they knew all of the details of what was going on and they had also been the ones that pushed Fex up the list.

"That makes sense, but why did Avion just climb back into the capsule?" Longblade questioned.

The two men quickly looked at each other with worry, and finally the one to the Colonel's right then broke the news.

"Another person from the Cursed faction has entered one of the capsules, although we have no idea how he was able to access the machine or start the match without our approval. Perhaps there is a malfunction, in any case we have already reported this problem. Nevertheless, there does not seem to be any problem with the actual equipment itself, so it should be more likely a software issue. Now that Avion has entered again, another match looks like it will soon begin." The man explained.

They half expected for Longblade to be upset, but instead he had a smile on his face. The only thing he was upset about was the fact that he hadn't arrived earlier to have watched their best pilot school a member of the Cursed faction.

"At least I will get to witness something fun today. It's not everyday that we witness someone as skilled as Avion fighting. It is a shame that he has no talent with abilities, so his skills aren't so great outside the Mech, but inside the machine he is a combat genius. Someone like him can only truly be appreciated here." Longblade mused.

The countdown for the match was about to begin, as Logan and Avion both got into their mechs. There were those that were supporting Logan who were a little nervous. While the soldiers had no worry at all. They thought the small child must have just gotten out of school. Piloting the mech required a great deal of physical strength as well, as one would get hit and injured. Stopping suddenly and moving about one would have to take the massive amounts of g-force that went with it.

Which was why they just couldn't imagine someone like Logan fairing well.

"Doesn't it take a lot of skill to pilot a mech?" Shiro asked. "I mean, I know Logan is great with technology but you have to know how to fight in them."

"That shouldn't be any problem." Quinn replied confidently. "Logan has his own unique ways of dealing with things sometimes. Don't forget he's a man of probability, so he wouldn't have gotten in that Mech if he wasn't convinced he could beat the other guy and get some revenge for Fex."

The match began and immediately the two of them started to run forward with their Mechs. Both of them dodged in and out of the trees.

'Now what would be the best method to crush someone of his caliber?' Logan deliberated. 'Should I beat him in a skill competition? With my ability I could ask the Mech to battle on its own, but he should be too skilled to be easily beaten. Which means there is only one sure way to win.'

So far the movements from either side had been cautious. There had been a few shots of energy blasts fired here and there, but the only targets hit had been the trees.

'This person's movement is a lot better than the last one.' Avion judged. 'But, when it comes to combat, no one is better than me.'

Just then, the Earthborn pilot spotted Logan running towards him with his Mech. It was a direct path where trees weren't going to help any time soon.

'Got you.' Avion thought as he raised his hand, and was ready to fire out a blast, but then something strange had occurred. His hand lit up, but it felt like something was off.

'Shouldn't it have fired by now?' Avion was confused. He knew Mech's better than anyone else from his peers. It should be impossible for him to make such an amateur mistake as to misjudge the timing.

Before he knew it, Logan's Mech had dashed forward and was directly in front of him, knocking the hand away so the resulting blast fired off, hitting just a branch in one of the trees. Next a leg was coming to kick its body, but Avion was prepared for this. He was ready to use his thrusters to reposition himself.

However, once again, his timing was off, allowing Logan's kick to connect and damage the outer hull.

"What's going on? Avion's getting slaughtered out there!"

"Did you see how fast that Mech moved? Since then do thrusters activate that fast?"

Although it was unnoticeable for those in the crowd, it wasn't unnoticeable to Avion's mind and body. He had practised in the Mech to perfect the timing to the point where he felt like his body was actually in sync with the Mech was suffering because it was currently out of sync.

'The one sure way to beat you...' Logan thought as he lifted out both his hands, they started to light up. Getting off the ground, Avion quickly moved his Mech behind a large tree to take cover. '... is to use my powers.'

With that he shot out a blast with both of his hands, aiming right for the tree. Of course. Avion had played the game 1000's of times so he knew that this tree would be able to block the energy blasts. When it hit, the tree broke and the blast hit Avion' Mech right in the chest.

'What, but that's impossible, the tree should have blocked the hit!'

However, the attack hadn't stopped there as it started melting through the metal and eventually the notification screen was seen ending the match right there and then.

"What just happened? I've never seen anyone do that with an energy blast before! Did he finish the person off with just one enemy blast attack? Is that really possible?"

"I've seen Mechs get hit countless times by blasts. Even in the chest but it's never ended the match like that, but it has to be something the game is cable off. PErhaps there are things we don't even know about them?"

What they didn't realise was that Logan Green was the creator of the game. With his powers he was able to do whatever he wished. If he wanted to modify the thrusters and grant them a quicker launch time, then he could. If he wanted to amplify the power of his blast then that was no problem as well.

Lastly, if he wanted to alter his opponents Mech, he could do that as well.

"Did Avion just lose? I never thought I would see something like that, and the other guy didn't even seem like he was trying that hard!"

"Who is that kid? Could it be that the Cursed faction had some legendary pilot we never heard of before in their midst?"

The crowd was left stunned, as they never expected the match to have one that way.

'At the end of the day, this is just a game and we do everything we can to win. In the real world it will be the same.' Logan thought to himself, as he left the VR capsule.

'I think that last move made it a little too obvious that you didn't really play fair.' Quinn was slightly worried.

Standing up from the crowd was Longblade. As the Mech enthusiast he was, he knew exactly what those machines should and shouldn't be able to do. He had never heard of such functions. Walking down from the stage, the military leader entered the arena, before Logan could leave, and now the two of them stood in front of each other.

"Do you really think you could fool me?" Longblade asked. "Why don't we see if you can do that same trick again, but in a real battle?"

He had his hand ready to pull out his sword, yet it was more of a threat since he never expected Logan to accept in the first place. When trying to pull it out to further intimidate, it felt like it was stuck.

Turning around, he could see an insignificant young man. He had seemingly appeared out of nowhere on the arena floor, and held the sword's shaft from behind.

"I'm sorry but I don't like it when people draw a weapon on my friends."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1150: Bucky steps up

Although Colonel Longblade wasn't using his full strength to draw out his sword, he still found it strange that someone was able to stop him by just using their bare hands.

'I don't see any beast gear on him, but he must be holding the scabbard hard enough to cause it to flex inward, trapping the sword itself. Is that even possible with a human's strength? Could it be that he has an ability to increase his strength?' Longblade wondered as he seized up the stranger.

Someone with this kind of strength and skill should be known far and wide by now. Information on the Cursed faction wasn't widely available for anyone outside their faction. Still, Head General Innu had recently conducted a special meeting for high-ranking officers, so they would ingrain certain prominent members. Looking at this person, Longblade was unable to associate him with any of them.

'No, it's my fault for judging him with human standards when this person is from the Cursed faction. We already know that some of their members are V, but there was no reason for them to give us a full list. For once I agree with Innu's approach, it might be safer to assume that every single one of them is a V.' The Colonel concluded and intended to reevaluate the other members at a later point in time as well.

With neither one of them budging, the military leader released the grip on his hilt.

"What's your name again?" He asked.

"It's Bucky, Sir. Our Cursed faction's higher-ups have tasked me to make sure that not a single member of our group is hurt. At least not by fellow allies." Quinn smiled as he explained. It was impossible to pretend to be a nobody at this point, so going with the flow he had decided to appear as some sort of trump card.

Hearing this, Longblade started to laugh and looked over the winner of the last match. Staring at the metal plate covering one of his arms. It wasn't unusual in this day and age for people to replace their bodies with robotic parts, but then he noticed something.

"Now that I can take a closer look, I should have realised my mistake. We were told that the Green family was working for the Cursed faction, I just never expected them to actually come out on the field. Forgive me for being so rude earlier." Longblade apologised with a gentle bow.

The whole crowd started to gossip between each other as they heard the name 'Green family'. Although not a part of the previous Big Four their influence hadn't been too far off, by creating a number of systems for the world.

The only thing was, not many people knew that Logan worked on more of the game-like projects compared to the ones his parents worked on. Be it as the creator or with his ability, he had no problem to change it into the way he wished.

"However, that only strengthens my belief that there was foul play involved!" Longblade stated, intending to stir something up. Now that Quinn was on the field though, Logan no longer had anything to worry about, and he just walked past Longblade.

"As a military man you should be aware that a win is a win. It doesn't matter if one defeats their enemy through an 'honorable' one-on-one fight, teams up on the enemy, or utilises traps. A loss in the real world means death. I would love to see people making excuses like that when they are dead." Logan declared, as he continued to walk off.

After learning of who Logan was, there wasn't a doubt in people's mind that he had somehow cheated. Avion had already felt that something was off, but with this knowledge he was certain that he had been cheated.

"I want a rematch!" Avion demanded. "Let's use real Mechs and fight again! I have practically dedicated my life to these machines, so it's impossible for me to misjudge the timing if you hadn't messed with it!"

"Stand down." Longblade ordered the pilot. "Do you really think there will be much of a difference in a real match? If he can alter the game system, he must be able to alter any system. It might hurt your pride but I won't permit you to risk your life in such a stupid way. We still need you for the war against the Dalki!"

"He has a point, in a real fight if your Mech's sensors got scrambled and something like this was to happen, who would you complain to?"

"Which is why I suggest something else. I'm sure you know that the game can be used in other ways. Not only can it simulate a field for Mechs to fight in, but also one for our users to fight in. Similar to the game Power Fighters. If you are up for it, we can fight again. In the real world you could do nothing to alter our fighting skills with your abilities, so hope you wouldn't claim it was fair to do that again if you were to alter yourself and opponent in this match? What do you say?" Longblade offered.

It was a troublesome request. Of course they could just decline this little game. After all, even though Logan could fight, he wasn't the best to go against someone who used beast weapons regularly. Even if he did use the system, the Colonel would call it out straight away as soon as he noticed something off, possibly stopping the match midway.

"Well there's really no upside to this whole thing." Fex complained who was still sulking in the stands. "Logan already beat that Avion guy, so there's no need for us to play a match by their rules."

"I do agree, but I think 'Bucky' might have other ideas."

"I'll take you up on that offer." Quinn agreed. "We don't want you to accuse Logan of cheating again, so he won't participate. How about I give it a shot? After all, I am a member of the Cursed faction as well. Any objections?"

Longblade didn't like the fact that this enigma had so willingly excluded Logan. He also didn't like the fact that 'Bucky' was this confident, but he had met many foolish young people in his life, hoping he was just one of them.

"That sounds great. What better way to bring our two factions closer together than through the art of combat and coalition. Before you accept though there are a few rules." Longblade nodded as he continued to smile, not showing his concern.

"Master Green here is to stay in the stands far away from any of the machinery. Before your fight is to take place we shall have a test run, and the game we shall play won't exactly be the same as Power Fighters either."

"As you have already noticed, everyone of my soldiers uses a bladed weapon. The most common one is a sword to do battle. To make it a little more fun we have altered the gaming system. Each combatant starts off with a hundred points of Health. Each blow takes off points, up to a maximum of ten if you hit a lethal spot. For a regular hit five."

"I know in the real world, one would die from a stab to the heart or the head, but this is all for us to improve our skills. After all, there are some foes we face that don't die even after suffering such an injury. So what do you say?"

Logan, who was still there, didn't like it. Nobody in the present Cursed group used swords as their weapons. With all things in the Colonel's favour, Logan expected Quinn to refuse or at least make some demands of his own.

"I'm in. Shall we start now?" Quinn asked with a smile.

It came to a surprise for most of the Cursed and they were wondering just what Quinn was up to. Leaving the field, Logan didn't even have time to ask, but Quinn just gave him a thumbs up as he neared the stands.

"Excellent, I am very pleased we have someone who doesn't shy away." Longblade bellowed out as he turned and made his way to the other side of the field, yet his fake smile soon turned into a frown.

'Is he this confident because of what he is? We have to win this fight to prove to the people that the V are something that can be dealt with. Most are afraid of the V and

disgusted by them, there is only a select view that isn't swayed by the countless rumours, that going the Cursed will turn you into a V and give you great power.'

Whether right or wrong, Longblade had his own reasons for wanting to win this fight. As stipulated, they witnessed a fight between two other soldiers take place before the main one. The field had changed once again, this time into a stony area with several large rocks and pillars all around.

The two of them used their swords and the field reacted as it would to in real life, each slash against the rocks would cut and break them, and even the attacks against each other would simulate the pain and reaction their body would feel.

The only difference was, that once the pain disappeared the wound would heal instantly. At the same time, everyone could see the health bars above go down as each opponent struck each other.

'I see. Well, it seems I've learned a lot, watching them.'

As for Quinn's reason for wanting to fight, it was actually quite childish. Similar to Fex's dream of piloting a Mech, when Quinn had first entered the military academy and joined the beast weapons class, he had originally wanted to use a sword to do battle.

The main reason he hadn't selected that weapon was due to the system informing him it wouldn't have supported his Blood swipe and other blood powers compared to the gauntlets. Now that he had extreme strength, speed, reflexes and experience under his belt, Quinn wanted to see how exactly he would fare with the weapon he had once neglected.

With the match over, Quinn's and the Colonels' match was about to begin.

"Come on Bucky, kick his arse!" Fex shouted and cheered as loud as he could. Since the whole arena was now chanting the name of Longblade. It was quite overwhelming as the loud sound was drowning out everything, and Fex even had to cover his sensitive ears.

'Quinn, good luck.' Layla thought.

"What a surprise to stumble upon an Ex agent of Pure in this place." A voice whispered behind her.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1151: Best babysitter

Layla only noticed that someone had snuck up on her when that person whispered in her ear, and the contents of those words had made a shiver run down her spine. After all, there were only a few who knew of her past, and those that did that had good intentions, wouldn't approach her in such a manner.

She was unsure what to do, should she turn around at that moment? Call for help from her fellow colleagues?

Judging by the way Fex was swinging his head and covering his ears, it didn't seem like he had exactly noticed what was going on and the others also seemed completely focused on spectating the match before Quinn's.

'Can I get their attention somehow, with my ability, maybe I can grab something and hit Fex or Sil.' She thought.

"Don't worry, if I wanted to harm you I would have done so already. I just couldn't help my curiosity. Now why would the daughter of one of Pure's founders be working for the person who had caused her death?" The person asked.

Layla could tell that the voice belonged to a male. Unfortunately there were far too many agents in Pure for her to figure out which one was behind her, with just the voice alone. Although to be this confident, it had to be a high ranking one, at least a numbered agent like herself of the past. For now, she was looking at her surroundings as she tried to come up with a plan in case that mysterious man changed his mind.

"Aren't you the least bit ashamed of yourself? Your 'poor' mother would be rolling around in her grave if she knew. She created Pure for a reason, but I guess by the fact that you are part of a faction of monsters you either don't know about any of that... or you simply don't care!"

The words struck a chord inside Layla.

"You know nothing about my mother!" Layla whispered back in anger, hoping to get the attention of someone, even if it was just one of the Earthborn groups. Something had been pressed against her back since the beginning of their conversation, which was why she didn't dare to agitate the person behind her too much.

However, listening to these accusations, although they weren't exactly wrong, she had to stand her ground. "That is something we can agree on. I wasn't particularly close with your mother so I didn't know her. However, I know of somebody who was close with her. Agent 2 is on this planet. If you want to know more, why don't you follow me and ask him. I'm sure he would be happy to welcome back an Ex agent. Especially one with a close connection to our organization as you." The

voice suggested and the next moment, Layla could no longer feel the pressure that was on her back.

She naturally turned around, hoping to look at the man and catch a glimpse of what he looked like, but he was nowhere in her vicinity.

'If he wasn't lying and Pure really sent out such a high-ranking single numbered agent, then that means they are putting far more importance into capturing this Demi-god tier beast than we realised. Should I take his word for it? Can I just go off, to find out more about my mother... Agent 2 should be one of the first members of Pure, so he should surely know Mom created Pure in the first place... Can I really go when all of this points to a trap? Or would he hurt me somehow, mother is no longer there and she won't have the power to protect me anymore. Not that she ever did in the first place.' Layla was conflicted.

Just then, she saw a hooded man exit the area. He put up one hand and slowly put down a finger, one by one. Layla understood that this was a sign for her that he would leave in a matter of seconds, whether with or without her. However, by following him, she would leave Quinn and the others. Should she ask them to come along?

'It might be a big trap and if anything happens to me it will just cause more trouble for Quinn, but if Pure is planning to do something to me, he could have just attacked me there. Is there something that my mother still has a play in? did she ask someone to maybe still look out for me?' She thought.

As the man started to leave, Layla had no choice but to move, still undecided. 'I'll contact Quinn through the mask once his match is over, and he can come over then. If I'm there, maybe I can find out more information about the Demi-god tier beast from Pure. Without the need for fighting between the two groups. I know Quinn is strong, but he isn't the only one Pure is fighting against and I don't want anyone to get hurt if I can stop it.'

This was how Layla justified her action to herself, but in reality she just wanted to know more about her late mother, and Quinn didn't need to be a part of that life. He had done enough for her already. She was also afraid that relying on him like so, would make her appear weak. She didn't need looking after and she didn't want Quinn to always babysit her actions.

However, there was one person who had noticed her leave the scene, and that was Logan who had little interest in the exhibition match.

'Layla, why don't you ask us for help? I know what it feels like to want to do things on your own, but if you go out without telling anyone, it will just worry Quinn all the more. It's dangerous to go alone, especially on an unknown planet.'

Following behind Layla, Logan was sure that something would happen, so he decided to keep up and close, only unlike her who had been pressed for time, he left behind a little spider.

Finally as the match started, the cheers started to die down, and Fex could hear freely again.

"Damn man, who knew a bunch of grown men could scream so high-pitched." Fex mumbled looking around and all he could see was a bored Sil, and Shiro who were by his side looking at the field.

"Hey, where the hell did the other two go?" Fex asked. He then noticed a small spider on the railing jumping up and down. Seeing this, he knew Logan must have left it behind and placed it on his mask.

"Logan, where the hell did you and Layla go?" Fex asked, worried what could be so important they couldn't stay to watch Quinn's match.

"Layla seems to be following someone at the moment, I'm just tagging along for back up. I've left one of my spiders with you. Once Quinn is finished beating the Colonel, just follow the spider to our location." Logan informed him.

"Wait just you two alone, don't you need my help. What if there;s someone reallys torng the two of you can;t handle. Do you expect me to just stay here!" Fex started to shout at the railing. The ones close by were looking at him as if he had gone mad, since they were unable to see the spider. Even if they could, they would have thought he had gone crazy.

Regardless, his words had gone unheard for Logan had already ended the call.

'Should I go anyway, I mean I know Quinn will be able to handle himself, and there are others that can cheer him on.' Fex thought.

Looking to his left and right, he could see Shiro and Sil, just casually talking to each other. Sil who was an unstable person who could probably destroy the whole shelter if someone got on his bad side, and Shiro who if others knew his ability would try to target him. That's when Fex realised.

'Did they just leave me with babysitter duty?'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1152: The faction of monsters

There was no need for Logan to completely change into his speed suit, as Layla wasn't as fast as the other vampires. Changing into another form now would just frighten those she ran past. Right now, she was using Qi on her feet to allow her to run faster to catch up to that mysterious man. Not wanting to fall behind, Logan created a pair of speed boots for himself out of the spiders.

He was keeping up with the girl with relative ease and soon enough he saw who it was she was running after. For Layla to be chasing after someone like so, he could only assume it had something to do with Pure. Eventually, the man had disappeared between two large buildings into a dark alleyway. For a second Layla waited outside of it, she might be desperate for information, but she wasn't foolish enough to just run in.

'I know this is a trap... but I need to know why... Why did Mom treat me like a tool for her whole life? It was always 'for the greater good' this, and 'for the sake of Pure' that, so then why did she give it all up at the end? The childhood I never had... everything was because of Pure, yet I don't even know the reason why she started it.' Layla thought. She had struggled with herself with what to do, but soon felt her legs walking. As she cautiously entered the alleyway, afraid the man would just run away. For a brief moment, she wouldn't even mind getting captured by Pure, as long as she could find out the truth.

Contrary to her fear, the man had stayed there. He was leaning up against the wall in plain sight, as if he had expected her to always come. In fact, he had turned around, revealing a full set of beast gear and a sword by his side. He then pulled off his robe to reveal a number on his shoulder. One that displayed the number 11 in black ink. A tattoo that was wide and thick, a proud symbol.

'Double digits, but not too far off from being a single Agent. Just how much manpower has Pure sent here? and why would you tattoo your own agent number on yourself? What happens when he ranks up or ranks down?' Layla wondered, taking a step back.

The man had a mask on, one of a clown which was fully white with a large red nose. It covered his face but where the mouth was located one could see his mouth and tongue. He started to laugh out hysterically, like a mad man, echoing through the alleyway.

"I've heard about her having an incompetent daughter, but how much of an idiot can you actually be to follow me into a place like this? Are you just trying to cause trouble for your new group? Or do your mommy issues really affect you that much?"

Number 11 pulled out his sword, which had a red hilt on the bottom, and suddenly flames started to flicker as it was activated.

"You know, I hated your mother for the longest time, she was always so uptight. Thought that her way was the only right way. She got in the way of not just Agent 2, but nearly all the other leaders time and time again. There were so many things that we wanted to do, but she just had to get involved. For some reason, 0 had a soft spot for her, so we had to be careful."

"In the end, we didn't even have to use our plan to get rid of her, but seeing how her daughter is still very much alive, I just had to act. Do you have any idea how many times that bitch punished me to 'correct my behaviour'? Claiming I went too far?! Well now she's gone, so I'll at least have fun with her daughter! And you know the best part of it? After I have had my fun with you, I can bring back your corpse and will be hailed a hero for getting rid of a traitor!"

This was new news to Layla, whenever she was at the Pure base everyone seemed to respect her decisions. Even the other single agents listened to what she had to say. She never knew that her mother was always seen as the enemy within Pure.

'How could that be, how did it even end up being that way?' Layla thought

Powered by her strong emotions, Layla had enough. She quickly placed an arrow into her bow and fired it out. Agent 11 lifted up his sword, still laughing as he activated his Qi to block it.

'This will be an easy fight, she was never even ranked above fifty. Despite her being that woman's daughter!'

When the arrow collided, neither one was giving in. The arrow was stuck mid air against his sword. Even activating the flames it seemed like they were unable to reach the arrows for some reason, eventually Agent 11 got pushed back, since the force of the two arrow's were stronger than his.

'Using my ability with my Qi has gotten a lot better. I can increase the force even now.' Layla thought.

"What? When did a lowly double agent like you learn how to use Qi? It was your bitch of a mother, wasn't it? Ha, just wait until I tell the others! For being so uptight about rules and order, she actually taught it to you even though she was the one who had insisted that we only teach it to high-ranking agents!" No longer trying to block the arrow, Agent 11 moved to the side allowing it to continue going forward.

However, another one was coming towards his face, and without knowing about it, one was heading towards his back as Layla was able to control the direction of them both.

'He's too overconfident because I was a low level agent, and I can use that to my advantage. I've got him!', Layla thought. At that moment though, the arrows fell to

the ground. As two more men came out slashing at the wooden part of the arrow and stopping the attack.

Then, two more had appeared behind her.

"What a silly fool, you will die the way you were made!" Agent 11 laughed, as he charged forward with his sword. Seeing how now they were too close, Layla had no choice but to transform, sadly the process took some time so she needed to find a way to buy it against their group.

Smashing down one of the agents, Logan had arrived and lifted his metal plated arm to block the sword attack from Agent 11. Two more robotic arms had come out from Logan's side by his ribs and fired energy blasts hitting the other two away.

"Logan!" Layla shouted, but she didn't have time to worry, as she turned around to face the two agents behind her and fired out two shadow chains. Locking them both in place. Now she had the time to transform into her second form. Horns grew from her head, her body grew slightly taller, and placing the bow away she now drew the sword by her side.

In her second form Layla had the strength of a vampire, which could even exceed that if fuelled by negative emotions. And right now, the girl was pissed, intending to make sure to at least find out what Agent 11 meant by stating she would be killed the same way she had been born.

The man could only think one thing as he saw the girl transform in front of his eyes, that she was a monster. He also didn't understand how a regular person managed to block his Qi-filled attack with just a metallic arm. Soon enough he got an answer, as the casing from the arm fell off, damaged from the sword strike.

"I knew your faction housed monsters, but I didn't know you even housed Dalki!" Agent 11 shouted in horror, as he looked at two monsters in front of him.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1153: Layla's anger

Entering the field, Quinn grasped the sword that was in his hands and made a few practice swings in the air. He looked around, taking everything in as it all felt so real. It was different from playing the VR game Powerfighters. He wasn't sure if it was due to the mix of VR and AR that had created something extremely special or if it was something else.

'Logan, it looks like you've improved something yet again.' He looked to the side of the arena expecting to see him there, but that's when Quinn noticed that not only was he missing, but so was Layla.

'Did they both have to go to the toilet at the same time? Judging by Fex's exaggerated expression I don't think they went to the toilet.' Quinn thought. Sound from the outside was emulated into the machine, so Quinn was able to hear the cheers from everyone around, but specific things that they were saying weren't heard at all.

'I might have to try and finish this quickly.' Quinn thought as he looked at Longblade on the other side. The field had finished generating, this time it was an open field, with long grass and nothing else.

"It looks like I'm in luck. This is one of my favourite maps to fight on. There is nowhere to hide, and only our skills will decide the outcome of the fight." Longblade thought as he pulled out his blade which was long like a katana. Going by his weapon's choice he had the feeling that the Colonel and Leo would surely hit it off.

The fight began, and Longblade dashed forward running with his sword down by his side. When he was within range, he struck upwards from below. Pulling back, Quinn was able to avoid the blow that almost grazed his chin.

'This person is good. No wonder he was one of the Head Generals in the past.' Quinn thought.

To everyone else, they were expecting the fight to have been easy. After the first connection, Longblade would start to deliver the remaining finishing blows, but that wasn't the case at all. The simulation allowed them to use their beast gear and the stats that were powered within it. However, 'Bucky' wasn't wearing any beast gear.

If he did, he would have been able to use the speed of his set to his advantage and could finish the fight in seconds. Quinn had intended to beat him fair and square, hopefully earning the Cursed faction a good reputation during their stay.

Of course, if he had known that Layla and Logan would have gone off, he wouldn't have cared for that. He had earned his equipment, so Longblade wouldn't have been

able to criticise him for it, still his natural body as a Vampire Lord was fast enough even without it.

After the first strike from Longblade, a few more came after and Quinn blocked each one with his sword. Unlike his opponent he was using a standard long sword. Someone would usually have to wield such a large blade with two hands but Quinn was able to with one. He blocked the swords moving them in place whenever he could see Longblade striking and was being pushed back a bit.

"You're just relying on your body's natural reactions, I can tell!" Longblade pointed out. "But you are inexperienced when it comes to holding the sword."

It was true, Quinn didn't know how to properly parry, or do any of the sort, but his strength and speed allowed him to deflect all those attacks aimed at his vitals. Exchanging blows with him, Quinn could tell that Longblade's swordsmanship was impressive.

"I have fought against someone who is better with the sword than you. I thought I could learn something, but I guess not." Quinn sighed, as he struck, not holding back as fast as he could towards the side of Longblade.

The attack was too fast for him to react, and he had been hit. With the system emulating the power in the strike Longblade felt the pain and was sent across the field. The only thing he could do to slow down the attack was to dig his blade into the ground.

"How fast was that attack?" Longblade wondered, When looking at the game screen, Quinn saw that the Colonel's points had only dropped by five. Meaning it wasn't counted as a lethal blow.

'I see, the system is going to make him recover from this, so it looks like I'm just going to have to hit him a few more times.' Quinn concluded.

At the same time, Longblade stood up, but he hadn't lost hope, for he had an ace up his sleeve. The use of abilities wasn't exactly banned from the match, so there was one thing he could do, as his eyes started to glow.

In the alleyway, a sword was shining brightly as it was covered in flames, but it was doing nothing against his opponent. Logan could feel only a little heat from the sword he was blocking with his Dalki arm.

"The Cursed faction seem to be just full of monsters!" Agent 11 shouted, as he placed more Qi into his blade making the flames brighten more and was ready to strike again, but then Layla barged forward and struck with her sword. The two powers of Qi clashed, creating vibrations through the air.

"Logan, let me deal with this one!" Layla requested showing off her large teeth. In a close range fight and a battle of strength, her second form was better suited than her third form, and she was just hoping it would be enough.

"Well, little beast, at first I wanted to kill you, but I guess you still might have some use being kept alive! Too bad for you, we don't need you in one piece!" Agent 11 let out another crazy laugh, as he swung his sword again, managing to cut Layla's arm. It wasn't deep as the girl managed to pull back avoiding most of the blow but her body wasn't healing like it usually would.

'Is this the second stage of Qi?' Layla wondered, as the clown started to bombard her with his attacks. She knew how to use the second stage of Qi to a certain extent, but she was unable to use it on anything but her arrows. Unfortunately, her arrows were not enough to deal with him, but she wasn't faring much better with her sword. She wasn't a master swordsman, either, but he seemed to be quite skilled.

Soon the attacks were building up on her body as she was cut more and more in different places.

'I hardly used the second form, I should have practised with the sword more instead of using my arrows.' Layla chastised herself, but now was the time for regrets. She knew that would have to wait until after the fight.

The only reason why she was doing okay so far, was because she could still power her sword with the first stage of Qi. Making her strikes powerful. Nonetheless, the difference between the first stage and second stage quickly became apparent.

Coating his sword with the second stage of Qi, he was able to chip at Layla's sword which was at the King tier level. Both swords were made from the same level of quality crystals, yet Layla's weapon continued to suffer until, it broke.

"You're finished!" He shouted.

With nothing else to use, she decided to block the attack with her bare arm. Afraid that something would happen, Qi started to run through her veins and she used what power was in her body to allow it to do so.

Striking forward Agent 11 was going for a clean cut, but instead his sword was left there stuck in place.

'What is going on, is the Qi in her body really this strong? Strong enough to even block my second stage and when using a weapon.'

Layla didn't know how her bones and flesh were able to withstand the sword, but the sword was slipping deeper and deeper into her by the second and something had to be done.

Jumping back, Layla pulled out an arrow from behind, she held onto two of them like a spear. In the desperate situation she threw both of them towards Agent 11 who was confident enough to dive right in. He went to strike and block the blows but the power of the Qi was more than he had expected, getting pushed back before he could further injure it.

'How is that possible? I hate to admit it, but somehow her Qi is actually stronger than mine. I've only had the advantage because I know the second stage, but she can actually use it in her arrows to some extent.'

Changing the shape of his Qi, he was able to redirect the arrows, but when he was ready to, he felt something slice the back of his ankles causing him to fall to the floor. The next second, pain shot from the front of both his feet.

Looking down, he saw that the blade that had broken, she was controlling it with her telekinesis and used it to attack the back of his foot while he was distracted, and now lifting the two half into the air, she slammed them down on his foot, and they had pierced the front as well.

'But how? I'm wearing beast gear, and have the power of Qi running through my body.'

The next second, Agent 11 was constricted by the body of a serpent, as it wrapped around him. His body was getting crushed by muscles stronger than he had felt before, and on the tail end of it, he could see a beautiful woman.

'This Qi! It's as powerful as the first digits! And that attack just now... did she infuse the blade with the second stage as well... is that... how she hurt...' Before he could finish his thought, Agent 11 had passed out and Layla left him on the ground. Having exhausted a lot of her strength, the girl turned back into her usual self, but she could barely stand as she knelt up against the wall.

'I did it! I was able to beat a single high ranking double digit agent that was able to use Qi, by using my own Qi. I have improved... Shit, Logan.' Layla suddenly remembered that she wasn't alone. Turning around, she saw that Logan was having hardly any trouble dealing with the other agents, and now that their leader had been subdued on the floor, they decided that fleeing the area was the better choice than continuing to fight against Logan.

'We already have the highest ranking one, and I'm sure there are other Pure members out there. It's better to fall back.' Logan decided. The spiders started to form and collect over his Dalki arm once more. They took the broken parts from the floor and started to fix it in place covering it once more.

Then the spiders soon moved to the Agent who was left passed out on the floor, and they started to cover his legs in place, and surround his body as well.

"He's an agent of the Pure I'm assuming. I can only imagine that group causing you to act so reckless...." Logan was about to give Layla a lecture about her stupid act, but he decided to postpone it. She had done well in the fight, and she was obviously exhausted.

"Let's take him back to Quinn. With his powers he's the best person to interrogate him." Logan said. "If we hurry, we might be able to make it in time to see him humiliate Longblade!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1154: Bucky a legend?

Before entering the VR capsule both parties had been told the official rules by the organisers and both had agreed to them. They were allowed to wear whatever beast equipment they wished. The only beast weapon they were to use had to be a blade of some type.

Both of the blades that would be used would be of the same tier level. Since it was VR, Quinn was able to select a suitable weapon for himself but just chose to go for a standard longsword.

However, the rules had never mentioned anything about abilities and this was because Longblade had one that would give him a huge advantage in this type of match. Since his skills with a sword were usually enough to win over his enemy he didn't really abuse it, but this fight was one he just had to win.

'Did that Logan Green do something to increase his avatar's speed output? Tamper with his strength? At least it doesn't seem like I am suffering from anything like Avion. I didn't want to do this, but I need to even the playing field somehow.'  
'Longblade reasoned as he activated his ability.

His eyes started to glow slightly and pupils' outline became blue. A sign his ability was activated and now he could see it. It was strange when Longblade first used the ability playing the game he thought it wouldn't work, but it had something to do with seeing the opponent in front of him that allowed it to.

'Now let's see, what exactly you plan to do.'

---

Around this time, Logan and Layla returned, only there was a suspicious large box shaped like a coffin on the boy's back. Making it stand out even more was the fact it was easily twice Logan's height. It looked quite heavy, but ultimately the ones doing the heavy lifting were the additional robotic arms. When they finally met up with Fex and the others, Logan put the box down upright by the group's side.

"Finally, you guys returned. What exactly happened?" Fex asked as he turned around to see the strange appearance. "What the hell is in the box?"

"A person." Logan stated without blinking an eye. "We don't want this one to escape so we had to restrain him. Don't worry, he's still alive and has enough air to last for a while. I just thought this would be the best appearance to cover it up. It should deter others from opening it, as they might think there a V is inside."

Fex wanted to say something, but judging by how extremely tired Layla looked, the cuts on her arm that were healing slowly, ,while part of her body was badly bruised he understood that it couldn't have been an easy fight.

On the other hand, Logan looked completely fine, no wounds whatsoever on him. At least from what they could see on the outside. It made the vampire question if he had actually provided backup or had just let the girl do all the work.

Logan had been able to stop most attacks with his giant Dalki arm, but there was something he had realised during the fight. Although the Pure members that had fled didn't seem too powerful, they were able to use Qi. They hadn't been too proficient with it, either that or they had a low reserve of Qi, but it had been enough for Logan to still receive a cut on his arm.

When he was cut and blood was drawn he noticed the colour was green and something strange happened. An energy had entered his body, and he had felt himself becoming angrier. Because of this, he had ended up fighting more cautiously after and it was also the real reason he didn't want to chase after those that had runaway.

'I guess I might need to run a few tests on myself. Otherwise I could become a liability to the whole group. In Borden's case he stated he felt an energy rising in him whenever he was injured and his anger was always directed towards those that hurt him and not the others around him.' Logan thought.

He wasn't too worried right now, but it was always better to be safe than sorry.

---

Back in the arena now that Longblade had been sent across the field, Quinn had time to look at the others and there he could see that Layla and Logan had returned. It was a relief for him, that he didn't have to go on some grand journey to save them once again.

He had done that often enough already. Now that he knew they were safe, he could relax and have some fun just as he had intended in the first place. Quinn gripped the sword and waited for Longblade to make his next move, but for some reason he hadn't moved at all.

Instead his face was twitching as if he was angered by something, something that he didn't quite understand.

'This doesn't make sense. With my ability I can see the outcome of the next five seconds based on my movements. So why? Why is the future telling me that no matter where I attack, that I will be the one getting hurt no matter what I do?' Longblade was getting frustrated.

His own ability was simply telling him that no matter what he was going to do next, this Bucky guy who he had first heard of today would be able to react and counter him. However, there was one ray of hope, as Longblade found a way through.

He charged in like before, unfearful and more confident because his ability told him that this would work. Seeing this, Quinn thought it was the same set of moves as last time, but he could tell something was up.

'I might need to use my full strength and speed for this one. I was hoping to win with a clean score.' Quinn smiled to himself. This was what he wanted, to see a swordsman at work, one that showed everything they had.

When Longblade finally reached Quinn, he swung his sword once again striking from down below. Seeing this Quinn went to block as he always had just moving his sword in the right place.

'I'll strike after this block and keep doing so, ending this match.' Quinn thought.

But then something strange had happened, as the sword was in the right place to block his opponent. It seemingly phased right through the Colonel's sword, disappearing and then reappearing like Quinn's sword was never there. It sped up significantly and a clean strike was made right through Quinn's head cutting through from the chin.

A large pain went through him, but the gaming system allowed him to recover quickly and he jumped a few steps back. Looking at the scoreboard it counted it as a lethal blow meaning Quinn had taken ten points of damage.

"Whoa! That's Colonel Longblade for you! The best swordsman in the world."

"I was getting worried for a second when his opponent was blocking all the attacks."

Quinn stood there for a few seconds in disbelief. He had been taking it easy so far, but just now he had used everything he had in an attempt to block the sword and at that moment, he had no clue what happened.

Of course, if Quinn was using his beast gear, blood powers and shadow powers it might have been different. Then Colonel Longblade wouldn't have been a match for him but it was still apparent that if the two were fighting sword to sword, Quinn would have lost his life.

Not wanting to waste any time, Longblade decided that he would go for the same move again. After all, it was the only one that his ability told him would work.

'It's not really the way I wanted to win, but as the Green kid said, a win is a win!' He thought.

Then for the first time, Quinn entered into a stance. He bent down his knees slightly and placed his sword into his scabbard. He made sure his fingers firmly gripped his sword waiting for the right moment.

'A stance? But that stance doesn't match the sword.' Longblade was unsure whether Bucky was doing something crazy or was just an amateur who attempted something he didn't understand wouldn't work.

Erring on the side of caution, Longblade activated his ability once again and he could see it. The next move was beautiful, it was fast and would slice him in half. Regardless, Longblade had already started the first steps for the phantom blade strike, the only thing he could do was try to cancel it mid strike in order to survive.

When Quinn could see his foot was in range, unleashing his hand as fast as he could, he attempted a quick draw slash.

'I don't know if this will work, because all I'm doing is imitating what Leo did at one point!' Quinn thought as he pulled out his blade.

Seeing this, it was exactly a repeat of what Longblade's ability had shown him. The Colonel cancelled the attack and tried to move out of the way. It looked successful until he felt a sharp pain hit him in his right thigh.

If this wasn't a game his leg would have been chopped right off.

At that moment five points of HP had been lost from Longblade and the two of them were now at 90 HP points each.

The match was intense, and after seeing that move the crowd thought differently about Quinn. A young man had just pulled off an impressive move. Who would be the winner now? No one knew.

'That move, where have I seen it before?' Longblade thought.

A few seconds later and a notification screen appeared in front of them both.

[The match has been forcefully cancelled]

"Sir, I apologise for interrupting your match, but an urgent report just came in. The Demi-god tier has been spotted!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1155: A copyca

As soon as the news about the sighting of the Demi-god tier beast was revealed, it felt as if the entire base had started to mobilise. Even the lab was busy and soldiers, together with researchers, could be seen pulling out the beasts. The non-military folk all came out to cheer the soldiers before they set out.

By the time Quinn and Longblade had left the capsules, half of the arena had already left. The first thing the Colonel did was to wave over 'Bucky', who appeared by his side nearly instantly.

'Well that confirms it. He actually is that fast. I was sure that Green Boy had pulled some trick on the VR machine, but unless one has trained for years and has perfected their body over time no one should be capable of such a thing. It's actually scary to think how fast he would be if he had put on some decent beast gear.' Longblade thought.

Using his ability he could see that there was nothing he could do, even with his favorite sword against the unarmed boy. Bucky would be able to counter him no matter what he did. A shiver ran down the military leader's spine as something even more frightening was revealed. If Longblade attacked this person right now with the intention to kill him, he would be defeated by him with his bare fists.

"I didn't know the Cursed faction had someone who is so talented in martial arts and the way of the sword. You said your name is Bucky, correct? That movement you pulled at the end, it looked a little awkward but familiar. Who is your teacher?" Longblade asked.

The aggression and arrogant tone that had been present in Longblade's tone upon their arrival had disappeared. Quinn didn't know about the other Earthborn soldiers, but it became apparent that he had at least earned a bit of respect from this man.

As for how to answer the question, right now he wasn't Quinn, but 'Bucky'. As for the last move...

"My teacher's name is Leo Suiyan." Quinn eventually answered truthfully.

The second Longblade heard the person's name, his eyes lit up, and now he understood why the move looked so familiar to him. Leo Suiyan was someone he had admired greatly. Longblade, although a middle aged man, had been inspired to pick up the sword due to seeing the war hero Leo in battle.

In the past he had been someone who relied on guns for battle, but they had proven useless against the Dalki. One day, he had the fortune of being saved by the Blind Swordsman, allowing him to witness Leo's swordsmanship. It was one of the reasons he vehemently defended the statement that the sword was the best weapon one could have and why he had insisted on teaching it to those under him.

"Does that mean Leo is with the Cursed faction?" He asked.

That was when Quinn also realised that not everyone seemed to associate Leo with being part of the Cursed faction. He had never been seen in public with them and he had naturally refused all sorts of interviews. Of course, that also meant that the world was still unaware that their war hero was now one of the V many feared.

"He is someone with close ties to the Cursed faction but he freely does as he wishes." Quinn answered because that's how he honestly felt about Leo. Regardless if he was his Vampire Knight or not, to Quinn he was his first teacher and someone he still had a lot to learn from.

"I see, in that case I'm even more sorry for the disrespect I have caused his student so far. You are a strong person, Bucky, and I wish you could introduce me to your teacher someday. I would like to personally thank him for what he did in the past." Looking over, Longblade saw his men already waiting for him. If they had found the trail of the beast, it was safe to assume that Pure did as well.

"The Cursed faction are welcome to come along with me personally as we look for the Demi-god tier beast. Please meet us outside the main Shelter's headquarters. I will be waiting for you there and will be speaking to Nathan." Longblade said, before he went off to coordinate the plan they had put in place.

It looked like his fun little game had worked out for the best for all of them. Perhaps Longblade had never intended to put much woe into the Cursed faction, but now it seemed like his opinion of them had changed.

Since the field was not empty of soldiers, Quinn quickly went over to where his friends were and he could tell immediately that Layla was suffering with sweat running down her face and that she was exhausted.

"What happened?" Quinn asked as it was fairly obvious the two hadn't just gone off to the toilet at the same time. Logan filled him in, about how one of Pure's members had been present in the crowd and they had eventually tracked him down and that they had captured him, in the hopes he might reveal some intel.

Going by her injuries, Quinn decided to have a quick look at Layla and could tell straight away what the problem was. The amount of Qi in her body was still too much for her body to handle. Quinn had the body of a Vampire Lord and even then, using Qi would put a lot of strain on himself.

For Layla, it was more beneficial for her to use the second stage of qi, or perhaps the third stage, since the Qi would leave the body, rather than reinforce it. If Layla continued to use the first stage to power herself, it would only harm her body, doing more damage than good in the long run, especially with the large quantity she had inherited from her mother.

"Layla, you need to use less Qi on your body. When you shoot it from your arrows it's okay since it's not affecting your body so much, but if you use it too much you might damage your body. Imagine if Logan wasn't there at the time."

"The rebound on your body was too much and any other pure members would have been able to hurt you." It sounded and felt like to Quinn he was telling off a child. The thing was Quinn didn't really understand why Layla had gone after him in the first place, because she hadn't explained what exactly Agent 11 had said about her mother.

Still, she knew she had done wrong, so she listened to him without complaining.

"Fex, I think it would be best if you stay here for now and look after our captive. Maybe it's best for you to take him somewhere quiet and ask him the question we need. How many pure members they have, what their goal is and so on. Being a high ranking agent he should know a lot." Quinn ordered.

Fex honestly wanted to protest, he wanted to go with them but understood. Since Pure was most likely also going after the Demi-god tier beast carrying another person around would be a huge distraction. If anything while no one was keeping a good eye on them, it was the perfect time to do some investigation of their own.

"Logan, it sounds like the army seems to be making movements. My guess is they're going to try and use some of the beasts that they have captured as bait for the Demi-god tier beast. The stronger ones should have left the Shelter, or will be protecting the outside walls. If you can, I think this would be the perfect time to head inside, and maybe you can find more information. There are some interesting things there."

"Lastly, me, Sil, Shiro and Layla will head off with Longblade and his group. Hopefully when we come back, we'll have good news for you all." Quinn said with a smile. With everyone knowing what they needed to do, it was time for them to move out.

'Vorden, Raten, it won't be long until I can see you again.' Sil thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1156: A special gif

Outside of the main base, Quinn was waiting with Sil, Shiro, and Layla. Using a bit of his own Qi abilities, Quinn was able to settle the wild Qi that was affecting her body, allowing Layla's natural Qi to fuse with her injured cells allowing her to start healing.

With the foreign Qi expelled, she was soon enough good as new. At least physically speaking, mentally was a different story. Honestly, Quinn didn't really want to take Layla in her current state. He was deeply concerned, since it was clear there was something that she hadn't told them, and he knew well that she had a history with Pure who were also out on the hunt for the Demi-god tier beast.

The reason why he allowed her to come along, was because he was worried that she would just go off on her own once more, if she was left behind. There was no guarantee there would be Logan or someone else rescuing her next. It was far better off being next to him than away.

While waiting, Quinn observed everything that was happening. Mechs were being escorted out of the large tube tunnels and then being taken to a factory. They were coming out partially destroyed. It looked brutal as more and more were being dragged out.

Quinn noticed another strange little thing. The captured beasts were actually being sent down a different tube, meaning they were heading to a different pit in the landscape underground, not where the damaged Mechs were coming from.

'Are they trying to trick the humanoid beast somehow? If the same thing happens to the Demi-god tier beast as the basic one, then it means after it harvests the crystal it should enter a weakened state. Do they intend to attack it while in the middle of its partial evolution?'

'Are they trying to use this information to their advantage? If they send it down the same tube then maybe it will be too obvious. While sending it to one next to it, perhaps after the beast is done destroying the mechs, it will move to hunt for beasts again.'

Of course Quinn was just guessing, but other than that he didn't really understand what they were trying to do. Perhaps Logan would have been able to shed some light once he had obtained more information.

'Still if we can, it would be nice to capture this beast in one go, and hopefully we can use its body straight away. There will be the matter to discuss with the Earthborn group, but if by then a new Supreme commander has been selected, we can maybe use Sach to order them to stand down.'

Finally it looked like Longblade was done with his meeting, as he came out with a strong team of five men, each one armed to the max in high tier beast gear. Nathan,

was an additional sixth person who had come with them, who had listened in on the meeting as their representative.

"I'll explain what has been discussed on the way to the Demi-god tier beast. These five including Nathan are really the only ones capable and strong enough to go against such a beast. The soldiers are evacuating the underground area at the moment, so we might have to use a special travelling tube to go in and out of areas." Longblade explained.

He then looked at who was coming from the Cursed faction, and noticed that the Green boy and one of the V had been left behind.

'I assume it's because Green isn't really much of a fighter. 'Bucky' and the V girl are here. Could it be that not all of them are as strong as him? Or did they just leave the other one behind as a guard?' Longblade wondered, but after having experienced the strength of Leo's student he was glad that he came along.

"Here take this." The Colonel said as he held out what looked like a type of katana blade of some kind. "I know in the VR game you used a sword, but you should follow in your teacher's footsteps. That sword there is a Legendary tier sword. It's the old weapon I used to have, but I found one with an active skill that's more suited to my needs."

"Think of it as your reward for winning that fight earlier." Longblade said.

For a second Quinn didn't even know what to do, should he just accept the weapon or was this some kind of trap. Quinn had grown too used to people from the Earthborn group trying to get revenge, attack them or even more, but Longblade wasn't doing any of that.

Using the Inspect skill, Quinn was worried that maybe there was some type of curse put on the weapon, but he was just even more amazed at what he could see. He had also forgotten for a moment, that the one receiving the gift wasn't him, but 'Bucky'.

Although the weapon had no active skill it had one very special trait. The weapon was indestructible. It was unable to break.

'Can this be real, can a weapon really have this as a skill? Just what type of beast had to be killed to create something like this?'

The stats that came with it, weren't even close to his gauntlets. At the same time he was no master swordsman, but maybe one day it would come in handy to train in the sword, and this would certainly be useful in these types of situations.

"I thank you, for your generous gift." Quinn bowed down and took the katana-like sword that was shining a bright silver in colour, and placed it on his side. He

wanted to put it in his dimensional space but was afraid it would give away who he was.

'It seems like hiding who I really am was the right move, and it proves that not everyone in the Cursed faction is a group of bad people.'

Before leaving, Sil had touched Colonel Longblade, taking a part of his power. He looked at the kid, and by now most people were aware of who he was based on the description, so the Colonel didn't say anything and allowed for it to happen.

Finally the group was off.

Meanwhile, Logan was attempting to complete his own mission that had been assigned to him. Standing outside the lab, he could see that they were in a rush to get the beast transported down to one of the special tubes.

Using this brief moment of opportunity, Logan was able to take advantage of the situation. His spiders were able to locate and enter the inside of the facility. Watching their every move, while sending information back to Logan.

'I haven't done this stuff in a while.' Logan thought as he walked rushing into the facility just acting as every other soldier did. It was easy to enter the base and he understood once inside why they were a bit lax on the outside. Every door seemed to be made out of glathrium, and had a passcode machine to its side.

Although there were those like Quinn who could bypass those, not many people could. As for Logan, the machine that could keep him out would have to be created first.

'Are all the doors reinforced because of what's inside?' Logan wondered, remembering what Quinn had told him about his nightly escapade. He walked around looking for the specific door that Quinn had entered from last time.

During his time here, he didn't want to leave any stone unturned, but he thought if his time was limited it would be best to get to the most important thing first. Eventually, he reached the area where the said beast was meant to be. Using his spiders they were able to squeeze through the small gap in the bottom.

He checked for any signs of anyone else inside, scientist or anyone else, but apparently there were only a few beasts. Placing his hand on the access code, it took a few seconds before he was allowed in. Logan left a few of his spiders in the hallway, acting as sentries to warn him if anyone wanted to enter.

Once inside, Logan quickly found the Basic tier beast that was being experimented on, telling him that he was indeed in the right room.

"Let's see just what sort of things you've been doing here." Logan mumbled as he placed his hands on the terminal, and the information flooded into his brain. A

couple of minutes later and all the information he found useful was inputted into him.

"It seems like there are more labs like this one with different beasts, and they only store the information of each beast in a certain lab. It doesn't seem like they have been monitoring this one for long. But there is one thing that interests me, in one of the files.'

When looking through all the information, Logan had obtained a map to all the labs where they were running similar experiments on the beasts. But the one that had caught the most attention was one that was labeled Humanoid - Legendary tier beast.

'Are they trying to make another Demi-god tier beast? Or do they plan to go even beyond that?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1157: Project: Evolve

Looking at the files, Logan was checking through all of the information. The main problem was that it was pretty lacking. It seemed the military was quite careful about not linking systems. So if there was a breach, a single person wasn't able to access all the files.

'This might be due to people who have abilities like me. In this case, not even my back doors work out for this type of stuff!'

With no more information being gathered from the current room he was in, Logan decided that it would be best that he head off to the place where the legendary tier humanoid beast was meant to be located.

Before leaving himself, with his spiders still down the hallway, he allowed them to locate where the room was first. Now having access to the map of the facility, it was easier to navigate and eventually, his spiders had reached the room. Once they entered, Logan was filled with confusion at what he could see.

'Is that real? Without just the spiders, I won't be able to access any information from the terminals. I will need to enter the room for myself, but what could have happened there?'

Trying not to waste time, Logan sent out his spiders on a different task. They were to head to each room, where a beast was meant to be held captive. It looked like a lot of the beasts they captured were going to be used for bait. However, the others, those being experimented on, were in a different area. Which was good news for him since he was currently on the second floor with the experiments, and there weren't many people out and about on this floor?

Each room had the beast present. There was even one room that contained a king tier humanoid beast as well. Which was interesting. Suppose all else failed, as long as the intelligence was still there and Shiro could move human minds into them. Despite what tier it was at, they could use the humanoid beast to place Vorden or Raten inside.

Of course, half of Quinn's idea to use Demi-god tier beast or higher was the fact that they would still have strong power. Being in a beast, they would no longer have the powers they once had before.

'What Quinn never considered was the fact that the beasts can evolve.' Logan thought as he stood outside the door where the legendary tier beast was meant to be. Getting inside, it was as easy as the last door, and now he could see the place with his own eyes.

'So what the spiders sent me was real.' Logan thought, looking at the scene in front of him. The whole lab, compared to the other one's, was destroyed. It looked like they had a strange circular container that was centred in the middle.

The front half of it had been ripped apart and chucked to the side, then there were several containers on the outside as well, with glass on the floor. On top of that, nearly everything else in the room had been ripped apart or destroyed, but one terminal remained, the one that was required for the door to be opened.

'Let's hope there is still some information that I can gather from here.' Pressing his hand on all the terminals, Logan was able to extract some information, but a lot of it was unretrievable. With the odd bits of information he did obtain, he did learn of something. The beast that was contained here was the first project they were working on.

It was the oldest compared to all the other experiments.

'I thought that they started experimenting on the beast to find a way to get rid of the Demi-god tier beast, but the reports don't match up. This beast was captured way before the Demi-god tier even started appearing.'

Searching for more information, Logan knew there had to be something here since this was the first experiment, perhaps the reason why they were doing this in the first place. Then finally, he had found two vital pieces of information.

One was a recording of what happened on the last day of the experiment. There were no more dates after this, and the other was why they were running these experiments in the first place.

'That's what the facility was being used for? It was a project to upgrade the beasts to create stronger crystals. They were trying to find the most effective way to make the beast evolve to create stronger weapons.'

'It makes sense since, for one, demon tier beasts are hard to come by and very dangerous to kill. Even if they couldn't make a beast evolve to the Demon tier level, it is still an improvement for the army to have anything legendary tier and above.'

In all honesty, Logan couldn't fault them for what they were trying to do. They were just trying to use what they had to their advantage. Although it was cruel for the beasts in a way, what choice did humans have? They were in a desperate time, and if they didn't do this, their lives would be in danger.

Next was to play the video, and now finding this out and putting the pieces together, Logan had a pretty good idea of what happened that day.

The video started to play, and it was an exact replica of the room Logan was in, only that everything hadn't been destroyed yet. In the centre of the room was a

circle machine where the beast could be seen inside. It was hard to make out precisely what it looked like due to where the cameras were positioned.

On the outside of where the beast was, there were several glass displays with crystals floating about inside. A tube above it all redirected to the beast in the centre. Suddenly, all the crystals on the outside started to light up simultaneously. One of the doctors standing in the middle had a smile on his face.

When the lights from the crystals disappeared, the beast in the pod started to light up brightly. Shining so hard that all of them had to cover themselves.

"Finally, we did It! We managed to evolve a Legendary tier humanoid beast into a Demi-god tier beast!" The man dressed in white said. A few seconds later and there was a rumbling that had come from within the centre container.

Several loud bangs were heard after, and the look of panic appeared on the scientists' faces as they took a step back. The next second, the door was ripped off and thrown all the way to the side.

When Logan looked at where the door had landed, he could also see that the door was still in the same place. Unfortunately, from that moment onwards, the video footage was corrupted, and Logan was unable to see more.

'The date on this video. It's only been a month since this happened. It was so soon. Is that why the room still hasn't been repaired yet? And if my guess is right. The humanoid Demi-god tier beast that the scientist and Pure are after is the Demi-god tier beast from this facility.'

Exiting from the room, it was quite the revelation that Logan had found out, but it didn't really change anything. They still needed to get the Demi-god tier beast for themselves. However, Logan wasn't ready to leave the facility yet.

Not all beasts could evolve, and it looked like they had found a way to determine which beasts could evolve. Perhaps this information could be used to help Borden, Raten and Vorden.

After getting all of the information, Logan realised that there was one thing he needed more to figure everything out. He needed to take a subject back with him. Which was why right now, he had moved from the destroyed room where the Demi-god tier beast was kept and was currently in the room where a King-tier humanoid beast could be seen.

The beast could be seen behind a large glass wall. When Logan entered the room, its eyes locked onto him. Following his every move.

'Is it acting this way because its never seen me before?' Logan thought.

The beast had a humanoid figure but was covered in black fur. Its eyes were piercing red without any white area. On top of that, it had several tails coming out

from its behind that were large and fluffy. They could be seen extending to the top of its head.

'It will take too much time to look for another Demi-god tier beast. I can use this one to research how to know which beasts can evolve and which can't. At the same time, we can just evolve this one.' Logan thought as he went to the terminal and placed his hand down.

Here he had access to many different options, one of them allowing for a special type of gas to enter the glass room the beast was in. The gas was pink in colour and filled the room until the beast itself couldn't be seen.

When the gas finally disappeared, the beast was seen on the floor lying down.

'Now, just need to take this someplace safe. I think it might be best to get back and hand it to Fex. We can try to wrap the beast up. With his strings and my equipment, we should be able to hold it.'

Activating another button, the glass door started to rise. Walking over to the beast, before he knew it, its red eyes shot open and stared right at Logan.

"Thank you for letting me out!" The beast said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1158: Pure or Demi-god

The journey was set for Quinn and the others. At the moment, they were walking towards one of the temporary stations built around the Shelter. All these stations had soldiers guarding the outside of them. This was because they were where the special tubes were used to transport Mech's and more, taking one to the sink spot locations.

What impressed Quinn the most was just how organised and well controlled the army was. The only person he could praise this for had to be Longblade. It seemed like everyone had great respect for him, even though it couldn't have been long since he ran the place.

Most of these men weren't even originally his. A lot of them actually belonged to general Innu.

"I must say you run a great place here," Quinn said, wondering just how he did so.

"Of course, these people know why we do what we need to do," Longblade replied. "We are the support for the main Earthborn group. Without us, there are no crystals for the war. In a way, we are the fuel that powers the engine. I make sure everyone knows the importance of their tasks. If we fail to produce, then it's even worse for the others."

Hearing this made Quinn realise that the people worked so well because they all believed they were working towards the same goal. Defeating the Dalki was essential to the whole of the human race. Still, it was also crucial to make sure that everyone knew precisely their part and how it would contribute to the overall goal.

"Our group is the same Q...Bucky." Shiro corrected himself before he said the wrong name. "From what I have seen. Many of those in the Cursed had nowhere to go or felt like they had no purpose, but they are given a purpose when they are taken in. On top of that, we have a leader that cares for us, and it feels like he will do anything to protect us."

The reason Shiro spoke up was due to the look that was on Quinn's face. He could see he was in deep thought after hearing this.

"Are you talking about Quinn, the Cursed faction Leader?" Rafer asked. The man who asked the question, full name was Rafer Lyle. He was a large man who wore a heavy set of armour from head to toe. His shoulders were nearly as broad as the length of Quinn's whole body he was so big.

He was one of the sergeants currently working under Longblade, and he was one of the few who did not quite have a bladed weapon. On his back, he had what looked like a lance. However, rather than a single point as its attack. The lance had four-bladed edges that ran down to the tip.

"I have heard a lot of things about him, about how powerful he is. A man of that strength, I would love to see him fighting up front." Rafer said with a big smile.

"But isn't he a V?" Another soldier asked, who was originally a high ranked A class female traveller called Joy. She was on the opposite end of the spectrum, wearing light armour, and had two thin blades on her back as well. "Did you guys even know about it before the announcement was made? I just don't know how I would feel."

While saying this, Joy also looked towards Layla, as she was one of those reviled on the broadcast. Longblade also looked at Bucky as he was sure he was a V as well.

"Some of us knew about it for a long time," Sil answered surprisingly. "It hasn't changed anything in the group. It's really annoying how your people look at us as well."

Frankly, nearly everyone was getting tired of how the others looked at them. Even now, when they were walking with Longblade they would get stares.

"He's right," Rafer replied. "It shouldn't matter, and I think if we can work on this together, it will prove that the Cursed faction are nothing to worry about."

Finally, they had reached the station, where a strange vehicle was waiting for them. It was mostly clear on the outside and shaped like an old fashioned car. Longblade was the first to get on, and the five men behind him followed. Then Nathan did along with the rest.

The vehicle itself had seats for them to sit on and looked large enough to fit around a hundred people. So there was plenty of room for them all. Then, the vehicle started to move all on its own down the long tube. Now they were travelling down the large hill, exiting from the Shelter where it was placed on a hill heading straight for one of the sinking spots.

"Okay, I guess it's time for me to explain what is going on," Longblade said in a loud voice as he stood in the middle. "The Demi-god tier has been found in one of our mining areas as usual. We have cleared all of the destroyed mechs as well as all of them that were mining there."

"The sinking spots have their own natural tunnels below, as well as the large areas we have excavated, but other than that, there is nowhere for the beast to run. After clearing out a mining area, it seems like the beast goes out to eat in one of the other areas. We have planned a trap, so we have put various beasts in different sinking areas near the mining area where it was located."

"These tubes with these vehicles are the quickest way we can travel to each area. Currently, combat mech teams have been sent to the other areas while we are going to the original area where the beast was spotted. We will attempt to follow its

tracks, and if we get a report of the beast being spotted in another area, we are to head to these tubes and travel to its location."

Quinn understood why they were planning to do this. They were using the information they had already received from the lab. That the beast would be in a weekend state after consuming the crystals. Which was why they weren't in so much of a rush to actually send the current team to where the beast would be.

It's almost as if they wanted the beast to eat the crystals.

"This has been our plan for a while now, and we have been able to trap it on a couple of occasions. However, at the same time, Pure has gotten in our way just as we are about to battle with the beast, allowing it to escape. Before, we were initially going to be the ones to deal with the beast while allowing the Cursed faction to fight with Pure.

"However, I think you guys are quite dependable. So I will let you choose which one you would like." When Longblade asked this question, he didn't look at Nathan like he would before. Instead, he turned to Quinn.

When the question was asked, Layla had tugged Quinn on his sleeve as if she wanted to say something.

"Feel free to discuss it with your group first," Longblade said. He could tell something was up and headed back to the others.

"What's wrong?" Quinn asked.

"I wanted to tell you earlier, but I wanted to talk to you about Pure," Layla said. When she spoke, it sounded a bit painful.

"When I went off to meet with the Pure agent, it was because he said he could tell me something about my mother. I know you might not quite understand, but I want to know more about her? Why did she create Pure? What was her reason for doing all the things she did?"

What Layla didn't realise was Quinn understood quite a bit. For now, even he wanted to know more about the Talen family, and why exactly the stone tablet had talked to him only. Curiosity was a strange thing and sometimes, one would go to great lengths to satisfy it, especially if it had family ties.

"You, Logan, I know you're both right, but it's still strange to ask you guys to get involved with my personal business. When it has nothing to do with you guys. How could I ask you guys to fight for me, protect me just because I wanted to know more about my mother? That's why I decided to go off on my own. I know you would have done the same to Quinn, but what's the difference between you and me?" She said as she paused for a bit. She knew the difference. The difference was in strength.

However, Quinn risked his life on numerous occasions, and she was willing to risk hers to find out these answers. It would be selfish of her to ask the Cursed faction to do the same.

"I just wanted you to tell me these things for a reason. My mother was one of the Founders of Pure, and to get my answers, those who are high-ranking in pure will know. The guy I fought against was called Agent 11, and he said that Agent 2 is currently here as well."

Quinn knew from battling with Layla's mother Lucy and the single digit agents were strong. According to Layla, her mother wasn't even in her position due to her strength, but it was because she was one of the founders.

One of the differences between the leaders and those that weren't was that they knew all three Qi stages, while Quinn still only knew two.

"So you're saying you want us to face Pure instead of going for the demi-god tier beast, or are you worried that maybe the Colonel can't handle Pure if we leave it to them? Perhaps you want us to capture agent 2?"

Layla remained silent. She really didn't know what to do. This might be the only chance they could capture a humanoid Demi-god tier beast. At the same time, when would they meet single ranking agents of pure?

They soon were coming up to the sinkhole, and Longblade stood up expecting an answer.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1159: Solving both

It was time for Quinn to make the decision. However, it wasn't quite as black and white as some people thought it might be. As he looked over at Sil he could see a smile on his face swinging his legs like a little kid. Ever since being on this mission, his mood had brightened up. Now that he was so close to achieving the goal, if they failed, or it got delayed any longer, then perhaps Sil would snap.

Although Quinn could control him and face him somewhat, it wasn't something he wanted to do.

Sil had waited long enough already. On top of that, the military would most likely just kill the beast instead of capturing it unless Quinn made a request.

'Now that our relationship has improved with Longblade, maybe if we ask, he will agree. Still, his number one property has to be to get rid of it?' Quinn thought.

Looking at Layla and everyone there, the worry deep frown on her face, he knew what the right decision was to be.

"You don't have to worry, Layla. Remember both groups will be together, just both have different tasks." Quinn replied. "It's not like we're splitting up or anything. Well, try to do both." At that moment, Quinn wanted to comfort her. His hand reached out for hers, but before even touching, a strange feeling had come over him.

'Again? But before, we could touch just fine, but now it feels like that stupid connection thing is coming up again! Why does it only activate sometimes?' Quinn thought.

Standing up, Quinn walked over to where Longblade was and was ready with his answer.

"We will take care of the Pure group. However, I would like to make some requests." Quinn said. "I know your group has already done a lot for us, even allowing us to come along, but the Cursed faction needs the Demi-god tier beast. We need it alive."

Hearing this, Joy thought this Bucky person was crazy. Why would they agree to capture the beast alive? Not just that, there was a double meaning to this request. If they were asking this, it also meant they wanted to keep the Demi-god tier beast as well. Since the military had no use for it alive apart from its crystal.

"I would like to put Sil on your team. I'm sure you know about his powers." Quinn said. "He will be strong enough to allow your group to subdue the demi-god tier beast alive. In return, whatever you need from the Cursed faction, we will comply."

Although Sil was unstable at times, Quinn could rely on one thing, and that was his power. Knowing how important this job was for him, Sil would make sure it would happen by putting it in his hands.

He could see that Layla would go for the Pure members, and Sil would go for the beast no matter what. So in his head, it was who needed more help. Still, if he finished one job quickly, he could help out the other as well.

Longblade paused for a few seconds, not giving an answer. While he looked at his people and the others.

"The Demi-god tier beast has hurt a lot of our people. They will be upset to hear that the creature is in the Cursed group's hands, and a Demi-god tier weapon would greatly improve our group's strength. Especially a humanoid one. Whatever you give in return will need to be of equal value or greater." Longblade said. "Do you have the authority to promise us this?"

Without hesitating at all, Quinn replied.

"Yes, I do."

The largest grin had appeared on Longblade's face after hearing the answer.

"Then we agree, but I will not force my people to keep the beast alive. If they are in danger, they are to protect their lives most of all. I will also not be responsible for looking after the Blade boy."

Longblade had heard from Oscar, who precisely this boy was, and how strong his powers were. It was a story many of them found hard to believe, but since the report came from Oscar, they had no choice but to.

"Of course," Quinn said.

At that moment, Longblade leaned over.

"I hope this can improve our relationship, Quinn," Longbalde whispered and walked off to his people to make sure everyone was ready.

Hearing this, Quinn had a look on his face of disbelief. He didn't understand how Longbalde had found out. His disguise was perfect.

'Of course, he would find out who you were.' Vincent said. 'Who else would have the authority to give something of equal value as a Demi-god tier crystal. You didn't even hesitate or ask for an okay from the others.'

It was a slip up, but Longblade must have had his suspicions after the match.

They entered the underground tunnels, and the vehicle they were in was starting to slow down. Eventually, it had come to a complete stop, and two giant mechs were seen standing by the vehicle as well as two more guards. Their duty was to protect that underground station.

Getting off from the vehicle, it was quite impressive what they could see. It wasn't a tunnel like they had imagined. The walls were far wider than they could reach. It could fit at least four or more of the vehicles they had come in; it was so wide.

The walls were also filled with white lights that would go across the edges, making it easy for all of them to see. The only thing that felt like they were underground was the flooring. However, even that was flattened out for them to walk on.

"As we mine, we also continue to resurface the place and make improvements," Longblade explained. "The planet is full of sinkholes that one can't really travel on the surface. So we thought of moving the Shelter underground and travelling via the vehicles when needed. The above Shelter will remain as a storage place for the crystals." Long Blade explained. After that, he pulled out his katana blade and walked forward.

"It's time to head to the mining area where the beast was last seen." Longblade ordered. The groups split into two and started to walk side by side. Quinn out front with his group, and Rafer standing out front for Longblade's group. He was a large, powerful man that looked like a tank. A person who wouldn't fall easy, so it made sense to put him out there.

Meanwhile, in the tunnels themselves, in an area that wasn't as well done up as where Quinn and his group had arrived from. There was agent number 2.

"Alright, this time I'll be moving out by myself. I'm sick and tired of staying in this underground place. We have news that they have called for help from the Cursed faction, but no one of significance has arrived. We need to deal with this before even more help is on the way."

After walking for a while, they came across the mining area where blue crystals completely lit up the wall. It was a big area, and even looking up, they couldn't tell where the ceiling was. Yet, they had built machinery to help them extract the crystal from up high. It was as if they wouldn't let a single crystal go to waste.

Looking around, it didn't seem like the beast was here. They could only see destroyed machinery and a few parts that had fallen off from the mechs earlier.

Just then, Longblade received a message.

"Everyone, the beast has been spotted in area C. That is one of the areas where the beasts are located, hurry let's head back to the vehicle. We can catch up with it then. Otherwise, it might get away before we get to it."

"Longblade, is there another way to get to the beast other than using those vehicles?" Quinn asked as they were running back. Once they reached the station, they could use another one to take them to the area they were heading in.

Longblade then pointed to a hole in the tunnel back the way they were. It wasn't carved out properly since it was a natural tunnel and not one created by them.

"If it's in area C, it means it must have used that tunnel to reach it, but we wouldn't get there in time. There is another reason why we had to come to this area first. I don't know how, but I think it can sense when we arrive at the last area. "

"Only then does the beast move to another area, so it must have just arrived at Area C. We have only recently been using vehicles. Even then, we are only managing to catch it on the tail end just as it's in the middle of fighting the last beast."

Hearing all of this, Quinn knew what he needed to do, a way for him to solve both of the problems from earlier. All he had to do was capture the Demi-god tier beast before Pure arrived.

"You guys go ahead. I'll meet you there!" Quinn shouted, turning back around and running the opposite way.

Longbalde wanted to ask what he was doing, but there was no time to waste. If they didn't get to the vehicle now, they might miss the beast. Or worse, Pure would arrive before them.

So far, they had been arriving at the exact same time. It was a race.

When everyone finally left, Quinn activated the shadow putting on the beast gear set that shined a great silver with blue.

[Armour set skill activate]

[Nitro accelerate]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1160: Pure scum

It seemed as if everyone was off challenging new threats and going on exciting adventures... yet there was one member of the Cursed group that didn't feel this way at all, and that was Fex. The vampire was currently on the roof of the Shelter's tallest building, the main military base .

It would be hard for anyone to find him up there, as only the soldiers and Mechs guarding the Shelter wall would even be able to look that high. However, the distance was so great that they would have to have the sight of a vampire to see anything but a black dot, not that they had any reason to look for him in the first place.

'What's with my luck today? I thought it was a good day when I got the chance to pilot that Mech, but this is the second time today I got assigned babysitting duty, while the others are off to have some fun.' Fex clenched his fist in anger, as he looked at the one he blamed for his current situation.

With him on the roof of the building was Agent 11. He was the whole reason why Fex had made his way up here. The prisoner was sitting on a chair that the vampire had swiped from one of the rooms on the way up. His legs and arms were heavily bound with the red string.

Fex had made sure to not hold back, as lately they had snapped so many times that he had started to wonder about their durability. As long as Fex had time, he could reinforce the strength as much as he liked, preventing most from escaping. In a fight he only had minimal time, besides his string ability had always been meant for puppeteering, instead of their current utility.

'Should I perhaps create something like my father had? If I ask Alex he might be able to create a few things for me from beast gear. Maybe like an empty knight of armour or something like that. Although if we need a 'living' subject, there is one right in front of me. I doubt Layla will mind once I get the information out of him.' In the middle of his thoughts, Agent 11 was attempting to move but he barely managed to move the chair. The strings around him resembled a large cocoon, preventing him from any types of movement except for wiggling.

"Who are you? Are you working with that damn traitor?" Agent 11 asked.

Looking at the man, Fex sighed. "Come on, do I really have to explain your current situation to you? It should be obvious which one of us will be the one asking the questions." Looking the Agent dead in the eye, the vampire's eyes started to glow red. He then pulled out a sheet of paper with the list of questions he needed to ask him.

"How many members of Pure are currently present on this planet?" Fex asked, as he was ready to scribble in an answer.

However, contrary to his belief, the Pure Agent didn't give him an answer. As Fex looked up, he could see that the other's eyes didn't have the typical look of someone under a vampire's control.

As a member of Pure he had been trained to protect his mind from mental type abilities, which was delaying the Influence skill Fex was using. Still, it felt like it would soon win out and take over him.

'Those red eyes, so he's one of those V. Is this the mind control that they warned us about? I can't use my Qi to break out of these strings, but I can still do this.'

Controlling his Qi, Agent 11 was able to use the second stage to form something akin to a barrier around his brain. Then using the first stage, he was able to power up his brain even more, dispelling whatever was trying to force him to answer the question.

When he no longer felt any power inside him, he looked up at Fex and smiled.

"Nice try. Go on, ask me as many questions as you like? I have all the time in the world, buddy."

'What the hell? Nobody told me my Influence skill doesn't work on those Pure guys! Fex was shocked, shaking his head. 'Shit, I have to do something! What kind of embarrassment would it be, if I can't even complete such a small task by the time the others come back?'

The vampire pondered what he should do now that his go-to method had failed. He could resort to torture, but the man in front seemed like the type that wouldn't respond to it. In the first place, torture ran the risk of only receiving the type of answer the torturer wanted to hear, with no way of verifying it. Under the Influence skill the victim couldn't lie, which made it the far better choice.

"Did you already run out of questions? How about I help you? Why don't you ask me some things I would just loooovvvve to share with you?" Agent 11 offered with a self satisfied grin. "You're with that bitch's bastard daughter who is just dying to find out more about mommy dearest and since I'm feeling generous let me tell you some things. Now those might just have been rumours about her birth, but if that was all they were, there would have been no reason for Zero to forbid anyone from ever talk-."

The next second, Fex had already wrapped the man's mouth. He was tired of his cocky nature and he had no desire to listen to him badmouth Layla. The vampire walked up to the bound prisoner, lifted up his hand, and before the Pure member could blink he already felt the sting from the other's slap. The whole chair fell to the side from the force behind it, and Agent 11's cheek grazed across the ground.

"You're so annoying. What the hell do I care about her past?" Fex questioned him, not expecting any answer. "She helped my arse back then, so I'm just trying to help her out as well."

'How strong of a slap was that to have knocked a few of my teeth loose? I was using Qi to protect my body from torture, yet he managed to overwhelm my defense that easily? Damn it! We knew about the Cursed faction coming to reinforce them, but who knew they were this strong? I have to somehow find a way to warn Agent 2 that we have completely underestimated them.'

Standing on the edge, Fex looked down on the busy mass of people. Out of curiosity he placed his hand cupping around his ears to have an easier time hearing what they were saying.

"The Sergeant has told us to get the Mechs ready and to move them to area A where the beasts are located."

"But doesn't that mean we will have to fight the beasts off, what are they thinking?"

"It's in case the Demi-god beast decides to change areas and hunt more beasts. The idea is not to kill the beasts but just hold them off with the machines. We just need to wait for the higher-ups to arrive and then make our way out to not get in the way. Alright, I'll meet you in the hangar and we can get our team ready then." Avion explained.

'What an interesting conversation, so they send Mechs down in the underground tunnels where the others are. Well, there's not much I can do with that guy, so I might as well make myself useful. Logan should be fine on his own, since he's just getting information from the Lab.' Fex reasoned, but there was just one problem he had to deal with. He couldn't leave the guy up here on his own.

Carrying Agent 11 under his arm, Fex had a goal. He quickly traveled to the hangar, where the Mechs were located. He used his hearing to locate a soldier away from others and quickly found one who was about to board on to a Mech. Fex quickly pulled him down, and activated his Influence skill once more.

"I need you to tell me your name, your rank, pretty much everything so nobody gets suspicious about me piloting your Mech." Fex ordered. Fortunately, there was no problem with his Influence skill this time. After getting the answers he needed, he tied up the soldier and hid him behind a bunch of crates where he wouldn't be found anytime soon.

"Soldier Kane, why are you slacking behind!" Avion shouted through the Mech's terminal as the other pilots had already started to leave the hangar.

Quickly jumping in, and throwing Agent 11 in the cockpit cramping him up against the wall, Fex activated the Mech and trotted behind the rest.

'Hehe, this is going to be great.' Fex thought with the biggest smile on his face.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1161: Unlikely Pair

Fortunately, Logan hadn't gotten too close to the beast before it had opened its eyes.

'Why did I trust the amount the scientists stated?' Logan blamed himself for this grave miscalculation. When going through the terminal via his ability, he had read the report about how much of the pink gas had to be used to subdue the beast. As such, that was also the amount he had used, yet the beast before him showed no sign of being sleepy or even drowsy.

'Was it smart enough to fool them, waiting for an opportunity such as this all along? It's even able to imitate our speech to a degree where I can understand it, so it's undeniably intelligent. To have learned so much by just observing humans during its captivity... no if this one is already this crafty, doesn't that mean that Quinn and the others might be in danger?'

"I've never seen you before, you seem younger than the others?" The black beast spoke as it sniffed the air. It was around 7 foot tall, a little smaller than a Dalki, but Logan looked even smaller than a middle schooler in comparison.

"That's because I'm not with the others." Logan explained as he took a careful step back. If the humanoid beast was able to talk, then perhaps he could reason with it without the need for a fight.

"Then why did you use the gas? If you just wanted to free me you could have done so without it. You might not be one of them, but all you humans want my crystal." The beast placed its hand around its chest where one's heart would be on a human.

"You use our crystals to power items, like the weapons you hunt us with. To all of you we are simply tools. Even the armour and that arm of yours must have been created from the crystals from one of our kind."

The red in the beast's eyes was getting more fierce as it spoke. Logan didn't know how fast or strong that beast was. There had been some data on it, but since it had fooled the scientists about the guess, it was safer to assume it had been hiding its true strength as well.

"Not all of us are the same." Logan replied, ready to defend himself at any moment. It still hadn't attacked him, so he didn't want to do anything to make it. "There are beasts in nature who attack us on site."

"You're the ones who have invaded our home." The beast replied. "Wouldn't you attack someone who entered your territory? Just because others of my kind don't possess the ability to reason with you and do what is natural you justify killing our kind? Are you saying I get to live because I have some form of intelligence? Then

what happens when something more intelligent than yourself comes along, does that mean you all deserve to die?"

Were it not for the dangerous situation he was in, Logan would be admiring the beast's ability to reason right now. It was the first time for him to come across a humanoid beast, he had never realised just how... human they were. Were it not for its outer appearance it would be hard to distinguish it from one.

"I know why you're doing this. You need our crystals because your kind is at war. I have heard this numerous times already. One of you confided in me, claiming how she felt bad about doing this to me. However, it was not because she was sorry for me, no your kind just feels conflicted because I have taken on a form resembling your kind!"

"Just because your kind is fighting against those you call Dalki, you justify what you do to us! You don't even care what you do to our home. The planet is a living thing too and those crystals you mine are what powers the life force all around us. It creates the nests for us to come to live. Getting rid of the crystals means destroying our home!" Throwing out his hand, a swift sound was made through the air.

The distance between the two of them was around ten meters, yet Logan knew the beast wouldn't just swipe through the air for no reason. Pressing his hand on a terminal nearby, his eyes started to glow green.

A beast of this level of intelligence, even if it hasn't reached a higher rank, would be a foe that he couldn't go easy on. Activating his soul weapon. Several of the tubes that were stuck in the terminals started to move about like snakes. The ones on the ground quickly wrapped around each other forming a type of shield in front of Logan, while the ones from above came down trying to attack the beast.

'Good thing I'm in a lab.' However, Logan soon saw that the machinery was useless in stopping the beast attacks, as the temporary shield that had been made was ripped through. The machinery that had tried to attack the beast suffered the same fate. The beast started to run around the room they were in around the edge of the room in circles, Logan continued to use its powers trying to trap it or slow it down. He even formed a blaster on his hand, firing at it.

As each thing came towards it, the beast would use its agility to dodge the cables. Each foot step looked incredibly light and the amount of time it spent touching the surface of the ground was close to none.

'Does it have wind powers? Is that what makes it faster than my speed suit? I'm just going to have to try and create something that can face it, while it's being distracted.'

Using his powers, the terminals around started to deconstruct into spiders and soon they were forming into other things. Unfortunately, the beast ignored all the machinery and continued pursuing Logan. It leapt up on the side of the wall, and

pushed using its powerful legs. It spun its body and several of its tails started to spin with it. All the cables that would come close to it were being pushed away by the power of the wind its tails were creating.

'Damn it!' Before Logan could change his plan, the beast appeared directly in front of him and the only thing he could do was lift his robotic arm to block its strike. The beast looked confident as it went to grab hold of the arm latching onto it. It ripped into it with its claws and once the metal was off, the scale-like black arm became visible.

For some reason it paused, instead of continuing its attack. Not one to let go of this opportunity, Logan slammed the beast into the ground with all his strength. Hitting the ground, the boy pinned the beast down and placed his Dalki hand around its neck, gripping and holding it in place, slowly squeezing.

'Looks like the training with Brock was worth it. I'm no longer useless in a direct fight!'

"You...are you a beast as well?" The beast managed to let out, as it lifted its arms and grabbed Logan's wrist, slowly pushing it away. "Why... why are you with the ones that are trying to kill us then?!"

The beast was clearly angry, but Logan's Dalki arm was far more powerful than it had expected. Even using all its strength it was hard for it to push Logan off. So it resorted to the only thing it could do at the time. It opened its mouth revealing its sharp teeth and bit down on Logan's hand. At that moment, green blood started to ooze from the wound and flowed into the beast's mouth.

However, that was a mistake. This only increased the energy inside of Logan's body giving him more force pushing the beast back down.

"Your blood! It's not red! If you're no human there is no reason to fight!" The beast exclaimed in surprise.

'If I knew it would be this easy, I would have let it bite my arm from the start. Now what should I do, before it realises its mistake? It seems to be willing to listen now, so we should get out before anybody comes here. Convincing them to join us might pose a problem, though.'

"That's what I said." Logan softened his grip. "I'm not with them. Come with me if you want to get out."

The next second, the door opened up. Their fight had created a lot of noise and had attracted two scientists dressed in white robes, accompanied by around twenty armed soldiers.

"Isn't that the kid from the Cursed faction?" One of the soldiers pointed out.

"But look at his arm!" Another screamed out, pointing at it. "That's a Dalki arm!"

"Maybe it's just a beast transformation skill." A third soldier reasoned.

"Who cares who or what the kid is!" The older looking scientist shouted. "He has broken into this facility and wanted to kidnap our test subject. Kill the boy and capture the beast alive!"

Seeing how bad the situation had just turned out, there was only one thing Logan could do. He completely let go of the beast and moved to the side. The two of them gazed at each other and nodded as if they had come to an understanding. If they were going to get out of this one, the two of them would have to work together.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1162: Slight hiccup

Deep in the underground tunnels, Longblade and the remainder of the Cursed group, apart from Quinn, were hurrying as they made their way to the unique transportation vehicle. They were planning to take it to arrive at Area C, where the bait for the Demi-god tier beast has been placed.

"Hey, your friend back there, is he going to be okay?" Rafer asked.

Layla looked back to check if Quinn would catch up to them, but there was no sign of him at all. Shiro wasn't much in use in combat and Sil would naturally want to go after the humanoid beast, so was she supposed to fight off Pure on her own?

Layla had succeeded against Agent 11, but there was a huge difference in fighting abilities between a double digit Agent and one in the single digits. The girl wasn't conceited enough to not have realised that she had barely come out as the victor in their match. Luck alone wouldn't be enough to defeat Agent 2.

"He will be okay." Layla answered. "I'm more worried about myself." She mumbled, but soon she realised that she found herself relying on Quinn once again. After insisting that she could do things on her own, now here she was hoping that he had stayed with them.

'I really can't seem to make up my mind, can I?' Layla shook her head.

Longblade had no idea what Quinn had in mind by staying behind. The quickest way to travel was via the vehicles, but judging by him asking about the tunnels that led to the very place they were going to. He could only guess he was planning to travel on foot, but would he be able to find them since this would be the first time in these tunnels for him.

'There's no humanly way possible he can reach the area before us.' Longblade thought as he smiled. 'But he isn't exactly human, now is he?'

They eventually arrived at the station and quickly entered the vehicle. Everything had already been prepared for them by those guarding the vehicle. The next second, they started moving, travelling so fast through the tunnels that they could hardly see anything.

Finally, the vehicle stopped, allowing them to get off. They ended up in an area that looked almost identical to the one they had just come from. The shapes of the tunnels were slightly different, but it was hardly noticeable, especially for those unaccustomed to this.

However, the soldiers who were protecting the station were nervous as they stood there guarding the place. Afraid that the beast could come for them at any second.

"Has the beast ever attacked the stations?" Shiro asked, looking at how nervous the guards were as they walked through the tunnels quickly but cautiously.

"So far it hasn't." Longblade answered. "It seems to be scared. We thought that it might attempt to head to the surface. Perhaps attack the Shelter, but it has remained down here, doing its own thing, binding its time."

Although Longblade didn't mention it, he did have an idea of what the beast was trying to do. Perhaps it was waiting and gathering crystals down below where beasts were plentiful in the hopes to evolve. Then when it was a Demon tier with great power, it would come back with a vengeance.

Eventually, they could see the tunnel opening up ahead, and this was where the apparent beasts would be. If the beast was in the middle of fighting the others, then they could take advantage of the situation. Still, at the same time, they would have to be careful that the other beasts didn't turn and try to attack them.

When Longblade and the others entered, the first thing they did was check the area. They all stopped for a second at the entrance as they didn't quite know what to do, until Longblade had given them an order.

"Check to see if anything is still alive and moving!"

Hearing these words, they all started to move, fanning out into two groups. Because of the current situation, Sil had decided to come along with Layla, something she very much appreciated. The scene before their eyes appeared to have come from a nightmare.

The room was filled with dead beasts. More than twenty beasts of various tiers that the military had sent down, yet not a single one of them was moving.

"The beast could be hiding inside here still, so everyone be careful!" Joy warned as they poked and prodded the beasts. What they did notice was that all of the beasts had a hole in one particular area. Only the higher-tier beasts had more than one wound.

"All of them...they all have their beast crystal taken out." Shiro said.

This fact was overheard by Longblade and the others, and they all looked at each other smiling. It meant that their plan had worked, and they had created a perfect opportunity to capture the beast. From their research, the beast should be using it as fuel to evolve, making it enter a weakened state.

At that moment, Longblade pressed his hand against his ear, as he got a report.

"Alright everyone, we need to move out again!" Longblade informed them. "The beast has been spotted in Area A. Avion and his team of Combat Mechs are there. They should be able to hold it there long enough for us to arrive. It will be the

perfect time to strike. Due to how far it is from here, we should reach there before Pure does as well. Most likely, they will have been heading in this direction."

Informing them of this, the group was on the move once again, but that's what had worried the others. Shiro, Sil and Layla were all looking for any signs of Quinn. They had an idea of what he was trying to attempt. With his speed, he was going to try and outrun the vehicle to get here before anyone else, yet he wasn't here.

Now with the location changing it would make things more complicated.

Layla put on her mask, intending to inform him, but when she tried to connect, there was no answer on his end.

---

A short while ago, Quinn had activated his armour's special set skill, the Nitro Accelerator that increased his speed significantly. Using this, he ran through the tunnels, and everything became a blur.

Things weren't as confusing as he thought they would be since there was only one direction he could head in.

'I guess this isn't the time to hide exactly who I am.' Quinn thought as he used shadow equip while running. His hands were now also covered in the two new gauntlets he had obtained. The main goal was to defeat the Demi-god tier beast as quickly as possible.

'With the white gauntlet, I can hopefully drain its energy just enough so we can capture it.'

Quinn had a plan, but there was a slight hiccup. While travelling, Quinn heard the sound of voices ahead of him, and he was heading right on course for a collision into a group of men. He had no choice but to slow down, but it was hard at the speed he was travelling. The Vampire Lord couldn't instantly stop the muscles in his legs, as he still wasn't used to running this fast.

"What's that sound?" Someone asked. It sounded like a drill going off in the tunnel, but it was just the sound of Quinn's feet hitting the ground at great speed.

Stepping in front of his men, the man with a large number two on his back held out his hand for a few seconds. Then for a split second, they could see what had come around the corner. Seeing the group of people, Quinn leapt up into the air to try and avoid them and felt his body slam against something that felt like an invisible wall.

Agent 2's face squinted as he quickly took down what he had put up, and Quinn was seen skidding across the floor. He soon got up and could see the large number 2 on the person's back.

"Pure!" Quinn shouted out.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: [jksmanga](#)

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: [jksmanga](#)

## Chapter 1163: Agent 2 power

Seeing the large 2 on the Agent's back, Quinn knew he was in for a world of trouble. He had never expected to be so unlucky as to actually run into Pure. Quinn had known that they would be after the humanoid Demi-god tier beast as well, but to use the very tunnel he was using right now...

'Wait, isn't this a perfect opportunity? This should be the majority of them, if not all! As long as I keep them occupied, the others can focus on the beast alone. I just have to trust them to be able to subdue it. No, with Sil there he will surely do whatever's necessary to reunite with Vorden and Raten!'

Making use of the Pure members' confusion, Quinn quickly threw out his hand releasing a Blood swipe aimed directly at Agent 2. If he could take him out, the rest should be a cinch.

Agent 2 saw the strike coming his way and just lifted up his 'weapon'. It was similar to a sword in that it had a hilt and a sword guard but rather than being sharp and thin it was just a thick large blunt object like a pole. Swinging it he whacked away the Blood swipe without any trouble whatsoever.

'Of course, it would have been too easy if that had worked. I guess even with my new blood skills the simplest of my attacks won't quite work on him.'

Quinn was no longer as fast as he was when rushing over here. Having used the armour set skill to arrive here, it was now on cooldown. Meaning all of the normal stats the armour would additionally give was now useless. He covered his body in shadow to switch to a different equipment until the cooldown had elapsed.

In the middle of his transformation, two Pure members came rushing forward, intending to disrupt whatever he was doing. Fortunately, Shadow equip took less than a second, so there was nothing for him to worry about.

What he didn't expect was a couple of arrows to be fired off from the back. Raising his shadow Quinn planned to block this, but midway in their flight they suddenly sped up, and when they touched the shadow it went directly through it.

'They went through my shadow? So far Lucy was the only one able to go through my shadow!' Quinn was starting to take things more seriously. He grabbed both of the arrows with his bare hands and felt the strong Qi coming from them. In terms of Qi, he wasn't a slacker in that department either and with his own strength he was able to stop them easily.

'Shadow powers? Did the Cursed teach it to more of their people?' Agent 2 wondered, looking at the person in front of him. His hand rested on the shoulders of two men who were about to fire more arrows at Quinn.

In the cramped space there wasn't much room for the Cursed faction leader to maneuver.

'I might be unable to use my shadow to block attacks, but I can certainly use it in other ways.' Quinn reasoned as the shadow that hovered around his back fell to the floor, and started to spread across the whole area, enveloping the tunnel ceiling, the side of the walls far and wide on the ground.

'Why does he seem so confident in facing us? He is alone and we have him surrounded. No... crap, did the Cursed faction leader really come down here personally?!' Agent 2 inferred.

"Everyone be careful!" He shouted.

The next second, Quinn sank into the shadow, only to appear from the side of the wall. Coming from such an unexpected angle, he grabbed the head of the closest Pure member and slammed it into the wall. Holding out the palm of his hand, Quinn activated his Blood spray and the Agent next to the incapacitated one got chucked back several meters into the other side of the wall.

'Huh?' The Vampire Lord was surprised for a short second, mentally prepared for his enemies to either dodge out of the way or stand up any second now. However, his vampire senses made him aware that the two had passed out cold.

'I guess I've grown too used to fighting strong beasts and Dalki. With the beast gear upgrades, I've become so...strong.' Quinn couldn't help but glee in his own power, but the next moment he kicked the leg of another Pure member who swung a sword down. The kick connected even before the weapon was near Quinn's body, shattering their legs. Even their Qi was unable to protect them from Quinn's power.

"Everyone, get back! You're no match for him!" Agent 2 ordered. The archers continued firing arrows, but with their path so straight Quinn could easily avoid them all.

'Is this truly supposed to be the strength of someone who 'barely' defeated Lucy? What sort of sick joke is that? I have to deal with him now, or we can forget about getting our hands on the Demi-god tier beast!' Slamming his strange weapon into the floor a wave of Qi dispersed clearing out the area.

It pushed back the shadow preventing the Cursed faction leader from using it to hop around the place. It was so powerful that even Quinn's Qi was reacting to it, his body almost shivering.

[New Quest received]

[Defeat one of the Pure leaders]

'Now you come up and warn me! This power though... it feels like Chris!' Quinn thought. That man's Qi had been the strongest he had ever felt, yet it looked like this Agent 2 wasn't too far off.

Using the other set of amour Quinn had, his stats weren't the same as the Legendary tier gear. He was unable to use his shadow to its full extent, which left him with his natural powers and blood powers.

The next second though, Quinn could see a great power lighting up from the Pure Agent's chest.

'Wait a second, isn't this... a soul weapon?! Aren't Pure Agents forbidden from having abilities? How can someone like him have a soul weapon?!"

Quinn wanted to step close in order to try and stop it, but even with the second stage of Qi covering his body, the energy coming off from Agent 2 was making it so his second stage was practically nonexistent.

If Quinn couldn't get close then he would use his blood powers instead. He was a distance away, so he held out his finger and fired out the Blood bullet. As it got incredibly close to Agent 2, the bullet just vanished as if it had met something hot that turned it to ashes.

[ -20HP ]

The Pure leader's whole skin had changed to a bright red colour and it had even reached the outside of his weapon. Despite its blunt appearance he made a stabbing motion. A loud bang resounded and shocked the whole room. Quinn was unable to see the attack, but a notification screen appeared.

[ -20 HP ]

Looking at his shoulder, there was now a large gaping hole and one could see directly through it. What was worse, the attack had been coated with Qi. His natural healing abilities wouldn't cut it, neither would the Blood bank.

Quinn would have to get rid of the foreign Qi first, but that was a luxury he couldn't afford in this fight.

'Why does everyone I fight have to have a trump card I've never seen before?! I can't use my shadow as a defensive measure, the armour's cooldown needs too long and his Qi blocks my healing powers! Even if I use Shadow overload it won't be much help here.'

Quinn considered his limited options and came to the conclusion that there was one thing he could do. In fact it was the only thing he could try... a direct brawl. The

hole in his left shoulder had weakened him, so he had to enter into a melee range before he suffered even more.

"I guess the Cursed leader faction isn't as strong as the routers said he would be. Have I counted all your moves with just this!" Agent 2 shouted as he stabbed the air again firing off several bullets.

They all went through Quinn's body hitting him in the stomach, the legs and all over his body. Agent 2 was letting out a chilling laugh, until the injured body turned into nothing but shadows.

He could then sense that the real Quinn was nearly upon him. He couldn't see him but his instinct made him swing his weapon in a certain direction. The weapon connected, hitting Quinn hard on his side.

'I just needed to use the shadow cloak and clone to get close to you!'

Now he could feel that this man was several times stronger than he was before. He had a similar strength to the Vampire Lord, but Quinn had also used Blood harding on his gauntlet to get one punch in.

Ignoring the injury he sustained in exchange, he delivered an uppercut to Agent 2, lifting the leader's body slightly in the air and also using the Blood spray to further enhance the punch.

'I have to get rid of him now!'

Arrows continued to rain down on him, but he chose to focus on the more dangerous target, allowing them to hit him in his legs.

[24/100 HP]

Still, Agent 2 smiled as if the attack didn't even hurt him. The strange red skin seemed to make him immune to pain, as he swung the strange sword again.

'I need a stronger attack.' Quinn started to panic. 'I don't have time to perform any of the hammer series, so I can only do this!' Throwing out his leg, Quinn twisted his hips to perform the kick he had practiced so often, mixed with the Blood crescent kick.

The strange sword and the shin of Quinn's leg both collided, and the powers were great, shaking the tunnel even more violently, the red aura quickly disappeared and the walls started to fall and cave in.

The power of both attacks seemed equal at that moment, but there was a clear difference. Agent 2's Qi control was better. He fine tuned his strange sword making his Qi sharper than any sword imaginable and Quinn could feel it going through his beast armour and slicing through his very bone.

He tried his best to cover it with blood, but it looked like it wasn't going to work. Pulling his leg away, Agent 2's attack continued hitting the ground, causing it to be chucked into the air. The whole place began to crumble.

[6/100HP]

[Activating emergency blood bank]

[Emergency blood bank is only able to do limited healing]

[26/100HP]

The Hp from using the blood bullet was restored but as expected it was unable to heal the wounds dealt with using the Qi.

'I won't let you get the last laugh!' Quinn stretched out his arm and managed to quickly hit Agent 2 in the chest, sending him flying back to where his people were. With the cave falling, it blocked the way between the two parties.

Quinn started to run forward towards Area C as best he could. When he finally got through to the other end, he ended up in a room full of dead beasts. His inspect skill revealed that there wasn't a single one alive inside. Behind him the tunnel was sealed off.

At that point, Quinn just laid there on the floor.

'Damn it, that fight was a lot harder than I thought... but at least I blocked them from getting here. I hope he will like the present I left him.' Quinn thought, a smile on his face as he stared at his purple gauntlet.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1164: Undying Mech

A team of six Mechs exited from one of the transporter stations into the underground tunnels of Area A. Due to the large sizes of the Mechs, at most three could fit the entire width of the tunnel at once, so they proceeded in pairs, with one in the front and one at the back.

The one leading this particular group was one the best Mech pilots the world has ever been blessed with, Sergeant Avion.

As they paced through the tunnel to silence their loud footsteps, a crash could be heard coming from the back. Avion immediately turned around to see one of the Mechs had stumbled and was currently on one knee on the ground.

'Damn it, I missed that rock there.' Fex thought, since he was still trying to get a hang of how to use the giant robot. He had slowly felt like he had been getting adjusted enough so he could fit in with the others, but he hadn't accounted for the change of terrain yet.

"What is wrong with you today, Private Kane?" Avion questioned him. "That's the third time something like this has happened today. I understand you might be nervous because of the Demi-god tier beast, but it's our duty to fulfill our mission! We won't have to fight it, just keep it busy until the Colonel arrives! Now get up and keep up if you don't want to end up as scrap metal for some wild beasts!"

A good pilot had to have a good set of muscles and a strong core and Fex met all those requirements. The vampire quickly got up though from the ground, his body not having any problems with the sudden G-force from falling, stumbling and moving in the Mech.

He didn't like being yelled at, but after every mistake Fex made he made sure not to repeat it. He leapt up to his feet in the Mech, nearly hitting the top of the ceiling, leading Avion to just shake his head at the sight.

'Did he hide some booze in his cockpit and drink it to calm his nerves?'

Soon, the tunnel could be seen expanding into a larger open area. The blue crystals were a clear sign that this section still had yet to be completely mined. They lined the walls and the area in front of them. It would have made for a beautiful sign, were it not for the room full of beasts.

"Remember, the goal isn't to kill them! We are just here to buy time!" Avion shouted as he drew his giant sword that all of the Mechs were equipped with.

Copying him, Fex did the same and paid close attention to Avion's movements. The experienced pilot dodged the beast causing them to tangle up. He somehow also found the time to carefully block attacks and parry beast out of the way. At times

he would be completely surrounded and would be able to use the perfect amount of energy to lift him in the air and get out of a tough situation.

Seeing him up close and especially when he compared him to others, the difference was clear as day. Avion made it seem as if the Mech was a living being, each of its movements connected flawlessly flowing one into the other.

'His concentration is unbelievable! How the hell can he move like that without making a single mistake?' Fex was baffled, wondering if Avion might have an ability like Logan that made this feat possible.

The other soldiers that were with them weren't bad, but they just weren't on the same level as their leader. Their actions were somewhat fluent, but it was more as if they were performing a set routine. Whenever it was time to switch things up, there would be a small gap that some of the higher tier beasts started to take advantage of.

This was one of the reasons why Mechs had been paired up. If one made a mistake it was their buddy's job to cover for them. Fex had to do the same with Kane's assigned partner.

The next second he got a chance. Fex saw a slug like creature drop from the ceiling. Running forward Fex slashed the area above his fellow teammate with his giant sword. Dissecting the beast, half of its body fell on its team mates head spilling back blood over it.

"Goddamnit, Kane!" Avion shouted again. "Didn't you hear me? We are NOT meant to kill the beast, our job is t-"

Turning around quickly, Avion could sense something behind him. Not because he had any ability that would allow him to do that, but because the beasts' behaviour had changed. All of sudden they all had stopped attacking and turned looking towards an area of the room.

Even some of the beasts that had been fighting each other had stopped. They were not focusing on the Mechs.

When they all turned around they could see the humanoid figure. The colour of its skin was dark brown, with hints of blue reflecting from the crystals behind it. What stood out was the two green shaped square looking eyes.

As for the body itself, it was strange, parts of it were hardened, while others looked soft. It also wasn't perfectly symmetrical, one of its shoulders was obviously larger than the other. Its forearm on its right hand was significantly larger as well.

"You've come again!" The beast spoke with its unnatural voice! "When will you ever learn?!" it sounded like something was constantly in its mouth as it spoke. Clearly struggling to perfectly imitate speech.

At that moment the beasts seemed to be quite coordinated, as they had surrounded the entrance where the group had come from. The fighting between some of them had stopped and now it looked like they were being targeted by all the beasts around them.

"It's the humanoid Demi-god beast!" Avion exclaimed. "It has to be the one ordering them."

The beast was a distance away, they were in one half of the room while it was in the other. Avion had no choice but to open the palm of his hand, and started to fire his blaster towards the Demi-god tier beast.

It stood there still, and raised its large arms which started to transform on the spot creating a large shield. The blast hit the shield, not even leaving behind a scratch on the beast.

Soon the shield had formed back into the arm once again. Seeing the blasters didn't work, Avion started to run forward, but a group of the beasts blocked his path. Leaping up into the air, his Mech had its sword ready to slash the humanoid beast down.

"You're not so scary!" Avion shouted trying to convince himself. However, the beast transformed its arms once more, this time changing it into two large blades. Avion's blade was knocked away, with a single hand from the beasts despite it being half the size of the Mech. Then with it's other arm free it thrusted and it slashed towards the Mech's knees. One of the open areas that was hard to cover.

Luckily Avion had somewhat predicted this, and decided to fire his blasters towards the walls, pushing him back a little bit avoiding the strike.

'It knows about our weaknesses. Good thing we already knew about this from analysing all the other destroyed Mechs.' Avion felt somewhat relieved, but there was one more troublesome thought in his head.

Why didn't the beast aim for the cockpit? Surely it would be the easiest way to get rid of him, so why had it prioritised destroying the robot over killing him?

Behind Avion, the rest of the team were busy fending off the beasts, but it was far harder now that they seemed more coordinated. The remaining five had gotten into a circle formation and were firing off blasts hitting the beasts, no longer caring about their no-kill order.

Avon had done the bulk of the work and his fighting prowess had been equivalent to having four more Mechs with them. Without him, they were finding it incredibly difficult to hold them back, and worst of all they had already been fighting for a while. The users inside the cockpits would soon be running out of stamina.

Trying to catch his breath, one of the soldiers controlling the Mech placed his sword in the ground. He was huffing and panting inside. At that moment, a large dog like beast leaped up, aiming for the cockpit. Although the outside of the Mechs was strong, they tried to avoid the weakening of the cockpit as much as possible, after all if this part was destroyed they would be open for an attack that would take their lives.

Before the beast could reach, another sword came slashing down, cutting off the beast's head. He looked up and saw the #3 on the Mech.

"Thanks, Kane, I owe you one!" The soldier thanked him.

The fighting continued on and on and beasts started to enter from the tunnels around them. Avion didn't seem like he was making any progress and the soldiers were getting exhausted the more they had to fight.

It was nearly the breaking point for them after fighting for nearly over fifteen minutes non stop. Their heart was beating as if they were in a sprint. The only one that didn't seem affected was Kane.

'Did Kane always have this much stamina?'

Then something strange happened, the cockpit of Mech #3 started to open and a person leapt out from inside. When they landed on the ground, the pilots saw that it was actually two people, but not anybody they recognised.

The beast leapt towards these two people, and soon they found themselves being wrapped in string and flung to the ground. The newcomer leapt over another one and punched the beast in the head, killing it in an instant. What was strange about the other person, was they had a black needle sticking out of their back.

Soon, the man they could see started to move at quite the speed and the two of them were dealing with the beasts easier than when they were in the Mechs, and strange lines of red aura could be seen once in a while.

'Piloting a Mech is fun and all, but this seems to be the only true way of fighting!' Fex thought, as he continued to wreak havoc with his unwilling impromptu puppet.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1165: Discovering another way

Lying on the floor, Quinn's body felt a little strange. It was the first time he was experiencing something like this. He carefully pushed his body up and used the nearby wall as support. His leg was still bleeding, but the far bigger problem was the wound on his shoulder that was still present.

Quinn gathered up the Qi in his body to try and deal with it. Since he had learned the second stage he was able to move it around freely. Having helped Owen and Layla recently also made for quite the good experience in expelling foreign energy.

The weirdest thing about it though was the feeling he had. Quinn could tell that all the energy in his body was activating, it was constantly trying to heal him, yet the strong powerful Qi inside him was stopping that process. It was as if both types of energies were clashing against each other.

This wasn't the first time he had been injured by a Qi attack, but none had been so powerful to cause such a change in his body. It was a good thing one of his arms was still in good condition. Even though he didn't need them to use his Qi, it helped him visualise the healing.

Hovering his hand over his shoulder, he began the process, and started to reflect on the fight that had just taken place.

'I should have been more prepared. Layla already warned me that Pure was being led by a high-ranking single digit Agent. I already fought with Lucy, so why did I assume she would be the only one who could block out my shadow powers?! This guy was even more powerful than her. She was never able to do something to that degree like the man did, and what was up with that strange red form? The energy that was coming off him was like a soul weapon.'

'My blood attacks weren't strong enough and Qi really is a vampire's worst nightmare other than the sun. I might have been royally screwed without my Qi. My blood powers were useless against him and somehow he managed to overpower me in a physical fight.'

After removing the foreign Qi from his body, he consumed blood from his Blood bank and the healing took place as it should have. Thinking about what happened earlier Quinn looked towards his silver gauntlet.

'Maybe I can use this thing more. It might help me out and power my ranged attacks. Getting close to someone like him seems suicidal without my shadow powers.' Quinn thought as he looked at the damage that was done to his leg and soon got to work on that as well.

As he stood there with shaky knees, Quinn decided to use his Inspect skill for a second time. It was quite the strange sight to see but he was wondering if he could spot something.

However, he was shown the same result as did the first time. The room was just full of dead beasts, not a single one was alive.

'It looks like the Demi-god tier beast has already been to this area and is no longer here. Does that mean it's gone to one of the other areas instead?"

Once Quinn's leg was fully healed, he was nearly back at a hundred percent. The Qi energy he had used would take a while to be restored, which was the only downside, but his blood powers and shadow were fully replenished.

'That Pure leader should have used a lot of Qi in our fight, and even with his freaky physique he should feel the effect soon.'

Quinn looked back at where he had come from, the place was sealed up with rocks. The tunnel was completely caved in. Although Quinn could properly try to punch his way through he was afraid that would just cause more rocks to fall and possibly create a cave in for the entire area.

'If I got split up to this side, the Pure members are on the other side. There's a good chance that they'll run into the others. I have to find a way out of here.'

Searching around the empty room Quinn was looking for any way out but he was struggling to find one. If worse came to worse he could use his shadow travel skill, but there was something else that came into his mind, before he would do that.

'Wait a moment. I ran into Pure on the way here and we were in Area B? So that means that surely if there was only one way out from Area C that we should have run into the beast. Then doesn't that mean there has got to be some way out?' Quinn thought.

At that moment, something strange happened. An object fell from above and soon it just crashed and landed right in front of him. It started to slither on the ground and jumped straight towards Quinn.

Grabbing it, Quinn squeezed its head killing it instantly.

'Did that just drop from above?' Quinn looked up and it was hard to see as the number of blue crystals started to lessen. In this case his eyes weren't helping at all, as they had a hard time adjusting to light from the crystals.

If it was completely dark he could actually see better.

'This beast must have come from one of the sinkholes... did the Demi-god tier beast do the same thing? Not all of the surface is a giant sinkhole, so it could be travelling on land, then connecting that way, maybe Pure did the same thing?'

Thinking of this, Quinn thought that it might actually be better to find out how the beast had left this place, and follow it from there. Seeing what state the beasts were in he could see that all of the crystal had been taken from their bodies.

This was a humanoid beast with intelligence, it would know that it got weak after consuming the crystals, so perhaps it had made or found a different area to fall back to as he absorbed.

In the end, Quinn decided the best course of action was to climb up and see for himself. He went up to the wall and started to use his strong fingers to pierce into the wall, then quickly scaled it trying to see if there were any signs of anything. To his surprise he was more right than he thought.

Climbing up past the blue crystals, Quinn was able to see clearer as his eyes adjusted. There he could see that there were several tunnels, and even deeper inside he could see that some of them had beasts inside.

'Maybe that beast didn't climb to the top, after all. If the military only cared about mining crystals, maybe they never found these extra tunnels up here. Which means the beast can move from whatever area it wants when it wants. So then why doesn't the beast just run away? Why doesn't it go to a new area that they hunt and try to take over yet?'

It was then that Quinn remembered the message that was played from the lab. Perhaps the Demi-god tier beast felt like this was more personal.

Using his Inspect skill Quinn just looked at all of the tunnels to see if he could spot something interesting, then something certainly interesting did come up. Pulling himself up he entered and soon started running. He was now running down the tunnel until eventually he had reached a medium sized opening.

Here he could see that a type of platform from a type of dirt had been formed, tuning it into a giant bowl. Regardless, Quinn was interested about what was in the bowl as there were just crystal upon crystals inside.

'Why would all these crystals be here? Wait. Is the Demi-god tier beast just holding these crystals? Maybe it's planning to use them later, or all at once. That also means that the Demi-god tier beast won't be in a weakened state. Not like the military thought they would be.'

There was another tunnel on the other side of the room, and thinking that this was the beast's him he could only guess that the beast went in that direction. Before

leaving though, Quinn wondered something. It was about the Qi energy that was missing from his body and that he still hadn't recovered from.

With the silver gauntlet, he grabbed hold of one of the crystals.

[Skill activated]

The palm of his gauntlet that was holding the crystal started to glow, and so did the crystal. At the same time he could feel the energy moving inside of his body. Growing stronger and replenishing all the energy that he had lost.

'It worked! I can use the skill on crystal and still replenish my Qi. Although the crystal loses all of its energy that way. I can't just leave all these crystals here.'

Quinn thought, looking at them all.

'I wonder what happens if I keep absorbing energy from them...'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1166: Broken strings

Now that Fex had exited the Mech, things were starting to look up for the Earthborn group. The beasts that had threatened them all by surrounding them had quickly been tied up with his string. The vampire even had time to reinforce his string due to his new puppet.

'This Pure guy's body is stronger than I had expected. He seems to be quite skilled and with my soul weapon giving him extra strength, he turned out to be quite useful.' Fex thought. 'Will Layla mind if I keep him, even if we don't manage to extract any information out of him?'

Despite Fex taking charge in this problem, the main problem remained that those inside the Mechs needed time to recover. Piloting a Mech and controlling it during a fight was similar to being in a boxing match, only that there were no guaranteed breaks in between. This was their first break, and even though they could catch their breath for a second, rejoining the fight they wouldn't be able to fight with the same energy as before until they got a proper rest.

This just further proved how amazing Avion was as a Mech pilot. The Sergeant was fighting with just as much force as he had been doing when he started. The swings of his Mech were just as fast, just as smooth and he still hadn't been hit despite going toe to toe with the Demi-god tier beast.

Under normal circumstances, the entire group would have to be used to subdue such a strong beast. Even when fighting against the Dalki, the feat that Avion performed could almost be called a miracle.

'What inhuman stamina does he have?' Fex wondered. 'And how much stronger could he be if he would turn?'

As things were dying down in his fight against the beasts, the vampire was able to keep a closer eye on Avion, and that's when he noticed the first slip up. So far during the fight, both the humanoid beast and Avion had managed to dodge each other's attacks, the few that had been about to land on the beast would be blocked by the Demi-god tier beast transforming its hands into a type of shield.

Yet for the first time, after battling non stop, the beast didn't attempt to block the attack coming towards it, as it swung down diagonally. The Mech's sword hit its shoulder and the beast's body almost transformed as it was going through it. And then using parts of its hard body, it clenched onto the sword.

Now using its other arm, it had transformed it into a blade that was as large as the Mech's. Bigger than they had seen it used previously and swinging it sideways, it was able to hit one of the mechs weak points. The joint area of its right knee.

Small sparks flew and Avion was surrounded by sound inside the Mech as multiple alarms were going off.

[Warning, right leg is down to 80% efficiency!]

"Deploy thrusters in reverse!" Avion shouted at the machine, as he grabbed onto the sword with two hands. He needed that weapon if they had any hope of subduing, much less killing the humanoid beast. Finally pulling it out, a piece of dirt came with it and the smallest amount of black blood could be seen oozing from the beast's shoulder.

Soon though, the body started to reshape and the blood flow stopped as well. From the looks of it, it had returned to peak condition.

'It can heal? This is going to be a problem.'

Flying back through the air, Avion thought he was safe from the beast, at least for a few seconds while he recovered and thought up his next actions, but the beast's legs started to change again. The thigh muscles started to grow, and it was the same with the bulkiness of its calves. Its legs were now nearly twice as large as before. Kicking off the ground with its legs the humanoid beast shot like a spring and had transformed both of its arms and its shoulder into something resembling a giant arrow head.

'If that thing hits me, then I will be dead for sure! Crap, I let my guard down since it had avoided going for me directly!'

Seeing the beast come at him, the pilot's life almost flashed before his eyes. Instead, a large object had been thrown in front of him. The beast's arrow pierced through the large object sending bits and pieces of scrap metal flying in all sorts of directions.

Although the beast's attack had slowed down for a little it was still coming his way. For a short second Avion had seen hope, the only thing he wasn't going to do was shy away from his death. He would keep his eyes open till the very last second, and in those moments he could see someone standing there in front of him.

The person had a strange black needle sticking out from their back, they were crouched down with their knees slightly bent.

'Who is that and why is he standing there? He needs to move or we're just both going to die!' Avion wanted to cry out as he appreciated the sentiment, but didn't want to be responsible for such a useless sacrifice.

"Screw you guys for breaking my strings all the time, let's see you break this!!" Strings started to rise around Fex and moved towards the palm of his hand. Using Blood control he was able to have finer control of all the strings and was able to

create more out at a quick rate creating something. Then when the beast was close enough he threw out his hand, a net of red strings flying at it.

It surrounded the entire beast, but the strings hadn't broken and were still attached to Fex's hand. If one was to look closely as well, these strings didn't look like Fex' normal blood red strings. Rather than the normal shining light coloured red they would be. They looked more to be encased, twice the thickness with a dark red overcoat.

Eventually the beast's pointed arrow head hit Fex's hand, but controlling the strings now with his blood control, the vampire was able to wrap them completely around the beast, stopping its attack.

'It worked.' Fex was gleeful, as the beast stayed in place mid air.

Combining the blood ornament with the red blood strings and blood control was tricky. Especially since Fex still wasn't so great at using Blood control to use these two things at the same time. What allowed him to use such a skill was his special soul weapon that was actually more like a blood weapon.

After making sure the others were okay from the oncoming beasts, Fex tied up Agent 11 one more time, and took the black needle back out from him. In doing so, when inserting the black needle into himself. It gave him the boost and power he needed to fight on.

And there was an added bonus of not feeling bad about who the blood had exactly come from.

Now having seen what happened, Avion could tell that the person who had successfully stopped the attack, was the same one he had fought against in the arena. Not only that, but the weird object that had been hit first was Mech #3.

"Did you see that? That person lifted up the Mech and threw it all the way over there?" One of the soldiers asked the others to make sure his eyes hadn't been playing tricks on him.

The soldiers were impressed but there was still one fact that they all had yet to face. They were simply celebrating due to them having been able to stop one attack from the beast. It still had yet to be hurt while all of them were exhausted, even Avion was now feeling the strain being put on his body.

At that moment, Fex's strings also started to change colour as the Blood hardening started to fall off and break into particles.

'Did all the blood get used up from the needle already? That's a lot faster than it usually takes. Is it because I had to use so much Blood control? Maybe I'm borrowing too much power from the needle rather than using my own.' Still it was

all guess work but it meant one thing, that the beast was definitely able to break free.

The beast no longer looked like an arrowhead, and was back in its human form. With its two bladed arms it slashed through Fex's strings.

"Damn it, I knew this was going to happen." Fex muttered, and clenched his fist looking at the beast. "I am a Vampire Noble! I will not be afraid of some beast!"

A gust of wind swept past Fex's face, moving his gelled hair slightly. It was strange feeling this in the tunnel, but he could tell it was the presence of a person. Then the next second, a loud bang was heard, and the beast could be seen flying through the air and crashing into the cave-like wall.

"Quinn?" Fex wondered, as he only knew one person this fast and could back a punch this strong, but his guess was wrong.

"Not quite, but someone who is just as strong." Shiro said from behind.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1167: Overpowered

It didn't take long to see who had arrived in a quick flash. There couldn't be many people who were strong enough to hit the powerful beast back like that suddenly. When hearing Shiro's voice, Fex could soon see that the others had arrived as well. Layla, Shiro, Nathan and Longblade with his party of five.

Turning his head back to the front, short blonde hair could be seen.

"It was Sil," Fex mumbled.

"The Demi-god tier is present!" Longblade shouted, drawing his sword. The sword was a piercing dark black colour that looked to swallow the light around it. It didn't look like a typical blade at all. It was still shaped like a katana, but it almost felt like it was repurposed to fit that role as if it wasn't the blade's original shape. Then there was one finer detail just under the small sword guard, the image of a single large eye with wings. "Pure currently doesn't seem to be present, change of plans. We will ensure our people are safe and allow the Cursed to deal with the Demi-god tier beast. Rafer, you are to support the Cursed faction."

After the command was given, they all got into action as quickly as possible. Jumping to kill the rest of the beasts. Moments before they had arrived, a conversation had taken place as the vehicle was approaching the station for section A.

"If Pure isn't present, then let me handle the Demi-god tier beast." The one who said these words on the vehicle, was none other than Sil. Everyone looked at him as if he was crazy. Was he simply asking to handle it alone? No, he couldn't have meant that, so they assumed Sil was referring to the rest of the Cursed faction.

If Pure wasn't present, they didn't need the whole group to take on the Demi-god tier. At least that's what they predicted.

"That is fine. There will be plenty of beasts still in the area that will need to be taken care of. We shall deal with them and then come support you after." Longblade replied. The reason he agreed was because he simply didn't think that the Cursed faction would be able to deal with the Demi-god tier beast quicker than they could the other beasts.

It just made sense for them to all work together to then take it down. When they arrived at the station, Sil was off before everyone. Far faster than an average person could achieve and almost as if he had a speed ability that was at its peak.

That's what led to the current situation they were now in. Sil stood there looking towards the wall where the beast was chucked into. It soon appeared from the wall with parts of its body falling to the ground, then oddly, the parts that fell started to be replaced, forming back to its original shape.

Its left hadn't formed into the large shield, and its right hand turned into a blade.

"It's a transformation skill!" Fex shouted, trying to give as much information as needed. "It can form its arms, legs, and any part of it into whatever it wants. I also think what we're seeing isn't its real body but its power!"

There was no time to explain further, but having seen Avion make the beast bleed, he could only assume there was a smaller body inside all of that dirt that it was covered in. It wasn't quite like an earth ability power since it looked as if only a certain amount could be controlled, which was on its body.

Still, it looked like Sil wasn't even listening. Soon he went in at an incredible speed. He threw out his fist, going for a punch, and the beast raised its shield. The fist collided into the shield, and although it didn't break, it was pushed back, skidding across the floor.

It soon swung its sword, but Sil was nowhere to be seen and had already punched the beast from behind, pushing it forward again with great power.

"Annoying! Can't you just leave this planet alone!" The beast shouted, now no longer using the shield but turning the objects into two types of whips. Swinging its arms widely, the whips were going all over the place.

Somehow, Sil was able to avoid every single one, as he moved quickly to different areas avoiding all the strikes. They would miss his face, duck down, going over his head, hit inches away from his foot. Once again, when he got close, he punched the beast in the stomach once more, sending him off and away.

"What is going on? How is that kid so strong? Do we even need to be here?" Rafer said in awe. To their surprise, there weren't as many beasts as they initially thought. Fex and the soldiers in the mechs had dealt with most of them, and now they were all standing along the edge of the wall away from the fight, including Avion.

They thought that they would be needed to step in and help Sil, but it looked like Sil was completely overpowering the beast.

"Sil, he's so strong," Shiro said, as everyone watched. It felt like if they tried to get involved, they would just get hurt. "He told me, he said if he was going to go against a humanoid beast that was strong, then he would need to make his body become superhuman."

"So he gathered the strongest abilities he could find that would reinforce his body. A speed ability, a strength ability, hardening powers, and then a few high-level ones to boost his MC cells, last of all, he even touched Longblade." Shiro explained.

Now they understood. With Sil's powers, he combined the MC cells to have speed equal to Quinn, a strength equal to Qi users, and a prediction that far surpassed

Avion. Because if Longbalde was able to see five seconds ahead of what was about to happen, then with Sil's powers, who knew how far into the future he could see.

Still, there seemed to be a slight problem, but Shiro and Sil had already planned for this. After knocking away the Demi-god tier beast again. Sil quickly rushed to Shiro's side. "Are you ready Shiro?"

Shiro nodded.

"Everyone, we might be away for a little while, but this is the only thing we can do," Shiro explained. "Protect us for as long as possible."

Sil had one problem, he had to hold back using his powers in the fight because the goal was to capture the beast alive, not to kill it. However, with its strong regenerative abilities, it almost seemed impossible. Which was why they had a plan.

Soon, Shiro walked along with Sil, and the two of them started to run forward. The beast had changed his small whips into a large one and swung it, covering the whole length of the room. It looked like a colossal battle rope was coming towards them.

Using his hardening skill, focusing it on the side of his body and strength, Sil slammed against it with his shoulder first and made sure he protected Shiro. The two then continued to move towards the beast. With the future site ability, Sil could prepare for anything coming towards them and stop anything hurting Shiro.

Finally, when they had reached the beast, Sil hit its two hands away to the side. Its legs were now enlarged as if it was getting ready to take off, but before it could. Sil slammed the shoulders of the beast, forcing his knees to bend and tumble.

"I am getting them back!" Sil shouted.

Now Shiro got between the two of them and placed his hands on both of their heads. Seconds later, the beast's hands dropped to its side, and so did Sil's.

The fighting had been put to a stop.

"What happened?" Longblade asked, confused about the situation. Why were three people just standing towards the back of the room? Was the fight over? Was it some ability they were using to capture it?

"They're going to do it here?" Layla figured it out.

They had planned to do the mind transfer here and now, but it didn't seem like it would be as straightforward as they thought.

"Just don't disturb them for now, please." Layla pleaded. Not really wanting to explain what they were doing. If Earthborn knew, maybe they wouldn't allow such a thing and would have another fight on their hands.

Longblade looked at them all, but he was just happy that it seemed like they had captured the beast. It had been a while, and the whole task was a lot easier than he had predicted, thanks to them.

They waited a few moments, and Layla expected them to be done by now, but something was clearly happening if all three of them stood still. The most important thing would be for no one to touch the three of them while the transfer was happening.

"Just what is happening in there?" She wondered.

"Everyone, someone's coming!" Fex shouted, alerting the others. He could hear before the others the sound of footsteps. Coming out from the tunnel towards their right, they could see a man who wore a large black overcoat, with around eight of his men.

Agent 11, who was tied up and lying on the ground, could almost shed tears seeing this man. He wiggled and wiggled about because he was so happy.

"Now I see," Fex said, looking at agent 11. "That guy is your boss, isn't he?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1168: A dark mind

At the moment, Shiro was performing the most important task he had ever received in his life. He knew that everyone was relying on him before. However, now the tension seems to have risen tenfold.

'The first part of the plan worked out. Sil protected me while we were heading towards the Demi-god tier beast. Now I just have to do my part.'

Currently, he was in the black space. It was the common area in one's mind, an area that he had been in many times before. This time the technique that needed to be performed was slightly different compared to the last.

'I've done it once before, but I don't have the same powers as I did when I was using Sil's body. I'm going to have to try and do this as quickly as possible.'

Doing it once, the second time was much easier, and as he travelled through the dark space, he could see the two floating spirits.

'Now which one should I take, and how do I know who is who, just from floating spirits?' Shiro wondered, but there was a larger issue going on. At the moment, he was also latched onto the beast's mind, ready to merge the two together, so they were in the same space.

Because he was currently trying to control two mind spaces, his MC cells were being drained twice as fast.

'I don't have time to enter both spaces.'

At that moment, one of the floating orbs started to come towards him. As if it wanted to be picked more than the other. From the description of both of their personalities and having met Vorden last time, Shiro only hoped it was Vorden.

Activating a glow around his hand, he was able to grab the floating ball, and now it was time for the two of them to enter the beast's mind. Merging both of the minds, something strange started to happen. The black space started to change as the other mind was brought in.

One half of the room was starting to form a purple colour. Its texture looked like raw meat and flesh, as it was a little bouncy and reactive to the touch.

'Why did the beast's mind have to be so scary.' Shiro shook his head, taking a step forward. Before switching minds with the beasts. He had experienced this before when switching the minds of the beasts. However, unlike humans, who all seemed to have a black space and a deeper white space, the beasts differed depending on what type of tier they were at.

While the human's mind seemed like one could wander in the dark space forever, a beast's mind was limited the lower the tier. Shiro had a theory that it might have something to do with its capacity to learn.

Judging by the size of the mind he could see now, there was plenty of space to put another human mind into it. Walking in the purple area, the floating spirit in his hand started to shine brighter. The further he walked into the other mind, the glow grew stronger until eventually, it felt like it could no longer be continued.

Shiro felt like it was a grenade ready to go off at any second. Placing it on the ground, he stepped away. The light was so bright he looked away, covering his eyes. When the flash had disappeared, and he turned to look around, he could hear someone.

"I'm finally back bitches!" The person screamed.

"Vor...Vor..Vor-" He was trying to make a guess, or more hoping this was the person he had met before.

"Please, do you think that wimp would have come forward when seeing the opportunity in front of him? If there were a hundred of us in Sil's mind, he would be the last person to have come forward." Raten explained. "For a shrimp, you sure have an amazing power. Now come on, bring me back. This mind kinda looks disgusting." Raten lifted his feet and a purple slime followed his feet, soon snapping off. "But it will do. Why does it look like this anyway."

"Umm..." Shiro had been told Raten was a problematic character, but Shiro thought he would at least be thankful to him and would be able to communicate with him easier than others had expected, but it didn't seem to be the case. What Shiro didn't know, was Raten was being relatively tame because of this very reason.

In the end, Shiro explained what he was here to do and what exactly they had planned to do with his mind.

"That's great, so I get to experience being a beast and can hit anyone I like while using my beast form as an excuse." Raten smiled. "Alright, just go and leave me here then, you can go back, and I'll take over this mind."

Shiro didn't move, and that's when Raten noticed that there must have been a second part to this that hadn't been said yet.

"The thing is, when we entered this mind, I felt it. The beast's mind also was able to enter into its own space. So it's inside at the moment. If I leave you here, then the beast will still have original control just like Sil did."

"Then what the heck do we do, you little brat!" Raten said, raising a fist as if he was about to punch him, but soon controlled himself and put it back down by his side.

In all honesty, Shiro really didn't want to bring a person like this back.

'How could Still be friends with someone like this? I can't imagine the two of them ever talking.'

"I don't hundred percent know, but there are two things I can think of. At the moment, we have nowhere to put the beast into. We can put it into Sil's mind, but that might cause a disturbance, so my suggestion would be, we either talk to the beast and ask it to use its bo-"

"Are you really that dumb? The beast just fought for its life against us. You think if we ask nicely with sprinkles on top, the beast is just going to let us use its body>? Then it could take over at any point and time and just attack the others even if it said yes. Nope, dumb move over to the next option."

At that moment, they could hear the sound of the goo moving. The whole room seemed to react to something. When they turned around to look, they could see that the Demi-god tier beast had arrived, and it had transformed its two hands into blades.

"The second option is we take the beast into a deeper subconscious, similar to where Oscar was. To do that, I think I have to touch it again." Shiro said. However, round two just didn't seem like it would be as easy with Raten rather than Sil.

---

Outside there was no such talk of what needed to be done. Fex being relatively close to where Sil, Shiro and the Demi-god tier beast was decided to stay nearby. Qi infused arrows were firing off towards them, and it was his job to make sure it didn't touch the beast.

"Come on, we're going to steal that beast back!" Agent 2 shouted, and all of the men soon ran forward.

"Of course, when we don't have our superhuman boy with us, all these losers decide to turn up." Fex's face was scrunched up and annoyed because the Qi arrows were quite dangerous against him, and he had to be careful.

The soldiers were in combat with the members of Pure. As for the soldiers in the mechs knew that all they could do was stay where they currently were. Humans knew the many weaknesses of the mechs, unlike the Dalki, and they were already going up against the strongest members in the Shelter.

Without their mechs, and even with them, they were nothing compared to the others.

"Where the hell is your leader!" Joy shouted as she swung her blade and slammed the ground with her foot raising up a wall of earth between them.

"I don't know. I thought he would have been here by now. Maybe he's caught up in something." Fex replied back.

As for Agent number two, two people stepped forward to battle with him, Longblade and Layla.

"I see you have a bow. Try to give me support as much as you can, and I will be the one to face him." Longblade said as he charged forward. He swung his large black sword, and Agent 2 swung his strange weapon as well.

The two powerful forces collided, hitting each other mid-air, but a strange reaction came from Agent 2.

"It's nice to meet you. Judging by that ridiculous number on your back, I can see you're a high ranking member." Longblade said. "It seems you're a bit surprised by something. Is it perhaps that the strange power you have, isn't working?"

That was precisely what was strange about it. Agent 2 could tell that the Qi that he had infused into his weapon wasn't working at all. The first stage he used to power the cells in his body still worked, giving him a strong blow, but the second stage of Qi on the sword had completely disappeared.

'Is it his weapon?' Agent two thought and could soon feel the energy of an arrow coming from behind.

Stepping out of the way to avoid the arrow, he soon found it following him. The good thing was, the Qi that had gone from his sword now was able to come back.

'It looks like I was right, but I never heard of such a sword. One that can nullify the effect of Qi before.' Striking forward at the arrow, Agent 2 was expecting to destroy it with ease. Still, there was a bit of resistance to it, until his power eventually won out, destroying the head.

"Oh, a Qi infused arrow. When did you learn to use Qi as well, little Layla?" Agent two asked, looking in their direction. Originally with him here, he thought it would be an easy fight. He had already gotten rid of one of the bigger annoyances, but it seemed like there were still a couple more annoying people he had to deal with.

'That's strange. Why is my heart beating fast just after that, and why do I feel a little hot. I should have recovered all my Qi energy?' Agent 2 thought as a strange feeling was coming over his body.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1169: Pure's creation

It was a strange feeling coming over agent 2's body. He couldn't quite describe the feeling because he had never felt like this before. His body felt slightly weak, but his Qi was working just as much as it usually would have done.

'Did I not give myself enough time before I fully recovered?' He thought.

Before arriving, Agent 2 knew that the others would be in the area before they had arrived. It seemed like luck was on their side as they had someone on the inside that was reporting to them what was going on at the Shelter. Because of this, they knew that the beast had already moved.

Time wasn't on their side, so in order to recover his Qi quickly, Agent 2 did a taboo among those at Pure. However, he had done this more than once before, and his men were aware of the risks. He stole their Qi and added the energy to his.

The only thing was, forcefully removing Qi like so would take someone's real-life force, but it was the quickest way for them to recover. He was sure that he had recovered back to his top fighting shape, but now he wasn't so sure, judging by how he was feeling.

The problem was, he didn't have the pleasure or time of thinking it out. Longblade was already on him, making several slashes, one after the other without allowing for a breath. Agent 2 was able to block them all, but he was unable to find an opening.

'If I can't put the Qi in my weapon, he's just as strong as me. What the hell is that sword!' At the same time, two more arrows came his way, but it seemed like it was easy for him to deal with it this time. He opened the palm of one of his hand, and a strange energy was sent out towards them.

The second the invisible energy hit the arrows, they immediately fell to the ground.

'He can take care of my arrows that easily. I could change into my second form, but I don't think that would be much help with my shabby sword skills.'

Then there was no choice. She had to go to the third form. She soon found her body transforming as it grew larger, her bottom half changing into a serpent while her top half remained the same. Now, out from her mouth, the first thing she did was spit out a blue flame, placing it on the tip of her arrow. Firing this, she made sure that it stayed behind Longblade.

"Let it hit you!" She shouted.

Hearing this, Longblade allowed for the blue flame to hit his back, and he felt a surge of energy compared to before. Swinging his blade now when it collided against Agent 2, his hand was swung to the side further than before.

'What is this! After being hit by that girl, he suddenly got a post, and what is she right now?' He thought.

The blue flame had a buff effect, increasing one's strength by five percent. Now trying to improve their situation, Layla started to fire out arrows hitting all her fellow teammates, giving them the extra energy they needed. On top of this, for those that were injured, she would change to a green flame, giving them a new set of power.

'Things aren't looking too good. I need to get rid of her! She might prove to be a bigger annoyance than the others!' Agent 2 started to realise.

Layla was playing the supporting role but wasn't just supporting Longblade. She was able to support everyone with her arrows, teh telekinesis and strange flames made a good combination. In a way, this was far worse than someone who was strong. Even if Agent 2 won his battle, he would have to continue facing everyone else as well.

On top of that, the strange feeling that was coming over his body wasn't going away.

"I didn't think I would have to do this two times in a day. When was the last time I had to go this far? This is pissing me off!" Agent 2 shouted as he dug his weapon into the ground and a force of Qi disappeared outward. Soon energy could be seen forming in front of him, a glowing ball that appeared and went inward. As it did, Agent's 2 skin started to turn bright red.

A new force was now beaming off him. It was so strong that it nearly knocked Longblade off his feet. That was unless he didn't have his sword with him. Covering his front, the sword was able to disperse the energy as it went around.

'This power, can I really fight him as it goes on. The sword is a double-edged sword. It even disrupts me when trying to use my soul weapon as long as I'm touching it. I could change to another weapon, but it's the only advantage I have over him.'

The next second, pointing his weapon towards Longbalde, agent 2 thrust it a few times, and five loud bangs were heard going off one after the other. No one could see anything, and it was only after a few seconds Longblade could feel the pain in his things.

Two large holes had appeared, and two more on his shoulder. If it wasn't for him holding his weapon upright, it seemed like the fifth would have pierced his head as well.

"Longblade!" Layla shouted as she went to fire Green arrows in an attempt to heal him, but before she could even reach him, Agent 2 already was in between the two of them.

"Now it's your turn!" Agent 2 said as he fired another shot again. Layla, seeing this, started to shrink her body. He had aimed for the head, hoping to kill her on the spot. With her body changing to the second form, the attack missed and hit the ceiling, making a hole.

Still, there was no worry in agent 2' eyes as he was ready to fire off more Qi blasts. Until a sudden pain was now felt in his chest. Sweat was now almost pouring from all over his body. He fell down to one knee, and Layla wanted to take advantage of this situation, so she struck him down, hoping to kill him in one blow.

Regardless, a simple wave of Agent 2 weapon hitting hers had sent her flying across the room. Layla had even reinforced her sword with Qi, but it didn't look like it made a difference.

'What is happening to my body? The pain is getting worse. It's almost as if it multiplied the second I used the fourth stage.' Agent 2 thought. Now closing his eyes, he started to meditate, trying to find the source, and he could see it. Something inside him was spreading through his body.

'It's already spread this far, but I didn't notice it before, and where did the- ' in the middle of his thoughts, he had figured it out. It could only be one. After having the fight with the Cursed faction leader, that was when the changes started to occur.

'I can get rid of the energy that's affecting me, but it's going to take some time.' Thinking about this, cancelling the fourth stage was for the best for now. He had already dealt with the strongest of the group here. 'I don't need that power to fight off this little runt. But I still need to buy some time.'

It was going to take an immense amount of concentration. Still, agent 2 needed to place his hand on his chest, using his Qi to remove the poison in his body, while also fighting one-handed and with a fraction of his powers.

There was a certain worry of how much Layla had improved. He could tell from the initial strike when he had underestimated her through the arrows, so he needed a plan, and he had come up with the perfect one.

"Layla, Layla, Layla." Agent 2 said with a big smile. "I never did like you or your mother, but for you, I feel a little sad. After all, you were someone she never wanted, and every time she looked at you, she would treat you with disgust."

Hearing this, Layla was being filled with anger. She didn't understand what he was talking about and tried to come charging in again. When the two swords collided this time, there seemed to be an equal power between the two.

"What's wrong, Layla!" Agent 2 continued to deflect the attacks. His plan of making her the aggressor had worked, all he needed to do was defend and heal himself. "Didn't your mother ever tell you the truth? I bet you always wondered. Why did she treat me this way? Aren't I her daughter?"

"Tell me, who's your father Layla? Have you ever met him before? Did she tell you the lie that she would come up with, that he was a fantasy novel writer?"

'Lie' She thought. What did he mean? Hearing this, she was losing the will to attack. Because she wanted to know the truth, but how could she trust the person that was attempting to kill her. However, who else would know about her father, the father who was a fantasy writer according to her mother.

"I guess I was bang on, you know it was only a rumour, but the story got passed around between the high ranking agents, and one day I saw the reaction of her face as it had been overheard. Now that I see it, it all makes sense. Layla, you were an accident, but not an accident as if you were planned. Oh no, it's much worse than that, for you see, Agent five always had a deep hatred for ability users because using their powers they had forced her, forced her to have a child. I'm sure you are old enough to know what I mean by this."

"And Imagine being your mother, having to look at you every day, and being reminded of that day. Reminded of why she hated ability users and why she decided to create Pure!" Agent 2 shouted, and at the same time, he had finally pulled out the strange purple energy from himself. Chucking it on the ground, his body could almost feel instant relief.

However, when he looked up at Layla, she stood there still, her arms by her side.

'No, is that the real reason why? The reason she created Pure, was because of...me..how I had come into the world...my father.'

He wasn't quite sure if he was seeing things, but a dark coloured smog started to surround her, and when she looked up, her eyes were glowing a dark purple.

'What is happening to her?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1170: The beast's pledge

Inside the humanoid beast's mind, both Raten and Shiro were standing opposite the Demi-god tier beast. Its two hands had changed into blades and for some reason Shiro felt like the beast looked even more eager to fight here compared to in the real world.

"Come on, attack it!" Shiro instructed the other, hoping that just like Sil, Raten would be there in a flash.

"What do you want me to do? Slap it to death?!" Raten shouted back, yet the next second the beast dashed forward thrusting with one of its arms. Seeing this Raten booted Shiro out of the way causing him to fall to the floor, whereas he leaned back just in time to avoid the first blow.

His reaction times were quick, and his face was scrunched up as he was frustrated at the situation.

"You damn beast!" Raten cursed as he went to punch its arm, only for a dagger to appear in his hand, slicing at the beast. Seconds before the dagger could reach the beast's forearm, it transformed its hand into a shield blocking the blow. The beast then used its shield to bash Raten in the face, sending him a few feet into the air.

'What's wrong? Why isn't he using his abilities here?' Shiro wondered, but then again, the one that was in this mind space right now was Raten instead of Sil. However, he could see something in Raten's hands. Two daggers that weren't there before.

'Think this is a mind space, and the daggers appeared when he went for the attack.' Shiro scratched his head, trying to come up with how the minds worked.

Despite losing out in this first exchange, it didn't take long for Raten to get up again and charge right in. He himself hadn't even noticed the sudden appearance of the daggers, too focused on his desire to pay the beast for what it had done to him.

One dagger was thrown at the beast, yet it simply blocked with the still present shield arm. It then swung its bladed arm, but Raten slid underneath the beast's legs and was now behind it. The next second he buried the dagger deep inside the humanoid beast's back near its neck. Then he dragged it down half way before the beast moved again. Stepping away Raten now had nothing in his hands.

'Wow, it looks like he's good in close combat. His fighting style is completely different to Sil's. Even though they look the same right now, I guess they really are two different people.' Shiro analyzed. 'But then how did he get those daggers in the first place? I don't remember seeing them on him.'

"Tell me how the heck do I use my powers here!" Raten shouted at Sil. They had appeared when he wanted them, but now that he was out, he didn't know how to get more.

"This here isn't the real world. The two of us are currently inside the beast's mind. You've already done it twice, just use your imagination or something!" Shiro explained, himself not completely sure about the rule. "Think of what weapon or what powers you want to use!"

This was the only thing Shiro could think of, when Raten needed it he thought of the weapons and they appeared in his hands. The only thing was it seemed like it was based on what the person could actually do in real life. Perhaps a limitation set by the person's original mind itself.

Otherwise, the Demi-god tier beast could probably ilado something similar to its original form, and Raten could properly make anything come to mind. It was at that moment that lighting started to appear from his hands.

"So I can use any power that I can imagine, is that right?" Raten smiled. "I may not be as strong as Sil, but with that sort of power, I should still be able to beat this!" Two more daggers appeared in his hands, slightly larger than the last ones and with a more curved edge.

Sparks started to lighten up, most likely from a lightning ability, and Raten ran towards the beast unafraid. Shiro was just glad that things were working out for him at the moment.

The two were in a tough battle as the Demi-god tier best was faster than Raten, but for some reason he chose to try and fight toe to toe with the beast. During their fight, Shiro noticed something, that the beast seemed to avoid going for vital areas.

It used shallow cuts, or bashes with the shield. Its strikes were more aimed at areas to incapacitate Raten, but not in a lethal way.

'Why is it doing this?' He wondered.

Suddenly, Raten was able to get a clear strike in as he had been closely paying attention to the beast's movements. He was making use of his experience in fighting and had managed to pierce one of the daggers right through the beasts chest.

He had gotten a hang of this world quicker then Shiro could ever imagine, as he threw blades, making them reaper in his hands, creating other weapons on the fly, even making them return to his hand.

Raten was like a sort of god in this space, most likely stronger then he could have ever been on the outside.

'Are all of Sil's friends such monsters.'

With the lightning dagger inside its body, Raten let out its powers inside the beast. Several little small white orbs that started to float from the ground. It was something Shiro had never seen before but it was clear it was due to what Raten had just done.

'What are these things?' Shiro thought as he reached out his hand. It looked harmless and in some way he could tell that it wouldn't do any harm to him as he touched it.

The second he touched it, his head felt heavy, as images started to flash through his head.

"We will make you stronger." A voice said, and he could see a man in a white suit. He could see a beast trapped in a container. It wasn't the Demi-god tier beast, but it had some resemblance to the one currently fighting Raten.

'Are these..memories?' Shiro theorised.

Now knowing that they wouldn't hurt him and what they were, Shiro was intrigued. It was too busy with Raten, so Shiro continued to touch the special white lights.

"Finally we have created our first Demi-god tier beast" The same old man was seen, but the beast itself was looking at someone else. A female doctor with round glasses who nodded.

'Who is that girl that the beast is looking at?'

Touching another memory, Sil had found one with her in it.

"I know, I don't like what they are doing to you, either. Which is why I'm going to help you escape this place." This time he could see that the female in white cloak was the only one in the room talking to the beast.

'These memories I don't think they are in order.'

The next scene was showing the Demi-god beast down in one of these tunnels, and the beasts all looking up to it. As if it was some type of king. Soon one came up to the stage, and stood directly in front of it. was ready to brace itself. At that moment, the Demi-god tier beat the beast, and pulled out the crystal.

Although no words were spoken here, through the memories Shiro was able to tell what was happening. The beasts sacrificed themselves for the sake of the Demi-god tier beast. They wanted to help it to get rid of the humans.

Looking through more and more memories, slowly Shiro was getting a clear picture of the events that had transpired and now he understood everything that was happening, at least so far.

The beast was originally a humanoid one from this planet, and had been captured by the military. They had run experiments trying to make it stronger. During that time, the beast got close to a scientist who disagreed with their methods, and wished to help it.

When the beast finally evolved, she created a situation that had allowed the Demi-god tier beast to escape. However, the beast seems to have remained, near the Shelter, still stopping the humans by attacking the mines and taking the crystals. In doing so, the other beasts were willing to sacrifice their lives and crystals in order for it to evolve once again.

What Shiro still didn't understand was why the Demi-god tier beast was so obsessed with stopping the soldiers from mining the crystals, and why it didn't attack humans.

There was one last memory and in touching this, Shiro finally found his answer.

The white doctor could be seen again, and in some other memories the two of them had conversed quite often, but this time she was shedding tears.

"I'm sorry about what we are doing. I didn't know it was doing that." She sniffled.  
"Okay, I'll help you, but please promise me something. I know we are foolish and we don't understand everything that is going on, but we are just scared and fighting for our survival, so please forgive us."

After seeing the last message, Shiro somewhat understood, and just maybe there was a way for them to get through this, without the need to fight.

Shiro was sure of it, that they might be needed out there soon.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1171: The fourth Evolution

'No, that can't be true! Mom, cared... she must have cared for me... if she didn't then why would she have risked her life for me at the very end?'

'There has to be another reason for how she treated me! Yes, it must have all been for the sake of Pure! To make me stronger, so I could take over the organisation one day... right?'

These haunting thoughts kept repeating themselves. Layla's mind went over all her interactions with her mother, the images of those times vividly flashing before her eyes. They reminded her of all of the things she had tried to block out and those she had buried deep inside.

Layla couldn't help but focus on Lucy's face in all of those memories. The strange look on her face whenever daughter and mother had interacted. As it turned out, looking back, Layla realised that the few times her mother had told Layla anything about her father, like him being a fantasy writer, she had only done so while facing away.

Had she done so, because she hadn't wanted to think about Layla's father? Was Agent 2 right, that the father she knew she had was actually just something her mother had come up with, to hide the truth?

A smog of negative emotions started to spill out from Layla's body. Normally only her subrace should be able to perceive them, yet they had seemingly reached such an intensity that those around her could see hers and all took a careful step back, afraid since they had no idea what it was.

Her mind had become numb and her eyes were now glowing a slight purple. Layla had still been in her second form, yet she slowly started to change. Her giant tusk-like fangs started to shrink into smaller ones that could fit in her mouth and the horns on her head also started to grow smaller, until they were barely visible through her hair.

In an instant all the smog flew back into her through her mouth, her nose and even her ears. It was a scary sight how that foreign substance appeared to have invaded the girl. The next moment red marks began climbing up from her neck and down her arms, as if all the veins in her body were now pulsating and alive.

Everyone stared at her with a weapon in their hands, yet they all shared one thought at this time. 'What a beauty'. Her skin now looked softer than snow, her hair was flowing lighter than air and even the red markings seemed to form a sort of tattoo which further added to an exotic charm.

"What's happened to her?" Nathan asked, looking at the one vampire in the room that might have an answer. To a lot of them, Layla changing forms came as a shock. Still they held back from attacking her, choosing to trust her as a member of

the Cursed faction. As long as she was helping them, they could always try to figure out things after this fight.

Unfortunately, they weren't completely sure if everything would go that way. Layla had started emitting a strange energy, which made all of their legs shake slightly. Then, there was also the look on the girl's face. Her eyebrows were deeply furrowed and her mouth was slightly open baring her fangs.

Luckily, the pure anger and frustration was currently aimed at the one person responsible for her change.

"I have no idea. I don't know much about Hannyas, so this must be one of her forms." Fex replied. Of course, he didn't tell him that this was the best case scenario. Truth be told, he was worried that the pure anger and bloodlust coming from her, had made her enter a state similar to a Bloodsucker.

To be on the safe side, he made use of this moment when everyone was distracted to attach his strings to Longblade. The Colonel was injured and unable to stand, bleeding out slightly, but the vampire could still hear a heartbeat.

However, if he was to be caught up in whatever was about to happen, today might very well end up being his last day. Before Layla started to act, the vampire pulled him out, and placed him down by the side of Shiro and the others. He proceeded to carefully move over, all while keeping his gaze on the furious girl.

'Layla, please don't make this into a situation where we will have to deal with you as well.' Fex silently prayed, as he readied Agent 11 for the worst case scenario.

Layla herself would be unable to explain what was happening, but one thing was for certain, she had just finished transforming into another form. A form that no one had ever seen before. The one thing all her Hannya forms had in common was the need for powerful negative emotions.

Layla had become quite proficient in controlling her emotions and harnessing them to help her evolve into any of the three at will. To do this she would usually recall a painful memory creating negative emotions in herself.

However, this went beyond any negative emotions Layla had ever felt before, she was experiencing pain beyond what she could have ever imagined which had allowed her to unlock a fourth evolution. One which should be called the True Hannya.

'No wonder, such a bastard has joined the Cursed faction!' Agent 2 thought. 'We would have been better off, if Lucy had allowed us to just get rid of her. Well at least I got rid of the poison during her temper tantrum, but this doesn't look like it's going to be easy.'

Unwilling to take any more risks while fighting against those abominations from the Cursed faction, Agent 2 was forced to activate the fourth stage of Qi once more. He banged his sword into the ground and his skin started to turn red.

The usual energy that was felt from the sudden surge in Qi was felt by everyone there. Those who had been engaged with Pure and had already stopped their fights during Layla's transformation, moved out of the way so they wouldn't be affected by the overwhelming force.

Ultimately, only Layla stood her ground not moving, instead as the wave of energy came towards her, she opened her mouth and let out a loud shrieking sound, almost pushing the energy back. The others were frozen in place as the sound pierced their ears.

"This is like that damn Banshee's scream!" Fex thought doing his best to cover his ears, yet his sharper senses turned out to be a detriment this time. He could feel blood flowing out of them.

The space between Layla and Agent 2, as well as the air itself, was shaking from the colliding powers.

'How is it possible to use sound as a medium for Qi? Just what sort of freak has she turned into?!" Agent 2 was baffled, but he didn't have the time to think about it.

Instantly, he started to use his weapon similar to a gun, firing off quick sharp blasts of Qi. Layla's movements were still as fast as before, allowing her to evade three of the shots. Unfortunately the fourth one managed to hit her forearm.

However, the blow hardly did anything to Layla apart from leaving a dent marking on her arm.

'That's impossible! Even that Cursed faction leader was left with a giant hole! Wait... no how, could someone as young as her have even more Qi than me?!" Slight signs of panic started to emerge on Agent 2's face.

Not giving him any time to rest, Layla retaliated with several black balls, before she too dashed forward. The Pure leader had no clue what these black balls would do if he came into contact, but whatever it was, it couldn't be good

The fourth stage of Qi had reinforced his whole body, allowing him to move at the same speed as the girl. The only thing he didn't account for was that Layla still had access to her normal ability, so despite all of the balls missing, she changed the direction of the closest one, making it connect.

The second it touched Agent 2, chains started to form from the ball and burrowed into ground. These were the Spiritual Chains she was able to use as a Namanari

Hannya. The Pure leader tried to break free with his strength, but these were no normal chains, each of them were reinforced with the extra power of Qi.

'Damn this, I can't move my hands or weapon!'

Layla was already upon him and swung her sword vertically aiming to slash his head off in a single strike. The sword touched the outer layer of his skin but was unable to pierce through. Agent 2 had focused most of Qi there to prevent the otherwise fatal injury.

"I don't know what type of deal you must have made to become this type of monster." The Pure Agent suddenly smiled. "And I don't know how you were able to obtain this level of Qi at your age, but it looks like your strength is still nowhere near the level of mine!"

The chains started to weaken and disappear, which would allow Agent 2 to continue his own attack. However, Layla didn't distance herself from him, on the contrary. Her free hand grabbed onto his shoulder and she opened her jaw wider than would be humanly possible, making the girl resemble a snake about to devour its prey.

The next second, fiery flames came out from her mouths scorching Agent 2 from point blank range. The flames were strong and lit up the whole area of the cave, melting part of the area behind the Pure leader. Despite this, a kick suddenly came forward aimed at her stomach, which sent her flying back.

The flames soon died down and revealed Agent 2, his hair burnt off, and several burn marks on his face, contorted into an expression of immense pain. He had concentrated most of Qi to prevent the sword from cutting off his head, leaving him with far less to block the sudden and unexpected flame attack against his face.

"You bitch! I planned to kill you, but that would be letting you off easily! You only deserve to be tortured for the rest of your miserable life and I shall make sure to make you crave the sweet embrace of death!"

Fex was impressed with Layla's cabilitites so far. She wasn't as fast as a Vampire Leader in this form, and her strikes didn't seem as powerful as his father's or Bryce's, but her versatile skills made her a foe he would never wish to face himself.

From what he had seen, her current form appeared to be a mixture of the other three she had displayed before. She was still able to use her Spiritual chains, but also keep her second form's speed and power, and now he had also seen Layla use the fire breath from her third form.

Without an Inspect skill, Fex didn't realise that she was in fact even stronger than that. All of the Qi inside her body was currently running wild. Just as Quinn had stated, her body was unable to handle the large amounts of Qi that her mother had

left her with, but the same wasn't true for this form. Every one of her attacks had been amplified with a massive amount of Qi.

Nevertheless, Fex was very concerned about the look in her eyes. Her now purple eyes didn't seem alive, merely focused on one thing, getting revenge. However, would defeating Agent 2 be enough to quell her anger?

Layla had quickly recovered but there was a visible wound around her stomach. Noticing this her right arm started to spew a green flame which she pressed against the hole. It healed at a speed that the onlookers would follow with the naked eye.

The next second she charged back in. Not backing down, and now filled with anger himself Agent 2 came at her.

Suddenly, another scream filled the area. However, this one wasn't human.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1172: Clash of Titans

Suddenly, the onlookers saw a third figure heading towards the center of the area where Layla and Agent 2 were charging towards. At first they could only make out the outline of the new challenger, making them wonder who exactly would be crazy enough to join the fight.

When Fex looked back, he discovered that the Demi-god tier beast they had come here to subdue had disappeared. No, more accurately speaking, it had just moved and was about to join the clash of those titans.

'Why didn't it just flee? Now was the perfect time, so why does it look like it wants to fight?' Fex wondered as he noticed Shiro collapsed on the ground. Sil was still touching his head while trying to recover or get over what was happening. He was dazed looking out of the room, and something in his head felt a bit strange.

"Sil, buddy, I need you to tell me what happened." Fex requested, while gently checking if he was okay. He was breathing, but his consciousness didn't seem to have fully returned yet.

Layla and Agent 2's weapons clashed in the air. The humanoid beast had stopped a few meters before that point, but instead it had skidded on the floor and sliced at the legs off both fighters.

In the end, a Demi-god tier beast was still one of the strongest beasts in existence and the power in its body was more than enough to overcome their Qi defenses, causing them both to stumble to the ground.

The next second the Pure leader felt a large shield whack him across the face and a kick in his chest followed. Everything had happened so fast, and so unexpected that Agent 2 honestly hadn't even understood what happened.

The Demi-god tier beast slashed downward at the lying Agent 2, the Pure leader quickly thrusted his weapon a couple of times towards the beast, hitting him in the chest and shoulder. Although it had left behind circular holes in its body, a strange earth quickly formed over them again as if the attacks had never occurred.

Meanwhile, the Demi-god tier beast pierced Agent 2's shoulder, and was cutting through his flesh drawing blood, but the sound of someone else approaching made it turn around its head. That's when it could see who it was... and the sword strike aimed at its head.

Changing its arm into a shield, the beast blocked the attack, yet the strength behind the attack was so powerful that it had to remove the sword from Agent 2's wound to use it to support itself.

"Stay out of this!" The beast growled, as it slashed at Layla's sword, only to see her mouth opening. Instinctively feeling that it was in danger, the beast placed both of its hands together to form a giant tower shield, right before the flames hit it.

By the time the flames eventually died down, Agent 2 had already rolled to the side and gotten up. He looked to be in a terrible condition, but his posture made it clear that he wouldn't run away from this fight.

"What the hell is happening? How has this turned into a three way fight between them all?" Rafer asked the question that was on everyone's mind.

As someone who had personally fought against the humanoid beast, Avion noticed something about it was different. It was still undeniably strong, but its fighting style was completely different. Its movements flowed better, and if it could have been described as passive and careful about conserving someone's life, now it was aggressive and out for the kill.

Finally, someone who could shed some light on this situation came to. Only it wasn't Sil, but Shiro. His eyes opened only ever so slightly, but for Fex who was close to him, he noticed immediately.

"Shiro, are you okay? We're a bit short on time, you need to tell me what's going on!" Fex demanded to know. He didn't want to be harsh, but every second was precious.

Fortunately, Shiro was able to see the fight without having to move his head. He had already been worried something like this might happen.

"We...succeeded." Shiro whispered barely audibly. "That's...Raten"

"I'm on your side you two horned bitch!" Raten shouted towards Layla. It was only when he took a closer look at her, that he noticed the lifeless look behind her eyes. The Hannya was fighting more on instinct than actual conscious thoughts. While her subconsciousness or instincts made her body act, her mind was still trapped, surrounded by her own memories and the pain and suffering from the realisation that she didn't really know anything about her past.

'Should we help?' Fex wondered. 'Can we even help? Going up against one of them would require most of us, but more?'

The three titans stood in a type of triangle formation, cautious about who to attack and who to defend against. For a short moment they remained in this Mexican standoff. The onlookers all seemed to have the same thoughts again, whether or not they should intervene. The Pure members had realised that they were on the losing side, so they decided to move and stay behind their leader.

None of them showed any signs of wanting to come close to the centre of the room for risk of getting caught up into this mess.

'I don't understand why the Demi-god tier beast has joined the fight as well, but this isn't good. This whole thing has gotten way out of hand. Should I just abort the mission?' Agent 2 was pondering over a possible strategic retreat, but before he could come to a decision Layla decided to act, forcing Raten and therefore Agent 2 to do the same.

None of the onlookers actually knew how incredibly powerful that Demi-god tier beast actually was. After how easily Sil had managed to take it down, it had created the impression that it wasn't that strong. In reality, Sil was just that much of a monster to be able to take down the Demi-god tier beast.

Now that Raten was in control and didn't shy away from hurting others, it was a real powerhouse.

"Get a grip! My patience is running thin, next time you attack me, I'm going to slash your neck!" Raten shouted, but found himself locked by her strange chains, unable to move.

Seeing this, Agent 2 decided to go in for the attack, but soon had to jump back as more of the black floating balls flew his way. It was unclear whether Layla had perceived his threat, or had just remembered that there was someone else who deserved her wrath more, but she changed her attention towards the Pure leader.

Finally, Sil was coming to as well, the pain in his head had stopped. He immediately looked over to the others fighting, and could see such skillful fighting skills coming from Raten.

"He's back, he's finally back!" Sil mumbled, smiling more than anything, seemingly unaware of the dangerous situation they were currently in.

"Sil, you need to stop them! NOW!!" Fex shouted at him, grabbing him by the shoulders. The worst case scenario was one of them dying. If Raten ended up killing Layla or vice versa, the vampire would be unable to explain things to Quinn. Their entire operation of helping Sil would have failed.

Fex didn't even dare to imagine what Quinn would do if one of his friends perished here.

"Raten, won't hurt Layla!" Sil stated calmly, without a hint of a doubt. "And now that Raten is back, I won't hurt him ever again!"

'We don't have time for this crap!' Fex thought angrily, looking at the Sil who continued to have a goofy smile on his face. It was then that he realised that Sil was

an unusual person. Someone who was truly selfish and only cared for certain people.

Unfortunately, Layla wasn't one of them. Fex was convinced that if it had been Shiro, Borden, Vorden, Quinn or Raten, Sil would have acted in a heartbeat, but now that Raten was back, it was clear he didn't care what happened to the girl.

"Fine, get rid of Agent 2 then!" Fex screamed at him.

Shiro, still not comprehending the situation, looked over to Sil, but his friend had overused his ability. He had barely been able to speak and right now he couldn't even lift a finger.

'If it's like this, will I have to get involved?' Fex contemplated. He might be strong but against these monsters, he was certain he wouldn't be able to make it out unscathed and he was sure how severe his injuries would be.

All three of them seemed to be preparing for an almighty attack to decide the outcome, no longer wanting to 'play around'.

Layla had conjured a total of eight black spheres that were now surrounding her, yet for the moment they remained unmoving. She was concentrating on her ability trying to move them with one hand, at the same time.

Raten had put both of his hands together and was forming a large weapon, seemingly a scythe.

Lastly, Agent 2 was putting more and more Qi into his weapon to the point it started to become redder than his own body.

All three started to run into each other in the centre of the room. The onlookers could care less about who would win this power struggle, they were all too afraid of the consequence. It would be impossible for the area to not cave in, yet it was too late to stop them.

"I'm sorry, but all of you need to calm down!" A person who had appeared out of nowhere shouted. Throwing out his arms and kicking in front of him, he pushed all three back, their attacks dissipating mid flight. The entire area rumbled as they got buried into the wall.

Fortunately, after a few seconds it stopped without any cave in, making everyone let out a sigh of relief. Surprisingly, there was one clear winner in this major battle, and it was none other than the person left standing alone in the middle.

"Quinn, you made it!" Fex shouted. However, something was different about him, how'd he get so strong he was able to do that to all of them.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And  
read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1173: Too much Qi (1)

Layla felt a shooting pain from the back of her head after her whole body had crashed through the wall. When the girl opened her eyes, she could see the person who was standing in the centre, and for a brief moment, her mind went blank.

All the negative emotions and memories in regards to her mother were replaced for ones with the person in the middle of the area. Her first encounter with Quinn as part of the same testing group for military school, the time he had sucked her blood in the library, the time that the two of them had hugged after finding out Cia was a part of Pure.

The time when Quinn had tried to cheer her up after Cia's death, and of course when she had openly expressed her feelings towards him. It was a welcome distraction from the horrible situation of her own past as a member of Pure.

The memories of what she had done as a True Hannya were quickly coming back to her, yet the purple glow started to dim from her eyes and her physical form returned to her regular human self. Layla looked down on herself to check for any injuries. Her own barrier Qi had shattered from Quinn's attack, even before she had hit the wall, yet she still felt fine, making her wonder how exactly he had achieved such a feat.

At the same time, Raten smashed his way out of the wall, chunks of dirt falling to the ground. When nearly all of it had fallen off the Demi-god tier beast's true form was visible underneath the dirt, and it was much more human than the others would have thought.

Its original body was a dark brown in colour, with parts of its flesh having parts of earth sticking out from it. The earth still remaining on the beast was more a white colour, compared to the mud it was covered in. With a closer look it appears the parts were stone. When looking at the head of the beast, this too was all a white stone in colour. They were clumped together giving the beast an appearance that it had white spikes for hair.

'Damn that kid! How long have I been out of it, for him to have grown this strong? This new body is stronger than anything I have ever felt, so how did he just take away my powers?' Raten wondered, displeasure on his face. He had ended up close to where Fex and the others were.

Sil was the first to approach his beast-like form, and just smiled at him like a kid seeing the dog his parents had bought him for Christmas. The Earthborn soldiers didn't understand what was going on and were ready for another battle to break out at any moment between the beast and the monstrous body from the Blade Family, but instead they saw Sil bawling.

"I'm sorry! I'm so sorry! Because of me, everything that happened to you for so long... it's all my fault." Sil apologised in between sobs, his face covered in tears that just wouldn't stop falling.

"Damn it, shut up!" Raten berated him, as he raised his hand intending to flick the other's forehead, but then, seemingly recalling the power of this body, he slowly put it down again. "This might not be a human body, but this whole beast thing is pretty cool. I'm just glad I don't have to share with you or that loser anymore, so don't worry about it!"

There was still confusion amongst the Earthborn group, but there was one clear difference now, it was the fact that although the beast could communicate with them before, it was doing so perfectly. Raten still had slight trouble with certain words, since his throat wasn't really designed to produce those sounds, making it seem as if he had an accent.

With Sil's current state, he wouldn't be able to fight anytime soon. Raten looked ahead and thought that there was no longer a need for him to get involved. Since Quinn had been able to deal with three of them at once, he had everything under control.

A few seconds later Layla had also returned to the group, her gaze pointed downward, trying to find the right words to apologise for what had happened. Her body wasn't as sore as when she had fought against Agent 11 earlier, however Layla's energy was at an all-time low. Her vampire powers were somewhat still active, but she had trouble feeling any Qi whatsoever.

"I liked your other look more." Raten commented sheepishly. It was somewhat awkward for all of them all to have a Demi-god tier beast so close to them and to listen to it make quips as if it was part of the group, but it was just something they had to get used to.

Layla ignored Raten's remark and made her way to Longblade. His eyes were still open, the Colonel had even the power left to lift his head and he had eagerly spectated the wild battle.

"You did a...great job." The military man praised her with a hint of a smile on his face.

Layla blushed at this sudden compliment, but focused on treating Longblade's wounds. Fex had done some work on him by wrapping up certain parts with his string to stop the blood flow and had also applied pressure to the wound, but it wouldn't be enough. They didn't know how much longer they would be staying in the cave before they could receive help from above.

'I'll need to transform into my third form, and then I can use the green fire to heal it.' Layla thought, but when she was about to recall some of her bad memories, her

mind blanked out. This was the first time something like this had happened, yet her hand was shaking as if she was scared by something.

It took her a moment to realise why she might have subconsciously stopped herself from transforming. 'Will I change into the fourth form again if it becomes too much?' Layla wondered, biting on her bottom lip.

The girl took some deep breaths and decided to trust in herself and that even if something were to happen, with Quinn present, he would be able to stop her. Instead of using her own thoughts Layla chose to consume the negative emotions of those around her.

For one there was Longblade who, despite his stoic outer appearance, was afraid that he might not be able to make it out alive. She also took in the feelings of fear towards Raten that the Earthborn group had to varying degrees.

With all of that combined Layla felt that she had enough energy to change into her third form. Some gave her some cautious looks as they watched her transform, especially when she summoned the green fire, however it softened as soon as they saw the effect on Longblade's wounds. It didn't look to be more powerful than the healing abilities most had seen, but it was enough to ensure the Corporal would make it out alive as long as there were no other complications.

During this fight, she could tell that everything inside her was spent. That would be the last time she could transform, all her energy was spent, but it was okay because he was there. Now there was only one thing that was left for them all to do, as they stared towards the centre.

Quinn had yet to make a single step from where he stood, only going down on one knee. What the others didn't realise was that he was actually in incredible pain.

'I made sure to kick Agent 2 away and the others haven't attacked me either, so why does it feel like my whole body is suffering from Qi? Is there some type of problem?' Quinn tried to make sense of his body's condition, as he concentrated and took a look inside.

It didn't take long for him to figure out just what was happening and it was certainly a strange thing to say the least. It had taken Quinn some time to absorb some of the crystals that he had found, but with each one he had felt the ball of Qi inside his body expand ever so slightly. He was growing with strength making him not quite the same as he was before.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1174: Too much Qi (2)

### Chapter 1174 Too mu Chapter Qi Part 2

The energy he could control, the amount of Qi his body had, had been getting larger by the second. This was all due to the beast crystal he could now absorb with the power of the gauntlet. At the time the energy he had gained when using the active skill on the dragon only had a temporary effect on him, so he was unsure if it would be the same with the crystals. However, if he was to meet Agent 2 and the rest again, there would be a need to have a stronger Qi output.

In the middle of absorbing the crystal though he had to stop. The only reason he had stopped was because his bond had made him aware that something had happened to Layla. Placing the rest of the crystal in his system he had rushed off towards the battle.

Quinn had arrived just before the three had gone all out. Aware that he had to stop their suicidal charge, he had appeared in the middle, and given them a taste of his improved Qi. Of course he had paid attention to not overdo it for Layla and the humanoid beast, not really caring about Agent 2's fate. The power was far greater than he had imagined, that just using the first and second stage, it acted more like a powerful third stage of Qi, hitting their bodies so strongly. He had never expected it to work so great, but that was wherein the problem was.

Quinn hadn't really considered the consequences of his actions and had created an imbalance. His body's Qi was overflowing with power, but unfortunately this had started to affect the red vampire energy inside of him. Before, he had been able to use the Qi to enhance his vampire powers, but now one was far stronger than the other and it seemed to be trying to either expel or absorb the other type.

'I need to lower my Qi output. Around seventy percent should be fine, without affecting my body too much, but then that also means I won't be able to make use of my power without experiencing this live torture. I need to find a way to fix this problem in the future. Vincent, is there a way to increase my vampire energy in a short period of time?'

'Although I understand your train of thought, Quinn, a body can only hold so much power. I'm afraid if you intend to recklessly consume beast crystals and increase your vampire powers, your own body will tear apart.' Vincent cautioned. 'You might be a Vampire Lord, but that makes you powerful, NOT invincible. Even you should have limits. If you push them too hard, your current pain might just end up a joke in comparison.'

Quinn could follow Vincent's logic, but he hadn't forgotten the system's Quest. There appeared to be something beyond a Vampire Lord and at least his system was convinced Quinn had a way to become whatever that was. Maybe that new

form could hold the creator body, or pushing his body was the way to that next evolution.

Agent 2 had been unable to get up on his own. The other Pure agents had to pull him out. Their leader's skin was no longer red as the fourth stage of Qi seemed to have come to an end.

Looking in front of him at the one who had appeared out of nowhere, he recognised the Cursed faction leader. Agent 2's anger only grew at this. He touched his face that was still hurting from the burns he had suffered. The one responsible for such an injury that would likely never heal, was sitting in the distance peacefully, apparently helping Longblade recover.

"So, Pure is the only one to suffer a loss here?" Agent 2 asked nobody in particular as he placed his hand on one of his subordinates who had helped him out. The poor man held on to his superior's hand and begged the single digit Agent to let go.

He could feel his energy being sucked out. He began visibly aging, his skin and muscles were losing their vitality, his hair was whitening until he eventually fell to the floor, his body lifeless, like a dried out corpse.

Before any of the Pure Agents could flee, Agent 2 grabbed on to the next one.

"You want me to win, right? Then this is the sacrifice we must make. Pure thanks you for your service. I shall make sure that you will be hailed as heroes back at the base." Agent 2 solemnly promised.

Not everyone seemed too willing, but with each one consumed their leader finished the process in a faster time. With the Qi of all of them Agent 2 felt stronger than he had ever done before. If he were to make an estimate his strength had at least doubled from his peak performance. It was a strange phenomena but with each heartbeat in Agent 2 had, everyone could feel the wave of energy leave him.

'This energy level is beyond Chris, but what is going on?' Quinn thought.

Agent 2's look of triumph had just as quickly changed to one of horror.

Quinn was still in the middle of trying to balance his energy, as he dispelled some of the excess Qi that had spilled from his Qi centre, and was now trying to allow the vampire energy to balance itself like before. He was just about to finish, but he was now faced with this.

Then something strange started to happen.

Agent 2 eyes started to bulge, getting bigger by the second. His muscles started to go out of place, with his right arm becoming twice the size of his left.

"What is..." Agent 2 needed a bit to understand what was happening, but once he finally became aware of the situation, he started to laugh maniacally. "So that's

why Zero told us to never use this. My body can't handle all of their energy. My only regret is not being able to enjoy this a little longer, but all of you will have to accompany me to hell!!" Agent 2 shouted.

Sensing the energy inside, Quinn had an idea of exactly what was happening. This should be what Vincent had meant when he had warned him about going over his limit. The Pure leader's body couldn't contain all of this Qi as he was a human at the end of the day. His attempt to go into the fourth stage had just made the situation exponentially worse and all of that Qi was about to explode.

"Quinn!" Longblade shouted, no longer caring about keeping up appearances. The next second his blade was being chucked over to the Cursed faction leader, who instinctively grabbed onto it but when he saw it was a sword he wondered what exactly the man wanted him to do with it?

However, as soon as he touched the sword, Quinn realised that his Qi was gone. It didn't feel like his energy was being consumed by the sword, just where Quinn's hand was touching the sword no Qi could be produced as if he never had the ability to use it in the first place.

"Use it!" Longblade screamed.

Agent 2 had already ballooned up to almost twice his size. It was obvious that an explosion was imminent, so Quinn had to act fast. His shadows alone couldn't contain a blast at this magnitude. Using the shadow he changed the armour on his body to the wolf set.

Fortunately the cooldown period was over.

[Activate skill]

[Nitro accelerate]

With all his stats focusing on speed, there was no need to focus on skill. Quinn rushed forward and drew the blade. Using his speed and power, the weapon sliced through the balloon man like a knife through hot butter and in doing so, the Qi was being negated, yet it seemed to only affect the places the sword itself cut.

'Faster, faster, I have to keep cutting him until all of the Qi is gone!' Quinn hyped himself up, as he continued to slash at him as if he was carving out a pumpkin. The others watching couldn't believe what they were seeing, heck some couldn't even perceive what was happening. They just noticed the newcomer turn into a blur and the bloated man started to disappear.

Quinn continued to slice, not letting up, consuming every bit of Qi energy he could find until eventually the time on his active skill for his armor set had run out. Now in front of him, there was practically nothing, but as Quinn turned around huffing

and puffing his silver armour was now mostly scarlett, covered in the late Agent 2's blood.

Seeing this sight, even with a world full of abilities, people who had superior powers and having learned of vampires, they felt like they were looking at some type of god of war. Quinn looked at the sword in his hand. He couldn't believe such a thing would have a skill to dispel Qi.

'Huh?' Quinn was surprised, curious as to what level the sword was at and what its powers really were. Now that he had time he used his Inspect skill on it.

[Current Quest line active]

[Learning more about the Talen family]

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1175: A grand return

The sounds of alarm sounded out from the lab-like facility, informing the rest of the Shelter that something was going on. Logan and the humanoid beast stood side by side, aware that their situation was getting worse by the second.

'The army still has a gripe with the Cursed faction, so they will use this incident against us. I can't let them catch me on top of that, otherwise everything will be against us.' Logan analysed his situation.

Although Logan's training meant he was more skilled than the average soldier now, getting out of a military place with countless ability users, especially without killing or injuring any of them too much would pose quite the problem. He was just glad that the beast by his side seemed to agree that they had to work together.

The first one to attack was one of the soldiers in the front by using his telekinesis ability to throw a heavy black ball, a beast weapon, towards the duo. Lifting up his Dalki arm, Logan easily grabbed the ball, stopping its rotation without breaking a sweat.

"Remember, you were the ones who attacked first without giving me any chance to explain myself." Logan stated as he looked at his spiders that had been recording the whole situation. "Everything I do now, is just an act of self-defense."

Taking a small step back and pivoting his other foot, he pitched the ball back at a speed faster than the telekinesis user had chucked it at them. At that moment, another soldier came forward, this one with a hardening ability, that he used to intercept the ball. The force behind it made him slide a few feet back, but otherwise he remained unharmed.

Logan had used this time to inform his partner in crime about his plan. A little spider had hopped on to the beast's shoulder, and had whispered a few words to it through its microphone. At the same time Logan had summoned many of the spiders to his position and was covering his whole body in a defensive armour as the soldiers came towards them firing off their abilities and drawing their bladed beast weapons

The humanoid beast by his side was quick and light on its feet thanks to its wind-like powers. It was able to move around the place avoiding the attacks, and was great at utilising Logan's suggested hit and run strategy. Even better for them, the majority of the soldiers had prioritized the beast, aware of its importance to the scientist.

However, there were still some that focused on Logan. With his whole body covered in a special defence gear he was confident in fighting off that number. His experience fighting against Brock several times turned out to be very helpful, as Logan was getting better at predicting their next moves, avoiding their strikes.

When the opportunity presented itself, he grabbed one of the soldiers with his Dalki hand. Logan didn't like doing this, but his situation wasn't exactly one where he could abstain from using such dirty tactics. Since they were allies the other soldiers hesitated attacking Logan and his human body shield.

Unsure what to do, some of them circled around him, attempting to attack him from multiple sides, hopefully rescuing his hostage as well. Alas, Logan would summon his laser firing towards them to incapacitate them. This made the soldiers freeze up, as they were unsure what to do.

Although busy with his own set of soldiers, the spiders kept Logan up to date in regards to the beast's situation. Two thirds of the soldiers had gone after it and had managed to somewhat trap it at the back of the room.

"Now!" Logan shouted into his helmet that was covering his head, and the little spider forwarded it to the beast. Putting their plan into motion, the Cursed faction member chucked the one he had held in his arm at the group of soldiers in front of him to create an opening. His suit started to change from the defensive type to the speed type starting with his feet.

Running ahead, Logan had a little surprise for them all. Using his soul weapon, he turned some of the terminals into little Mech soldiers of his own to hold them back. At the same time the giant tubes and machine from above were attacking them all.

It came as a complete shock and they were unaware if there were people piloting these little Mechs. Using this moment of confusion the beast used its wind powers to propel itself on to the side of the wall again. Using its strong powerful legs it pushed itself off the wall and started to spin.

Both the beast and Logan were headed off in the same direction, towards the exit.

They had managed to reach the exit, and when turning around they could see all the soldiers that were mostly still at the back of the room. This had been part of Logan's plan all along. Perhaps they could have lasted against the soldiers for a while with their skills, but fighting so many of them at once they were bound to lose, and being chased around the facility wasn't a good idea either.

Placing his hand on the terminal, the door started to close. A few soldiers with a speed ability ran around the small mechs that Logan had built, but the King tier humanoid beast dealt with them by firing off strikes of air. On a closer look it looked to be a little different to just a person having a wind ability.

With its beast -like body, being a humanoid and elemental type, it had all the traits of growing into something strong if it continued to evolve up the ranks.

The door eventually closed, and Logan had naturally changed the access code.

"It will be a long time until they get out of that one, but I'm sure there will be others outside and inside this place trying to get to us." Logan said.

Fortunately, he had left behind some spiders in the hallways of each floor, allowing him to keep an eye on how many people were moving where, when and how. At the time, Logan had been too busy fighting the King tier beast so he failed to notice the soldiers who had entered the room first, but now he could use half his screen to observe the situation.

"We should escape into the tunnel. I've overheard those humans speak about another one of our kind that has escaped. He is supposed to be far stronger than me and seems to be on his way to reach his next form." The beast shared its opinion.

Hearing this, Logan could only assume that this beast was talking about the formerly Legendary tier beast that had evolved and escaped. Did the two of them know each other? It wouldn't surprise Logan too much if the scientists had brought both types together to see how they would react.

"My team should currently be looking for him. Maybe we should just find a place to hide until we can contact them?" Logan suggested. He didn't like going into the tunnels, as he didn't have enough information on them. There was also the possibility of them missing Quinn and the others.

Even though the beast trusted him for now, Logan wasn't sure how long it would take for him to realise that it wasn't one of its kind. For now they remained in a tough situation together, so he was hoping the beast would agree after seeing the success of his last plan.

Getting out of the facility wasn't exactly the problem with the use of Logan's spiders and the beat's wind ability. There were a few times where they had to move through a certain area with great speed, and the beast helped Logan by taking him on his back and rushing through some areas. At the same time, Logan was able to slow down those in the facility, not just by watching them, but messing with their systems locking them in certain rooms.

Eventually, they exited through an emergency door and headed towards where Logan thought Fex would be, on the roof of the main military base. Unfortunately, Fex was nowhere to be seen, only the remains of the coffin, yet without Agent 11. On top of that, although the soldiers seemed to be busy dealing with them at first, they soon were moving towards a particular station for some reason.

"The one you mentioned doesn't seem to be here. It might be better for us to part ways here." The beast said, ready to move out. "While the humans are distracted I will be able to escape easily."

"Wait!" Logan shouted, as he looked in the distance and could see it. Using his helmet, he zoomed in a distance to see what was happening, and that's when he could see Quinn, Longblade and all the others exiting one of the tubes.

The beasts wondering what was going on, stood on the edge and looked out. It had great eyesight and could exactly see what the commotion was. Then the next thing that happened had shocked them both, for after the two of them had come out, a mud like humanoid figure came out after all of them.

Seeing this, the humanoid King tier beast realised that he would have to change its plans, while Logan was smiling on the inside. It looked like they had succeeded.

Quinn and the others had arrived at the transportation area. They were in the first vehicle while at the back the Mechs were following them being transported on some type of rail system. As long as the robots feet weren't injured, they could attach themselves to the rails and travel upward as well.

Seeing the vehicle and through the glass who was in it. All the soldiers started to cheer thinking that they had successfully captured the beast. For the time being, Fex had tied up the beast with his string, so the Earthborn group would believe they had captured the beast. Letting Raten accompany them without it, would just be a recipe for disaster.

Exiting from the place, the people cheered, yet Longblade was quickly taken away to be treated. Just as they were about to take Longblade away, he gestured for Quinn to come over.

"We will have a meeting about your request and what you plan to do with the Demi-god tier beast when I am back up and running. It shouldn't be too long, but in the meantime Rafer will look after you."

When their group stepped off from the transportation vehicle though, all of a sudden a group of soldiers surrounded them. The Sergeant who had been left in command drew his weapon towards the Cursed faction.

"What is this crap?!" Raten grumbled dissatisfied. "What's the point of tying me up, if they were going to attack us anyway?"

"Sergeant Till, what is the meaning of this!" Rafer asked. "Did you not hear what Colonel Longblade just said? I am the one in charge of them until he gets better. Put your weapons down and explain yourself at once!"

"No can do, Sir!" Till refused to comply. "Not until we figure out why one of their own broke into our research facility and freed that special beast we had left. Worst of all, we have reports claiming that the one responsible had displayed traits similar to a Dalki."

"We already know the V and the Dalki are working together, so this case seems no different! They are the ones who have killed Head General Innu! They could be doing the same to us right after helping complete this task!"

From the sounds of it, everyone could tell that the person that had been described could only be Logan. They were wondering what exactly had happened while they were away.

"Don't point your swords at my brother! you will regret it!" Sil shouted at the men who were coming in close.

This comment only worsened the already hostile situation. Quinn had been looking forward to catching a break after having nearly been blown to bits. Who could have imagined that he would have to sort out such a situation before he could even take a single step on the surface.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1176: A secret deal

Rafer could actually see the fear in his fellow soldiers' eyes, however Longblade had entrusted him with the Cursed faction's safety while in their base. No one had expected Pure to value the humanoid Demi-god tier beast to the point they had sent out their second strongest fighter. Without the Cursed faction's help, Longblade and all of them would have perished, instead of only sustaining a few injuries.

"I understand all your worries, but Colonel Longblade is still the highest ranked soldier and leader of this base! The injuries he received were not from anyone of the Cursed faction. In fact, all of us owe our lives to them!" Rafer explained to Sergeant Till, as he looked back at the Demi-god tier beast and Sil, wishing the young boy had kept his mouth shut.

He was still unsure what exactly had happened to the Demi-god tier beast for it to cooperate with them, as not much had been explained to the Earthborn group. From what little they had told him, it appeared that after subduing it, that Boy named Shiro had tamed it with an ability similar to Mona's.

On top of that, he was more worried about the soldiers pointing their weapons at Sil and Raten. If they had seen how easily the boy had subdued the beast, they wouldn't be so brazen.

"If you are truly afraid about their intentions, I shall accompany the members of the Cursed faction to a safe house for the time being. They have bravely fought against not only the Demi-god tier beast, but have also defeated Pure. The least we can do is thank them by allowing them to rest! Me and my team will keep a watch on them until the Colonel has recovered. Any objections, SERGEANT Till?"

Till looked at Rafer for a few seconds, and at those from the Cursed faction. As someone who had been very loyal to Innu, he had shared his idol's suspicions in regards to the Cursed faction. After learning they had broken into the lab he had actually been worried that something had happened below as well.

However, as he hadn't been there, he had to take Rafer's word for it. At least it was true that the Colonel had come back alive. "...fine, but the Demi-god tier beast has to be returned to the facility until we get to the bottom of this whole mess!"

"No!" Sil immediately stood in front of the still tied humanoid beast. "He stays with us. If any of you try to take him away, I will make you pay!"

Some of the soldiers smirked at his threat. How could one person possibly stop them all, but the concerned look on Rafters and Jay's face that had seen what happened said it all.

"The first Mech squad will also guard the safe house. If the Demi-gods tier beast stays with them, you will have my men ready to protect the place. This should be enough, right?" Avion intervened, also on the behalf of Quinn and the others.

With a few high ranking members vouching for the Cursed faction it was getting harder and harder for Till to refuse, without turning this into a personal matter. He thought at least one of the men that had gone down with them would be on his side, especially Jay who didn't trust the Cursed as much as he did.

'Just what happened down there for them to put so much trust in this group?' He wondered.

"... take them all to the safe house. They will be on watch at all times until Longblade is ready." Till ordered, not hiding his frustration about the outcome of this situation.

The group was safely being escorted to the safe house, and Rafer and the others made sure to surround the exhausted members of the Cursed faction, acting as a sort of buffer to prevent anyone from doing anything stupid.

Many of the guards on duty didn't exactly trust them and Rafer wanted to prevent anyone from escalating this entire situation. Whatever Quinn and the others might be, it was clear to him that they were on the same side as them. Instead of the infighting the soldiers should focus on the war against the Dalki in his opinion.

Although it was referred to as a safe house, that place had originally been designed to detain soldiers who had gone too far. As such, it was more like a report prison, although it could also be used to capture any members of Pure.

Entering the place wasn't as bad as they had initially thought. There was a large room that would have been able to fit around thirty or so people inside. There was also a kitchen with working water inside and several rooms for them to sleep in. The only thing was, the place didn't have any form of entertainment, or windows for that matter.

The entrance was the only way in and out, a really secure and sturdy door with several guards placed in front.

"Do they really think this place can hold us if the whole thing isn't made for glathrium? I mean even if we couldn't destroy the door, we could just break some of the walls instead." Fex said, still frustrated at the kind of welcome they had received after saving everyone's butt. ="Let's just wait things out. Logan must have had his reasons for doing what he did, no need to add fuel to the fire."

However, Till had left twenty of his own foot soldiers as guards. The soldiers had the whole building complex surrounded on all ends. As for Avion's Mech team, other than their leader, everyone else got replaced so his guys could get some rest,

but only after collecting their missing teammate that was found safely in the hanger.

Not wanting to do anything else, Quinn decided they would wait for Longblade to wake up. In the meantime they would discuss what exactly would happen between them.

"Come on get me out of these damn things!" Raten demanded, as he was swinging his body around. Currently he was in his mud like form, since they had learnt that the mud was actually what the beast powers allowed him to control. His real body would avoid being hurt and he could constantly replace the mud, while his true body was his weak point underneath.

"Oh please, we all know you could break out of it yourself!" Fex argued, but he undid the strong binding, knowing full well how strong the beast was from when he had fought it for a few seconds.

"Fex, what exactly were you doing down there in the first place, weren't you meant to stay with this guy?" Shiro asked, pointing at Agent 11 who was in the corner still wriggling about.

Unless there had been any stragglers, Agent 11 was now the sole survivor after Agent 2 had consumed the rest. Due to him being wrapped up like the Demi-god beast they had just assumed he was part of the Cursed faction along with them.

The one perplexed by everything going on was Nathan. He wasn't a true member of the Cursed faction but for the time being was being treated as one, and he found it odd how all of these people acted with each other. So he just stood at the back on his own and let the situation play out.

'How, how do these people get along with each other and get things done?' Nathan wondered.

Fex went on to tell his tale of how he had stolen a Mech from the others in order to go down underground, and then went on to explain his battle with the beasts. Although Fex had been unable to get any information out from the double digit Agent, at least they still had a hold of him which was the good thing about this story.

"It was a good thing you saved Avion's life. After what Logan did, we are going to need all the people we can on our side to solve this diplomatically." Layla said.

"Layla, I wanted to ask, what the hell happened to you back then? I never knew you were so strong. If I hadn't seen it myself I would have never believed you could fight the second strongest Pure Agent toe to toe. Heck, I doubt I could do that even with a puppet. Has your subclass always been this strong?" Fex excitedly spoke.

Quinn was also inclined to learn more about what exactly had happened to her. Layla started to explain, nervously rubbing her arm up and down as if she didn't really want to recall such a situation.

"Quinn told me that my body has a lot more Qi than is usual. I just haven't figured out how to access and use most of it. However, when I was in that form, it had come to me naturally. But... I don't know if I can do it again. I'm not even sure I want to use it again. I-I wasn't really myself and I'm afraid I could hurt any of you, if I lose control again."

Fex assured her that it surely just was something she had to get used to. The vampire then went on to describe in great detail to Quinn just how amazing and crucial Layla had been in the fight against Pure, since she seemed to have downplayed her importance. Hearing it all Quinn was quite surprised, this new form was able to match Agent 2 when he hadn't been able to before his boost.

It seems like her mother really had pulled through at the end. After the discussion between them had died down and they had shared all of their experiences, Quinn decided to get in contact with the one person that could shed some light on why they were in this mess in the first place, Logan.

Through the mask it didn't take long for them to get an answer either.

"Logan, what happened and where are you currently?" Quinn asked.

"Don't worry, I'm safe. It looks like the soldiers have stopped actively looking for us, and have started to just patrol around the facility. Quinn, I apologise for all the trouble I have caused you. However I think I can fix this, I have already contacted Sam about the situation, and he is currently doing everything he can to get you out of the situation." Logan explained.

Honestly, Quinn wasn't too worried about their situation. From what he had gathered Longblade was a good person, so Quinn thought they would be understanding about a few things.

"I need to tell you some matters that have happened though, at the moment, we are observing your location."

Paying attention, Quinn focused on the word 'We', the only person that wasn't here was Logan, so who could be the other one?

Logan then went on to recount his experience from the moment they had split up, and how the humanoid King tier beast, who had wished to save his comrade was currently trapped with him. It certainly was a strange and difficult position to be in, but not the worst one.

"I think we can do something about it. Make sure to remain hidden and we will meet up with you guys at midnight. Let's meet outside the Shelter west from here, I will contact you later for more details." Quinn said having come up with a plan.

He didn't quite want to tell the others what he had planned to do yet, but just explained to Raten, Shiro, and Sil that they would be leaving this place, around midnight and for them to get ready.

During this time, the group was so relaxed that they decided to get some nice shut eye for the rest of the night. All of them had worked hard, however, Shiro had approached Quinn who was up against the wall in the corner of the room looking at everyone.

"Quinn, I need to talk to you. I know we're going to have a meeting with Longblade and the others but I think it's important for you to know this before then." Shiro said with a concerned look on his face. He stared in the direction of where Raten was in his beast form, talking to Sil as the two of them caught up.

Quinn didn't really have much in common with Raten, he hardly even knew who he was, the one he was more concerned about bringing back had always been Vorden. Now knowing that Logan was with another humanoid beast, although a weaker one they could bring him back as well.

"Go ahead." Quinn asked.

Shiro gulped before replying.

"Raten isn't alone in the body. The situation is similar to how it had been with Sil, only that the beast is still active in its body right now. It can take over Raten whenever it wants to. The only reason why it hasn't so far, is because I struck a deal with It. I'm sorry, I didn't ask you beforehand, but I kinda promised the beast we would do something for it." Shiro smiled nervously.

Judging by the look on Shiro's face, this deal wasn't anything simple.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1177: Finally Returned

After listening to the content of the deal Shiro and the Demi-god tier beast had made, Quinn didn't consider it to be as bad as the other had made it out to be. In a way, they might even be able to use this information to strike a deal with the humanoid King tier beast.

"Thank you for letting me know, and don't stress yourself too much about it. I believe we can solve the situation. It just means that I might need to put in a special request to someone." Quinn replied with a smile, which calmed Shiro's initial worries.

After all, if they were unable to complete the request, Shiro was sure that the beast would eventually end up rebelling, and then they would have to go through the same mess they had just been through all over again.

Soon, the others started to fall asleep one by one. Quinn noticed that every sixty minutes one soldier would open the door and check in on them. From the looks of discomfort, they seemed to belong to Sergeant Till. Fortunately, they appeared to have been instructed not to stir up any trouble, so after confirming that everyone was still inside they would quickly leave.

After nightfall, this patrol had changed to every two hours

As long as they came back within that time limit, preferably within one hour, in case they would come back earlier, there should be no problem. There was still some time before Quinn needed to leave, and he started to think back, back to when he had used the Inspect skill on the strange sword that belonged to Longblade.

After the Quest information had popped up, Quinn had taken a closer look at the sword details, yet he was unable to find anything too strange about it. The most prominent thing had been the marking on the sword of a singular large eye with wings.

Unfortunately, his system hadn't revealed anything else. Still, it was the first real hint he had discovered. Another strange thing was that the system hadn't even assigned the sword a tier ranking. Back when Longblade had gifted him the indestructible katana weapon, he had done so because he had claimed to have a weapon of a similar tier that suited him better.

Quinn was sure that he had been talking about this blade. Based on its strength and strong passive skill, Longblade must have assumed it to be of at least that tier. Its sharpness was definitely not worse than the indestructible katana.

'I wonder if something would happen if I took the sword to that tablet. That is where I got the quest in the first place. Maybe the voice could give me some information on the sword. When using Inspect, it didn't give me any information on

what it's ability was either, but it didn't just stop qi, it also stopped me from producing my shadow as well.'

While having the sword temporarily in his position, Quinn had attempted to use his shadow powers on the weapon as well, but it had failed. It couldn't even be stored in his dimensional space, it was as if the sword had the ability to negate everything, including Qi, abilities and perhaps even more.

Quinn slightly regretted having handed the blade back to its owner. Longblade had already given him a valuable gift, so it would have been strange to keep it. Still, once he was in a better state of mind, perhaps he would allow Quinn to borrow it, if he couldn't provide him with more information on it, at last.

'Damn, I'm going to be asking him for far too many favours at this rate if I ask for the sword as well. Maybe we can swap?' Quinn thought.

The last thing that Quinn had forgotten about was the quest reward, something he had received for defeating agent 2. He had received the usual level up, with a stat point but there was one addition to the skill that he didn't expect.

[Your ability to store Qi has increased]

[The amount of Qi in your body has permanently increased]

It was strange but he could tell that the system had granted the request almost immediately. For the extra energy his body had felt from absorbing the crystals now felt a part of him. However, there still seemed to be an imbalance. It felt more like the extra energy for the crystals would have disappeared if it was not for the quest reward.

In the middle of his thoughts, another soldier came to check up on them, doing his best to not disturb anyone's sleep, which was surprisingly considerate. They waited for the guard to come in and do his usual head check count, and when it was over, it was time for them to leave.

Raten in his beast body, Sil and lastly Shiro would accompany Quinn during his meeting with Logan.

Using shadow travel, everyone was able to hop in, and they could travel under the walls and head to their destination. The good thing was, with it being night time, it was next to impossible for anyone to spot the Shadow travel that would move across the ground.

They traveled at a fast pace through the Shelter walls, and when they were a distance away where they couldn't be seen by the others, Quinn connected with Logan to check where he was. The other was located behind a mud hill in the west direction.

Since they couldn't fall through the sinkholes it was easy enough to reach. Quinn imagined that Logan was able to cope with the tricky terrain as long as the beast with him was helping. Eventually Quinn spotted the mud like hill, it was far smaller than the one the shelter was placed on, but it was enough to give them cover, and when going around the hill, they could see Logan standing underneath it's shade, with a dark coloured beast.

Popping out of the shadow, all of them came out at once, with Quinn at the front in case the humanoid beast would suddenly attack. Sil was also staying close to Shiro. After what he had learned, there was always the chance that Raten could be taken control of and they would be suffering from a pincer-like attack.

"Um it's nice for everyone to meet, I guess?" Quinn awkwardly said, staring at the other humanoid beast.

"Are these the comrades that you spoke of?" The King tier beast asked Logan as he sniffed. "They seem to be human... for the most part."

It was clear that there was a lot of explaining ahead of them, but Quinn was glad that the beast hadn't outright been hostile at their appearance. Before any of them could speak up, the Demi-god tier beast stepped forward. Just from the way it walked, Quinn could tell that the one in charge was no longer Raten.

The humanoid beast then leant forward to the side of the king tiers ear, and the two of them stood aside, conversing in hushed tones, to prevent the 'humans' to listen in.

However, they were unaware just how good Quinn's hearing was. He noted with interest that the two of them were actually conversing in the human language. When thinking about it, it made sense since the way normal beasts communicated shouldn't be too suited to explain more complicated things and it wasn't exactly a language, they were too primitive for that.

Since they both had learnt this language they could talk to each other more freely. As for what they were talking about, it was the special deal that Shiro had made with the Demi-god tier beast. It seemed like Shiro had also already explained that they had another friend that they wished to save and needed the body of another humanoid beast.

After hearing everything from someone it trusted, the King tier beast looked over at Quinn.

"I understand that you are the leader of all these people here?" It addressed Quinn, who merely nodded. "If you can really fulfill that promise, then I shall agree to host someone else in my body for as long as you need to. The lives of too many have already been sacrificed in hopes of us stopping the humans."

"It is clear to me that even if we grow strong enough to fend off the ones already here, more of your kind will just come in. They will just send more and stronger reinforcements to capture or kill us. If you have the power to break the cycle then I ask you to do so. In return for helping us you will have our bodies."

"If I do not, then you are free to have your bodies back." Quinn answered immediately.

With the agreement between them all having been made. It was time to get to work. Shiro stood there placing his hand on Sil's and the King tier beasts head. It was silent for a while. Until one person started to complain about who had come back.

"Wait a second. Did that beast just agree on the spot, so they don't have to have a massive fight, risking their life in that dreaded place?! What sort of bullshit is this!" Raten complained.

In the middle of his complaints, Shiro was doing his part, and looking at the beast's eyes, they were no longer as fierce as before, instead they started to water up slowly.

"It's been a long time since I last saw you."

"Welcome back, Vorden. It's good to see you again."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1178: Consuming beast crystals

The bond between Vorden and Quinn couldn't be described by mere words. The second they saw each other, memories started to flood both of their minds of the days they spent with each other. Vorden, one of Quinn's first friends. Who had always been by his side. Even when finding out he was a V, when he was betrayed by another close friend of his, Vorden was always there.

It felt strange when he was gone, especially since he was unable to say any last words. Which was why Quinn was adamant that they would bring him back one day. There were very few people that Quinn had this close of a bond with.

Soon another approached Vorden, one who had missed him dearly. It was none other than Sil. Who grabbed Vorden's hand and fell to his knees.

"Vorden!" Sil let out almost a shrieking sound as the tears came out running down his face. It wasn't too long ago that he had been crying over another.

'Is it just me, or is he crying more over Vorden than me?' Raten thought. 'Not that I care anyway.'

There was one person who felt a little left out, and that was Shiro. Sure he was happy that Sil and Quinn had gotten their long lost friends back, but he couldn't feel the same happiness as they did.

"Thank you," Quinn said to Shiro while Sil and Vorden had their own little catch up. "Without you, none of this would have been possible. Remember that you brought us all back together. You have helped out the Cursed faction so much in the little time you have been here."

Shiro wanted to hide his expression from Quinn, looking at the ground, his face full of smiles. He had finally returned the favour back to both of them, for saving him from the cruel life he had experienced at school.

Once all of the initial emotions were out of the way, the group sat down as there was quite a bit of catching up. Even Shio was interested, and since Shiro had already helped them out so much, Quinn wasn't shy about revealing specific details to him about the vampire world out there.

Despite at any time being able to refuse to help or run away from the situation, Shiro had helped every single time. There was a bond of trust that had been built up between them all. It was interesting to Shiro to know that Quinn was a leader of not just the human world but also the vampire world.

It was expected with how powerful a person he was, but learning that there was a whole planet filled with a different hierarchy system and society was quite

amazing. Some things simply went over his head, but he was trying his best to follow.

When Quinn started to talk about Blade Island, Hilston and all the others, both Raten and Vorden were listening intensely. They even clenched fists in anger when learning of the part where Hilston had attacked them all.

Finally, when the tales of everything that had happened were over, the two boys looked over at Sil.

"You actually did that much, you little runt!" Raten said.

"I think what Raten is trying to say is, it seems like you have grown, and you did a lot to help others even without us," Vorden replied.

It was strange for both of them. They had talked to Sil so much inside of his mind, and for them to be able to communicate with each other in the open like so, was just strange.

"What is the plan for now?" Logan asked, noting that they had already used up almost an hour of the time they had left.

Vorden started to attempt to use his body to some type of degree as he wasn't quite used to it, but one thing was clear, that he and Raten no longer had the ability to copy other abilities. Even the beast powers were a little strange for them to use.

"Will you be able to eventually learn?" Quinn asked.

"My beast says that he will be happy to guide me on how to use the body," Vorden said. "The beast seems like a cool guy, my style."

Raten didn't say anything, but they had seen he had adapted quite well to his beast, already knowing how to use its body, perhaps even better than the beast could.

The next thing they wondered was whether Sil could still use and store up to six abilities. It had been a while since he had touched ability users, so most of his abilities had now disappeared.

"I think it should be okay. When Raten left my mind, my powers seemed to all be there, so I can still move the dragon if need be." Sil mentioned knowing that was one of the requests that had been made. It was a thought that Quinn had put off for a while now. Still, he did eventually want to go back to the island, for more reasons than one, even to look at how his little demon tier seedling was doing.

"For now, I think it's safer if the two of you stay outside and just stay out of trouble. Resolving the issue is one thing, but they might ask for a few of their own requests. So if we just say the King tier beast has escaped and there is nothing we can do

about it, it would be better for us. There is one thing I want to check though." Quinn said, as he first looked towards Raten.

[Inspect]

[Demi-god tier Humanoid beast]

[Evolution possible]

[Current Evolution at 9 percent]

'Judging from the beast I saw in the lab, it means that Raten is currently 9 percent of the way there. Into evolving into a demon tier beast. I wonder how many crystals he would need to get to the next stage.' Quinn thought.

[Inspect]

[King tier humanoid beast]

[Evolution possible]

[Current Evolution at 76 percent]

'76 percent. Vorden's tier level is a few steps below even Raten's tier, so perhaps it doesn't need as many crystals?'

"Vorden, would you be up for trying something?" Quinn suggested. Opening up his system, soon crystals started to fall from his hand on the ground, a large many crystals, all different tier levels.

"My crystals!" Raten shouted out, but they soon realised that it was the beast talking and not Raten.

"I'm sorry, but while travelling through the tunnels, I got lost and came across them. I couldn't just leave them there. Anyway, I was wondering Vorden, if you consumed these crystals, I think we could evolve your breasts body to the next stage." Quinn suggested.

The beast that had now taken control over Ratan's body looked at Quinn for a second. He soon realised that many of the crystals had gone missing and was wondering just what was going on.

"I know you wanted to evolve yourself." Quinn glanced at the Demi-god tier beast. "But these crystals wouldn't be even close enough to evolving yourself, while your friend's body is at a closer stage. Helping him level up will be beneficial to us both."

Vorden then picked up the crystals and looked at them, wondering just what he would do with them to help him level up.

"According to the information I obtained from the lab, there are several ways beast can evolve using the energy of the crystal, but for you, the easiest way, for where we are right now, is just to eat them," Logan explained.

"Eat them?" Vorden wondered, looking at the crystals. He soon found himself opening his mouth and chomping down on the crystals. His jaw was many times stronger than that of a human, and the crystal had broken in half. It wasn't as bad as Vorden expected, and soon the whole crystal had been consumed.

After consuming the crystal, a warm feeling was felt in his belly, and energy was rising in him, but soon after the rise in energy, he felt quite weak.

"After consuming the crystals, the beasts seem to go into a type of hibernation as their body changes slightly," Logan explained. Even without the system, he was able to gather information similar to what Quinn had.

After eating a few more crystals, Quinn could see it with his system. Vorden was getting closer to his Evolution until eventually, the Evolution started to begin.

Vorden was transforming from a king tier humanoid beast into an emperor tier humanoid beast.

'If these two can keep evolving up until the demon tier level, the two of them will be the strongest in the Cursed faction.' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1179: The special deal

Vorden in his beast form was wriggling from pain. He was unable to stand on his own two feet and fell to the ground as he let out a silent roar. When using his Inspect skill, Quinn could see that the

[Evolution possible] had turned into an [Evolving].

The scene reminded Quinn of himself whenever he himself would go through different evolutions as a Vampire and how each one would be more painful than the last. Poor Vorden had just been given a body and suddenly he was being tortured.

"Holy shit, this hurts so much. Come on, Tails, this is your body, how about we swap for a moment?" Vorden pleaded amidst his grunting and moaning. The one he was speaking to was naturally the humanoid beast. The answer to that was fairly obvious, so Vorden continued to endure the pain.

"The process takes a while for them to evolve." Logan explained. "I imagine you guys need to get back soon before they find out."

This was the large difference between the two evolutions, time,, and Quinn honestly didn't know how long Vorden would have to suffer. It felt a little strange that they would be parting so soon and had to leave him in his condition, but they knew that once this was all over they could more or less return to the status quo.

After getting back, Quinn asked the others if a guard had showed up yet, but thankfully it seemed like everything had worked out for once. There were no extra troubles, no unexpected news, nothing. So to celebrate this, Quinn decided to tell the others that transferring Vorden over had been a complete success.

There were smiles and cheers around the room, Quinn even wanted to tell Peter because he knew he would be over the moon as well, but something was on Layla's mind about the whole thing.

"Quinn, I know it's beneficial for them to be strong humanoid beasts at the moment, but do you plan to keep them in them forever? What about after the war with the Dalki?" Layla had to ask.

Of course, this was something Quinn had thought about, yet it would be mostly up to Vorden and Raten how they wanted to deal with it.

"I've thought about putting them in the body of some criminals. Like people who would be sentenced to death. However, I don't really want a person's death to be on their hands. I also know that these beasts have intelligence, far beyond what we had imagined, so it must be tough on them to live as Vorden and Raten did before."

"I'm hoping that Eno or Logan can come up with a perfect clone when everything is over, a body without a prior consciousness. Technology keeps on advancing so some day, right."

In the end, this was a long term permanent solution. There was no need to worry about a clone's body dying on them, but if they wanted to return to being human, it would be another task, just like Quinn had the task of figuring out how to turn all of Paul's men and the others back as well.

---

The next morning, the one who entered the safe house turned out to be Rafer. Judging by the huge smile on his face, he came with some good news.

"Colonel Longblade has successfully made a full recovery, and has therefore called for a meeting ASAP, to discuss the matters and rewards for the Cursed faction in helping us complete the assigned task. He would like to meet the highest ranked representative of the Cursed faction, and has requested for the humanoid Demi-god tier beast to present as the matters pertain to it."

"I'm sorry, but I have to ask anyone else who will not be vitally important for the meeting to stay here for a bit longer." Rafer bowed his head in front of them.

On paper the one in charge of the Cursed faction group would be Nathan, but the way it was worded, made it clear that Longblade wanted to meet Quinn. The Cursed faction leader had already taken off his mask in the tunnels and some of the soldiers had recognised him yesterday.

The fact that Quinn had come undercover would surely only worsen the public opinion of the Cursed group, but he didn't care for that now.

"Lead the way." Quinn requested.

Aside from Raten in his Demi-god tier beast body, Quinn had instructed Shiro to come along. The young boy was necessary since he was supposedly the one that was 'controlling' the beast, which in a way wasn't a complete lie. He didn't take anyone else though, since he didn't want to make it seem as if he didn't trust the Earthborn group.

Sil, Layla, Fex and Nathan naturally weren't too happy about being left behind, but they understood the necessity and opted to wait for Quinn to return and tell them all about this meeting afterward.

Eventually, they reached the main military base, where Quinn's entourage was escorted to the main room. Something the Vampire Lord noticed was that people acted cautious around him, stopping their conversation as soon as he came into sight.

'Are they catching on to the difference between vampires and humans? The report did say we have enhanced senses.' Quinn wondered. 'Not that it stopped them from taunting us when we had just arrived.'

Longblade had put on a smile as soon as they entered the meeting room with a large circular table inside. Other than him Avion, Jay, Till were already seated. As the last Sergeant under the Colonel Rafer took a place next to his superior.

There was only one more open seat, leaving Shiro and Raten standing. Four people also had quickly surrounding the Demi-god tier beast . Raten, as well as the beast inside him, would have very much enjoyed snapping at them, but for once he knew what the best course of action was.

"When you told me that the Cursed faction's goal was to capture the beast, I never thought that you intended to tame it. No wonder, you yourself came down here to lead this mission. Now, allow me to start off this meeting by thanking you and your group for everything you did." Colonel Longblade stood up and bowed his head in front of the Cursed faction leader.

"I have already prepared the rewards for you and your group." On the table he placed the black sword that Quinn had seen. "I have thought long and hard how I could repay you for saving not only my life but that of my subordinates as well. This is for the Cursed faction in general. No, let me correct myself. The sword I gave you before was for beating me in the duel. This sword is my gift for the beauty of a girl by your side."

"By the time I arrived at the hospital I had already lost a ton of blood. I'm certain if it wasn't for her healing ability, I wouldn't be here right now. Although it pains me, she has earned the right to wield this sword. If she wishes to pass it on to the Cursed faction then so be it."

"Of course I haven't forgotten about your companion who used the strings to stop the bleeding. He appears to be quite the Mech enthusiast, so I have prepared a special Mech for him. It is the old one Sergeant Avion used in the past. He has agreed to this as well, so I refuse to take a no from you as an answer."

So far the meeting was going excellent for Quinn. The black sword was something Quinn had been unsure how to request, since he didn't really know what he could offer the Colonel in exchange.

"With that out of the way, I'm afraid that there are some pressing matters that still need to be dealt with. Sergeant Till was in charge of guarding the facility during my absence, and he claims that a member of your Cursed faction has broken into one of our research facilities, allowing another humanoid beast which we had been taking care of to escape."

"Given the state of things, can you please confirm whether that person is someone from your faction? Is there any possibility he's one of the enemy V?" Longblade asked, surprisingly offered Quinn a way out.

"No, the one your men have seen is Logan Green. Please allow me to explain the reason for his actions" Quinn requested, the military leader nodded granting the request. "As you can see for yourself we have already managed to 'subdue' one humanoid beast. However, Shiro's ability isn't exactly 'taming' a beast in the traditional sense. Instead he is able to speak with them on a level that goes beyond language."

"I'm aware that most of the Earthborn group still don't trust us, despite you vouching for us. You must be aware how great a skill this boy has and how others would wish to utilise it, so I hope this matter can stay between us. During our fight, we had captured an agent of Pure, who had revealed information to us about the lab. Logan was simply trying to break out one of the beasts so we could ask it a few questions. We never intended to harm anybody, something that should be obvious by the fact that not a single one of your men has suffered any life threatening injuries or death." Quinn pointed out.

This was true, although some had been injured quite severely to the point they were unable to move, all of them would be able to recover in due time. This was something that Longblade found strange about the other Demi-god tier beast as well, that it never once killed any of those it attacked in the mine.

"Then what about reports of the infiltrator being a Dalki?" Till asked.

"A transformation ability. Please ask your men whether they saw a Dalki or a human with a Dalki part? When have we ever seen a Dalki with the ability to get rid of their scale-like features or to make themselves look human? Never mind one as small as Logan. If you don't believe me then I also happen to have video footage recorded by him personally. That will answer the question."

Till decided to back down as this was something that he needed to check before he made more accusations, but perhaps his people had just been too afraid and shocked to differentiate the truth of the matter.

"You say that Shiro is able to speak with the beasts? Then I have a few questions of my own for it. The one on top of my mind is why has it never attacked us directly? Also, Quinn, despite my goodwill towards you, I have trouble believing that as long as something as powerful as a humanoid Demi-god tier beast isn't tamed, that it would willingly agree to side with you. Am I correct in assuming that there is something it wants for its cooperation?" Longblade asked quick on the uptake.

Quinn glanced at Shiro for a second, suggesting that it was best that he himself explained this situation. He cleared his throat before speaking.

"The Demi-god tier beast can be considered the leader and representative for the many beasts on this planet. Its request was for the Colonel and his people to cease all mining operations effective immediately, as well as for this planet to remain human free!" Shiro spoke out loud as if reading out an announcement.

The Sergeants looked at each other, before turning to Longblade who seemed just as troubled. This was a request that they were unlikely to comply with.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1180: You are not in charge of us!

The reaction on the table was as expected. The Sergeants and Longblade had seemingly forgotten about Quinn being in the room with them and had started to discuss how to tackle this request. Sergeant Till had naturally instantly wanted to refuse it, while the others had insisted to think this through, it was apparent that they were not too enthusiastic about just leaving.

Quinn wasn't too surprised given their reaction. He too had initially been shocked when Shiro had told him about the promise as well as the memories he had experienced inside the Demi-god tier beast's head. It was commendable, how much the beast cared for its home planet to the point it was willing to give away its body.

In some ways, it was similar to humanity's attachment to Earth. Despite being able to live on Shelters on relatively safe planets, none would decline if given the chance to live on that one planet.

As long as they were able to fulfill the wishes of the humanoid beasts, Quinn didn't doubt they would keep their promise. Back in the lab, the scientist had pleaded the beast to forgive them, before freeing it. After regaining its freedom, it could have easily taken revenge against those humans who had taken it prisoner and tortured it.

And yet, it had repaid her kindness by not killing any humans, trying to make them leave in a non-lethal way.

'In some ways, those beasts are more honourable than humans.' Quinn thought.

"I'm sorry, Quinn, but that is not something I can do for you." Longblade stated after the military leaders had come to a conclusion in their discussion. "This planet is one of the major mining points that supplies the entirety of the Earthborn group with beast crystals. Especially in the current times, we can't just give up such a strategic point."

Planet Humding seemed to have more natural beast crystals inside it compared to any other, and on top of that they also had the facility that was used to experiment on the beasts as well. Quinn had already been prepared that things wouldn't be that easy, yet he still remained calm.

The Demi-god tier beast was now looking his way, its eyes formed to slits. It was clear Raten wasn't in control, and he wanted answers. The soldiers surrounding the humanoid tier beast became nervous and were ready to act if it became violent.

"Colonel Longblade, do you know what would happen to this planet if you continue mining those crystals?" Quinn questioned. "Ever since beasts were discovered, scientists have wondered how they are created. They lack reproductive organs like other mammals have them. According to my friend here, I now know the answer."

"The beasts originally stem from the beast crystals that are produced by the planet, the ones we mine. You take all of the beast crystals, then will it also mean you are taking the beast's lives. With all the crystals gone, there will be no more beasts and the planet will die." Quinn shared what he had learned.

According to the humanoid beast, each planet had a special type of crystal he called a 'nest' that would produce those beasts, letting them grow. That nest could survive in any type of environment.

Surprisingly, the military never seemed to have found those nests, which made Quinn wonder if they were hard to come by, or that might be information only someone like Oscar would have known.

"That's touching and all, but in case you've forgotten, we still have a war to fight!" Till challenged Quinn's point. "You wear beast gear yourself, don't you? Doesn't the Cursed faction kill beasts as well, to create stronger tools? What's the difference between killing beasts and destroying the planet they live on?"

"Well, he isn't exactly human." Joy mumbled, a little afraid to say it out loud. He agreed with Till to some degree. Although he understood there was a huge difference between killing beasts and destroying a planet, they needed the resources if they were to stand a chance against the Dalki. If it meant ruining a planet, well that was a small price to pay for the future of humanity.

"I'm not here to argue about whether your group in particular or any of the other groups mining for crystals in general are right or wrong." Quinn stated. "This was the agreement that we made with the humanoid Demi-god tier beast in order for him to work with us. And I do intend to keep this promise."

Till chuckled at this fact. "Making promises to beasts without caring about humanity as a whole. What else should one expect from someone who is a V. In case you've forgotten, this planet isn't under your jurisdiction!"

Although Longblade didn't like the way his Sergeant was talking to his savior, he wasn't wrong.

"I apologise for the rudeness of Sergeant Till, but he has a point. You might be one of the World Leaders, but each one of you is only responsible for your own planets. Only someone with higher authority than Head General Innu or himself could order us to leave."

Quinn just smiled politely, still calm. "Well, why don't we ask someone like that then?"

The Cursed faction leader placed a strange circular device in the middle of the table. Logan had handed it over before they left him at night. It had a large green surface on the top, with a few touch buttons around the edge.

When placed on the table, Quinn pressed a couple of buttons, and it started to glow for a while, until it eventually displayed a holographic figure. Recognising the person, the military men immediately stood up.

"Head General Sach, I hope you are doing well." Longblade saluted his superior.

"At ease." Sach replied.

When seeing who had called him, Sach made sure that he would answer it, but he didn't expect to be called in the current situation they were in at the moment.

"What do you need help with, Quinn? I can't imagine you called me here in front of others for no reason?" Sach asked.

Nobody missed that the Head General seemed to be on a first name basis with the other. However, even more surprising was the fact that Quinn somehow had the personal number of the Head General. Just what was their relationship?

'Quinn, is this why you didn't seem to be worried?' Longblade wondered. 'Although Head General Sach does rank above us, we were technically under Head General Innu before. Even if he orders it, we can't comply until a new leader for our group has been selected.'

Usually, there would be a vote and a meeting for others to come and select a new Head General. Or a recommendation from a rank higher, the supreme commander. The Supreme Commander could also appoint someone on their own to be in charge but nothing had been heard from Oscar either.

"I am currently on Humding and I wish for all operations on this planet to stop. If possible, it would be great if it could be handed over to the Cursed faction. In exchange I'm willing to offer you one of the Cursed faction planets in return. I know they're not in the same vicinity but this is important to me." Quinn requested.  
"Helen should be able to select one, with a similar crystal output."

It didn't take long for Sach to give an answer like the others had suspected.

"I will comply with your request Quinn. I think it's a fair deal and I believe the leader of the Cursed faction must have his reasons for doing so." Sach nodded.

"Head General Sach, excuse my interruption, but I don't believe you have the authority to agree to such a thing!" Longblade had to step in. He didn't want a dispute to arise just because of this, but they were all military men. They had to follow the proper procedure and it had to be given by someone who was allowed to do that.

"I guess since the announcement will go out in a few hours anyway, I might as well be the one to tell you all. There was a majority vote from the fifty seats. I, Sach,

have been voted in as the new Supreme Commander. So, yes, Colonel, I believe I DO have the authority." Sach stated with a large smile.

The others were wondering if they might have misheard or possibly they were dreaming. They didn't understand why there was even a vote in the first place for a new Supreme Commander.

"What is going on? Is this really Head General Sach?" Till asked.

Sach just gave out a sigh, prepared that they might not believe him.

"If you wish to wait, you should soon get a confirmation. Quinn, there will also be a few other announcements. One of them will be about what Head General Innu had attempted to do to you."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1181: A Changing world

There were a series of events that had led up to Sach becoming the next Supreme Commander. One of them on the Bertha ship with Oscar's remains. The parts of his body floated about in the container, and standing outside was none other than Samantha.

"Is it true father, that there really is no chance of bringing you back?" Samantha asked, seemingly hoping for an answer. The girl was aware of the futility of this action, as this wasn't the first time she had done so, after recovering.

Although recovered seemed too generous of a term. The Head General was awake, and was eating without anyone else forcing her to, but the bags under her eyes were heavy and dark, telling tales of her struggles to get some rest.

Jane, Oscar's top assistant, had informed Sach as soon as Samantha had woken up again, who in turn had explained everything that had happened during the Cursed faction's visit.

"Why was it that you wanted to speak with Quinn in your final moments? Why not me, your own daughter? How can you just leave everything in the hands of us? Us who can't even come together when the sake of the whole world depends on it." Walking up to the glass she banged on the container.

It was a weak hit, one with hardly any power. It was the only thing she could do to relieve some of her frustration, unable to understand what her father had been thinking. What's worse, it was up to her to pull the plug. How could a parent ask that of their own child, yet at the same time, it felt like she was the only one who should be the one to do it.

Alas, the one thing Oscar didn't account for, was that Samantha still hadn't given up on him...

"Doctor, are you certain that you can bring him back? Even if he might not be fully himself, you have a way to help him?" Samantha asked to reassure herself as she turned around. "Could you explain further?"

The older looking gentleman had remained at the back of the room, allowing Samantha a semblance of privacy. Despite being called a doctor, he wasn't wearing a lab uniform like others who had entered before him.

"Indeed, I can do things that others can't, but it will take me some time. If you trust in me, then I will take him away. My only condition is that the world must know that Oscar, as he is currently, is no longer. As for your other question, you already know there are things out there that are no longer human. It would be... similar to that." The man replied.

Samantha was biting her lower lip, still struggling with herself between following her father's wishes and her own selfish desire as his daughter.

The alarms inside the facility went off once more, and soldiers, guards and doctors came running in, entering the room. When they entered they could see several pieces of broken glass on the floor amidst some liquid. Not only that, parts of Oscar's body were also lying out on the floor, yet there was one part that was obviously missing, the head.

"What happened, General Samantha, was there an intruder?" Sergeant Fay asked, as her ability had allowed her to be the first one on site.

"No, there was no intruder." Samantha replied lifelessly. "It was my father's wish to no longer be kept alive, so I complied with his request. Since I wanted to do it with my own hands, I apologise for not asking someone to turn off the alarm."

Fay who had been looking over the girl during her recovery time thought this was for the best. Leaving Oscar alive would only give her false hope. She could only truly forget about it, once he was allowed to pass on.

"Where the head!" the doctors cried.

"I got rid of it." Smantha answered.

Although, those around Samantha told her that it's best to rest and get over and take time to get over her grief, perhaps prepare a funeral for her father. She had argued that it was best for her to move on. When working she had plenty of time to forget everything that was to happen, and wanted to know what the next set of affairs were.

After reading everything, she sat in her office.

'So the board has decided to cast a vote on who the next Supreme Commander should be, and they have considered me as one of the candidates. Well that is to be expected, they must think my father raised me to fit this role.'

The board consisted of those in the military who had a legacy position. They were a group of ten men, whose family lines had been there since the very beginning, long before the creation of the new style of military. In the old world before the Dalki attack, these were people who had great power and influence.

However, as things had started to change and the world started to care about power, positions changed, but these men who had originally sponsored the current state of power had been granted a legacy position and were placed in charge of making certain decisions. In total there were ten, but even then they were unable to make decisions on their own.

All those who belonged to the military, a total of fifty of them would be given seats. These seats acted as votes for big decisions such as this one. As for the seats themselves, they worked similar to a local election, voted by those in the military.

Unfortunately, even this system wasn't without corruption. It was an open secret that those in high positions would often use the higher level ability books or other incentives as a way to obtain votes and rise up in the ranks. Those naturally stronger would also obtain a lot of votes, which was how Oscar who had been hailed as one of the Heroes of War eventually got to his position as well.

Soon, Samantha had made a call.

"Hello there, this is Head General Samantha White speaking. I would just like to inform you that I would like you to remove me from the list of potential successors to my late father's position... Who do I think would be best suited for the role?"

Even if Samantha didn't want to be Supreme Commander herself, she still had a vote as well. She knew she would have a lot of supporters, and the votes themselves were made public. So others knew who voted for them.

The followers of Samantha would also choose to follow who she believed would be fit to be the next leader.

'Head General Sach was the one who rushed in when we were on the joint mission together. He didn't exactly listen to my advice and was too confident in his abilities, but he remained there, and tried his best to help. Someone like him, should be the one to lead the Earthborn group.'

"Yes, I have a nomination...." Samantha said.

Not long after, the votes were counted, with each person giving their reason why they were most suitable for being the supreme commander, but they understood that it was mostly for show. At this point, no words would sway the others, everyone already cast their votes.

As most had expected, the one with the most votes turned out to be Head General Sach. To most the Head Generals had always been the three most likely candidates. With Innu having disappeared and Samantha giving up her position, there really wasn't anyone else to compete with him.

There were the other Generals, some even former Head Generals under the old system, but the votes for them were split making it a no contest for who would get on top, yet while all of this was happening, ironically none of them were aware that Head General Sach was currently learning the ways of a V at the Cursed faction ship.

This was when he had received the call from Quinn, just as he had said as well. Now that a new Supreme Commander had been elected, the humans, and world would learn of the news to come.

The emergency broadcast system was used once more, only the one one on screen was none of the World Leaders. What came as a surprise to all, was that Bonny, the world famous reporter, stood there, pieces of paper in hand, as if she was a news anchor.

"Greetings everyone, it's my honor today, to share with you some urgent information that the world deserves to know. This breaking news has to do with the Earthborn faction, the Cursed faction and the V you all know of. Firstly, I would like to report that as of today Supreme Commander Oscar has retired from his role, and his successor has already been selected..."

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1182: World Changing Day

The world broadcast had ended, and it had two main messages it had delivered to everyone far and wide. The first was the fact that Oscar, who had been the supreme commander since the first Dalki war, had retired, giving up his position.

Of course, there were only a few people who actually knew the truth. It made Quinn wonder why they chose to lie about such a thing. Perhaps they were afraid that it would demoralise the human race knowing about Oscar's death. No, what was worse and what they didn't want to get out to the public was that Oscar lost.

To the public, he was the figure that was the strongest figure in the world, not Hilston, not Quinn or Owen, but Oscar. He was their hope, so it was information they had to avoid at all costs. With that announcement made, it was then time for Sach to introduce himself as well.

After taking up the role, there was a short speech from Sach. It was one that tried to be inspirational. It was set up, so the human race didn't have to worry, that everything was going to stay the same. There was no reason for the change apart from Oscar's retirement.

However, those that worked higher up knew there was something up. Even if they hadn't been told of Oscar's death, they knew there was still Samantha and wondered what had happened to her for her to give up her own nomination and vote.

The world broadcast ended there, and then a separate broadcast went out to all of those in the military that were part of the Earthborn group. This message was about Head general Innu's death. Something impossible to hide, considering it had already spread amongst certain people.

The good news was, Bonny had done her best to show Quinn in a good light. There was footage from when they were first attacked and showed that Bonny and Void were both on the ship at the time. The scene at the very end showed that Innu was a V, someone addicted to blood. Despite the video being shown everywhere, a couple of people were suspicious about what Innu really was.

Sach, who now already somewhat knew the truth, Samantha, and several people close to Oscar who were now under Samantha had suspicions about the video. Oscar, and Innu were in the room when they had set up their unique trap. The pouring of the blood, at the time, Innu showed no such reaction. Which was why it was a little strange for them to see him show a reaction there and then to the small amount of blood.

Still, this news hadn't gone out for some reason, and instead, the talk of the military focused on these two points

"Sach was chosen. What about Samantha? She was Oscar's daughter after all?"

"I heard from one of the seats that Samantha wasn't an option. It appears that she decided to reject the nomination."

"Still, Sach should do a good job, I worked under him before, and he is skilled even without his ability."

"But that came as a surprise, didn't it?"

"What, about Oscar suddenly retiring? I mean, he was a bit old, past his prime back in the day, but his abilities are still strong. Maybe he won't be supreme commander anymore, but we could still see him on the front line."

"Are you crazy, he deserves his rest. He had already done so much in the first war, but I wasn't talking about that. I was talking about Head general Innu, about how he was a V."

"...."

"If a head general could be a V, doesn't that mean anyone could be a V working with the Dalki? That's a scary thought to have. No wonder they decided to not broadcast it outside. I actually thought the Cursed faction had attacked him for another reason, but it was clear in that video. They were ambushed and lucky to get out of their alive."

"How strong do you think the cursed leader is? Did you see that strange power he was using? No one could even get close to him."

The discussions didn't stop there, but the Earthborn group couldn't stay quiet. It was a world changing day, after all.

Back on Mudding things were moving smoothly. After learning that the role of supreme commander now belonged to Sach, things moved smoothly after that. An official order came through, and Longblade got to work immediately.

Longblade and his team were still in the middle of leaving the planet as it was. It would take a while as large transport ships were coming and leaving from the island. Which also meant that it was time for Quinn and the others to take their leave as well.

They had achieved everything that needed to be accomplished, and now the Cursed faction was to go onboard the ship they had arrived in. Seeing them off personally was Cornel Longbalde, Sergeant Rafer and Sergeant Avion.

"It took a lot of work to put that mech in that ship, so I hope that your group will treat it with care," Avion said. "Fex, you're polite. Far better than I was when I first started to use that thing, I think maybe we had a rematch, we wouldn't know who the winner would be."

"Thanks," Fex said, smiling back. "I'll keep practising. I have some strong opponents on the Cursed ship who I think I could test this thing on. Hey, I could even try fighting the beast again if I really wanted." Pointing his thumb behind him.

It wasn't too much of an odd sight to see, a beast with humans since they also saw those with the Bree family ability do the same. What felt strange was the beast that Avion was fighting with his life on the line, was standing just behind them.

"Quinn, I want to apologise for the other sergeant's behaviour, but I also don't want you to blame them. Times are tough for the whole human race." Rafer said. "I think now with news having come out. Your situation should become a bit better. At least good enough, so you no longer have to hide your identity. Still, there will be those out there that treat you different. Even if you weren't a V."

Something Quinn knew well. It felt like he had been treated as an outcast his whole life, not just when he had become a V.

"I guess it's finally my turn to say my goodbyes. First, I'm glad to see that my prized sword has ended up in Layla's hands. Although your skills aren't the best, I did see you have heart when fighting against the Pure agent. I also know that you have a teacher far better than I on the cursed ship." Longblade said with a smile.

"Can I ask, where did you get the sword?" Quinn wondered.

"Unfortunately, that tale is not as heroic as I would like. I assume you are wondering what great beast I defeated to obtain it, but that wasn't quite the case at all. I saw a few weaker beasts carrying it around in their mouths and just happened to come across it, but if anyone asks, be sure to tell them I defeated a mighty dragon of some sort." Long Blade chuckled. "I'm sure this won't be the last time each of us will meet. The Dalki haven't acted fully yet, but there may be a time when we are all fighting side by side. I wish you and your group a safe trip."

Saying their goodbyes, they took off on the ship and exited out of the shelter. They had also picked up Logan and Vorden who would be in hiding a short ride away. Truthfully, Vorden couldn't wait to get back and see the others as well.

When the world broadcast was sent out, the humans weren't the only ones who had gotten their hands on information that a new supreme leader had been selected.

At the moment, inside the dark cave-like room. Graham was sitting down at a table.

"So the humans have decided to replace their leader after what happened to him. Slicer also has been quieter than I thought it would be. I guess that means just one thing." Graham said, standing up.

"It is time that I finally make my move. It is time for the full war."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1183: The Family returns

Apart from Quinn, Shiro and Sil, the others had yet to see the new humanoid beast that now housed Vorden's consciousness. Once he had boarded the ship, the Cursed group was finding it hard to keep their eyes off him.

His beast form looked similar to what Quinn had seen the previous day. He was still mostly covered in black fur with a seemingly gigantic tail on his back, but his evolution gave his appearance a few slight changes.

As a King-tier beast his tails had been bunched up together and similar to a flower it had made it hard to tell if it was one piece or not, but now that the tails had grown longer they started to resemble a scorpion's stinger. They curved up as they were inches off the ground and hovered around the shoulder area before curving back down again.

On top of that, there were now what looked like hard pieces similar to a fin sticking out from the beast's forearms, yet there was soft fur on top of them.

'It looks like with each evolution his form will continue to change and grow. I guess it will be harder to tell with Raten since the Demi-god tier beats' ability covers what his real body looks like.' Quinn thought.

"You look damn cool!" Fex exclaimed excitedly, sticking his hand out, trying to stroke Vorden's body. "A lot better than Muddy over there. Tails is a lot cooler."

"Muddy? Tails?" Layla repeated, slightly confused.

"Nicknames for the beasts. Their minds are still in the bodies as well, so I thought it might be a good way for us to differentiate between when the Blade boys are in control and when the beasts are." Fex explained

Now that was a good point to make. It would be hard to keep track if they were to constantly call them, the Demi-god tier beast and the Emperor tier beast. The only problem was whether or not the beasts were okay with these nicknames, but at least they hadn't protested so far.

[Inspect]

[Emperor tier humanoid beast]

[Evolution possible]

[Next evolution 0 percent]

As expected, after evolving they would need to consume more crystals to continue to get stronger. Unfortunately, a lot of crystals from Muddy's stash had been used by Quinn to allow Tails' body to evolve one stage. With the crystal shortage in

general, it was hard to gather the amount they would need, even for the Cursed faction.

To solve this problem, Quinn had asked Alex to prepare the blood crystals that they had received from the Vampire World. He was hoping that perhaps the beasts could process those crystals as well. It was a heavy investment, but Quinn was sure that if they could evolve to Demon tier beasts it would all be worth it.

After everyone had the chance to inspect Vorden's new look, he went on over to where Layla currently was, the two of them looked at each other.

"Hello, Layla. Long time no see, I guess." Vorden said, trying to crack a joke.

Back at military school the two of them hadn't started off the best way, but soon they had grown closer through their experiences together. The girl walked up to Vorden and gave the humanoid beast's body a big hug without hesitation. It was quite an experience to feel the soft fine fur, and her head was on the level of the beast's hard abs.

"It's good to have you back." Layla moved a few steps away to smile at Vorden.

In that brief moment, she had realised something. The spark that she used to have for Vorden had disappeared. Layla wasn't sure if it was due to Vorden inhabiting Tails' body, or if it was because of the time they had spent apart from each other, but looking at him and speaking to him, she didn't have the same feelings that she felt for someone else. Perhaps due to her coming clean about her feelings her mind had made its own resolve.

'I guess this means I know who I really like now. Unless I'm really that shallow and can't have feelings for Vorden now that he is in the body of a beast?' Layla looked towards Sil, but even looking at him she had never felt anything, so she couldn't have been going for Vorden just due to his looks.

Arriving at the Cursed ship, everything seemed to be as they left it. There were no signs of sudden attacks or trouble. Quinn had been half expecting Pure, the Dalki, heck maybe even some stragglers from Innu's group to attack them while he, as the leader had been away, but luck seemed to have been on their side for once.

As their ship landed, there were already a couple of people more than eager to welcome them. Sam, Peter and Borden stood at the docking bay waiting in anticipation for them to arrive.

Exiting from the ship, they saw Quinn, the others with the addition of two powerful humanoid beasts. Sam's instincts were kicking in, telling him he should be running for his life, his hands even shaking in fear.

"My brother!" Borden shouted as he leapt forward and jumped on top of the mud beast's shoulders. "I could sense the strong power coming off from you. As

expected, I knew my brother wouldn't just accept a normal body. Only the best is suited for him!"

"Borden." Sil called out. "Wrong one."

"Get off me, you little runt!" Raten complained, as his arms moved to grab Borden, attempting to throw him off from his shoulder. However, the two of them entered a power struggle as Borden used all his strength.

"You tricked me, I thought you were my brother!" Borden shouted.

"Borden, it's nice to see you again." Vorden spoke, and hearing his voice, albeit distorted, Borden quickly pushed off his legs, breaking some of the mud on the beast's shoulder and leapt over to Tails' shoulder instead. Raten grumbled, yet his damaged shoulders healed at a visible speed.

"Little Borden, you haven't been slacking off I see. I'm happy to see you as well." Vorden patted Borden's head.

There was such a heartfelt pure smile as the two of them looked at each other, that one person in particular didn't really know what to do. Another walked up to him, all he did was give a slight punch to Vorden's stomach.

"You can't leave us like that." Peter spoke up. "If anyone deserves to leave this world before you do, It's me, and at the moment I'm pretty hard to kill so remember that. Come with us, there's something we need to show you."

Hearing this Borden seemed to smile, but Vorden had no idea what it could be about. He had been told the extent of things that had changed, but actually seeing it all was a different thing altogether.

"It should be okay, I have informed the Cursed members that we have two beasts tamed under us, so they shouldn't be too shocked. Just don't get too close to the others, please." Sam cautioned knowing how his own body felt, perhaps others would faint just seeing them.

Soon, Peter and Borden were practically dragging Vorden with them. Raten didn't care for whatever they wanted to show him, he was more interested in just getting some rest in. For now, he would look after the little bomb, Sil.

As the two continued to drag him through the ship. Vorden twisted his head left and right, at all the amazing sights he could see. When he had split from Quinn and the others it had been so long and he had been trapped on that island.

'Quinn you became a World Leader and you're really starting to change the world. I wish I had a goal like you. What do I want to do?' Vorden thought, and eventually they had reached a hallway where the sound of excited talking was being heard from outside.

Sliding the door open, a room full of kids could be seen, but they weren't just any kids.

"Do you remember them? These are all the kids from Blade Island that you wanted to save back then! We've been taking care of them ever since. I think it would be good to know that they can finally say thank you." Peter explained.

Back with Sam, there was a lot to be done. Still, after such a trip he granted the group a break period. For Quinn the job list felt endless, he wanted to discuss a few things with Layla about Pure and her powers, check up on Nate and the faction, catch up with Sam about the Cursed planets and Helen, and check up with Alex and the Demon tier weapon.

'So what exactly do you plan to do now? It seems that Sil still has his powers so he should be able to move the beast. Although the person in the tablet did warn you he wouldn't be strong enough for that, but we still need to comply with Eno's wishes.'

Vincent asked.

'I still dont think I'm strong enough to fight that dragon. When I used the gauntlet on those crystals, now comparing the two powers I could tell, and there are still problems with those that are part of the Pure group when fighting, but what I want to do more than all of that, is bring the last person back, you Vincent.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1184: Blood delivery

It could already be considered a blessing that the Cursed group managed to find not one, but two humanoid beasts on the same planet, allowing them to fulfill Sil's wish in one go. Finding three humanoid beasts, especially ones of such a high tier would have been too much to ask for.

Of course, this was only possible because of the Earthborn group. If one hadn't escaped, forcing Longblade's group to request backup, the Cursed group might have never found out about Muddy and it was solely because of Logan stumbling around that they met Tails.

After hearing Quinn confirm for the third time that he wanted to bring him back, Vincent had something to say back about it. 'Quinn, I already made it clear that if I had the chance I would support you. After watching you fight for so long, it would be my honor to help you not just by guiding you and giving you advice, but by actively fighting by your side.'

'That being said, I have already lived my life, Quinn. At the end I even gave up being a vampire, so it could eventually end. I was sure that everyone I cared about had already left this world, and I never imagined that there would be someone new I would care about. Which is why I don't want you to waste too much effort on me.'

'Let's just take up Eno on his offer, or see if Logan can create a clone.'

Quinn wanted to interrupt Vincent, and argue back for many reasons. A clone was known not to have a long life, and trusting Eno with such a thing was a big mistake especially since he should have been unaware that Vincent had been still in the system.

'I know you don't trust him, but Eno's clones are still able to use their vampire powers. You've seen it and have felt it. I would be far more helpful if I would have access to my full power, instead of having to learn to use the body of some humanoid beast.'

'As for the ten years, it should be enough time for me to help you win this war, achieve what you wish for and leave you, my family line of Eno. I know you're a Talen, but you have Eno blood in you.'

Having experienced Vincent's life from his perspective, Quinn had shared the old man's feelings at that time. His descendant knew that his ancestor wasn't going to back down on this, he had already made his decision.

'...fine, but we'll ask Logan about this first. If he is unable to create such a body, I will attempt to request one from Eno the next time I meet him, hopefully without him finding out about everything.' Quinn reluctantly agreed.

s

Finishing this tough conversation, Quinn was ready to just get the rest of the worst parts over and done with.

He decided to find Layla next. On their flight back Quinn had noticed that she had seemed down. Given the circumstances it had been impossible to capture Agent 2, and just like Fex, Quinn had been unable to break Agent 11's mental barrier to force him to speak up.

He still didn't know the whole story of what had happened before he had arrived, but since this was a rather delicate and personal situation, he had refrained from discussing it with her on the ship.

Fortunately, finding specific crew members wasn't too hard for Quinn. Layla was one of those he had personally turned, creating a bond that allowed him to sense her presence within a certain distance, after which it would weaken. As useful as this was, it had nevertheless led to another unfortunate consequence for the two of them.

Quinn knocked on the door of one of the smaller personal training rooms, where he knew Layla to be. Waiting for a few moments, he heard a female voice allowing him entry. Inside, he saw the girl seemingly meditating.

"Do you need to do that because you have a lot on your mind?" Quinn asked Layla, whose eyes were still closed.

She had placed the black sword Longblade had gifted her in front of her.

"I was actually running a few tests with this sword. I'm amazed that it has the ability to disrupt certain abilities. Just by touching it, I'm unable to gather energy in that arm, but the rest of my body is still able to use its powers."

"I was testing if it could be used to control my emotions, so that... you know, I won't endanger you guys if I ever take on that form again. Unfortunately, that doesn't seem to be the case. However, I can still use it to get rid of the negative smog that covers my body, so in a way it does help me."

This information was similar to what Quinn had gathered as well. The sword only affected what it touched, so it didn't stop the Vampire Lord from using his abilities, but only through the sword itself or trying to use it directly at the sword.

"I think you know that this wasn't what I meant when I said you had a lot on your mind. The others told me what Agent 2 said before you changed. Do you want to talk about it?" Quinn asked, trying to find the fine line between asking as a leader, her friend and perhaps something more than that.

"So you've heard it as well?" Layla sulked and placed her head down. "I-I don't know what I want to do, Quinn. On one hand I want to learn the truth about my father, I want to speak to Pure's leaders to find out what really happened."

"However, after what Agent 2 said... I mean I knew that she had differences with the other leaders, but for them all to hate her. Maybe he was just saying those things to rile me up? ... but for some reason, I can't help but feel that some part of it might be true..."

"You might be surprised how much I can sympathise with your desire." Quinn replied, stretching out one hand to put on her shoulder, but stopping midway, afraid of the possible backlash. "I just want you to know that whatever happened has already happened. I don't know what really happened, but at the end of the day, your mother had you."

"Lucy might not have always shown it to you, but there's one I'm certain about, your mother loved you to the bitter end. Whatever the truth may end up being, you don't have to shoulder it yourself. We your friends, will be there for you."

'... I will be there for you.'

"... thanks, Quinn." Layla weakly replied, her head still hidden. His sharpened senses told Quinn that she was sobbing lightly. Unsure whether his words of advice actually helped or worsened the situation, Quinn decided to leave the room for now and return to her at a later time after she had a bit of time to think about it.

The next stop on Quinn's list since it was nearby was to head to the large training room. Here while walking through the halls, he could hear the sound of a loud bang, and the shaking of the ship.

Entering the room, Quinn soon saw the reason for it. Standing at the front, Nate was demonstrating a set of moves, which the others followed. The explosion was actually everyone using Qi in their attacks all at once. When the trainees soon saw the Cursed faction leader enter, they quickly stopped what they were doing and bowed down to him.

"Oh, Boss, you come at the perfect time. I would say I've done a pretty good job teaching them, right?" Nate had a smug smile on his face. "You gave me a task and I did everything I could to complete it! Every single one of them knows how to power Qi through their bodies and their weapons. Even if they have weak abilities, they will become a force to be reckoned with!"

"That is good news! I guess now it's time I show you something else." Quinn nodded as he pulled out the sword that had been given to him by Longbalde. He slowly raised the sword up, and started to spin the sword until it was around thirty centimeters off the ground. Everyone was looking carefully at the demonstration. Looking at the floor, they could see it.

Quinn had purposely moved the sword slowly so they could watch his minute actions. A scratch mark was being left on the surface of the floor despite the blade not touching it directly.

"This is the second stage of Qi. I'm going to show you a few things, and I hope you can teach others as well." Quinn requested with a smile.

In the past, Nate would have complained about being given such a task, but he was actually more excited than usual. Qi was perfect for someone like him who studied martial arts and he had developed a strong interest in this strange power.

While trying to teach Nate how to use Qi, Quinn was thinking back to his battle against Agent 2. All of the Agents had also been capable of using Qi. They didn't have any numbers that made them out to be double digit Agents, which led Quinn to believe that Pure had started teaching all of its members this technique.

Unfortunately, Pure seemed to have more knowledge in that regard. The Cursed faction leader only had limited experience with the third stage and he was certain that whatever the Pure Agent leader had used had been an even stronger stage, so they might end up being more powerful.

"I trust you with this." Quinn patted Nate on the back and left the room.

After dealing with his 'Unofficial duties', he decided to visit Sam to check out his official ones, which would take the most time to deal with. Once he was in the command centre, Quinn asked just what Sam thought would be the next best thing.

"Well, I recently received an update from Alex. The good news is that they were able to complete the blood weapons for you. Unfortunately, your Demon tier weapon will still require a bit more time. Once it is done, they'll return to the Cursed ship."

"The ones who need the weapons the most are Helen and the others on the front line of the faction planets. They have scuffled a few times with the Dalki, since their attacks are starting to spread."

"They fought with the Dalki?" Quinn was quite surprised since he hadn't been called or alerted.

"At the moment, all the groups are suffering from their attacks. Don't worry, they have been at a level that we have been able to deal with on our own. Don't forget, you're not the only one who can fight in the Cursed faction. You will be called if needed, Quinn!"

"Anyway, public opinion seems to be back on our side after the video of you being attacked by Head General Innu has been shared, especially amongst those within the Cursed faction. I think this might be a good chance to boost morale. You would

just have to visit a few planets as their leader, bringing them the weapons they need right now. They will surely remember that!"

Thinking about it, Quinn didn't know what else there was for him to do. He could train his shadow and blood abilities, but there wasn't a strong partner to do that with. The device Logan had picked up had yet to discover any more demon tier beast, and he was still waiting on the current weapon to be made.

"I guess that's not a bad idea. I'll give Helen a visit and deliver the blood weapons. It should kill some time before the Demon-tier weapon is complete."

S

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1185: Speaking up

Amidst a large dark forest where the leaves were coloured purple and the night sky showed more than one moon, a lone silhouette could be seen fleeing for its life. The beast known as a Bloodsucker had no time to slow down and the quickest choice seemed to be to simply destroy everything in its way, leaving behind a path of destruction, hoping that it would hinder those who had come for it.

It wasn't used to feeling like prey. Usually, it was the predator, hunting down any vampires that would leave the settlement to get their precious blood packs. Unfortunately, today it had chosen the wrong target.

When he had attacked the strange girl who had been on her own, she had retaliated and cut off one of its arms. A little blood pack should have been enough to regenerate it, but even after consuming the blood it carried with it, nothing had happened, informing the creature that something was very wrong.

'I have to get away from this monster!' The Bloodsucker instinctively thought.

The Bloodsucker stopped for a brief moment, as it had no clue where it was. It just knew that it needed to return back to its own hideout where it had been gathering supplies. Alas, the forest was vast and easy to get lost in.

The only orientation on this planet were little landmarks, yet if there had been any other signs, it had destroyed it during its escape. Ready to move on, to hopefully find something, the beast felt chains wrapping around his legs. The next second it was yanked on causing it to fall to the floor.

Grabbing a tree nearby he thought perhaps he could use his superior strength to pull himself away, but instead his hands just ripped through the tree and his body continued to get pulled across the ground.

Doing whatever he could he soon pulled against the chain that was around his foot, his veins building around his singular bicep as he tried to use his mighty strength. The yanking stopped, making him believe that he was saved for a short moment, until he heard ruffling through the trees. It looked up to see that the chains led above, all the way to the girl with the scary looking yellow eyes.

They grew closer and closer until his vision faded... and he was no more.

Erin unraveled the chains from his foot and placed them around her forearms once more. She swung her sword, allowing the blood to fall to the ground, before she wiped off any that remained.

"You're getting better at using the chains as a fighting tool." Leo commented, appearing close to her. They both looked at the Bloodsucker's body as they needed to figure out what to do with it.

"Did you find his hideout?" Erin asked.

"Yes, but it worked alone. This Bloodsucker was constantly luring out vampires who would leave the settlement and stealing their blood packs and judging by the bones in its hideout, also killing some of them. You shouldn't feel much guilt for killing one of its kind." Leo answered.

"The real question is, did killing it, help you sate some bloodlust?"

"To a degree. It feels less satisfying than killing a normal vampire. I can control myself even without the suppression chains, but they have proven useful for fighting and are a good tool to slow down the rising urge. Your method seems to be working. I think I'm able to control it bit by bit as you said." Erin told her teacher.

Having looked after Erin for a while now in the Vampire World, Leo had experienced a number of different things. First, they had traveled far out, to get away from the settlement. This was a large planet and while most of the vampires were concentrated in one place, there were others.

Many vampires had left the settlement, and some of them had turned into Bloodsuckers like this one who were roaming outside. The one thing they craved was human blood, but since there weren't any humans on the planet itself, they couldn't stray too far away from the settlement.

Leo's plan had been to lengthen the time between each kill to satisfy her urge, waiting until the Dhampir couldn't take it any more. The problem Erin had suffered was due to her having suppressed the urge for the longest time, meaning it had come too sudden, and too strong.

Previously, Erin didn't even have time to get used to the feeling and the suppression chains could only postpone the issue, not remove it. Which was why Leo had opted for this method, and from the looks of it, it was working. Fortunately, with Erin being the way she was, and by using Leo's ability, it was easy enough for the duo to track down stray vampires and Bloodsuckers.

As a side-effect, Erin seemed to be growing in strength after each fight. These Bloodsuckers, or vampires that had escaped from the settlement could only do so if they had a certain amount of strength. Being able to survive this long they were quite powerful.

At first, Leo had stayed by his protegee's side, aiding her, but eventually her power had grown enough that she could take care of one on her own. Erin had been evolving in front of his eyes. Before it would have worried the Blind Swordsman, but since it looked like she would be able to control herself one day, it settled his mind.

"How much longer will we have to stay here?" Erin asked.

"We are in no rush. I know you want to go back to see our friends, but given your circumstance we should stay patient and make sure you really have your condition under control. If there is something they can't handle on their own, I'm sure Quinn would have called for us." Leo looked back through the forests and although he was unable to see it, he was looking straight at the direction of the vampire settlement.

On the top floor of the tenth castle, Paul was filling out some paperwork. The whole castle and its men had gone through the daily tasks so many times that they were working like clockwork, leaving the Vampire Knight with little to do. Thanks to the help of Timmy, Xander and also Ashley, who had volunteered to take off some of his burdens there was even less.

'If only the human race could be as peaceful as this one day.' Paul thought to himself. The next second his daydream was interrupted by the sounds of someone knocking at his office's door.

"Knight Paul, you have a visitor." Timmy spoke after entering. He had quite the worried look on his face, which could only mean that it was someone of importance. For a moment Paul thought about whether he should entertain the guest in the throne room, but that didn't seem proper since Quinn was still the Cursed family's leader, even if most of the tasks were being handled by the Vampire Knight.

After hearing who it was, Paul wasn't too worried and instructed them to be brought to his office. A few moments later Kazz was escorted inside.

"It's nice to meet you again after all this time." Paul greeted her standing up, offering her a seat opposite his desk. She accepted the seat and sat down. "I'm sure your unannounced visit isn't just to reminisce about the time when the two of us were in the Cursed faction together. Isn't it against vampire etiquette for knights to meet outside formal meetings? So what brought you here today?"

"I'm the leader of the first family now." Kazz quickly corrected him. It was meant to be a temporary measure since Bryce was elected King. Usually knights weren't allowed to become leaders but there was no one more appropriate at the moment. Besides, the King's castle was busy, so a new first leader had yet to be selected which was why Kazz continued to do this job for the time being.

"Then, doesn't that mean I have even more reason to worry why you are here?" Paul smiled. "So why are you coming to me out of the blue so suddenly."

For a moment, Kazz remained silent as she wondered what to tell him. 'Would it even change anything if I informed the tenth castle about what my father is doing? Why exactly did I come here?'

Paul could see that whatever matter it was, Kazz seemed to be struggling to tell him, so he remained silent, pouring her a cup of tea, waiting for her to come to a decision.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1186: Don't go

Kazz had witnessed her father slowly changing. There was a time she had looked up to him as a righteous man that cared about the good of the vampires. Sometimes his actions would be criticised by the others but she knew that her father was always doing it with the interest of the whole settlement in mind.

However, lately she wasn't so sure anymore.

Punishing criminals was one thing. Kazz knew that sometimes the rules had to be bent, especially with a strong enemy on the horizon, yet she couldn't understand how her father could just sacrifice the lives of his fellow vampires without letting them even know about it.

She had seen it, when she had been in that room where the vampires had been working hard to learn the shadow ability. They were doing so, convinced that it was all for the sake of helping the King, to protect their loved ones, yet once they succeeded and attained a certain level of proficiency, Bryce would rob them off everything.

Initially he had told them that it was for the greater good, but as the process repeated she could see him changing. The fact that Kazz was unable to see even a sliver of remorse over what he was doing. Unfortunately, by the time she realised that someone needed to put a stop to her father's deeds, it was too late for her to do anything about it on her own.

Bryce had managed to find supporters in his goal, and with the absolute blood powers of the King, there weren't many that would be a match for him. Eventually, while mulling over her thoughts day by day, and with no one to talk to, a certain person came into her mind, Paul.

During her mission, to stay and look over Quinn and Paul, the former General had taught her many valuable lessons that her father never had. The two of them had discussed many other things and he had made her see certain things in a different way.

If anyone could tell her what the right or wrong thing to do was, she thought it would be Paul, but now sitting opposite him she wasn't sure anymore. She took a sip of the tea he had handed her. The warmth did wonders to calm her down.

'If my father ever found out what I attempted to do, or what I've done, then Paul, no the whole Cursed family will be affected by this as well.' She thought. 'Quinn isn't here and what can Paul actually do on his own?'

Thinking back, she wondered how strong the Vampire Knight before her actually was. From the reports she had heard that he had managed to best Jill, one of the

leaders in a one on one fight. Apparently he also hadn't struggled too much in that fight. Still, fighting was not the leader's forte.

However, Bryce had several people around him, even if she tried to gather allies such as Muka and more, there was the risk that one of them would inform the King of her intentions. Even if everything proceeded smoothly and she managed to gather a few of the vampire leaders who weren't involved in this whole mess, what could they do against her father?

All of them together had been unable to stop Cindy, and Bryce had already grown far stronger than the traitorous second family leader, having grown used to the absolute blood powers for a while now.

'There was one...that managed to beat her.' Kazz recalled.

"How about we go for a walk?" Paul suggested, thinking that a change of scenery could loosen her tongue. Finishing the hot beverage, Kazz just nodded. Heading out of the castle, they walked through the tenth area which was more alive than ever.

It was strange for Kazz to see so many vampires living in the inner area. They were mostly Paul's men that were stationed on the outside of each of the gates, the strong reinforced walls and the towers.

They made sure that only those from the tenth family could head inside. The reason why the tenth had more people in the inner area, was because as Quinn had requested they were abolishing the class system treatment, where only a hundred vampires could enter the inner area and learn an ability.

Instead, Quinn treated the Cursed family with great care to help the family as a whole. Including those that were loyal.

"The place is... different from how the other families run things." Kazz mentioned.  
"I see a vampire whose skills are only good for cooking with no great power living in a mansion."

In the inner areas, outside one of the large mansions, a giant outdoor kitchen had been made, and Zee was currently cooking there with a few helpers.

"That is Zee, it is a pain to just consume blood all the time, and it seems he has great skill adding flavour to the meats we eat. He helps the soldiers from Earth remember what they originally were. He brings joy and is essential for our tenth family's morale. He deserves to have a big house, and as you can see he is more hard working than ever." Paul introduced the cook.

Saying that, she could see that Zee had a huge grin on his face, and was slaving away over the stove. Everyone who went to him seemed to treat the cook with respect.

"Maybe this only works because the tenth family has no ability to give." Kazz commented.

"Do you personally think so or is this just the vampire side of you talking, afraid to change the traditions that you have grown up with? Change is scary for some, and different doesn't necessarily mean it's bad. I know what it's like to just rely on strength and I don't really think it's a bad thing for certain situations. If we didn't have the strength, then humans would have lost the first Dalki war, but I wonder..." Paul paused after that.

A lot of the ideas that had been implemented wasn't his design, but things pushed by Quinn, and Timmy. Lately, he had been seeing more smiles on family members' faces, and he was enjoying that more than anything, it really made him feel as if he belonged to something greater.

At that moment, one of the family members that was running towards him didn't look to have a smiling face on. The one who had rushed over to his side was none other than Xander. When he stood in front of Paul it was clear he had something to report, stopping as he spotted Kazz by the Vampire Knight's side. Probably the worst person that could have been there.

"Knight Paul, I have important information that I need to pass on to you, and you alone." Xander said, still looking at Kazz in the corner of his eyes. He also needed to do his best not to offend, otherwise that could get him into serious trouble since she was the first family's leader, after all.

Paul could tell what Xander was thinking but at the same time, he knew Kazz hadn't just come to him without prior notice for a general talk. So something needed to be done.

"Just give the report, don't worry about who is around." Paul ordered.

"Y-Yes, Sir. There have been reports of the first family people being seen around the tenth area. They haven't gotten too close, but when a group of ours tracked their movements, we could also see them following members of the tenth family who are not living inside the tenth area." Xander reported.

Hearing this, Kazz knew exactly what those people were attempting to do. They were most likely trying to convince them to come and join the King. Picking people that others wouldn't really care about, or seem suspicious if they were to go missing.

There had already been a number of people that had been picked from the other families. Now it looked like they had moved onto the tenth as well.

'Isn't this too risky, even for the King?' She thought. 'He should know that Quinn cares about his people, more than the other leaders...'

"Sir, there is worse news as well. It's not unusual for family members to get killed off, go missing or to even fall in battle, but the tenth family have not suffered from any such things during the time of our takeover. Which is why I find it strange that during this time, that four members in our family have suddenly gone missing."

Xander continued.

"Give me information on those who have gone missing. Even if they don't belong to the inner family group in the tenth family, they are still our responsibility. Perhaps one of the other families has gotten bold thinking that we won't do anything to act, but I will personally investigate this matter myself." Paul ordered and started to walk towards the castle, until he felt someone grab him by the wrist.

"Don't Paul, please listen to me....if you want to live, don't go investigating those missing people." Kazz said, her face almost shedding tears.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1187: Ongoing quests

After learning that the blood weapons were already complete, Quinn got ready to travel to where Alex was. Most of those that had stayed with Alex on the planet, carried the Shadow ability making it easy for Quinn to get to where he needed to be.

Due to Quinn's request being complete, he messaged them beforehand, telling them to turn their shadow active skill on. Since there were multiple shadow users, any one of them would do, but there was a reason why they didn't just leave them on all the time either. Since Quinn could travel to anyone with the Shadow ability at any point and time, it also meant that Arthur could do the same.

Nobody wanted for the original Punisher to suddenly appear in front of them.

Quinn soon appeared next to Alex. There were around two hundred blood weapons consisting of all types of different weapons, all laid out across the floor on pieces of cloth in his foraging room, each one crafted with care.

"Impressive, right? I think my right arm grew about two times its size making all of these." Alex declared proudly, picking up a mace and demonstrating a few swings. "And don't worry I haven't been slacking on your Demon tier weapon. Well technically it will be a Demon tier accessory. It's just with the crystal each process takes a long time, so during the waiting periods I managed to do all of these."

Hearing this, Quinn was worried about whether Alex had even gotten a wink of sleep, but looking around he could see that the forger had recruited a few helpers from amongst the Orbus faction.

Quinn picked up one of the blood weapon swords and used his Inspect skill on it.

[Made with a medium grade blood crystal]

[Not active]

[+10 strength]

[+ 3 agility]

Looking at a few more of the blood weapons, Quinn was wondering how much they would help with the situation the others were in. The weapons had a mixture of three different types of crystal.

Low, Medium and High. Quinn assumed that there might be higher crystal tiers, just none out of the batch that had been given to him. Depending on the quality of the crystal used the weapon would naturally have better stats, but they were still substandard when compared to beast weapons.

However, as soon as Quinn poured some blood from his flask on top of one of the weapons, things changed. The Strength boost it provided nearly doubled in power and a couple even received very interesting active skills. It was an amazing effect, unfortunately it only lasted until the blood energy on the weapon ran out.

"These weapons don't seem to be the optimal choice when hunting beasts, but they should prove useful for going up against the Dalki." Quinn concluded, putting his hand out above them all.

"You could always tell them how they work. Even if they run out of blood packs, people could always start using their own blood to fight." Alex suggested. As long as Quinn explained these weapons, they might become more popular, but the Cursed faction leader was worried that people might think this was some type of vampire curse he was using to trick them to get their blood.

Unfortunately, he couldn't really blame them. If he was in their shoes he might be thinking the same. The Cursed faction had just gained some positive reputation, it would be unfortunate to lose it so soon again.

The next second, all of the weapons disappeared into Quinn's dimensional space. He was the best person to quickly transport them where they were needed. His next stop was to head off to meet up with Helen on one of the Cursed faction planets, yet before he did there was one last thing he wanted to do.

"Before I forget, do you happen to have any more blood crystals left over?" Quinn asked.

"Did you need one? Oh damn! I'm sorry but I used them all up. I thought we needed the weapons, so I concentrated on making as many as I could. It was already hard to forge the ones you collected with those crystals and I didn't want to waste any of them." Alex replied, worried he might have ruined Quinn's plans.

"It's no problem, I was merely curious about something. You did a great job creating all of those!" Quinn replied, giving him a smile. Once Alex was done with the Demon tier beast gear, he had to make sure to reward the forger adequately.

When touching the blood weapon, Quinn had tried to use the gauntlet to absorb some energy from inside it. Unfortunately, nothing had happened when he did. He had been hoping that it might allow him to increase his blood energy.

It seemed impossible to do so with a processed blood crystal, yet he had no way to try it out with a raw one. It was a shame that they had all been used up. Unlike beast crystals, blood crystals were nearly impossible to get his hands on.

He borrowed a ship and headed off into space. The Cursed faction planets were closer to this one, so it made more sense for Quinn to travel this way. It felt a bit

strange, to go out alone for a change. In fact, many people had offered to come with Quinn, especially Vorden.

Having been out of the loop for so long, he had practically begged to be taken along. Quinn would have loved to accede his request, but bringing along a humanoid beast was just a magnet for all kinds of trouble.

In the end, Quinn didn't really see the reason why anyone had to come with him this time. There was to be no fighting, no large enemy, Quinn was just going for more political reasons than anything. He didn't even think he was going to be there long if need be.

Due to this, he had taken a small spacecraft, but there was still ample room for him to move about in, and a kitchen as well as a toilet area. After setting the ship on autopilot, Quinn moved to the centre of the room, and pulled out the indestructible sword.

'The passive skill on this sword, being unbreakable, really suits my style a lot. Due to my strength and my surge in Qi, I'm not sure how many swords could take my full strength. Especially if I was to go up against things like that Demon tier crab.'

Soon Quinn closed his eyes and started to focus on his Qi. He was careful not to overuse it and made sure to keep a perfect balance between the two powers inside of him, before he decided to slowly increase the Qi output to the blade itself.

'When fighting with Agent 2, I learned something. Channelling Qi into a blade is probably the best choice, especially with the second stage of Qi since a person can sharpen and elongate their weapon when needed.'

"While, my gauntlets are powered by my blood abilities. Hand to hand combat is best for this explosive power." Quinn threw out a punch while imagining it in his head.

'Both of these powers are useful in their own situations, and mixing them has its benefits as well. Maybe if I learned how to use the sword decently it could improve my Qi powers. At least while my Qi is stronger than my blood powers it may be something I need to look into.' Quinn thought, as he started to swing the sword a few times, picturing some of the moves he had seen Leo do before.

He was able to imitate them quite well, but training on his own and using them in battle were two different things altogether. While thinking about improving his sword abilities, Quinn took a chance to check out how all of his current stats were doing at the moment.

[Level 67]

With each level up Quinn was still gaining one stat, but the exp requirement was now a number larger than Quinn could even figure out with just one glance. It

seemed like the only way to level up was through hard Quests, and by putting himself in dangerous situations.

[Strength 71]

[Agility 70]

[Stamina 73]

[Charm 60]

[Blood control 184]

These were Quinn's regular stats without the aid of equipment. Of course when powering his body with the first stage of Qi, although the number didn't change his body would get a boost on top of this, and there was also the legendary tier set that he had.

For now, Quinn was planning to upgrade his strength as high as possible. Due to the set, he already had agility points beyond the point where it felt like he was actually getting to move any faster. He also still had the active skill.

If anyone was fast enough to react or put a stop to that somehow, Quinn felt like a single stat point here or there wouldn't change the outcome.

Next, Quinn looked at his blood abilities.

[Blood swipe level 5]

[Blood spray Level 5]

[Crescent kick level 4]

[Blood wall Level 3]

[Blood bank level 3]

[Blood bullet level 3]

After reaching level five with his Blood swipe skill, he had also unlocked Blood barrage, it was the same with Blood spray which made a new move.

[Blood barrage level 1]

[Blood shotgun level 1]

On top of this, Quinn could use Blood control to the degree where he could perform moves such as the Blood drill, and could combine attacks creating a blood hammer strike and such, but these weren't skills that could level up, and seemed to

increase in strength depending on Quinn's blood control level. This was also true for Blood Harding as well.

Then lastly there were Quinn's shadow abilities.

[Shadow control level 4]

[Shadow cloak level 4]

[Shadow void level 3]

[Shadow equip level 5]

[Shadow eater even 1]

[Shadow hop]

[Shadow path level 2]

[Shadow On]

[Shadow link]

[Shadow sink]

[Shadow clone]

They were powerful on their own, but they were even stronger than he combined them together, such as when he was using Shadow control and Blood swipe able to create the Shadow scythes.

He also had created the Shadow disks, that worked great with his soul weapon shadow overload, and there were still skills he had yet to perfect or find the right time to use, from the tablet he had discovered at the fourteenth casele.

After finishing looking at his stats, the last thing he wanted to do was look at his ongoing Quests that were yet to be completed.

[Become the Vampire King]

Quinn was a bit surprised the Quest hadn't been marked failed, after Bryce got elected as the King. Was he supposed to wait until the next election... or did his Quest want him to usurp the position?

[Learn about the Talen family]

Quinn would love to solve this one, but so far he only had that strange symbol and the black sword. Hopefully, bringing it to the tablet might reveal more. He was

becoming more curious as he found more things related to his seemingly normal family.

Then there was the last ongoing Quest.

[Discover something beyond the Vampire Lord]

Were it not for the separate Vampire King Quest, Quinn would have believed that to be the thing 'beyond' a Vampire Lord. However, since he had received this one as well, there should be something else. Did the System want him to become an Original... or something else entirely?

Whatever the case, Quinn had no idea how to go about it, or how close he might be to achieving it. Right now, he noticed that a planet came into his view.

\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1188: The Cursed Faction Family

Before Quinn was to meet with Helen, he decided to do a bit of reading on the reports that had been given to him from Sam. The reports themselves gave details of each planet that the Cursed faction owned, the crystal output of each one, and the quality of crystals from each faction.

On top of this, it had a rating set for the different Shelters based on the planet. All the factions that they worked with and were technically allied with the Cursed faction. Looking at the holographic screen before him, Quinn was trying his best to memorise what he could.

'Eighteen planets in total, and three A rank plus Shelters, one of them which used to belong to the Daisy faction.' Quinn was trying to remember the details. 'I never realised how big the Cursed faction was or how much work Sam and the others have been doing. The information has even been put in a way for me, so it's easy to understand.'

It was true, Sam had worked with Logan in order to sort the information so it could visualise the importance of each planet. It was set up like each planet was a game with different stats. Different Shelters had higher and lower numbers of people living in them. But they were all just important.

Sometimes, Travelers families wouldn't live on the same planet and opted for a safer one. At the same time, they worked on the more dangerous planets. Crystal output was greater on lower-tier planets, yet high tier crystals planets had a lower output but higher grades.

Even with the factions themselves, the strength wasn't as simple as Quinn first thought. The planets with more dangerous tier beasts had higher level Shelters. Usually, only one faction worked and reported to Daisy on these, which in turn reported to the Cursed faction. Still, for other planets, there would sometimes even be multiple factions.

'I can imagine all the arguments that they would have to deal with already.' Quinn thought.

What came as a surprise was as soon as Quinn had come close to the planet, there was already a fleet of ships surrounding him. Seeing them reminded him of a bad feeling since the last time this had happened, they were attacked. However, this was vastly different from the time before, especially since the design of the ships were...unique, to say the least.

Each one had been personalised beyond what others would usually do. All set in bright colours that stood out with painted pictures, or stickers, whatever they were, all over the ships. Straight away, Quinn knew that these were from the Daisy faction.

Soon a request was put in for Quinn to accept an incoming message.

"It's nice to meet you again, I hope you can stay for a while this time, so I can give you a well and proper tour."

The voice on the other end was none other than Helen. The small ship, docked inside one of the larger ones that picked Quinn up, and now he was travelling in the daisy ship.

When Quinn descended from his spaceship, he was surprised to see that only one person was there to welcome him.

"I didn't want you to be scared since I know what happened with the Earthborn group. Well, I think everyone knows what happened, so I thought this whole tour would go better with someone you trusted a little more." Helen said.

When looking at Helen, Quinn couldn't help but stare at her for a few reasons. For one, he would often see her in some type of battle outfit, this time was no different, but the armour allowed for one to see a bit more skin than Quinn was used to.

Especially in the upper department, since she was wearing a tight like corsets beast gear that pushed up a certain pair of twins in the chest department. At the same time, her pink hair was vibrant as ever, as if she had just finished having it coloured.

'Quinn, I would be a little careful with this one.' Vincent commented. 'I think she knows exactly what she's doing.'

"You look...nice." Quinn finally said, not knowing what to really say, and two of them were soon seen walking off. When Helen met with Quinn, she expected more of a reaction from him, but something was off.

She couldn't imagine what he had been through, even after seeing the videos, and they didn't show everything that was going on either.

'Is it because of my reaction from last time, is there really no way to fix this?' She wondered. It was crushing her a little inside to know this. Epically since one person had an advantage over her. The fact that she could be by his side through all of his struggles. That was sure to win her some brownie points.

Eventually, Quinn had arrived at the Daisy faction. The Shelter was unique. The outside on the walls itself were covered in vines, and there was plenty of greenery inside. While the exterior was full of fields with different coloured flowers.

Helen had given Quinn a schedule when he arrived as an announcement had already been made for everyone to gather at the centre. A stage was also busy being

prepared, and he was chuck in the centre of things needing to get to work almost immediately.

Quinn was waiting on the floor grounds for the preparations to be complete. While Helen would give him a few more words of advice.

"We will try our best in the next week or so to visit the other planets. I have split the time up so we can visit four planets a day. Also with ample time for you to relax and get to know the Shelter and people together.

"We will use the teleporters as a one-off to travel between each of the locations as well. With the weapons you bought, Sam told us that you have roughly two hundred. We have decided that the best thing to do is for you to personally award them. We have gathered the top 11 or 12 fighters from each planet, where you can personally award them. Here is a list of their names." Helen handed out.

Seeing how well organised everything was, just because Quinn had planned to visit him was a surprise. What was even more mind boggling was he had no part in it. He didn't ask people to do this, nor was he part of the hassle and trouble involved to make it like this.

This was because Quinn still had yet to realise just how much of an influential figure he was. This was the start of him learning about it more.

When the stage was ready, and the crowd of people had gathered. Helen was the first to go onto the stage. There were loud cheers, mostly coming from female voices since many of those at the Daisy Shelter were travellers and mainly female.

Soon after, Helen introduced Quinn to step on the stage as well. When he appeared, he could hear or whisper going around.

"He looks pretty human and handsome. I never knew he was so good looking in person."

"Maybe it wouldn't be that bad getting my blood sucked by him."

"Helen told us that it's because of him. There wasn't much change to the Daisy faction. In fact, our lives have been a bit better as we share resources and don't fight with the other factions as much as we used to."

It was strange, strange for Quinn to hear mostly positive things about him for once when coming to see a place. Looking over at Helen, he smiled at her for the first time since he had arrived.

"I know the struggle you all have been having on the front line. Hunting beasts every day for the sake of this war. You are an essential part of this Cursed faction, and you have continued to support and help all of us."

"Honestly, I don't like using the word faction. For me, I prefer to use the word family. For me, it makes it, so our bond is stronger. I didn't really have a family growing up, but the fact that there are so many people around who are willing to help fight for the family that I made... then in return, I will do the same. No matter what, I will support you." Quinn said.

At first, there was silence, it wasn't because they thought what Quinn said was wrong but it just wasn't what they were expecting. For a leader to come to them and say these things, they weren't sure if cheering, a slow clap or what was appropriate.

When Helen started to clap and cheer, the rest followed, hearing his speech.

Next, it was time for Quinn to read out the names. In total, there were two men and ten woman who were to receive the blood weapons. However, their excitement dwindled when they laid their hands on the weapons.

They could tell that, unlike the beast equipment, although the weapons were strong, they didn't infuse them with the same type of energy. Because of this, for those that received the awards, not everyone was exactly happy with them.

"What is this?" a person said, throwing the weapon on the floor.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1189: Trophy weapons

It was the last person to be called up onto the stage who had openly shown her disdain for the rewards, a young woman by the name of Iree Johnston, not much older than Quinn. Her weapon that was given to her was a long spear, scarlet red in colour.

Not all blood weapons had this coloration, but the ones Alex had crafted were special in that the Blood fairy had added a drop of his own blood during the process.

Of course, this made them a liability, since these weapons could one day be used against the Cursed faction, but at the same time, the way Quinn saw it, if the two forces were to ever clash and he wouldn't be around, humanity would stand a chance.

Still, it was future proofing himself.

Everyone who had received one of these weapons had quickly come to the conclusion that they weren't as great as their current weapons. They did appreciate getting a reward in public, and decided to consider it a sort of trophy rather than something that could be used for battle.

"What are we supposed to do with these toys? Why even waste precious crystals to create something so useless?" Iree confronted Quinn, unhappy with the spear.

'I thought that the Daisy faction might take all the blood weapons for themselves, but since they are splitting it like this, I should have asked Helen to explain it to those who receive these blood weapons beforehand.' Quinn thought in hindsight.

Gasps sounded throughout the crowd and Helen was about to storm the stage and give Iree the biggest beating of her life, but the Cursed faction leader raised his hand, signalling her to let him deal with it.

"Every day we risk our lives out there, doing what we can to defeat beasts to harvest their crystals! We even had to fight off some of the Dalki recently, and this is what you do with the percentage we have to pay you?! Why don't you give us something useful, or why isn't that giant Cursed ship on the front lines out here with us?!" Iree complained.

Quinn had been half-expecting someone to react like this, in fact, he was quite surprised that those before her hadn't done so already. He would have preferred teaching it to them somewhere less public, since they required the use of blood, but now it looked like he would have to give a live demonstration.

Walking over, Quinn picked up the spear from the ground and dusted it off. "Do you really think I would have come here personally to just hand out some 'toys'? The weapons you've been awarded are no ordinary beast weapons, designed by the

Cursed faction's team to help you face our one enemy." The Vampire Lord explained as he pulled out his flask.

"I can't fault you for thinking that these weapons aren't better than what you are using, but that's only if you use them against beasts. It's an entirely different story if you use them against the Dalki. I think it will be far more efficient to show you what I mean, care to spar with me?" Quinn suggested.

"A fight with you? I'm no idiot! All of us know what you are and how strong you are. You could probably beat me with an ordinary weapon!" Iree refused.

"Don't worry, I don't intend to use any of my beast gear or abilities. I simply planned to prove to you the strength of this weapon." Quinn's shadow covered his body and his gear disappeared into his dimensional space. He had originally been in his full set, as it gave him the air of a powerful leader. He wanted to inspire confidence in the Cursed faction with it.

"How about this, I can see that you have your own King tier spear by your side. Please let me borrow it for the sake of this demonstration. You should know how strong it is, so please use the spear I provided just now to attack me, while I will just defend myself. Afterwards you can be the judge about how effective a weapon is." Quinn suggested.

Iree agreed to this, but before the Cursed faction leader handed over the spear he poured a green liquid from the flask onto the weapon.

"Green liquid... is that Dalki blood?" Some of those in the crowd whispered amongst themselves as they watched the blood weapon start to light up and radiate with power. Not wasting any time, Quinn threw the spear which landed directly in front of Iree, piercing the stage. She pulled it out and gave it a few swings, just so that he could immediately tell her mistake.

"This... how is that possible?" Iree asked. If she hadn't seen it for herself, she could have sworn this was a completely different weapon from before.

"We have the best forgers and the smartest minds in the Cursed faction. They have been working day and night to create a new type of weapon that gets stronger when fighting against the Dalki!" With everyone's attention on the new weapon, Quinn thought this to be the best time to explain.

All of them believed him, amazed at the ingenuity of the Cursed faction. The ones who had received the blood weapons, suddenly tightened their grips, suddenly appreciating the gesture far more than just minutes ago.

However, the liquid inside wasn't actual Dalki blood. Knowing where he was going, Logan had come up with an idea, in case such a demonstration became necessary. Blood from his arm would come out green as well, and same for Borden, but Borden was too small.

Using the same amount of blood in their body, Logan was able to create a blood-like substance that was green in colour. The flask simply contained human blood. It was a shame that Quinn was unable to give all those with a blood weapon a flask but there were simply too many and he didn't have enough.

Similar to vampires, the blood needed for blood weapons needed to be fresh. Away from the eyes of the others, Quinn would tell them the truth at a later time, so they understood that it just needed to be blood that activated the blood weapons.

With that, the event was over. The Shelter threw a little party with food and more this was the time for Quinn to try and get to know the members of his faction, but it would only last a couple of hours. He couldn't afford to waste more time, since he would have to move to the next planet where he would hand out more of them to those deserving.

If he wasn't a vampire this whole thing would have been quite exhausting but Quinn felt fine, and the kind words actually improved his mood. It was reassurance that he was doing the right thing.

When Quinn went to talk to the others, he found many of them thankful to him. Talking about the help they had received from the Cursed faction in many forms. Some of them talked about how their family members had struggled to get jobs, but had received one thanks to him. Unsure what they meant, Quinn asked more about it, until he figured out that it was due to the Green family's involvement.

'Those guys, they are doing so many things to make the Cursed faction such a great group.' Quinn was surprised and decided that he would have to thank them one of these days.

Once time was up, Helen grabbed him, and they moved on to the next planet, where the process was repeated. The faction leader of the said planet he would be on. would also be part of the group introducing him.

Here, he had a similar experience, where the others had given him praise, thanking him as the representative of the Cursed faction for looking after their families and more. These people knew the truth more than the others from the outside. With what blood Quinn had left he would provide a small demonstration at the end.

'Everyone puts so much trust into me as their leader, but honestly it never really felt like I was doing it for them, but just me. To improve my own situations and to stop others from ending up in a similar situation to my old self. I didn't realise how many people my actions would affect.' Quinn thought.

After the second party was over. They briefly returned to the Daisy faction where Quinn was granted a short break, before heading off to the third planet. Seeing that his mood was a lot better Helen was proud of what she had done.

"Quinn, I like seeing you like this. I hope that I can see this smile on your face for the rest of your life." She said standing up, ready to go to the third planet. Going through the main base, they eventually reached the teleporter room.

One of the Daisy faction members proceeded to turn on the teleporter, but there was no reaction.

"That's strange, why won't the teleporter turn on?" The worker wondered, scratching his head.

"Hmm maybe that teleporter is faulty. Let's switch the schedules around. Please open the portal to Planet Frediani instead." Helen ordered, but the worker got the same result as he tried to open the portal.

'Two teleporters not working, doesn't that mean...no..' Quinn thought, as a disastrous thought had entered his mind.

\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

## Chapter 1190: Preparing for the wors

"Me, pick me! It's my turn next!" A little blonde-haired boy around nine years of age yelled. Adeel soon found himself being lifted and placed on top of the shoulders of the dark coloured humanoid Emperor tier beast, greatly enjoying the softness of its fur as he started to rub his head against it. He wasn't the only kid on the beast's body though, as two more were tightly holding on to its biceps and looked to be doing the same thing.

Seeing this made the other kids who had yet to have a turn a little jealous. While the others who had already enjoyed feeling the soft fur wanted to go again.

"Ready... and go!" Vorden shouted as he leapt through the air and spun his body. Using his wind powers, he was able to leap a great distance and with the help of his tails, he could spin his body even faster.

The kids' hair was thrown back and wind was hitting their ecstatic faces as they were screaming out in joy. Once Vorden reached one end of the training room, he used the wall to push himself off with his legs, going back in the other direction.

A group of children could be seen jumping up and down demanding to be the next ones to be allowed on the fun ride. Just seconds before the beast was about to crash into them, he stopped inches away from them, hitting a wall of wind he had erected.

"That was awesome!" Adeel exclaimed as he jumped off Tail's body. "Vorden, your new body is so much greater than your old one. This is so much more fun!"

The kid's honesty was warming Vorden's heart, and the smile on their faces even more so. When Peter and Sil had dragged him in front of the other Blade kids, he was unsure how they would react. His original plan had been to just leave them be, letting them think of him as a scary beast that was on the ship. After all, he never believed that he was the one who had saved them. Without the help of the others, and especially Sil they would have never succeeded in the first place. His attempt had just ended in failure.

However, that plan was ruined in seconds as Peter and Sil had quickly revealed his real identity. The last time they had seen him had been back at the temple when Vorden had spent time with them. Rather than with fear, the kids had been hugely interested in just what happened for Vorden to end up in his current body.

After explaining the details, and dragging out an unwilling Tails for a brief period of time, they had him surrounded. One thing led to another and right now Vorden had become their practical play toy.

"Aren't you getting tired?" Layla, who was in the room as well, asked Vorden. With Vorden's return, she wanted to talk to the original gang more often. As such, she had followed behind Vorden, Peter and Sil. There was no longer and Erin or Cia,

and the regular cursed faction although weren't treating her badly, were cautious of her ever since they had revealed that they were V. "I mean, you've been at it for an hour now."

"Tail's body has much more stamina to spare. Besides, I actually see this as a form of training. I have to be careful with his beast powers to make sure I don't hurt any of the kids. Bit by bit I feel like I'm increasing my speed and power and pushing myself." Vorden explained. "And all the kids seem to enjoy this experience as well."

In the training room, not too far from where they were, Raten was also surrounded by five of the Blade kids, each one of them with a beast weapon in their hand. Raten, had both of his hands bladed, and was waiting for them to attack.

Eventually, one of the kids charged in with a thrust, but Raten was able to quickly disarm him. He parried the blow at the perfect time and used skill rather than strength. Soon, the blade was heading towards the kid on the floor, Raten expecting him to do something, but just ended up flinching instead, before the blade was stopped.

"Don't forget, I'm a Blade as well!" Raten reminded them gleefully. "I know the weakness of your powers, I've also experienced the training you all went through. There will be times when we have no powers, so we need to rely on beast weapons as well. At other times, there will be abilities that are enhanced through the beast weapons. Take this seriously, since I'm doing this for your own good!"

On top of this, the training was also meant to put them in life and death situations, although surprisingly it didn't seem like Raten could quite push them like Hilstion had done. In turn their bodies would slowly unlock the natural human body powers, the power of Qi.

For the past hour Raten had been giving some of the kids a hand to hand combat lesson. He was just as skilful as he was before, if not better now using Muddy's body. If the Blade kids got his seal of approval, or were completely exhausted then they would be granted a ride on Tails.

"Is it really necessary to train the kids this much?" Layla wondered out loud, looking at their tired faces. She felt conflicted having to imagine that given their young age they could be made to fight, even if they were 'special'.

"Yes." Sil answered immediately. "Hilstion will not give up. We have taken something precious from him. Not just me, but he will want all of us back, simply because he believes we belong to him. He is someone who takes pride in claiming to be the strongest, and since someone dared to cross him and take his possession he will do everything he needs to retrieve us."

"The Cursed ship has suffered attacks before, luckily Borden was there to help them last time, but what if there might come a time when the threat is so great that they will need to fend for themselves?"

"We will not let any of them get hurt!" Vorden declared as he came back from another lap, and stared at the Borden, Peter, Sil, Layla and Raten.

"Great, then doesn't that mean we need to train as well." Borden said getting up and pointing to one of them in particular. The one he was pointing at was none other than Sil.

"Let's show everyone how much you have improved." Borden said as he got into a fighting stance.

There was one part where Sil was lacking in comparison to the others, and this was his hand to hand combat skills. Although Sil might have been able to hold more abilities, even without beast gear, Hilston was a monster in speed and strength compared to himself. Which was why, he also was starting to train his body against someone, who could be at least a little comparable to the monster.

Seeing everyone gearing up while she was sitting around doing nothing, Layla's body was itching as well. She grabbed the black blade she wasn't quite adept in and thought who would be the best person to teach her.

'Wait a second, isn;t there one person?' Layla thought.

Moments later, Layla had gone out from the training room the others were in, and found herself heading towards Quinn's personal training room. The place honestly no longer felt like it belonged to Quinn, since more and more people were starting to use it. However, its main use these days was for those with blood powers and shadow abilities to practice their use inside.

Especially since Quinn could now also practice in his shadow void.

Opening the room up, she found the person she was looking for but he wasn't alone.

Fex had his hands held out like a puppet, and currently they were attached to none other than Agent 11. He had a sword in his hand, and Fex was practising his skills carefully. Agent 11 had nuggets of sweat dripping from his forehead, and soon she saw a slip up in the actions.

"How many times do I have to tell you not to fight the flow? You're just making it worse!" Fex yelled, and that's when he noticed Layla in the room as well.

When thinking of swordsmanship, Layla thought back to one person who had controlled Erin in the past, showing her things she was unable to do before, and just now she had seen a small glimpse of it.

"Fex, I want to be your puppet for a little while," Layla said.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1191: Wide scale

Elsewhere on the Cursed ship, Sam was taking what could be called a break for him. Instead of tending to his normal duties, he was accompanying Bonny, Void and several drones that were filming the whole area, as they walked through the building.

Of course, these duties could have been handed to someone else, but Sam actually wanted to meet those that had helped their image during their tough times.

"Allow me to thank you for your video report. It turned out better than I thought and the effects of it have not gone unnoticed." Sam complimented as they walked over to the canteen to grab some food. The reporter duo had returned to the Cursed ship because the public demanded a follow up report on the Cursed faction, something the two of them were happy to accede to.

They had initially wanted to follow Quinn, filming him as he interacted with the Cursed faction's planets, but Sam had denied their request. Officially, the reason had been that they didn't want those living on the planets to think that this was just a mere publicity stunt.

There was also the fact that Quinn had chosen to go out alone, so there would be nobody who could protect them in case anything were to happen. Although the two of them were war reporters, they had felt like their life had been on the line far too many times recently, with the last one being an especially close case.

Bonny had dealt with the crazy situation they had been in a little better than Void, there were many times where he would wake in the middle of the night, seeing a pair of red eyes following him. If it wasn't that, then it would be the laugh of the crazy head general that had tried to blow the whole ship they were on to bits.

In reality, Sam just didn't want the blood weapons existence to become public just yet. It was one thing if some rumours would come up about these new types of weapons, but if they were to be filmed, the other groups would want to get their hands on them as well, especially after seeing their effects.

The Cursed faction had also never asked the vampires if this was an okay thing to do. Seeing these types of weapons could very well cause quite the stir if Bryce came to know about it. However, Sam also felt like the vampires must have known what they were doing as well. Although no one was now following them like before, it would be unwise to have no one keep an eye on what the humans were doing, or they were doing.

"It was the least we could do after Quinn, Logan and everyone saved our lives back then. I still find it hard to believe that people can act that crazy, despite having seen it happen countless times before. People always seem to surprise me. We believe that everyone has the same sense of justice, our views on what is right and wrong

are similar, but that's not the case at all. Many times I have learnt that opinions are divided on certain subjects."

Sitting down in the canteen, the drones continued to float around the three of them. They had to make sure to catch anything at any time. Something always interesting happened when they were around the Cursed and they did not want to miss out this time. It was because of this that many didn't get close to them while they were eating. It just felt strange for a flying camera to be pointed at your face while you're trying to enjoy your meal.

Bonny noticed that Sam's lunch consisted of what looked like a juice box. Placing a straw inside, he took a few sips, and a red liquid could be seen shooting up the straw.

"Do you want to try some?" Sam, jokingly offered, before putting it down and continuing.

"The world is already starting to see a change. History tells us that people's views of what's right and wrong are decided by society. If you think about it, the norm of a century ago is very different from today's norm." Sam spoke with a serious look on his face as if he had spent a lot of time pondering over this topic.

"It's hard to think back to a time before the Dalki, but I wonder what will happen to the world once they are gon-."

It was at that moment, that red flashing light could be seen going off throughout the Cursed ship. Those who wore watches started to flash, indicating that big news was coming their way.

---

The new Supreme Commander had been taught the basics of being a vampire while on the Cursed Ship. He had been gifted a special ring, as well as a flask that he could always carry blood in.

With his training, it focused on the few basic blood spells that almost everyone knew. However, Sach had focused on a few different aspects. After he had gotten used to his stronger and faster body combining it with his beast equipment.

He had been very lucky, in that he was able to relearn his ability from before. It was an original ability and was over the moon that things worked out. Combining this with what he had learnt, his body had become quite something because of it.

'The only thing that I was unable to learn was how to actually use my new skills in combat. I hopped onto the virtual fighters game a few times, but I'm still slightly out of sync. I also decided to neglect using my red aura powers. There is a chance that they could link the martial arts god to me and then link the V powers back to myself as well.'

'One Horn, just you wait. I will return the favour tenfold!'

After learning everything that needed to be done, he had headed back to the main Bertha ship, the one Oscar would use as his command centre.

As soon as everything looked okay, he planned to head back to Earth, in order to sort out everything else that needed to be done as his successor. Samantha would take care of the crew and those on the Curse ship. It just felt right to leave those under Oscar to be in control with Samantha. Instead, Sach would gather people that he trusted.

There was only one close personal that he had brought with him originally belonging to Oscar, which was Jane, his personal assistant.

A ship had been prepared and he was ready to head out. That was, until an urgent message came through.

"Supreme commander, Sach please head to the command centre immediately!" A message was sent out through the ship.

The main Bertha ship's command centre was special, in that it was filled with a plethora of screens and workers who monitored them at all times. It was directing information from Earth, and all the machinery it had set up on the other planets, mainly used to detect incoming signals of rising beast energy.

"Sir, urgent reports are coming through! We have detected a large force of energy heading towards different sections of the beast solar system!"

'The Dalki, they are attacking again, and a large force. Last time it was the Graylash section, what area will it be now?' Sach wondered.

"I just need a brief summary of the reports, focus on where the signals are coming from and calculate how much help we need to send out!" Supreme Commander Sach ordered his subordinate.

There was brief silence before he received an answer, and on the large glass display, the report was now shown to everyone in the room. The man didn't have to say anything, because Sach could see it for himself.

'This is it, they have decided to attack now. The large signals of energy, they're heading to all three sections of the beast planets. The Graylash group, the Earthborn group and the Cursed are all under attack...."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n it's only \$3 dollar a month And read My werewolf system Exclusively.

If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

For MVS artwork and updates follow on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1192: 4095 days

It was a red alert situation. The Dalki had finally decided to start the war in full swing. Sach had expected this to happen at some point, but it had occurred at an uncertain time for the human race. They were uneasy about the introduction of V's.

Reports of internal attacks were coming in left and right for those V. Some weren't even sure the Cursed faction were on their side. To top it all off, the Supreme Commander had recently gone through a change and were still in the middle of the switch over while also suffering the loss of one of their head generals.

In a way, with all the chaos happening, Sach expected the Dalki to attack. Yet this was still a little unusual. He had expected an attack on the Earthborn group or perhaps the Cursed faction. After all, so far, the Dalki had only suffered defeats in battle, with one victory.

It would have been wise for them to gauge the strength of those they were fighting against before waging a full out fight, but it looked like they had already decided that this would be the best time.

'Do they really think they have enough information on us to think they can beat us? or has something else occurred?'

"Report, have there been any signals from earth?" Was Sach's first question.

After bringing up the information on the screen in the command centre, they could see that they had received no such signals.

"Good, be alert and continue to monitor the situation. Remember, a Dalki managed to suddenly infiltrate Earth before so they could do it again. Inform those on Earth to be on high alert. Ask all the citizens to move to the emergency underground shelters!" Sach ordered. "Also, make sure the space station is offline. We will not let a single Dlaki get through us and make their way to Earth."

All the other teleport stations had been shut down as a precaution. Turning them on again would take some time. As a large amount of energy needed to be used, it wasn't so simple as a flick of a switch. Of course, Sach knew the Dalki had to have had a way to travel to Earth due to them doing so in the first war, but one couldn't just teleport a whole fleet of ships out of thin air. There would have to be some device of some kind, or it would take some time for them to do so.

The quickest way for them to send their forces would be through the Earth's teleporting station. Turning it off, also meant they wouldn't be able to return, or run back to Earth unless the fight was getting tough.

'It doesn't matter if we can't win this fight. Then Earth will no longer exist.' Was the thought going through Sach's head.

An emergency announcement was made and sent out to all of the faction leaders and the world leaders, informing them of what was to come their way. They would then pass it on to the people. Unlike the world announcement, this was done this way so there wouldn't be too much of a panic, as information could be passed on from their individual leaders.

Those on the planets were preparing for battle. Their space force and their ground forces were in for a fight of a lifetime.

In the Graylash section, Owen was travelling on their large island-like ship moving towards the centre of their twenty or so planets that they owned. In his room, Owen had a hologram visual of the fleet of ships coming towards all of the planets they held.

"Sir, it looks like the Dalki force is far greater than last time, and they are attacking all of our planets at once. What would you like us to do?" Hector asked, already sweating just from worry.

Thinking about it, Owen started to look through all of the planets. He was trying to decide if he should protect them in order of importance or where he would most be needed. It was a hard choice. He could split his people to help out others, but the biggest difference in these battles that would be happening on the planets was himself. He was unable to split himself multiple times on each of the different planets.

"Air warfare is not the Graylash family's strong point. I want to minimise the losses we have before we can land on the planets. Tell the Graylash members, to take the jet ships and fight on the ground. Divide the troops based on which planets need the most help. I want each of them to last as long as possible before I arrive." Owen ordered.

Hearing this, Hector could only imagine what Owen had planned. He simply wanted them all to stall for time. He was planning to try and save them all, winning the battles on each of the planets before moving on to the next one.

He wanted to interject to say that this was madness. This wasn't a simple battle, but they were now at war. Where fighting could last several months, and every human needed to rest at some point. However, this was exactly why Hector had decided to follow someone like Owen.

"The first planet we will head to is this one." Owen pointed at.

Hector's eyes lit up as he saw which one was being pointed to, for it was the same planet that Owen had done battle on before.

"If I'm correct, the Dalki I fought last time will be there again. This time I won't let him get away." Owen stated. "Also, this planet." Owen pointed at another one. "I

believe there are some from the Cursed faction as well. Make them aware of what is happening."

At that moment, on the very planet that Linda, Wevil and Alex were on, they could see everyone springing to action. Ko, the leader of the Orbus faction, had told everyone to prepare themselves, for the Dalki were coming.

"The Dalki are coming to this planet?" Wevil was surprised, as he was following everyone else to their positions, getting ready.

"It's not just this planet." The second in charge of the Orbus faction, Ely replied, "All of the Graylash planets are being attacked. All we can do is prepare ourselves. The Graylash said they would send people, but the amount they can send is limited since all of the planets are being attacked."

"We need to inform Sam," Linda said. "They can send the Cursed faction or Quinn for help."

At that moment, they could see hundreds of black pods raining down from the sky above.

The news of the Dalki attack was spreading around the base, and of course, it had even reached the ears of Alex, which had been delivered by Ko himself.

"Seriously, the Dalki are coming here! What am I meant to do? Should we head back to the Cursed ship?" Alex asked.

Ko shook his head and looked down on the ground for a second before lifting his head again.

"We haven't told everyone the full situation because right now we all need to focus on our own situation, but it looks like it's a full-scale attack. The Dalki aren't just attacking the Graylash planets, but all of the planets the humans own in the beast solar system." Ko explained.

Now, Alex understood the full extent of the problems. If that was true, then even Quinn would be doing everything he could at the moment. The first thing Alex did was pick up the hammer by his side and pulled down his large helmet that would cover his eyes.

"What are you doing? Get out of here. You are just a forger. You need to head to the underground shelter with the families!" Ko ordered.

"No!" Alex shouted, swinging his hammer down. "If the situation is really as bad as you say it is, then I need to finish this. Quinn will need this in the fight!"

Soon all three groups and all leaders would be engaged in battles on the beast planets. However, one large ship, full of plenty of strong people, had yet to decide what to do, the Cursed faction ship.

What they didn't know was not long after finding out that the Dalki were attacking, that they would be receiving countless requests.

"This is Hector, from the Graylash family. I am humiliated to ask to do this, but the Dalki forces far exceed our projections. We are quickly losing our shelters on our weaker planets, and people left and right. Please, if the Cursed faction can spare any people, send help."

And from another.

"This is general Fay Gump, from the Earthborn group. At the moment, we are at a standstill with the Dalki forces. We need additional support in order to push forward and win this battle. If there is anyone you can spare, please help us."

The humans were soon finding out just how outmatched they were.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1193: Fight for Freedom

The sounds of alarm blaring throughout the Cursed ship were of course related to the unending influx of Dalki attack reports happening throughout the beast solar system. Supreme Commander Sach had ordered to share their intel in real time with not only the main groups' faction leaders but also all their known affiliates.

Right now, the Cursed faction's command centre was busier than ever and everyone on board the ship was preparing their beast gear and checking their supplies. A lot of them had families living on the Cursed faction planets and they were now extremely worried about their well being.

Of course the one who was responsible for deciding how to deal with this situation was none other than Sam. The frown on his forehead was deep as he was troubled as to how to react.

'What's the right thing to do?' Sam considered the options as he looked at the situation as a whole. Those in the Cursed faction wished to protect their families which was only right. Unfortunately, the Earthborn group as well as the Graylash family were both in as much trouble, if not more so and each had sent out a plea for help.

"Quinn, you finally answered we were just told-"

"The Dalki are already here, Sam!" Quinn cut the other off before he could finish his sentence. "I don't know the exact situation from your point of view, but I trust you to make the right decision. You've always known what's best for the Cursed faction. You've never let us down before, so I doubt you will start now!"

With that the call abruptly ended. Though it was faint, Sam was sure to have heard the sound of explosions in the background. It appeared as the fight had already begun.

'Truthfully, with Helen and Quinn there they already have the biggest support of the Cursed faction.' Sam thought. 'However, no matter how strong they might be, there're just two of them, yet so many Dalki and planets we have to save...'

Death was unavoidable in a war, especially in a situation like this, where they had practically been caught with their pants down. Nobody had ever accounted for a scenario in which the Dalki would have enough forces to attack all of humanity's planets at once.

Of course, the Cursed faction would like to help out their own first, but strategically that wasn't the best option. Should they allow the Earthborn group or the Graylash family to fall, they would become prone to suffering from pincer attacks in the future.

'Have the Dalki hidden their actual numbers, did they find a way to create more or are their forces just too strong for us? Whatever the case, with the teleporters jammed we can only send out reinforcements by ship, but if they are already struggling, it's unlikely that they can wait for us to visit one after the other.'

'There's also a risk that our forces won't be strong enough if we split them up too much. At the moment, both Sach and Owen are thinking about the future, trying to keep as many beast planets in their position to continue the fight in this war. I'm afraid that this might be a burst attack, aimed to deal with us now and in one go.'

'The best course of action would be to give up some of the planets and gather our forces on fewer planets. Having too many territories just thins out our own forces, and if we're really already struggling this much, we will eventually lose those planets anyway. Our priority should be to survive and struggle as long as possible... hoping for a miracle.'

If there was one person Sam had confidence in most, it was Quinn. Perhaps he would be able to win the battle for them at the Cursed faction at the same time, there was another reliable person with him who could command just as well, if not better during a state of crisis.

'Helen, Quinn. I'm sorry but I'm going to have to leave the Cursed faction planets in your hands.'

After the decision had been made, the leaders of the Cursed faction had been called for a meeting. The crew on board the ship were getting restless as news was spreading about what was taking place, none of it good.

"So you plan to help out the Graylash faction and the Earthborn group?! I don't think that will go down too well with the others." Dennis stated his opinion after hearing the explanation.

"I have already sent a message to Supreme Commander Sach advising him to give up on saving every planet. We need to focus on splitting our own people, and groups into two squads. Nathan, and the two military groups that were originally put under us, you will head to help out the Earthborn planets. Nathan, as a former Head General I trust you to do as you see fit. Go now!"

The military groups originally given to them by Oscar, combined, were nearly as large as the remaining Cursed faction forces. With this it was more of a numbers game rather than strength.

The sit-in was too urgent for them to remain and listen to the rest of the meeting. The more time delayed the harder it would be for all of them. With the order given, Nathan was already heading out and contacting the other sergeants and groups. Soon several ships could be seen leaving the Cursed ship, and those that drifted in space, would go along with them towards the Earthborn group.

"That still doesn't solve the original problem, if you send our people to the Graylash section they will be unwilling to fight!" Dennis argued. "It might be fine for those from the military since they never acted as a part of us. Their families never moved to the Cursed planets after the groups belonged to us. But it's different for the others still here. How can one fight when they are worried about their loved ones?"

"I know..." Sam admitted with a sigh. The thing was, as a man who had to look at the whole picture things like emotions, feeling and morale were hard to take into consideration when on the battlefield. Still, he knew that they did have a great effect when one was fighting as well, but it was unpredictable. "The Cursed faction people will be in good hands, just trust in Quinn and Helen. They need to understand, that if we don't help out the Cursed faction, then we will-

Once again, in the command room itself, red lights started to flash in the centre. Soon, the screen that was covering the glass window allowed them to see outside. The sensor displayed a large ship heading their way. It wasn't alone as there were several smaller ships by its side as well.

"Who is it? Have the Dalki come to attack us directly?" Megan horridly questioned.

When the ship came to view on the camera though, it didn't look like the typical black Dalki ships. No, those looked like they had a human touch. It wasn't one of the Bertha ship's either, so it was hard to pinpoint just who it belonged to.

"Move, I'm taking over!" Logan shouted as he climbed up onto the meeting table, and jumped across to the main control centre. The others made way for him to place his hands on the ship. "Activate shields!" Logan ordered the Cursed faction ship and crystal energy immediately created several layers of protection, just in time to absorb the shots that had been fired their way.

As the shots hit the shields the whole ship shook a few times from the great power.

"What's happening? Aren't they humans, why are they attacking us?" Shiro asked. Sil, who was standing next to him suddenly noticed something, and his body started to shake. It was the first time Shiro had ever seen his friend like that.

A large man stood in front of a hall of hundred people, his diamond-like armour shining menacingly. His audience didn't look particularly happy to see him, although it could have something to do with their own sad state. They all looked small, malnourished, un-energised and in general a bit lost.

"Today's your lucky day. Those people took something very precious from me and I've come to get it back. You are not to kill any blonde haired people you see on the ship. Doing so will mean that I will make your already miserable existence even worse!"

"However, as for the rest, they must be punished for what they have done! This is a once in a lifetime opportunity for you all. Depending on your performance, I will free you from this place. You will no longer have to remain on my ship and I promise you that our paths will never cross again. As a nice little extra bonus, whoever can subdue this son of mine, will receive rewards that will allow you to live like a king for the rest of your lives!"

A picture of Sil was being displayed in front of them. Hearing this, the eyes of the hundred or so people started to light up, hope visibly returning to them. A chance to escape this living hell where they were being treated worse than any prisoners. No matter what, they would be fighting for their freedom... or die trying!

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1194: Another war

Every time the giant Cursed ship would be hit by the beast lasers, different parts of the ship would rumble slightly. However, Logan was doing a great job blocking the attacks.

Although the Cursed faction had plenty of crystals on board for situations such as this one, they never wanted nor expected to get into a battle where it would be down to who had more crystals on board. Without knowing the enemy that was a bad road to go down.

At the moment, using his ability and his eyesight, Logan was concentrating immensely to use the absolute minimum amount of crystals possible. Each time an attack was about to hit a certain part, he would be sure just to activate the shield in that area.

"Why is a non-Dalki ship attacking us?!" Megan screamed looking for an answer but Sam had no clue what was going on, and from the looks of it neither did most of the others in the command centre.

"No, they're here, now!" Sil said, almost pulling out of his hair.

"Snap out of it kid, you knew this day would come!" Raten shouted.

"It's the Blade family!" Vorden eventually explained to the others. "I've seen that ship before, back on the island it belongs to Hilston!"

A day that a lot of them had expected to come at some point, they all knew the reasons for why they had come. It was, either to exact revenge against Quinn and Arthur, or to get Sil back. The only thing was, Quinn wasn't here to help them this time.

"The Blades, why now of all times?!" Sam banged his fist on the table. "Is he really that selfish? The whole world is in a crisis and they are still thinking about their own agenda. Is Hilston really that arrogant that he thinks there is no one in the world that can stop him even after being defeated!"

What was more worrying were the little battleships that were heading their way. After Quinn's last visit to their island, most of their personnel should have been dealt with, so just who were the ones currently piloting those ships?

'As long as he isn't dealt with, we won't be able to send support to the other groups. I have to inform them immediately about what's going on with the Curse ship right now.' Quickly, Sam recorded a voice message that was sent out to both Owen, and Sach.

"Urgent report, the Cursed faction ship is currently facing its own trouble. Hilston Blade is attacking us. I repeat, Hilston Blade is attacking us!" Sam shouted down the receiver.

It was enough for the others to fully understand how dangerous the situation the Cursed faction was facing and after Sach and Owen had received the message, they worried that maybe the Cursed faction would soon be the one needing the help.

When sending the message out, there was one more person Sam hesitated to ask for help, and that was Quinn.

'If I ask him to come here, and help us. Would he abandon all of those on the Cursed planets to fight against Hilston. If I do that, then there is a good chance that many lives will be lost. The other question is whether we can even deal with Hilston on our own...but I'm not the Cursed leader. Is it selfish of me to make this decision on my own?' Sam hesitated at the moment.

By now, everyone had already left the room, apart from Logan who was controlling the main ship. Because they knew they had a tough battle ahead of them.

Inside the ship, Bonny and Void were busy conducting their interviews with those in the Cursed. Specifically ones that had recently been out on missions. As they wanted to know what their experience was when dealing with those from other factions.

The red alert had been signalled but the reporters were unaware of what the emergency call exactly was, but news spread fast and soon the worries on everyone's faces could be seen.

'A full out war, and they're attacking all three groups at once. I guess since the Cursed ship is constantly in orbit and doesn't have a home planet it settles on, it could technically decide to help any of the groups. Although the most likely choice is to help out their own people.' Bonny thought.

At the moment, she wished she was at one of the other planets, and at the same time didn't. Perhaps it was a sign telling her that she should avoid such a confrontation if she wanted to live.

Instead, all she could do was continue interviewing people and ask them what they thought of the situation, although they were unsurprisingly far less willing to waste any time right now.

"Void, go live." Bonny told her associate.

"We won't be able to edit anything out in that case." Void cautioned her, yet Bonny didn't care and pressed the button to go live herself. As a professional her cameraman shut up and continued to roll.

"I'm sure by now everyone has received the news about the Dalki attacks. I'm Reporter Bonny, currently recording live from the Cursed faction ship, where worries of their families and loved ones are high, I'm sure just like all of you watching too."

The live broadcast wouldn't be viewed by those doing battle, they were unable to, but this was more aimed at the families who were worried about their loved ones currently doing their part to protect them.

Bonny and Void filmed the soldiers that were soon going to go into battle. They didn't bother them as they were preparing, asking Nathan for a few words for the viewers. Everyone was surprised to hear that he and his group were going off to help those in the Earthborn group.

The comments were positive, all supporting them and wishing them good luck in the battle.

As they walked through the main hall of the Cursed ship, suddenly a loud explosion came from their side. The heat could be felt on Bonny and Void's faces. When turning around, they could see the front half of a small ship had managed to pierce the large faction ship, its front nose damaged and slightly bent.

Nearly instantly as well, small little spiders surfaced around the damaged part of the ship, and the little robots were proceeding to repair it as quickly as possible, in order to equalise the pressure inside the place.

It looked like Logan was on top of things, using his soul weapon.

'How did the ship get past my defences and attacks, it was moving a lot faster than the others. Was that an ability?' Logan thought.

However, the hatch to the ship had opened, and out came a frail human who had dark bags on his eyes, and hardly any clothing or beast gear. A crowd from the Cursed had gathered around, trying to figure out what was going on.

"It's a human." They said surprised.

"I know we were being attacked but I thought it might have been a Dalki with all that was going on. Do you think that they could be V?" Another said.

[Alert, this is a message from the Cursed faction Vice leader. We are currently being attacked by a group of people from the Blade family. They are intruders, with powerful abilities and are a threat!]

Hearing this, those from the Cursed stepped back and drew their weapons. However, it was hard for a lot of them to attack someone, when they hadn't been

attacked yet, but that soon changed, as the person lifted his hand, to reveal the floating daggers on each side.

Then tapping all of them, they started to shoot off like a bullet, straight at all of the members around them.

'The Cursed faction are being attacked by the Blades!' Bonny thought trying to make sense of it all, and the tone coming from Sam didn't make it sound exactly safe either. 'I'm starting to think that maybe trouble comes wherever we are.'

"Freedom...I will earn my freedom!" The man cried out like a maniac, as he ran towards one of the Cursed members that had fallen from his initial attack. Lifting the Cursed member's sword, he intended to use his powers to increase the velocity of any item. He soon tapped the back of the sword and saw it spinning off again towards the reporter and the others.

Before it could reach, a shadow raised up in front of them, and when it fell to the ground, the sword had been grabbed by someone. The next second, he started to infuse the sword with Qi, and quickly threw it back, stabbing the invader directly in the chest, causing him to fall to the floor.

"Don't show the intruders any mercy!" Nate shouted. "You've seen it, they're here to kill us all!"

Behind him, were fifty well trained members of the Cursed faction all adapted to Qi training.

"Void, are you getting all of this? We need to keep filming. The situation is getting hectic!" Bonny shouted, as the two of them ran for cover, trying to find a safer place to film from. Zooming in with his camera, that's when Void could see a strange deceive that had been dropped by the ship. However he soon recognised it, and a few seconds later, it had created a portal, activating on the spot.

Seconds later, and multiple strong ability users could be seen storming into the Cursed ship, all eager to regain their freedom.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1195: The family reunited

It took an immense amount of concentration for Logan to prevent the Cursed faction ship from being blasted out of existence while also keeping the small ships from boarding onto their ship. Nevertheless, one of them had managed to slip through his defenses, by suddenly accelerating at a speed he had failed to foresee amidst his multitasking.

Although they had weapons and small ships of their own, Sam had ordered all of them to stay inside. Their group simply was not suited for space combat, so their best chance at survival was for them to stay inside, especially to deal with any invaders like they had to now.

"I need help protecting the vital area of the ship!" Logan used the intercom to make the announcement for everyone to hear. "I can protect us, but without help I don't know for how long."

Logan had to rely on the others to do their part. He had to hope that the inside wasn't too hectic from the one invader ship that had breached them. He was already using his soul weapon, to repair the ship as best as he could, simultaneously taking control of the turrets on the outside, to fire at any other ships that might surprise him.

Soon though Logan could see a huge problem. Using his powers, his soul weapon he needed beast crystals but everyone was busy doing their own thing. On top of that, for some reason, no one was refueling the beast crystals to power the weapons on board.

'Did something happen inside? The battle hasn't been going out for that long, it should be impossible for us to have already run out of crystals! I'll have to switch to just protecting our front to hold them off for a little longer, but someone needs to investigate ASAP.'

Just as Logan thought this, five more ships managed to bypass his defenses going straight to the back of the Cursed ship, spinning, avoiding the lasers. One of them had been hit on the wing but had crashed on top of the Cursed ship itself. The other four were heading towards the thrusters of their ship. They flew close to the outside layer, making it hard for the lasers to reach them.

Feeling safe, the pilot of the front ship didn't even register the large sword until it had already sliced his vehicle in half. The one behind it barely managed to evade the energy blast that had been fired off next.

"WOOHOO! I'll have to thank Longblade and Avion after we survive this! Didn't think I'd get to use this thing so soon, and this one's a lot better than the one I used in the tunnels last time!" Fex exclaimed, as his Mech ran towards the other ships with the sword in his hand.

After Logan's distress call, the vampire had rightfully believed that it would be his time to shine.

---

In the main hall where the first ship had breached the Cursed faction ship, the fighting had turned intense. Although the first enemy had been defeated, out of the portable portal around twenty more had come out, all in similar condition to the first man.

Believing that he and his trained men should be able to handle them, Nate had ordered for the regular members of the Cursed faction to get out and do their best to get to safety, something the non-combatants had gladly complied with. Nate was one of the more trustworthy leaders of the faction on the ship, whose strength was universally recognised since he had taught so many of them.

'We outnumber them nearly three-to-one and it looks like they hardly have any energy to run! This should be doable!' Nate thought as he stepped forward and blasted a Qi powered fist into one of the invaders at the front.

Alas, the next moment he was seen sliding across the floor, albeit hardly hurt. If anything he was confused how his attack could have so little effect.

'What's going on? The combination of my vampire strength and Qi powers are barely enough to move him?!"

Looking at the man in front of him more closely he could see that his stomach had been hardened. It looked nearly identical to the skill that Nate had learned in the past.

'That ability of hardening, it looks like it's stronger than when I used it, but I don't even recognise this person. How could an unknown be this strong?"

Although the Cursed faction did indeed have more people on their side, it didn't take long for them to come to the realisation that looks could be deceiving. Despite their shabby outer appearance the invaders all proved why they had once been considered to be the strongest ability users in the world and why the Blades had bothered to kidnap them.

The hardened one, now aware that he could take Nate's hit without a problem, charged forward once again. When he saw a black sword come swinging at him, he just grinned. Concentrating his hardening ability towards his stomach he felt himself safe, at least until the blade connected and sliced through his body as if it was butter.

A grunt was heard and a large female with horns sticking out from her hair could be seen.

"Layla, what the.... How?! No, when did you get so strong?!" Nate questioned seeing her in her second form, still baffled with how much ease the girl had taken care of the enemy. He had closely paid attention to her during her training before the fight with Helen and he was sure he wasn't that powerful at the time. What exactly had happened in the relatively short time he hadn't seen her?

"Thanks for the praise, but it's actually just this sword that's a bit special. I'll tell you more once we've dealt with them."

A small group of Chained were protecting the teleporter, making it impossible for the Cursed faction members to get close. Seeing this, Layla was planning to get rid of them as quickly as possible, but the teleporter activated once again.

"No, is that, it can't be!" Bonny exclaimed with her eyes lighting up large. The two of them had managed to hide in one of the hallways behind a broken door. It was stuck partially out, so they could continue to film while remaining relatively safe.

Still, the identity of the person came as such a shock that Void nearly dropped his camera.

The large bellied man slammed his two fist together, and flames started to run up and down his arms. "I will be free!" The man proclaimed and those near him repeated it, as if a chant.

Just like all the others he wasn't any ordinary person, yet the man was special even among the other Chained. After all, he used to be one of the Big Four, Burnie Sunshield. He had gone missing, everyone had long since presumed him dead.

"Layla! It looks like me and you are going to have to take that balloon down!" Nate shouted, slamming his fist together and activating the hardening skill over his hands. Qi wasn't the only thing he had trained while the others had been away.

---

Elsewhere on the ship, one of the Chained who had walked through the portal had done so while using her invisibility ability. Just as instructed, once she found what she perceived as a safe place away from the eyes of others, she placed down another portable teleporter.

The place she chose, ended up being one of the canteens that were currently empty. More specifically, she had placed it in the kitchen area. Upon its activation four people stepped out of it. A mostly blonde haired man with some grey by the sides of his head in a full set of beast armour, a blonde haired woman, and a pair of blonde twins.

---

Vorden, Sil, Raten, Shiro, Peter and Borden were currently in the room with the Blade kids. None of them intended to go out, the kids being their clear top priority. Unfortunately there was no good place for them to hide on the ship, so the only thing they could do was attempt to border up and stay in one of the classrooms.

"Did you guys manage to copy abilities off each other yet?" Vorden asked as the children continued to touch each other's hands sharing their ability. Some of them had brave faces on, while others worried.

As for Sil, right now Shiro was still busy trying to boost his friend's confidence. His body was no longer visibly shaking, yet this was mainly for the sake of his siblings. He understood that if he continued to act like he had before, then it would make them worry even more and Sil couldn't do that to them.

"Guys, do you remember how you all felt in that damn temple? Because I remember that suffocating feeling every single day! If we don't fight now, they will force us to return to that miserable life. I don't know about you, but I want none of that crap!" Raten shouted, getting his blades ready and not a moment too soon.

The doors to the room were aggressively flung open, removing them from their hinges and swinging outward, but little Borden was able to jump up and grab them making sure they didn't harm the students.

"Brother Sil, you left us a nice surprise last time. I hope you can come back to us without putting up much of a struggle. We don't want to hurt you, after all." Vicky said with a sadistic smile on her face, while her twin brother Pai just harrumphed.

"How dare you bully our little brother?" Vorden asked aggressively. "Tell her, what do we do with those that try to hurt Sil?"

"We pull their limbs apart!" Raten shouted.

The twins were taken aback by this, nobody had told them anything about the Cursed faction having humanoid beasts. Not only that, since when could those talk and since one was Sil related to them?

"Peter, Borden, take the kids someplace else, otherwise they might get hurt. We will deal with those two." Vorden ordered. "Sil, save your strength until you see him. Trust the others, they are strong enough to help you!"

Peter and Borden clenched their fists and threw out a punch at the classroom wall, breaking through it. Looking back, Sil was wondering if the two of them would be okay, but he had other problems to worry about.

---

Back in the canteen the portal flickered once more, and a large man in diamond armour stepped out.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1196: Not just one

In the main hall of the ship, those that had learned Qi alongside Nate were busy fighting against the Chained that had come through the portal. They were all thankful for having learned the skill, because without it, they would have been seriously hurt and out of the fight by now.

The strong ability users were able to hurt them, but through the power of Qi, they had managed to reinforce their bodies, lessening the blows that they would receive, in turn using attacks of their own. Of course, on top of that, they also had their own abilities as well.

The problem was, the two groups had been at quite the stalemate, but that was about to change with Burnie Sunshield appearing. He had been hailed as one of the strongest fire users in existence. In almost an instant everyone there had recognised who he was.

---

"For those who don't recognise him, the one who has just come out should be Burnie Sunshield, he was one of the Big Four that had gone missing during the Civil War. The Sunshield family had been annihilated and no one knew by whom." Bonny reported. "It looks like today we finally got an answer to that. Although they had never been part of it, the Blade family had power rivaling any of the former Big Four, and the Cursed faction are doing everything they can to survive."

The whole world probably was confused by the situation happening at the moment. Only select families knew about the Blade family's existence, but it was not something the general populace had been aware of. After what Bonny had witnessed last time she had known a few details and it was her job to report accurately on everything that was going on.

That's when Bonny heard a large bang, coming from another direction of the ship. It sounded far off in the distance.

'Have they managed to infiltrate other places as well?' Looking around, she could see that there was no sign of the boy they called Sil. It didn't take much to figure out that the link the Blade family and the Cursed faction shared was due to this person.

"How many drones do you have?" Bonny asked her associate.

"I have four altogether, not counting the camera I'm holding." Void answered.

"Let's spread them out around the Cursed ship, see if we can find out anything else that is going on. Since we're already here it's our solemn duty to show the Cursed

faction's valiant struggles!" Bonny ordered and soon, the drones started to fly up higher, avoiding getting hit as they went around the ship.

---

Burnie's arms were covered in flames that were constantly spinning like small tornadoes and it didn't take long for him to figure out which ones would be the best to take out first. Jumping off his short, large legs, a few sparks of flames were left behind and now coming down upon both of them, Burnie was aiming to finish them off with one hit.

Swinging her sword out, Layla was ready to slash right through the flames and bring down Burnie. At the same time, Nate gathered his strength, and threw out his hardened blood fist. However that wasn't the only thing he had done, before the flames could reach him, the shadow extended from his fist and wrapped around the flames, dwindling them.

'This ability....' Burnie remembered that he had seen it once before. Still, from his elbows, the fire grew larger and strengthened his fist moving it forward with great speed and both of them slammed into the two from the Cursed faction.

Layla's blade had managed to get rid of the flames directly touching the sword, but she still felt them go past her hair and face slightly, burning the surface of her skin.

'What are his hands made of if my blade can't cut through?' Layla was surprised, but could see that Burnie had something similar to brass knuckles on his hand. If her blade wasn't able to cut through it, it meant he had to have similar strength to her.

Even though the black blade had been able to negate the flames, the strength behind the punch had still sent her back quite a bit, tumbling on the floor. As she rolled on the ground, she was quick to get back up.

'Third form!' The bottom half of her body changed to a serpent, and soon she spat the green fire on her burns by her face and sides. Slithering on the ground, she could get to Burnie quicker. Because Nate had managed to match Burnie's strength, he was still in the same position as before.

"Haha, I never thought in my dreams I would get to the point where I could match the strength of one of the Big Four, but here I am!" Nate shouted to hype himself up, both hands held out. He had used all his Qi in his body and his shadow ability to lessen the speed of the flames and the flame man's punch, while the blood hardening protected the outside of his hands.

Both of his legs had sunken deep into the ground, to the point where the flooring panels had been lifted out. The only problem was, he no longer had his shadow to use. Blocking those flames had exhausted nearly all of his MC cells.

Fortunately, he wasn't fighting alone. Layla appeared behind Sunshield, sure that her flame attacks would be useless against him, she decided to swing the blade towards Burnie's back.

"Your weapon seems to be able to block my flames, but it can't block them all!" Burnie grunted, and slammed his foot on the ground. Heat was steaming from his nostrils and in an instant. Fire shot out from his back like a rocket. From the outside he looked like a flaming hedgehog.

The only thing Layla could do was place the sword near her to block most of the flames and cover her body with Qi, but still she was sent back and rolled onto the ground once more, reverting back to her first form.

'We can't beat him, he's too strong. I'll have to take on that form again!' Seeing as her friend was struggling, that seemed like the only choice. Layla tried to think back to the fight against Agent 2 and all the hurtful things he had said... but her mind was going blank.

'What's wrong, why...why can't I visualise it like I used to?'

"You with the strange red hands." Burnie said, as he grabbed Nate's fist with his free hand and pulled it apart. Soon, he grabbed the other fist as well. Now the vampire could feel it, that the temperature was rising in both of his hands.

"Arghh!" Nate started to scream, even with the blood hardening, and his Qi, the power was too much for him to handle. It was clear that Burnie hadn't been one of the Big Four just for show. The fire ability user overpowered the vampire with just his ability alone, but was almost toying with him.

'What is this crap, I can't just watch as someone dies in front of me, just because I can't get over my freaking mommy issues!' Layla was screaming in her head. She could see the negative feeling all around in the room, but still as if a mental block was put on her, she was afraid of absorbing them and turning into that thing again.

Seeing Nate suffer like this, she decided that there was one thing she had to try. She had already tested it on weapons before, but had never attempted to use her powers on a living being.

'I don't know if this will affect me in any way, but I can't just let Nate die!' Layla put on a determined expression as she held out both of her hands toward Nate, and concentrated. It was at that moment that Nate started to feel something aside from the rising temperature. The power in his body was starting to swell. It felt similar to his power, yet slightly different.

'Is this Qi? Just how much power is this?' Turning his head slightly, he could see from the corner of his eye that Layla was on the floor stretching her hand out. This had to be her doing somehow.

Layla had an abnormally large amount of Qi. Not only her own, but her mother had given her powers that had been cultivated over the years. However, Layla's body couldn't handle the enormous strength of power without going to the fourth form.

Still, there was something else she had subconsciously learned to do. Through her telekinesis powers she had been able to infuse items with Qi. She had done so when fighting against Agent 11, powering the broken sword with Qi, to stab through his foot.

Right now, she was doing the same, using her telekinesis powers she was transferring her Qi to Nate. Unlike her, he had a strong trained body in martial arts and was a natural vampire rather than a subclass. Nevertheless, she was worried about the aftereffects this would have on both of them.

Agent 2 had been proof that too much could lead to disastrous effects, but she couldn't hold back too much either.

Pouring the Qi in his hands, and using the blood hardening he had learned, the pain started to lessen.

"Oi, you pompous piece of flaming crap, you've always been the least favourite of the four for me. You always were too hot headed!" Nate shouted as he quickly broke free from Burnie's grip and grabbed the hands himself. The power was a little too much for Nate to handle and his hands felt like they were going to explode if he allowed it to accumulate anymore.

"If all you can do is hold on to me, then this is useless!" Burnie shouted back as he was ready to push forward once more, until shadows rose up and covered both the hands of Burnie once more. However, these shadow's didn't belong to Nate.

"Unlike you and your old bullshit system our Cursed faction doesn't rely on the strength of just one person!" Dennis shouted, from behind and slammed the black sword he had picked up, through Burnie's neck. Quickly jumping out of the way, Dennis was expecting a flame attack, but while doing so he threw out a blood swipe and another blood swipe from another direction had come out, hitting the back of the sword pushing it even further inside.

Dennis, had arrived not on his own, but with Megan as back up as well as with Sam. Dennis and Sam both had a strange blue glows on them, courtesy of Layla's supportive powers.

"How...I was one of the strongest ability users out there...I thought there was only one person who could beat me...how could I have lost just to four nobodies...." Burnie questioned reality, as his breath was dwindling.

"A lot has changed since you have been away. I guess there's just a lot of strong people now." Nate answered.

Burnie had been defeated, but the fighting was continuing in the ship. Layla had exhausted all of her powers once again, unable to move from the ground, she nevertheless had a smile on her face, for not letting Nate die. Still, it seemed like this time her abnormal Qi had even affected Nate, since he had almost collapsed to the floor instantly as well.

"Megan, Sam we have to get them out of here, and get rid of the rest!" Dennis shouted.

Sam, seeing how much trouble everyone was in, and knowing what the Blades were like, had predicted this. Their shadow powers were strong but it took a toll on them. If someone else as powerful as Burnie would appear, there was no guarantee they could beat them now.

There was no time for rest, but the world due to Bonny and Void had just witnessed something unbelievable happen. Something beyond their understanding, and it looked like there was more to come, as the drone had entered a training room, where two humanoid beasts were facing off against the Blade family twins.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1197: Three Sils

The livestream had shown everything. The reveal of one of the Big Four working with the mysterious Blade family, and as quick as they learned of his existence, they quickly all witnessed his demise as well.

During the time the video was playing, Bonny did her best to inform everyone of who the Blade family really were. A secret family that had ruled the Big Four behind the scenes, the strongest ability users in existence.

After witnessing everything so far, comments were coming in faster than ever under the video.

"Do you really believe that there was this Blade family behind the Big Four?"

"They had the missing Burnie, so it has to be true. Maybe they have Mona as well. Besides, if it wasn't true this video would have been taken down."

"Well, who is there to take it down, you have to remember that there is a war going on at the moment."

"Was Burnie always that weak? Maybe he wasn't all that. Did you see how the Cursed members banded to beat him. Maybe that's how he was easily captured."

"My family has fought against the Sunshield, trust me their power is not exaggerated. If Burnie could have, he would have been able to destroy the whole ship with his flames, but why didn't they do that?"

There were a couple of things that had led to Burnie Sunshield's demise. One of them was the fact that he was unaware of their shadow ability and the strange black sword. Both of these things had been able to suppress the power of the flames that would have otherwise killed the others in an instant.

On top of that, any large scale attacks there was a worry that the ship would be destroyed, but their goal wasn't to destroy the ship, it was to find a certain someone.

"Those other ability users. I recognise some of them. Isn't that Danny Wang, the famous wind user who went missing."

"Yeah, now that I take a closer look I recognise a few of the others as well, they all went missing at some point in time."

The reason why Sam had decided to come to the main hall to help out the others was because he had predicted this. When seeing the ships flying this way, he had been wondering just who could have been piloting them, and the only conclusion he could arrive at were the Chained.

With them on board, he knew the fight was going to be tough. Now wasn't the time for him to sit back and stay in the command centre. Leaving Logan in control and charge of everything, Sam had decided to go out and help. With his own shadow ability and vampire strength he should be able to do something.

Maybe the remaining ones weren't as strong as Burnie, but he knew that whoever the Blade family had kept around would have to have a powerful or useful ability. These were people whose strength would only be second to the Big Four.

"Quickly, move them to a medical bay or one of the training rooms!" Sam ordered the Cursed members nearby. While he swung a blood swipe from his hand, trying to ward off another ability user.

Around him, that's when Sam noticed multiple dead bodies from the Cursed faction. Including those that had learned the Qi powers. With Nate and Layla busy keeping Burnie in check, the stalemate had been broken. Also, looking at the attacker's eyes, he could see it. The hunger, as if they were obsessed with breaking out.

'Damn it, Peter, where are you! I ...I...need to call Quinn.' Sam finally decided as he pulled out his mask... unfortunately, his call didn't go through and he could only leave a message. It seemed that whoever Quinn was fighting appeared to take all of the Cursed faction leader's concentration.

'It looks like we're on our own.'

---

Peter, with Borden on his shoulder, Sil and Shiro were leading the kids out of the training room and through the halls. They didn't know where to go, but they were looking for the place where there would be the least amount of trouble.

'The others, I can hear them fighting, we need to join them quickly.' Peter thought, but also he couldn't just leave the kids. After all, it was Blade's goal along with Sil and the big bad wolf had yet to show up.

"What are you doing?!" Adeel asked as he stopped and so did the other kids who were following behind the others. "Why are we running away? We can hear the fighting going on, we need to help!"

"You guys are who they're after." Shiro tried to explain.

"And do you think running is going to help?" Adeel replied. "Hilston won't just go after us, he will try to kill everyone in this place. If they are fighting right now, then it should mean that he's using the Chained. If that's the case then, it also means we're the ones most suited to fight them!"

"We grew up learning how to use their abilities. Some of us can copy more than one ability and we've trained to fight against them. The stronger they are the stronger we are!"

Due to the Blade kids' young age, the instincts of Peter and the others had been kicking in, believing that they had to be protected, kept away from the battlefield, but these weren't any normal kids. On top of that they were right. Running away was just stalling for time, when they could be helping fight off the invaders.

"You're right, screw this. Let's go!" Peter shouted, turning the other way, and now was heading towards the sound of where the fighting was coming from. Sil wanted to say something but couldn't so instead he had decided to follow along with the others' and head towards the main hall.

Borden soon was seen jumping down and grabbing something from Peter's pocket on the way down. A green syringe stabbing himself with it, his body soon started to revert to the normal size it once was.

"Come on, let's do this!" Borden shouted.

[Everyone wait!]

A voice sounded through their communicators.

[I heard about what you are planning to, but you shouldn't just charge in blindly without a plan. If you want to face them, you should do it somewhere where you can have an advantage. You should head to the main hall, because it's the safest place. The sensors on the ship indicate that there were more sources that had entered through another teleporter in the canteen area, and they have split up.]

[I can't see who each one was, but two of them have stayed together as they had been heading to the classrooms not too long ago.]

Hearing this, it was easy enough to guess that it was Pai and Vicky. The two Blades they had just seen.

"So the strong ones came in later... which means he might be here as well." Sil mumbled.

[If you follow my instructions I can safely guide you to the hall. I was only able to check now, since the attacks on the ship have stopped, but I still need to remain here to repair the ship as it gets damaged. If the attacks have stopped I can only guess that one of those signals has to be Hilston.]

Even if this was the case. The other people who had entered after would soon join them. If it really was Hilston Blade, then that could mean death for the whole team.

"Wait." Peter said with a big smile on his face. "The main thing we need to do is lure away the ones that are after Sil right. Then I have a plan. Shiro, you take the kids to the main hall. Adeel, I want you to beat the crap out of them all, and leave the others to us."

The next second, Borden felt a mud mask being placed on his face, and his whole image was starting to change. Not much needed to change since Borden looked relatively similar to Sil in the first place. After that, Peter started to transform so he too looked like Sil, making the Cursed faction have three Sils all together.

Shiro, had left soon after, escorting the kids based on Logan's instructions, while the other three needed to decide which signal they would head towards.

"Are you sure this is a good idea?" Sil asked worriedly. "My mother and father are both ridiculously strong as well, and if any of you two were to meet Hilston you might not make it out alive. I think all three of us should head to one signal and team up on them."

"Do you feel like you stand a chance against Hilston in a fight?" Peter asked. The real Sil remained silent, but the one who was actually Borden was nodding away.

"You see, we're not scared of Hilston. With the way you are now, Sil, I don't think you could beat him. Just promise me that if you see one of the others, use them as a warm up, and come save our arses later!" Peter said, running off.

The three of them split up, each heading towards the different signals around the ship. One of them had headed to the canteen and could now see an old blonde haired man with white hair walking there.

Another headed to the entertainment area, where the games would often be and could see a beautiful middle aged woman. Lastly, heading towards one of the other training rooms, there was a man in a full set of diamond armour.

"Oh my, I never expected for you to come to me on your own? What a reunion this seems to be." Hilston said with a smile on his face.

Clenching his fist, and lifting his head, a smile could be seen.

"Come on you crazy old bastard, I'm going to knock your head back a couple of times!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1198: A ray of hope

Out in the main hall things were getting tough for the Cursed faction. While they had initially been valiantly attacking the intruders, convinced that their high numbers would be enough to defeat them, the tides had turned and the Chained continued to push them back for more reasons than one.

'More and more of them are coming through that damn teleporter!' Sam observed, drinking some of the blood from his flask. He had overused his blood skills trying to help his subordinates, but to limited effect.

Those around him had switched their fighting styles to a more defensive one, mostly trying their best to survive this battle. Truth be told, if it wasn't for the Cursed faction leaders being there fighting alongside them, many might have fled, the enemies they were facing were just too strong.

'They must be the ones in the ships who had been attacking us earlier. Hopefully Logan might be able to help us soon, otherwise it doesn't bode well for us. Nearly half of the people that Nate had trained have died, while we have only managed to get rid of six of them, including Burnie.'

Thinking about this, Sam was biting his lip. They needed a new strategy, fast. There were still many Travellers aboard the ship, but all of them were weaker than the ones still holding the Chained back. Getting them involved would only increase the bodycount, something he wanted to avoid, if at all possible.

In the middle of his thoughts, an ability user had reached Sam, after having subdued the faction member in between the two. He opened his mouth wide and let out a loud scream that pushed Sam's whole body backwards.

As a vampire Sam had strength on his side, but his ears were far more sensitive than a human's, causing him to cover them up with his hands. Not only did it hurt him, but it appeared to have a paralyzing effect on him.

With a spear in his hand, the ability user was ready to thrust it forward, until something whizzed past the two of them. The next second the ability user received a punch in his stomach. The Chained tensed but the blow hardly hurt, looking forward he was unable to see the assailant, but the next second, another scream was let out directly next to his ear.

His ear drum burst open, blood flowing down his ear, he fell to the floor, which allowed him to see that the one who had done him in was but a mere child. Then another one ran up to him, creating a giant fist and swung it down hitting the man's whole head and upper body, knocking him out.

"That's one down, a couple dozen more to go! Come on, we need to help and deal with the rest!" Adeel shouted.

Other Blade kids charged on to the scene. They were working in groups of three, allowing them to display a surprising amount of teamwork.

Adeel was the one who had saved Sam. He had used a speed type ability to quickly arrive at the Chained and hit his stomach. The damage might have been limited, but Adeel just needed to touch him to copy the sound user's ability.

Next another Blade kid who also had the speed ability touched Adeel hand passing on the power, and jumped up to the side of the chained's ear, using the same power on himself. Lastly, one of the Blade's kids with a growth ability created a giant fist whacking the Chained in the head.

"I guess it was actually a good idea we came here after all." Shiro said, lifting Sam up by the arm. The Cursed faction viceleader couldn't quite believe his eyes, but a bunch of young kids were managing to do what a group of trained men had failed.

"You're surprised, right? Well hanging around Sil and Peter for a while I realised something. Even before Raten and Vorden had returned, these kids spent all their time training to fight. Practicing with Raten just made them that much better. It seemed like they had a good base to start with as well." Shiro explained.

Now the tide was once again in their favour. For a second Sam believed they could do it, and he didn't intend to slack off either. It would be a shame, if they let the kids be the reason for why the Cursed faction would survive such an attack.

However, soon three of the Blade kids found themselves in a tricky situation. The trio had charged towards a man with black tattoos covering his eyes, but when they approached him he had been unafraid. The group of kids had remained cautious of him but when they got close, he suddenly dashed forward and instead of them touching him, he touched the heads of two of them, their bodies immediately sinking to the ground. Their own weight crushing them on the spot.

"What is this? I can hardly move and it feels like an elephant has sat down on me.'

Trying to lift up their hands, they barely could fight it with all their strength before they were pushed down again.

"Oh, so it's not heavy enough for you. You seem to have the same ability as the Blades but a touch is exactly how my ability activates. They told us not to kill you, but if I die here what's the point!" The man spoke as he increased the gravity their body was under even further.

Both kids let out a gasp of air, as they felt like their lungs were crushing and collapsing within themselves.

"Let them go!" Sam demanded, and threw two large lines of red aura directly at the tattooed man.

When the Blood swipe was half way, they seemed to hit something and shattered there and then. Another ability user was seen standing by the side, with his hands on the ground. He was the one who had blocked the attack.

'These people, they're not thinking straight! They're mad enough to even kill kids for their freedom!' Sam thought, but no matter how hard he tried to charge forward, people would continue to get in his way. There was no hope for these two children.

"I can not let such an act happen, right in front of me!" An old voice yelled. A flash of blue hit the tattooed man. It lifted him up into the air, and the attack continued to push him onto a wall. His whole body shaking, foam coming out of his mouth, until the attack had stopped and he was allowed to fall to the floor.

Now standing in the middle of the two kids, his old wrinkled hands could be seen, with blue lightning twirling around his fingers.

Bonny and Void were no longer in the hall, but Void, able to control what was being displayed on the livestream, had switched to the main hall camera, which continued to record everything.

"Hey, does anyone know where I could've seen that old man before?"

"That grandpa has a lightning ability, how many people do you know who have it?"

"That's Grim Graylash, the ex leader of the Graylash family."

The comments under the live stream continued to flood in.

The old man soon fired his lightning towards two other users who were close to hitting some of the Blade kids.

"Doing such deeds is not worth our freedom. I would rather fight against our captors again, rather than resort to harming innocent kids!" The old man Grim yelled.

Smiling at the situation, Sam never thought that perhaps, there would be those in the Chained that still had the will to fight back.

---

In the canteen, a middle aged man whose hair was starting to gray could be seen. He was wearing gold armour with large oval shoulders. Had a great sword in his hand, making him look like a knight of old that had fought in many battles in the past.

"Sil, you should understand why we're doing this. You know why we have to listen to him! There is no human on Earth that is stronger than him. You know how things will end if I fight you, Son, so just come with me willingly."

Clenching his fist, Sil's whole hand was shaking.

"You're not the one..." Sil mumbled. "You're not the one I wanted. That means someone else is fighting against him. I have to... I have to help!"

Not wasting any time, like a flash, Sil moved so fast that his father was unable to see him, the next second and he could feel a strong fist hit him from behind in the back and had lifted him in the air.

It wasn't just one, but the punches continued to rain down hitting the armour one by one. The armour was strong but it wasn't invincible. Using the power of six high level abilities at once, and the strength ability, Sil's hands were out damaging the armour. Blood was coming out from his father's mouth.

'The damn kid, he...isn't like he was before. What did he do to get so strong in the meantime?'

He moved his hand slightly towards the sword but before he could, Sil was seen above him, and using both hands he slammed down hitting his father to the floor. The next second another kick came hitting him again.

His father could simply do nothing to stop the constant attacks happening his way at him.

"I don't have time, they need me!" Sil shouted, as he started to imitate the hammer punch of Quinn's. Stomping one foot on the ground, pulling back and snapping his arm out, hitting his father right in the stomach and sending him flying through the doors ripping them out as he went past.

Not a single hit, Sil hadn't even been damaged in the slightest, but he didn't notice because he only had one thing on his mind.

'I have to go find Hilston, before it's too late!'

Not being able to move, lifting his head slightly, the middle aged blonde haired man didn't know where he was, but he knew what had happened.

'Sil, I wish you luck, because you're going to need it. Perhaps you can break free from this life that we weren't able to. I'm tired of this act.'

While everyone was still busy fighting inside the Cursed ship, a beeping sound could be heard coming from the command centre. At first Logan thought that their

bad luck streak was continuing, but when he saw the reason behind it, a slight smile came back on his face, a ray of hope.

As long as they could hold out for a little while longer, there might be a way out of this without anyone else dying.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1199: Doom

'This is one of my favourite rooms to be in, it's a shame that it's going to be trashed any second now.' 'Sil' thought inside the entertainment room. It was filled with VR machines, AR games, Block Block, a bar and more.

Standing opposite him was a beautiful middle aged woman in golden armour. From the looks of it, it must have been custom designed, as it was form fitting, allowing for ease of movement.

"Sil, when did you get so aggressive?" She questioned him, convinced that the one before her was her son. "You should know that your little act of rebellion is utterly useless. When has Hilston ever not gotten his way? Just come back to us, my dear son."

Being friends with Sil and related to Vorden, one might think that he would be upset at hitting his so-called mother, but Borden knew the truth as well. Hearing her say such things was making him grind the back of his teeth.

"Son? How can you say such a thing so easily when you know it's not true?!" 'Sil' shouted in protest. "When have any of you ever treated us as family?! Hilston isn't even around at the moment, yet you are still keeping up this dumb act?"

A bulging vein could be seen sticking out from the side of the woman's forehead. One could tell she was angry even though the smile on her face remained. The truth was, she wasn't Sil's mother, nor was she Vorden's, Borden's, Raten's or any of the other Blade kids, as all of them only had one true father and that was Hilston himself. An act that he had forced upon them all.

"You make me sick!" Borden shouted, ready to charge forward, but before he could take even a single step he was hit by a large bolt of lightning. Borden had been able to feel the tingles before the attack had hit him, so he had firmly planted his feet on the floor. Bracing himself, gritting his teeth he had allowed the bolt to hit.

It continued to shock him, and the Blade mother was now starting to worry.

'He's not going down, did he copy a hardening ability?' The Blade mother wondered as she sent out more and more bolts. The Mud Mask disguise started to fall off, peeling from his face, and eventually changing the rest of his body with it, revealing Borden's real appearance. The scales running down his arms and on his head.

The attacks were hurting him, but simultaneously they were releasing a hidden energy inside of his body. Afterall, the more a Dalki got hurt, the more power they were able to summon. He quickly fought through the pain and dashed to the side, picking up the strange Block Block machine that was the same size as a boxing back, and hurled it at where his 'mother' was standing.

S

Stopping her lighting, the woman quickly created a giant fist of earth the size of an elephant and swatted it away.

"You're not my son!" She shouted, the smile on her face had disappeared. Feeling like she had been played for a fool, she was ready to get serious. Following Hilston's order she had held back, not wanting to accidentally kill the boy he was after, but given Borden's current appearance it was impossible to recognise him as a fellow Blade kid.

"Neither is Sil!" Borden shouted, punching through the giant fist causing it to split into multiple smaller rocks. Using this to cover himself he dashed in and threw out another, hitting her chest, sending the woman flying away through the air. However, at the same time she had opened both of her palms, firing out a jet of water which slammed into the three spiked Dalki boy. His body crashed through several of the VR machines and Block Block games until he had hit the bar area breaking all the glasses and stools.

'Damn it, I hope they aren't going to make me pay for all this.'

The woman's abilities were strong, but it seemed like that was really all the Blade mother had going for her. If that was the case then the fight would be easier than Borden had imagined. Perhaps he had thought this too soon. He could see the Blade mother getting up from the ground.

A Dalki's punch was no joke, breaking multiple bones even under the armor. A small bit of blood could be seen coming from her mouth, but the next second the golden armour started to glow brightly.

By the time the light dimmed, she looked to be uninjured, even the armour itself was back in pristine condition.

The active skill had healed all of her wounds instantly.

'That's not fair! Why doesn't beast gear work for me?!" Borden was complaining, but that was when his Dalki senses told him that something was up. He could feel a terrifying presence had arrived.

---

At the same time, Pai and Vicky Blade were fighting against two humanoid beasts. One of the abilities that nearly all of the Blades had decided to take before invading the Cursed faction ship was the lightning ability. Unfortunately for the twins, it proved to be almost completely ineffective against the mud like Demi-god tier beast's body, and Raten continued to absorb the attacks for both of them.

Not only that, but in terms of power, strength and skill, it was hard for the twins to match up. Both of them felt like they were really down to two abilities.

"I don't understand. I was sure that one of them had to be controlling the beasts, but these two are acting fine even with them gone!" Vicky exclaimed in frustration.

There was something else that was bugging Pai as well. Each of the twins was able to hold a total of three abilities, but as long as they held hands together then had access to even more powerful versions of their six abilities.

However, whenever Pai and Vicky would get close, the tailed beast would throw out an attack or charge into the middle of the two of them, forcing them to separate.

Once again, Pai glanced over to hole in the wall, which the others had used to escape. The few times he had tried to get close to it, a giant slash of wind would come at him, and Tails would follow up.

"Didn't we already tell you?" Vorden spoke as he went to punch Pai in the face, which the Blade boy dodged. He grabbed the beast's fist and pulled it forward, intending to knee it in the stomach but before his attack could connect, one of the tails bound the leg. The two of them continued in this fashion exchanging punches and kicks, blocking none of them using an ability as they got swayed in the middle of combat, until.

"Vorden? Am I dreaming, is that really you, but how?" Pai questioned.

Vicky on the other hand, was still firing off her abilities at the Demi-god tier beast, struggling to face what she believed to be the stronger of the two opponents.

"Has that thing hit your head? How does that thing look even remotely similar to Vorden?" Vicky shouted.

However, Pai could tell. Back when they had been living in the castle, they would fight multiple times, and Pai enjoyed teaching Vorden how to fight. Since Vorden would be in control of Sil's body most of the time and Vorden wasn't the best when it came to fighting. It had almost become a routine for them and from the way the Emperor-tier beast fought, he could tell.

"Since you know that now, let's stop this, Pai. I know you still care for Sil and us, so why are you following his orders?" Vorden asked in the beast's voice.

Hearing this, and distracted even Vicky and a slip in concentration allowed for Muddy to make a cut across her forearm.

"Damn you!" She shouted leaping back. "If that one's Vorden, then this f\*cker must be Raten!"

It was at that moment, that Vicky realised something was up as well. No beast should have thought like this, and even the weapons that were muddled looked more like beast weapons than anything.

"It can't be..." She froze, but there was no time for chatting, as a red signal was flashing around the whole Cursed ship, and soon it was starting to shake once more.

---

In one of the other training rooms' Hilston could be seen with his hands held out, pointing towards 'Sil'.

"You dare to call me crazy?!" Hilston shouted as he had stretched out one hand. "The real Sil would never have such guts! Apart from your sharp tongue, you don't seem to have much else going for you, though!"

"I always enjoy seeing someone proud kneel down before me." Hilston commented as Peter's body did the gesture without his will. "Telekinesis is commonly regarded as one of the weakest abilities out there. Even the strongest users can't do much due to the limitation of their MC cells, but for my Blade family it's no problem."

Peter struggled, but only resulted in him moving slightly. It looked more as if he was shaking in fear more than anything. He knew a bit about Hilston's ability from Layla. She had once described it to him as moving an invisible force. If one could break free from it, then Hilston would have to locate him again to use it, shooting out the invisible force.

"If Telekinesis really is that strong, then why the hell did you still lose that fight back then, huh?" Peter taunted him. In that moment, using all his strength, activating the beast gear he had, the Wight broke free from the power pushing off the ground.

It felt like he was pushing against a solid steel door but he knew that for a brief second after saying those words Hilston should lose concentration.

'Quinn has been doing what he can to grow stronger, just so he can deal with people like him. It's time to show him that I've been getting stronger as well!' Peter thought as he dashed forward, and was now by Hilston's side.

"You have no idea." Hilston harrumphed, as he simply moved the back of his hand. Peter was confident in his strength, he was confident to have grown alongside Quinn's strength but something had played in his head.

'Protect the head', a lesson that had been ingrained in Peter for a long time ago.

At the speed Peter was travelling at, if his punch wasn't able to overpower Hilston's back slap, then the slap would hit his head. Knowing this, Peter changed his punch, and pulled out the tonfa that were kept by his side, lifting them up.

Immediately, the tonfa broke and the next second, he could feel the bones in his arms crushing, as he was flung to the other side of the room, embedded into the wall.

"Thank you for reminding me, but I won't make that mistake again." Hilston said, as the armour on his body was slightly glowing.

It was at that moment, that all of Peter's confidence in winning this fight disappeared.

'This guy....is a monster. He'll kill everyone.'

The room started to flash red constantly, and the entire ship started to rumble. Then it started to shake to the extreme. Explosions were going off in different areas.

'What's going on? The attacks should have stopped by now! Did... did one of my tools dare to betray me?' Hilston thought, rage on his face visible.

Soon though, a loud bang sounded directly from above them, parts of the ceiling fell to the floor, and then an equally loud bang was made as something had hit the floor. Peter, looking towards what had just landed and caused all the noise. All he could see at the moment was an incredibly long looking tail, black in colour.

S

---

"Let's just hope this was the right decision, and I haven't just doomed us all." Logan mumbled, already half regretting what he had just done.

\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1200: One of them

With the simultaneous Dalki attacks going on everywhere, all three main factions were suffering. The battles that were being held in space, soon went toward the planets. It seemed like the Dalki weren't really fond of space combat either as they believed in their own physical prowess.

It had been the same back during the first war. A large mothership, black in colour but odd shaped like a blimp had been used to reach Earth. Whatever attacks they had used against this mothership had been ineffective. Once that large ship had been close enough, it had fired out several black pods to invade their homeplanet.

It was nearly the same this time, the main difference was that the pods were landing on the beast planets instead. Having to evaluate everything that was going on was Sach, the new Supreme Commander. The giant Bertha ship had drifted towards the centre most planet of all those that belonged to their group at the moment.

'It's just like before, even after several years we are unable to create anything that can damage that damned ship. They aren't exactly holding themselves up in those either. Are they pursuing an overall goal by taking over the beast planets or do they just do it, to cut off our resources?'

"Jane, have there been any reports about any strong signals, or any sighting of Dalki four spiked or higher in the Earthborn group?" Sach asked, listening in to the constant reports that were coming from each of the planets. Not one of them was doing well at the moment. The silver lining was that they were able to hold their position, but for how long? A week, a month? That wasn't even accounting any rogue elements...

"Negative, none of the leader type Dalki as you refer to them have shown up on any of our planets. However, I feel the need to point out that there are those struggling more than others. Planet Caladi didn't have any strong forces stationed there since it's been classified as a green portal planet."

"Careful estimation predicts that they won't be able to last to the end of this day until they are taken over. Their leader has already requested help from the Cursed faction. I got word from General Nathan that he should be arriving soon with two army groups. Should I send them to reinforce Planet Caladi?"

Thinking about this, Sach was wondering if there was any point fighting for Planet Caladi and a few other green portal planets. They made for ideal living areas for the humans and also good training spots, but they were also planets that strategically speaking could be called expandable. He also had the words of the vice Cursed faction leader on his mind.

With all the other planets struggling as well, Sach had to agree with Sam's suggestion, they couldn't save them all...

"Tell Nathan and his group to escort everyone from Planet Caladi to one of these planets." Sach ordered as four planets lit up on the screen. They were close to each other, and had high tier beasts. They weren't exactly safe for civilians to live on, but in such a critical time they couldn't be too choosy. The military needed to concentrate their resources and protect what was most important.

"When he's done on Planet Caladi, I want him and the two army groups to continue with escort duty. Assign him two of the Bertha ships and get as many people off those planets as possible, before you bring them here."

Jane saluted and immediately proceeded to send the messages out to all the others but there was something worrying the Supreme Commander. Sach was sure that the Dalki were smart enough to launch a simultaneous attack on all of their planets, they might also have information on what planets were most important to the humans. In turn they would send strong forces to make sure to get rid of them.

Perhaps, they might have even predicted their current course of actions, but it was all the better for them. The Dalki would have to leave behind a token army if they wanted to claim each of those beast planets, causing humanity to fight against fewer Dalki in the end.

Unfortunately, they had yet to see any Dalki leaders, so where were they?

After Jane had finished sending and giving out the orders she looked back at Sach, noticing he wanted to ask something.

"According to our reports, which planet is currently facing the most trouble? All of the Shelters on them are A rank, so there shouldn't be too much difference. Unless there is a terrain issue." Sach asked, hoping he could perhaps pinpoint the location of them doing this.

"The planet that is struggling the most is Killor. It's a red portal planet that is mostly covered in snow and forest. However the terrain shouldn't be a problem and actually the forces there are greater than anywhere else." Jane reported.

"Greater there than anyone else? Is the faction living there particularly strong?" Sach was a little confused.

"No, that is the planet that Head General Samantha is currently on. She has taken some of Oscar's strongest people with her, yet they are struggling more than any other."

That was the answer that Sach was looking for. This was the planet that he needed to be at the most.

The large Bertha ship stayed in orbit away from the four planets. If one was to look through the glass in the command centre they could see two of the planets in the

distance in view. If they zoomed in, they could also see two of the Dalki mother ships.

They would often stay in orbit after dropping the black pods. Seeing this was also the confirmation that the Dalki forces far surpassed humanity's expectations. When they had come to attack Earth, there had only been one of them.

Sach had just landed on Planet Killor. He had made sure to arrive on a part of the planet, where no battles were taking place. Since the fortresses were well guarded and stronger, ability users were prepared to fight off the Dalki. Seemingly realising that, the Dalki would come in groups to test certain things, and after a short battle retreat.

Once he arrived at the Shelter, the first thing Sach noticed was the state of the east wall. It was worse than he had thought. There was a large hole that had been slightly fixed with the Earth ability. In its current state it wouldn't even hold against the weakest of Dalki attacks.

Bunkers had been built a few hundred feet away from the Shelters as well. He could see scout groups heading out and returning, but the worst thing was that snow around the area was covered in blood. Red blood.

His first destination was wherever Samantha was. A soldier quickly pointed out the way and on his way Sach was wondering one thing. Was the fact that this planet was performing worse than the others related to the Dalki focusing more effort into it... or was this a result of her not really being in the right state of mind?

Reaching the north wall, he could see Head General Samatnha there, in a makeshift tent, looking at a digital map at the place.

"Supreme Commander Sach, I'm sorry that I couldn't greet you when you were coming in, but we are in a dire situation." Samantha reported as she briefly looked up, to which he just replied with an 'At ease'.

Coming up to the map, Sach looked at everything it displayed, which was the locations they had seen the Dalki. She wasn't the only one in the room. There were also four strategists of war, they weren't great in strength, but had helped Oscar many times.

"Perhaps you could shed some light on our situation. Whenever our scouts have discovered a few Dalki scanning out the area, we have followed them, only to end up led into a trap time after time. No matter how cautious we are, or how we change up our tactics, they managed to trick my man!"

"At the same time, even when badgering up, and moving our defences to one side of the wall. It's as if they know which wall we borrowed our powers from. They seem to have great insight into our moves."

Now, Sach understood how the wall had been damaged, if the Dalki were coming from the west section, then Samantha needed to make the choice to reinforce the wall with troops from the north, south or east walls for support. She had done so from the east wall, the wall furthest away, and yet somehow the Dalki had been ready with a strong force attacking from there.

"Am I the issue?...." Samantha couldn't help but ask it out loud. It wasn't as if she was unaware, that what happened to her father had messed her up. Usually she would be quite good at tactical warfare, being even more alert than Sach.

"No, the issue isn't you at all." Sach said, pivoted his foot and swung his other leg out, slamming it at one of the strategist's head, hooking him by the back of the neck. With sheer power, he brought the man's head down and pinned it onto the ground.

That when they could see it, while the strategist was stuck under Sach's foot strugglin his eyes were glowing red.

"He was a...V?" Samantha realised. "But how did you know?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1201: The Dalki leaders

The V under Sach's leg continued to struggle. It attempted to push off the ground using its two hands. Despite using all its strength, it was unable to move at all. It was clear one person was overpowering the other with ease. Sach was already strong before. He had a well trained body and good beast gear on. Now that he was a vampire himself, there would be very few vampires out there that would be able to overpower him.

'The question is, what to exactly do with this strategist?' Sach thought. 'Even those on the Cursed ship were unable to break them using their Vampire powers, so I doubt I would be able to do anything. We could capture them, but what use is that? There is only one thing we can do.'

Sach applied a sudden pressure on his leg. It was quick and decisive, a small crunching sound was heard, and the vampire was no longer moving or making any noise.

"Strategist Om!" One of the other strategists called out. "He's....dead. Even if you are the supreme commander, how could you do this."

Om looked like he would run over to his fallen comrade, but Samantha quickly pulled him back before Sach could do anything.

"Did you not see it? Sach explained. He was a V. The reason why all your elaborate plans weren't working, why it felt like they were always one step ahead of you, was all because this person was working with the Dalki."

There was silence in the room for a few seconds. The strategist was someone who had been in the military for a while. They were even by Oscar's side at times. It was hard for them to believe such a thing. However, they started to remember the video of Head general Innu being a V as well. If he was one, then it meant that anyone could have been one and was really working for the other side.

"I saw his red eyes," Samantha claimed, now looking at the body on the floor. "Without a doubt, he was a V, but how did you know he was one? She asked for a second time, hoping he wouldn't avoid the question.

"That isn't important right now. This shelter is struggling more than all the other Shelters. If it was because of the V, perhaps they have big plans for this place, which also means there could be more. I want you to take me to every group, every platoon to see if they are anymore. Let's not waste any time."

Head general Samantha went along with the Supreme commander, showing him every platoon and area. Most of them were clear as Sach didn't show any actions towards her people, but it wasn't the case everywhere.

S

On the south wall, Sach discovered a V. This time, rather than attempting to capture it, he quickly went up behind the vampire and started to subdue it by strangulation, getting it in a type of chokehold. As the vampire struggled for its life and tried to summon all of its powers, its eyes would turn red, and they could see that they were V.

Another area where the V was discovered was in one of the bunkers part of the scouting team. Where Sach had done the same again. It was clever of them. The scout could inform them of when they were spotted before all of the others, especially since they had superior eyesight and hearing.

Walking back after having checked the area, Samantha couldn't take it anymore and grabbed Sach on the shoulder as they walked through the snow.

"Tell me, how did you know they were V? If it's something you know, you could share it with all of us." Samantha pleaded. If she had this skill, maybe she wouldn't have lost as many people as they already had.

"When the Cursed faction came to see me and healed me, they offered me to go aboard their ship for a short while. I accepted, and during that time, they taught me a lot of things about the V. I know their weaknesses, their strengths and how to spot them. Unfortunately, it is not something I can teach you overnight for one, and for the second, it's not for me to teach.

"They told me because it is a desperate time. However, I must respect their wishes. Perhaps they are worried that these techniques will be used against them in the future. Which is understandable." Sach explained although everything he said was untrue. He could tell because he was now one of them, and his nose could pinpoint their smell.

Still, the other vampires also should have been able to tell Sach was one as well. If it wasn't for the special spray that Logan had produced and handed to Sach. After using the spray with Owen, and with no one knowing what Sach was, they thought it could come in handy for him.

Honestly, perhaps at another point and time, Sach's actions would be criticised but just like with the first war, when those who were weak were pushed aside, as the strong fought for their lives for Earth, no one said anything.

"Samantha, Samantha, your back! We have urgent news. There's been a strong reading of a Dalki that has just landed. It's possibly one of the leaders you asked for!" A man with glasses at the gate yelled.

'They must have been informed that the V here are dying, which means they know that there is a vampire here but who have they sent?' Sach thought.

"Are we going to go out and attack them!" Samantha asked, clenching her fist.

"That is not like you at all. We have no idea who this Dalki is. Remember what happened last time? You were the one who called out my mistake, so I have to call out yours. Wait until we get more information."

While at the Shelter, Sach was still getting information on what was going on all over the beast solar system. He had learnt that Owen was once again engaged in combat with the same four spiked Dalki as last time.

Owen had done well against it before, but maybe that was due to it not knowing about its powers.

It was then that the whole shelter felt a slight rumble beneath all of them. The ground vibrated slightly, but there was no loud bang or huge explosion in the area as such. Still, Sach could hear it more than the others and rushed as quickly as he could.

Now standing on the wall, far in the distance in the snow, they could see a Dalki with wings and a single horn that had partly been broken.

"One Horn!" Samantha screamed, but Sach soon pulled her back.

"Samantha, if you can't keep your emotions in check, then I am going to have to temporarily relieve you of your position."

It was strange. One Horn was just standing there in the snow, on his own, as if he was waiting for them to attack.

"We aren't strong enough," Sach said, knowing that even with his vampire powers, he couldn't beat a five spiked Dalki.

"Then what do you want us to do? Just sit here, wait here and stall. Stall for what?"

It was then that a message had been sent out to Sach, directly from Sam. About the Cursed faction being under attack from none other than the great Blade family.

s

'What in the world is going on? Sach thought. The timing couldn't have been worse. The only thing he was thankful for was the fact that Nathan and his group had gotten out there before they had attacked.

'Quinn is currently at the Cursed faction planets, but will he now be rushing back to save his group? Or will he choose to try to get rid of the threat first? The good news is, with One Horn here, Owen dealing with the other leaders. I should have the strongest Dalki in front of me. I'll just have to keep him here as long as possible, to let Quinn do what he needs to do. He's dealt with many Dalki before, so he can do

the same again.' Sach thought, but all of this would be great if One Horn was the strongest Dalki they had.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1202: A Penalty

The others in the room with Quinn were also quick on the uptake. One teleporter not working could just have been a coincidence, two not working however indicated that something was wrong. Jammed teleporters were one of the first signs that an attack was incoming. The Dalkis' ability to do such a thing was one of the reasons they had been warned to stop relying on the teleporters.

"Inform all of the Cursed planets to prepare themselves for an attack!" Helen immediately ordered. She was unsure if the other planets were affected, but there was always the worry that something big was on the horizon and it was better to be safe than sorry. "Make sure that the Daisy faction is prepared as well. I might not be able to give an update straight away, tell the Cursed faction leaders to take command until we get the situation under control!"

There was no need for Helen to say it twice, as everyone had been getting ready for the war ahead of them. Quickly everyone inside the teleporter room had stepped out to look into the distance.

Just like Earth, the Daisy planet also had four seasons it went through. Currently, it was undergoing its version of 'spring'. There was a clear blue sky, and thanks to that Quinn and the others could clearly see the large black blip, and many pods dropping down from the mothership. Helen could only stare at it frozen in place, as the black pods reached the surface a few moments later.

'A mothership here of all places?! Have the Dalki decided to use their full force on the Cursed faction? But why, what do they have to gain? Did they know that Quinn was here?' The woman wondered.

Soon though, reports about similar situations occurring on the other planets came in and Helen was beginning to realise the true horror of their actual situation. Not only was the Cursed faction being attacked but at the same time this was happening, the other two major groups as well. What was worrying her most though, was the fact that the other planets had said that they could see a mothership hovering over each one.

For the first time she was at a bit of a loss of what to do, before she finally said something.

"The Travellers, some of them are still out hunting. If they meet with the Dalki they're done for!"

At the moment, Peach, one of Daisy's older sisters, was also standing by her side and was the one giving her an update on the situation with the other planets.

"Helen, we don't have time to take care of them. Right now we need to try to gather as much information as possible before deciding on our next course of action. I'm afraid the only thing we can do is hope that they come back in one piece. I'm sure

they must have seen the mothership before us so they would be travelling back as we speak."

Although she didn't like leaving things up to fate, Helen had to admit that her sister was right. This was war at a scale none of them had expected. This wasn't the time to save a few at the cost of countless others.

Looking at Quinn she was wondering what his plans were, perhaps he could call for help from the Cursed faction. However, she just witnessed him standing in place with a look of great concern, but it almost looked as if he wasn't looking at the Dalki ship itself but something else.

Helen was correct. At the moment, Quinn was staring at the sudden notification screen that had appeared the moment he had set foot outside of the building and laid eyes on the mothership.

[A new quest has been received]

[As leader of the Cursed faction you must act like one]

[Stop the Dalki from taking over more than half of the Cursed planets]

[0/10]

In total the Cursed faction owned eighteen planets, which meant that Quinn could allow nine of them to be taken over or destroyed. He could see that the number would increase as each planet was taken over, but the Quest message didn't stop there.

[To complete the quest, destroy over half of the motherships]

[0/10]

'Both of these messages look like they go hand in hand but not quite. Just because I destroy the motherships, the Dalki that have already been deployed could still take over the planet. I have to make sure that they are protected even after destroying the motherships.'

Lastly there was the last part of the message which was why he stood still for so long.

[Failure to complete the quest will result in a penalty]

[Quest reward]

'A penalty? This is the first time the system has ever assigned such a thing. Why at a time like this? What would the penalty even be? Since the rewards are usually stats and level ups, could it be that it intends to take some of those away?'

This was worrying him more than anything. Without the teleporters, and with how far the other Cursed faction members were, it would take them a long time to even help out in the war. He needed to act fast if he wanted to save those planets.

Although he might not die, failing the Quest could lead to him getting weaker. If the system was able to give him stats and levels making him stronger than it stood to reason that could just as easily take them away.

'I think the same.' Vincent agreed. 'As you know, the system was based on a game. It uses AI that assigns Quests based on the information around it. The thing is I never thought a penalty would show up. In the game itself there were penalties each time you would die. Of course, in real life if you die you don't get a second chance so I never thought I would see this.'

'What type of penalties did the user get from dying?' Quinn asked, thinking that they might be similar.

'It was pretty random and could range from a loss of items or abilities, to the loss of levels, stats to just a simple loss of experience points.'

None of those options sounded good to Quinn. He had long since wanted to stop relying on the system. It was odd how quick it had allowed him to strengthen himself in certain areas. Even without its help Quinn could be considered to be plenty strong now, but to fight the likes of Arthur, Hilston or the Dalki leaders, he needed all the help he could get.

"Helen, I'll go out and look for those Travelers that are still outside. Using my shadow powers I am the ideal person to do it, but I won't be able to bring them back to the Shelter, I have something else I need to do. I'll carry on looking for the others instead."

"What are you saying, what are you planning to do Quinn?" Helen asked.

Looking at the large ship, and reading the Quest again, it was clear as day what he needed to do. He needed to find a way to destroy a ship that couldn't even be taken down by energy blasts.

'The outside is probably too strong, so the only way is to look for a way to sabotage it from the inside.' Quinn concluded. The system hadn't given him any Quests that had been completely impossible, so he hoped it hadn't started now. Then again, this was also the first time it had brought up a penalty...

"Assemble a team that is willing to go out with me, I'll help the others on the way, and they can update you on the Dalki situation once I've taken down that thing. Then we can focus on the rest." Quinn ordered.

'The rest? That thing? He can't be planning to go from one planet to the next and take out the motherships, could he?' Helen was shocked. The amount of black pods

that continued to rain down was testimony that there were far more Dalki on the planet than any of them had ever seen. It would be troublesome enough to just deal with them, but it looked like Quinn had made his mind.

Helen too wanted to save the Travelers. The only thing she could hope was that Quinn could come to his senses once they were on the outside.

As the leader of the Daisy faction she quickly called for the group of twelve individuals that would be sent with Quinn to get the Travelers that were outside and to bring them back information. These twelve were the ones who had been rewarded with the blood weapons.

Now that there was no way to deliver the rest of the weapons, he left them all in the hands of Helen to distribute them among those she trusted. Daisy was one of the strongest factions out of the others so they probably needed it the least, but it was useless not to use them and hoard them at the moment.

Just as Quinn was ready to move out, he could feel something. The bond he had with his people on the Cursed ship. He could tell that they were in the middle of a battle and it felt that it wasn't an easy one.

'They're all so far away that I can't pinpoint who's who. It could be Alex and the others, the Dalki have invaded there as well, or maybe those on the Cursed ship?'

Thinking about this, Quinn was hesitating whether he should check in with the others, but that's when the Quest line updated.

[1/10 Planets have been taken over by the Dalki]

'What the...'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1203: Climb

The organisation of the Shelter during this state of emergency and the gathering of the twelve who had been honoured with receiving the blood weapons had taken some time, but at most it was an hour or so. At the same time, the pods had stopped dropping from the large mothership and the group had yet to experience any such attack, which was why the sudden message as he was about to leave was so troubling to Quinn.

'What could have happened for one of the planets to have already been taken over so fast? Did they send out an advance party before we found out about the Dalki? Even so, it should be impossible for nobody to report anything about it!' Quinn thought.

On top of that, he was sure the system would have informed him with a quest like it did so before if it was the case. Quinn was with the twelve others ready to leave at any moment and was at the north gate.

"Helen, has any of the planets reported anything about being on the brink of being overrun?" Quinn asked, speaking through a receiver in the mask he was wearing. Helen was currently inside the base trying to formulate plans. Despite the calls and information that was coming in, she answered immediately when it was him.

"I'm not sure, but we are unable to contact any of the members or faction leaders stationed on Demakera. According to some outside ships observing the situation, the Shelter looks to have been destroyed." Helen reported.

Hearing this, Quinn thought back to the information that he had seen about the planets the Cursed faction owned. Demakera had a B ranked Shelter. It shouldn't have fallen this quickly, unless a strong number of Dalki were there or perhaps a strong spiked Dalki was present.

"Sam suggested that we concentrate our forces on a few of the more important planets. Otherwise it looks like the Dalki will be able to slowly lower our numbers." Helen reported.

It was a good plan, but there was a major issue with it.

'If they do that, what about my Quest? If the Cursed faction retreats to the other planets then it will make it easier for them to take over. I'll fail the Quest once we lose possession of ten planets! No, I can't tell Helen not to go through with the order. I can't risk peoples' lives just because I could receive a penalty from this damned system!'

It was another race against time for Quinn. The evacuation of those in the Shelter would take a while anyway, but there was one thing the Cursed faction leader could

do to complete the task. Destroy ten motherships before they were able to take over the planets.

"Quinn, I'm afraid I have some more bad information for you. I have sent over a video that you need to look over. Whatever you decide to do I'll understand." Helen said.

Knowing that it would be important if she wanted him to watch it, he immediately started. It was a recording of livestream but not just any livestream, one that Void and Bonny had taken about how the Cursed faction's ship was under attack.

'Human's.... Not Dalki and they don't look like V either.'

After listening to the video for a little while, he understood just who exactly had attacked the Cursed faction ship and it was none other than the Blade family.

'Hilston!' Quinn stepped on the ground so hard, that his foot sank several inches into it.

'Quinn, your people need you here right now.' Vincent acted as his voice of reason. 'One planet has already been taken over. There is a good chance that more will follow. Who knows how dire the consequences will be for failing the Quest, in any case it will leave you weaker!'

"I would hate to be in your shoes right now, but know this, during the time I have been with you, you weren't the only one who has grown stronger. Trust in your friends, who treasure the Cursed faction ship as much as you do. You can always use your ability to arrive there as support, but once you leave here is nobody you could use to quickly get back.'

Vincent was right, if those that had a close bond with Quinn were in serious trouble and close to death, he would be able to feel it, and although he could tell members of his family were fighting hard, it didn't seem like any of them had been injured to such a degree.

On top of that, with each planet the Dalki took over, it spelt death to the ones living on them.

On Planet Demakera, smoke was rising from the destroyed Shelter. The walls had fallen to pieces and blood was everywhere. There didn't seem to be a single human survivor, and even the secret underground Shelter had been torn and taken apart.

Standing, in the middle of what was now a large pile of rubble was an odd looking Dalki wearing a nice buttoned up shirt.

'The others are more war hungry than I thought.' Graham looked to his left, and could see a human had been lifted up by a Dalki, soon squeezing its head, finishing it off on the spot. 'It seems a lot of my brethren are just following their natural instincts, urging them to kill whatever they see. I wonder why some seem to be less

affected than others. Well, I hope to find the answer soon. I hate to rely on others but this time I will have to.'

'This Shelter was easier than I expected. I guess that means I have run into the weaker of the three groups.' Graham thought.

Quinn had made his decision. After watching the video a bit more, he had seen that Nate had arrived and with him the tide had turned slightly. Seeing his confident smile on camera, Quinn chose to believe in his friends, and was off.

Using his Shadow travel, the ten women and two men with blood weapons were traveling with him.

They went through the large meadows, filled with flowers and trees, heading directly towards the mothership. In the shadow the other twelve were quite nervous about the whole thing.

"What is going to happen if we run into a large group? Isn't it too dangerous with just the few of us?" A young man named Yag questioned nervously. He held a small axe as his blood weapon in his hand, while his beast weapon, another axe, was on his back. All of them had their blood weapons ready, waiting for the signal to pop out of the shadows and fight off the Dalki.

"Don't say those types of things." Iree lectured him. "Everyone knew this would happen, and at least we have the privilege of having the Cursed faction leader with us, not to mention these new weapons. You've seen their power, as long as we use them we stand a chance no matter how big the group of Dalki are!"

Still, despite her encouraging words, it was common knowledge that a strong group of ten or more was needed to take on even a single spiked Dalki. Of course it depended on that group's strength. Even hundreds of regular ability users might be unable to defeat such a foe, much less a stronger one.

They had no idea what awaited them, they would have to trust in their own stamina with their increased strength as they got closer and closer to a fight to the death.

Even through the Shadow travel Quinn could smell the scent of blood. Travelling to where it led him, they found one of the hunting groups of this area. The twelve grieved at the sight of five people having lost their lives, none of them looked to have died a pleasant death.

Quinn quickly moved on, and although it was clear that some wanted to check if someone might have survived, they didn't dare say anything as they saw the scary look on Quinn's face as he continued to move. Eventually, following another scent of blood, he moved to a new area, this one had the sounds of people fighting.

Once they came closer, they could see ten survivors with five others already dead. They must have been three hunting groups that had banded together. Unfortunately,

they had encountered five Dalki who they were currently fighting with. The Dalki were injured to different degrees but not a single one of them was dead.

"Everyone out, don't let them kill anyone else!" Iree shouted, gripping her spear tightly.

The next second, all of them exited the shadow. The twelve of them got into position, intending to protect the injured yet still surviving ten Travelers. Yag swung his axe at one of the Dalki who hit the weapon, which dropped on the ground.

'Damn it!' He cursed internally while taking a step back and getting out his beast weapon. 'How are we meant to defeat these things? These weapons may be strong but they only power up once they absorb Dalki blood, but I can't even hit the damn thing!'

As Yag was shaking, nearly falling over, a Iree came over stabbing the Dalki right in the stomach. Soon, the weapon started to light up with great energy, and pushing forward again, like a blast of energy, the Dalki was hit and blasted away with a type of red aura.

'I can't believe I called this weapon a piece of crap!' Iree thought while looking at it, but the Dalki, now spewing with green blood, had gotten up again, and was moving towards them.

"You'll pay for this!"

Taking a step forward, for a second it could see an axe. The Dalki had no time to dodge the weapon as it lodged into his skull, piercing through his hard skin and killing it on the spot.

"Yag?" Iree questioned looking over her shoulder, but instead she could see Quinn standing there, his gauntlets covered in green blood and had just gotten out of a throwing position.

"What happened to the..." That's when she could see, in the moments they were fighting against a single Dalki. Quinn had already dealt with the other four quickly, and had just killed off the fifth one.

"I'm heading off, some of you escort the Travellers back, the rest will come with me." Quinn ordered, as the mothership was getting closer and closer.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1204: Grinding

Iree was too busy trying to help out Yag that she was unable to witness what had occurred, but the others had done. Because they didn't even get the chance to help or fight. As soon as Quinn went out from his shadow travel, the first thing he did was leap up in the air, propelling himself forward.

The Dalki were still engaged in combat with the others.

Quinn's hands were covered in blood and started to spin like drills. The second his feet landed on the floor, he could dash forward, hitting two of them directly in the head finishing them on the spot. A third Dalki was seen trying to attack, but with a strong thigh kick, the leg caved in, breaking its bone and making it collapse down to one knee.

A kick destroying a Dalki's bones was almost unheard of. Soon the other was dealt with quickly as well.

The others were watching with awe. They had heard rumours of how strong Quinn was, yet it was hard to really imagine.

All of them were high ranking Travellers, sure the Dalki they were going against were only one spike, but they knew how hard it was to fight against even one spike.

The first thing the others did was check for wounds on the survivors. There was a healer in the group, which made it easier. If one was seriously injured, then their travel back would be worse as they were slowed down.

During this time, Quinn stayed with them, it was only a few minutes, but they felt like hours for him. Iree noticed that all Quinn was doing was staring at the mothership.

'Still, only one planet has been taken over so far. This means that it's most likely that a strong Dalki had appeared on that planet. That gives me a bit of hope, but now that they have finished with that planet. They will be moving, and I need to be moving as well.'

"Quinn, do you really plan to go to the mother ship? How are you even thinking of getting there?" Iree asked.

s

The Dalki mothership was in the planet's atmosphere, hovering above ground around the same height where clouds would be on earth.

"The Dalki came out of there. If they want to travel to the other planets after taking over this one, there has to be a way to return. Perhaps we will find out our answer as we get closer." Quinn replied.

"So you don't have a plan, is what I'm hearing?" Iree replied, shaking her head.

The truth was Quinn did have a few tricks up his sleeve, but he would rather not use them if he could.

"I want to help," Iree said. "When we took the weapons, it wasn't just for show. We have fought on this planet every day, and now we need to protect it. If an attack was to happen, we never thought you would be here. If you weren't here, then we would have to do everything ourselves anyway. You see, this faction is probably safer than most because of the way the Shelter was built."

"But that's only true if we stay in the Shelter. The plants around the Shelter aren't just for show. I'm sure you also know what Helen and her sister's abilities are. All those flowers and the vines on the wall can all be used for weapons. It's probably the strongest Shelter in existence, but that's where the problem lies."

"There's too much risk to leave the shelter," Quinn answered.

"Exactly, so this group that has been sent out is probably the only group that will be sent out. Helen will probably decide to send as many of those from the weaker planets here. They can expand the Shelter and fortify this planet. To even do that, we need to clear this place, get rid of the Dalki that are on here." Iree explained.  
"You...you aren't planning to stay here, are you? You have others you need to get to. That's why you're in such a rush."

When Iree thought about this, she was referring to the Cursed faction members. She was unaware that Quinn needed to head to the other planets as well.

"After seeing you fight, our best chance is with you. As the Dalki take over the other planets, more will come to this one, and I don't even think Daisy can hold out. Quinn, you are strong, but there are probably hundreds of Dalki underneath that ship. Maybe you can beat them all, but how long would that take, and maybe there are even more inside. Bring us along the whole way, and let us help you."

Quinn could tell that these were good strong fighters. This was why they had been awarded the blood weapons in the first place. Still, going up against groups of Dalki, this was something only he was capable of due to his speed and shadow ability.

'Quinn, this whole quest is a race against time.' Vincent explained. 'Think about it. There is probably a Dalki leader out there who has taken out the first planet. The shelters seem to be holding out for a while, but now they are most likely on their

way to the next one. The way I see it, it's impossible to protect all the planets, especially with Helen moving her forces.

'So you need to destroy ten mother ships before the Dalki takes over ten planets. They will be using everything they have got, so we should take every little help that is offered our way as well.'

Everyone looked like they were now ready to move out, so Quinn had a few words to say to them all.

"Whoever wishes to go back to the Shelter, feel free to do so. I will continue heading towards the mothership to take it down. I will do my best to save any travellers we find on the way there but will not be escorting them back. It should be relatively safe for them since we have seen no Dalki on the way here."

The others started to discuss amongst themselves. They thought this was a simple rescue mission. They didn't realise they were going to go Into the heart of the enemy territory.

This was too much for a lot of them, and they had chosen to return to the Shelter. Yag and Iree continued to stay with Quinn. While some of those with blood weapons had chosen to leave, but surprisingly a couple of Travellers who were hunting wanted to come along as well.

Quinn could see it though, they were focused on revenge, perhaps from their fallen comrades that had been killed. Anger sometimes was a good tool to use if one could control it.

In all, ten people had decided to stay with Quinn, and those that left Quinn took the blood weapons back, handing them to those that would stay with him.

"It's now time for me to tell you the truth about the weapons," Quinn said. "As you all know, I am what you guys call a V. I will tell you the truth. Helen or I was going to tell you the details later. These weapons were made for us, which means that they aren't only activated by Dalki blood but human blood as well. Using your own blood, you can activate the weapons. The time they will be active for is limited though, so don't do so until you need to."

It was too late for them to be surprised by anything anymore, and from those that remained, they were just happy that they had a better way to help fight.

Travelling with Quinn once more, they ran into a few more Travellers and groups. In order for them to get used to the blood weapons, Quinn allowed them to fight two Dalki on their own. The group of ten teamed up into two groups of five. With their blood weapons, beast gear and abilities, they were far stronger than they could ever imagine. For the first time, they had defeated two of the Dalki, without losing a life.

As for Quinn, he had dealt with eight on his own, taking them down fast and quickly. They carried on moving forward, leaving the Travellers to head back to the faction on their own. This far out, there didn't seem to be any more Travelers, at least ones that were alive.

Instead, they had found scout groups, of around five Dalki or more, in different areas. With these groups, Quinn would take them out just as easily as he did the others. After taking out five of these groups, they were inching forward.

'Is it really good to take out so many of these groups? Won't they know that we are coming then?' Yag asked.

Iree, thought the same thing. Although these scouting groups were on the way, they could have avoided fighting them. It might have taken a while if they waited, but it was only further proof how much of a rush he was in.

Of course, it was quicker for Quinn to kill them than travel around them, but that wasn't the only reason he was fighting them head on. Soon a familiar message had popped up.

[You have levelled up]

[You are now level 68]

[You have gained one stat point]

Quinn had noticed it during his fighting. Killing beasts gave him so little exp that Quinn knew it was a waste of time to level up from grinding. The only thing that would level him up these days was hard life and death situations, where the quest would reward him an instant level up. Or extremely high tier beasts at the Demi-god tier level or the Demon tier level.

However, there was one more thing, killing Dalki. Even the one spiked Dalki gave Quinn a large amount of exp. If he wanted to level up through grinding, then this was the best way.

'Level 68, will I evolve again at level 70? Maybe to the next evolution. If I can do that...maybe I have a chance.'

Finally, they had reached a large hill of a meadow, and the shadow of the large Dalki ship was cast above them. Getting out of the shadow travel. They were now lying flat on their bellies and had crawled to the tip of the hill.

Looking over, they could see just as Iree had said. Hundreds of Dalki, and these weren't just one spiked like they were before, but here Quinn could also see what he was looking for.

S

'I knew they would have one. The first Dalki I ever met did.' Quinn thought.

At the back, guarded by Dalki, were several ships rather than pods. The first Dalki Quinn had ever faced had arrived in one. It was time to take down the mothership.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1205: Getting in

The group spent a few minutes observing how the Dalki camp operated, checking if there was anyone in charge. After all, the Dalki they had encountered so far had been moving in scout groups, yet the ones present had yet to charge into the Shelter. It was almost as if they were waiting for something... or someone.

'They have ten of those black ships that look capable of flight. Why are there so few of them? Will the mothership land once they have taken over the Shelter? Are those ships just used for emergencies?' Quinn wondered as he looked at them.

The ships were quite small but they looked agile and fast. He estimated that no more than three humans would be able to fit inside. As for the Dalki with their larger bodies, it appeared to have been designed for a single pilot, perhaps two if two smaller ones squeezed together.

'The outer shell is supposed to be so hard, that the human race was unable to take it down in the last war, but surely there has to be something inside powering it up. I guess in the end I'm just going to have to steal one of the ships and go with the flow.'

In total, Quinn counted around two hundred Dalki. While this number was far from the tens of thousands of people in the human Shelter, for them it was quite a large number. Besides, if numbers alone could deal with that alien race, humanity wouldn't have suffered as much as they had in the first war.

'I could use Shadow cloak, but there are a few dozen two spiked Dalki among them. Once I steal the ship and set off, they'll just immediately pounce on the ship and bring it down. If I take care of them first, then I could use my soul weapon. As long as there's no more strong ones I should be able to fight them all.' Quinn started to go through his options.

'It would give me a great exp boost, but how long would that take? By that time, they might have already taken over two more planets...'

"Use us!" Iree insisted once she noticed Quinn earnestly thinking about their next step.

"You just need to steal one of those ships to get to the mothership, right? As long as we're not fighting in hopes to win but to survive, I'm sure the ten of us can help you achieve that goal!" While Iree seemed determined to give up her life, the rest of her group didn't look as confident.

"Are you expecting to sacrifice yourself?" Quinn asked.

"Of course." Iree answered without hesitation. "In the grand scheme of things we're just ten lives. Everytime we go out to hunt, we have to deal with the possibility that

we might not come back. Now that the Dalki are here, we would have risked our lives anyway. All of us who have agreed to accompany you were aware of that."

"All of us have families and friends back at the Shelter. If we can trade our lives to give you a chance so that they survive, we'll gladly do so. My only regret would be not seeing the look on those Dalkis' faces when they realise that they have messed with the wrong group of people!"

Once Iree spoke about saving their loved ones, even the ones behind her all nodded as they found their resolve.

"... fine, but I don't need you to sacrifice yourselves. As you said, it would be a shame if you didn't get to enjoy that look on their faces. I just need you guys to cause a distraction and hold out for a little while. I'm able to use my shadow abilities from quite a distance away, so as long as you stay in my line of sight I should be able to protect you for a while longer, and bring you with me." Quinn said.

Iree never had hope she would come out of this, if she did she just needed to see it as an extra. As confident as Quinn was, she didn't want false hope. Before setting off Quinn had touched each one of them.

Soon, Iree and her people had formulated a plan around their set of abilities and they began their distraction. They appeared on the outer perimeter of the Dalki camp with a bang.

Each of them had activated their blood weapons attacking a line of Dalki in front of them. Blasting them away. Soon after, they started to use their abilities for defensive purposes and had gotten into a special formation. A turtle like the shape of the Romans of the past.

The Dalki were now paying attention to their group, allowing Quinn the chance to make his way to the unguarded ships via Shadow cloak. With all the noise, he didn't even have to worry about his footsteps making any sound, so he ran at a great speed. The longer he took to reach one, the more likely it was for Iree's group to die.

The Dalki ship had the shape of a jet, only a hard black exterior as if it was the outside of a volcano. Bumpy rocks and a strong reinforced glass pod where one could enter. Opening up the hatch, Quinn hopped inside.

'Great, it looks like it's at least the same type of controls as ours.' Quinn found out with relief, as he started to pilot it. The jet-like ship quickly took to the sky. From his elevation he could see the Iree and the others in the midst of being overwhelmed, their defence down, and the Dalki ready to pounce.

A group of ten Dalki all dived in. At the same time Quinn flew over to their location.

[Skill Shadow on activated]

Now that they were in his line of sight, Quinn could activate his shadow, rising in front of them. The Dalki's punches turned into almost nothing, powerless as they hit the shadow but it took quite the toll on Quinn's MC points. He wasn't able to protect Iree, Yag and the others for too long, otherwise he wouldn't have enough to deal with whoever was left in the mothership.

'Quinn, what did you do?' Iree pondered, staring at the shadow in front of them. They soon readied their weapons again, and when the shadow fell back down, they all struck at the Dalki in front of them. Each strike fed their weapons with more blood, boosting their power even more.

'I have to get them out of there, the higher spiked Dalki, are moving to the front.' Reaching out his hand, Quinn started to use his Shadow lock on them one by one. The first to go was Iree, followed by Yag, and they continued to disappear In front of the Dalki's eyes.

"What is going on?!" A two spiked Dalki cried out, as he charged forward at one of the humans. It was a burst of energy, and using all its strength, It punched one of the humans in the stomach lifting them in the air around thirty meters high. The woman's body had gone limp in an instant, and when she fell on the ground she was unable to stand up.

Quinn used his Shadow lock on them while in the ship, it was a bit more difficult, and he was only able to cast the skill slowly on them. He was unable to reach all in time. Soon, another woman had lost her life, this time to two Dalki, who had attacked her from both sides. Alas, as the last one on the ground, there had been nobody to save her.

Now that the intruders had been dealt with, the Dalki became aware of a certain someone who was flying one of their ships. With the way it was moving, and with no orders given they knew it had to be an enemy.

One of the two spiked Dalki used its strong bulging thighs to jump towards and while it had reached a remarkable height, Quinn had moved up higher, making it fall back to the ground. Before Quinn could move towards the mothership, though, he would have to deal with the other nine ships that the Dalki were in by now.

'I have to do something!' Quinn looked up, and gathered Qi in his fist. Just enough, and threw a punch hitting the hatch above him, shattering the glass. Then standing up and fighting against the wind resistance, he placed his hands out, bringing out his allies from the Shadow space.

Iree was slightly perplexed to find herself in the front seat and the wind wasn't helping with that. Meanwhile Quinn stood in the empty space between the back of the small ship, and the seat.

"Pilot the ship while I get these guys off our tail!" Quinn shouted and before she had a chance to say something he had already hopped to the back of the ship. The foremost Dalki ship had already gotten relatively close. Quinn quickly threw out his leg and a blood crescent kick flowed.

Once it hit the wing, it sliced through half of it, yet it was enough to make it fall off balance and crash into the ground beneath. Seeing the others get close, Quinn began to fire off Blood swipes from his hand, hitting them.

He didn't need to destroy the ships, just make sure they would be unable to fly again.

"Quinn, where do we go? I don't think the ship is just going to open up for us!" Iree shouted, as the two of them were soon approaching the back of the large mothership.

"Just keep going forward! When I say jump, just do it!" Quinn shouted back.

Iree wasn't sure what his plan was, but she had been ready to lay down her life for Quinn, so she wouldn't question him now. Full force she went to collide into the mothership, and the others seeing this decided to pull back. If they did the same then the ship would simply explode once they crashed.

At the last second, Quinn grabbed Iree and encased the two of them in shadow slowing down their velocity. Getting rid of it, Quinn grabbed onto the outside holding on to the uneven bumpy surface of the mothership.

Finally, using his Shadow travel, he entered through the substance of the Dalki mothership, and the two of them found themselves inside.

"Now, let's take this damn thing down!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1206: Inside of the Dalki Mothership

The place was quite dark, and was dimly lit. The ground they stood on was made of a black metal material. Taking a few steps it echoed throughout. Iree was slowly taking in everything around her. She couldn't believe that the two of them had actually infiltrated a Dalki mothership! This was an unprecedented feat!

'This... this is something that will go down in history... and I'm actually a part of it!' The young woman smiled. 'It really wasn't a mistake to follow him!'

Iree had always been loyal to the Daisy faction since they had been the ones who had looked after her growing up. After the Cursed faction had taken over, she had actually considered leaving the faction, yet the only reason she hadn't done so was because Helen had chosen to stay. Now the woman felt that her leader had truly been visionary.

While everything looked foreign to the woman by his side, Quinn seemed to recognise the material on the walls. Unless he was mistaken the Dalki appeared to be using the same stuff as the vampires.

'If it's truly the same material, how can the outside of their ship be so strong? Have they discovered a new way to use crystals to increase their defences?' Quinn wondered. 'Whatever the case, now that we're inside, there should be a way to take this thing down. If Logan isn't busy, I could link up the mask and use it as a feed. The Dalki command centre should be the optimal target...'

Raising his hand, a few seconds later shadow portals started to open up and those that had been fighting on the ground came out. Three of them fell to their knees and he could see that they had red puffy eyes.

"Claire, Anna, they're both dead!" One of the females sobbed, tears continued falling down her face, while the other two who had cried did their best to calm her down.

Only then did Quinn realise that for a moment he had completely forgotten that two people had died to allow him to reach the mothership. It would be easy enough to justify his behavior in that he had been too focused on his goal. Perhaps he was just getting used to seeing death around him at this point.

Either way, he now felt upset, yet it was less because of their deaths per se, but more about the fact that the deaths of people who had sacrificed themselves for his sake didn't make him sad. What's more he had noticed that he was also feeling a slight hint of relief that at least it hadn't been someone closer to him.

"I'm sorry. I tried to save you all, but I wasn't quick enough. I will do whatever I can to make sure that their loved ones will be taken care of if we survive. If I could I would keep all of you in that Shadow space for safety, but I'm afraid that there is a good chance that I will need to use all my powers." The weak smiles on their faces

told Quinn that this was a small solace to the humans by his side. Fortunately, nobody blamed him for their deaths... or at least not openly.

Quinn opened his system, checking how many MC cells he had remaining. Unfortunately, he was down to just one third after having protected the group from the initial Dalki attacks using the Shadow on skill. Keeping them in his space would mean he would be unable to use it at all.

"Perhaps we should split up." Iree suggested. "We can cover far more ground in groups of three. If their ships follow the same layout as ours there should be a life support system, generator, engine room and command centre. Taking out any of those should cause the mothership to take a big hit."

"They'll surely have those places heavily guarded, though! Without Quinn, it would take five of us to contend with a group of Dalki and that's assuming they are one spike Dalkis!" Yag protested.

"Then don't take them on." Quinn commented. "If you think you can handle it then do so, but it will be enough as long as you can find out where those rooms are. Just inform me through the communication device and I'll take care of them. In the meantime I'll try and create as much noise as I possibly can to distract them."

"Let me come with you, Quinn." Iree requested with a smile. "If you're busy fighting, you won't have time to take down the ship, will you?"

Not wasting anymore time they proceeded forward, until they reached a large hallway. There were several different rooms they could go through, and unfortunately the Dalki didn't have a map lying around. No one had a clue where exactly they were since the mothership was already gigantic from the outside, rivaling a city.

The one thing they were thankful for, was the ship itself didn't have the population of one. It felt more deserted as they could see nearly no one inside.

Yag went down one of the hallways with a girl named Deni and Bella. Deni had a regular beast dagger in her left hand and the blood dagger in her right one, while Bella had a blunt weapon that looked more like a baseball bat but red in colour since it was her blood weapon. As an elemental user she didn't have a regular beast weapon. The three of them were slowly creeping around the place, hardly making any movement at all.

"I don't know if it's a good thing that we haven't seen anyone, or a bad thing." Yag whispered.

"Just take it as a good thing." Deni replied. "They're probably overconfident and have sent out their entire force, leaving behind only a skeleton crew. I guess they never accounted for the possibility that someone might get in."

The three of them had only been separated from the others for around thirty minutes and that's when they could hear it. A loud bang that went off in the distance, followed by a blearing beeping sound. It wasn't just one bang, but it was one after the other going off again and again.

"Do you think that's, Quinn?" Yag asked.

"Well he did say he was going to distract them." Bella answered

The sound of heavy footsteps could be heard there. Yag quickly looked if there was anywhere they could hide, before pulling the two women to the side hallways. Going further down the hallway, they used the frame of one of the door openings to hide themselves behind it.

A Dalki had soon gone past their hiding spot. After waiting for a short while longer, they decided to head in the direction of where the Dalki were going, hoping they could find something. Eventually they came across a strange large room. The room had giant machinery and tracks going somewhere, yet there was no one to man such a thing, and this 'factory' seemed to be ongoing.

As they followed one of the tracks, they discovered that there were beast crystals on conveyor belts going further in.

"What are they doing with beast crystals?" Deni asked. "Dalki can't use beast armour, right? I mean, at least I don't think so."

"Let's just follow where this goes. This seems like too large an amount of crystals just to be used for their ships. Maybe we'll know more if we find out what this factory is making or where it goes."

The several explosions were of course courtesy of Quinn. Using his Shadow travel, in the Dark space it was quite easy for him to navigate where everything was inside.

The Dalki hadn't even noticed him before he had found out where the command centre was. There was just one slight problem. There were three Dalki inside. A one spiked Dalki, a two spiked Dalki and lastly the one who should be their leader, a four spiked Dalki.

This was a level of Dalki that Quinn had never faced before, so he didn't know how hard of a battle this would prove to be. On top of that, if he couldn't end it in an instant he was sure that the Dalki spread around the ship would come towards their location, which was why he had desired to create a large distraction.

Through the hallway that would lead to the command centre, Quinn had appeared along with Iree. The two of them stood there and teased the two guards by the door in order to lure them away. Of course seeing them, the guards straight away ran towards where Quinn and Iree were. However, what they didn't know was just how

fast Quinn was. Picking up Iree, and grabbing her like she was on her wedding day, he ran straight past the two of them.

The next second, he jumped in the air, and using his Qi to reinforce his leg, he struck at the ceiling as hard as he could. With a single strike part of the wall crumbled but not all, so he kicked it again, and as he was falling to the ground threw a blood swipe for measure , causing the top part to collapse in on itself.

Landing back down, Quinn safely put Iree back on the floor gently, and he could see her face was a little red.

"Sorry, did you get hurt?" Quinn asked.

"No, no, I-I... this was the first time I was held like that. And so easily..."

'That should hold them off for a little bit, but more will come.' Quinn thought, as he quickly took Iree and the two of them went into the command centre using his shadow travel. Quinn carried on moving as he could see the Dalki inside were on high alert.

Going past all of the others until he had reached the one spiked Dalki, on the left. Popping out, he kicked both of the Dalki's legs from the bottom, causing it to tumble as it fell to the ground, Quinn then performed a Blood hammer strike bashing it, and throwing it straight at the four spiked Dalki.

Seeing its fellow teammate coming towards him, the four spiked Dalki grabbed him by his head and legs. The next second he started to pull using his incredible strength ripping the Dalki apart, its green blood and insides falling to the ground.

"Useless!"

'That's some strength they have.'

"Iree, use my mask to contact Logan! Describe everything you can see to him and let's just hope he'll have a way for us to take this thing down." He instructed as he threw it towards her, but there was still one Dalki in the room that needed to be dealt with before she could reach the controls or get to the command centre.

"Alright, four spikes, you think you're so strong, we'll see about that! I'm sorry, but I'll have to finish you off quickly!" Quinn shouted, briefly closing his eyes he emptied the Qi inside his body. Instead a red aura filled his centre life force energy, making his body change into another form.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1207: Scarier than a Dalki

Currently, Iree was trying her best to approach the control panel. However, a large obstacle stood in her way in the form of a two spiked Dalki. Her blood spear was drawn and her hands gripped around it tightly, while the small cut she had made on the palm of her hand continued to supply it with great power.

'I might have stood a chance against a one spike Dalki on my own, but a two spiked one might be out of my league, even with this awesome spear's power.'

However, there was one thing for sure, she couldn't afford to turn her back on an enemy like this. Iree was carefully watching the Dalki's movements. It was smiling and creeping towards her. It used its large tongue to lick around its mouth, taking pleasure in the fear it was creating.

The mask that had been handed to Iree started to vibrate. Receiving an incoming call again. She couldn't answer, for one slip in concentration, and it could be the end for her, and that's exactly what the Dalki had been waiting for, leaping forward.

Expecting such an attack, Iree thrust her spear right at the Dalki, piercing through its hand. The second the blade came into contact with the green blood, it started to grow stronger with power and slid in further, but even then, the Dalki upheld its creepy smile, not caring for its hand.

Shortening the distance, the Dalki was now within reach of Iree. Its fist came down aiming right at her head. If she tried to yank out the spear, she would be hit, but letting go of it would mean she would lose the only weapon that could realistically do anything against her foe.

'If that hits me, then I'm dead!' Iree realised as she could see her life flashing before her eyes.

However, just before the fist connected, a flicker of Shadow appeared between the two, blocking the hit. The Dalki was just as surprised as the young woman was, but she was the first to recover from their stupor. Using this to her advantage, she pulled the spear out with all her might and started to retreat back towards the console of controls.

'That shadow, it had to be Quinn, right?'

She and the Dalki were wondering where the Shadow had come from. looking around the room, they could see a young human male was in the middle of transforming.

'What....is that?' Iree thought. 'He...looks...like a monster! Is that... a real V?!"

Quinn had yet to turn fully into the Bloodsucker. In the middle of his transformation, he had seen Iree in trouble. When she had decided to come along with him, he had also used the Shadow On skill on her.

Initially, Quinn had wanted to preserve as many MC cells as he could, but after seeing the number of spikes the Dalki had, he had changed plans. There was no longer any need. While in his Bloodsucker form, he would be unable to use his Shadow or blood skills anyway, so the least he could do was help Iree out as much as possible.

However, now the transformation was complete. His hair had fallen to the ground, his muscles were bulging, showing next to no fat on his skin, and his fangs were sharpened. In the Bloodsucker form, he nearly reached the height of his Dalki opponent.

Instantly, Quinn dashed forward at speed quicker than he did so before and went right up to the Dalki's side. Soon he swung out his leg, his thigh and calf veins bulging to support the great strength.

'All my base stats are doubled, but I can't afford to take a single hit from that four spiked Dalki. I'm not as fast as with the armour's active skill, but I can't just pick away at this one.'

'If I hurt the Dalki, it will only allow it to get stronger and stronger as time goes on. I need to finish this fight as soon as possible, preferably instantly. I've practised the thigh kicks time and time again, but I haven't performed it once since I was in this Bloodsucker form, so let's just see how much damage this can do!'

The Dalki, instead of trying to dodge the attack, which he wasn't even sure he could do, decided to throw out a punch of his own, aiming for Quinn's head. The Dalki could tell that this opponent's form was strong, but as a four spiked Dalki he had next to no fear. Having recently evolved into a four spike, he felt almost invisible against anyone but his leaders.

"I will kill you!" The Dalki shouted, throwing its fist out harder and nearly just as fast, but due to Quinn's speed, his attack was able to hit first.

The second it had made an impact, a sound was heard in the Dalki's body. Something it had never experienced before, making his eyes open wide. His fist was slightly off target, falling to the side, skimming past Quinn's face.

At the same time, the Dalki's bone had pierced through his thigh skin, drawing an immense amount of blood.

'I can't fall! Not like this!' The Dalki pushed through the pain. The new rise in energy was making him practically feel nothing anyway, and he could see the Bloodsucker's fist coming at him. The Dalki grabbed the hand by the wrist.

'Shit, I never thought he could remain standing! Two hits should have been enough to finish it, but a four spike can already contest me in a battle of strength?!" Quinn thought as he saw the Dalki fist about to hit his face.

Quickly, Quinn had grabbed the other hand, and now the two of them were holding each other's hands up by their heads, pushing and pulling. Quinn still had his legs, but the distance between the two of them was too great. If he tried to reach with his kick, there was a chance the Dalki could overpower him even in this form.

"Maybe you never fought against a four spiked Dalki before, but a wound like this will soon heal, but I still get the energy boost from the fight. This is how the Dalki gets stronger. Their bodies break down from the fighting and heal, making them even stronger than before. Maybe fighting you will allow me to become a five spike!"

Now thinking about it, it was the same with Borden. At first, he could only summon a few spikes, but the number of spikes on his back would grow through fights and accumulated injuries.

'Doesn't this mean that they can keep getting stronger?' Quinn thought.

Trying to think of the best course of action, Quinn wondered if he should transform back and try to defeat him using other methods. It was then that another message had come up from the system screen.

[2/10 Planets have been taken over by the Dalki]

Seeing this, Quinn didn't have time to mess up. Using all his strength, he pulled the Dalki forward, and with his sharp teeth, he opened his mouth wide, biting down into the neck of his enemy. The green blood soon went through Quinn's body, empowering him more than he had ever experienced before

[4 spiked Dalki blood has been consumed]

[40% power boost has been temporarily applied]

With this, Quinn could easily hold the four spiked Dalki with his arms, then let go. He placed his far leg back and swung it once again with all his strength of a Bloodsucker and power boost. The second the kick connected with the Dalki's head, it flew off from its body and slammed right into the console, destroying one of the control terminals.

The two spiked Dalki, was still engaged in combat with Iree, but when it saw the head of its leader on the console, it froze for a second. Iree, who had been doing her best to survive until this moment, decided to use this moment.

"We are going to win this war!" She shouted, thrusting the blood blade right through Dalki's chest, piercing its heart.

'I Did it, I managed to kill a two spiked Dalki.' She thought to herself, but when looking up, she could see its head had been removed from its body as well. Now Iree was left seeing the most frightening figure she had ever seen. Something that she could have only dreamt up in her worst nightmares.

Quinn, still in the Bloodsucker form, had green blood spatters around his face. His mouth was open wide, baring his fangs.

She took a step back, almost stumbling to the floor.

'This.....'

Soon, his body started to revert back to its original size, his hair started to grow back to what it once was.

"Did you manage to contact Logan?" Was Quinn's words as the transformation had ended.

It took a while for Iree to answer because she was having a hard time grasping what had just happened, and she had expected for Quinn to lunge at her at any moment next.

"Um...no, but I think I might have missed a call from them."

It was then that Iree had gotten an update from Yag and the others about some interesting things. It looked like they didn't need to call Logan after all. Besides, even after they had tried, he was unable to answer on his end.

Quinn quickly headed to the engine room, where the Dalki that were guarding were soon dealt with. The engines were easily destroyed by Quinn and the ship started to fall to the ground right on course to hit the other Dalki.

It was at that moment that Quinn had received another notification from the system.

[1/10 Dalki Motherships destroyed]

"Quinn, before we get off this ship, we should head to a place not too far away from you. I'm sure we can use them somehow!" Yag said.

As the group headed over, Quinn wondered if he could defeat ten ships in time because he was currently lagging behind. They were moving fast through the ship as they knew they didn't have much time until it would crash into the ground.

During that time, Quinn's masks started to vibrate once more.

'Is Logan getting back to me, or maybe Sam tried to call me again.' Quinn thought. He had tried to call them back, but there were no answers either. At least he could tell Sam was still alive.

"Quinn! It's Alex. It's done! Your Demon tier item is ready!!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1208: One Down

After destroying the mothership's engines, the ship was slowly starting to fall from the sky. It appeared to have some type of backup system that prevented it from just crashing down, instead it floated down towards the ground. It was a shame because Quinn had been hoping that by bringing it down, they might be able to crush the Dalki camp underneath them.

'This ship will fall and crash, I'm sure since the system even said that the quest was complete, but if there is an easier way to destroy these ships, it would help out with the Quest.' Quinn also needed to make sure there was no way possible for them to easily get the thing back up and running as well.

Eventually, Yag had led Quinn and the others to a strange factory room, where the crystals were being processed even now. They had exited from the Shadow space and were busy turning their heads looking around.

"Why did you bring us to this place, and what is it?" Iree asked.

Although they were curious about the place, the others still were worrying about the fact that the ship was currently falling out of the sky at the moment. The only reason why Iree wasn't panicking was because she believed that Quinn could save them. As long as he was in his current form that is.

While looking around, the two of them had made eye contact, and a flash of Quinn's other self had appeared in her mind. It was so frightening she could feel her back starting to sweat, so the young woman quickly looked away, avoiding further eye contact.

Quinn was her saviour, but ever since she had seen him turn, the mental image was stuck in her head. Iree had even made sure her hands were wrapped, so the smell of blood wouldn't leak out and agitate him.

She didn't know that doing that was completely useless, because Quinn could smell it even then, not to mention he had already had his fill of Dalki blood, satisfying him. Should he feel a bit peckish he could always just take another sip from the flask where he had stored some of it, since it should be of help on the other planets.

"This one seems to be a factory for crystal processing." Yag tried to explain. "There are several conveyor belts that go to different places as well. One of them should be the engine room that you guys just destroyed, as for the other two we didn't really have time to check them out, but this was what we wanted to show you."

Opening two large heavy steel doors, Yag and Anna struggled to push them open, until Quinn stepped forward and used a single hand to offer them some help. The doors swung open, allowing them entry to another room, still linked to the factory.

There was a slight glow coming from the large metal containers, and non processed crystals could be seen in them. Quinn wasted no time jumping on top of them to get a closer look.

'Crystals! This whole container is filled with different grade beast crystals! Just one container seems to have as many beast crystals as the Demi-god tier beast had kept, and there are twenty containers in this room alone!' From his elevated position he could see that nearly all of them were filled up to the very top. There was only one that had been emptied, while another appeared to be in use, probably fueling the emergency system.

Moving along, Quinn quickly followed the other convey belts, learning that these crystals were being used to power certain things on the ship, not just the engines. The amount of crystals was beyond even what the Bertha ships the military had used.

The next room had a pillar in the centre, and on the top half a sphere, above which was something slightly resembling the ship. Around the room there were several glass containers filled with crystals like a dispensing candy machine.

Once one crystal was used up, the factory would quickly exchange it for another crystal, powering it all.

'This technology is far too advanced to originate from the Dalki.' Vincent could tell at a glance. 'Most of them only care about fighting and getting stronger. It almost seems impossible that any of them would have the patience to put that much time and effort into not only studying but also inventing something like this.'

'So you think all of this is Jim's doing? After all, we know that he's been helping them from the beginning.' Quinn questioned.

'It would make sense. Jim has always been clever, and with no restrictions holding him back, I wouldn't be surprised if he managed to create things that we have never seen before. If only he was on our side... Quinn, we have to stop him, no matter what!'

Quinn agreed, and soon found himself walking up to the pillar and placing his hand on it. There was no reaction from him, and at a time like this he wished Logan was here.

'Wait a minute?'

Thinking about this, Quinn remembered that his system in a way did work like Logan, at least the Inspect skill did. At certain times using it when touching certain electronics or items would give him certain details.

[Inspect]

[Dalki defense system]

[Shield at 100 percent]

[Energy at 100 percent]

'So this is the reason why none of the attacks got through to the motherships? They are able to utilise this many crystals?'

A shield created from beast crystals was something that human ships could do as well, but the conversion rate was less than ideal, and that was being polite. The energy inside the crystals would be used up far too fast similar to how Logan used crystals with his energy blades.

'I guess if the Dalki have no other use for the crystals like we do they can use it for this purpose.' Quinn thought.

'Jim could have also invented a more efficient way for energy to be used as well.' Vincent added.

Regardless, Quinn wasn't the type of person who would be able to figure something like this out. Since it was a device located on the inside, it would be nearly impossible for anybody to destroy a Dalki mothership from the outside. Humanity simply didn't have the crystals necessary to constantly fire their lasers to compete with the Dalki reserves, especially since the latter had the better technology.

Because of this, Quinn decided that it was best to leave the place as it was. Hoping that they could use it in some way later on. Before leaving though, Quinn went back to the previous room, and withdrew all the crystals from the containers placing them in his dimensional space.

'The Dalki own half of the beast planets and have been collecting crystals for far longer than us. Only they never bothered to turn them into weapons or armour. Just with the loot of one mothership, it will help alleviate the crystal problem by a lot.'

Following the conveyor belt to one more place, Quinn had entered another room which he didn't recognise. He had assumed that since the Dalki had been created by the vampires they would have more similarities, but some of this stuff looked modern even for the current time period. There were several long stick objects, but it was clearly an invention, or machinery of some kind. Each with a large crystal on top of each of them.

Placing his hand on the device he did the same again.

[Inspect]

[Planet Jamming Array]

'So this is what causes the teleporters to stop working? At least now I know what they look like, so if it happens again we can look for it. Not every time the teleporters have been jammed has there been a mother ship along with it, so I guess they must have a mobile version of these things as well.'

For this one, Quinn was unable to leave it be, because he needed the teleporters to work. First he took out the crystals from the device, each one of them at the Emperor tier level. It looked like this device too needed a lot of energy to sustain it, which made it valuable loot.

Next he grabbed one of the strange devices and placed this in his dimensional space as well, before destroying the others.

After taking every crystal they had, Quinn was soon off form the ship. He took the others with him and with the shadow was able to create a safe landing. It looked like the Dalki who were on the ground were now unorganised and had split up in different directions, but all of them should be heading to a certain place, the Shelter!

\*BANG\*

The whole ground shook violently. It felt like a giant earthquake, as items fell from shelves, just as the people who had just been standing. The good thing was that the mothership had fallen slowly so it didn't create too much of a problem, but still with its giant weight and how far it was they could feel the impact.

"He did it, he took down the Dalki mothership!" Peach screamed with excitement, witnessing what would later be recorded as the turning point in the Second Dalki War.

"Who is He? And did they really take out a Dalki mothership? How could that happen?"

"Who else could it be but Quinn, the only man deserving to be my husband?!" Helen questioned with a smile. "Maybe, he's grown so much, becoming such a big deal that he might be a bit too much for me."

This news wasn't just a good reason for the Cursed faction to celebrate though, because the news had also spread to the Earthborn faction and the Graylash faction as well.

"That kid... I guess I can't call him a kid anymore, after he was able to achieve something great before us again." Owen muttered to himself with a smile

"This will be another morale boost that we can all use. It proves that the Dalki aren't invincible." Sach spoke, but both of these world leaders still had their own problems to face. Yet, they were thinking the same thing.

'I have to catch up to him.'

The news had also managed to spread to the Dalki themselves. In particular Graham who was just walking out of another destroyed faction base. Blood splattered across his face.

'They actually managed to take down one of our motherships? I never expected them to be able to do that, much less in such a short amount of time...'

"Tell me exactly where the ship was taken down!" Graham ordered, be surprised that it was in their region.

Travelling back through the shadow Quinn and the others had returned to the Shelter. The celebrating news didn't last long because Helen was preparing for battle. The Dalki soldiers that were on the ground were already coming over.

Quinn quickly spat out the others from his shadow, and soon went to see Helen on top of the north wall.

"Helen, I need to ask you, are the teleporters on this planet working?" Quinn asked.

"They are working, but only on our planet. We're still unable to move to any of the other planets, because it's not working on their end." Helen clarified the situation for him. Still it was good enough all things considered.

"Helen, I did what I could for this place, but I have to move on. I trust you and your sisters to be able to deal with those from the Dalki camp. With the portals active again, prioritise the lives of the people over the Shelter, if necessary."

"I need to go to protect the rest of the Cursed planets!" Quinn said, as his body started to sink into the shadows.

"Wait Quinn, where are you going?" Helen asked.

"To get something that will help us win this fight!" Quinn answered before his head finally disappeared.

\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1209: The Amule

Forging was a process that required immense amounts of concentration. It was akin to a science as the timing and the location of their hammer strikes, the hotness of the flame and various other things all had to be taken into account by an experienced crafter. It was even harder when they had to be working with new materials they didn't have any prior experience with. In the end, a lot of it came to the forger's intuition and skill.

The forging room was almost devoid of people, except for two. Andrew, the person who had crafted Oscar's personal weapon, making him the only known crafter to have ever created a Demon tier weapon, and the Cursed faction's master forger, Alex.

The duo were preparing different things to complete the process of creating the Demon tier item. The only thing was, although they were aware that time was limited given their situation, they couldn't afford to rush things either. A single wrong step and all could be for naught, since they lacked the materials to do it over again.

Every so often the room was shaking violently. Each time this happened, Alex would stop hammering for a few seconds. As soon as the vibrations subsided, he would continue in his forging.

"Damn those Dalki, couldn't they have picked another day?!" Alex let out his frustration. If it wasn't for the enemy attacks the two of them might have already completed their job.

Meanwhile, Andrew was finishing up the molding process on what looked like a large metal slab. Even though he had giant muscular biceps and rough fingers, they were capable of doing small delicate work.

"When I went out, the situation wasn't looking good." Andrew's sweat was dripping down his face, slowly finishing the final details. "The Dalki have already breached the Shelter."

Hearing this, there was no time for talking, and the final steps had to be finished. Alex came over pouring a brightly shining liquid into the moulding that Andrew had created. While it was cooling down, the two forgers would have to carefully apply hammer strikes where it was needed.

Just as Andrew had said, ten Dalki had already made their way into the Shelter and were currently in the midst of causing a rampage. Buildings got destroyed, panicked civilians were running around, trying to escape somewhere safe.

Those who were stationed on the wall and the Mechs were busy firing at the Dalki that were moving towards them. They had no choice but to ignore the screams behind them, otherwise more of the Dalki would soon get inside the Shelter.

To help make sure that no more Dalki would make it inside, was none other than Linda. She had used her transformation ability to enlarge herself to the limit, and was using her large beast weapon and great strength to hit away the invaders.

'I can only protect the north gate, and these Dalki have great strength themselves. At most I could deal with a couple on my own. With support from the faction I can hold them off, but it's only a matter of time before more get inside.' Linda was worried, aware that without some miracle her actions would ultimately be futile.

Ko, the leader of the faction, had come to the same conclusion and was hoping that the Graylash faction, as they were the closest ones, might help them out. Alas, nobody appeared to be coming to reinforce them, all equally busy protecting their own bases.

"What shall we do?" Ely asked the vice leader. "I don't think they're going to send anyone. It might have been a different story if General Robin would have still been in charge, but we can't change that now, so what are we meant to do?"

"Hold and wait! It's the only thing we can do. Honestly we are lucky that we have been able to last this long thanks to the two of them." Ko said, as he watched Wevil sprinting around the Shelter, doing his best to help out.

He had just finished dealing with one of the Dalki inside, causing their numbers to fall to nine. However, he did so coming out with a broken arm, his transformation had come to an end, as he had used too much energy.

'I've gotten stronger! Can't wait to tell Nate that I managed to take on a single spiked Dalki all on my own!' Wevil thought to himself. Despite his proud accomplishment, he was also aware that given their current situation this wasn't enough.

While searching for a willing human he could use a Blood bank to heal his injuries, he felt a strange energy originate from behind him. Everyone else could also feel a slight shiver in their spine. Even the Dalki stopped in their tracks for a second to turn and look into the direction the energy came from, the main base.

'Isn't that where Alex is busy working, what is going on?'

The nine Dalki that had been terrorising the place, all started to head towards the main shelter building in unison.

"No, Alex! He isn't a fighter!" Wevil shouted. He started to run forward but at that moment, one of the other gates had been breached and another Dalki had entered. Immediately, it went to swipe and grab one of the women closest.

The Dalki had grabbed nothing but air, as Wevil now held onto the girl.

"I saved you, so I'm going to need a little something from you. I hope Linda isn't looking."

In the forging room, the Demon tier item had just received its finishing touch and was now pulsing with energy. Although the initial glow started to dim down, it did nothing to hide the prowess hidden inside the item.

"Quinn! It's Alex. It's done! Your Demon tier item is ready!!"

After delivering the message, Alex had somewhat expected for Quinn to come out of his shadow straight away, but for some reason the Cursed faction leader hadn't done so. Instead, the ones who had arrived were several Dalki.

The first thing Andrew did after seeing them barge through the doorway, was grab a large forging hammer. His hand started to glow and he ended up throwing it directly at them. It flew straighter than a hammer should have done and when it hit the foremost Dalki's torso, it sent it alongside the two behind it flying backwards.

"Take the item, we must protect it!" Andrew shouted.

Quickly, Alex picked up the small item. It was a round object that would fit into the palm of one's hand. The forger tied the necklace piece, a small black chain, through the loop at the end. The Demon tier amulet now could be worn around one's neck like a necklace, which he promptly did.

'I'm sorry Quinn, I know this is your item, but I'll need to take it out for a test drive first.' Alex thought but something strange occurred... or more accurately nothing did. Despite wearing it the beast gear item didn't activate. Alex didn't feel the least bit of power course through his body as it should have!

"Crap!" Alex cursed as one of the Dalki who had recognised that the necklace was what had led them here, ignoring Andrew, it threw a fist towards Alex. His red wings came to life, and allowed him to fly up quickly to the ceiling avoiding the blow.

'Why? Why doesn't this thing give me any extra strength, speed or ANYTHING? Was there something wrong in the process? No, even if we made a mistake, it shouldn't have wasted it to the degree that it's completely useless!' Although Alex had been sure about his techniques and even Andrew hadn't found any faults in it, it didn't change the fact that the necklace was acting like a dud.

Worst of all, he could see another one of the Dalki approach Andrew. He was strong for a forger, but he was not a top class Traveler. Seeing this, Alex threw out his special blood fairy swipes, but when it hit the Dalki, it did next to no damage.

At the same time, he himself wasn't out of danger just because he was a couple feet above the ground. This was a forgery and it was filled with weapons, the Dalki were picking up anything they could find and were hurtling the sharp objects towards him.

One of the things Alex loved to do in his spare time other than making weapons was practice his flying skills. He moved through the air avoiding almost all the items. Among the Dalki though there were two spiked ones. One of them used its great strength to hurl an axe twice as fast as the others.

The weapon pierced right through one of his red blood wings. An electric shock ran through his whole body and it felt as if someone had pulled out his teeth without any anesthesia, causing him to fall and crash head first into the ground. The pain he had felt now multiplied, but the adrenaline was keeping it down. He was also worried about someone else. Lifting his head he could see Andrew's shoulder had been pierced by a Dalki.

A forger's life was over if they could no longer use their arms, but by the looks of it, Andrew would have little time to lament this. Fluttering his uninjured wing, Alex managed to dash forward slightly and was now close to Andrew. He raised his shadow blocking the other attacks. With so many Dalki surrounding them, his MC cells were depleted after just three attacks, and now they were coming towards him.

Alex felt his body being hit away, by a large great force tumbling to the ground, and instead of him suffering from the attacks from the attacks, they had hit Andrew instead. Andrew didn't look away from Alex on the ground, and blood filled his mouth.

"You have the talent to take beast gear to the next level. Live, run and make sure that Demon tier weapon ends up in the right hands!" Andrew said, his mouth dripping blood.

Alex wanted to fight back, he wanted to do something but he knew it was all useless and if he stayed here Andrew's sacrifice would end up vain.

He grabbed his flask that was filled with vampire blood, in particular it was Quinn's blood. A great energy rose in him, making him stronger than he had felt before. His wing instantly healed from the prior wound.

Perhaps if he had consumed the blood beforehand they would have been able to last a little longer, but winning still wasn't an option. With a face full of tears, Alex regrettably fled from the scene, by flying his way out of the forging room and into

the halls. There he quickly found a cracked wall that the Dalki had created to get to him.

Once out, he landed on the ground and looked around him. The situation in the Shelter was far more disastrous than he had anticipated. The Dalki had managed to break through one of the gates that Linda was unable to protect. Wevil was busy fighting, along with the other faction members.

"Why don't you work!" Alex shouted, grabbing the amulet around his neck. Moments later the nine or so Dalki that was in the forging room with him had come out as well.

"I'm sorry if I had known your situation was this bad, I would have been here sooner. Let me deal with the rest." A voice sounded directly behind him. Alex had been so lost in his thoughts that he hadn't even noticed that Quinn had appeared from his own shadow.

"Quinn, kill them! Kill them all!" Alex screamed in anger, as he lifted the amulet off his head, and handed it over to Quinn.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1210.2: The Amulet Part 2

The second Quinn touched the amulet he could feel that it wasn't like any of the other beast gear he had received before. The others were just pieces of equipment until the user tried to activate them, but the amulet itself was already giving off a strong energy, as if it was alive.

Whenever Alex would mix his blood into making beast gear it would usually dye the equipment red, although when using higher tier crystals like the Demi-god tier ones their original coloration would stay. However, for this Demon tier crystal, Alex didn't use his blood, since it wasn't to be forged into a weapon and Alex was worried about the outcome if he did try to do so.

It had a strange design for the amulet with its colour being half black and half white. Together they resembled the shape of the upside down marking that the Demon tier tree had given out to the Marked.

Unfortunately, Quinn didn't have much time to use his Inspect skill to figure out what it could do, as he needed to deal with the situation inside the Shelter first.

'After everything I did to protect this place from the Demon tier tree, now the Dalki are rampaging all over...' Quinn lamented the situation. As a Vampire Lord his nose was filled with the heavy smell of blood that spoke volumes about their own death toll.

'At least there are enough of you for me to do this.'

[Soul Weapon 'Item type' activated]

A great pain ran through Quinn's body as the energy from inside him got unleashed. The blades from his item started to pierce through the skin in his arms, running up and down them, drawing out his blood.

Swinging out, both of the bladed chains closed the distance to the Dalki in front of him, its severed head flying through the air. Not even a second later the now lifeless heads of its companions joined in.

'The Dalki that everyone was struggling with... Quinn's managing to defeat them all so easily... It doesn't look like I'll have to worry about him, and he seems to have figured something regarding the Demon tier Amulet.' Alex thought and with that he ran back to the forging room.

He had to check how Andrew was doing. He hadn't known the other forger for too long, but it was the first time that Alex had ever had something like a teacher who showed him the ropes and genuinely praised his talents. He had accepted an invite from a nobody forger like himself, and because he had stayed to help him finish crafting the amulet, he had sacrificed his own life.

Making his way through all the halls, he eventually reaches the forger room, only to find Andrew lying there on the floor with a pool of blood underneath him. Rushing to his side he could see he had been punctured several times, his guts partly spilling from his stomach, but his eyes still had a bit of life in them.

"You've... come back? How... long has... it been?" Andrew spoke softly, each word costing him a bit of his limited remaining lifespan. Once the Blood fairy had fled the other Dalki had quickly followed after the source of the immense power they had felt coming from the amulet, but not before making sure that Andrew would pay for getting in their way.

"This is all my fault!" Alex sobbed, as he looked into Andrew's eyes. He grabbed a small blade that had fallen to the floor. "You still want to live, right? You can't just die yet! Not before you've seen what we've managed to craft! I promise I'll let you live! I've seen Quinn do this a few times, and the others told me what needed to be done!"

Making a cut, Alex started to draw a strong symbol underneath the forger, who lacked the energy to accept or refuse what the other was doing. It wasn't the same way Quinn would do it, but back in Vampire World, Alex had seen others do this a few times. Finally when the special symbol was drawn underneath Andrew's body the Blood fairy squeezed his hand, dropping several drops of his blood into the forger's mouth.

"Please, come back!" Alex shouted at Andrew.

The wounds didn't start to heal, making the forger question if he had made a mistake. But soon enough Andrew's body began to toss and he let out a blood chilling scream. More followed at a volume that even those on the walls could hear them.

"I'm sorry. We all had to endure this, so I know how much it hurts, but I promise once you get through this, you'll be back to your pride!" Alex held on to Andrew's hand, hoping it would take at least some pain away.

Unsure if the words had gotten through or not, he continued to stay by Andrew's side until the other shot up, his eyes a glowing red and the next second something sprouted out from his back.

Two large red blood-like wings even bigger than Alex's.

When Quinn had put the amulet around his neck, the first thing he did while fighting against the Dalki was try to activate it. However, he didn't feel anything change, like would be usually the case when he benefited from additional stats.

After seeing how much the Demi-god tier equipment improved his other stats, he had been looking forward to his first true piece of Demon tier equipment, but its performance so far was underwhelming. He hoped his Inspect skill would give him

the information he would need like it did for the other items, but first Quinn needed to deal with all the troublesome Dalki who had made it into the Shelter.

Fighting against the Dalki with his Soul Weapon they were no match for him. Soon the strain from using his soul weapon was felt on his body, and he had placed it away.

'I already dealt with over half of them in the Shelter, now to deal with the ones at the gate!' Quinn ran off in the direction of the gates where the Dalki were seen coming in. At one gate there were around twenty of them, and jumping through the gate, Quinn grabbed the head of the first Dalki and slammed it to the ground.

[Weapon active skill activated]

Using the silver coloured gauntlet he started to drain the energy from the Dalki. The power he had lost and the effect of using his soul weapon were fading away. Another came close to Quinn. He fired out a Blood shotgun with the palm of his hand.

A concentrated version of the blood spray. The blood attack didn't spread out as much and the damage was more concentrated in one place. The Dalki was seen being thrown back, and at the same time Quinn had received another message.

[The opponent has been poisoned]

'What? It can actually poison them without me having to directly hit them? It still works if I use my blood skills? Is it because the blood attacks go through my gauntlets? I guess things like a Crescent kick wouldn't have the same effect.'

The gauntlets were starting to get better as Quinn used them more and more. It also showed the importance of equipment.

After regaining his energy, Quinn was fighting once more. He chose to fight with his Qi more than his blood abilities. Thanks to the gauntlet he could regain the energy that he had lost. His blood powers he would use them sparingly.

After clearing out all the gates, the Dalki inside were also dealt with. During the fight though, Quinn had noticed something. Meeting up with Linda at the north gate, there was one Dalki left, and before it could do anything Quinn slammed his Blood drill through its head.

'It was a two spiked Dalki, if I use my Qi too much I start to lose control of the balance in my body as well. I need to find a way to increase the power of my blood as soon as possible.'

Then, what had been happening ever since Quinn had obtained the Demon tier item had happened once again. From the dead body, strange glowing small little particles lifted, and came straight towards Quinn.

They weren't heading towards him though, instead they had entered the inside of the amulet, and a notification screen had appeared.

[The Demon tier Amulet has now consumed enough energy for use]

[0/1 Slots are now available]

[Continue to supply the Demon tier Amulet with energy in order to unlock more slots]

With no context whatsoever, Quinn had no clue what the Demon tier item could exactly do. Now that the fighting inside the Shelter had settled down, he could finally take a look.

[Inspect]

It took a while for Quinn to read all the information that the Demon tier Amulet provided and when he finally had figured it out, a large grin appeared on his face.

'With this, I might actually be able to complete this Quest!!!'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1211: Demon tier powers

[Demon tier Amulet: Branching Link]

[The Branching Link Amulet absorbs a part of energy from anything the User kills. Once the amulet has gathered enough energy it will unlock a slot. With each slot the amount of energy required to unlock a new one increases]

The information itself was split into different segments and this was merely the first one. Only after having killed a certain amount of Dalki did the energy requirement pass its threshold, unlocking the first slot, which was also the reason why neither Alex nor Quinn had received any sort of benefit from wearing it initially. The good news was that it sounded like it would work with anything that he killed, be it beasts, vampires, Dalki or other living things.

'As long as I keep killing Dalki, doesn't that mean I can technically have an unlimited amount?'

Quinn wondered. However, the system was vague, only claiming that it would require more and more energy for each additional slot, making him worry that at some point it could have the same issue as his exp bar.

[Once a slot has been unlocked the User is able to use it to mark any living creature.

Success chance will depend on the life-force and willpower of the living creature it is used on.

No matter the outcome, the slot will be used up.

Each successful Marking will also take up one slot.]

Given the description it appeared that Marking higher tier beasts, stronger people or the Dalki leader would most likely be hard to impossible. Quinn would have to choose between using the slots to attempt it, after all succeeding in marking someone like One Horn might very well change the tide of war, or use the slots on weaker Dalki, creating something like an elite guard.

[Those that are Marked can be either partially or fully controlled by the user.

Energy can be shared between User and Marked based on the User's discretion.

It's possible to strengthen a Marked via the User's energy.

It's possible to suck a Marked completely dry, thereby adding its strength temporarily to the User.

The only way for the Marking to disappear is upon the death of a Marked, death of the User or destruction of the Branching Ling Amulet]

This was the power of the Demon tier Amulet. Quinn wasn't too surprised that it turned out to have some brainwashing capabilities since the Demon tier tree had used its powers to enslave others. Still, there were differences to the original.

'I'm not able to control just anything. It seems like there is only a chance to control something and the amount of things I can control is vastly different. The energy as well given to the Marked comes from myself. I'm guessing they need to be alive to attempt to put a marking on them. Breaking a strong beast's will, or a human's will would be incredibly difficult to attempt at the moment.'

'Then there's the last catch. I thought it was strange that the Demon tier Amulet didn't give any stats, but that's because I can also take the energy from those that I have marked. I wonder if it's the same as Qi energy, or perhaps it will directly boost my stats depending on what I control. It's a temporary boost for me, but permanently affects the marked. Which means it's best if I don't use it on my own people.' Quinn concluded.

However, after reading everything, Quinn had come up with an idea just how he could use the amulet to help him take down the Dalki ships even quicker, but before that, he needed to run some tests.

Quinn wanted to check up on Alex, yet the Blood fairy had run off inside. But decided not to, since time was running out and could tell he was in no such danger due to the bond. After seeing to Wevil and Linda. He made sure that the two of them could look over him while Quinn had gone out on his own.

"Wait, Quinn what are you planning on doing?" Linda asked, before Quinn rushed off.

"The teleporters aren't working on this planet. So nobody can come to help or escape from this place. At the same time I need to get back to the Cursed faction planets and help them. There's a device on the motherships that jams the teleporters." Saying these things, Quinn was off out into the open field.

"Wait...is he planning on entering the mothership?" Linda realised.

"Not just enter." Ko said, who was standing by her side watching Quinn enter his shadow. "He intends to bring it down. I just got news that the Cursed faction managed to destroy one of those things!"

Although Quinn was able to destroy the mothership, it took far too much time. First, he had to find the Dalki camp on the planet so he could steal one of their ships, else he would just be shot down, before even coming close to his target.

Even after he had successfully infiltrated them, he would have to face the crew of it and find the right rooms.

So he needed to find a quicker way. Soon he had come across another group of Dalki scouts amid the strange tailing trees and large colourful plants.

Wasting no time, Quinn began to take them all out fighting them. The amulet absorbed the energy as each of the Dalki was killed, until there was only one left. Soon, getting up behind the Dalki, Quinn attempted to use the power of the amulet on the Dalki.

He pressed it on its back and activated the energy. It started to light up for a few seconds, but the power soon disappeared.

[Marking has failed]

The Dalki swung its arm behind it, and now with Quinn's single slot gone, he had no use for the Dalki anymore. Using the blood drill was the quickest and easiest way to pierce through the Dalki's hard exterior and had the highest chance of killing it in one shot, and it hadn't failed him today, as he slammed it into the Dalki's chest.

'The move is so effective against Dalki's that Eno might have created it with the specific purpose in mind to counter them.' Quinn thought but he was realising the power of the amulet was harder to use than he first thought. 'If I want to mark something I have no clue the percentage or success rate. At the same time, I want it to be in good condition. It's not like the shadow eater where I don't have to worry how weak the person I use it is on.'

Nonetheless, Quinn didn't quit there and continued to look for the Dalki hunting squads. After fighting another squad it looked like his amulet filled quickly. Ten dalki was enough to fill up the first slot.

Meeting a third squad, Quinn defeated another ten, but a second slot wasn't filled. Capturing the last of the Dalki though, Quinn was able to make a second attempt at capturing one and once again it failed.

From then, Quinn met a smaller squad, one of five. Killing only a few of them had allowed him to regain the first slot. It looked like even if a slot had disappeared, the energy carried over so he didn't have to start from the beginning again. The good thing as well, was even if it failed the first slot energy requirements seemed to stay the same.

There was a worry that he would have to continue fighting more and more as the slots continued. Managing to have only one Dalki left, if it didn't work a third time, Quinn was going to have to try it on a lesser beast instead.

After all, he still wasn't sure what controlling a beast would actually work or feel like, nor did he have any reference as to how hard it was to mark a one spiked

Dalki. Placing the amulet on the Dalki's back once more, when it lit up and Quinn moved his hand away. The exact same design that was shown on the amulet stayed on the giant lizard's back.

It was the same red as the Marked had, but his was only the size of the amulet itself, making it much harder for anyone else to notice.

[You have successfully marked someone]

[1/1]

'Yes! Now, let's see what you can do.'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1212: Full control of a new body

It had taken a few tries, but finally the marking had succeeded, granting Quinn control over a Dalki of all things. As soon as the red mark had appeared on its back, it had stopped all its resistances. All of its aggression, its anger, everything seemed to have seeped out, reminding him of Peter when he had just been turned. However unlike his undead friend, the creature before him was still very much alive, standing straight and awaiting instructions.

'Great, so I don't have to worry about them going crazy wild like the Marked from the trees. Now to test out a few things.' Quinn thought.

The description had stated that the User of the Branching Link Amulet could do two major things to his Marked, Control and Energy Transfer. The former was split up between Partial Control and Full Control, whereas the latter allowed the User to either enhance the Marked by sending them his energy or strengthen himself by draining them, although at least the latter case was just a temporary boost.

'Let's try controlling it first.'

It was a strange feeling, when activating the Demon tier Amulet he could feel a connection to the Dalki in front of him, yet it was different to the one he shared with his family members. It felt more as if he had grown an extra limb that he could now control.

There were a few simple tests that Quinn had done, for one he tried to make the Dalki use his own martial arts which worked out surprisingly well. Its body was stronger and taller than the Vampire Lord so it took him a while to get used to.

Next Quinn tried to control the Dalki while also using his own body. Moving both bodies was easy enough, but when he tried to spar with it, that was when problems started to arise. The Cursed faction leader already had some experience in regards to splitting his attention to use his shadow powers, but mixing in the control over a Dalki made everything far more complicated than he had anticipated.

'It's only going to get more difficult the more Marked I'm going to add, so I need to get the hang of it.'

There had to be a solution to this problem, so instead of fine controlling the Dalki, a feat that a puppeteer like Fex might be better suited for, Quinn went into the forest to try and control it through basic commands. With his sharp nose it didn't take them long to find a suitable test dummy.

It was an Intermediate tier beast that looked like a boar, so it wouldn't be too hard for him or the Dalki to defeat it, yet the goal was still for Quinn to learn about the limits of the Demon tier Amulet. On the way here, he had already confirmed that a

mental command to 'follow' him was sufficient for the Dalki to act. There was no need to control each individual movement like its leg.

Its brain still had some self function capabilities, however questioning it was not something that could be done, still this gave him an idea. Instead of outright ordering it to 'attack' the beast, Quinn informed the Marked that 'beast = enemy', curious to see how it would react. As soon as the Dalki's eyes landed on the boar, it rushed forward to finish it off, but just before he connected Quinn sent out another command 'beast = ally'.

The Dalki immediately stopped, short of the boar's forehead. The Intermediate beast, jumped backwards before it charged at the Dalki for daring to attack it. To Quinn's surprise the Marked just took the hits, without retaliating.

'So the Marked can differentiate friend from foe if I tell them to, they can follow at least simple commands and they fight like they usually do. Something more complicated like making it use my martial arts appears to require my own control. Hmm, if I took the time to teach it to them, could it perhaps use it on its own? Perhaps I should make one join Nate's training in the future.' Quinn thought, but since they were at war and he had a Quest that was practically a race against time, he quickly proceeded to the next test, Full Control.

Activating the amulet again, Quinn instinctively knew what he needed to do, so he closed his eyes to tighten his senses.

'So this is Full Control, huh.' Quinn looked at his hands, yet they weren't pale like usual, instead they were large and covered in scales. Standing opposite him was a human that looked small, his eyes closed.

'This is far better than I thought, I can control the Dalki body completely like my own.' To familiarise himself with his new body he took a few practice kicks and swings and this time there was no delay and no awkward feeling like when he had used Partial Control.

However, he then wondered what about his own body, was it now just standing there like the Dalki did before it. Even though the Dalki did not have the amulet, Quinn could still feel the time and its uses the same way he could do before. He attempted the Partial Control and it worked. Quinn's body was moving him as it was directed.

Next Quinn wanted to test out the Energy Transfer to see how it felt. Even while his consciousness seemed to be fully inside the Dalki's body, he could tell that he was able to do this. Soon small amounts of energy entered the Dalki's body, its strength was growing at an amazing rate, but he could feel his original body was getting weaker.

'This is good. I could improve the one spiked Dalki to have a power of a two spike or three spike with my powers, which means my plan will work.'

Commiting to this test even more, so he himself went away from his original body, and tried to transfer energy once again, and still even at a distance the skill of the Demon tier had worked.

There was just one last thing Quinn wanted to test and that was the simple commands in his original body, while he was still in the Dalki body. The reason for this was Quinn's body was the one with the system, however while in the Dalki body he was unable to access any of the system information, like using the Inspect skill on the boar-like beast who was fleeing after realising the futility of its actions.

The next test started with Quinn sending his own body the command to protect itself at all costs. He wanted to see whether it would just use the Vampire Lord's natural strength or also utilise all the blood powers, shadows powers and beast gear he had access to without the need for Partial Control.

This was of the utmost importance since it would decide how safe Full Control actually was. Dalki Quinn walked up to his vampire body punching his fist out, only for it to get caught in Vampire Quinn's palm. Something he had seen bullies do to him a while ago and he felt like imitating.

'Being this tall sure is nice. No wonder the Dalki aren't scared of humans, we look so... small.'

From his position he used the Dalki body to do a thigh kick. The muscle structure was slightly different, but the power was supreme. Just before the kick would make contact though, Quinn's body jumped back and moved away.

'Do I have to make my body see the Marked body as an enemy for it to attack me? That would be hard to do, unless I could see what both of me are seeing at the same time, but I only have vision from what I am fully in control of. Let's just see if I can get it to attack me.' Quinn thought.

He charged in again, this time throwing out multiple punches which were blocked and parried away. Getting frustrated, Dalki Quinn stomped the ground lifting up pieces of the rubble, and started to punch them towards Vampire Quinn.

Next he ran behind, hoping to trap his original body and went to punch even faster. So far he had been a little cautious after all he didn't want to hurt his own body, but then a shadow had risen, stopping one of the blows from hitting him.

'I guess if it's life is really on the line it will use abilities as well, but it still hasn't attacked back!' Quinn quickly went to the ground and did a long sweep across the floor with his leg, that's when Quinn's body jumped up in the air, and landed on top of the Dalki head.

'I never realised how annoying and fast it could be to fight myself!' Dalki Quinn grabbed Vampire Quinn by the thighs, and tried to smash him into the ground, but just as his body was about to hit the ground, it twisted in flexible ways to break

free. Jumping off the Dalki body, his original was free from injuries once again standing there.

"What the...how did you even do that?" Quinn questioned his body. While that was something he could do, after all, he had just himself doing it, it was nothing he would have ever attempted to do unless someone had told him to. Grappling techniques wasn't something he had really studied. It was at that point a smile had appeared on the body's face.

"I tried my best to hide it from you, but I think we have played long enough. It looks like you're still lacking when it comes to fighting. It's been a long time since I had a body of my own, and yours is truly strong, but I guess you still can't beat experience." The body replied.

'My body, it's speaking, and what the hell is it saying?' Quinn thought completely confused, it was then that he remembered what Shiro said to him after looking inside.

There was more than one consciousness inside his body.

'It couldn't be...'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1213: Hug it ou

When trying to communicate with the Dalki, no words were spoken at all. Dalki could talk and have conversations with each other and humans. However, when Quinn had left his own body, he had never expected it to speak, but right now, not only was it talking, but it sounded like it was a completely different person.

This led him to think back to when Shiro had seen inside Quinn's mind to talk to Oscar. That his body currently contained two conciseness. He didn't exactly know how it worked, especially with the system, but that could only mean that the person talking now was...

"Vincent?" Quinn called out, a bit unsure if it was the case or not.

Quinn's body smiled back. "Look, I know I'm usefully more handsome than this, but it's the best I could do." Soon he was walking up to Quinn and looked up, placing his hands on his abs.

"How? How are you able to use my body? Aren't you stuck in the system? I thought it was linked. Is it because of the Amulet? I mean, it has to be." Quinn continued to ask multiple questions as he was stunned. Honestly, more than anything, he was unprepared for a meeting like so.

"Does that even matter?" Vincent asked as he continued to weirdly touch the Dalki's body. He didn't say anything but Vincent was actually trying to analyse what the creature was like. Stuck in the system, he had heard and learnt so much about them but had never met one in person. He felt like a baby who was experiencing senses for the first time again.

Although Quinn was mostly ignoring this. "The Dalki are quite tall, or maybe this body is short?" Vincent placed his finger on his chin before looking into Quinn's eyes.

"Honestly, I wanted to tell you something for a long time now, Quinn, and I was waiting until we were face to face. However, this might be the best chance I ever get to say it. So I'm going to say it now. I'm proud of you."

"When I created that book, I never thought anything like this would happen. I left it for our family. I wasn't sure if it would ever be needed. Of course, I thought something might happen far off into the future, but being on this journey along with you and everything you have been through, I never wished for it. Still, you were able to take everything on in your full stride, and I think more than anything I need to tell you how much of a good job you have done."

This wasn't the first time that Vincent had given Quinn praise. He had heard it numerous times as a voice in his head. Every time he did hear them, there was an overwhelming warm feeling inside him. This was why he was wondering this time,

why there was a different feeling. He was trying the best he could to hold down the lump in his throat.

S

"Vincent...I hated you." Quinn said.

Hearing this, Vincent took a step back and tilted his head, looking at him strangely.

"At first, I mean. I hated your cocky attitude, how you would keep secrets from me when you could have helped out more. There were times where I didn't even completely trust you, thinking you were working for your own goal rather than mine, but I slowly realised that honestly, throughout all of this, there was one person who was always by my side and who had been dragged into this just as much as I was. Thank you."

After expressing their feelings, there was an awkward moment between the two of them. They had even turned both ways to face each other. Until Vincent, being the older one, turned back around.

"Why don't you give your grandpa a hug, huh?"

Before Quinn could do anything, the ground started to shake. More pods were shot out from the mothership and were landing. Interrupting the moment and they knew what they both needed to do.

Now knowing that Quinn was able to control his body while he was in another, Quinn had a few more questions he needed to do to find out what exactly was different. After asking a series of questions, Quinn found that his body was still mostly controlled by the Amulet more than he thought.

Whenever Quinn would give a command, Vincent claimed that the body would allow him to only do so much. Controlling it based on the restrictions set from the command itself. Based on the instructions given, it would also allow him to use the system, which was why Vincent, even with no prior knowledge of using the shadow powers, was able to.

There was a simple fix to this though, Quinn would simply command his body that it was free to do as he wished, and now Vincent could control it how he liked with full access to the system, also taking it away whenever he wanted as well.

"Wow, this is really a cheat. You don't have to think about doing anything. You can just access the system and use whatever you like. If any of the vampires knew about this, they would all want their own system." Vincent said after testing out a few skills. To a certain extent, Vincent knew what it was like, but knowing about it and experiencing it were two different things.

The last thing Quinn wanted to check was if there was anything that could be done with the Amulet to allow Vincent to control the Dalki body. However, no matter

what they tried, it just wasn't possible. When Quinn would return to his own body, Vincent would return to the system, back to how he was.

On top of that, Vincent didn't have control of the Amulet's abilities. Only Quinn did. So whenever he wished, he could take energy from his own body, making him stronger.

"With all the tests done, I guess it's time for us to get to work", Quinn said.

"What do you want me to do? We've gotten this far mostly due to your own judgment, so I'll listen to whatever plan you have." Vincent said.

---

With Vincent in full control, Quinn, still in the Dalki body, they both went along to the mothership. Vincent was still having fun using the shadow skills and was currently heading straight towards the mothership. When they were getting close, Vincent would stay on standby a little distance away, and now Quinn in the Dalki body was ready to do what he had planned.

Just like with the last mothership, there was a camp that was being built underneath the mother ship. It looked to be more along the way compared to the last one. As if a fortress was to be made to stay there long term if need be.

Quinn's plan was to disguise himself within the Dalki group, hoping he could deal with the problem a lot easier while fighting as little as possible and losing as few lives as possible as well. After telling Vincent to give him a few scratches here and there, Quinn could feel the power of the Dalki blood energising him; it was different to the power he would take for himself with the Amulet. It was more of a raw energy.

Next he was off and heading straight for the camp. With his injuries on his body, the Dalki immediately came running towards him.

'This is good. This Dalki was from the scout team, so they should ask me what I saw if I'm like this.' Quinn thought. When the first Dalki reached him, he soon saw a fist coming towards his face, and the next second, his back was planted on the floor.

'What just happened? Did the Dalki just hit me? Could they tell it wasn't one of them?' Quinn thought.

"How could you come back alive!" The Dalki yelled. "We do not retreat!"

The Dalki had a significantly different culture compared to the humans, and Quinn needed to come up with a pretty good reason why he had returned.

"I need to make a report. All of our squads were wiped out, and it was by a vampire!" Quinn said, hoping this would be enough. "They said if we ran into them, we needed to head to the mothership."

Of course, Quinn didn't know if this was true or not. He didn't even know if the Dalki knew about other vampires, but he did know that the Dalki were working with vampires. To find out a vampire was killing their kind had to be big news.

After huffing and panting, it looked like some Dalki took the initial one away. Although most of them were hot-headed, it didn't seem that all of them were. Quinn was thankful for this. Eventually, another Dalki had approached him.

"It's good you came back alive. I heard that one of our Dalki ships was destroyed. Graham thinks that it couldn't have just been done by the humans alone and told us to report on everything. Head to the mother ship and inform them."

This was what Quinn was hoping for. After entering one of the smaller ships, Quinn was allowed to enter the mother ship. Once he was on board, he knew the place's layout relatively well due to being on the last one. However, he needed to travel by foot, and he had made a couple of wrong turns at some point, but he had eventually found the room he was looking for, the room where the jamming devices were located.

"What are you doing here!" A guard shouted.

Last time, Quinn had made a distraction, and the guards had run all over the place, but this time two one spiked Dalki stood by the door.

There could be no survivors knowing what Quinn was doing. Using the power of the Amulet, he started to transfer energy to himself. He grew stronger, and then when he walked up close to the guards, he grabbed both of them by the head and smashed them together as hard as he could. The skulls could be felt cracking, and green blood spilt from their foreheads.

The Dalki were caught completely off guard, never expecting such a thing. The next second, while dazed, Quinn lifted up both of his elbows, slamming down as hard as he could on top of their heads once again. It was a deadly blow.

'With the increase of my own body's power, I raised it to the same strength as a two spiked Dalki. We can do this. With Vincent in my body, he will be able to fight as well. He can protect the Shelters while I go off and destroy the motherships.'

S

Not long after, and the mother ship was seen falling from the sky once again.

---

Back at the Shelter where Linda and Wevil had been busy taking care of the injured fighters and resting themselves, they currently all had their eyes glued on a world event, and they weren't the only ones. They were watching a fight, which was about to occur between Hilston and a Dalki that they had never seen before, which had five spikes on its back.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1214: Abandon the ship

When transferring energy from himself to the Dalki's body that Quinn was currently in. He made sure not to overdo it for a few reasons. The first there was simply no need to. The power of a two spike was simply too much for any one spike to deal with. This was something that could be used to their advantage because even though Quinn had the power of a two spike, two spikes did not appear on his body.

However, there was still Vincent who was outside roaming close to the camp. During the testing the energy that was transferred to the Dalki body would eventually be returned, but if he was to take up too much energy, it would only make his body weaker. At the end of the day, the Dalki could die, but Quinn's original body could not.

The next task was for Quinn to escape from the ship, it took a lot to get one Mark and he didn't want to go through the process again. With the ship floating down falling from the sky, Quinn needed to brace himself. Another Dalki had already taken the ship he had come in and flown off.

'I guess I can only jump off and hope it doesn't break my legs.' Quinn thought.  
'Wait a second.' Another idea had struck him.

Eventually, when going to the outside area, he found the spot where he wanted to jump from. Powering his legs and using the Dalki's incredible strength, he managed to leap through the air going a great distance away from the ship. Still, he would be affected by the ship's crash if he stayed in the area.

When coming close to the ground, he could eventually see a shadow beneath him, touching it slowed down his velocity and he was able to safely land in one piece after entering the shadow space.

'I see you have gotten the hang of using my body.' Quinn said.

"And it looks like you did a good job as well." Vincent replied back.

Now heading back to the Shelter, Quinn decided to switch so he was back in his own body. He wanted to still practice using the demon tier amulet more and controlling the Dalki. He didn't have much time to practice, so he had to use all the spare time he could get, at the same time there was something else that he wanted to check out.

'Its as I thought. Even though I destroyed another Dalki ship, it didn't add to the quest. After all this is one of those that belong in the Graylash faction. So I need to destroy all the ones in the Cursed faction area.'

Looking through his system, he soon found even more bad news, a third planet had been taken over. Quinn knew what he was doing though. At the rate the planets

were being taken over there was no way for him to complete the quest, unless he was able to receive some help of some kind and this was most likely the only way.

Looking at the system even further, Quinn noticed one last change that had happened.

[Amulet slots 1/2]

'It increased, but how? Did it also take the energy from the Dalki I killed as a mark?' When looking at himself, he noticed that there was some fresh green blood on his two gauntlets. Blood that couldn't have been there too long.

'Looks like you caught me.' Vincent said. 'While you were in there, I decided to roam around a bit, and I came across another scouting group. They spotted me so I really had no choice, and it looks like it helped you out in the end.'

If it was anyone else controlling his body, Quinn perhaps would have said it was risky, but it was clear that Vincent was a skilled leader who had some fighting capabilities, even though he wasn't much of a fighting leader in the past.

'With another slot, I can get another Dalki that will just help us out even more.'

---

Heading back they soon saw the Shelter ahead of them. Everyone was in high spirits. The attacking Dalki had been dealt with, so they had time to rest and organise themselves. On top of that, they just witnessed the enemy mothership falling.

However, during this time, nearly everyone had their eyes glued to a screen of some kind. At least the civilians inside and the members of the Cursed faction.

Going through the Shelter, Quinn soon found himself in a large hall where all the injured were being placed. Inside here was where Linda and Wevil were present sitting next to each other against a wall.

Popping out of the shadow, Quinn appeared.

"Quinn! Behind you!" Linda screamed seeing him, and immediately launched forward with her fist but the punch was soon stopped by Quinn himself. Wevil too was quick on his feet grabbing his dagger and went to attack the Dalki, but Quinn suddenly appeared in front of him as well, slapping the dagger out of his hand.

'Oh right I completely forgot, this is the normal reaction if one was to see a Dalki.'

[Shadow lock]

'It should be fine if he stays in the shadow space, right?' Quinn thought.

After explaining himself, and why exactly he had a Dalki with him, the panic and almost heart attack Linda had received had settled down.

"Why would you do that? It's a good thing a lot of people weren't watching you and you got rid of it quickly." Linda complained. "Still, I can't believe you can really control a Dalki, and more than one. That's nearly stronger than an ability. Demon tier items are really something else."

While Linda was thinking of the amazing things one could do with the Demon tier item, she soon felt Wevil giving her a nudge and saw him point to his wrist watch where the video he was watching was still playing.

"Oh right, Quinn there's something you have to see." Linda said, and soon bringing up the video, Quinn could see what was currently happening on the Cursed ship. At the moment, the video was switching between many perspectives.

It showed that a group of Dalki were on board and the Cursed faction were fighting against them, not just them though. There were also ability users that Quinn didn't recognise.

"I know you've been busy so I'll try to give you as much information as I know." Linda started to explain. "The Cursed faction were suddenly attacked by the Blade family, but they had sent a load of ability users first, perhaps to weaken our forces. Later on though, they ended up coming themselves, the Blade family. I don't know when, or how but the Dalki started to invade the Cursed ship as well."

Quinn had gathered that from what he knew before, watching the videos Quinn did see some good. The Cursed and Chained that were fighting just moments ago. As soon as the Dalki appeared, they had almost put their battles aside to deal with the oncoming threat. That's when the video had finally changed to another scene. A fight between a five spiked Dalki with a large long tail, and Hilston.

The two of them were in the training room going back and forth, neither one giving in.

"Tell Logan or Sam that the teleporters are back online on some of the planets. Get the Cursed faction members that are unable to fight to come to the Daisy faction or here. Worst case scenario abandon the Cursed ship. They don't need to risk their lives fighting for it." Quinn answered.

"Wait Quinn, you're not going to go back and fight them!" Wevil said surprised after hearing his answer.

"From the looks of things, the situation had actually gotten better for them since the Dalki invaded. The Dalki and Hilston seem to be equal in power but in the end one of them will lose out. Sil is still there and I can tell if someone is in serious danger."

At any point I can travel to them. If I went now, honestly I'm not sure I could beat either one of them.

"The Cursed ship isn't my only responsibility, and something dangerous is happening at the Cursed planets as well."

Something in Quinn's gut was telling him that the takeover of the Cursed planets were unnatural. He could tell when arriving on this planet. The Dalki were making a base, planning to stay here a long time, thinking that the battle would last.

So just what was taking over the Cursed planets so fast.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1215: Last wish

Before leaving the place, Quinn wanted to check with Ko, the faction leader, if they would now be okay with him leaving. As he was ready to leave the faction base, he had Linda and Wevil following behind and had stopped by his office. The base itself was one of the few places that had been least affected by the attack and was also doubling up as a safe centre for civilians. This Shelter has suffered a lot, and even more so since the Graylash faction were unable to help them like they had done on the other planets.

Quinn still felt like he was partly to blame, perhaps if he had found out what was the cause of the Marked and what the Demon tier beast was earlier, more could have survived, especially Robin.

"Quinn, honestly I heard about all the other bases being attacked and I have seen part of the Broadcast. I'm quite surprised you even came here, but you don't have to worry about us. The stray Dalki left out there will take a while until they do anything. Besides we are a strong faction."

Hearing this had settled Quinn's heart a little, for he had planned to take the other Cursed members back with him. Usually, Quinn would try to complete quests on his own, but he knew he needed all the help he could get.

"I know these people belong to the Graylash faction, but you and I have been through a lot. The teleporters to the Daisy planet are up and running. I believe it's one of the only few places that are. If there is a sudden attack, then the safest place to retreat to would be there." Quinn answered.

With that said and done, Quinn was ready to leave the base and outside was the last member of the Cursed faction. Alex Stood there waiting, but he wasn't alone and he looked kind of nervous.

"What the?" Wevil commented, rubbing his eyes. "Am I seeing things, or does that large muscular man have the same set of wings as Alex as well?" Wevil asked.

Quinn was about to ask the same thing but now knowing that it wasn't some type of hallucination, he soon used his inspect skill.

[Blood fairy]

'Another Blood fairy? His wings are twice the size Alex's, but then again, Andrew is twice the size of him as well. For a second I thought he might have been another subclass.'

Knowing that the forger Andrew worked closely together with Alex, Quinn had an idea of what most likely happened.

'I warn you that this will be another thing that will need to be hidden from the vampire society. One of them, you could perhaps play it off as a subclass that you never intended to create, but with two, there is a good chance that any of the leaders could use this as a case that you were planning to go against them.' Vincent warned.

'At the moment that is the least of my worries. If Alex wishes to save someone he feels is close to him and worth saving, then I will agree with his decision and support him.' Quinn replied.

There was also another reason why Quinn wasn't so against the idea of having two blood fairies. Andrew was considered one of the top forgers in the world and Quinn was thinking of ways to convince him over to their side.

"Quinn, look I can explain." Alex started to get defensive, and by the look on Andrew's face, it looked like Alex had already gone over explaining the difficult part of things.

"Don't worry, I'm sure you had your reasons. Come on, we need to get out of here." Quinn said, as they headed to a special room located around the back of the main faction building. A place where all the teleporters had been placed. It seemed like the Dalki didn't even bother to attack such a place since they knew that they were unable to use them and it was why Quinn had to destroy the mothership despite the fact that it didn't help out with his Quest.

"When we get back, Linda, Wevil, I want you two to head to one of the Cursed planets KunKun, I will be heading to a different one to the two of you. Make sure you keep your shadow abilities active at all times. That way I can hop over to where you are when I can." Quinn ordered.

"Wait, don't you think it will be safer if we all go together. I know your strong Quinn, but there might also be Dalki that even we can't face." Linda replied. "We were struggling there enough as it is."

It was hard for Quinn to say why, because really he was doing it mainly due to his quest, but that would mean he would have to explain the system to them all.

"The Dalki seemed to be building a base of some kind on each of the planets, and at the same time none of the Shelters could get help due to the teleporters being jammed. We need to get rid of those teleporters as quickly as possible. The only way to travel at the moment is via ship. If we both head to different planets. Once I am done dealing with the mothership on my end, I can use my shadow link to travel to you two.

"The idea is, me and Alex will travel towards the Cursed faction in one sector. While you two in the other. After dealing with the mother ship, I'll hop over to you

two and deal with the Dalki there, while Alex makes his way to another planet, and soon hop back."

To the Cursed members there it sounded like a lot of work, but they had learnt that somehow Quinn was already able to take out two of the Dalki ships. It was clear that this was something that only he could do.

"Quinn, I also managed to finish this." Alex said, handing over Quinn's red mask that he had given to Alex a while ago. "I managed to use that upgraded crystal and it looks like it worked. I increased it from the emperor tier and now it's at the legendary tier. I know you're plenty strong already, but every little bit helps, right?"

Using his inspect skill, Quinn looked at the stats of the mask. Originally it was an incomplete emperor tier item so it didn't grant the user much. But it did have a passive skill that allowed one's adrenaline points to rise, which in turn could boost a single stat.

"Alex, bringing you along will be dangerous. You don't have the best equipment yourself. Even here you had to face some trouble, so I think it's best if you keep it, and I don't want you or Andrew to wait any longer. Make yourselves the best equipment you can. You have to protect yourselves before you can protect others.

"The same goes for you Quinn." Alex said smiling.

Returning to the Daisy planet, Quinn could see that things were good here. The walls were just as intact as they were before, a few members were injured but they were light injuries. It seemed while he was away the few Dalki that were still out and about on the planet, had attempted an attack, but had failed.

[3/10 planets lost]

Looking at the Quest, Quinn didn't even have time to explain to Helen what he was doing but just quickly updated her on everything. Telling her that he had informed people that they could come to them for protection. He also requested another ship, for Wevil and Linda's use.

Helen had returned to give Quinn the news that both of the ships he had requested were ready.

"Wait Quinn, with the teleporters active, more people from the planets will start to come to the Shelter. I'm sure the Dalki will catch on to this, and they may even target this planet again as an excuse for it. Which is why I can't go with you, but I have received news and the other planets need help. So eight of the blood weapon users that helped fight with you before are coming with you. I have split them up into two groups to go along with you."

Last time, two of them had lost their lives because they had decided to come and help Quinn, but he couldn't deny that they could help fight off the enemies at the Shelter while he did what he needed to do.

"Thank you." Quinn answered as he was ready to leave, turning around, he soon felt someone grab his hand and pull him in. Based on the strength used, he knew it wasn't an enemy and soon saw the one pulling him was Helen.

Her face went in close to his, his mind was freezing in the moment, and before he knew it she had grabbed him by the scruff off his neck and pulled him in. Pressing her lips against his.

'There so...soft.' Quinn thought at that moment.

She had let go, and had a guilty look on her face.

"I'm sorry Quinn, but I just had to be even more selfish just this once. If I told you I wasn't scared I would be lying. With the war going on, I have already seen people dying and getting reports from all the other planets. There is a good chance that maybe you and I will never see each other again after this, and if I didn't kiss you at least once. I would have died with a huge regret."

After saying these words, Helen looked at Quinn expecting some sort of answer from him, and Quinn could see this as well, but while thinking about her, another girl had popped into his head.

'Quinn, don't not now, instead use this to encourage her.' Vincent came in before Quinn could say what he was about to say.

"I wont accept it. I won't accept that as your last wish. You want to experience more things like this right? Well then live and don't die, that way you have the chance to experience it again, because I won't be dying."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1216: Catching up

The Cursed group that was now helping Quinn along with his quest had been split up into two. Wevil, Linda, and four of the blood weapon users for support, then there was Quinn and his group. Alex and Andrew had been brought along, only Alex needed to come, but Andrew insisted on staying with Alex. More than anything, he was curious about the changes in his body and had multiple questions he wanted to ask.

Even now, Quinn could hear the two of them talk about it during their journey.

"I knew the Cursed faction had V, but after working with you closely, I never saw any signs that you were one. The other forgers would spill their blood constantly, and there were no signs at all." Andrew said.

Although the two forgers had been pretty much living under a rock as they worked day and night to complete the Demon tier amulet, it was news that had even become known to them.

"Well, that's because now me and you are not quite the same as V. We work slightly differently and are a subclass of them of some kind. If the V had these giant red wings on their back, they would be pretty easy to spot." Alex couldn't help but stare at the giant wings on Andre's back.

They were too large and powerful to be tied down or hidden underneath some type of clothing. The other four blooded weapon users on the ship with them couldn't stop staring as well, as if they were hypnotised by the red colour.

'Damn, am I feeling a little jealous?' Alex thought.

Iree, Yag, and two other females Anna and Ting had come on board from the blooded weapon users. They had been ordered by Quinn to do one thing, to protect Alex. Unlike the time before, they would not come with Quinn heading towards the Dalek mothership.

Soon they could see one of the Shelters of the planet under attack. They had yet to enter the Shelter, but there was fighting around a hundred meters from the place. It seemed like they were faring better as Quinn could see some Dalki bodies on the hard orange ground in different areas, far from the Shelter.

'This was the planet that had been handed the Blood weapons, and one of the ones Helen is planning to reinforce. In total, I think she said the Cursed are going to try and keep six planets. This means the evacuation of the others are still in progress.'

'The weaker planets probably needed more help with the process, but this was one of the closer ones. I'm sorry for all the lives I can't save.' Quinn thought.

Still, in the air, they were soon approaching the Shelter. Quinn slammed a large red button on the side, and soon the back of the ship started to open up.

"Everyone, let's go, jump!" Quinn Shouted, breaking through the loud sound of the wind.

"From all the way up here!" Alex was a little nervous.

"Look at everyone else. They seem ready." Andrew said. "Shouldn't we be the least worried since we have wings?"

Still, despite that Alex had never jumped from so high before, why couldn't they just wait and land the ship like everyone else? Regardless, he soon saw Quinn jumping out of the ship and the others along with him.

They were falling through the air. The velocity of the ship made it so they were shooting right past the Shelter and instead were heading for where the fighting was taking place a few hundred meters past it.

"Don't worry," Iree said to Alex. the two of them were falling through the sky, and one had a clear panicked look on his face. Alex made it so his wings were as close to his back as possible, afraid that the strong wind resistance would hurt them. "If we look calm, it's because we have Quinn."

In the middle of the air, Quinn unleashed the Dalki that was in his shadow lock, appearing next to him.

There were around twelve Dalki in total on the ground. A squad leader of around fifty or so people fighting, and a few of them with blood weapons.

"What is that?" One of them asked as they could see several people falling from the sky. Just as the people were about to crash into the hard ground, a large dome of shadow appeared, covering the centre area where the Dalki were bunched up. The next second, the shadow fell to the ground, and Quinn was seen with the others standing behind thier weapons drawn. Setting off, Quinn was already fighting against the Dalki.

In seconds Quinn had turned the battle. He swung out his fist, firing off large blood swipes, stopping them from getting close to the others. Blood drills were formed, killing Dalki on the spot, and Qi punches were made, sending the unmatched creature in strength, flying through the sky.

What was strange for most of them was that a Dalki was saying by Quinn's side, helping him do everything, until there was only one left.

"I'm going to need a bit of my own space for this," Quinn said, using the shadow Void skill to create a dome over his Dalki and the other he had captured. Using the amulet, he had planned to capture another Dalki since a second slot had opened up.

'Last time, it took three tries to just get one of these. I wonder how long it will take this time.' Quinn thought.

However, when the amulet lit up, the light from it soon faded away. He found himself with a notification screen that put a grin on his face.

[Marking has been successful]

There was something Quinn needed to see quickly, and the first thing was how easy it was to control two Dalki simultaneously. Quinn found it difficult, and the easiest thing to do was to try and puppet one of their movements while giving simple commands to the other.

The good thing was that even if Quinn was in complete control of One Dalki, he could still puppet the other relatively well.

"Alright, Vincent, it's time I leave everything over to you. Just please, don't do anything weird while you're in my body." Quinn asked.

When the shadow void field went down, two Dalki were seen jumping off in the distance, and the plan was in motion.

"What the hell was that?" Iree asked.

"Don't worry about that, beautiful, just some things I can do. Leave that ship to them." Vincent said, making Iree blush.

While the others headed back to the Shelter, Vincent stayed observing the outer area. This Shelter seemed to suffer from more planned attacks than the other two planets they had been on. They were pretty careful in what they were doing.

It looked like each Dalki had their own strategy that they were implementing. In the end, those in the Shelter didn't have to do anything because once Vincent was stood outside those doors, not a single group of Dalki ever touched those walls again.

After an hour, so the good news had arrived, Vincent could see the notification screen popping up in front of him.

[2/10 Dalki mother ships destroyed]

But at the same time, while Quinn was away.

[5/10 Cursed planets have been taken over]

"Come on, Quinn, you need to be quicker!" Vincent said.

The full plan was now in motion. Vincent ordered Alex to get on moving with the others towards the next planet, and when they arrived, to just stay at the Shelter with thier shadow active. Vincent then headed towards the now two Dalki bodies, and once having switched, the Dalki were placed in the shadow lock. Quinn was able to travel to where Wevil and Linda were, bringing them along.

The good news was, with Vincent fighting, he had unlocked a third slot in the amulet. Growing Quinn's army of Dalki even more so. This pattern repeated, and having no need to travel in space, and having obtained a third Dalki after a few failures, the third ship had been taken down.

[3/10 Dalki mother ships have been destroyed]

By the time Quinn had dealt with the third ship, travelling back to Alex, they had swiftly arrived at the planet, and the process was repeated once more.

[4/10 Dalki ship have been destroyed]

[6/10 Cursed planets have been taken over]

"I'm catching up! But I need to move along faster!"

After catering three Dalki, a fourth slot never seemed to open up, despite how much Dalki Vincent was killing. They didn't know if it was due to the energy being too low from one spiked Dalki. It Was a shame because the next thing they wanted to try and do was capture a two spike Dalki.

On top of that, Quinn's plan this time on the fifth Dalki ship didn't quite go to plan. After infiltrating the base in many different ways, it looked like the Dalki were communicating with each other.

After entering the ship and heading to the usual jammer room. Quinn, controlling one of the Dalki, had gone inside after killing the guards, but suddenly, he could see three spiked Dalki inside guarding the room. A fist had come towards his face, delivering a blow that his current body couldn't withstand.

The next second he felt his limbs being torn apart, and before Quinn could do anything, he had been killed.

After doing so, he was now back in his original body at the Shelter. In front of him was a bowl of grapes, and a woman he had never seen before sat by his side.

"What the hell is Vincent doing?"

'Well, this Shelter wasn't attacked like all the others, and there doesn't seem to be any scout groups. I checked the area, but I can't go too far off. I have to protect the place, right?' Vincent answered calmly.

Quinn quickly returned to the two Dalki that were on board, and they were in the midst of battle. Using the power of the amulet, Quinn gave a huge surge of energy to one of the Dalki's enough so that the two of them could eventually beat the three spike, and the ship was taken down.

[5/10 Dalki ships have been destroyed]

[6/10 Cursed planets have been destroyed]

Quinn was relieved seeing this. The ship had taken longer than usual, so he thought that the planet takeover would have progressed quicker than he thought.

'Maybe the Dalki or person who is the cause of all of this is struggling on one of the planets?' Quinn thought.

Having lost one Dalki, Quinn wasn't too over the moon. He also didn't have enough time to explore what Vincent had actually done while in his body, because once again, they were off to where Wevil and Linda were currently at, a planet called Oturn.

At the same time, a certain Dalki was currently on one of the mother ships inside the command centre.

"Graham, what are you doing here? I thought you were on a different fleet." A three spiked Dalki said.

"I'm sure you have heard, our ships are being destroyed left and right. There has to be a reason for this, and if you study, the pattern is clear. The next planet is planet Oturn, which is why I am here."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1217: The impossible ques

Although the new Supreme commander Sach was currently staying at the snow-filled Shelter along with Head general Samantha, he had yet to leave such a place because they knew that One Horn was present on the planet.

Their forces had suffered a few skirmishes here and there, but the Dalki still hadn't managed to get past the first trench that had been created by the group. Since the V now were no longer present within the army, Samantha's tactics on defence were working far better.

They had reinforced their defences, moving slowly, gaining territory further and further away from the land. The close combat ability users would be present in the trenches that were now covered in snow. Making it harder for the Dalki to pinpoint where they were.

Traps could be cleverly implemented, and this time, no one would be informing the enemy side.

At the same time, towers with far ranged ability users were scouting to spot the Dalki before they arrived. Before, Samantha's goal was trying to get rid of the mothership or the base that the Dalki was trying to set up.

However, after learning of One Horn, they decided that the slower approach was best.

Sitting in his makeshift office was Sach, who was getting reports after reports.

"Quinn, what the hell are you doing that is allowing you to take down the motherships so quickly? " Sach wondered. Despite asking the faction leaders what had occurred, it sounded like they didn't know much, and even worse, Sach could see that the Cursed faction ship was still in trouble.

'Two planets have been evacuated so far from the Earthborn group, but I told them to detour to planet Kimbar since One Horn is here. It's a good thing that the Cursed faction sent us their two army groups, but once the evacuation is done, what to do next?'

This was what Sach was struggling with because rather than looking at individual battles, Sach was still trying to look at the war as a whole. After the Dalki had attacked, they had gotten more information on the entire situation.

The Dalki had enough Motherships to send one to every single planet that the Earth owned. It had come as quite the surprise to him that the Dalki had this many forces, but still, the humans were outnumbering them ten thousand to one, not that it meant much in the first place.

Because there just weren't many humans that were strong enough to outnumber the Dalki.

'It might be best to send Nathan and the other group to attack the Dalki planets just like they had done ours. Their forces could be spread thin, and it might get them to split up. If they aren't expecting it, we can blitz the planets and move out, easing the pressure on our own forces. Or there is another option.'

'Why is One Horn even here in the first place?' Sach was thinking about the planet where he had confronted One Horn with the others. 'Oscar had told us to attack the planet that belonged to the Earthborn group because he was afraid they might use it to attack us in the future. We are in a severe situation now, yet there has been no action from that planet at all. On top of that, if One Horn is here, it means that he isn't there either.'

'Maybe, sending Nathan there might be the best thing, and we can find out why the Dalki find that place so important in the first place.'

He still hadn't made up his mind, but what Sach had to keep in mind was even if they successfully defended their planets from this current attack and got rid of the Dalki mother ships, the war wasn't over because there was still the Dalki planets themselves remaining, and thinking about this, he still had no clear way of just how they were going to win this war.

Planet Ortun was a dark planet where the ground was primarily black. It had a challenging environment where part of the ground would spew up hot molten lava at times. It wasn't the best place for humans to live in, but the setting did encourage strong beasts to roam, which was why it was an important planet for the Cursed faction.

Arriving at the Shelter and meeting up with Weevil and Linda, Quinn was surprised at how small it was, but this was most likely due to the environment. It was one of the few places where no such civilians lived, and the only people that were there were high-level travellers.

"I heard about this place, but it's so far out I never visited here," Iree said, as she saw what looked like a giant volcano in the distance erupt, it spewed lava down its sides, and smoke could be seen rising from the top.

"The Shelter is on the small side. I think only around two hundred or so Travelers actually live here." Yag added. "It seems like the Shelter wasn't attacked at all. Even the Dalki will have a hard time travelling on this terrain."

Quinn wasn't sure about that one, even more so since using the Dlaki's body, he was coming to learn just how resistant their hard scales were. It was no wonder that bullets of the past were unable to penetrate their problematic skin.

'If the Dalki aren't attacking the Shelter, it might be best if I come with you Quinn for this one like the first planet. After all, you know how much we struggled on the last one.' Vincent suggested.

It was true, the Dalki were catching on to Quinn's plans, and there was a good chance that they would have increased the defences on the ship itself, so the plan that he had implemented so far wouldn't work out this time.

'You have a point, then I think what we should try and do is get our third slot back. It could be a big help to us in the end.'

With that agreed by the two of them, they were soon off searching the unforgivable land for the Dalki. At the moment, Quinn was in complete control of his body, and he was trying his best to control both of the Dalki more accurately.

Soon they came across a strange giant caterpillar creature. Its body looked like it was made of fur, but Quinn thought that was impossible as it had seen it crawl over a small stream of hot lava without it catching fire or burning. It was also difficult to see since its fur looked to be camouflaged similarly to the ground it was on.

This was the perfect test for Quinn. He controlled the two Dalki, moving them to defeat the king tier beast. While being a puppet master of one, Quinn was noticing something interesting from the other. Although he had just given it simple commands, it seemed to now be fighting in a different style to what it had done before.

Before, it was fighting similar to how the Dalki would fight on their born natural instincts, but now the Dalki was using the skills Quinn knew known as Muay baron. Soon Quinn had defeated the beast with the Dalki and had obtained its crystal.

'There fighting techniques are evolving as I use them more and more. They are no longer just a normal one spiked Dalki. I wonder if this information is permanent or if they die, they have to learn the skills all over again as I get a new Marked?' Quinn thought.

Thinking about evolving, he also thought about something else. The first Dalki Quinn had defeated on the mother ship said. That Dalki said they grew from hard battles. Growing in strength, breaking down and healing again.

Did it mean that it was also possible for Quinn to grow the Marked Dalki that he controlled? If so, there would be no need for him to try and waste time getting a two spiked Dalki. He could just evolve his own.

It was an interesting thought that could help Quinn in the future, but now wasn't the time. Continuing to head towards the giant mothership in the sky, Quinn had come across his first set of Dalki that were out roaming about. It looked like they were

currently having trouble facing off against beasts that naturally roamed the planet as well.

'I guess the beasts from the other planets had stayed clear of them, but these ones are a little different to the usual.' Quinn gathered.

Finding the right time, Quinn went in to deal with them along with his two Dalki. He was getting used to the right amount of energy he needed to supply them with to efficiently deal with an opponent in equal strength. However, now that they were learning his fighting skills, they could still fight other Dalki with even less borrowed energy from Quinn.

Lastly, they had captured the last Dalki and had unlocked the third slot. So far, the process of marking a Dalki had been a strange one. He was unlucky at first, being successful on his third try. Still, sometimes it would take him five times.

Sometimes he would be successful on his first go, which made it hard for Quinn to exactly know the odds of capturing a Dalki or if he had just been unlucky or lucky.

However, soon he had obtained his third Dalki once again.

"Alright, It's time to head to the mothership again. We'll do this one together, Vincent." Quinn said, but just before he was about to leave, a disastrous message had appeared in front of him, updating him about the quest.

[7/10 Cursed planets have been taken over]

[8/10 Cursed planets have been taken over]

[9/10 Cursed planets have been taken over]

Quinn couldn't believe his eyes, despite everything he had done, it looked like his quest might still fail after all.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1218: Fight for me

Seeing the first notification screen pop up, Quinn wasn't too overwhelmed. He knew that at some point, he would see a notification pop up saying that one of the Cursed planets had been taken over. Especially since it had been a long time since one appeared. Seeing it was a reminder that he had to keep marching on.

However, soon after, not just one notification appeared but two more. Now he was only one planet away from the quest failing. His eyes couldn't leave the number as he read it over and over.

'Just...one more?' Quinn's whole hand was shaking as a feeling of dread was coming over him. His stomach was churning, wanting to escape from himself, and he started to feel incredibly cold.

'What is happening to me?' Not even Quinn understood himself why he was feeling this way.

He never thought just failing a quest from the System would make him feel like so, but there was a reason for it all, and it was his own fault.

Quinn had already sacrificed so much for the quest. He had no clue what was happening to those in the Cursed faction. The fighting had started multiple hours ago, and he could tell from the bond that they were still fighting.

Still, he told himself it was for the quest. Once he would complete the quest, he could go off to help them. He had put the quest up so high above in importance, above everything else, telling himself that if he was to fail this quest, he wouldn't be able to help the Cursed planets or those in the Cursed faction from Hilston.

It was the only way he could concentrate on such a task while other things were going on.

All of these thoughts had been used for motivation, and now they had come crashing down crushing him until his last breath.

'Quinn, Quinn!' Vincent yelled in his mind, grabbing his attention. 'Don't lose hope! The quest isn't complete yet, and there is always something that we can do! Don't let a stupid system be the decider of everything before it actually happens. There are still things we can do.'

Quinn awkwardly laughed inside. The System had already decided his course of actions for him. It was why he was in this challenging situation in the first place. Once again, the thought of the System being an actual Curse rather than a gift came to mind.

Swiping away the notification screen, Quinn looked at the Dalki mothership in front of him. It was still a far distance away, and he needed to take down five more.

Not just five more, but five more before the Dalki took over one. How long would that even take? Quinn wouldn't be surprised if the next notification screen appeared any second, failing him.

'What happened? How did three get taken over so fast? I thought with the long waiting period something must have happened?' As Quinn was thinking things through, there was really only one answer he could come up with. It had to do with the planet evacuations. If a few of them were complete or in the middle of their process, the quest would mark them as having lost their planets.

Quinn had managed to convince Helen to try not to concentrate the forces too much in one place, but in the end, he couldn't just tell her not to try and save people's lives just because he was worried that the System might make him weaker if he fails. There wasn't even a guarantee that it would be the case. Then how would he feel after if he was to ignore the quest?

'Quinn, I have a suggestion that might not solve our problem but gives us a chance.' Vincent said. 'I'll be honest with you, I agree with your train of thought. Due to how big of a quest this is and based on what has happened in the past, I think that the rewards would be good if we were to complete this quest.'

'After all, if the System really is using my ability, my powers within itself, then just this level of a task is too high. Which I hate to say, but I think that if we were to fail, it would also mean that the penalty would be large as well.'

This wasn't what Quinn wanted to hear, so he was starting to wonder just where Vincent was going with all of this.

'If we fail the quest and you can't complete it, then there is a chance you could go down a few levels, your stats are affected or something else. I know your worries. You worry that you're not strong enough to face Hilston, or the five spiked Dalki he is facing, but if your stats went down, then it would just be the same. This is why I think we should use this time. At this moment, all of your stats are unaffected!'

'So I should just give up on the quest, abandon all of these people on the Cursed planets? Even if I didn't complete it, I should at least help them eliminate the Dalki to minimise the losses. Maybe I can continue to level up from them!' Quinn questioned since he had levelled up another time since he had fought all those before, currently bringing his level up to 69.

In his mind, even if he lost the stats, there was a good chance that at level 70, Quinn could evolve, which would make up for the loss, but even then, there was no guarantee.

'No, my solution is, let me fight.' Said Vincent. "My solution is to let me use your body and head to the Cursed faction. You can use the Dalki strength and control two at the same time. Even if you run into tough ones, you can face them, and if needed, borrow energy and continue to take down the ships.

'If you need to use your original body, I can always come back here, thanks to Wevil and Linda. I will fight in your place, Quinn and help out those in the Cursed faction as much as possible.'

This was a solution Quinn hadn't thought of. For so long, he had been fighting by himself, and even when he had others, there was no one other than Sil that was currently at the level where they could help. There were times where Quinn wished he could clone himself, and perhaps this was the closest situation to it.

In the end, the risk involved in this situation was lowered. If Vincent couldn't take on Hilston he could at least help all the others on the Cursed ship. At the same time, if Quinn ran into another great foe in the Dalki, he could take some of his own energy from his body, and if he died, he would only be placed back in his original body.

'I can only control your body. If I could, I would take your place and be the Dalki taking down the motherships. This is the best way, and I promise I will try my best to save as many lives as possible. Quinn, trust me, I know how much the Cursed people mean to you, and I know how much you want to help everyone.'

Thinking about this, Quinn felt like he had no choice. The idea of the penalty was too strong.

'Vincent...do your best out there. If there's any trouble, then I will be back. I trust you...kinda.' Quinn said, thinking back to the strange girl he had seen before.

With that, Vincent was soon off in the shadow and was heading back to the Cursed ship. Quinn was now in control of the Dalki body they had just captured and had two more by his side.

Quinn and the two Dalki continued to travel together. What Quinn was finding strange was how little Dalki there were on this planet compared to all the others before. Even in the scout team he had met, there was only a few.

'Is there a type of dangerous beast on this planet that has been killing them? Or is it because they know the force on the Shelter is small, but they still sent a mothership, so that can't be the case.' Quinn wondered.

Eventually, Quinn could see the mothership up ahead that was floating at the base of what looked like an inactive volcano. The others that Quinn had seen had all been somewhat active. Either in smoke, eruptions or spewing out some substance

of some kind, but this one was larger than the others and was doing pretty much nothing.

When he had reached the foot of the volcano, he had expected to see another camp of Dalki that was being established just as he had seen all the times before, but there was no such thing. Instead, in the distance, Quinn could only see a single Dalki standing there.

'What, where are all the Dalki? Did they stay onboard the ship?' Quinn thought, but something was strange. As Quinn got closer, he was expecting some sort of ambush, but there seemed to be no such thing. His cautious nature was telling him something was up, because the strangest thing of them all, was the fact that the Dalki that stood there on its own, was wearing clothes of all things.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1219: Crash Landing

While Vincent was in Quinn's body, using the shadow abilities still felt very foreign to him. He could use the blood skills in Quinn's body without having to rely on the system because he had used these skills and the same moves in his body a long time ago, again and again.

At the same time, Quinn's body, due to it having evolved into the Vampire lord stage, wasn't actually all that different to what Vincent had in the past. But the shadow abilities were a different matter altogether. To use them, Vincent had to access the system. When using the shadow link skill, it gave him a few options of people he could connect to that also had their shadow link on.

'There are a couple on the Cursed ship that have the Shadow ability, but the question is who should I go towards?' Vincent wondered. 'There was that strong blockhead fighter, Nate? No, in this situation there is a high chance he is still in the middle of combat. What I need to gather first is information. I have no clue what has happened on the Cursed ship nor why the fighting has prolonged for this long. The one I need to go to is Sam.'

After making his decision, Vincent soon found his body becoming a shadow itself. When his body was forming back to its solid state, he could see himself appearing in front of Sam, but the sight wasn't exactly what he thought it would be.

When seeing Sam, he looked partially injured. Blood was dripping from his head and was all over his clothes. That wasn't the shocking thing though, what was shocking about the situation was where they were currently. From staring out of the square window in the room, Vincent could see they were around three stories high in some type of building. The walls were made of a hard orange brick of some sort.

In the room itself, he wasn't alone. Layla and Nate were conscious but lying on the floor. It seemed like they were unable to move as they would constantly whine and groan in pain, and lastly, the two reporters Bonny and Void, were present as well.

"Quinn! You're here!" Bonny shouted as she was the first one to spot them. Void, who was by her side, quickly grabbed her and reminded her that she needed to be quiet, making a shushing sound. Sam, who was constantly peeping out of the large window, not seeing anything, smiled when he turned and saw who it was, but that smile quickly faded.

"Quinn, your back. I couldn't get in contact with you before, so I thought something serious had happened to you, but you look fine." Sam spoke quietly.

"What happened here? Why aren't you on the Cursed ship?" Vincent asked, thinking that the current situation was far more critical than telling his own story. Where were the rest of the Cursed members? Why were they on the planet? The

last time they had watched the live stream, they could see that they were still on the ship. So much had clearly changed.

Glancing over to Void, Vincent could see that he was still working away, and it looked like the live stream was still being broadcasted.

Sam didn't say much at first. But he poked his head out of the window carefully again. Seeing how cautious his actions were, Vincent was doing the same. Also, with his careful hearing, he could hear that there was still fighting going on in, but it was a distance away.

"If you look out far enough, I think you will be able to spot it. That's the Cursed ship over there." Sam pointed.

Looking out the window, Vincent could see that the cursed ship was stuck in the sand. It didn't look like it had received the best of landings as pieces were handing off. Now he realised that they were on a planet.

"It's quite a story, I don't know if you know, but the Blade family attacked us, and they didn't come alone, but they had also unleashed all the captives they held on us as well. But where things started to change was when the Dalki arrived. I'll catch you up as much as I can..."

When the attacks from the Blade family ship had stopped. It gave Logan more time to figure out the situation on the ship. He was using his spiders and the cameras onboard to see everything that was going on, but what also turned out to be a good source of information for himself was the live stream that was coming from Void.

Although Logan could see everything, he had to remain where he was in the command centre for a few reasons. He was using his soul weapon to repair any structures that were needed on the ship. With the most powerful ability users fighting against each other, there were sure to be holes here and there that would lead to severe problems if left unattended.

As quickly as they were being made, he was fixing them, but he couldn't do that forever. At the same time, he kept the fighting on the ship to certain areas. Opening and closing off certain areas, making it so all of those would choose to go a certain way around the ship, but there were a few people he couldn't control, and that was the Blade family themselves.

'If they start fighting with their full strength, I don't think my MC cells can keep up. I have to do something.'

Using his calculations, Logan ultimately made a choice to head towards Planet Caladi. The desert planet that was closest. The only thing was while he was on his way there, he had run into a certain Dalki mothership hovering nearby, and they didn't exactly look like they were just going to let them land.

In a quick split decision, seeing the chaos and struggle everyone was facing and hoping to cause even less harm, Logan allowed them to purposely board the ship. It was a risk, but he had hoped that the fighting that was happening between humans at the moment would soon be concentrated on the third enemy that was coming towards them, the only thing he didn't calculate was just who would be coming onboard the ship, and that was a five spiked Dalki.

They had yet to run into one, so why of all things was there one in a place like so next to a planet like so. The only thing he could think was that the Cursed faction was genuinely cursed.

The fighting between the Dalki and Hilston was already causing trouble for Logan. All of the training rooms were reinforced, but with two titans, the damage and attacks were unable to be contained, and as the fight went on, they both started to use more of their strength. If they continued to fight then, Logan could see half of the ship disappearing and all of them dying on the spot.

'I got reports that the teleporters on the ship aren't working anymore, ever since the Dalki came on board. Only a few people managed to use them to escape in time. Damn it, we need to get there quicker!'

Heading towards the planet, Logan knew he would have to put more energy into the thrusters and break through the atmosphere. Calculating it with the planet's gravity pulling them in, it was going to be a rough landing for all of them.

[Everyone, this is Logan. Brace for impact, we are approaching planet Caladi at an incredible speed. We will Crash!]

The message ended there, and it didn't take long for everyone on board the ship to feel just what was happening. Logan could see the giant ship heading straight towards a sandy desert not too far away from the Shelter.

He was doing his best to slow it down, changing the ship's shape using his ability to make it more wind resistant. Parts of the ship were breaking off and flying, the front was getting incredibly hot, but he knew they all needed to pull through.

Lifting the ship up at the right moment, the large Cursed ship started to skim across the sand. Crashing and bouncing more than once. Waves of sand were chucked up in the sky each time, everywhere, and the sudden impact sent those that were fighting inside off their feet.

Even Logan himself was unable to keep his hands on the command centre. When it finally stopped, Logan pulled himself up. He noticed that the ship was still in good condition. They would still be able to fly. With a few weeks of work, they could get it back into top shape in no time, bringing it back to what it originally was.

'There's one thing I need to do.' Logan thought, placing his hands on the command console one last time. All of the exits for a crash landing in such a situation like this

one were now opening. Parts of the outer layer of the armour were ejected from the main ship, and several exits were seen all over. Allowing for everyone inside to exit from the ship.

There were around a 1000 Cursed members aboard. The ship could hold more, but some had already left, and there were those that had left when the Cursed revealed themselves as V.

Immediately, people started to leave the Cursed ship, but they weren't the only thing that were leaving. As Dalki could be seen continuing to fight, not taking a break.

A few seconds later, and a large explosion was heard coming from the centre of the ship, and in the air, Hilston could be seen having been grabbed by a Dalki with its feet by his shoulders and was thrown far off into the sand.

Exiting out of the Cursed ship as well, Sam was trying to act as quickly as possible. Many of the chained were in combat with the Dalki, but his priority was not getting rid of the Dalki, but getting everyone to a safe place. With the Shelter nearby, he just wanted all of the others to get away from the fighting that was about to occur. So he had made that his target. Telling everyone to go towards the Shelter while letting the Chained fight the Dalki.

Back in the room, Sam had just gotten to this part of the story.

"I know it might have been wrong to abandon the others, but I needed to look out for the Cursed faction most of all. Still, all of this was my mistake. I should have remembered that planet Caladi was one of the first planets evacuated by the Earthborn group. When everyone arrived at the Shelter, it had already been taken over by a group of Dalki. The fight wasn't over even for us."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1220: Vincent's truth

Listening to the story, Vincent could only imagine the horror those on the Cursed ship had been through. At first, they were forced to go against their fellow humans, the strongest ability users that were known to exist. After feeling like they had pulled through, the Dalki had arrived.

Although, judging from the story, the Dalki had allowed them a bit of rest, but only for a moment. Then when they had finally crashed as their only option. They thought that they could head to safety at the Shelter, that everything was over, only to enter a den full of Dalki.

"It was my fault." Sam continued to say. "I was the one that led them to this Shelter, not thinking about it properly. Perhaps we could have tried to find a better place on the ship to huddle up. The strong Cursed members could have helped those fighting against the Dalki. Instead, we just jumped out of the frying pan and into the fire."

Sam had continued on his story from where he had left off before. After rallying those in the Cursed faction, they headed for the Shelter with a few Dalki hot on their tails. Luckily there were still a few strong fighters left that were able to help and fight them off, Dennis and Fex being two of them.

Eventually, after reaching the Shelter, it was only later that Sam realised his error. The Dalki in the Shelter had turned their attention towards the Cursed group that had arrived. They had grouped up, attacking them immediately. What was worse was the longer they spent fighting, the more Dalki would appear from the Shelter.

Realising his mistake, Sam was panicking and now was overthinking what decisions to make.

It was then that those in the Cursed faction had stepped up. The other leaders sacrificed themselves and had chosen to lead them off while fighting the Dalki.

The good news was that the Shelter was a large one. There were many different buildings they could use for cover. It was a Shelter that had been built for around thirty or so thousand people in the first place. The Dalki and the Cursed faction weren't large in number, so it was like a large game of hide and seek for the two. The Shelter could act like a small town, hiding between houses and more.

Which was exactly what Sam and the others with him were doing now. The split up had happened so fast, Sam had no clue where the others were. The only thing he could rely on was his nose, but he had two that were unable to move Nate and Layla with him.

He wanted to go out and search for the others to see if they were okay using his nose, Knowing the worse ones would be bleeding.

'With the two of them, it's hard for me to even move and help anyone. I don't really know what happened, but they haven't been able to recover.' Sam looked at Layla and Nate on the ground. The good thing was Sam had vampire strength, allowing him to lift the two of them.

"I told you to leave us. We will manage." Nate croaked, looking up. His eyes squinted as pain ran through his body. Even just moving his head was painful.

"Sam, do you really think it's your fault?" Vincent asked. "Do you know how many situations you have been put in and had to have made the right call? We can only look so far ahead, and we can't see into the future. Who knows if you stayed on the ship, what would happen? Maybe a Dalki would have spotted you and sent all those in the Shelter onto the ship. You could have been trapped with nowhere to run."

"You are a key player in the Cursed faction, and you always have been. Without you, Quinn would have made far more disastrous mistakes."

'Did he just refer to himself in the third person?' Sam thought but chose to ignore it anyway.

"Bonny, Void. I assume the live stream is still going on. Are you using those drones to see what's going on at the moment?" Vincent asked.

The two were dazed as they didn't expect Quinn to start asking them questions like so all of a sudden.

"Ermm, yes. The drones were safe from the impact. We are using them to find any of those who are too afraid to fight, but we haven't been able to go out and help them. However, there is one drone that isn't in the Shelter at the moment." Void answered.

"One drone, what is it looking at the moment?" Vincent asked.

"The fight between the five spiked Dalki and Hilston. Their fight has pushed beyond the Shelter, and they are still going at it even now." Bonny answered.

For a fight to last this long, it meant only one thing, that the two titans that were fighting against each other were evenly matched. Still, when two strong foes fought against each other, it also meant that one wrong move and either one of them could end each other.

"For now, I think we should search for the strong ones in the Cursed faction. Sil, Borden, Fex, Dennis, Megan and Peter. We need to gather them all and regroup. A winner will eventually come out from the big two, and we have to use this opportunity to strike them while they are weak. Either way, today we will be getting rid of them both." Vincent said as he walked towards the door.

"I'm sick and tired of him having to worry about a human of all things. It's not right." Vincent mumbled.

"Don't worry about the Dalki in this Shelter." He continued. "I'll get rid of them all." Before Vincent left, he stopped and looked at Bony for a few seconds. He stared her straight in the eye as her face flushed red.

'I guess while I'm in his body, I should try to help him deal with the problems that he can't face. I'm just helping him out.'

"I would give up on the boy. He already has two on his mind that are too much for him to deal with. Maybe when he is older, and he doesn't have other problems, you can give it a go." After saying these words, no one saw 'Quinn' again.

"Was it just me, or was Quinn acting kind of weird?" Nate asked, hearing the whole thing.

But it wasn't just him. Everyone in the room felt like that wasn't the Quinn they knew. The way he talked, the fluctuations in his voice, and most of all, there was a strong air of confidence around him.

'That...that wasn't Quinn.' Was Layla's thought as her body was slowly recovering from using up all of her Qi. 'Who was that then, and where is Quinn?'

Inside the Shelter. The Blade kids had managed to stay together. When they arrived, they had been attacked by a few Dalki. They tried their best to use their abilities against it, but fighting against the Dalki and humans were different. Their fast movements and extremely resilient and strength made it nearly impossible for them to use their hand to hand combat skills they had practised with.

However, they were fortunate due to Grim Graylash, an old man and the ex-leader of the Graylash faction, present with them. Regardless of this, the kids were still troubled because he was currently injured.

They too were hiding. They had found themselves inside a storage room of some sort. Most of the containers were empty or destroyed as if the Dalki had already been through the room before. Grim was holding his side close out his ribs where blood continued to flow. In the crash, one of the Chained took advantage of the situation and attacked the ex-family leader, causing a serious wound to his body.

'These kids are strong, but they will struggle against the Dalki out there. I need to find those that can protect them. I don't know how much longer I will last.' The old man thought it was at that moment. Three Dalki could be seen entering the large storage room. Or more correctly, they were heard.

The old man, along with the Blade kids, were hiding behind one of the storage containers. They held their breaths as the heavy footsteps continued.

"You know if you wanted to hide, then you shouldn't leave behind a trail of blood!" One of the Dalki shouted, noticing it outside of the place. He punched one of the strange continues in front of him, sending it flying to the side and crashing into the wall.

Yet, no one could be seen underneath.

'Blood, but I made sure to stop my wound with my ability?' It was then that Grim noticed he wasn't the only one that was hurt. One of the Blade kids had been injured as well. Blood was trickling down and could be seen under his trousers.

It was Adeel. He had been hurt in the crash as well but hadn't told any of the others, so they wouldn't worry about him. He didn't want them to stay in one place because of his injury, but moving made the wound worse.

It was then that the Dalki had spotted more trickles of blood leading towards another container. Seeing this, the Dalki smiled and called the other two.

"My my my, I thought trusting my nose would lead me to something interesting." A voice said in the back.

'Huh, another human, but who could that be, and why would the person reveal themselves? Who could possibly take on three Dalki at once?' The old man wondered.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1221: An Awakening

A loud bang went off in the Shelter, and soon after, a building started to collapse, crumbling into pieces falling to the ground. It sounded like a bulldozer had gone full swing, hitting a building, but the sound didn't stop there as the bang was heard again, as another building was hit.

The cause of the noise was due to a mud-like humanoid beast being pushed back, crashing into the buildings. Right now, the beast had created a large shield, and a jet stream of water was pushing against it, not showing any signs of weakening. On initial impact, the strength had sent him through the buildings. Having reached the third building, he had found his footing. His back was up against the wall for support.

'Damn it! This Shelter is horrible for the beast's body to fight in. She has all this open space to use her powers and get away without me getting close!' Raten was complaining. Worst of all, even his mud shield didn't seem to be working out against Vicky's water powers. The strength of a Demi-god tier beast was losing.

Seeing that Raten was in trouble, Vorden soon made his move. He jumped between buildings, using his strong legs to propel himself like a spring, and heading straight for Vicky, who was standing in the middle of the street. Also, in the palm of his hand, a strong orb-like ball of wind was rotating, blue in colour.

The beast had wind powers, and through practice and speaking with Tails, who was inside of his mind, he found out that the wind attacks could actually be contained and controlled. Condensing them several times and holding them all in a ball. Essentially, it had the power of a tornado but with edges as sharp as a knife.

"I have no choice!" Vorden shouted, throwing out the wind ball towards Vicky, but before it reached her. Pai quickly jumped in the way, and his body could be seen hardening on the spot turning grey like a metal colour.

When the attack hit, the wind strikes enlarged and soon lifted Pai in the air. He was in a round Vortex, with the attacks constantly hitting him, but only faint scratches were made on his body.

"What are you two doing!" Vorden cried out as he could see Raten's Shield turning into a slime mud substance. "There is no reason for us to fight! Shouldn't we be getting rid of the Dalki, or you should be helping Hilston!?"

Vorden never wanted to fight his fellow siblings, who he had grown up with in the castle. He felt like there was even less reason for them to fight now. They had all caught a glimpse of the fight before they had arrived at the Shelter. Perhaps they didn't want to believe it, but they could see. It seemed like Hilston was losing.

As if Vicky could read his mind, she shouted.

"As long as that man is alive, you know we have to do this! Hilston is a man that can never lose, never be beaten!"

Vorden wanted to say more, but being in the same position as herself, he could tell that Pai and her, the fact they were still acting out meant they were too far gone. Almost brainwashed in this belief.

'The jet stream won't stop, and I can't put my shield down, but any longer, and it will melt. It doesn't look like Vorden can do anything against Pai either, not that I expected any help from that weakling in the first place.'

'Let me swap.' A voice said inside of Raten's head.

At first, he thought he was going crazy. Soon he realized that there really was someone else that occupied the same mind as him. Unlike Vorden, Raten hardly communicated with him.

'Yeah right, you couldn't even beat me in a fight. What makes you think you could beat her?' Raten argued back.

'You might be good at fighting hand to hand, but I am better at using my powers. If you die, we both die!' The beast angrily said as it forced Raten out of its body, and the control was now coming from the beast.

The hard mud-like substance that would usually cover the rest of its body started to move and mix in with the mud Shield. Soon it created a large wall combining the two substances. The water continued to hit the wall making its consistency change by the second, but soon the whole wall had collapsed.

Before she knew it, Vicky could see a strange thing heading towards her on the ground. She attempted to use her lightning powers, Zapping it on the floor. Still, the mud creature showed no signs of slowing down, even when being hit.

When the mud creature was close, it formed a spike from itself, heading directly for Vicky. A clanging sound was heard. The one that had stopped the attack was Pai. At the same time, from behind, Pai was holding onto Vicky's hands. The two of them had finally achieved what they had been aiming for.

"Raten, we failed. We have to get out of here!" Vorden shouted, not knowing that the beast was in control. Using his wind abilities, he was quick, but the strange power gathering inside the twins was a stream of water so powerful they would be dead in an instant being hit by that.

It was their signature move when working together. Water powers were also what they had attempted to use to catch them on the island before.

'With both of their abilities combined together. They will be able to destroy anything that touches that water, and it will be too large and quick for us to even run from, so what the hell do we do?' Vorden thought.

Thinking about this and knowing there was no longer enough time to escape. He turned around, trying to plead his case once more.

"Do you really want to kill us? Why does Hilston even want Sil so badly in the first place? Have the two of you ever thought of that? He is so obsessed with getting Sil back he even left his precious island. Do you think any of us ever meant anything to him? Why are you doing this!" The words didn't seem like they were getting through, and even Vorden was just repeating the same things over and over.

"Live your own life, like we have!" Vorden shouted once more.

Raten now back in control. Could see Vorden stupid mistake and quickly ran back.

"I'm sorry, muddy, but if anyone deserves to live, it's this damn softy!" Raten said as he ran towards Vorden, ready to pull him down. Grabbing his shoulder, he pulled him back, risking his own life, that was until. Someone else grabbed both of their shoulders and threw them behind with a strong force that they landed on the ground.

"Borden?" Vorden called out, noticing the familiar facial features but with the Dalki-like features.

"Yep," Borden said with a thumbs up.

Seeing how confident Borden was, Vorden felt like he didn't understand the danger in front of him. The fact that once they joined hands, they were able to use the power of six ability users at once!

"No, even if you take that attack, you'll die! I know your body is strong, but you don't understand their power!" Vorden shouted out desperately.

"Hey, relax before you get a bad throat. I'm not dying today, and I'm not the one dealing with it. There was another person I ran to on the way here." Borden replied.

Before they knew it, another person was seen falling from above. Their blonde hair floated in the air, and a serious look was on their face.

"Sil?" Vicky called out, noticing the main person they had been looking for this whole time, but Sil showed no regard for who they were.

Instead, he ignored them and, when landing, placed both of his hands on the ground. In an instant, a giant pillar was created beneath them. It had appeared so fast it cracked the two up in the air.

It looked like Sil had used a giant hammer when he had landed to knock the ground beneath them up, but it was just his strong earth abilities that he was using at the moment.

Sil soon started to run, and beneath him, he created a staircase made of earth. Keeping up with his super speed. The whole thing looked impossible to anyone who even had these abilities. Just having such abilities and being able to use them like so were two different things. Reaching the two of them in the air, Sil grabbed both of their arms before they could do anything and, using his strength, pulled them, breaking their hands from each other.

"You guys always make the same mistake, taking the strongest elemental abilities. I learnt something when I lost to Hilston, but the abilities we choose are essential. I can't move as fast as him, my strength isn't as strong as his, so I'll just get an ability that can match him!" Sil shouted, his hands started to glow blue, and the next second, lightning continually struck their body.

The pain was so great it didn't take long for them both to pass out. The ground beneath Sil had now disappeared, and they were falling down out of the sky and quickly to the floor. When they landed, a large bang was heard as he hit the floor, and Sil's legs could be seen covered in a special coating, helping him receive no injuries whatsoever.

Both Raten and Vorden stood there watching Sil, holding both Pai and Vicky in his hands. They weren't moving at all. For a second, he hadn't let them go and dragged them across the floor. When seeing that the others were okay, he finally let them go allowing them to drop to the floor.

The two that they had so much trouble dealing with had been dealt with, so quickly and it was so overwhelming.

"He's gotten so much stronger, right?" Borden said with a smile. "I couldn't believe it as well until I saw him fighting against the Dalki. It's like he has had some kind of awakening."

Although the other two didn't say it, both Vorden and Raten were thinking the same thing. Right now, the look on Sil's face as he walked towards them, the way he used his abilities and had no care for the safety of the others, reminded them of Hilston.

"I'm going to beat that old man. I won't let that Dalki get him first!" Sil declared.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my

P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## **Chapter 1222: The end of the Blade family**

Sil, Borden, Raten and Vorden had all decided to move out from the original area where they had fought. Heading inside to one of the large buildings that seemed to act as a type of hotel. Although they didn't really use it to hide and instead were just waiting in the entranceway.

The suggestion had been raised by Vorden because there was something serious the group needed to decide, and he wasn't quite sure that Sil was in the right mind to choose. On the floor, behind the desk, Borden was keeping an eye on them. Both Pai and Vicky passed out on the floor.

"We need to decide what to do with them?" Vorden asked.

"What do you mean?" Raten replied. "If they wake up, you don't think they're going to try and fight us again. I think it's obvious what we need to do."

Even without asking, Vorden knew what Raten's suggestion was going to be, so instead, he was looking towards Sil for support. Still, he seemed to have something else on his mind, and Borden, although he had some connection to all of them, didn't really care about Pai and Vicky.

"Do you really think they would continue to fight us even if Hilston is taken out of the picture? I can tell that they are just following his orders, and it isn't something they want to do." Vorden argued.

"Even if that was the case, you said it yourself, if Hilston is taken out of the picture," Raten replied.

The one thing Vorden wanted more than anything was time because Vorden had a feeling that after today, the Blade family would be different altogether, but soon Pai and Vicky would wake up again. They couldn't just keep fighting against them and knocking them out.

"I don't care what you do with them, Vorden. You can do what you want, but I need to go and get Hilston. Borden met up with mother, I met with father, which means the one that had met up with him was Peter, and I haven't been able to find him." Sil finally spoke, and it looked like he was ready to leave.

"Wait!" A female voice shouted, but in an instant, Borden had his hand around her throat, gripping tightly.

"I have strength beyond what you could imagine. If you try anything, then I will squeeze, and it will be the end of your life." Borden warned, and he even applied a little bit of pressure to show he wasn't joking.

The one who had called out was Vicky. She had regained consciousness a while ago and was listening in to the others to hear what they were planning to do. She

wasn't stupid. The loss that she suffered before was because of Sil, and he could easily beat them again. Which was why she was waiting for him to leave.

However, she had heard something, and she wanted to confirm it herself.

'Why...is that a Dalki body? And this person, they look a bit like Sil? Who are they?' She thought.

One thing was sure, unlike the others that might have had some sort of troubled feelings for her, this one did not.

"I...I just wanted to ask what happened to mother and father?" Vicky asked.

"They already left," Sil replied, continuing to look out of the entrance to see what was happening. "I left the ship a little later compared to the others. I thought the two of them might try to help Hilston in some way, and I would try to stop them, but then I saw that the two of them decided to take off into the desert, running off to who knows where."

Hearing this, Vicky's face was showing a hint of sadness and anger. Soon it started to change as she didn't really know what to feel.

"Vicky, you know they probably ran away to get away from all this mess, right?" Vorden said. "I mean, that island isn't normal. Look what happened to us. We are now in bodies that we don't even own, and all of this started because of him."

"Do you really think anyone would truly stay by Hilston's side if it wasn't for his power? I even saw some of the Chained doing the same thing. Rather than chasing after us or the Dalki, they ran into the desert."

There was no reply from Vicky, so Vorden didn't really know what was going through her mind at the moment, but one thing was clear, she no longer had the will to fight. Even Borden seeing this, had let go of her neck, and she just stayed in place doing nothing.

'Vicky has always been a hard one to get through to. Maybe the easy one to talk to would be Pai, whenever he wakes up.' Vorden thought.

"Sil, I don't think Peter is with Hilston at the moment," Vorden said. "If Peter was ever in any type of serious danger, or his life was nearly lost, then Quinn would be there to save him. On top of that, rather than going after Hilston, we need to make sure everyone else is okay. Where is even that kid that follows you all the time, the one that helped us, Shiro." Vorden said.

For the first time, Sil's eyes seemed to come to life as he turned his head, to look at the others. In his blinded thoughts of Hilston, he had forgotten entirely about Shiro.

"We have to- "

Interrupting his sentence was a loud bang that was in the centre of the Shelter. They all soon came rushing out of the hotel lobby to see what exactly was going on. Borden carried Pai over his back.

The explosions didn't just stop once though, they continued to go on and on. It was clear signs of fighting were going on in the centre, and it wasn't just between a single Dalki and those from the Cursed faction.

"Maybe the others are in trouble. We have to go!" Vorden shouted out, and they started running towards the sounds. Soon though, Vorden stopped to turn around as he could see Vicky standing there.

"Come on, you come as well," Vorden said, grabbing her by the hand and running along with everyone else.

The landscape of the centre of the Shelter had wholly changed. The buildings were no more as nearly all of them had been reduced to rubble from the fighting. Those who were currently there and still fighting, it was a group of ten Dalki.

Nine of them had two spikes, and one in the centre with the biggest grin on its face was a four spiked Dalki, named Patch. A nickname given to him due to the different coloured patches he had all over his body.

Usually, a Dalki would mostly be black in colour, but he had lighter shades on his body, making him look somewhat like a cow.

There were around three Dalki that had been killed on the floor around him, but Patch didn't seem to care, for he knew that the people responsible would soon meet their end.

"Guys, let's just get out of here. You two can't fight anymore!" Megan shouted as she looked at a badly beaten Dennis. One of his arms was broken. The socket of his left eye had been smashed as well, so he was unable to keep it open.

"She's right!" Shiro shouted. "You used up the blood in your flasks, and our powers can't help you guys. We have to go!"

"You don't understand. We can't leave this area!" Fex shouted back. He, too, was badly injured, but more so internally. Having taken one punch from Patch.

'That four spiked Dlaki, even after using the blood net, his punch still hit me and broke a few of my ribs.' Fex thought.

As for the reason why they couldn't leave the area, Dennis and Fex could smell it. Those in the cursed faction were hiding in the houses, through the streets in the areas not too far from them. If they left, the Dalki would soon spot them and kill them all.

"This cow like Dalki! He's a four spike. He has to be the strongest in the area. If we just get rid of him, we can rest!" Fex shouted, trying to give himself more energy.

"Hahah, me the strongest!" Patch started to laugh along with the others behind him. "If you truly believe that, then there was never hope for you all at the beginning. Right now, it looks like she has found someone she is enjoying her time with, and it's our job to make sure she isn't distracted."

"Are you talking about Dalki fighting against Hilston?" A voice said from behind.  
"Because we will get rid of them both."

When turning around, Fex had never been happier to see the crazy boy and the rest of them. Sil had arrived with the others by his side, and they were ready to cause a splash.

"I'm sorry, but I would like to request that I deal with this one." Another voice said. It sounded familiar yet unfamiliar to a lot of them there.

Breaking out of the Shadows, they could see his dark black hair and two gauntlets covering his arms.

"You will need to keep as many MC cells as you can for the big bad wolf. Otherwise, the pig's house will get blown down." Vincent said. "Wait a second, do they still tell that story at this time? I guess no one understands my references anymore."

"Just we're going to need you, so I'll take care of this one. I just need you guys to make sure that the other little minions don't get in the way."

"I'm already on it!" Another shouted from behind as his fist hit the Dalki straight in the stomach and sent it flying through the air. It was strength they hadn't seen before. Thinking about who it could possibly be, they could only imagine one person who was crazy enough to start fighting on their own before the others got involved.

"Screw you all!" Peter screamed. "I just need to get one punch in. Let me punch that old man just once!" Peter shouted in anger.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1223: Worst Quinn ever

After punching the Dalki away, Peter didn't stop there. He quickly moved on to the next one by his side, showing off his incredible strength once more. However, rather than use his fists, he was using the pair of Tonfa weapons given to him. Logan's special design allowed them to shoot out from underneath his sleeves, holding them fairly in his hands.

In the fight with Hilston, one of them had been bent, but they were still great tools for Peter to use. Another Dalki that was close by threw a punch, thinking that its strength would be able to match against Peter's, but when it collided with Peter's weapons, it was in for a surprise as the knuckles of the Dalki started to shatter.

Being blunt weapons like so, it never thought it could receive damage so easily.

"All of you, get the hell off this planet!" Peter continued to scream. There was something about Peter's actions and words in this fight. Usually, the only emotion he showed was aggression, yet they felt more pure and raw for some reason today.

The reason being, was due to the planet they were on.

"You bastards nearly killed me, and now you're trying to hurt others again!" Peter shouted, hitting another. This time, a Dalki had gotten behind him and clawed at his back. His healing abilities were doing him massive favours as it was getting better, allowing him to fight just as he usually would.

Still, Peter would struggle to fight nine of them, but he didn't have to do it all alone.

"I understand Peter, I know why you're mad!" Vorden said, coming in fast and spinning into one of the Dalki's body, head first. Then having two of the small compressed wind balls in his hands, he threw them down towards the Dalki on the ground.

This planet, and the Dalki being here, was bringing back memories for them both. Because it was the planet where Peter had experienced near death, and it was from a Dalki.

"With them taking care of the others for me, I guess it's time I take out the boss," Vincent said, charging forward towards Patch, the four spiked Dalki.

Watching from the back was Megan, Shiro, Fex and Dennis. Having already been injured, they were now in the middle of recovering. They weren't just injured but also exhausted since they had originally led the Dalki away when the Cursed members entered the Shelter.

What Shiro and Megan were doing for the both of them now was producing small cuts on their hands, allowing the two to consume the blood, giving them time to

heal. While doing so, they were paying close attention to 'Quinn' of all the fights that were going on.

After all, they knew how strong Patch was.

'That red glow on Quinn's hands, I've never seen like that before?' Fex started to wonder.

Right now, Vincent was using the blood aura, not as an attack, nor was he using the hardened blood. Instead, with the amount of blood control Quinn was capable of and Vincent's knowledge, he had covered both of his hands in a type of red aura.

When the Dalki came forward to attack, Vincent carefully hit them away, blocking them, and its hands were knocked to the side. The Dalki felt a slight pain as it touched the strange red aura. Vincent punched the dalki two times in the chest, causing blood to fall.

It looked down at the blood oozing from its body, and the Dalki just smiled and punched Vincent back. He had hit him away and right back to where the others were.

[50/100 Hp available]

Skidding across the ground, he managed to use the tips of the gauntlets and dig in, slowing down until he came to a stop.

'It did that much damage?' Vincent thought. He opened his mouth, and blood started to pour out.

"Blood bank activated!" Vincent shouted through the blood-filled mouth, and his wounds were starting to heal.

He still wasn't used to using the system quite yet through his mind, so he just called out commands instead that seemed to work as well.

'I thought that would be enough, but a four spiked Dalki is completely different compared to a two spike and one spike Dalki. Now I understand why Quinn turned into the Bloodsucker straight away.' Vincent thought as they went in for round two.

Charging in again, Vincent still had the red aura covering his hands. Despite the Dlaki's attacks coming in faster and stronger this time around, the red aura hands were still able to block the Dalki's attacks. Now, Vincent was more careful and was attacking the Dalki where possible.

"Why didn't Quinn use his shadow to block that last attack?" Fex wondered. "When was he this good at the vampire's hand to hand combat arts as well?"

Watching the fight, things weren't making sense.

Vincent getting frustrated, started to use more blood moves. In the middle of his actions, he spun under a swing from the Dalki and used a blood bullet from below, aiming at its head. He was hoping it would go through its skull.

The bullet left Vincent's fingers and went under the chin and through to the other side, but the Dalki was still moving. What was worse, the more Vincent was injuring it, the stronger it got, and Vincent wasn't sure he could keep up.

By now, all the other Dalki that were supporting Patch, had been defeated by the others. With Sil and the Blades, they defeated them easily.

"Don't worry guys, I can handle this!" Vincent shouted, still dodging the attacks.  
"Don't help me. I just need to study it a bit more."

It was a masterful display of skills but at the same time, worry for everyone else watching. They were wondering why Quinn wasn't fighting the way he usually was, but at the same time, it wasn't unknown to them for Quinn to try new things.

"Quinn, use your shadow scythe!" Dennis shouted.

"Or your blood hammer!" Peter said. "That's one of my favourite attacks of his."

"He could also use his Muay Baron skills?" Vorden said.

Eventually, realising that nothing Vincent was doing was working, he had tried to go for the thigh kick he had seen Quinn do many times before. It looked great, but something was off as the power in his hips just went there.

'Where's the snap in the legs? I'm sure I copied him perfectly.'

When it hit Patch, nothing had happened.

'Damn it, this is harder than I thought. I am not Quinn. I don't know how to use his Qi inside his body or use the shadow and fight at the same time, and these Dalki are difficult, to say the least. Doesn't he have any items I can use?' Vincent thought.

Before he knew it, he was lifted by his leg up in the air. Thinking about items, the unbreakable sword appeared in his hands using shadow equip. Vincent swung it widely at the Dalki. Due to his strength and sharpness of the sword, it was able to produce cuts but nothing else.

"Alright! I think I might need some help," Vincent asked

That one word was enough, as Sil, Peter and all the others were seen charging in. From then on, with all of their powers, it didn't take long for Patch to be on his last breath.

"Hah..look at you fools." Patch said, lying in his own blood. His body had been literally pulled and smashed apart, now he was on his last words. "Slicer...will kill you all."

With the Dalki dead, a lot of them now had questions about the strange actions of Quinn. Even now, he was acting differently. As he was using a type of cloth to clean the blood off his armour and equipment, something they had just never seen Quinn do before.

But before they could say anything. The people who were hiding, those who were shaking in terror, started to leave their buildings and from the streets and alleyways, all to cheer.

"They did it! Our leaders did it!" They shouted.

Soon more noise was coming from them, louder as more people joined in.

"Wait, why are they coming out now? What if there are more Dalki?" Megan said worriedly.

"Don't worry about that," Vincent replied, walking back to them. "I maybe couldn't take out the four spiked Dalki, but I was able to take out the rest in the Shelter."

Everyone was glancing at each other, waiting for the other one to ask the question.

"Who the hell are you?" Peter eventually asked. "Did you hit your head, or are you like these guys?" Peter asked, pointing towards Raten and Vorden.

Seeing this, reminded Shiro of something.

"Oh I know, you're the other consciousness, the one that was inside Quinn that time, aren't you?" Shiro asked.

Now the others were even more confused, and it was the first time they had heard of this. Some knew of Quinn having a system, not all, but no one knew about Vincent being inside the system, and now he was going to have to explain himself.

"Well I....I..." Vincent was lost for words, but a strange feeling was coming over him. "Arghhhh!" He screamed, quickly falling to the ground. The power in his legs could no longer hold him up.

"My energy, what is happening to me!" Vincent cried.

"Hey, is he okay? Is Quinn or whatever okay!" Shiro worriedly said.

"Is he faking this to get out of the questions?" Dennis wondered, but Fex and the others soon noticed the sweat running down his face.

"No, my energy is being taken out of me, and not at a low rate either. I don't think he was meant to take this much." Vincent replied.

"What are you talking about? We don't understand." Peter shouted.

"I'm talking about Quinn, of course!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1224: The Clothed Dalki

One of the major issues with using the Demon tier amulet was that Quinn was unable to see through the eyes of those that were Marked, while also seeing through his own vision. He could switch who he had full control over and then see from that person's point of view, but not all of the Marked visions were shared.

This meant Quinn didn't know what Vincent was currently doing, and neither did Vincent. Still, they both knew where the other was and what they were attempting to do. Which was why Vincent never expected such a vast amount of energy to leave his body.

At first, it was gradual, but the fighting was over in the Shelter, so Vincent wasn't really worrying too much. He put on a brave face and ignored it, counting to act as he had been doing. However, soon the energy started to ramp up, so much so until his legs felt like jelly.

If it wasn't for the fact that the Dalki had already been dealt with, and the others were nearby to help, Vincent would have left at the first sign of his energy being drained. It would have been too risky to continue fighting if Quinn needed the power.

'Quinn, what is happening to you at the moment for you to have to use this much energy?' Vincent wondered.

In a way, using the Demon tier amulet and borrowing energy from himself. Quinn could get a Dalki to the point where it was nearly as strong as his own body. The Dalki already had its own standard strength. If Quinn wanted, he could transfer close to ninety percent of his energy, which he was doing now.

However, the Dalki wouldn't have Shadow powers, beast gear, or Qi. Only Quinn's skills and strength. With this thought, Vincent predicted that Quinn would only have to use this much energy if he was to go up against a four spike, as they had done.

---

A little while ago, Quinn with the two Dalki by his side, had spotted a lone Dlaki by the foot of a volcano, standing just beneath the mothership. It was a strange sight to see because even after waiting a while and observing its actions, he could see they just stood there in the same place.

'There are no Dalki ships as well. Did they clear them all? Or maybe they placed them closer up the Volcano closer to the mothership.' Quinn thought.

Seeing how things were, the quickest way to get to the Dalki ship was to head straight for the Volcano. Walking around would take a considerable amount of time, especially without his shadow travel.

'If the Dalki spots me and we get into a confrontation, I can use him to tell me where the other ships are.'

With no pods or ships, the Dalki had no way to return back to the mothership. Unless the mothership itself landed. He was sure that there had to be more, other than the few he had fought. Nevertheless, Quinn soldiered on thinking there had to be a way.

'I can still do it. I don't need to overthink what is happening. The more time I waste, the higher chance I have of failing this quest. I just need to take down the Dalki mother ships.'

It was then that the strange clothed Dalki had spotted the three of them, and that was when it had made its first move. Quinn could see what happened as if it played in slow motion. It was a single leg. That was all it took for the clothed Dalki to cover the distance between the two of them.

It lifted one up as if he was going to go for a walk but suddenly jumped using the power of a single leg. It was in the air and soon directly in front of Quinn and the two others.

"You Dalki," Graham looked them up and down. "I don't recognise the two of you?"

After these words, things started to move too fast for Quinn to be able to react to the situation. One of the Dalki by his right side had been grabbed by the neck. Its power, useless in front of whoever this was.

'Two of us?' Quinn started to think as it was the first time he had heard these words. To humans, a lot of the Dalki features and Dalki looked similar to each other. It was only once in a while where they would come across one with something distinctive.

The fact that Quinn's plan had worked so well meant one of two things. The Dalki didn't really pay attention to those that they were working with, or they too struggled to identify between each other.

"Did you two put him up to this?" Graham asked, looking at the other two for answers. "I thought it was strange our ships were going down rather quickly. I thought it might have been a specific individual, but there was also another option. I just never thought I would see it. The day that a Dalki could be convinced to move over to the other side. Of course, it could be an ability of some sort, but that's what I'm here to find out."

A smile appeared on his face, and everything inside of Quinn was screaming danger. The Dalki's life in front of him was soon to die, so Quinn did what he thought would be best. To use the energy drain feature of the Dalki.

'I didn't get to test out the energy drain, so I'm not really sure this will work, but I can only try.' Quinn thought.

The Dalki that was being held soon started to feel weak. The strength in its limbs and eyes were disappearing from its body until eventually it had gone limp. Its life was gone. The good news was, as Quinn stood there, he could feel the surging energy of the Dalki inside of him.

He knew that energy could be taken and given to the one with the amulet. Still, he wondered if power from the other Marked could be passed onto other Marked, and it seemed his little test was successful.

He took note that the Dalki had died, just as the system had stated, there was no way to drain energy from one of the Marked without draining all of their energy. With this newfound strength, Quinn threw out a punch as hard as he could towards the strange Dalki.

'Let's see how strong it is first, and then I can decide if I need to get energy from my own body or from the other Dalki.' Quinn thought.

The fist that was thrown out was quickly grabbed by Graham. It was in the palm of his hand, and Graham hadn't even moved an inch from his spot.

"Oh, this is very interesting, that punch just now. Was it at the level of a top tier two spiked Dalki? Yet, you still only have a single spike on your back? Is this some type of mutation? I guess you are the important one in this little group. I have some questions for you."

Quinn tried his best to move his hand, but it didn't seem to be working. The strength was too much. Even when fighting the three spiked Dalki on board the ship, using this much energy was enough.

'I guess I'm just going to have to borrow a little from my own body.' Quinn did so while quickly switching his full control to the other Dalki.

The energy was being transferred into the first one. Changing full control, Quinn was directly behind the clothed Dalki, and had jumped up, performing a spinning kick towards the head.

The kick had landed, and even the impact was heard, but just like before, the body hadn't moved, and this was when Quinn could finally see it and could tell straight away why. Sticking out from the back of the clothing, he slowly counted each spike.

'1...2..3..4..5 a five spiked Dalki, here of all places!"

The Dalki that had just attacked and the one Quinn was in control of at the moment had its leg grabbed.

"Something is off. If you were really Dalki? Then surely you would have known that such weak attacks would have been useless against me." Graham said.

The next second, the leg on the other Dalki had been pulled from its body. It felt like there was no resistance at all. Similar to a human pulling off a leg off an ant.

It was then Quinn made the quick decision to drain the energy from the Dalki and give it to the one to itself as well.

'What is going on, a five spiked Dalki? What do I do?' Quinn struggled to think. There were a few options, but he didn't have the appropriate time to think them through. The Shelter behind him still had humans and those from the Cursed faction. If the mother ship wasn't destroyed, then they were unable to leave through the teleporters.

Quinn would be fine, but it would mean abandoning all the people and the Shelter. At the same time, if he used the energy from his body. Would it mean Vincent could no longer help the others?

Due to him not being able to think clearly, the only thing he thought at that moment was that he needed to use all the strength he could muster to take down the Dalki in front of him. He had the power of three single spiked Dalki running through his body at the moment, and was drawing the energy from himself. He didn't know how strong he could get, but he just had to defeat what was in front of him.

Now with all the strength in his body and having returned to the original Dalki who had its fist grabbed, Quinn performed a thigh kick. The strongest thigh kick that a Dlaki had ever produced in its life.

Just moving his feet from the ground, the rubble was dragged up with it, the wind felt like it was shifting with the entire kick, and it had landed perfectly on the clothed Dalki's leg. To others, it would have sounded like thunder.

The second it connected, the strength in the clothed Dalki's hands had loosened. Quinn used this opportunity to pull back, jumping away.

'I can do it. I can fight with this body!' Quinn thought.

Looking up again, Quinn this time, could see his head had been grabbed.

"You are interesting, very interesting. I'm going to be taking you back with me." Graham smiled, unhurt and unfazed by Quinn's power.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1225: Finding out secrets

The Dalki known as Graham had a firm grip on Quinn's current Dalki body, holding him at the top of his head. Quinn, having delivered one of his most powerful moves while also being in a strong body that relied on sturdiness and strength it looked like his attack had hardly affected him.

'With the last Dalki he was able to rip its limbs off with no trouble at all. He must have crazy grip strength. If I move my head, I'm done for!' Despite the thigh kick not working before. Quinn decided it was the only thing he could do.

Now, lifting his leg up again, Quinn went to kick the leg not once or twice but did so until his body would give up or tire out. As soon as his foot touched the ground, he lifted it up again, kicking his opponent's thigh. Loud thunderous bangs after bangs echoed throughout. The strength of the kicks was shaking even the volcano nearby.

"That move seems rather interesting. Maybe I should give it a go?" Graham said, still holding onto Quinn's head. He then lifted up and twisted his hips, trying to imitate the kick. It was a poor imitation of what Quinn had done, and it looked like nearly no effort had been put into it at all.

Yet, the second the foot touched him, he could feel his whole body falling to the ground. Before he knew it, Quinn could see the dark sky above. Quickly, he tried to get back up, knowing the longer he spent on the floor would mean doom to himself.

'Huh, why can't I get up?' Quinn wondered. It was only then that he realised that his left leg was bent in an unusual shape. His thigh almost looked like he had gained another joint. Underneath the hard Dalki skin, the area was heavily bruised and swollen.

'I....I...have to do something. If this guy gets to the Shelter, there will be no one who can stop him!' Quinn thought.

Using this time, he realised that the Dalki was simply playing with him. All of his actions, not once had it seemed like it was being serious in the fight. Also, the Dalki wasn't aggressive like the others. Instead, it was slowly making its way towards Quinn.

In a way, this just sunk in the fact that Quinn was outmatched in this situation.

"I have to get up, I have to, but I can't draw any more energy from myself." Looking at his hands, Quinn thought of the only thing he could do. With his sharp claws, he started to claw at his enormous chest. Digging in his fingernails around an inch deep.

While in full control, Quinn could feel everything the Marked could, but he bore through it because he could tell it was working. The green blood flowing was making his body rise with new energy.

After scratching at his chest multiple times, he soon continued to do so on his forearms, drawing more and more blood, and that's when Quinn started to notice something as well. The green blood leaving his body wasn't only giving him energy, but the swelling on his leg had gone down. He wasn't sure if he was imagining it, but his legs were also starting to heal themselves.

'What is happening? I thought by hurting myself, I could muster up more energy, but losing blood is giving me the same effect as if I was to drink blood like a vampire?' Quinn started to think.

It was a strange feeling, to say the least. Although his energy and strength were seemingly at an all-time high, he could feel his heart weakening as if he was about to die. Bordering on the line between life and death.

And that was when the last change had occurred in Quinn's Dalki body. He could feel something growing from his back. Out from the middle of his back, a second spike popped out.

"An evolution at a time like this. Well, I can't say that I'm surprised, but if after all this time, you only were able to get to a two spike right now, it must have meant you haven't been doing a lot of fighting. Which is why I'm even more interested in you!" Graham said, charging forward.

Rolling like a log, Quinn moved away from a stomp coming from Graham. The hard ground broke apart, and red hot lava spewed from where he stepped. Soon Quinn pushed off the ground with his hands and looked ahead, trying to see where his enemy was.

'Now I'm a two spiked Dalki. My powers have increased even more!' Quinn thought. 'It has to be a sign that someone wants me to kill this damn Dalki!'

"Don't get too excited." A voice from behind Quinn's ear said, and the next second, Quinn's head was slammed into the ground. It wasn't just bashed into once. Graham continued to hit his head into the ground again and again repeatedly, and whatever Quinn tried, it wouldn't work. Before Quinn could even move, he was injured.

'This is the strength of a five spike?' Quinn was only left with these thoughts. 'Even with all this extra strength I have been given, I was still unable to do anything against it. I can't imagine anyone beating it. I haven't suffered a loss like this since....Arthur.'

'I wonder...I wonder how I would have done if I was in my own body.'

It was then that Quinn decided that he had no choice. He couldn't take the pain anymore. He had given up on trying to defeat the Dalki and found himself back inside his own body.

"Hey Quinn, are you okay?" A young voice said.

Looking up, Quinn could see the other members of the Cursed faction around him. He was in a pile of rubble, and the one who had spoken was Shiro.

'It looks like everyone is safe here, Vincent. Do you think you could quickly update me on what happened here?' Quinn asked, looking for an update on the details.

Giving him a quick skim of events, Quinn was happy to know that everyone was okay and that the Shelter was safe. His body was weak, and he wondered how long it would take him to recover, but that's when he realised something.

'Wait, the Demon tier amulet, I can still feel the Dalki's energy. Has the Dalkinot killed him? He did seem different compared to the others, and if it was a five spike, he had to have been one of their leaders. Maybe I can get some more information from them?

'Vincent, It looks like you did a good job, I'm sorry to say, but I'm going to have to leave you with them for a little while longer.'

Of course, Vincent had no problem with such a thing, and Quinn soon found himself returning to Dalki's body.

Arriving back in the Dalki, Quinn found himself in an immense amount of pain. He looked to be on one of the strange Dalki ships, heading towards the mother ship, and the one piloting it was none other than the one Quinn had fought not too long ago.

'He smashed all of my bones, but it looks like he also knew the right amount just to keep me alive. I'm sure he has a lot of questions for me, and it looks like they knew just the right amount to keep this body alive as well.' Quinn thought.

Keeping his mouth shut the whole way, Quinn's condition didn't seem to get better or worse. Finally, being carried by the Dalki with one hand, he found himself on the ship. Soon he had been taken to a room he had never seen before but was placed in something familiar.

Now, the Quinn's Dalki body was floating in a green liquid in a giant glass tube. His bones still didn't seem to be healing, but Quinn could feel his mind waking up again.

"This chamber will keep you alive, and if I want to, I can make it so this liquid speeds up the recovery of your body, healing it. Interesting right? The other Dalki don't know about it yet, but I've been developing the solution myself. A way to

make the Dalki heal even quicker and eventually evolve on their own. Repeating the process will allow us to force an evolution on those that didn't quite manage to evolve on their own. You are a fortunate person to be in here, although I won't be healing your body until I find out just why you are so special." Graham said as he went off not too far away and started to work away at a strange-looking computer.

Quinn looked around the room to see if he could gather any information. Just being here now, he had already learnt that this strange contraption he was in was something they never knew about before. He wondered if it was because of such machines they had seen an increase in spikes on Dalki lately or if it hadn't been introduced yet.

Both of them were worrying thoughts. Staring off far, Quinn could see that Graham kept on glancing at something. That's when Quinn noticed what it was. It was a live stream. The stream coming from Bonny and void.

At the moment, what was being displayed was the fight between another five spike with a long tail, and Hilston.

'Hilston....will he win?' Quinn wondered as he started to think who was stronger, having fought him and a five spike recently.

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 1226: Broadcasted to everyone**

Bonny and Void's live stream was considered popular around the world. However, In recent times their popularity only grew more. As fewer and fewer people were able or willing to broadcast during tough times.

Focusing on current events and asking questions the people wanted to hear, going to places to find the information people wanted to hear. These were all elements that made them popular. The bulk of viewers would be the non-fighters and those not on the front lines. What they didn't expect was that right now, more people than ever were watching their broadcast.

It wasn't just those civilians at home who were watching what was going on. The fight between Hilston Blade and the five spiked Dalki had more viewers than ever. They were people who had never heard of the Blade family before, yet now were able to witness their great power. On top of that, Bonny accurately gave the viewers everything they knew about the Blade family. The source of her information was none other than Logan.

One of the people that hadn't left the Ship despite everything that was going on, was Logan. He could tell if anyone was to come his way. On top of that, he had the power to still control the Ship and control it in ways that would make it difficult for them to reach his position. As he expected anyway, not a single person had decided to stay on the Ship or come after him.

During this time, Logan kept an eye on the stream, and he also found it amazing how many people were currently watching.

'It's not just those on Earth? It looks like it's those on the Shelters as well that are watching what's happening. How are they able to deal with the Dalki attack going on?' Logan thought.

Despite this, he had decided to inform the public about Hilston Blade and the Chained. Hilston was too big of a threat to leave untouched like they had done so far. If after this, he was able to roam around free again without people knowing how much of a dangerous person he was, it would be bad not just for the Cursed faction but the whole of humanity.

All of the information he was giving was putting the Blade family in a bad light by Bonny, however despite all of this. People couldn't keep their eyes off him as they saw his sheer power being used against the five spikes.

What Logan didn't know was that he was somewhat right about the Dalki currently not fighting against the others on the planet at the moment. This was because they were now watching the live stream and looking at the fight between the two.

In the temporary base they had built on each of the planets, they were watching one of their great leaders fight it out. What the Dalki were building on each of the planets was what the humans had come to refer to as a Dalki fortress.

These were small camps, where they would have strange walls made from the black material, in a similar shape to a wall made of logs. They would then have several towers on the outside larger than the wall. Although they were made very quickly, they were just as sturdy as the Shelters the humans made.

This was mainly due to the black material that was used that seemed to be as hard as Glathriuem but nowhere near as hard to obtain. At least that's what the humans thought.

In one of the fortresses, a dome-shaped arena had been built in the middle. The Dalki liked dark places, so they tended to make areas that would allow for little light to enter. They weren't affected by light in any way. Fighting wise or health wise, it just didn't feel natural to them.

Perhaps it had something to do with the planet that they were born on or something to do with the nature of the beast they were made from, but no one truly knew why. Here was where One horn was currently at.

He wasn't alone, as the other Dalki from the main mothership were inside as well. All of them were watching the projection that was being played on the wall. Large enough for them all to see.

They were cheering at the screen every time Slicer would get a good hit in or a cut. What would be surprising to any human to see this, was they were doing the same every time Hilston would land a big blow as well.

"I'm surprised the humans had someone that could push Slicer this far. How do you think you would have fared?" A Dalki asked who had one missing eye. Because of this, the others often referred to him as Clops, a three spiked Dalki that had recently obtained his fourth spike.

"Have you been listening to the video? From the sound of it, this is one of the strongest humans in the world. Someone that was left off the radar that even we don't know about. The strong point of Slicer is that tail of hers, but the armour he is wearing seems to be giving her trouble. If it was me, I would smash that armour with my fist." One Horn said, making a fist.

Some of the others started to laugh, but as soon as One Horn looked their way, they quickly shut up. It wasn't usual for the Dalki to be scared of others. Even if they did have more spikes, it just wasn't in their nature, but One Horn had a more aggressive nature compared to the others.

"Leave them be. They know Slicer's strength because she has displayed it to everyone numerous times. Although she was someone who had evolved into a five

spike before you, you are both a five spike now." Clops said, trying to calm him down and cheer him up. "We don't know who would win a fight between the three of you. It's not like the past where you would all have a go at each other."

The words certainly did put a smile on One Horn's face because it was true. One Horn had caught up to the two that used to be above him in strength. In the past, the Dalki would constantly fight each other over the leadership seat, and this was how One Horn had grown to the top.

But even before that, he had been appointed representative of the Dalki to the humans by his fellow Dalki Graham, which was why he listened to him more so than the others. Graham could see that he had more strength than the others even before he knew it himself, but when One Horn had finally caught up with them, now having five spikes like the other two.

Graham had told him that he was not to fight against the other leaders. For their powers now were too strong. A fight between two five spikes could possibly destroy anything they were on.

---

The Supreme commander had received the reports from all the Shelters that the Dalki had stopped their advance and attacks. Some of the Shelters wanted to use this opportunity to try to strike back, but Sach ordered against it.

Going on the attack was not a good option straight after suffering such a large attack. They didn't have the forces, and they needed to use this time to recover. While doing so, everyone who was in the Shelter, including the fighters, were also watching the live stream. This was how nearly everyone in the world was tuned in to watching Hilston against the five spiked Dalki.

Apart from one group in particular.

'This. Fight, it seems to have great importance. We are seeing the strength of a five spike for the first time and seeing what one of our best against one of their best can do. While everyone is distracted, this is the perfect time for you. I hope you stay safe.' Sach thought.

The very person that Sach was thinking of had finally arrived at the destination he had been called to. Although they hadn't arrived at the Shelter. Instead, a small army group of around three hundred or so, with Nathan in command, had landed in the middle of the jungle.

'This is the place, the place where Oscar and Sach fought against One Horn.' Nathan thought as he looked off in the direction of the Shelter.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1227: Prisoners or V

The Earthborn group had attempted to find out what was happening on this particular planet before. They had discovered a group of Dalki not too far away from a group of humans. This was something unprecedented, so they had come to the conclusion that the only reasonable explanation had to be that these 'humans' had to actually have been V.

Alas, the first mission had turned out to be a disaster, mainly due to the presence of One Horn on that planet, who had bested Oscar, Sach and Samantha in a battle of strength. As if the subsequent loss of the Supreme Commander hadn't been enough, the military had also lost their only Demon tier weapon.

'I was in charge of the reports back then and learned from Sach everything that happened.' Nathan thought as he and his group were still deep in the jungle-like territory away from the Shelter. The map displayed different routes and the area they were currently in.

Because the military had once owned the Shelter they knew the area very well. It was perhaps what had also been Sach's downfall as he had been overconfident.

'Sach warned me not to repeat the same mistake that they had made. One Horn should not be there, but I need to remain cautious and act under the worst case assumption that there might be a Dalki just as strong there..'

Three men came out of the jungle in full beast gear. Underneath it was their military uniform. They gave a quick salute before handing in their report.

"Sir, we have finished scouting out the area as per your instructions. The Dalki are indeed still present. From what we could find out there has been little to no interaction between them and the humans in the Shelter so far."

"However, from what we could see it appears that the Dalki have spread out in a shape that allows them to act as sentries. Those on guard outside consist of eight single spiked Dalki, two, two spiked Dalki and finally a single three spiked Dalki who should be their leader."

Taking this information in, the Dalki forces here were smaller than all those that had been sent to the other planets. They outnumbered the Dalki greatly which was good news all apart from one fact.

'We should be able to handle one spiked and two spiked Dalki, especially if we can manage to divide and conquer them. But the three spike... we might need to isolate him first or last to stand much of a chance...'

Next it was Nathan's job to sort an attack force that could deal with the issue. Unfortunately, retreat wasn't really an option. The fact that the Dalki remained here and even went so far to protect this place, especially when they had launched an

assault on other planets, meant that something on this planet was of great importance to them.

Unfortunately, given the circumstances, Nathan couldn't call for reinforcement.

This was a special task that had been given to him, the more people that knew about it, the higher the chance one of the V would find out, leak it and thereby cause all sorts of problems. On top of that, there weren't really any reinforcements to help in the first place.

'The best course of action would be to have no confrontation in the first place, maybe I'm missing something.' Nathan thought as he continued to look over the files. The others were getting anxious and riled up, thinking that they were about to go into full combat any second now, but Nathan was sure that patience was the right answer in this situation.

'The reports...what if we were wrong? I've spent a long time with Quinn and the others, so I know more about the V than anyone else here. Not only do their eyes turn red and they use the strange red aura for attacks, but their nose is so sensitive it can distinguish between humans and themselves. We aren't too far away from the Shelter, so shouldn't they have picked us up by now?'

'The reports also never specified any cases of V actually being spotted here... Are these humans that are with the Dalki really working with the V? Rather than working with, could it be that the people are actually their prisoners? In that case, could it be that they're less worried about someone coming in and more about those people escaping?'

Still, this theory raised the question of why Dalki, who had never been known to take prisoners, would go out of their way now? What's more the reports agreed that the inhabitants of the Shelter had fought back together with the Dalki.

'That could just be due to us attacking them aggressively. At the time, the people must have been afraid due to the existence of the V, so they properly didn't take the time to check them out.'

With this new idea in his head. Nathan ordered those three to watch if any of the humans ever left the Shelter, and if so to find out what they were doing. This way he could determine if they were collaborating or if they really were prisoners or not.

A while later Nathan had received another report from his scout group.

"We have been observing them for a while now. The Dalki attack any of the beasts that enter the area. Once in a while a group of humans go out of the Shelter to gather resources and water from a river not too far. During this time, a single Dalki will head out with them."

The group consisted of five people. It was a small number of people allowed to leave the Shelter. Clearly not enough for them to overpower the single Dalki. It was looking more and more like Nathan's new theory was right and that the people weren't the Dalki's allies but prisoners.

"Assemble two squads. I want the ten strongest men in terms of single attack strength abilities, and make sure that their abilities don't make much noise either. Their goal will be to kill the Dalki who accompany the people. After that make sure to capture the humans with them ALIVE! Get one of our intelligence agents on standby as well, some questions are going to have to be answered."

Soon enough ten men gathered in front of Nathan, and with the information of the route and scouting team, they were able to all move together well due to the information. This was the way one would use the advantage of numbers, without necessarily needing all of them to be top fighters.

When they had finally reached the river, they could see the group of people gathering large amounts of water. The Dalki stood next to them on watch. During this period, Nathan started to gather his ability in his hands, readying a bubble that was larger than any other.

"Okay, now!" Nathan ordered.

Immediately, coming out from the jungle forest, the group of ten all used their abilities against the single spiked Dalki. One squad aimed at his head while the other at his heart to ensure he would die in that one shot. Meanwhile, Nathan had run forward to encase all of the humans by the river in a giant bubble to ensure they wouldn't inform the other Dalki.

The humans were shocked and hesitated about whether to help the Dalki or not. Two of them recognised the military uniforms, so they tried to use their abilities on the military personnel. However, while in the bubble they realised that something was wrong.

"What is this? Why isn't my ability working?!" A man shouted in panic.

Nathan's ability may not necessarily be the strongest, but it was perfect for dealing with other ability users, who weren't too much stronger than him. Looking to his left, he could see that his people had already accomplished their task, the Dalki had died before injuring any of them.

When there was only one, a burst option of strong abilities was the best option, due to the Dalki's nature of getting stronger the more injured they were. Now that they were free, Nathan didn't have to worry so much about having to fight the humans.

"Now that the Dalki has been dealt with, I just have some questions I want to ask you. Please cooperate with us, so we can save everyone inside the Shelter." Nathan hoped that this approach wouldn't be met with resistance from them.

Nathan made a sign for the other ten who still had their weapons drawn and abilities active to lower them, so that a fight could be avoided. Although they were inside his bubble, the people could still use their beast gear, and if they were to step out use their abilities again. Of course he didn't reveal that to the four of them.

'Wait, why are there only four of them this time? Didn't the report say that the humans always traveled in groups of five?'

"Let them go, or I will be the one to take care of you all!" A female voice shouted from behind.

Turning around, a little down the river, Nathan could see a dark skinned woman with long braided hair, but what stood out about her the most was the weapon she had in her hand. It was glowing and pointing towards them. One felt cold just looking at the weapon.

'That's the...Demon tier weapon!' Nathan instantly recognised it. 'Why did the Dalki hand it over instead of keeping it for themselves? Were we unlucky... or was all of this a trap to lure us out?'

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1228: The urge to kill

Quinn had decided to let his consciousness remain inside the Dalki body as this was a rare opportunity to learn more about the Dalki. Sure he had already been told about their origins, and he believed to know what their end goal was, but all of that had been told to him by others.

By now, they had already become their own species and judging by the scientific method the Dalki was using on him, it was clear that he was someone with great intellect.

Luckily for Quinn, apart from the fact that the five spiked Dalki had not outright killed him, was the fact that Graham was allowing him to watch the fight between Hilston and the five spiked Dalki. The Vampire Lord wasn't particularly cheering for one side or the other to win, in fact he would much rather see them defeat each other, but the important bit was that his Cursed faction had seemingly decided not to get involved.

"I see that you seem to be showing a great interest in the fight." Graham noted while still analyzing what looked like wave patterns on a certain screen. "Honestly, I was half expecting you to tell me everything I needed to know about you by now. Begging me to restore your body back to the way it was, but you did no such thing."

"Are you not afraid of death?" Graham turned around, looking Quinn right in the eyes.

Quinn honestly didn't know what the right move was at the moment. Should he try and pretend that he was the Dalki that he had taken over, perhaps admit to having sold out his race? However, the question was whether he could actually pull it off?

"The look in your eyes, it's... different. You're the one of the few who has the same look as me." Graham muttered more to himself than to Quinn, before turning around and going back to his computer glancing at the fight happening in the background once in a while.

"Perhaps I have found someone who can understand me more. You see, the intelligence of our race is not inferior to that of humans. We are capable of doing the same things as them and just like them some of us are different. Unfortunately, most of us don't make use of that gift. The majority gives in to that aggressive impulse our bodies produce when we come across humans. I suppose in that way we are no different from beasts."

"I wonder if our creator designed us with that flaw in mind or if it was just a coincidence. Many may think that I'm the only specimen who has managed to surpass this urge, but the truth is they are completely wrong. It's just that my urge goes far beyond just simply wanting to kill off any one human I see. After taking

my first life, I knew straight away that my urge went beyond that of my brethren, yet I had no way of satisfying it for the longest time."

"Speaking about humans, I still have to make up my mind whether I should consider us more or less advanced than even them. Speaking from a physical point of view, the answer might be obvious. However, while humans grow to reach their final form, what about us? We can evolve, but doesn't that mean that we have yet to reach our full potential?"

"Each new spike opens up a new world, beyond our wildest imaginations, but does it ever stop? What might happen if we reach ten spikes, twenty or even a hundred? I consider it my duty to push my race to the top, so it will reach its peak, but of course there is one huge problem that might make it so I will never be able to personally witness the ultimate evolution of a Dalki... Our time limit."

Listening carefully, Quinn was starting to realise that this Dalki was pretty insane. Talking about satisfying his urge beyond just killing a human... Did he intend to outright eliminate the human race then? Or was it the evolution of his race that he sought?

As for the last line, 'Our time limit' Quinn had a good guess what that was referring to. The short life span of the Dalki. He had long since wondered if this entire war couldn't be avoided. If the Dalki were forced to fight to find a way to escape death, couldn't they just hand over the Demon tier beast?

However, after listening to the clothed Dalki speak, Quinn now understood that it might be impossible for both races to coexist, because it was just in the Dalki's nature to want to kill them.

"This is why I can't understand why you would be working with the other side. A weak one spike... well I suppose now you're a two spike going up against us? Just what could they have promised you to make you switch sides? Why would they even want to accept you, given that you would have run into someone who could have taken you out sooner or later?" Graham asked, hoping for some reaction from his possessed brethren.

"Checking your brain waves I can tell that your mind isn't being controlled at the moment. You are able to register everything I'm saying even now, so why? How could they exploit us?"

"Humans have weaknesses, people they care about, those they would risk their lives for to protect. Even the 'V' as they had so poorly been coined, who believe to be able to disregard their own feelings, have things they care about. Even that vampire had something that was used against him to get him over to help us."

"On the other hand, we were created at the same time. So we are all of a similar age. We are related but at the same time not, unable to have any children of our own that could be used against us. The only thing we care about is ourselves and

were it not for our need to work together to save our own lives, we would probably fight each other to further evolve ourselves."

There was silence in between. And Graham had turned around to look at Quinn once again, before turning away after getting no such answer.

"... a shame. I guess your sole purpose will be as just another one of my test subjects then." Graham sighed.

"Do you think she will lose?" Quinn finally spoke from inside the Dalki's body.

"Slicer? As a five spike who hasn't seen the limits of her evolution how could it be possible for her to lose against that human? No, not only will she not lose this fight, there might even be a chance she could evolve from it." Graham smiled as the strapped Dalki could only be referring to the fight on the screen.

That in itself was a scary thought, but Quinn could see a light. The one in front of him, the one fighting Hilston, and the one that had fought against Oscar. The Dalki weren't so much above them. These were the ones that they needed to beat.

"Are you willing to make a bet, if Slicer will be able to live?." Quinn asked

Graham knew that the Dalki in front of him couldn't run anywhere else, so out of curiosity he shifted his gaze to the screen. He was eager to discover whether the confidence of his subject had any ground to stand on.

Ruby continued to hold the Demon tier weapon in her hand. It was shaking slightly, something that Nathan didn't miss.

"You don't want to hurt us, do you? As you can see we haven't hurt any of your people, just the Dalki. I apologise for the way you might have been treated by my predecessors, but we're here to help you." Nathan put the palm of both of his hands up to calm her down. He knew the weapon was a ticking time bomb. If the active skills were used correctly all ten of them could perish in an instant.

Ruby looked at the dead Dalki on the floor. It was then that water started to fill her eyes.

"Why? ... why did you come back? Just leave us alone... please. I-I don't want to... I don't want to cause any more trouble!"

It was apparent that Ruby was unstable, but Nathan couldn't just let them go before getting any information out of them. They were the key to finding out why the people in the Shelter were being kept as prisoners and why the Dalki would never give their prisoners something as vital as the Demon tier sword in the first place.

"Are you sure you want us to leave?" Nathan questioned here. "We've already killed that Dalki, so I'm sure you won't be able to just walk back like that. We also can't just let the others find out that we are here. You're humans just like us, surely

you don't want to cooperate with the Dalki. Whatever they have on you, with that weapon and our help we can help you get out of here!"

Still not putting the sword down or letting go, it looked as if Ruby was considering his words.

"... no, he is already helping us! I can't let his troubles go to waste."

The Demon tier sword started to glow brighter, and a strange ice vortex was forming around it.

"Everyone, get out of the way!" Nathan shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1229: The Dalki or Military

NOTE: In the last chapter my Editor changed Graham from a five spike into a six spike Dalki, he is a five spike.

A vortex of ice was swirling around the Demon tier sword. The motion started slow at first, but soon started to pick up speed as more ice formed around the blade. Nathan knew what was about to happen soon if they did nothing. His heart was beating, afraid of their demise if the sword's active skill would be fired off at them.

One of the humans' great human treasures to be the end of him was not something he had expected.

'That damn active skill creates a large tunnel of ice and just the smallest touch will make us turn into ice sculptures!' Nathan started to panic as his ability could do absolutely nothing against that. The General quickly made a signal with his hands, a sign for his subordinates to enter the bubble he had created.

It didn't take long for a well trained group to overpower the group of normal civilians from the Shelter. In a matter of seconds they were disarmed, pinned to the ground, having faced next to no trouble at all. The soldiers then turned, while Nathan also moved himself, so they were to face Ruby and the charging Demon tier weapon.

'I didn't want to do this, but I have to gamble that she won't hurt her own people.' Using those people as human meat shields left a bitter taste in Nathan's mouth, but it was clear that Ruby wouldn't just listen to reason. Nor could they run away or fight such a thing. 'I just hope she hasn't already gone through the motions of activating the skill yet.'

Seeing what Nathan had done, Ruby of course didn't want to hurt those from her fellow Shelter. Unfortunately, great power was already flowing through the weapon and the woman felt like she was unable to move from her place. She attempted to lift the weapon away, but it was stuck in place as if her hands were frozen as well.

'This is the first time I've tried using this weapon. I should have tried testing it a few times!' Ruby panicked.

'I have to do something.' Nathan thought as he ran forward. He wasn't sure if this would work, but he had to try something, otherwise they were all doomed. Two bubbles formed over his hands.

"Help me, I don't want to kill them." Ruby cried out.

"It's a deal then! I just need you to answer my questions and help me out after this." Nathan quickly agreed, as he held onto the demon tier's bladed edge of the sword with his finger tips. He pushed with such strength that the palm of his hands had

been cut open from the blade but only ever so slightly, before the blade propelled with force and left her hands. It could be seen falling into the river nearby.

At that moment, the active skill activated. For a moment it looked as if the whole river lit up, but seconds later the large body of water froze over. Some of the military personnel looked down the river to see how far it had frozen over, but it went even further than their eyesight could see.

Rather than apprehending Ruby, who was now on the floor shaking, Nathan went to check if there was anything they could do about the Demon tier weapon.

'If we bring this back to Supreme Commander Sach and the others, this will be a big help to us in the war.' Nathan concluded.

When looking in the river it made for a strange sight. Despite its weight it was floating at the top. From the tip, the river was frozen, while the other half of the river continued to flow.

One of the Earthborn group members was tempted to walk over the ice and go grab the weapon.

"Stop! Don't you know what will happen to you if you step on that ice?!" Nathan shouted, and they were quickly reminded of the weapon's true terrifying properties. Nathan's bubble had a few more uses, but they weren't combat related, but today seemed to be his day.

He coated himself in the bubble, and soon, jumped into the water. The current had weakened since half of the river was frozen, which was good but just in case, Nathan encased himself in a bubble so he wouldn't touch the wall of ice.

Eventually he reached the sword and grabbed it by its hilt. He could feel a terrifying energy residing within, making him wonder how Ruby had even been able to use it. Eventually he returned to the ground, his clothes should have been drenched in water but the bubble seemed to also protect him from that. He now had the biggest smile on his face.

"The Demon tier sword! It's actually back in the hands of the Earthborn group! No, that's not right. I'm part of the Cursed and we are part of the human race. It's back in our hands. With this we can help out with the war going on!" Nathan exclaimed, before wrapping it up and placing it on his back. He had no sheath for the weapon so it stood out quite a bit.

---

After what had happened, the Earthborn group and those from the Shelter including Ruby had headed back to their secret hiding space. The Dalki body had been hard to dismember, so the only thing they had been able to do had been to tie it up to

some heavy rocks and chuck it into the river hoping that it would take a long time until the enemy found it.

The group of soldiers and civilians were now in an open cleared area, where the nearby trees had been cut down, and there were a few tents. Not all of the three hundred men had stuck together, so this was just being used as a temporary space for Nathan and the others.

"You should hurry getting off this place." Ruby finally spoke. "Even if they don't find the body, the fact that we haven't come back yet, means that they will soon come looking for us. They will think we've escaped."

"I know, I have a rough understanding of your situation." Nathan said, bringing over a nice warm drink in a cup, placing it in her hands. The rest of the military group were doing the same. Hoping not to treat them as enemies, getting them to feel more comfortable and to speak more freely.

"Which is why I need you to tell me just what is going on? I'll be open with you. Just as you have already guessed we're from the military. I know that the ones who have come before have treated you unjustly and for that you have my deepest apologies, but we are here to get you out of this situation. Isn't this your best chance while One Horn isn't here?" Nathan asked.

The General spoke loudly on purpose, so the others nearby could hear, their reaction looked like they were quite pleased about what was said. Perhaps they did want to be saved, but they were waiting, waiting for Ruby to decide. It was clear that she was the one in charge around here.

There had to be a reason she was the one given the Demon tier weapon.

"Just tell them Ruby!" One of the men demanded. "I know Arthur helped us before, but this is the military we are talking about! They can help us."

Ruby clenched her fist and looked right past Nathan towards the one who had just spoken.

"Exactly, they're the same military who abandoned us at the first sign there was trouble! Do you remember who saved us from those beasts? It was Arthur! The military were the ones who had chosen to attack us!"

Hearing the name 'Arthur' Nathan was trying to recall if he had heard of someone of significance with that name, but there was no one who came to mind.

"Look, I promised I would answer your questions because you helped me from harming my fellow men, even if I can't agree with your methods." Ruby admitted in an angry tone. "The truth is... we don't really know what's going on at the moment, either. Arthur just came by and told us that we would be okay, that the Dalki would help us."

"It was hard to believe, but they kept their distance and they did protect us from beasts and the like. Eventually your military came and... well, you probably know the rest yourselves."

"You keep mentioning this Arthur. Is he someone we should know?" Nathan couldn't help but ask.

"The person who saved our lives The one who came here when the military had left this Shelter back when it was a red portal planet. He was the one who showed us how to fight back, helped us grow our community and we were able to live happy lives without caring about those outside. Then, he just came back one day, only with the Dalki as company."

"The only information we got from Arthur himself was that they would help us, and that the human race would lose the war against the Dalki. It was the only way that we would survive, because not even he could beat them."

It was clearly devastating news, to hear that this Arthur person that had saved them claimed he was unable to beat the Dalki, but there were plenty of people who would be afraid of fighting the Dalki, especially after what they were going through, so what was the big deal?

Nathan struggled to comprehend.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1230: The special deal

The questions from Nathan didn't stop there, as there was still plenty more that he needed to find out. First of all, just what type of deal had this Arthur person struck with the Dalki to make it so that they would protect humans?

It didn't really make any sense for those bloodthirsty creatures to suddenly change their nature. What reason could the Dalki possibly have to listen to his request, especially if Ruby and the others didn't lie about the part of him being stronger than them?

Unfortunately, Ruby and the others seemed to know next to nothing about this Arthur, apart that he had chosen to act as their benefactor. After some more questioning, Nathan finally stumbled upon something they could tell them and that was in regards to the powers Arthur had displayed.

Apart from Ruby the others had also confirmed that this Arthur person had used powers that sounded similar to the red aura used by the V, yet he seemed to have another power on top of that.

The shadow power he was apparently capable of using sounded awfully close to what he had seen some of the Cursed group use.

However, from the description it sounded as if Arthur had been an older gentleman, and the timeline of when he had first arrived at the Shelter didn't quite add up to the Cursed faction's founding.

'Is there a relation between Arthur and Quinn? I should ask him about it. Perhaps there is a traitor in the Cursed faction that Quinn doesn't know about?' Nathan thought.

"Do you think Arthur is a V then?" Nathan asked. Ruby gave him a look of utter confusion. When the others from the Shelter were asked the same thing, they reacted in the same way. It was clear they had no clue what a V was supposed to be.

'Don't tell me...'

As it turned out, this Shelter had been cut off from the outside world for far longer than Nathan and the others had realised. They had next to no electronics that would allow them to see, or know about current or past events.

"The Demon tier weapon, where did you get it from?" Nathan asked Ruby eventually.

"One Horn gave it to me after the battle. As for why he did that, your guess is as good as mine. I doubt he just did it because we helped the Dalki fight back against the military. I can only assume that he didn't consider me much of a threat, after all

if even the Supreme Commander had been powerless against him, what chance would someone like me stand?" Ruby explained.

Nevertheless, the General thought there was more to it than that. One Horn must have known that given their plans of simultaneously attacking the planets he couldn't stay on this one forever. As such, Nathan assumed that he had done so to make sure they would keep their end of the deal with this mysterious Arthur. Dalki couldn't use beast gear, so leaving it to one of the people in the Shelter would boost their fighting power. Additionally, it had been a good way to sway those in the Shelter over to their side, building their trust.

It was scary to consider that the Dalki were capable of more than mere violence and the efficiency of his actions was apparent. Even amongst the five they had 'rescued', there were those that seemed to be still untrusting of the military, only complying reluctantly, seemingly grateful to the Dalki that had helped them previously.

'It's hard to blame them when the Earthborn group attacked them without giving it a second thought. In a way the Dalki are their saviours, but I still don't know what this Arthur could have given the Dalki to make them protect this Shelter...'

Moving away from the others, Nathan decided to take Ruby to the side. He had noticed that during his questioning, she kept looking over at the others and even they seemed to be a bit nervous as if they were being careful with the way they answered certain questions.

"I think you know what I'm going to ask you." Nathan began, looking at the face she was pulling once more. "I want to save the rest at your Shelter and bring them back to us. With your help, we can take down the Dalki. We know how strong their forces are."

"While it would have been risky before, now that we have recovered the Demon tier weapon, even the three spike Dalki will be easy to deal with. We have a great chance to do so with minimal lives lost." Nathan paused waiting for her to say something, but Ruby still remained silent.

"Look, Ruby, you have already given us all the information we could get from this place. You should understand that there is no logical reason for us to go and save the rest of your Shelter. It's been impossible to gather any information from the Dalki and I doubt that those left behind would know much anyway. I'm only doing this to try and right the wrong the military did to you all."

"We can't just leave this place, knowing that they have captured normal humans."

Nathan was actually exaggerating here. Even with the Demon tier sword back in their possession, it might be hard to fight off the three spiked Dalki, at least in a frontal confrontation. On the other hand, if the five of them were to return, Ruby

could use the weapon to strike him from behind. With him out of the equation, they would have the manpower to defeat the others with minimal losses.

Of course, handing back the Demon tier weapon to Ruby was a risk. There was a chance she was still fighting for the other side so he needed to confirm her feelings, or what had been holding her back so far.

"I know, I know what you want me to do as well, but I can't." Ruby answered.  
"Because, I don't know where my daughter is..."

This was something that Nathan hadn't expected. This girl who he had come to learn was named Ruby, telling him they were using her daughter as a hostage. If the whole camp was being contained and protected, it would make no difference to put her daughter aside.

After all, fighting against the Dalki, or trying to rebel wouldn't make a difference since the Dalki could just defeat them with ease, so why take a hostage? Trying to put himself in the shoes of the others, Nathan could only think of one thing. It was to make sure that the special deal they had made would still go through, in case he changed his mind.

There had to be an external worry, and that couldn't be anyone in the camp, but must have had something to do with the initial goal of having those in the Shelter protected. They must have really wished for this Arthur person to be on their side no matter what.

'The second Arthur made the request for the Dalki to protect this place, they knew they could use something to barter with him, yet what is it that he has that they want?'

"Maybe I will be speaking from a military point of view, but we are taught to not think on an individual basis. I know it might be wrong for me to say this because I am not in your position and not taking your feelings into account, but right now you are being quite selfish."

"Are your views the same as everyone else's? If everyone in your Shelter learned that there was a chance for all of their lives to be saved and for their life to return to normal, do you think they would dislike that? From what we've seen, it's clear that the Dalki don't treat you like equals. If you carry on the way you are now, soon you will be nothing but slaves."

Nathan had said what he wanted to say, and now it was left up to Ruby to decide. He was sure there was a reason everyone looked up to her, and he was gambling that it was because she cared about the Shelter and their feelings.

Ruby had gone off with the others, they were all allowed to converse as they naturally did, but time was running out. If they wanted the element of surprise to be on their side against the Dalki then they needed to do so now.

It didn't take long, but Ruby had finally returned. "Tell me what I need to do."

A short while later, and the group of three hundred were put into action. They attacked the Shelter from multiple points in groups all at the same time. Due to the information they had received they were able to fare even better than they had originally believed.

Once she had chosen to cooperate fully, Ruby had been able to give them information on the Dalki's patrol paths, and even tell them the times when they would be further split apart.

Once their plan went into action Ruby had managed to play her part in everything splendidly. Rallying up those in the Shelter, and when coming out to 'help' The Dalki, she was able to use the Demon tier weapon to greatly injure the three spiked Dalki, albeit with tears in her eyes.

While everything was going on, even higher in the trees, sitting on a branch out of sight from nearly everyone, was a person.

"Sir, it looks like the military have returned to this place once again. Those in the Shelter have seemingly betrayed the Dalki. Without One Horn present it looks like the humans will be able to achieve a victory this time. Would you like me to help out the Dalki side?"

"No. Stay put. The outcome won't matter. He will be far too busy dealing with his own troubles, before he gets a chance to hear of this."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1231: The big figh

When the Cursed ship was still in orbit, having yet to crash land on Planet Caladi, interesting things were happening. Peter had quickly suffered a defeat from Hilston. Hardly any strength had been used in the fight.

Despite him being a Wight and having Quinn's stats, it all seemed like nothing against the one known as the world's strongest human. This was because he was also somewhat of a superhuman himself. Right now, every piece of equipment he wore on his body was shining brightly, as the properties of the Demon tier equipment were giving him additional stats.

"From your shouting, I thought you would amount to something at least, but I guess not," Hilston said.

It was then when Peter felt like he had no hope to beat such a titan that something strange had occurred. Crashing through the ceiling of the training room and slamming down onto the ground, it felt like the whole ship had tilted on its side for a second.

Something had landed in the centre of the training room.

Looking at its back, Peter could tell it was a Dalki. He could see an unusually long tail, but worse of all, he had counted the number of spikes on its back.

'How the hell did a five spike get in here?' Peter wondered. Looking above him, he could see a hole, but it didn't look to be a forced entry, almost as if someone had purposely made a hole so the Dalki would fall through to this exact spot. Seeing the tiny spiders at work and repairing the ceiling, Peter could only assume it was the work of Logan.

'I will have to thank him once again for saving my life for a second time.' Peter thought. Thankfully, his wounds had healed from the attack he had received. The good thing was that Peter hadn't been repeatedly hurt, so his hunger hadn't started to grow yet, but seeing the situation as it was, Peter soon found himself walking towards the side of the doors. As expected, one of them had opened, but only for him. Logan really was watching everything that was going on the ship.

'I hope the two of you kill each other.' Peter left because he knew staying there for any amount of time would be so at the risk of his own life.

The five spiked Dalki was a female Dalki known as Slicer. Her tail would constantly sway back and forth, similar to a dog. It was a sign she was overjoyed at the moment.

"I knew something was here!" Slicer declared with a big smile. "A strong energy unlike any other was calling to me, and now that I have seen you, I know exactly what it is. It's that armour! It's radiating with strength even now!"

While Slicer was still overjoyed at finding such a great person in front of her. Hilston wasted no time launching an attack. A streak of constant lightning soon had struck Slicer's body. Once it was done, it didn't stop there. Hilston continued to pour his MC cells into the attack.

"Why is an ugly lizard getting in my way now of all things!" Hilston said as he added more power to the attack. The whole room soon was filled with blue lighting, so much that if one was to enter, they would have been unable to see the Dalki or anything else for that matter.

Still, after a while, Hilton hadn't stopped his attack, and it was because he could tell something was up. Soon coming through the giant lightning attack, he could see a shadow walking towards him slowly, the tail shaking back and forth intensely.

The next second, a gap in the lighting could be seen. It was strange, it looked like the lightning strike had been cut, but Hilston hadn't seen anything of the sort. Refusing to believe that the Dalki was unaffected by such an attack, Hilston tried to use his lightning strike again. Regardless of this, a cut had been made in the lighting again, and Slicer was seen continuing to walk forward.

This time paying more attention, Hilston had seen it. For a brief second, her tail had stopped wagging back and forth. He could only assume that the tail was involved in disrupting the lightning.

"Excellent." Slicer said. "You are the one after all."

The attack wasn't ineffective. Just Slicer was too overjoyed and too focused to let something as minor as pain ruin her joyous moment.

She dashed forward with a scream, clearly intending to attack.

'A punch, or a kick, my armour will deal with those things.' Hilston thought, planning to match the attack with his own strength.

However, for a second, he had seen the tail stop for a moment. He had a feeling he knew what was about to happen, and something told him he needed to avoid it at all cost. The tail had struck, making no noise at all. It was back in place, swinging as it had done before.

In front of Slicer, she had expected to see a sliced up old man, but her tail had hit nothing but air. Before she knew it, a giant fist of flames was coming at her and had punched her on her side underneath her arm. Hilston had swung his fist like a hook

and had used the firepower like a jet from his elbow to give the punch as much strength as possible.

It had worked, and Slicer was soon seen flying through the air. Until she had dug her tail into the ground, but it was too sharp and had done nothing but just cut the ground like butter, not slowing her down for a second.

Before she crashed into the wall, Hilston was soon seen behind her, aiming to deliver this time, two jet fire punches in her back. With as fast as the Dalki went through the air, it would mean even more power to a strike.

"I get it now. No human can move that fast. You must be using an ability." Slicer said. "But you're too predictable!"

It was then that she attacked with her tail behind her. She could tell it had hit something solid, but for the first time, her tail was stuck. It hadn't gone through the object or the person she was aiming at.

Hilstion was only briefly sent through the air. He was able to use his teleportation ability to reposition himself again. Slicer was right. Hilston was using the power of teleportation to move. He could dodge attacks instantly and move as far as his eyes could see, as many times as he wanted consecutively.

'That blow, it was one hit, but it charged up the Demon tier equipment this much already?' Hilston thought, looking at his gauntlets. At the same time, Slicer was smiling, for she could feel that part of her scales from where Hilston had hit her, had fallen and she was bleeding slightly.

'This is it. This is exactly what I need!' Slicer shouted in pleasure. She charged in again, going for the attack, and as expected, Hilston started to teleport around the room. Before he could teleport, he struck a lightning strike at her wound. Then, when appearing by her side or back, he would use flame filled attacks. One after another.

Doing this constantly at a fast speed, Slicer couldn't catch a break, but the more she got injured, the stronger she was getting. Soon, her tail was being used more than she had ever had to in a fight before. Hitting Hilston with great speed each time he appeared. Her tail had never been stopped by anything before. Yet today, It had constantly failed to cut the strong special diamond armour.

'This is it, this fight. The fight where I have to fight with my life on the line. This is the fight that will allow me to evolve!' She thought.

It was then that Hilston was finding something oddly strange. With his attacks, he wasn't holding back. Anyone would have been killed with a single hit, but this Dalki was still standing, and her attacks were getting stronger and faster.

For a second, Hilston was reminded of the last fight he had lost. Something was coming over him. It wasn't like when he fought the other one, and was so

overpowered that he was unable to do anything. No, instead, this felt like a wall that was continuing to grow larger and more robust.

"No...I will not lose again!" Hilston shouted. His armour had now charged up, and he was finally ready to use one of the pieces of its active skill. However, it was at this point that the ship had crashed.

Trying to not get hurt, Hilston teleported away to safety while the ship continued to bounce across the sand. At one point, Slicer appeared above and dug her feet into his shoulders.

'While I'm in contact with another, I can't teleport!' Hilston angrily thought.

He soon was seen being pulled out of the ship, with blood dripping from his traps, covering the shoulders of his armour. When they were a distance away from the ship. Hilston grabbed the legs, and the armour around his arms started to glow. They had delivered a strange pulse.

A strange feeling had come over the Dalki, making it drop Hilston into the sand. With Hilston safely landing as well.

Slicer quickly landed herself and stood opposite the Dalki, but her joyous face from before had disappeared.

"You, you need to get stronger. You need to hurt me more. Otherwise, I won't evolve. If I can evolve, I will be ahead of the others and can be the overall leader of the Dalki. So hurt me, hurt me more!" She shouted.

"You think you're a challenge to me. You were never a challenge in the first place." Hilston said, as he activated the Demon tier armour set active skill.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1232: Alien VS Predator

The drones being used to livestream the fight between the 'strongest human' and one of the Dalki leaders weren't ordinary. In fact, both Bonny and Void had invested their life savings into purchasing these robots. The two of them had started together from the bottom. They used to be no names in the entertainment industry and rather than going through the traditional means, they had decided to build themselves from the ground up by starting their own channel and news outlet.

It was only later they had been picked up and given a dedicated live channel that could be broadcasted on world channels as well. Through the years they had learned a lot, and over the years had continued to reinvest their earnings into their equipment, making their reporting game above anyone else. Besides they were after all, one of the few daring enough to put themselves in dangerous situations.

Each one of Void's drones might have cost an arm and a leg, but they were literally the best money could buy, able to survive through thunderstorms and more. Nevertheless, it didn't mean they were indestructible, nothing in the world was, but they could take quite the beating under normal circumstances.

Of course, any one attack from Slicer or Hilston would be more than enough to take them out, but thankfully Void's control over them was superb. He moved them as if they were extensions of his own body, allowing him to get them in the right places to offer the best viewing experience while simultaneously keeping them out of the danger zone. His concentration was always in top shape, it helped due to how much these drones cost in the first place.

So far, the drones had survived all the chaos, taking the whole world along for the ride. Filming every aspect of the fight since the Cursed ship.

"Did you see the powers that Blade person used? Teleportation, Fire and Lightning! Each one of them was top tier!"

"Top tier? Have we been watching the same fight? That was far beyond the top tier! Why would a person this strong stay hidden this whole time? With his power he could have had anything he wanted!"

"I know they are saying he's done bad things, but does it really matter at this moment. We need everyone we can to fight against the Dalki."

Those online were fascinated by the strong powers displayed by Hilston Blade and despite Bonny revealing the Blade family's negative past, the support of the people was with him. In a way, it was natural when seeing a human fight against a Dalki that the public would be on his side.

Out of the two, Slicer was the first to make her next move, by dashing forward again. To the viewers it appeared as if she was simply repeating the same pattern over and over. One would think that she hadn't learned her lesson, but as her

opponent, Hilston could feel the difference. Each time, one of them was able to catch a break. The fighting positions of them both reset to how they first started. Despite the moves being the same, Slicer came at him slightly stronger each time.

This time, Hilston did something different hoping to change the outcome. He moved his hand and the next second a giant wave of sand could be seen swallowing Slicer whole, but just like everything else so far, the Dalki leader used her tail to cut through the obstacle to reach her target.

However, following after the sand was part of the ship that was being hurled at her again and again. Large and small pieces of all shapes and sizes, They weren't being thrown one by one either. Multiple parts were moving in all sorts of different directions. She was able to avoid or take most of the blows head on. Some of the times would simply bounce off her hard skin, but for a second, she could feel that her tail had slowed down.

'What is this strange force I can feel. Is it an ability? For me to actually feel a difference...' Slicer was quite surprised.

Pushing through with her strength she could move her tail still, the Dalki cut another wave of sand, only to find a piece of metal from the ship hitting her with great force, more so than all the items before, and lifting her into the air.

'It's best not to show your entire strength.' Hilston thought with a smile, pleased how his simple plan had worked out.

Whenever, Hilston got the chance, he would rain down lightning on the Dalki like he was doing now in the air, but for the first time it looked as if this ability was completely ineffective.

'I knew it, this person still has tricks up his sleeve! Yes, this is what I was waiting for!' Slicer thought, a pleased distorted smile on her face. 'The lightning attacks hardly harm my body anymore, but they must be draining his energy.'

Not many people had fought against a five spike Dalki or had lived to get up close to one and speak again. So they had no way of knowing that five spikes were a little different. Their bodies would be altered slightly. The scales on their outer body tripled in thickness and strength, making most attacks feel like nothing, which was why the lightning wasn't affecting Slicer in the same way it would have done others.

"That ability he just used, that had to have been Telekinesis, right? That would make it the fourth ability he has used so far!" Someone commented on the livestream.

In the air, Slicer soon slashed the metal object that was propelling her into the air. She had split it up into several parts, but didn't expect for now all the separate pieces to be going towards her. Moving her tail even faster she continued to cut them into smaller and smaller pieces until they were no longer moving. Now mid

air, she started to fall, until from her back, large wings sprouted. Wings were already a rarity among the Dalki, yet Slicer was even more unique in that she was able to retract them at will.

For the first time, the female Dalki changed her tactics. Rather than attacking Hilston by running straight forward from the ground, she was making use of her wings and flew at him at a speed faster than her previous top one.

"Come on, most of your attacks still haven't been able to even hurt me that bad!" Slicer taunted her opponent. Hilston knew that she wasn't lying. So far, the only thing that had been effective, had been the fire ability mixed in with his natural raw strength supported from the demon tier armour.

Unfortunately, getting a hold of her had proven to be a real headache. Planting his fist into the lizard's body would be a hard task. Given how fast Slicer currently was, it was incredibly hard for the strongest human to physically hit her. Fortunately, the lightning attacks moved at speed surpassing hers, just like the telekinesis ability which was why Hilston didn't show any signs of panic. Still these were ineffective which was why he was at a standstill.

When Slicer was close enough, around an arm's reach away, a large pulse radiated from his armour. The force itself could be seen as a ripple moving through the sky. It didn't move fast, nor did it spread out too wide, but for those inside its range, it was impossible to escape the attack.

Just like everything Slicer had seen before, she attempted to slash through this invisible pulse. When the tip of her tail touched it, an instinct surfaced which she hadn't felt in a long time.

'This, it was exactly the same skill he had used when I had him held up in the air.' She thought.

When it passed through her whole body, there was nothing she could do. Her body became unable to move and the female Dalki was falling down. However, whilst in mid-air Hilston followed up with a double hammer fist of flames, slamming her into the ground making a tide of sand shoot up into the sky.

The livestream that was being shown to the viewers played out a frame rate that was usually used to film slow motion videos. Otherwise, many wouldn't be able to fathom what was going on, and would be unable to see such a lightning fast fight in real life, but they could all see it through the screen. It was unbelievable everything they were seeing at the event was nail biting for them all.

They were unsure just what was going to happen next or how it would all play out.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1233.2: Alien Vs Predator Part 2

The strange pulse that was felt coming from Hilston had stopped Slicer in her tracks. As soon as it hit her, a tingling feeling was felt in her body that she just couldn't shake off and soon, she felt her whole body going numb. This was what had allowed her to receive a devastating blow.

Still, it didn't take long after the attack for Slicer to dig her way out of the sand, even though Hilston was using his Telekinesis to bury her deeper by the second. She was soon seen shooting out from the ground, blood falling from her back, and it partially seared from the attack.

"That one hurt a bit! You got anymore like that in you?!" Slicer continued her taunting, before she jumped into the air once more. The five spiked Dalki was far more injured than she herself realised and her body had started to tilt during her flight, making her come in at an odd angle, but it didn't matter to her.

Hilstion activated his Demon tier's Armour special set skill once more and the pulse went outward. Although she couldn't see the attack, she could feel that the armour had done something and remembering what had just happened, she tried to find a gap of some sort.

The invisible pulse was coming out like a bubble hitting everything in the area. Only a slight change could be seen if one was to look closely similar to a heatwave on a hot day. Slicer flapped her wings with all her power in an attempt to get outside of its possible range, but eventually she got hit, causing her body to freeze again.

With Hilston's Teleportation ability, he was soon in front of her, and happily delivered another flame punch to her face. After teleporting again, his next punch was aimed at her side and he continued to pummel her. The teleportation attacks with the flame punches were proving to be effective. Getting hit another time, Slicer's anger had risen and she bore through the effects swinging her tail out at the same time, hearing a familiar clang.

That was the sign that his active skill had stopped working, and Hilston increased the distance between the two of them again.

"You damn cheat! Stop running away and fight me fair and square!" Slicer demanded in her fury, her appearance looking more and more like a piece of charcoal.

"My armour is merely a tool, just like my abilities, as are your wings and your tail. There is no honour in a fight, just a winner!" Hilston stated.

What he was using was the active armour skill called Disruptive pulse. It was a set of Demon tier armour all with the same skill. However, its range and area where it worked was limited if one only had one part of the Demon tier set. For example,

the armour covering his hands only allowed him to use the skill on physical touch, which was what he had done the first time, but when having the whole armour set on, one could affect everything in a certain area.

Disruptive pulse was a Demon tier active skill that even Hilston didn't know every use of. So far it had stopped any ability that was touched by the pulse, a person's actions, beasts and more. This Demon tier set was perfect for someone like Hilston, allowing him to use his strongest moves against his enemies while they were frozen in place, at the same time, disrupting his opponents most powerful moves.

Nevertheless, there was a small downside to it. The armour he was wearing needed to be charged up, something that only happened after it had received a certain amount of damage. The stronger the opponent, the quicker that happened and only then was he able to use the active skills.

The watching community was going crazy cheering on Hilston to beat the five spiked Dalki. They had yet to really grasp Slicer's strength, so most could not truly understand the great feat that was happening at the moment.

Hilston continued to fight in this style using the active skill and his strong abilities, mainly the fire one to pound his enemy, his fists were seen being covered in green blood. Even though Slicer's strength was rising, it didn't matter as she had yet to find a way to get out of the pulse. Each time it went through her body she became defenceless, unable to fight against it.

Given her personality and pride as a Dalki leader she wasn't one to run away either, but finally, for some reason, Hislton had stopped using it; he had stopped using the pulse. This was first noticed by Slicer when her attack had gotten through and it wasn't just a hit out of desperation this time. Still, it had only clashed against his armour.

Hilston had blocked the attack from his head, another attack followed up from Slicer and he barely blocked that one too. The third strike came at an angle that would be impossible to block, so instead the Blade leader teleported away.

Slicer, slightly surprised about the sudden reversal, quickly figured out the situation. Then she started to laugh to herself. "Now I understand. You can't do that weird thing anymore, can you?" Slicer questioned him, yet Hilston didn't bother to give her an answer.

There was no need for it either as the circumstances spoke for themselves.

Hilston had long since expected the Dalki to fall before him, but she had proven far more resilient than he had ever anticipated, able to survive even his strongest abilities. This was the very first time someone had been able to last long enough that the charges of Disruptive pulse had actually run out. Now he was forced to stay on the defensive and wait for the attacks to charge it back up. Which was why he was also reluctant to use his teleportation ability.

It was then that Slicer did something strange that no one had expected. Using her long tail, she aimed at the base, the tip skimmed around the edge, and the next second it could be seen falling into the sand. Blood started to spew everywhere, dying the sand green. The wound quickly healed, until she let out a shriek and a new tail grew in its place.

Slicer quickly did this two more times, chopping off her tails, regrowing a new one, each one looking more impressive than the last and even longer. Then picking up both of her tails, she held them in her hands.

It was a gruesome sight to see, a Dalki using its own body part as some type of weapon, but at the same time, for those watching it just sent a shiver down their spine. Showing just how blood hungry they were, to not even give it a second thought to do such a thing.

"Why won't that thing die! So much of its blood has been split!" A viewer commented.

"I haven't gotten to a six spike yet, So I need to push myself even further!" Slicer said, with bloodshot eyes. Although her approach seemed to be a double-edged sword, her current tail was double the size of the one had originally had but even she didn't know how much longer she would last with so little Dalki blood left inside her.

---

Not too far away from where the fight was taking place, A small group could be seen walking in the sand.

"It looks like everyone who was around the Cursed ship has left this place." Fex commented. Looking at the dead human and Dalki bodies around. Most of them were the Chained, but there were a few humans from the Cursed group as well.

Fex was soon seen wrapping them up, mummifying them with his string. His strings even though they looked light, could be used as quite the weight. On the way back, they would make sure to give their bodies a proper funeral. Right now, the members of the cursed faction had an important job to do, and among them was determined Sil, who was ready to make his move.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1234: Pick a side

After dealing with the threat of the Dalki in the Shelter, the Cursed members had finally been able to catch a break for a bit. Without the fighting it even seemed peaceful as long as one didn't think about what was currently happening on the other human planets. The place had already been evacuated beforehand, but with only those from the Cursed ship currently occupying the Shelter, it resembled a ghost town.

"Has the fighting really ended. Is it safe?" Someone asked.

"I guess so. Wouldn't the Dalki be coming out now if it wasn't the case?" Another replied.

The people were discussing the shocking events that had occurred to them. Some were cursing in anger, while others were in tears. Everyone was happy that they had just narrowly escaped death, but now that they were all safe, they had time to really process the loss of their close friends and loved ones.

Many were running around the Shelter delivering the good news, while also trying to find those close to them. It was a large place after all. Still, everything just felt a bit unorganised.

"So, what are we going to do now?" Fex asked. "Should we round up everyone and head back to the Cursed ship? I bet Logan can repair it given enough time."

When the question was asked, it was naturally directed towards Quinn. Unfortunately, the Cursed faction leader had gone back to acting as his weird self.

"It's really not my place to say, but if you still want my opinion, then I would suggest that the best thing to do is to meet up with Sam. He usually has a clear head on what to do next, and as for the... let's say 'real Quinn', you don't have to worry about him. As long as this body remains in a safe place then everything will be fine."

Vincent was unable to see what was happening to the Dalki body Quinn was occupying, nor did he know where his grandson was right now. However, what he did know was that the energy in his Vampire Lord's body was no longer being drained. Without that burden, Vincent was surprised given the rate Quinn's body was producing energy, making him wonder if it had anything to do with the special Qi, or perhaps it was something else.

'I guess Quinn must have managed to deal with his enemy on his side, but if that was true, why hasn't he returned?'

It didn't take long for the group to locate Sam and the others, as Vincent still remembered where they had previously been. Layla and Nate were also back on

their feet again. Nevertheless, neither one was in any real fighting condition. While they walked on their own, they did so with sore muscles, aches, pains and more.

When the two groups met up, Sam was taken aback. In particular due to the presence of two familiar looking faces with blonde hair.

"Don't worry, they have decided to stay with us and promised to behave." Vorden explained.

Although Raten didn't exactly seem pleased, Sam trusted those around them to keep an eye on the twins. Especially Borden, who was back to regular human size, made it clear that he was watching their every move. On the way to Sam, there had already been a few times that Borden had mistaken their actions and warned them. Neither one of the two had been pleased, but both of them understood that the vigilance wasn't unfounded.

"I've already contacted Logan and he said that a few repairs have to be made before the Cursed ship will be able to fly again." Sam shared with the group.

"Unfortunately, the teleporters don't seem to be working in the Shelter, just like in all the other places I guess. According to the information we have received, there has to be some type of jammer on the mothership."

"Then let's take down the ship!" Raten suggested in a fighting mood.

Looking around though, there weren't really many that were in fighting condition, even when Sam met up with Vincent he shook his head insinuating it was a bad idea.

"Actually, I think I might be able to help with that." Vincent remembered there was something that Quinn had done, and perhaps it could be used now more than ever. Using the dimensional space soon a strange long stick with a large crystal on the end appeared in front of everyone. It was clear to them all it was something they had never seen before. It took a few seconds until Sam was the first one to catch on to the strange design of the object.

"That... is that Dalki tech? It uses the same black material and the engraved swirls and spikes." Sam theorised, pointing towards the top.

"Quinn... ahem, when 'I' was on the mothership, I decided to place it in my shadow. I thought that maybe we could use it to create a jammer of some type." Vincent explained, catching himself in the moment. Since he had yet to explain to the new group they had now met up with.

By now, everyone was already aware that this person in front of them wasn't the 'real Quinn'. However, the fact that he was in his body and continued to help them made them trust whoever it was enough to continue playing along. In the first place, it didn't seem likely that they would get a better answer, unless Vincent decided to spill the beans himself.

"I think it would be best if we hand this over to Logan. He was already doing research into the situation. With this thing, maybe he can figure something out. The people should stay inside the Shelter. It's relatively safe for now. Dennis, Megan, Shiro, I want you three to stay behind. For one, someone still needs to look after these two." Sam pointed at Layla and Nate, who looked sad, but neither one argued, aware of their own situation.

"On top of that, make sure the Blade kids don't do anything either. Although they are with Grim, he isn't in the best shape either. I know you are good at dealing with them, Shiro. If the place is attacked I need you to report it ASAP to us. The rest of us will head to the Cursed ship."

The group followed Sam's orders, so they headed to the Cursed ship. Sam thought that perhaps they would need some strength to deal with the Dalki that had boarded the Cursed ship.

He had considered the possibility of running into a bunch of them, so he felt a little safer with the people who were by his side, but just like Borden, he couldn't yet completely trust the two newcomers, Pai and Vicky.

When arriving, the site turned out to be nothing like they had expected. All of the Dalki had already been dealt with. Their dead bodies lay scattered around the ground in the sand. Entering the Cursed ship, they were greeted to a similar scene inside.

It was a sad sight to behold, for a lot of them this place had been their home, yet now it was ruined, most places no longer even recognisable. When reaching Logan, in the command centre, they were happy to see that he was safe. Handing over the strange device, Logan became overjoyed and got to work almost immediately.

However, the group noticed something playing in the command centre, something that Logan had been watching this entire time. Several eyes in the room lit up, and their hearts beat harder as they saw it, it was the fight against Slicer and Hilston.

"Hilston, he's winning." Vicky said, her body shaking, her mind was a bit of a loss of what to do. Pai, who had gained consciousness a while ago, was just staring at the screen having no such reactions. Until he noticed something before the others.

"You need to stop him!" Pai pleaded as he turned around, looking towards Vorden.

Vorden wasn't sure what the other expected him to do, but he suddenly noticed that someone had gone missing from their group.

"Goddamnit, where is Sil?!"

Everyone turned around, but he was nowhere to be seen, so most of the Cursed group quickly headed outside to search for him, leaving Logan to do what needed to be done.

"What is he planning to do now?" Fex grumbled.

"Isn't it obvious? He's going to join the fight." Peter replied.

Vicky and Pai had been the first to find the missing Sil. He had remained standing outside in the sand. Only once they had reached him did they see what he was doing, making them stop in their tracks and do the same.

Once the others finally reached where the Blade family were standing, they could see that they were watching the fight in the distance.

"Sil." Vicky asked. "What are you going to do?"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1235: Your own kind

The Cursed group were standing on top of a large sand dune. In the distance, they were able to see the fighting that was still ongoing at this very moment. The participants didn't seem to notice their presence, either because the group was too far away, or because they were forced to fully concentrate on their opponent.

The fight was heating up with every passing second, and large explosions of power were being released one after another. The Cursed group was still within a distance that allowed them to smell the blood coming off Hilston and the Dalki, at least those that were vampires.

They had been standing there for a while now and had witnessed Hilston get the upper hand over Slicer due to his Demon tier armour's active skill.

"That skill is so strong, I wonder what it would do to my strings?" Fex wondered.

"I could just walk through it, it's the hard armor that I'm impressed with." Peter replied.

Hearing this, Pai couldn't help but laugh at the two of them.

"That skill is extremely powerful. Not only would your strings fall to the floor or disintegrate but the second that pulse went through your bodies you would be unable to feel anything. It's impossible to fight it, and at the same time, as you can see, not even that Dalki can cut through the armour."

"Shut up you big brain, you're in the same situation as us." Raten complained. "You know, if he turns to us, I'm telling them you joined our side, so get ready to fight for your life, and use that knowledge to beat him."

Pai quickly went silent, and their eyes were back on the fight.

However, they noticed that Hilston's advantage had suddenly disappeared, and for a while now, he had gone on the defensive, both sides seemed to be struggling greatly.

Slicer, using two separated tails as whips, was swinging them at a speed just as great as she would use her own tail, but thanks to Hilston's teleportation, he could quickly escape, and try his best to attack using his abilities.

Getting in close, he would use the telekinesis to slow down the attack. He did so after a swing from one of Slicer's tails and threw out a fist of his own. However, using the enormous tail she had regrown, Slicer wrapped around Hilston and was gripping on to him tightly.

Trying to get out of the situation, Hilston's whole body was lighting up in flames, until eventually Slicer had no choice but to let go. Even through her skin, the fire

seemed to be getting stronger and would eventually even affect her unlike the lightning attacks. Nevertheless, she didn't give up and threw one of her tails like a spear straight towards Hilston.

Lifting up his hands, he stopped it mid-flight, but was too slow to see the large tail, sweeping below and going in for the attack again and again. The good news was, it was just hitting his armour and unable to damage him.

"This fight is crazy. They seem to have already surpassed most Vampire family leaders." Fex commented with his mouth left wide open. It was now moving at an unprecedented pace and all of those watching imagined themselves on the receiving end of any of these attacks. All of them estimated that they might get defeated in a matter of seconds. The power of the big four were in Hilston's hands, and they were even boosted and stronger, yet he was still unable to take out the Dalki.

This wasn't the only thing, even Hilston's physical strength could match the vampire leaders. Peter knew this for a fact, because he had felt the power behind just one of Hilston's hits. If one was to watch the sand around them carefully they could tell, because with each punch, the sand was being dragged and lifted, thrown all over the place.

"You told me to come over to your side, but can you see now why I can't?" Vicky questioned as she clenched her fist. Everyone could hear what she was saying but none got involved because this was a matter for the members of the Blade family.

"He is the strongest in the world! That Dalki is covered in blood and might be putting up a good fight, but she still can't even scratch him! Do you really think you can do anything against such a monster, Sil?" Vicky continued to speak, expecting an answer.

Although both members of the family, neither Vorden nor Raten considered this to be a place for them to say anything. Instead, they looked at Sil who had both his hands clenched and was looking at the fight, waiting for the right time to make a move.

'I wonder what you are thinking, Sil. It's always been hard to understand you.'

Vorden thought.

Despite the fact that Hilston could no longer use his active skill Disruptive pulse, he was fighting better than he had done before with the use of the abilities. There were a lot of people that were worried about him once they had seen Slicer separate her tails to grow the current enormous one.

By using the ones she had discarded as weapons, it was now as if Hilston was fighting against three different Slicers. However, just like Slicer had been growing proportionate to the damage she had received, something similar was happening to Hilston, who was fighting with his life on the line.

Rather than using the abilities raw powers to finish off his opponents, he had to try to come up with combinations. He was forced to use his head to a degree. He could even feel the cells in his body growing more active. His survival instincts were kicking in and rather than his body choosing to run away, it was using this fight to allow the strongest human to grow even stronger.

Unknown to him, these cells activating through his whole body were Qi. Qi, beyond anyone's imagination, was running through him making him superhuman. This was why he could match up to Slicer for so long.

'The Blade family will always keep growing, and even now we will get stronger and stronger!' Hilston thought. 'Soon the armour will be charged again, and once the Disruptive pulse is ready, I will finish this oversized lizard off!'

At that moment, meeting up with the others on the sand dune were Bonny and Void. Void had his camera out and straight away zoomed in on the action that was going on in front of them. He didn't greet the others, or explain anything, he would let Bonny do the talking.

"What are the two of you doing here? Didn't I tell you to stay in the Shelter?" Sam questioned, shocked and also a little angry, they decided to ignore his orders. The two of them looked safe having no injuries on their body, but if there was even a single Dalki they had missed, the two of them could have easily died.

"We've lost two of our drones. It's getting more intense and even with Void's control they were hit. There is a good chance that all of the cameras will be lost if it continues. Practically everyone is watching this fight and we can't just sit around and not deliver its conclusion!" Bonny explained, making it apparent that they would stay here, their pride as reporters demanding it.

Sam sighed and agreed to their request, but refused to comment on anything while the fight was going on, to the camera that was. He soon saw one of the drones returning, now there was one drone filming the fight, and Void's personal camera, while the drone that returned was looking at the Cursed members.

Inside the lab where Graham and Quinn were present they could see the camera view switch. For a second the camera had panned over to all those in the Cursed faction that were watching the fight. Bonny wanted to get the live reactions of them all. This allowed Quinn to see his own body.

'Vincent, I told you to protect them, what are you doing bringing them to such a place?' Quinn thought, wanting to slap his forehead.

The Dalki looked to be heavily injured and covered in blood. Seeing this Quinn smiled thinking that even a five spike could be injured. However his smile quickly disappeared as he remembered that the Cursed faction were in a huge mess due to

Hilston in the first place, and if Hilston was to win, he would soon be after them straight after.

"Was that a smile, are you smiling because you think your own race is going to lose?" Graham asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1236: I picked a side

"I didn't believe it, but you're really rooting against your own kind? Seeing one of us turn traitor is interesting in its own way and I look forward to finding out one way or the other what they did to you. Still, let me ask you, do you really think that Slicer will lose?" Graham asked.

Hearing this, Quinn thought that Graham was oddly confident. It was hard to tell through camera the sheer battle that was going on, but Quinn thought for sure that Slicer had to be at her limit, especially after she had seemingly fallen into a frenzied state making her harm herself.

Now experiencing fighting as a Dalki, Quinn could guess how far a Dalki could push themselves, even with the added energy from blood loss, and strength it could only take them so far.

"She can push herself further. Maybe one more will do." Graham mumbled. "That Demon tier Armour has been troublesome, but we are stronger than Demon tier beasts."

Hearing this, from someone who Quinn had suffered a humiliating defeat against, he could believe it. However, they were going against a man that had a full set of Demon tier Armour, this person was also stronger than Demon tier beasts.

---

It was then, for the third time in the fight, that Slicer chose to hurt herself. Her latest tail proved to be more resilient than the previous ones, forcing her to attack it multiple times, before it fell to the ground.

Without the Disruptive pulse, Hislton was being careful to get close. After all, all he needed to do was bide his time.

More blood stained the ground and it took a while for another tail to replace the old one. Through the blood loss, she felt her mind hazing. In order to snap out of it, she stomped both feet on the ground. Screaming soon after, the tail could be seen moving, it was the original size of the first one, but didn't stop there. Under her pained shrieks it slowly continued to elongate until reaching three times her body size. The scales on her body had been ruined, her inner bones had been broken multiple times but had healed again and again.

Her energy was at an all-time high, but she was struggling to keep her mind clear. Still her eyesight was set on the enemy in front of her. She could practically feel the sixth spike coming after defeating him.

'It's there...I know it's there..I will be the first one..the strongest one!'

Charging in like she had done before, she was ready to come in, and when she was within range, she spun her body, and the large tails spun with her, at the last second the large tail connected to her, extended out coming down on Hilston like a hammer.

'This is it, with this attack, the armour will be charged again!' Hilston believed, teleporting into place, and raising his arms so they were in the right position. He had a huge grin on his face as he was ready to use Disruptive pulse the moment it would be available.

However, this time there was no 'clang' sound at all. Instead, his hands were no longer attached to his body, cut off cleanly they were now lying in the sand. It didn't stop there, as the colossal tail was used for another strike. Following his instincts, Hilston didn't even try to use an ability, instead jumping back. Despite its size, Slicer's newest tail was faster than any of the others. It hit the chest piece, leaving behind a giant slash, from which diamonds dropped to the ground.

As this happened, Hilston could feel the accumulated energy fade away. Using the distance he had just won, Hilston teleported himself out of there, as far as he could. It was done in a panic and he didn't really register that he was falling back.

Seeing this, Slicer extended her tail and swung her body in a circle, cutting everything around, another clang was heard, and Hilston was seen being flung through the air, falling to the ground. His armour that he had worn this whole time had been cut in half. Due to how heavy it was, it had fallen off him falling to the ground. Now a large wound was visible across his entire torso, painting it red.

"The Dalki, it's gotten so much stronger." Sam gasped. "Hilstion, he's...he's going to lose!"

"No, that can't be! How could he lose to a lizard like that?! He was just caught off guard, he had to be tired after how long they were fighting for." Vicky sounded like she was now making up excuses for him.

"That's not it. I've never seen Hilston take a fight so seriously before." Pai spoke. "If it was the old Hilston, he would have lost this fight a lot sooner, but he actually fought with great tactics, his moves were faster and he had access to some of the strongest abilities in the world. It's just... the power of the Dalki was stronger.."

It was something hard to admit, and even though her twin brother Pai was saying these words, she still didn't believe it. Hilston had to still have something up his sleeve, something that would turn this fight around, she just knew it.

Void soon zoomed the camera into Hilston's wound, his body was far more hurt than the others thought as well. They could see it now the armour had fallen off. Despite the armour he was wearing, his body was swollen and bruised from all the

attacks, all showing different colours. Despite blocking them his body still ended up like this. The force of the blows were unimaginable.

That was when on the camera itself, it had picked a certain person, who was standing there by Hilston side. It appeared suddenly.

They could only see the back of his head, but the others knew who it was.

"Sil!" Sam shouted out.

Sam wanted to stop him, but he knew that if he tried to get in Sil's way what could he honestly do. No amount of thinking in this situation would help them.

---

"Isn't this one of the ones from the Cursed faction? I've seen them fighting a few times on Bonny's live stream." A user commented.

"Yeah I think she said that he was a Blade as well, only working for the Cursed faction. Has he come to help?"

"With the two of them, maybe they can defeat the five spiked Dalki. Yeah, we can win this fight, beating one of their strongest!"

"But if he's actually strong, then why did he come join the fight only now? Couldn't he have come to support the Blade guy in the middle of it? Also, why is he just standing there?"

The online community was in high spirits, until they could see Sil looking at Hilston on the ground, not turning to look at the Dalki for even a second. At the same time the spinning from Slicer's attack had caused her to be slightly wobbly on her feet as well. She knew the condition her opponent was in, so he wasn't going anywhere soon.

---

"I've always dreamed about this moment. I've thought about what I would say to you, if I ever got this chance. For the longest time, I just wanted you to tell me why you did everything you did. Why you decided to put everyone through that on Blade Island. There had to be a reason, right? A reason that could justify your actions... but is there really anything that can justify everything you did? One day, the hope inside me that there might be one, just disappeared, so there is no point asking you that."

"You don't deserve to live another second on this planet, you're just a crazy weak old man! This is for Caser! I never forgot what you did to him that day, and now I am going to do the same to you." Sil said his piece, before Hilston could even react

to him appearing. After shoving his hand through Hilton's chest, he pulled out a still beating heart.

"Goodbye, 'gran...no...father'." Sil spat mockingly before he squeezed the organ in his hand, causing it to pop on the spot.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1237: The real end

Hilston might have been the strongest human, but his unprotected organ stood no chance against Sil's strength. In his last moment, he looked at Sil, a plethora of emotions in his eyes. What was strange though, was a grin had appeared as if he was expecting this moment to come at some point. Falling to the floor, the Blade leader lay dead in the sand.

Sil had never imagined that the person he had been so afraid of for most of his life, the one person who had made his life a living hell, forcing him to kill his own friends would die just like that. Sil had always believed that one day he might be able to grow strong enough to defeat him in a fight, but for some reason this kind of ending didn't feel right.

At the moment, he really didn't know how to feel at all. He had expected to feel great joy about finishing him off or maybe some sort of sadness. After all, for all the cruel things he had done for him, there had been rare moments of the person who had looked after them, made him call them

'grandpa' had gone, but instead he just felt empty.

'Is this what revenge is supposed to feel like? Should I have asked you a few questions after all or would it have just been worse, listening to you justify your selfish wish of growing stronger, no matter the cost?'

Seeing this, Slicer, who had been fighting Hilston up to this point, started to laugh out loud. She couldn't believe that a human of all things was the reason for this person's death. Perhaps some other Dalki would have been angry, but Slicer had already gotten her use out of Hilston.

The moment she had managed to slice off his arms, thereby managing to overwhelm the Demon tier Armour, the winner in this fight had been determined. Even if she would have continued to fight him, it would have been near impossible for Hilston to further aid her in her evolution anymore. As such, she didn't care if someone else claimed the kill.

Not having to fight him any longer also had its upside. Slicer was in an incredibly weak state, yet at the same time, this made her all the more dangerous.

Meanwhile, everyone watching at home couldn't believe this sudden interference in the fight.

"What the hell?! Why did he kill the old dude who was fighting the Dalki?! I always knew that they weren't on our side!"

"Someone, kill them! The Cursed faction are traitors to humanity! Why would they stop us from killing a five spike Dalki? If the two of them teamed up they could have weakened their forces!"

"The Cursed are always up to something strange. Up until now, I believed that the Cursed faction were the good V, but now I see it was all just for show. They must have been working with the Dalki all along!"

"Did you already forget what happened at the start of the broadcast? The Blade family has come in and attacked the Cursed faction ship, remember? They were trying to kill them!"

"So what? The Blade family were trying to kill the Cursed, not the human race! Even if they have differences, why not go for the Dalki first? Besides, for all we know, the Blade family were trying to get rid of the Cursed because they were working for the V!"

Swayed up in their emotions, everyone was filled with anger. They had never seen such a fight before and they were pissed off for it to come to such an unsatisfying ending. It was clear to them that this Dalki was far more dangerous than any other, but from what they had seen Hilston had proven to be far more powerful than any world leader, yet the actions of a single boy from the Cursed faction had not only allowed this dangerous creature to live, but had also robbed them of the one person with the best chance to defeat it.

Inside the strange science lab, Quinn had seen it all as well. He was surprised, but at the same time not.

'Sil, you finally got your revenge, but by the look on your face, I guess you were expecting for it to have more meaning.' Quinn thought. He too had experienced his fair share of getting bullied, fighting back those that had once beaten him.

It wasn't as extreme as what Sil or the other Blade children had gone through, but he had come to the realisation that despite at one point gaining the power to punish them, that it wasn't really what he was looking forward to anymore. If he had gotten revenge on his bullies at that point, he would have turned out no better than them, so instead he had concentrated to improve his own situation and that of those around him.

As a weakling Quinn had had dreams about having power, but once he got to the top it hadn't been what he had expected. Right now, Quinn wanted to be by his side, helping him through what was going on. In his mind right now, Quinn was running through the options of what exactly was the best course of action. What to do next.

Standing on the sand, Vicky looked out at Sil, her head felt like it was spinning, her stomach churning. During this trip, she had conflicted feelings with herself, with

what to do. In fact, for the first time since what felt like forever she and her twin brother had gotten into a serious argument.

Before the attack, Pai had stopped her, and suggested that perhaps they should just pretend they were aiding Hilston. If they were to meet Sil, her brother wanted them both to let him escape. Of course, Vicky had disagreed with this, stating that Hilston would find out and he would make them pay dearly for crossing him.

What they didn't expect was to meet Vorden and Raten in the bodies of humanoid beasts. Neither had they expected their supposed mother and father to run away, leaving them as the only ones in the real Blade family to follow Hilston's bidding.

'Everything that we did... everything that I did... for what? I destroyed that Shelter, killed all those people, because I thought it would please Hilston. I thought it would get me on his good side... Was it all for nothing?'

Images of the faces of the people who had begged her to let them live started to appear in her mind, followed by other horrible crimes she had committed. The girl felt like she was about to throw up.

That's when she felt Pai place his hand on her shoulder.

"You don't have to fake it anymore. You don't have to live a lie any longer. You know we're twins, right? I knew that everything you did was an act. Now we can finally be free, we can do whatever we want." Pai said, hugging his sister who began to cry. Tears were running down Vicky's cheek, but she wasn't really sure if she deserved to live after everything she had done.

Looking at Sil, she could see he was still standing out there on his own. Perhaps he was feeling something similar to how she felt now.

"Wait a second." Vicky mumbled, getting out of her brother's embrace herself as she realised something horrifying. "Fire, Lightning, Teleportation and Telekinesis make four abilities, so what was the fifth one?"

Vorden and Raten looked at each other, trying to think if they had seen Hilston use a fifth ability. The others didn't quite understand why it was a big deal. So what if he had access to one more ability?

However, the Blade twins knew that in such a fight to the death, it was impossible for Hilston to not use everything at his disposal. If he had refrained from using it, then it meant he had been unable to easy it earlier. While sorting through all the Chained' abilities that came with a condition attached, Vicky eventually arrived at the worst possible conclusion.

"SIL!" Vicky shouted at the top of her lungs. "HILSTON'S NOT DEAD YET! ONE OF THE CHAINED HAD THE ABILITY OF SECOND CHANCE! GET RID OF HIM NOW!!!!"

After destroying Hilston's heart, Sil had pulled his hand out of his body and had been in his own world, his gaze aimed at the ground. Without his heart, Sil had been convinced that it had been the end of their tormentor.

Just to be sure though, Sil's hands started to light up with lightning. Before coming here he had touched Grim, who had stayed behind, to obtain his ability. With no Demon tier armour, he was sure this would finish him.

Shocking the body on the ground, the lightning had hit nothing but sand, scorching it black. A few meters to the side, Hilston could be seen standing, his muscular body on show without a wound on it. Even his hands were attached to his body, albeit new ones, the old ones still lay on the battlefield inside a part of the Demon tier beast gear.

"I never thought that my own flesh and blood would dare to kill me! I had big plans for you Sil, big plans." Hilston repeated. "I told you that you will never beat me, even if your abilities are better than mine!"

Hilstion fired out a lightning attack, yet Sil quickly countered with his own. However, when the two lightning bolts collided, the powers were equal. Despite Sil being able to access six abilities, their MC cells were just lower than the ones that Hilston had touched.

"I might not have the same strength as you or a body as good as yours, but it doesn't matter." Sil shouted, because it was at that moment, that blood was seen dripping from Hilston's neck and his head dropped down. Using his super speed Sil grabbed the head before it dropped to the ground.

"I don't know if you're still alive in there, but thank you for letting me kill you a second time. Maybe this will make me feel a little better." Sil said, as he smashed the head in the sand and stomped on it for good measure. The skull was smashed in seconds and the brain inside popped like a balloon.

This was the real end of Hilston Blade.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1238: A little help

When Vicky had shouted out the ability name Second chance, Raten, Vorden and Sil had no clue what she was talking about. In the first place, they were the youngest members of the main Blade family, so they had yet to learn all the secrets like the others.

The original plan had been for Sil to return after two years of military service. Once he had gotten 'fixed' Hilston would have proceeded with whatever his plan had been. However, the plan needed adjustment, since there had been no improvement in Sil and then the start of the Civil war had messed things up even further.

However, given the name of the ability itself and the worry he had heard coming from Vicky's voice gave him enough of an idea about what the ability would be able to do. The user of that ability would be granted a second chance at life. It was an incredibly powerful ability that they had discovered, even with the drawback that it could only be used once every twenty four hours.

The reason why not everyone in the Blade family used this ability was not only because it would limit the number of abilities they could functionally use, but also due to the high amount of MC cells it required. In the Blade family's case, this was a good thing.

Alas, Hilston Blade had now been killed for a second time within this twenty four hour frame period and even without such a cooldown, Sil had made sure to destroy his brain this time. The headless body of the strongest human dropped to the floor, revealing Slicer.

Just like Graham, she could be counted as an outlier amongst the Dalki, so she didn't succumb to her urges of needing to kill a human. Instead, she was more true to her primal desire of wanting to evolve by fighting strong opponents.

She had been surprised to see that the person she fought for so long, had miraculously been able to revive, only for him to be killed by his killer for a second time. However, while her interest in Hilston had faded, with Sil demonstrating his strength, she couldn't help but want to fight him. For all Slicer knew, he could prove to be the final push she lacked to reach an even higher form.

The female Dalki went ahead and swung her colossal tail, attempting to cut the newcomer down. Reacting, Sil hardened his body, but his defense was ineffective. The tail continued to go through his arm that was even able to best the Demon tier armour.

'This hardening ability is supported by the MC cells of six people put together, yet it's still going through so easily!' Watching the fight, and being in the fight were two different things. Now Sil himself was experiencing the power of a five spike Dalki, who was on the verge of death but also her next evolution.

"Sil, use your lightning powers now!" Vicky shouted.

The voice was familiar, so Sil took their advice. However, there was nothing he could do about the arm, Slicer had claimed for her own. From the forearm onwards it had fallen to the ground, but with the other hand, Sil used his lightning ability.

"This tickles!" Slicer shouted. "The old man's power was the same."

Running through the sand were Pai and Vicky holding hands, and they too fired off their lightning abilities, hitting Slicer again, pushing her far back and away. That wasn't the only attack that hit her.

A blade made of mud attacked a wound on Slicer's left side, while another two balls of wind hit Slicer from the right. Raten, and Vorden had also left to join the fight.

"We have to help out!" Fex shouted, since the rest had stayed by the sand dune.

"No!" Sam shouted. "That five spike is too strong. Right now, all of them have run out because of their emotional attachment, not thinking things through. That Dalki may be on its last legs, but it also means it's at its strongest right now. I won't let all of you lose your lives!"

It was then they could see Slicer shouting in rage, and swinging her two tail whips around, cutting the lightning attacks, while also disrupting the mud blade and wind attacks.

"Alright, I'll kill you all then!" She shouted, but there was one more person who had yet to join in, appearing directly in front of Slicer who could see a fist in front of her face.

"Don't mess with my family!" Borden screamed, putting all his anger and strength into this punch. Seeing Sil's hand on the floor infuriated him, and more so than anyone he knew the strength of the Dalki firsthand.

When the punch landed, Slicer's face turned to the side for a second, and from the corner of her eye, she could see who, or what had just hit her.

"You're a Dalki, yet you dare lay your filthy hands on me!" Slicer shouted, swinging her colossal tail against him, but before it hit Borden, Sil grabbed him and moved him out of the way just in time.

Still, the sight of what had just happened had been seen by everyone who watched the livestream.

"That...was that a Dalki? Was it just me or did I see a Dalki go up against that five spiked one? Just what is going on?"

"I saw it too, it had scales and spikes and everything. It was a four spiked Dalki!"

"Why are the Dalki helping the Cursed faction?! See, I told you all that they really are working together! But why are they fighting against the five spiked Dalki? I'm so confused right now."

"Does it really matter what's going on? Maybe it's just an ability or something. As long as that five spike dies here, I'll support the Cursed faction. She has to be on her last legs and I don't care what happens but they just need to beat her!"

It was strange, Borden with his rising anger had managed to summon four spikes, and deliver a punch to the Slicer, but it had accomplished virtually nothing. It was the first time for his strength to be lacking. It was then that the realisation had set in, of what a mistake they all had made.

"Sil! You're fast right, we can't beat her! I thought maybe with all of us we could do something but we have to get out of here!"

Even with the rest of the Blade family present, they were all unsure if they could beat the Dalki in front of them.

Inside the command centre, Graham, watching everything, had a concerned look on his face, but when turning to look at Quinn, it had changed to a smile.

"It's brilliant, right? This strange man of the Blade family was not something that had been within our calculations. He proved to be far stronger than I could have ever expected. Perhaps he could have even been a hope to those humans. Yet, isn't it ironic that another human caused him to fall in battle?"

"Even in desperate times, humans are incapable of working together. Truly fascinating. If maybe all of these had helped, during the fight, Slicer would have been defeated, but now they have no one that can be a match against her." Graham stated with confidence.

Listening and watching the whole thing, Quinn found one thing weird, the look on his face just seconds ago. Something had to be up.

'Could it be that this female Dalki really is on her last legs?' Quinn wondered.

"I still don't know why you decided to betray us, but for you to not be the only one. It is something I will need to look into. And there is something that seems off about that four spiked Dalki. Perhaps I should ask Slicer to bring back its corpse once she is done with them." Graham walked up to the glass container staring at Quinn, he looked closer, as if he was expecting some type of reaction.

"The fight isn't over yet. They just need a little more help." Quinn said, as he closed his eyes.

Seconds later, and a beeping sound echoed throughout the room. Turning to his machine Graham could see that something had happened to his 'guest'. A moment later and a flatline was displayed.

'Did he just kill himself after saying those words?' Graham wondered about the strange behaviour. 'No, none of us should have the ability to just kill ourselves in such a fast manner either. The words were also too confident and he never kept his eyes off the screen. ... It shouldn't be possible!'

'Slicer, she needs to get out of there NOW!'

Sam was worried about Sil and the others, and he could tell that Fex wanted to run out there and help, but the two of them wouldn't be able to do a single thing against the beast. It was then that Sam could see Quinn in front of them all.

Quinn was now standing opposite Slicer.

"Another insect has joined the battle!" She growled.

[Skill activated Nitro accelerate]

[Demon tier Amulet has finished transferring energy]

[Soul weapon activated Shadow Overload]

"Everyone, in another fascinating turn of events, the Cursed faction leader, Quinn Talen, has now joined the fight against the five spiked Dalki!" Bonny reported.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1239: Defeat?

Watching the fight so far, Graham had actually been paying close attention to everything that had been going on. He had a keen eye, and despite only having briefly seen the faces of the people on the livestream once, he had remembered them all.

'That person, they called him the Cursed faction leader. I was told to keep an eye on him, I never knew he was on that planet.' Graham thought. 'Earlier when the camera panned, he was just off by the sides, so why now of all times? Is it because his people are in trouble? No, if that was the case then he could have jumped in when the first lot did.'

His mind started to go through all the possible calculations, and eventually he turned his head to the Dalki that was in his container, now having died. He went over to the computer to check back what had occurred. That's when he could see that moments before the Dalki's death, its brain waves were changing, almost becoming non-existent. This had all happened before the Dalki had lost its life.

"The words spoken and the Cursed faction leader joining the fight, on top of the Dalki switching over sides, this can't all be coincidence. Slicer...I'm afraid you might be in real trouble.'

Watching the fight, through the screen, Quinn had been able to gather a few things. The five spiked Dalki's speed was great. Nearly on its last legs, it was even more powerful than anything he had encountered and there was one part of it that could move faster than any other, its tail.

If it wasn't for Hilston having his armour, or teleportation ability he would have been caught by it a lot earlier in the fight. Having drained the energy from his original body a while ago, Quinn wasn't sure how strong his body would be when he returned, but he made use of the amulet's ability to allow him to drain those he had Marked.

To his surprise, when doing so not only did he get the one spiked now two spiked Dalki energy back, but the energy he had transferred to the Dalki as well, so Quinn was not only back in top shape, but was even better.

The only thing was, after having suffered a defeat, he knew he couldn't hold back. The active skill on the armour set, was to give him full speed so now he was on a timer, as such he activated his soul weapon, giving him unlimited access and full control over the shadow.

'Still, this isn't enough, I lost to that five spike and I saw how much Hilston struggled to hurt it. I need something else.'

Although, Quinn's armour was a high tier one, it was not strong enough to block any attacks coming from that tail. Its sharpness had already been proven by its

ability to even cut through the Demon tier Armour, but there was one thing that could work.

Shadows appeared over Quinn's hand, and now he was wielding a long Katana like blade.

"A sword?! What the hell is Quinn doing bringing out a sword in a time like this?! Quinn isn't a master swordsman like Leo, so why would he use that in a serious fight?!" Fex complained.

"Maybe it isn't Quinn, and it's the other person." Sam suggested, but even if it was the real Quinn, he knew he wouldn't pull out a sword for no reason at all.

Slicer had mostly disregarded Quinn up until now, instead focusing towards what she perceived to be the most troublesome one, the young blonde haired boy who had defeated Hilston. She swung her fast tail at him and Borden and Sil were unable to react to it.

Sil had super speed, but if he was to move out of the way, Borden would likely be killed, with the rest following right after. Still, his hardening wasn't strong enough to block the tail, and yet a clang was heard as the tail struck against something.

Quinn could be seen there with the sword in his hand, he had blocked the attack.

"Sil, I'm going to need your help, and the help of the rest of your family over there. Just concentrate on the strongest attack you can produce, and leave the defense to me!" Quinn shouted, releasing a large wave of Qi.

The tail was pushed back but only a little bit, and soon he was being overpowered.

'So I guess that answers that question, a five spike is stronger than me, even when I use all of my Qi. I guess I can only rely on my shadow.' Quinn thought as a shadow was being used to block the tail.

Of course, Slicer didn't stop there and started to move her colossal tail, attacking multiple places, yet the boosted Quinn was able to match that speed and stop it with the sword slightly, moving back using his shadow as well.

"How! How are you able to stop my attack!" Slicer shouted with anger.

With Quinn's soul weapon he didn't have a limit on how much shadow he could use, but the shadow was still slower than Slicer's primary tail. However, with Nitro acceleration he could match up in speed, and use the sword to block the attack.

As for the sword itself, Quinn never thought it would be used in a situation like so, but thanks to Longblade, he had been given the sword that seemed useless but had one trait, that it was unbreakable.

The extra speed, Qi, his vampire strength, and the energy his Demon tier Amulet had allowed him to drain, all factored into him gaining enough power to slightly push back against Slicer's tail.

"Everyone!" Quinn shouted, continuing to block each attack with his sword. Although the blade could be held with one hand, he was holding it with two due to the sheer strength behind each attack. The tail was keeping the two of them at a distance from each other so he was unable to touch her with his gauntlets to drain her either.

"We might only get one chance at this, so attack with everything you got. We need to kill her! Right now, all of our planets are under attack! They think they can just walk over us, well I won't let them!" Quinn shouted, as he held the sword with only one hand. His muscles bulged.

He didn't know how much longer he could continue to block the attacks this way or at all, but he had to do something. Multiple shadow portals started to appear around the area where Slicer was at. At the same time, without her knowledge, consumed by the rage of not being able to defeat the opponent in front of her, a shadow was covering the sand and had now reached underneath her feet as well.

'It looks like Hilston did a number on your wings and I have to thank him for that!'

Now with the shadow portals open, Quinn ran back out of range of the tail. He placed the sword away, and started to run forward. He didn't have much time, as the active skill was running out, but now he had to rely on his body to avoid all of the tail strikes. Moving left, right, piles of sand were chucked up and that's when Slicer noticed something.

'My attacks, they have slowed down!'

It was the effect of the shadow path she was standing on that had covered the wide area in shadow. With this, Quinn could avoid the attacks more easily under the effects of his boost. He soon threw his red blood disks out into two of the shadow portals by his side, while running forward, and they all started to appear from the shadows that were scattered around Slicer.

'Kill, I have to kill the Dalki! I have to get stronger, to beat him!' Was running through Quinn's head, and a mist started to appear from his back.

'I shall help you with your desire.' The voice said, as another portal appeared from behind. It was the Boneclaw which was as large as the Dalki itself. With its giant claws, it had pierced Slicer back. The almost impenetrable skin had been penetrated with ease. She screamed out in pain and swung her colossal tail, hoping to cut the Boneclaw, once hit it had turned back into the black mist and disappeared once more, but the familiar had already done a number on her.

It also gave Quinn enough time to sprint forward, and with his two blood drills he was ready. Now, standing behind the five spiked Dalki, Borden, Raten and Vorden were ready to follow up the Boneclaw's attack.

Quinn thrusted both blood drills directly into the five spiked Dalki's chest. The blood continued to spin in place, attempting to pierce the skin, but it seemed impossible. However, Slicer soon felt another force, pushing her from behind.

Borden, Raten and Sil used their strength at the same time, hitting the Dalki from all sides, to prevent her from flying away. Still, they were unable to pierce the body, but the Qi had done a lot of internal damage. Moving out of the way, Quinn's nitro accelerate time was up.

"It's up to you." Quinn said, keeping his shadow ready just in case. It was an emergency measure, so that Quinn would be able to temporarily put Slicer in the Shadow lock, and keep her there hopefully long enough for everyone else to escape.

When Quinn moved though, it was to allow one last attack to go through. A lightning attack that was being made, by now the combination of the strongest ability users in existence. Sil, Pai and Vicky, had jumped up, and started to spin their bodies as the three of them had turned their bodies into gigantic lightning bolts.

Due to the three of them being together, they were able to create one giant lightning bolt strike. Slicer was far more injured than she had perceived as she had never felt this way before.

'I have to...get away.' It was the first time her instincts told her to flee instead of continuing a fight. Alas, she could see nothing but a bright light in front of her. Skimming her hand over her chest, she felt that her scales had been damaged a little.

'That black haired person...is dangerous' Was her last thought, as she was struck by the lightning bolt that had passed right through her. Sil, Pai, and Vicky were seen on the other side. Looking back only to see half of Slicer's body completely missing.

"They did it, they did it! They defeated the five spiked Dalki!" Bonny announced it to the whole world.

At the same time, Quinn heard a familiar ding sound.

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 1240: Winning the battle, but losing the war**

For the viewers watching through the livestream, when they had seen Hilston Blade defeated, they had been sure that this was the end. Someone of such great power they had never known even existed a couple hours ago, they had lost him as quickly as they had found out about him.

He had powers that surpassed the former Big Four and he had been able to use their powers one after another to a stronger degree. If even someone like him could not defeat the five Spike, then the world couldn't imagine who else could. Their anger and frustration had been directed towards the one that had caused his death, who was none other than Sil, another Blade that belonged to the Cursed faction.

Soon, they thought that his death and the rest of their deaths would quickly come after, something most felt deserving for having gotten involved. They also looked to be losing out against the five Spike, but all of that changed with the arrival of the Cursed faction leader.

"Why is the reporter getting so excited to see Quinn arrive? Does she really think that he is going to be able to do anything?"

"I don't know and I don't care. There goes my diet, since we're all going to die anyway, might as well enjoy the rest of my life eating everything I have avoided so far."

"Weren't there rumours about them having a fling? Of course, she needs to hype up her boyfriend."

"But isn't he the one who defeated all those Dalki back then? Maybe he can do something again. I don't want to die. The Dalki has to be nearly dead! They just have to give it one more push!"

Most of them didn't believe one person could change anything, yet the flow of the entire fight had changed.

---

Bonny had instructed Void to make sure to capture the intense look off Quinn's eyes as they glowed red, and the cameraman also managed to show off the point when the Cursed faction leader's soul weapon was activated. Shadows had risen all around everywhere, and using the strange sword, the Vampire Lord had managed to block the tail attack.

In the end, although Sil and the others were the ones that had finished off the Dalki with the last attack, it was clear as day to everyone that none of it could have been achieved without the last one to arrive.

---

People were jumping for joy around all the different planets as they saw humanity defeat the great Dalki. A five spiked Dalki had never been seen before, apart from One Horn, so they were sure they had delivered a huge blow to their forces.

---

"Quinn, you and your group, you actually managed to defeat a five spike. You really will become our hope." Sach thought.

Samantha, who was by his side, was shaking instead. When they had gone against One Horn, they hadn't even been able to draw out his full strength, judging by the video they had just watched.

'How... how am I meant to defeat someone like One Horn if this is how strong they can get?' She thought. Worst yet, how was anyone able to defeat a five spike now. Did they have to rely on the Cursed faction? Even within the Dalki, one spike's strength could differ by quite a bit, so she wondered if it was the same for the five spikes.

There was no telling what would happen if they were to meet another one, and this time there would be no Hilston Blade to weaken it first.

---

"Haha, Quinn you did it! Did you see that everyone? He used my blade to do it!" Longblade cheered for joy as he watched the fight with his subordinates. "That means that I played a major part in taking that thing down. It was because of me that he was able to defeat the Dalki!"

"Yes sir, it was smart of you to give him that blade, knowing he would be able to use it ahead of time." Avion complimented his superior, clearly knowing that that hadn't been Longblade's intention at all. Still it couldn't hurt to entertain him.

"I hope we get to meet them again." Rafer added.

---

Back on the Cursed planet themselves, they were more joyous than before, those that were on the fence about Quinn, since he had revealed he was a V had almost forgotten all about that. They were proud to have a leader like that and such a strong team.

'Quinn, thank God you survived. I guess I need to do my part as well to enjoy that future.' Helen mused.

---

Of course, even the Dalki had received the news, and Graham who had been paying attention to the whole thing in particular, seemed to be enraged.

"Damn it, to think we would lose Slicer this early on!" Graham cursed, and swung his arm, smashing the glass container by his side. The liquid flowed out onto the floor and the Dalki body with it. Soon, Graham was seen making a call to a certain someone. When the call was answered, Graham didn't hold back.

"I thought the idea of teaming up with that vampire was that the other vampires wouldn't get involved! That damn Cursed faction leader is a vampire, isn't he? So why did he act against us?!" Graham demanded to know an answer.

"Graham, I would suggest you take a deep breath. Anger doesn't suit you. Our plan is proceeding even better than we had estimated, despite things that we didn't foresee. In the first place, that boy has always been a special case. I just never expected him to cause this many problems for us in such a short time. Tell me your honest opinion, do you regard him as a problem you need my help with? Or is he someone you can deal with on your own?" The person asked.

Seeing Quinn fight, and the others, Graham, was trying to put himself in the same place as Slicer.

"I don't need your help, not that you alone would be much of a help anyway." Graham grumbled. "However... I will have to adjust my plans without Slicer. Don't you complain about me taking a more 'liberal' approach from now on."

Graham ended the call there, going through the footage once more, in hopes to spot whatever he could. He rewinded the video a few times, and played it forward watching it again and again.

'I'm sure of it. One of those that were watching the fight on the sand dune and the Dalki that got involved in the fight, that four spike are the same person. They look almost human-like when they are on the Sand Dune. Yet, when fighting and showing the spiked the Dalki features appear more so. Something is going on. Perhaps I have found myself a new research subject. Maybe I can make him replace Slicer?'

'But first, I really need to calm myself down a little...'

Graham walked to the Dalki body on the floor, still thinking that perhaps the Dalki and Quinn were linked in some way, and lifted it off the ground.

"You might have won this battle, but I promise you I will make you pay the price for it." Graham spoke, before crushing the lifeless Dalki's head.

---

Deactivating his soul weapon, the after effects of using it were now being shown, making him lose some of his MC points. They were currently at 1100. He hadn't used it for long, so the points lost weren't too major. The others were now running towards Quinn to see if he was okay, while Sil was picking up his arm as well.

When they walked past Hilston, some of them decided to side step or take the long way around his body, and it was the same for Slicer's corpse as well.

"Quinn, are you alright? It's you inside your body, right?" Fex asked his best friend to make sure.

"Yeah, it's me." Quinn answered, not fully knowing what had happened while he had been away. More so, the Cursed faction leader was interested in something else. Since he wasn't in his body when he had met Slicer, Quinn was unaware that he had received a Quest.

However, he wasn't the one that killed Slicer, so he didn't seem to get any exp, and since the Blades weren't a part of his Cursed faction family the exp from the kill wasn't shared either. Nevertheless, he did come out with a reward.

'After all that trouble, I had to have gotten something.' Quinn thought. Before looking at it, the Vampire Lord was reflecting on the fight. He was wondering if they would have been able to defeat the other five spikes that he had met.

Hilston had done a lot of damage to the Dalki beforehand. Although the Dalki was stronger due to the damage, some of the injuries Hilston had done to the Dalki were beyond regular healing. On top of that, the female Dalki had displayed great vitality to the point she had been able to regenerate an even strengthened tail. Still, he estimated that the majority of the damage had been Hilston's achievements, with the next highest amount being Slicer's choice of hurting herself.

The main problem when facing the five Spike, was how tough its skin was, and how hard it was to even do a little bit of damage. Hilston with his demon tier armour's active skill had time to charge up a strong enough attack, but Quinn was unable to do the same, even with his Shadow overload skill since it didn't really increase his attack power.

He had the speed and he might have had the defence, but he lacked the power to go against his enemies like Hilston. Which was why Quinn hadn't insisted on being the one to deal out the last blow, leaving that to Sil.

'If it was a fight from the beginning, we all would have died even with my soul weapon, and we know the Dalki have at least two other five spikes. Worst of all,

that weird Dalki is creating a method to evolve the spikes on their backs.' It was bad news, and unless Quinn could reach the next stage, he saw no way of them winning the war.

Checking his rewards, Quinn was hoping for something good, now he needed the system to deliver more than ever, but what he didn't realise, was as soon as Slicer had been defeated, the fighting had resumed with even more frenzy on the Dalki side.

[Quest failed]

[12/10 Cursed planets have been taken over.]

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1241: An investigation

Three men were seen walking through a busy street. There were market stalls set up selling trinkets, food, ability books and more. Crystals were placed in lamps giving off a nice orange glow on the items and pathway, and the reflection of red could be seen in the people's eyes.

Currently, the group of three men who worked under Paul were on this very street. They didn't just work for Paul as a Vampire knight, but previously when he was the head general as well. The place they were in at the moment was the pool area, away from the tenth castle inner area.

For them, it was a place they didn't venture into often. The tenth family mostly sent on separate hunts on the planet itself, hunting for crystals. Either through the forest and the vast land or through some of the portals the tenth family owned. It was interesting to find out that the vampires knew of planets that existed out of those in Earth's solar system and the beast's planets solar system.

Due to their high-tech, they also didn't need so many different portals linked to each planet and instead could input codes that would take them to such worlds. The vampires were just as interested in using beast crystals as humans, but it was more so to advance their technology and power their equipment, rather than for the use of beast equipment in a war.

Still, the pool area was avoided in the tenth family because of the disconnect it currently had with the other families. After Quinn had defeated the second leader and stopped the rebellion from Cindy, he had been hailed a hero. There were many that had requested to join, but most of them had been turned away.

Quinn wanted to treat those that were loyal to the tenth family, who were with them despite the mistreatment and being considered weak. Some vampires thought that if they were to join the tenth family, it would be an easy promotion to the inner circle. Since they had failed to be promoted in their own circles for so long. After realising this wouldn't work, they bore a grudge.

At the same time, the general public didn't like the fact that the tenth area was more reinforced than the rest of the castles. The walls were better, and there were those strange towers that packed quite the punch. It was something the other families just didn't have, causing them to feel jealous.

These were the reasons why the tenth family, if they could avoid it, decided to stay out of the pooling area. The three that were there today, one of them had been appointed as captain of the vampire group under Paul called Ashley. He was one of the first ones to be turned, and the two with him were Ben and Ghost.

While travelling, they were carefully looking around the area, sticking close together.

"I thought it was a good idea to take off our armour. That makes us stick out like a sore thumb, but it looks like the others are still looking at us." Ben commented while not backing down as he locked eyes with another family member.

The armour he was talking about was the special set that would be rewarded to those in the tenth family. The system that had initially been implemented by Timmy. Now that the tenth family was back up and running again, Timmy had decided to start up again, but it stood out since the armour was quite distinctive.

"You have to remember, there aren't a lot of vampires here in the first place. They probably see the same faces every day and have done so for years. Just remember why we are here." Ashley said, looking down. He held a tablet with a list of names, and some of the names had green circles by the side.

Eventually, they had taken a turn down an alleyway, away from the main busy street. Now they were in a block of strange-looking houses. In the pooling area, the vampires lived stacking on top of each other like apartments, but three stories was the limit. So they didn't have huge tall skyscrapers like human cities.

Taking the stairs at the side of the building, they climbed up to the top floor and gave a few knocks.

"Careful, you remember the last one came out attacking us on the spot." Ghost said.

After a few knocks, it seemed like there was no answer.

"Victormen Ten, are you there!" Ashley shouted and gave a few more knocks. After no such answer, Ashley gave the nod towards ben.

With a firm push, the door snapped open. It was only a wooden door after all. In the pooling area, they never exactly expected to have intruders. Perhaps there would be arguments from other vampires, but they allowed for vampires to mostly deal with that themselves. If a vampire died fighting, well that vampire just wasn't strong enough and shouldn't have started a fight in the first place.

The three of them searched the room carefully to see if there were signs of anything. The room was quite small. It was similar to a studio apartment, with a bed tv, and the kitchen area all in one place, only the bathroom was separate. It was then that they spotted that a corner of the table was snapped.

It perhaps wasn't a big deal, but it seemed strange since it had broken off and there were a few splinters on the ground. It should have been cleaned by now.

"Are you sure you told him to stay in his house around this time?" Ashely asked.

"Of course, I know how important this is. I'm not going to make that type of mistake." Ghost replied.

Ben then let out a sigh.

"I can't believe it. The vampires are having people taken away from them, and they don't even notice it. I mean, I know we wouldn't have noticed if we weren't doing this as well, but with so few people, you think they would keep better track."

"Apparently, it's because the vampires live in the polling area. If their lives are lost, other vampires just see this as an opportunity to have children. To try and create stronger vampires for the future. With the cap of vampires per family and their long lifespan, it would take a long time before they were allowed any children. I guess their solution is to not really care about the lives of those in the pooling area." Ashley updated the tablet, and now there was a big X by one of their names. It wasn't the only name with an X either, as Ashley went back a few days searching through the names.

People who were from the tenth family and in the polling area were going missing. There were no signs of confrontation. No sign of criminal activity either. They would just vanish, and later it would be reported as a death.

Of course, the one who had ordered this investigation was none other than Paul. He had been advised by Kazz to not look into things, but he felt like if they were to look the other way, or not find out who was the one behind it all, then there was a good chance that the situation would just get worse. Soon they would think they could step other all of the tenth family.

"Well, we know that they are taking people from the tenth area, that's for sure. The question is, we don't know where they went. Judging by the table, I think this one might have been quite recent. We could ask the people who live in the area, but we all know how that has gone so far." Ashley suggested.

Ghost grabbed his arm, a wound that had long healed, but they knew how much hostility there was towards the tenth family. It was strange because they had believed the situation had gotten better, but it was almost as if somehow it had gotten worse.

Before any of the others, Ashley heard footsteps coming from outside. The sound of the vampires in the street could be heard from all of them, so it wasn't too out of the ordinary, but Ashley could tell that the footsteps were constant and coming at a fast rate.

"Someone's coming!" Ashley shouted, and soon all three of them drew their weapons. Ashley a standard sword, while Ben and Ghost had pulled something that resembled a pitchfork, but they were far more deadly than pitchforks.

Soon a blur could be seen entering the room, and Ashley struck in its place. He couldn't quite see the figure or who it was but just had to guess. However, his sword managed to amount to nothing as it was being gripped tightly.

"A weapon made from the blood fairy, I guess the tenth family still hasn't gotten rid of these. Although you do have privileges, the others don't. For finding such a weapon on a family member, the verdict would usually be death, all apart from the tenth family that is." The voice said.

Now that the target was no longer moving, Ashley could see who it was that he had struck at. He wore a full set of black armour, his upper body gigantic and wide and on his head a black specially designed Helmet covering his face.

"Muka, the ninth leader..." Ashley said in disbelief.

"It looks like the tenth family has already caught on to something strange happening in the settlement. I thought without Quinn, Edward and that Blind swordsman that you would have been slow on the uptake. Or too afraid to act, I guess the tenth family are a little different. Let me be straight with you, tell your Vampire knight that I want to help with his little investigation." Muka explained.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1242: Dethrone the king

Although Ashley hadn't been in the vampire settlement for long, there was one thing that had been rammed in their heads, by Xander, Timmy and Amy. The fact that if a vampire leader requested something, they were to comply.

Of course, there were certain things they could decline, especially if it was something that would cause a conflict with another family. Still, in any case, it was always better to act first and then later to report what had happened.

Because of this, Ashley was in a position where he had to do what was asked and had called Paul ahead of time. He felt a little down since if he was more alert or cautious, they could have perhaps escaped or left the place before anyone had seen them.

Still, Paul had agreed to the meeting, and now, both Muka and Paul were in the tenth castle together. Sat opposite each other in his personal office.

"Do you ever take that helmet off? In the human world, it would be considered quite rude that I don't get to see your face." Paul asked.

Muka still was covered in the armour that he always wore, and this included his helmet. The truth was, there weren't many that had ever seen Muka take off the helmet, and there were those who were too afraid to ask as well.

"Is everyone in the tenth family as rude as this. I suppose in military terms, I would have a higher rank than you. You know, in the past, I had joined a few wars myself, although we didn't use guns and such. So I have experience being in armies. Let's say even if I don't belong to your squad. I don't suppose you would ask a superior why they were to keep on such a thing, would you?" Muka asked.

Paul thought about it for a while. He knew what he was doing. He knew that to ask about such a thing could be considered offensive, but if someone really wanted to work with them, they would have to take this offence in their stride.

If they didn't, they would use this offence as an excuse to attack. Muka had done neither but just was trying to reeducate Paul in a way.

"I would," Paul answered. "If the two of us were close, I would feel comfortable asking about these things. Sometimes some relationships are beyond rank, and I suppose what you might be asking me to do would go beyond rank, would it not?" Paul replied.

After hearing where Muka had arrived at and catching Ashley and the others. Paul could only assume that the two of them were looking into the same thing. The question was, had both of them arrived at the same conclusion about who was just behind all of this.

"Your family isn't the only one that has had people go missing. So far, every single family has been affected." Muka stated, ignoring the comments from earlier. "I don't think any of the other leaders have others to look into this, or at worst, it seems some have chosen to ignore this. This is why I'm finding it difficult to pinpoint who is exactly behind this. Right now, my only cleared suspect is the tenth family."

"And why haven't you suspected that Bryce is behind this?" Paul said straight after. "I have been by Quinn's side for a while now, and I have been watching all of the leader's actions. Whenever there was a chance, you would be sure to suspect Bryce. Honestly, I thought today you would do the same, so why not him?"

Paul hadn't found any leads, leading this back to Bryce. It was strange because his disappearance would sometimes lead them to other families, not just the first family. However, because of the way Kazz had acted, he had a suspicion it had something to do with the first family and who else but the king of vampires to have connections to all of the families. Or even be brave enough to do such a thing.

"Because I was wrong in the past, and this time I need to be careful. I have always been trying to do things myself, and I know someone was behind the death of my own knights. However, I can't go around calming things, especially now." Muka replied.

By saying these words, Paul knew it was because now Bryce was in a higher position than he was before. As a leader, accusations could be made from others due to being the same rank, but an allegation about the king, in times like these. They would think Muka was trying to stir something up again.

"Very well, then let me put a hypothetical question in front of you. Say if the king was to commit a crime as grave as this, is there a way to dethrone him? Or perhaps punish even the king for such crimes?" Paul asked.

"There is, or perhaps I should say there was," Muka replied. "The council has the power to vote in the king. Rightly so, the leaders also have the right to dethrone him as well. However, evidence must first be provided why he is unfit, and then there would be a vote. If a king was voted in, it would be very hard to convince those who voted for him to overturn their vote. There is also fear that with the king's power, they could force votes from the other leaders."

"The second problem is starting a trial in the first place. Usually, in the past, the evidence would be provided to the fourteenth family. The punishers, a power equal to the king. This allowed the leaders to vote freely, as they knew the punisher would be able to force the king to the council's bidding. As you know, they are no longer with us. Without the Punishers, the king in these times have greater power."

"Lastly, even if a vote to dethrone the king was to happen, there would need to be a candidate that was fit for this purpose, and honestly, I don't think there is anyone that the other leaders can be behind. I worry for us.

"You may have noticed that the tenth family's mistreatment has started again, but it is not just your family. It is the other families as well. With Bryce coming into power, the divide between the vampire sides has only grown. Those who think we should leave this place come out of hiding and rule over the humans. And those who believe we should be their protectors.

"Still, we can use this to our advantage and gather vampires that could vote to throw Bryce out, but first, we need evidence," Muka explained.

"And what about someone who could deal with Bryce if he didn't agree?" Paul asked.

For this, Muka had no answers.

In the third castle was the third vampire leader Suzan. She was currently in her room that was filled with dolls upon dolls of all sizes. They weren't just human dolls but teddy bears, different animals and more.

Right now, she was using her special needles to sow outfits for them all. In particular, it was a large one she was working on today. However, her hands were a bit unsteady. She had pricked her fingers a few times, again and again.

"What is Bryce thinking?" She thought, with her knees trembling as she continued to sow. "He told us he had a plan but then doesn't inform us of what is going on. Why do I always decide to listen and follow him? I followed him back then, I followed him with the vote and now... it's too late."

She suddenly pricked her finger again, this time deeper. She had stopped for a few seconds waiting for the wound to heal and then was ready to start again. It was the only way she could get the worry out of her head, but when she tried to move her hand, it was suddenly grabbed.

"You're right, it is too late, and now it is time for you to be punished for your crimes." A dark voice said.

When Suzan looked around her, she soon noticed that all the walls were covered in pitch black. Shadows were everywhere, and no matter how loud she would scream, no one could hear it. Her, a vampire leader, one of the strongest vampires, was shivering in fear because she knew there was no hope.

\*\*\*\*\*

## **Chapter 1243: A message to them**

The forest with the dark purple leaves could sometimes seem endless, with the terrain changing very little for Erin and Leo. Mountains, small rivers, lakes, ponds, and of course, trees, plenty, plenty of trees.

Although the two of them wished to stay near the vampire settlement, Erin's senses improved by the day. Each time, they were able to head out further from the settlement, and Erin could still sense the general direction of where the vampires were.

This was something unique to her as a dhampir. At the same time, it seemed like she was controlling her powers better, but control wasn't the only thing she was getting good at.

They had ventured further out because the vampires in the area now seemed non-existent. What surprised them as they did this was that even as they further explored the planet, there would always be a stray out there somewhere.

Some of them were minding their own matters, just wishing to live a life away from the settlement. They chose to leave them alone while others were running away from crimes they had committed.

The second they saw Leo and Erin, they thought they were from the settlement and had come to chase them down. Still, Leo didn't kill them instantly, or at least he didn't make it so Erin would because he wanted to find out more about them. Find out their reason for leaving. With his influence skill as a vampire knight, there weren't many that could resist his control.

The rivers had become a frequent place for the two of them to stop at. For some reason, the sound of the water running down was calming for both of them. Sitting on top of a stone, Leo was observing, more so with his ears.

With the sound of the river, chains could be heard and then shortly after, the sound of the wind being cut. This repeated several times with certain gaps of sound in between. As if someone was going through specific steps.

Each time this was repeated, not a single time did the pattern not repeat in the exact matter. It was perfect, again and again until finally, the pattern was off.

'The timing, it was off.'

"Stop!" Leo shouted.

Instantly, chains fell to the floor, and huffing and panting from Erin could be heard.

"You have done remarkably well. When we came here, I only wanted to help you control the energy inside you, but it looks like you have been able to achieve more

than that." Leo complimented her. "Creating your own swordsmanship, one that incorporates the suppression chains, is no easy matter. You have done well creating these 6 different movements.

"You have nearly perfected them. However, there is one thing that we can't fix," Leo said, looking at his own blade.

When fighting the four spiked Dalki, he saw how effective agent 1's weapons were against it. Leo's weapon wasn't weak, but it was granted a boost in power due to the curse it had on it. This only helped when fighting against the Dalki, but even against a four spike, the boost wasn't enough.

"I have the Demi-god tier crystal that had been given to me by that man we met. I would like you-

"No." Erin interrupted Leo. "Leo, you have your own goal, and to do that, you need stronger weapons as well. We know that Pure's leader is most likely your old master from what you have told me.

"I'm sure you have heard the rumours as well as I have. That Pure has a Demon tier weapon in their possession. I know your skills are great Leo, I know you are strong. Unfortunately, I think this just is something skill can't overcome. Besides, I haven't finished the move set yet. I plan for there to be 12 movements altogether."

Leo was taken aback by this. Erin's progression had been extraordinary. Her strength had grown fast, to the point where now it was nearly at his own. However, there were a few things Leo still had an advantage of Erin in. His control of Qi was more fine-tuned, while at the same time, he had experience. His fighting sense and tactics were above hers, but Erin was young, and this could be improved.

When she had told Leo she was going to create her own swordsmanship style, he was impressed, and when she actually achieved it, he didn't think he could be surprised again, yet here they were.

"From the vampires, the Bloodsuckers we have killed so far, we have gathered all different types of Blood crystals. Learning how to use the Katana-style sword with the suppression chains will be the first six moves, and I plan to have a weapon created from their blood crystals.

"I can finally help the others in the Cursed faction. When I first was sent to Pure, I hated it, I thought why me, but slowly I realised that Quinn, Layla. All of them saved my life from Truedream, and then they saved me again. It's time to return the favour.

"However, I don't want to forget my past either. The longsword I used to use, and the swordsmanship that was taught to me by my parents. I wish to improve it, and I plan to create another set of six movements for that weapon. That will be my beast weapon."

Hearing this, Leo thought it represented Erin quite well, to have one best weapon that the humans used and one blood weapon that the vampires used. The only thing was they didn't have the current weapons. For her, Longsword had broken.

"I think it's time we head back to the Cursed faction then. We can obtain the crystals needed for this and ask Alex to forge us both new weapons for our journey. It's been a long time." Leo smiled.

Heading back through the forest, they realised they were quite far out, and even with their speed, it would take around half a day to return, but before they could even move from the river, they sensed two large objects coming their way.

Crashing in front of the two stones were chucked into the river, and small waves were made pushing it over the edge. A great wind force had hit both of them.

'What happened? If they were vampires, I should have sensed them from a mile away.' Erin thought.

Leo had quickly drawn his sword. Now they were in front of them, he knew what they were.

"They are in a place like this!"

"Who would have thought that we would see two stray vampires all the way out here at a place like this." One of the attackers said.

"I bet they were surprised to see our return but too bad you won't be telling anyone anything." The other said.

The two that had appeared in front of them were Dalki. The Dalki had arrived on the vampire planet, but what were they doing so out of the settlement.

When both Erin and Leo had seen the number of spikes on the back, they weren't worried at all, for there was only one.

"I've been waiting, waiting for a while to do this!" Erin said as she went in for the attack.

It was safe to say that neither of the Dalki's had lasted very long, and both of their heads were seen rolling on the floor.

After dealing with the Dalki, they both continued to head to the vampire settlement. It was safe to say they didn't have a clue why the Dalki were there, but they had decided to head back towards the settlement to see if something was up.

They could have tried to find where the Dalki had come from, but so far out, they thought it was a risk. At the same time, Leo wanted to know more before doing

anything. This perhaps would be a matter where they would need to contact Quinn as well.

When they finally were coming close to the settlement, the two wore their cloaks covering up their faces and heads. There were guards stationed outside the settlement and even in the forest area, which they hadn't seen before. Regardless, for Erin and Leo, it was easy to bypass them without being seen, using the terrain of the trees and more.

'Could it be that the Dalki really have attacked the settlement as well?' Leo thought.

However, when they entered the settlement, there was a strange feeling coming from the people. They could hear whispering and moans from everyone.

"What do we do! What do we do!"

"This has never happened before, and they managed to get inside!"

"Who could be strong enough to even do such a thing!"

The people were in a panic.

"Is it what we saw before?" Erin asked Leo, not wanting to say the name of the creatures in case someone had overheard them.

"No, this seems to be something different. The people look to be moving towards a certain place, and there are no signs of an attack. Let's follow them and see." Leo replied.

Following the crowds of people, they could see that some of the vampires had tears in their eyes. Others were shaking as they moved back.

"Everyone stand back, from the third castle! Get away from the third castle. This is an order!" A group of vampires shouted.

Seeing who they were, one could see that they were the Royal guard. A group of fifty or so vampires that worked directly under the king. They had the same power as a vampire knight. Currently, Ten of them were marching through, heading towards the third castle.

When Leo and Erin finally went there, they could see what everyone was looking at. From the pooling area, just outside the third castle inner area, one could see the whole castle in view. At the very top, the leader Suzan Toppy had been pinned using stakes to the wall. Her blood dripped on the castle walls, and there was no sign of life from her.

It was very clear that the third leader had been killed, and someone wanted to make sure that everyone knew about it.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1244: The penalty

A moment of peace was achieved, but that was all it was, a moment. The human race was able to celebrate the victory they had achieved over the five spike. The fighting around the beast solar system had stopped as everyone's eyes were glued to the screen, and in the end, they had obtained a victory.

However, it was as if the Dalki, now we're fighting Vengeance, having witnessed one of their leaders killed. The attacks on the planets on each of the Human groups' sections was now in full force. The mother ships had dropped the Dalki, allowing them to build fortresses. Once finished, the ships moved to the next planet for support.

Those that had been taken over, a token group of Dalki were left behind as the others joined forces with the struggling planets. Eventually, overwhelming the human race on each of the Shelters. It hadn't even taken an entire day. All of this was done within a few hours after Slicer's defeat.

In the end, each of the groups, including the Cursed faction, had decided to concentrate their forces even more so. The Earthborn group, the Graylash group and the Cursed faction were just down to controlling three planets each.

In order for the Dalki to keep control of each of the planets, their forces were thinned out more and more, until eventually, the Dalki themselves knew that if they were to attack, it would be a struggle.

It was a shame because even the planets that Quinn had destroyed motherships on, eventually were forced to retreat as neighbouring forces came over.

The problem was, with so few planets, the pushing issue of Crystals was becoming more apparent. There were just too few resources to go around to keep up the fight, and if the human race didn't do something soon, they would slowly meet their end.

The Cursed faction was in a bit better state and situation compared to the others. This was thanks to Quinn. After destroying the Motherships on said planets, Quinn informed the faction leader that the ships contained many Crystals on board.

Since Quinn was in his Dalki form when defeating these motherships, he could not store the crystals in his system. Fortunately, all of the factions were able to obtain the crystals inside. Which meant the Cursed faction didn't have a short supply like the other factions. Still, even for them, time would eventually run out.

Back on planet Caladi, the planet filled with sand, the Cursed faction had yet to leave the place. The Shelter had been quickly rebuilt, but certain parts were needed for the Bertha ship to be fully up and running again.

The good news was, with the Blade family working together, they were able to use their strong telekinesis powers to move the whole ship to the back of the Shelter,

away from where they had crashed landed. With their help, they could fix the ship even quicker.

At the moment, the Cursed faction would use this planet as their base, but they weren't alone. Out of the three planets that were considered safe for the Earthborn faction, planet Caladi was one of them.

After Slicer had been defeated, the mothership that was overlooking them had left. They later found out it was to join another planet. Still, there were currently no Dalki ships present at all on planet Caladi. Even on the other two Earthborn planets, there were still Dalki motherships and fortresses, so it made it one of the safest places for people to be, that included for civilians.

With the help of Sam, the Shelter was going through an extension. Earth ability users were put to use, and once again, the Blade family. They were able to do what a small group of earth users would be required for.

Due to all the problems, it led to a world meeting, as they needed to strategise what their plan of action was next. Of course, both Owen and Helen were unable to leave their bases, so they would be joining the meeting virtually.

However, the Cursed group were waiting on Sach to arrive at the planet, as he had left Samantha in charge, who seemed to have her head screwed back on again. As well as this, Sam had called all the main Cursed leaders, apart from Helen, to arrive at Planet Caladi as well. This included the likes of Alex, Wevil and Linda.

At the moment, Quinn was resting in the military base that was located on the Shelter. Standing outside were many guards and people cheering outside. After what they had seen and everything that happened, they wanted to thank Quinn.

The others in the Cursed faction were also experiencing praise and gifts from strangers. It was nice for the public to have a good opinion of them for a change. For Quinn himself, he had told everyone to leave him be, for now, and he would be ready by the time Sach and the others arrived.

Quinn was sitting in a comfy office chair, swirling around spinning, looking at the metallic plain room. It felt strange that the person who had last used this thing was dead, but his mind was being filled with all sorts of odd thoughts like that because he was still at a loss for what to do after defeating Slicer.

Opening up his system, he could see a countdown timer that told him he had 12 hours remaining and was counting down the seconds.

First, Quinn had looked at the quest rewards for beating Slicer. Apparently, at the time, Vincent had received two clearance options for the quest. One of them was to survive. Usually, Quinn would get this type of quest if the system didn't think he would live.

However, Quinn had proved the system wrong once before and received great rewards because of it. This time, the system had also given Quinn a second way to clear the request, which was to defeat Slicer.

The problem was because Quinn wasn't the one that had dealt the finishing blow, and due to Sil and the Balde family not being part of Quinn's cursed family, he didn't receive any exp from the Slicer death, nor meet the requirements to clear the quest.

Alas, he did meet the requirements to complete the survival quest, which had given him an extra level, which 'would' have brought him up to level 70. The level where Quinn had suspected there was another evolution.

Regardless, the quest failure had come into play. The major quest to destroy ten Dalki ships before ten planets had been taken over and the penalty was given. Judging by the size of the quest, Quinn thought the plenty would be big, but he had no idea just how large it was.

First of all, he had lost a level, bringing Quinn back down to 69. He still was unsure if at 70 he would have evolved since both quests seemed to have finished around the same time. Still, the bad news didn't stop there.

The penalty had continued, with Quinn taking a hit in his stat points. All of his stats were lowered by five.

[Strength 65]

[Agility 65]

[Stamina 68]

[Charm 55]

This seemed like a bigger hit than losing a level. After all, Quinn only got one stat point for each level up, so he thought the system was being excessive. It also made him wonder what the reward would have been if he had completed it.

Still, beast gear could make up for these stats, and Quinn had thought of a solution to the problem. More people were being transported to the current Shelter they were staying at. The reason why Quinn had stopped taking drops of blood from his members was because he had already consumed that from all those on the Cursed ship.

At the level he was at, it was taking a 100 to 200 drops of blood to gain a single stat point. However, with the number of new people in the Shelter, Quinn could easily gain the lost stats back by taking a drop of blood from each of them. The public

now knew what Quinn was and hailed him as a hero. If he explained this would allow him to get stronger, he thought they would easily comply.

Regardless of all that, the worst penalty was yet to come, and that was within 24 hours Quinn was to give the system a Demi-god tier item or higher. Or it would forcefully take one from him within that time.

'The system keeps impressing me by the day.' Vincent said. 'All these penalties you have experienced were implemented in the game. When the user would die, at times, a random item would drop from that body. Of course, the system isn't expecting you to die, so maybe this is its version of it, taking an item from you.'

Right now, Quinn didn't want to hear how impressed Vincent was with the system. He still had to explain Vincent to everyone at some point as well, but the looming timer over his head meant he would have to decide soon.

The only equipment he had at the Demi-god tier or above was the Demon tier amulet, and the Demi-god tier gauntlets. Hilston's equipment had been damaged beyond repair as well, so Quinn had to make a choice, and he needed to do so soon.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1245: Fixing the issue

The timer was ticking down, and twelve hours wasn't enough time for Quinn to exactly go hunting. Although the teleporters were up and running on planet Caladi, the teleporters were no longer working on the planets that the Dalki had taken control of. They were assumed to be destroyed.

The remaining planets that were still owned all had motherships that still had the jammers on board. The worst thing of all was the fact that Quinn was on a green portal planet. The highest tier beast that would be found here was an intermediate tier beast.

It looked like in the end, Quinn had no choice but to give the system something.

'Arghh, this countdown is torture. If I have to get rid of something, I might as well decide now.' Quinn thought.

He had taken off the gauntlets and placed them both on the table in front of him and had done the same with the Demon tier amulet. The gauntlets both had a strong passive and active skill in each of them. If it wasn't for the poison, perhaps Quinn would have struggled more with Agent 2. At the same time, draining mana was undoubtedly handy, even against the Dragon Demon tier beast.

However, how could he possibly think of getting rid of the Demon tier amulet when he had only just gotten it. With his stats having been lowered, the amulet was good in many ways. He could possibly travel to other planets where the Dalki numbers were few and obtain a few Marked.

Quinn still wanted to perform his little test to see if he could evolve the Dalki himself, and then when needed, he could use them to boost his energy beyond the stats he lost. Even if the Dalki would no longer fall for his trick, he just couldn't see himself getting rid of it.

"I guess it's going to have to be the gauntlets then." Quinn sighed, but a thought came into his head. 'Does it have to be both of them? I know the gauntlets are a pair of weapons, but I can wear just one of them and still use their active and passive skills. In the first place, they were created with two Demi-god tier crystals. Maybe just giving one of the gauntlets would be enough?'

The only problem was, Quinn was a little worried that if he made the offering, then maybe he couldn't take it back. If that was the case, then he would have given up the gauntlet for nothing.

'What am I even worried about, I can just offer one, and if that doesn't work, the system would have taken them both anyway.' Quinn thought.

In the end, Quinn had decided to offer the poison gauntlet. Although the passive skill on it was strong. It was too unreliable, and there was only a chance it could

work. Quinn needed something more sure rather than rely on luck or chance, so he decided to keep the energy draining gauntlet.

Picking up the gauntlet, Quinn started to think about the timer over his head. There was a ding sound and then a short wait. As if the system was trying to decide whether or not it would accept just one gauntlet instead of two.

[The item has been selected]

[Are you sure you want to give up this item?]

'Does that mean it worked?'

He didn't want to do it, but he had to select the yes option in the end. A few seconds later, the gauntlet started to turn into particles, disappearing the same way Quinn could store crystals.

'It is a loss, Quinn but remember you have gained a lot more from the system than losses. There might be a chance in the future that you are able to get the weapon back from the system.' Vincent said.

This was what Quinn was worried about as well. With the quest and stakes of the world getting harder and harder he had seen a penalty for the first time. Would this become a regular thing? If so, then if Quinn started to fail these quests more and more, they would only get more difficult.

Still, looking on the bright side, Quinn placed the energy drain gauntlet back in his dimensional space. It just meant he would have to get Alex to make him a new one.

'I was thinking. I know using blood crystals is considered taboo. However, you have already created blood weapons from the others in your faction.' Vincent was trying to get at something. 'When I saw them using their weapons and how effective they were against the Dalki, I was thinking, why don't you create a gauntlet out of the blood crystals.'

'You have your soul weapon that acts in a similar way, and it gives you great power, but your soul weapon can only be used when there are multiple Dalki. If you were fighting against another five spike, then it would have been handy to have a powerful Blood weapon in hand.'

It was a good suggestion to make. However, Quinn didn't have a large blood crystal that he could use to create a significant blood weapon. He had already given all the blood crystals away, but even then, it was just better off for him to create beast gear that would give him more stats than a medium grade blood weapon.

'It would have been good if we had gotten Cindy's blood crystal back then. I doubt that Bryce has done anything with it. I'll keep it in mind if we ever do come across

'one.' Quinn said. Feeling a little bit better after only having to give up one of his gauntlets.

'I haven't heard from Leo and Erin in a while. It would be best to see if everything is okay where they are and how things are doing in the vampire world.' Quinn thought. 'I thought that there would be some type of reaction when we announced ourselves as V, but there was nothing at all.'

'I agree that is certainly strange.' Vincent said. 'I'm sure Bryce has his eyes on what you are doing. Although the situation was unavoidable, perhaps they had decided to let it go. Still, I actually prefer it when we know what they are doing good or bad. When things are silent, I worry the most. Especially since we haven't seen or heard of Arthur moving yet.'

What Quinn didn't know was that currently, Nathan was also on his way to Planet Caladi, and he wasn't alone. With him, he was travelling with Ruby and would be delivering the news of what he had learnt, as well as something special he had with him.

While Quinn had been busy deciding what item to give back, the rest hadn't been slacking off either. In particular, the Blade family. Other than Quinn, they were the second highlight of the war. In good ways and bad ways.

Since the world had learnt about them, their feelings were constantly changing. They hated them for killing Hilston, then thanking them for defeating the five spiked Dalki. The public felt like they were on a rollercoaster of emotions. After finishing helping build the Shelter, they were now helping out Logan with the ship's repairs.

It was good for them because they wanted to get away from the people in the Shelter. At the moment, they were having a break and were sitting down in the sand, where the ship was being used to give them all shade.

During this time, it was a little awkward between the group. There was Pai, and Vicky, the newcomers, who had decided to stay as they had nowhere else to go. It was actually an offer from Vorden. Then there was Sil, Raten and finally Borden as well.

Soon though, the silence broke as Pai asked Vorden how he and Raten had gotten into such strange bodies. The one thing they wanted to avoid was talking about Hilston.

"So that's what happened, you guys must have been on some crazy journey, and it must be weird having a beast as a body," Pai said, looking towards the two of them.

"What about this one?" Vicky pointed at Borden. "Why does he look like Sil, and is he a Dalki?"

"That...might be a difficult question to answer," Vorden replied awkwardly. Because then he would have to go into detail of how they had discovered a Dalki creating a lab on a vampire planet. In a way, too many crazy things were happening to them all.

"So, are you two going to stay with us, or are you just bored or something?" Raten asked.

Both Pai and Vicky looked at each other with a guilty look on their faces.

"We aren't quite sure," Pai said. "We think that we should help out with the situation as much as we can. To payback for what we have done, but we think there might be another problem that needs our attention.

"The Chained that were with us, all of them are free now, and that's not a good thing. Some of them have stayed in the Shelter and are going to be sent back to their families, I heard, but not everyone that Hilston kept with him was good. Some of them had dangerous abilities and were criminals.

"Hilston kept them for their abilities, but in a way, he was helping the world as well. People that could be considered for the position of the big four if they had the support and families to back them up. We might try going around and capturing them."

Hearing this made Vorden smile. He always knew that Pai and Vicky were good people. Even if they didn't stay with them, he wanted them to do things based on their own choices.

"Before you go." Sil finally spoke. "Tell me...I want you to tell me, why did Hilston..why did he do all of that, the Blade island, training us everything."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1246: Unwelcome face

All of the Blade's knew what Sil had said to Hilston before he had decided to finish him off in the way he had done. The video that had been recorded was watched by them all multiple times, not just by them but nearly everyone in the Shelter.

The drones had advanced technology that was able to pick up clear audio in a specific direction despite neither one of them not having microphones on their bodies. During the fight, Sil didn't exactly whisper the words to Hilston in his fit of anger either.

It was then that Sil had claimed that he didn't care about the reason Hilston had done everything, that no matter what, it wouldn't make up for the crimes he had committed, but after the fight, something had changed. It had to have for Sil to suddenly ask this question to his brother and sister.

This was due to the people around him, and not just any people, but those in the Cursed faction.

He wasn't lying when he said he wanted Hilston to be the end of his journey, of his saga. Now that he was gone, there was no reason to worry about what that man did or was ever going to do. However, walking back through the Shelter, there were those that hailed the Blade family as heroes, congratulating them. They were the ones that had defeated the five spike that no one else could, while at the same time, some harboured anger towards them.

Some of the Cursed members that Sil would walk past every day on the Cursed ship, were shaking when they would see him now. Hiding from his view while speaking whispers. It was clear they were scared of him.

Why were they scared of him? Sil started to think, and eventually, he had come up with his own answer.

It was the blood running through his veins, the Blade bloodline, the powerful ability that no one else could match up to. This family was the one that had attacked the Cursed faction, and what if it was to happen again.

After asking the question, there was silence from Vicky and Pai. This was what allowed the time for Sil to have these thoughts. He was thinking back to those that were shaking at the sight of him, so Sil spoke again.

"I....I just want to make sure that I don't turn out like him. I'm scared. I'm scared of this power. I'm scared of my body and all that training that we did. We all share his blood, don't we? What if there is something inside us that makes us become like him?" Sil asked, both of his hands shaking.

There was for a moment when he was fighting that he allowed the anger to consume him. It wasn't the first time he had this feeling which was why he was so

concerned. He didn't want to admit it. Holding that much power gave a special feeling, something one couldn't explain.

"Haha, are you an idiot!" Raten burst out laughing. "Look at all of us, all of us carry the same blood, and every single one of us is different? We are all individual people regardless of what blood we have, and I mean, we're in freaking beast bodies at the moment. I'm not even sure if I have a spec of that dirty old man's blood in the first place. You are still a little child." Raten continued to laugh.

"I think what Raten is trying to say is, you really don't have to worry about that," Vorden added. "Just because of who our parents are, doesn't define who we are. You have a right to worry though because I too would like to know just what was that man doing, what was he trying to do."

Now, Vorden and Sil were waiting for an answer from the other two.

"Alright, would you two just stop looking at me like that?" Vicky said, scratching her head irritated. "Look, you aren't going to like what I have to say, but I don't have a clue either. When we joined the castle, all we did was follow what Hilston told us to do, just like you guys.

"From time to time, he would tell us to go places. All we did was fight, Honestly if you want to know more, then the one you really should be asking is our so called mother and father. They would have a better answer, but I have no clue where they have gone just like you."

It was disappointing for them to hear. Their curiosity was now consuming them. Their whole life they lived, there had to be some sort of goal, right? Otherwise, the lives of their brothers and sisters were lost for nothing.

"I do know one thing." Pai interrupted, and from the looks of it, Vicky was surprised to hear this as well. "I just heard the old man mumbling once, but the reason why he puts us through extreme measures again and again, why he keeps making as many Blade children as possible. Maybe this is linked.

"I don't know what his goal was or why he was doing it, but he was looking for a Blade, one that could use a soul weapon."

All of their eyes lit up hearing this, apart from Borden, who didn't have a clue what was going on and was finding it hard to keep track. Still, he was interested to learn of his brother's crazy family origins.

They were all surprised because they knew that Blade's were unable to have soul weapons. They had all tried to summon it at one point, and it failed. They thought that it might be due to how their ability worked, that it was just impossible for them to have a soul weapon. If they even had one, they would have no clue what it would be.

"Why would he be looking for a Blade with a soul weapon? I mean, I understand if he was someone who cared about the family, but I don't see how it benefits him at all." Vorden said. It certainly was a head scratcher, but they would just have to ask their mother and father to find out the missing pieces.

All of the communicators they had on them, given by Logan, started to vibrate again, signalling it was time for them to use their muscles and such to get back to work. Heading back inside the Cursed ship, Vorden looked at Sil from behind.

'Hilston was obsessed with getting Sil back. I thought it might have been due to him being able to hold six abilities, but what if it was because of a different reason? Is it true, can Sil really use a soul weapon? If so, it would be a big help to the war. Perhaps Sil is someone who can go even beyond Hilston, and we are going to need people like that if we are going to face more five Spike Dalki. The problem is, can Sil handle that much responsibility? Although he is the same age as us, he has been mentally hit since a young age.'

'Only now has it started to get better, but as long as I and Raten stay by his side, we can keep him in control. Sil, we will look after you and make sure you stay on the right path, and if we aren't there, then I know Quinn will.'

Speaking off Quinn, he was now finally ready to leave the office. He had been sulking around for long enough about the penalty. In the end, it wasn't something he couldn't deal with. A loss of an item was something he could always get back, and his stats could improve.

His powers, Qi, skills he had learnt and experience, all of it was still there. Putting his plan into motion, Quinn had called Sam and asked him if he could require that all of those in the Shelter donate blood.

Quinn didn't quite explain the reason but said that he needed it for himself. The other vampires didn't get stronger by consuming different types of blood. This was something unique to Quinn, so it was hard to explain.

Luckily, it seemed like Sam believed that this wouldn't be too hard of a request.

'I can mix the blood into flasks and take them at the same time. My Qi has increased since the last time as well, and by mixing the two carefully together, I can make sure that the blood lust doesn't go out of control. It might take a while, but my stats will be back to what they were.'

Any second now, Sach and the others would arrive, and Quinn needed to be ready with a plan and what to do next. After all, even with the penalty, he was still one of the main powerhouses, and the Demon amulet could be put to good use.

Swinging the door open, Quinn was ready for a smile, but immediately, someone was standing on the other end of the door. His smile had disappeared.

"What the hell are you doing here?" Quinn asked.

"What a kind welcome, and here I thought you would be embracing me with a big hug. Did you miss me?" Richard Eno asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1247: The Major Threats

It had been a while since Quinn had last seen Eno. Still, it was a face that he wouldn't forget for a long time. The last time the two of them had met was on Blade island, where they had decided to part ways. Honestly, when opening the door, it was the last person he was expecting to see on the other side.

Usually, others would contact Quinn when they wanted to see him, but Eno would just appear whenever he wished.

'How did he know where I was in the first place? How did he even know I was in this room? Does he have a tracker in my system or something?!'

The reason for Quinn's unhappy appearance was because whenever this person appeared, he always did something that Quinn didn't exactly agree with, which was why now, of all things, he was on his toes for what was just about to happen next.

"I saw the video of you. It looks like you have improved and exceeded my expectations like you have been doing this whole time." Eno said as he walked past him as if the office was his own home. "Although you could have made it easier on yourselves, you could have gone for the attack while Hilston was fighting. We might have just lost our Queen in this fight and traded for theirs."

"The problem is, they have more than one Queen."

Quinn understood that when Eno was using the words 'Queen', he was referring to the game of chess. Where the Queen was the most powerful piece, but each side only had one. In this case, their Queen would have been Hilston.

As for the Dalki side, Quinn knew they had more than one five spike.

"How much do you know?" Quinn asked. "Do you know how many five spikes they have? Do you know about their strange chamber?"

There was clear information that Eno knew that he was keeping from them, but why didn't he share this information with the human race? Wouldn't they have a better chance of surviving if they knew?

At the same time, Quinn wanted to ask just what Eno was doing here, but while he was here, he might as well ask him some of the other questions he wanted to know.

"I think what you are asking for is fair, especially since you finally managed to defeat one of the major threats," Eno said, now sitting in the seat that Quinn was in before. "It looks like you have been busy yourself if you already know about that strange chamber of theirs. As you know the Dalki have been evolving in general, and it might have to do with the special chamber."

"At first, I thought that the Dalki would be the ones that were time sensitive, but now it seems the humans are."

Quinn couldn't agree more. Although he was unable to experience the healing properties of the chamber, if what the five spike said was true, then Quinn could see them forcing evolutions.

"The major threats I speak of are as follows. There are three Dalki that can turn the tide of any battle and would be a huge blow if defeated to the enemy side. One Horn, who had managed to defeat Oscar, another five spike that goes by the name Graham, and lastly a Dalki named Green Horn.

"The last of the three is the weakest, only being a four spike. However, it is on the stronger side and is the closest to evolving at the moment. It also was the one that had escaped after fighting against Owen."

Thinking back to the five spikes that Quinn had met while being in a Dalki body, he could only assume that he was the one called Graham, since One Horn's appearance was known to the whole place.

The next question for Quinn would be how did Eno know this information in the first place, but when asking in the past he got no answer. He assumed he was just being safe, not wanting to give his sources away in case anything happened to them.

"So, if we get rid of these three, the human race will win the war?" Quinn asked, getting a better idea of just what was left of this war.

"I haven't finished naming the major threats. Jim, the ex vampire leader and ex vampire knight, also my, or should I say our relative is a big problem as well. In the past, he would do anything to please his curiosity and achieve his goal, and I'm sure it is the same now. There is no telling how strong he is or who he has by his side helping him."

When hearing this, Quinn's mind went to True Dream and the one that was able to control the vampire agents. Two strong ability users.

"Lastly, we have to face the fact that Jim could be using Arthur in some way. Although we can't be sure, he is working for Jim. There is a good chance whatever he is doing could get in our way. The important thing is Quinn, now that I have told you all our enemies we have to face, I'm sure you know, you can not beat them all on your own."

It was food for thought. Still, a part of Quinn didn't believe Arthur had gone over to the other side. Otherwise, why would he have let him live? Arthur was almost telling him to get stronger, and there had to be a reason for it.

"Okay, then tell me why you came here. Aren't you supposed to be protecting that Demon tier beast?" Quinn asked.

Standing up, Eno straightened his dark blazer and started to walk back to the exit where Quinn was standing.

"A meeting is to take place, no? The matter I need to bring up will concern everyone. As I said, if we want to survive this, we will need everyone's help on this. Let me just say that this whole war is a distraction in the first place."

Walking out of the room, Eno continued to do his own thing, and as usual, Quinn was swept up in his pace. It was either that or leave the crazy old man alone. In a way, Quinn thought that would be worse. When stepping out of the office and heading down the hallway, he was quite surprised to see someone familiar standing there.

In a pointy hat, and black outfit Mona gave a little wave.

"I saw your flashy moves out there." Mona complimented. "You did a good job. I thought at first that maybe you weren't deserving to replace one of the big four, and then in a flash, you go ahead and surpass us. Who would have thought."

For some reason, seeing Mona made Quinn a little at ease. He thought she was quite sensible, to say the least. If she and Eno were travelling together that she wasn't shy enough to say if he was doing something out of order or strange. It did make Quinn wonder where Brock was though. The most likely answer was still on the island.

"It looks like everyone saw that video, huh?" Quinn replied, not realising just how viral it had gone.

"I would bet there isn't a single human who hasn't seen it," Eno said, clearing his throat. "Would you mind? These old legs of mine are getting a little tired."

At first, Quinn didn't know what Eno meant by this. He was sure that his legs were working fine.

'Does he want a piggyback or something?'

Later he realised that Eno was trying to hint at them using Quinn's shadow to travel. The meeting was far, and Quinn wanted to avoid the people outside, so he would use it anyway.

The meeting wasn't to occur in the Shelter since there were too many people, and it would attract attention. Instead, it would take place on the Cursed ship. Although Repairs weren't finished yet, the command centre had been repaired so they could have full use of it.

Both Mona and Eno were taken inside and out of the Shelter using his shadow travel. As they approached the Cursed ship, Quinn saw another ship had already landed while another was preparing to land.

Soon, Quinn could see who had gotten off the ship, for it was Nathan, along with a few others by his side. The others with him were just soldiers for protection, but Quinn didn't recognise the person directly behind him.

It was a female, she stayed close, but he did notice something else that she was holding onto tightly. The next second, Quinn had popped out of the shadow, appearing in front of them all.

"Quinn! What the! You can't just pop out of the sand like that. Were you hiding there that whole time!" Nathan had let out a little shriek. These days he was a little on edge and wasn't paying attention. To suddenly see three people appear out of a shadow in the sand like that would give anyone a fright.

However, Quinn ignored Nathan and instead looked at the weapon held in the woman's hands.

"That weapon that's the Demon tier beast weapon that Oscar had! I'm sure of it!" Quinn said, recognising it. After all, he was one of the few that had seen it being used in action.

'Didn't Sach say that they lost it when fighting against one horn, and it was on the planet where Arthur was, so why is it in this person's hands?'

At the same time, while Quinn was thinking this. The woman who was known as Ruby also seemed a little starstruck after seeing Quinn.

"You, what you did just now, that looked like a shadow, do you have shadow abilities?" Ruby asked.

No matter what skill Quinn would use, even the shadow travel when deactivating and activating the skill, shadows would form like a type of purple fog and quickly disappear. Ruby had seen the same thing happen before.

"Do you know where Arthur is?" Ruby asked.

This girl knew who Arthur was? This was something Quinn wasn't expecting, just who was this girl, and what was her relationship with Arthur.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1248: Arthur Switch sides?

Hearing Arthur's name was like a switch in Quinn's mind. He never expected to hear the name from another person's lips, especially a human. To make sure, Quinn sniffed a few times. The scent was definitely that of a human.

"Why!" Quinn said, pushing forward now almost directly in Ruby's face. "Why do you know that name? How do you know him? Who are You?"

Asking one question after another, Quinn pushed forward, and Ruby was taking a step back. The person in front of her was being somewhat aggressive, and it felt like if she said one wrong word, she would be on the receiving end of an attack.

Instead of answering, she slowly moved her hands down to the hilt of the sword she had been practically hugging till recently, but this didn't go unnoticed by Quinn.

"Don't you try to use that weapon on me." Quinn demanded as his eyes glowed red and his influence skill had activated. No matter how hard Ruby tried to move her hand, her body wouldn't listen to her as it was being controlled.

'Those red eyes are the same as Arthur's. I thought that maybe the two of them knew each other. Is he going to kill me ?' She thought.

"Quinn! What are you doing!" Nathan shouted out as he got in between the two of them. "Look, I don't know who this Arthur person is, Ruby does know him, but you can't just ask a question and put pressure on someone like that the second you meet them. You didn't even give her time to answer."

"I know this might be out of place since I am ranked below you, but I have to call out your actions. Do you want to be like Duke!" Nathan shouted, trying to get Quinn's head screwed back on properly.

Letting go of the Influence skill, Quinn took a step back. He realised that he had allowed his emotions to get the better of him, similar to when he had faced Head general Innu. This wasn't Innu though, and neither was it Arthur himself.

'I have to calm myself down when it comes to situations involving Arthur. Every time I hear his name, the wounds on my body start to ache a little.'

"I understand the young one," Eno said, walking up to Quinn's side. "I too am interested in knowing just how this girl came into possession of the Demon tier weapon and her relationship with Arthur."

It took a few seconds for Nathan to notice who it was, but it was then that he recognised the man as Richard Eno. Immediately he bowed down, showing his respect to one of the great heroes.

"I'm sorry," Quinn said, looking at Ruby again. "I'm just trying to find him and wondering what he is doing at the moment. Do you mind if you tell me what you know about him?"

Many things were running through Ruby's mind when she saw Quinn use the shadow powers. Whether he was a friend of Arthur, an Enemy or perhaps someone who was just searching for him, but now she realised that they both had similar goals.

The group started to make their way into the cursed ship. While doing so, Ruby had explained just like she did with Nathan, who Arthur was and how he was introduced into the Shelter they had made.

'What she's saying matches up with what Leo and Erin told me before, how they had trained with Arthur on the planet. So she is from the place where we woke up Arthur and must be part of those that were left behind when the portal planet changed.'

"So you don't really know why the Dalki were protecting the place?" Quinn asked.

"I hate to say It, but it is looking more and more likely that Arthur is working for the other side now. He must have made some sort of deal to have the Dalki protect them. Arthur is a strong ally for them to have, which is why they went as far as to have One Horn keep their promise." After finishing this sentence, Eno had a smile on his face.

"However, in their rush to attack, you have managed to do a great thing. You have made it, so their deal is void."

"Who is this Arthur person you keep speaking of?" Nathan couldn't help but ask.  
"From the sound of it, it is a great figure, but I have never heard of such a name."

"If I said he was someone who is stronger than Quinn, then I bet that would get your attention, so it is important to know if he is working for the Dalki or not," Eno answered.

Hearing this, Nathan stopped walking for a few seconds. Right now, it wouldn't be wrong to say that Quinn was the strongest person in the world. At least, from who they knew, yet an unknown was stronger than him.

"Wait, but Arthur said, I mean Ruby said that Arthur said the Dalki were even stronger than him! What does that mean!" Nathan shouted out, recalling her words.

Now, both Quinn and Eno had stopped walking at the same time.

"It's true," Ruby added, looking at the shock on their faces. She didn't really know who this Quinn person was because they had been kept away from the outside

world, so she also didn't know what the big deal was that someone was stronger than him, or Arthur for that matter.

"When Arthur came back with the Dalki, he said those words."

Thinking things through, Quinn was trying to compare Arthur's strength with Slicers. From both fights and what he had seen Arthur do before, out of a hundred fights with Slicer, Quinn couldn't imagine Arthur losing a single one of them.

'Could it be, did Arthur already have a scuffle with the Dalki, did he lose? Is that why he attacked me that time with the Demon tier beast and told me to get stronger. Because not even he could beat the Dalki?'

This was the only thing he could think of, but to know for sure, he had to know the deal made with the humans. The only thing he could think of was if Arthur really thought the Dalki was going to win this war. His deal was for the Shelter to be saved.

Did he get attached to those at the Shelter so quickly?

"About what you said earlier," Ruby added. "Even if the Dalki aren't protecting us anymore and we have escaped, I think Arthur would still help them because they still have my....daughter. Arthur and Minny, the two of them, would always go off together, but one day she had gone missing, and it was around the same time Arthur appeared with them. I know Arthur wouldn't hurt her!"

Looking to his right, Quinn could see that Eno was in deep thought as well. Perhaps someone being stronger than Arthur was never in his calculations. Eno had the insight to see far ahead, but there were things even he couldn't predict.

"What are you thinking?" Quinn asked.

"The timeline," Eno replied. "You see, if you asked me, could the Dalki get strong enough to defeat Arthur? My answer would have been yes, but judging by when these people were being protected by the Dalki, and when you claimed you were attacked by him. It would mean that at that time, they already had someone strong enough to deal with Arthur.

"If that is true and was the case, then that said person or Dalki is now even stronger than back then. The Dalki are improving quicker than my predictions. They might have a six spike already among them, or one that is very close to evolving."

It was a scary thought to even imagine what a six spike would be like. For the rest of the walk, there was silence among them all.

Finally, the group had entered the meeting room, where Logan and Sam were present inside. It looked like the command centre had not only been repaired but

improvements had been made to the room as well. The main table that would sit a level above all the controls was now twice the size it was before.

The centre and the table itself could still be used as a holographic display, and it looked like it was being used as one now. Currently being projected into the meeting, was Owen, Helen, and Samantha. The holograms looked life-like as if they were actually present in the room.

From the smell alone, Quinn knew they weren't.

In the room already, other than Sam and Logan, was the new Supreme commander Sach.

"Quinn, we were just talking about you," Sach said with a smile. "We were all discussing the video of you beating the five spike."

At first, Quinn thought that maybe the meeting had started without him, but it looked like everyone was just chatting and getting along with one another.

"Oh, I see you have brought some others with you as well," Sach said, surprised, but he wasn't the only one.

"Mona, my word, I thought you had perished, darling," Owen said, spooked, thinking he had seen a ghost.

"I'm harder to kill than you think, and I have this person to thank for that," Mona said, pointing towards Richard Eno.

The group took to their seats now the meeting was about to start. Sach was going to take the lead, giving everyone an update on all of the current situations, but before he even could, Eno stood up.

"I have come bringing urgent news to everyone. This whole war that you are all facing, is a giant trap! The Dalki don't care about the beast planets. This is just a distraction from their real goal. What they really are after, is planet earth."

"We have to do everything we can to protect planet earth, no more importantly protect Blade island. It's time you all knew the truth about the Dalki." Eno explained.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1249: Double Dalki

When Eno stood up and spoke, the rest of them were hanging on to his every word. There was something about the way he spoke, making them feel that it was of great importance, so they took everything he said seriously.

After explaining to the others that Earth needed to be protected, there was a bit of catching up to do for the rest of humanity. It was time that the World Leaders, the ones involved, and the ones that were risking their lives to fight the threat actually knew what they were fighting against and why.

Everyone in the room knew what Eno was since the announcement of V. Quinn was the one who had outed him in the first place, claiming that he was the reason the Cursed faction leader had been turned into a V. However, most of this had been said to Oscar, and they weren't sure how much of it had been passed down.

Eno decided to start from the beginning, admitting to being a vampire for those that didn't know in the room. Also revealing how the vampires had tried to create a blood substitute so they would no longer have to rely on humans, which was what led to the creation of the Dalki.

As someone in the know, Quinn could tell that just like himself, Eno made sure to withhold the fact that there were still plenty of vampires out there, inhabiting an entire planet even. The old man made sure to only share the information that was needed for his current story.

"As a failed experiment the Dalki are incomplete beings, their lifespan being short and finite. It is their goal to do everything they can to survive, and for that they require a Demon tier beast that is currently on Blade Island. They will come for it soon." Eno finished his explanation there.

Only a select few had known about the real goal of the Dalki, most had believed them to merely be a genocidal race who had out for humans. It was a lot to take in for the uninformed, but because it had come from the Great Richard Eno himself, nobody questioned the validity.

"This whole situation is so crazy." Samantha couldn't help but blurt out.

"I have a few questions to ask if I may." Owen interjected. "First of all, why don't we kill the Demon tier beast? That way the Dalki should have no more reason to attack Earth, right?"

"You make it sound easy." Mona laughed seriously at this suggestion. "We have already visited the island with a group of us and even Quinn admitted that it wasn't anything we could just defeat. What's more, that thing is... strange."

A realisation hit the others, if the Demon tier beast was too strong for them to handle, and the Dalki had decided to attack now, it must have meant they had a

way to either control the Demon tier beast or were sure that they could beat it to take it back.

"Do we know how they are planning to attack?" Sach asked. "At the moment, the teleportation station is being heavily guarded. Although the Dalki have cornered us, they still aren't close enough to reach the teleportation system to head to Earth's solar system."

"That's because it won't be the Dalki that are attacking. I predict that they will have their hands full dealing with the humans, just like they have done now and that the vampire I spoke of earlier, will be the one to lead the attack."

"The V that is working with Dalki, he is a great mind like myself. Getting to Earth will pose no problem for him. I'm sure you are already aware that one Dalki has managed to appear on the planet, without any prior warning signs. You can be sure that more will follow."

It was an issue that nobody in their group currently had a way of solving. Even if the Dalki were after Earth, it didn't change the fact that most of their forces were currently engaged with the Dalki on the beast planets.

At the moment, there was only a small group protecting Earth, and the wealthiest of civilians.

'Quinn, I'm afraid that the others don't really understand the real threat in allowing the Dalki to obtain the Demon tier beast.' Vincent voiced his opinion, while everyone was deep in thought, discussing measures and certain tactics. At the moment, they were estimating how long their forces could last, with the amount of beast crystal they had.

'Do you remember the state that Leo described the Demon tier beast was in? He said that it appeared to be in a deep slumber. From the information I have gathered and what I have observed I believe that this was the case because half of the Demon tier beast has already had all its energy drained.'

'The Dalki were created with one half of the Demon tier beast and Logan said that there wasn't enough energy to create anymore Dalki after Borden, but the beast is still somewhat alive. If it wasn't it would have joined back up with the beast on Earth.'

'If the Dalki get their hands on the second half of the Demon tier beast there will be two major issues. One, they could use the Demon tier that still has plenty of energy left to create more incomplete Dalki.'

'Two, their goal would change. Rather than capturing the other half of the Demon tier beast, they could simply slay the one on the vampire's side, gaining control over the complete version of it.'

When hearing Vincent explain it, the terror of them getting the Demon tier beast set in. So far the humans were only able to put up a decent fight due to their numbers, but if their forces could double, there would be no hope for them.

"I agree." Quinn said, interrupting the others that were speaking. "We have to prevent the Dalki from obtaining the Demon tier beast at all costs. I'm aware that everyone is busy defending the invaded planets and that they are worried that if they leave them, there will be no hope for them to survive, but if we allow them to get their hands on that Demon tier beast they will be able to double their numbers, if not worse!"

There was something else Quinn realised that he decided to keep to himself as well. Arthur had made a deal with the Dalki, so what were they getting from him? If what Vincent theorised was true, Arthur might have been tasked with killing the Demon tier beast that was in the Vampire World.

"I see that you are all troubled so I have a suggestion." Sam spoke up. "The main issue we have at the moment is travel. The Dalki possess the technology to block our own teleporters. Were it not for that, we could assign people to protect Blade Island, and you could head back to your respective planets in case they would need the reinforcements."

"Thanks to Quinn and Logan, we were able to create a device that can be used to disrupt their jamming device. At the moment, the Dalki don't know about it. This could be our trump card against them! When Eno calls for help from us all, we can travel and protect Blade Island!"

The others were amazed by how much the Cursed faction had been able to help in this fight. If it wasn't for Quinn and his friends humanity would have long since perished.

"I can agree to that." Owen nodded. "As long as the Greylash planets and its people can be protected at any time, I will gladly go where I'm most needed. Providing the teleporters work of course."

Soon after, the rest of them agreed to this fact and a plan was put in place. For now, Eno, along with Mona, would head back to Blade Island and set up the teleporters. They would also stay there as a first line of defence.

Eno actually wanted Quinn to send some of his people back as well, but the Vampire Lord himself had refused, on the grounds that there were things he needed to do with them first. Seeing the look in his eyes, Eno understood that Quinn wouldn't budge. Given the situation, it was apparent that Quinn must have intended to boost their strength as much as he could.

Up until now, they had done well and they had yet to let him down, so Eno didn't insist on their arrival. The teleporters working was a big win for them.

Additionally, Quinn did agree to send someone with the shadow ability over, so he could go there regardless if the teleporters were working or not.

"The next matter to be discussed is those that are known as the Chained." Sam stated standing up. "Hilston Blade has enslaved many strong people to have access to their abilities. A good portion of them have remained on Planet Caladi."

"Some of these are the strongest ability users in their field, including past leaders. They will be returned to their rightful factions."

Hearing this, there was a smile on Owen's face. During the broadcast he had seen the face of his grandfather Grim Graylash still alive. Reclaiming those people who had been believed to have died, was a big win for the Graylash family as well as the Earthborn group as a whole.

"Before we go on to discuss each group's plans and tactics for the fight against the Dalki, Nathan has one more matter he wishes to address." Sam sat back down in his seat to allow him to take over.

Nathan then stood up, with Ruby still sitting by his side.

"Supreme Commander Sach had given me an important mission while the attack was going on. With One Horn's location having been confirmed on a different planet we knew it was the right opportunity to strike, and in doing so we rescued the humans."

While Nathan was speaking, Samantha suddenly sparked up, because she knew exactly what planet they were talking about.

"It turns out that the humans there had not been V at all, nor had they been working with the Dalki. The Dalki had kept them alive, glorified prisoners, probably to be used against us in some way." When Nathan said this, he was careful because he realised that neither Richard, nor Quinn had mentioned this Arthur person.

Since the latter seemed to be a V as well, he took that as a sign that it could be a secret they didn't wish to share. As such, he chose to do the same.

"We have successfully freed them, and in doing so we have managed to retrieve this!"

Ruby, then placed the Demon tier weapon on the table for them all to see.

"Although it was our Cursed faction who discovered and secured the weapon, it originally belonged to the Earthborn group. Without Supreme Commander Oscar, we will have to choose the most suitable person to wield the sword for all of humanity's sake!"

Everyone's eyes were now glued onto the weapon. A Demon tier Weapon would be a boost to them all, and every single group wanted it for themselves.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1250: The Board

The Demon tier weapon was special in more ways than one. Not just because of the rank of the weapon itself, but due to the history it carried as well.

As the first Demon tier weapon that the humans had owned and the one belonging to the supreme commander.

In a way, everyone in the room had a case for the weapon to be rightfully theirs. It was at that moment while everyone's eyes were glued to the weapon that Ruby stood up.

"In return for saving those in the Shelter and giving them a safe place to live, I have agreed to give back this weapon. If it can help me bring back my daughter, and help save us from this war with the Dalki and many lives, then I accept." Ruby said, sitting back down.

Hearing Ruby's words, and how selfless they had been, made the others reconsider for a second. A normal person had actually tasted what it was like to use and wield a Demon tier weapon. In times like this, nearly everyone would want to keep it for themselves. Her strong words resonated with the others and the first one to actually speak was Owen.

"At the moment, the Graylash faction lacks a Demon tier weapon. Our strength comes from our ability. I would have before said that using the weapon would have made it so there wasn't just one strong contender in the Graylash family, but thanks to the Cursed faction that isn't true anymore."

"I have them to thank that I will be reunited with my grandfather, Grim Graylash who is an even stronger lightning user than my father. He alone is worth more than a Demon tier weapon. On top of that I owe Quinn my life. Although I know handing the Weapon to the Cursed faction will make their power even greater than the others, I can't think of anyone more deserving."

Of course, Quinn was also interested in the Demon tier Sword. Although it seemed rather selfish, he believed that in the Cursed faction's hand it could be put to better use than if anyone else were to get it. He was aware that his own swordsmanship would be lacking, but Leo would eventually come back and he could do with a better weapon.

'Although it isn't a katana blade so how would he fare with this type of sword, would it still be useful for him?'

"Honestly, I'm not completely against the idea." Sach said after hearing what Owen had to say. "After all, the Cursed faction was ultimately the one who dealt with the five spiked Dalki. Under the old system it would have made them eligible to

demand any type of reward, given their contribution it could have even been the sword."

"However, there are a couple of problems. For one the Board wouldn't exactly agree to such a thing. I know you guys don't know much about them, but any major decision has to go through them. They are a group of ten families that in the past had originally supported the current military, especially during the first war with finances and more."

"The problem is they worry too much. If we were to hand the Demon tier weapon to the Cursed faction, I can already hear them complain that you guys will have a monopoly on power. Rather than thinking that we might not win this war and we should do everything we can to win this war, they are overly worried about themselves."

"Although it was thanks to them, and the seats voted that I am in the position I am in now, I just don't think they would allow this to go through."

It came as a surprise to Quinn. Being in the position he was in he was unaware of how the military worked. The leader over the entire military in the public eye had been the Supreme Commander, which was why Quinn's hatred for the old system had been aimed against Oscar. However, upon meeting him for the first time, he had felt that the old man had been far from the big villain he had pictured him in the past.

"Ah, yes that's right, I was asked to put a vote in recently, I guess that had to do with you." Logan casually said.

Everyone's head at the table, then turned to look at Logan. Without realising it he had just outed himself as one of the ten families that were on the Board.

"Wait, the Green family is on the Board?!" Nathan asked in surprise.

"Well, I can't say it's too surprising." Mona added. "Their systems are integrated into the military and they have money reserves beyond belief. Of course it would make sense for them to be on the Board."

What Sach didn't mention was that the members of those ten families on the Board had been kept secret, for their overall safety. The reason why Logan had to give a vote was because his family was no longer alive apart from him. Sach cleared his throat, indicating that he had more to say.

"Regardless of this fact, I don't think one vote would make a difference in this. The main reason I'm bringing this up is because of Samantha." Sach said pointing towards her. "It's pretty much a given that the Board will insist that she has the right to the weapon more than anyone. Especially since it belonged to her father."

Thinking about this, Quinn was a bit troubled about taking the Demon tier weapon away from her. After all, Oscar had once told him about how much he and his people had gone through to obtain that thing.

"I also wish for it to go to the Cursed faction." Samantha finally spoke. "Honestly, even if it was in my hands, I am not confident that we can defeat One Horn with it. Then, there is even at least another five spiked Dalki out there, and unlike the Board who are unaware of what goes on, I do know it would be best suited in your hands."

With this, it seemed like the matter was settled. At least between all the World Leaders it was. Since all of them wished to hand the weapon to the Cursed faction. However, there was still the fact that the Board wouldn't exactly be pleased with this outcome, putting Sach in a difficult position.

'What can the people on the Board do about it, anyway? They might not be happy, but are they going to force it from us? Surely, they can't be crazy enough to start a fight with the Cursed faction in a time like this?' Quinn wondered.

From the look on Quinn's face Sach could tell what he was thinking.

"They have a great influence, Quinn. Just think about how powerful the Green family is. Maybe it won't bother you, but they could easily turn public opinion against you." Sach said.

"That would be annoying, to say the least." Sam commented, but he already had an idea in mind. "How about this? Nathan is part of the Cursed group, and barely anyone should know that Sach was the one to have sent him out on this mission. Why not let Quinn claim to have ordered such a mission and that we coincidentally managed to retrieve the weapon?"

"This makes it so the Earthborn group is even more indebted to the Cursed faction. As a publicity stunt, Quinn hands the weapon to the Earthborn group Samantha, this will show that the connection between the Cursed and Earthborn group is close to those on the outside."

"Then, Samantha can just choose to give it back to us. Since it's rightfully hers to keep, nobody should be able to complain if she does as she wishes, especially if it's done for the sake of humanity."

It sounded like a long winded process but ultimately they believed that this would work and keep everyone happy.

Since this discussion had ended, it was time for the rest of them to talk about their situation on the planets, and what they had planned to do. It seemed like scuffles on the planets were happening every once in a while, but strong forces were no longer

attacking like they had done before. This was good news and bad news, as the Dalki could be waiting for them to run out of crystals.

Due to the situation it seemed like each group would have to come up with their own defensive measures, which would be implemented on a case by case basis as and when attacks happened. What they did agree on was that they wouldn't go on the attack. Not until they had successfully defended Blade Island from the practically guaranteed attack.

With that the meeting was over and everyone rushed off to do their own thing for now.

"Quinn, before I go remember what I said. You have done well so far and you need to continue to do so. I will also play my part in all this." That was all that Eno had to say. For the first time, the old man didn't have any intentions of sticking around.

For now, the others were preparing just how they would do the handling of the Demon tier weapon. Sam was calling for Bonny and Void to hold a press conference, leaving Quinn to do his own thing. Sach would stay for the filming process before heading off back to Samantha.

Walking around the ship, Quinn was looking for a few certain individuals, and found them repairing one of the training rooms, the Balde family.

"Quinn!" Sil shouted with a smile, breaking his concentration, dropping a giant metal slab he was holding up with his powers, but before it could drop to the floor, Vicky lifted it back up and put it in place, for Borden and Vorden to do the rest of the repairs.

It was still weird for Quinn to see Pai and Vicky, the last time he had seen them he was fighting with his life on the line, but with Sil and the others there he felt safer. One thing he was glad about was that he wouldn't have to ever fight them again. At least he hoped that would be the case.

After finishing the repairs, Vorden soon came over to Quinn, along with Borden and Sil. The others didn't care for Quinn too much.

"So what brings you here, I hope you don't need our help to take down another five spikes, I don't want to do that ever again." Vorden half-joked.

Quinn laughed nervously, because in a way he did want them for something along those lines.

"Actually I have a gift for you guys. I know how much help I need from you and there might be a time when we all need to fight like that again. So I have to make sure that you guys are as strong as you can be."

Quinn took a step back and lifted his hands. Hundreds upon hundreds of beast crystals started falling onto the ground, piling up. All these crystals were from the mothership he had taken down.

"I doubt Muddy and Tails will mind, but I need their bodies to evolve!"

\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1251: Blessing

When Quinn had first seen all the different levels of beast crystals on board the Dalki Mothership, the first thought he had in his mind was that he could use them to evolve both Vorden and Raten.

There weren't any tier crystals beyond that of the king tier, so there was no need for them to be used as equipment. Besides, there was something better they could get out of it.

A Demon tier beast as an ally was unheard of. Even Mona, who was part of the big four, could only control a Demi-god tier beast. At the same time, it was beneficial for both of them as well. The whole world was currently in a war. In a war like so, people didn't get to choose if they had to fight or not, they had to fight, and it was best if they had every chance they could at evolving so they could survive.

First up from the two of them was Vorden. He was currently an Emperor tier beast that could use the power of wind and had a fast agile body. As Vorden himself found out, the problem was that Emperor tier beasts were no match for the Dalki they were facing.

At first, Quinn had done a simple test. He had selected an intermediate tier crystal and allowed for Vorden's body to absorb it. When using the inspect skill Quinn could see that his evolution percentage had gone up by one percent.

Selecting another intermediate tier crystal, Raten was asked to do the same.

"Come on! Wouldn't it be better to just have me evolve?" Raten complained.  
"Surely one Demon tier beast would be better than having a legendary tier beast."

It was safe to say that Raten was looking forward to his evolution and what his new body's powers could bring him. After absorbing the one crystal, Quinn could see that Raten's evolution had only improved by 0.02 percent.

"You won't evolve," Quinn said. "Even if we were to give all the crystals to you, you wouldn't evolve. It looks like it's going to take a lot to evolve you Raten."

Raten looked disappointed by the answer, but he didn't think Quinn was lying. He hoped that even Quinn would know they needed a Demon tier beast more than anything after going up against the five spiked Dalki.

After absorbing close to two hundred crystals, Borden's body was going through the stages of evolution. His body was taking some time to take in the energy inside him. Eventually, a bright white light was shining from his body. The outline of it could be seen slowly changing.

His black fur on his head started to grow even longer, now reaching below his waist, While the hair on his tails would rise up even more. Another strange change

was his arms. The fur was coming out more so from it, nearly imitating tiny wings, and if one was to move the flowing hair going along his back, they could see the same.

Finally, the evolution was complete. Vorden was now at the legendary tier level.

"What type of beast are you?" Pai wondered as he got closer to looking at the details. "At first, because of the black fur and your forward like face, I thought you were some type of black wolf beast, but from your arms and small wings on your back. It looks like if you keep evolving, you're going to like some type of bird beast."

"It's stupid to try and compare beasts from other planets to the animals we have on earth," Vicky commented, pointing out the obvious.

"I don't know when I will be able to get our hands on crystals like that again. Especially with the situation as it is." Quinn said. "So maybe this will be the level you are at for a while."

"I can only say thank you, Quinn. I know what the situation is like." Vorden replied.

Since Quinn realised that the reminding crystal wouldn't evolve Vorden to the next stage again, they decided to use the rest on Raten. If they didn't, they could just see Raten complaining the whole way.

In the end, after absorbing all of the crystals, Raten was now 60.42 percent on his way to becoming a Demon tier beast.

"You know, speaking of crystals. Hilston had a bunch that he never used, that were all aboard that ship of his." Vicky said. "After he got the Demon tier set, he wouldn't accept anything less than that. So crystals would hardly be used. Although I'm guessing the ship is either in the hands of the Chained or Mother and father have it by now."

After saying the words mother and father, Vicky bit her tongue. She was trying to get out of the habit of saying those words, but after years of keeping up an act, the habit wouldn't be broken overnight.

"Quinn, what are you planning for us to do now?" Vorden asked. "I mean, when the Cursed ship is repaired, do you want us to protect the Cursed planets?"

"No," Quinn replied. "I think if we send any strong reinforcements, the Dalki might think we're prepping something and act out before then. At the moment, Sam is asking for small teams to be sent out to the three Cursed planets we have control of and setting up teleporters. The Dalki don't know our teleporters are back online, so we can go and help them out whenever we want."

"What are you going to do?" Sil asked.

Quinn held the Demon amulet around his neck and thought back to his defeat in the Dalki body against Graham.

"I'm thinking of going to some of the planets that have been taken over....Alone." Quinn answered. "The Demon tier amulet was made into something special, and I can use its powers to help us out the next time something like this happens again. So tell me then, why did you ask, what do you want to do?"

It was clear there was something on their mind, and Quinn could tell they wanted to ask something.

"Well, we were talking about it, but we wanted to head back to Blade island for a while. There are strong beasts on the island that Raten and I can use to evolve, and we also want to find any hints we can to find the other two Blade members that escaped. At the same time, Vicky and Pai wanted to use it as a base to get back to while they search for the Chained."

At the moment, Eno and Mona were heading towards Balde island to reinforce it. At the same time, Dennis had gone along with them since he too had the shadow powers so Quinn could quickly travel there. He would also set up the teleporters so the world leaders and Quinn could get there at any time possible.

"I'm not going to stop you guys, you guys are strong, and I can tell you your family history is important to you guys," Quinn answered. "But I just want you guys to be cautious. Eno, the demon tier beast, are on that island, and there is a high chance that it's the next place they will attack, but if they do, I will be there."

Vorden felt a little guilty about not telling Quinn the whole truth, as there was one more reason why he wanted to go there. It was to see if they could find anything on the fact that Hilston was trying to accomplish a Blade with a soul weapon. There had to be a method to his madness and something they might have missed.

This wasn't something Quinn needed to concern himself with.

"Quinn, if you need any help, you can ask us as well," Sil said with a smile. He seemed to be recovering well after the fight and everything to do with Hilston.

It was a good thing that Vorden and Raten were by his side, and even more of the Blade's with Vicky and Pai. They were able to just fill the family gap that Quinn couldn't.

Leaving them be, Quinn had one word to say to them all.

"You guys, make a good family and one hell of a scary one." Quinn smiled, leaving the room.

Using the Demon tier amulet to obtain more Dalki and create higher spiked Dalki was Quinn's goal. At the same time, he could use their exp to level up. Before he could go off the planet Caladi, he needed to wait for the preparation of the video that was to be made.

It was a broadcast to congratulate the Cursed faction while showing them giving the Demon tier weapon they had found. So before that, he couldn't leave the base, but there was still one more thing he wanted to do anyway.

Heading to his own training room, Sam had said there was a nice surprise for him when he got there. Entering the pin on the secure door, he was let in, and Quinn could see five different flasks laying there on the ground.

The flasks that were used to hold vampire blood.

'Did he borrow the flasks from the others? I guess I'm going to have to give them back.'

Opening up the lid and using the inspect skill, Quinn could immediately tell all the different types of blood in the flask gathered. Drops from hundreds of people in each of the flasks from all those in the Shelter. From the people, he had never consumed blood from before.

'My Qi right now is stronger than my blood power. It was a problem before, but it can help me suppress the blood addiction more so. So I can take more drops of blood at a time. My control has gotten better, so this shouldn't be a problem.'

Taking the first flask, Quinn started to drink it and got to work straight away. He could feel the red energy spiralling inside his body, but with how much practice he had done with his Qi, and his blood control having improved. It was almost too easy for him to get rid of the blood addiction.

What was difficult in the past was now simply effortless, and with the stat points gained, Quinn had a massive smile on his face as he figured out something.

'Wait a second, what is this! Why didn't I think of this before? Maybe the penalty was a blessing in disguise. Perhaps this is a chance for me to correct my stats!' Quinn thought as he went on to the next flask, and he could feel his body getting stronger by the second.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1252: Stronger than before

Although it was easy for Quinn to remove the effects of the Blood addiction, it still took some time for him to complete the process for each flask. While doing so, he was thinking about the best way he could allocate his stats.

Most people's blood type in the world generally had the O blood type. The good thing was that this particular blood type would give Quinn a free stat to use as he wished. Different blood types after consuming so many of the same blood type, would give him a stat in a specific area.

'Before every time I would level up, I would try to get my stats as even as possible. I thought being fast was just as important as being strong, and having the stamina to keep on fighting was as important as strength. However, after getting the legendary beast gear, things changed a bit.'

'The stats gained from the set focused mainly on speed. Adding a few stats to my base points here and there isn't really going to affect my speed much. I thought my strength was strong enough, but not enough to pierce the skin of a five spike. This time I know where to put the stat points.'

The penalty of course, still had affected Quinn. He had five fewer stats in every category, and if he was to do this, he still would have five more, but learning from the fight, he would now focus on putting his free stat points into strength.

In the end, after drinking the blood from all the five flasks, Quinn in a way, was actually at a stage where he was stronger than before the penalty.

[Strength 83]

[agility 72]

[Stamina 72]

[Charm 55]

Quinn realised that each flask had continued roughly the same amount of different blood in each of them. However, he would get fewer stat points from each one, as obtaining stats from blood was getting harder and harder.

His strength had been boosted beyond what it was before, while his agility and stamina were a little under what he had in the past. Hardly noticeable. The only stat that Quinn didn't bother to increase was his charm stat.

In the past, he had gotten it up to the sixty mark, but with the opponents, he was fighting and the position he was in, there really was no need for him to use the influence power to such a degree anymore. The only way to also obtain a charm

point was through a free stat by consuming the O blood type, and strength was a priority.

'This is amazing. Maybe I should start going to the Cursed factions and ask Helen and the others to do the same when I arrive. I'm sure they would understand, right?' Quinn thought.

'It might cause some worry.' Vincent said. 'I'm not saying that it will, but in the past, a long time ago, history states that there was a time that some vampires and humans tried to live together by doing such things, but it never worked out. Perhaps it will be different with you because you only require a drop of their blood and only once.'

'Although I'm sure questions will arise with what you are doing with that blood between them. At the same time, your stats are properly close to their limit if I was to guess. Just like in the past with the previous evolutions, your stats stopped growing at a point.'

Taking Vincent's word, Quinn thought he might be right. Would it be worth maybe upsetting this in the Cursed faction for a few extra stat points?

'Still, it's got to be better than death. Maybe I should just ask Helen to prepare it beforehand. It still takes a few hours for me to go through the process and get rid of the effects of the blood addiction.'

Speaking of a few hours, Quinn just realised how long he had spent in his personal training room and was sure that the others would be ready for filming any second now.

---

The filming was to take place in the main Cursed ship hall, which had been cleaned up and down, scrubbed until it was sparkling. Decorations even filled the halls, with flowers and paintings Quinn had never seen aboard the ship before. Quinn was surprised at how much they had done while he was away.

Sniffing the air a few times, Quinn could still smell it though.

"They can clean the room, but they can't exactly get rid of the smell of blood that easily, can they?" Fex said, coming up from behind.

Fex wasn't the only one in the main hall. A lot of the Cursed faction members had been invited inside the Cursed ship main hall. It was getting quite packed.

"I thought this whole thing was just going to be a quick video." Quinn looked at the crowds of people and excitement on their faces. There was even a stage that had been built. It reminded Quinn of the other ceremonies he had attended, such as the crowning of the vampire king.

"Apparently, Bonny said it will look more like an award ceremony with more people inside. It's got to look good for the public, ya know." Fex patted him a few times.

On the stage, Sach was standing there along with others, and it looked like they were going through a dress rehearsal. By his side was a holographic display of Samantha. Quinn would be 'giving' the sword to Samantha while actually handing it to Sach on stage.

"Hey, how was she?" Fex asked.

Quinn was wondering who he was talking about, and followed where Fex's eyes were looking. He could see he was staring at Samantha.

"Oh, you're actually worried about her. That's a surprise? I didn't think she would exactly be your type. Isn't she a lot older than you as well?" Quinn questioned.

"24, there's only around a 6 year difference, some people I know have hundreds of years of difference, and it still doesn't matter," Fex replied.

Quinn often forgot that Fex actually came from a different world. Although they were of a similar age, what was ordinary to him and ordinary to others was just two different things.

"Honestly, she seemed determined..but also something was still a little off," Quinn remembered back at the meeting. Although she had allowed them to have the sword, it didn't seem like it was because she wanted the Cursed faction to have it, but because she was undeserving of it.

"I think she could do with someone by her side," Quinn said. "If you can hit it at the right moment and actually talk to her like you care about her, unlike all those other girls you talk to, maybe you two can hit it off."

"Hey, the day I start taking love advice from you will be the day you become the vampire king." Fex jokingly replied, thinking that both things were doubtful.

---

Before the filming began, Quinn was instructed by Sam on everything that needed to be done. The main people that needed to be seen on camera were up on the makeshift stage, and the crowd watching were told when to cheer and clap.

It was different compared to when Quinn was being filmed before, but at the same time, there was less pressure on himself. This was because unlike all the other times he was on camera in the past, this was not going to be live. Bonny told Quinn that he could relax, and they could edit out whatever they needed to.

After filming for a short while, Void and bonny could be seen conversing with each other.

"He wasn't in the rehearsal, was he?" Void asked.

"No, he just came now, and Sam told him everything that needed to be said. We have been able to do nearly everything in one take." Bonny replied.

"Well, I was checking out the script that we gave to him as a guideline. I didn't expect him to, but he's been able to repeat the words exactly as they were written one by one. If what you are saying is true, he must have an incredible memory and be a really quick learner."

Hearing this, Bonny looked at Quinn and remembered the words that he, or at least someone, had said to her as she left. That she should give up on him.

'Who could give up on someone like him.' Bonny thought.

The Demon tier weapon being used was the real one, and the handling of the Demon tier sword was done so to Sach. Soon after, Samantha gave a speech about how thankful she was. Then it was Quinn's turn.

Walking up to the stage, he was meant to say a few words about Oscar, but a message sounded in his head just as he did.

'This is an important message, being sent out to all those in the Tenth family. A council meeting has been requested. I repeat a council meeting has been requested. Please come to the meeting or send a proxy in your place.'

The message was sent through telepathy, and looking out in the crowd, Quinn could tell that Fex had received the news as well. The voice was familiar, and without a doubt, it was from Jil.

'A message from the vampire world, and to come back? What is going on?' Quinn thought.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1253: Disruption

The audience below continued to look at Quinn as he stood there speechless, unaware of the message that he had just received. It was only when he noticed Bonny and Void each giving him a pensive look that he remembered that he was about to give a speech.

Putting the content of the message to the back of his mind, Quinn finished the whole recording speaking his lines, like a professional actor would have, but as soon as the whole show was over, he disappeared to the side, followed by Fex.

"Did you receive the order to head back to attend a council meeting as well?" Fex asked to make sure.

"Yeah, and their timing could hardly be any worse. The planets are still under the attack of the Dalki and they won't just stop if we're gone. I have a feeling that it might be Arthur." Quinn shared his own thoughts on the matter.

Soon, all of the Cursed leaders could see the concerned look on Quinn's face as he walked off to the command centre. They knew something was up and started to follow after him, waiting for him to tell them the reason for this sudden change.

"Sach, I'm sorry, but it seems like something has come up. I'm sure you can take the rest from here. You have been a big help to us and we'll let you know if we encounter any other problems." Sam said with a nod and the Supreme Commander understood not to ask any questions.

Although a message hadn't been sent out to him, the connection inside him had flicked for a second, almost resonating with Quinn's worry.

Judging by the confused looks on the others' faces it seemed like the only ones who had actually received the message had just been Quinn and Fex. Either Jil lacked a way of communicating with the others, or only those two were regarded as true vampires among the Cursed Faction. Whatever the case, Quinn quickly told them about the order.

"So they want you to go back, but they didn't tell you the reason?" Sam asked after listening to Quinn's explanation.

"Council meetings between the leaders used to be a rare thing, since the leaders could deal with their own vampires in their own families." Fex started to explain. "It was only later when Quinn and the worry of the Punishers was causing a ruckus that the Council would have regular meetings. If the Council is meeting up again, I can only imagine it is something serious."

"But Quinn there was something strange about the message. It said that you could send a proxy in your place. Do you think Bryce did that out of consideration

knowing that you might be busy? Or do you think he just doesn't want you to come?"

'Could this be an important enough matter to inform me that there was a meeting but at the same time he doesn't want me to be present? But if that's true, why even inform me in the first place?'

'I'm not sure how much the other vampires know about Arthur's Involvement with Jim and the Dalki. Maybe he's worried that me and Arthur are still close because we worked together in the past?' Quinn wondered.

"I..I don't think it's a good idea for you to go." Layla spoke up. "Whenever we go to that place there always seems to be a problem that you end up getting dragged into. If it happens again, then that means if the Cursed faction or the others find themselves in trouble we won't be able to help them!"

"Still, you have to keep in mind that no matter what, at some point the vampires will get involved in all of this." Sam added. "There's no way around it, not with the other half of the Demon tier beast in their possession. The Dalki may be focusing on the one on Earth, but at some point they will go for one in the Vampire World as well."

Both of them made good points, and the group started to discuss amongst themselves what the best course of action would be. Given Quinn's Shadow travel he could quickly get out if needed, but that would mean he would have to go alone, something the others weren't too keen on.

After all, nearly all of them were now involved in the Vampire World, they too were considered vampires!

"Let's contact Paul first. Maybe he has an idea why this meeting has been called." Quinn suggested. "Without knowing anything about the importance of the meeting, we might just be making a big deal out of nothing."

The call was being made to the other side and everyone was nervous as they could hear it ringing a few times. It not being answered right away was a sign that something serious must have happened, yet Quinn wasn't too worried, for he had neither gotten a message nor a Quest from the System about anything happening to the tenth or fourteenth castle.

"I was expecting a call from you at some point, but it came earlier than I thought." A voice eventually answered from the other end. Hearing that Paul was the one that answered, all of them felt relieved.

"We just received information about a council meeting, I'm sure you have been reading the reports I have been sending out from here." Sam said. Sam thought it was important that Paul also knew the situation in the human world.

From time to time, Sam would also contact Paul asking him for advice on what tactics to use or implement. After all, Paul had more experience when it came to these types of things.

"Yes I have, so I understand you're in a tricky situation. Let me get straight to the point then. The other day, the third leader was murdered. At the moment, there is no known suspect, but that has to be the reason for the meeting."

"Does it have anything to do with Arthur?" Quinn asked immediately before anyone else could say anything.

"Quinn, I fully know the situation over on your and our end. At the moment, there has been no signs of Arthur being involved. The way it happened, I'm not sure if it is something he would do, but the panic in place... From my point of view it appears that whoever killed the vampire leader, did so to create fear in the vampire community. If you wish, I can handle it, and I promise to inform you when it gets too much." Paul replied.

Honestly, there were more than a few reasons why Quinn didn't want to return to the Vampire World just yet. If Arthur was really on the other side, what could he even do to stop him? As a Vampire Lord he had been unable to do much against a weakened Slicer on his own, so what chance would he stand against the original Punisher?

On top of that, there were still the Dalki Quinn wanted to mark to give him a boost whenever possible. Lastly, the Cursed faction leader hadn't really gotten any closer to Paul's own request about turning his men human again.

Paul was doing a good job, and it seemed like he was taking things seriously. Quinn was aware that his Vampire Knight wouldn't blame him for not finding a way replicate something that only Vincent had succeeded in, in such a short time, but Quinn wanted to reward his diligence, feeling a little embarrassed that he had nothing to show for his time away.

'Quinn, I agree with you. Now isn't a good time for you to return. It would halt all the progress we are making here at the moment. Besides, you could find yourself in the middle of a fight between Arthur and Bryce.' Vincent said.

"Paul, I will leave things to you then!"

All the odd jobs that needed to be done had finally finished on Planet Caladi. Some of those that were in the Cursed faction had decided to stay on the planet, believing it was safer, while others decided to leave on the ship again now that repairs were done.

The idea was the Cursed faction would try to send support where it could not stay in one sector too long. The good news was that the teleporters that they had tested

so far were a success so in reality they had a plan to support the Cursed faction and Helen whenever it was needed.

Aware about what was happening in the Vampire World, Quinn was more determined than ever before to get to work as quickly as possible. He left on a ship to the planets in the Earthborn group, hoping to fight some Dalki gaining exp and catching more Marked.

He chose those planets, to avoid meeting Graham again. After landing on one, it didn't take long for Quinn to use the amulet powers obtaining his first Dalki again.

'Your power will become my power.' Quinn thought, looking at the one spike. 'So I need you and the rest to grow as strong as you can as quickly as possible.'

Meanwhile, Graham himself had actually decided to move out of the Cursed faction planet area. Currently, he was in the Graylash faction, inside one of the Dalki motherships.

"The plan so far has proceeded splendidly. It's over a bit quicker than we expected and now the humans are on the defensive. Now all we need to do is decide which one to attack first, I hope you won't fail this time?" Turning around, Graham was looking at another green liquid filled container, and inside it was a Dalki that was heavily wounded.

It had slashes across its body, broken bones on the outside and ripped scales all over. It was clear the markings were not done by a human and looked more like one done by a Dalki.

"They got rid of a single five spiked Dalki and look how much they are celebrating. Well I wonder how they will feel once they see you. Don't fail us for a third time, Green Horn, otherwise I will have to deal with it again myself." Graham said as the machine was activated and soon the Dalki's body was starting to heal.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1254: The Origin

Although Vicky and Pai had said they would be journeying around the beast solar system to catch the dangerous Chained that had escaped. They had decided to travel with the rest of the Blade family, heading towards Blade island.

Vicky and Pai needed a place to start and somewhere they could frequent back to. Although they were strong, the Dalki were still out there, and everyone had seen their faces on camera by now. They were no longer the Unknown Blade family, so the places they could stay without causing too much trouble were practically none.

Heading to the Blade island also meant the group would be heading back to Earth. Currently, all of the Blades were on a ship heading through the teleport station. All apart from the Blade children, they had remained on the ship. They would have liked to come but were told they were not allowed. It was a dangerous place, and possibly the centre of the next fight would be there.

Usually, the giant teleport station for ships was offline during these times of war. The station needed great power to be turned on again and would take some time. However, because Eno and Mona were heading back to Earth anyway, they were able to travel through it shortly after them.

After that, the station would be closed once again. For fear, the Dalki could use it in some way. However, since the Dalki named Dred had appeared on Earth, and the fact that the V were able to hide amongst humans, they knew there was already a way for the enemy to arrive on Earth despite this.

The ship approached Earth with relative ease. The military that was in charge of protecting Earth knew they would be arriving. Still, at the same time, there was far more security compared to the times before.

It had to be due to the warning given by Eno. Sach had gotten to work quickly.

Flying outwards to the island, they could see it off in the distance. It was a place they once all called home. Yet, it felt like hell for them all. Seeing it was brewing some odd feelings for them all.

Sil, Raten, Vorden, Vicky, Pai and finally another who had come along with them all, Borden. He was the only one that didn't have this strange feeling in his stomach.

Mona, Eno, Brock and Dennis had already set up base on top of the large Castle on the island itself. It wasn't too far from the giant tablet. Even on top of the Castle, one could look out and see the tablet as well as the Demon tier beast that was still resting.

"That's those Blade kid's Sam talked to us about, right?" Mona said, looking at the ship land in the large open space by the giant staircase leading up to the Castle.

"Yeah, he said that they would be doing their own thing. We don't have to worry about them. Remember, they were originally raised on this island, so whatever beast they run into, they can take them on." Dennis replied as he carried a large metallic object on his back.

"Now, tell me, where do you want this thing?" Dennis asked.

"The teleporter will need to be put in a safe place," Eno said while he was looking down. "We could either place it by the tablet or inside the Castle. I'm struggling to decide what the safe option would be."

"Oh." Mona was surprised. "I thought you were someone who had everything figured out. I'm surprised to hear you're struggling with a simple decision like this." Walking over to the edge, she went to look at what Eno had been staring at for so long. That's when her eyes could see what he was now looking at as well.

"Now you see my struggle. I'm pretty sure that wasn't there the last time I came here." Eno replied.

Exiting the ship, the group of Blades decided to walk up the long staircase together. Step after step, they did so slowly. Not a single one of them was running up the stairs in excitement at all.

"Come on guys, you are really slow. Do you need me to pick you up?" Borden said as he jumped up to the next step. He was no longer in his full human form compared to before, so now he was as small as a puppy climbing the stairs.

Vicky, watching this, couldn't help but stare in fascination and thought the whole thing was a little cute.

'This little guy was the same guy that was threatening us?' Pai thought.

"Hey, why don't you just stay on my shoulder for the rest of the way," Vorden asked. "You don't have to tire yourself out."

"I'm not tired, and you know I like to do things for myself. Besides, you guys are clearly worrying about other things. That Hilston guy you were all scared of is gone! So I don't know why you are all acting like he's still alive. This place used to belong to him, well now it's all yours." Borden shouted back as he continued to hop up the stairs, getting ahead of everyone else.

"Damn it, how can that little runt be so right! I can't believe I was feeling this way and hanging around with the loser bunch." Raten said as he ran ahead, catching up with Borden.

For the others, they looked at each other and smiled. Borden's words had picked them up a little. It was just so hard to believe that Hilston was gone. Any second, when they opened those doors, they were expecting to see Hilston on the other side.

When the others had finally reached the stairs, they could see the doors wide open, but there was no 'Family' that was there to greet them like there usually would be.

The inside of the place was empty, feeling emptier than usual.

"We came here last time, but we were unable to find anything other than a journal," Sil said. "Quinn has the journal at the moment, but other than all the ability users in that journal, it didn't seem to have anything else inside. Do you think we'll find anything this time?"

The reason they had come here was to perhaps learn what exactly Hilston was planning if he really was looking for a Blade with a soul weapon and why.

"Last time, you didn't have Pai and me." Vicky proudly said, walking in front taking the lead. "You have to remember, we left with Hilston when he decided to go after you guys, and you three were young, so they didn't exactly show you all the places in this Castle. What do you think is under the giant staircases in the first place?"

Thinking about it, although the Castle was on a type of Hill, the staircase and Castle seemed to be at a higher level than others. It was starting to make Vorden wonder, by Vicky's words, if they were man-made.

With a strong Earth ability, one could landscape the whole area to their liking.

'Is there something underneath the castle?' Vorden thought.

Following Vicky, she had eventually led them to one of the training rooms they all remembered well. Above reinforce glass could be seen. When looking, Vorden had memories of the tests he had been put through.

At the time, they were unaware that Raten and Vorden were in Sil's mind and were trying to force Sil to use his six abilities again. So he fought against a dangerous beast in this chamber, hoping to draw out his power.

Vorden could see a younger version of himself in Sil's body fighting for his life.

"Sil, although you had the power to wield six abilities, your body never did quite go through the change that Hilston wanted for you, unlike the rest of us. We were able to achieve superhuman bodies, but you weren't. We all saw Hilston losing to that five spike. I'm not telling you to continue that training again now. Still, if you are going to go up against the Dalki again, maybe it would be a good idea to practice in this room from time to time." Vicky suggested.

Hearing this, Sil thought they were right. Sil knew that if he was to fight Hilston head on, or Slicer that he wouldn't have survived, which was why he had taken advantage of the situation in the first place.

However, thinking about training in this place again made him think of the temple and every bad thought that came with it.

"We can do that somewhere else," Vorden said. "It doesn't need to be in this place. We are just here to find out more about Hilston and get some crystals."

Turning around, Vicky headed to the centre of the training room.

"You know, you can't keep protecting him like that. It's because of you two in the first place protecting him that he hasn't been able to grow."

Pai had pressed some buttons on the monitoring machinery by the side of the room, and a steam-like substance started to appear out from the centre of the room. Then a circular platform could be seen.

The group walked on the platform, and soon it started to sink into the ground like an elevator. The first things they could hear were the cries and shouts of beasts.

"Where is this place taking us?" Vorden asked. Worried that they were heading into a trap, but what reason could Pai and Vicky have for doing that now?

"Don't worry. It's a separate storage place that Hilston used and was where the strong beast you used to fight with when you were younger were kept. Honestly, without being fed, I'm not sure how they were able to stay alive this long."

When the evaluator finally stopped, the door opened, and two people could be seen standing in front of them. Immediately all of them were ready for a fight.

"Mother! Father!" Vicky shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1255: Fake Family

NOTE: My Werewolf system is now out on Webnovel.

Search for it on web novel

\*\*\*\*\*

Looking around at their situation, Vorden was trying to figure out what was going on. Whether their group had been led into a trap and now Vicky and Pai would be turning on them with their mother and father.

With the four of them, it would be a difficult fight for them to get out of.

However, judging by Vicky and Pai's quick reaction and genuine look of shock on their face, it seemed like they had no idea what they were doing down here either. Because of this, the instincts in their bodies had fired up and were telling them to fight.

Vicky was the one who acted first, throwing out a punch. It was soon not only blocked by her mother but also for it to swiftly be knocked away. After, she pulled her arm and put Vicky in a type of lock around her neck so she wouldn't be getting away.

Pai, seeing her sister in trouble, also quickly went in to help. Still, before he could do anything, he felt a kick to his knee and his upper body falling before he was grabbed and turned around, being held from behind with both of his arms held back.

He tried to kick behind him, but they were hitting nothing but air.

'His strength, he's so much stronger than me.' Pai thought, attempting to break free.

If a normal civilian who had seen the video of the Blades fighting had seen this, they would be wondering just what was going on. Neither side had used a single ability. Surely in such a situation, they would have used one.

The reason was simple, they had no ability to use, because of the amount of time that had passed.

The Blades hadn't brought any ability users with them, so they had no powers to share. In the first place, they didn't want to drag anyone who was uninvolved in the matter. It also felt strange to carry an ability user with them just to use their power. It was a disgusting feeling, and it reminded them of the Chained, which in turn made them think of Hilston.

This was why Pai and Vicky were unable to use their powers.

It turned out, it was the same for their parents, who had been in the castle for an unknown amount of time. Even though all four of them had super bodies, they lost out in skill and power when it came to their older parents.

Regardless of their situation, both Vicky and Pai had a smile on their face because they weren't panicked at all. For there were those with them that didn't need to use any abilities at all, and even when they had their abilities, they had put up a good fight against them.

"Let go of them you two!" Vorden shouted.

Their father made sure to point their bodies in the direction of the beasts in front of them, using them as types of shields.

"If we do, then it will leave room for you to attack us. If you take one step closer, we will finish them. We have the strength to do so." The father said.

"Do you think I care!" Raten screamed, charging forward. Vorden wanted to hold him back, unsure if their threat was real, but it was too late. The speed of the Demi-god tier beast was great, and Raten was directly behind the two of them, with two mud blades pointed towards their back.

"Stop!" Sil shouted, and the mud blades had stopped before they pierced their flesh.

'Damn it, my body listens to Sil. All those years spent being in his head, it was like my mind acted on reflex.' Raten was complaining and ready to attack again, but by then, both parents had let go of Vicky and Pai.

"I can tell. They don't want to hurt us. They're just like us. There is no reason for us to fight." When Sil had said these words, everyone there realised it was true. For some reason, they all thought they were against each other when their eyes met.

It was either them or us mentality, but was that really the case? Even the parents hesitated whether it was right to attack or not, but started to defend themselves when they saw the others coming towards them.

"We didn't come here to fight." The male Balde said of the two. "We didn't even expect any of you to be here. Please let's just talk things through. Remember, we too wanted to let go of this dreaded life."

The fact that all of them had experienced the same thing, and the cause of all their problems was one person, it felt like they could tell when and if the other person was telling the truth or not and at the moment, they felt like they were.

'Seriously, one family member caused this much trouble for all of them. Just what did Hilston Blade do to them all.' Borden thought, as the group now were accompanied by two more members of the Blade family.

Instead of calling them father and mother, they had introduced their given names to the rest of the group. The mother Blade, went by the name Tina, while the father was named Kane. It turned out that the reason for being in such a place was to pick up a few items from the storage room.

"There are a lot of items in this place that weren't good enough for Hilston, but we left them down here, of course."

The group was currently walking through a dark tunnel, lit lightly from small embedded light crystals in the ground. However, they didn't provide much light at all for the group. The Darkness made it hard to see and was adding to the spookiness of the place.

What would have been even more heart-pounding for some was the sounds that they could hear throughout. The snarling and banging noises that would ring through the tunnels.

The ground was flat and well made but seemed like it was done using an ability. Since it was made from the same material as the ground itself, rather than some type of metal.

Where this was different was the side of the walls. There were metal bars similar to a prison cell, but they weren't ordinary cells or bars. These were around ten meters in height, from the ground to the ceiling, and the bars were made from Glathrium.

Looking through one of the cages, Borden could just see glowing eyes staring back at him. Still, when Raten looked at several of them, they could be seen backing away and going silent awfully quick.

"Haha, look at those weaklings." Raten laughed. "They're scared of me, aren't they? Just wait until I get your crystals and grow even stronger."

Of course, those in the cages were beasts of high tiers, but Raten himself was a beast that was even higher than them, and they could sense that. They weren't willing to anger the beast at the cost of their lives.

"When we heard the elevator activating, we knew someone was coming down here, so we went to take a look, but we just never expected it to be you guys," Kane said.

"How, how did you get here, aren't there others that are meant to be protecting this place," Vorden asked.

"Brock let us in," Tina replied. "You know we have a good relationship with him."

Vorden thought it would have been nice for Brock to at least meet them and inform them that there were other Blades on the island or in the castle. He must have known how sensitive the situation would have been between them all.

Finally, the group had reached the storage room. There was no door or anything of the sort for protection. Like most things on Blade island. Because no one would even think of betraying Hilston while being on the island.

It was just one large empty circular room filled with Crystals and beast equipment that had been forged. Piled on top of each other as if they had no importance. The things in the room would have caused factions to have wars over.

They could even see the armour that had been given to the other Blade's who worked on the island here or used to work here.

"Well, this doesn't really help us all that much apart from the crystals," Vorden said, having a look and feeling a little upset. In the past, while having a human body he would have been far more excited to have seen such items.

"You know, there are certain beast crystals that can be forged and work on Beasts as well. So I wouldn't be too upset." Tina said.

The group started to search the room. While Tina and Kane stood by the side. They had already got what they wanted from the room, but that's when they noticed that none of them were happy with what they were finding, as if they were after something else.

"Nothing, there is nothing," Sil said, disappointed, kicking a piece of armour away. There was nothing about Hilston Blade, so what would they do now? Looking towards the two that were with them, now they were Sil's only hope.

"Did you not find what you were looking for?" Tina asked.

It certainly was a big haul for the group, and when they left the place, Vorden could inform Dennis of what they found. It could be put to good use for the war.

"Actually, we were looking for information about Hilston," Vorden said. "If we couldn't find anything here, like we have done, the next thing we were actually going to do was ask you guys.

"Why did Hilston make us all pretend to be a family? Why was Hilston desperately searching for Sil and making so many...children! Why put us through all that!" Vorden asked.

The two of them stayed silent for a while until the answer had finally left their lips.

"This is probably what you didn't want to hear, but we don't actually know the answer," Kane replied.

At that point, Sil, Vorden, Pai and even Vicky wanted to fall to their knees. Having come on this journey with them, their curiosity soon started to grow as well, but the last people that perhaps would have known an answer, didn't have one for them.

"They might not know, but I do. For I have been with Hilston, even longer than he has known himself." A voice said, entering the room. His face came into view, and they could see that it was none other than Brock.

"Do you really want to know everything there is to know about the Hilston Blade?"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1256: The Creation of the Blade family

NOTE: My Werewolf system is now out on Webnovel.

Search for it on web novel

\*\*\*\*\*

Seeing Brock standing there for some reason he didn't look too out of place with the rest of the Blades, despite the fact that he was actually a vampire, but then it hit Vorden. The reason he didn't look out of place was because Brock wasn't.

Ever since Vorden had been in the family he had known Brock, for he had been the Head Butler of the entire castle. When the others had found out about him, Quinn had updated them on who Brock really was, how he had been working for Eno and through the years of working for the Blade family would constantly change his appearance.

Since he had always been part of their life, none of them had ever asked themselves the question about just how far back Brock's history with the Blade family actually dated?

'It would make sense that Brock started to follow the Blade family after they had settled on the island or once the Demon tier beast came into play, but if he really knows that much about the Hilston Blade's past, could it be possible that he was following him even before that? But why?' Was the question running through Vorden's mind?

Of course, Kane, Tina, Vicky and Pai were left quite confused as to why the Head Butler would know more about the Blade family than themselves.

"I want to know, Brock please if you can, tell us!" Sil requested.

Sil didn't care why Brock knew, he just wanted answers.

"Then let me start from the beginning of Hilston Blade's life. He might not have looked like it, but he has lived for far more years than any of you might imagine. He has long since gone beyond the limit of a regular human, in more than just one sense." Brock started to explain, but even his first words were confusing for the Blade family.

What did he mean by this? The only beings able to outlive normal humans they knew of were vampires, but Hilston had never shown any signs of being a vampire whatsoever. The more they heard the more questions they started to have, but Brock's demeanor made it clear that he wasn't about to stop until he finished answering Sil's request.

"When I start my story, the beginning of this tale might sound awfully familiar to some of you. For you see, Hilston grew up without any family. As an orphan, he had been unaware of any other living relatives and during the time period he had been born into, it had been nearly impossible to trace back or find out who his true family were."

"Growing up, he had been bullied by those around him that were of a similar age, and he had no support whatsoever. The only thing he had been able to do was steal and fight to survive. However, as a small child there had been many others who had beaten him once they had caught him, stealing what little he had."

"This continued for nearly his entire childhood life until someone had come into his life, a stranger had decided to pick him up. His days of being beaten and bullied had suddenly been over. No longer had he been forced to steal or rummage through bins for stale food, able to enjoy his life for the first time. In fact, it was that person who had inspired him to take on his last name."

"After pampering and looking after Hilston for two years, he had kicked him out of the house. This had come as a shock to young Hilston, who had done no wrong. He had been ready to dedicate his life to the person who had gotten him off the street, wondering why the man had suddenly abandoned him?"

"Hilstion had begged and pleaded to at least get an explanation. After waiting in front of his benefactor's door for a week, the man had eventually opened the door, telling him a few simple words: 'Do you know why those other people kept on beating you? It was because you were weak. If you wish to return to my side, then become a Blade that I can use, one stronger than any other.'"

"These words had sprouted in his head as he had received kindness for the first time since he could remember. Young Hilston had been unable to understand the meaning behind those words at first. No matter how many times he came back and pleaded to the man, he would beat him and leave him barely alive."

"One day, while following him, he found that the man had picked up another young boy. One that was similar in age, and was treating him with the same kindness that he had received. 'Why, Why does that boy deserve that man's kindness and not mine, is he stronger than me?' was Hilston's thought."

"This was when Hilston started to go down the dark path, he wanted to prove to the man that he was stronger, and in doing so he had brought back the body of the boy that the man had looked after in his hands to his door."

"Usually people would be frightened by this fact, would have called the child a demon but instead. The man smiled and took in the boy encouraging his actions. Perhaps Hilston thought that would be the end of his troubles, but once again the pattern had repeated. Hilston was kicked out again and sent away, the process

repeated itself with Hilston proving he was stronger than the others he was replaced with, until a boy who had been taken in his place, had an ability."

"Remember, abilities existed before the Dalki war. They were rare but people either kept them secret or taught them within their family line, but it seemed like even this boy was unaware and the man wanted to grow it once again."

"I could imagine the thoughts going through Hilston's head at this point, that he was weak, he needed to get stronger so the man, the only person who had accepted him, would take him in. Once again, Hilston set out to kill the new man's favourite boy, but with an ability how would he fare?"

"It was only then that Hilston had discovered while fighting his opponent, that he too had an ability and it was the same as the boys. This was the start of the Blade family ability. One would think he could finally live in peace with the man as he had always wished for but instead he had become paranoid."

"He had already experienced being replaced by some stronger than himself and it was not a feeling he wished to relive. Hilston grew a strong body by training day and night with this fear, and even if he was to meet other ability users, his ability and body put together were strong enough to combat theirs."

"As he got older he no longer needed to rely on the man but stayed as a close acquaintance until he eventually had raised a family of his own. Eventually his wife blessed him with a beautiful child, a boy. The man that had taken Hilston in was treated by him like his father, and one day he had come over as a grandfather to play with the boy. Then at a certain age, Hilston's own son was known to have an ability, the same ability as himself, only it was slightly better than his."

Listening to this part of the story, Vorden thought it was similar to all the Blades' today. Their powers varied in how many abilities they could carry. Still, he let Brock finish his story.

"The mysterious man frequently visited their household but instead of paying attention to Hilston he only had eyes for the boy."

"So many years had gone by with no problem whatsoever, that nobody realised that the true fear had struck in Hilston once again. 'What if that man was to stab me again?' He did what no father would have ever done, and just like many times in the past. Hilston had proved that he was the Blade that the man needed, not his son."

"You see from his Dark past I can only fill in the pieces of what else I know. The man and Hilston at some point separated, but his desire to please this person had never left. The Blade family ability has one crucial weakness, and that is the fact that it requires other abilities in order for its powers to be used. Otherwise it only lasts for twenty four hours."

"Coming to this realization Hilston became obsessed with growing stronger and he couldn't stand this one weakness. He believed that the answer was in the soul

weapon. He had seen through his family the ability grow stronger. So perhaps there would eventually be one with a soul weapon that could cover for this weakness"

"But why did this benefit him? Without realising it, through the years Hilston had been able to gather abilities that would slow down the aging process, heal his insides wounds and disease , and also was able to obtain a superhuman body where the cells aged at a slower rate, but even all of those things wouldn't explain how he had managed to live for so long."

"The answer, you two might already know for yourselves." Brock said, pointing towards Raten and Vorden. "If you haven't guessed, he used the same ability that the boy Shiro has, and transferred his mind into theirs. Swapping bodies and killing his old self inside. Whenever he found someone stronger than himself this would repeat this pattern. So now you know the reason why Hilston was obsessed with getting Sil back."

"As for why he asked you all to be treated as a family I do not know the answer. Maybe it was because he never had a real family growing up. Or perhaps it was due to him trying to forget of the perfect family he had in the past that he himself had ruined. Perhaps running away from this all, but that is everything I know about Hilston Blade."

The others were left speechless not knowing what to say. However, it left a lot for them to think about, in particular Vorden was struggling with the story that Brock told for a few reasons. How did Brock know so much detail about Hilston's past from when he was a child?

The way he spoke about Hilston's thoughts were certainly strange and it sounded like it was more than just Brock's assumptions. Lastly, the scariest thing about the story was the mysterious man.

The man who had turned Hilston into the monster he was today, it almost seemed as if his actions had been intentional. It was a scary thought that there might be a person out there who was more cruel and messed up than Hilston Blade.

Vorden just hoped that this person was no longer alive.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1257: Ramblings of a Mad Man

After witnessing what was out there from the top of the Castle, Eno, Mona and Dennis decided to head down and check out the tablet and Demon tier beast. As the one who had to transport the heavy portable teleporter, Dennis was lagging behind the other two. He had the strength to be faster without tiring out, but since he had been told that it was sensible equipment he was nervous about tripping on some root or such.

'I just wanted to enjoy some quiet days with Megan, yet here I am stuck with people I don't really know. ... just gotta remind myself that I'm doing this for everyone and that includes Megan. If we don't do what needs to be done then the whole world will suffer.' The vampire thought to himself, elated that they were getting closer to their destination.

As they went through the Castle, Brock who was originally with them decided to split off. There hadn't been any words exchanged between Eno and Brock which Dennis found a little weird, but decided to ignore it.

He wondered what could be so strange that it had caught the attention of the other two, but before he had the chance to get a proper look at it, they were already back on the move. Finally they could see the large tablet. The loud snores coming from the Demon tier beast were frightening in itself.

"Hey, this beast, it really doesn't attack us right?" Dennis asked in a low voice.

"I don't know, to be honest, I was passed out for the most part last time." Mona shrugged her shoulders. "Apparently Quinn talked to the tablet or something and whatever's inside made it so the beast agreed not to attack us. Let's just hope our stay here won't disturb its slumber and it will recognise us even without Quinn by our side."

That didn't sound very convincing, so Dennis decided to follow the others a few steps back, so he could get a head start if anything was to happen.

'Should I just start setting up the teleport here and now so I can use it if the beast attacks us? The beast should be too large to get through the teleporter... right?' Dennis thought nervously.

However, going up the slight hill, the pathway started to level out and that's when he could see what they had all been staring at. Dennis hadn't been part of the group last time, not that they had come to Blade Island for sight-seeing, but it was certainly eye catching.

The ground was mostly flat and towards the back was a giant tablet that looked like a small mountain. Then off to the side of the tablet lay the Demon tier beast, but

none of these things had caught Dennis' eyes or the others, it was what laid in the centre.

A human sized tree with pink flowers. The pink colour radiated and when staring at it, Dennis felt like he was so at peace.

"That thing definitely wasn't there before." Mona said.

"Yes, and it resembles something that I have seen before elsewhere." The tree reminded Eno of the Demon tier beast that Quinn had ultimately defeated only smaller in size, but what was it doing here?

Eno was the first to walk up to it, unafraid, yet he gave a hand signal for the others to stay back. If it really was a sapling of that Demon tier tree with the same abilities as the other one, there was a risk Mona and Dennis would be Marked, and Eno still had a use for them.

He was confident in his own powers and skills to fight off such a Marking. Walking close to it there was no such reaction at all from the tree, making Eno wonder if it was even a beast at all. When he finally got within touching distance he quickly placed his hand on the tree.

'This certainly is confusing? Is it a beast or is it not? It's almost as if the crystal in its body hasn't finished forming. These days I keep running into things that I am struggling to make a decision on. However, if it was a threat then I'm sure that the other Demon tier beast would have gotten rid of it. Maybe we can use this, and if it does evolve into a Demon tier beast that would be another great thing to have.' Eno thought.

"Okay I've decided, place the portal near the tablet. The Demon tier beast is protecting the tablet, so I don't think it will let it come to any harm." Eno turned around to address the other two. "The castle is a standout landmark, so they might go for it first. Not that the tablet isn't but I'm sure the tablet will be kept in good condition."

Listening to Eno's commands, Dennis got to work setting up the teleporter. While making his way over, he had activated his shadow, to cover the side view. Dennis wasn't someone that was often afraid of beasts, but how often had he had the chance to come close to a Demon tier beast?

Just being near the thing made him want to turn around and escape as far away as possible, so the only way to work properly was to pretend it wasn't there. He paused every time the Dragon let out a loud snore, afraid that it would be a sign of it waking up, but fortunately, each time nothing happened.

Eno had decided to stay by the tree, observing it closer, which left Mona with pretty much nothing to do. Once the teleporter was set up she wanted to explore Blade Island further, looking for any other beasts that she could put to use.

They needed to work out their defences for protecting the place, but she hadn't left yet and couldn't stop looking towards Eno. Eventually she walked up to him and said what was on her mind.

"Hey, old man. You're actually a vampire, right?" Mona asked. "I was thankful for you saving me back then and looking after me which is why I haven't said much but I just am trying to understand your actions a little more."

"You must have seen a lot of crap throughout your life, and it's clear you're no ordinary vampire. I understand why Quinn is helping us since he was originally human, but what about you? Why are you doing so much for us humans?" Mona asked.

Hearing this, Eno stopped what he was doing for a second and looked at Mona. He wasn't staring at her but instead was staring directly behind her as if he was thinking about something.

"You know, it's been so long I often forget the reason why I do this." Eno answered with a slight smile.

Mona thought at this point that Eno was pulling her leg, if he didn't want to tell her, he didn't have to, but he could just say that instead of making up a bad excuse like that.

"However." Eno continued. "Whenever I think I'm starting to forget I decide to head back to a certain place. That reminds me of why I do everything I have done."

"Us vampires have a history that nearly dates back as far as humans and it wouldn't be the first time my kind would have wiped out an entire race, which everyone else eventually forgot about. I fear that history is repeating itself and the same thing might happen again."

After seemingly having said his piece, Eno looked back at the tree again and Mona didn't feel any wiser as to why this enigmatic old man was on their side. Just as she was about to head off and do her own thing, thinking the other two would be fine without her, Eno continued his answer, having placed a hand on his chin.

"No wait, I don't think that's quite right either. The original reason why I wanted to help you humans has changed as time passed. You don't need to have lived as long as I have, to have experienced it."

Your views change drastically from when you were 10 to when you're 20, from when you were 20 to when you're 30 and so on. So imagine how many times my views on the world have changed."

"My reason for helping has changed, sometimes subtly, sometimes drastically. Even now I am finding new reasons to help out, but I will say one thing, Mona. In

the past I have been able to help out people, letting humans avoid their death and end by helping here and there."

"Perhaps my actions are similar to those gods that don't wish to get involved too much, but this time it appears that if I don't get involved that there will be a real end. During the first Dalki War I have merely helped from the background, so getting involved to this degree, poses a huge risk to my own life. Something I never even considered before."

"Perhaps, I shouldn't even be telling you these things, but I am because there is a chance that I won't survive and will never be able to answer your questions again. I tell you what, why don't you come over here." Eno suggested.

Mona had asked that she had considered one simple question, she hadn't expected the old man to go on rambling, and the way he spoke it was as if he was forgetting what he was saying the moment he said it.

It was actually making her reconsider if they should really put so much hope into this so-called great scientist. Still, she honestly was indebted to this man, and if he wanted to harm her or turn her she would at least let the man have that much for saving her life.

Walking over, Mona felt a little nervous and at unease, she always did around Eno, despite him doing no harm or showing any immediate red flags. When coming over, Eno grabbed her hand and placed a small little circular digital device with a star as its base.

"It's a lock that is linked to my heart. When I die, or my heart stops beating, that will open up. It's a small map which will lead you to my special place. If you go there, you will find things that you will need at the time. Remember, I am always planning ahead." Eno stated with a smile.

'How can he talk about his own death so easily? Is this why I can't shake the dark feeling I get from him?' Mona wondered.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1258: The worst century yet

'The worst century yet' was a phrase that had started to become common in the vampire settlement these days. Vampires used to live without much grief or problems, whether one looked at it internally or externally.

Of course there had been the occasional disputes between the families, but those had usually only affected the families in question. Yet somehow one problem seemed to follow the next one, affecting vampire society as a whole lately.

Despite the new King having been crowned not too long ago, a new council meeting was to take hold soon. However, this time the public was very well aware as for the reason behind it.

When Suzan's body had been seen, the news had spread so rapidly that every single vampire had heard of her demise before her body could even be taken down. Not only had a leader been killed, but it had happened in her own castle where she had gotten pinned to the wall.

What made matters worse, was the fact that the vampire settlement shouldn't be under any external threat of any kind. However, the signs were all pointing that the attack had to have been done from someone externally, so fear was growing in the vampires, especially for those in the third family that had just lost their leader.

Paul, having been given the okay from Quinn, had gone out to attend today's council meeting in his place. He arrived at the King's castle, where the Royal guards were guarding the entrance. Some in the public were shouting, demanding explanations given the recent event. Unlike humans, even regular vampires had great power, but the Royal guards made sure that things remained civil.

Any leader was allowed to attend with their two Vampire knights, yet because Paul himself was a knight and Leo being here was a secret, he had decided to bring two replacements with him, Timmy, and Xander.

He had left his second in command Ashley behind since he felt given the nature of the council meeting, actual vampires who knew more about how things worked in the Vampire World, would be better suited.

The two were over the moon when Paul had selected them, thinking that their hard work had paid off. At the same time they were nervous, since they understood the difference in standing between themselves and the others who would attend.

Even if they weren't in the tenth family, the other knights and leaders would look down on their group when they entered the room, for they were in a place and a position that would perhaps be undeserving if they were with any other family.

Now standing outside the council door, Xander and Timmy took a deep breath.

"Relax, it's unlikely we will be much involved in the meeting. As such, I just need you to listen and pay close attention to the reactions of the other leaders. Should the need arise, I will be the one talking. Honestly, the goal for our family is to try to stay out of this matter as much as possible."

"As long as it doesn't involve us there is no need for us to help any of them out." Paul explained, but his mind went back to his talk with Muka. About those in the other families that had gone missing.

He was still wondering whether these two matters were related in some way. If that turned out to be the case, then there might be a need for them to get involved, even though he didn't want Quinn to worry.

The two guards that were standing outside, opened the doors wide and allowed them to walk. Another guard led them to the council room and when he opened the door, the trio was surprised that it was in absolute chaos. The other leaders were in the midst of discussion and it looked as if everyone else had already long since arrived before them.

The only ones that weren't present yet were the King and his two Royal knights.

"Everyone, please quiet down!" Kazz demanded. As the current head of the first family it was usually her job to get the leaders under control, but most of them didn't acknowledge Kazz as a true leader. After all, once a real first leader would be selected her position would go back down to being a Vampire knight.

For a second, her and Paul's eyes met, but they soon looked away from each other again.

"A leader was killed in their own home! There wasn't even any sign of fighting, so who else could it be if not HIM?!"

"We need to find out the reason why they were targeted. Whoever has done this clearly wanted us to see what was going on!"

"Suzan was no weak leader and there were no signs of fighting in her castle. She might have been attacked by her own people. I demand that we interrogate their knights!"

The reason why there was more chaos than usual was also because there were many new vampire leaders in the room. After Bryce's election and his selection of Royal knight, there had been a need to fill the void.

However, soon everyone went silent, as the sound of a clacking cane could be heard from outside the room. The sound of the clacking was getting louder and louder and one could tell it was filled with anger. The doors were swept open from

the other side, the side only the King was allowed to enter from and signs of his red aura could be seen.

Bryce was there with his eyes glowing red and the energy could be felt from every single one of them in the room.

'He has gotten a lot stronger and more confident than before.' Paul analyzed. 'Is this just because of the Absolute Blood book?'

"We should have known this was going to happen. When we knew of HIS existence we should have gotten rid of him immediately!" Bryce spat out as he walked to sit down on his seat. Behind him were Prima, the fastest vampire ever known, and Kyle the vampire with the strongest defense.

"In the past many of you didn't believe me that he would be a threat to us and would bring doom to us all. There is only one person who is strong and capable enough to not only infiltrate but kill a leader without anyone else noticing it. The Punisher, Arthur!"

The vampires knew Bryce's strong feelings towards the Punishers, but the fact that he had indirectly allowed Quinn to do his own thing, and had said nothing about Arthur up until this point had made them assume he had decided to let the matter go, yet his reaction made it clear that it was a mistake on their part.

"Forgive me, Your Majesty, but what makes you believe this is Arthur?" Jin asked. "I don't know of a reason why he would return and attack us now of all times."

"You know that all of the Punishers of the old died, so it's only natural that he is blaming us for this." Bryce replied. "Is there anyone else who would be so daring, who would be capable of such a feat? There were no signs of fighting whatsoever, which is proof in itself that the Shadow power must have been used!"

Xander and Timmy continued to look around at the Vampire leaders and knights checking if there was any sort of reaction at all like they had been asked. Strangely they didn't even have to look hard, for it was visible on some of their faces.

There were vampires that were panicking about the situation, visibly shaken up at the thought that Arthur had returned.

"Although I do think that the most likely person is Arthur, I also think that we shouldn't rule out any other possibilities." Sunny commented. "After all, none of us have suspected Cindy behind all those wrong doings not too long ago."

This was a recent memory that they wished to forget but it was true. Her betrayal had made it abundantly clear that it was possible that a traitor could be hiding amongst them.

"Now is not the time for our council to sleep and point fingers at each other." Prima stated. "We shall act under the assumption that the Punisher Arthur is back."

Everyone should be putting in measurements in place, to capture the culprit and protect themselves and their families."

Looking towards Paul, Bryce had an evil glint in his eyes. "With the absence of the Cursed family's leader, I hereby call for a vote. I suggest forbidding him from returning to the settlement until this matter gets resolved."

This came as a shock to Paul. He had never expected them to go this far. With this abrupt change, he could no longer just sit around and stay silent.

"May I ask for the reason behind such an action?" Paul inquired, having raised his hand before speaking out of turn.

"While I'm not accusing Quinn of being involved in this attack, we know that Arthur has come to his aid in the past when he had been in trouble. As much as his help may aid us in this time, as the one who had inherited his shadow power, having him amongst us, would be the same as inviting the Punisher into our midst. He could just strike us, and run away whenever needed." Bryce explained.

The Vampire King didn't hide his disdain for the tenth family's leader, yet the logic behind his suggestion was sound and that was a problem. The council got to voting quickly, and even the vampire leaders that had been on Quinn's side in the past ended up voting to have him stay outside, afraid that Arthur might be behind it.

"The original Punisher. I do remember he had great power. Are you sure we will be able to deal with him?" Tempus asked.

The vampire spoke without any formalities, which rubbed the other leaders the wrong way a little bit, but as an original vampire he technically outranked them all, allowing him to get away with certain things.

"I have a little suggestion with who or how you could solve this problem of yours. Many of you probably know that your ancestors including the originals can only be woken up with blood from your own blood line. However, for the originals themselves there is one other way."

"The blood from another Original also works." Tempus revealed with a smile.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1259: Unsettled

Tempus seemed like an easy going leader for an Original. Ever since he had been put in charge of the second family following Cindy's betrayal, he had done well to reformat and implement changes. It turned out that there were far more underlying problems than the others had originally thought.

Under Cindy's rule, the men of the second family had been discriminated against. No matter how much promise they might have shown, most had been put aside, never receiving a promotion to the inner castle. As for those, who had actually received that highly sought after promotion, they would disappear, having actually been sent off to be tested and experimented on.

Cindy had been far crueler to her own family members than anyone had realised, having attempted to forcefully create a blood fairy. To achieve her goal she had made use of her own ability to revert the changes over certain vampires. It was an amazing feat, only possible due to her great proficiency in her own ability, yet it had been an unimaginable torture for her people, one that would repeat over and over again.

There had even been a few humans that had been captured, once turned into a subclass, if it was one she hadn't been expecting she would revert the change and go through the process again. As for the captured vampires, it was to raise an army of Bloodsuckers. Tempus had shed light on this mistreatment, quickly abolishing this favoritism, making him well liked amongst his people. Of course, the other leaders didn't mind him too much because he had chosen to not get involved or complain about the other families like the other leaders did.

However, if there was one thing they could complain about, then it would be how frequently he visited the King, and the other leaders believed that the new king and Tempus were playing favours due to him being an original.

This was the main issue. Tempus was an Original, one of the first thirteen that had created the families in the first place. He was a figure that was meant to be well respected, which was why nobody thought he was joking with his idea of reviving the others.

Not only that, but the big question was, why mention this fact. Even Bryce was struggling to understand.

'There are still vampires from all the original thirteen families.' Bryce thought. 'So all of the past leaders and originals can be awakened without using an Original. So then why has Tempus decided to reveal this fact to everyone?'

'Is he setting a trap? Did he intend to lure someone into using his blood to awaken the others? Or is he simply threatening them, stating that he could awaken the other Originals whenever he wished?'

There were many possibilities, and the smile on Tempus' face was annoying even to Bryce, but he did well to hide it. Tempus was a good ally to have, and at the moment he couldn't afford to make any more enemies.

However, there was one other possibility, one of the vampires that couldn't be awoken by the current vampire's bloodline. At least there was no way of knowing whose bloodline would work when trying to awaken them, and that was the True First King. The original owner of the Shadow ability.

Only a handful of leaders at the table knew about the True First King, since the rest were too young and all mentions about him should have been removed. The rebellion had been caused by the other leaders. All of their powers had been used to take him down. Ultimately, they had been unable to kill him, only able to force him into a deep slumber.

His bloodline had been fully erased in order to prevent him from ever waking up again, his family line replaced by another.

'Is that why Tempus has brought it up? But without his shadow powers could he take on Arthur? Is he saying the First True King is even stronger than me with my Absolute Blood Control? That has to be impossible!' Bryce believed and tried to disregard his suggestion.

"To make sure there is order among the third family, they need to select a replacement leader as soon as possible." Bryce stated. "I'm sure Suzan already had someone in mind to replace her. Until then, her knights will have to take over her duties."

"We will need to spread the message that our people have no need to panic. Arthur has no interest in them, he is only after us leaders. Is there any more concerning matters?" Bryce asked, scanning the room.

At this point and time, Paul was debating with himself what to do. He was sure based on Kazz's reaction that the missing vampires had something to do with the first family and most likely the King.

'Should I bring up the matter here in front of everyone? With Arthur as a distraction, maybe they have yet to realise that their vampires have gone missing? I could also say it is out of concern for what is happening now. If he says something out of the ordinary maybe we can use this little slip up of his.' Paul thought about his next move.

Having made up his mind, Paul raised his hand, but a stare from Muka quickly made him put it down just as quickly. Alas, Bryce had already looked over and despite his dislike for the Cursed family, for appearance's sake he had to allow him to speak, especially on the off-chance he had something worthwhile to say.

"I'm sorry, it was an itch, I do not have any questions." Paul quickly made up an excuse, looking down. Bryce gave him a strange glare, but ignored that remark.

With nobody else having anything to say, the King declared the council meeting to be over, and the leaders were to head back to their respective castles to do as they wished or as they needed to. The tenth family was naturally being most affected by this.

'I should tell Quinn as quickly as possible about the matter. If he comes here, they will accuse him of working with Arthur which will just put the tenth family in a worse situation. Maybe their desire to keep him away might actually be for the best for us.' Paul thought.

Walking to his castle, he asked Timmy and Xander if they had noticed any strange reactions among the other vampires. According to the duo certain leaders had a more shocked reaction when hearing Arthur's name. Truth be told, Paul hadn't really needed them to keep an eye out, for it had been obvious on their faces that he already knew the answers about the vampires involved.

'Out of the newer leaders there were two of them. The new sixth leader, Harlow Muscat and twelfth leader Kim Killton. Then of the current leaders, both the Royal knights, Prima Killton, and Kyle who were by the King's side.'

The ones Paul was unsure about though, were the second leader Tempus as well as Jill, the ninth family leader. Since her family no longer existed, her face was like that of a ghost's these days, making it impossible to read through. Finally, there was also Kazz, as Bryce's daughter he was unsure how deeply involved she was in the whole mess.

It was during their walk that Paul noticed they were being followed, not just by anyone, for even when they entered the inner tenth area. He had found that the person had gotten in without any of the guards noticing.

Paul eventually told Timmy, and Xander to go to the castle ahead of him, stating that he was going to meet up with Ashley and get a few updates. Soon he took a turn between two large mansion's where the light of a beast crystal was unable to hit, and he could see a large figure in front of him.

"I figured it would be you." Paul sighed.

"I'm sorry for my behaviour, but I can not be seen meeting with you." Muka explained. "Tensions are high right now as is. I also apologise for making you hold your tongue earlier, but it was neither the right place nor the right time."

"I know the attack shows signs that it was done by Arthur, but it's also possible that someone has done this to rally us up against him before he even arrives. Had you

brought up what we have discovered, then I'm afraid that you might have been the next one -"

It was at that moment, that Muka turned around, and Paul was ready for a fight, as a third person revealed themselves.

"I....I'm not here to fight." The female voice quickly declared. When seeing who it was, Muka was still on guard, but Paul dropped all intentions of fighting.

"You know then, Kazz?"

"I told you not to investigate this, but instead you decided to team up with other leaders about this matter?" Kazz's voice was filled with anger.

"Vampires might have a different opinion, but when it involves my people I can't just sit by them. Today it might be one or two men whose names I might not even have heard about, but tomorrow it could be those I really care about. Turning a blind eye is not my way." Paul stated.

Muka was starting to understand the situation, but what he didn't understand was the close relationship Paul and Kazz apparently had with each other. Why would the first family leader go out of her way, to tell him not to get involved?

'Perhaps, we can use this in some way.'

Hearing Paul's words, Kazz stung a little inside, but it also gave her the determination to find her answer.

"Before you say anything, let's get inside. If it would be disastrous when two family leaders get seen colluding, I can't imagine it getting better with three." Paul suggested, before heading towards the castle.

The other two agreed, and took to the shadow of the buildings to scale and enter the castle from one of their windows, which led into Paul's office. He often left it open so he could enter this way, but it was at that time that he didn't expect to have two others waiting for him there.

"You, I thought you had returned to the Human World!" Kazz exclaimed.

"Whether I am in the Human World or not, I don't think that matters now." Leo replied with Erin who was standing by his side.

Muka looking at the both of them noticed that despite being in the presence of powerful vampires the girl looked unafraid, if anything it looked like she was ready to take them all on at any second.

"I've come here to warn you that the Dalki have appeared on this planet!"

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1260: Confident creatures

The fact that Leo and Erin were currently on the vampire planet was meant to be kept a secret from the others. After all, Leo held a high position in the vampire settlement as the tenth family's vampire knight.

If it was any other time, Muka and perhaps Kazz would have questioned what he was even doing here, but the news that he had brought seemed to be more urgent, and with everything going on, what the tenth family were doing seemed to be the least of their worries.

After hearing the news, both Kazz and Muka looked at each other immediately.

"The Dalki, you mean they really have returned to this place. This whole matter seems to be getting more complicated by the second." Muka stated. "This is a matter that we may even have to talk to the king about, and at a time like this while everything is happening."

Judging from how Muka spoke, it was almost as if he wasn't surprised that the Dalki had arrived but more so surprised at the timing of the whole thing.

"Why would the Dalki be here? Do you have an idea?" Paul asked. "From what I have heard from Quinn, at the moment, they have launched a full attack on the humans. Their leaders and bulk of their forces are tied up, so why bother sending the Dalki here?" Paul questioned.

Although Paul knew about the origins of the Dalki from Quinn's meetings as he informed everyone to keep them up to date on the matter, Paul did not know about specific details.

"I don't know much about the Dalki. Many vampires don't know about them." Kazz answered. "We know that the humans are in a battle against them. Maybe they came back as a type of revenge against us, but who knows."

Most of the leaders did know of the Dalki that included Muka, so he was debating how much to tell them or if it would even matter if they did know.

"The Leaders have never really worried about the Dalki. Them coming back here is not too much of a problem. The problem for me is who they might have returned with. For he had left with them, and this is someone who might also be on our suspect list for the missing vampires."

The person who Muka was thinking of, was none other than Jim.

Hearing this, Leo and Erin thought the vampire's arrogance was showing. They knew more about the Dalki and their history compared to the others. When the

Dlaki had left the vampire settlement, they were weak. This was most likely why they didn't see the Dalki as a threat.

Of course, none of the leaders were ever worried about the Dalki returning for an attack, and hearing the news of the humans they always considered as weak, losing to their creation was even more reason for them to laugh. Still, with Leo and Erin having gone up against the four spike, they knew that the Dalki were strong and no laughing matter, even for the vampires.

"We were unable to see how many Dalki there were, but only two attacked us. We imagine that a group of them must have come. We were also quite far out in the settlement. I think we should take this threat seriously." Leo stated. "The Dalki are confident creatures, who would attack if they believed they had the strength to do so, but the fact that they are waiting for something is more worrying in my eyes. If you underestimate the enemy, that could be your biggest downfall."

Not shy with his words as always, Leo spoke his mind. He didn't want the foolish actions of those at the top, affect other lives. He had seen this happen too many times before, and even himself.

Despite Leo saying all of this, Muka couldn't get out of his mind the first impression he and the other leaders had of the Dalki and thought Leo's worry was too much.

"I think it is best to inform the king, but I will do so after we figure out just who is behind the missing people. We now have another suspect."

It was at that moment that Paul noticed the painful look that was on Kazz's face.

"It's Bryce, isn't it," Paul said. "I can tell."

Shaking her fist, Kazz not answering straight away was enough confirmation for Muka and Paul that they had found their answer.

"Yes..." Kazz said, but she could say no more.

"What's he doing with the people? Why is he taking vampires from each of the families." Muka questioned, but it was clear that she wouldn't say anything else. It had already taken all her will to say yes.

"Kazz, you don't have to tell us what your father is doing with those missing people." Muka sighed in defeat. "But I will say this. We will be looking to prosecute the king for the crimes he has committed. When the time comes, your testimony, one from his own bloodline and the first leader, will have a big impact on the verdict and the opinion of the other leaders."

Truth be told, when Kazz said yes, she didn't know what to expect to hear, she had been avoiding the consequences that her father might suffer if his crimes came to

light. If the world knew the truth, and knowing what his fate would be, all got a bit too much for her that tears started to roll down her cheeks.

"If...If I agree." Kazz said firmly, making sure they knew she still wasn't entirely on their side. "And I decide to participate in this, then can you promise me one thing. That my father doesn't suffer from execution and is instead put into eternal slumber."

"You know that is not for me to decide, but I promise that I will try to persuade the others as well," Muka replied.

After saying that, Kazz felt like she was no longer needed and decided to leave out of the window. Nobody called out to her or said anything else.

"It looks like we might be able to move forwards sooner than we thought. Leave the Dalki problem to me. I shall inform the Royal knights and speak to the other leaders about the best course of action. I think at this moment, no matter what we say, Bryce will somehow twist it so that this was Arthur's doing." Muka said, and soon he left, but not before turning around and looking at Erin once more.

With the others gone, Paul was a lot more interested in finding out about the Dalki that Erin and Leo encountered. So he heard the rest of the details from them.

"I was just about to contact Quinn. I have to tell him about the council's order, and maybe the Dalki being here means something." Paul said. "What about you two? Will you be staying here? I fear that something bigger might happen, and honestly, it would be great to have someone of your strength by my side."

Leo looked towards Erin. His task was complete. Now even though they were in the vampire settlement and in a castle full of vampires, Erin didn't seem to have this urge to kill. At least it wasn't very strong.

"I think you are right," Leo said. "If Quinn is unable to come here, then I think we might be more helpful here than there. However, that is also the reason why we must go. We will be back as soon as possible to help you out."

The reason for Leo saying this was because he wanted to meet up with Alex, so his and Erin's weapons could be made and then they would return.

"Very well. I will be waiting for your return."

At the moment, Quinn could be seen on a green meadow against three Dalki. The first one attacked with a thigh kick, but a shadow was soon raised blocking the attack. Another of the Dalki had thrown a fist towards his head.

The shadow tried to move to the position, but it was too slow, so Quinn instead lifted his arm, blocking the attack to his head, then went and grabbed onto it,

piercing its skin with his fingers. Next, using a flash step, he got in close to Dalki's body, shielding himself from the other two, and punched it directly in the gut.

Green blood spewed from its mouth, and the Dalki were no longer attacking.

"What are you doing?" The Dalki said, bent over.

"I know, sorry, it was just instinct," Quinn replied. To be more precise, the one who had responded at this moment was Vincent, who was in Quinn's body.

Quinn was able to obtain three Marked once again, currently each of them at the one spike stage. What the two of them were doing now was training for both of them.

Quinn wanted to get more in tune with fighting while using the other two as puppets. In turn, he thought the fighting would allow the Dalki to get stronger as they got injured. However, there was a second part to this training as well, and that was training Vincent.

After being with Vincent, Quinn had come to learn of the struggles he had while in his body, so they thought this would be good training for them both. This way, Vincent could learn how to use the shadow powers more efficiently in a fight, and Quinn could improve the Dalki.

"Hey, I think you're getting a call!" Vincent shouted.

Hearing this, Quinn no longer was in control of their Dalki and went to his own body. When he saw who the call was coming from, he was pretty surprised.

"Quinn, this is Paul. There's something I need to tell you...."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1261: A Punisher's message

Due to the King's order, the third castle was currently going through a difficult situation for more reasons than one. Their leader had just been killed, yet they weren't granted any time to grieve for those who cared for the leader and at the same time, there were vampires from other families taking advantage of the situation.

Disputes between families were quite common, so vampires were a proud bunch. They would often compare the strength of each of the families. Once in a while this competition would go too far, and result in fighting between the two families. If it got too big, the leaders themselves would have to sort it out, but the castle had no such leader at the moment. It was the same reason why the tenth family had been treated the way they had been for so long.

For as long as they lacked a new leader, it would be a vulnerable time for them. Inside the castle, in one of the grand dining halls, the late third leader's Vampire knights, May and Verth were going through the candidates to succeed her. The woman and man paced back and forth, their foreheads wrinkled deep in thought.

Meanwhile, sitting in the vacant throne meant for the leader, was a young looking woman with long black hair and a doll-like dress, holding a brown bear in her hand. It was a strange sight, because, although she looked very young, it was clear that the one holding the bear should have long been over that age.

"Annie, there's no helping it, nobody but you can take this position! I know it's a little early but Suzan has been preparing you to take over for a long time already!" May shouted.

Annie, held onto the bear tightly, and her legs were shaking up and down while also biting her fingernails. It was clear she was afraid.

"You don't need to do any of the work. We can cover for that, but right now the third family needs someone to step up, so we'll have order." Verth agreed with his female companion.

"It's not about being ready or not." Annie eventually replied in a shaky voice. "If I take that place... no, it's probably true for whoever takes the leader role... I'm afraid that whoever killed Mother will come after me!"

The two vampire knights didn't expect this, that they would ever need to convince someone to take the leader position. To the normal vampire folk it was a position they could only dream of. Being in charge of an entire family, becoming one of the most respected members of their society.

"If you just need a leader, then why can't one of you take the seat?!" Annie crossed her arms and pouted.

The two of them gulped when they thought of this, a shiver ran down them as they remembered Suzan's body on that wall.

"Th-that's because... b-because we can't! We're knights, after all! As her daughter, it's only right for you to succeed her." May eventually put together an explanation.

However, Annie may have been naive, but she wasn't stupid. Although it was going against their etiquette, it wasn't exactly 'taboo' either. Especially in their current time, when the first family was being led by their former knight Kazz, and the council had even granted Silver special permission to take over as leader if anything was to happen to the thirteenth leader.

It was practically guaranteed that as long as one of them would come forward that due to the circumstances their request to fill in would be granted. Yet, neither one of them wanted to admit it once the idea of them actually taking over was placed.

"I'm scared, I'm scared out of my mind. I know what the right thing to do is, but I just can't." Annie cried out in defiance.

"And so you should be." A voice said from inside the room, dark shadows surrounding him.

The two knights, the moment they saw who it was, were now shaking more than ever and almost fell to the floor.

"Arthur..." May mumbled. The two of them had only seen his figure once before. The Punishers had been abolished by the time they took over, but they were sure of it. This was the same vampire they had seen at Fex's execution.

Lifting both his hands up, the two knights, still unable to move, were suddenly sucked into a deep dark shadow, vanishing in seconds. Annie, seeing this, had no clue where they had gone, and she didn't dare move, too afraid that she would follow them if she angered the intruder.

"Let's keep the two of them out of our conversation, shall we?" Arthur 'suggested' with a smile as he walked over. His entire body was covered in dark clothing. He wasn't wearing the blood armour, nor did he carry his trademark sword on his back. Were it not for May calling out his name, Annie might not have even known who he was.

"Annie... you seem too young to have been born when I entered my sleep, but you might have already been born when all the other Punishers left this world. I am now unable to ask your mother these questions, so it falls on you." Arthur proclaimed as he came forward.

'Does that mean he couldn't torture the information out of my mother?' Annie wondered, swallowing hard.

Usually leaders had pride, they wouldn't let fear take over and they would rather die fighting than to submit to the one threatening their death, however there was one exception to this rule, the Punisher who could make them experience unimaginable pain.

"I...I... Will answer whatever you want." Annie quickly conceded, hoping that Arthur would at least give her a quick and respectful death. Suzan might have been too prideful and tried to fight back, but the young woman had no hopes of leaving the place alive now that she had seen who it was, so her best hope was for a quick and hopefully painless end.

"Around five hundred years ago, when the last King took over. Bryce had gone out on an expedition with a few of the vampire leaders. Do you know about this?"

Annie nodded.

"Great, I'm going to name a few of the old leaders and current leaders and I want you to tell me which of the leaders went on that expedition with Bryce."

Arthur soon went over the list of names starting with the leaders before naming Vampire knights and those in the Royal guard as well. Annie nodded to those that had gone with, and shook her head to those that hadn't. Arthur didn't expect her to know the names of all the vampires, but one would have at least known the leaders who had left at the time.

"Thank you for cooperating so far. Now, as for the last name... Annie Topper." Arthur looked up from the list, staring at her with a hint of bloodlust.

The tears were falling uncontrollably down her face, for a brief moment she considered lying, but the glaring eyes gave her the feeling that they would be able to see through it. Even more afraid of the consequences of angering the monster before her, she finally nodded.

"Thank you, for telling me the truth. I doubt you had much say on the matter, but you still need to be punished for your crimes. You're guilty of eliminating the Punishers and their families who only wanted to live a life away from the settlement." Arthur stated.

When Annie heard Arthur speak, surprisingly his voice was soft and she could tell that he was almost in pain. As if it was something he didn't want to do, but knew it was something he had to do.

When she heard Arthur talking about the Punishers, her mind went back to that expedition. Although it was true that she did take part, at the time she had merely followed alongside her mother, barely helping her. Still, that was no excuse for the lives she did take that day.

"For your cooperation, you've earned a quick end." Arthur proclaimed next to her ear, already having shoved his hand through her heart, with it no longer beating.

'Now I have a list of who to go for, and every single one of these will receive a punishment, but I will savour the ones that are most guilty.' Arthur thought walking off, a lifeless body slumped behind him on the throne.

This time, it took a little while longer for the body to be discovered. For that day, two Vampire knights, as well as the replacement leader had gone missing. It wasn't until the vampires on cleaning duty had entered the castle that they spotted the massacre that had occurred and immediately called for the others.

The room had been left untouched. Entering the room before any of the others was King Bryce, followed by Tempus at his side. Looking at the scene, Bryce's blood was boiling with anger.

"This is my vampire settlement, and during my time, he is doing this. If this continues then the whole vampire settlement could be doomed! I will skewer him, twist his body and drain the blood out from his bones!" Bryce shouted in anger, turning around and breaking the door as he pushed it open.

"Flashy." Tempus noted, looking at the broken door and then turning his attention back to the room in front of him. Looking at the wall behind the throne, a bloody message had been left behind.

"I have a list of you all! Admit what was done to the people or all of them will be punished!"

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1262: The real killer?

Once more, an emergency council meeting was abruptly called between the leaders, barely any time had passed since the last. Even stranger was the fact that it had been called in the third castle. Causing some of the leaders to question its importance. Some were complaining thinking that the castle had come into some sort of disagreement as to who to select as their new leader, and now they were to cast a vote.

When the leaders arrived, they thought that they would head to the throne room, but instead they were led to one of the many dining rooms. The situation was getting odder by the second and when they saw several Royal guards standing outside it didn't exactly clear things up for them.

Muka had just arrived and when he entered, he found the other leaders already discussing things amongst themselves. Apart from Paul, who stood off on his own to the side, looking at the situation.

'What in the...' Muka was staring at the blood message on the wall, and Annie's body which had at one point fallen to the floor, with nobody having bothered to pick her up. It might have been the first time in vampire history that the third family had suffered so much in such a short time frame.

"The King apologises for being unable to attend this meeting." Royal Knight Kyle announced. "However, His Majesty has tasked me to deliver a message on his behalf based on what you see around you."

"The message is as follows: 'If any of you have doubted it, see for yourself what the Punisher has done. He has taken yet another life right from underneath our noses. His message on the wall is a clear sign that he wishes to challenge us all, a promise that he will be coming for us all. Not only us, but our children as well. Only he knows how far he will go. We have to put a stop to him now or he will attempt to get rid of every vampire in the settlement!'"

The majority of those attending clearly agreed with that statement. Annie hadn't even been officially made the third leader, yet she had met such a cruel end. However, not all of them were shocked and in fear as they tried to figure out just what was going on.

'If this really is Arthur's doing, why did he target the third family twice?' Muka wondered. 'Could there really be something Annie knew that Suzan didn't? No, that should be impossible. She was practically a shut-in. Still, this time he left us a message, telling us about him having a list... did he intend to start with all those from the third family and move on from there?'

It wasn't really a meeting, the leaders were talking with each other freely, but with no real agenda set up and the King absent, the other leaders eventually left the place not long after the Royal knights had excused themselves.

Some walking more in a hurry than others.

However, a few of the leaders had decided to stay to take a closer look at the murder scene. Aside from Muka there was Sunny, and Jin. Similar to last time, the room had no signs of struggles or fighting in it. There was the broken door, but it looked as if the guards were already in the middle of repairing it, while having left the rest of the scene untouched. Making Muka think it was someone else's doing. It looked like apart from the message their only clue was the dead body.

"Does anyone else find it strange?" Sunny asked. "The way Suzan was killed by Arthur? When we look at Suzan's death it was a clear fear tactic statement, and you could say this is the same again, but the message here, it was clearly left behind for us, while the first had been for the public to see."

"Does that really matter?" Jin questioned, unable to see Sunny's point. "Perhaps Arthur had hoped for a certain outcome after Suzan's death, but with us not reacting how he wanted, this time he left behind a clearer message?"

Jin walked up to the wall and looked over the message as if hoping it would reveal some sort of secret underneath. "Or whoever these people are that he has annoyed. This list of his, and the words after. I'm sure you have noticed it, some of the other leaders are afraid, more shaken up by this than us and frightened. Surely, they know something that we don't. Maybe Arthur wants them to tell the whole settlement what they did."

Sunny stood up and walked up to the blood message on the wall standing by Jin's side.

"I think we all knew that from the beginning. Have you ever thought about how Bryce managed to get so many votes for himself? The ones frightened were the same ones who he had wrapped around his finger since day one." Sunny pointed out, while she started to sniff the wall. Her nose was far more sensitive than her companions.

"You're missing my point. Look at the bodies as well. This time, it was a single strike through the heart, a rather painless death. Now think back to how Suzan was killed. Only one of those completely disrespects the deceased's body. To top things off, the blood on this wall smells slightly different from Annie's blood."

He understood that things were strange, otherwise Jin wouldn't have stayed behind in the first place to see if there was anything he could find, but he thought that Sunny was perhaps trying to grasp at straws too much.

When dealing with murder and revenge, people couldn't really be expected to stay reasonable with their actions or thoughts.

"No, you're not the only one that thinks Suzan's death was out of the ordinary." Muka stated, answering her first question.

"This blood..." Sunny murmured to herself, closing her eyes so her senses were better. "I have never smelt blood quite like what's on the wall, but there is one thing I'm sure about, it's not Annie's. If that's the case, then maybe this message was written in Arthur's own blood."

"I sense pain, through his actions, someone who doesn't even like what he is doing. However, the first body was different. You're right, Jin, perhaps they are the same actions of the same person, but if that is so, then the person would be in two different states of mind."

At the tenth castle, before the meeting had been called for the vampire's leaders to attend again, Paul was busy sending off both Erin and Leo. The teleporter needed to be activated by him, only once getting in touch with Logan.

Then when turned on at the other end, they could go through safely.

"I hope you are able to contain the chaos so there won't be too much for us to do when we come back. I'm getting old." Leo said with a smile.

"You may be blind but you should at least know that I am the same age as you. Besides, what does age matter to us now?" Paul joked, both aware that their bodies felt stronger than they had done even back in their prime.

After stepping through the teleporter, Erin and Leo found themselves in the familiar metal and white room. They both knew that they were finally back on the Cursed ship. It felt like it had been an exceptionally long time, for Erin at least.

'Every time I leave this place, I think it's only going to be for a short while, but it always ends up being longer.' Erin realised with a slight grimace.

As for the one to greet them on the other side, it was none other than Sam. He knew how much the two meant to Quinn, so he couldn't just send anyone to see how they were doing.

"I'm glad to find both of you in great health. Honestly, I was half expecting one of you to come back with a missing arm or leg of some sort. Paul told me that you would eventually return to the Vampire World."

"Unfortunately, Quinn isn't here at the moment, but the rest of the gang is. It would be nice if you both stopped by and talked to them. I'm sure you have a lot to chat about. I guess you haven't seen the video either."

"What video?" Erin asked, confused. The video Sam was talking about, was the one that nearly everyone had seen. Of course, in the middle of the woods fighting, Leo and Erin had no clue what Quinn and the others had been through during their time away.

"I guess we do have a lot of catching up to do. What brings you here anyway?" Sam asked.

"Weapons." Leo answered. "We were hoping to meet up with Alex and get him to forge a few new weapons for us. Ours might be a little dull for what we are about to face."

Hearing this, Sam had the biggest grin possible on his face.

"Well, I was going to save this for later, but Quinn did leave me something in case you would return. I'm sure you will greatly appreciate his 'little' gift."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1263: A Gift from Quinn

Erin and Leo were very interested in finding out what had exactly happened while they had been away. Walking alongside Sam around the Cursed ship they noticed that there were many changes here and there. Certain parts had been remodeled, different areas had been strengthened and more security systems had been implemented.

'Did the Cursed ship suffer from an attack while we were away?' Leo thought. 'I guess that much should be expected with the human race at war again. Have they gone out to help out other planets?'

"I'm sorry, Sam." Erin apologised, after noticing through her ability that there were far less people on the Cursed ship than the last time they had been there. "It looks like you guys have been attacked during our absence. If we had been here, probably less lives would have been lost. Just what happened that there are so few people left?"

It took a second for Sam to figure out what Erin meant by this, but then he remembered that he had yet to fill them in.

"We have lost a lot of lives, but not as many as you seem to believe." Sam replied. "The actual reason why there aren't that many on the Cursed ship right now is because many chose to leave the ship."

"After we were attacked, our Cursed faction temporarily made the Earthborn group's Shelter on planet Caladi into our base. Although the Cursed ship is back and running again, many decided to stay there for the time being."

"As I said, a lot happened while you guys were away, but we pulled through. I'm sure the two of you were busy doing your own important thing as well. Heck, we even heard that we have you to thank for defeating a four spiked Dalki on Earth!"

The duo thought they had been quite careful at the time, but a blind swordsman wasn't exactly a common occurrence, making him easy for many to remember. With Pure seemingly having erased all of their traces the public believed that Leo was the one to have finished the enemy on his own.

Finally, the trio had reached Quinn's private training room where the surprise had been left for Leo and Erin. Even before they entered the room, through the Glathrium door the two of them could feel the intense energy inside, and the hallway feeling a little cooler. The closer they got to the door the cooler the air felt.

For Erin though, it was simultaneously a familiar and foreign feeling. Someone who had ice abilities was used to this chill, but it didn't quite feel the same as an ability. After Sam put in the code the door slid open, and the two of them could clearly see what was in front of them.

"Leo, do you see that...it's the..." Erin was unable to speak normally as she naturally walked forward, drawn to the weapon.

"For even my own student to forget that I lack sight." Leo shook his head. "I do feel it though. There is no other weapon that I have ever felt that comes close to it. This has to be a Demon tier weapon."

Leo and Erin had not been present when Oscar had shown the Demon tier weapon to everyone, so this was the first time the two were in its presence. Being near a Demon beast item or weapon for the first time certainly had an effect on everyone.

Its raw energy was calling out to the both of them, for them to pick it up and use it immediately.

"It looks like you like the gift Quinn left you then." Sam smiled from behind them.

"This is the gift Quinn left for Leo? Just what happened for something like this to end up in the Cursed faction's hand? Why doesn't he want to use it for himself? Isn't this too much?" Erin was shocked that Quinn wouldn't use such a thing for himself, yet she couldn't keep her eyes off the weapon.

"As I said, a lot has happened while you guys were away. Quinn actually has his own Demon tier item. To fully utilise the power of this one he would have to incorporate it into his set of skills."

"However, Quinn has gained another special sword that he claims suits his fighting style far more than this one. Additionally, he doesn't think that it's a good idea for all our fighting power to be focused on just one person."

"With the war going on, and the enemy turning out to be far stronger than we could have imagined, it seemed wiser to give the weapon to someone better suited and who could be better suited to use a Demon tier Sword than a swordsman?"

Walking up to the sword, Leo stared at it, sensing its powers. He certainly did have an interest in obtaining a stronger weapon. That was his goal of coming back here, after all, but Leo wasn't used to receiving gifts as big as this from others. He had always obtained things himself, the fact that it came from a student he used to teach, didn't make it any less strange.

"This is no small surprise." Leo grabbed the hilt of the sword, and he could feel his whole body run with a cold shiver. He lifted it up with a single hand, with complete ease. It looked strange from the outside since the sword was three quarters the size of his body.

Giving it a test, he started to swing it in separate movements. First a step forward slicing it in an arc shape. Next from below, almost skimming the bottom of the

ground, and finally from over his head stopping before the large blade would hit the ground.

To both Erin and Sam who were watching, just these three simple strikes looked incredibly impressive.

'Even with a large weapon like this, he can control the flow of the sword so it doesn't feel unnatural. He is a master of all swords, not just the katana blade.' Erin thought as she watched him, a slight feeling of envy rose inside of her.

"This weapon..." Leo said slowly, looking at it once more, giving it another swing to make sure. "It does not suit me. Neither the size nor shape fit my personal fighting style."

"However, I agree with what Quinn said and his reasoning for wishing to give me the blade. I assume since he gifted it to me, it's mine to do with what I want, correct?"

At first, Sam couldn't believe what he was hearing. Was Leo really going to reject the Demon tier Sword? Even if it wasn't what he was used to, the extra power from it alone would increase his strength, or he could switch between weapons, but after his question, Sam understood what he was planning.

"Of course." Sam smiled. "You know what Quinn is like and I'm sure he will be happy with the decision you are making."

It was then that Leo started to walk over to Erin.

"You needed Two blades, remember? I remember one of the blades you used to have was similar to this one. With this weapon, I'm sure you'll not just be able to revive your family's swordsmanship, but bring it to new heights."

With this Leo handed over the weapon and Erin held it firmly in her hands. The cold feeling enveloped her entire body but it was nothing that she couldn't handle. She found herself naturally grasping the handle with both of her hands, and before even saying anything, she immediately gave it a few swings.

When swinging it in a crescent shape, she allowed the blade to slightly take control, lifting her feet off the ground, going straight into the next movement. Her body was now a good meter and a half in the air, and striking down again, she spun her whole body a full spin, until finally landing on the ground and completing a final sweep strike on the floor.

Seeing this, Sam was equally impressed with her sword skills, even though he was no swordsman. Being a vampire he was able to track her movements very carefully and he had seen his fair share of fights. He could tell that the movements were just as fluid as the ones that Leo had produced.

'Indeed, seeing her just swing the Demon tier Sword around, nobody will be able to complain about her having it.' Sam thought.

It was then that Erin snapped out of her daze. She wasn't meant to accept the sword in the first place, but her body had taken over the moment she held it.

"I can't. Leo, this was your gift from Quinn. You need a weapon and it will be far better in your hands." Erin said, bowing down and holding the sword out for Leo to take.

"Yes and I believe I just said that since it's my gift I can do what I want with it. Remember, I still have a gift from that fellow from before. I'm certain that Alex will be able to make a fine weapon out of it, one that he can customise for my use." Leo stated.

"While I appreciate your sentiment, do you honestly believe a weapon that utilises ice powers of all things would be better in my hands? I'm sure that you felt it yourself when using that sword, so you should know that answer."

"The moment you took it, I felt its power spike up, something that didn't happen when I took it. I would say, even if you didn't want it, that blade has chosen you. Combine it with the skills you've learned, and continue to improve the skills of the current you."

In all honesty, Erin was happy that Leo didn't want the sword back, she had just felt like she had been undeserving of it. She hadn't achieved any great feat nor fought against a mighty foe and yet here she was receiving one of the strongest weapons in the world, but she had felt it. Just like what Leo had claimed, the moment she had touched it, it had felt so familiar to her.

Perhaps it was because of her lost ice powers, and the purpose of the weapon. Nonetheless now it was hers to keep.

"Thank you, Leo. Thank you Sam." Erin bowed to them both. "I promise to prove to everyone that I deserve to use this weapon."

"Haha, no need to thank me. I'm just the messenger boy, if you want to thank somebody besides Leo, thank Quinn the next time you see him."

Having improved in her strength by leaps and strides she was just wondering how much stronger she had gotten. With the Demon tier Sword in her hands, she couldn't help but consider herself becoming almighty, but that also made her think of one other thing.

'That women, the prophecy....is it really okay for me to have so much power? What happens, if what she said is true? What happens if at some point I...'

Gripping the sword tightly, she shook her head. 'No, I've never believed in any of that crap and I won't start now. I won't let it happen!'

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1264: Black Flames

After obtaining the Demon tier weapon, Sam suggested for Erin to wrap it up for the time being to keep it away from the eye of the others. He had prepared a basic blue coloured cloth which was placed on Erin's back, but she planned to ask Alex to make a special sheathe, so they could better hide the strong energy radiating from it.

Before meeting with the forger though, Leo and Erin were both interested to hear just what exactly had happened to this place, since Sam had been vague so far.

"I don't plan to keep silent about this matter, I just thought it would be easier for you to see for yourself." Sam explained. "Luckily for you guys, nearly the whole thing was caught on tape."

Heading to the command centre, on the way they stopped by Logan's office. There wasn't much for them to talk about, but Leo gave a few words of encouragement like a teacher would to their students, while Erin couldn't stop staring at the robotic arm underneath, until she eventually spoke up.

"At least you didn't have to get turned into a vampire. You've always been a bit different and unique, this just makes it more so.".

Logan thought about her statement for a moment. It hadn't really bothered him that much, but he guessed she had a point.

"Thank you." Logan simply replied.

An awkward encounter to say the least, from two students who had never really talked to one another. Next they headed to the command centre. Using the big screen, Sam showed them everything, starting from when Quinn and the others had been attacked by Innu. At times he informed them about certain things not caught on tape.

Of course, they already knew some of what was going on, even when they had been tracking down Pure they had kept up to date with things, but Sam wanted to give them the necessary context they might need. After all, they knew nothing about Supreme Commander Oscar's demise, the new member Shiro, the invasion of the Dalki and many other things.

At the end of it, Erin almost felt tired just listening to the story, as she imagined herself being in each of the situations they had been through.

"They....they went through all of that." Erin murmured to herself, her mouth left wide open. Now she felt even less deserving of the weapon on her back. Her earlier proclamation of wanting to prove that she deserved to wield the blade suddenly felt a whole lot heavier.

Looking over the two, Sam could tell that they were deep in thought, perhaps feeling guilty that they had been absent at such a crucial time.

"Look guys, nobody blames you. All of us know that you were doing something important and you wouldn't just have left without good reason." Sam said. "Nobody knows what would have happened if you were here and we can't change the past, so there's no point mulling over it."

"I didn't show you everything so the two of you would feel guilty or so that you would stay here rather than return to the Vampire World. Honestly, in my opinion it would be better for you to go back. After Quinn received the news of what was happening, he was even debating whether to outright ignore the order from the council and get involved."

"With both of you there, I think it would give him a little piece of mind."

Hearing this was definitely the type of encouragement they both needed. Even Leo, although wise in his age and experience, had never quite been faced with such a situation like they were currently in. He had his own agenda with Pure, his responsibilities as a Vampire knight, a leader of the Cursed faction and his student Erin all to balance carefully.

"Thank you Sam, if it weren't for the many reliable people the Cursed faction has managed to gather I don't think I would be able to achieve as much as I have done so far."

---

With that, it was finally time for the two of them to head to the forgery room to accomplish their original reason for coming back to the Cursed faction.

As always the sound of clanging was heard as they were approaching, and when the doors opened, they were expecting to see Alex hammering away with his other assistants on board, but the two of them were in for another shock.

As expected they could see Alex, hammering away freely with his wings out, but next to him....

'Did Quinn create another Blood fairy?' Erin wondered. 'No, is he maybe another subclass? An evolution perhaps?'

The surprises didn't seem to stop. She had never seen the giant guy next to Alex before, and she was remembering the troubles the Cursed faction had gone through in the Vampire world just having one Blood fairy.

There was no need for the two to announce that they had entered the room, for straight away, Andrew looked up and stared directly at Erin.

"My word, I never thought I would see it back here again, yet here it is." The large man spoke, as he lifted up his forging mask, and put his hammer down. His giant red wings started to flap about fast with excitement walking towards Erin.

'What is going on? Why is he coming towards me?' Unable to make heads or tails of the situation, Erin went to grab the weapon, but before she reached it. Alex noticed that Andrew had stopped his work. Looking over he saw Erin's actions.

"Hey, relax, both of you, we're all on the same side!" Alex exclaimed nervously, worried his wings could be sliced off at any second. The few times he had talked and dealt with Erin, she hadn't exactly been the patient type of person.

With both sides having calmed down, Alex introduced the returning duo the giant forger and told them that Andrew was the one who had worked on the Demon tier weapon that Erin currently wielded. After learning of this fact, her whole demeanor completely changed.

"Thank you so much for creating such a masterpiece." Erin bowed down, several times. "This weapon, the balance, everything about it is perfect for my use."

This was something that Alex would have never imagined the old Erin doing, she had certainly changed a lot since the last time he had seen her.

"Haha." Andrew started laughing, not really being offended by Erin's prior actions at all. He was just happy to see the weapon again."Originally I created it for a man the same size as me, so I find it a little strange you saying that the weapon is a perfect fit for yourself."

"Go on then, what do you want us to make?" Alex smiled, knowing full well that the only time people came down here was when they wanted someone to make a weapon for him. Perhaps some would feel a bit sad at this, but making weapons was Alex's favourite thing to do, and the fact that people trusted him so much these days to personally make a weapon for them, was a blessing that he had never thought he would be able to achieve in the past.

"I have obtained a Demi-god tier crystal, but it is only one. I hope it will be enough to create a katana-like blade. You can use mine for reference." Leo stated his request, taking his off, and handing it over to Alex. The second Alex touched it though, he immediately dropped it to the floor.

"Sorry, it must have been my butter fingers." Alex said, knowing this wasn't true, as a forger he had strong fingers, and when he went to pick it up again, he dropped it almost immediately as a strange feeling could be felt when holding the sword.

'No wonder this forger is special, even he can feel that it's cursed.' Leo thought.

Finally, on a third attempt, Alex picked it up with both hands firmly.

"Tell me, this sword is important to you, correct? You have only brought me one Demi-god tier crystal so I don't know if it will be enough to create you a weapon of the calliper that is needed, but recently I came across an upgrade crystal and with it I found out a few new techniques. If you are willing to test it out. I could try to use the Demi-god tier crystal to upgrade your current weapon instead.

"No sorry that would be wrong, it would be a new weapon, using the current sword to give the Demi-god tier weapon a boost."

Hearing this, Leo thought it was a great opportunity. Honestly he didn't want to stop using his current weapon, for it carried the will of his former companions with him, but if the weapon could be used, would the Cursed effect move on to the new weapon.

"What are the chances of success?" Leo asked.

"Fifty percent. Well that's not completely correct. It's guaranteed that it will be a Demi-god tier blade, although it might be on the low end and closer to a Legendary tier weapon, but if it works..."

"Please, I will put my trust in you." Leo interrupted him.

After that, the two made two more requests for a blood weapon to be made from the many blood crystals that Erin had gathered. For the blood weapon the best crystals were selected while the others were given to Alex to keep and use how he wished.

Meanwhile, Andrew would be making a special sheath to cover the Demon tier Sword's energy. A task he was most pleased to do.

Of course the weapons would take a while to make, so both Erin and Leo were left on the ship for a while, and for the first time they could eventually rest. In doing so, and with nothing to do, Erin decided that there was someone that she needed to visit who she hadn't done in a long time.

While heading to the canteen, the two of them finally met again.

"Layla!" Erin called out.

"Erin," Layla called out back, dropping her plate of food out of surprise, but Erin caught it before it could touch the floor.

Leo, who was with them to grab some food, noticed something with his ability almost straight away, that by Layla's waist she had a sword.

"Hey, When did you get a new sword? I knew you had the old one but you hardly used it." Erin asked.

Looking at the energy surrounding the sword, something was incredibly off about it. Usually beast weapons gave off a red colour which Leo could perceive through his ability, the same as beasts themselves. In the same vein, vampires gave off a purple energy, so what was up with this weapon that looked to have black flames spiralling from it.

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1265: Quick Growth

After each of them grabbed something to eat, they decided to sit down together to talk a bit more. Erin acutely didn't have to consume blood and could eat a regular diet similar to humans; this was the same for Layla. However, Leo had just grabbed one of the juice boxes with a small amount of blood inside.

Drinking such an amount of blood no longer troubled him when trying to control himself since he was so in tune with his senses, but if a vampire were to deprive themselves of blood entirely for too long, they would feel tired and a little weak.

As for the reason Leo decided to sit beside them, was because he wanted to find out a little more about the sword. He was sure that Layla didn't know how unique it was and would bring it up to her once he found out more.

The two of them got to talking and how exactly a particular sword had gotten into her hands. Even though the match against Burnie was televised, the whole saga of what happened with the second Pure leader was not.

"I'm sorry Layla," Erin said. "If I was there, maybe I could have helped out more, but it sounds like you turned into quite the fighter. You managed to unlock the fourth form and summon all of that Qi?"

She wasn't used to getting compliments, so Layla's face was appearing a little redder.

"I mean, I can't really summon my fourth form at will, and my body is too weak to handle the Qi in my body without it. If I summon all of the Qi in my body, it hurts, and besides, the Qi in my body is not even mine in the first place. It's my mothers."

Honestly, both Leo and Erin were a little disheartened after hearing Layla's story. They had gone searching for high ranking members of Pure and never ran into them, and yet, Layla did and had to go through such a troubling experience without them there.

It was clear that what happened with Agent 2 was a sensitive subject. When Layla explained what he had said about her mother, she had choked up a few times.

"Your achievements are still your achievements." Leo finally spoke. "The weapons we use to aid us, the Qi that we use, is an energy that is borrowed from the outside, and the food we eat helps us to grow. Without our parents, we would have never been born in the first place. All of these things could be considered help from other forces.

"So don't downplay what you did. Even if someone had the same Qi as you, they wouldn't have been able to control it as well. If one thing, me and Erin can sense the strong Qi in your body, and for you to handle it so well, is a feat in itself."

Thinking about things like this, Layla was a little happier. She had spent some time with both Leo and Erin before they had left, and it was good to have them back again.

"Leo, I know you wanted to know some stuff about Pure. I don't know how much you found out, but an agent is on board the Cursed ship as a captive. With the influence skill, we were unable to get things out of him, but if you like, you two could try as well." Layla said.

The two were thankful to find this out. Leo had found out the information he needed to find out he was on the right track. Now all he needed to do was find out where Pure was, or more importantly, where Agent 0 was.

"Thank you," Erin replied. "About your sword, I guess since you discovered the fourth form, you've been practising a little bit more with it. Why don't the two of us have a little spar? We can show each other a few things."

Immediately, Layla started to shake her hands.

"Erin, what could you learn from me? I am far weaker than you. It would be no contest."

"Stop being so humble. It's okay to brag once in a while." A voice from behind said, soon pulling one of the chairs back, and he sat down with the others. The one that had arrived was Nate, who had brought a slab of raw-looking meat with him on his plate.

Nate was concerned about his body since he used it to train in martial arts. He made sure he always got the right amount of protein in, but he wasn't sure if it mattered anymore now, he was a vampire. Still, the only thing that he could still taste and not throw up was lightly cooked meat which in a way was perfect for him.

"I know how strong you are." Nate continued to say. "In that video, a lot of people give me credit for being the main person to defeat Burnie, but that's not true at all, and you know it. You managed to transfer your Qi into me, and without that sword of yours, those flames would have hurt even more. Remember, he was one of the big four, so if you call yourself weak, you are also calling him weak. And well, me who couldn't even beat him without your help even weaker."

"On top of that, you nearly beat Helen, the leader of Daisy in a one on one duel, and that was before you knew how to use your crazy powers and was just starting to learn how to use Qi a little better."

Those on the ship were used to Nate exaggerating a little bit, but at the moment, he really wasn't. Listening to what they said, Leo paid closer attention to the video they had watched not too long ago. In particular, he was thinking back to the fight they had seen with Burnie.

'Was Layla really able to transfer Qi to another and form a distance? It makes sense what Nate is saying then and adds up in the video. Is it possible that she was also able to combine Qi with her ability? If that is true, then what she has is even better than the third stage of Qi. She could power items from a distance and others. This is an incredible ability and power to have.' Leo imagined just how he would use such an ability and the many ways one could utilise it.

Layla was perhaps unaware of how valuable such a thing was, and if he could push her in the right direction, she would become a strong force on the Cursed faction team.

"I think it would be a good experience for the two of you to fight each other. Leo eventually said after gathering his thoughts. "It sounds like there are many things the two of you can learn from each other. Also, I would like to see the passive skill of the sword in action. The one that was capable of blocking even the fire powers of one of the great four."

---

Reluctantly, Layla eventually agreed to the request, and they were in one of the many training rooms on the Cursed ship. She always found it hard to say no to people, and it was even worse when an elder like Leo asked her. Nate had also decided to come along since he was interested in seeing the match between them.

"Layla, before the match starts, I want you to use everything you have," Erin said, as she placed the cloth wrapped sword down on the floor away from where the two were about to do battle. Using a Demon tier weapon she didn't know how to use would be dangerous. On top of that, Erin didn't really think it was fair. "That fourth form you spoke about, you said you can't freely bring it out, but I want you to try."

Nate was smiling in excitement. He knew Erin was strong before but thought they probably had no idea how strong Layla had gotten, and the two of them would be in for a surprise. They drew their weapons. Erin's shaped like a katana sword, while Layla's was more similar to a standard longsword.

The fight had begun, and Erin was the first to strike, giving out a quick slash from a distance, striking out a line of red aura. Seeing this, Layla stayed calm. The sword had done her well so far.

'This sword can even block the energy of Qi, so it should be the same for the vampire aura as well!' Layla thought as she struck the red aura, making it disappear as the sword hit it. As expected, the blade had negated even the vampire aura.

Erin was a bit lost at what to do next. She had combined her Qi with the red blood aura to create quite a strong attack, similar to what Quinn and Leo did. She was hoping, based on how much Layla would have struggled with the attack, she would

have adjusted how the two of them would fight from there, but the way the black sword had gone through the red aura was effortless.

Now knowing her sword worked well, Layla decided to go on the attack instead. She pulled out her bow from her back and fired three Qi filled arrows towards her opponent, and started to control the direction they were going, but that wasn't the only thing Layla had done.

Controlling the three arrows with one hand, she charged forward with the blade in the other.

With the first arrow, Erin's sword struck against its head straight on, and to her surprise, there was resistance until eventually, she was able to cut it in half.

'Is this the strong Qi in her body? My body has improved. I know my strength, and my Qi is strong, yet I still couldn't cut her arrows cleanly.' Erin thought. 'Layla, you really have gotten a lot better.'

"Hahaha, and you guys haven't even seen her transform yet," Nate said out loud like some type of cheerleader for her.

"Both of their growth is impressive. Perhaps before we leave this ship, the two of them can complete that," Leo said.

"That?" Nate asked, not sure what 'that' was referring to.

"There is still a way the two of them can improve their strength quickly in a desperate situation. If we can, I would like for Erin and Layla to unlock their soul weapon before we leave."

\*\*\*\*\*

Get access to the MVS webtoon on P.a.t.r.e.o.n, it's only \$3 dollar a month and read My Werewolf System exclusively. If you want to support you can on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga For MVS artwork and updates follow me on Instagram and Facebook: jksmanga

## Chapter 1266: Dragon eyes

The fight between the two young women continued. Layla mainly used her arrows as a type of distraction while also throwing out her black balls that when hit would summon the Spiritual chains trapping her for a few seconds, but since Erin knew what they did she was able to avoid them easily.

Surprisingly, Layla had become the aggressor in their training fight, Erin had remained on the defensive attacking her with a few simple Blood swipes and with her sword now and again. However, those attacks proved to be ineffective in front of the black sword.

Despite the speed the attacks were coming out towards her at, Layla had enough control to power her body with Qi, allowing her arms to move at a faster speed, if she were to attack with sword itself though she didn't have much options. Afraid that in her regular form, she would be outmatched in strength in a head on clash.

The downside of the black sword was that it negated anything it came into contact with, including Layla's Qi, if she tried to empower it or her own Telekinesis ability on the blade itself as well. Without transforming, the only thing she could do was use her arrows to attack.

"Erin has become far more patient." Leo noted from the side. "After realising her first attack had been negated, she is now testing out the limits of Layla's capabilities."

Leo was commenting on the fight, pointing out the good points and bad points of both sides. Nate, who was standing by his side, was wondering just who the words were exactly meant for, but his thoughts were also on something else. Since he could just listen to the analysis of the fight thanks to the Blind Swordsman, Nate kept staring at Leo's eyes.

'Is he really blind? His pupils are white and everything, but then how is he able to tell so clearly what's going on in the fight? Well, that much he might have been able to feel, but just how the hell did he manage to watch the video of us fighting then?' Nate wondered, but he didn't consider it proper to ask the other.

There were only a few people that had experienced the vision that Leo could see through his ability. That being Erin who had the same ability and Vorden when he had once borrowed it. The ability that both Leo and Erin shared was called Dragon Eyes.

It allowed the ones who had this ability to see everything in a wireframe like view. Leo could actually see the people in front of him, the room around them and if a leaf were to fall down he could see that too, only from his perspective it would look like a small object made up of small white lines.

What this also meant, was that Leo was actually able to see through objects and walls and what was over on the other side. However, he was unable to see the natural colour of things.

The amazing thing about this type of view was that it allowed him to differentiate between different types of life energy by their respective colours. He could see this energy in such detail that it would often move before the person themselves moved as well.

However, these colours that represented different energies when using his ability were different to when he was sensing them using his Qi. For example, Dragon Eyes showed vampires as a mass of purple energy, humans as a yellow energy, and beast as a red type of energy.

But if Leo was to use his Qi to sense energy, the vampire internal energy would appear red. Because of how his ability worked, Leo was able to watch the videos on the screen just fine, it just looked different to how others would perceive it.

He was unable to tell from the first glance who was who on the screen and had to guess from the wireframe shapes. Also due to it being a video, he couldn't sense the energy coming off them, but thanks to the commentary and Erin by his side, he had managed to figure out certain details along the way.

The fight was starting to heat up, as Layla had transformed into their second form, where she now had the speed and strength of a regular vampire and with her added Qi she would be even stronger.

'This body can handle a bit more of the Qi that's in my body, but not as much as the fourth form, and I can't use the abilities of any of the other forms, but this will have to do!' Layla thought charging in, but suddenly before she could even swing her sword in a full motion, Erin went on the offensive.

The suppression chains came off and she swung them out, wrapping around Layla's arms to the side.

"The first form." Leo commented, recognising the movements.

The suppression chains when wrapped around Layla's arms also made her feel slightly weaker and with Erin's strength, she was able to yank her arm away, pulling her sword and strike to the side, so it had hit nothing but the floor.

Straight after, Erin was already directly in front of her, and the Dhampir thrusted her sword forward directly into the other's stomach. At the last second, she turned the sword so only the guard of the sword had hit her, and Layla was sent flying back with the chains released.

'Now for the second form!' Erin thought, as she pulled her chains back.

"That's enough!" Leo declared the end of this fight.

Hearing that, Erin took a second to look over Layla's condition. The other still hadn't recovered from the attack.

"Layla, I asked you to fight me at your full strength. Where was your fourth form?" Erin questioned, disappointed. She had been looking forward to testing out the new swordsmanship style she had created against someone other than Leo, but after the first form, Layla seemed unable to fight for a while.

After recovering a little bit Layla finally answered, fidgeting a bit towards the end. "I tried, but the first time it happened I... I ended up losing control. I just haven't been able to transform into that again... ever since. Not even back then during the fight... even though we could have really used it..."

Walking over, Erin gave her hand out and lifted her friend off the ground.

"You... are you afraid of using it? Trust me, I understand. The whole reason why me and Leo needed to leave this place was because I needed to find a way to control myself. Thanks to Leo I managed to do it and if I can manage to suppress my condition, I just know you'll be able to as well. I'll look forward to the time the two of us can fight again."

In all honesty, it had been the fact that Layla had been so impressive at the beginning of their fight that Erin had believed that there was more to come. For this reason, she had gotten swayed up in the flow of the fight, and when she had seen Layla's second form and her opponent holding the sword like that, it had been her chance to act.

Nate couldn't quite believe it. He had only seen one of the forms, but was trying to imagine what he would have done differently to deal with the situation. His fighting sense was far better than Layla's but he could tell that a lot of thought was put into linking an attack with the chains and sword after.

'The best thing to do is to avoid the chains, I wonder what the second form would have looked like?'

"Excellent." Leo walked over, clapping his hands to congratulate the progress of the two of them. "Layla, I was able to see the Qi you added to those arrows. Not only did you supply them with Qi when you were touching them, but you managed to also supply more to them after they had left your bow. I think there is great room for improvement for both of you."

"I've decided that while me and Erin are waiting for our weapons, I will personally train the both of you. For the next week we will focus on you two learning what your soul weapons are."

In the Cursed faction, Layla hadn't been the only one that had been mulling over her weakness. For there was one other that had felt like he hadn't been that much help during the Blade family's attack.

In the research room, Logan was currently working away from the other, creating another anti jammer device to be sent to another one of the planets.

The Cursed faction's planets had been the priority, but now they had also been requested to help the Graylash group as well as the Earthborn group as well.

"You don't understand, Logan! He just slapped me! It was a single slap and because of his stupid ability I was unable to retaliate! I didn't even manage to get so much as a single punch in! A freaking slap!" Peter shouted, getting more and more annoyed at himself as he remembered his 'fight' with Hilston.

Pausing his work, Logan looked over. One of the reasons he and Peter had been getting along so well, had been that both had been rather 'emotionless', yet if one were to look at the Wight this was hard to believe. Aware that if he didn't comfort Peter, this could go on for a long time, Logan spoke up.

"I think you are being a bit too hard on yourself. Remember who you were up against. He wasn't considered the strongest human in the world for nothing. We all saw what that man was capable of. If I had been the one to fight him, my whole body would have most likely been crushed by that single slap you keep mentioning." With that Logan went back to his work, believing that to be the end of this argument.

"But even he wasn't enough." Peter added. "Even he lost the fight against Slicer, and if he didn't have his Demon tier Armour he would have been doomed. I know I keep getting stronger based on Quinn's growth and I can feel that, but then how am I meant to help everyone if I'm just a weaker version of Quinn?"

Letting out a sigh, Logan stopped his work again, facing Peter once more.

"Although you may get your strength from Quinn, you and him are not the same, Your fighting style, your experience, your weapons and such are all different. Just focus on those differences between the two of you and use them to your advantage."

Peter started to consider Logan's advice. "Let's see... I heal quicker than Quinn does to the point I can practically regrow limbs. I eat human flesh instead of blood... but none of these things have ever helped me in a fight."

"Isn't there one more thing that you can do that you haven't really fully utilised?" Logan asked with a raised eyebrow.

That's when it clicked in Peter's head, there was one thing that he could do that was different from Quinn.

"The Wights! I can create other Wights!"

"It seems like you got it. From what I have learned from watching Quinn, vampires are still able to evolve, especially their skills and at a much quicker rate than humans can."

"Perhaps there is something else you can do other than just creating Wights. If it was me, I would keep them and run tests to check if they could evolve into something else."

"Since you should have roughly the same power as Quinn, just Imagine if they could match up to you in strength!" Logan encouraged his friend... and with that he got back to work.

'Wights huh... but I would need dead bodies to create them. Where would I find dead bodies on the Cursed ship, and who?' Peter thought to himself.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1267: Wight Upgrade

MESSAGE: My Werewolf system is now out on Webnovel as well! Search My Werewolf System. (The one with a purple cover and a werewolf boy on the front)

\*\*\*\*\*

Using his head during a fight wasn't really Peter's strong point. Ever since he had turned into a Wight, he had strong emotions that would lean one way or another. These were to be aggressive or protect.

Anything that would make him angry, Peter would act on. If Quinn in particular was ever in trouble, he would risk his life without a second thought to protect him. Still, Peter himself had been noticing that his thoughts were becoming more natural as he started to experience more things.

The aggression was still within him. Even the most minor things would annoy him, such as people leaving their food behind in the canteen without putting it in the trash. Images flashed in his head of picking up the tray and whacking it across one of the members' heads, teaching them a lesson so they wouldn't do it again.

However, as he got more like his old self, it was as if his old personality of what he was like before and his new character were mixing to create something else.

'Who am I kidding? I'm just an angry person that's started to think more.' Peter thought as he was currently in the medical bay. Hoping to find some dead bodies. On the ship itself, there were even emergency caskets and some dead bodies that were kept just for Peter, but for some reason, he just couldn't bring himself to turn one of them. His hand was held on one of the handles for a while now.

'I can't...I can't disrespect their bodies like that.' Peter thought as he walked off, trying to come up with some other idea.

Logan's suggestion was to make Wights and explore what exactly he could do with them. In the past, Peter had often relied on his strength so much that he never bothered making Wights from the enemies he killed because they just wouldn't be much help to him.

On top of that, even if he killed strong enemies, they just didn't seem helpful because what made them strong in the first place was their abilities. The two Wights he controlled would also constantly follow him around, which was a pain to him, and was why he would either use them as meat shields or forget about them.

Muttering to himself was just hurting his head more when suddenly he stopped in his tracks.

"Wait, did I ever try to....that might work."

With the idea running in his head and not wanting to lose this momentum, Peter was seen running straight to a particular room. When he arrived, he could see all of the teleporters' in sight.

"Hey, which one of these teleporters head to planet Caladi?" Peter asked the four or so guards that were in the room. All of them gulped as soon as they saw Peter. He already had a reputation for having a bad temper, one of the leaders they shouldn't get on the wrong side of.

"It's this one over here, sir!" One of the men pointed.

Seeing it, he smiled while walking over to the teleporter.

"Sir, do you have permission from Sam to use-"

"Shut up!" Where Peter's following words as he placed his hand on the man's face and pushed him away. "I'll be back soon, so there's no need for me to get permission."

With that, Peter had already gone into the teleporter and soon found himself in the Shelter on Planet Caladi. When arriving on the other side, the people there were also part of the Cursed faction, and they were also shocked to see Peter there.

"I know, I know, just tell Sam I won't be here long," Peter said, and next, using his amazing speed, he was running off in the distance and soon found himself out of the Shelter and in the desert standing on the sand.

"Where is it....where is it." Peter kept searching as he twisted and turned his head. Realising that just looking wasn't exactly going to help him out, he decided to just use his body's instincts instead.

'This should work.'

Following naturally where his body wanted him to go, Peter eventually found the place where the Cursed ship had crashed on planet Caladi, where so many people lost their lives. But not only humans had lost their lives.

The area looked mostly cleared, with the human bodies taken away. Still, as for the Dalki bodies, they had remained, letting the sand cover them up or for the beast to take them away. Eventually, Peter started to dig in the sand at a specific spot and saw something dark and black.

Grabbing onto it, he used his great strength to pull it out of the sand, and a mostly intact Dalki was seen. Its arms and limbs were broken.

'When Quinn told us what the Demon tier amulet did, how he was able to control the Dalki and take down those motherships, it gave me an idea, maybe I can do the same. I can't bring back beasts. I know that much, but my powers let me turn

vampires and humans into Wights. Dalki are half-human, so there's a chance this could work.'

Placing his hand on the Dalki's chest, soon Peter something was felt leaving Peter's body, the veins on his arm were showing as the energy passed through his arm, they quickly popped out and went back in again once the energy passed.

At that point, the Dalki's body started to move again, its body slightly healing from the lesser Wights effect, and soon it stood tall in front of Peter.

"Yes...it worked!" Peter cheered and was so excited that he slammed his fist into the Dalki's chest and punched its head clean soon after. It fell back in the sand and was unmoving again.

"Ah....well, I didn't want that one in the first place."

Now realising his ability worked on Dalki, Peter started to dig through different parts of the sand again. Repeating the process as if he was looking for something, but not only was he looking for something, he was testing the limits of his ability as well.

As a Wight, Edward, the ex vampire knight of the tenth family, told him that he had to protect his head at all costs. He could heal any wound as long as his head was kept intact. When he was turned by Quinn, Peter was on the verge of death but not dead, and as a ghoul, he still wasn't quite classified as an undead creature.

Only when he turned into a Wight did his heart stop beating, so it made him wonder just what the lesser Wights he created were. In the first place, they were only able to be created from dead bodies.

They were unable to use the abilities they had when they were alive but kept the same strength. They seemed a lot more like the typical zombies that one would know about from films, but did it really matter about their brain.

Peter soon found out his answer that it didn't at all. For things had changed since the last time he had used the ability. Although he hadn't gone through an evolution, it seemed like the effects of his lesser Wights were more dependent on him.

'It's just like Logan said, even my Wight powers are evolving with me.'

Peter was looking at a Dalki that had lost its head which was now standing perfectly fine. It was a little strange, and Peter soon found out its limitations. The Dalki was able to heal wounds to a certain degree, just like Peter, but it couldn't regrow parts of its body that it had lost before it had been turned.

On top of that, after enough damage to the body, unlike Peter, who could restore his regenerative abilities through eating flesh, they could not, and they would

finally die, again. Essentially, they were like an item with durability but one that couldn't be repaired, so eventually, he needed to replace it with a new one.

After many different tests, Peter still didn't give up, and that's when he finally found what he was looking for. Pulling out of the sand was a long sharp tail, meters long, and at the end of it were a pair of legs. However, the top half of its body was completely missing.

"This Dalki took way more of a beating compared to the others, but the bitch deserved it." Peter thought, hoping it would work.

It only took a few moments for the smile to appear again, as he saw the legs standing there and the Dalki tail they were all afraid of swinging about.

"Your name was Slicer, right? I guess your bottom half belongs to me now." Peter smiled as he quickly started to run back to the base, with a half Dalki body running after him, keeping up.

Of course, the lesser Wight Peter had created using the bottom half of Slicer's body wasn't as strong as her. For one, it didn't have its whole body, and none of the Dalki Peter had tested on before grew stronger the more blood they split. So it was similar to having half a Slicer with no power up, but the important part was her tail which was still intact.

Entering the Shelter, the two ran straight back for the teleporters. Screaming was heard throughout the Shelter as people spotted the pair of legs and giant tail.

"It's alright, she's with me! The legs I mean!" Peter shouted, still smiling.

Because, now that he knew that a head wasn't needed for turning those into a lesser Wight, he knew exactly who the next person he was going to turn would be and no one would care how he disrespected this body.

## Chapter 1268: I'm Evil

Thinking about what he was about to do next, Peter had a grin on his face that went from ear to ear. He was so pleased, but for those that did manage to catch the look on his face, it looked like a creepy smile rather than a pleasant one.

His deep dark black eye sockets and pale skin didn't help for that matter. Peter ran through the Shelter with the legs and tail following behind him, causing quite the scene. The problem was, there really was no one who could do anything about it since they were moving so fast.

The teleporter that Peter had come through could be seen ahead left on, and jumping through, he was back on the Cursed ship and soon to follow after him where the pair of legs.

"What the hell is that!" The guard shouted.

"Those scales, and that tail, it's a Dalki body, I'm sure of it! Attack, attack!"

"Don't attack!" Peter shouted right after. "Am I going to have to explain these legs everywhere I go? I mean, we have vampires and all sorts of things in the Cursed faction. Heck, Logan has a Dalki arm. I thought this wouldn't be too strange."

Looking at them again though, even Peter had to admit it did look a little out of place. A Dalki was relatively large compared to a human, so even though it was just Slicer's legs, it nearly was as tall as a human itself, and a lot of the Cursed faction looked scared looking at the tail.

"Legs there is with me." Peter calmly said before everyone came raiding the room any second now to take on the Dalki. He could just imagine even Bonny and Void appearing out of nowhere. They always seemed to be around when the most interesting things were happening. A slight smirk appeared on his face as Peter imagined the news reports.

"Actually, do you mind doing me a favour? Report to Sam to come meet me, and then this way he can inform everyone to not be alarmed. Otherwise, all my hard work might be for nothing if everyone started to suddenly attack it."

The guards looked at each other, thinking that Peter must have had a screw loose or something. The reason being, although they knew that Peter was most likely a V, they had no idea of his powers, and this was something that they didn't know they could do. Due to them not knowing about the subclasses within the vampire race.

In the end, they decided to call Sam to the teleporter station immediately. They listened to Peter just because it looked like the Leg's and tail weren't attacking them or anything in the room.

A little while later, Sam was seen appearing in the room, with Linda by his side. The only reason why he had brought her was because the men on the other end sounded a bit afraid and had told him to bring some back up with him.

"Come on, what could have Peter brought with him that would be just so?"

He couldn't even finish his sentence, as his eyes were set on the pair of legs in the room, which at this moment was sitting down, but the large tail could be seen swinging up at a height taller than a human.

"It's cool, right. I spoke to Logan, and he made me rack my brain a little, so I came up with this." Peter explained.

For Sam, going through all the possibilities in his head, he had figured it out. It was clear that this was the bottom half of Slicer's Body. The fact that it wasn't attacking anyone and Peter was the one who had brought it, the most likely reason was it had something to do with his Wight abilities.

"This is good news," Sam said, carefully shuffling towards it, and stopped the second he had got within the range of the tail. When he saw Peter showing it was fine to get close, Sam moved forward, and Linda did the same.

"Her tail was the greatest strength of the Dalki. It was even able to cut through Hilston's Demon tier armour. This has to be a gold mine. We don't know if its strength is the same or its sharpness, but I would guess it has to be at a similar level."

Hearing this, Peter had one more surprise for Sam and started to whisper in his ears. After listening to what Peter had to say, his eyes lit up even wider than before.

"1A, is the number," Sam said, and straight away, Peter was running off again. "Legs follow and listen to Sam!" Peter ordered.

Using its tail, it gave off a salute by its waist since it had no head.

'I guess I'm going to have to prepare an announcement.' Sam thought, looking at the thing.

After getting the okay from Sam, Peter found himself in the ship's morgue. A very cold room, but for Peter, he felt no difference. There were several what looked like file cabinets with numbers in the corner of each of them.

In the very corner of the room, Peter could see the number 1A. Unlike before, without hesitation, Peter was able to pull on the handle, and a body in a glass tube-like container was seen coming out. This was Peter's next turning target.

The only thing was that it had no head, and the reason for that was Sil stepping on it, eradicating it.

'I can only create two lesser Wights at a time, so why not have the two strongest we have ever seen before.' Peter thought.

For the next person, he was ready to turn, was Hilston. No one, not even Sil would care what would happen to his body. In fact, the reason why it was in the morgue in the first place was so Peter could feast on it.

'I'm going to have to explain to those guys when they come back, although, without your head, I'm not sure they will recognise you.' Peter thought, placing his hand on a healthy part of his chest after the glass container covering the body went away.

He knew turning Hilston, he wouldn't be able to use his abilities like the others he had turned before, but Hilston was supernatural. Even without his beast gear, he had the speed and strength to match a low-level vampire lord. It was an amazing feat, something that seemed impossible.

At the same time, if Hilston turned out to be somewhat weaker, then he imagined it was no loss on their part. Peter would take pleasure in using his body as a human meat shield.

A few seconds later, after repeating the process, the body rose from the table it laid on.

"Haha." Peter chuckled. "Oh, how I would love to punch you right now for that slap, you gave me, but there's no point. I know it's better to use you."

With both pieces he needed, Peter was ready to put them into action, just like Quinn. Peter needed to figure out the best way to utilise his two lesser Wights in the middle of a fight while also using his powers. Still, for sure, Peter had now become a formidable foe that nobody would want to face.

This was exactly what Sam was thinking as he was looking at Slicer at the moment.

'Quinn, Leo, Erin, Layla, Sil and now Peter as well. These will be the key members of the Cursed faction in the future. Perhaps if Vorden and Raten evolve into Demon tier beasts as well. We might have a chance at winning this war after all.'

On Blade island, currently, Vorden and Raten were trying to do just that. They were going around hunting for strong beasts, improving their skills, and gathering their crystals. There were also the beasts that had been captured that were at the legendary level underneath.

Borden, and Sil were helping as well, but Sil not too much since the others didn't want him to help. As for Vicky, Pai and their mother and father. The four of them had decided to leave the island and do as they had said they would.

To hunt down those Chained that had strong abilities and a chance in the future to disrupt and ruin the flow of everything. After all, without Turedream present, these were the type of ability users who had chucked the world into chaos before.

For Eno, he was in his favourite spot, looking out from the castle at the whole island staring into space. All the preparation he wanted to do and needed to do was done.

"Sometimes I think of the past," Eno said. "You know, I thought after all these years that I would learn to forget about the past, yet here I am. Brock, Do you think I'm evil?" Eno asked.

"Evil sir is subjective," Brock answered. "You should know that much by now, sir. We have both seen how history books from the humans and the vampires have been written. Sometimes people often put things in categories of good or bad, black and white. While others will say that there is a grey area. For me, I believe that there is just one colour. There is no right and wrong, there is just what people want to do, and you have always just followed what you wanted to do."

After Brock's answer, there was silence from Eno until he finally spoke.

"It looks like he is finally making his move. We should prepare to call the others back."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1269: Tired

Lately, Quinn seemed to have been travelling on a number of different surfaces. From hard barren rock, to unknown metals, snow, sand and even more. Right now, Quinn was experiencing yet another new terrain, as his two feet were in a swampy texture.

The water rose up to the ankle of his boots. If he was to stay in one place too long, he would feel like his body was sinking on the spot, so he was constantly on the move. He also needed to be careful not to apply too much pressure for that would make him sink deeper as well.

In a way, he found fighting on different terrain to be a form of training in itself. He never knew when and what terrain he would be fighting his enemies on, so it was good to have experienced all the differences.

Fortunately, this planet also had a few places where the land was more solid, allowing him to rest.

This was exactly what Quinn was currently doing. Around him were several trees that had long green vines dangling from them, so it was hard for one to see into the distance, not that there was anything nice to look at in the first place.

However, Quinn was not alone either. Surrounding him were the Marked Dalki. Thanks to the power of the Demon tier Amulet, Quinn now had a total of four Dalki under his control. Three of them had two spikes on their bodies, while the last one, who had been the most recent captive, had only one for now.

Quinn had considered marking a beast instead of a Dalki, but all the beasts he had encountered in the area were far weaker than even the one spiked Dalki, which made it seem pointless, especially since the amount of energy required to open up another slot was incredibly high at this moment. Failing to mark something, meant he would have to regather that energy once more.

They had been killing beasts and Dalki for a while now, but the fifth slot still hadn't opened up. Quinn was starting to wonder if four slots were its limit, but the Vampire Lord believed the system would have said something if that would have been the case. Additionally, he didn't mind the process taking longer, since all this fighting was bringing the Dalki closer to evolving as well.

Thanks to his controlled Dalki, Quinn had discovered what incredible beings they actually were. Their bodies had similar healing capabilities to vampires. As long as enough time passed their wounds would naturally heal by using up their body's energy. Alternatively, they were also able to eat the beasts in the area to acquire more energy and to speed up this healing.

However, if their bodies healed this natural way, it was also a sign that their strong energy they would get from being harmed had gone away as well, unlike when

their wounds healed from bleeding out, which was something Quinn still couldn't wrap his head around. Losing blood, yet still healing from fatal wounds. No wonder the Dalki were so hard to kill.

'Maybe it's time we move again.' Quinn contemplated. 'We've been on this planet for a while.'

Quinn had chosen not to stay on one planet too long, neither did he want to attempt to take down another one of their mother ships for fear they would retaliate or send someone after him. The problem was moving from each planet took time, and as Quinn moved to each one he was spending more and more time on them.

'The Dalki seem more spread out on this planet compared to the previous ones, so I think you should be fine to stay here a bit longer.' Vincent shared his opinion.  
'Besides, I think things have calmed down a little. That being said, this also feels like the calm before the storm.'

Looking at the Dalki, next to him, Quinn was looking at one of the two spikes, and all four of the Dalki standing still as statues around him like bodyguards, while he was sitting down with his back up against a tree.

'Hey, I was thinking. You have been a big help when fighting with my body, but you're still not the best when it comes to making the most out of it.' Quinn said. "In an emergency I will have to flee by using my Shadow link skill, which might mean I'll be forced to leave the Marked Dalki behind or I'll probably have to drain their energy. I won't be fighting with the Dalki body like last time."

'I'm hoping there is a point to you saying all of this, rather than just telling me my skills are bad in your body.' Vincent replied.

"What I was thinking, is maybe we can put you in a Dalki body? We could use Shiro's power." Quinn suggested.

Originally, Quinn wanted to put Vincent in another Humanoid beast, but with the Dalki owning most of the beast planets now, that seemed quite improbable.

'I don't think that is a good idea, Quinn.' Vincent replied after a while. 'We know Shiro's ability basically places one consciousness inside the body of another being, but the original still remains. Even if these Dalki are under the amulet's control, I doubt their consciousness is completely gone. It only worked so well for your friends because the beasts' minds inside had agreed to help.'

'Perhaps Shiro has a skill that can eliminate one of the minds, but even then if my mind is in the body of the Dalki, were you thinking of using one of your Marked? We don't know what will happen to me. I might also end up under the amulet's effect. Or think about what happens if you need to flee, and you might drain that body.'

'I'm also partly worried that moving me will disrupt the system.'Even if it doesn't, my existence might have been a coincidence, so moving me out means there is the possibility that I might not have any way to return to the system either, if something has to go wrong with it. I know you mean well, but I just think that if we act now there are too many risks. Let's wait until this is all over.'

That was the problem, Quinn honestly didn't know when this would 'all' be over, especially with things happening in the Vampire World now. Would it be when Jim was defeated? When Arthur no longer was a threat?

Even then he still needed to worry about the Dalki, the Demon tier beast and Bryce. Not to mention his unresolved issues with Pure, who he was sure would eventually come to him since he had eliminated Agent 2 as well now.

"I'm...getting a little tired just thinking about it." Quinn sighed, which was the first time Vincent had heard him say such words.

Eventually a week had passed on the Cursed ship. As promised Leo had been training both Erin and Layla. Helping them use their Qi, as well as trying to unlock the soul weapons in both of them.

What Leo didn't know was that Layla had also been doing her own separate training alongside Nate following their training sessions. After her loss with Erin, she had been more determined to work harder.

Her training with Nate had mostly focused on her being able to access those emotions again and unlock the fourth form. What Nate hadn't realised when offering to help her was that their 'training' had been more on the lines of a therapy session rather than using one's fists which was what Nate was good at.

He had asked Layla many times if she was sure that she wouldn't rather speak to someone else, who she might perhaps be closer to than him, but she had insisted that he was the easiest to talk to, for she felt like he would never judge her.

According to her judgement, the only thing Nate cared about was girls and getting better at martial arts. Someone else might have been offended by that, but Nate had just shrugged it off, even going so far as to make a joke about Layla having seen right through to his core.

One of the things the two had discussed was the warning that Leo had given on that first day. It was strange but all he had said was to be careful with the sword she was using.

However, after learning that Quinn thought it would be fine for her to have the sword, Leo thought that it would be fine for now. Especially since she had already been using it for a while with no apparent problems.

In the end though, Erin and Leo were soon to leave the Cursed ship. Their equipment was finally complete.

Arriving in the forgery room, Alex and Andrew had naturally done their classic 'covering of the items with a cloth' trick.

"You do know that this is pointless for me." Leo said. "For one, I can already see what they look like underneath the cloth, even though I do not know the colours, not that it makes much of a difference to me."

After hearing that, Erin had decided to lift the cloth to reveal the items that they would now be using.

"Hey!" Alex pouted. "How could you steal the best part of this?! It's like opening up a package that you ordered online! Imagine coming home and finding out that someone else had opened your package. Or opened your presents on Christmas to still give you the present. It just ruins the feeling."

Still ignoring him, Erin first went to look at the giant cover that had been built for her Demon tier weapon. It was designed to be strapped around her waist, and had straps over her shoulders while being placed on her back.

The large piece was the perfect shape for the large sword. The three holes that were in the blade, the cover also had indents to show where they would be, not ruining the design and beauty of the demon tier weapon.

"After seeing you, I chose to go with a black and yellow design for the cover." Andrew explained. "I was pretty sure the last time I saw you, you had black hair so I decided to go with that, but now I see you have blonde hair."

Andrew thought his eyes were playing tricks on him but thought Erin must have just dyed it while she was staying on the ship, not realising that it was part of Erin's abilities. Although she could control the change at will now.

"Thank you, it is excellent." Erin was more than pleased with it. When placing the sword in the cover, she couldn't even see its energy with her ability. The suppression powers were more impressive than the chains she was wearing.

'If the urge ever comes back in the future, I should seek out this forger to help me.' Erin decided at that moment.

On Alex's table was Leo's weapon and Erin's Katana. It was time for Leo to find out whether or not his sword had been put to good use.

## Chapter 1270: Everyone Upgraded

It had been a while since Leo had received a new blade to use. He had trusted his cursed sword for so long and had always had it by his side. Although it wasn't the best blade for hunting beasts, he didn't need it to be, thanks to Leo's skills and his power of Qi.

The main reason he kept the blade was due to the Curse that had been left behind in the weapon. He could feel the power of the sword rise with energy whenever he fought against the Dalki. If he had ever outright told people this, they would think he had gone mad.

No one had heard of such a thing happening before, but it worked similar to a passive skill, only when going up against the Dalki. Which was why he also knew that it might be impossible for Alex to pass on this sort of thing when creating a new weapon.

"I think it's best if you picked it up," Alex said smiling, and Leo did just that, and when he did, he could tell instantly.

"I'm sorry to say, but if I pick that thing up myself, I think I wouldn't be able to work for the rest of the day." Alex chuckled. He was proud of his accomplishments.

Although he didn't have the same ability as Leo or was as intune at sensing different types of Qi, he could tell that when creating the weapon with the Demi-god tier crystal, something had happened. Everything changed when he had melted down Leo's old sword. The power was still strong from it, and adding it to the new Demi-god tier weapon, he had created something he had never done so before.

Leo picked it up, and it was nearly an identical weight to his last sword, but just as Alex said, the Curse didn't weaken. Instead, it was enhanced. The sword had a complete makeover in colour, as the hilt was black, and the sword had a wave pattern going along the metal. The bottom half is a dark purple with a bladed edge.

"I wasn't able to really touch the sword after it was complete. I wasn't joking about what I said earlier, so I'm not sure if it has an active skill or not." Alex said.

Leo placed the sword away in the sheath he had. Since the blade was identical to his last one in size and shape, it fitted perfectly. He wouldn't test if it had an active skill or not for now, for he didn't know what it could do and would be afraid it could hurt others.

There was no Quinn here, where one could use their inspect skill to find out weapons' active or passive skills. Finally, Leo had a Demi-god blade that could rival any weapon out there, and with his strength in Qi, he was sure he wouldn't lose out to Demon tier weapons either.

The next blade that was placed on the table was also a katana style blade. It looked pretty regular for a blood weapon. Just like a katana blade one would see any forger make. Though there were differences.

If one was to look closely, in the middle of the blade was a single line that went all the way to the tip. It was clear to see through like glass. That's when Erin noticed there was something similar at the bottom of it as well.

"The details are due to it being a blood weapon," Alex explained. "The sword fills up as more blood is inputted into the sword, and then as you use its powers more, you will see the blood draining down from the tip. Not all blood weapons have this, but I got the idea from seeing Fex's blood weapon."

"I think it's a good idea in a fight to know when you need to refill it, a bit like a car."

It made Erin wonder. The sword worked from being filled with Human blood. They were informed that it also worked with Dalki blood. However, it did not empower itself with vampire blood. What about her own blood?

After all, she was considered only half-vampire, perhaps her blood was different, but she had decided not to test that out in front of Alex, not that she didn't trust him, but she just didn't want to feel different, even amongst the other subclasses on the ship.

'Even Alex now has another Blood fairy by his side, yet I'm the only Dhampir? What would happen if I tried to turn someone?' Shaking her head and placing the sword in her own scabbard, she tried to let such thoughts go out from her head.

Having collected both of their weapons, they thanked Alex and Andrew for their creations. The two of them headed back to the teleportation room to finally head back to the Vampire world.

"Are you sure you don't want to say goodbye to Layla before we leave?" Leo asked.

"No," Erin said. "I see no point in saying goodbye because I believe we will be returning soon anyway."

"Well, let's just hope that not much has happened in the vampire world while we were away. The fact that Paul has allowed us to travel back there should be a good sign." Leo commented. Although he was thinking it could be a bad one as well. As it also could indicate that he needed their help.

The two of them stepped through the teleportation heading back to the vampire world.

---

A short while later, and Sam had learnt of the two of them having already headed back. He felt a little bad, for he had just missed the two of them. If they had stayed a little longer, they could have come on board for what he had planned next. For he had just received a bit of good news.

'I guess the two of them will be okay without it anyway, and perhaps they are needed more over there.' Sam thought.

Still, he would deliver the news to the rest of the Cursed leaders, as a meeting had been called in the command centre for all of them. Everyone arrived promptly, compared to how they would usually.

With how things were, every one of them was prepared for an announcement that a fight was about to set off at any second. Sam could see this as everyone had a serious look for once on their face.

"Wow, I wish you guys were like this every time. You can relax, I guess you could say this is good news for you all." Sam smiled. "As you know, Quinn had ordered all the high tier crystals to go to those that were hunting on the front line. Because of this, the Daisy faction had used most of the crystals for themselves to create beast armour and more.

"Next, Quinn wanted the forgers to also create equipment for themselves to protect themselves if there was another attack on the Cursed ship, just like there was one recently. On top of this, there is a crystal shortage so nearly all crystals gathered have to be stored and rationed out to the other Shelters. Because of all of this, the Cursed leaders have been lacking in the equipment department."

So far, everything Sam had said just made it sound like there wasn't any good news at all, but the best news was to come.

"I just got a report from Vorden, who is on Blade island at the moment. Apparently, Hilston was keeping some pretty interesting things underneath his castle. It's been a long time since you got anything, so I thought it would be nice for all of you to upgrade. What I am suggesting is for the leaders of the Cursed group to head to the Blade island and get first pick on the equipment there."

Hearing about this, there were some large smiles on some of their faces, Particularly Nate and others. They didn't really use beast weapons. So having a strong set of beast armour and items was vital.

"The beast equipment has already been forged. My guess is he properly also stripped some of the Chained and threw their equipment in there. So no one can complain about us keeping using crystals to make items, this is the best use for it,

and then with the remainder of the items, we will hand them out to the rest of the crew."

It certainly was good news for them all. Even Layla was pleased by this. She had a great weapon by her side, and her training was bearing fruit. If she had a new set of armour on top of this, she would grow even further.

"I do have one last thing to mention," Sam said before everyone got too excited. "Everyone here will be going to the island, while Megan will be left in charge of the place."

"So you will be coming as well, Sam?" Nate asked, thinking back to the last time the two of them could hunt or fight together side by side.

"Yes, including me, but there is a reason for this. Richard Eno believes that an attack is bound to happen soon, which is why I have also decided to send all of us to the island. With the teleporters back online, we can travel from there to here, but we also have to make sure that no one gets through those teleporters.

"If everyone understands, then let's get to it," Sam said with a smile, happy to finally be leaving the Cursed ship after a long time.

Before they left, Peter cleared his throat.

"Ah, that's right," Sam said, struggling to get his words out. "I do have to make everyone aware that you might be seeing a pair of legs and a headless man around..."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1271: The calm before the storm

The Cursed leaders were pleased that for the first time in a long time all of them would be travelling together. It was usual for large parties to go out on expeditions, but in the past Sam had always asked for a team to stay behind, so they could protect the Cursed ship from attacks like the one just recently.

However, Sam was predicting that something big was very likely going to occur on Blade Island in the near future and with most of the Cursed ship's former crew left behind on Caladi, it was no longer much of a target for their enemy.

On top of that, Sam wanted to reward everyone's hard work by granting them first dibs on Hilston Blade's secret stash of treasure, so that everyone could find something suitable for themselves.

Going through the teleporter, the group arrived. Unfortunately, the location of their arrival had already been set and it didn't take any time at all for everyone to freeze up.

"D-D-D... DRAGON..." Wevil sniveled as he was pointing at the beast, his teeth chattering by the second.

By Eno's will they had all arrived near the tablet, which also meant that it was next to its protector. Not all of them had the 'pleasure' of having met with a Demon tier Beast. Wevil and Linda had been there when Quinn had fought against the giant pink tree, but this one had a completely different feel to it.

Sam wanted to tell them to calm down, but as someone who was still shaking at the mere sight of it, it was a hard message for him to convey. Eventually, after staying in the Dragon's presence without any incident for a while, the members of their expedition started to carefully move again.

It helped that the beast appeared to be sleeping. At one point, probably reacting to their movement, it had briefly opened one of its giant eyes to take a quick look at the newcomers. Even those who had come here before, froze up when faced with the beast's attention.

Fortunately, after taking one big sniff with its large snout, it simply closed its eye again. In total it had only paid attention to them for a few seconds, before it had chosen to ignore them. Still, it had been enough for many of them to see their life flash before them.

"Okay!" Sam exclaimed, happy that he hadn't just ended up as a snack. However, he quickly turned around to the beast, afraid that he had just disturbed its rest, after realising that he had just shouted, but fortunately it just let out another snore.

In a lower voice he said: "Let's do a count to check that everyone is here."

There were Peter, Layla, Logan, Fex who had a large box on his back that looked similar to a coffin, Nate, Wevil, Linda and of course Sam himself. Additionally, following behind Peter were Hilston's large muscular body, which still had a hole in its chest and was missing his head, as well as Slicer's bottom half which Peter just referred to as 'Legs'.

It caused the others to naturally step away from Peter. When they had learned about what he had done, even the other leaders had regarded the Wight's action as more than a little crazy. All of them were worried about the consequences if Slicer's bottom half could at some point overcome the loyalty she was placed under. It would be a disaster if she would turn on them at some point.

The reason for Peter's confidence was that he knew that he would never do anything to harm Quinn, so he was sure that his Lesser Wights had to share the same feeling towards him. Still, the others couldn't shake the uneasy feeling they got from Legs, afraid that he might have put too much trust in his ability.

"Peter, you might want to be careful when Sil and the others see... 'that'." Linda pointed at Hilston's body, trying to caution him.

"Yeah, I wouldn't be surprised if they attack your new creepy friends straight away." Fex agreed, keeping his eye on Legs' tail moving back and forth. It reminded him of an excited dog that was happy to be by its owner's side.

He was only seeing it from the corner of his eye, but it was so annoying that the vampire just had to grab it to make it stop, but to his surprise he grabbed onto nothing but air.

'What the... did that stupid tail just dodge me?!" Even more annoyed by his failure, Fex attempted to grab it again and again, but each time the tail moved faster, to the point the vampire got ready to use his string ability to slow it down.

"Stop that, gel boy!" Peter growled at Fex. "Legs belong to me now! I can't get another one, so don't ruin it!"

"Alright, everyone settle down please. We're all here now, but where is Dennis? He was meant to be meeting us." Sam wondered, looking around the place.

While they were waiting for their pickup to collect them and take them to their destination, Wevil and Linda found another interesting thing when they walked towards the centre of the open space.

"Hey isn't that.." Wevil was still feeling uneasy because of the sleeping Dragon, but now there was another thing that he felt he should be worrying about.

"Yeah, I'm sure of it. It looks almost identical to the Demon tier beast that was on the Graylash planet." Linda gulped down hard. The two of them were too afraid to get too close, but they did notice that it was far smaller than the one they had seen.

Eventually, a gust of wind was felt on all of their faces from a distance, and quite a large one at that, and that's when they could see a black furred creature arriving in front of them all.

"It's good to see you again." Vorden greeted them. Currently sitting on his back was Dennis, who quickly climbed down, holding a hand to his mouth.

"How could those kids like this type of ride? I think I'm going to thro-." Before he could even finish his sentence, he hurled over.

Poor Dennis hadn't accounted for the fact that Vorden had played with the kids before his evolution. As a Legendary tier beast his wind powers and speed had improved dramatically. Unless he held back, Vorden was sure that the kids would also be unable to handle the kind of speed he used to get here.

At first, Vorden was all smiles as he looked at everyone, until his eyes landed upon the headless body.

"What is that?!" Vorden questioned, his eyes turning to slits.

"You're going to have to be more specific, you wanna know more about Legs, or the headless one?" Peter asked casually.

While Sam was explaining the situation to Vorden, Layla who was at the back of the group was more concerned about something else. Ever since she had set foot on the island, the black sword by her side had been violently shaking.

'What's wrong with it? Is it reacting to the Dragon? Or is it because of the strange tree?' Layla wondered.

Putting this to the test, she started to walk towards the two, but the second she stepped towards the Demon tier beast, the shaking of the blade lessend. She was pleased that the sword wasn't reacting to the Dragon, because truth be told she didn't want to get closer.

When walking towards the tree she expected something to happen as well, but there was nothing on that end either.

Then, heading back towards one last thing, she finally noticed.

'So it seems to react to the tablet? ... Will something happen if I touch it?' Layla thought, unsure whether she should test it out or not.

---

While the Cursed faction were busy on Blade Island, Owen along with his Graylash faction were currently the busiest of the three groups in the war against the Dalki. Although they had agreed to not go on a full force attack, Owen and his people were successfully winning every single skirmish they were coming across.

This was mainly due to the planet they were on. There were dark clouds above them, which would pour constant rain on the planet. More importantly with these types of conditions it tremendously boosted the elemental powers of lightning.

On the ground, there had been news of another small camp having been set up. Owen could see it up ahead, and he didn't have the others by his side.

'Any Dalki we take down now, will be one less we will have to worry about later on.' Owen thought, as he struck thunder bolts into the clouds above where the Dalki had set up, and soon lightning started to strike down at the Dalki in their small camp.

It looked like there were twenty of them in total. With this first attack, he soon charged in like a lightning bolt himself, but he wasn't alone. He and his partner entered the sloppily built small camp and immediately got to work, firing off their powers, aiming at the Dalki's vital points, finishing them with their great strength.

The Dalki in the camp didn't even have time to react and after ten minutes, all twenty or so Dalki had been defeated.

"If I counted correctly you got twelve while I finished eight. You really have improved, little Owen." An old man dressed in white robes said.

"I'm happy that there is someone in the family that can challenge me a little." Owen happily accepted the praise. After all it came from Grim Graylash, his grandfather and the previous leader of the Graylash family.

"I'm happy that my genes seem to have merely skipped a generation. When your father grew up and didn't show much promise in regards to our ability, I was worried for the Graylash family, for what would happen when Hilston would take me away, but I see I didn't have to worry at all."

It looked like Owen now owed Quinn another favour for returning someone who was important to him. With the two of them, they were able to take out camps and scout groups just by themselves, a feat that was giving a massive morale boost to those in the Graylash family.

It was then that the two of them received a message.

"Sir, this is Hermes reporting. We have spotted the one you were looking for, not too far from the Shelter, and it looks like the Dalki are ready for a full force attack. Please come back immediately!"

With their powers, the two of them could move fast, so getting back in time wasn't a problem, but the message hadn't ended there.

"Sir, a warning. The Dalki you fought before seems to have returned... however it appears to be a five spike now."

At the same time, Eno, who had been doing nothing but waiting for the Cursed faction's arrival, finally stood up.

"Brock, it's time for you to call Quinn. Tell him to come back immediately. Jim is making his move."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1272: Hunting for treasure

Vorden led the Cursed group to the underground storage place that was located underneath the castle. Surprisingly, the beasts that would usually be loud as one would go down the elevator remained silent.

Coming down, nobody else was present at the moment, which Vorden took as a good thing, because he was hoping to explain things to the other three before they reacted to seeing a certain headless person.

When walking through the dark tunnels, they went past several large cells that used to have beasts inside them, but instead they were filled with other things.

"Whoah, are all of those beast crystals? Didn't Sam say that Hilston didn't keep any in his storage?" Fex asked, amazed not just by the number of them but the quality as well. Truth was, Sam was also curious about that. He had just told the others what he himself had been told.

"That's because those aren't Hilston's crystals. Those are crystals all of us have collected from the beasts we've killed." Vorden explained.

Now Sam understood a bit more since he knew that both Raten and Vorden could evolve. They must have been gathering the crystals to use them when they had enough to evolve.

'If I remember correctly, after consuming each crystal there is a waiting period for the beast body to evolve, this is also when they are at their weakest and most vulnerable. I guess Vorden and Raten decided that they would take all the crystals in one go to minimise this risk, but I wonder if that means the time to absorb all the crystals energy will be longer as well.' Sam thought to himself.

When they finally entered the main room, they all stood there for a few seconds as they looked over heaps and heaps of beast equipment. Just a small percentage of all those weapons, armours would be enough to make the other factions go crazy, but here they were, just sitting there like piles of trash.

To their collective surprise, the first person to make a move was Fex. He ran over to one pile and started to sort through it.

"Hey what is he doing?" Linda asked.

"I can't believe he was faster." Wevil mumbled as he activated his transformation, turning his body partly into the tiger beetle, which focused on speed. "Remember what Sam said? Everything is first come, first serve!"

Before Linda could say anything, Wevil was already on top of another pile of equipment and started to search for the best one there. Sam just began to shake his

head, elated that neither Bonny nor Void were here for this scene would severely damage their reputation.

'Why are they behaving like this? They should know that all of them specialise in different weapons! Is this really my fault for believing they would act better than wild animals?' Sam wondered, as he watched Wevil and Fex both pull on the same armour, both of them wanting to try it out. Ultimately, he let out a sigh and decided to join in looking for new equipment as well.

During the following thirty minutes, all of them were busy testing out the loot. Even if it wasn't their weapon of choice, many would be swinging swords, bashing other items against each other, checking for active skills and more, until a few more people had entered the cave.

"All of you're a bunch of kids!" Raten shouted, after watching them uncontrolled. At that moment, Vorden and the others stopped what they were doing. Only Peter, and his two helpers had completely ignored who had just entered.

"Peter!" Linda called out.

Hearing his name, he turned his head, and his two helpers did the same.

"What the fu-" Raten was about to curse, but he too quickly turned his head thinking that another person would have a worse reaction. All eyes were looking towards Sil.

Strangely, Sil had almost no reaction at all when looking at the body and just... greeted the others.

"It's nice to see you all."

They wondered if Sil hadn't registered Peter's Lesser Wights, but it seemed impossible. Sil had even looked over at the body a couple of times, but there was no anger, no aggressiveness or anything from him at all.

"Sil... are you alright with this?" Vorden eventually asked, coming over to him, and looking in the direction of the headless body.

"Although that thing looks like Hilston, I know it's not him. He's dead... I've made sure of it. If anything, seeing his headless body walk around, taking orders from Peter of all people, I feel relieved. It's further proof that Hilston will never come to haunt us." Sil explained.

Raten and Vorden looked at each other, both feeling the same thing. Their little brother had really grown up. For the first time, Sil was the most reasonable out of the three, his words alleviating their own doubts.

The group continued to look through the equipment, their former fervor cooling down as they began to help each other out by looking for some treasures

underneath. Borden, who was in his small form and had great strength, was especially well suited for this task.

Eventually, Sam, who wasn't too picky in this department, decided on a mismatch of Legendary and Emperor tier equipment at which point he stopped looking. It was tiring trying all the equipment out. Sometimes it was hard to tell what tier they were at without wearing them, so Sam had just chosen the ones he had felt had granted him the best stats, rather than something with strong active skills that suited him.

While getting out of everyone's way, he suddenly received a call coming from none other than Sach.

"Sam, I don't have much time to speak, but I'll be sending you a file that will update you on all the information." Sach informed the other as soon as the call had been answered. "In essence, the Graylash faction is about to be attacked by a Dalki army led by a five spiked Dalki."

"What's more, it seems like One Horn is finally making his moves as well. This is not a message asking for your help. I trust you will do whatever is best, but I also remember Eno's words during the meeting that he was relying on us to defend Blade Island. Unfortunately, I'm afraid we won't be able to while being tangled up in this."

Hearing all of the information, Sam had one question on his mind.

"What about the Cursed faction planets? How are Helen and the others coping?"

"So far, theirs is the only side that shows no signs of movement." Sach reported. "For further details, please read through the reports. I'm sorry, but I have to go now." Sach ended the call.

'The Dalki...they have started to attack the other sections but haven't attacked the Cursed faction yet. There are two things I can think of. Either one of the Dalki leaders is on their way here to Blade Island while the other two are busy, trying to hold up our forces, or that Slicer was originally meant to lead the attack but her death ruined their plans.'

Either way, Sam thought at least they still had time as Blade Island was in no such trouble at the moment. This did make him feel bad for the other groups, wondering if each one could handle a five spiked Dalki on their own.

'Should I inform Quinn? This seems like a decision he should make, whether we should help one of the two groups?' Sam hesitated.

It was then that one more person entered the cave. Hearing the footsteps Sam immediately turned his head, only to find Brock walk in with his hands behind his back.

"You appear to have just been updated on the current situation outside." Brock noted. "I can guess what you must be thinking, but it's not a good idea to decrease our own force at this moment. Remember what Eno said. If they get their hands on the Demon tier beast, this war is basically lost."

"Think, why would they have started attacking those places but not here yet? If I were them, I would let some time pass, pressuring my enemy to send over some help and the second they do, that's when I would strike this place."

Sam didn't like it but Brock's argument made sense. In the past, they might have doubted the Dalki's strategic capabilities, but them attacking all the planets at once, had proven that humanity had been wrong to underestimate them in this regard.

Nevertheless, Sam felt bad knowing that lives were being lost while they were just waiting on Blade Island, protecting what felt like an almighty beast of all things rather than their fellow people. The only good news was that their Cursed faction weren't under attack.

If they were, then they would probably have to move at least some of the group that was currently with them.

"I have come here to tell you that Eno claims we need Quinn. Please contact him and tell him to come back to the island right now." Brock delivered the message needed.

Sam also didn't like the way he was being talked to, but for the greater good he swallowed his displeasure down. Even with all of them there, Richard Eno still seemed to be worried and knowing that old man there had to be a good reason behind that.

"So Quinn that's all the information I have, Eno wants you to return to the island now and by now I think he means straight away, but it's up to you to decide what you want to do." Sam reported, leaving the decision for Quinn to make.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1273: Risk your life

Quinn felt like it was a good thing he was relaxed and still sitting by the swampy tree when he had received the message, because it certainly was something he wanted to take his time to think about instead of rushing over head first.

Fortunately, although Eno seemed adamant for Quinn to come as soon as possible, according to Sam nothing had happened on Blade Island yet. Right now, only the other two groups were involved in fights.

'There are two actions I could take next.' Quinn started to list his options. 'I could go back right now by using my Shadow ability. That way I'll be by their side, could help them make preparations and could also find out why Eno wants me back so badly.'

'Alternatively, I could just continue training here with the Marked Dalki until the last second. If I'm lucky, it will allow me to open up a fifth slot from the Demon tier Amulet, so I can be as strong as possible when they do need me.'

It was troublesome since both options had their upsides and downsides. Especially when thinking back to how strong the five spiked Dalki were. Quinn just wasn't sure if he was ready yet.

Nevertheless, Quinn leaned towards heading back now, yet he didn't exactly enjoy being on Eno's call. It made him feel as if he was just another one of Eno's chess pieces in this entire war.

'If you want my opinion, I also think we should go back now, so we can prepare with Eno and the others. I don't like him either, but there is a reason behind everything he does and his goals coincide with our own.' Vincent reasoned.

Mulling over it for a little while longer, Quinn eventually stood up as he had come to a decision.

'You're right, I'll head back to Blade Island, but not because of what you said.' Quinn insisted. 'I can take the Dalki with me, by putting them in my shadow space, and then use my Shadow link, I doubt even Eno knows that I am able to do this, so I'll keep them as my trump card for now."

'I will need to use their strength and drain them anyway, if we run into something like another five spiked Dalki, after all. Besides, Sam said that nearly everyone is already on Blade Island. If I delayed my return trying to get stronger, and anyone were to die, it would be solely my own fault.'

Of course, Vincent was happy with Quinn's answer. Honestly both options seemed fine, but he was happy that Quinn still had kept this part of him, the one that cared about his friends more so than anything and he hoped that would never change.

It was finally time for Quinn to return to his friends' side. Using his Shadow link, he looked for someone he could connect to. While doing this though, there was something else Quinn noticed.

'His...Shadow is activated at the moment? Does that mean he's using it as well?' Quinn could feel someone else's shadow being used, and it wasn't anyone from the Cursed faction.

This was a big distraction for him, but he decided to shake it off for now and stick to the task at hand, if anything it meant Quinn needed to be more cautious.

After connecting to Dennis, Quinn's body started to sink in the shadow.

'I should train the Shadow link skill more and level it up, maybe then I can bring others with me as well, without having to use the Shadow lock skill.' Quinn thought as he could only see darkness around him.

One moment all he could see was darkness, the next he was greeted by a bright blue sky, with white fluffy clouds and a certain clean smell. It had been a long time since Quinn had been on Earth, and the other beast planets just didn't have the same atmosphere as their home planet.

Closing his eyes, Quinn sniffed the air, taking in the smell that he had missed.

"I see you are as relaxed as ever." The voice that spoke up immediately soured his mood, and when Quinn opened his eyes he could see Eno in front of him. Next to him was Brock and it looked like they were all standing on top of the castle wall.

"Quinn, you look good!"

"Welcome back Boss."

"Hey, there he is!"

Turning around, Quinn acknowledged the greetings from the Cursed group with a nod. To his surprise nearly all of them were wearing beast gear he had never seen before.

Quickly using his Inspect skill, Quinn could see the impressive gear that was on all of their bodies. That's when he also noticed that some of them weren't there as well.

"Where are the Blades?" Quinn asked, looking around.

Sam was the first to go up to Quinn, hoping to catch him up on what was happening so far, and what they were about to do.

"Since you didn't reply back straight away, we thought you might have decided to arrive some time later." Sam explained as he looked towards Eno and Brock who

waited for the two of them, yet the old man's tapping foot made it clear that he wanted them to hurry up. "So I kinda gave them the go ahead to start Eno's plans without you."

"Although Eno insists that the attack will happen soon, we have no clue when exactly. That's why we made the decision to send Sil back so he can gather the powers he needs. We will call him as soon as the fighting starts here."

The big downsides of the Blade ability was that it required people with abilities and that the copied abilities only lasted for twenty four hours. Unfortunately, vampires didn't count, yet one thing they wanted to avoid was bringing people over who could act like the Chained for Sil's usage. Taking anybody to Blade Island would just be too dangerous.

"As for the other two, knowing what is about to come, Raten and Vorden are in the middle of consuming the beast crystals. You know about their bodies getting weak after doing so, which is why Borden is protecting them underground in the storage place just in case anything is to happen." Sam explained.

With Sam having told Quinn everything, Eno came forward, cleared his throat to say his piece.

"This time, I have no master plan. I don't even know who exactly our foe will be, whether it will just be Dalki, Vampires or perhaps a mix of both. Naturally, I don't know their exact numbers either. I could give you some estimations we have, but if you rely on that it might just backfire. As such, it seems better to not share any flawed information and just prepare for the worst, which is what I will be doing now."

"What we need to concentrate on, is the things we do know. The Dalki are after the Demon tier beast. It prefers to stay near the giant tablet. At all costs we'll have to protect these three things in order of priority. The Dragon, the Tablet and finally the teleporter."

"All three of them are located at the centre of the island, close to each other. However, this is a good and a bad thing. Good, because our last line of defense will be here, without the need to split up. Bad, because it also means that before that we can be attacked from all directions. In essence, the whole island will be our battlefield."

"Look at the people who are here right now. I know we have requested help, I have even called for help on my side, but it's quite possible that we will have to deal with everything with just the people who are here right now. Keep that in mind."

"Another thing we can't really influence will be the Dragon's reaction when it senses so many invaders coming here. If the situation arises when you'll have to ask yourself 'Do I sacrifice my life for the Demon tier beast?' I want your resolve to be 'Yes!'. If the Demon tier beast gets taken, then all of the human race is doomed."

The others heard this and looked at each other. They knew of the importance of this task, and every time they had fought they had done so with their lives on the line, but usually they could see the faces of the people they were protecting.

As for Quinn, he didn't agree with this at all.

"What the hell kind of pep talk was that, Eno?! I understand that we should do everything we can to stop them from taking the Demon tier beast, but how is us dying going to help anyone?! If it comes down to it, we should live to fight again another day!"

"If that's really your resolve, then they have practically already succeeded in taking the Demon tier beast!" Eno sighed. "How can you still underestimate the significance of this thing? You might not be ready to give it your all, but I can guarantee you, at least the Dalki will pay any price they have to, to make sure they get it into their hands!"

"Then what about you? Do you have that resolve? Are you prepared to risk your own life for once?! How dare you ask my people, my friends to risk their life if you aren't prepared to do the same?!" Quinn shouted.

"Who says I'm not?" Eno replied, as he placed his hands together and a red glow could be seen.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1274: The red crown

Quinn wasn't quite sure what was about to happen next. The red glow in between Eno's hands started to get brighter and brighter, until it was as bright as a flashlight, blinding them all. They had no choice but to look away, especially the vampires whose eyes were far more sensitive to the change in brightness.

'Is this it? Has Eno finally snapped and revealed his true colours?' Quinn was ready to protect his friends. Activating his shadow, he was ready to summon the Dalki as backup. There was one thing that Quinn worried about, he had yet to see Eno's full strength and given his powerful ability that was free to do so many things he had to be cautious.

However, the only thing that happened was that the light started to fade, revealing Eno. However, he looked completely different compared to just moments ago. His whole body was covered in a dark red armour and on top of his head there was what looked to be a type of crown. It was a thin band that went all the way round through his hair, yet it had three red spikes sticking out. The one in the middle was the largest and resembled a horn with the way it pointed upwards.

'Is that... is that the Blood armour?' Was Quinn's immediate thought. In the past, Quinn had seen Arthur in Blood armour when he had fought Hilston, although back then the Punisher hadn't used it against his foe.

"...how? Wasn't there only meant to be two sets of Blood armour in existence? One that belongs to the King-"

"And the other to the Punisher Arthur." Eno cut Quinn off. "I'm surprised you're that knowledgeable about our history, but there are still things that you don't know about this world. I was the First King of our vampire society. I was the one that decided that the Punishers should be created and I am the one that is prepared to act! If no one else will put their life on the line to stop this vampire, then I will!" Eno proclaimed strongly, his aura having taken a regal tone thanks to his new outfit.

Quinn had been paying close attention to the other's heart rate ever since he had donned the armour, studying his facial expression to see if there was any hint of hesitation, but there had been no signs that Eno had been lying.

The thing Quinn still couldn't understand was why someone so old was prepared to risk their life more than he himself was. Not only had Eno apparently told them the truth, but he hadn't even shown any hesitation whatsoever than he had claimed to be ready to lay down his own life for the cause.

Nevertheless, Quinn couldn't help but be suspicious. For someone who has lived for as long as Eno had, it wouldn't surprise him if he had either learned or come up with some trick to hide all these signs. Years to become a good enough actor, to

control his heart beat so it wouldn't flutter, or perhaps lying on the spot was something that was just second nature to him.

'A third Blood armour set... I never heard of such a thing. How I wish I could have studied it in my time...' Vincent noted. As a former researcher whose passion it had been to look into things, his passion about the vampire's past had blessed him with great knowledge. Yet even he had never heard of such a thing. 'Say what you will about Eno, but I have to admire his ability to have a backup plan for everything.'

Point in case, Quinn had never been part of Eno's equation in the first place. The Vampire Lord was someone completely outside his expectations who had continued to defy common sense and any expectation the Original Vampire had for him.

He could have easily left everything to Quinn and the Cursed faction, something he had done often enough in the past, yet Eno was now ready to risk his own life. Still, Quinn couldn't agree with the words that were said before.

"I'm sick of it. I'm tired of it." Quinn shouted again. "I'm tired of people who think they know better, who are stronger, making decisions for others. We have our own lives, the people we care about our own decisions. Eno, you might think differently because of how long you have lived. You look at not just humans, but even me who is a vampire like a child. A child who is naive and hasn't lived through what you have so they need to listen to what you have to say."

"I won't deny that." Eno shrugged, before shaking his head. "How can I not, when after all this time that has passed, everyone keeps making the same mistakes? It's my job to correct them."

Not having any more words to say to Eno directly, Quinn decided to leave the area to calm down. He could tell that there were no amount of words that would change how the other would think. At the same time, he didn't know why he had gotten so frustrated.

Was it because he was tired? Quinn felt like not just him but the whole Cursed faction had already been pushed to their limit far more times than should be reasonable. Or was it the fact that Eno was right, but he just didn't want him to be?

Eventually walking away, hoping to calm down, no one knew what to say. They had felt Quinn's frustration many times during the war.

"Quinn..." Sam murmured, but decided that now was not the right time to approach him, and wanted to hear if Eno had anything else to say about the enemy or this plan.

However, there was one person that hadn't thought about her actions, instead chasing after Quinn as soon as he had left and that was Layla.

Following him through the castle, down to the top floor, and was now in the throne room, she could see Quinn up ahead mumbling to himself under his breath.

"Quinn, wait!" She shouted, yet the Cursed faction leader seemed to be in his own world. He continued to go down the floors, making his way out of the castle.

'Quinn, you can't be the perfect person all the time. You have to let your frustration out sometime.' Vincent tried to pacify his grandson. 'I was frustrated for many years, living in the vampire society, seeing other people not acting, thinking everything was okay when it wasn't, but you are not that type of person.'

'You never have been, that's why you decided to act. I think your frustration comes from seeing no end in sight, but trust me all of this will be over at one point.'

Eventually, Quinn had left the castle. Without any plan where to go, he just headed straight. Vincent's words helped, but Quinn didn't know why Eno was just able to rub him the wrong way.

'It's that look, that look in his eyes whenever he speaks to us. Like he doesn't care about any of our lives. Does he not care for anyone, but then why....why does he risk so much for humans if he doesn't care. I just don't understand!' Quinn thought.

"Quinn!" Layla called out again, and this time he had heard, turning around, seeing her slightly out of breath from chasing him. Luckily Quinn wasn't really running otherwise Layla would have never been able to catch up to him.

"Finally." Layla stopped next to him, huffing and panting.

"I just wanted to say, thank you." Layla said, once she had caught her breath back. "I know you said those words because you care about us. You don't want any of us to risk our lives and trust me we don't. I'm not sure about the others but I'm sure their thoughts are along the same lines as mine."

"Even though we are tired, even though we don't want to risk our lives, at the end of the day, we decided to pick up our feet and continue on. Because if we didn't then who would take our place. If we don't protect Blade Island, then who else is there?"

These words were exactly the thoughts that Quinn had time and time again, after making his own faction. It was what kept him going in. If he didn't change the way the system worked then who would. Who could take his place, and who could stop the Dalki race.

"Thanks, Layla." Quinn smiled. "You know, from the very beginning you have always been there for me, even when I was scared after just having turned into a vampire. Sometimes I need help, and not just with things to do with fighting, and you seem to be there at the right time to pick up the pieces."

Layla smiled back as she started to remember those days. Things seemed so complicated even back then, but now they looked like child's play in comparison. She would have done anything to go back to that time and just spend some leisure time with each other at school.

As the two of them looked into each other's eyes, the scabbard that Layla's sword was in started to rattle. It did so much that Quinn could even see it shaking.

"That sword..." Quinn looked at it. He then remembered something. When he had used his inspect skill on the sword it had triggered one of the Quests.

"Ah this thing, I actually want to ask you about it." Layla remembered, taking it off her side and holding it in her hand. She then pointed it in the direction of the tablet and the sword started to shake even more. "It seems to be reacting to the tablet."

'That's right, the tablet and the words both activated the quest to learn more about the Talen family. What will happen if I bring the sword to the tablet?"

"Do you mind, if I borrow the sword for a second?" Quinn asked.

Seeing no problem with that request, Layla handed the sword over to Quinn and the two of them headed towards where the tablet was. Hopefully, Quinn would learn more about his Talen family which he still had no clue about. He knew about his vampire side, but what was so special about the Talen name?

However, when Quinn had reached the area where the Demon beast and tablet lay, he saw something else that shocked him even more.

"What the... is that from the little seed I planted?!"

Seeing the tree, the amulet around Quinn's chest started to react.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1275: Roseus tree

When Quinn had defeated the Demon tier beast, he had not only received the crystal from the beast but also other rewards alongside it. One of them had been a little seed. Unfortunately, the system hadn't told him what the seed was, or what it could be used for.

Due to the lack of that knowledge, Quinn had been cautious about the seed. His first association had been that it was very likely a seed of the tree itself, hence why he had refrained from planting it where there were plenty of people such as on the Cursed ship.

'Calm down, even if that really is a sapling of that damn tree, that's a good thing, right?' Quinn tried to stay positive, just like the last time. 'Although I'd rather not have to go through such a tough fight again, I have become stronger since then, so I should be able to defeat it. With another Demon tier crystal we'll be able to make another Demon tier item.'

However, looking at the Dragon that was snoring not too far from the tree, a horrid thought entered Quinn's mind. What if the tree was already marking Beasts around the island? The parent tree had the ability to further enhance the power of those Marked. What if it could manage to mark the Dragon? The Demon tier was already strong and with the power of another Demon tier, it would practically be unstoppable!

'Come to think of it, could that really happen? I'm sure the Dragon's power is far stronger than the tree and if it tries to take over, wouldn't the Dragon just destroy it?' Quinn wondered.

Regardless, at the end of the day, Quinn had planted the seed on the island and whatever was to come would be his fault. The tree itself was currently around the same height as two humans stacked on top of each other. It was nowhere near as grand as the original, so Quinn was confident of being able to get rid of it, in case it showed any signs of making trouble, before it would fully grow.

And there was one more concerning thing, the amulet around his neck. Moving forward, Quinn walked out towards it, and just like Layla's sword that would rattle now his amulet was shaking as well.

'Before I get any closer I should do that.'

[Inspect]

[An incomplete Roseus tree]

[No other information found]

Other than the name of the tree, it looked like the system wasn't going to help him out now, but he had learned one thing, that it was incomplete.

'Why does the system classify it as 'incomplete'? It can't just be because it isn't fully grown. It has to be missing something... has it yet to grow a crystal perhaps? Wait... could it be that it's somehow unable to?'

Having warned Layla to stay back for now, Quinn handed her the sword back, while he himself inspected the tree from top to bottom. Unable to find anything, he went forward, but since nothing happened, Quinn eventually placed his hand on the tree.

At that moment, the amulet was no longer shaking, rather it lit up. Using his Qi energy, Quinn tried to sense its energy. Unsurprisingly it had the energy of a beast running through it. It was clear this was a beast like the last one, yet he could sense no beast crystal inside.

'The amulet is reacting to it pretty crazy, but maybe it's just because they both came from the same source.' Quinn contemplated, yet there was another thought in his head. 'Shouldn't this be a reward for killing the Demon tier beast? This tree came from the seed I planted, and up until now the system has never given me something that could harm me directly.'

Thinking things through, Quinn used his Inspect skill again, only this time he did so on the Demon tier Amulet. It gave him the same information about the skills and its uses as before but there was one additional line that hadn't been there previously.

[The Demon tier Amulet can also be used as a key]

It had only come up now after discovering the tree, putting this and the fact that the seed was meant to be a reward, Quinn took off the amulet and was ready to press it against the tree. When it was a few inches away his hand stopped.

'What if I can't get the key back after putting it in the tree? What will happen to the Dalki in my Shadow lock? Will I no longer be able to use its abilities?'

Considering that scenario, Quinn also thought about the five spiked Dalki that had defeated him. Even if he were to suck all the Marked Dalki dry, the power boost alone would not help him defeat that one. As impressive as Eno appeared in his Blood Armour, Quinn doubted that teaming up with him was enough, either.

With these thoughts he pushed the amulet in, and soon he could feel the amulet being sucked out of his hand, and burning into the tree.

Letting go, the amulet started twisting and turning and lighting up with the tree, and the leaves on the very top started to sprout even more. In front of Quinn's and

Layla's very eyes the tree was growing wildly, the ground cracked underneath as its roots were digging in, but the amulet could still be seen.

'Damn it, I seem to have made a mistake!' Quinn bit his bottom lip, but finally the growth spurt stopped. The tree had doubled in size to what it was before, yet it was still inferior to the original.

Turning around, he was worried about the Dragon's reaction. It had apparently woken up, but for now, he just curiously looked over the tree.

'The Dragon, I woke up the Dragon! Do I have to deal with that as well now?'

After its curiosity was sated, it laid back down and started snoring once more.

'Is that all that thing does?' Quinn thought. Thankfully the tree had stopped growing and the Dragon was no longer interested in it.

[Inspect]

[Complete Rosesus tree]

[Linking with Amulet is now complete, amulet may be removed]

Seeing the last message, Quinn felt relieved. Jumping up, he reached halfway to the tree, and grabbed onto it with one hand, before pulling out the amulet with the other, and jumping back down to the ground.

With the Demon tier Amulet back in his possession, he noticed that it was radiating with even more energy than before and a system notification on the screen had popped up.

[The Demon tier amulet has successfully been linked with the Rosesus tree]

[The Rosesus tree has become a permanent Marked]

'Permanent Marked? Does it mean it's different from the Marked Dalki?'

Straight away, Quinn activated the powers of the amulet and he could feel it, just like with the Dalki Quinn could take full control of the tree in front of him. In doing so, he was witnessing a view he had never seen before.

The tree itself had roots that had been implanted not just in the ground beneath them, but the roots spread through the entire island. Using the power of the amulet Quinn could feel what the tree could do, he could control these roots so they would sprout up on the island.

Controlling those roots, Quinn made one of them sprout somewhere in the jungle. He had chosen a thin one which sprouted from the ground in what appeared to be a

Basic tier beast's burrow. Slowly creeping up to the bunny like creature, the root quickly wrapped around the beast.

This was a completely different feeling from controlling the Dalki, as they had at least been humanoid, yet for some reason it felt easier to Quinn. However, controlling several at the same time proved to be a completely different story. The vision of the tree itself was as wide as its roots would go, but to focus on small details was a headache, as he had to try and ignore the rest of his vision which wasn't something easy to do.

With the roots wrapped around the bunny, Quinn was about to let the beast go, until he could feel something else, that it wasn't the only thing the tree could do.

'No this feels the same... it feels just like when I mark the Dalki with the Amulet!'

Putting it to the test, Quinn attempted to mark it, and a surge of energy went through the bunny. A few seconds later the same marking appeared on the rabbit's underbelly. Through the tree, Quinn could control the Marked just how he would when he was using the amulet.

In a way it was like having a second amulet, only better, for there was no need to store energy, it was using the energy of the tree itself.

After a few more tests with the tree Quinn realised something else. The tree could do essentially everything that the Demon tier beast had been able to. Mark beasts, send energy from them and take energy away. The beasts wouldn't die either when energy was taken away.

Still, he had quickly noticed that with every marked beast, the energy of the tree would lessen a little. The way this worked, it would have never been able to take over the Dragon, not that Quinn would ever dare to do so, afraid of its retaliation.

Eventually, Quinn returned to himself, having discovered that the tree worked pretty much the same way as all his other Marked. The only downside he had found was that he couldn't use the amulet to directly control those that the tree had Marked. However, he could still give the bunny basic instructions like he did with the Dalki. For now, he just gave the tree the command to try and take over as many strong beats as it could on Blade Island.

'Whoever comes here, will now be in for a huge surprise.' Quinn grinned, as he imagined the invaders having to face an army of wild beasts!

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Webnovel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1276: A mistake

Underneath the Blade castle, both Vorden and Raten were sitting inside one of the cells. At the moment, the two Blade siblings were busy consuming crystals, one by one, impatiently waiting for the energy to be consumed by their bodies that would hopefully allow them to evolve to the next tier.

Both of them were sitting on the ground, and had a small mountain of crystals next to them. According to Muddy and Tails, the easiest way for their bodies to absorb the energy inside those crystals was just to eat them. However, the downside was the drowsy feeling they would experience as their body was using that energy to grow.

This was why they had decided to do it underground, away from any distraction of beasts or others and even if someone did come down, they would have to go through the cell doors first. To do that, they would have to pass Borden, who acted as a bodyguard for the two of them.

Since there was no sign of anybody, Borden had just watched the show of Vorden and Raten seemingly competing in an eating contest. After consuming a crystal, both had their eyes closed, making it seem as if they had gone to sleep after overeating.

Technically, evolution wasn't the only way for the two of them to get stronger in their current form. Although beasts were unable to activate most beast gear because of their body, there were some special crystals that could be made into beast gear for beasts. Unfortunately, they were so rare that the group hadn't come across any so far.

Still, around Tail's waist there was a pouch that would allow Vorden to carry a few things around. The only thing currently inside was the green injection for little Borden to use his full strength whenever it was needed.

It was almost impossible for Borden to carry them himself so he did need to rely on others for that part. Still, he was happy that he could help out. Walking up to Vorden's pile of crystals, Borden grabbed onto one of the crystals.

'Dalki are half beast, right? So if I eat this thing will it help me grow stronger as well?' Borden wondered. He quickly disregarded this thought, despite how much he wanted to take the bite of the crystal for two reasons.

The first was that it was his job to protect the other two. If the crystal worked on him in a similar fashion like it did for the two before him, then he would enter a weak state like them, so now wasn't the time to be testing things.

The second reason was just common sense. If crystals really helped the Dalki race evolve, then they should have already been consuming them by now, Borden was sure they would have done the test for it.

'I better just give this crystal back to them.' Borden thought, as he went to put the crystal in Vorden's hand so he didn't have to grab another one from the pile.

It was at that moment, that he could see something coming from above the cave slowly moving. Most wouldn't have noticed, but Borden did.

'What is that?' Borden thought, and immediately started to go for Vorden's pouch, carefully grabbing the injection.

"What's going on?" Vorden asked in a sleepy tone.

Injecting himself, the green energy was rising inside of him and his body started to grow until he was as big as his sleepy brothers. Reaching his full size, Borden quickly threw out both of his hands, and grabbed onto the objects that were moving.

'What are these? Hang on, are these... tree roots?' Borden was confused.

Surprisingly, the roots were not only durable but also very strong. Borden had only just finished his transformation, yet they were easily able to lift him up, swinging him to the ground right into a pile of crystals.

This caused both Raten, and Vorden to come to their senses, and they both stood up.

"You little twerp, I thought you were meant to stop anyone from coming inside!" Raten shouted in anger.

"They're coming from above!" Borden shouted, as the two looked up, they could see several roots hovering in the air, yet Borden noticed that they seemed to be ignoring him, instead they seemed focused solely on the direction of his siblings.

Quickly, Borden jumped up, and grabbed on to two of the roots again, hanging like a monkey on the vines. Using his strength, he tried his best to pull on the roots as hard as possible but no matter how hard he was pulling it didn't seem like it was breaking.

'What the hell kind of tree is this?!"

Meanwhile, Layla had just handed over the black sword to Quinn once again, who stood a few steps away from the tablet. Before he could reach the tablet, he suddenly felt the amulet around his neck connecting again.

'I can feel the tree... is it struggling with something?' Quinn wondered. Curious what could have happened, Quinn decided to take Full Control over the tree again. Since the tree was busy in more than just one place, it took the Vampire Lord a while to find the reason for his amulet reaction.

'Crap, stop, stop!!!' Quinn thought to himself. The underground roots retreated, as he made them go elsewhere. Exiting his Full Control, he went back to Partial Control and made sure to convey that the two of them were their allies, forbidding the tree for marking them.

'Well, that was definitely a big mistake on my part.' Quinn blamed himself as he put on a guilty face. It was his own fault for giving the Rosesus tree the simple command of trying to take over as many strong beasts on the island as it could. With the Dragon next to it, he had kept in mind to exclude it from that list, but he had forgotten about Vorden and Raten.

'Look, I didn't do it on purpose. It's just because I never saw those two as beasts in the first place, I just always thought of them as people like the rest of us.' Quinn thought, speaking to Vincent who he imagined was judging him at this point. Just to be on the safe side, he also designated Layla and the others as allies to prevent something like that happening in the future.

Putting this short episode to the back of his mind, Quinn walked the last steps forwards, until he stood directly in front of the table, the black sword in his hand. Layla wasn't too far behind him, curious to see what would happen.

Unafraid of the tablet, Quinn pressed his hand against it.

"Hey... hey are you there? You can still hear me, right? Last time you just stopped speaking to me, but I know something is up with this sword. It seems to be reacting to the tablet, or probably you and I know that it's also somehow connected to my Quest..." Quinn continued to mumble, in the hopes of receiving an answer.

The tablet started to light up brightly once again, just as it had done in the past when Quinn had touched it before. Finally the voice inside said something.

"Yes, I can hear you. It appears that you have brought something that is quite troublesome with you." The voice didn't seem too pleased about the sword in Quinn's hand. As for Quinn, he wasn't in a position to overly care about yet another disembodied voice, he just wanted to complete the Quest, if only to learn more about his Talen family line.

"A quest, you say? Now, that's something I haven't heard in a long time. What type of quest are you on? Who has told you to bring this sword to me? I mean, with the way I am now I can't exactly do anything about it. ...was it that damned woman again?" The voice on the tablet started to ramble.

When learning that all of the abilities came from the tablet, and it was from this great being that lived in the tablet, Quinn thought that perhaps he was some type of god, but the more he listened to him the more it sounded like a normal person like everyone else.

He also thought there was a simple misunderstanding. Quinn was referring to the Quest his system had given him, but it sounded like the one in the tablet thought someone had sent him on a quest.

"Look, I really don't know how long I can speak to you for. Last time we were cut off before I could even ask you the questions that only you might be able to answer, so we need to hurry this up. I can tell this sword isn't a beast weapon, so just what is it? What does it have to do with my Talen family?"

There was silence from the tablet for a while. Quinn was starting to worry that the connection had disappeared once more.

"Can you hear me? I need to know more about the sword, or at least about my family. Please, you might really be the only one to help me with that." Quinn pleaded, since that person had been the only lead he had in that direction.

"Yes...I know about the Talen family... and I know about the sword as well... I suppose it's better if I start from the beginning. My original name was Sen."

Quinn was happy that the voice agreed to his request, but he didn't have time for any long winded life stories, not when he was worried that any second now the connection would break off just like it had done the last time. To be frank, Quinn could care less about the name of the one inside the tablet? He just needed to get answers to his questions, so why start from the beginning.

"I say my original name, because my story is a bit special. To be more precise I was reincarnated into a human and I bore the name given to me by my parents. A name that reminded them of a ray of sunshine..."

'Come on already!' Quinn was about to shout in anger.

"They gave me the name of Ray Talen."

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Webnovel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1277: Ray of hope

Layla was left standing there not really knowing what to do as strange things were happening around Quinn. One moment she saw the amulet light up around his neck and the next second the tree started to grow in size, without him explaining anything to her.

However, judging by his reaction it was only because Quinn was just as surprised by the consequences of his actions as she was. The next moment, Quinn seemed to be concentrating extremely hard.

"Don't worry about Quinn. He's just playing with the tree for a little bit and should probably be back soon." Vincent turned around, informind Layla: It had become a natural thing for the two of them to switch whenever Quinn would use his Full Control.

'There he is again, the same person as last time. I can tell that's not Quinn, but then just who is it? I doubt Shiro planted someone else inside Quinn's mind, so does that mean there has always been someone else inside his body?' That thought saddened Layla, not because it would mean that Quinn was in a situation similar to that of Vorden, Raten and Sil, but the fact that he had decided to keep it a secret even from her. Even though she couldn't have helped him in any way with it, it would have been nice if he could have confided in her.

Layla was about to ask that mysterious person who he was, but then the real Quinn appeared in front of her asking to borrow the sword once again. Not having any reason to refuse him, she handed it over and without explaining anything he started to walk towards the tablet.

'Quinn, why do so many strange things happen around you? There're many people who believe the world revolves around them, that only their life is important, but when I watch you... it's as if I realise how unimportant my own life is in comparison. At the moment, the whole world really does seem to be revolving around you.' Layla thought, as she rubbed her elbow up and down with her hand.

A few moments later, the watch around her wrist started to vibrate, indicating that there was an incoming call.

"Hey Layla, thank God, you answered." Sam said from the other side. It was clear he was worried about something, making Layla think that the attack might have started, which would probably be the worst timing with Quinn out of it once more.

"Are the two of you okay, have you been attacked as well?" Sam asked.

"Huh? No, we're both fine, we're just by the tablet at the moment. What's going on, who was attacked and by whom?"

"It's the Blades. They came back to report that while they had been underground they had been attacked by some roots. I tried to get in contact with the others, but fortunately they seem to be the only ones who have been attacked so far."

When hearing the words roots, straight away Layla's mind went to the giant tree in the middle. The timing of the attack, and when Quinn was messing around with the tree seemed to be quite similar.

"Are they okay now, they're not being attacked anymore, are they?" Layla asked.

"No, but they have decided to move away from the underground cells and into the castle. So their session has been delayed a little." Sam explained.

"I think it might have something to do with Quinn." Layal said thinking back to the time before the tablet. "There should be no need to panic, but I'll ask him once he's done." Layla said, hanging up the call there.

Layla's answer had only added to his confusion.

'When he's done? When he's done with what exactly?'

---

Listening to the voice in the tablet speak, Quinn was sure of it. It had just claimed that its name used to be Ray Talen, the same family name that Quinn currently had himself. Now, the Quest was starting to make sense, but the only thing was, nothing else was making sense to him.

"Ray Talen... so that means we're related, right? But how? I thought you were some sort of God that gave all the world their abilities? How is that possible? Is my father a God? Does that make me a god as well? But I'm a vampire!" Quinn's reaction to this sudden information was to blurt out a bunch of questions.

In all honesty, he had been through some pretty crazy things before as he learned about his vampire side of his family, learned about Eno's past, learned about Arthur and Vincent, but this information was one thing that made no sense in his head at all. In the first place, his family carried the Talen name which had come from his father.

Not the Eno family name, which most likely meant that Quinn's vampire side had come from his mother, but he had no clue that his non-vampire side would also be so special.

"Calm down, boy. Has it been so long that you've forgotten what I said to you last time?" Ray questioned him. "I was a being that was even more powerful than the Gods. Still, the fact remains, that before I reached that point, I did live my life as a human."

"My parents, although I carried their blood, my own existence and powers continued inside of me, my body changed and I eventually passed that on. It must have eventually reached you. When I asked your name last time, I realised that this had to be the most likely reason as for why the two of us are able to talk."

"Please take note that we are talking about a few 1000 years between my generation and yours, so don't ask me if I know your mother or father, I can already predict your next question."

If Quinn and Ray really were related in some way, then it would make sense why his family also had no clue about this. His mother or their mothers for so much time had passed. Still there was one thing that was on Quinn's mind. If this person wasn't a god, then what was he?

"What... exactly were you? It's already hard for me to even imagine how great a God would be, but then what is greater than that?" Quinn asked.

"I was once feared all over the land. Humans would tell their children about me, the Unstoppable Great Red Dragon Sen! Ga,ga,ga!" Ray started to let out a weird laugh, one that sounded as if it belonged to a beast more so than a human.

'What the hell is going on, Vincent?' Quinn asked, hoping that he wasn't just going crazy.

'Unfortunately, I'm as lost as you on this one. Perhaps you should ask Ray for a bit of context.' Vincent suggested.

"So, you were something above a Demon tier beast? Should I picture you like a red version of the Dragon guarding this tablet then?" Quinn asked.

"Please, do you really think I was that weak?" Ray replied in disdain. "Not to belittle my scaly friend on the outside, but do you really think someone like that could grant nearly all the abilities that exist today?"

"Alas, as powerful as I was, I had been tricked. I was taught a harsh lesson, you see. Someone had wished for me to help the humans but as Sen I had remained stubborn, so they made me live life as a human and through that I learned to care for them. Ultimately, I ended up doing just what was wanted of me, and to my shock I did so out of my own volition."

"I am happy to hear that even so many years later one of my descendants is also helping out the human race. I fought hard for this planet, and while I know how heavy that burden is, I'm happy that with you humanity should be in good hands."

For all his newfound enthusiasm, a lot of Ray's words went right through Quinn who he was busy trying to wrap his head around what he really was. If he had Dragon blood and Vampire blood inside of him... did he even have any human

blood running through his veins? However, as crazy as everything sounded, Quinn felt like the tablet had no reason to lie.

Dragons, just like vampires were things that should belong in fairy tales, yet they had to have come from somewhere. If the existence of vampires were real, then why couldn't he believe in real dragons as well. Not just some Demon tier beast that stood behind him. He just never thought that he would be related to them.

"So about this sword... it definitely is not a beast weapon, but did it belong to you?" Quinn asked, trying to change the topic to something easier to understand.

"No." Ray answered and this time his voice became more concerned and less playful. "That sword belonged to a dear friend of mine. It helped us on our journey, and it looks like it found a way to help you out on yours as well. However, that sword doesn't have anything to do with our family line."

"Truth be told, I do not know much about it, but I do know that there is someone who might. There is a being that I knew back in the past during my time. She should still be prancing around even today. You might have even met her since she loves to meddle in things."

"During my time she went by Bliss. Seek her out... or wait until she seeks you out. Since you have my blood it should happen sooner or later. I'm sure she will tell you more about the sword."

[New quest received]

[Meet with the Divine being]

'Divine being...is this the Bliss person he was talking about?'

The light on the tablet started to fade again, and Quinn could tell that the time to speak was running out.

"It looks like our time is coming to an end. You have my blood running through your veins, and if you really are a Talen, then the Dalki won't even be worth your time. Just continue to grow, get stronger and evolve. As one of my blood there will be no cap for you. The Talen family is able to go even beyond anyone's expectations, trust me on that."

Hearing these words, Quinn thought of another quest he had received.

[Become something beyond a Vampire lord]

For some reason, after his little talk with Ray, Quinn was feeling more confident than ever. The tiredness he felt before, the defeats he had suffered, he realised that a small part of him had started to give up hope.

It had started to doubt if we could manage to get strong enough to stop them, but now there was a new ray of hope.

## Chapter 1278: Planned or not?

The light from the tablet started to fade down, and Layla could finally see Quinn removing his hand from the tablet. She expected Quinn to look half defeated as so far he had been. Especially based on the faces she had seen him pull while his hand was on the tablet, but instead, she saw a smile on his face.

'Did he find the answer he was looking for?' Layla wondered. Seeing Quinn's smile gave a warm feeling in Layla's heart as well.

'My emotions, they are all over the place. Is it because of the subclass?' Her vampire subclass caused her emotions to be more heightened than usual.

She had experienced this before, sadness, anger, and happiness. All of these emotions would be multiplied compared to before she was turned. But it was also what allowed her to evolve into her other forms. The stronger the emotion, the more strength she had.

On top of this, she also noticed that the sword she had given to Quinn was no longer rattling. When she was next to the tablet, Layla had attempted to touch it herself. While holding the sword, there was no such effect for her.

'You are a special one, aren't you?' Layla thought, and before she knew it, Quinn was directly in front of her, handing the sword back over.

"I didn't really find out much about the sword", Quinn said. "Just that it used to belong to someone else a long time ago. It looks like you can keep on using it with no worries. Speaking of, have you ever heard of anyone named Bliss?" Quinn asked.

He knew it was a long shot, but Layla and the others did live a life before him, and there was a time when she was at Pure for a good while. Perhaps she had met this person at some point, but soon seeing her shake her head, Quinn realised that this wasn't going to be an easy task.

"Maybe the Divine being?" Quinn asked again, referring to the name the system had given her rather than the one Ray had. Still, Layla shook her head.

Layla found it a bit strange that Quinn was looking for someone after touching the tablet, and she wanted to ask why. Still, he seemed to be in deep thought.

He was thinking about how to complete the next part of the quest. While also a little annoyed that he hadn't received anything for finding out about his Talen family bloodline.

'Is it because I received another quest straight after? Maybe this is like a chain, and I won't get the real reward until I complete the whole thing.' Quinn wondered. More importantly, he needed to figure out how to find this person.

Although Ray said there was a chance she would come to him, why hadn't she done so far? Everyone knew who he was. The Blade's could get to him, so he was sure if someone was looking for him, they would have been able to find him.

"You know, if you're looking for someone, maybe she should ask Logan," Layla suggested. "He has access to military files and more information than we can imagine. I would guess he could find whoever you are looking for, but with just a first name like Bliss, I don't know how much it would help."

It was a good suggestion to make, and Quinn certainly would ask Logan, but he had a feeling it wouldn't work either.

'I have never heard of this Bliss character either.' Vincent said. 'But you have to remember. The person in the tablet said he had lived 1000 years ago. If this is a friend of his, or someone that knew him, then maybe many don't know who this person is.'

'However, there are those that have also lived for 1000 of years that might know the answer, and one of them is on this very island.'

'Please.' Quinn almost begged Vincent, hoping that he wasn't suggesting what he was suggesting. After his mood had just picked up again, was he really telling him to see if Eno knew who Bliss or the Divine being was?

'Alright... I guess I can't help it, and I need to talk to him at some point anyway.' Quinn sighed. 'Even if our views or morals are different, our goals are the same for now.'

"Layla, I just wanted to say thanks for being by my side this whole time. Why don't you meet up with Sam, catch up on whatever plans he has at the moment, and then come back to me? There's something else I need to do." Quinn said.

Not wanting to waste any more time, Quinn ran off, heading towards the castle's direction. Judging by the fact that Quinn was heading that way and not speaking to Sam himself, Layla could tell who he was going to talk to.

'I just hope nothing happens between the two of them.' Layla thought, making her way towards the castle herself.

It didn't take long with Quinn's speed to find Eno, and it wasn't hard to find him since he had remained at the same place Quinn had last seen him, on top of the castle. His back was facing away from Quinn while Brock was looking towards him.

He knew that Eno knew Quinn was there, yet still didn't turn around, and seeing the red blood armour, Quinn had many thoughts running through his head.

'The blood armour, Eno had it all this time, and the other vampires didn't even know about it. I guess this is someone who even tricked Arthur, someone who he allowed to call him friends even knowing what he did.'

'I also can't help but think that this isn't the only thing that Eno is hiding.' Quinn thought.

What stood out to Quinn as well was the crown-like figure on his head. He hadn't seen that before, not even on Arthurs set, and he was sure it wasn't just for show.

"I hope you haven't come back here to give me a lecture because if so, you are better off continuing what you were doing before", Eno replied.

From the castle, Eno had a clear view of what Quinn was doing, and perhaps he had even figured out what was happening, but Quinn knew that he couldn't hear the conversation he had just had. Otherwise he would understand why he was here.

"I wanted to ask you something, something about-'

Just as Quinn was about to ask his question, he saw Brock turn around and look the other way. Quinn also stopped mid-speech because he could hear it as well. He quickly ran to the edge of the castle wall and looked out far in the distance, where the vast blue sea could be seen.

Large giant circles were opening all over the place. They looked similar to the portals that everyone used, but there was no device to activate them. Seemingly they had just opened up out of thin air over the ocean floating there. Not just one but around twenty or so.

The real worry was that they weren't small portals for humans either, and before they knew it. Several spaceships, around ten from each portal, had come through the teleporters. There were so many ships that Quinn couldn't keep count of them, and they were now all moving towards the Blade island.

What stood out about them was they didn't look like Dalki ships.

"How many.....how many have they sent to this island?" Quinn said.

"I had a feeling he would go all out," Eno said, looking out still unmoving, but his fist was tense.

"Jim, why do this much?" Vincent thought.

Those in the castle weren't the only ones that had reacted to this. Unexpectedly, even though the ships had yet to reach the island. The Demon tier beast finally looked like it had decided to wake up.

Its heavy feet hit the ground, shaking it slightly as it stood upright, then looking to the sky, it opened its mouth wide before letting out an almighty roar.

Beasts in the trees and birds flew out, scared of staying on the island, and everyone who didn't know what was going on, now knew something was happening.

The roar was so loud that Quinn had covered his ears, and when the sound had calmed, he looked over at the beast.

'No..no, no no!' Quinn thought.

Looking at the teleporter, Quinn could see that it had been smashed into small pieces. He didn't know when, but he could see the giant Dragon's tail moving back and forth next to it, but still a little distance away. He could only imagine it had collided with the teleporter near the tablet.

"That was not what I expected. The beast has never gotten within a certain range of the tablet before, so I thought it was safe even from the Demon tier beast." Eno said. "However, it just means that there is no retreat for any of us. If we want to survive this, then we have to fight all out. With our lives on the line."

There was something inside Quinn that believed, after hearing those words, that the teleporter being destroyed wasn't accidental at all. Eno wanted to end it here, whether the Cursed faction wanted to or not.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1279: Beast Tamer

In the grand universe where the beast planets were located, the Cursed ship was currently making its way towards the Cursed faction planets. They had been informed that the Earthborn group as well as the Graylash group were already under attack, so they were worried that the Cursed faction would be next.

Unlike in the past, when the Dalki had owned one half of the beast planets circulating around the solar system's sun, while humanity in the other, the balance had shifted to the point that the latter were down to a total of nine planets.

It was hard to decide where it was exactly safe for the humans to travel. In one half of the solar system, the planets that the humans used to own were split into the three sections belonging to the three groups.

The Earthborn planets were situated directly in the centre between the planets of the other two factions. The Cursed ship had left from Planet Caladi, which was located in the Earthborn section and was now heading over to the Cursed faction section, but would have to go past planets that had already been taken over.

They strayed widely from the other planets and wanted to make it so they were a reasonable distance both from the Cursed faction planets and the Earthborn planets.

However, not too long after setting off on their journey, the Cursed ship had been put to a halt, as it had received some devastating news.

"Miss Megan, we have terrible news!" One of the Cursed members shouted from inside the teleportation room. "The teleporter you told us to keep watch out for, it has gone offline! It's not activating at all. We have performed all the tests to check if it's something on our end... but the result was that whatever happened to the teleporter had to have occurred on the other end!"

"Worst case scenario, judging by how abruptly the signal has cut off without any prior warning, the most likely scenario is that it was destroyed!"

Just as the Cursed faction member had reported, the teleporter had gone offline. Just seconds ago, it had been glowing brightly as the portal had been designated the highest priority. Everyone had been instructed to do everything in their power to keep it active, so they could use it as soon as the fighting would start.

Hearing this news, Megan was biting down hard on her nails inside the command centre.

"What do I do? What can we do? Does it mean those guys are in trouble?"

"I'm sure Sam will give us an update on their situation any second now. Let's wait for his response before we decide on what to do next." Chucky tried to calm Megan down, while Shiro nodded in approval.

The two of them got on with each other, since they had seen each other around the school, and they were also currently the ones helping out Megan take care of the Cursed ship while the others were away.

"Even if their teleporter is broken, aren't there other ways to reach them? Like maybe we could ask to use one from the Earthborn group? They should have one that leads to Earth, and then we can fly to Blade Island from there?" Shiro suggested.

"No, we can't." Megan shook her head. "Supreme Commander Sach has put out an executive order that no one is to use that one. Even though Logan had created the jammers, he deems it too risky. Right now, no one is allowed to have active teleporters leading to Earth. The one on Blade Island was meant to be the sole exception to that rule."

"The only way to head back to Earth is through the space station... which is offline."

Even though they might be able to reason with Supreme Commander Sach under normal circumstances, right now he was busy with his own set of troubles. This was also the reason why Megan hadn't called Sam straight back, after all signs pointed to the teleporter being destroyed.

She couldn't risk distracting any of them, if they were in the middle of fighting. Still, Megan did send out a message and if all things were still okay then Sam should hopefully be giving her a reply soon.

"What about Sergeant Nathan?" Chucky asked. "He used to be a Head General, right? Don't you think he could perhaps still pull some strings for us and get that Earth station working again? Besides, depending on how large the forces are attacking Blade island, we could use Nathan's and his group's help anyway."

It was a good suggestion, so Megan got ready to call Nathan, but one thought passed through her head. What about the Cursed faction planets? For now they had working teleporters on their planets, but who is to say the Dalki didn't find a way to outright destroy those teleporters?

Wasn't there a good chance that whatever happened on Blade Island would happen here again? Would it really be alright to have the Cursed ship head to Earth? It would be a long time before they could arrive...

"The decision is up to you. Sam trusted you, so we will go with whatever you say." Shiro tried to encourage her and Chucky also agreed with that.

After the almighty roar from the Demon tier beast, everyone was already running towards the top of the castle. It was the perfect vantage point to allow them to see where exactly the enemy was coming from and how many of them there were.

To everyone's surprise, their numbers far surpassed even their wildest speculations.

"I thought that we might have had some time to prepare more." Sam sighed, looking out into the distance. The ships were far away and moving slowly towards them, but it just meant they would soon face an organised and coordinated attack.

Everyone had believed that things would go down just like it had happened on the other planets when the Dalki had invaded, namely that a mothership of some kind would have appeared and sent down Dalki.

However there was one person who was not with the group. Mona stood far out on the sandy beach of the island, looking into the sea.

"Thanks for the little warning." Mona grinned, as she lifted up her pointy hat a little to be able to have a better look. Finally the ships were starting to make their way towards the island.

"These guys really seem to think that taking over Blade Island will be that easy." She smiled, soon throwing off her hat to the side revealing her long braided dark purple hair that almost looked black, apart from when it moved in the sunlight.

Running out on the sand, Mona looked fearless and not for a second did she slow down her pace. Eventually, she leapt into the air, jumping several feet, a height no regular human would be able to reach without top tier beast armour.

After she passed the shore line, there was only the sea below her and it looked like she would crash into it at any second, but then a dark shadow from underneath appeared. Moments before her toes could touch the water Mona landed on a solid white surface.

In the giant sea of water, a small white piece of land had suddenly appeared, and it slowly started to rise higher and higher, and that's when those from the castle could see what it was as well.

"That looks awfully similar to the giant creature that attacked us when we first arrived here... only a little different?" Logan did not remember the beast having white skin, and at the same time its eyes were almost glowing blue. Not only that, but now that it had revealed itself its overall size seemed to have increased a little as well.

Four ships that were headed out front tried to quickly avoid the giant octopus and attempted to go around the side of it. Soon though, they could see large tentacles in

its view. Two of them were slammed out of the air, and their ships sank into the sea.

One of the other spaceships had managed to fly out further to the left of the beast, allowing it to notice the creature before the others. Being further back it had managed to avoid the attack, but soon a jet of water, that spiralled out and shot out like a laser hit the ship blowing it up on the spot.

The final fourth ship seeing this was thankful that the beast had chosen not to use its attack on itself, and was hoping to land upon the planet soon. However, that's when he noticed at the last second, running on one of the tentacles, was a female looking human.

When Mona got to the end of the beasts' tentacle, it soon grabbed her, and threw her towards the fourth ship. Using her great strength, she grabbed on to the back, and lifted both her hands. Activating the power of all her beast gear she slammed down causing an explosion by the engine, and quickly jumped back off, allowing the octopus beast to catch her again and place her on the head.

"Unfortunately for you, I owe that Cursed boy, and his grandfather a favour." Mona spoke, seemingly to herself. "As the only one of the former Big Four present, I will make sure that you pay a heavy price if you intend to reach that island."

It was at that moment, Quinn used his Inspect skill, noticing the octopus had clearly demonstrated a speed, strength, size and skills surpassing its former self, yet it looked too similar to the last one to be a different beast.

[Inspect]

[Ala Kraken - Demon tier beast]

"Did you really think you were the only ones that knew how to evolve beasts?" Quinn didn't need to turn around to be able to imagine that smug smile that was sure to be on Eno's face.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1280: A Familiar person

Quinn couldn't quite believe what he was seeing. Another Demon tier beast had appeared on the island or more accurately in the sea. What's more, it seemed to be a beast he was all too familiar with.

When first coming to the island, he had run into it and it had ended up demolishing Logan's precious submarine. On their second visit, Quinn had seen Mona tame the beast, a feat so amazing that she might be the only one able to achieve such a thing, with the exception of Sil perhaps, but he clearly remembered that the Kraken had not been a Demon tier beast at the time.

The confusing part was that Mona had once claimed that she didn't think it possible for her to be able to control a Demon tier beast, due to the way her ability worked. She only had enough MC cells to control a Demi-god tier beast, with perhaps a few lower tier ones on top of that.

After learning that beasts like Muddy and Tails could evolve, it wasn't out of the realm of possibility that the Kraken beast could evolve as well, however Quinn would have thought that in that case it should have broken free from Mona's control. Fortunately, the one beside him decided to solve that mystery for him.

"Mona's role in this war had always been bigger than she could ever imagine." Eno proceeded to explain, while they all continued to watch her fight off the incoming spaceships. "I took her in to make sure she would be able to fulfill her role, the only thing she really needed was some guidance.

"People often believe to know everything there is to know about their own ability, especially one passed down in a family, but those are usually the ones who lack creativity. When it comes to abilities, it never hurts to try and think outside the box."

"For example, once a beast has been put under control using the taming ability, a link will have already been established between the tamer and the beast. No matter how strong the beast gets or how weak she would grow, there is no getting out for the beast unless the controller either wills it so... or dies."

"In most instances, it's easier to capture a higher tier beast to grow stronger than to evolve one. On the other hand, how many could claim to be able to get a Demi-god tier beast under their control in the first place. Once captured it was worth the investment to make it evolve." Eno finished his explanations.

The others hearing this, were amazed that they had an actual Demon tier beast fighting on their side. Even faced with the large number of enemies in front of them, they now felt some confidence that perhaps they weren't as doomed as they had come to believe.

Losing the teleporter had been a bitter pill to swallow, not only because it had cut off their path of retreat, but also because they could no longer expect any backup from Sil, one of their strongest members. They all knew how much of a blow this was to the team, so the realization that Eno had prepared something none of them had ever considered was very reassuring.

Unfortunately, despite Mona doing her best to get rid of as many of those ships exiting those portals, there were just far too many for her and the Kraken to deal with on their own. It didn't take long for a number of them to make it past her.

Seeing this, the others were preparing to use their abilities to knock the ships out of the sky, or block the incoming energy blasts that were able to be shot out from the ships. At the moment, the group could see two different types of ships they could make out, one larger but slower, the other faster and more mobile.

The former seemed to be dropships similar to the ones the Graylash group had used when they had gone up against the Sunshield family, unless modified they should have around two dozen people inside. The latter were obviously ones meant to attack, fast and agile with one or two pilots inside. Although Mona had concentrated on taking them out, currently a group of them was heading straight for the castle, their energy blasters ready to fire.

In total, six ships had managed to get past the Kraken, their blasters could be seen charging up, but before any of the Cursed faction could make their move, a gust of wind could be felt and the next second, a large shadow was cast over them all.

"The....the Dragon!" Layla called out. She had her bow ready but quickly put it down when she could only see its back.

The small ships fired their energy blasts, but the Demon tier beast didn't even show any signs that it had noticed being hit. It seemed indifferent to the attacks and once it was close enough it opened its maw wide to reveal an orange light from behind its fangs.

The next second a stream of fire came bursting out, engulfing two of the ships in flames. When the Dragon stopped its fire breath the small ships could no longer be seen. Normally, at least a few parts would have fallen to ground, yet it was as if it had just disappeared, not even leaving behind any ash.

The Dragon didn't stop there, using its large tail in lightning fast manner it struck three other ships down, and with a flap of its giant wing, one of the ships was thrown off balance before it crashed into it with its giant jaw.

The six small spaceships were no match at all for the giant Demon tier beast. After getting rid of the little flying annoyances that had entered its flight space, the Dragon seemed to have calmed down, returning to its apparently favorite location. When it landed it shook the whole castle that the Cursed group were on.

"Well, it looks like as long as we have him on our side, we won't lose this fight!" Fex exclaimed, in amazement. It was nice knowing that a beast they had once run from with their lives on the line was now on their side.

As quickly as things had started to look up though, they also started to look down again.

Having learned from the mistakes of their predecessors, most ships had made the smart decision to fly around the area of the Kraken's current location. At the same time, due to the Dragon's performance, instead of flying over the island and angering the beast, the dropships had decided to land on the outer edges, allowing the people on board to safely get out. However, the forces didn't stop there, as several underwater boats that had been hiding, also came onto shore.

"They were in the sea as well!" Nate shouted, seeing as one of the ships opened, and several people were seen coming out from the ship.

From a distance, the others couldn't tell if they were human or vampires, but Quinn could use his Inspect skill and he was quite surprised about the outcome, for there were a mixture of vampires and humans among the attackers.

All of the men that had come out were wearing a black mask that covered their faces, with only slits over their eyes, so it was impossible for anyone but Quinn to tell at a glance. There seemed to be one human for every twenty or so vampires.

'How have they managed to gather this many forces? Wasn't Jim supposed to be a vampire who broke off on his own? Even if he somehow managed to take control over all the spies sent out by the vampires, would they really amount to this many?' Quinn thought.

Something wasn't adding up, and he knew the one who would know the answer. In the first place, where were their own reinforcements? Sure, the teleporter had just been destroyed, but what about all the clones that Eno had spread around the place?

"Their forces are far larger than what we had estimated. We need to proceed with the plan instead of just looking at what is happening." Sam rallied the Cursed group, trying to knock everyone out of their daze. "They are attacking from all over the island, and will slowly be coming forward. We need to stick to the plan and start it now!"

"How are we meant to proceed with the plan when there's only us?" Linda questioned him. "We need to come up with another idea, otherwise their numbers will simply overwhelm us. There has to be thousands of them while we number less than twenty, and I'm sure they have some strong ones among them."

Gritting his teeth, Sam had to admit that their plan wasn't looking too feasible right now. If only they could somehow coordinate their attacks with the Dragon... Unfortunately, if that would have been that easy, Eno wouldn't have had to work

together with the Cursed faction, in hopes of Sil taking control over the Demon tier beast.

Without him, not only was it impossible but also risky. What's more, if their enemies were attacking with this many people, they surely had to have some trump card that would allow them to deal with the Demon tier beast...

So while it was in the centre of the island, they had to stop anyone from getting close.

"I might not have a way to overpower them, but I have something that should be able to slow them down." Quinn said. "Do you think that will be enough for the rest of you to proceed with the plan as you originally intended? I'm sorry that I wasn't there when you were discussing the plan earlier, but I was doing something important." Quinn said, holding onto the amulets and closing his eyes, before he mumbled.

"I'll leave this side to you then."

Taking Full Control, Quinn saw everything that the Roseus tree did, making it easy for him to lead the army of beasts where they were needed.

As for the one controlling his body at the moment, it was none other than Vincent. Opening his eyes, 'Quinn' now gave off a different vibe.

"Tell me, what I need to do." Vincent requested.

'It's that other person... again.' Layla noticed, but she wasn't the only one to have noticed something.

'This... 'person' isn't Quinn right now... but why do I get a familiar feeling from him?' Eno wondered.

## Chapter 1281: Not Your Friend

Something that Quinn had never thought about was the changes that happened each time Vincent would be in control over his body. The fluctuations in one's voice, the energy that surrounded them, the rhythm of their heartbeat and more, all would be determined by the person who was in control of a body.

The human mind was far more incredible than many might think, noticing those changes Eno could tell almost immediately that someone else had taken over Quinn's body. On top of that, the old vampire had also heard the words his 'grandson' had mumbled just before that.

Finally, when Vincent spoke, Eno was convinced that he wasn't Quinn.

"Tell me, what I need to do?" Vincent requested.

Sam and the others had already grouped up, ready to head off into their positions. They had decided to split up into four different groups covering each side of where the enemy would come from.

Linda, Wevil and Peter as one group, Sam, Nate and Layla as another, with Dennis and Fex as the third group. The fourth group would be the Blades, but judging by the fact they had yet to arrive at the top of the castle despite everything happening outside, they seemed to be busy.

'If they're still not here, it should mean that Vorden and Raten are still not done with their evolution and Borden must be staying by their side to guard them.' Sam thought, trying to think of a way to make up for the loss of the Blades.

'Wait, maybe Peter would be a good replacement, after all he has those two by his side.' But when Sam looked up, Peter was nowhere to be seen.

"Peter, where the hell is Peter?" Sam questioned, and realised that he had never come up with the rest. Now he had to come up with another idea.

Honestly he was worried that if they thinned out any of the three groups, especially with Peter gone, it would be too much for the groups to handle.

"I suggest, the three groups cover the East, West, and South sides." Sam spoke up. "At the moment, Mona is doing a great job stopping those at the North side, so we should be able to leave it be for now. Hopefully she can hold off long enough for the Blades to reinforce her."

If that wasn't the case, then Sam would have to try to act while on the ground, whichever group was doing best, they could shuffle one person to try and help.

"What about us?" Vincent asked. "What will the three of us be doing?"

"Us three, need to make sure that thing is under control and we will be staying by its side at all times." Brock answered looking down at the Dragon.

Vincent quickly understood. The enemy would have to send out their strongest members to deal with the Demon tier beast. Perhaps they would ignore the rest of the Cursed faction and head straight for the beast, which was why supposedly the three strongest members had been told to keep guard.

"I have a suggestion to make. I can help out with protecting the North side, the rest of you focus on covering your sides." Vincent spoke as he lifted his hand to open the Shadow space. Soon four Dalki could be seen appearing out in the open. The only thing was when they appeared they just stood there in place.

'Ah, right Quinn needs to control them.' Vincent thought. 'Well, he said he shares his vision with the Demon tier plant thing, so hopefully he can direct them where to go on the whole island, so I hope he can see this and come back soon.'

"Dalki!" Some of them shouted in surprise seeing the beast, even Eno looked a little bit shocked.

"I see, the boy has been really busy. What a powerful item he has at his disposal. Once again he has surpassed my expectations." Eno complimented the real Quinn, instead of the whoever was in his body.

"What about Sil?" Layla asked. "Can't Quinn travel to Alex with his shadow and get Sil?"

Sam shook his head, as he released the mistake he had made. He was so confident in the teleporters he thought something like this wouldn't have happened.

"Alex decided to head with Andrew to one of the Earthborn group planets. Apparently Andrew needed to create a few things for their group to help in the battle that was coming up, and Alex asked to go along. He has already done so much for us. I thought we could grant him this favour and help out Andrew. I don't know where he is at the moment. The only thing I can do is ask for someone in the Cursed ship to try and locate him and head back to the Cursed ship."

While Sam was delivering the news, It didn't take long for Quinn to notice the presence of the Dalki, so he switched with Vincent for a second, and gave the Dalki simple commands, to head just a little out into the north jungle, and to attack whatever came their way. Straight away the Dalki moved.

"I've sent the message, all we can do is wait, but we need to act as well." Sam said, and the rest of the groups were now moving.

Switching, control back, Vincent was in Quinn's body once again, and only the three of them now remained on the castle roof.

Vincent, was ready to act, to follow along with these two, but before he could take a step forward, Eno appeared in front of him with his blood armour and looked him directly in the eye.

"It's apparent that you're not Quinn, so tell me who you are? Why does it feel like I know you... and you better make sure I like the answer!" Eno demanded.

---

Now in Full Control of the Roseus tree, Quinn could feel all of the beasts that had been marked over the island, and in the short time he had given it a command, he realised that it had done a far better job than he realised.

Quinn had an army of beasts at his disposal.

'Thank you for all dressing the same. You've just made my job a lot easier.' Quinn thought as he gave all the beasts a simple command, to attack the people who were wearing those strange black masks.

The beasts soon were seen coming out of the jungle, and onto the sand, jumping towards the people in black masks. Instantly, they attacked using their blood powers, throwing out their red aura. Some beasts were dealt with quickly, while others were strong enough to ignore the first barrage of attacks, charging into their opponents.

"What is going on? Why are all the beasts suddenly attacking us, this has never happened before!" One of the men shouted, as he punched to slice a beast in half with his red blood aura, but soon a strange thought had come out from one of the trees wrapping around his neck.

Just like with the amulet, Quinn was able to use his energy to strengthen the Marked. Instead of using his own energy, or the one of the tree that was already pretty tapped after taking control over so many beasts, the Vampire Lord had started to drain the lower tier beasts who were close to dying. Those that were higher tiers Quinn had decided to give this extra energy he had taken. Especially with more difficult opponents.

It seemed like there were vampires and humans at all different types of levels on the island.

Sam, Nate and Layla were the first ones to reach their position on the East side. It was not too far from where the Demon tier beast was, and they were meant to stick together. That's when Nate had spotted a masked person come out from the trees towards them.

Nate and Sam both were ready to use their blood powers and Layla also had readied an arrow, but soon they saw a gorilla-like beast jump towards the masked invader. The beast grabbed the poor man's legs from underneath pulling him onto

the ground, and immediately with its large hands it started to pound at the masked man over and over until he was dead.

The gorilla beast looked at the three of them, and then quickly looked away heading back into the forest.

"What the hell was that? Did that beast just help us?" Nate asked, rubbing his eyes as if to check if something was wrong with them.

Layla was the only one who had an idea of what had possibly happened, and it looked like Wevil and Linda who had witnessed the same thing already had figured it out. After all, there was one thing on the island that should be able to control beasts aside from Mona.

"Does it actually belong to us this time, but how?" Wevil asked.

"I don't know, but if I was to guess, my bet is it's something to do with Quinn." Linda shrugged.

After a brief conversation, Vincent, Brock and Eno jumped down from the castle, landing in the empty centre where the Demon tree, beast and tablet were.

"I see now... so the tree was incomplete before. No wonder, I could tell that it would do us no harm. It looks like I was right to keep it here." Eno mumbled to himself, as he walked past the tree, and started to head towards the dragon.

As for Vincent, he still had complicated feelings when thinking about the conversation he just had with Eno.

'Quinn... I'm sorry. I don't know what will happen after this fight, but I hope you can forgive me for telling him that. It was the only way to make him trust us...'

It was then, when Eno had taken one step too far that the Demon tier dragons beast had turned around, and looked towards the three of them. Its eyes stared at Eno, Brock and Vincent and it didn't look friendly at all.

"You three need to get out NOW! The Demon tier beast is no longer listening to me!" Somebody's voice shouted in all three of their heads at the same time.

Both Richard, and Brock didn't recognise the voice, but Vincent did. It was Ray's, and it appeared as the three of them were in for a far tougher job than they had signed up for.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1282: Protect my brothers

Using the power of the Roseus tree, Quinn was able to coordinate the marked beasts to help out the Cursed faction in holding off the enemy. However, at the end of the day, they were just beasts, whereas nearly all of the enemy forces consisted of vampires who had access to super strength, great speed and blood powers.

It also didn't help that thanks to a certain family that had been on the island for a while now the strongest beasts that the tree had been able to mark were at the King tier. Quinn could use the power of the tree to make them somewhat stronger but even that could only do so much against their foes' teamwork.

Then there were also the stronger vampires who were able to ignore the beasts in the jungle and were heading straight towards the Demon tier beast. It was the second line of defence's job to intercept them.

The group stationed at the East section consisted of Sam, Layla and Nate. Although he was the weakest of the bunch, just barely being a noble vampire, Sam stood at the front. Nate was also a strong vampire at the noble level, and despite being turned by Sam, had grown to become stronger than him. This was why Sam had decided to stay a bit at the back. As for Layla, she had scaled one of the trees and took the high ground.

Looking carefully she noticed some of the trees moving, and quickly held up five fingers on one hand, signalling the two from below.

"You haven't learnt how to use Blood Hardening yet, have you?" Nate asked.

Sam shook his head, a little embarrassed. He had only ever learned the basics of using his blood skills. While the rest had continuously trained whenever they could, he had been left to deal with the administrative tasks for the Cursed faction, keeping it running.

It was also the reason why their teams consisted of three members, instead of two like the other groups. The first to attack was Layla, as she placed five arrows in her bow and fired them all at once.

Each one of them had been embedded with Qi. As they reached the vampires, one of them had attempted to grab onto the arrow, but it was too powerful for him to hold onto and went straight through his head killing him on the spot.

Another of the vampires managed to move in time, letting the arrow hit the tree, but seeing this, Layla tried out her new skill. Using her telekinesis powers she made the arrow spin, also adding another surge of her Qi.

'My body still can't handle the amount of Qi I have, but somehow it's easy enough to share my Qi when I use it in tandem with my telekinesis powers!' Layla's thought distracted her for a brief moment and she ended up putting in a little too

much power. The whole width of the tree exploded and the arrow carried on heading towards one of the black masked men.

The masked man was lucky, due to the arrow shaft exploding with the force of Qi, the only thing that had managed to hit him was the arrow head. Still, there was one person who wouldn't miss this opportunity, and that was Sam.

He had been patiently waiting for an opportunity to help out. The masked man managed to parry the arrowhead, yet three blood swipes followed closely behind it, hitting him and finishing him off instantly.

'My blood powers aren't any weaker than theirs. I can still help.' Sam thought.

As for the other arrows that Layla had fired off, their targets seemed to be more skilled, as they had been able to strike down the arrow at the right time, or hit it with blood attacks of their own, swaying their path.

'Looks like there are some strong ones in the group, but there are some strong ones in our group as well.' Layla thought.

She quickly moved from her position, onto another tree. She knew from her training that if she was going to support the group as a marksman, she couldn't afford to stay in one place for too long, otherwise they would find her.

On top of that, from the initial five that were joining in the fight, more people in the distance could be seen creeping through the jungle. For now, she would do whatever she could to injure them as much as possible.

'I can do this!'

The three that managed to get through, all ran forward at once, and one of them had gone straight for Nate. The masked man had its hand clawed and wrapped in blood aura, something Nate hadn't seen before, nor did he know it was something they could do.

"Too slow!" Nate shouted, at the right time he stepped forward using a flash step to avoid the strike, and with a fist punched the masked person directly in the face, continuing the contact until the fist and his face were touching the ground beneath them.

The other vampires soon came to attack him from either side, but he had Blood hardening on his arms, and managed to stop the attacks. However, they were faster than Nate had anticipated. He was hoping to get rid of two of them, so he could pick off one of them on their own, but now he was forced to block their attacks.

"You guys should be ashamed." Nate smiled, as he continued to block hit after hit from the vampires. "You've been vampires from the beginning, right? That means

you must have lived far longer than me. You had all this time to train your skills, yet this is as far as you got!"

At the right time, when one of the foes was ready to attack again, a shadow appeared in front of him stopping his attack, meaning Nate was able to freely go after the other vampire. Quickly, moving his head he avoided a punch and grabbed the masked man by the back of the head, before pulling the head down and slamming it into his knee.

Before they could recover, Nate made sure to use a strike he had been practising from someone he had seen so many times before. Throwing out a fist, with a Blood spray, Nate slammed a Blood hammer into the vampire's stomach, making sure he would never get up again.

Turning around, Nate placed his shadow down expecting to have to deal with one more, but to his surprise he saw Sam there as well, and the other vampire already finished off on the ground.

"If their backs are turned and distracted, I can do something on my own." Sam stated. "You don't have to look after me that much. Besides there's something I realised, something that these guys don't have compared to the vampires inside the vampire settlement. It might just have been the ones we have fought so far, but I have a feeling it will be true for all of them."

"What do you mean?" Nate asked.

"None of them have any of the vampire abilities that we've witnessed over there. They're just using their blood powers." Sam answered, still unsure what the reason for that was. Still, they only had a moment to catch their breath for there were more they needed to deal with.

Inside the castle, both Raten and Vorden had moved rooms after the roots had come down to attack them. They ended up choosing one of the many regular rooms, one that would have been used by the maids.

Just like before, Borden was guarding both of them, yet this time they were in an even worse state. Previously they had been consuming crystals one by one, this way after each crystal was absorbed they could still choose to fight if there was a need, albeit it weakened.

However, after the attack they had experienced, they started to experiment with consuming many crystals. They both found that although the time to absorb the crystals was longer when consuming more than one. It was shorter than if they were to do so separately, one by one.

Which was why, they both had decided to consume all of the crystals and were in the next step. How long it would take them to get out of it, and whether they would evolve or not, they didn't know and neither did Borden.

While watching over the two of them, Borden heard the castle shaking from below. It was clear that something had hit the castle and he was wondering what it could have been. He looked at the two of them.

'No one will suspect that someone is in this room, right?' Borden tried to convince himself... but he quickly changed his mind. 'No, I have to stay in place! I can't disappoint them again!'

Choosing to stay, Borden believed he was doing the right thing. He reasoned that it might just have been a stray attack from somewhere that had hit the castle, or maybe something else. After waiting a while, several bangs could be heard throughout the castle, and each time they were getting louder and louder.

'What is going on? This can't all just be coincidence. If something is in the castle, I have to make sure it won't disturb these two.' Borden thought.

The banging and crashing was still heard, and as Borden made his way through the castle to try and locate where the noise was coming from it was getting louder and louder. Eventually Borden realized that the sound was coming from the dining room.

Still in his large, adult sized form, Borden decided to form his spikes on his back before entering, listening to his Dalki self. Now ready to fight, Borden opened the doors confidently.

As for what he could see was in the castle, it was a huge surprise to him.

There were three figures in the room that were breaking and trashing everything they could see in the castle. They destroyed every room they had entered, but what was most surprising about them was that they were Dalki.

"That one, is the one that attacked Slicer!" One of them pointed at Borden.

Borden knew he couldn't hold back, because all three of them were three spiked Dalki.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1283: Don't turn

Quinn only had a short amount of time to test the capabilities of the Roseus tree beforehand, but now, forced into this real battle situation, he was quickly picking up new tricks and skills that were helping out with the fight against their enemy.

For example, while using Full Control on the Demon tier tree itself, he could still continue to give it simple commands as if he was giving someone partial control orders. What this meant was that the Vampire Lord could focus on certain parts on the island to help boost creatures and fight against the enemy.

The masked vampires were getting frustrated as more and more beasts had been coming out of nowhere, since the tree's roots had been marking new ones whenever one died off.

Another difference between the tree and the Demon tier amulet was in regards to the energy transfer. The tree actually never seemed to run out of energy, it seemed more like it was allowing the beasts to borrow its energy.

At first, whenever one beast was close to death, Quinn would drain their energy, but before discovering the ability to delegate some tasks to the tree, he had been unable to drain every creature before its demise.

However, this did lead him to the realisation that whenever one of the Marked beasts died, the energy inside them would automatically return to the Roseus tree. Essentially, the beasts that did remain were able to grow stronger as Quinn continued to give them energy.

'No wonder the original Demon tier Tree had been so difficult to deal with. I've been wondering how Robin got so strong, even after it had Marked all the others.' Quinn thought to himself.

Surprisingly, while checking around the island, Quinn discovered one of his fellow comrades who seemed to be on his own... only there were actually two tagalongs behind him.

"Damn it!" Peter shouted. "I thought I could get a head start and head to where all those ships were to deal with them before they came to the island, but now I have no clue where I'm going. I'm lost!"

However, even if Peter was lost he still managed to run into his fair share of opponents as well, the only problem was...

Six masked men had been running through the jungle, they had easily spotted a large pale body from a mile away and had designated him as a target. All of them chose to attack, throwing out their blood swipes through the trees.

They thought their attack was sure to hit, but the pale body avoided all of the strikes. Seeing this, the masked men thought it would be best if they attacked head on instead. Using their physical strength and vampire powers, they charged in.

That's when they noticed Peter as well next to the pale body, he had a strange smile on his face as if he was excited. Peter crashed his knuckles and cracked his neck turning it side to side.

'Finally six of them, maybe these guys will be a m-' Before Peter could finish his thought, he heard something similar to the sound of a whip. The masked men didn't quite register what had even happened, as they carried on moving forward, soon finding their upper bodies sliding off from their legs, and eventually falling to the ground..

"Damn it!" Peter shouted. "Legs you keep killing them all before I even get to hit them! I know you're just trying to protect me, but I want to have a little bit of fun as well, you know?!"

Quinn couldn't believe what he had just witnessed. Slicer's legs with the tail were still just as strong as before. Not even vampires could match up to it, and Hilston's body was also faster than they could react.

Seeing this, Quinn thought that maybe Peter really wasn't someone he had to worry about, and decided he could leave him be to do his own thing, while he continued trying to slow down the Masked.

Inside the castle, Borden had just entered the dining room, only to discover a trio of three spiked Dalki already inside.

'It looks like they recognise me from that video. Should I feel flattered that Dalki watched it as well?' Borden thought, as he was about to turn away. 'There goes my plan to pretend to be one of them. Not that I was going to do that for long anyway.'

Currently, Borden was a three spiked Dalki, just like the ones in front of him. At the time he hadn't noticed it, but during the fight against Slicer he had been so filled with anger, seeing his brother in trouble he had managed to summon a fourth... Unfortunately he was unable to do the same at this moment.

He didn't understand why he was different from other Dalki. He could take on a human form while others couldn't, just like he could hide the number of spikes on his back, but it didn't matter, he was different.

Still, when his body was about to turn around, he heard a voice in his head speak to him.

'Are you going to just run away?'

The voice was clearly his own, yet somehow just the mere idea of running away annoyed him.

'No.' Borden decided as he turned back around, just in time to see an incoming punch from one of the Dalki. Moving his head he avoided it, only to counter with a punch of his own, delivering a devastating uppercut to the Dalki's chin, sending it up in the air.

'I can't run away, because I am going to protect them! I'll kill these guys!' Borden let out a scream.

He was able to hit the first one, hoping it would be enough to kill the resilient Dalki, whose resilience rivaled zombies at times. Borden moved forward hoping to finish off the Dalki, but two more fists came towards him.

Borden lifted his arms up blocking the attack. He could tell that although they were all three spikes, their strength was not on par with his, as he was only forced back a few inches from where he had stood. Still, there was a crucial problem, there were three of them and one of him.

Before he could do anything else, the fist from the second Dalki connected with his stomach, causing him to drop to his, then the third Dalki used his foot to kick him in the head

The first one had also recovered and jumped up to join his companions as Borden gritted his teeth. When it was close enough, Borden surprised them all, by lunging at the first one, both of them landing on the floor. Only to receive two more hits from the others, now damaging the scales on his body.

This continued, for every hit Borden was able to get in, he would be hit two times back himself. At the same time, even though he was getting stronger with each hit, so was one of them.

'I have to do something, otherwise I won't last long against three of them. Unless I manage to get to my fourth spike like back then, I'll lose this fight!'

His worries started to distract Borden, and the Dalki who had realised that their opponent intended to turn this into a slugfest were smart enough to all start aiming at the same location, the side of his ribs. One of them had even decided to claw at it, rather than make a fist, ripping some of Borden's scales off.

Green blood was now spilling from his side, and he was pretty sure his ribs were broken.

"Arghhh!" Borden screamed, ignoring it, and charging in again, he latched onto the Dalki that was injured the most. This whole time Borden was aiming for something, he had purposely decided not to hurt the other two as much, and

whenever he got the chance to attack the first one, he had used his full strength, judging now was the time.

Leaving the others alone had been to weaken their powers, and hurting this one was to put him on the edge. Borden, then lifted the Dalki into the air, and over his shoulder, planning to slam it into the ground, but he could see two fists coming his way.

'They're going to hit me right after I beat this one... and it's going to hurt.' Borden thought but continued with his attack anyway.

Slamming the Dalki down, it had made a whole in the floor cracking the ground beneath them. They were on the bottom floor but what they didn't realise was that there was a whole cave system underneath.

Now the Dalki had been lost.

'Wait, why aren't I getting hurt?' Borden thought, as he had expected to get hit by the other two any second now, but it had never come. Looking around the room, he saw a large black furred creature with giant black wings on his back, and a snout-like face with devastating fangs.

On his forearms, there were also what looked like smaller wings, only folded giving them a strong and sharp look. In front of him on the ground was Dalki that was bled, while another had been hit away into the wall.

"Vorden... you evolved?" Borden asked in amazement.

"Yeah, but I'm not the only one." Vorden replied with a smirk.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1284: A New Tier

His appearance had changed once again through evolution, but Borden was unsure whether Vorden was now inhabiting the body of a humanoid beast who had evolved into a Demi-god tier beast or whether the crystals they had gathered had been enough to allow Tails to reach the Demon tier level.

Borden looked over at the two struggling Dalki to get an idea just how powerful Vorden had grown. The Dalki that was now covered in green blood, was standing up and the other that had been blasted through the wall was also returning. Thankfully it seemed like the one Borden had thrown through the floor wasn't getting back up, which hopefully meant that it was dead.

"Ah, I guess I'm still not strong enough to take out a three spiked Dalki in one hit, these guys are super tough." Vorden stated calmly, his wings on his back started to move slightly, getting ready to be used. Jumping back, it looked like Vorden's body was floating for a few seconds as he landed gently by Borden's side.

"Even as a Demi-god tier beast it won't be easy for me to match up against this trio of three spikes. Borden, I'm going to need your help on this one." Vorden requested. Fortunately, their opponents were on the weaker end among three spikes, so as long as Borden teamed up with his brother, the two of them felt confident in taking them.

"What about Raten?" Borden asked. "Is he still going through the evolution process?"

With the two Dalki getting closer, Vorden was getting ready to attack, opting to answer Borden's question later, but it was at that moment that a smile appeared on his face, as he realised there would be no need for him to do anything.

"Just see for yourself."

The two Dalki were a little shocked by the sudden entrance of a beast. However, on their way towards the castle, they had run into many beasts that had attacked them, so they assumed this one would be no different.

Nevertheless, they remained cautious because this was the first beast that had managed to draw blood on their hard scaled bodies, because of this all of their attention was focused on the Dalki and beast in front of them, that they had failed to notice that both of them could no longer move.

When they attempted to move their feet, they suddenly felt stuck. Looking down, both of them could see that their feet had been encased in some type of mud.

"What is this?! Why can't we move?!" One of them shouted in anger, but with no momentum and just their power alone they were unable to break through the

substance that had appeared below them. This was a first for the two Dalki who used their strength to break through everything.

'Just how strong is that stuff if it can stop even three spiked Dalki from moving and where did it come from?' Borden wondered, as he hadn't been paying much attention either. The next second, a human figure could be seen dropping from above, and at the same time, two large blades were being formed in seconds.

A liquid mud-like substance could be seen changing shape and forming into the two blades at the last second, until it had pierced right through the top of both the Dalki's heads, like two meat skewers, both of them were no longer moving.

Now standing, in the middle of the two Dalki, was the mud-like beast.

"Raten, you killed them so easily! But how is that possible... unless you're a..." Borden wasn't too sure about the evolution, since Muddy's appearance hadn't changed as drastically as Tails.

"Hahaha...hahaha...this is GREAT!" Raten loud enough that he risked attracting any nearby Dalki, and that was because he didn't care about this possibility. In fact, he was so confident in this new body that he would welcome any to come over to him.

"Yeah, your guess is right." Vorden replied. "Muddy managed to evolve, which means right now Raten is controlling the body of a humanoid Demon tier beast. I was worried that even after hunting that many high tier beasts we would lack in crystals, but fortunately Muddy had done a good job on his own."

"We were also lucky that Tails' body needed far less crystal than we had estimated. Since it seemed impossible for me to evolve into a Demon tier, I handed my remaining share over to Raten." Vorden started to explain.

"After we finished our evolution, we noticed that there were Dalki in the castle. The first one actually entered our room and Raten dealt with it before I could even help. We then split up, he eliminated other Dalki we could hear, and I came to you, since I was worried."

"According to Muddy, even though his form hasn't changed too much, he now can use a number of different skills he couldn't do before. His body can form into a type of soft mud, but when it's hardened it's just as strong as the weapons or shield he made before. He can even change his whole body into a mud like substance, even his real form and can practically transform into whatever shape he wants right now."

"If he wanted to go under doors as just a pile of mud he can, whereas before he could only transform part of his mud and was limited to his human-like appearance."

Although it didn't sound too impressive, Borden, who had been fighting the three spiked Dalki, had just seen it in action. The Mud Hardening was able to even restrain their strength, making it extremely useful.

It was then, that the mud surrounding the Dalkis' legs had joined up with Ratan's body that Borden could see a slight change, the sheer size of Raten was now bulkier, but he soon disperse the mud making small little daggers by his side, and started to mold the mud more and more, putting detail into every little indent in his body, until finally something had happened that not even Vorden had seen coming.

Both of them were completely shocked by the change.

"Y-you now look completely like a....H-human." Vorden stuttered, still in disbelief and honestly a little jealous.

Before, Raten with the beast body just had a human-like figure, but one could still see that it was just a beast. Now there was so much detail in his appearance. Were it not for the strange colour, as well as some missing parts of the human body like lips, Raten could be mistaken for a human. He had even molded himself a pair of eyebrows.

After finishing looking at Raten in awe, the three of them knew they needed to do something. They were sure that things must have gone horribly wrong on the outside if the Dalki had managed to infiltrate the castle. They were still lacking the whole picture due to staying inside the whole time.

Borden was quite hurt, and Vorden had offered him an injection, but taking one meant that his body would fully heal, and he would lose access to all the strength his injured body granted him.

"I think it might be best if we save that for later. I can still fight, and we don't know who else is inside this castle." Borden rejected his offer.

Before leaving the place, the three Blades decided to scout the whole area to see if there was anyone else inside. It was then that they had found their first vampires that tried to attack them, but dealing with the vampires was a lot easier than the Dalki.

Going up through the floors they were encountering more, and eventually they had stumbled upon a whole group of masked men who used the red aura powers of the vampire, while another had used an earth ability.

Vorden found this strange as it was the first ability user they had come across. Vorden wanted to test a few things out, for he didn't seem to have super strength or speed like the others either, but Raten had killed the masked man before they could ask him anything.

'Dalki, Vampires and now even Humans, all of them are working together to take over this island? Just who is our enemy to be able to gather these three different groups under one banner?' Vorden wondered.

After clearing out the castle, not finding out much in regards to why those people had come here, they decided to head outside, where they could hear the fighting taking place all over.

"We should go to Sam and see if he needs our help with anything?" Vorden suggested.

"Sure, but do you happen to have ANY idea where Sam currently is?" Raten replied sarcastically since none of them had a way to contact the vampire.

In the middle of their small argument, they could feel the ground underneath them shake, followed by a loud roaring not too far from them.

"This has to be the Demon tier beast." Borden pointed out. "But why does it sound so...angry?"

Both Raten and Vorden looked at each other. Although both of them were inside the body of a humanoid beast, to them it had just sounded like a beast's roar, so they were wondering how Borden could tell how it was feeling.

However, Vorden considered that Borden wasn't quite like them. He wasn't just half beast, but created using one half of the Demon tier beast that was on this island, so perhaps he shared some connection to it, at least enough to be able to pick up on its emotions.

"If it's angry, maybe we should go see why." Vorden suggested.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1285: Moody Dragon

Brock, Eno and Vincent were standing mere meters away from the Demon tier beast that looked like a Dragon. Initially, they had been unsure if it was going to attack them or leave them be, as it had just continued staring at them, but once it had let out that almighty roar, they all understood that none of them were welcome anymore.

When Quinn had gone up to the tablet, Vincent was unable to hear the voice on the other side, but he could hear what Quinn was saying. It sounded one sided but he could guess the words that were being spoken and Quinn often updated him on what was happening as he wanted a second opinion.

However, for the first time, Vincent had heard the voice, and knowing that it didn't come from the other two with him, he was certain that it had come from the tablet itself, meaning it had come from the one that Quinn had called Ray.

'Could it be that I can hear the voice because I'm in Quinn's body?' Vincent theorised, however, looking at the two in front, it was clear from their confused looks that they too had heard it.

Noticing this, he looked past the Dragon to see that the tablet had lit up, just as it had done when Quinn would speak to it, even though at the moment no one was touching it.

"Please... get out of here!" The voice insisted once more but it started to fade away, and so did the light of the tablet, indicating that it could no longer help.

Just when the tablet's light had faded the Dragon started to charge towards the three of them. With its mighty legs, each step caused the ground to rumble. The beast opened its maw wide, revealing the orange light at the back of its throat.

'We have to get out of here. That Ray guy wouldn't warn us if this wasn't serious. Right now, none of us are a match for it. Perhaps even the enemy has underestimated the strength of the Demon tier beast!' Vincent thought, as he went to grab onto the one closest to him, Brock.

The fire was ready to leave the beast's mouth and Eno was a few fingertips away. Seeing this, Vincent had no choice, but to use Quinn's shadow to travel, placing both him and Brock in the shadow underneath to move away, yet the ancient vampire stood there unafraid.

When the flames were about to touch him, the middle spire of his crown started to light up, and soon the rest of his armour did so as well. The fire crashed into Eno yet somehow none of it touched him. The flames spread as if they were hitting some type of wall, and when looking at Eno, ripples of red aura could be seen in the air contumely moving.

"There was no need for you to do that." Brock stated without looking at his 'rescuer' his gaze fixed at Eno who was blocking the attack.

"Excuse me for wanting to help you... how was I supposed to know his blood armour could do that?" Vincent replied. Blood armour wasn't exactly common, in fact it was rare enough to see someone so much as wear it. From his limited experience, he was sure that the set of armour should have great defence, so he had considered the possibility of Eno surviving the attack, yet he had never thought about it being able to create something like a force field.

"Granted, you couldn't have known. The Vampire King's set, Arthur's set, every blood armour set has a different skill, just like some blood weapons." Brock nodded.

Vincent was thinking back to the fight with Cindy. How the blood armour had been powered by not just human blood but vampire blood as well. To this day, Vincent still wasn't sure what the king's blood armour did, other than radiating a part of the armour, and a strong force being exerted from that area.

However, he was sure of one thing, that each of the blood armours required blood for their ability to activate, yet Vincent could see none.

"As long as we stay behind Richard, we are safe." Brock repeated.

Noticing that its flames didn't have the intended effect, the Dragon stopped, but the trail of flames continued, so Eno continued to stand there waiting for the attack to end. The Demon tier beast turned around, swinging his gigantic tail at a speed that even a vampire would struggle to keep up with, much less the ancient vampire who was rooted in place,

It went through its own flames like it was nothing, the tail was also coming from the side rather than head on. Seeing this, Brock's facade changed for the first time to a look of worry.

'Is he limited to blocking only attacks from the front or is it because he is still blocking the flames?' Vincent wondered seeing this.

The next second, the giant tail slammed into Eno and his armour, sending him flying. A blur was seen passing through the jungle, and the sound of several trees were heard breaking as he crashed through them one by one.

It appeared that Eno, who always seemed to have some type of trump card up his sleeve or some secret backup plan, came up short for once. In fact, Vincent wouldn't be surprised if he might even be out of this fight altogether.

"It looks like it might have been a good thing that me and you were in this shadow, after all." Vincent cockily noted.

"We have to check if the master Is okay, let me out of this place!" Brock demanded, not in the mood for any jabs.

"Hold on." Vincent held him back. Now wasn't the time to lose their temper, not when there was still a giant and angry Demon tier beast in their immediate vicinity.

The two of them had traveled out of the open area, and were looking at everything that was going on from the outskirts of the jungle. The Dragon hadn't done much, it had only breathed a single breath of fire and swung its tail, and not even Eno could face something like that with his blood amour. It was clear that the two of them stood no chance.

'Perhaps by using the shadow powers, I could block one attack. Wait, isn't Quinn's Shadow overload skill the answer? With the soul weapon active it gives him an unlimited amount of MC cells, as long as he can move the shadow fast enough he could block any attack?'

Still, that wouldn't help them defeat the Dragon, they would still be lacking in the fire power department, not to mention their primary goal was to defend the beast, not to defeat it.

"Alright, it seems the Dragon has gone back to its usual spot by the tablet. It's no longer sleeping like it was before, but I think as long as we stay out of its way, things will be fine. It seems to attack anyone that gets too close to it." Vincent noted.

Brock found Vincent's conjecture convincing, but right now he couldn't care less about that overgrown lizard, he just wanted to hurry up and check whether Eno was okay. Since they didn't have to fear the wrath of the beast any longer, Vincent let go of him.

"I'll stay by the Dragon's side. Just go and see if the old man is okay. Well, I guess we're all old timers, huh." Vincent chuckled to himself, as the two of them left the shadow to travel and were back in the jungle, not too far from the open area.

"Just don't get too close to that Dragon on your way back!" Vincent stressed.

Brock nodded and was already running off into the direction Eno had been sent to. It was easy enough to follow him, given the line of destruction he had left.

Meanwhile, Vincent remained, waiting to see just how the enemy was planning to capture such a wild beast.

All blood armour that had been created was strong beyond belief. Even Quinn had been unable to put so much as a dent in the blood armour while Cindy had been wearing it. He had only managed to damage her body through it, and this was exactly how Eno felt right now.

To his luck, he had been hit into a cave behind a waterfall, but on his way he had crashed into several trees, eventually recovering mid air he had stopped himself before hitting any of the walls in the cave he was in.

'I knew it would have been better to stick to my original plan of moving the Demon tier beast. If those brats had only listened to me, we could have simply focused on fighting the enemy in front of us. Now we have to worry about the Demon tier beast as well. I hate it when I'm stressed out.' Eno thought standing up letting the blood flow out of his mouth, but he soon made a circle motion with his finger, opening up a small portal that looked similar to the ones the ships had come from.

Putting his hand inside, he pulled out a flask, and started to chug down on the blood inside.

Surprised, Eno could hear sounds beyond the wall of water that was crashing down in front of him. Eno decided to walk towards the cave entrance that was covered by the wall of water falling from above and eventually jumped through it landing on a large rock around the edge of the river.

There he could see a certain person, calmly walking through the jungle, with two large Dalki by his side.

"JIM!!!!" Eno shouted out.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1286: The back up

There was one more member of the Cursed faction that had arrived with the group, but hadn't been part of any of the plans so far, nor had Eno given him any direction. This was because the moment he had arrived, rather than to go through the hidden stash of beast gear Hilston Blade had accumulated, he had been told to do something else.

While the others had been gleefully searching for treasure, Logan had headed for Blade Island's so-called Temple. It was a place where the Blade kids had been forced to learn how to fight and use their abilities. As for the reason why Logan was here, it was all because Sam had given him a special mission, a task that only he could do.

'Sam's intellect might not be as vast as mine, but his foresight sure is impressive. Then again, sending me here was also the obvious choice.' Logan thought, as he was walking through one of the hallways, searching for the best location to start on his little project. 'Just like Richard Eno himself, it never hurts to have a back up plan, especially since that man can't be trusted.'

The Temple was a large building that was shaped like a square. The centre of it was an open field, which the Blade kids had used to practise. The other parts of the large square were used as classrooms, filled with all sorts of resources.

'This classroom should do.' Logan decided, as he entered one. He placed a circular disk on the floor which had a red light in the centre that lit up. Once he was done there, Logan also went to the roof of the building, and started to set something else up.

While he himself was busy with the tools he had brought along, he had made sure to instruct his spiders to be on the lookout throughout the jungle. The Temple was considered a relatively safe area, away from beasts, but the journey was not.

However, thanks to Logan's little spiders he had been able to avoid any trouble, especially since the Blade siblings had done a good job culling their numbers. The few times he had ended up running into a beast though, Logan had easily been able to fight it off, or just outright kill it.

"That's the fourth one done, now it should be covered by all sides, and I already finished setting up the jammers around the place as well."

Standing up, Logan looked over his work, now there was only one more thing that needed to be done. Grabbing a crystal from the large backpack that was carried by what looked like strange robotic spider legs, Logan placed the crystal in the device.

Fueled by an energy source, it went online and immediately started moving. The device itself looked like a robotic turret, and started to move from left to right. At the moment, they were set to auto mode, but Logan could also control all of them

by using a special pair of glasses that he had brought with him. They were also connected to his special suits.

On all sides of the rectangle building, Logan had set up these special turrets that would fire off energy blasts using the power of crystals. Their range wasn't too far, but that was because he didn't want anyone to know he was here in the first place.

Before setting up the turrets, Logan had picked out certain areas to set up the special teleporter jammers. There were two ways to jam the Dalki technology. One was to have it built into the teleporter device. This had been the case with the teleporter next to the tablet.

It was designed this way so the Dalki wouldn't get suspicious and it was easy to protect just one item. As for the second way, that was what Logan had used inside the Temple. They looked similar to the Dalki jammers only that they did the opposite, blocking out the Dalki's teleporter jammers within a certain area.

Setting these up in hiding spots, now the whole Temple was safe from any type of jammer, even if a couple of them were to be destroyed.

Heading back inside Logan headed to another room. This one was smaller than the others and it only had two desks inside, making him slightly curious what exactly it had been used for. Whatever it was, for some reason it had been the one kept in the best shape.

To his right, he could see plenty of books on the shelves as well as anime stories about superheroes.

Before starting his work, he heard a loud roar off in the distance, even from where he was.

"This is the perfect place to set up the teleporter, and it looks like we might need it." Logan mumbled as he got to work.

The special task he had been assigned was to prepare a second teleporter. However, it wasn't so others could come and help them. No, Sam had made it clear that he wanted Logan to make it work one-way. If more people started to appear from the Temple, the enemy might end up targeting that place.

If their task seemed impossible, this teleporter would act as a last resort to ensure they could retreat!

After leaving the castle, the Blades decided to head to where they had just heard the loud roar come from. They knew they were heading to the other Demon tier beast.

Perhaps it was overconfidence, but now that Muddy had evolved into a Demon tier beast as well, Raten was sure he could deal with it, if the need arose. His siblings

showed no fear as they were heading towards it, which was probably the wrong choice.

Humanoid beasts were meant to be the strongest type of beasts in existence, and Raten was a Demon tier humanoid one. This was where some of Raten's logic had come from.

When seeing it up ahead, Raten charged forward hoping to get to the beast first before the others.

"Raten, wait!" Vorden shouted out. "We don't even know if the others are in trouble, the beast could even be helping us!"

It was clear to him that Raten just wanted to pick a fight with the beast to prove who was the stronger one of the Demon tier beasts. The good thing was, before Raten could leave the jungle, a shadow appeared in front of them, blocking his path. What's more a fist filled with red aura came out of it, aimed at Raten's stomach, sending him a few feet back.

"Calm down, you idiots, or you'll get us all to be killed!" They were being berated by Vincent.

The attack hadn't hurt Raten, not that Vincent had his full strength in the first place. Even if he had, Muddy's new body was strong enough that a punch without any Qi would hardly be noticed by him. The concept of that, was one of the few things that Vincent still hadn't grasped while in Quinn's body.

Blood powers were something he had known, and getting the hang out of the Shadow power had also been easy, but Qi was something foreign to him. Quinn's body might be able to use it, but Vincent hadn't yet figured out how.

"The Demon tier beast doesn't seem to attack us as long as we don't come too close to it. So it will be in our best interest to make sure none of us enter that open area around it. For now we should stay and keep watch." Vincent explained.

"Who are you?" Vorden asked suddenly. "I've known Quinn for a long time, but I've never heard him speak to us like strangers. Where is Quinn? What have you done to him!?" With Vorden asking these questions, the other two were getting ready for a fight.

Quinn was still using Full Control on the Roseus tree, but he could see that the beasts he was using were about to be overwhelmed. What's more from the looks of it, the roots had already marked all the beasts that had been on the island.

'How many of these masked people are there? It seems that I have exhausted all the beasts on the island, yet they just keep coming. The Cursed faction are doing a good job holding them off, but it seems like it's never ending.'

Noticing this, Quinn decided to give a final command to the Roseus tree. To supply beasts that were alive with as much energy as possible, and to also protect the Cursed faction members. The last ones it had marked shouldn't attack the enemy but focus on protecting the others.

'I guess it's time for me to return to my body and see what's happened.' Quinn decided.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1287: A Tiger's last stand

When Vorden had asked this question, he thought back to the time when they had all been in the Shelter. Back then, he had seen Quinn, but not once had his friend used his shadow abilities. Even if he had obtained it at some point, that didn't explain the strange way the 'Quinn' before them spoke to them.

Vorden had gathered that most likely the person that was in control of Quinn before at the Shelter, would be the same person now, but he was interested to find out just who this person was, and was hoping to get an answer. The only problem was, Vorden didn't account for the fact that he had two hot headed brothers who were ready for action.

Immediately after Vorden voiced his doubt about the person in front of them being the actual Cursed faction leader, they considered him to be an enemy.

The first thing Raten did was liquify parts of his body, sinking mud into the ground, using it to trap the person in front of them. They knew how fast and agile Quinn's body was, so if this wasn't a double, but someone who took control over him, it was in their best interest to chain him down. It worked perfectly, since Vincent didn't exactly want to fight against them.

"Hang on, what are you doing, I'm-" Before Vincent really had a chance to explain himself, Borden had already thrown out a punch. Fortunately the Vampire Lord's body allowed Vincent to see it coming from a mile away. He avoided and grabbed onto Broden's wrist.

"You know this body doesn't lack in strength when compared to you, and these things can't trap me." Vincent pointed out, as he sunk into his shadow travel in order to escape from the mud that he was trapped in. As soon as he reappeared, Vincent held out his hand ready to fire, as he could see the two beasts coming towards him.

'Dealing with them might prove difficult. It would be one thing if they were the enemy, but Quinn wouldn't be too happy if I end up hurting his friends!' Vincent was worried about what to do. Alas, they didn't seem like the types to listen, not unless he forced them to, after subduing them.

Luckily, just in that moment, a certain person returned to his own body.

Quinn was confused since the first thing he saw were two of his friends coming at him, and as they both were inches away from him, Quinn had disappeared, and the two had struck nothing but air. A few seconds later, and Quinn had reappeared after using his Shadow lock on himself and this time, he had all of the gear of the Blue Fang armour set.

"Have you guys been taken over? What's happened!" Quinn demanded an answer, ready to attack them both, currently under the same misconception as the two of them.

"Wait!" Vorden called, hoping to explain the situation.

Out of all the Cursed group members that had split up, there was one group struggling more so than any of the others, and that was Wevil and Linda. Both of them used to be the vice leaders of their old factions at one point and having to fight multiple enemies wasn't something uncommon to them at this point, still the sheer number of their opponents was proving too much.

Wevil could no longer keep up his Tiger Beetle from running out of energy. He had great speed but as he tired, the countless masked vampires that had only been a little slower than himself had finally managed to catch up to him.

'I need blood.' Wevil thought as he huffed and puffed. Soon two masked men were on him with their claws out. Wevil hurried to defend himself with his daggers, stabbing one in the thigh and the other at the back of his neck.

Seconds later, he was hit by a red aura from another direction.

"Arghh!" Wevil screamed in pain as his body hurled over. The vampire who had been stabbed in the thigh saw his chance and went for the kill with a swipe of his hand, only to be stopped seconds later by a giant club that knocked him away.

"Wevil, I'll cover for you!" Linda shouted, but she didn't look much better than her companion, covered in blood, much of it her own. Looking at her, Wevil could tell her wounds were no longer healing the same as before and both of them were suffering from the same problem.

They both needed energy. Wevil could obtain new energy from blood, he just needed to touch a human, while Linda needed to consume humans similar to how Peter did. In the middle of the chaos it was impossible for them to recharge.

The Masked attackers just didn't seem to stop coming. At first they had been easily able to deal with the groups of five that would appear through the forest, but now more and more were getting through, while they were starting to feel exhausted.

'Crap, I just need to find a human, isn't there a single one amongst all those!' Wevil looked around. That was when he spotted someone at the very back. It was still a masked figure, hiding between some trees.

'Why are they staying so far away, are they waiting for us to get weak?' Wevil worried that there was a reason for that person's behaviour and it couldn't be good. He picked himself up, but as quickly as he did, his legs felt like jelly causing him to

almost fall to the ground again. The next second he could see a giant shadow cast over him.

He looked up and could see Linda's face in front of him.

'Is she covering me?' Wevil thought.

"I need to tell you something." Linda said, as she grunted. Wevil was wondering what was going on but he was unable to see outside due to Linda's large body. In her Great Draugr form she was almost gigantic, larger than a Dalki.

But he could tell that what was most likely happening was that more enemies had come and they were attacking her right now, and she was the one who was protecting him.

"I forgive you Wevil.... I blamed you... our faction for my brother's death for so long. The truth was I got close to you because I was planning to get some sort of revenge on the members of the Parasites, but as I got to know you, I discovered that you weren't as bad a person as I believed. That just started to make things so much harder, and I don't know when, but eventually..I ..I fell in love with you." Linda spoke, tears running down her face but due to the hunched position she was in the tears rolled down her eyebrows and onto the ground.

"Linda what are you doing, get up! Get up!" Wevil screamed, unable to appreciate the giant woman's confession. He didn't care for what Linda was saying, all he wanted to do was for the two of them to survive this mess right now. The attacks could be heard clearer now, from the outside. Although she had a good set of armour, they both saw that she was close to her limit.

"Linda, you can't die! You can't die for me. We have to fight! Even if you protect me like this, they'll just kill me afterward! Get up, we have to fight! Don't you remember what Quinn said? This is not worth risking our lives for! Are you going to disobey his order!" Wevil screamed at the top of his lungs.

"I'm sorry... it's too late." Linda sniffled. "I can't even move my body."

"Then...I'll move you!" Wevil shouted, the strength that was gone from his body was slowly returning. He was experiencing some type of second wind as he stood up, and went forward. He started to use all his strength pushing Linda's gigantic body up.

He pushed with all his power, his muscles bulging.

'I don't know how long I can stay like this for, but....I have to make sure that at least Linda survives!' Wevil thought as he screamed to further hype himself up, forcing his arms to slightly transform into that of the Tiger Beetle. Changing his legs as well, he pushed off the ground springing him up, and Linda's body was lifted off and landed onto the side.

He now could see the blue sky again, and turned to look at Linda, seeing what might have happened to her, or if she needed help. She was now lying on her front, her body was shrinking back down to her regular human size, but the armour hadn't changed for she was too weak to even use her shadow abilities, but at least her eyes didn't look as if she had died.

Wevil looking at where he was could see a pool of blood, it wasn't his own, but it all belonged to Linda. She had given it her all to protect him.

"You Bastards!!" Wevil screamed.

Linda had her hand held out...softly saying the words.. "Run.."

For right now, Wevil was surrounded by around a dozen masked men. Ironically, he noticed that the one who had been staying at the back this whole time had also moved forward.

"Haha, now you come out!" Wevil could tell now that the guy was so close. He could sense that this person was human. He was exactly what both him and Linda needed to fight a little longer.

Using whatever he had left, Wevil somehow managed to move his legs. His body transformation had reverted after lifting Linda off himself. His daggers were on the ground, so charging forward he could do nothing but throw a fist, and at the same time, all the others charged in to intercept him.

Wevil's hand managed to make contact with something solid, but it wasn't the person in front of him. He felt like he had a wall.

"I thought you were just a regular human, but you bastard actually had an ability, huh." Wevil mumbled, accepting his fate. He was out of energy, unable to resist as the masked men were tearing into his body.

Their hands pierced through his stomach, into his chest, into his thigh, blood pouring from Wevil's mouth. As much as he wanted to turn around, to see Linda for a final time, he didn't have the strength for it.

'Thank you, Quinn... the time... with you... all... was... enjoy... a...b-'

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1288: The Special box

Linda was unable to do anything to help Wevil. She laid there looking at the end of the person she had once hated, but who she had ended up falling in love with. Last time, she had been unable to help her brother Blip, blaming herself for him having lost his life.

Nothing seemed to have changed. Despite all the power she was supposed to have at her disposal, there she was failing to save a loved one once again.

She wanted to stretch out her arm towards Wevil, yet the only degree of movement she had in her was a slight twitch of her fingers. With the many wounds he had suffered it seemed impossible for him to have survived and the masked men weren't stopping, like ravenous beasts who had found food for the first time in weeks. Even though he was standing it seemed like it was only because of the others who were holding him up with their attacks.

Just as they had removed their hands from his body, Wevil's body flopped to the ground, showing no indication of life inside it.

'No! No!' Linda screamed in her head again. She was hoping to summon some type of surge in energy, similar to how little Wevil had been able to lift her gigantic body. If she had been able to stay on top of him then perhaps he would have been the one to have survived.

Yet here she was still unable to move, her MC cells had been spent, so she could do nothing. After dealing with Wevil, the masked men started to come towards her, and through the jungle more men were starting to appear.

'Quinn, where are you... weren't you meant to protect us? I thought you could feel it... Is that why you haven't come yet? Could it be Wevil isn't....he isn't...dead.' Despite considering that possibility, deep down she knew that shouldn't be the case. As resilient as vampires and their subclasses might be, even Peter was unlikely to survive this degree of damage.

"Where the hell are you, Quinn?! You should be here!!" Linda screamed at the top of lungs while squinting her eyes shut. She had used her last breath and no longer knew what was happening anymore, as she closed her eyes, part of her looking forward to reuniting with Wevil.

However, after a while she could hear the sound of fighting.

'What is going on?' She thought.

Her energy was still weak so it was hard for her to open them, and eventually the fighting that she could hear had stopped nearly just as quickly as it had started.

'I guess I must have passed out for a few seconds...whoever they were fighting stopped.'

"Here, eat this! It should help you regain some of your strength." A voice ordered her. She was too weak to recognise it. The owner of the voice seemed to have noticed that Linda was too weak. The next moment she felt something pressed against her lips, and before she processed what her own body was doing, she realised she had already started eating whatever it was in front of her.

Energy started to gather inside her body, and her wounds began to heal once again. Finally, she had enough strength to open her eyes, and that's when she could see it. Around twenty masked men had been slaughtered, their limbs removed from their body. One in particular looked like they had been cut.

When looking down, Linda noticed she had nothing but a human bone from an arm in her hand.

"Flesh, but how, weren't they all vampires?" Linda questioned.

"Not all." The person next to her replied. Turning her head she soon could see a large black furred beast. "Vorden!"

"Calm down, even though you have eaten enough to recover your energy, it will still take some time for your body to heal. It looks like you really did push yourself beyond what you were capable off. Honestly, I don't think you can fight anymore, even if you ate more." Vorden spoke to her, although he wasn't entirely sure if that was true since he wasn't a Vampire himself. He was mostly basing his knowledge on what he knew about Peter.

"There's not just vampires among their group, there are also humans. Although rare, they're dangerous since they can use abilities. Oh, and they're also Dalki on the island."

Linda looked shocked to hear this, and she realised now where the arm she had gotten must have come from.

"Wait, if you were able to get to me in time, does that mean!" Linda sprung up, to look in the direction of where she last saw Wevil. However, Vorden quickly blocked her view, shaking his head.

In the few seconds she had managed to look over there, she couldn't see Wevil's body, but judging by the way Vorden was reacting, it was clear that he hadn't survived.

Almost immediately, Linda started to feel weak again, and she leaned up placing her head into Vorden's chest.

"He didn't deserve to die! Why him? Why?! Vorden, tell me! Why are we the only ones fighting on this damn island! Why are we the ones losing people all the time! And where is...where is...."

"Quinn?" Vorden finished her sentence for her not wanting her to speak or use up any more energy. "Quinn was actually the one who sent us here. He could tell that you guys were struggling but he had to attend to something else, and Linda this war...hasn't been good for any of us."

"How many lives have already been lost, and how many more will be lost... I'm afraid we'll need to strengthen our resolve. This might not be the only loss we suffer this war, however he won't be forgotten. Wevil fought with his life for us, for the Cursed faction, for the human race."

"We need to make sure that he gave his life for a reason. You in particular Linda. I haven't been back with the Cursed faction for long, but I could tell that Wevil was always looking out for you."

Linda fell down once again, falling to the ground, but unfortunately they didn't have the luxury of time to allow her to grieve. The enemy was still on the move through the jungle, and Vorden, knowing this, grabbed onto Linda, flying back.

"Wait!" Linda cried out. "What about Wevil's body, where is it?"

"Wevil's body is being returned to the castle at the moment. Remember how I said we? The one that killed all those masked wasn't me Linda, it was Raten. Borden will take his body back to the Castle. I would never allow someone who fought so hard like that to get trampled or used for other means."

"I think it's best if we return as well Linda, take a break and rest for now, leave them to us."

Hearing these words, Linda soon closed her eyes and her exhaustion made her enter a deep sleep. Despite how fast Vorden was moving, and her having eaten, it was as if her mind had shut down with everything she had been through.

While travelling back to the castle, seeing Wevil's body before it was taken away. Vorden felt his arms constantly tensing as his blood boiled with anger. He was starting to worry whether they could actually win this fight and if so... just how high would the cost be that they would have to pay?

Even with him and Raten having evolved, he couldn't help but wonder if it was worth it.

'Maybe the best thing to do is give up the fight for now. Otherwise, more of us will lose our lives in this, but can we even do that, how do we even get out of here?'

At this moment, there was another Cursed faction group that was doing well up to a certain point, but now they were struggling as well. In this group, there was Fex, and Dennis who too had used their powers far more than they thought and were beginning to tire out.

At the moment, there were three of them, standing back to back. As for the third person, or being with them. It was a white haired gorilla with four arms. One of the Marked beasts being controlled by Quinn, who had been a great help to them so far.

There were other beasts originally by their side but now they had all been killed apart from one.

The whole group were surrounded by a mixture of vampires and humans and the group had become incredibly large in number reaching over forty.

"Do you think this is where our grave will be?" Dennis asked. At first they had been faring well, having already defeated around the same number surrounding them now, but as soon as they got tired, it was almost as if they were relying on their other allies to come and help.

"Don't speak like that, Old man. I'm not dying here, I have far too many things I need to do!" Fex shouted as he took the box off from his back that he had been carrying around the whole time and slammed it on the ground. "It's time to put this to use!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1289: The Puppet Master

As a society based on strength, many vampires looked down on those who used tools to show off their strength. It was why many of them refused to use beast gear, even though some had voiced that this sentiment seemed contradictory since their ancestors used blood weapons.

However, certain vampires felt like this was still part of their strength since they were created from crystals that could only be obtained from vampires, rather than borrowing it from mere beasts.

However, despite this belief, neither the regular nor the vampires in a family would look down upon the members of the thirteenth family, who were considered to be a strong family. Nonetheless, their real strength stemmed from their ability, for which they needed a tool, one that only their top members possessed and that was something called a puppet.

Of course that had not always been the case. In fact, in the past they had been mocked because of it. One day, an argument had escalated to the point that the family leaders had been forced to get involved. Picking one of the many families that had publicly mocked the thirteenth family's ways, he had called for a duel to settle the matter once and for all.

The Vampire King himself had come to observe the fight, just like all the other family leaders. The thirteenth family leader had done something no one had expected. Using his strings he grabbed one of the Vampire knights from the very leader he was about to face.

At first the other leader had scoffed at the thirteen's actions, believing that the other had done so to make him hesitate, however he did no such thing. With his first attack, he made it clear that he would not be holding back, but what happened next was a tale that would be told within the thirteenth family for centuries.

Using his strings, the thirteenth leader proved to be so skillful in controlling the Vampire knight puppet that he managed to make his opponent yield. A Vampire knight of the same family being able to beat his own leader was something unheard of. It was such a huge embarrassment for the family that the leader was forced to go into eternal slumber to save face.

From that day on, vampires stopped regarding a puppet as a type of tool, instead treating it as the real trump card of the thirteenth family and the proper way for how the string ability was meant to be used. Ever since, the higher members of the thirteenth family spent much of their time mastering that art, and that included Fex.

After slamming the coffin-like box that was on his back on the ground, the lid fell to the floor, and a human male could be seen inside.

"Alright, Agent 11, it's time to do your work!" Fex shouted, as he kicked the box down and quickly threw needles tied with his strings towards the man, and started to summon his blood weapon right after. Once it was in Fex's hands he wasted no time stabbing Agent 11 in the back.

"Ahhh! What the hell is going on!" Agent 11 cried out, after seeing the outside light for the first time in a long while. He had only been able to hear noises from inside the box, so he was confused about what was going on. His freedom was short-lived, as he got stabbed by Fex, finding himself surrounded by blood thirsty killers on all sides.

"Look, you want to live, right?! Well if I die, you die. As you can see, those aren't your Pure buddies who have come to save you. Use your Qi or whatever else you have in store with your sword, and just let me do the rest!" Fex ordered.

The one that Fex was using as his puppet right now, was the Pure agent they had captured. Fex had never been able to use his Influence skill on, which was the reason for capturing him in the first place. Although, even Quinn had been unable to bypass his mental defenses, the group had decided to keep him prisoner, for one he had tried to kill their members and the second reason, they thought they might eventually find a way to get information out of him at some point.

It was then that Fex had come up with another use for him. Agent 11 had a strong body, and was able to use the power of Qi, not to mention he was close enough to being a single agent, the strongest type in Pure.

Fex had briefly tested him out with his puppeteering skills and he had turned out better than the vampire had imagined. During this fight, for the first time Agent 11 would be even stronger thanks to his blood weapon.

The masked men, seeing one more person who wasn't an ally, started to charge in. Agent 11 had no choice, tightly gripping onto the sword in his hand, he channeled his Qi through it.

"Just focus on your Qi, relax your body and let me do the rest!" Fex shouted.

It was a hard thing to do, especially since Agent 11 could see someone charge at him, but he knew what Fex meant. Agent 11 had reluctantly been used as Fex's practice tool on his downtime, and he knew that it was worse for him to go against the flow.

Soon, using his sword, a slash even faster than Agent 11 was ever capable of using, sliced the masked man's hand off.

The vampire swivelled around holding his arm, and noticed that the wound wasn't healing.

'Haha, I hope you enjoy this surprise. It looks like you guys have never fought against someone who can use Qi before.' Fex thought gleefully as he continued to control Agent 11.

With his sword, he sliced the vampires in his way, thrusted them down, and finished most of them with a single strike to the point where they could no longer get up.

As for the other side, they too had decided to charge towards Dennis, but now that Fex was able to deal with a majority of them, Dennis' load had lessened. The gorilla was able to help out massively, as it leapt through the air, slamming its giant fists on two of them, and then using its smaller arms underneath to continue to punch the vampires on the ground.

"I'm not going to lose out to a freaking gorilla!" Dennis shouted, as he went forward and continued to fight with his fists as well. He had used up his MC cells, unable to cast his shadow ability, which was why his fighting had also turned more beast-like. He continued to punch, with the gorilla, and held off the enemies in front of him.

Eventually, Dennis had slipped on some blood and caught himself but was now down on one knee. A masked vampire saw this as the right time, throwing a claw towards the back of Dennis' head. Reaching out the vampire was inches away before a burning sensation was felt on its head, and soon it fell to the floor, before it succeeded in its attack.

'What was that, acid?' Dennis wondered, as he continued to fight, and glanced at the tree where the attack had come from. There he could see that there was a snake-like beast in the tree, and now it was helping them as well. Shooting out acid towards the masked on the ground.

"I don't know who is controlling these beasts, but I'm going to have to thank them!"

With excitement and support by his side, Dennis was feeling invincible, ignoring the wounds that he had received, just focusing on the fight. He was pushing himself beyond what his body was already capable of.

Pain was a sign for the body to stop what it was doing, to tell it, that it was in trouble and as a result, Dennis didn't realise just how much he had been hurt. When going to punch someone, he was a few seconds slower as his rib cage had been cracked from an earlier hit, and it looked like the few remaining vampires noticed this as well, ready to at least take one of them down.

'Crap...I didn't get to...I didn't get to even spend that week off with Megan.' Was going through Dennis' mind as he saw the fists coming towards him, almost in slow motion, but there was nothing he could do about them.

"You're not dying on my watch, old man!" Fex shouted, running across Dennis' back, and kicking two of the vampires' heads in front of him. Fex then quickly pulled one forward with his string and sliced it from the head down in half finishing the last few remaining ones.

Dennis, seeing Fex back could see that his black needle was in his back.

"What happened to them? Huh?" Dennis said, confused.

"That guy is good enough to handle himself. After dealing with most of them, I let him do his own thing and used the power of the needle on me." Fex replied.

Eventually the group had dealt with all forty of the masked men. With this brief break it looked like no more masks were coming in their direction. They wondered if it was because the enemy thought that they would be finished by now, or had they really defeated all those coming from this direction.

Either way, they had time to rest and with the humans they had killed, both Dennis and Fex consumed their blood as they started to recover. Eventually, Fex picked up the wooden crate that was still in good condition.

"Alright, we should be good now. Come on, you know the drill." Fex clapped his hands looking at Agent 11.

"Seriously? I just saved your asses! Heck, I didn't even try to run away, yet you want me to return to that stuffy box? When's the last time you even cleaned it!" Agent 11 wasn't too keen to listen to that order.

"Oh please, where would you have even run off to? We're on an island with all sorts of people trying to kill us. Just get in the box!" Fex ordered, getting his strings ready.

"Look, I promise I will help you guys, just don't put me back in there! I won't resist if you control me, or puppet me or anything! We both know that if it wasn't for me, he would have died and you should at least reward me for that right?" Agent 11 argued, pointing towards Dennis.

"Just let him stay outside. He did help us after all." Dennis took his side, relaxing and allowing the blood to heal their wounds.

"Argh, fine! But just this once, and don't even think about getting away!" Fex loocked eyes with the gorilla that was still alive. "Gorilla, keep an eye on him."

Fex was annoyed, but at the same time worried that Pure Agent was just waiting for a better opportunity to make a run for it. It had taken him a long time to find someone this good he could use, but it looked like Agent 11 was staying close by.

Fex decided to go up to his attackers hoping to get a good look at them and one was lying in the grass.

'Why do they even wear these masks, is it to cover up their ugly faces?' Fex thought, taking one of them off, revealing the man's face.

'He's not ugly enough to need a mask, in fact he's actually quite handsome. I wonder why they all use those masks then? I don't recognize this guy.' Fex thought, thinking it was one of the agents from the Vampire World. Not that Fex did know every single vampire in the settlement.

Out of curiosity, Fex decided to go to another masked man and took his off as well, and when he did, he had to rub his eyes twice because he couldn't believe what he was seeing..

"What the... were those two twins?"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1290: A copy of a copy

After seeing the second person's face under the strange black mask all of them seemed to wear, something about it bothered Fex. Both of them looked identical... too identical even if they happened to be twins. Setting aside the small likelihood that the vampire just so happened to unmask two brothers, there was another explanation for their resemblance.

Fex gulped as he considered that possibility. He quickly went over to another masked man on the ground and started to pull his masks off as well. Dennis, Agent 11 and the gorilla were watching his strange actions from the side as they took a break to recover, wondering why he was acting like some type of mad man.

However, after they saw him pull off the sixth person's mask, they looked past his actions and were now looking at the details on his face. He was sweating, something vampires didn't really do, not even when tired, which meant most likely something was worrying him.

"They're the exact same!" Fex shouted in frustration. "All these masked men are the same! All of them must be clones of the same person."

Dennis finally got up to have a look at just what Fex was talking about. He was half hoping that perhaps the people just looked similar or that the other had just revealed the faces of identical sextuplets, but their resemblance was uncanny.

The group dragged the corpses of those men next to each other, so they could get a closer look and a better comparison. However, it just made things even stranger because from head to toe, all the men were identical even in height.

"They must be clones! Didn't Quinn say that Eno could do the same? He also had multiple copies of himself." Dennis assumed and started to sniff the air. He had another thought and wanted to check something out.

Following his nose, it soon brought him to another masked person that Fex had yet to pull the mask off. After finding six people with the same face in the row, Fex didn't expect to see anything different from the others.

'It would make sense, I guess. If Richard could do it, his relatives might be able to aswelll, given that they should have the same power.' Dennis thought.

If Fex was to concentrate, he could still hear the sounds of fighting coming off from different directions. He knew that Richard could create clones, but this many?

"For frick's sake, this whole time, we've been fighting against bloody clones!" Fex continued shouting and cursing. "How is this fair? These guys aren't even real! No wonder there are so many of them! We have to fight with our lives on the line while they can just as easily be replaced!!!!"

Eventually, Dennis had found his resolve to pull off the mask from the person in front of him, and what he saw underneath was finally something different to the other masked person. There was a woman who was already dead but there was something else that was different about her compared to the others as well.

"Come over here!" Dennis called out.

Out of interest, the gorilla and even Agent 11 had come over. The Pure Agent wasn't sure why exactly Fex and the others were on the island, but from what he had gathered they seemed to be up against what the world knew as V at the moment. He had seen their red eyes and powers. If he actually got a chance to escape he could use all of this information to rise within the Pure organization.

"This one's... a human." Fex sniffed the air to make sure, but he also remembered something else looking at the specific wound on her body. He had been the one to have killed her. Fex remembered this person well because she had been the only one that had used an ability against him.

"Wait, is that the reason?" Fex spoke his thoughts out loud. "We've fought against so many vampires, but none of them seemed to have an ability?"

"I've seen some vampires who don't have abilities. Is it that strange?" Dennis asked.

"Even in the pooling area, vampires chose different abilities from the thirteenth family, only those who haven't given up on a promotion would choose not to learn any ability."

"So you think the humans aren't clones? Do you think they abducted them, because clones can't learn abilities?" Dennis wondered.

"Couldn't it just be a case of those ones being created recently?" Agent 11 chimed in with his own opinion on the matter, mostly because he didn't have anything better to do and he was aware that he would literally get dragged into the Cursed faction's mess.

"If all your enemy needed was an army to overwhelm you guys, would he have bothered to prepare for it for a long time to teach them all abilities, or to find them? Perhaps it's more correct to say that whoever made these clones is unable to copy them with abilities in the first place. Otherwise he could teach one person an ability and then clone them. Then again I'm no scientist."

While they were all busy thinking about how this information could possibly help them in their current fight, they could soon hear another wave of people coming towards them.

"Well I guess they aren't short on numbers, and I guess unlike us they don't really have to care about any losses." Dennis stretched his arms behind his back a few times, he could tell his body hadn't made a complete recovery yet and although

blood from humans allowed them to heal, restoring their energy and stamina was another thing altogether.

Out from the large jungle trees, they could see more masked men appearing. Just like they had suspected it was another group.

"Isn't something a little off about them?" Fex asked moving in closer to where the others were, also twirling his fingers getting ready to attach them to Agent 11 at any moment.

As they got closer, Agent 11 noticed it as well, some of the masks they were wearing were cracked and at the same time they had wounds and blood dripping on their clothing. Before the group even reached them, the snake beast that helped them from before dropped from above, landing on three of them.

It let out its acid on all the other members, and all of the other Masked had fallen, but they seemed to be ignoring the snake that had just landed on some of them. On closer inspection, they looked to be in a hurry as they scuffled to try and continue running.

Before they knew it, a figure could be seen landing in front of the group, and as quickly as it landed, it dealt with the rest of the Masked, with a few hits.

'Isn't that Mona, one of the former Big Four? What is she doing here, in a place like this' Agent 11 was beyond shocked.

Mona turned around after dealing with them, and the snake that was on the ground slivered up and went around her neck. When turning she looked at those in front of her, and noticed how tired and torn their clothing were.

"I'm sorry. I was confident that I could stop them from coming and I was faring well with the Kraken beast. They just kept coming and coming, it felt like they were..."

"Endless." Dennis finished her sentence. "We've experienced the same thing. We're just happy that you took care of many of them and I think everyone on this island will agree. What happened to the beast that was with you?"

Mona was a strong woman who was usually brimming with confidence, but when asked this question the others found it strange that this confidence had vanished from her face, and they weren't sure if they were imagining it or not, but could see her shudder slightly.

"The Kraken... it's dead." Mona answered, looking away from the others, her eyes full of pain.

"I guess, not even a Demon tier beast can handle an army of vampires." Fex noted, almost proud of this fact.

"No, it wasn't done by the Masked." Mona replied. "It was something else. Honestly, I'm not sure I should tell you, guys... it might make you give up on this fight as well... Do you think it's too late for all of us to give up on this mission?"

All of them were wondering just what Mona could have seen, that could convince her that retreat might actually be the best option.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1291: Going back

Out of all the Cursed groups that had split up, one was faring a lot better compared to the others and that was Sam's group. Most of this was actually thanks to the synergy between Layla and Nate.

With her acting as the group's marksman, now that she had improved her powers she could injure most of the Masked before they got too close. Nate would be there to fight off those who had evaded her attacks, while allowing Sam to pick off the weaker ones in the back.

Layla was able to freely change between her three forms, so whenever they had a short break, she would transform into her third form, allowing her use the special flames to heal any injuries Nate and Sam, while also renewing their buffs.

There were a few times that they had struggled, in particular whenever the Masked had attacked with ability users in their midst. However, for those occasions, they had an ace in the team that their enemy had no way of dealing with, which was, once again, Layla.

Whenever they came across a troublesome ability user, Layla would quickly change into her second form and join the fray from up close. This would put more pressure on Nate and Sam, but a few four legged beasts also had come to their aid to help them fight.

None of the ability users were prepared to go up against someone who was capable of negating every single ability there was out there, making it easy for the young woman to finish off the troublesome ones.

'This is the power of having real support on our team.' Sam realised as they struggled through a new wave of Masked. 'If we'll ever have to fight this type of battle again, it would be best if we had more supportive abilities to help out the groups."

'However... just how many of those Masked are there? No matter how many we kill, their number doesn't seem to drop. If anything I think they're getting more numerous with each new wave. I'm not sure if the other two have noticed it, but each time we're getting pushed further back.'

"Sam!" Nate called out. "I'm nearly out of blood. My flask is practically empty."

This was another problem. Although Nate's stamina was great, better than most in the Cursed faction, and although nearly none of them had been injured, there was the issue of blood. Using their blood abilities allowed Sam and Nate to perform strong attacks, but without blood not only would it make them weaker they could no longer produce their red aura.

"Let's head closer to the castle!" Sam ordered.

Everyone started to slowly retreat. With no end in sight, Sam was trying to figure out how they would win this. After all, their victory condition was having to make sure the enemy didn't get the Demon tier beast. Unfortunately, he lacked critical information about how the other sides were doing, and he had a strange feeling not too long ago, he didn't think it was a good sign.

As the group was moving back, Sam could feel the back of his hair move violently, as if a storm was coming. He had a premonition that it might be dangerous to turn around, but his fear that it could be the enemy made him take a quick look, only to see a black feathered beast he hadn't seen before.

"Sam, we need a new plan!" The beast shouted, that he recognised as sort of Vorden's.

"I know, but it's kinda hard to come up with something, while we're surrounded by the enemy!" Sam replied back, slightly annoyed with the tone Vorden had given the second he had arrived.

Before Sam could say anything else, another strange creature ran past him, also passing Nate and Layla as well.

Turning around, they could see that it looked like a person, who wore the same black clothing as the Masked. However, he seemed to have cut off the sleeves of the clothing. The next moment they saw why, as both his hands formed into two gigantic blades.

The second the strange person had disappeared into the jungle, he started to slice down all of the Masked one by one. Most of them weren't even able to retaliate, as for those who did, their red aura proved to do nothing to the assailant.

"Raten can deal with any of the Masked that come our way. Now, how about we talk?" Vorden asked again.

Hearing who the strange person was, Sam could only reach one conclusion which was that Raten must have evolved and was now inside the body of humanoid Demon tier beast. With this revelation, Sam believed that they might have a chance.

"Quin just sent us over to Wevil's group. He's dead and Linda can no longer fight. Borden should have brought his body back to the castle and is probably looking after Linda now. This fight... it's worse than we thought. Apart from the Masked, there're also Dalki!"

"Judging by the look on your face, I assume you must have thought that with me and Raten having evolved we might stand a chance of winning this, right?" Vorden asked. "I thought the same, until I saw what state Linda was in."

"Even if we can win this fight, we might even be lucky if more than a few of us will actually survive. Quinn was right, Eno doesn't care about us. We need a better plan!"

Sam had mixed feelings after hearing the news. He had prepared himself for the possibility that some of the Cursed faction were going to die after finding out who they were going up against, knowing the enemy would surely have some tricks up their sleeves, but it still felt surreal at the moment.

Worst of all, he didn't even have time to grieve over Wevil because Sam needed to think up their next course of action to prevent anymore losses.

"There's more news!" Fex shouted over.

Towards the castle, the heavy grown jungle area lessened. The trees and grass were thinned out, giving a more open area allowing for everyone to see each other easier. When turning around, Sam could see Fex and the rest with them. He found it strange they were travelling with a gorilla, but when seeing Mona, and considering the beasts that had helped them at the cost of their own lives, Sam didn't find it too strange anymore.

With the three groups meeting up, and Raten in the jungle making sure no one got close to the castle, all of them shared the information they had gathered.

There were three key points to take note of.

First, nearly all of the Masked they were facing were clones. If Richard could create clones it made sense that Jim could as well, but one question popped up in all their heads. Where exactly were Richard Eno's clones right now?

The information brought from Vorden was that there were also Dalki here, which they had predicted would come at some point. Additionally, he had brought the sad news of Wevil's death. Everyone went silent for a moment before they continued to talk again, but the worst piece of news by far was the news that Mona had brought them.

It was because of this, Sam had made the decision.

"We have to give up on the Demon tier beast." Sam concluded. "We will leave this island. I thought that the location of the teleporter was subpar, so I had Logan create another one just in case. If he hasn't finished it yet, I don't think he will need much longer. Most of us are weak and can't continue fighting, it's the only thing we can do."

"The teleporter is at the Temple."

"What about Quinn?" Fex asked. "Don't we need to tell him as well? What's he even doing at the moment?"

Just as Fex had asked that question, a loud roar from the Dragon was heard. Since they were close it felt like they could feel its power just from the roar it had made.

"We can inform Quinn he will come, but he has something important to do first." Vorden answered.

A while ago, Quinn had gotten his body back from Vincent, only to find himself facing the trio of Blades. As the three of them were together, Quinn could feel something, a couple of his connections, his links to those that he turned were in trouble. It still hadn't gotten to the point where it was life threatening but he knew they needed help.

He was about to go himself, but as he was, a voice spoke to him once again. The tablet not too far from where they were had lit up once more but the voice when it spoke sounded weaker than it ever had done before.

"Quinn! Quinn can you hear me? It's Ray!" The voice must have been shouting, but all Quinn could hear was a faint whisper. "I've been watching everything that has been going on, and I'm here to tell you that you can't win this fight! Not the way you are right now!"

"If you stay here, you and all your people will lose their lives for nothing. You have to leave this island! I thought you had a chance since you seem to possess a certain amount of strength, but I've just felt something far stronger than you out there!"

"There is a chance that once you leave this island that they will also destroy it. Even if they don't they may certainly take an interest in this tablet. If that is the case, if I get destroyed then... I can't fathom what will happen to this world and its abilities. Most likely, it will leave the human race with no chance at all."

Listening to what Ray had to say, Quinn believed it, mainly because he could tell from his connections how certain members of his were struggling.

"I've seen your shadow power, perhaps there is a way you can place the tablet in your shadow. Please, if at all possible, YOU HAVE TO PROTECT THE TABL-!!!"

The glow of the tablet went down once again, but Ray had said enough for Quinn to take him seriously.

'Take the tablet with us? That's easier said than done. I doubt the Dragon will just let me take it, even if I ask him nicely...'

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1292: Get the Tablet

"We have to help him!" Layla insisted after finding out what Quinn was currently doing. "We couldn't do anything against that Dragon last time, so Quinn will surely need our help!"

"I don't think Quinn is reckless enough to give up his life, Layla. Besides, do you really think you can help him?" Vorden asked, his tone harsher than he had intended. "Honestly, we all have gotten stronger and I know you've been training hard, but we're already hard pressed to deal with all of the Masked. Eventually, even Raten will tire out and they will storm this castle and the rest of the areas."

The others didn't say anything. They too wanted to help Quinn, but wondered what use they would be if they headed over. Those who knew him were aware that Vorden would never abandon his best friend, so the decision to stay out of his way couldn't have come lightly.

"Vorden is right." Sam agreed, breaking the silence. "Quinn has the highest chance of survival out of all of us. Given his Shadow ability, he'll be able to flee if left with no other choice. Our situation is different, though. We need to go through the second teleporter to get off this island and I suggest we do so now, before anything unforeseen happens."

Although it was obvious that Layla wasn't pleased by this outcome, she understood that time was of the essence. Before heading to the Temple, they all decided to stop by the castle to gather Wevil's body and Linda.

"Hey, did any of you see Peter?" Nate suddenly asked, before they set out.

They all looked at each other and realised that the last time they had seen him was when he was digging through Hilston's things. After that point, they had lost him.

Just where had he run off to during this whole mess? Most importantly, was he still safe and okay? Sam tried to call Peter on his communicator, but it looked like communication down on the island as well. The same thing when trying to contact Quinn.

"Maybe if we get to the temple, the jammers that Logan has set up will let our communication devices work again." Sam theorised, but he also knew that would mean more time without knowing what had happened to Peter.

"I'll go look for Peter." Vorden volunteered. "I'm the least injured out of all of us, I can move quite fast, and I can even try to find him from above ground. Get Borden first and then just head to the Temple. If you have to, just go through it!"

It was important that the group didn't leave the Dragon on its own. After all, capturing him was the enemy's overall objective. With Eno having been sent flying

and Brock having followed behind his master, Quinn was the only one there to look over it.

However, after listening to Ray's warning, he suddenly had a new task, making Quinn struggle with what to do.

'I know Ray said to get the tablet and I understand the importance of the tablet, but doesn't that mean, we have practically admitted defeat? They might be unable to take the Dragon immediately, but if we leave them to it, what if they succeed?' This was the reason why Quinn hadn't acted just yet.

However, he didn't want to do just nothing and had decided to send Vorden and the others to help out the Cursed faction. Although Raten seemed to believe that as a humanoid Demon tier beast he was strong enough to match the Dragon, Quinn was convinced he wasn't. He might not know how strong Raten was in his current form, but he had fought against the Dragon previously, so he knew just how strong it was.

'I know it's hard to admit defeat Quinn. We might not have seen the main perpetrator behind the attack, but you said it yourself. This fight is not worth sacrificing the lives of your friends over. At worst, just try to think of this as a backup plan that we are putting into action now.'

Vincent's words had put his grandson's head on a little straighter, making his decision easier. The least he could do was obtain the tablet. Still, there was no doubt that the Dragon would try to stop him.

'Since it's not a living thing I should be able to place it into my dimensional space, but it looks pretty rooted into the ground. I'll need to take it out somehow.' Quinn thought, wondering just how long that would take.

'How do I get the Dragon to not attack me? What if I used Shadow lock on the dragon and moved it with us? If I use Shadow overload could I be able to take the Dragon away as well?'

Quickly images of the Dragon breaking out of the Shadow lock and destroying everything on board the Cursed Ship appeared in Quinn's head. In the first place, he wasn't even sure Shadow lock would even work on a being so strong and large.

Looking at his other options, Quinn's eyes landed on the Roseus tree. It was thanks to this that the Cursed faction and everyone had even been able to last so long. It was also why Quinn was aware of just how many the enemy numbered.

'Maybe there's some way I can use the tree.'

When using the Roseus tree, after most of the beasts had been defeated, Quinn had attempted to Mark the Masked that were attacking them as well. He could sprout and control its roots after all. However, all his attempts had ended in failure because he wasn't even able to get the chance to Mark them.

The enemy attackers were on high alert, and it felt like it was almost impossible to grab hold of them. Even when Quinn had succeeded, for some reason marking them had required far longer than a beast. Whether it had something to do with their forms of intelligence or not, he didn't know.

Either way, during the process the other Masked had attacked the roots, and Quinn had been able to feel some of his energy leak out from the cut parts. It also didn't feel like it would come back, at least not in a short while, hence why Quinn had stopped that experiment.

'I'm starting to understand why the old Demon tier tree had spent years Marking people and beasts. It must have done so while people were asleep, or at the perfect moment while others weren't aware.'

Still, perhaps Quinn could use the multiple roots, and the larger ones that were close to the main Roseus tree to his advantage. After all, Blade Island might be a place that none of them would return to again, so this might very well his last opportunity to use the tree.

'I need something more, the Demon tier tree by itself won't be enough to slow it down.' Closing his eyes Quinn activated the amulet. His Dalki fighters had done well. Many of them were able to implement the martial arts skills that Quinn used, even with partial control.

It was because of this they were able to do a better job than the other two spiked Dalki. However the numbers were overwhelming and eventually just like the Cursed members who had to retreat it was the same for the Dalki.

'I can use their energy, but I know this won't be enough as well so there is only one thing I can do.' Quinn thought as he stood up and looked towards the tablet.

"This is guaranteed to cost me MC cells, but there's no other choice, I'm afraid."

[Shadow Overload enhancement type soul weapon activated.]

All of Quinn's shadows started to pour out of him and consumed him, giving him a shadow body. His shadows flicker with a slight purple glow, and stepping out, Quinn was ready to face the Dragon ahead.

Stepping onto the open field, almost immediately the Dragon turned Quinn's way, and rather than staring at him for a few seconds like last time, it had already opened its maw to produce its giant orange flames.

It looked like whatever effect Ray used to have on the Dragon was no longer in effect.

Quinn swung both arms forward, creating a wall of shadows to block the flames, or make the flames stay in place.

"That's twice that someone blocked your fire attack. I guess you're not that scary of a lizard after all!"

Now that Quinn knew his shadow could stop the Dragon from hurting him, it was time he gave it everything he got. The Demon tier amulet around his chest started to glow.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1293: Jim's Grudge

At first Quinn had believed that he would have to drain the strength of the Dalki, but realising that his Shadow overload skill was enough to hold the Dragon, he decided to spare them. The Vampire Lord was sure he might need them later and instead of him directly lifting the tablet from the ground, there was a better person, or in this case being, for the job.

'I only have a limited amount of time using Shadow overload, and I would like to use it for as little as possible otherwise my MC cells are going to take quite the hit.' Quinn thought, as he continued to block the flames coming from the Dragon's mouth.

With both of them seeing that the flames weren't effective, Quinn knew what was going to happen next. Just as Vincent had watched it do in the fight against Eno, the Dragon turned its body, ready to use its gigantic tail, but Quinn was preparing his own thing as well.

[Skill activated Shadow void]

Shadow had been spreading across the ground far and wide ever since Quinn had activated his soul weapon, now that he had activated the skill, a large dome-like shadow covered both of them. Seeing the incoming tail, Quinn quickly sank into his shadows and appeared above the Dragon falling towards its back.

The middle part of the tail hit nothing but air, yet the tip of it scratched the outside of the dome. To Quinn's surprise this left a hole in the dome, yet his shadows started to gather there, as if it was healing from a cut.

'Looks like it really wants to get out of this place, but I'm right where I want to be.' Quinn took a glance at the tablet and tree that had also been trapped inside the dome. His current plan required him to buy time for the tree to follow his new command.

He had to make sure the tree wouldn't be hit by any of the Dragon's attacks. It might have come from a Demon tier tree and Quinn knew that it had roots all over the island, yet he didn't want to gamble on how sturdy it was.

Fortunately, the Dragon seemed to be fully focused on him.

This was great for Quinn, since it meant the Demon tier beast had yet to notice the roots that had started to dig at the base of the tablet. As they sprouted from the ground around it, they used their tips like hands, trying to pull it from above, while pushing it from the ground underneath, yet neither method seemed to be working on first glance.

'I can tell you're strong and I'm currently still too weak to defeat you.' Quinn thought. 'Which is why, I'll have to borrow your power again, so I can protect you!'

His white gauntlet hand was placed onto the back of the Dragon and the active skill was activated once more. Power was quickly going into Quinn as the Dragon roared even louder in anger, doing his best to get rid of the pest on him.

It was at that moment that Quinn felt something else. He had felt the connection to those he had turned fluctuate every so often, however this time one had been cut. The life of one of his companions had been lost, and once again he had not been there to prevent it.

"ARGHHH!" Quinn screamed even harder, full of pain as the energy continued to spread into his body, while tears started falling down his face.

An unknown distance away from where Quinn and the Dragon were, Eno had left the cave in the waterfall and had spotted someone he didn't think he would run into all the way out here.

"You're looking quite well for an old timer, but you don't have to be so loud. My ears are good enough to hear you even if you were to just whisper my name." Jim spoke to him in a casual tone.

His choice of garments was that of a typical vampire, meaning he was mostly covered in black while also wearing a long trench coat. He looked to be in his thirties, yet his hair style was completely out of place for the current age, indicating his real age. Jim had grand sideburns that covered his sides, while his hair was overrun at the top with curls which were nevertheless neatly kept up for its shape.

Richard was slightly surprised that the Dalki by Jim's side were merely one spikes. He would have thought that one of the masterminds behind this whole fight would have had better guards than that, at least three or four spikes.

"Your appearance hasn't changed." Richard noted, as he casually jumped from the rock he was on and landed on the land just by the river. The two of them now were a good ten meters away from each other, yet neither one had opened hostilities.

Before Jim had been a Vampire knight working under his nephew Vincent, he had been the previous leader, which was why it was very strange for a vampire Jim's age to still have his young appearance. Realistically, he should have weakened by now.

"What have you done? ...have you really fallen that low? To use the lives of humans to extend your own?" Richard asked in disbelief.

Jim started to chuckle at his ancestor's reaction.

"And what if I have? Don't the vampires also use humans, even if they are mere clones for their blood supply. How have you not been able to face the simple reality that human lives are meant to be used by us? Aren't you wearing a set of Blood armour created from dead vampires? How are you any different from me in that regard?"

"We are different from the beginning." Richard insisted. "You only exist because of me! Jim, I did my best to try and sympathize with you, but I'm still unable to understand why you chose to go through with this madness! I understand that you've been wronged, that your accomplishments have always been diminished, but then shouldn't your anger be directed at the vampire settlement? Why are you helping the Dalki, no why are you trying to get rid of the humans?"

During their conversation, it sounded as if Richard was getting angry at points, only to quickly settle down soon after calming himself. Jim just smiled, yet this simple genuine gesture was all the more frightening. He seemed happy for the chance to talk with Richard as if he had been looking forward to it.

"Does it really look this way to you? Our side is the one who has united Humans, Vampires and even Dalki, all working together. Doesn't that sound like a perfect utopia to you? As for your question, don't worry, I'm going to teach the vampires their lesson soon enough."

"What do you think will happen when all the human's in existence are gone from this universe? Those vampires think that they are more important than humans, but don't realise that they are actually weaker."

"I don't just want to beat them, no I want to make them suffer. I will get rid of every drop of blood and I shall enjoy watching them starve until eventually they will realise that there is only one alternative left for them."

"The Dalki." Richard concluded. "So your reason is so petty. Is it because the vampires rejected your idea, rejected you and the Dalki, that you are forcing them to come crawling to you for help?! How childish is that?!"

Richard didn't think he had gotten all the answers from Jim about why he was doing what he was doing, but this conversation had made one thing clear. Jim's mind was made up and there was no way of changing that.

Since there was no way to get through to him by talking, Richard started to gather his hands together and the spire on the top of his head glowed.

"Come on, are you really going to attack me?" Jim asked, letting out a sigh. "As I recall, you still owe me a favour which I never got the chance to make use of. Don't you believe in fairness, equivalent exchange? Well, I would say now's the perfect time to call in that favour."

"It's rather simple, really. 'Don't get in my way'. Just let me pass and watch as I subdue the Demon tier beast. Otherwise..."

Jim placed his hand on the Dalki by his side. The back of the Dalki started to light up. A change was occurring as energy flowed through the creature. It was brief but for a second it looked like Richard could catch something that looked to be embedded in the palm of Jim's hand.

'A crystal of some sort?'

A few seconds later as the light faded, the Dalki's appearance had drastically changed. It had grown an entire foot larger, sprouted wings on its back, its scale-like features had gotten more compact, and darker, and worse of all the number of spikes on its back had changed.

In total there were six spikes present.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1294: Don't have to kill

Something that Quinn had to keep reminding himself as he went to face the Dragon, was that his goal in this fight wasn't to defeat it, just to buy time. It was a foreign feeling, when faced with a beast, but eventually it had gotten through to him.

It was why he had opted to land on the giant beast's back, allowing him to hold onto its scales as it struggled. As a Vampire Lord his grip strength was enough to withstand the Dragon's efforts of shaking him off, yet given the hardness of its scales it was also almost impossible for Quinn to do the beast any real damage, but he didn't need to.

All he needed to do was distract the beast while the tree did its job.

Using this opportunity to his advantage and remembering what he had done to the Dragon before, Quinn wickedly used the active skill in his gauntlet.

"I couldn't protect someone again!" Quinn screamed in anger as a power stronger than any he had felt before was entering his body. "Someone died to protect your ungrateful scaly ass, you overgrown lizard!!!!"

The Dragon, feeling the strange sensation it had felt once before, started to flap its giant wings heading upwards. Quinn, still not having retracted the Shadow Void, understood what it was trying to do. He could tell that the dome wouldn't hold out based on the strength it had shown before, but there was something else he could do.

With the Dragon lifting off, it had pushed through the dome destroying the upper shadow, revealing the blue sky above and the beast kept going up. Quinn was finding it easier to hold on as he had more strength than before, and he could see that inch by inch the tablet had nearly come loose.

Next, with one hand on the beast, Quinn started to form a giant shadow portal above. Right where the Dragon was to take flight, and as it rose, it had gone through it, only to find itself appearing right on the ground where it was once before.

Quinn had activated his Shadow sink, and with his Shadow overload he was able to produce the shadows wherever he wished. No matter how often the Dragon tried to get him off, Quinn would make them return back to the ground.

'It's working! I might not be strong enough to kill it, but at least I can make sure it doesn't go anywhere!' Quinn thought.

After what felt like an eternity, Quinn could finally see that the Roseus tree had completed its task. A thirds of the large tablet had been stuck in the ground which was why it had taken so long for the tree to get it out.

The energy drained from the Dragon was powerful but it seemed like the gauntlet had reached some sort of limit, no more energy was being passed onto Quinn. There was no use staying on the Dragon any longer.

Running up to the top of his head, Quinn gathered the Qi in his legs and used his strength to push off from the Dragon to the ground where the tablet was. Soon, he started to form a Shadow on his back and from there two large black wings were formed, giving him a safe soft landing.

[Dimensional space activate]

A shadow appeared underneath the tablet, and it started to sink into Quinn's dimensional space. Allowing him to take it with him.

'Thanks for the power boost.' Quinn gave him a grin, as he wiped away the tears. 'I hope you'll put up a good fight when they try to take you on.'

Running out of the open area, Quinn deactivated his Shadow overload skill. He was ready for the backlash of using the skill, checking just how many of his MC points would be taken away. At the same time Quinn made sure to see what the Dragon would do next.

As he neared the jungle, he saw the Dragon land directly on top of the Roseus tree, crushing it with its massive weight. Quinn immediately felt the energy escape from his Demon tier Amulet, and he was unable to control it in any way.

Quinn was thankful that the tree had helped him out so much, and hoped this had at least been a quick death without much pain. He could have never imagined that one little seed would aid him to this degree. He didn't even want to imagine how much trouble he and the Cursed faction would have gone through without the Roseus tree.

'With the tablet gone, will you remain in this place?' Quinn wondered. 'That's why you stayed on this island for so long, right? As long as you don't follow after me, you should enjoy your freedom for as long as you can.'

[You must now pay your debt for using Shadow overload]

Quinn knew this was coming. Each time he had used the Shadow overload skill, he had to pay the price for it afterward. The first time, Quinn had very little MC cells to use, so when using his soul weapon it had run out quickly fighting Cindy.

It was later that he learned the more MC cells he had, the longer the Shadow Overload skill could last, which was why it hadn't run out even though he had been battling against the Dragon for a while.

Quinn just knew that along with the increased time allowing him to use the soul weapon for, the cost had similarly increased. However, he had yet to figure out if the system calculated it based on the duration alone, or the quantity of shadows he used within that time.

[-100 MC cells]

[10/1000 MC]

Seeing this Quinn wasn't too shocked by the result. For one, although it had taken a large amount, Quinn still had a large number of MC cells left. What did surprise him, however, was how close he had been to having used up all his MC cells.

It also looked like he had somewhat gotten his answer. That it was a mixture of time used, as well as the amount of shadow Quinn used while using the skill.

If it had taken any longer his soul weapon would have deactivated. Right now, Quinn didn't even have the MC cells remaining to cast some of his Shadow skills. Thankfully, the Shadow link skill didn't require any to be used, and Quinn might not even need to use his Shadow powers in the first place, for he was filled with more energy than he could imagine from the Dragon.

'Although the Shadow overload skill is strong, the more I use it, the further I feel like I am getting away from Arthur.' Quinn thought.

While looking at his stats, Quinn kept an eye on what the Dragon was doing. It had walked around the place, even digging in places, apparently searching for the tablet which was now in his possession. Unable to find it, the Demon tier beast started to flap its wings.

'Yes, get away from this place! As far as possible, just make sure the Dalki don't catch you!' Quinn thought, but he knew that perhaps they would eventually track it down again, and possibly before them.

Thinking about this, Quinn wondered why Eno and Brock hadn't returned. They had been away far too long, they should have at least returned by now, and he also wondered how the Cursed faction were doing.

Quinn would have to make a choice between returning to the others, or search for Eno. It didn't take him long to decide that with the Dragon about to take off, his priority was how the others were doing.

The Dragon soon went up into the sky, and it looked like it was hovering around the island for a little longer as it was deciding what to do. Quinn wanted to keep an eye on it, but he soon heard the sound of footsteps.

Turning his head, he could hear them coming from all sorts of different directions, His eyesight was able to keep up with them all, and he could see. From each direction there were groups, groups and groups of Masked.

'What happened to my friends? Did those Masked manage to defeat them all?' Quinn worried, but other than the connection he felt go earlier, he couldn't feel anyone else in trouble at the moment.

A red aura strike came towards Quinn, and moving his hand ever so slightly touching the aura with his finger tips it smashed on impact. The one who attacked Quinn, in seconds Quinn had moved and now had his hand gripped around his throat.

"You guys will all pay for this!" Quinn declared, as a large shadow reached behind his back, and consumed the masked person he was holding. Seconds after the masked man started to scream widely.

[Shadow eater skill successful]

[10 MC cells gained]

The Dragon continued to hover over the island, roaring in anger, but it seemed to have suddenly realised that there was no longer any reason for it to stay, making it look towards the blue sky above.

However, before it could appreciate its newfound freedom, it felt something slam down on its back. The force was so strong that the Dragon screamed in pain, as it plummeted down, shaking the entire island.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Webnovel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1295: A gift from him

The group had made a decision, and with it, Vorden had gone off into the forest to search for Peter while the others headed towards the castle before they would make their way to the Temple on the island.

Before leaving, Vorden had headed to where Raten was, informing him to come back and stay closer to the castle. It would be his job to make sure that no Masked got too close to the area for now.

Inside the castle, the group had entered the room where Linda was present.

They all could see her lying there peacefully on her bed, free from wounds, not even aware that she had visitors. Since her clothes had been tattered during the fight, Borden had dressed her in another set... a French maid outfit.

Borden saw the strange eyes of the others looking at him, questioning his choice of attire.

"It was the only thing I could find in this place, I swear!" Borden tried to explain himself, getting all red faced. "She was out of it, and we had to leave her large Armour behind. We couldn't take it with us and until she wakes up, she can't use her Shadow equip to put on her regular armour and I couldn't just leave her half naked!!!!"

"Don't try to explain yourself, bro." Fex said, placing his hand on Borden's shoulder. "The more you try to explain yourself the guiltier you look. Besides, I think you made a good choice."

There was another block head in the room who also appreciated the outfit, but even he knew better than to use this moment to make a crude joke about Borden's taste.

Knowing that they needed to leave, and with no signs of Linda waking up, one of them would have to carry Linda along with them. Borden had quickly volunteered for the task, but for some reason the others didn't think it was a good idea for him to be carrying her, instead everyone agreed that Mona was a good choice. With her beast armour she had inhuman strength so it was no problem for her either.

If necessary, Fex could use his string ability as well, allowing Mona to use her hands and legs while fighting. After picking up Linda's body, the group moved into the room next door, to find Wevil's corpse lying on a bed. The sheets underneath it had been stained red from the blood on his clothes.

The feelings of the others in the room were filled with sadness, anger and even more. They all took a minute of silence to pay their respects to Wevil, before Fex eventually put the large wooden box that was on his back down.

"I won't let your body stay on this island, Wevil." Fex declared, carefully picking him up and gently putting him into the box which was fortunately quite well cushioned. After all, it had initially been designed to keep Agent 11 inside there even with Fex moving about widely.

"I'll make sure to protect you so that Linda gets to say her goodbye. I bet once we're back, Quinn will give you the best grave, allowing the rest of the Cursed faction to thank you for what you did for them." Fex spoke to the lifeless body.

"Can I help put the lid on?" Layla asked. Naturally, Fex agreed to her request. Before he knew it, everyone was grabbing the lid of the box and helped close it, before carefully placing it on his back.

"I know it's hard for all of you, but remember we have to keep moving." Mona managed to say. As one of the former Big Four she lost enough subordinates and friends, but she knew that as strong as the members of the Cursed faction were, it didn't change their young age. It looked like they had been blessed, to not have to experience such a thing often enough to grow used to it. Unfortunately, as an outsider, she felt like it was her job to keep the group moving, so that Wevil would be the only casualty.

After leaving the castle, the group was walking with Borden at the front. Not only because he was arguably the strongest among those present, but also because he knew the way to the Temple. As for Raten, as long as he didn't fight the Dragon he should be fine moving behind the others dealing with anyone that would follow as their rearguard.

"Th-that looks like it's the Dragon!" Layla pointed upwards.

The whole group turned as they could hear the Dragon's roar, and for the first time, it looked like it had left its place by the tablet.

'I hope this means Quinn is okay.' Layla silently prayed for his well being.

However, seconds later, a figure appeared just above where the Dragon was. Seeing it even from such a distance Mona instantly recognised it. After all, it was what had killed the Demon tier beast, her Kraken.

Seconds later and the small figure had knocked down the Demon tier beast. The force of impact when it collided with the ground was so great that the next second they could all feel the entire island shake violently. The rumbling of the ground was so great it felt like an earthquake that was going to sweep them off their feet.

"WE HAVE TO GET OFF THE ISLAND NOW!!!" Mona's hands were shaking, but she turned away from where the Dragon was, picking up her tempo, no longer caring whether the Cursed faction wanted to follow her or not, still carrying Linda along with her.

Meanwhile, the Cursed group had trouble believing their own eyes, that there could actually be something out there that could so easily deal with the large Demon tier beast.

"Don't worry, maybe Quinn can't do stuff like that but he's stronger than any of us." Nate said in an attempt to cheer everyone up. However, the truth was that he honestly doubted any human or vampire would be able to pull off a feat like that.

---

Out by the river, Eno was speechless after Jim had demonstrated he had the means to evolve a one spiked Dalki into a six spike in an instant.

'A six spike and so fast? Was my information wrong? I thought the highest spiked Dalki of the leaders was a five spike, yet my eyes aren't deceiving me, I can clearly count six spikes at this moment.' Richard thought.

It was at that moment, that the Dragon had been knocked out of the sky seconds later, making them all feel the aftermath.

"Just in case you thought they only looked the part, the one who took out that Dragon was another six spiked Dalki. Believe me, they're all the real thing." Jim said. "That Blood armour of yours is impressive, I give you that, but are you really confident that it will be enough to take on a six spike that just did that to a Demon tier beast?"

"It's true that the blood in my body is the same as in yours, hence why I'm giving you this chance. Let me turn in my favour now and the both of us can walk away from this freely. This is the last time I will ask, Richard."

"Which will it be, will you keep your word... or will you pretend to have forgotten why you are standing in front of me at this very moment?!"

Richard knew exactly what Jim was referring to.

"While I believe in the principle of equivalent exchange, what you're asking me to do means forsaking the entire human race! I alone might not be able to deal with your Dalki, but you yourself should be easy enough!" Eno shouted, as he lifted up both hands, and a red beam could be seen at the tip of both his fingers.

The next moment, two Blood bullets shot out. Jim's face made it clear that he hadn't actually expected his ancestor to refuse. He had been unable to react, however the now six spiked Dalki by his side had, placing his hand out, blocking the bullet that had been aimed at Jim's head, yet the other went right through shoulder, causing him to moan in pain.

"Damnit, why didn't you block them both, you numbskull!" Jim cursed. "Screw it, just get that ungrateful old geezer!"

The Dalki's hand that had blocked the Blood bullet, one of the vampires' strongest offensive Blood spells, was completely fine. The next second, the Dalki jumped from its position throwing its fist out towards Eno.

The red spire on the vampire's crown glowed, and just like when the Dragon had attacked with its flames, the Dalki only connected with an invisible pulse of red aura. It was similar to a wall while ripples of red aura were coming from where the Dalki had punched.

"That damned Blood armour. Eno, here I thought at least you could be reasoned with, but it seems like you're not the person I thought you were! I will take that armour for myself, and then take the king's armour as well!" Jim roared in anger.

It was at that moment, that another vampire leapt out from the jungle and swung its arm out towards Jim.

"Oh great, your lapdog has arrived!" Jim shouted recognising that the person was Brock. Opening a small portal by his side, Jim pulled out a shield from the portal that looked to have been made from diamonds.

The second Brock's arm touched the shield, it started to light up, and it felt like the power was being reflected right back towards him. His arm was breaking by the second, and the force seemed to be carrying on. Brock had no choice but to roll away from the ground, and now looking at his right arm, it was no longer where it was before. It had completely blown off.

"Hahha, you fool. Remember I am an Eno as well! Did you really think I would openly show all my cards? As you can see this was a little gift given to me, by your dear friend, Arthur. Vampires are so foolish, they have no idea just how powerful Demon tier equipment really is!"

"I want you to remember one thing, Richard, it was you who refused my offer!" Jim spat out, while placing his free hand on the other one spiked Dalki, whose body started to transform.

Brock and Richard were now faced with two six spiked Dalki as well as the tenth family former leader who had a Demon tier shield in his hands.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1296: A Shadow Raven

For a while now, Quinn had remained on the same spot, fighting against hundreds and hundreds of Masked. However, he had yet to feel himself running out of energy. Using the power he had obtained from the dragon, he had managed to defeat each enemy with a single hit.

It wasn't that the Masked had just stood there, waiting to take a beating, but their red aura powers had proven completely useless. If the Cursed faction had really wanted to, he could have taken them all out far quicker, however the reason why he hadn't done so was because he was being careful.

In fact, he was careful to limit his damage to a point where he could use the Shadow eater skill, since this never ending mass of enemies proved to be a boon in disguise. Each one allowed him to gain 10 MC cells, which was great for his shadow ability and he had long since earned back the amount he had lost during his fight with the Dragon.

'Just getting more MC cells isn't going to make me stronger, but it will allow me to use the shadow ability in more ways. I also won't have to worry so much about using the Shadow Overload. I can feel that there are still more ways for me to use the Shadow Overload skill, but because of the drawback I couldn't really afford to play around with it for too long.'

'If I continue getting rid of all these, I can learn how to fight better and this in turn will improve my strength and it won't just be a temporary boost like the Dragon's energy I have in my body right now!' Quinn thought, as he quickly grabbed the head of two Masked and slammed them to the ground. He used his Shadow eater skill on one, forming a strange blob like shadow consuming its body, and then did the same to the next one.

[1360 MC cells in total]

[Congratulations]

[Shadow eater skill is now at level 2]

'Huh, so even the Shadow eater skill managed to evolve!' Quinn was surprised by this revelation, then again, he had never gone against this many vampires before, so he had been able to confirm if it was a skill he could even evolve from repetitive use.

[The Shadow eater skill can now consume more shadow from each vampire it is used on.]

The Shadow eater skill's success chance has now increased.

The Shadow eater skill is now able to form different shapes based on the user's will.]

Reading through the changes, for a brief moment Quinn was happy. He had known that the Shadow eater skill's chance of success seemed to work based on how injured the vampires were that he used it against, yet there had still been cases when it had failed against a vampire who had been close to death.

Quinn's happiness was short lived though, as he looked around and the number of Masked that were near the open area still hadn't decreased.

'Are they trying to get past me, and head to where the Dragon landed from earlier?' Quinn wondered.

Once the island had shook, the vampires had suddenly stopped defeating Quinn and instead had attempted to run right past him. Rather than going after the Masked, Quinn decided to throw out his Shadow eater skill.

Thinking back, Quinn remembered the strange shadow that had appeared when he saw Arthur use his skill. He wondered if this was a shape Arthur chose. Due to how far away the person was who he wanted to use the skill on, in Quinn's mind a certain bird formed. Now, leaving from his hand, the shadow eater's skill looked slightly different from before, going out in the shade of a small black raven.

It also looked to be moving faster in this new form, and when it nearly reached the Masked, it opened its mouth wide, the shadow expanding far larger than the Masked person itself. A few seconds later and the Masked fell to the floor screaming in pain as it felt the suffering of being in the sun.

[12 MC cells consumed]

'That mask wasn't even injured and the shadow eater skill still worked, but it's still a little slower than hitting them myself.'

Quinn felt a mask coming directly towards him, and this time, instead of wounding it, he had acted on instinct, using his full strength to pound it away. He threw an overhead punch, and his first landed straight in the mask cracking it.

The mask broke off, and the vampire was no longer alive.

'Why, why even though I feel like I'm getting stronger, why do I not feel any better?' Quinn thought.

He had hoped that fighting would keep his mind off things,, but in his current condition the Masked proved to be too easy an opponent. This left Quinn free to think about other things, mostly the fact that he didn't even know which one of his

friends had died, and that once again he had failed to protect them. Not to mention, he felt responsible for bringing them all here...

'Quinn wait, I think I saw something when you broke off that man's mask just now. Could you take the mask off of another one?' Vincent asked.

Of course with the way Quinn was now, and even before it wasn't too much trouble, he easily grabbed the face of one of the Masked who was too weak to resist, and quickly ripped the mask off his face.

'Alright...one more please.' Vincent asked. His tone seemed strange but Quinn knew Vincent would ask him to do that without any reason, which was why he didn't mind doing this one and continued to remove it from the next one as well.

'This... confirms it. They all look like Jim, they must be his clones.' Vincent clones.

'Jim? As in your old Vampire knight Jim? As in your uncle Jim who we suspect to be behind this whole mess? I knew that Eno could create clones, but how is it possible for Jim create this many?' Quinn asked, now also checking the faces of those he had defeated.

'Our ability is a strong one Quinn, and honestly sometimes it is not just how great the mind can be as for the person with the ability, but also how far the person is willing to go. Look at your system. We have thought for a while now that it is able to do incredible things thanks to my ability, and even know it continues to grow. As for Jim, this is proof he has gone beyond.'

'Jim...why did he need to go to such lengths? Quinn, if it's at all possible, please allow me to talk to him.' Vincent requested.

---

Brock's severed arm had healed, blood was no longer falling down its side, however he now only had one good arm he could attack with, and seeing this, Jim was unable to hold in his laughter.

"You are finished." Jim declared, and the next second the other six spiked Dalki who was on his side, had rushed over to where Brock was. Seeing this with his one good hand, Brock opened up the palm, and a large red ball of aura could be seen gathering.

As the Dalki was running straight forward, Brock knew for sure that the attack would hit. Releasing the attack, Brock's arm lifted in the air, as the recoil was strong. What he had just successfully used was the attack known as the Blood cannon.

A large red beam of aura had come out of Brock's hand and hit Dalki directly in the chest. The energy continued to hit the Dalki, until its whole body was absorbed by the red light. Eventually, the red aura ended.

The Dalki could be seen standing there, having skidded across the ground a few feet back.

"For you to have managed to push a six spike Dalki all the way back here, the power of a former Royal Knight is indeed strong. Unfortunately for you, it still isn't enough to actually injure him!" Jim taunted.

Watching the whole thing from the side, was Richard, who was still using the power of the red aura blood armour to block the Dalki's attack. Since the first punch had failed, the Dalki tried again with another punch. No matter how often he repeated it, each time it would just hit the invisible wall of red aura, creating new ripples.

'These Dalki, are too much for Brock to handle, and that Shield... we need to know what else it can do before we go against it.'

Lifting up one hand, a portal appeared above where Eno was, and an object was seen dropping from the sky, now in his hand, he held a giant lance that was spinning as he held it. Even now as he did nothing it continued to give off a strange red glow.

"There are different ways for us to use our ability. For me, I used them to create the strongest item I could possible." Eno said, as he thrusted the lance forward, and the spire on his head was no longer glowing.

The lance went straight for the Dalki that saw its chance to attack him. The Dalki, with its new found power decided to try grab the lance, but as soon as it did, it felt its skin ripping from its hard scales on its hands.

Feeling its power, for the first time the Dalki stepped back, looked at the green blood on its hands and noticed that the person responsible hadn't moved forward.

"You are weaker than I thought." The Dalki growled, having gained more energy from its injury.

The look on Eno's face spoke volumes. With that attack, he had expected to kill the Dalki or at the very least heavily injure it, yet it had done little more than give it surface wounds. Although Eno was safe due to his blood armour, Brock was not, and it looked like there was nothing he could do.

The six spiked dalki that was facing Brock, charged in again. When it was a few meters away from him, it saw something flash in front of It, and lifted up its arms.

A clang was heard as the object hit the Dalki's arms, and to its surprise, now it's forearms had been cut, making it bleed.

"How? What could cause a six spiked Dalki to end up like that. Fair enough Eno's weapon but there should be no one else strong enough." Jim said.

It was then that they could see a pair of legs and a tail in front of Brock, with a headless man behind him.

"So this was where all the action was going on." Peter said, appearing by Brock's side.

## Chapter 1297: Staying back

After having had to fight off waves of Masked during the start of their attack, now it felt bizarre not encountering any. The lack of enemies didn't ease their minds, if anything it made them be on edge even more.

There were two possibilities the Cursed group had come up with as to why this was the case. One of them was that the Masked were no longer interested in them, most likely busy trying to subdue the Demon tier beast now that it was back on the ground. After all, that had always been their primary goal.

The second theory was that Raten was simply doing a far better job than any of them had expected, so well that not a single Masked had managed to get past him.

Whichever it was, it had allowed them to reach the Temple in a reasonable amount of time. There were no beasts nor any Masked outside, only a small person standing there to greet them.

"I expected that you would come eventually. It sounds like things have gotten rough out there." Logan said, leading the way inside. The group noticed the turrets he had set up, as he showed them where the teleporter was.

"There have been no signs of the enemy coming this way. Most likely because the Temple is too far away from where the Demon tier and the tablet were. Their group seems to be focusing only on their goal, which made my job easier."

"Why haven't you turned on the teleporter, Green?" Mona asked Logan. "That six spiked Dalki that took out my Kraken has managed to knock down the Dragon. After they're done, they'll most likely come after us and I doubt they'll be interested in capturing us. We shouldn't waste any more time and should be getting out of here!"

"It's on standby to avoid risking the enemy picking up anything to locate it. Besides, I can see that not everyone is present. First we should discuss what to do. I can't risk anyone panicking, going through, and destroying the teleporter on the other side, that would be disastrous for all of us still on the island." Logan explained.

"What do you mean?" Agent 11 questioned. "I thought we came here for all of us to just go through the teleporter? That other beast said he was getting one of you guys to bring him here, so what's the problem?"

It at least seemed like Mona and Agent 11 were on the same wavelength, but as for the rest of them... they looked at each other and it seemed like they all had already made up their mind.

Layla stood forward as if she was to speak for the others. "Quinn's Shadow ability might allow him to return to the Cursed faction at any point and time, and I

honestly couldn't care less about Eno and his servant, but I still worry about Vorden and Peter. There's a chance that they might not be able to meet with Quinn, this could be the only way for them back."

"I will be staying here, protecting this place until the two of them return. We've already lost one person in our group. I don't want to lose anymore."

The others just nodded along with what Layla had said, they were going to stay on the island and protect the teleporter until their friends would return, so they could escape together.

"So does that mean we all stay here?" Logan asked.

Agent 11 raised his hand, but as quick as he did, Fex gave him a nudge.

"You don't get a say in this, as my puppet you'll have to come everywhere I go."

"I can't stay, guys." Mona shook her head. "I understand that you all care for each other, and truly I envy you for your camaraderie, but I didn't come here because of a higher calling. I came to repay a favour and I feel like I have done more than enough."

"I have cheated death twice already, so I don't wish to push my luck any further. Once they capture that Dragon, and believe me they will, it wouldn't surprise me if they destroy this island outright. If you're lucky they might come looking for us before that though."

"They shouldn't know anything about this teleportation yet, so they'll assume we're on the island. Your people might be here, but I have people waiting for me too."

The others agreed that it was unfair for them to ask Mona to stay. However, she was a strong ally for the group. Her staying behind would increase their chances of survival, but nobody felt it fair to ask that much of her.

"Can you at least take them?" Sam asked. "Please, take them back to the Cursed ship. Inform Megan and she will know what to do."

Mona looked at the large box that had Wevil's body inside, and Linda who had been placed on a few cushions that had been found in the room.

"It will be my pleasure." Mona replied. "I will leave Snakey and the Gorilla to the both of you to help out as much as possible. They seem to have grown a liking to your group. If possible, bring them back."

When the Roseus tree had been destroyed the Marking had naturally disappeared from the Gorilla, but due to how helpful it had been, Mona had decided to tame the beast with her ability and now it would follow any command or order she gave it.

Keeping to her promise, she strapped the large crate on her back, while holding Linda in her arms. The teleporter had been turned on and was set for the Cursed ship. Just before Mona was to step in she turned around to the group.

"Good luck to you all... make sure to come back alive! I'll treat you to something nice after this is all over."

With the rest having agreed to stay, everyone had decided to split up, to cover certain areas of the Temple. They mostly stayed on top of the roofs where the turrets had been set up. Sam and Logan remained in the teleporter room discussing what they had seen on the island, and everything said so far.

"I see, so it looks like they will successfully take the Dragon after all." Logan said.  
"It must be hard on everybody. They fought so hard, and we even lost Wevil. It will feel like they just wasted their time since there was no result."

"There is one thing that we have learned about the enemy, though." Sam replied, trying to look for some silver lining in the whole event. "We know that there are six spike Dalki's capable of destroying Demon tier beasts, and that's most likely what they will be using to take care of the Dragon as well. On top of that all the vampire clones."

When Sam said this out loud, Logan didn't say anything either, because they both knew, although they now possessed this information, they had no clue how it was going to help them. If anything it just made them realise how hopeless the situation was for humanity.

"What do you thin-"

"Don't ask a question you don't want the answer to." Logan cut Sam off before he could ask.

"Let me point out something that will give everyone hope. There is still a chance of us winning this thing. Even if they successfully get the Dragon, there is still one thing we can do to win the war." Logan stressed.

As to what that was, Sam had an idea but how likely would that happen.

Layla and Nate were both at the south gate of the Temple. This was the main entrance with an open pathway in front of the Temple. All the other sides were mostly blocked by the heavy jungle.

Nate had decided to meditate, hoping to recover as much of his Qi as possible. Layla acted as the lookout and spotted ruffling of trees in the distance and quickly drew her bow, ready to attack. When she finally saw who was coming out of the forest she put her bow back down, as a man drenched in blood from head to toe was seen, and he had a smile on his face.

Both of them seeing this, there was a shiver that had been sent down their spine, they were just happy that this one is on their side.

"I would put that bow back up if I were you." Raten called out, as he turned around again, acting like a gatekeeper. "They're coming for this place."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1298: The six spikes' strength

Truth be told, Brock had no idea if he was going to survive the incoming attack from the six spiked Dalki. After it had survived his Blood attack he knew its hard skin was resilient, but he still had no idea about its own attack power.

Yet, the last person he would have ever suspected to arrive and stop the Dalki's advance, was the Wight.

"Damn, that's the first Dalki I've seen that hasn't been cut in half from Legs' attack." Peter noted as he stood there with two tonfa's out by his side. He was trying to observe the situation, and could see one six spiked fighting the old scientist, and another directly in front of him with another man behind.

"That tail... is that Slicer's body! What have you done to it?!" Jim seemed shocked, yet he seemed less fazed about having to fight her remains and more amazed by the sheer ingenuity at what he was seeing.

"Here I was wondering just how strong my little pets actually are. Thanks to you, I'll finally be able to test out their power compared to a genuine five spiked Dalki... or at least close enough to one!" Jim commented, having conjured a small little notebook and a pencil from a portal, while the six spike was on the move again.

Headless Hilstion was the first one to make a move. The Lesser Wight looked different compared to before as his body was now equipped with a set of beast armour. It dug its fingers into the ground, and lifted part of it, chucking it forward.

The Dalki didn't even attempt to evade the piece of land that was coming its way and just ran through it, but right after crashing through the debris, Legs was there with its giant tail, thrusting it forward aiming right for the six spiked Dalki's head.

It moved so fast that the Dalki was unable to do anything about the tip of the tail piercing its left eye. However, before Legs could dig in any deeper the Dalki had grabbed onto its extremity.

It was ready to make its opponent pay for damaging its eye, but there were already three people surrounding it to back Legs up. Headless Hilstion, Peter, and Brock were all underneath the creature and with all their strength they all went to attack the same area. The elbow of the Dalki.

Although they were unable to do anything on their own, together they could attempt to do something. Their great strength put massive amounts of pressure on the joint, causing the elbow to bend inward slightly, yet it wasn't enough for the Dalki to let go.

That moment Legs used the Dalki's strong grip to her own advantage, pulling herself in with the strong muscles of her tail and spinning her body towards the Dalki delivering a kick to the same joint... leading to a loud crack.

Pain shot through the Dalki's body enough to let go of the tail as it screamed out in pain. The others took that as their chance to retreat back to their original position, thinking about their next move. They were also prepared for the Dalki to move at any second once again.

'For a Wight to possess this level of intelligence... Usually their kind would just attack their target in a frontal and often suicidal manner, completely relying on their regeneration, but this boy waited long enough to see where I would attack first and then decided to attack the same place.' Brock noticed. 'It looks like he realises that I have a better head on my shoulders, and that Tail is special.'

'Perhaps, there is something different about the six spikes that are created using Jim's power, and the five spikes that the Cursed faction had managed to defeat on their own. Slicer's tail seems to be a trait that not all of the Dalki are able to obtain, not even the six spikes have something like it. It also can move faster than the six spikes and is capable of cutting through their hard scales.'

'Unfortunately, even with the power of all of us, we were unable to do much.'

Sure, the four of them together had managed to cause a few scratches on the Dalki's forearm, even breaking its elbow, but all of it was futile if they couldn't kill it. After a few seconds of both sides staring at each other, the Dalki was able to heal the broken elbow, and with it having been hurt more, most likely it was now even stronger than before.

'The worst thing is, we still haven't been able to witness its true strength, and I really don't want to after seeing one of them hit the Dragon to the ground like that.'

It was all these thoughts that had caused Brock to come to a decision. The way Peter currently was, he would be a huge asset to the future. With his ability, and with his current Lesser Wights he was someone he had to be protected at all costs.

"Thank you for saving me, but I'm afraid this doesn't look like a fight we're going to win." Brock sighed. "You are still valuable to the Cursed faction and Quinn, which is why I can't let you stay here. Get out of here while you still can and take the other two with you. Find Quinn and find some way to get you and all of the Cursed faction off this island!"

The Wight heard what Brock had said, and honestly he wasn't too keen to sacrifice his life for the two of them, but were they really in that tough of a situation? It was hard for Peter to believe. With him and his Lesser Wights they should be able to hold on, at least long enough for Quinn to arrive. With him there surely they should somehow be able to do something?

"The lapdog actually has a point. Until now I have mostly ignored the Cursed faction, because I didn't believe for your little group of friends to make much of a difference. The loss of Slicer was already a very unexpected surprise and seeing one of you being able to revive her, I can't just let you leave!" Jim held up the shield and strangely the six spiked Dalki that had been facing towards them this whole time had turned around and pulled back its arm... aiming at Jim!

The next second, they saw the Dalki seemingly use its full power to throw out a devastating punch and Jim made sure to use both his hands to hold the shield up. The punch landed but nothing happened. The shield hadn't lit up like it did when Brock had punched it, nor had Jim been sent flying through the air.

It looked similar to what would have happened if a child was to punch a wall.

"With this, your fate is sealed." Jim stated with a smile, holding up the shield and it soon started to glow just as before.

"PETER MOVE! GET OUT OF HERE NOW!" Brock shouted as he grabbed him by the scruff of his shirt and chucked him back into the jungle. The two Lesser Wights followed behind to catch their master and by the time Brock turned around, he was faced with the full brunt of an explosive energy.

The energy from the shield was already leaving a great blue light. As it left the shield and touched the stones on the floor they flew behind Brock like bullets shot from a pistol, piercing through many trees in the jungle.

The energy continued to go forward and Brock was sure that he wouldn't survive this.

'That shield, it can either store the energy from attacks inside it and use it against, or it's something much worse. When I attacked it myself, I felt that the energy coming off from the shield was at least two times stronger than my initial attack. If that's right, then right now, that shield is emptying a strike twice as strong as a six spiked Dalki.'

Somewhat accepting what his fate was to be, Brock was ready to close his eyes. Peter had turned around for a second, and seeing the impact the strange blue light had made so far, he continued to run forward with Legs and Hilston behind him.

Before Brock had fully closed his eyes, he saw another figure in front of him.

"As you said Brock, me and you will figure out some way to deal with this. It was a good decision you made." Richard said as the red ripples activated from his armour blocking the strange energy of the attack.

However, the attack seemed to be larger than the area that the red ripples could cover. Larger than the breath of the Demon tier dragon beast, it went around the red

ripples. As it touched the trees they were uprooted from the ground, and flung through the air.

Giant rocks had been turned to rubble, and. Small little hill that stood not too far from where they were had been blasted with parts of the rock falling into the sea.

Eventually, the attack had ended, and Jim had moved his shield. His eyebrows were furrowed and his forehead full of wrinkles in anger seeing that Richard had managed to get in his way once again, but behind him, the whole jungle had been cleared. The once lush vegetation was nothing but a soil of wasteland now, while part of the hill looked to be missing as well.

"Why do you all struggle so much? How can you not understand that you have no chance against me? This much was all from a single punch of one Dalki?" Jim questioned one, shaking his head.

Richard, serving the attack with Brock behind him, looked into the direction he just was.

"I understand very well. Your six spiked Dalki are indeed strong, but for one there is nothing that can get through this armour, and as for the second point. When using our ability there is always an exchange and I seem to have figured out just what price you have made them pay."

Over to the side where Richard was fighting not too long ago, the six spiked Dalki laid on the floor dead. However, strangely, other than its cut hands, it looked to have no visible wounds on its body, but it was clearly no longer moving.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1299: An old enemy

Finally, after what seemed like endless fighting to Quinn, he could tell that the Masked were starting to settle down. More so, he also noticed that none of the other Cursed faction members seemed to be in trouble. For now at least, which was why Quinn was able to continue thinning their numbers while strengthening himself.

He checked his status which now displayed.

[2643 MC cells]

'Fighting all of these Masked hasn't been too bad for me. Not only was I able to increase my maximum MC cells, but also recover some of my MC points so I can use my shadows to fight again. After gaining some of my MC points back, using the dome to speed up my recovery and fight the rest of them was a good idea.'

Quinn thought to himself.

After learning that those Masked were merely clones of Jim, Quinn felt a lot more at ease killing them, and during his little massacre he had also discovered a few other things about the Masked.

For one, none of the Masked seemed to have a blood crystal inside of them, despite them clearly being vampires. Quinn had asked Vincent about this, but unfortunately the other had never been able to successfully clone one, so he lacked the necessary knowledge to be able to answer him.

Nevertheless, that didn't stop the Masked from using their Blood powers, so the best explanation Vincent had on that matter was that it might have been one of the drawbacks of the clones, potentially even the very reason why clones didn't really enjoy a long life expectancy.

Regardless of this, Quinn was happy to use the clones to increase his MC cells, allowing him to block stronger attacks with his shadow, gain more shadows to fight with and lastly use the Shadow Overload skill for a longer period of time.

It was then, when the Masked that had surrounded Quinn were down to the last thirty, that they had stopped engaging him, rather they remained on their place. This approach made it seem as if they were buying time for something.

It was at that moment, once again Quinn could feel the ground slightly vibrating. His ears were the first to catch the loud noise and the next second he could see a large beam of blue light off in the distance.

When the Dragon had been attacked it had come from behind Quinn, yet this new attack had come from his front, which was why the Cursed faction leader was heading there.

'Damn it, it looks like I might have wasted too much time on you guys!' Quinn thought, no longer caring about using the Shadow eater to improve his MC cells marginally and instead went to finish them all off quickly instead.

And then finally there was only one. This one felt different to the rest of the Masked, as he was shaking and Quinn had left this one on its own on purpose. Quinn took a step forward, and immediately hit both of the hands that had been raised in order to defend the masked man.

"I knew from the beginning of the fight that you were different. I'm surprised you didn't run away until this point." Quinn said as he lifted his hand pulling the mask off from the person's face and threw it on the floor, quickly stomping on it breaking it to pieces.

The person behind the mask had tears already running down their face, and for once it wasn't Jim's face that greeted him like all of those others he had unmasked.

"Please don't kill me, we were forced to come here, We were told to fight! Otherwise if we didn't we would be killed!" It looked like a fairly young man, older than Quinn himself in his late twenties.

Seeing this, there was something bothering him, why would the humans be working with Jim in the first place.

"Tell me who you are. What do you know about the person you are working for and why are you here?" Quinn asked, since the person already seemed to be willing to speak, Quinn didn't feel the need to use the Influence skill at all. Especially since he was pressed for time.

Often, the influence skill would be more direct with extracting information from one, causing Quinn to ask multiple questions.

"T-truedream! Y-you must have heard of our family name before, right?" The man stuttered slightly in fear. "No I'm sure you have, we, the humans, all of us here are those that used to belong to the Truedream family! "

Hearing this, Quinn was so surprised that he almost dropped the person to the ground, but another voice soon snapped him out of it.

"What did you say?" Vorden asked from behind. "I thought the Blades were the ones that had gotten rid of the Truedream family? Didn't they retaliate after attacking?"

Quinn still hadn't yet recovered from the shock of the news, as he saw Vorden here but at the same time he too was interested in what the person had to say.

"It's true, we were attacked by the Blade family. However, a few of us had managed to escape back to Dreamland city, but what surprised Trudream, and the

rest of us, was that while we were away another group had attacked us as well, they captured Jack and the rest of us."

Quinn had a feeling that Truedream was still alive, but for him to also be working for the other side was not what he had expected, just what Jim was planning to do with him.

It was then while in the middle of these thoughts, Quinn had also ran into Peter, and his two Lesser Wights, from the part of the jungle that was still left.

"Whoa, I mean I thought I had killed a lot, but Quinn what did you do?" Peter asked as he went through a field full of dead bodies.

Quinn didn't really know what to do with the person from Truedream but thought that they could perhaps get more answers from him about Jim, and maybe more details about where they were or what they were planning.

In the meantime, the rest had told Quinn what they needed, Vorden had informed him of what the rest of the Cursed faction were doing, and Peter had updated what was happening with Eno and Richard.

"A six spiked Dalki?" Quinn questioned, having trouble believing it. He clenched his fist, trying to think about what he could do against one, if he had already been powerless in front of Slicer without the help of the Blades. How would he fare against the six spike?

"Quinn, I think it's obvious that we won't be able to fight them on our own. With that kind of power they might really succeed in taking the Dragon. There's no point in us staying here, so let's head back and regroup at the Cursed faction ship. Maybe we can figure out something else. Hunt more Demon tier beasts, get better equipment and fight them later." Vorden suggested.

Honestly, Vorden when coming here didn't think he needed to do much convincing to the two of them, he thought it was clear that this whole mission had been one giant failure, but there was a certain look in Quinn's eye that said he wasn't planning to go back.

'Quinn, I don't like asking you for so many favours, but I think there might be something I can do. Take me to Jim, let me speak to him.' Vincent requested.

After thinking about it for a while, and with the little push from Vincent, Quinn had made his decision.

"I think there is still something I can do... no, that I have to do. Don't worry about me, with the Shadow ability, I can travel to one of you even without the teleporter. Take Peter and this guy with you, I believe he might have some more information for us."

The man looked like he was about to complain, but then staring at the dead bodies on the field, he quickly shut his mouth, realising that he was still lucky to be alive. Who cared who he used to work for, he just wanted to live.

"Don't worry, I'm not going to risk my life for Eno. You all know how much I dislike him, but if I can bring him back with us.... I still think he might be able to help us with Arthur as well. And...They have dealt a big blow to us, while we still haven't dealt a big blow to them. I can't just leave them like that."

The two of them understood, and it looked like they also wanted to stay with Quinn, that was until Quinn could feel a connection inside him once again.

"The others, they're under attack!" Quinn called out. "The rest of the Masked must be attacking the guys at the temple. Please hurry up, they will need your help! Head back to the Cursed ship, it's an order!"

The two of them looked at Quinn for a few seconds, before they started to head off in the other direction.

"Vorden!" Quinn shouted out, just before he fully left. "Who was it?"

From just this much, Vorden knew what Quinn wanted to know.

"...It was Wevil."

"I will make them pay for taking his life!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1300: Blood Armour Weakness

When Brock looked over at the six spiked Dalki's corpse on the ground, he believed that Richard had managed to find a way to defeat it, overpowering it by finding some sort of weakness.

The truth was, Richard had done no such thing.

In the middle of the fight, the Dalki had fallen on its own. There had been next to no interference on Richard's end. After his attack had managed to slightly damage its hands, it had started to become more and more aggressive, seemingly having become berserk.

Despite the futility of its actions, it had continued to pound at Eno's strange invisible wall, not holding back its strength. Each attack only ended up creating red ripples of aura. Richard had only been able to pray that given the amount of energy it was exerting that it would tire itself out eventually. Knowing that his lance could at least slightly damage the Dalki he had been waiting for the right moment, yet without any warning, the Dalki had stopped attacking in its tracks, only to fall to the ground.

There was no movement, and with his powerful hearing Richard had been able to tell that its heart had given out. All of this had happened moments before Jim had readied his attack with the shield, giving Richard just enough time to block the attack on Brock's behalf.

"This is what happens, Jim! This is what happens when you force others to go past their limitations! Speeding up the process of their evolution has shortened its life to only a few minutes!" Richard claimed.

Having the same ability, he had an inkling that this had to be the cost of using their ability, not the Dalki. As for what was exactly embedded in Jim's hand to allow him to force those transformations in the first place, that was a different story.

"Too bad, looks like I picked a bad seed. If only he could have lasted a bit longer against you. Oh well, his corpse should provide me with more information after an autopsy." Jim noted, shrugging his shoulders as if he didn't care.

Judging from Jim's words, Richard was figuring out a bit more. It seemed like all the Dalki had a different time limit of how long they would survive after this forced evolution. Perhaps it had to do with a Dalki's innate potential or maybe with their willpower.

If it was meant to be strong, then the exchange, or use of Jim's power might not put too much of a burden on it, while weaker Dalki that would never have amounted to much, would die fairly quickly after he used their ability on them.

Richard also had another theory, that their lifespan might be connected to how quickly they exerted their energy. After all, the Dalki that was still alive, had only performed a couple of attacks, while the one he had faced had been fighting non stop.

"Could it be, you believe that this fact has changed the flow of this fight or something?" Jim asked. "Come on, Richard, you have seen how easy it is to turn one. It should at least give you an idea about what I am capable of."

"Our power is a blessing and I never knew why you limited yourself so much. I used to be proud that you were the King at one point, but if you had only passed down and taught your descendants the proper uses of our ability and what it could do, then what title would have belonged solely to our family!"

"Now you are just being foolish!" Richard snapped back. "Although our power is strong, the sort of power we use, the stronger deals we make, the more that has to be sacrificed. For you to be speaking like this, I don't even want to imagine the crazy things you must have already done."

With the shield covering Jim's front, and the surviving six spike acting as a guard, Richard and Brock didn't dare to make their move. Jim knew this and he enjoyed every single moment of it. Lifting his hand up, a portal had opened up thirty meters above them.

Coming out from it, were two large dropships that would hold around twenty or so masked inside them. The portal soon closed once again, and one of the dropships was seen going in another direction, while the other was heading towards them.

The other dropship appeared to be heading in the direction of the Dragon. At the moment, there were a few loud crashes and explosions coming from that direction, indicating that there was a fight going on, but that had eventually ended.

"I know why you are still confident. You think you know their weakness, and since you have the Blood armour you must be thinking to yourself that all you need to do is to outlast the Dalki, right?"

"Too bad, that I know the weakness of your armour as well. You're limited to only being able to block the attacks you're facing from the front. Playtime is over, let's see you deal with more than just one."

The dropship continued to hover over their heads, and had stopped just behind where Jim was. Seeing this, Brock had decided to throw a Blood swipe towards the ship. He didn't know what it was but it couldn't be anything good. The former Royal Knight couldn't allow Jim to go through with his plan and he knew that Richard wasn't moving because he was afraid the Dalki would attack.

However, the red Blood swipe never reached the ship, for the Dalki leapt in the air, blocking the attack with its body. Neither it nor the ship suffered any damage from

it. The next seconds the doors were seen opening, and instead of Masked, three more single spiked Dalki jumped out and landed by Jim's side.

"You should have taken my offer when you had the chance Richard, it was a fair deal." Jim said, shaking his head as he placed his hands on one of the Dalki, his hand lighting up and the transformation process started once again.

Now there was another six spike.

'Two of them should be enough, I'll make this one last a bit longer.' Jim thought, placing his hand on another one. When the transformation was done, it had eventually turned into a five spiked Dalki.

'It looks like Jim has more control over his powers than I thought.' Richard thought. 'This could be worse than I imagined. Perhaps it might be even possible for him to do this on the higher spiked Dalki. I don't even know if six spikes is their limit, or if he's able to increase the strength of those that are already strong. If so... I'm afraid I have no answer. But there has to be a reason why Jim hasn't done it so far! Are their leaders cautious of him?'

"As for the last one, it's always nice to have a backup. Dalki aren't exactly in high supply these days." Jim made a crude joke, which only he found amusing.

There was one thing that Richard was finding strange in all of this, why were they so willing to listen to Jim. He might be their creator, but they didn't strike him as the loyal type. They had their own will and they should be smart enough to have known that this power boost was a one-way street to their demise.

'Has he found some way to control them?'

Unfortunately, thinking alone did nothing to get Richard out of their miserable situation. Facing one six spiked alone had been tough, facing two would have been extremely difficult and although probably weaker, the five spiked Dalki might actually be the hardest to deal with.

"Brock, I hate it when I am right. It looks like if we want to defend the island, we really do need the help of all the groups. It's a shame, but it looks like they even declined my invitation. Perhaps if they were here, then things would have ended differently." Richard let out a sigh.

"What a strange bunch of last words for an old man." Jim raised his hand as he was ready to order the Dalki to attack, but at that moment, coming in between the two groups, a shadow could be seen in the middle.

A figure started to rise from the centre.

"Quinn! What are you doing here, you stupid fool? If you're here, who is protecting the Dragon?! Do you really want to play the hero that bad-" Richard complained,

seeing who it was. However, having turned around and seeing the look on the Cursed faction leader's face, he quietened down.

"Haha, this is great!" Jim laughed. "The leader of the Cursed faction himself has decided to grace us with his presence. You have been an unexpected pain in my plans for too long. Now I'll be able to get rid of two nuisances at once, it's time for you to die, Quinn!"

Quinn's eyes looked at Jim with sadness and pity. He lifted his hand, and held it out before speaking up.

"Jim... for you to have turned out this way, I can't help but blame myself. The one before you right now is not Quinn, but your nephew. I am Vincent Eno, former leader of the tenth family, who you have once sworn loyalty to!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1301: The Trigger

The Cursed group that were at the Temple were expecting to face an enemy at some point. They believed that the enemy would come searching after those that had caused them so much trouble, however, at least for now, they could still hear someone, or something, battling with the Dragon.

Most likely the six spike they had seen that had hit the Dragon out of the air. This was why they hadn't expected that each of them would have to be put into action so soon.

Raten was seen coming towards the south gate, he wasn't out of breath or worried but he seemed more annoyed than anything.

"There's too many of them! At first it was fun since they're weak little craps, but their sheer number is proving to be a pain in the arse!" Raten complained loudly as he stood in front of the entrance ready for a fight.

As instructed, Layla readied her bow and Nate jumped down so he could help fight Raten on the ground.

"Hey, so you do realise that since they were all following you that you're technically the one who has led them to this place, right?" Nate glanced at the humanoid beast. In his beast-like form, Raten had seemed a lot more menacing to the vampire, but now that he had taken on a more human-like appearance, he found it easier to talk to him.

Still, that apparently didn't stop Raten from giving Nate a glance that sent shivers down the other's spine. "How was I meant to know that you guys were still here? What would I have done, if you all had gone in and some of them had managed to discover the teleporter and destroyed it? I was told just to keep the others off your back until you got here. The way I see it, I did my job and now I'm doing even more than usual!"

As the two were arguing, the turret that Logan had placed on top of the Temple roof suddenly moved and fired an energy blast into the jungle. A moan was heard from the forest as it successfully hit someone.

'That turret is impressive, it caught the person, even before I would have been able to.' Layla thought.

Now knowing that the Cursed faction were here, the Masked started to come out in groups. Immediately Layla started to fire her arrows and Raten charged forward with his blades swirling around. He had also left a little surprise for anyone who tried to get past him.

A trail of mud by the entrance. Those that tried to ignore the two frontliners and stepped on the mud remained stuck in place, making them easy pickings for both the turret and Layla.

Seeing the enemy, Layla immediately decided to communicate with the rest that they were under attack. The anti jammer devices were doing their jobs in that small area, so she had no problem conveying that to the rest of the Cursed group already present.

However, it seemed like there was no need for Layla's warning, as the turrets on all sides of the walls had already set off blasting the intruders that were coming their way. The others had also gone into action, apart from two individuals, who remained in the room where the teleporter was currently placed.

"Sam, we have to be careful." Logan warned. "I have hidden those anti jammers in multiple places, but I didn't realise how many people would come to attack us. If we remain here for too long, it's possible that they could find and destroy them. I don't have the means to make another one, which means in the worst case scenario we might end up stuck here on this island."

"I set up five in total and I can tell you when one of them has been destroyed, but my guess is after they discover the first one, they will quickly realise there are more. You will have to make a decision at that point."

It was tough to make, but this was the risk the team was taking by staying behind, Sam just hadn't realised it until faced with the actual situation. His instinctive reaction would have been to call all the Cursed members back now and go through the teleporter, but unfortunately they were still waiting for the Cursed faction leader and right and left hand men, Peter and Vorden..

"I will give the order when the time comes, for now, let's just focus on defending this place and pray they won't find them anytime soon!" Sam suggested as the two of them quickly left the room.

Fex was with Agent 11, who was still being used as a puppet, but at times the two of them also decided to split up. Even then, Agent 11 made sure to not slow down with his attacks. Although he still didn't like having to fight for his captor, he at least understood that the Cursed faction would at least guarantee his life, so he fought just as desperately as the others were.

On the other side, Dennis was holding off strong, and was fighting alongside the beast gorilla that Mona had left with snakey on his neck firing off acid, it seemed like the two of them were faring quite well covering each other's backs. They mostly fought with their fists but they were a powerhouse to be reckoned with.

Lastly, there was Borden who was covering their back side. It was the are that seemed to have the least amount of people, but Borden also still had syringes left to heal himself with.

Layla, rather than just staying at one side of the Temple, made use of their communication channel and would reinforce any side that needed the extra firepower. Since Raten and Nate seemed to be plenty strong on their own, they didn't mind her course of action.

'This is going well, but I can tell that just like last time, eventually the group will tire out. We can hold them off at the beginning but their sheer numbers will overwhelm us. Vorden, Peter, where are you two!' Layla thought.

That was when Layla noticed something else as well. Up till this point, she could hear and feel fighting going off in the distance. It was at the location where the Dragon had fallen, but now it had stopped. She was worried that now the fighting over there had stopped, it would perhaps mean that more forces were now coming towards where they were.

Distracting for only a moment, she soon heard a loud crash and the very building she was on shook. Looking towards the centre, she could see that the Temple walls had been destroyed and there was a certain person who was now lying on the floor.

"Nate!" Layla jumped down and while in the air she started to transform into her third form. Once her bottom half became a snake the first thing she did was use the green fireball to start healing Nate as quickly as possible.

"What happened to you, how did you get hurt this badly?" She asked, seeing that the new armour he wore on his chest had been cracked, she could also sense strong Qi from his body still active, but he was still badly hurt with blood coming out of his mouth.

Nate then pointed towards where he had come from, with the fire doing its job Nate had healed a little allowing him to breathe easier and speak, uttering the words.

"Five spikes."

Turning around, she could see that Raten was now face to face with a five spiked Dalki and because of that, all of the Masked were starting to bypass him and storm the inside.

"They're in the building!" Layla relayed. The first one to appear was surprisingly Logan. He was wearing a suit that Layla hadn't seen before, one that had four spider legs coming from his back. Logan himself was armed with a blaster in each of his hands, yet his extra pairs of hands on his back also had blasters with which he started to fire energy blasts towards the intruders.

At the same time, Logan ordered the turrets on the roof to no longer concentrate on the Masked on the outside, but the ones on the inside.

"Leave all the Masked on the inside to me. I haven't been able to pick my own weight while fighting. The others on the outside are doing a good job, but it looks like that stubborn one might need some of your help." Logan said.

Layla couldn't believe what Logan was saying, how could Raten, a Demon tier beast need her help? If she was to go against a five spike surely she would just get in his way.

"You won't." Nate said, with the flames still on his body. "Layla, we practised remember, we practiced so much. You can do it. just think of the trigger."

'Trigger.' Hearing this word, images started to appear in Layla's mind, images of her mother, images of Pure and the words resounding in her head of what she had done to her, but this still wasn't enough negative emotions for her to transform. She had somewhat come to terms with what her mother had done.

This wasn't the real trigger, the trigger was...

'Cia... I couldn't protect you... you died right in front of me, saving my life! I was always just thinking about myself, you came with me to Pure, and still I was using you. If only... if only I could have saved you.'

The negative emotions had reached their maximum, and consuming them all in, Layla's body started to transform. Her form started to shrink down to the size she once was, the horns on her head grew larger, while her fangs stayed strong with her eyes glowing red.

She had successfully transformed into a true Hannya. Grabbing her sword, she ran forward and struck the five spike Dalki's hand with strength pushing it back.

Raten, seeing this, also went to strike with his two blades thrusting forward.

"You again? You're on my side this time, right?!" Raten questioned her.

"Of course!" Layla answered. "Let's take down a five spike!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1302: Broken Jim

When Jim heard that name his whole body froze. The battle that was just about to start between the Dalki and Richard had also suddenly halted all because of one name that had been mentioned.

"Vincent?" Jim uttered, rubbing his eyes and taking another look at the person in front of him. Once he realised that the image in his head and the name that was mentioned didn't match up at all he started to chuckle.

"Hahaha. Should I say I feel honored that you investigated me to this point, Richard? To use my dead nephew's name against me, was that really your big plan? But then shouldn't you at least have made him look similar to him? Do you honestly think after all these years I never found out what happened to him? He's dead, Richard! He died here on this very planet!"

There was a lot of aggression in Jim's voice. While he had still taken the fight against Richard nonchalantly up to this point, he now seemed furious that his ancestor had dared to employ such a god awful ploy against him.

"Although this is indeed not my body I can assure you that I am the very person I claim to be. Maybe this will convince you that I am the one who lifted you from the ground. The very day you were sentenced for trial, I came to see you. At the time, when the guard turned around you grabbed me by the shoulders whispering 'I can't go like this. Please, Vincent, I still have a lot left to show the world. You have to save me. I swear that I was set up by them!'"

Hearing this, Jim's eyes lit up. For the first time he placed his shield down to the side, taking the one in front of him seriously.

'I had learned of what happened between Jim and Vincent through Dwight. He told me the crimes Jim committed and how he was loyal to Vincent during his time as leader.' Quinn thought. 'But I didn't realise that the connection between the two of them was this close.'

The Cursed faction leader was also interested in something else he noticed that was being held in Jim's hand. At the moment Vincent was the one in control, so he couldn't use the Inspect skill on the shield, or the crystals that showed from the top. Quinn wasn't too sure, but it looked like the crystal from the Demon tier crab they had faced.

In the end, Arthur had ended up taking the Demon tier crystal, but since the two of them seemed to be working together, the crystal seemed to have somehow ended up in Jim's hand.

"Vincent... but how is this possible? I looked at your files, heck I even secretly attended your funeral and saw your body!" Jim shouted.

These were facts that even Vincent was unaware of. Since he had ended up transferring his whole soul into the book, he did not know what happened during the time he was in the book himself.

"It's hard to explain and I'm not too sure about the exact details either. It seems to have come as an extension of our ability. I came here because the two of us shared a bond. I had hoped we could speak."

"I know you went looking for me. Edward told me that you left searching for me. I'm sorry that I was gone when you needed me, but I am here now. This whole thing doesn't seem like you. What happened for you to choose this course of action?" Vincent asked, making sure to tread carefully with his words. He could tell just through the limited interaction that the Jim before him was far from the Vampire Knight who used to work for him.

"So all it took for me to see you again was to start a war with the entire human race, huh? Sure why don't we talk about that. Let's talk about how no matter what I do, I end up as the one shafted in this cursed world. As you know, my biggest desire was always to aid vampire society as a whole. To help and get recognised for my accomplishments... but as you know that never came to be."

Jim then lifted his hand and pointed to Richard who was standing behind Vincent.

"Let's first start with him, shall we? I was merely a brat when our 'venerated ancestor' was the Vampire King. I will never forget the day he approached me. He asked me to help him, and as the paragon of his time who all of us strived to become, how could I deny him? Keeping my end of the promise, some time after he entered his eternal slumber, I was the one who woke him up in secret."

"Growing up, I had kept this hidden from everyone, only later learning what kind of sin I had actually committed. At the time I had believed that I had done a good thing. Eventually I became the leader of the tenth family, only for another King to approach me. He asked me to search for a way that we could become like them. The Originals."

"I fell for his sweet words that should I succeed, it would allow all vampires to become like the Originals, ushering in a new golden age for our kind. I gladly spent most of my time in pursuit of that task, but to have a chance I naturally needed some samples. but when I was found out, the king turned against me claiming that it was my own doing, and where was Richard? Where was he to help me? In the end, the only one that ever did help me was you Vincent."

"Did you ever find it strange how quickly they overturned the decision to not force me into eternal slumber? Was there ever a precedent of anyone else having committed a crime as grave as mine who had been pardoned? Do you think I was pardoned because you as the tenth leader vouched for me? No, it was because the

King knew he had done wrong. Still, I saw a light, because you turned out to be a person who had helped me, without wanting anything in return."

Quinn had thought it was strange how Richard could have possibly tricked all the others into believing he went into eternal slumber. Was Jim saying he was the one that had woken Richard up, and if so, what reason did Richard have for wanting to wake up? Why go into eternal slumber in the first place?

"Do you understand? I was relied upon, people came to me when they needed something, only to ditch me when it was time, making me a fool for ever trusting them."

"The same thing happened when they asked me to create a blood substitute. I accepted the task, granted I had not too much of a choice on that one, but I succeeded and created the Dalki. However, they were unhappy with the result, so they chose to chuck me and the Dalki to the side to work on their own solution. I was lost Vincent, so I went looking for you, but by that time it was already too late."

"I tried to figure out where it had gone wrong, yet I couldn't come up with an answer. However, I refuse to fail again. This time I decided to force them to accept my solution. The Dalki aren't a failure, they're merely incomplete, something I could have eventually rectified if only the vampires had let me."

"As long as I get rid of every single human in existence with the Dalki, the vampires will have no other choice but to accept them as their solution! If I can fix this mistake, I will be able to fix all the other mistakes of my past. One of them includes waking you up, Richard!"

The reason why Vincent hadn't said anything to intercept Jim was because he had been hoping there would be a way to reason with him without the need for fighting. Unfortunately, the more he spoke the more it became apparent that Jim was already too far gone.

His feelings of rejection had apparently always been there and without Vincent as his anchor they had boiled over, leading the other on a destructive path.

'Jim...does really no part of you see that you're just making another mistake right now?' Vincent wanted to ask, but he knew it would be useless.

"And as for you Vincent. I saw your body... whatever you are, you're not my nephew. Your existence is also something that needs to be fixed." Jim proclaimed, as he glanced towards the six spiked Dalki by his side.

"Vincent, switch!" Quinn shouted, and quickly the two of them changed bodies.

The six and five spiked had moved around Quinn aiming for Richard, while the other six spike had gone directly at Quinn.

It was too fast for him to activate his soul weapon, but luckily Vincent had activated the shadow in the middle of Jim's tirade, aware that the other might choose to attack them at any point.

'A six spiked Dalki punch is going to be strong, but I managed to gather all of those MC cells. I'll block this attack, and attack back!' Quinn thought.

Raising the shadow in front of the fist, and as it collided, in an instant, Quinn could see the system message.

[0/2643 MC cells]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1303: Can't hurt the Dalki

After fighting all of the Masked and almost tripling the amount of MC points Quinn had, he was feeling confident in his shadow abilities. He still believed he was a long way off Arthur who had lived for 1000s of years using the Shadow eater as a form of punishment but still believed he was getting closer.

After all, the shadow was almost able to block any attack. Depending on the attack it would decrease by the appropriate amount of MC points based on its power. Which was why Quinn was quite confident going to face whatever Richard and Brock were up against.

Even seeing the six spike, Quinn had remained somewhat unfazed. He had planned to block the first strike with his shadow and then continue from there, but after blocking the first strike, all of his Mc points quickly went down to 0.

'The sheer power from that punch. The six spiked Dalki was even able to go through that?!" Quinn worried.

The strength of the Dalki's punch proved to be stronger than Quinn's shadow, it had slowed down once it had made contact but it was still moving forward aiming towards his body. If he was to get hit by such a thing, he was unsure he could actually survive.

'With no MC points, I'm not sure this will work, or how bad the drawback will be. Maybe it will take more of my total MC cells but it's the only thing I can do!'

[Enhancement soul weapon activated]

Almost instantly, Quinn's body was covered head to toe in shadows giving him a shadow body, and once again he could use his shadow control raising a wall, blocking the Dalki's hit.

'This is bad, this is really bad! Although the Shadow overload skill works, I can feel it digging into my MC cells even worse than usual and if my theory is correct that the cost to be paid equals the amount of shadow being used during the time, it could very well mean I might lose nearly all of them if I allow this to drag on.'

Right now, Quinn's survival instinct took over. It told him that the best thing for him to do now was to run away and fight another day. Using the Shadow link he could easily head back to the Cursed faction by himself. After all, there wasn't just one six spiked but another as well.

However, when Quinn looked at Jim's face which was all smiles, he thought back, back to what had happened so far.

'No, I can't! I can't! I said I wouldn't return, until I at least pay them back for Wevil's death. I can't leave now when the person who is the cause of this entire mess, is right here in front of me!'

Realising this, Quinn used the full strength he had, draining the gauntlet of every last bit of power he still had left from the Dragon and gathering all of his Qi, he delivered a shadow filled fist of blood hammer. He swung down dragging his whole body back hitting the Dalki right in the stomach. If he couldn't damage its scales he could at least attempt to damage it internally.

The six spiked Dalki was slightly lifted off its feet, its toes inches off the ground. Seeing this Jim displayed a surprised look.

'This is the first full strength attack I have done since taking the Dragon's energy. Thank god, I didn't use it all up against the Masked. I can tell from my MC points that its punch would be more than devastating... but so was mine.'

Although the Dalki had been hurt, it wasn't something it couldn't take, and he was ready to retaliate by swinging at Quinn's head, but the Vampire Lord was confident his shadow would block it.

Before Quinn's shadow could even block it, the hand was hit by something else, a red lance that was continually spinning. The Dalki's arm looked like it was being sucked up by the rotation, as the scales were ripped to shreds and so was the muscle.

"You did a good job, kid. Together we might be able to come out of this alive." Richard said.

Quinn had heard his footsteps from a while back, so he knew he was on the move. What he didn't expect was to see Brock on his back and the two Dalki chasing after him. Turning around, Quinn cast a wide range of the shadow path skill.

Nearly touching the entire floor. Hitting the Dalki it had slowed them down, but not enough to the point where it was highly noticeable. Their strength and speed was just too much. The two of them were ready for an attack, and it looked like even though Richard had been able to damage one of the arms, it was still in good fighting condition.

Seeing this, Quinn sunk the three of them into the shadows. So they would hit nothing but air, and soon they reappeared where they were originally standing from the shadow again.

"That damned power is so annoying, but I know you can't keep that up, you fake Punisher!" Jim exclaimed. The sound of something else seemed to have caught Jim's attention, and that's when the others could see it as well.

Several of the ships that had first landed on the island were back in the air, only now they had something tied to them. A few seconds later as they hovered higher into the air, the Dragon became visible, either knocked out or so close to death that it was unable to resist being abducted.

Tied up by a strange black string substance, and this was also what was attached to the other ships as well. As they ascended higher into the air, Jim lifted his hand and a giant portal opened up above them .

"It looks like you have ultimately failed to protect the Dragon. They will soon be taking it to the Dalki base. We will use its power to create even more and once we have the other half, I will finally be able to make a complete Dalki." Jim claimed, and at that moment the portal had closed, taking the Demon tier beast away.

The smiles and troubles didn't seem to stop there, as three more Dalki had appeared from the forest. One of them also had spikes and it looked quite wounded, while the other two only had two spikes by their sides.

'They must have been the ones that were fighting the dragon before. I guess a six spike's strength really is strong. Strong enough to take out that Dragon! More and more of them just keep coming.'

Jim could see the despair in their eyes and although they had already been outnumbered, he placed his hands on both of the two spiked Dalki, transforming them into another pair of six spikes.

"I'm afraid that we have utterly failed. I doubt you'll believe me, but I truly am sorry for having dragged you and your friends into this mess. Given your shadow ability, I know that you can escape on your own, so now I am telling you to do so." Richard said. "I know you still had questions that you wished to ask me, and there are still ways for you to find those answers you seek but there is no reason for you to stay here. You need to leave this place now."

They were now five six spiked Dalki, and on top of that a five spike Dalki still alive. Even if the whole Cursed faction was here, Quinn didn't believe they could win. He knew Eno was right, but....

'There is still one thing I need to do before I get out!!' Quinn thought.

The next second his amulet started to light up. The energy from his Marked Dalki that were on the island were now being drained into Quinn. He had the power of three two spiked Dalki and a single one spike inside him. To top that off, the energy he had drained from the Dragon and he was still in his Shadow overload.

"I still have to make Jim pay!" Quinn declared as he threw his hands out creating two large walls of shadow. Blocking out everyone from his view apart from Jim. Immediately Quinn activated his Blue fang armour set.

[Nitro accelerate activated]

Due to the drawback of activating the armour set, Quinn didn't wish to use the skill, but planning to leave right after, he needed to be fast, faster than ever. His extra strength allowed him to only use a single step to arrive by Jim's side.

"I am not that slow either!" The former tenth family leader claimed as he lifted up the shield. He had to admit, he never thought that the young vampire could be this fast or this strong but it didn't matter, for all of that would only work in Jim's favour thanks to his shield. The shield was his back up, in case anything was to go wrong.

Quinn's fist was ready and a shadow filled fist mixed with his red aura spinning like a drill was thrown out hitting the shield directly. At the same time, it started to light up, and Jim couldn't wait to see the foolish boy perish by his own strength.

The blue shield fired off the energy it had contained hitting Quinn, and as it did, his body of shadow started to ripple, breaking up.

"Your life is not even worth Wevil's." A voice was heard from behind, but before Jim could even turn around. He could feel his body had already been pierced, and looking down, a hand covered in shadows could be seen, his heart had already been stabbed and was now no longer beating.

"I can't hurt the Dalki, but I can kill you." Quinn said.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1304: Destroying the Temple

The five spike known as Slicer had by far been the toughest and strongest being the world had come to know. Everyone had witnessed the female Dalki's strength on live broadcast as it had taken the combined efforts of Quinn and the Blade family to finish her off, and that was after she had fought Hilston Blade, the world's strongest human.

After seeing that display of strength, there were those in the Cursed faction that believed if they ever faced a five spike again, it would be impossible for them to survive to tell the tale.

Hopefully, Raten and Layla could prove that false as the duo were in the midst of facing off against a five spiked Dalki. Her True Hannya form allowed her to produce the special flames, which she immediately used to further boost Raten's strength.

It had all the benefits of her other forms, meaning her speed and strength were currently able to match that of a Vampire Lord, however Layla made sure to refrain from a frontal confrontation, especially since Raten was already going head to head with the Dalki.

The training with Leo and Erin had perfectly illustrated that in front of real experts her swordsmanship skills were still lacking. For the time being, she concentrated completely on supporting her ally, by throwing out the black balls carefully that would summon the spiritual chains on touch.

With her telekinesis ability she was able to move them, guaranteeing that the Dalki would be hit by them, locking it in place for a couple of seconds. This was when Raten, with his newfound power as a humanoid Demon tier beast, could go to work.

As quick as a machine gun, Raten stabbed the Dalki in the chest and stomach while it raised its hands to cover its face. His blades were sharp enough for him to piece the hard scales, leading to green Dalki blood forming a puddle underneath the creature, but not far enough to damage his organs.

However, as soon as the chains disappeared the Dalki was able to fully move again, and when it took its hands down a great smile could be seen on its face. It was getting stronger from drawing out more blood.

"You have gotta be shitting me! Don't tell me a five spiked Dalki is stronger than a boosted Demon tier beast!!!" Raten cursed.

Although the five spike had yet to hurt him, Raten quickly experienced the difference between the now injured Dalki and its former self. After having received a power boost from evolving to the next tier, as well as the one Layla provided him

with, it was extremely frustrating for him to face an enemy that seemed to be able to just nullify all of that.

Inside the Temple, Logan himself had just received a piece of devastating news.

"Sam, one of them is down!" Logan shouted.

Sam hadn't just been sitting inside. With their defenses breached, he was also fighting all those in the Temple, preventing them from finding out about the teleporter. Up until now, it had looked as if the Masked had just been targeting the Cursed faction members. Unfortunately, receiving news from Logan, he instantly understood that one of them was referring to one of the jammers.

'Should I ask Logan about the location of those jammers? Maybe I could get Borden to try and protect at least one of them to grant us more time?' Sam contemplated.

However, seeing the amount of Masked were numbering in the hundreds from each side, this didn't seem like a good idea. Finding out they were mere clones, told Sam that they would have no care for their life, and if their goal changed to destroying the jammers instead of defeating them, then they would easily be able to achieve it.

"Tell me when we're down to two!" Sam decided to shout back.

It was then, that he could see Dennis, along with the Gorilla and snake had jumped back onto the roof, and now he was fighting from the top of the roof against the Masked. Slamming one of them down into the roof titles punching them with his fist no longer using his shadow abilities or his blood powers.

Now knowing how many of them there were, it looked as if he was preserving his blood powers, only using them if they were absolutely necessary.

'They've been pushed back that far, it looks like we might have to use the teleporter before they even get to the jammers.' Sam was concerned, even more so at the fight that was happening in front. If Raten and Layla didn't figure out a way to take down the Dalki, then there was no one else that could stop them.

Raten and the Dalki were going toe to toe again matching in speed, Layla had attempted to get behind the Dalki, and she successfully breathed a breath of fire towards the Dalki. She also added in her Qi to strengthen it beyond normal flames.

But it seemed to have next to no effect on the Dalki's hard scales. This was a similar problem to what Raten had. From time to time, he would shoot out parts of soft mud from his body, either trapping the Dalkis feet or its joints, but its strength allowed it to break through it, only slowing it down a little.

'Patience, there has to be a chance!' Layla thought, knowing her swordsmanship wasn't up to par, she thought back to the lesson Leo taught her. As long as she

knew her strength and her limits with her speed, she could predict when her attacks would hit and whether or not she could avoid a blow in time.

Once again, Raten jumped back and the Dalki chased after him, only to find himself stuck in wet mud, that hardened on the spot, the Dalki was ready to break through it as it had done before, but from the corner of his eye, it could see the girl with the black blade jumping. It was a difficult position for the Dalki to reach.

However, knowing her attacks hadn't hurt it before, it decided not to pay it too much attention and focus on the Demon tier beast that could do it harm.

Layla swung hard with her blade. Up until now she hadn't used it, since she was unable to power it with Qi, only able to rely on her own strength. Hoping for something to happen, the sword hit the Dalki on the neck, yet as expected its hard scales proved too hard for it to cut through, so she immediately widened the distance.

However, from his side, Raten noticed something, a change in the look of the Dalki's eyes.

'Did that sword somehow hurt him? But he's not bleeding? It doesn't look like it's done any damage.'

The Dalki seemed concerned and was ready to turn around and deal with Layla, yet Raten thrust forward piercing the Dalki's hand slightly, at the same time leaving a part of his mud to stiffen the area he had attacked.

'Haha, I'm learning new things all the time with this body as well.' Raten thought with a smile. "Hey girl, keep hitting him with that sword! This lizard doesn't seem to like it!"

Raten started being more aggressive with his attacks and more of them were getting through, as the Dalki was concerned about the strange black sword. Layla could see the strange action in its movements, but she didn't understand why.

Regardless, she decided to go forward attacking at the right time. She was able to successfully hit the Dalki multiple times and she could see more openings than before.

'I see, the Dalki didn't care about me before, it knew I could do no harm so it was able to only focus on Raten, but now it can't decide who to focus on.'

The only thing was, Layla still felt like her attacks were doing nothing, even though she hit the Dalki time and time again, until...

For the first time it leapt back away from the two of them. On its back there were no longer five spikes, but four.

'What?! How can this be? Can this sword also weaken the Dalki?' Layla was flabbergasted. So far, she had discovered that Longblade's gifted sword could negate abilities and Qi, so why could it now also make the Dalki revert back one of its spikes?

Neither one of them had an answer to this strange situation, but both of them saw the chance to turn the tides. The Dalki, also realising it had weakened, felt a sense of fear rise inside of him, and he was ready to turn around, but as he did, a flash and a whip-like sound was heard.

The next second, his body could be seen split in half, falling to the ground.

"How could that thing have given you guys so much trouble?" Peter asked with a smile on his face.

Raten, who was a second too slow, was shaking in anger.

"You... You... you stole my kill!"

Hilston's body had already jumped in and was helping those inside the Temple, and it was the same for Vorden.

Seeing this, Sam had a big grin on his face.

"Everyone, inside the Temple now!" Sam shouted down the receiver, and all of those that were fighting moved into the open area of the Temple, the Masked following behind them. Thankfully, Vorden had a lot of strength, and with his wind powers, for those who continued to chase after them, jumping from the rooftops and were in the air, he was easily able to slice them apart, or push them back far into the wall.

"Alright everyone, it's time for us to head back!" Sam declared.

"Wait! What about Quinn?" Layla asked, looking around.

"Quinn told us that he would meet us on the Cursed ship." Vorden replied.

Layla wanted to ask why he would choose to stay here, but now wasn't the time to risk their chance of escape.

"They've destroyed two more, we have to move now!" Logan hurried the others.

Agreeing to this, the whole group started to run back, towards the room where the teleporter was placed. They threw out their skills, powers and now all the blood abilities they had been saving they cast without worrying.

The Masked were flying through the air and they had no chance stopping this arrow formation of power. Blasting down the walls, the teleporter could be seen in place

intact. Logan had activated during their run and it was time for all of them to go through.

"A teleporter! They have another teleporter inside!" One of the Masked cried out.

The first lot of the Cursed group had gone through without looking back.

"What the, why is there a gorilla with us? And why is he going in before me?!" Peter complained.

"Just get in!" Fex screamed, kicking Peter from behind moving him slightly forward.

"A little too late to figure that out! I hope you enjoy the present I left you!" Logan shouted, touching something on his arm as jumped through the teleporter.

Hidden devices all around the teleporter lit up and started to beep several times, flashing red. These devices had also been scattered in the several rooms in the Temple as well. The last person to enter the teleporter was Vorden, and seconds before he did, he heard a loud explosion going off. He turned his head at the sound to see grand explosions blowing off from all areas.

"Your one crazy person, Logan!" Vorden praised him with a smile. "It looks like there is no longer any need to ever come back to that dreaded island!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1305: Goodbye

[Instant level up received]

[You are now level 70]

[Stat point has been gained]

[A top tier blood crystal has been rewarded]

'Is that it?' Was Quinn's first thought. However, the system notification served as confirmation that Jim was indeed dead.

During the fight, a figure had popped up in front of Jim that looked identical to Quinn. When attacked with the blast from the shield, it had turned into nothing but shadows, while the real Quinn had managed to sneak behind Jim for a successful attack.

Quinn hadn't known what the shield had been capable of, but in his mind, he only had one chance to attack Jim, so he had looked for a chance to finish it in that one shot. He wouldn't get a second chance after this one, not if his trick was found out.

Before, Quinn had learned of a skill called the Shadow clone. He had already used it once during the fight with General Robin who had been Marked by the Demon tier tree. There was a difference in what Quinn had used this time, though.

The previous version of the Shadow clone had been less complete. The Vampire Lord had only been able to create a shadow of himself and allow it to stay in one place temporarily. There was no way he could control it or imitate it to do actions similar to his own, but he was able to this time.

His shadow had naturally grown stronger under the influence of the Shadow overload skill, and he had unlimited points to create a complete clone. It didn't matter how long it lasted or what actions it needed to do. This was how he had been able to completely trick Jim.

Not only had it worked, but Quinn, using his inspect skill, could see it.

Pulling his hand from his chest, Quinn saw Jim fall to the floor. He was no longer moving, he didn't say anything, and unlike Hilston, he wouldn't have to worry about him having hidden some means to revive.

'Is he really dead?' Vincent asked, not quite sure himself what had just happened. Quinn's quite desperate attempt at making the one who had been responsible for the Dalki's creation and everything that followed after pay for his sins had actually worked.

The leader was dead. Looking at the body, Quinn felt conflicted. There was no real happiness since he had known this wouldn't bring Wevil. If anything, Quinn felt like he had defeated the final boss in a game, only instead of a 'Happy ever after', there was still an army of Dalki left for him to deal with.

Part of Quinn had been longing for everything to be over with Jim's death. Now that the Dalki had the Dragon, couldn't they just let them find a way to extend their life and stop this pointless war?

But at that moment, a message appeared that brought him back to the reality of everything.

[Shadow overload skill has reached its limit]

[Shadow overload will now be deactivated]

[-500 MC Cells]

The drawback was the worst that Quinn had ever seen before, but his total MC cells were still in a better position than when he had first gotten to the island. At the same time, the walls of shadow started to dissipate, his shadow body was disappearing, and now he could see all the others.

The Dalki with the six spikes were all perfectly standing there in place.

'What did killing Jim actually solve?' Quinn thought at that moment. The Dalki were still alive, and they now had one half of the Demon tier Dragon. Arthur was still out there probably plotting or enacting his own revenge, and the war was still going on.

If anything, Quinn had only been able to satisfy his anger a little in vanquishing Jim.

'I at least was able to achieve that. Now it wasn't a complete waste coming here.' Quinn thought.

The Dalki, seeing Jim dead on the floor, almost roared in anger and immediately went on the offensive. Although Quinn no longer had any MC points to use his shadow, his armour set's Nitro accelerate was still active. The first thing Quinn did was pick up the shield lying on the floor by Jim's side and lifted it up.

The Dalki soon stopped its hand before it touched the shield, knowing full well what would happen if it struck.

'As long as I have this shield, it looks like I can protect myself from the Dalki.' Soon though, Quinn could sense and hear that another Dalki was coming from behind. They were smart enough to surround him, looking for a chance to attack.

Each time, Quinn needed to move in place, stopping their attacks by bringing up the shield. He did this repeatedly, but now the two sides seemed to be in a stalemate as Quinn couldn't afford to attack them either, not that he was sure he could injure them without using the shield either.

'This is bad. The six spiked Dalki are fast. When the Nitro accelerate cools off, it takes away that stat points from my Legendary tier armour, which will slow down my speed to even slower than them. When that happens, what do I do then?'

"Boy, I hope you will never stop defying common sense and crushing my expectation!" Richard shouted from the other side. It looked like the Dalki had stopped focusing on him and were now all trying to attack Quinn.

"Soon, your speed will run out. We both know that. I asked you to get out of here before, and you need to do the same now."

Hearing these words, Quinn couldn't believe that Richard was being selfless for once. With the amount of six spiked Dalki there was no chance he or Brock would survive. They would both die in an instant.

The only reason why they were okay now was because the Dalki had deemed Quinn to be the biggest threat, that or they had some semblance of loyalty towards their creator.

'If only I had MC points. I would have been able to put them both in my Shadow lock and then used my Shadow link to travel and get them out of here, but shadow lock still requires me to have MC points.' Quinn thought.

Thinking like that led him to another realisation. The truth was, if he hadn't focused solely on Jim, he could have made use of Shadow overload's duration to save both of them by doing exactly what he had just thought of. It was because of his selfish desire for revenge at that moment that he had missed his chance to save them.

"I know I have made mistakes, I know I might not have treated you well, but I am happy to see how much...one who carries the Eno bloodline has grown. I want to thank Vincent as well, he was a great mind, and it was good working alongside him on the system. It seems that perhaps leaving Earth, the system will be one of my greatest creations because it was able to create someone like you." Richard said.

None of the feelings Quinn had for Richard had been positive, despite or perhaps because of them being related. This made it all the more bizarre that, of all times, he was shedding tears for the man. Was it because he felt guilty? Guilty, that unlike Wevil he had been there to save someone, but had ultimately failed?

On his timer, Quinn could see that the Nitro accelerate skill was near its end. He had no choice. It was time for him to leave.

"Richard, I will save the human race!" Quinn declared there and then.

Placing the Demon tier shield in his dimensional space, Quinn activated his Shadow link. Sinking his body into shadows, and before he knew it, he was appearing by Sam's side.

Part of him had felt that it would have only been proper to witness the fate of Richard Eno, but the logical part of him had accepted the fact that staying there would have just added to the body count.

"Quinn," Sam said. "You made it back."

Looking up, Quinn was happy to see the familiar metal hull of the teleportation room he was in. Even more so, the rest of the Cursed faction looked to have made it off the island alive. Although, from the wounds and blood on their body, it was obvious that it couldn't have been easy for them.

"You guys, this is the teleportation room. What are you still doing here?" Quinn asked, looking around, but his head soon fell on her. A person that stood on the other end of the teleportation room, away from the others alone.

"We only just got here a little while ago, but you see, the reason we haven't left is because of that strange woman that's standing over there." Sam pointed.

On a closer look, it looked like some of them had tried to move, and there was a scorch mark on the ground. Quinn could guess that they had been attacked, but why wasn't she continuing to hurt them, and who could be strong enough to hold this group of people back.

"I see you have a lot of confusion on your face." The female spoke. "I knew you would be coming here and since I didn't want to repeat myself I asked your friends to wait for your arrival, because that is what my prediction stated would happen. My name is Bliss... although from what I saw, Ray has already introduced me to you."

## Chapter 1306: Strange powers

While most of the Cursed leaders were on Blade island. The duties of the Cursed ship were temporarily passed on to Megan. She, along with her advisors, decided that the best course of action was to head to the space station and head back to Earth, while asking Nathan for his help.

In the command room, Megan had been trying to get a hold of Nathan, but it seemed difficult. At the same time, it looked like reports from both the Earthborn group and the Graylash group were rarely coming in.

However, thanks to Bonny's usual live feed video, she could see why. The Graylash group were in full combat. Although they couldn't see what was going on with the Earthborn group, judging by the reports that had gotten before, she could just imagine they were in a similar situation.

"Come on, why won't anyone pick up!" Megan said, frustrated. "There has to be someone at the space station. If it carries on like this, we might just have to force them to open it."

"You could do that, but I'm telling you that there is no need. Even if you got it open, by the time you even got there, it would all be over." A voice said.

"You might be right, but I at least have to-" It was then that Megan realised the voice that had just spoken was one she didn't recognise. When turning around, she could see someone else sitting at the command centre.

It was a female with light blue hair and was wearing strange clothing. It looked as if she was wearing robes. Although they looked to be made of high-quality material, it wasn't what someone wore in this day and age, but the strangest thing that Megan could see was the staff by her side with a crystal at the top.

'Who is this person? I don't remember them being part of the cursed faction, and just how did they get in this room.'

"Don't be startled. I am not here to do any harm. My name is Bliss." She said, thinking that maybe it would have eased the tension of the girl in front of her, but it was clear that she had no reaction, meaning that no one in the cursed faction knew about her. "Oh, it looks like that girl decided to keep my words a secret. Interesting."

"However, as I was saying, it would be useless for you to continue and travel to the space station. You are just wasting your time and worrying over nothing. Right now, there isn't a thing we can do but wait."

Megan was inching closer and closer to the large table in the centre, for some reason, the confidence of this woman in front of her was frightening. Megan was thinking the best course of action was to take action now and ask questions later.

Slamming down on a button on the command centre table, the communication channel was opened up.

"Everyone, there is an intruder in the Command centre. An older middle-aged female with light blue hair. Please come immediately." Megan said, shouting it into the ship's receiver that would soon play the message out to the whole ship.

She didn't want to cause a panic, but judging by the fact that no one else had acted yet, she was wondering if all the others over the edge of the command centre, where the controls were, were dead.

Bliss let out a deep sigh.

"I thought I looked more like a young middle-aged woman, not an older middle-aged one, and here I thought you were a polite girl," Bliss said as she lifted up her staff. The crystal at the top started to shine brighter and brighter until the flash was too strong for Megan to look at.

She could feel a slight heat, and when the heat was gone, she believed it was safe to open her eyes. Looking at where Bliss once stood, she was no longer there. Immediately, Megan ran to the railing and peaked over it, thankfully she could see that all those working at the controls seemed to just be asleep and were now waking up.

'A great flash of light, putting others to sleep, and now she's disappeared. Just what is her ability?'

Thinking that there was a chance that the female who had introduced herself as Bliss could still be on the ship, she headed to the command centre and opened up all the cameras around the ship. While looking at the cameras, she could see a group of the Cursed faction heading her way.

"Don't worry about coming towards me. I am safe for now, but the intruder seems to be somewhere on this ship. You need to keep on looking." Megan ordered while she continued to look around.

At first, Megan wanted the group of people to protect her, to make sure she and the others were safe. Still, if the woman really had the power to put others to sleep, then Megan was wondering why hadn't she put her to sleep. Instead, she had approached her and was talking as if she was giving advice.

Still, an intruder was an intruder.

'That's strange?' Megan thought as she looked at one of the cameras. It was in the classroom where the Blade kids were currently present. Sil was staying with them until he was ready to be called, but she could see he was asleep right now.

At first, it didn't seem like a big deal. He had a right to take a rest before a big fight, but at the same time, before this, Sil was ready and wide awake to go into action at any second after finding out what had happened to the teleporter. To top it off, in the video itself, it looked like the kids were shaking him, trying to wake him up because of the announcement, but nothing was working.

'It couldn't be...'

It was then that Megan could see Bliss on one of the cameras. Of all the places she was in at the moment, it was the particular training room that had been set up, with the teleporter that would bring back those from Blade island.

'How did she get in?'

The door was made from reinforced Glathrium, and it looked to still be shut and locked. This was just in case anyone else happened to appear out of the teleporter instead of those from the Cursed faction. There were now so many questions on Megan's mind. Not only about how she got in, but how she knew about the room and what her aim was.

Soon, she saw Bliss look into the camera smiling and giving a short wave. After it looked as if she started to draw certain things on the ground, but no markings were left behind either.

'What is she doing, and....should I open the door? She hasn't touched the teleporter, and with Sil down, is there even anyone to take care of her.'

Watching her for a little while longer, Megan eventually saw Bliss sitting down and leaning up against the wall. It looked like she was either sleeping or meditating but was doing nothing else. As long as she could keep an eye on her, Megan felt at ease. It felt like this was the easier solution to deal with the problem.

Hours went past, with the Cursed ship continuing to head towards the space station. Bliss continued to stay in the room doing nothing until eventually, she stood up. The portal was seen activating.

"It can't be. Are they returning!" Megan had a smile on her face, but at the same time, she was deeply concerned that the strange woman was still inside. The reason she hadn't acted so far was due to Sil still not waking up. It was clear that the woman was powerful.

The one who had returned first before the others was Mona and with her, she was carrying Linda and the box on her back. When Mona saw the woman, the two

looked at each other and didn't say anything. Until Mona decided to step to the side, taking the large box off and placing Linda on the ground.

Eventually, the portal lit up again and coming through the portal one by one was the rest of the Cursed group. They were all surprised to see a stranger greet them. They had expected some type of welcoming party, but what was even weirder was the fact that the second the group tried to move forward, something lit up underneath all of their feet. It was right where Bliss was seen drawing on the ground earlier. When the light stopped, the Cursed faction could no longer move from where they were.

"Right now, you are all bound, but don't worry, I'm not here to harm you, I just don't want to explain myself twice, and it's not long until that person comes here. Now I notice that some of you still have the strength to break the binding." Bliss raised her staff, and strange orange energy left from it. It moved forward, landing right by where Raten's feet was, scorching the ground. "But I advise you not to move, as you can see. I don't plan to harm you."

Seeing the attack nearly hit Raten, he was angered by this, and he was ready to attempt to break out of the binding.

"Don't move. She doesn't want to hurt us, and it looks like she is true to her word otherwise, she would have hurt Linda." Sam said.

Finally, the man she had been waiting for had arrived, and that was the events that had led to their current moments.

Seeing all of the skills and abilities she had used so far, everyone was wondering the same thing, just what ability did this person have. Quinn walked forward ahead of everyone and looked at Bliss.

Judging from what Ray had told him, Quinn had figured out who this person was.

"You said your name is Bliss. You're right. Ray did tell me about you. He didn't exactly speak nicely of you, and I think I can understand why. Now tell me what you want, God." Quinn asked, having no patience or time to be playing games with these upper beings.

## Chapter 1307: Crossroads

Feeling there was some sort of tension in the room with Quinn and the mystery woman. Sam had suggested that they all get some rest while a few individuals would talk with the new stranger.

Of course, Sam also wanted to find out just what exactly happened to Quinn while he had stayed behind on the island. However, he wasn't hopeful for a lot of information, considering how soon after Quinn was able to leave the place after them.

The group of Cursed individuals selected for this conversation were Layla, Vorden, Peter, Sam, Logan and Fex. The closest individuals to Quinn and the ones who understood the fuller picture of everything going on.

While the rest decided to check on themselves in the medical bay and took the well needed rest, they deserved. Still, there was a question on everyone's mind at the moment. They were sure they had heard Quinn call the strange individual a god.

The group had moved into one of the break rooms, where there was a coffee machine and some snacks for them. It was emptied at this point and time and on one side, all of the Cursed faction were sitting down while Bliss was on the other, having made herself a cup of tea as if she was at home.

She hadn't even asked what weather she could do or not. One thing they were pleased about was she didn't seem like an enemy at least.

"I can see that you know a little about me then, although I'm starting to wonder if all you Talen's have a bad temper. You can stop glaring at me. I'll get to the point and tell you why I'm here." Bliss said.

"As you are aware, I am one of the many gods that belong to the Earth's solar system. I have been living since the beginning of time, and through that, I have been called many things, the Divine being at one point and time."

The others were starting to wonder whether or not they were listening to a crazy person at the moment, but there was one reason they were inclined to listen. On top of Quinn's words calling her a god, they had seen her use multiple abilities or powers. Something only the Blade family could do so far.

"My power allows me to see into the future, I receive set vision in points and time, and since every time I die, I go into one of the human bodies, I have decided to make it my job that you guys survive whatever chaos was meant to get rid of all of you many many times before. Just like in the past, a disaster fell on the world, and my vision saw it collapsing. However, Ray Talen was there to save them, which is why I have come to you, Quinn Talen."

The others looked at each other, wondering if they were all hearing the same thing, and judging by the strange looks they gave each other, it seemed like they were. Still, once again, Quinn was continuing to listen intensely.

"Now, based on my visions, I theorized that there were two points in time where you could change the outcome of the human race. The first one being on Blade island, stopping the Dalki from getting the Dragon.

"In my vision, you failed, and it looks like you have still failed even now. This means you only have one more option to stop the Dalki from winning this war, which is in the vampire world. Stop them from defeating the Dragon there, and you have a chance at winning this thing.

"As for why I have decided to tell you this, even though you should somewhat know this already, is because you are currently at a crossroad, Quinn. I am a little worried that you might not choose the right option, so I have decided to intervene to help guide you to the correct option. Go to the vampire world."

After finishing her long explanation, Bliss drank her cup of tea in front of her and looked as calm as ever.

Following the conversation, Sam figured what the crossroad might be. Right now, the Earthborn group, and Graylash group are fighting with the Dalki, having obtained one half the Dragon, they are likely to make their move in the vampire world any day now.

At the same time, their attack would continue, including the Cursed faction they had yet to touch. Quinn would have to give up protecting the Cursed faction to go to the vampire world and stop them from killing the other half of the Demon tier beast.

When looking at Quinn to see if he had grasped this as well, Sam could just see anger on his face.

"Tell me, if you could see the future, then why didn't you warn us about what was going to happen on Blade island?" Quinn asked. "You're strong. You have powers of a god, so why didn't you join the fight as well?"

Bliss let out a sigh once again as if the question was annoying, and the answer should have been obvious.

"There is a reason why I don't try to intervene too much. I don't know if my visions are based on me intervening in the first place. In the past, trying to fix problems, all my visions came true, but the Talen family had changed that. At the same time, even if I did warn you, would that have stopped you from going? Could you have prepared more?

"Let me give you a guess without using my powers. If you had sent more of the Cursed faction there than you had done, then you would have just brought back more body bags with you."

Quinn was annoyed by her answer, but she was right. He just didn't like the fact that she wasn't really telling him much. She was just giving him options that he already knew about.

"Some god you seem to be. You can see the future but can't act on it. Then you are no different than a Banshee." Quinn said.

Trying to ease the tension between the two, Sam decided to ask his own questions.

"You say you are one of the gods, then are there other gods that are trying to protect Earth at this moment as well, and is there anything else you can tell us. Such as who is alive at this moment or what more we could do?" Sam asked.

"The other gods are mostly dormant. When we die, our powers or our will passes onto another. For example, the god of war might sprout in a young child who is a master on the battlefield, but his memories and such would stay forever dormant. Unfortunately, as time has gone by and we have been needed less and less, their powers and memories have become more dormant. It seems like I am one of the few that is still able to help.

"As for your second question, I can not. I can tell you what you want to ask." Bliss said, looking at Quinn. "I do not know if the man known as Richard Eno or Brock are alive or not. I can't answer questions about this war because I honestly do not know much about it. But what I can tell you is that they no longer appear in my visions after this. Take that as you will."

Bliss answered another questions of Sam, because he even wondered what had happened to Eno and Brock.

After answering this and finishing what was in her cup, Bliss stood up.

"Staying here for a long period of time is bad, so I will take my leave, but who knows. If you succeed in the vampire world, you will see me again." Bliss lifted up her staff, and the crystal started glowing.

"Wait, you just come in here, say all that and just leave. I still have things I need to ask you!" Quinn said, standing up and holding out his hand.

[Skill activated shadow lock]

His skill activated, and the shadow portal was seen opening, but her body wasn't going into the shadow for some reason. A strange barrier of light started to ripple as if it was stopping her body from moving.

"What ability is that?" Layla wondered.

"It is not an ability," Bliss said, winking back. "It's magic." The next second she was gone.

Quinn was beyond annoyed. After Wevil's death, the Cursed faction was hurt, and Richard and Eno went. He had so many questions and no one to answer them, he didn't even have the time to ask Bliss about the sword that Layla had carried. Or whether Jim was really dead.

'Quinn, do not think you have gotten nothing out of this. Remember, in your dimensional space right now, there is one person you can still speak to that knows a bit more. On top of that, we have the Demon shield at our disposal.' Vincent said.

It was true, and Jim was dead, which was news he had yet to tell the others, at least he thought he was.

After the meeting with Bliss, everyone continued to have their rest. They had almost slept for an entire day and a half.

Once the group seemed to be working at close to a hundred percent again, Sam called a meeting for all Cursed leaders.

It was time for them to update everyone on what was happening. Linda still looked a little lost but had attended, and a plan was set for when everyone could say their goodbyes to Wevil. There was no mention of the mysterious woman that had appeared. They decided to avoid any questions since Quinn didn't really get much information from her in the first place.

From Quinn, he was able to give the most information. They had learnt about Jim's death, which was a celebration. Some thought similar to Quinn that perhaps Jim still lived on, especially since he had the ability to clone himself. However, knowing that the Jim Quinn faced could use the equivalent exchange ability, they assumed it was the real one.

On top of that, Quinn had delivered the news that Truedream and some of his men were working with the Dalki as well. The person Vorden was meant to be keeping an eye over ended up dying on his way back to the others from a masked.

Then finally, they learnt of what possibly happened to Eno and Brock, which spurred one person to speak up.

"I do have something," Mona said, who had decided to stay with the Cursed faction. The Bree family had been split up into the three groups anyway, so all her family members were either fighting or on the Cursed planets, so she decided to stay.

"Richard, he told me... he told me where to go if he wasn't to survive this attack. I think he might still have something that can help us."

Hearing this, Quinn wondered just what Eno wanted them to see and what could possibly be at this place. Maybe he could learn more about just what type of person Richard was and his reason for trying so hard to protect the humans in the first place.

## Chapter 1308: The Dalki special

With the chaos still going on the other planets, the Cursed group had yet to decide what their next course of action was to be. Sam had debated whether or not he should aid the Graylash faction or the Earthborn group. However, due to nothing happening to the Cursed faction planets yet, and no sign of the five spiked Dalki known as Graham, they had decided not to move out just yet.

On top of this, due to the recent warning that they had received from the all-mighty being called Bliss, Sam was in no rush to leave or go anywhere until they had either more information on the vampire world or the next move the Dalki would make.

However, just like before, when the whole world was watching the Cursed faction face Slicer, everyone was currently waiting for the outcome of the Graylash family.

After receiving the news from Hermes that a five spiked Dalki had been spotted with a large force heading their way, Grim and Owen rushed back as quickly as they could. They were able to charge their feet with lightning allowing them to move at a speed some beast armour wouldn't even allow them to.

They could also move as fast as lightning, but that was only limited to a certain area and took a large amount of energy, so this was the best way to travel.

The good news was that the main planet that Owen and the others were on were filled with dark clouds and would often rain. Today was one of those days.

It gave a boost to the Graylash family, as their lightning attacks dealt more damage to the Dalki below. At the same time, the lightning power was good for both medium-ranged attacks and close range.

It was because of this, the Graylash family were faring better than others when fighting against the Dalki.

And there was one person leading them all while Owen was away.

"Keep up the pressure. Those at the front line, when you reach thirty percent of your MC levels, remember to switch. Head back to the Shelter and recover!"  
Hermes shouted.

In front of the Shelter, the Graylash family had set up several barriers of walls that they referred to as Bunkers. They had a small gap in the middle where they could fire off their abilities while hiding their bodies. These were often split into groups with not just the Main Graylash branch members, but they also had support type ability users with them by their side as well as other strong far ranged ability users.

Once in a while, the Dalki were able to break through and injure some of them. Still, when Hermes could see that happening, he and an attack force would go out

and fight the Dalki that couldn't be dealt with before, with hand to hand combat, and by his side were those that were best at it with their beast weapons and more.

In the meantime, the injured group would receive emergency healing and then head back to the base to swap with another group. Even minor injuries weren't a problem for the Graylash group, that was until the five spiked Dalki appeared, with an army of around three hundred behind him.

"The rest of you stay back. Follow me on my command!" Green Horn ordered, and like well-trained soldiers, the Dalki stood there. Until this point, they had only been small groups of the Dalki. Even though there were around 50 thousand trained fighters in the Shelter, the actual ones with lightning abilities numbered approximately five hundred.

If the whole Dalki force was to charge at once, the Graylash members that were out in the front line bunkers imagined they would lose their lives instantly.

Yet, for some reason, only one Dalki moved forward.

"Fire!" One of the captains ordered, one seeing the Dalki come within range.

Abilities of not just lightning were headed towards the Dalki. Since there was only one Dalki, another order coming from the opposite flank had also ordered an attack.

Around twenty lightning users had fired off their attacks from each Bunker along with other ability users, hitting the five spike.

Greenhorn's body was encased in what looked like a blue flame, even though it was lightning, and only its black figure could be seen. Eventually, when they thought they had done enough, the figure could be seen still standing there.

It hadn't moved, nor had it fallen over like the ones it had attacked in the past. Seeing this, there was one person more nervous than ever. Everything in his gut was telling him that their attack hadn't worked.

"The front line, second line, third line, and fourth line retreat to the castle now!" Hermes shouted, sending out the critical message to them all.

However, it seemed like it was a second too late. Green Horn had leapt up in the air, and on his way down, he readied his fist, swinging it back. As soon as he could see the Bunker he swung out his fist smashing the whole place to pieces. It looked like a small bomb had gone off in the building as parts of the rubble seemed to disintegrate from the sheer power.

When the others could finally see what had happened, the wfrom squad in the Bunker had been wiped out with a single hit.

"It looks like since getting a five spike, my scales have evolved to the point where your lightning doesn't really affect me." Green Horn smiled. "Now, where is that one from earlier?"

The others listened to Hermes' orders and started to leave their bunkers heading for the Shelter. However, it was still a few hundred meters away before they could reach the Shelter walls.

Looking around him and looking at his fist, Green Horn wondered something as he saw the others running away. He started to pull back his fist once more. He then raised up one of his legs like a pitcher getting ready to throw out a ball. Carefully he aimed at a bunker that was around twenty meters away from where he was.

Just like a pitcher, he went and swung his arm out, delivering a punch as hard as he could, and a loud bang was heard. As a shockwave was made, it seemed like energy itself had formed in the air, as a ball of orange coloured energy went out.

The second it had hit the Bunker, an explosion was made, and pieces from the ground were chucked up everywhere, an attack just as strong as one done with his own fist was made, and the second group of the Graylash's had been animated. Even though the Dalki army had yet to make its move.

Bonny and Void were filming far away from the wall. They had their drones out but the weather condition made it harder for others to see. Still, Void's camera had a higher spec allowing him to film it directly.

"I've never seen a Dalki make an attack like that?" Bonny said. She had stopped reporting on the fight like she was doing, since her shock had made her speak on instinct.

Hermes, who was by her side, was gritting his teeth. He wanted to go out there and help them but knew that it would be somewhat useless.

"It seems like every Dalki at the five spike stage is a little unique," Hermes observed. "The ones the Cursed faction fought with, had a sharp strong tail I had never seen before, and now this one can release energy from its hands, allowing it to attack at a far range as well. This means, we have just lost our advantage. Even we on this wall aren't safe right now."

Hermes knew there were still many things they didn't know about the Dalki, how far this attack could go, did he need to wind up like he did earlier, and that's when he realised from the look on Green Horn's face. He didn't know either.

"Hahaha, what is this!" Green Horn smiled. "I just wanted an easy way to deal with them, other than going over there myself. I thought maybe the wind could do the job for me, but the energy left my fists. With this, maybe I can become the next leader!"

Walking forward, it looked like Green Horn was now ignoring the Bunkers. When he was eventually around fifty meters away from the walls, he received attacks from not just Hermes, but the rest of them as well. However, it looked like it did nothing to the five spike.

Green Horn smiled as he continued his wind up, lifting up his leg and pulling back his arm, then in one smooth motion, swinging his arm out while shifting his weight forward, he threw out another orange energy blast.

It was heading straight for the wall, and that's when it was as if the gods themselves were protecting the border. A large blue lightning bolt came striking down out from the sky. Hitting the yellow energy and causing it to fall into the ground, exploding the rocks below, and creating a large crater.

The rocks continued to be thrown with such energy that when they hit the walls, it had created holes and had damaged a few people that were close to the walls in the Shelter. It was proof of just how strong the Dalki's attack was.

As for the one that had saved them, they could see him standing in the deep crater, with half of his white robes torn, showing his masculine chest and frazzled long hair. It looked like the god of thunder himself had crashed down from a meteor, and he did not have a smile on his face.

"I made mistake by letting you get away, but I will make sure not to repeat it!" Owen said.

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

## Chapter 1309: Graylash duo

Inside the Cursed ship, nearly everyone was watching the fight taking place on the Graylash planet. They had, after all, experienced the strength of a five spike. Quinn and a few of the leaders were in one of the break rooms watching the match together.

"Do you think Owen will be able to beat it?" Nate asked.

Quinn hadn't seen Owen fight in a while, but...

"There was one thing I remember Richard said to me. The Graylash family never needed his support. They were always able to figure things out themselves. If he believed in them. There had to be a reason."

It was rare for anyone to see Owen with a serious expression on his face. He would often have his fan covering his mouth, but they only needed to see his moon-shaped eyes to know that he was smiling.

Whenever they did see a serious expression on his face, they knew it would be a tale to tell. The last time the Graylash family had witnessed such a thing was when a battle for the next leadership had taken place.

Between Owen's own father and himself,

It was the first time they had also learned he had been hiding his talented skills away from the eyes of the rest of the family. Seeing the serious look once more was giving hope out to the others, including Hermes.

Immediately, Owen placed both of his hands together and activated his soul weapon. Creating the strange orb of lightning he had done from before.

"Haha, you think I'm just going to stand here and let you use the same thing you did last time?" Green Horn shouted. This time rather than winding up his punch, Green Horn just threw out a punch with his full strength, and still, the orange energy could be seen leaving from his fists.

It was smaller than the last one but left his hand just as fast. As long as Green Horn could interrupt what Owen was doing, he thought that would be enough.

The spectators were nervous as they saw this, but Owen still concentrated on creating his soul weapon. Hermes knew he must have had a plan.

The orange energy was getting closer and closer, yet Owen was doing nothing.

"He does have a plan, right?" Bonny asked nervously.

"I hope so", Hermes replied. At this point, he wasn't sure anymore, until once again, a large bolt of lightning came striking down from the clouds above. Smashing the energy blast into the ground, only this time it had gone deeper, causing a rumbling underneath but none of the ground to be destroyed apart from a hole where the Dalki's energy had gone.

Now standing a little ahead of Owen, was a man at least twice the age of Owen, but his body hardly showed it. In fact, the person didn't even look human. If one was to think that Owen was the god of thunder, they would be wrong, for this man was covered head to toe with a lightning body.

His whole body was emitting blue light. It looked similar to how the Dalki looked when all the Graylash members had struck it simultaneously.

"Grim Graylash!" Bonny excitedly said. "Grim Graylash has appeared on the field everyone! The ex-leader of the Graylash family and one of the ones who had fought against One Horn in the past with the previous leaders. With the two of them, it looks like the Graylash family have hope to deal with the five spiked Dalki."

Seeing this, Green Horn seemed enraged as he started throwing out punches one after another, each time letting out the small blasts of energy. As they came towards Grim, his natural lightening body tried to electrify them as if he had a barrier around his body.

Although they looked to have done nothing to the energy blasts, others knew that if it was an ordinary person, those simple lightning strikes coming from Grim's body would kill a person.

Still, Grim used his arms to knock the energy blasts away. They simply bounced off his body as if he was hitting balls away. When reaching a certain point in the sky, they dispersed into explosions of energy.

"Fine, I guess I'll just have to hit you myself!" Green Horn said, charging in, and it was at that point that Owen was ready. He threw the lightning ball into the air, and when it reached the clouds, he threw his little fan after it, striking it with a lightning bolt. Soon the cloud started to grow in size, and lightning strikes struck from it.

Immediately, Green Horn was struck by lightning from the clouds. He was unafraid, knowing that the lightning wouldn't hurt him. Or at least he thought it wouldn't. When it touched his skin, he felt no pain. However, he was unable to move his body.

'It still...affects me.'

The realisation was setting in, and Grim was already throwing out a powerful lightning punch towards his head. When it hit, Green Horn was surprised to taste its blood in its mouth.

'How is this old man's lightning powers still hurting me!' Green Horn thought.

"It looks like you haven't noticed. He had already noticed by now." Grim said as he already threw out another punch. Green Horn was fast as well, and although he had been hurt by the punch, it wasn't much.

Even if Grim's punch could hit him before he could hit Grim, he wouldn't take life threatening damage and could finish the old man. However, just before his punch would reach, he was hit by Owen's soul weapon once again, freezing him for a few mini seconds.

"My grandson is special, right!" Grim said, spiralling upwards using his whole body and lightning powers to deliver a punch from below, knocking the Dalki's chin and flinging its head back.

Green Horn felt like his head was going to detach from his body, but with him being more damaged, his energy was rising.

"Everyone, attack!" Green Horn ordered, and the second he said those words. The three hundred Dalki started to run forward.

Hermes, seeing this, immediately retaliated.

"Everyone, we have to support our leaders, make sure they don't disturb the fight. If we beat the five spiked Dalki, we win this fight!"

Before, they might have been hesitant, but seeing how well both Owen and Grim were doing against the Five spike, they immediately started to head towards the battle as quickly as possible. All five hundred of the Graylash ability users were the fastest. They used their powers to enter the battlefield as quickly as possible. The good thing was, as soon as the other Dalki entered the battle, Owen's soul weapon worked in a wide area, so it struck the Dalki, paralysing them, and they were able to use this to their advantage.

"Where are you looking!" Grim said to Green Horn as he struck down, hitting his head again and slamming it to the ground while he was being struck from the clouds above.

The use of two strong soul weapons just seemed like it was too much for Green Horn to handle, but Grim's body was soon fading. For a powerful soul weapon also often meant that its power would also quickly be used up.

Grim now had his regular body and could no longer perform his lightning abilities. Seeing this, and beyond angry from being hurt, Green Horn threw out a punch towards the old man's face, hoping to pay him back tenfold.

Until an almost physical lightning bolt had struck right into the Dalki's forearm. It had gone right through pricing its skin and was visible from the top and bottom of the arm. It looked like the lightning bolt had the same effect as Owen's soul weapon.

"I will leave the rest to you", Grim said, as he ran past Green Horn to join the others in their fight. Although he didn't have Mc points left, he could still fight well with his bare hands.

Looking at why the old man suddenly left, he could see Owen standing in front of him, with a physical lightning bolt held in his hands. It looked to be a condensed solid form of lightning, in the shape of lightning itself.

"You Dalki seem to be growing more spikes every time I see you, and I am not a fool to think that it wouldn't have happened to you, but just like you, we can also evolve with our powers."

The Dalki ran forward, but the lightning bolt came out again, this time sticking through the Dalki's thigh. Paralysing the muscles in that area for a second. Green Horn tried to carry on moving but only tumbled, falling to the ground.

Before he could even move again, Graylash formed another lightning bolt, throwing it in another part of its body and doing the same thing repeatedly. The physical lightning bolts not only could pierce the Dalki's hard scale skin, but it also seemed to have the same applied effect as his soul weapon and were as fast as them as well.

Eventually, Green Horn was stuck in the ground with over thirty physical lightning bolts stuck in his body.

"It looks like you didn't evolve enough this time, and I grew quicker than you", Owen said, and the usual smile on his face appeared again. The clouds above were no longer blacks and the lightning orb he had initially thrown into the clouds began falling ever so slowly like a snowflake.

While the battle was going on, no one seemed to be aware until the orb finally dropped on the Green Horn, and all the lightning bolts lit up simultaneously. A defining bang resonated through the whole field. It was a single loud shock and a flash.

Almost blinding anyone looking directly at it, but if they were to look at the spot where the Dalki once was, there was nothing there but the scorched ground.

Witnessing this on camera, people worldwide cheered as they saw the Graylash family achieve a victory over the five spikes. This was twice now that the world knew they had obtained a victory over their strongest.

Quinn, watching it, was left in awe.

'Owen, it looks like you also have been trying your best to get stronger and stronger this whole time, and...you really have done. I'm not the only one that's in this fight. I'm not the only one fighting for the human race.' Quinn thought when seeing this.

However, another thought entered his mind, as there was something the world didn't know. At the moment, the Dalki had obtained one half of the Demon tier dragon used to create them. Before, when defeating the Dalki, with each kill, it felt like they were almost accomplishing their goal little by little, getting rid of them, but now....

Did it matter that they had killed a five spiked Dalki, because who knew how long it would take them before they created more?

'I need to stop them from getting the other half.'

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1310: Hesitation

After the defeat of the five spiked Dalki, the Graylash group managed to fend off the remaining Dalki army that was advancing towards them. It was a complete victory for the Graylash group. Of course, they had their losses, but the Dalki was unable to set foot in the Shelter, which was a hopeful sign for the rest of the world.

However, their duties weren't over yet. There were still plenty of Dalki motherships occupying the rest of the Graylash planets. The other two planets that the rest of the Graylash faction were on were still in the middle of their battles.

Still, the Cursed faction was in high spirits, and everyone was in a good mood, apart from those who knew the reality of the situation they were currently going against. The Cursed leaders decided that there was no need to reveal that. Not while everyone was still fighting and for once seemed to be carrying the momentum. In war, it was a strong thing to have the motivation and momentum on one's side.

Currently, Quinn had been patiently waiting for news in the vampire world of what was going on, but Paul, Leo, nor Erin had given them a reply. It was worrying, but certain things kept Quinn from bursting through the teleporter and heading over to the other side.

One was the order that Quinn had received, that he was not to return to the vampire world. He didn't want to cause trouble for his family if he didn't have to. The second reason was that Quinn could tell from the connections that they were safe.

'Damn that Bliss girl, her words are messing with my head, and now I can't choose whether to stay or go. I think she just made things worse.' Quinn thought, who was currently in his own personal training room.

Rather than thinking about what he couldn't do, Quinn decided to think about what he could do for now. First, he was to figure out what exactly he would do with the items from blade island. In his dimensional space at the moment, he had a tablet.

Not just any tablet, but the tablet that held his long last ancestor that used to be a dragon and one that held all the abilities of the world.

'Unlike the shadow lock, I can't enter my dimensional space. So there is no way for me to try and communicate with Ray again and try to get some answers from him. I could place it somewhere, but where? Should I place it somewhere on earth, or maybe somewhere on the Cursed ship.'

Thinking about it, Quinn imagined the tablet on the Cursed ship. There wasn't exactly a good place for it, and he didn't think it was safe on the ship nor any of the planets, and that included earth.

'I guess I don't desperately need to ask Ray questions, so for now, the safest place is for it to stay in my dimensional space. I just hope it doesn't affect the cycle of abilities he was talking about either.'

There was one more item that was in Quinn's dimensional space that he could take out, and he did so, bringing out the Demon tier shield. Quinn held it in his hands and used his inspect skill.

His guess was right. The Demon tier shield had been made using the Demon tier crystal that Arthur had taken from him. It was the confirmation that Arthur and Jim were working together. Even though Quinn was already a hundred percent sure.

Looking at the active skill, it was strong. It was able to reflect any damage taken on the shield itself and repel it back at twice the strength. Now he understood why the Dalki were so afraid to hit it.

Still holding the shield, Quinn closed his eyes and opened them again. He imagined his opponents and how he would use the shield while fighting, blocking certain attacks and using his Gauntlet to attack.

'It feels so unnatural and even more so than the sword. Besides, I already gave the blood crystal to Alex to work on.'

Taking on board Vincent's suggestion, Quinn decided to use the crystal he had received from Jim's body to create another gauntlet. Unlike with beast crystals, blood weapons could be formed into anything, so Quinn didn't have to worry.

At the moment, Alex was with Andrew at the Earthborn base, helping them craft weapons for support, but with his shadow link skill, Quinn was easily able to go there and ask for this request.

'Well, if the Shield doesn't suit me, then I guess it means one of the others can use it, but who?' Quinn started to wonder.

There were many candidates, and of course, Quinn wanted to give it to one of the leaders close to him, preferably someone who had recently gone to the island with them. They were those that were already plenty strong and that it didn't suit. But finally, Quinn had made his decision.

Heading to one of the training rooms, not too far from his own, he saw the person he was looking for doing a good job teaching the rest of the Cursed faction.

"Hey Nate, it looks like you recovered well. I heard you got blasted by a five Spiked Dalki." Quinn said in an upbeat tone.

"Ah, I would have to have a monster amount of Qi like Layla to be able to block a hit like that," Nate said, a little annoyed. With his skills, he felt like he just needed something a bit more to push him further.

What he didn't know was that Quinn had a gift ready for him that would do just that. Taking it out from his dimensional space, Quinn had a shield in his hand and handed it over.

"This is yours, take it."

Nate looked at the shield oddly at first. He didn't use weapons and only used his fist, but a shield was quite versatile in its use, and there were certainly ways he could learn to use it. However, the second Nate touched it and activated the beast weapon. He could feel the immense power in the shield itself, powering him up.

The defensive and natural stats he gained from it were amazing. He could tell his body had improved just on that alone. Even before Quinn had told him what the active skill was, he was pleased.

"Quinn seriously, I can't believe it. Ever since the day I met you, I thought that if I were around you, big things were going to happen. I had grand ambition, but lately, I felt like I had hit some type of stalemate. I thought I could improve myself, and I disliked using beast weapons, but I realize now that I was stubborn.

"Because this thing is too good to pass up. I won't be stubborn. I will accept this gift, Quinn!" Nate said, thanking Quinn over again and again. Eventually, Quinn had to threaten to take the shield away if Nate didn't stop thanking him.

When leaving the room, Quinn had a big smile on his face. He wished he could make more people just as happy as that.

On his way out, he had unexpectedly bumped into someone else who was looking for him, Fex.

"Quinn, do you have the time to talk?" Fex asked.

The look on his face looked quite serious, and Quinn always had time for his blood brother. Walking together around the ship, Fex expressed what was on his mind.

"Quinn, I know you're waiting for a reply from the vampire world on what to do, and it's why you haven't decided to go to the Cursed faction planets or the place Mona mentioned, but I think you should just go with Mona."

Quinn was quite surprised at how upfront Fex was being and was interested to know the reason.

"I have a suggestion to make. I want to go to the vampire world. Technically I am in the tenth family, but the order was only for you not to return Quinn, and I'm worried, I'm concerned about my family in all of this.

"If I go, I thought maybe we could take one of the Cursed with me. Linda seems to have a lot on her mind recently, and maybe a change of scenery would be better for her. Then if anything was to happen and we needed your help, you could come to us. Bryce doesn't know who in the Cursed faction has the shadow ability, so as long as she doesn't use it, she won't get found out.

"This way, you can head to Eno's place with Mona, without any worry. It's better than you sitting here. After what you told us, I kept thinking that maybe Eno knew something, maybe he knew more. I think we, no I think you need to head to Eno's place as soon as possible, and stop worrying about the others. All this hesitation is just making things worse."

Fex quickly wanted to apologize, thinking that he might have overstepped his position, but Quinn replied sooner than he thought.

"You're right, Fex. You're very right. I think your suggestion is a good one. I'll head to Eno's place, and you guys can head to the vampire world."

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the WebNovel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1311: No Longer Needed

Losing Green Horn was a significant loss to the Dalki. After all, it was one of their leaders and one of the ones that were growing quicker than the others. They had the potential to grow even stronger and were rare among the Dalki. Losing Slicer and Green Horn so quickly was not in their plan.

However, despite this, Graham smiled as he looked out from the strange mountain like a castle on the planet like ship they resided on. He could see what they had achieved at that cost. The great Dragon was being flown in towards the castle.

It was still being restrained by the strange black strings, but it looked like it had no energy to fight back in the first place. Eventually, the ships ended up going to a large facility that was at the base of the strange castle.

The facility was large in size, and there was one large building in particular that was the size of a football field. As they got close, the giant metallic doors were seen splitting open. Large volumes of green liquid were floating inside. Similar to what Graham had kept the Dalki in.

The ships slowly decided to place the Dragon in the strange liquid carefully. When dropped in, the doors started to shut again, keeping the Dragon in place.

With a leap, Graham had jumped from the top of the castle down to the facility. Landing, he caused a big bang, but the ground didn't break. The ground where the facility and the Dalki castle were on was taken from a planet with a substance known to be as hard as diamond.

Not that the Dalki were unable to break it, but it at least limited the amount of damage an area would receive. Especially since there would be conflicts just outside the castle more often than not. This was due to other Dalki challenging for the leader's seat.

Entering the facility, the doors automatically opened as Graham walked past. Inside, there weren't other Dalki working away, but Humans instead. They didn't look like fighters as they had no beast gear on, only lab coats, and someone else looked familiar in the facility as Graham walked around.

The clones of Jim Eno. They were maintaining the place, looking at computer terminals running tests on Dalki and different solutions. Eventually, Graham had reached the landing room where the other ships had docked away from the Dragon.

Straight away, he could see a few Dalki leaving from the ship, and with them, they were dragging a pair of Dalki along the floor and on their back they had six spikes.

"Unfortunately, they died on the way here." One of the three spiked Dalki reported.  
"I know you said it was best if we kept them alive, but the Dragon seemed to be stronger than we thought."

Graham bent down and looked at the pair of six spikes. They were covered in wounds, but they didn't look bad enough for them to die from.

"We are strong, so I at least expect our ancestor to be this strong. It would be strange if it was easy for us to overpower it with just one of us, even if it's only at half its strength. You guys did a good job."

It was then from another ship that Graham could see the Dalki pulling out someone else, someone he didn't expect to see.

Walking over, he looked at the person just to make sure, and seeing that he had a specific pair of beast crystals embedded into his hands, Graham knew this was the real one.

"You often acted like you knew how everything was going to play out, but it seems like something exceeded even outside your expectations," Graham said, lifting up the body, throwing it over his shoulder.

"I want a full report of what happened on that island, how many of them there were and who else was there. Also, bring those two with you." Graham ordered leaving the room.

Eventually, he had reached a lab of sorts with hundreds of large human-sized glass containers. At the front of two large terminals were glass containers bigger than the others that remained empty.

Typing a few things in the terminal, a large claw machine grabbed Jim's body and placed it into the container. Its body strapped and floating inside.

'It was a good thing your mind wasn't damaged. At least it looks that way.' Graham said as he pushed down on a leaver.

Both of the Crystals inside of Jim's hands started to light up. The energy levels in front of Graham's screen started to rise up, and something could be seen forming in the other container. Small particles could be seen gathering making a circle.

Then the circle started to shift and change as more blobs were forming until someone who looked identical to Jim was made. It opened its eyes, and the claw machine once again pulled out Jim, only this time from the other container.

The claw machine soon let him go, dropping him to the ground, and with how wrinkled his forehead looked, he was beyond angry.

"Damn it, that Cursed faction, that kid killed me! He killed the real me!" Jim continued to shout.

"If he had gone for your head, I would not have been able to make you again. I think that we should be pleased with the result. We have obtained the Dragon." Graham replied.

"Do you not understand!" Jim said, rushing forward. "My body is dead. My real body is dead!"

"Weren't you looking for a way to create a perfect body anyway?" Graham replied like he really didn't care. Hearing this, Jim turned around, throwing out his arm in a claw shape, going for an attack, but the second he did, Graham grabbed him by the neck and lifted him up in the air. Holding him just tight enough so he couldn't speak and was struggling for air.

"Did you really forget? You just said it yourself, you are no longer in your body anymore. There is no way for you to use your abilities like before. Even the clones you create with your Nest Crystals are not perfect, so right now, you are useless to us." Graham said.

Jim started to move his leg and arms in a way as if he wanted to say something, desperately struggling. Listening, Graham let go but grabbed him by the top of his head before he could touch the ground.

"Remember, I was the one that created you. You guys need my knowledge to create more of you from that Dragon, and when we have the whole Dragon, I can fix all of you! You can live forever, just like the originals can!" Jim said with a smile on his face. "This body might not be able to learn the ability again, but all my knowledge is still up here."

Graham looked at Jim for a second as if he was still in the middle of making up his mind.

"Jim, did you ever think that I might have surpassed you. I have created a solution that naturally aids us in our own evolution. There is no ability behind that. Our lives don't shrivel down to a mere ten minutes just because you made us six spikes. Or maybe you never stopped to think about that."

"I see the way you look at us, Jim," Graham replied. "You are the worst person I have met by far. You were never doing this for us in the first place. You were just doing this to prove something to them. We are just tools to you.

"Don't worry, as long as I have your real body and your brain. We will figure something out, and I will be happy to bring you back once again when I need to, but for now, I won't let you go about freely doing whatever you want again. See

you later, Jim.' Graham said, as squeezed his giant hand, and Jim's head exploded on the spot."

Graham didn't look back, leaving his body in place and exited from the room, while Jim's real dead body continued to float in the other container. No signs of life, and perhaps his mind would never be woken in another body again.

"A Dalki should be the one to lead the Dalki, and we will come out superior to the others. We do not need to rely on a vampire for our troubles. Let's see what we can do with this Dragon."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1312: Is Fate Real?

After their little talk, Quinn decided that Fex was right and it was time for them to act. The only problem was, without any reply from Leo and the others, it also meant that the Cursed group could not use the secret way to the Vampire World like before. Right now, they were all in the middle of another discussion to decide what to do about that.

"Linda, are you absolutely sure you're okay heading to the Vampire World with Fex?" Sam asked, having noticed the heavy bags under her eyes. The last time the group had seen her in such a miserable state had been when her brother Blip had died.

"Yes I am. Wevil gave his life to protect me and the Cursed faction, so I can't just stay here and mope around. He wouldn't have wanted that. I still want to help where I can and I think I'm still the best candidate to keep their head on and not use the Shadow ability in front of others, even in a desperate situation." Linda stated.

Sam started to nod, but the others were wondering what she exactly meant by those words. Among the Cursed faction members, apart from Wevil who had passed, those that could use the Shadow ability were Sam, Nate, Dennis and Alex who was away at the moment.

"Right now, with what's going on, maybe we don't need the strongest person but the most sensible one." Layla explained to the guys who looked confused. "No offense, but you guys can be a bit too... hot headed?"

Sam was happy that Layla had been the one to say these words. At least coming from her it had still been nice. Putting it more simply, the other three could be described as musclebrained idiots.

"Unfortunately, that still doesn't solve our main problem. We haven't received a reply from Paul yet and we need him to activate the teleporter in the tenth castle to let you guys in. We'll have no choice but to wait... unless you happen to have a solution, Logan?" Sam asked the inventor.

"We could always try the teleporter we originally used to travel to the Vampire World." Logan suggested. "It doesn't seem to have been destroyed, so it's still active, but I can't say for sure they haven't found out about it. For all we know, they might have placed a bunch of guards around it, waiting for us to use it. There is also the situation of what state it was left in last time."

"We'll do it." Fex stated immediately. "As long as I am the first one to come out, it should be fine. I'll find a way to explain myself out of the situation somehow. While we are there we can also try and locate the Dragon. It's not too far from the lab, and that's our main worry, right?"

Logan seemed to have predicted Fex's answer, as he pulled out three bottles of spray and slid them across the table to the vampire.

"These are for your toy. You did plan to bring him along, right? Or have you decided to turn him perhaps?" Logan asked. He was naturally referring to Agent 11, who had proven useful and had returned with them on the Cursed ship.

"No, he seems more useful as a human than a vampire. I can use his blood for my string abilities as well as my blood weapon, and having someone who can use Qi might prove useful if he have to fight any vampires."

"Besides, I have a feeling that turning him would not make him spill any of his secrets. Whatever mind block he has, or perhaps they have used an ability on him, but there is a chance that it will still block out our direct control even then."

Now that the others knew that Truedream was working for the other side, they knew that they also had strong ability users that had been gathered under his name, including Jack Truedream himself.

"Alright. Quinn, you're happy with just having Mona and Logan accompany you to Eno's base? We have the coordinates, and it looks like the ride there will take a few days, the place is pretty far." Sam asked for confirmation.

"If it's just the two of them, then I'm confident in my ability to protect them. I can always use my Shadow lock and Shadow link out of there, if this turns out to be some sort of trap." As soon as Quinn said these words, he was reminded of a certain person that had managed to block his Shadow lock for the first time, which made him lose confidence a little, but realised that there would be no reason for the skill not to work on his fellow teammates.

Mona had her own reasons for wanting to go and see the base. In the first place, she had been the one who Richard had for some reason entrusted with this information, so Quinn felt like it would be unfair of him to exclude her. She had also massively helped them out on Blade island, and without her ability having tamed the Kraken, another life might have been lost among the Cursed group.

Since Richard was a great mind, there was a good chance that there would be plenty of information they could gather, and with Jim and Richard possibly dead, Logan wanted confirmation that Jim was the one that had decided to kill his parents.

Even if Richard said it was Jim, words alone just weren't enough to satisfy Logan's curiosity.

"Then it's settled, before you all set off I would like a word with Mona." Sam said.

Quinn went off with Fex and Logan, who was setting up the teleporter, making sure everything was as safe as it could be on their side. Quinn wanted to at least see

them off before they left, as he was a little worried about Linda. It was an odd pairing, Linda had mostly always been with Wevil, and now she would be partnered up with someone who was a bit extra at times.

Mona, had done as she was told and stayed behind as the others left the room, she thought that maybe Sam had some questions about her ability or information she had seen. Since their return, Sam had been writing up reports and taking recordings of each of the members' encounters they had on the island.

It had helped build a bigger picture of what the situation was like, and if anything ever happened to them, they could pass this on.

"Mona, I hope you don't act rashly to what I'm about to ask you, and I told the others to go away because I want you to know that I'm not suspecting you of anything...."

Hearing this, Mona started to pull a face because this was not the tone or the conversation she had been expecting to have.

"You see, I looked back at the video in the recording room, and when speaking to Megan she told me something interesting. You arrived before everyone else that day and had met up with Bliss. The two of you said nothing, despite her being a person who should not have had any clearance to be there at that point in time. Instead, you simply decided to sit by the side."

"You...You met Bliss before, haven't you?" Sam asked, preparing himself for her to attack him at any moment, for revealing her secret or finding something out about her.

"Do I really look that scary to you?" Mona sighed and put up her hands as a sign of good faith that she wasn't going to do anything. "Well of all the people to find out, I guess it's good that it was you. To answer your question, yes, I have indeed met Bliss before. The person who Quinn called a god."

"And that's why I want to go and see what Richard left behind. When he saved my life, he took me to a place. I don't know where that place was, but I wasn't the only one there. While I was there, that was where I met Bliss."

"You were there when she had the conversation with Quinn. I imagined she said something along these lines, that she was able to see what would happen in the future. Now I wasn't involved in the rest of the conversation between the two of them, and it seemed like she and Richard had met more than once. To me, they seemed like old acquaintances."

"But you tell me, if what she said was true. Then did Bliss tell Richard what was going to happen on the island? The way he acted when he told me these coordinates, Sam, it was as if he knew he was going to die, and he still decided to go to Blade Island!"

"Before, I would have never believed that whatever happened was meant to happen, but if that's the case can we really change what is meant to happen to us? From the little I've known Richard, I don't believe he was a man that didn't think he could change things, otherwise he wouldn't have tried so hard for so long."

"So there has to be something there waiting for us!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1313: Eno's Surprise

At the moment, Quinn along with Mona and Logan, were riding together in a spaceship, and it was only the three of them. No one else had been brought along just because of the fear that more dangers for the Cursed faction and other groups could be lurking around the corner.

During this time, Mona had left with a lot on her mind and was busy sitting at the table staring off deep into space. In fact, all three of them were busy thinking about things.

Space travel was quite advanced, and the power of beast crystals allowed one to travel at a fast speed. For something to take three days to get to, it was similar to having one person go from one planet in the beast solar system, all the way around the sun, and back again. Which was why they had plenty of time to think about things.

The ship they were travelling in was one that Logan had personally modified himself. Giving it a more aerodynamic design, but the inside was quite comfortable. It almost looked like a studio apartment with how nicely finished the inside was. There was even a workbench for Logan to work away as he wished on.

For Quinn, he was sitting at the dining table as well and grabbed the Demon tier amulet that he still had around his neck.

'I used up all four of the Dalki, draining them again.' Because of this, it ultimately meant the Amulet was useless since it didn't give any stats, and Quinn would have to gain slots for the Amulet all over again.

The problem was, what could he do with it at the moment that would help him? If he was going to go to the vampire world, would it be any help there? Quinn wasn't quite sure if vampires even could be marked in the first place, and even if he was to use it on the weaker ones, they wouldn't exactly help him out much.

The Dalki were able to evolve, and with each evolution, he gained a considerable amount of energy. Vampires could evolve, but the evolution couldn't be forced through battle like with the Dalki.

While trying to figure out what to do with it, Quinn had done something even he hadn't expected as he looked at Mona, who was sitting opposite him.

Giving it a tug, the Demon tier amulet chain broke. He placed it on the table, moving it over to Mona.

"Mona, you helped us out a lot on Blade island back there. You even brought Linda back, so I thought maybe you could do with this." Quinn said.

Looking at the Amulet and picking it up, she could instantly tell the item's level, and she was at a loss for words.

"Quinn, have you gone crazy?" She asked. "I know I have been helping out the Cursed faction, but I ultimately plan to bring back the Bree family at some point. If you give this to me and people found out..."

"What would they think?" Quinn asked. "That I'm just helping out someone that is helping me? Or were you going to say that I was favouring another faction? Tipping the scales of balance, or my own faction would be annoyed at me."

"Look, I don't see things that way. Maybe it's because all of these groups tried to hold power for themselves rather than share it with who was best to use them. We ended up in this situation in the first place. I keep thinking if the humans actually worked together. Instead of the originals keeping their abilities and such, maybe we could have had a better chance in the first war. Besides, it's still mine." Quinn smiled.

"Think of it as borrowing the item. That Amulet will suit you well, and when I need it back, I think you will realise that really you were doing me a favour."

Mona still couldn't quite believe that Quinn had just given her a Demon tier item of all things. It would have been unheard of from any of the leaders or the military to do something like this in the past, and yet Quinn had just done it on a whim while travelling on the ship.

'This boy...really is different from the others.' Mona thought.

After accepting the item, Quinn went into the details of explaining what it could do, rather than letting her figure out how to use it herself. She understood how much of an amazing item it was, and also had learnt how Quinn was able to take down the other Dalki mother ships.

However, she also understood why it would still benefit Quinn when he gave it back to him.

Quinn was often in tough situations, so he had to often drain those that he had marked, but after visiting Richard's place. If she went at her pace, she could gather many Marked essentially on behalf of Quinn, and when he needed it, he could use all of their power.

As long as Mona didn't use it, of course.

Although she didn't say it, just because of Quinn's gesture, she vowed that she would try to collect as many Marked as she could possible for him. Unless absolutely necessary, she wouldn't use the power, giving him the Amulet in the future.

During the rest of the time spent on the ship, Logan was tinkering with a few new gadgets of his, but once in a while, they would hear Logan fumble or mess up. With how often he was making mistakes, Quinn could tell he had something on his mind as well.

The only problem was, Quinn couldn't help with Logan's problem, but hopefully, wherever they were going and whatever they would find, Logan could find the answer to what was troubling him.

Not wasting time, Quinn was trying to focus on something else. His Qi still was vastly greater than the blood aura he had in his body at the moment. He had learnt to control himself so he could better use one or the other in certain situations. If he was going to the vampire world and possibly was having to go against Arthur, there was one thing Quinn needed to learn.

'The third stage of Qi. This is what Lucy and agent 2 were able to use against my shadow. My shadow was useless at blocking it. If I have to go up against Arthur again, this is what I can use against his shadow.' Quinn thought.

During the next couple of days, Quinn was trying his best on figuring it out. He had asked for pointers from Layla before leaving, but it turns out she wasn't the best of teachers either, only able to explain things as clearly as Fex could.

Eventually, the two days passed, and the group were wondering just where they were.

"It certainly is strange. We are now in unmarked space at the moment." Logan said. It meant that the group was currently in an area that humanity had yet to explore in the beast solar system. However, that was because they deemed there were no other planets in the nearby area.

They would have to travel as far as another solar system to find any planets of significance. Still, checking the coordinates, Logan was sure they had come to the right area.

"It could be a ship?" Quinn said, taking a guess. "Maybe he left everything on a big ship and left it out here. It's far enough to not be affected by the sun's gravity, right or is that impossible. Damn, I should have paid more attention in science class."

However, there was no need for guesses because they could eventually see something, and it was not what any of them had suspected.

It was a giant metallic ring that was larger than the Bertha ship. Next to the ring were almost two buildings attached to it. Letting them know what it was straight away.

"What is a space station doing all the way out here?" Quinn asked.

Checking the computer and scanning for information. Logan quickly accessed the military's databases, including all of the other groups.

"This space station. It's not registered. There are no records of it. It isn't one belonging to the military or any factions of the past." Logan answered.

"So that means...we don't even know where this space station goes," Mona replied. "It might not even go back to Earth's solar system."

The question after that was, where did it go then. Of course, Quinn and the others were going to find out.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the WebNovel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1314: The unknown space station

Usually, they should have long since received a transmission from those inside, either asking them what they wanted or just to warn them against approaching any closer. Since there was no such thing, it was safe to assume that it was abandoned. If the group wanted to find out what Richard Eno had left them, they had no choice but to enter the space station itself.

It was unclear whether whatever they were supposed to find was on the space station, or it was wherever it led to. Either way, before just recklessly turning it on and jumping through it, the trio decided to explore it in hopes of finding some hint at just what they had in store.

The two large buildings were at either side of the giant floating ring, and the bridge was what connected all three parts together which would run underneath the ring. The ship landed on top of the building which was as large as a hotel. They weren't too sure if all equipment was working on the space station so all three of them had to wear specially designed military space suits.

The special suits were quite fitting to one's body, but they were designed so there was a minimal loss of movement. Still, there was noticeable loss on the user's end. There were also thrusters on the suites which would allow them temporarily fly through space, but not for any significant distance.

"I don't really know how to use this." Mona admitted.

Both Logan and Quinn looked at each other as they found it strange. Both of them had been forced to practice using something similar to the suites during their time at school. That was regular school, not even the military one.

"You guys should know that I'm older than you, I went to school before the first Dalki war." Mona understood what they were thinking. "Of course, the military did put us through some training when the war started, but since I created my own faction I never really had to bother with that stuff."

Because of this, Logan put a special backpack that he would normally use for himself. It was what the spider legs he used came out of, and Mona was now wearing it. When leaving the ship, the spider legs dug in the ground and moved along with her, and it made sure that she stayed more grounded even if anything was to accidentally hit her and she was to drift off.

It was a good thing they had done as well, because due to the whole space station seemingly being offline, it looked like none of the live support systems were online.

"Alright, so we'll go through this half of the building first and see if we can find anything. There should be a control centre here and another one on the other side as well." Logan explained. "The space stations are set up like that, so it requires two

people at the same time at both ends to activate the space station simultaneously. However, with me here we don't really need that so there will be no need for us to split up."

Entering from the top, the group decided to tread carefully through the floors. The other two didn't have super speed like Quinn and he wanted to stay and protect them. The first floor seemed to be filled with nothing but empty beds.

It looked like none of them had been used for a while, and the pattern continued as the whole place felt a little soulless.

"So, what was it like, before the war I mean?" Quinn asked.

"I would love to say that everything was much better, but if I'm being honest, although a lot of things changed before and after, some things remained the same." Mona replied. "Have you ever heard of the 'No Lethal Weapons Act'?"

Quinn shook his head, and so did Logan as he was interested in world history. They were only taught up to a certain point in time, and even across the internet it seemed like beyond a certain date all records just vanished. Perhaps a lot of it was destroyed during the first Dalki war, which was why Logan was unable to access it. 1000s of years of history lost in servers somewhere, unable to be recovered.

"I'm not surprised, if there are still any people from my grandfather's generation alive they might still remember it, though it got scrapped around my father's generation and the only way we have of learning of old history is stories passed down. Anyway, it was introduced at a time when the world was so scared that it would destroy itself that all of the countries at the time had to agree to no longer use lethal weapons. This included basic things like guns."

"On the surface level the world was peaceful for a long while, but even then there was still corruption in every country. Then of course, one of the countries broke this act, and war started as if the act never existed in the first place."

"When I was a kid, it honestly felt like the world was soon going to destroy each other. Everyone was predicting the end. Yet, what probably saved us from that fate was the attack from the Dalki. Humanity was suddenly forced to band together."

"The concept of countries was no longer important, it was just the human race against them. Honestly, it seems like whatever you do, you can't fix the whole world. History just repeats itself again and again. Which is why I made my own family. Although I can't control others, I am in control of myself. So I made sure that I could look after my family. I just never expected my family to grow so big." Mona replied.

Although Mona didn't seem too fond of the world before the war, Quinn still wondered what it was like before everyone had been made aware of abilities. Ray, his ancestor must have also fought through some crazy times.

'What about you Vincent, you were alive before the war, right?' Quinn asked.

'The vampires always tried to live a quiet life before the others. But you lived part of my life when I was on Earth, although there were bad times there were good times as well. I'm sure after this war is over you will be able to celebrate these good times with your friends and family, Quinn.' Vincent replied.

Just as expected, after going through every floor, they found no signs of life, but Quinn's nose did manage to find something a little strange. That was when they entered the kitchen. There was a storage room at the very back. Opening it, it was ice cold and it reminded Quinn of another place he had been to a long time ago.

However, there was no food inside. Searching he was trying to find if there was anything there, Quinn pulled some of the frozen draws that were frozen shut. The ice cracked from them and that's when Quinn could see it. There were blood packs. Hundreds and hundreds of blood packs.

Using his Inspect skill, Quinn found that the blood here, similar to the one in the Vampire World, all belonged to one person. They were cloning blood.

"This place was a space station for the vampires to use." Quinn declared quite confidently.

'I've never heard of such a thing. The vampires had the advanced technology to use teleporters.' Vincent commented. 'We had already figured out a way to use one teleporter to go wherever we wished so the use of space stations seems redundant.'

'Well the teleporters have their disadvantages, right?' Quinn countered. 'For one's ending a large group takes a long time, and you aren't able to send ships through either.'

Essentially, the perfect use for space stations was to send out a large group of ships, and there were only a few reasons why someone might have wanted to do that. The group eventually continued looking through the station but there was no other sign that vampires used to work in the place.

Seeing as they had come here following Richard's instructions, the likeliest scenario was that it had been used by him and his clones. Entering the command centre in one room, Logan placed one hand on the terminal activating his ability.

He was trying to find out any information he could, it didn't take long for him to take it off again.

"That's strange." Logan said. "The terminal works fine, and I can link up with the other one to open the space station, but it seems that whoever had been here, all the information about where it goes to, its logs, pretty much everything else has been cleared."

"Not just deleted but wiped to the point where I can't see, much less restore it. Everything but one thing. An input of a single destination, that doesn't exactly make sense. If I was to take a guess, its coordinates to go to once we get through this place."

Hearing these words, all three of them had goosebumps. Logan was the only one that would have been able to access certain information from a space station like so, the original coordinates to the space station was given to Mona.

Did this mean Richard knew from the beginning what they would do and who they would bring? Had he really been able to see that far ahead? It was almost as if the ancient vampire had the ability to predict the future.

After figuring this out, the group went to the other building through the bridge but they found that it only contained the same thing. So it was time for Logan to open up the space station. Activating it, it would take a few hours for the energy to start up and the space station to turn on so they decided to wait outside in the ship they had come in.

Eventually the space station was active and it was time for them to see what was on the other side. The group decided to keep the space suits on, just in case something happened to the ship on the other side.

Quinn, also made sure to have his Shadow ability ready to use at any point and time.

"Here we go." Logan said, activating the ship's thrusters and propelling them forward through the teleporter, in mere seconds they found themselves on the other side. In a new section of space.

In the distance they could see a large sun, and several planets that were floating about, Logan immediately went to the controls, to scan what was up ahead but it was as he thought.

"We have no information on any of these planets. They don't belong to the Beast solar system or Earth's. We are in a completely unknown area to humans at the moment, so where are we?"

As for Quinn he had an idea. The Vampire Planet that they would regularly visit, also wasn't part of the Beast planets solar system or Earth's.

"Maybe, we've just found a new way to the Vampire World?" He mused.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1315: The sun blocker

Each solar system was a little different, starting with the size of its respective sun, over the number of planets, their rotation speed, number of respective moons and a whole lot more. However, that was unique about the Beast planets solar system and Earth's was that they were the only known ones to have signs of life.

In the first place, the only reason humanity had been able to travel to the Beast solar system was due to the technology that had been created by Richard Eno. At the time, everyone had believed that the scientist had somehow managed to reverse engineer the teleporters the Dalki had on their ships. Of course, these days Quinn didn't know how much to believe in those stories and achievements of his ancestors.

"This is amazing! I wonder if the planets here also have signs of life. Could you imagine what it would mean for humanity if we found a solar system, away from all the Dalki?" Logan asked in excitement. He allowed their ship to continue going towards the destination that had been left at the space station, but if possible he would love nothing more than to land on one of the planets nearby and explore.

"If that was true, then there are resources here that are untapped by the Dalki and the humans. It could solve our crystal problem if we were able to hunt on these secretly." Mona also quickly grasped the strategic importance of such a place.

"You two seem to be forgetting something." Quinn found it odd that he had to be the one to point this out, but most likely his companions were just too excited at this revelation. "We didn't discover this place. We followed Eno's instructions to what we can only assume to have been his space station that led us here. What's more we came out of another space station, which means this place has already been discovered. Keep that in mind."

Through this realization the others were on guard now.

Eventually, the ship started to head towards one planet in particular, but there were no signs of a civilization that could be seen on this planet. Using his soul weapon. Logan decided to modify the upper part of the ship and create a new type of telescope device that could zoom to the point where they could see what was on the surface of the planet. This would link up with his monitor and record information for himself.

He then zoomed in on the planet to see if he could find anything, and that's when he could see it. On one of the dark purple coloured planets there were strange blob-like creatures. There were signs of life. Whether they were like beasts or not they did not know. Perhaps the crystals were a unique trait to the beasts that were found in the beasts solar system. After all, standard animals from earth did not have any crystals of energy inside their body.

Looking past a few planets, they eventually came across a strange one. The planet itself wasn't what was strange but it was what was next to it. A little far from the planet itself, they could see a large metallic object. It was a distance away from the planet, and stayed in front of the sun. What was strange about it was that it looked like the object wasn't orbiting around the planet and stayed in place.

'That...I have an idea what that is. It looks like your hypothesis was correct Quinn.' Vincent said. 'What you guys are looking at in front of you should be the Vampire World.'

Although Vincent himself had been on Earth when the vampires had decided to move planets, he recognized the device because it was something that the vampires had been trying to create for the longest time. The blueprints to such a device had already appeared during his time, but the finished version differed slightly to what he remembered. Nevertheless, it was clear enough that this device could block out the sunlight.

Vincent had found it strange that the vampires had found a planet that had allowed them to avoid the sunlight, while also not having it freeze over, eradicating all signs of life. It looked like they were successful but Vincent wasn't exactly pleased about this.

The only reason the device hadn't been constructed during his era, had been because they were afraid the vampires would use it to their advantage, for a way for them to block out the sunlight on Earth as well.

'Maybe it is a good thing that they moved.' Vincent thought.

"Logan, scan that planet over there, but do so from a distance. It will be for the best if they don't see us." Quinn requested. Moving the ship further away, Logan zoomed into the planet. On one side it looked to be completely dark and he could see forests and mountains, there didn't seem to be much.

They didn't see what Quinn was expecting but they were only able to look at part of the planet in the first place, and the settlement could have been anywhere, but just seeing the way the planet looked itself, it definitely reminded Quinn of the place.

"Is that our destination?" Quinn wondered if Richard had set up some base on the vampire planet. It would make sense for him to want to keep an eye on them.

"No it looks like it's quite far again, just like the space station we found it doesn't seem to be close to the other planets." Logan answered.

What this also meant, was another few days of travel. As more time passed Quinn was getting more anxious about the possible situation on the Cursed ship, the Cursed faction planets and Vampire World.

It might have only been days, but anything could have happened. However, the good news was, that even while in this section their communication devices back to the Cursed ship were still working, so they were happy to know that everything was still okay on their end.

Quinn continued to practice his third stage of Qi, while Mona was now using her spare time to test out the thrusters on the suit. It was something one had to get used to, but it was one of those things similar to swimming or riding a bike, that once you got the hang of the feeling it was easy to do. Becoming an expert or using it efficiently was of course a different story.

Finally it looked like they had reached their destination and once again they were in for a surprise. After discovering a whole solar system full of planets they thought their destination would be one of the planets. Instead it looked like they had come across a large stationery ship.

It was large in size, almost as big as the Bertha ships, but was flat like a giant saucer. However the center of it there was a large dome. Ship might have also been the wrong word to describe it, since it looked like it had no thrusters and wouldn't move in place, but it was definitely man made.

"Well it looks like this was Eno's secret little base. It's pretty big. I'm guessing he would have had a lab here as well. If we're lucky and the information hasn't been scrapped, I might even be able to find out the secret behind how he created those clones." Logan claimed.

If that was the case, perhaps they could create one for Vincent to use as well.

"I think it's safe to assume that Eno must have left something here. I don't believe he would lead us to this place if it didn't have anything that could help us in this war." Mona mused.

This was why Quinn wanted to come here as well, but more so he was hoping he would find out the reason for why Eno had done so much. "I want to know why Eno wanted to save the human race. Why did he have such a will and determination to risk his life, and is he even...dead."

Surrounding the strange giant saucer ship, they could see several large square containers as well. They looked like giant storage containers but were made of metal and were attached to the giant saucer like some type of tube.

"What do you think they are?" Logan asked.

It was at that moment that Logan received a message coming from the computer terminal.

"Unidentified ship has entered the area. Please state the password."

The voice was robotic, and Logan could tell this was bad news.

"Password? What password? Mona, did Eno mention anything about a password you forgot to mention?" Logan asked, looking over to the woman. The others looked at each other, because if they didn't figure out the password they were afraid that something could happen soon.

Logan quickly typed in the coordinates that he had been given both times into the machine, but both of them came up with a wrong answer.

"Quinn, this is your crazy grandpa do you have any ideas?" Logan asked.

His mind was drawing a blank. It wasn't as if he and Richard had shared a particularly intimate relationship, so how was he supposed to know? "Uhm, try his own name maybe?"

\*Beep

"My name?"

\*Beep

"I love humans?"

\*Beep

"Equivalent exchange!"

Quinn and Mona kept throwing out suggestions and none of them worked eventually.

"Too many wrong attempts! Activating emergency defensive measures! "

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1316: Space Battle

After coming all this way, what seemed to be the last hurdle that had stopped them from progressing...was a password.

'That senile old man, did he just forget, or is he playing with us!?' Quinn thought, but that didn't matter because they had to prepare for what was about to happen to them next.

A red light could be seen around the edge of the giant saucer ship, which indicated this was no joke.

"I'm preparing defences on the ship!" Logan placed both hands on the command centre and was prepared to use his ability to somehow get them out of this station. He was, after all, the best when it came to things like this.

Quinn strangely had his eyes closed because he could hear something. Due to it being muffled, he wasn't quite sure what it was. Tracking the strange noise led his eyes to the peculiar giant containers linked to the main ship, which were slowly opening up.

No laser blasts were being fired from the ship. Instead, the four containers attached to the ship were the only things moving. When the doors were fully opened, multiple tentacles immediately grabbed onto the outside of the container, gripping tightly. Soon it used the container to push itself off and leapt through the open space, catapulting and revealing its whole body.

It was a living creature, but not one like they had seen before. Usually, beasts on the beast planets had a resemblance to those animals that they had on earth. Although there could be those vastly different at times, there was always a base for the beasts.

This however, was something that looked to have come straight out of a nightmare. The tentacles on its body were the only thing remotely recognisable. It had several mouths all over its body, opening and closing, bearing its razor-sharp teeth while also emitting a strange slime that would fall from them.

Its head was an odd shape, almost hammer-like, and as for its eyes. It was anyone's best guess where they were.

[Inspect]

[A Demi-god tier beast known as the Galactic Worm]

"There are Demi-god tier beasts. They'll be powerful, so we have to be careful!" Quinn warned.

"Did you say Demi-god tier, but there's four of them!" Mona counted just to make sure.

Although Demi-god tier beasts were considered considerably weaker than Demon tier beasts. Usually it meant they only needed to deal with one beast, groups of people could work together, or in the worst case, they could run away.

However, fighting against four strong beasts at once. Even a powerful ability user would struggle, but Quinn, faced with this situation, smiled.

"This has to be a blessing. If we kill these beasts, we will obtain four powerful crystals we can use and create another item." Quinn was already running over to exit from the ship. Since he had his space suit on, he could easily go out to fight.

Leaping off from the ship, Quinn drifted into space and used the thrusters to propel him forward. In space, he was unable to rely on one thing, and that was his footwork and speed. He could still move his arms and legs just as fast to attack, but moving around the beast or getting in a good position would be difficult.

Because of this, Quinn soon found himself in front of only two of the Demi-god tier beasts. The worms were able to freely move in space somehow, and it was then that they avoided a confrontation with Quinn and decided to go straight for the ship.

"Mona! I can probably deal or hold one of them, but I'm gonna need you to try your best to handle another, or at least protect the ship!" Logan said.

Although Mona was reluctant to go out outside, she knew how dire the situation was and did so. She still had the spider legs with her, but she also decided that it would be best for her to stay on the ship, rather than trying to manoeuvre in space like a certain someone.

"So I can't fight the way I usually do. This might be quite difficult." Mona thought, for at the same time, Logan was widely moving the ship, trying to get away from the worm beasts. The only thing keeping her on at the moment was the spider legs.

Lazers fired out from the ship, hitting the strange worms once in a while, but eventually, one of the worms was able to latch onto the ship with its tentacle, sticking to it like glue. It pulled itself over and opened its largemouths, spitting out the strange green sludge.

Mona quickly avoided the attacks, jumping and moving out of the way, seeing the weird slime hit the ship.

"Oh, I thought it was acid, but it doesn't seem to have done anything to the ship?" Mona said.

She ran up to the beast avoiding all the green slime and attempted to punch it with her fist. When she did, she soon saw that where her fist was going to hit wasn't a hard part of the flesh, but it was just one of its several mouths on its body that was closed. It opened up wide, ready to chomp down at her, but Mona was fast and quickly spun her body, aiming to hit another area with a kick.

Before she could hit it, she found herself struck by the strange green slime. She tried to quickly wipe it off, but it just stuck to her other arm.

'This is annoying, it doesn't seem to do anything, but it looks like I can't get it off either. If I keep getting hit by this slime, it will keep adding up. What a pain in the ar- '

Out from the side, she had been whacked by the tentacle, it was a strong blow, stronger than what the spider legs could handle, and soon she could be seen drifting in space.

Activating the thrusters, she tried to correct her body position but overused them, spinning her top half forward looking like she was doing a front flip. She tried activating them again and started to spin back in the other direction. If she didn't get a hold of how to use this thing, then she would soon become food for the Demi-god tier beats

"I thought that something like this might happen." Logan moved the ship close to mona. Converting the top half into a claw, grabbing her in space.

It was an embarrassing situation for Mona ,but she was thankful and paid close attention to the whole situation. One of the Worms was still on the ship, while the other had been hit quite a few times by Logan's lasers. It was more hurt than the one she was fighting. In fact, she had done no damage at all to the beast.

Seeing this a plan came into her head.

"Hey, chuck me over to that one. You can do that right!" Mona shouted through the receiver.

"I can, but I don't think you'll reach that far," Logan replied.

"Don't worry, I can use the thrusters. I may not be good at this thing, but I know how to just go forward at least."

Even though Mona claimed she knew how to go forward, Logan wasn't too sure from what he had seen so far. He was worried that throwing her to the other beast would mean he took part in her death. Still, he listened as the ship charged forward and threw Mona. She activated her thrusters, giving her a boost, and she latched onto the strange hand on top of the beasts.

Immediately, several mouths all over its body started to bite Mona while also emptying the strange green sludge onto her body. Still, she had a smile on her face.

"I wasn't trying to kill you in the first place. If I couldn't do anything about an injured demi-god tier beast, it would be an embarrassment to say I was one of the big four!" Pressing her hand against the beast's head, it only took a few moments before she was in control.

Now she had her very own space beasts that could perfectly move well in space.  
"Now, let's get rid of your brother, or sister, or whatever relation you guys have."

After taking control of one of the beasts, it was easy for Mona and the beasts to take care of the one attached to the ship. First, the mouths that made the strange green slime could also eat it back up off of Mona's body, so she was free to move, and Logan had learned something else.

It could understand Mona's intentions. When fighting with her, the beast moved the way she wanted to. Logan was also able to aid with his blasters. Eventually, they successfully defeated the Worm, obtaining its crystal letting it float in space.

That's when the two of them finally had the time to see how much trouble Quinn was having.

Only there wasn't much for them to see. He had already defeated the two of them. The beasts were dead with gigantic holes in the centre of their body. He had two Demi-god tier crystals in his hand, but he just floated in place there.

'This is it, I finally did, I did it without the help of Leo or others. This is the power of the third stage of Qi.' Quinn smiled to himself, having finally made a breakthrough. These days spent on the ship didn't seem useless, and with the beasts dealt with, they could finally enter the ship and find out just what Eno had in store for them.

## Chapter 1317: The rewards

Other than the four Demi-god tier beasts that had just been dealt with, it didn't look like anything else was appearing from the strange containers. However, for some reason the saucer ship hadn't stopped emitting a bright red light that would fade and brighten up like an alarm. Making them believe that maybe they weren't out of trouble just yet.

They had managed to obtain a new powerful ally, in the form of the Galactic Worm, who at the moment was stuck on the roof of the ship while everyone else was back inside. It was amazing seeing how once a creature was tamed it showed no hostility towards its user, but unlike the Marked it still had a mind of its own. The three Demi-god tier crystals that had been obtained were all given to Quinn to put in his system for the time being.

"Don't you want to keep this?" Quinn asked since Mona had immediately handed him the crystal she had earned. She looked at him for a few seconds. Although she knew she had some claim to it, seeing as she had had to struggle against the Demi-god tier beast due to her still not being that proficient in piloting her suit, it still wouldn't have been an easy job for her.

Nevertheless, Mona knew she had only succeeded because Logan had helped her. It also didn't seem right for her to keep it, seeing as she and Logan had dealt with two together, while Quinn had dealt with two on his own. She had already gotten another Demi-god tier pet out of this, which was more than enough for her.

However, Mona did kind of wish that she had been able to witness what exactly Quinn had done to create two giant holes in their body from the position he had been in.

"Don't you dare refuse to accept it." Mona replied. "You give me a Demon tier Amulet, and I can't even hand you this?" She shoved the crystal away, before Quinn could return it.

"I suggest that we be cautious about entering the place." Logan said as they drifted closer to the ship. "I don't like the fact that the ship is still showing signs of an alarm. It should be a sign that it is still in self defence mode. If nothing is coming at us, I can only assume that it must have activated something inside of it."

Honestly, Logan would very much like to inspect the tubes to see what was the need for them to be inside the containers. Perhaps it was a way to keep the beasts alive while it was trapped there. He also was very interested in finding out how Eno had set it up so it would attack the intruders rather than their own ship.

Nonetheless, it would be best to turn off the safety system first and then explore later, they wouldn't want to go into one of those strange containers and end up being trapped.

Moving around, the saucer ship didn't seem to react in any certain way, and Logan was now outside, as it approached one of the landing points on the ship. With his ability, even if the system didn't want to let them in, he should be able to override its directives.

Touching the door outside, steam left from the ship, as the door slid open. They landed inside the giant saucer ship.

"Carefull." Logan warned them as the whole group left the ship and were now on the metallic ground inside. "The door itself is a separate system to the whole ship so I was unable to turn off the whole system. Looks like Eno was prepared for someone like me to turn up. Still, if we find the main server, I can turn this thing off and maybe find what we're trying to look for."

The group looked around the first area they were in, but there was nothing special about it other than several standard ships inside the landing area. Given its size, they also decided that it was wiser to leave the Galactic Worm to guard the ship, just in case they had any more visitors. Although the pet was strong, now that Mona was on the ground she was confident in her skills again.

While walking around, there were several doors that they could go through. After all, the place was large in size and they had no clue what led to what, but then something unexpected happened. One of the doors suddenly opened up.

"Logan, I'm guessing you weren't the one that did that, right?" Quinn asked.

Logan shook his head, and found it interesting to say the least.

"My family created an AI system that we used to control the house. Wouldn't surprise me if Richard has something like that and it's leading us somewhere. That or he planned it this way."

"Well, should we check out where we're being led to, or should we pick our own route?" Mona asked.

Quinn thought about it for a while, maybe it wasn't even an AI system, maybe Richard was alive and still watching them.

"I think that this is Richard's doing, so let's just play his stupid little game." Quinn decided and the three walked through the just opened door. As soon as all of them had passed through, it immediately shut behind them.

It wasn't really a problem for Quinn, since he could just use Shadow travel to get out again. Nevertheless, it was annoying and just stressed the part that they were being forced to go a certain way.

The three of them were expecting to enter a large hall, but instead they were now in a corridor that could barely fit the three of them, only allowing for minimum movement. There was nothing but a long hallway.

"This reminds me of those trials." Logan commented.

Quinn was thinking the same thing. When they had entered the Vampire World for the first time, they had entered what they suspected to be Richard Eno's lab, where he had been running certain experiments.

The group remained on guard while walking through the hall and at the end they entered a large square room. Here there were three operating doors.

"Seriously, what is wrong with him? He was the one who wanted us here, so why the need for these games?" Quinn asked in frustration.

As if reacting to his little outburst, a screen came out from the ceiling. They waited for a few seconds until they heard a message.

[Face reorganization has been completed.]

[Welcome, Mona, Logan and Quinn.]

[Prerecorded video message will now play.]

"Welcome all to what I guess you could call my home, or more accurately speaking what has been my base of operations for the longest time." Richard Eno said as he appeared on the screen. "If you're seeing this particular message being played, it means that the ones who have arrived are Mona, Logan, and Quinn. However, you being here most likely means that my life has come to an end."

"Our relationship must have been close if I told you about this place, and for you to have trusted me enough to travel all this way here, so don't be saddened by my death."

Quinn almost let out a laugh after hearing this phrase, but just in time he realised how disrespectful that would be. Despite all his faults, it was undeniable that Richard had helped them.

"The fact that you're here must mean that you either have some unanswered questions, or, and I hope this won't be the case, that even after my death you are in need of my help. I have helped save the human race for the longest time now, yet I guess even after my death I won't be allowed to rest. To be honest, I worry what will happen without me."

'Man, the way he talks it's really hard to like this guy.' Quinn thought.

"This is why, I have prepared things for you and only you."

After saying these words, names appeared above each of the doors, each one corresponding to those in the room.

"I have prepared many things that should be able to help you out in your journey going forward, however, since I can't predict when exactly you will see this, I have prepared a test that will analyse your abilities and find the things most compatible with you. I hope you will be worthy of it, otherwise it might be best to save it for someone else that may be of more use in the future."

"Some of you may have powers that can cheat the system, or you might be thinking of taking more than just your own reward, but I advise against doing anything of the sort. If any one of you attempts to cheat my system, all three of you will receive nothing."

"Should all three of you pass the trials that are in front of you, you will also be granted access to the main ship's server, which will allow you to access all the information I have gathered over my lifetime."

"After all, this is knowledge that can not be lost. There is a need for this information and it must be passed on so we keep learning from our mistakes and improve. Now, it's time for you to start your trials." Richard declared with the largest smile on his face.

## Chapter 1318: Passing the test

The message from Richard had ended there, and just like that the three of them were left stunned in place.

"I just don't understand, can Eno really predict the future, to the point where our names appear above these doors. Maybe what you said was true?" Mona wondered looking towards Logan.

"Probably not he himself, but you did say that you saw him meeting with Bliss before. It could be possible for it all to be set up beforehand due to her visions, especially if the two of them were close like you stated." Logan theorised.

"There is also the chance that it's simply using advanced AI. As long as Richard has information on us, and the AI did say it recognised us because it had scanned our faces. It would be simple to match up faces and names and display them on top of the doors."

While Logan and Mona were busy speaking volumes about Richards' genius, Quinn was silent and left to his own thoughts.

'What kind of rewards could he have left that could help us in our current situation?' Quinn wondered. 'And if he really had something that could give us some sort of power boost, why didn't he bring it along to Blade Island? Why make it difficult on himself?'

'It's a hard question to answer Quinn. Perhaps, Richard is just doing the same thing I did when I first met you. Back when I was in the system I also kept testing you.' Vincent replied. 'Sometimes, when we realise that we aren't able to achieve something, we try to help the future by allowing them to learn from our mistakes.'

Quinn knew that the only one who might be able to answer these questions would have been Richard himself, but that wasn't going to happen now. Still, it would be a lie if the Vampire Lord would claim that he wasn't interested in the promised rewards. He walked up to the door with his name above and the other two stopped talking to look at Quinn.

"Let me be the first one to go in." Quinn said. "You should wait until I'm done, so I can give you an idea what happened to me. I have the Shadow ability, so in case there's something dangerous in there, I should have no problem getting out. Sure I might not get the reward but at least I'll still survive. It's a different story for you two."

"Do you really think that Richard would put something so dangerous that it could kill us?" Mona asked.

Quinn nodded, he didn't even have to think about it. Richard Eno was the type of guy who would do anything to achieve his goal. If he wanted to test their

'worthiness', the ancient vampire wouldn't shy away from using possibly fatal means.

Walking up to the door, Quinn pressed his hand against it to see if it would open.

Unfortunately, it only resulted in another AI announcement.

[One person has accepted the challenge.]

[All three must accept their challenge to proceed.]

"Of course, he wouldn't let us catch a break." Quinn chuckled to himself. He was wondering if he should take the test on his own, if he completed it, then he could always just come back and save the others if there was a need to, but it looked like all three of them would have to agree to take the test and do so at the same time for the door to open.

"I won't pressure you guys to do anything you don't want to do." Quinn said with a smile turning around, but the other two were no longer where they once were. Quinn could hear two beeping sounds almost instantly.

Turning to his left and right he could see both of them already with their hands against the door.

[All three participants have accepted the test.]

Once all three enter their test room, the doors will be shut and the test will begin.

WARNING; The tests will have to be taken alone.

Any interruptions by other participants will result in immediate failure!

Passing the test will open up another door, leading to your respective rewards!]

With the doors open, Quinn lifted up both hands and gave a thumbs up to them both before walking in and now all three of them were in a pitch black room. They were separate from each other.

Quinn thought that perhaps with his heightened senses he would be able to hear the others in their rooms, but he was unable to hear anything.

Until the sound of some electronics were moving in his room, it sounded like a platform was appearing from underneath and he could see a person being lifted up into the room, one that looked identical to Richard himself.

"You're not Richard... at least not the real one, right?" Quinn asked.

"No." The person shook his head. "I am but a mere clone, who was woken up by your arrival. Although if you're here, it should mean the original has perished, so I

might be as real as I can be. I should have all his memories, at least up to the moment he created me."

Hearing this, Quinn was looking forward to asking the clone some questions about Eno and his intentions, however he didn't get the chance.

"It's time for your test. If you succeed, you might get the answers you seek."

In the other rooms, both Logan and Mona had been placed in the same situation, each of them meeting with a clone of Eno.

"Mona, I'm elated that you were among those who have come here. Honestly, there was a good chance that you wouldn't have come." The clone spoke with a mild smile on his face. Given their age difference, they resembled a grandfather who was looking lovingly over his granddaughter.

"You're crucial to humanity's fate in your own way and I don't mean just because you created a force that allowed you rise to the position of one of the Big Four."

"The truth is, I didn't save your life, it was more of me hiding you. There is someone out there who is looking for your powers more than you might believe and I fear that if they obtain it, then it would mean the human race will once again create another problem for themselves."

"You already know them, it's the group known as Pure. They might not seem like that much of a threat with the war that is going on, but they are dabbling in cross breeding humans with beasts creating something that might even be worse than Dalki. I fear that they will succeed, as history has already seen it happen a long time ago.".

"The events that have played out have all been scratched and rewritten, but I've watched it happen. Your ancestors played a crucial part in helping save the world back then with their powers, which is why I returned the favour by protecting your family from the shadows."

"Whatever happens, you must not allow Pure to get their hands on you. I know you care for the people around you, so you will try your best to help them. There seems to be others that hold grudges against Pure as well. Perhaps some day they can aid you in their fight. With all the troubles you and the world will face, I have left you something that you will be able to use in the war."

Mona looked confused for a second, as she stared at Eno's clones. She had been listening carefully the whole time. She didn't know too much about her family, similar to Quinn's; they had ended up dying in the war, yet they had passed on next to nothing to her. She had heard the rumours that Pure had kidnapped some of her members but what she was concerned about was something else.

"What about my test? Don't I have to prove that I am worthy of the reward!" Mona asked.

"You have passed the test simply by coming here. Humans show a lot of discrimination to what they can't understand or those that are different to them. They have done this for centuries, but you... you found out what I was and still chose to trust me by coming here, and you have come here with another that is like myself."

It was then strangely, that the clone lifted both its hands up, covering them with red aura. Mona had a bad feeling of what was about to happen, and using both its arms Clone Eno killed himself on the spot.

As soon as the clone died and fell to the ground, the door on the other side opened up. Walking towards the door Mona stopped by the dead body which lay on the floor. She turned it over so she could see Richard's face.

"I never did get to say goodbye. You might have protected me for your own reasons, but that doesn't change the fact that you looked after me and for that you have my gratitude."

She gently placed her hands over his eyelids, shutting them before walking through the door and out of the black room. The door behind had closed, and she now was in some type of strange lab.

A giant glass tube container could be seen in front of her, and floating inside was a headless man.

"What is this, and who...who is that?" Mona thought.

Walking up to the glass tube, she could then see a digital name running across the top.

[Oscar White]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1319: The other tests

It was just a body without its head, floating inside the container. There was no visible wound on the body to indicate that someone had removed the head. It almost looked smooth as if there had never been a head there in the first place.

'My sources did tell me that our 'retired' Supreme Commander, had lost a fight against One Horn, and that his body seemed to have been mostly destroyed, aside from his head, but this... this makes no sense.' Mona thought as she walked up to the container trying to see if she could find the head. It didn't take her long to find what she was looking for.

Off to the side, a few meters away another glass container was seen. Inside it was filled with liquid and she could see a floating head. One that was without a doubt Oscar's. However, when making eye contact with such a thing, she felt her stomach churning, goosebumps appearing over her arms.

It looked like Oscar without a shadow of a doubt, but for whatever reason he now had a creepy smile spread across his face. It stretched from ear to ear, and it wouldn't stop. Getting closer to it, she placed her hand on the glass.

"Richard... how is this meant to help us win the war? What have you done to him?" Mona mumbled the question to herself. In that split second as she lifted her hand off of the glass container, the eyes inside moved and were now staring right at her, while the smile still hadn't faded.

"It's alive!" Mona let out a scream as she nearly fell over backwards. She quickly stabilised herself and was glad that she was the only one in the room. As she slowly regained some of her calm demeanor people knew her foe. She started to walk around the room and found that the eyes of Oscar continually followed her.

"Oscar, what has he done to you? Are you really still alive there? You can hear me, right?" Mona asked, but there was no reply, no blinking, only his eyes that followed her every step and that unsettling smile that wouldn't disappear.

'Now what do I do?' Mona thought as she waited in the room, there were four doors in total, the one she came from, one to her left, one to her right and another straight ahead, but only her own had opened up.

'I guess I have no other choice but to wait until the other two are done. Unfortunately, I doubt he will have made their tests as easy as mine. Hopefully Logan or Quinn can figure out what has happened to Oscar, and what exactly we should do with him.'

Logan was currently face to face with one of Richard's clones. However, unlike Quinn, he didn't give the other any chance to speak, instead he instantly took control over the situation.

"You told me that Jim was the one who killed my parents. That he was the one who had taken over the AI in my house, but for what?" Logan asked. "Judging from what we have learned from you, we have gathered that you are a person who is willing to do anything, and I mean ANYTHING for the sake of the human race."

"Now I don't know if you were telling the truth, or you simply allowed it to happen because you found that my skills would surpass my parents but only if you thought I needed something to give me that extra push to grow stronger, to give me a reason to fight our enemy. I just know that my parents are dead, Jim is dead and even the real you is dead, so what does that mean now?" Logan asked him with slanted eyes, his balled up hands shaking.

Clone Richard was silent for a while, he was patiently waiting for Logan to let out all of his anger.

"I deeply regret what has happened to your family, but I have told you the truth." The clone replied. "You saw it in your own family's logs, how there was a promise between our families. I promised that I would protect them, yet I failed to save your parents, and it was even at the hands of my own blood line."

"Whatever you want to do, you'll have to decide for yourself. The members of your Green family have always acted out of a desire to discover new things and to accumulate knowledge, not because of revenge, Logan. Seeing as their blood runs through your veins, I'm sure you'll do the right thing."

"Should you pass, and I pray that you do, the reward that awaits you will be all the knowledge I have amassed over my lifetime. The creation of clones, the world's REAL history and more. However, once you gain possession of that knowledge, there will be others like you who will come after you to seek it out."

"While the pursuit of knowledge might be a noble thing, certain things can't be allowed to fall into the wrong hands. Now that I can no longer protect you, you'll have to be able to protect yourself."

Stepping aside, a teleporter started to rise out from the ground. Logan didn't know what his test was, but it seemed like it would be one that was to test his strength. One of the areas that he was lacking in.

Logan understood that this was his last chance to refuse to take the test. If he went through, there was likely no way out for him, other than completing the task or die trying.

'Knowledge, is that what I want? All I've been thinking about all this time were my parents...but is Richard telling me to forget about all that, to just enjoy life as me?'

Not yet clear about his answer, Logan hoped that he might find it in the reward itself. After a bit of hesitation, he concluded that he had come too far to just abandon everything.

Once stepping through the teleporter, he experienced the usual feeling of getting transported somewhere else. Unsurprisingly, he didn't end up anywhere that he recognised.

Immediately, Logan put on his speed suit and started to scan the area. Since it was dark and night on the planet, night vision was a basic requirement. Looking around, he found himself in some sort of junkyard. There were several scraps of rubbish metals and more all over the place, but so far no signs of any beasts.

Carefully checking out the area, Logan was waiting for his AI to gather more information. It quickly became apparent that this planet wasn't one that was on his database.

'Could it be one of the planets of the sector we are currently in? Since the reward should be behind the door in that room I was just in, there has to be a way for me to return. Is that my test, to survive and find the teleporter back?' Logan wondered.

Figuring that this was a new planet, Logan decided to have a look at what exactly this rubbish was. There were things he had never seen before, and things that looked similar. Walking up to one of the large piles, he soon saw objects falling down from the top of the pile. Looking more closely, he discovered a single horn sticking out from the top.

Quickly, Logan jumped back, and readied his blasters.

Moving from the rubbish, it revealed a beast that looked similar to a muscular dog, only its jaws seemed to extend far wider than should be possible. Opening its mouth it revealed a tongue that would be as long as a frog and seemingly just as flexible.

Unfortunately, that creature wasn't alone. Logan noticed that other trash piles started moving and more and more of the dog-like beasts began to appear.

One of the beasts, opened its mouth wide growling at Logan, so he wasted no time using his blaster firing directly in its mouth.

"How do you like the power of a raw intermediate crystal!?" Logan shouted, confident that the beast wouldn't get up from it. He was right, but there were already ten of his buddies in the area around Logan, and if there were more of them, he began to worry how many his blaster could kill before running out of energy.

Quinn was ready to hear the details of his test and was waiting for Eno to explain, but instead. The clone stepped to the side, and there was a platform underneath him.

"For your test to begin, we first must make some preparations, please step on here." The clone instructed him.

On the ground, Quinn could see a strange circle with several different shapes and characters he was unable to read. He was worried that this could be something disastrous.

'Have you seen this before? Does it have something to do with the equivalent exchange ability?' Quinn asked.

'I have no clue what is about to happen. It's your call Quinn.' Vincent replied.

Quinn had already made up his mind, so he decided to not hesitate and step on the strange circle. The next message that had appeared he wasn't expecting.

[System has been overridden]

[System will now temporarily go offline]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1320: Stronger than a Demon tier

The junkyard seemed to be endless.

No matter which direction Logan looked in, it was all just plastered in junk, making him even wonder if that might just be the type of planet he was on. Finding a teleporter seemed as likely as finding a needle in a haystack, not that he had the time to leisurely search through it.

He was busy running away from the dog type beasts. Logan was doing his best to conserve the energy of his blasters since he didn't have an endless supply of backup crystals with him. While trying to find a way out, he would only fire when those beasts came so close that he had to defend himself.

Unfortunately, even after half an hour of running around, Logan didn't really get anywhere and the number of his pursuers hadn't decreased at all. His AI was still scanning the area, but nothing useful had come of it, up until now.

'Those beasts seem to be on the same level as Intermediate tier beasts, so I can finish them with a single blast in a vital spot, but I'm down to three replacement crystals.' Logan thought. 'Did Eno just want to see me survive the onslaught of beasts, simulating how people might come after me for his knowledge, is there something about it that I have yet to grasp?'

'Could there be someone behind those dog-like beasts? Something like a pack leader? Do I have to defeat that guy, to make the others stop?'

If he continued to waste energy on these smaller beasts, then when meeting with the stronger one, assuming there actually was one, he would eventually lose out. Logan tried to find another beast, but to no avail.

The cycle continued and Logan knew something had to change. He had only ten blasts left in his blaster before he had to recharge it. Then he would have to start fighting the beasts with his bare hands. Trying the same thing and getting no result Logan decided to run away from where the beasts were located.

They were quite fast, and eventually three stayed on his tail. One of them was running across the top of the junk pile, and when it caught up to Logan in his speed suit and was side by side, it leapt up in the air going for the attack.

'Here I thought you were smarter, you should have learned from your brethren that once you're in the air, it just makes it easier to hit you.' Logan thought.

With a headshot the beast was dead, but that's when Logan noticed that the other two had stopped following him. To be more precise, both of them stood on top of the junk piles and just looked at him.

'That's strange they have been following me for a while, so why stop now?' Logan wondered. 'Is this the end of their territory? Will I get somewhere else if I go in that direction?'

At first he kept his eye on them, taking a few careful steps back, yet they continued to just stare at him. Taking it one step further, he showed his back to them, taking a few more steps, before quickly turning around, having expected them to follow, but nothing of that sort had happened.

In fact, one of them seemed to have gone back, whereas the sole remaining one was looking from Logan to his partner, as if trying to decide who to follow. In the end, he decided against Logan.

As such, Logan walked through the junkyard but all of the pieces of scrap that were around seemed to be useless. He couldn't really make anything from them unless he activated his soul weapon, and that seemed like a waste.

After unsuccessfully searching for about an hour, Logan was starting to wonder why he hadn't seen anything else. He had been sure to encounter another type of monster, but after scanning for signs of life, the AI had found nothing at all.

He decided that he had no choice, but to turn around, and head back to where the hounds were.

'I must have missed something.'

Upon returning, he was unable to see the hounds, but stepping one foot into the area he was in before, and the piles of junk started to move again, realigning the dogs. Immediately they started to go after him.

'Let's test this!' Logan thought, turning back and running around. Then when they reached the same point as last time they stopped again.

'This is the only place with beasts that I've been able to find nearby, and those dogs, for whatever reason they stop there each time. I know that this isn't the territory of something else, so they must have some reason for not wanting to move too far away... are they protecting something? Richard had to have a reason for putting me here in the teleporter and not the rest of the planet. Something has to be there.'

Logan concluded.

Running in again, Logan quickly blasted the guard dogs, and dealt with them quickly. Running through going deeper into the area he was in before, he was met with even more dogs. Now there was a group of five surrounding him. He fired off his blasters and a few shots missed while one managed to hit.

For the first time, they had gotten up close, so he immediately swung out his arm, allowing the dog to bite it. The metal casing around it fell off, revealing Logan's Dalki hand.

The next second Logan used his great strength to swing the dog into the others, hitting them away, but at the same time his blasters had run out. On top of that when he looked back up, as quick as he dealt with five of them, he could see another five, and more coming from a distance.

'I've never seen this many beasts in a single area before, and I already killed so many of them. How are there so many?!" Logan thought.

Desperately thinking that perhaps there was another teleporter somewhere in the area, Logan ran in again. He was down to his last remaining backup crystal and he would rather keep it from his suits. As such, he resorted to using his Dalki arm, yet the numbers of the dogs attacking him grew to twenty. Logan changed the spiders from a speed suit, into a defensive suit.

It was sort of blocking most of the attacks, and with his arm he could deal with them in a couple of hits. They were no match against a Dalki, but even then the numbers weren't decreasing and somehow they were increasing the further in he got.

"Even with the Dalki arm, I'm going to tire out eventually. They'll be able to get through to my armour. It doesn't look like there are stronger beasts than those! Do I just have to fight an army of them? Will it even stop if I kill a thousand of them?!" You could have told me something more, Eno!" Logan was frustrated and taking out his frustration he continued to defeat the dogs.

It certainly was a tough battle, but it seemed more like a battle of endurance rather than strength. What was more frustrating for Logan was that even though he was racking his head trying to figure out how to solve this, he just lacked vital information about what the ancient vampire wanted from him.

'Fine, you want to test me out on my strength then so be it!" Logan thought, as he dived right into one of the junk piles and immediately pressed his hand against it, activating his soul weapon, he soon could control all the metallic components turning giving them minds similar to machines.

For a lack of time, he forewent turning them into spiders first and instead he started to turn the surrounding junk into three giant snakes.

"Get rid of them!" Logan shouted, and the giant snakes quickly followed their master's command. With their sheer size they were easily able to take out what felt like the endless wave of dogs.

Now with some guards on his side, Logan had some breathing space. He started to go to all the piles of rubbish in the nearby area and created more giant snakes out of

them. His MC cells would soon run out without any beast crystals to utilise their power but that's when Logan discovered something.

All of the dogs seemed to originate from one particular trash pile, and they also seemed reluctant to leave it, despite the incoming snakes.

'So I was right, they're really protecting something and whatever it is, it has to be in there!'

Ordering a couple of the giant trash snakes he had created, they started to attack and Logan himself got involved fighting them as well. Eventually all of those surviving the trash pile were destroyed.

Using his ability again, instead of creating something from it, he decided to move it to the side, and that's when Logan could see it. Something looked to be growing out of the ground, similar to a giant hand but what struck his eye was what it was holding, a crystal.

It didn't seem like a beast crystal, yet at the same time it did. Staring into its pattern it looked like a crystal made from space itself.

Walking up to it, Logan touched it out of curiosity. Just to be safe, he touched it with his Dalki hand, but nothing happened. Carefully, he started to yank the crystal out from the ground. Surprisingly, it had been rooted more strongly than he had anticipated, forcing him to use all of his strength.

In an instant, howls from all over were heard at the same time.

"What is going on?" Logan asked.

"What you have in your hand, is one of the secrets of the world, knowledge that the humans once had lost."

Tuning back around, Logan could see an Eno Clone standing behind the strange hand. Logan wondered how and when he had gotten there, or if he had been hiding the whole time.

It was hard to tell if it was the same or a different clone.

"What is it?" Logan asked, more interested in the crystal than the antics of the old man.

"This is what you would call a 'Nest Crystal'. It's something even more valuable than a Demon tier crystal. It's the lifeblood of certain planets and it's what it used to create beasts."

The clone then held out his hand, offering it to Logan.

"You have successfully passed the test. Are you ready to learn more about this world?"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1321: Relying on the system

At the moment, Logan was being led by the clone through the junkyard to a different area. Cancelling his soul weapon, the giant snakes made from junk soon fell to the floor, and the beasts also seemed to no longer bother them as they continued to howl.

The new Nest crystal that Logan had discovered was still on his body, placed in his special toolbox attached to his trousers. He still had it on him for when Borden came along on journeys. It was also a good place to keep important things.

Honestly, Logan thought that perhaps after getting such a crystal, it would need to be handed back to Richard or the clone, but he had asked for no such thing. Still, he was fascinated about learning everything about it.

"A Nest crystal, in a place like this, so they're actually real?" Logan asked. He had heard a few things about a rumoured Nest crystal, but that was all it was. Some thought it was a myth. There were reports that some groups had seen them but never managed to get their hands on such a thing.

"You have your answer already." The clone replied. "Nest crystals are what give the energy to the beasts. It's a strange phenomenon, to say the least. We believe that the creatures on these planets were just regular animals like we have back on earth at some point in time."

"However, they were drawn to these mystical energies called the Nest crystals. The animals gave birth, laid their eggs next to these crystals, and eventually started to change, going through an evolution. They were born with crystals inside of their body, and they gained great power."

"The Nest crystal itself seems to adapt to the newly found beasts it has created and almost starts replicating them. Spawning them constantly at an incredible rate, and this is what we know as the beasts today."

Logan was thinking back to his test, how the beasts seemed to constantly be appearing.

"Are you saying the Nest crystals were the cause of all the beasts I fought? The fact that their numbers didn't dwindle was due to how fast they were being produced?"

"Correct. If you had continued to fight the beasts, it would have been endless, just like the energy in the crystal itself. It is also because of this fact that Nest crystals have been almost impossible for humans to find."

"Fighting countless waves of beasts or even coming across an area would put off most groups. In the first place, the beasts tend to try and hide or cover the nest crystal away from the eyes of others."

"And as you expect, this crystal, or these crystals, are one of the rewards that will help you in your fight. Unfortunately, Nest crystals are unable to be turned into beast weapons, but they have endless amounts of energy.

"A large ship would have to never gather any crystals again, only having to use one of these Nest crystals, but there are more uses than even that for it. To explain, Richard's ability of equivalent exchange, to use it, there would often be a cost associated with it.

"This cost could sometimes be in the forms of large energy, and when this was the case, Beast crystals could be used, and that includes Nest crystals."

Logan was figuring out how dangerous such a crystal was in the hands of someone like Richard. A Nest crystal, endless power that could produce beast after beasts.

"It broke the rules of your ability," Logan answered.

"Correct again, I can see why the original Richard has hope in you." The clone replied. "With a Nest crystal, one was able to use its energy again and again. It felt as if there was no cost to using the ability. However, there were some things that took even the entire crystal to use our powers."

Already Logan was learning so much, and with the Nest crystal in his possession, he wondered what could be done with them. He didn't have the equivalent exchange ability, but through his research, in the Dalki creation, he learnt there were other ways to use crystal energy.

For one, he wouldn't have had his problem with his blasters, his soul weapon could be used endlessly since it relied on the powers of the crystals, but both of those methods were selfish. Logan was thinking of something else.

He was pretty sure that both Jim and Richard had used these Nest crystals to produce the countless clones they had created. It was probably the same for the vampires. But there was a problem of a short life span with the clones.

That was because they were creating multiple clones with the energy of the crystal. Eventually, that energy would fade as there was no beast crystal in their body.

But what if a clone was created with the Nest crystal in their body, similar to beasts? Wouldn't they then be able to create a perfect clone?

"It is time for us to get the rest of your rewards." The clone had moved some scrap from one of the piles, and underneath there was a portal. He had his hand placed forward, offering the way for Logan, but Logan stopped just outside before going in.

"I know, you're not coming with me. Your duty ends here." Logan said, having figured out that this clone had been on this planet for a while. It was hard to explain, but he could tell it wasn't the same one in the room as him.

"I know you're not the real Richard, but I want to say something. I saw that you did a lot for my family...I want to thank you for helping them and for helping me. Learning about the Nest crystals, thinking about the possibilities that I could create with it, has brought back my passion."

With that said, the clone smiled, and Logan stepped through the teleporter. Logan was expecting to be returned to the black room and for the doors to open, but instead, he was transported to a lab of all things.

It was filled with giant monitors and countless terminals and servers all over the room.

'Is this all still on the ship?'

There was only one door in the room, but it remained closed. Logan could have probably opened it with his ability, but he decided to keep it closed for fear that he would be interrupting the others' tests.

'He said that I would be taken to a place where all the information is gathered, so is it all here. If I touch these objects, will I learn everything that Eno knew?'

This was somewhat what Logan had been waiting for, but now that he was here, it felt too easy, as if he was almost cheating in a game. He also had no idea what to expect.

'The Nest crystal was already a big find, but I have to learn more. There has to be more information about how to help out.'

Touching just one of the servers in the room. All the information was downloading into Logan's head. His ability and mind quickly allowed him to process everything that he was learning. After a few minutes, he had gathered all the information, but he realised when touching it, that it was only a fraction of the information that was there.

'There is information on each and every one of these servers about different things. The cloning techniques, Magic, vampire history, human history, even information on Pure! Everything, everything is here. Who was Richard Eno? We're all the questions running through Logan's head right now, but he knew that he was going to find out.'

A while ago, Quinn had stepped onto the strange drawing in the room, and he had received a devastating message. He had an idea of what had happened, so

immediately, he went to look at his system. The only thing was there was no system to bring up.

Once before he had experienced something similar to this, it was the first time he had met Richard and was what had put a bad taste in his mouth about the man in the first place. There was one thing he was sure about though, Richard could control the system.

"As a clone, I do not have Richards powers." The clone answered. "Which is why there had been some things that were prepared beforehand. For your test Quinn, Richard has observed that your fast growth in strength could only be really explained by one thing. The system that he and Vincent created together."

"However, the system was only a tool that was to teach a person how to use their vampire powers, to bridge the gap, the years of experience vampires had. Now you must fight with your own strength, without the help of the system."

Rising from the ground were several platforms, and with them, there were clones. Several clones of Richard himself. In total, six of them.

"Haha, so my test is fighting you, and you're saying I can go all out? You don't know how long I have been wanting to do this." Quinn said.

The test had begun, with one of the clones running towards him, activating the blood drill. Seeing this, Quinn was calm. He closed his eyes, gathering the large Qi energy in his body, and also chose to suppress the red energy.

Combining the red energy and Qi energy inside his body produced a stronger attack than using one energy or the other. Still, they also interfered with each other, not allowing the other one to use its special properties to the fullest. This was also the reason why Quinn had struggled to learn the third stage of Qi.

Now that he had a large amount of Qi, compared to his blood energy, he had figured it out, and to top it off, Qi was perfect against vampires.

The energy gathered in his fist, and the raw energy was almost physically able to be seen in a glowing orange colour. The clone was still a few feet away. With a snap of Quinn's hand, a loud bang was heard, and the clone had stopped in its tracks, falling to the floor.

It was dead, lying there on the floor.

"I know you by now, you were planning to kill all the clones anyway, and you wouldn't have let me leave this place until they were dead, but I think you got one thing wrong. I don't rely on the system."

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1322: A new....

It was a strange feeling not being able to use the system for Quinn's skills. Before he would use the shadow, and even activate the blood abilities through the system. Now he could access none of it. Even when Eno had messed around with his system before he had only limited his skills, but this was more like the system was offline.

However, fighting against the clones there was no need for Quinn to use any of the skills in the system, he could beat them all just with the power of his Qi. Even Quinn didn't expect the third stage of Qi to work this well against Eno.

In a way, with Quinn's strength and power, there was virtually no way for them to counter the attack, unless they had an ability, skills or strong beast armour. Still, as the next clones came from behind Quinn raised a shadow, blocking their attacks, and then with the two in front of him, Quinn started to spin Blood drills, swinging a punch and hitting both of the clones who had performed Blood drills of their own.

What was unsurprising was that Quinn's power had won out against the Clone Enos, with the hands of both of them ripped to shreds. However, Quinn didn't stop his attack there, as he used his speed to get close to them. Lifting his leg he performed a kick with the power of Qi directly to their heads, finishing them both off.

It had been less than a minute, yet the number of clones had already dropped in half. When the shadow dropped down, the clones were ready to pile up on the Vampire Lord, yet they could see nothing... until Quinn appeared directly behind them, already with his hands through both of their chests.

This time he had used the second stage of Qi, to sharpen his finger tips so they were like claws, while also covering it with the third stage. It had allowed him to bypass any type of defence they might have mustered.

Quinn didn't go on the attack against the sole remaining survivor, because the clone itself just stood there, as if it was frozen or something in its body had short circuited.

"Will the test be over once I kill you or is there another part to it?" Quinn asked with a smirk on his face.

Hearing this question had managed to snap the clone back to its duty.

"The test...is over." The clone spoke as if it couldn't even believe it was saying those words. In reality, it wasn't that Clone Eno had never thought that Quinn would pass the test, he had just never thought that without the system Quinn was still this deadly.

"It seems like you don't really understand what just happened." Quinn spoke calmly, enjoying the feeling of stumping Richard Eno, even though it was just a clone of his. "Ever since I got the system, I had been afraid that there might come a time when I won't be able to use it. After the first time that Richard altered it, I knew that my fears weren't unfounded. If he could alter it, as its creator, it only seemed natural that he might have a way to do something worse."

"It was from then on that I chose to try to learn all the skills without using the system. There are still times and certain skills that I use for the system, but as you saw yourself, I'm far from useless, even without it!"

In a way, Quinn had also decided to test himself during the fight. He knew he could beat all the Eno clones, and he could have done so just using the third stage of Qi he had recently learned, but while fighting, he had chosen to use all of his skills without the system, to check on his progress in a real fight.

"We clones only have the memories up until the point that Richard chose to create us. That being said, I have a feeling that the original would also have been surprised how easy you have passed." The clone said. "No matter what, you always seemed to be an anomaly that we failed to predict. We didn't know what you would do, what path you would take or your emotions, and it wasn't just him."

"Anyway enough of that, it is now time for your reward for completing your task. Please step back into the marking once again."

Quinn did as he was asked, and soon he received a message from the system.

[System has been activated again]

Checking everything was okay, Quinn was happy to get it back. Although he had just proven that he didn't have to rely on the system, he had already gotten so used to it, that it had felt strange with it being absent.

"Although this test was to see how you did without the system it doesn't mean the system doesn't offer you certain benefits. When creating the system, the original Eno did put a hope in it. He wasn't sure how much it would help, but Eno was always a person with many plans more than one."

"Which is why he decided if you passed the test, this should be your reward." The clone stated as he held out his hands.

"It's a hidden feature, that will only activate once the system hears this phrase from his voice. The phrase is; 'System unlock.'"

As if reacting to those words, Quinn had received a new system message that appeared bright green but he didn't quite understand the words he was seeing.

[The System has been fully unlocked.]

[The system grants you power]

[All available stats have been boosted to their maximum]

[Your body can feel the energy through you]

The system was right, Quinn could feel his body changing, as if it was breaking down and regenerating on the spot.

'What, just what did Richard do to the system for it to allow to do this?' Quinn thought.

[Strength 100]

[Agility 100]

[Stamina 100]

[Charm 100]

The reward was a max out of all of his base stats. Quinn couldn't believe it, with a few simple words he had achieved what might have taken him years, but he did realise it hadn't improved everything.

For example, Quinn's blood control was at 184, although it was above a hundred for blood control he gathered this was quite a low number. At the same time Quinn could see that his level was still at 70 and it looked like there was still an exp bar. Part of him had been hoping that upon reaching level 70 that it would allow him to reach the next evolution, but sadly nothing exceptional had happened.

"Wait, if I can still level up, can these stats be further improved?" Quinn asked out loud, as he realised the possibility.

"No." The clone instantly shattered his hopes in that regards. "For your stats themselves this is the highest they will go. The number in the first place is based on your potential and the system has made it so your body is now the best it can be."

"However, you can still improve your shadow skills and blood skills, I am not able to help in that department, maybe there are still more things to their system for it to grow. As you know, the system itself is something that has surpassed our expectations."

With that done, it was time for Quinn to leave the black room. A light lit up in the room revealing a door. Sliding down Quinn was free to exit and so he did, without turning back or looking at the clone.

He had already said his goodbyes to Richard, it was time for him to do what he needed to do. After going through the door, he had entered another hallway. After a short walk the door at the end opened and Quinn had entered the room.

"Quinn, you passed." Mona congratulated him, just thankful that finally someone else was in the room with her.

Quinn was about to reply, when he saw what else was in the room.

"Is that...Oscar!?" Quinn asked, seeing the strange drifting body. He could tell instantly something was up. Although it had Oscar's body it just didn't quite feel like it was actually him.

Seeing that it was in eno's lab, and Quinn knew that Oscar was already on the bridge of death when he posed to him through Shrio last time, he used the Inspect skill.

[A Dullahan]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1323: The Headless

As soon Quinn saw Oscar's apparent body, he knew something was wrong. The last time he had seen Oscar, it felt like there was no chance for him to come back, nor any wish for him to come back either. So it made him wonder just what had happened, so his body had gotten in the hands of Richard Eno.

'What have you done....' Quinn thought.

Using his inspect skill, he could see that his hunch was correct. Oscar was no longer a human. Instead, his inspect skill told him he was something known as a Dullahan. However, this was a word or a creature Quinn was unfamiliar with.

"It looks like you know a little more than I do," Mona said, standing by Quinn's side. She had made the assumption due to his shocked expression, but perhaps that was just the fact that he had seen Oscar in such a state.

The two of them were looking at the head rather than the body. It looked like Quinn's entrance had grabbed his attention since it was no longer staring at Mona but just Quinn.

Seeing this, Quinn moved his hand from side to side, but the eyes didn't follow, but taking a step to the left and right, it did.

"What is he looking at?" Quinn wondered.

"Maybe it wants another head buddy?" Mona joked.

It was then that Quinn started to move just his head, rather than his body, even bending forward. The joke that Mona made didn't seem so funny anymore. Since its eyes had just followed Quinn's head.

'Vincent, do you know what it is?' Quinn asked, hoping to answer Mona's question. Even though he knew the name of the subject, since it wasn't created by Quinn himself, he was unable to see information like when he would create a subclass.

'The headless horseman or woman.' Vincent answered. 'It was a legend told, or a story that was told when I was very young. However, even to vampires, such a creature is more mythical than anything. I'm not sure if it's a vampire subclass. At least one hadn't been created during my time, and there were no records of such a thing.'

"However, we have learnt that even Dragons exist, which I would have thought was mythical as well. For as long as vampires have lived, we have never seen such creatures as Dragons, yet we are."

'It makes me wonder if Eno tried to create an entirely new creature, similar to what Jim did, or if what we are seeing here is a legendary creature being reborn. Perhaps

just like dragons, they had died out, and Richard had found a way to bring one back or create one through Oscar.'

Although Quinn had learnt a little more about the Dullahan, he didn't learn about its nature, powers or ability. Quinn had repeated to Mona what he knew, and she didn't seem to have any knowledge of the creature either.

"So what do we do now? It's Oscar, we should take him out, right? After all, Richard said he had prepared rewards that would help us, and this should be my reward."

Hearing this, Quinn wanted to ask Mona what her trial was, but decided against it, in case it was something personal. Maybe he would ask once he learnt about Logan's who they had yet to see.

"I'm not sure if he's friendly or not. The way he's looking at me is giving me goosebumps. Let's just try to figure out how to get out first. We won't leave without him, don't worry." Quinn answered.

The two of them looked for a way out, but just like Mona, they could only find the other doors that neither of them had come through from. There were two more, which was strange in itself.

"When I completed my task, I came through this door, so maybe Logan is still doing him, and then he will come through one of the others. If we wait for him, maybe he will eventually come through one of the doors." Quinn suggested.

Mona agreed that the logic was sound, so they waited and waited, but there was no sign of Logan, and neither of the doors were opening. Since both of their tests were so quick, they were wondering if Logan was struggling to make it or if he had completed his task or not.

As time went on, Quinn was tempted to use his shadow abilities and enter the room.

"Maybe it's because I haven't accepted my reward." Mona eventually said, making Quinn forget about his previous urge.

Since they might leave the room anyway and with nothing else for them to do, Quinn thought that they could try to free Oscar regardless. In the first place, Quinn had gotten a boost from his reward, so he was sure that Richard wasn't lying about these rewards helping them. On top of that, if a fight was to break out, was the Dullahan a creature capable of stopping him, even with his stat boost?

Oscar was strong, but a lot of his strength came from his soul weapon and Demon tier weapon, both with which he no longer had.

Out of the two parts in separate containers, Mona and Quinn agreed to free the body first. The head just felt creepy. On one of the computers, there was a clear button to open the two glass containers.

One on the left and one on the right. Assuming the one on the left was connected to the left container, they pressed down on the button. The glass container immediately started to drain. Once it did, the glass began to sink down below into the ground. And the wires connected to the body were ejected.

'Okay, gotta be ready for anything.' Quinn thought, activating his shadow and keeping it hovering by his back.

When the body was free, it started to move around and stretched a couple of times. It looked like someone who had been stuck or asleep in the same potion for a long time. The body was muscular and completely naked, so they could see everything in the flesh, but something strange happened.

From its neck upwards, a bright blue mist started to show. It looked like a flame, yet they could also tell that it wasn't a flame. A few seconds later and it snapped its fingers. The light blue mist spread to its body and started to materialise an armour set on itself and a sword behind its back.

'What is this? Is it something similar to my shadow ability? Where I can keep items in my dimensional space. Did Eno also prepare all this for him?'

Using his inspect skill again, Quinn wanted to see the stats of the armour and the weapon he had just summoned. Still, he was in for a surprise as the items themselves were not beast armour.

'Is this possible? Is Oscar now some type of god?' Was Quinn's thought. After learning of the gods, and dragons, it wasn't something that he would put past him. Maybe Richard had captured one of the gods' dormant souls and placed it into Oscar.

"Oscar, can you hear us? Are you friendly?" Mona shouted out to the body.

However, instead of answering them or walking over to where they were, it turned around and looked towards its head. It walked up to the glass, and the head's eyes looked at its own body.

"What's it goi-"

A smashing sound was heard. The glass container broke with the Dullahan, pushing it. It then grabbed its own head by the top of its hair and pulled it towards itself.

"Is it going to wear it? Or put it back on, I mean." Quinn thought, carefully watching its every move. Strangely, it didn't attempt to put its head back on the mist. Instead, it just grabbed the head and tucked it in by its side.

"Can you speak?" Quinn asked.

Lifting up the head, it shook it, indicating that it couldn't. Even though the head had a mouth, with the creepy smile still there.

"Are you going to hurt us?" Mona asked.

Using the head again, it shook it, indicating it was a no. Both of them looked at each other and were thankful that this was the case. They wanted to ask it more questions since it seemed to understand them but thought it would be hard to talk this way.

"Maybe we can get it a pen and paper, and we can see if it can talk properly to us, or a tablet or something," Quinn said.

While making this suggestion, they could see that Oscar was walking towards one of the doors, and unlike with them, the door had started to open.

"Huh, what wait let's follow him. Maybe that's where Logan will be," Quinn said, and the two quickly followed but also made sure not to get too close to the headless person, just in case he would turn on them.

When they entered the room, though, there was no sign of Logan. Instead, it was something they both didn't expect to see. A creature of some sort that was trapped in a cage.

"A horse?" Mona said.

That's when it clicked in Quinn's head from what Vincent had told them.

"The headless horseman."

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1324: The other kings

The creature stuck in the cage was without a doubt, a horse. The only thing was it didn't look like a regular horse. It was black in colour but not just black like fur from horses on earth. This was the darkest black that one could see. Not an ounce of light was being reflected off its fur. It was nearly impossible to differentiate from its Maine and hair on its body when together.

If it was nighttime, it would stand out for how dark it was, but that wasn't the only thing that they would be able to see. For the Horse had red eyes. They were the same shade as vampires.

"That horse, it doesn't feel like a beast," Mona said. From her experience of using her ability through the years, she could almost tell in an instant whether this was something her powers could work on.

'That's because it is not a beast.' Vincent said in Quinn's head. 'This creature has more signs of it being familiar, but I have never seen one like this before...perhaps...' Vincent had paused as if he was going to say more, but he didn't want to shout out baseless theories and worry Quinn or give him wrong information.

It was then that Quinn himself could feel a tingling feeling on his back. Coming from a certain marking. It was Boney. His own familiar was reacting. His marking felt like it was trying to break free from his body, and at the same time, the horse stood up on its rear legs and neighed loudly.

It wasn't a high pitched neigh like usual horses did. Instead, the sound produced had a low frequency, so low that the ground was shaking from the bass in the horse's voice.

"That's kinda creepy, and why is there a horse acting crazy." Mona wondered.

Quinn knew it had something to do with his familiar, but he didn't know why. The mist from his back started to appear, floating outward and moving towards the horse's location.

"What are you doing? Come back!" Quinn ordered. He feared that there might be a confrontation.

At the same time, Oscar moved forward and drew his sword from his back, ready to fight what was about to come his way. Although it might be interesting to see the Dullahan's strength at the moment, Quinn knew full well how strong the Boneclaw was, and everyone here was meant to be on the same side. They didn't want to hurt a potential ally soon after receiving one.

"I do not.... I do not wish to hurt them!" Quinn shouted even louder, and this time with anger in his voice.

Before the mist could form, it started to go back to where it was, back to Quinn's body.

'Is that the first time the Boneclaw has listened to me? Will it continue to listen to me?' Quinn had neglected the Boneclaw, because it mostly chose to come out when it wished. He knew it fed on his darkest desire, which most of the time was when he was filled with anger, and it had helped him out in dire situations.

But whenever Quinn had asked for its aids in fights, even when he was on the island, it never seemed to respond. Still, if it listened to this, then maybe the Boneclaw was starting to come around to Quinn.

'I have a theory about the reaction, but I can not confirm.' Vincent said. 'You should know that familiars do not belong to our world. Vampires lure them over with a scent of their blood, or at times there are families that just wish to live near the vampires. It has been like this for the longest time. No matter where the vampires would move to, there would be familiars that would cross over and live in a similar area to ourselves.'

Quinn remembered Leo and the others talking about their experience in the familiar world. It was an interesting tale, to say the least. He also remembered Leo saying that they fed off Qi energy, so it was strange that familiars chose to live near vampires rather than humans, but the vampires hadn't figured out everything about them. There was one person who had done a lot of research on them though.

'In the familiar world, there are beings that even other familiars respect. They have great power, and they have been granted the title king. I believe the reason why the horse was reacting and perhaps the Bone claw on your back is due to both of them being kings.'

Hearing the explanation, it sounded like the Horse in front of them was a familiar that was just as great as his Boneclaw. The questions were how Richard was able to catch such a being and what Oscar was planning to do with it.

Once it had reached the cage, Oscar held out his hand and started to stroke the top of its nose a few times. It then lifted its head and placed its forehead against the horses. A few seconds later, the horse's body started to light up.

It too started to turn into a black coloured mist, and it all began to head towards Oscar's forehead. Eventually, the horse had disappeared in front of their eyes, and now there was a diamond shape marking on top of Oscar's forehead.

Now, Oscar turned to look at Quinn and Mona again. They jolted backwards, seeing the creepy smile. Even though they had seen it before, it was still unsettling to them. It walked towards the pair, and they both prepared themselves again.

But it never touched its sword and just stood still in front of them, as if it was waiting for the two of them to do something.

"I guess this thing really won't attack us. That's good news." Mona said.

'I wonder how he can use that horse.' Quinn thought. 'Was the horse similar to his Boneclaw. Since it was a strong familiar, it might even be hard for the Dullahan to use it. Why did it even select the Dullahan and say yes?'

'Maybe, the special creature has a close connection with horses. I know it is a familiar, but who knows.'

At that moment, the sound of the door opening in the other room was heard. All three ran back into the room where Oscar was originally. They found out that the final door that had yet to open, had been opened.

They all went to take a look, and that's when they could see that they had entered some type of experiment lab. There were several servers all over the place on the ground and more. Sniffing the air, Quinn could tell that there was a human inside.

He quickly ran to see if Logan was okay, and although he only had light wounds on his body, for some reason, he was lying on the floor with his head staring up to the ceiling, doing nothing.

"Logan, what's wrong, is everything okay?" Quinn asked. His eyes looked somewhat different. His pupils had shrunken. It felt like he wasn't even registering that Quinn was there.

"Quinn, I can hear your voice." Logan said with a smile. It was starting to make Quinn wonder what was with everyone he met today having an unsettling smile. "I did it, I learnt about all the information in all the servers. I learned about them all, and it was my reward."

Seeing how Logan was and how strange he was reacting, Quinn was slightly worried, but as long as he was in good health, they could help him through whatever they needed to get through.

"You don't understand Quinn, I learnt about everything. The Nest crystals, how to create clones, the truth of human history. I learnt about what Eno did, what he was trying to do, and I also learnt about....the vampires. I learnt about how the vampires were made and how it all started."

The last words Logan spoke had caught not only Quinn's attention but also Vincent's, for even a great and old vampire like him didn't know about the vampire's beginnings.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1325: Seeing them again

Although Quinn was greatly interested in the information Logan had to share, it seemed like Logan was out of it for the time being. Even he was struggling to process everything that was going through his head. The problem was, this was the last room, and there were no more doors.

The ship was large from the outside, so they knew there had to be more rooms than this. Yet, if they just followed where they had come from, it would only lead them back to where their ship was currently at the moment.

Quinn was hoping with the information Logan had, that he would be able to lead them in the right direction to try and find more hidden gems on the ship.

"Where should we go from here?" Quinn asked.

Hearing these words, Logan stood up on his own from the ground he was on. He was no longer looking at the ceiling and instead started to walk towards one of the large control panels.

"There is nothing else on this ship that is worth using, but before we leave, Le- I mean Richard wanted me to show you this," Logan said. "This is also part of your reward Quinn. He wanted you to also know his original sin, but I wanted to show you something else before that."

A strange ball-like device started to drop down from the ceiling. It had several lights and strange components on it. The next second, the entire room had changed, taking them back to a certain point in time. Logan had experienced this before, but the others had not. They were currently in an augmented reality room. When Logan had learned about his family's history and their past, they had created a video log for him.

One could record words and details of specific events based on one's memories. Using all this information, the imagery from the mind could be uploaded. One could even create movies easily this way, just with their imagination. The AI would do its best to recreate scenes as if playing a movie to the person they wished to see, only they were in the film themselves.

Suddenly, the room had changed. They looked to be in some type of house. It was empty, mostly filled with grey colours, and there was carpet on the floor with a sofa. The sound of a crying baby was heard. The mother held the baby in its hands as it swung it back and forth, and the father tried to reassure the baby that everything was going to be okay.

"What is this?" Quinn asked, looking at the images, for some reason, he wanted to reach out and touch the two parents looking after the baby. He felt like he knew them, yet at the same time didn't.

"I would advise you not to move or try to touch anything," Logan stated. "We are still in the same room, but everything you see is being projected. So although we can't see it, there are still the servers and other things in this place that you could run into.

"Honestly Quinn, I don't know how much Eno wanted me to tell you or whether he wanted me to tell you anything about this. I have information with me that I know could be dangerous in the wrong hands. For example, did you know that beasts used to roam Earth in the past? There used to just be several pieces of large contents floating about.

"They had also succeeded in mixing beasts and humans in the past before the Dalki, and the world even had powers such as magic. Yet, all of this information was lost but kept here at the same time. The beasting process, as they called it, was even information that Jim had used to successfully create the Dalki."

It was hard for Quinn to even keep up with what Logan was saying or imagine just how much he had learned. It was no wonder he seemed to be out of it when they had found him.

"This Quinn, I thought you deserved to know this. This here, are your parents Quinn, and the baby is you."

When Quinn was a young boy, his parents had died during the first Dalki war. He had found memories of them, but as the years went by, he couldn't remember what they looked like. For some reason, there were no photos of them either.

Yet now he could see them both clearly.

"Both of them were so beautiful," Quinn said, with a tear falling down his cheek. "How did they make an ugly baby like me." Quinn thought, thinking about his appearance before he had become a vampire.

However, there soon was one person who had entered the room.

"I see both of you are doing well." The man said, sitting down on a sofa opposite them. The person had walked straight through Quinn, and for a second, the particles dispersed and soon reappeared, forming his body. The person was Richard.

'Richard, Richard knew my parents, what!' Quinn thought.

"Yes, he is a quick learner. Just this morning, he nearly said, Dad!" His father said.

"Honey, that's ridiculous. He's only two weeks old. That would be impossible." His mother replied.

"A Quick learner is the trait of a certain person I used to know a long time ago. I'm proud to know that his and my blood run through this person's veins." Richard said with a smile.

The scene then started to warp and change from there without much being said.

"What, wait!" Quinn called out, running trying to grab his parents, but soon his hand hit something solid and hard. For a second, the blue particles broke up, showing that he had hit one of the giant servers in the room, and then the vision started to change again.

"Quinn, there weren't many interactions in Eno's mind that I could show of your parents, but I thought that you deserved to see them again," Logan explained. "As someone who has recently lost his parents, I can somewhat understand how you feel.

"Still, whenever you and Eno spoke, he always seemed surprised to see you, or it was unexpected, but the more I looked through his memories, I would frequently see him meet with a certain individual. The Bliss person you spoke off, and not only recently, but it seems that the two have known each other for a very, very long time.

"Eno and Bliss worked together in hopes to protect the world. Although we may never understand why Bliss wishes to protect the Earth, I thought that we might be able to find Richards reason, but it never did come to light. The memories he stored here were all from the day he had become a vampire, and there is none past it.

"There are some things, some disastrous things I have seen him do during his time, one of them involved the Blade family, but it all seemed to be due to the words of Bliss. He trusted her every word. Still, it seemed like although they were able to fix current solutions, ironically, it was almost as if they forgot to think far ahead into the future. Their solutions to the problems would sometimes cause even more problems, and Eno felt guilty for that."

The scene around them changed, and Quinn could be seen as a young boy. Due to the war, children were sent out to a Shelter together. Quinn had his own room, but he didn't really get on with the other kids, so he stayed in it most of the time.

Young Quinn was sitting in his bed, not doing much.

Quinn didn't need the video to show him what happened in this scene because this memory was ingrained in his head.

A knock was heard at the door, and young Quinn rushed to open it up. Expecting to see his parents had returned but instead, he saw what looked like a man in a military suit.

"This is the day...I found out my parents died in the war." Quinn said.

Mona and Logan were watching everything carefully, and they could see the heartbroken young Quinn crying, falling to his knees. Mona was also feeling heartache, remembering a similar situation herself. It was then that the man had handed Quinn a book, the book that started it all.

"Why..why are you showing me this, Logan!" Quinn asked. This was the most painful memory for him, and now he had to relive it.

Logan didn't say anything and allowed the scene to play out. Instead of following Quinn though, it followed the strange soldier. Eventually, the soldier left the room and quickly ran until it was on the roof of the building they were on. The soldier's face started to change, warping into another person....Brock.

"I did as you asked. He has received the book." Brock said.

A man who was looking out turned around, revealing that it was Richard Eno.

"Good, that young boy from now on will live a hard life, but he must survive. I will do everything I can to protect the Talen bloodline. That family, our family, I owe them both too much having raised them in this hell. Make sure everything is taken care of for him.

"Give him a place to live, send him enough money to do as he wishes and make sure he doesn't find out that it is coming from us," Richard said.

It was then that Quinn realised that all his suspicions were correct. He had learnt that children who had lost their parents were usually forced to live on the beast planets or those with no money since they were cheaper than on Earth. Yet Quinn had been able to live life on Earth. He thought it was due to the government supplying all children with this benefit. This was what he was told, but now he knew everything was Richard Eno's doing. He had been looking out for him from the very beginning.

"I know you disliked the person, and honestly, if I had to show you everything he did, it would take years to, and even with everything I know, I can't tell if he is a good person or a bad, but one thing for sure. He cared about you and your family. Even more so than his own purer Bloodline. He took a deep interest when your mother met your father." Logan said.

"I don't fully understand why, but Quinn, I know you know more about your past, so perhaps learning about how Eno came to be a vampire, you will get your answer," Logan said as the scene started to change once again. Back to when Eno was for a few seconds still a human.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1326: Eno's Sin

The scenery in the room was drastically changing, but unlike what they could see before this time, everything in it was almost unrecognisable. The walls looked to be made of an old stone. A wooden table appeared, and the room was a mess filled with scrolls all over the place.

It was clear they were not in a period that wasn't close to their current one.

Even more so, there were strange drawings all over the room, patterns of circles with weird characters and more illustrations.

'That looks similar to what took my system powers away.' Quinn thought, looking at it.

While the machine made the room, Vincent, who was able to witness everything Quinn could, was even more excited than him. If he had a body, he would be shaking head to toe. This was because they were about to witness a time when Richard Eno wasn't a vampire.

Richard Eno was one of the Original vampires. The start of the families and the beginning of everything for the vampire race. Their history had never been told or passed on for how they came to be. It was something that Vincent thought he would never be able to find out or know about in his lifetime, which was why he also chose to never pursue such a thing.

Soon though, they could see two people created by the simulation program, and they were those they had recently come to know. The people who had been projected into the room were Bliss and Richard. It was strange because Richard actually looked like an older version than what he knew him as today.

Thinking back, Quinn remembered that it was the same with Leo. After he had been turned, his appearance was younger than before.

While Bliss appeared to be far younger, someone who was barely an adult. There was something about the air around her... that annoyed Quinn nearly as much as when he saw Richard. However, as soon as the scene started to play out, there was something that shocked both Quinn and Mona.

"Lenny, I need to speak to you. The beasting process you went through. It will not be enough for you to be able to do anything." Bliss said. "I know you want to go out and fight against the shadow plague, but if you do, there is a good chance that you will end up dead."

This was a shocking fact, not that his name wasn't Richard. Quinn had somewhat guessed that perhaps Eno had gone through many different names during his time, but he thought at least his real name would be what the vampires knew him by as

well. Just what was real about him in the first place, Quinn wondered, and what was going on in the past.

"Are you sure that Ray can deal with them? Even in your visions, he doesn't turn up! Which means we have to do something that not even you can predict." Lenny then went ahead and grabbed a crystal. It was a crystal Quinn had never seen before, but Logan had recently learned of it, as one of the Nest Crystals.

At the same time, Quinn had heard a familiar name, the name of his ancestor, who was Ray, in the tablet.

'Wait, Richard knew who Ray was, but he didn't seem to have any idea he was in the tablet. Did Ray do that without telling anyone in his past?"

Not being able to understand the actions or what was going on with his ancestor at the time, he decided to continue watching.

"Remember what you told me," Lenny said, placing the crystal down on the floor in one of the strange circles Quinn had recognised. "That there are different types of gods. Some lay in human bodies, but there are also those that belong to the world of the dead.

"We need strong power. When I saw the shadow summon that Dragon. I have an idea of what they are trying to do. They are trying to contact the other side and bring them back.

If we can contact one of the gods from the land of the dead, then maybe we can win this war." Lenny said.

Bliss was absolutely stunned, but she could tell that she was unable to stop him. Lenny had already placed his hands on the Nest crystal, connecting with the other side. The circle started to light up, and the image from there started to change once again.

"For some reason, it seems like Richard's memories are unable to be accessed from there. It seems like whatever he saw on the other side has been wiped from his head." Logan explained. "But there is one thing that we can be sure about. He succeeded that day, he had obtained great power from one of the gods, and that was what had turned him into what he was... a vampire.

"You see, Richard wasn't just an original. He was the first Original. Knowing this later on, he had decided to change his name to Eno, which spelt backwards was One. As in the first vampire. It was only later that Richard found out that gaining such a power he had brought a plague into this world."

Listening to Logan's explanation, that had explained how Richard had become a vampire, but what about the other Originals?

"I have no footage to show you, but I can answer the question you are probably thinking, for Richard had eventually found out the answer himself. When connecting with the other world, he had opened a gate, and Richard wasn't the only one affected at the time. There were others as well.

"After learning what he had done, and how he had summoned a curse upon the others, he journeyed to gather the rest that had been affected. Finding them and trying to help them, grouping them together."

It was here that Quinn realised why Eno always tried to protect the humans from the vampires. Because the creation of the vampires in the first place was his fault, but he couldn't just get rid of them. Still, knowing what they had eventually become, Richard could never rest, always looking over them.

"Wait, Logan, but what about Arthur? He had become original at another time. How did that happen?" Quinn asked.

"That..." Logan said. "The whole thing, it was something that was orchestrated by Bliss. She had seen a future where the vampires rampage and rule over the humans. In order to stop this, she came to Eno for help. As I said, they always created solutions for the current problem, always to create more for the future."

"With her powers and the powers of the Nest crystal, learning from their past mistakes, they were able to open the path to the other side, without it leaking out into the world. Making Arthur into an original, someone who was meant to keep all of the vampires in check for the rest of eternity, but you know how all of that went."

Now Quinn was starting to understand why even his ancestor had such a disliking for this Bliss character. Always meddling into things and, in a way, forcing others to act to her will. He wondered if she had done something similar to Ray, and perhaps one day, Quinn could hear the tale from him himself.

"And that is Richard's tale of how the original vampires came to be. I'm not sure if you know why Richard wished to help you and your family so much. Even when learning about the vampire's past, there were things that seemed to be missing. It seemed even Richard didn't want everything about the world recorded." Logan said.

Logan could have gone into more detail into specific points. When the world forgot about magic, how to create clones and more, but this was the information he needed to protect now. Saying too much would just put others in unseen danger for no reason. He now knew why his test was a test of strength and where he needed to improve and continue his family's legacy of continually learning more.

Thinking about everything. Quinn thought of one thing. Ray Talen, his ancestor, must have saved them during their time, and that was what Richard was in debt to him for. At some point, his family line and Ray's family line must have mixed with

his mother and father. Giving him both the Eno blood and the Talen blood in his veins.

What Quinn didn't know, and he wished to know, was about Richard's or Lenny's past. What drove him so much to seek out such power in the first place. When looking at the image before he had contacted the other side, it seemed like there was pure hatred and a desire for revenge.

Thinking about this, Quinn soon felt the mask that he would attach to his side vibrate. It was a new one since he gave the last one to Alex for emergency situations. It had the same design but didn't come with the benefits.

Placing it over his face, Quinn could tell that the one calling him was Sam.

"Quinn, you answered, thankfully you did. I have news, I finally received word back from Paul and Leo, but it's not good news..." Sam reported.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1327: I Nominate...

Before the events that had occurred on Blade island, Erin and Leo had decided to head back to the vampire world. They did so after receiving their weapons in the hopes to aid Paul and the tenth family in whatever they thought might come.

They were unaware of the situation, but Paul had received their call, giving them hope that not too much could have happened in the week while they were away.

The two found themselves in the familiar tenth castle. Quickly, they both observed the castle area to see if everything was okay. The castle was intact, and the people inside seemed to be fine from sensing their aura.

"It seems not too much has happened since we left," Leo commented.

In front of them were Paul, Xander and Timmy. These three as well as Ashley, were the backbone of the tenth castle and its people while everyone else was away. However, after Leo had said these words, they could feel that something was up.

"Unfortunately, things are fine in the castle, but the settlement, the vampires and the pooling area, we can't say the same for," Paul replied. "The settlement was attacked. Muka said that he would pass the message of the Dalki being on this planet, but it seems like he was unaware of the strength and threat they possessed and hadn't done it soon enough. For while you guys were away, the settlement had suffered from an attack..."

Paul explained the details, giving them an overview of the situation of what had happened. Muka had been busy trying to see just who they could pull over to their side. They needed to find out two things, what exactly Bryce was doing with the missing people, and when it did come to light, those that would be willing to vote him out of his position.

He needed to be careful about this, for if one of the families found out what Muka was trying to do, his head would be off quicker than any of the leaders in existence.

Days went past, and eventually, the attack from the Dalki had occurred. It was only a force of around fifty of them. Far smaller than any of the attacks that had happened on the planets owned by the humans, but this force was slightly different.

They were filled with three spikes and two spikes, and hardly any one spiked Dalki could be seen. With their great strength and the fact that the vampire settlement was arrogant that nothing would attack them. They were able to leap through the forest and directly land in the settlement itself.

The vampires tried to attack, most of them not noticing what had suddenly appeared. They thought it was some type of beast and used their blood powers. However, for the pooling area, the vampire's blood powers weren't strong enough

to pierce a three spiked Dalki's skin, and the two spikes that were injured just grew in strength.

The pooling area was in a panic. Most of the inner castle areas refused to let those in from the pooling area until they fully grasped the situation. All apart from the tenth castle and thirteenth castle.

The thirteenth allowed for all those belonging to their family in the pooling area to enter the inner castle for the time being. The stronger vampires would help them. As for the tenth castle. Their fortifications had done them well.

The towers attacked any Dalki that came their way, and they had strong walls, seeing this. Vampires not only form the tenth family, but also other members from other families begged to be allowed to enter, and in the end, due to the situation. Paul had accepted.

Once those in the castle and from the king's palace got into action, they were able to somewhat turn the tide, beating a few of the Dalki.

Still, before they could do serious damage to the attacking force forces, they all suddenly retreated back into the forest.

The settlement and the castles weren't the same after the attack. The vampires were frightened about what happened, filled with questions about what those creatures were, and the worst part was, they hadn't received any answers.

With the possible ex-leader of the punishers about and now this, the vampires were even scared of leaving their homes for the first time.

"The Dalki really did attack then. Did they really not know what was going on in the human world? At how much we were struggling, were they really that arrogant that they felt they were never a threat in the first place!" Erin complained, remembering the first time she had met with the Dalki.

In a way, the vampire's situation now was similar to when the Dalki first came to earth. The thing was, humans had no clue about their existence; they had an excuse, but the vampires didn't. The leaders, the king, they all knew about the Dalki but chose to ignore the problem.

Even Muka, who seemed to be more of a sensible leader, was blinded this time by the news they had brought.

"Does that mean that there are currently other family members in the tenth castle at the moment?" Leo asked.

The two by Paul's side nodded, and it seemed like there was more to it.

"At the moment, problems are being brought up every day because of the families. Living in the pooling area and mixing in with those from the inner castle, there are

daily disputes." Timmy said. "Due to Quinn's system of making those that aren't just strong important members of the tenth family, they have gotten into more scuffles than expected. The other families are not used to our ways."

There was a lot to think about, and Leo had his own opinions on what the Dalki were planning to do. The attack wasn't a full on attack, and the attack also seemed to coincide with Arthur's plan, which made it seem more likely that Arthur was working with the Dalki.

"Actually, there are some people that I would like you to meet," Paul said. "There was a certain someone that was insistent that you get brought along for the discussions that are about to take place. As for you, Erin, I know your strength and it seems you have brought quite the weapon back with you this time."

Erin was surprised that even in its new sheath, Paul was able to tell what the weapon was, but since he was one of the few that were close to Oscar when he had the weapon, it made sense.

The sheath that had been made still carried the shape of the demon tier weapon after all.

"I was hoping you could help Timmy and Xander stop whatever is going on in the tenth castle." Paul requested.

Erin looked at Leo for permission. Of course, she didn't mind helping out the tenth family, but Paul asked her to fight against other vampires. She had always had Leo by her side in case anything went wrong, but this time she wouldn't.

"You have shown great improvement. In the end, you are the one that controls you, and now it is time for you to do so." Leo said, walking off with Paul.

The two of them headed to the throne room in the tenth castle, which came as a surprise because Leo could already tell that there were others on the other side of the door. None of them were weak either.

As the doors opened, one person immediately stood up from their seat at the grand table.

"Leo!" Silver called out, happy to see him. "It seems you have come back in good health."

There were a few of the vampire leaders in the room, all gathered in the tenth castle. It was hard for any vampire to believe that this would happen a few years ago, yet here they were.

Silver, the thirteenth leader Lee, Jim Talen the fourth leader, the fifth leader Sunny Kent, and the ninth leader Muka were present, all sitting down.

"Remember how I said that Muka had gone to try and gather those that might listen to him? For now, these are the ones he has managed to convince. The new leaders that have come to their position are hard to approach for the time being." Paul explained.

Muka cleared his throat, insinuating there was something else he wanted to say and stood up.

"There is a reason why we have chosen to gather at the tenth castle as well," Muka said, walking towards Leo. "Now that both the vampire knights have returned, I think it is safe to tell you our plan. Even if everything goes smoothly, one thing that will be undecided in all of this. It is who is fit to be the next vampire king or queen.

"In order for Bryce to be replaced, there needs to be a replacement. We have discussed this amongst ourselves, who would be fit for the role. At the moment, there is one family that the vampires are growing trust in day by day, a family that had saved the vampire settlement from its doom. The tenth family.

"Our wish and our plan is to make... Quinn Talen, the leader of the Tenth family, the next vampire king." Muka stated.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1328: Out of the tenth castle!

Erin, along with Timmy and Xander, got to work immediately. While the others had left the room to discuss whatever needed to be done, the three of them had left the castle to make rounds in the inner castle area.

"So tell me, what exactly do we need to do?" Erin asked.

During the walk, Timmy couldn't help but stare at Erin. She was a beauty in every sense of the word, and now that she was in the Vampire World her hair was jet black, rather than the usual blonde, crossing off every checkmark for his ideal girl.

She was straightforward, strong and independent, yet given his timid self it was nearly impossible for Timmy to approach her. He and Xander had both already worked with Erin in the past, during the time she had stayed at the tenth family's castle when Leo had been training the vampires.

Still, despite this, Timmy had never really found a way to really get close to her.

"Honestly, it's kind of a hard thing to report on. The disputes are so frequent that even if we started to resolve them one by one, by the time we would be done, new ones would have already started." Timmy replied with a sigh.

"We have started to make regular rounds to at least curb their numbers, but we aren't exactly Vampire Knights. The members of the tenth family show us some respect for what we have done, but the other family members only regard us as henchmen as best, so they refuse to listen to us." Xander explained their situation.

It didn't take long for Erin to see an example of what he meant.

One of the mansions had been converted into a feeding station for the refugee vampires. A special token was being handed out to each of the vampires on a daily basis and then these tokens could be traded to get a blood pack. There was more than more than this one station set up, so this was to stop vampires from claiming more than one blood pack.

It was a solution that Timmy had to come up with since vampires were quickly disregarding the rules. They had believed that most vampires would listen to orders and do what they had been told, but they had quickly come to realise that unless the order was coming from within their own family or the King himself, those vampires would act only in their own best interest.

It was then that they saw a group of vampires walk up in the line, cutting in front of other members.

"Hey, make way! We belong to the first family, which means we should get served first! Don't you know that King Bryce came from the first family?" The one that seemed to be talking a lot was a middle aged vampire with a thin frame named Pin.

Xander recognised him immediately, because he and his group had already been a troublesome bunch of vampires when he had still been in the first castle.

Pin had a real talent to gather like-minded vampires that would have his back no matter what. Not even some of the higher inner castle vampires or vampires that were on the rise wanted to mess with them. Still, Xander was no longer a vampire from the first family, he was now living in the castle and working for the tenth family.

"Have you forgotten that this is not the first family area? Right now, you're in the tenth family area, so you better follow our rules!" Xander spoke up, as he walked up to them. "All those people have been waiting their turn, so head to the back and do the same, if you want your blood pack!"

Pin took one look at Xander and scoffed.

"Do you see anyone else make a big deal out of this? You talk about fairness, but they all know their place! They also know that my place is right here! How dare someone who was kicked out of the first family think that they can just talk to anyone how they wish? If we were in the first castle I would-

"Are you deaf AND stupid? He just reminded you that this isn't the first castle!" Timmy interrupted Pin, to back up his friend. "If the first castle area is so great, why aren't you there? Nobody forced you to come here, yet for some reason, you chose to come to us after the Dalki attacked. If you don't like it, nobody is stopping you. Feel free to bring anyone who agrees with you to the first family!"

The others soon stayed silent about this, but they still refused to move. Recognising this stalemate for what it was, Erin walked right past Xander and Timmy. She didn't place her hand on either of the weapons nor the chains that were still wrapped around her hands.

"What is this? What's with that look on your face? Are you really trying to use force on a first family member? You know what will happen if you do?" Pin threatened her, while his buddies were ready to back him up. It wasn't just them, either, there were other members in the first family standing in the line that were getting ready to fight.

Meanwhile, those from the tenth family pooling area who knew her, were praying that Erin didn't attack them.

Timmy wanted to warn Erin, to not attack because of this very reason. Right now they had members from all sorts of families, and they were very loyal to their own family. The problem was, if they intervened too much with force, it could cause an entire fight to break out in the tenth castle.

"Get your hands off me, bitch!" Pin shouted out, going for the attack. For him in the pooling area and from the first family he knew that others were unlikely to

attack him. He could see the fear in the tenth family's eyes but his arm was too slow.

In mere seconds, Erin had gone past that slow punch from Pin, and placed her hand on his face, slamming it down to the ground. The next moment, the chains left her hands and wrapped around his two colleagues.

"If you don't appreciate our hospitality, then you don't deserve it. Either follow our rules or get ready for me to drag you out of this place!" Erin shouted, as she ran across the floor with the two vampire bodies scrappin along the ground. Using all her strength, she swung them out letting the chains let go at the right moment, for them to go flying off somewhere in the distance.

Their bodies were heard crashing in the ground, somewhere in the tenth area. When Erin turned around to look for any other volunteers, most of those who had wanted to act, had already moved back to their position. Only a small minority, seemed to still be debating if they should take on Erin or not, after all some of their fellow first family members not only got hurt but also disgraced. It wasn't done by a vampire knight.

Timmy and Xander seeing this, also decided to prepare themselves in case chaos was about to break out, but before anyone else moved, Erin did so first.

She noticed that Pin was still on the floor and hadn't recovered. Wrapping in chains, she swung his body towards herself, and grabbed him in the air.

"This person did not listen, and tried to attack a member of the tenth family. For those who do not listen..."

Erin then started to spin, swinging Pin's body holding him with the chains. round and round again. As his body went past those that were watching they could feel the wind, blowing their hair up. They had no choice but to stand back, for fear of what would happen if the body was to hit them.

Then letting go at the right time, as if hurling a heavy disk, Pin's body went up far higher in the air than the others, and from where they were they could see him being hurled over the large castle walls.

"Anyone else feeling unruly?" Erin asked, yet the whole place remained silent.

"Come on, let's head to the other areas."

Both Timmy and Xander could only watch in awe.

At the same time, a certain individual from a distance could see the body flying through the air, eventually crashing in the market place destroying several stands that had been left behind.

'So it looks like they have decided to all hold up in their castle areas. Do they really think they're safe? It's time to go for the next one... only this time, we attack together.'

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1329: The other Hero

Back in the room, Leo had just learned of the other leader's plan to apparently make Quinn the next Vampire King. To be honest he had expected a few things, but this was not one of them. Leo went to join the others at the table out of a sign of respect. He also gave a wave to Silver, something he didn't do to the others and the others didn't fail to notice that Silver also waved back.

Lee, who was sitting by his side, made note of his daughter's actions, it certainly was strange. At least he had never seen his uptight daughter act this way with anyone else before. When they finally sat down, Leo spoke his mind.

"I understand the situation you are in. I agree that the next King needs to not only be someone respected but one who has great strength. During my time here, I have learned of your rules that there is also the possibility that a leader can challenge another to win their vote."

"For this reason the person selected also needs to be strong, and after witnessing what Quinn was able to do against Cindy he would indeed be a good candidate. That being said, don't you think, all of you are getting ahead of yourselves a little?"

"Let's not even start how you basically selected someone who isn't currently present, from what I have seen, being the Vampire King is no simple task. Quinn already has a life outside of the vampire settlement, and if he were to become King, it would mean forfeiting his other life."

"While this might be the highest honour for a vampire, don't forget that he was born a human and that his responsibilities in the human world are already far more than someone his age should have to deal with. I would suggest you find another solution."

There was a serious tone when Leo spoke those words. It was at that moment that the others realised that Leo was perhaps far more loyal to Quinn than they had anticipated. He also had a point. They were so used to their own vampire lifestyle that the possibility of someone not wishing to become the King had never even crossed their minds.

Even then, there would be those that would try and encourage others to take the position it was an honour, but Leo had only cared about Quinn and his well being. After all, this was the person who had agreed to stay behind in the Vampire World for Quinn's sake.

"I think you are right, we did jump the gun a little." Sunny was the first to speak up after being chided, trying to make sure the tone was reset. Everyone in this room was meant to be an ally. "Of course, when making plans it is important to have more than one so we can adapt to the situation. Right now, Quinn is not even allowed back due to King Bryce's order."

"Still, I suggest we at least pitch the idea to Quinn, though I believe that he might be more interested in the proposition than you might think."

"Let's move onto the next subject." Jin interrupted to avoid a constant back and forth. "At the moment, we still lack any concrete evidence we can present. We only have Kazz' word that he is doing something. There is a reason why she hasn't been invited and that's because if she still hasn't shared anything with us, she's unlikely to give us further details or help us obtain the proof we need."

"What we need to do is find out two things. Why is Arthur going against the other members, and what he is doing with the missing members? Right now, the other castles are in chaos, and as leaders there are those who are more cautious to our movements, but the same can't be said for you guys".

"Silver, Leo, since the King is unaware that you have returned, you're free to investigate. They don't follow the knights as closely as us. You will be able to move more freely. We need to find out what is going on and our best chance of that is by heading to one of the families that is close to Bryce."

Hearing this, they waited for Leo to have an answer. It was clear that Silver had already accepted this task. On top of that Leo's had already proven his ability by not getting caught by others, and there was a chance that they might have to use force.

"Due to the severity of the situation I'm ready to help, but it must not affect the tenth family. I will need a disguise, so no one will be able to recognize me." Leo stated his demands.

With that done, Leo and Silver went off to prepare a plan, while the other leaders headed back to their castle. They needed to try and find out which family would be the most likely to have the information they required.

The new leaders, although they might be on Bryce's side, were unlikely to know anything.

Jil was no longer in charge of her castle, and was always kept by Bryce's side.

"If we're looking at those closest, then it can only be those two, the Royal Knights. Due to them being part of the other families they often go back. Usually, they do so every three days. So we will have to wait, or we could try to see if the new leaders know anything first, and if not move onto them from there."

"If we get caught, this could be a tough battle, are you sure you're ready for this?" Silver asked.

Leo nodded but he had one question he wanted to ask.

"I believe there is one more person that will be suitable for this task, so I would like to bring her along with me."

"As long as they are strong enough to fend for themselves and are at our level then I do not have any problems." Silver replied.

"You won't have to worry about that." Leo replied with a smile, but Silver was left wondering who this other person was that he wanted to bring.

In the end, Silver decided that the best choice was to start with Prima Killton, the new Royal Knight. This was because they could easily move from the thirteenth castle, to the twelfth castle. If they needed a quick escape or something serious happened they could get some help at least.

However, they also chose to wait a few days, so they could confront Prima himself, rather than the new leader Kim.

While they waited, Erin had continued to deal with disputes and with each passing day, the number of them had lessened. She then later was informed of a message delivered by Leo, that he would call her when needed.

Finally the day arrived.

Led by Muka, Leo, Erin and Silver traveled underneath the tunnels to the thirteenth castle. Here they had been given certain clothes and disguises to use.

It wasn't anything fancy but it didn't need to be. They wore black masks that had slits where their eyes and faces were, not that Leo needed this where his eyes were, but they thought it was best that they were all disguised in the same manner.

After changing into their new set of clothes, the three traveled to the bottom floor of the tunnels, planning now to head into the twelfth castle. Muka, who was in charge of the combination for all the locks under the tunnels in the first place, would be ready by the twelfth castle to unlock them.

Alas, while they were travelling through the tunnels, on the day they were planning to infiltrate the twelfth castle, something unexpected had occurred.

A loud bang was heard from above, so loud and strong that dirt was falling from the ceiling of the deep tunnels they were in.

"What is happening?" Silver asked.

The two of them, using their abilities, could see what was above ground. That the settlement was once again being invaded by the Dalki.

Above ground, Dalki had landed in the pooling area. It was at the centre of the settlement. Usually it would be filled with vampires and more roaming the streets,

but instead it was deadly quiet. Vampires still lived in their homes here, as not every family had chosen to let in all those from the pooling area. So they had no choice but to remain in their homes.

One of the families in the area peeked through their window, only to see the invading Dalki that had landed. The most prominent one was a particularly large individual with four spikes on its back.

'Four spikes, but in the last attack, the strongest one that was beating everyone only had three spikes! Does that mean this one is stronger?' The worried mother thought, as she went over to her young children holding them tightly.

'Please, anyone, come and save us!'

Last time the castles had been slow to act and send out troops, all of those still in the pooling area believed that their lives were lost, until...

Those watching from their houses noticed that all the Dalki were looking in a certain direction.

Turning their heads, they wondered what they were observing, only to see their hope. Tears filled their eyes as they could see that their own King in the red blood armour had come down personally to save them.

"This threat will be dealt with quickly!" Bryce announced. "By my own hands."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1330: The list

It certainly was a strange sight to behold. Neither the Royal Knights nor a single Royal Guard was by the King's side. For him to appear on his own and in the pooling area of all the places to be and to protect, it surely was a historic moment.

Still, for the vampires whose standing had been on the bottom of the barrel, his being there had instantly won over their trust and respect, especially since they had believed their lives to be over. The fifty or so Dalki that had attacked the first time had returned, only this time they had brought along a four spike.

"Bring out the one I want!" King Bryce demanded as he pulled his sword out of his cane and threw it into the air. It looked like it was levitating in place. However, if one was to look at it closer, they would see that the sword had been laced with blood, allowing him to use his Absolute Blood Control to keep it there. What's more, blood started to gather around the sword itself, increasing its size by three times.

The four spiked Dalki charged forward at a great speed, yet the Vampire King remained calm, and at the right moment he hurled his weapon at them. With his blood control he was able to make the blood sword move at a speed that was too great for the Dalki to react. Whatever defences the Dalki had proved to be useless against his attack, bisecting the creature from head to toes. The blood sword only stopped once it struck the ground.

Lifting his hands up once again, as if he was pulling two things apart, Bryce made his next move. The blood covering the sword immediately broke apart, creating waves of blood that crashed into the Dalki around it, injuring them all. Some of the weaker ones fell to the ground, dead.

"These creatures are nothing but beasts! They're hardly stronger than humans, so there is nothing to fear!" Bryce announced loudly.

Hearing his words, some of those that had been hiding in their homes started to come out on the streets and began to attack the Dalki together.

"If the King is willing to fight, we must not be afraid and fight alongside him!" They shouted.

The battle between those in the pooling area and the Dalki began in earnest. Despite his claims, the vampires weren't faring any better than they had done the last time, but every once in a while, when he saw them struggle, King Bryce would help them out with his skills, reigniting their will to continue fighting.

'Yes...the more blood gets spilt, the more effective the Absolute Blood Control becomes. Fortunately, even the blood of those lesser beings has a use. Arthur... I

know you're here, but suit yourself. The longer you wait to show yourself, the stronger you allow me to become.' Bryce thought confidently.

It was at that moment that something strange appeared over the skies.

"On a planet that is in complete darkness for eternity, my shadows are able to thrive. You might get stronger based on the amount of blood, but there is no limit to the shadows I can use."

A dark shadow stretched over all the castles in the Vampire World, from the King's castle over the tenth's castle and even including the fourteenth's castle. What light they had allowed to be reflected from the moon was now gone. Only the lights from the beast crystals in the street remained.

"This is not that brat's doing, there is only one person that has this much power." Bryce uttered to himself, as he started to gather blood from the injured vampires in the pooling area.

The next second, more Dalki fell from the shadow above in the clouds, but they weren't alone. On their back there were human figures who wore black masks over their faces. The problem was that those falling from the sky weren't just headed for the pooling area, they were landing all throughout the settlement.

All of the vampire leaders had come out from their castles to witness the strange occurrence, and even they couldn't believe their eyes.

"An attack from the sky!" Lee recognised from his balcony. Looking down, he saw all his people who had considered themselves safe inside the wall, stare up and do nothing.

"Everyone, prepare yourselves for battle!" Lee shouted.

He prepared his red string, throwing it out towards two of the Dalki, then standing on the balcony Lee pushed off, leaping in the air, and pulling himself forward. The string wasn't able to be retracted like a certain spider, but he knew the Dalki would try to resist being pulled down, so it allowed him to close the distance.

Instantly, he saw one of the masked men use their red aura sending out a blood swipe. For Lee this was simple to deal with, he had hardened his own hand with blood, and was able to smash through it, landing on the Dalki's back before they had landed. The three kept falling, making it hard for them to see what was happening, and soon all of the Dalki with the Masked had come crashing down into each of the castles and their inner areas.

When the debris and dirt disappeared they could see that Lee had finished off the Masked, its head having been sliced off and the two spiked Dalki on the ground had a clear wound through its chest.

The others would have been amazed at the work of their leader, who seemed to continue getting stronger unlike the other leaders, but the whole area had fallen into chaos.

It was true, the thirteenth leader Lee had fortified his training. After nearly losing his son, and fighting against the first leader, he had acknowledged that the peaceful days of the vampire settlement would come to an end eventually, so he needed to grow stronger.

But could the same be said for the other castles?

"Everyone!" Lee shouted loudly so all his vampires in the area could hear. "Now is not the time to worry about the others finding out about our secret. I know some of you are worried what the King will do to us once they find out what will happen to our family, but I want you all to fight with your full strength. Activate your Inner Blood weapons!"

Thanks to a certain special vampire that was no longer in the thirteenth family, they might just pull through this battle better than any of the other families had expected.

Over in the tenth castle, Paul too was worried about what was happening. He had been prepared for another Dalki attack, though he hadn't accounted for them to be accompanied by the Masked.

Xander, and Timmy were in the inner castle area, while Ashley was stationed at the gates.

The gates were more fortified compared to the rest of the camp and Paul imagined this would be the same for the other castle, since none had assumed that an attack would happen from above.

What Paul didn't expect though, and it seemed like neither did the enemy, was the special towers that Quinn had implemented. There were two towers each stationed at the three entrances and also two towers right in front of the castle gate.

As soon as the Dalki got within a certain area falling from the sky, the towers immediately started to fire off. Due to them being airborne it was nearly impossible for them to move out of the way. The Masked that were on top of the Dalki, started to fire off their red aura skills, but there was a clear winner among the two powers. The tower shots were just too much and eventually ended up hitting the Dalki.

This time, unlike those that had entered the pooling area, there were many one spiked Dalki among those falling from the sky, and with a single hit from the towers, they fell to the ground, never to get back up again.

'Quinn, even when you aren't with us, you are still helping us.' Paul thought, while observing everything from the castle, ready to go down. However, before he did, he needed to contact the Cursed base.

He tried to use his communicator, but just like when the Dalki had attacked the other planets, their communication devices seemed to be jammed.

'If I turn on the teleporter, I can send someone through quickly, and they can inform the others about what is going on.'

As if the world was telling him not to, Several of the Dalki and Masked managed to come crashing through into the castle. Not much damage was done since even the castle itself was more fortified compared to the others but there was one worry going though Paul's mind.

"The teleporter!"

Bryce, who had entered the inner pooling area, saw the chaos unfold around him. With all of them under attack, he didn't know which castle to go and aid. Perhaps he should turn around and enter his own castle. However, despite Bryce's strength, the strongest Dalki in the attack, were currently in front of him, and they weren't going to let him do as he wished so easily.

One of the vampires was picked up by another four spike, and was hurled directly towards Bryce. Grabbing his sword, Bryce had no hesitation slashing though the vampire that blocked his site.

"Arghh!" Bryce yelled in frustration. "Arthur!!!"

"Don't worry young one, I have a list to go through, and I will be saving you for last."

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1331: Low and high

Somewhere covered in dark shadows, Arthur was able to witness everything going on. The plan had been set in motion and slowly things were playing out exactly as that person had foreseen it. The Punisher was surprised at the accuracy of all of it. Had the vampires always been this predictable in their behaviour?

Even though he knew that everything going according to plan should be a good thing, somehow all of it started to feel meaningless.

'I wonder how they are doing... So far he hasn't gone back on his word, so they should all be safe...' Arthur thought to himself.

He looked towards the other castle who had come under attack. His hearing allowed him to listen to the shouts and cries of all those affected, though he tried to mostly ignore them, as he closed his eyes.

'It's a shame that the other castles had to be dragged into all of this, but perhaps it's for the better. In a way, if they were forced to continue to live in this world, then it would be cruel. Take this as a type of kindness.'

Paul rushed through the castle, heading for the throne room where the teleporter had been placed. On his way there, he encountered a few of the Masked who had managed to crash through.

The Vampire Knight swiftly avoided the red aura attack, only to soon feel a fist from the two spiked Dalki hit him straight in the stomach. His body was lifted in the air, but Paul had made sure to hold onto the Dalki's forearm.

"Touching me is not a good idea." Paul's hands started to glow slightly green, and soon the Dalki could feel its whole body weakening. Banging his hands together, a set of claws could be seen appearing from his knuckles. It was a special mechanism of his gloves.

With them, Paul started to stab the Dalki over and over right in the chest, yet instead of growing stronger, it lost more of his strength. His blade-like claws had been laced with poison, bringing the creature also closer to death.

The Dallki dropped to the floor, and Paul soon moved over to the Masked, stabbing him right in the face, destroying the mask and killing the wearer in an instant. Still there were more down the hallway that needed to be dealt with.

"I don't have time for this!" Paul cursed.

Fortunately, he wasn't the only one in the castle. Following the noise, some of his own men came up. Those that were once part of his army and now vampires could see their commander in trouble, so they started to move towards him.

"Wait! Don't worry about me, head to the throne room and make sure it's safe!" Paul ordered.

Without hesitation, the soldiers followed his order and started to head to the teleporter.

Seeing this, the Masked and Dalki thought to turn around but before they could, a bright light started to appear from Paul. Eight large green balls of solid poison were hovering around him.

"I said, I don't have time to deal with you lot!" Paul activated his soul weapon and his deadly poison was something no one wanted to touch.

It didn't take the Vampire Knight long to deal with the intruders inside. After he was done with them, he stayed at his location to fend off any other, but more never came. Since Paul was still close to the balcony before heading off to check on the condition of the teleporter and the rest of his people, he chose to take a peek outside to observe the situation.

He could see that the gargoyles had activated and were now aiding the tenth family in this fight. Those from the pooling area were also fighting for their lives. The stronger members were dealing with the Dalki, while the weaker pooling vampires were dealing with the strange Masked.

Although the pooling vampires seemed to be weaker than those traitorous vampires behind the masks, since the vampire refugees from the other families were all there, their sheer number allowed them to overwhelm the intruders.

'All of this seems strange. Their forces are strong and the enemy clearly has information on the vampires and their families. Although we might be faring better compared to the other families, I doubt any of the vampires will have trouble dealing with such measly forces, especially if the leaders get involved. So what exactly is their plan in all of this? Why are the Dalki attacking us?'

The thing that Paul didn't know, nor anyone else in the other castles for that matter, was that the situation in each of the castles differed greatly from one another. The number of Dalki and Masked that had been sent over, wasn't random. There was a calculated amount sent over to each of the castles, each with their own purpose.

The first ones to figure this out were Leo and Erin as they traveled through the tunnels. They could see what was happening above, especially the Blind Swordsman who had more control over his ability, allowing him to see everything from a type of bird's eye view.

Here, he could tell that the forces attacking each of the castles were different. Especially at the twelfth castle where they were heading. For some reason, it had the least number of enemies compared to the rest.

'Should we take this as a good thing, or a bad thing?' Leo wondered, but regardless they continued to travel through the tunnel. They could see Muka waiting for them. He didn't say much as the fighting was still going on above and he knew there would be those looking for him.

"I have stayed here for as long as I could, but I must now leave. Use this opportunity and find out what Bryce is doing." Muka said, placing his hand on the strange lock, and turning all the different shapes until the door moved to the side, allowing them through.

The tunnels were a great way for the group to enter the castle. Following it, it led to a giant trap door, which they slid open. With everything going on, it was a given that no one was currently guarding the place. The three of them found themselves in a dark cellar. There was no light, but it didn't matter for the vampires who could see just fine.

"Due to the chaos outside, it looks like most of the guards and vampires have gone outside." Silver noted, pressing her ear up against the door leading to a room above.

"The attack doesn't seem to be as bad here, so the leader and other vampires must have decided to stay inside. Although I don't think this energy is strong enough to be from the Royal Knight, at least the leader of the twelfth castle should be here." Leo commented.

Leo was essentially asking if they still wanted to proceed with the plan. They had originally come here today, because the Royal Knight was supposed to return to his family. Every three days he would pay them a visit, but due to the attack, he appeared to have gone elsewhere, probably to protect the King.

"I think we should continue." Silver replied. "She might be a new leader, but there is a good chance that she still knows something. Arthur still had targeted the other young leader for information, so probably they know something as well."

Going through the rest of the castle, Leo had asked Erin to guide them. Even now the Vampire Knight was still training her in all aspects and he wanted her to get better at using her ability.

Silver found this interesting to say the least, and eventually, through Erin leading them, found out that the two of them shared the same ability and that the girl wasn't any worse than her mentor. They were able to avoid all the vampires clearly until they had reached the top floor, but here was the limit, as two guards stood outside.

"Let me handle this one." Silver suggested, since she had felt quite useless so far. Using her string she quickly and quietly sealed the mouths of the guards, before she strongly banged their heads together.

At that moment, both Leo and Erin burst through the doors. This was the only thing they could do. Eventually they would be found out, so they needed to blitz in the

room as quickly as possible to learn everything they could. The doors were quickly opened and the two that Erin had beaten were choked inside while the double doors behind them were closed.

The new leader, Kim Prima, noticed this and immediately stood up from her seat, drawing her rapier.

"Intruders, the enemy has entered the castle!" Kim said.

The dozen or so vampires who were with her in the room went straight for the three. It was only natural for the vampire leader to mistake the three as intruders given their outer appearance.

The others were ready to fight, head on, until strange shadows dispersed from the centre of the room seemingly out of nowhere, and a figure could now be seen standing in the middle of the room.

"Arthur!" Kim called out, her hands shaking.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1332: The wrong or right

Out of all the leaders that Leo and his group could have selected to try and interrogate, it appeared as if their luck had made them choose the very same one that Arthur had decided to go for. Seeing him appear, confirmed their thoughts that the twelfth family had been on the original Punisher's hit list.

Leo had managed to figure out something else as well. The low amount of forces in the twelfth castle... it was done on purpose.

The number was just perfect to make the intruders seem like a menace, but not to the point that the leader had to come out and deal with them. As such, Kim Prima was still in the throne room, which was exactly where Arthur had wanted her to be.

When seeing Arthur, the others had expected Kim to order an attack, to further the distance or to fight for her life but her next actions were something none of them had expected. A leader was a position that was respected and feared by all others, the only person they would ever have to bow to would be the King, yet...

Kim Prima had suddenly gotten on the floor, and repeatedly lifted her head up and down begging.

"Please, Arthur, spare me! I really didn't know what they were planning to do back then! Killton took me along without saying anything and after that I just followed orders!"

The three were frozen in place, everyone was.

Silver didn't know how to proceed with the plan. Whether they should abort and turn away. However, after hearing the words spoken from Kim's mouth she wanted to stay.

'With Arthur here, maybe we can learn why he is so going after the other families.' Silver thought, yet there was one thing worrying her. 'Are we even allowed to learn his reason or will Arthur attack us if we do? What if his revenge is just on the whole vampire settlement in the first place. There has to be a reason why he chose to switch sides instead of acting on his own.'

Out of everyone there, the first one to make their move was Arthur himself. He lifted up his hands, and the other ones that were in the room and by Kim's side, started to vanish into the shadows.

"My Shadow lock should be able to keep them in there for a long time, no matter how much they struggle." Arthur stated. Finally, he turned around and looked at the three strange people who had entered the throne room.

The Punisher had used his Shadow cloak skill to enter the room and he had seen what the three had attempted to do. This had told him that they weren't on the same side as the twelfth leader.

However, Arthur also didn't recognise the masks or outfits that the three of them were wearing either, so he had to make a decision what to do with them. For the time being, he lifted his hand.

"If you do that, we'll break out." One of the voices said. It was a female voice, but it hadn't come from Silver. Instead it was another one that sounded confident, and had her hand held on the large sword on her back.

The confidence was something Arthur wasn't expecting. Even if all three of them were leaders, they should have some fear after seeing how easily he had taken care of those around Kim. Yet they seemed completely unfazed by what he had done.

To top it all off, Arthur felt like the voice sounded familiar, although he was unable to recall who it belonged to. Rather worried about the person that was behind him, he decided to turn his attention to the three in front.

"Why...are you here?" Arthur asked, as he put his hand down.

The three looked at each other, but the best person to speak they all thought would be Silver, knowing that she stepped forward but not too far from the other two. She wasn't as confident as the others.

"We know you are going after the vampires, but it doesn't seem like you are going after all the vampires. We've come here to gather information about what happened. It's one thing for you to kill one of the leaders, but why did you put her body out for everyone to see?" Silver asked.

Arthur started to chuckle.

It seemed like his hunch was right. There were still some vampires in the settlement that were trying to find out the truth, not that changed the situation much anyway.

"I'm glad to know that not everyone is blindly following what the other says, but is it really enough?" Arthur asked. "I don't know how old you are, or if you were alive during my time of reign, but have they really made me out to be someone who would really disrespect someone's body like that?"

"I won't deny that I was the one to kill Suzan, however until her last breath she had denied to provide me with the information I sought. What would be the point of my desecrating her body after that? I was not the one that plastered her body on her castle walls like that. It is a shame, but he was right about how the King, or the others would react."

Hearing this, Silver was slightly confused. What did Arthur mean? He stated that he wasn't the one that had placed Cindy's body on her castle wall then who was and for what reason....

It was then that the reason hit her.

Who was the one who had benefited the most after that? In the first place, they were trying to make it, so all the vampires believed that Arthur was the enemy. That he was coming for them all. Arthur had helped Quinn and some of the leaders last time, and even had favour of the old King, so they needed to make sure that all the leaders were against him.

If it wasn't for Kazz confessing that her father was behind the missing people, then perhaps all of the leaders would have been fooled into believing that Bryce was doing everything for the sake of the vampires and not just to save his own backside.

"As for why I am doing this?" Arthur's body started to sink down, only to reappear directly behind Kim. He picked her up by the back of her neck and lifted her in the air.

"Why don't you tell them? Tell them why you are so frightened and why you are asking for forgiveness?" Arthur instructed her.

It was strange to see Arthur act in such a way. Silver had only seen him a few times before, but she got the expression of him being a calm man, who had been smiling most of the time. Had the smile been just a facade, or was his current behaviour due to him already deciding to go down this path?

"It-it-it was the expedition. At the time, Bryce had received permission to take a few leaders out for training! He.... He had lied to the King, and had secretly brought along a few of the leaders. They all knew the real reason. All of these leaders had lost a lot during the war of the Punishers against the vampires."

"All of them had felt that the Punishers had gotten off lightly. Some of them were scared that the Punishers could grow into a force that would be even bigger than the vampire settlement, so they decided to deal with them before it could happen."

After everything had been answered, before the others could even react with the strength in his hands and fingers, Arthur snapped Kim's neck, in front of them all.

"Now that you know the reason behind my actions, I hope you won't get in my way. I have a list to get through with and I would prefer not having to add you to it. I am determined to finish myself no matter what with my own hands." Arthur said, dropping Kim's body to the floor.

"Those people died just because they knew me. They died because we were asked to help the vampires, forced to live a life punishing vampires for their crimes and

when we wanted to leave we had to fight for our freedom, and even then it wasn't enough. They chased us down to get rid of us."

"I went to sleep thinking that I had finally found a happy life, but instead of helping them, I only ended up leaving them to an even curler fate. The vampire's reign is over, but before they go, I have decided that I will personally take care of their revenge before that happens."

At that moment, a loud scream could be heard behind the three, and they soon jumped out of the way, to see a certain vampire run past all of them, holding his rapier in his hand.

"Arthur!!!!" Prima shouted, as he went forward ready to do battle.

The three of them watching this, now having learned the truth, had to make a decision. Who should they side with in this fight?

Arthur, or the vampire settlement?

\*\*\*\*\*

## Chapter 1333: The shadow's weakness

Prima Killton, one of King Bryce's Royal Knights, was known as the fastest vampire in the settlement and the others could see it as he had dashed across the room in almost a second from the doorway all the way to Arthur.

From the yell in his voice, it seemed he was clearly distressed due to seeing Kim on the floor. Erin, noticing how much anger was in the vampire's voice, could only guess that Kim was somehow related to Prima.

However, Silver knew what Arthur was doing was wrong. The people who he was going after had also killed innocent lives and for what reason, just because they were scared. They were even the ones that attacked first. Which was why she, and it seemed like the others were struggling to move.

The shadows around Arthur started to move, but it looked as if Prima had improved since last time she had seen him fight, as he dashed in even faster, allowing for the tip of his rapier blade to go through the shadow before it could reach his weapon to block its attack.

Still, Arthur had moved slightly, making the attack miss, and it looked like the shadow would soon catch up. Prima quickly pulled his sword out before it was able to touch the shadow and continued his thrust again and again.

It was strange watching the 'fight', since all they were seeing a shadow slowly chasing after Prima, but each time he would move position and attack in a different place. Arthur could simply cover his body in shadows, but if he was to do that then he wouldn't have the opportunity to attack either.

'Prima's speed improved, and he hasn't even activated his ability yet.' Silver noticed. 'He also is aware of what the shadow can do, so he keeps his range, making sure his weapon stays untouched. Did Prima start training after the loss to Cindy?'

Regardless, it looked like there was a stalemate between the two sides.

"Do you think I would let you touch me?" Arthur asked. "I know what your ability is."

Prima's ability allowed him to increase his speed after each successful hit within a certain amount of time, yet so far he hadn't managed to land a single strike on the Punisher, despite how fast he was.

"Let's see you deal with this." Arthur said, lowering his shadow and now covering the whole ground with it.

Prima started to leap back, making sure not to touch any of the shadows. Instead he thrust forward hitting the air, and out from the tip of his blade he fired what looked

similar to a Blood swipe, only the shape was different as it came out like an arrow. Despite it being fast, Arthur was able to move out of the way, seemingly having an easier time evading this Blood arrow than the rapier itself.

Some watching this couldn't tell the difference in speed, but such a minimal loss in speed was apparent for these high level fighters. The strongest of the vampires.

'This man is strong. They say I am the fastest vampire yet there is someone right in front of me who can match up to my speed. The title seems to only apply to the current generation. The only way to attack him is to somehow get past his shadow and hit him directly with my sword, but how?'

It was then that a red string had appeared and had wrapped around Arthur's arm. It wasn't that the Punisher hadn't seen it coming, but more that he had ignored it because he hadn't felt any enmity coming from it. Nor did he think it was something serious to worry about when comparing to Prima across the room.

"I'm sorry Arthur, I understand your pain, but I've learned certain things from the others. You might have your reasons to team up with the Dalki, but the fact remains that your side is even attacking my own family's castle right now and you're doing nothing to stop it! I have no other choice but to choose to save the vampire settlement, my home!" Silver shouted.

Silver yanked on the string attempting to at least overpower one of Arthur's arms. Unfortunately, it looked like it hardly had made any movement at all, though Prima believed that he should be at least slightly restricted by the strings.

Although he hadn't figured out who exactly these mysterious people were, he would gladly take any help facing Arthur. Seeing the strings, told him that at least one of them was from the thirteenth family, who he had believed to be on their side against the Punisher.

"I have no grudge against the thirteenth family, but I will also not let them get in my way." Arthur stated as he yanked on the string, causing Silver to stumble into the shadow. At the same time, Arthur raised one hand and made a Blood wall blocking all of the attacks that were coming towards him from Prima who had wanted to use the opportunity when his attention had been elsewhere.

Although the shadow was a skill that was slow, making it somewhat of a weakness, his blood skills were not.

'How long has it been since I last used Blood skills... or tasted human blood?" Arthur wondered. 'Well, I suppose it doesn't matter.'

Out of the shadow that was on the ground, eight figures started to appear. They had human appearances, but were completely made out of shadow. All of them were Arthur's Shadow clones.

They quickly proceeded to surround the Royal Knight. Prima thought this was an opportunity, if he attacked the clones' bodies then his ability would activate. He pierced the first one with his rapier expecting for it to go through the body, which it did, but the body didn't bleed, and instead shadows just rippled.

As soon as the rapier had touched the first body, the shadow effect had started and began to move over the weapon. The weapon had slowed down slightly. Still, the Royal Knight felt like he could still pull out the weapon with brute force.

Before he could though, another shadow hit Prima directly in the face, sending him flying back and his body flipping through the air. He quickly regained his balance landing on the floor on all fours. With a sore face he wondered what had just happened.

'What's going on? Those clones can fight and attack me, but then why isn't my ability working on them?' Prima was confused.

However, Leo could see what had happened. Through his ability he had seen that Arthur had switched positions with one of his clones, and his real body was now present in the one that attacked. So the hit that had landed was a full strength hit from Arthur himself.

Although Prima didn't know what happened, he was struggling with how exactly he could face Arthur. The floor was covered in shadow he couldn't touch. Any attacks could be blocked with the shadow, and now he even had clones helping him.

The only time Prima had gotten close to hurting Arthur was when he had help, but even then Arthur still had blood abilities on top of that.

It was at that moment that a certain individual went to strike at one of the shadow clones, and in an instant the shadow dispersed, and the clone's body had disappeared. The next person had struck with a red blade doing the same to the one next to them.

'How? How are their blades not slowing down when they touch the clones? Are they special weapons?' Prima thought.

Even Silver, who had now gotten out of the area of the shadow on the ground, was amazed by what was happening. One by one, the clones were all quickly dealt with, and Arthur had transferred his energy back to his original place at the back of the throne room.

The two masked people that had dealt with the clones started to walk forward, and it looked like their feet were soon going to enter the shadow space that was on the ground.

"Wait, if you touch that it will slow you down!" Prima yelled out a warning, thinking that maybe these others didn't know much about the Punisher's powers. It

wouldn't surprise him, after all their existence had mostly been forgotten by all but ancient vampires. It wouldn't be uncommon to not know what the shadow exactly could and couldn't do.

Then, as if Prima was witnessing a miracle, when the two masked stepped on the shadow, they could see that a clear circle appeared around their feet. It was as if the shadow was unable to reach them. They could walk through it fine without the shadow touching them.

This was because both Erin and Leo were using the third stage of Qi.

"You harmed a boy that I have come to respect and like very much. You were once a man that I admired but I can not understand what could have happened for you to have put that boy through what you did!" Leo stated, holding his sword with both hands.

Erin also decided to pull out something from her back, the Demon tier beast weapon. As she held it in her hands, frost began to envelop her hand and the weapon.

"Oh, so it's the two of you." Arthur sighed, recognising the voices and the stance.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1334: Off the list

As soon as Arthur saw the stance the pair of masked people had taken, memories started to flash through his head. It was impossible for him to mistake them, as Arthur himself had trained the two of them in combat. He had fought them time and time again, hoping to improve their skills and also teach them what it meant to be a vampire.

"It seems you have grown even stronger since then. Never in my wildest dreams would I have imagined that I would be placed in this situation." Arthur said with a pleased smile on his face.

This time, the first one to attack was Leo. He slashed vertically four times, sending out Blood swipes with his sword. As soon as they left his blade, all the shadow from the ground that was around it, started to move away.

Seeing this, Arthur understood that his shadow wouldn't work against this attack. He ran to the right side of the room, away from his position. It was the first time during the fight that he seemed to be taking the fight seriously, but the second he did move a large tunnel of ice was seen shooting out his way.

Seeing as this attack wasn't the same, Arthur thought it would be easy to use his shadow to block it, but he could see something that the ice tunnel was abnormal as well. Although his shadow didn't spread out, like it did with Leo's attack, he could see something else happening.

All the shadow that was touching the ice, was starting to be frozen.

'My shadow is actually losing out to the ice, this is certainly a first for me!' Arthur realised, if the ice tunnel touched him, he would be done for.

The tunnel continued forward and eventually ended up hitting the back throne room wall.

'These people, who are they? What are these powers and how are they actually fighting against the Punisher!' Prima was amazed but he knew that as the original Punisher, Arthur was rumoured to be as strong as any King, so he shouldn't fall that easily.

The next second, Leo started to move to a certain spot in the shadows. It seemed strange and Prima was wondering what exactly he was doing until Leo turned his blade... and stabbed into the ground underneath him.

Surprisingly, a clang was heard and the next moment Arthur rose from the ground, with a large sword in his hand above his head. Swinging it around he soon shifted the weight from Leo's sword, yet Arthur's appearance had slightly changed.

"I didn't think I would have to use this here, but it just shows how much the two of you have grown." Arthur was now wearing his full set of red blood armour, and at the same time, he also had unchained his sword that he had kept on his back.

Erin, looking at her sword, could see the ring was on cool down, so she was unable to use the ice tunnel skill again, but there were still the other two active skills she could use.

Arthur and Leo were now battling out with their sword skills, clanging against each other. The only problem was that Arthur was able to overpower Leo, even with the use of his Qi.

Leo had hoped that by striking with the small amounts of the third stage of Qi in spots he could harm Arthur, but each time, rather than blocking the attack with his sword, Arthur was parrying them to the side, preventing the Qi shots to hit his body.

It left Leo wondering if Arthur really knew the danger of Qi to a vampire, or whether he was just following some type of instinct.

At the same time, Leo was constantly making sure that his feet remained covered in the third stage of Qi, in order to block out the shadow from reaching him, otherwise he would instantly lose. Not leaving him much choice to do other things with it.

"I don't understand!" Leo spoke, trying to strike even harder. "Someone of your skill, someone as great as you, why did you do that to him? Why did you harm the boy?! As a teacher I can understand that you might have wanted to teach him, but what you did was far too cruel!"

Hearing this, Arthur swung his blade once more, only this time he used his Blood aura. The whole time he had refrained from doing so, so the sudden force strongly pushed Leo back. The Blind Swordsman covered himself with his sword but the strength was too much, the back of his sword had cut his own chest, though not deep enough to deliver a fatal blow.

"This world is cruel, though I don't think you need me to tell you that. No, going easy on him just because of his age, especially when I knew what he would face in his future, would have been foolish. I was..." Arthur stopped there, as he felt another presence approaching.

Erin was in the air, swinging her blade and as she did, the sword started to vibrate letting out a screeching sound. It was then that Arthur noticed that his weapons started to freeze over slightly.

'The first skill of the Demon tier weapon can still be used!' Erin thought.

Disregarding it, Arthur still swung his blade towards Erin's and the two of them clashed.

'Even with my power, and the Demon tier weapon... Our strength is equal!' Erin thought, but it didn't matter, for this was part of the third movement of her swordsmanship. The suppression chains that were usefully kept on her, were now tied around both of Arthur's forearms. The Dhampir tilted her sword to the side, and soon kicked off the side of her sword, flipping backwards, then pulled on the chains, she moved her body closer to Arthurs, coming for another attack.

Arthur was able to block them, but he also didn't have the time to remove the chains, because Erin would continually pull her body forward while displaying a great feat of acrobatics in the air, each time their sword clashed.

"Are you just going to watch?!" Leo shouted at Prima. "The two of us aren't enough to take him out. We will need your strength as well!"

This action managed to knock Prima out of his daze as he had stayed at the back, witnessing the fight. However, the Royal Knight didn't know how he could help. Unlike the fighting masked duo, he had no way to avoid the shadow on the ground.

While Erin was busy dealing with Arthur, Leo started to spread his third stage of Qi pretty thin, and now the shadow that reached Prima, had disappeared.

Not knowing how long the person could keep it up for, Prima gripped his sword and charged in. Silver ran in as well, she could at least do something, and attempted to tie up Arthur's legs while he was distracted.

'I have to wait for the right time, if I do that, I can use my soul weapon skill to make his attack stop. If all of us attack at the same time, we can deal a fatal blow to him.' Leo thought.

'Would you like my help.' A voice sounded in his head. It was coming from none other than Leo's familiar.

'You are our trump card, if I manage to create an opening, use that opportunity!' Leo replied.

Leo timed it perfectly, waiting for Prima to reach Arthur, Silver had tied up his legs, and Arthur was still busy blocking the attack from Erin. Until he could see what was happening and it was then that his grand sword started to light up.

For a second, Prima seeing this hesitated to charge in.

'A blood weapon?! But how did it activate without any blood?' Prima wondered, knowing something bad was about to happen.

The next strike from Erin, the sword exploded on impact, blasting Erin away. Quickly sticking the sword in the ground, something started to glow by Prima's feet and he was left stuck where he was, trapped by a certain ability.

The strings were suddenly cut by some type of invisible force, and now that left only one person the Punisher had to deal with, Leo. Arthur swung his blade across aiming to hit him, but he still had his ace up his sleeve. His soul weapon.

Using his soul weapon, he could redirect Arthur's attack to where he wished. Using all of his MC cells, Leo did that, trying to suck Arthur's blow into a certain spot, but Arthur's hand had only moved slightly before Leo's entire pool of MC points had been exhausted..

Leo immediately fell to the ground, almost collapsing and passing out from all the energy he had used.

'When using it against the leader of the Bloodsuckers it had worked, but this person....we...can't defeat him.' Was Leo's thought at that moment.

With Leo down, the shadow returned surrounding Prima's feet, slowing his movements. Although the trap ability from the Blood sword that Arthur used was no longer in effect, it didn't matter, for there was no way for him to avoid this blow.

A diagonal slash was made, going through Prima's body like butter, and the top half of the Royal Knight had fallen to the floor.

The next second, Arthur disappeared into the shadows leaving the others, with a whisper.

"Another one off the list, but there are still more to go."

The Royal Knight had fallen, the twelfth family's leader was dead, and the other three, although not left with any serious wounds, had been defeated in body and spirit.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1335: Him

Just like that, as quickly as Arthur had come he had also left, only taking the lives of those that had been on his hit list. Despite Leo, Erin and Silver having teamed up with Prima, they had failed to take down the Punisher.

Silver standing up, and looking at the situation around them, the state of the room, couldn't quite believe what had happened. Leo and Erin were far stronger than she had imagined and even that hadn't been enough.

"If... even the King tried to face him, could the vampires really win?" Silver questioned.

"Of course." Erin answered, getting up from the ground. She had received a few wounds from the Blood explosion, but other than that she was hardly hurt. The Demon tier weapon had fortunately taken the brunt of the aftermath, but it still seemed to be working fine.

However, the look on the Dhampir's face revealed how frustrated she was. Silver thought that it might be because they had failed their task or that she blamed herself for being weak, but that wasn't her reason at all. No, Erin had wanted to use everything she had against Arthur, but he had disappeared before she could.

The Punisher hadn't faced the third skill of the Demon tier sword and she hadn't felt as if her movements had been any slower than Arthurs with all the additional stats the weapon had granted her, so Erin still had plenty more movements to show in both of stances.

"Think about it, the fact that someone that strong is working for the other side, don't you find that strange? Someone at his level isn't the type to just follow the orders of others, so why is he with the Dalki and not leading them?"

"The way I see it, it can only mean one of two things. Either Arthur has a weakness that they are exploiting," Erin guessed that this might be the reason after learning about who she had received the Demon tier weapon from. "Or... there's someone on the other side that even he is afraid of."

It was this thought, the words of Ruby from the village, the reason why Erin needed to get stronger, and why they needed to become someone who could defeat Arthur.

Silver, knowing there was nothing else they could do, tied up the weakened Leo, and with Erin's ability traveled back the way they came. That's when they noticed something else as well. The sounds of fighting at the castle had almost come to a complete stop.

Currently the three of them were running through the tunnels and had chosen to head to the thirteenth castle. Erin had stated that the fighting had stopped there. Before they reached though, Silver was a little worried.

"Don't worry, your father is still alive." Erin stated. "I can sense him, actually it looks like a lot of your family did well to fend off the attack."

It was good news to hear, and the three of them could rest while they planned their next course of action. They also needed to report what they had learned to Muka, but even with all that, Silver was wondering why the fighting had stopped for now.

What would happen once everyone found out about the death of a Royal Knight, and the twelfth family?

Bryce himself had dealt with the wave of the strong Dalki, not allowing them to move to any of the castles. It was because of him that the castle and those living in the castle areas were able to just focus on the enemy that had attacked them.

At the moment, Bryce had returned to his castle, and he had received the report. Around ten percent of the castle forces were lost. The tenth and thirteenth castle had only lost around two percent of their forces. Alas, more than half of those that had been in the pooling area had died.

However... this was due to Bryce allowing them to die, with the large force that had attacked them, Bryce had assumed it was an all out war. He had intended to use their blood for his match with Arthur... yet the Punisher never came.

A short while later, Bryce also received news that his Royal Knight and the twelfth family leader had both died.

"Damn it!" Bryce shouted as he threw a wine glass against the wall shattering it to pieces.

"It seems like he has chosen to take you all down one by one." Tempus, the Original, who was the current second family leader, was also in the King's throne room along with the surviving Royal Knight Kyle Harlu who had delivered the report.

"When we look at the entire picture, this attack appears to have been far more coordinated than we first believed. All of it appears to have been nothing more than a distraction." Harlu said. "While everyone was busy, it gave Arthur the chance to attack the twelfth family and the Royal Knight."

"He's just running away!" Bryce shouted.

"Well, it's a valid tactic, though it's not as if his side aren't suffering losses," Tempus replied. "In the end, Arthur is just doing what he has set out to do. I would

be careful, I'm pretty sure he might go for you next, perhaps using the same idea as today."

Tempus knew all the leaders that had participated in their little 'expedition', yet his family hadn't been part of it. As such, it was far easier for the Original to remain calm, unlike the Royal Knight,

"There is the matter of what to do with the twelfth family who are in chaos. Not only was the twelfth leader and Royal Knight found dead but the Vampire Knights have gone missing as well." Kyle reported. "There were also signs of other abilities used. An ice tunnel of some sort. I have started to investigate, but there is no known ability among us vampires that could do anything like that."

Bryce honestly didn't care for what actually happened, he just knew that Arthur had been there and that his Royal Knight was now dead, yet he could do nothing against the one responsible for it.

"There is a simple solution. Allow me to wake up my old friend and let him take over the twelfth family for now. I'm sure they would be useful in your little fight against the Punisher. I'm sure he would be pleased to know his ability is in the hands of another."

"That's too dangerous!" Bryce shouted instantly. "He doesn't even know our ways, doesn't even know the existence of the Punisher, nor will that person be someone who follows tradition! I can beat Arthur, all I need to do is find where he is, and where he is going to attack next."

In the meantime, the settlement started to recover from the attack, and the unsettling news had already begun to spread. They were beginning to lose hope that they would be able to deal with this problem.

Thanks to the defenses that Quinn had left behind, the tenth castle had suffered minimal losses. Those that had come from the other families were surprised at how impressive everything was, they were also able to see just how strong the tenth family vampires were.

Those that used beast gear, and the students that were trained by Erin with the power of Qi, were able to fight better than even some of the inner castle family members they had seen in their own families.

It felt like they were acutely safe and could rely on the people here. However, there was one problem. Communication devices still seemed to be down in the entire vampire settlement, even though the Dalki had left, and what was worse, was that the teleporter wasn't working either.

It hadn't been destroyed but it seemed like the other side had deployed some type of jammer, and they didn't exactly have a Logan that could help them out in this situation.

Because of this, Paul was left unable to update the others on the situation, but he also knew this meant that the fight wasn't over.

"Timmy, Xander, gather the defeated Dalki. Make sure to store their blood. Use the beast flasks, if they run out then store them in the storage units." Paul ordered.

A few days went past, with nothing happening, but worry stayed on all of their minds waiting for the next attack, all of them on guard.

While the vampire settlements was dealing with their own problems not too far away, in the lab that was away from the eyes of others deep in the forest and mountains, sparks started to fly. There was one teleporter that was still working, and a few seconds later, two people appeared in the middle of the strange metallic lab.

"We finally made it! Home, sweet home!" Fex whistled with a smile. "What should we do first, check out what's been going on or should we immediately check up on that Dragon?"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1336: Walking snack

The pair had arrived in the Vampire World, but they didn't do so through conventional means, they had done so using the secret teleporter that they had discovered long ago, which led to a certain lab that was assumed to belong to Richard Eno.

Fex took a look around the place, it was quite different from the last time he had seen it since it was intact before but now with what had happened the whole place was a mess. Broken machines blood over certain equipment that had been dried up.

In a way they were lucky the teleporter was still intact, a few seconds later and sparks started to appear again, and the final member had come through. As he landed, he scratched the back of his head not really knowing what to do, or why he was in the situation he had been put in.

"How the hell do I keep getting dragged into all of this? Now I'm off to the home planet of those V, but nobody explains anything to me clearly." Agent 11 started to complain.

"How many times do you want to go through this? Just accept your fate, there's no way you're getting rescued, so you'll be by my side until... well I wanted to say until one of us dies, but if that happens, we probably will both croak, so realistically... until you break? Wait, that doesn't sound too nice either. Anyway, you know how good of a combo the two of us make, so let's just enjoy the time." Fex replied while throwing him a small little spray bottle.

Agent 11 looked at it and noticed that it was the same bottle that he had sprayed himself with before coming over to this place, but as usual, they didn't really explain anything to him and just sprayed him.

Quickly, Agent 11 was looking to see if there was any chance he could escape. Fighting together, he already knew string boy's strength, but he had no idea about the strength of the other girl next to him. Although she looked to be staring into space with black bags under her eyes, so he didn't think she would put up much of a fight.

'Maybe, this is my chance while the other Cursed faction members aren't around?'

"Remember to spray yourself every three hours." Fex reminded him, imitating spraying himself in three areas. "I'm serious, without that stuff you're basically a walking meal. Vampires will be able to sniff you out in seconds. Also, they're not the only things to worry about in this place. There's Wendigo's that eat human flesh and all sorts of other things like Linda."

Hearing her name, Linda lifted her head but she hadn't heard what Fex had said.

'She.. eats flesh?!" Agent 11 gulped hard. 'I guess no one is normal in the Cursed faction. Maybe it's a better idea to listen and follow them for now.' Thinking this, he placed the bottle in a type of small bag that was attached around his waist. Then with the watch on his wrist, he made sure to set a timer so it would beep in 2 hours and 45 minutes. Agent 11 wasn't willing to test how accurate that 3 hour time limit was.

Before deciding which direction to go, they needed to decide as a group what to do.

"Logan gave us a layout of the cave tunnels from last time." Linda reported, opening up a hologram that allowed them a rough idea of where they currently were and what the place looked like.

The map wouldn't update as they moved, but at least they knew where they were now and could plan for the rest.

"Our current location puts us closer to the Dragon than the vampire settlement so it would make sense if we head there first. There shouldn't be any trouble there either. You're sure that the vampires don't know about this place?" Linda asked for confirmation.

She had visited the Vampire World before, but it was under very different circumstances, and last time, there was also another person here that was there to support her. She had come here to escape some of her memories with Wevil, but no matter what she did, it seemed like everything was reminding her of him.

"Yes, that's true," Fex answered. "From what we learned, the lab was something that was created by Jim when he worked on the Dalki for them. They knew about the Dragon, but this lab and the current Dragon's position are unknown to the vampire settlement.

"Maybe the vampires believed Jim took it with him, or perhaps it was Richard who decided to move it with that ability of his, making it so the lab stayed hidden from their eyes? Anyway, it should be safe. All of the Wendigos that were here last time have been defeated."

"I can't get into contact with the tenth castle at the moment. I didn't have too much hope, but it's still a shame. Oh well, we'll be here for a while, so let's just check up on what's closest."

With that said, the group decided to head through one of the large broken metal doors and following the map that Logan had made they soon entered a few tunnels.

"So, about what you said earlier?" Agent 11 asked. "You mentioned those Wendigo creatures that eat human flesh. Were they also here in the tunnels?"

"Indeed." Fex nodded, actually happy to have a conversation partner. Linda was clearly not over her deceased boyfriend yet, so it was hard to talk to her. If it was

just the two of them, Fex didn't know how he would be able to face the current situation.

"You should have seen it, a whole army was practically running after us. It was crazy, but we managed to escape in the end. I don't know what happened to all of them though."

"Yeh, that was going to be my next question, if you guys killed a bunch of them, then where are their bodies? I mean they have bones and stuff right? So shouldn't their bodies still be back in the lab, or someplace?" Agent 11 asked.

Fex started a nervous laugh, but that was it, he didn't answer after that because he didn't have an answer for that.

"Well, there are creatures other than the Wendigos on the planet. The Wendigos can also evolve." Fex eventually said once the tunnel got silent again.

"That doesn't exactly make me feel better about the question I asked earlier." Agent 11 murmured, and it was because of that that he pulled out his weapon from his scabbard and was now in carefully moving forward.

He also looked back at the others, who were able to walk through the tunnel perfectly fine, while Agent 11 had to use a light crystal to allow him to see.

'Yeah it might allow me to see, but then what about the creatures? Isn't this practically the same as asking them to come over and make me into their meal?'

"I mean most of those creatures are locked up." Fex revealed. "The Wendigos were here because of the lab. Sometimes Wendigos, or sub class vampires escape into the forest but that's incredibly rare."

"And if that does happen, the vampires send out a subjugation team. I know because my family, the thirteenth family, was sent out on these missions most of the time due to our ability. As you can attest, it's perfect to capturing someone alive, making it easy enough to hand them over to the King. In turn, he would use them for his forces."

An example of what Fex was talking about, was when Paul and the others had first attacked. The vampires had sent out an army of Wendigos at the time, to help weaken the human forces before the others arrived.

Eventually, they had reached their destination. The other lab was on site and the door could be seen in front of them already opened. The others weren't sure if the door was meant to be open, especially since Logan had stated that he had been able to open it solely due to the connection to his family.

Taking a step forward though, Linda suddenly stopped and so did Fex. Agent 11 quickly tapped his light crystal, turning it off. Since he was unsure what had happened, he could just see two red eyes staring at them in the distance.

"I was afraid the moment I mentioned it that I might have jinxed us. I guess you're going to see what one of these other creatures looks like live."

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1337: BEEP

"Don't turn off your light crystal!" Fex immediately shouted.

He did this for two reasons, one of them hoping to attract the beast to him, and the other was seeing how Agent 11 reacted.

Agent 11 had turned off the crystal because he was unable to see the beast even though others could. The light was almost too bright on him, and the beast was constantly moving as he turned.

Turning off the light, he thought he had done the right thing. Now, he could see glowing red eyes, but seeing how high up they were in the tunnel just gave him goosebumps.

"If the creature comes from this tunnel or has always lived in a dark place, there is a good chance it's—" Before Fex could finish what he was saying, the strange creature leapt up and headed straight towards Agent 11 out of all the others.

Taking the advice, he turned his light crystal back on in time and now could see the beast in the air and what its entire body looked like. It was something that Agent 11 could only imagine in his nightmares. Its outside flesh looked like a beast that had no skin or fur. As if its muscles were fully on display, even through that, he could see parts of its bones sticking out.

The creature was incredibly large, almost four times the size of a human, but what was terrifying about it was the long hair it had on its head, making it seem almost human and the multiple heads and skulls that looked to be sticking out from its body in different areas.

"What the hell is this beast!" Agent 11 said, rolling out of the way, causing it to hit the ground. He was used to being in tough combat situations, so he didn't freeze up and managed to slash it with his sword hitting its back leg.

'It looks like bringing agent 11 was good for more reasons than one. His ability with Qi helps block the regeneration even with the subclasses, but what the hell was this creature again?' Fex thought, trying to look at it, thinking back to his studying days.

As a student who wasn't the best at studying, he drew a blank at its name. This also meant he didn't exactly know the dangers of the creature, but judging by the fact it attacked them on sight, it did mean one thing. That the creature was something similar to a Wendigo, aggressive on sight.

Quickly, Fex tied up its back legs with strings pulling it to the ground, causing it to fall on its belly, and then Linda, lifting up the club type weapon, had whacked it on

the top of its head. It was a strong, powerful blow, so much that it didn't move again after a single hit, and its head was spattered on the ground.

Agent 11, who had thought about escaping thinking that maybe the girl that had been brought along with them was weak, suddenly was happy that he had changed his mind.

"What the hell was that? Was that a Wendigo you were talking about or a beast?" Agent 11 asked, moving the light crystal to see if he could get a closer look. He even stabbed it with his sword a couple of times, using his Qi to make sure that it really was dead.

"No, it's not a beast," Fex replied. "I think it was something called a mouth splitter or something. It's not one of the code red subclasses, but still, something that doesn't really add up, but how did it get in here?" Fex was wondering.

Looking around, Linda eventually found a tunnel in the large room. Although this tunnel looked unnatural, as if it had been dug out, rather than once created by Eno or the vampires.

"Well, maybe we can take a small detour," Fex said, sticking his head in the thing and seeing how far it went. He was unable to see the end.

"I mean, if we go into the lab, maybe more of them will come out from here. It might be best to close it up or something."

The group decided to go in. The tunnel entrance was quite large since it was able to fit the creature that had just attacked them. However, Agent 11 was trying to walk towards the back of the group, so he could make a quick getaway, but Fex wouldn't let him. Nudging him in between the two of them while Linda led the way.

They walked for a couple of hours, finding nothing, and also found some branches of the tunnels that led to nowhere. Regardless, they did discover a few bones here and there, but the bones looked too long to belong to a human.

Some of them seemed to be from beasts and other things.

Eventually, they noticed that the tunnel led to outside. Before they even went to the very top, they had decided to tread carefully and lightly because the group could hear sounds from above. Crawling through the tunnel, they eventually crept up to the opening and could finally see where they were.

It was another facility, but not one linked to the mountains or such. They had been travelling too long for it to be close. It was however, a place that Fex had knowledge of but never learnt about its location. Seeing what was in front of them, Agent 11's whole body was shaking. For the strange creature they had seen and fought against, there were thousands of them in this very room.

It looked almost like a giant greenhouse, too large to see the end, and each of the sections looked to have different types of creatures in them. Each section was divided by different creatures with glass, and there seemed to be a system in place to feed the creatures, at least the ones that needed feeding.

"What is this place? Are they like growing creatures here?" Linda whispered and made sure so the beasts nearby wouldn't hear.

The three of them noticed that a lot of creatures weren't near the tunnel. The one section they were in was huge and looked more like a fake environment built for the creatures. They now realised what they were in was more of a hole.

"I learnt about this. It's a place for the dangerous subclasses they can kinda control. The vampires kept them for attacks, but I never knew there were this many." Fex replied.

The sheer number was frightening, to say the least. There were more creatures here than vampires, which just didn't seem right.

There weren't ever many situations where the vampires could use these creatures to help them, so in a way it made no sense to harbour this many creatures.

"Couldn't we use these to fight against the Dalki?" Linda thought.

Fex scoffed at the idea.

"I mean, sure. I guess an army of beings that attack anything on sight would be a great help. The question is, how do you get the vampires to agree to use such a thing. Most vampires don't even know about the Dalki, so I doubt Bryce, or anyone, sees them as a threat and would be the last person to help the humans."

"I experienced their strength first hand, so. I'm a bit different from the other vampires. What I want to know is what war were they planning to have keeping this many?"

"Isn't it obvious?" Agent 11 replied. "I mean, aren't vampires and humans different races? And if they don't care about the Dalki, then they have to be gathering these to fight against the humans."

Usually, Fex would have thought such a thought was ridiculous, but with the current king in charge and the number of creatures he could see, Fex was thinking along the same lines.

"Come on, let's get out of here, there is nothing we can do anyway, and it's not like the vampires would help out the humans. It looks like the hole was just made by one of our little Mouth spitters." Fex said.

The group took one peek at the creatures, as they wanted to make a note to see if they could find this place in the future. At least Linda did, and they were on their way to do what they had initially intended.

\*BEEP \*BEEP \*BEEP

When they had entered the tunnel, a certain agent's wristwatch had been set to go off as a reminder. Only the tunnels had echoed the sound of his watch, causing it all to be heard from the Mouth spitters above.

"Run!" Fex shouted.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Webnovel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1338: He's everywhere

Almost immediately after the sound of the watch going off was heard. Several growls came quickly after. The Mouth spitters could be seen entering the tunnel with which they had come from. The three of them were already running as fast as they could back in.

"Are you trying to get us killed?!" Fex shouted at Agent 11.

"You were the one who told me to spray myself with the bottle after every three hours! Excuse me for actually deciding to listen to you!" Agent 11 shouted and ducked down as one of the Mouth spitters leapt over the top of them and landed in front, blocking their way.

There was one thing about these creatures that they hadn't noticed since they had dealt with the first creature so fast. They were fast. Fex was a vampire with great speed, and Agent 11 was able to power his legs with Qi to allow him to run faster. However, the group needed to slow down for one person in particular, which was Linda.

Still, she was a great help to the group since whenever they would catch up, she would turn around with her monstrous strength, slamming the Mouth splitters and knocking them back a few steps. All of the creatures were so desperate to get the trio that they were tumbling over each other, and some were even stuck in the tunnel trying to get through the gaps.

"I need to borrow you!" Fex said.

Quickly, he threw out his needles with the strings and attached it to agent 11's back. Agent 11 knew what this meant and allowed this body to go limp, leaving Fex in control, but still keeping up the power of his Qi.

As Agent 11 charged in, Fex skilfully mastered his puppet to avoid the strikes of the creature in front of them, cutting up its legs and soon, rolling underneath it to stab its head from underneath.

"Linda, how are you holding up?" Fex asked.

"We need to keep moving. My strength in this form is not enough. I can't transform in this place. It's too small. If I do move, I might hit the ceiling and make this whole place cave in on us." Linda shouted back.

Hearing this had given Fex an idea. He quickly tied up Linda with his strings and pulled her underneath his arm, carrying her and did the same with Agent 11.

Right now, all he wanted to do was focus on running as fast as he could to get out of the tunnel. The sad truth was that the two of them were slowing him down in this

aspect, and with his vampire strength, it was hardly any weight for him to carry, even if they did have weapons and armour on.

Fex was able to outrun the Mouth spitters, and a short while later, they returned to the area where the lab that Logan had sent them to was based.

"Linda, do what you said before, just smash this tunnel down. It shouldn't affect this area. Especially since the facility was built here, I don't think they would have made it so fragile." Fex tried to explain as fast as possible, but he wasn't making much sense, but there was another problem.

"I... I..." Linda said, her face turning red, it was clear that there was some type of issue, but their lives were on the line.

"Just smash it!" Agent 11 shouted, hearing the growls on the beast.

The next second, Linda could be seen her body changing in size, but something was wrong. As her body grew larger the armour that she was wearing, she started to take it off.

"Wait a second." Fex realised. "The armour! Did you never get another set made for your other form!"

Realising that Linda had no choice but to take off or break her armour, Fex went to cover agent 11's eyes and closed his.

"Linda, we aren't looking. Just do it!" Fex shouted.

They couldn't see anything, but they could feel the vibrations, the loud bangs, and the sound of the rocks falling. It was unsure whether the whole tunnel had collapsed, crushing the creatures inside them. Still, they were no longer making any noises, and it didn't look like they would be using the tunnel that was made any time soon.

"Hey, can you get off me!" Agent 11 complained while struggling, but Fex made sure to keep a tight hand on agent 11's eyes.

"Just keep them shut until-"

"You can open them again," Linda said.

Letting go, the two of them could see Linda, and they couldn't help but look her way. She was back in her armour and had the club attached to her back. Her face was clearly still red.

"Thank you for what you did," Linda said as she turned around and decided to head into the facility first.

"Hey, she's kinda cute when she acts like that." Agent 11 commented.

Fex scowled at Agent 11.

"She's off limits!" he said and turned back around, chasing after Linda. "Hey wait, what if there are more creatures in there? Maybe the other types created a tunnel into the facility."

Fex, moving his fingers, Agent 11 soon felt his legs moving with them as well.

"Get these strings off of me!" Agent 11 complained.

The three had entered the facility, and they were half expecting it to look destroyed like the other one they had seen, but it was kept intact. They walked through and could see countless of the glass containers all set up empty.

The dividing pathways in the lab led to the different rooms, and if Linda remembered correctly, one of them led to the dragon. She retook the lead but what she wasn't expecting was for the doors to be open.

Seeing this, Fex and Linda were getting slightly worried that maybe something had happened to the Demon tier dragon already.

However, when they entered a particular room, they could see the demon tier dragon attached with several large cables and devices all over the dragon's body. Setting their eyes on it, all of them shivered for some reason.

As for Agent 11, he had dropped to the floor.

"What, you scared you of this thing?" Fex asked.

Agent 11, couldn't explain. It was as if his body was having some type of strange reaction to seeing the Demon tier beast.

"I seem to remember that we all reacted in a similar way when we first saw the demon tier beast," Linda replied, making Fex's smug face look a little silly now.

Eventually, Agent 11 started to get used to the pressure. His Qi output was helping him. As time went on, he was able to slowly lessen the Qi to the point where he could withstand being in front of the demon tier beast.

"What do we know? We have confirmed that the Demon tier beast is still here, but aren't the Dalki after it?" Linda asked. "If we leave it here, there is a chance that they will find it. Imagine if someone was doing a routine check-up in that facility. I know the tunnel was a long one, but if they followed it, it would have led them to this place."

Fex thought about it for a while. Linda was right, but how were the Dalki expecting to find the dragon in the first place, or were they just relying on Arthur to deal with the problem. Although Fex thought it was important if they stayed where they were, at the same time, he still desperately wanted to check on his family, but the one thing he didn't think was right of him to do, was to leave Linda here all on her own.

"Let's wait until the communication channels are open again." Fex finally said. "I don't know what's going on, but I'm sure my family is doing okay. If we're this close, I should feel something if they were hurt, right?"

When Quinn was in a tough situation, all of those that he had turned could feel a small part of his pain, but for Fex, he wasn't part of the Cursed family, he belonged to the thirteenth family, and right now, he felt no such thing.

He thought it might be due to how far away he was from them, but even now, it didn't seem like they were having much trouble.

"How...how were the Dalki expecting to kill such a thing anyway? "Agent 11 asked.

"They have their ways, and there is always me." A voice said from behind.

All three of them turned around, and almost instantly, Fex's legs had turned to jelly. Linda and agent 11 were unaware of who exactly this man was, for they had never seen him before, but they had never seen Fex act like this.

Noticing the shadows on his back, Linda now understood who it was.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1339: Giving up!

Seeing that HE was here, Fex didn't know what to do. Although the three of them weren't considered weak. There was no chance in his mind that the three of them could ever defeat someone as powerful as the person in front of them.

Their only option was to escape, but how would they even do that? The leader of the punishers, the controller of shadows that went far beyond what Quinn could achieve. If they tried anything, he could stop their escape in a heartbeat.

"Who the hell is this guy?!" Agent 11 asked, readying his sword. He had dealt with plenty of V on the island, so what was so different about this one.

The next second, Arthur lifted his hand, and a shadow appeared directly behind the agent. His body was sucked in, and he was gone from the room they were in, just like that.

"I could tell he was going to be a little annoying," Arthur said. "I thought it was best to get rid of him. You." Arthur pointed towards Fex, making him jump back, thinking he was going to pull the same trick.

"You're the boy that Quinn was trying to save that time."

Not really knowing how to act or what to do, Fex felt like all he could do was nod, telling the truth, but something felt a little off to Fex.

'Wait, what is Arthur even doing in a place like this? Doesn't that mean he knows where the Dragon is located? How long has he known that for, and he talked about killing it? Then why hasn't he killed the Dragon yet? Is there a reason why he can't, or hasn't?'

The group had learnt a lot about Arthur and perhaps the reasons for him going to the other side, but it was then that Fex realised something. Arthur had never turned up in the human world. He had to have been somewhere, had he been in the vampire world the whole time. If that was the case, perhaps he didn't know. He didn't know what had happened.

"Arthur..." Fex called out relatively weakly. Just saying his name was hard on Fex, but the fact that they hadn't been outright attacked meant there was a chance.

Arthur hadn't completely gone to the other side yet.

"Arthur..." Fex said again as he assured himself for a second time.

"Are you just going to keep saying his name over and over again, or are you actually going to say something," Linda whispered from the side of her mouth.

"Art...I mean, we know why you made a deal with the Dalki. We met with Ruby. She's with the Cursed faction now. Quinn is protecting her." Fex paused, waiting to see a reaction from Arthur, but it was hard to tell since he just stood there, but seeing as he was doing nothing and was listening, Fex took it as a good sign.

"We know you wanted to protect them, so you made a deal with Jim and the Dalki, but the military and Quinn managed to save them. They can't use their lives against you anymore."

Arthur stayed where he was and looked like he was deep in thought. He didn't draw his weapon, nor did he show signs of aggression and even placed his shadow away.

"You don't understand." He finally said. "I was the one that asked them for that deal. They weren't using the Dalki to threaten their lives. I was the one that had asked them to protect them. They had no reason to listen to my request, yet they did, and I was the one that offered to help them in return."

The pair couldn't believe their ears, like Quinn, they too believed that Arthur had to have gone to the other side because they were using something against him, but now they found out it wasn't true at all.

It made Fex wonder how Quinn would have reacted if he was to hear this.

"The humans will eventually all perish, and all I wanted in return was for them to live a full life. I also assume that Minny hasn't been saved?"

This was the one thing Fex was worried about. Although Arthur claimed he had asked them for protection, why was Ruby's daughter taken away? This was the real person they were using against Arthur. Clearly, by making the request for them to be protected, Jim knew that Arthur had grown to care for these people.

"I thought as much, but if what you said is true, that Ruby and the others are with the Cursed faction. Then their life will be short-lived. So it doesn't matter anymore. My wish was for her to spend the rest of her life knowing love with her mother."

"In this war, the humans have always believed that it was them against the Dalki, and the vampires have ignored them. While that happened, the Dalki were able to grow into a force that no one can stop."

"What do you mean?" Linda asked. "Is what we heard from Ruby true, that the Dalki are stronger than you?"

Arthur then nodded.

"I see my actions have pained the whole of the Cursed faction, so I should at least explain myself, and hopefully, you can pass this message onto Quinn. When I first met Jim, he had brought along with him two of the Dalki leaders.

"I was just looking around, trying to learn what happened to my people, when I saw him. He was there as if he predicted that I would be there. The Dalki I fought against were both four spikes. They were stronger than I imagined, but they still weren't something that I, nor I thought the vampires needed to worry about."

This was expected. Arthur was one of the strongest vampires, so the only ones that should have been able to give him trouble were the five spikes, and even then, Fex thought that the Punisher leader would win.

'Unless, he said Jim was there, did Jim create...'

"A six spiked Dalki, did you face the six spikes?" Fex asked, thinking he had figured it out.

"You know about them as well. I shouldn't have to go into too much detail about their power. They were there, or Jim certainly showed he had the power to change other Dalki into six spikes whenever he wished. Just witnessing this and seeing their strength was one of the reasons why I had been convinced that there was no way for the humans or the Vampires to win this war, but that wasn't the only reason. The other was due to the Dalki I had faced.

"It was a strange Dalki, one that wore the clothing of a human. Facing him, I couldn't remember the last time I had felt so...weak. Perhaps when I was human and was told to go hunting as a child, meeting a grand bear.

"Facing that particular five spikes power was completely different to the others. That is the reason why I think that humans and vampires will lose the war."

Hearing someone as great as Arthur talk this way, Fex couldn't begin to imagine just how strong this Dalki could have been to scare Arthur away. They had fought against Slicer, but even then, Arthur's power should have been greater in Fex's head, so who was this Dalki. Still, he had given up, Arthur had given up....unlike someone else he knew.

"You..." Fex gritted his teeth. "Disappoint me, Arthur. Have you really given up? If you have, then why didn't you just kill this Dragon already when you found it. Sure, you might want to hurt the vampire race or whatever, but you could have just as well done that and still have done what you wished."

"And I don't know what your loss against that Dalki was like, but I'm sure I know someone else who felt the same way, and it was because of you. When you defeated Quinn, when you completely overpowered him and left him in that state after he looked up to you as a mentor, did he just give up?

"No, he continued fighting and continued to get stronger, and one of the reasons you thought the human race would lose, you said it was because of Jim, right?

Well, it looks like you didn't even know that Quin...Quinn killed Jim!" Fex shouted.

".....Jim...is dead?" Arthur replied.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1340: A large list...

Things still had yet to go back to normal in the vampire settlement, but it had been days since the attack had last occurred. The pooling area was now non-existent. The vampires that were still alive had finally been given access to the inner castle areas.

A decision that had taken longer than it should and had left a bad taste in their mouths with their leaders. The pooling area vampires were vampires that often switched between families. When they next got the chance, they felt they would in the future move to the families that had acted quicker and were more successful in defending their people.

It was because of this that the middle of the settlement had become a ghost town. Abandoned and destroyed houses from the last fight, having yet to be repaired. Blood left staining the street floors, and a pile of bodies gathered, ready to be burnt.

The tenth family, once again, had taken in the most refugees. A lot of the vampires from the pooling area were insistent on going there after seeing and hearing how well they had done to defend themselves from the attack. It was a similar situation in the thirteenth family. Still, for some reason, they had decided to take no one outside of their own family.

However, despite all this, all of the castles, the leaders, and people were on the tip of their toes, for one of the royal knights and leaders had been killed and in their own castle. If they could get to them, who was to say that they were safe, no matter where they were.

At the same time, no replacement had been made for the twelfth family head. Instead, Bryce was giving out orders to the family using Jill's ability mostly. Telling them to organize themselves, and they were essentially being self-sufficient. There was no leader in the castle, causing them to somewhat panic as well.

Regardless, Bryce didn't care because he believed that everything was temporary. Once he got rid of Arthur, he could assign a new leader to the twelfth family, and everything would go back to normal.

At the moment, Erin, Leo, and Silver were staying in the thirteenth castle. The king rarely dropped by, especially with what was going on at the moment. Yet, even now in the tenth castle, there seemed to always be a pair of eyes somewhere on them. The king would often send royal guards there to check if Quinn or any other punishers had returned. So they decided it was safer for them to stay with Lee and the others with everything going on.

An important meeting was currently taking place, as Muka was updating Silver and the others on their new plans. Since their last meeting, Silver had told them about the information about Arthur's hit list. The leaders who met up from before, apart

from Paul and instead Erin was present with them, were sitting in a smaller room with a round table.

They didn't want anyone, including members of the thirteenth family, to be aware of what was going on. Because they were treading into more dangerous territory as they found and gathered more information.

The fewer people connected, the less likely to be found out, and if they were found out, they hoped fewer people would be dragged into the whole mess.

"After what you informed me, I have been doing some research. Going through the files, I found out about those that went on the expedition along with Bryce at the time." Muka said as he threw a piece of paper that had a record of all those that had gone on the expedition out on the table.

What Silver didn't realize, looking at this was that the list was far bigger than she thought.

"This...is, Arthur is going to go through them all?" Silver asked.

"We can't be so sure," Sunny said. "After all, so far, Arthur seemed to have only gone for the leaders, the vampire knights, and anyone who is in a higher position than that. Maybe he believes that the other vampires were just forced to come along, not knowing what they were doing."

"Or perhaps he is only dealing with the people he thinks needs his punishment," Lee suggested.

"Or he could be saving them for later," Jin said. This, of course, was the obvious thing, but Sunny or Lee didn't want to say it, as if saying those words would make it come true.

"Thanks to your group, we have found out the reason why Arthur is attacking the vampires, and some of us can ease up even if it is only a little," Muka said. "Since Arthur didn't deal with you, we can assume he has decided to stay quite strict to this list, but there are still many problems we have to deal with, especially those that he brings with him.

"Knowing about this expedition, nearly half the leaders were involved. We can't use their testimony. The others will back that said person up or finish them before they even get the chance.

"Which means the only thing we can still do, find out the truth about what Bryce is doing with the missing vampires. It seems like the two matters might not be linked after all. My best bet is we will find out the answer in the king's castle.

"It's the safest place for Bryce since not even the leaders can freely enter that place. However, I am sure that Arthur will attack again soon. Bryce knows who Arthur is after, so the best move would be to enter the king's castle during the next attack.

"Most likely, since he has gone after one Royal knight, they will assume he will go after the other. Bryce will stay by his side to set some type of trap. So the castle should be easy to navigate. I know it was a close call last time, and it is hard for me to ask you this again, but you are the only ones that can do this."

Silver was a bit hesitant. She felt like with the way Arthur was acting, if they had tried to get in his way, in his way of completing his revenge, they could have easily suffered as well. When Leo got close and Erin looked to have nearly hurt him, Arthur had no choice but to fight back.

"We'll do it." Erin surprisingly spoke up and was speaking as if it was for the others.

"Erin," Leo said in a tone as if he was telling off his own daughter. "I know you wish to test yourself or prove yourself, but remember we need to think about not just us, but the rest of the family. If we get caught, then the tenth will be in far more trouble than when we were heading towards the twelfth family castle.

"What I am far more concerned about is what Arthur plans to do after and whether or not the vampires can stop him. If we don't figure that out, then this whole conversation and everything that we are doing could very well be completely useless."

The other leaders present didn't want to admit it, but Leo had a point. The settlement in thier mind had always existed and always would.

Another thought on Leo's mind was if the leaders were still taking the Dalki as a minor threat because they hadn't even been considered in the conversation.

"We will do it," Leo said. "But if there is any sign that we will get caught. We will abandon our mission. This is a task to find out information. Not to fight any of the guards or the others inside."

As the meeting came to an end, and everyone was ready to relax for the rest of the day, or at least as much as possible, they could see the dark shadow that appeared above, covering all of the castles.

Seconds later, and a repeat of what had happened last time had occurred. The Dalki were falling from the sky along with the masked vampires.

The attack was happening again.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1341: What my powers can do

As soon as the dark shadow appeared above them, all of the vampires started to panic. However, this time, they were more prepared. None of the pooling vampires could match up to the Masked or the Dalki and would most likely just add to the body count, so they had been told to stay in their homes in each of the castles.

However, they were also told to be prepared to fight for their lives if necessary. In a fight against their enemy, numbers didn't mean much. The actual castle vampires and the original castle vampires were the ones who were to do battle.

This was how it had been set up, through most of the families. Apart from one, who had decided to have all the pooling vampires stay in the castle instead. These were those from the thirteenth family.

The vampires belonging to the family castle, and the inner castle vampires would go out to face the enemy, while the pooling vampires would bunker up in the castle, with a few vampires left behind to protect them. The main reason for this was because Lee wanted to prevent anyone finding out about the thirteenth family's secret for as long as possible.

The leader had been surprised that after using the inner blood weapons last time, nobody had reported them, but had eventually accepted that due to the chaos of the situation nobody might have cared, but when the whole thing was to blow over, it could mean serious repercussions for the thirteenth family.

The Dalki, and the Masked started to fall from the large black shadow in the sky just like last time. Not understanding the skill or how someone was able to do such a thing, the only thing the castles could do was wait till they landed, but there was one, odd fellow that was falling through the sky with them.

"What the heck is going on? Why am I suddenly falling?!" Agent 11's face was flapping as the wind hit his mouth and the ground was getting closer to him by the second. One moment he had been in a strange lab, and the next in a dark space.

While in the dark space, the Pure agent had been on his own, wandering around trying to find someone or something to get him out. He assumed that it was the ability of the man they had met earlier. Every ability should have a weakness, so Agent 11 assumed he just needed to figure it out.

However, after a few hours, he found himself in the position he was in now, falling through the sky. There was a Dalki, next to him but it was too far away from him to reach. Looking down again, Agent 11 knew that using Qi wouldn't help him much in this situation. At best it might prevent his immediate death, but he would still suffer fatal injuries.

Panicking and thinking of what he could possibly do, he noticed that Fex still had his strings attached to him via the needle; they were nearly impossible to see, but they had remained in Agent 11's body when he was taken to the dark room.

Reaching around the back of his neck he pulled out one of the needles.

'Damn it, I hope this works.' Agent 11 ran his finger down from the needle and could feel the string until he reached the end holding it firmly in place, then with the needle, he started to concentrate. He circulated the first stage of Qi through his muscles, and the second stage of Qi, through the needle to make it sharper.

At the right time, he threw it at the Dalki, managing to hit it in the shoulder, the needle piercing right through. Then pulling the string, he pulled his body towards the Dalki. Agent 11's body was approaching the creature, and with his legs charging in first he kicked off the Masked who had been riding on top.

"Phew, looks like I'm sa-"

A bang was heard and a dust cloud was lifted, for seconds after the Dalki had landed on the ground. Agent 11 quickly jumped off from the Dalki to see where he was, only to find himself in a strange area, full of mansions, but more importantly there was clearly what looked like a war going on.

A Blood swipe was thrown out from behind almost hitting the Pure agent, but before it did, a strong black horned rabbit jumped on his shoulder, and powering its horn fired off a lightning attack hitting the aura and saving Agent 11's life.

"What are you doing just standing there?!" A vampire who came running over yelled at him, and soon the black rabbit hopped back onto the shoulder of the vampire.

"That Rabbit saved my life, does it belong to you?" Agent 11 asked in confusion.

"I'm Rokene, a castle vampire from the fifth family, listen to my order and either fight, or get in one of the houses!" Rokene shouted.

It was then that the Dalki that Agent 11 had landed on, had almost come to, turning around and looking at the two of them.

Agent 11 was still confused about how they had come to this world, and even the Cursed faction he was with were cautious of the V. He didn't quite know what was going on or whose side he was even supposed to be. Still, he was sure about one thing. Dalki were humanity's enemy, this kid had just saved his life and he wasn't someone who didn't repay favours.

Agent 11 grabbed his sword and charged towards the Dalki, avoiding its strikes and cutting it in certain places. He hated to admit it, but with the fighting style Fex had

utilised while controlling him, he himself had managed to further improve his swordsmanship.

Rokene, seeing how skilled the Pure agent was, felt that with the two of them and with his familiar, they could easily take on the Dalki.

At the tenth castle, Paul ran towards his balcony, as soon as the shadow had appeared.

"Remember your training everyone! The Dalki blood empowers us, so get ready to put it to good use!!!" Paul shouted.

Those that had flasks started to consume it immediately, the others were a bit cautious but when a few of them started to praise the new energy they could feel inside of them, they all started to drink the packs of green blood that had been handed out.

"This, I actually feel so invigorated and it tastes sweeter than human blood. What is happening to us?"

"I thought we couldn't consume blood of beasts, so why are we able to consume their blood?"

It didn't make sense to a lot of the vampires, but it didn't have to either.

With the power of the green blood, the gargoyles and towers, Paul was going to make sure that the tenth family came out of this whole thing with the least amount of casualties.

Bryce had decided it was time to go out to the pooling area once more, only this time he wasn't going there alone. Alongside him was Kyle Dawn, his remaining Royal Knight, as well as some Royal guards. Additionally he had made Jill and Harlu Dawn, the current 7th leader, tag along.

Just like last time, the force that was composed of mostly Dalki landed in the pooling area, but Bryce was confident. He could tell that Arthur was going after all those who had gone on that expedition, so those that were most important on the Punisher's hit list were currently gathered in this place.

If Arthur wanted to take a single one of them out, he would need to bring the fight here.

The battle started and with the Royal guards and everyone else there, the fighting was much easier than the last time. King Bryce hardly had to do anything himself.

"You have no clue what my powers can do." Arthur's voice suddenly resounded in the open place.

The voice was heard by everyone there, but no matter how much Bryce and the others turned around, Arthur was nowhere to be seen.

"Where is Harlu?!" Kyle eventually shouted, as he used his cape to block the attack of a Dalki, and pierced through its head with its hand soon after. "I can't find him anywhere."

Jill searched, the Royal guards searched but they could see nothing, and a few seconds later, they saw a shadow open up, only for a familiar looking body to fall to the ground.

"Another one off the list."

The body was none other than the new twelfth leader Harlu Dawn. Harlu had only been a few meters away from Bryce, yet the King had been unable to save him from the Punisher.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1342: Not Even An Original

When the attack started, the trio didn't waste any time complying with the mission they had agreed upon. Travelling through the tunnels, they had done so with Muka and the other leaders for the first part of their journey.

This was because they needed to get back to their castles to give orders and to help as quickly as possible. If anyone saw they had all come from the thirteenth family as well, then it would raise suspicion on what this group was planning to do.

At times like this, usually, they could have used Jill to send out messages to their respective knights on what to do, but that would be a red flag straight away if she was to find out about it. Especially now, she was basically Bryce's dog, held by an invisible chain who stayed by him at all times now.

"Remember, this time, we will be avoiding any confrontation if possible." Leo reminded them as they ran through the tunnels. Muka had already opened the one that led to the king's castle, and the leaders split, so now they just needed to travel a little further before reaching the place.

"Unlike the last mission, we are just to search where the missing people are, or if there are any missing people at all."

When Leo spoke, Erin knew that this was directed at her. She didn't know if it was due to her fight with Arthur, but her lust was returning slightly. Leo had noticed this based on how much of the suppression chains she had wrapped around her forearms.

After killing a few vampires and slowly weaning her urge from them, Leo thought that she was fine, but maybe that wasn't the case when coming across more complete or stronger vampires.

The three of them could see the entrance up ahead, and they wore the same uniforms they were in last time, Covering themselves with cloaks and masks. Since no one was left alive who had seen them, there was no problem with them using them again.

The tunnel eventually started to lead upward. The familiar trap door that was stationed underneath all of the castles was seen. Silver went ahead and was ready to move it but looked towards Leo and Erin for confirmation that no one was on the other side.

Yet strangely, the two of them were looking in a completely different direction.

"What's wrong?" Silver asked.

"There's something in this castle, something compelling, no that's not right, there is something under this castle", Leo said, and it looked like both of them could sense it since Erin was looking in the direction as well.

"Underground, but that's impossible. There shouldn't be anything underground. Other than other tunnels." Silver said. "Are you saying that someone is here with us?"

Leo shook his head, but he didn't answer either because, truth be told, he didn't know what the energy was, but he had felt something similar before. Underneath each of the other castles were where the tombs would be located. With the tombs, he could sense the slight presence as if there was some type of excess power keeping them alive for all those that were in their eternal sleep.

"Are there any tombs under the king's castle?" Erin asked, having the same thoughts as Leo.

"There shouldn't be." Silver replied. "Even the king is buried with their original family when they choose to go into eternal slumber. So all of the elders, past kings, royal knights, all get returned to the tombs where their families live."

With that answer, it just made Leo wonder why there was an energy source under the king's castle and why was there only a single one as well. Regardless, their mission wasn't to look into this but to look into other matters.

After checking that no one was present, the trap door was lifted, and they entered the king's castle. This time, they had to be far more cautious than they did when entering the twelfth castle.

"There are still a large bulk of the Royal Guards inside, and we don't know how long the fight will last this time before the attack stops outside," Leo said.

"Let's just hope we aren't too unlucky to run into Arthur twice this time." Silver replied.

The king's castle was around twice the size of all the other castles from the other leaders. It seemed quite unnecessary for hardly anyone lived in the place. When looking around, most of the walls were just covered in paintings of the past kings and queens' achievements.

"Where do you think we should head to, the throne room? Or the Council room?" Silver asked.

"No, the last time I was there, I didn't notice anything. My suggestion would be one of two things. Either the place would be somewhere that is heavily guarded by the Royal guard or if it is even a secret from them. It would be a place where no guards were placed at all." Leo said.

Following this logic, Silver and Erin agreed that this was too big a matter for the Royal guards to be involved in. So they searched each floor of the cult where there were few guards or next to none. This benefited their search as well since it was easy to look in places with fewer guards.

So far, they had found nothing and eventually reached the second-highest floor, just underneath the throne room. There were the most guards stationed on this floor. Yet, suddenly, Leo could sense someone rushing up the stairs, and all of them quickly entered one of the rooms nearby.

"The castle, the second leader, has entered, and the situation is getting out of hand. We need help. He is refusing to listen and is attacking us!" The Royal guard reported.

"Inform king Bryce straight away, send a group out, while we will try to stop him and see what he wants." The other replied, and the group protecting the second floor were gone just like that heading down to the entrance.

"The second leader, as in the Original Tempus? What is he doing here, and why is he fighting against the Royal guards?" Silver asked.

"We should just be thankful that this distraction has given us time to search for what we need," Leo replied.

Now they were able to check the entire floor freely.

Eventually, their search had led them to a library. The library was enormous and reminded both Leo and Erin of the library that they had at their military school. There were three floors just like at the school, only the floors seemed to go on for far longer and wider.

"What is all of this? Why so many books?" Erin asked.

"I assume it's just a collection of all sorts of things. Things collected by the kings, I wouldn't have a clue, honestly. In the first place, this castle is really only limited to a select few even in the vampire society." Silver replied. "This would be a place that I would have probably never seen in my lifetime."

Ignoring their conversation, Leo continued to move around the library. In the first place, he didn't have a care for books. He wasn't the best reader anyway. He looked to be heading to a particular place in mind, and then on the second floor, in the corner down one of the isles, Leo stopped.

"This...is the place." When Leo spoke, he seemed to be nervous, but maybe that was because he knew what exactly was on the other side.

"Is there anyone inside?" Silver asked.

"No, it's just, you will see," Leo said.

He took a few books off the shelf, and behind a type of lever was shown. It was an old fashioned design. Pulling it, the bookcase began to move.

On the bottom floor of the king's castle, at the moment, the Royal guards, who all had the strength of a Vampire knight, had surrounded the second leader.

"I knew you wouldn't listen to me. How dare you point your weapons at an original. It's because of me that some of you are even here in the first place!" Tempus shouted with anger.

"This is the king's castle, and not even originals are allowed here. Please leave, sir! Until we get authorisation from the king!" One of the guards shouted.

"Authorisation from the king? He wouldn't listen to me no matter how many times I spoke. Why do you think I'm here in the first place?"

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1343: Trespassers

The entire library shelf slowly slid to the side, but to a certain degree both Erin and Leo had already been able to see what was on the other side. There were no signs of life, but their ability had allowed them to see the outline of everything and it struck deeply in both of them.

Silver, who was the most hopeful of the lot that they might finally find what they had been looking for, was ready to go in as soon as possible, until a sudden horrid smell hit her nose. It was so putrid, so vile that she nearly threw up in an instant.

"This smell." Silver said, her eyes widening as she had figured it out, it was the smell of death. It wasn't as if Vampire knight had never experienced or seen death before, but this was something completely different.

Rushing in, Silver went to confirm her suspicions and that was when she could see it. The room was dark, being lit up by light crystals on the side, but it was also quite vast inside. In front of her, was what could only be described as an entire pit of deceased vampires.

It looked like an empty giant swimming pool, but what was worse was the fact it wasn't filled with water, instead it was filled with bodies.

"These must be the missing people! Are any of them..." Silver didn't even want to ask the question because she couldn't hear a single heartbeat from any of them.

"No, none of them are alive. I could see their bodies through the door." Leo replied. "The sheer number... there must be hundreds of vampire corpses here."

"But why...why did Bryce store them? Why kill them? What was he doing with their bodies, or what is he planning to do with their bodies?" Erin asked.

Strangely, Silver's next action surprised them both, as she suddenly jumped right onto the pile of bodies. The Vampire knight began searching through and pulled some of them out to the side.

"Shouldn't we leave the bodies as they are? If they return then.." Erin was trying to help, but Leo just grabbed her and shook his head.

"Let her do what needs to be done. All of this will need to come to light anyway." The Blind Swordsman explained.

Silver was pulling out the members that belonged to her own family. They had died with their clothing intact showing their family emblem, and tears couldn't stop form her face as she wondered what or why their lives had ended this way.

Despite being a Vampire knight, nearly all of them were vampires she didn't know and those taken from the pooling area, but there were even some inner castle vampires among those dead. Each one with a few simple wounds.

"Based on the wounds on their body and the expression on their faces, they couldn't have seen that their death was coming. It must have been done by someone who was able to overpower them in one strike since there are no signs of other wounds." Leo noted.

"How do we report this? What should we even do, now we've discovered this? There is a chance that Bryce was just storing them here for now. What happens if he gets rid of them or burns their bodies?" Erin asked.

This certainly was the tricky part. Even if they filmed the scene before them, with today's technology nearly everything could be faked. It also wasn't the right time to show this to the vampires while they were focusing on another problem.

"I swear, I will make Bryce pay for everything he has done!" Silver stated with determination, getting up from the ground and jumping out of the pit of bodies. "He is not fit to be a King! How could someone who cares so little about the lives of his fellow vampires have been elected king in the first place?!"

'Sometimes people get blinded or get upset by the words of others and those around them. It was just nature for beings to act that way', but Leo could tell it was not the time for one of his lectures.

"This place might have been untouched. Bryce has been busy with the attack, so I assume until he accomplishes whatever his goal is, there might be no need for him to return to this room. As for the other vampires, if you remember those from your inner castle, see if they know anything. You might be able to talk to their friends and find out how exactly these people had gone missing in the first place."

"If we can follow the trail we should be able to find people that can help us. The only thing we still have yet to find out is why they need to do this. What was he after? Was it their blood crystal?"

Inspecting the bodies more thoroughly they found out that although the blood crystal had been removed from all of them, it seemed more like an afterthought than the real reason for their death. Some of the killing attacks had been so close to where the blood crystal would be present according to Silver.

"We've done what we can, so it's time for us to leave this place." Leo determined.

There was still the top floor of the castle to check out, the throne room and the King's bedroom to see. Although they didn't think they would find any more bodies there, they at least believed that they might be able to find out information on what Bryce was trying to do.

However, after entering both areas they found nothing and were unable to access the special vault that could only be opened by gathering the blood of each of the leaders.

"It looks like we only have one choice then." Erin said. "We need to talk to Kazz. She clearly knows what her father was doing. That's probably why she told Paul not to look into the missing people."

"I find it hard to believe that Kazz would turn in her father if he was committing such crimes." Silver replied. "I have known her for the longest time and her father...is everything to her."

"Maybe...but maybe you underestimate the girl." Leo put his two cents forward. "In the end, she did agree to help us out. If we tell her what we know then perhaps, this will be the push for her to realise that her father has crossed the line. That this is completely wrong."

It was then that Leo could sense an energy coming towards them incredibly fast, and Erin could as well. She immediately pulled her smaller blood weapon out since it was quicker to use than the one on her back.

Silver was the slowest to act, but when the doors opened they could see who it was.

"Well, what a surprise! Now who do we have here and what exactly were you planning to do?" Tempus asked, clapping his hands as he discovered the trio. Neither one of them responded as all were trying to decide what to do. In the throne room there was only one entrance and exit. If they wanted to get out they would have to fight the second leader.

"Well, at least he isn't as scary as Arthur." Silver whispered.

"I can't argue with that. That Punisher is beyond scary. He wasn't this powerful during my time, but he truly is a force to be reckoned with, don't you agree my dear strangers?" Tempus spoke in a weird tone.

"I have tried to tell the King time and time again, and it looks like he has just lost another one of his precious leaders. This probably has to be the worst reign in vampire history. Well, maybe the second worst."

"You stranger must have entered the King's castle because you believe, like me, that Bryce is failing in a spectacular way. Now, I don't know who you are and frankly I don't care, but if our goals align, why not help each other?"

"I won't mention that you were trespassing, nor will I try to stop you from leaving this place... as long as you help me look for something in particular. You see this entire castle was built to hide something. A single tomb, but I have no idea where

that tomb could be located. I was looking for some type of map or blueprints. So what do you think about my deal?" Tempus asked.

It was a strange situation to say the least, yet the offer was strangely enticing.

## Chapter 1344: A message to the settlement

It was safe to say that Bryce was beyond mad at the loss of Harlu Dawn. As soon as he saw his body lay there on the ground, the King no longer tried to conserve his energy in this fight. Bryce lifted his sword, and just like last time the blood that was out on the field started to wrap around it.

It wasn't limited to vampire blood, even Dalki blood moved towards the sword. While Bryce was busy gathering the blood and staying in place, his Royal Knight, despite the loss of his family member, knew he had a job to do, so he was busy protecting his King.

His cape was capable of blocking nearly anything, and he was doing just that to prevent any of the attacks from getting through. This time there were no losses on the vampire side in the pooling area, as the Royal guards were able to fight in such a formation and way that allowed them to cover from each other.

It was completely different to how the other vampires would fight. It looked as if only the Royal guards had been trained to fight as one unit. While in the other castles it was more similar to a free for all.

As for Jill, she just continued to stay by Bryce's side, standing there, watching the whole fight go on, until she muttered certain words.

"Maybe we deserve to die." Jill muttered to herself.

Bryce was the only one close enough to have caught that. He looked at her from the corner of his eye. His large sword was complete but then he started to form smaller swords from the blood as well. Finally, they all moved outward, aimed at the remaining Dalki forces.

They went through the Dalki's chest, killing them in one hit, but after piercing their initial target, they didn't stop there. The swords continued to fly through the sky going through each and everyone of the Dalki.

The attack was so powerful that it was almost impossible for them to stop, even if they lifted up their hands to block, or strike the attack would end up piercing their hard scales, and if they tried to avoid the attack or run away, as their numbers lowered, eventually more swords could be used for the attack.

Some of the Dalki figured out that their only way out would be to kill off the one who controlled them. A task which should be easy in theory since he was staying still, but Kyle demonstrated how loyal a knight he was. In the end all of the Dalki fell under the power of the flying swords. The ten smaller ones surrounded the single large one that hovered in the air.

As soon as Bryce stopped using his powers, the blood swords fell to the ground leaving a blood mark in their place. The larger sword revealed Bryce's trademark

cane sword underneath, though the King left a small trace amount of blood on it as a precaution.

It flew at him with great speed, yet he effortlessly caught it in one hand.

The fight was over where they were but they could hear that the other castles were still in the midst of fending off the intruders. Kyle had decided to take his time to check up on Harlu, hoping to figure out what Arthur had done to him. He lovingly lifted his body from the ground and examined it. From what he could see there was only a hole in the chest of the deceased.

"It looks like he has granted you a swift death, my son. You lived a long life, but no parent should have to bury their child." Kyle whispered, as he carried his body, hoping to take it back to the family castle.

It was then that Kyle was left frozen in place, for he couldn't believe what he had seen. He had only turned away for a few seconds and now he could see that Bryce had stabbed his sword right through the back of Jill.

"I gave you a chance to live when I had the right to kill you for becoming a traitor. You said it yourself earlier, that we all deserve to die. It looks like I should have done this sooner, and now Arthur won't have the pleasure of killing you himself." Bryce said.

Jill's hand was reaching out to Kyle who was in front of her. It looked like she wanted to say something but blood had already filled her mouth, and it seemed like she had accepted her death long ago. Something resembling a smile crept on her face.

That was when Jill herself realised that ever since her family had broken up, and she had been given this role, she had already lost her life. Everything after that point had only been Bryce using her like a puppet. She had hoped that serving the King might allow her to pay for her sins, but it had just added to them. That's why she decided to do one last thing.

'Everyone...the King has gone mad... Bryce Cain has been abducting people from your families...killing them...and has been sacrificing them against their will... against the leaders' will to somehow beat Arthur....'

'And now... he has killed me in cold blood...the real threat is not Arthur....we need to stop the-'

At that moment, Jill had decided to use her ability of telepathy to send a message out to everyone in the vampire settlement. No matter where they were, or what they were doing. The only exception to this was the one person who had attacked her.

Jill wanted to say more. With her death so close at hand, why should she protect her killer's secret? The former family leader had intended to reveal the existence of Arthur's list and how the other vampires didn't have to worry too much, and about

the other horrifying things that the King had done, but the stab hadn't been a simple stab.

Bryce had decided to kill her slowly. If he had wanted to finish her off quickly, he could have sliced her head off, yet he had deliberately chosen to stab her through the stomach and back to prolong the pain.

However, vampires were great healers and a stab wound eventually heal. That's why King Bryce infused his blood powers into the sword that was still in her body to destroy her from the inside. It was incredibly painful. The pain had overwhelmed her, stopping her from sending out the rest of her message.

Jill passed away and fell to the ground. Pulling his sword out from Jill, Bryce used his Blood control to splatter the blood of his sword onto the ground. He then looked towards Kyle and the rest of the Royal guards, who were just as frozen.

"Now it is just me and you left on the list. If he is only going after the leaders behind that mess you know what that means, but I won't let him." Bryce said.

Right now, it was hard for Kyle to look into the eyes of Bryce, the King who he had vowed to follow, because even when he did, it looked like his ruler was never directly looking at him. After hearing the message Jill left, Kyle couldn't imagine what this meant for Bryce.

Unless they would go against all the leaders who would try to get rid of him, then there was no chance that he would remain King. Unfortunately, as his associate, he wouldn't come out unscathed either. It was impossible for someone like him who had allowed the other to do such things to be pardoned, Kyle himself no longer had any choice.

His only worry was whether Bryce would kill him next. This old man was more unstable than he had ever been. It wouldn't even surprise him if he would sacrifice the guards who had been with them in the foreseeable future.

"We are going to finish this today!" Bryce shouted. "Go to the King's castle, and retrieve them. Bring them here immediately!"

"Your Majesty." Kyle replied but then stopped himself when Bryce seemingly ignored him. Before going to the King's castle he wanted to go to his own family to check if they were safe and to make sure his boy's bodies would be in safe hands.

"That bastard managed to kill your son, don't worry we will pay him back. I should have done this in the first place. If he won't reveal himself, we will just have to force him to come out. We will head to the fourteenth castle, and destroy all of it."

"Everything that ever belonged to that Punisher, anything he ever touched, and any sign of that damned shadow. All of it will be purged from this universe!" Bryce shouted in anger.

\*\*\*\*\*

If you want to support me, you can do so on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1345: The Castles special

Inside the king's castle, in the throne room, Leo and the others had just heard the offer from the second leader, the original known as Tempus. The group didn't answer straight away. The truth was they wanted to converse with each other, but even if they did, it would be hard for them without Tempus listening to their conversation.

In a situation like this, Silver would often let Leo do the talking. She felt like this because they were the ones that were dragged into this mess in the first place, making her feel guilty. She felt like she had no right to make any decision on their behalf.

If they wished to try to fight their way out of this, then she would too. If they chose to accept the offer, then she would as well, but there was one thing she needed to confirm and get out of her mind because she didn't quite understand what was going on.

"There's a tomb under this castle? What do you mean? I have never heard of this before? Who is it, and why do you want to wake them up?" Silver asked, trying to get more information and also trying to buy more time for the others to make a decision.

"I almost forgot that everything about him was erased so you all know nothing. Perhaps only your current king would know the truth," Tempus explained. "I am of course, talking about the first king, and no, I am not talking about the tenth family Eno."

"The true first king who they tried to erase from vampire history. Right now, Arthur is a vampire that is stronger than anything I have seen. Perhaps it's because the two share the same power but regardless.

"The true first king was a special vampire, even more special than Eno. He was the most powerful vampire to ever exist. If we want the vampire race to continue to live, then we have no choice but to summon him!" Tempus said.

Just hearing these words, it was hard for Silver to believe. They spent years in school learning about the vampire's history. Still, she soon remembered that the vampires did indeed try to cover up many things. There were significant blank periods, and even recently, things like Cindy's past had come to light that was never known before.

"So why is Bryce so scared of summoning him?" Erin eventually spoke. "If it's an easy solution and this vampire is as strong as you say he is, then why don't they summon him, and why did the vampires choose to get rid of his past.

"I've learned that the vampires often like to try to erase the bad from their history as if it never happened. So there had to be a reason for erasing this."

"The vampires?" Tempus repeated, finding it strange that she was referring to her own race as such.

"Of course, they are just scared. We, original vampires, are all friends. I assure you I wouldn't be trying to wake him up if I thought he would do us harm. I, just like you, are trying to save the vampire settlement, not harm it. Anyway, you are wasting my time, so tell me what you plan to do?"

While the two sides were in silence, a specific message played in all of their heads. The message that had come from Jill. Bringing Bryce's wrongdoing to light.

"Did you both hear that?" Silver asked.

Leo and Erin both nodded.

"Well, it looks like Bryce's wrongdoings have come to light. Now we have no choice. Do you think someone who wished to become king for so long will be able to give up the throne just because the leaders say so?

"Even if he defeats Arthur, then we will have another problem on our hands. With the absolute blood powers, there will be no one who can stop him."

With the information spread out, it looked like they no longer had to worry about having trespassed in the king's castle or worry about the evidence seemingly having gone missing. Their testimony and Jill's words would be pretty convincing to almost anyone.

The question was, could the three of them take on the Original in front of them. The original's powers varied in strength, and they were all slightly special. The fact that Tempus looked unworried was worrying Silver.

On top of that, she agreed that someone would have to take care of them if Bryce or Arthur won this fight. The absolute blood book would make one the strongest vampire.

'There was one person that stopped someone last time, but could they stop Bryce as well?' Silver thought.

Since the standstill between the two seemed to be going nowhere. Tempus was getting tired and started to walk towards the three masked people.

"Well, if you can't make a decision, I guess it's time I unmask you guys," Tempus said. "I would at least like to know who you are.

Erin stepped forward and was ready to charge in, but Leo stopped her using the butt of his blade.

"We will help you look for the tomb. After we find it, let us go peacefully." Leo said.

Both of the girls were surprised at Leo's answer, but at the same time, they trusted him. In the first place, Silver thought that if there was such a tomb that Erin and Leo should have been able to find it with their ability already, so she just needed to wait and see exactly what he was planning to do.

"Excellent!" Tempus replied. "I assure you you won't regret it, and as you know, us leaders always repay our debts. Bringing him back, if there is any need, he will be sure to help you all."

The other three didn't say anything and began their search in the throne room to see if there was anything they could find. Erin and Silver stuck close together, while Leo would slowly approach Tempus, getting closer and closer each time to see if he would do anything.

"Oh please, if I wanted to hurt you, I would have done so a long time ago," Tempus said, noticing their strange actions. "Look, for you three to come in here on your own, I gather you are strong. So it would be a pain to fight you guys. And I have my task to do. This is a win-win for us both."

In the end, after searching the throne room and finding nothing, Tempus went to sit on the throne and looked to be a little disappointed.

"I thought sitting here would feel a bit special. Or perhaps I would get kicked off or something." Tempus sighed.

"What are we exactly looking for?" Silver asked.

"Well, there seem to be no blueprints to this place, but I'm looking for a type of circle. Hmm.. honestly, I don't know how much I should tell to you three strangers, but you should at least know how the leaders' powers are linked to their castles.

"At the same time, there is a ritual that has to take place when a new leader is selected. Well, all of that was set up and designed by one of the originals. Setting certain rules, society, and more. So not anyone can just force their way to become a leader.

"Anyway, the king's castle is a bit different. As you can see, no matter what, all of the crystals on the outside are powered. This is true even if the king dies. Do you know why that is? Because the system set up for this castle wasn't linked to the selected king's power but was linked to the true king's power instead.

"However, these castles were built using amazing Ma- let's just say built amazingly. Sometimes the castles themselves are the ones that select their leaders? Don't you think that is truly amazing in itself?"

Castles selecting leaders, the more Silver was listening to the Original ramble on, the more she wasn't making sense of anything. Everything she had learned from the vampires was falling apart. The way Tempus was talking, it was as if the castles were alive.

"What I'm trying to say is, even this castle in all its time has never accepted anyone else but the first true king. There has to be a link somewhere to find out where its source of energy is."

It was at that moment that Leo sensed something., Underneath them, he could tell that someone had returned to the castle and had done so with more of the guards that had the same strength as those stationed inside. He thought that maybe they were coming to their room, but that's when he noticed that they had gone to the library and soon entered a particular room, where the dead were found.

'What are they planning to do with them?' Leo wondered, and there was a good chance that they might need to stop whatever they were going to attempt to do.

"Why don't we head to the library? Maybe there is something in there that we can find related to the castle," Leo suggested.

Tempus looked at Leo strangely for a few seconds and a short while later before any of them could answer. Leo could feel the mask underneath his cloak vibrate.

"Communications are back online." The voice from the mask said. "We can communicate with each other and the ship again. If you can return to the castle immediately."

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1346: Make a Choice

The one who had sent out the message to Leo was none other than Xander from the tenth. He didn't know what situation Leo would be in, but it was an urgent matter to contact the others. Since they weren't fully aware about who might be around the Blind Swordsman, the content of the message had been vague enough to not leak any secrets or the family's identity.

Paul had ordered Xander to consistently check if the communication channels might open up, and eventually, seemingly out of nowhere, they started to work. The oddest thing was that it had happened in the midst of the attack from the Dalki and the masked forces.

Nonetheless, Xander immediately informed Paul about this discovery. Due to the situation at the tenth castle being far better than anywhere else, the Vampire knight had been able to simply give out commands without having to go in personally. Once notified, he immediately headed back inside the castle to safely talk to the others.

It was then that Paul was informed that the Cursed ship had been trying to get into contact with them for the longest time. The Vampire knight didn't hesitate to reach out to Sam on the off-chance that the communication might get cut off again at any moment.

"Paul, you finally called us back! We couldn't get in contact with you for a while now, so we thought something had gone wrong!" Sam sounded panicked on his end.

"That assumption isn't necessarily wrong. Things haven't exactly been smooth here." Paul replied and gave the other a brief overview about the situation in the Vampire World. The thing that neither of them could figure out was why the communication devices had so suddenly started working again.

"But you're saying that the teleporter is still out of commission?" Sam questioned, which the other confirmed. "That's too bad, I had considered sending some people through the other teleporter. The special one Logan created, but for some reason it seems to be offline as well. ... we just got news ourselves..."

"If the Vampire World wasn't in chaos, I was about to request your help." Sam then went on to explain to Paul what exactly the Cursed faction was facing at the moment. Both sides were in a pickle, and neither one really afford to go out and really help out the other. However, there was one person they needed to inform about the dire situation, because it was up to him on how to deal with it.

"Let me be the one to notify him, but before that I have to ask whether you've received any news about Linda's and Fex's arrival? Before it went offline we did manage to send the two of them over to your side to check up on the Dragon."

There was silence on the other end, though not because the communication had been cut. No, Paul needed to ask Timmy and Xander if they had heard such news, yet neither one did. The two from the Cursed faction were supposed to be here secretly so it would make sense if they hadn't revealed themselves. They tried to contact them via their masks that should always be with them, yet there was no response.

"Nobody saw them and it's not possible to reach them over the masks. Until we know what happened to them. Let's get in contact with Quinn and see what he wants to do." Paul suggested. Agreeing to this, Sam proceeded to give him a call.

It was at this point and time that Quinn and the others had finished their trials and had received the call from Sam, obtaining the bad news about the Vampire World.

"If the tenth castle is in trouble, I'll travel to Linda immediately and help out there. I can get back to you guys immediately, while those two can travel back to you once the teleporter works again." Quinn immediately volunteered.

Sam wanted to say more, since he still hadn't fully explained the situation with the Cursed Faction yet, but before he could, Quinn had already attempted to find the connection to Linda. However, he was unable to connect to her shadow at all.

'Why can't I connect to her? Has she turned it off completely? That's strange... where exactly is her shadow? I can still feel the others, so there should be no problem on that end. I didn't get any system message either so she shouldn't be dead, but it's almost as if completely disappeared.' Quinn thought.

Still on the call, he asked the one person that might know a little more.

"They should be in the Vampire World, but according to Paul they were unable to get into contact with them. We were thinking of sending a team through to see if they were okay but the teleporter there isn't working either."

This only made Quinn think that perhaps the two of them had been caught, and the teleporter they had come from might have been destroyed. Linda was currently the only one on the vampire planet with the Shadow ability. Without her, his Shadow link was useless.

"Quinn before you decide anything, there's something I need to tell you. I didn't want to do this, but the Cursed faction is facing a problem of our own right now." Sam reported while Quinn was still thinking about what to do. "The Cursed planets... the one that Helen and her sisters are on... it's under attack by the Dalki."

"We are unsure about the size of their forces since we only got a report recently, but our guess is it's a big one. The teleporters are still online there, so we can go, and if you use your Shadow link to travel back here you can do as well."

It was the worst timing, the Cursed faction and the vampire settlements were both in trouble, but it was then that Quinn also realised something. Quinn could get to the Cursed planets relatively quickly since there were plenty of people with the Shadow ability, but the same wasn't true for the vampire planet.

However, right now he was quite close to it. Travelling by ship it would take him a few hours to get there, but if he left with his Shadow link, there was no way for him to get back. He had no idea about what had happened to Linda, so there was no way to tell when the connection to her would appear again.

And for some reason he wasn't able to connect to Arthur's shadow. Even if he could, at this point and time jumping right where he would be wasn't a good call.

Should he choose to help the Cursed faction out, then there was no way to tell if he would make it back in time to help out the vampire settlement.

"Quinn." Sam spoke up. "Do you remember what that Bliss person said? That there would be a time where you had to choose. I think this might be it. I think she was telling you that you would have to decide between either saving the Cursed planet under attack or stop Arthur from killing the other Dragon tier beast."

"I think you know what the right choice is."

The problem was, Quinn really didn't know what the right choice was at the moment. The tenth family wasn't in any immediate danger, but it sounded like Arthur's revenge was taking its toll on the entire vampire settlement, not just Bryce and the others. The Punisher seemed to no longer care about the means for achieving his goal.

While in the middle of thinking this, a system message had appeared.

[Hostility has been detected in the fourteenth castle]

[The fourteenth castle is in danger]

With a lack of answer, Sam knew Quinn's struggle, and thought he needed to give Quinn a push.

"Quinn, I think only you can help the vampire settlements. Since that's the case, me and the others will go help out Helen and the others at the Cursed faction. We will fight and hold the Dalki back for as long as we can. Go help the others while we wait."

It was a tough choice, but Quinn needed to believe in the other cursed faction members.

"Alright. I'll go to the Vampire World then. I have a way to get there. I might not be able to use my Shadow travel, and I might be a little late, but I'll be there to stop Arthur!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1347: Back to a baby

Inside Arthur's throne room, the group was getting ready to move out when the message was heard on Leo's mask. It was heard by everyone in the room since they had enhanced hearing and that included the likes of the second leader.

"Oh, it looks like your little family might be in trouble and needs your help. Although, I believe we had an agreement first." Tempus said. "Don't tell me you're planning to leave after getting that message?"

Too many things were happening at once for Leo to make an accurate decision on the spot. For one, there were those in the castle, and now he could see that they were moving the bodies, placing them on some strange device in the library.

There was then the annoying leader, who was trying to summon the original King from the Tomb, and now his family seemed to be calling for some type of help. The truth was, that the family wasn't in urgent need of Leo, but they wanted to ask Leo what was going on, on his end, and if they had seen Fex and Linda before letting Quinn make his decision.

However, without the chance to talk to them Leo was unaware of that.

"No, let's head to the library quickly. We're in a rush." Leo answered, walking out the door, and the two women quickly followed behind.

Tempus noticed that as the group got closer to the library two people in particular had slowed down. He found it strange, for he had recently come up through all the floors and knew that there was no one on this floor when he had arrived.

He also noticed that one of the masked kept looking at the other two for confirmation.

'Are the other two able to sense something? Something that not even my vampire senses can sense? That is certainly interesting.' Tempus noted.

Entering the library, Silver caught on that they weren't there to look for a book to help out Tempus but it was because of another reason. Entering the room it was filled with around ten Royal guards.

Two stationed on the bottom floor, who could hear that the others had entered.

'This is bad, each Royal guard has the strength on the level of a Vampire knight, and there are ten of them. What are they doing here... could it be?' Frozen in her thought, Silver was too slow to act, but Leo and Erin were not, both quickly heading out.

However, they weren't easy opponents. The Royal guard were able to react by firing off a red slash of aura. Leo had an easy time avoiding it, ducking before the

aura came his way, then getting in position, he avoided a punch and got right up behind the Royal guard using the back of his sword to knock him out. It was quick, strong and had Qi energy infused into it.

'They certainly are skilful, it looks like I made the right decision not to fight them.' Tempus thought, but he could see that the single attack had already caught the attention of the other Royal guards on the other floors.

Erin had used the suppression chains to try and silence her enemy, wrapping it around their head, but midway she had learned they had been caught and because of this. She decided to wrap one of the other chains around the vampire's legs, and swung him, hurling it towards the other floors.

She had succeeded but the only problem was the Royal guard was able to make a recovery, as he spun and landed perfectly fine on the second floor. Seeing this, Erin kissed her teeth tutting.

"These aren't your average vampires. Going easy on them isn't an option, not unless you're as skilled as that person." Tempus chuckled looking towards the masked Leo. For some reason, this comment rubbed Erin the wrong way. She felt like the Original insinuated that she was below him.

Hearing the commotion, rushing out from the pit room, was Kyle Dawn. He ran to the balcony and could see the others down below.

"Tempus, what the hell are you doing here?! The King hasn't granted you permission to come here!" Kyle shouted.

"Do you think that really matters at this point?" Tempus shrugged.

One of the Royal guards jumped from the balcony and was too eager to charge in. Silver was thinking of helping, but Leo grabbed her before she could. The Blind Swordsman wanted to see something, just exactly how strong was this original or what could they exactly do.

The Royal guard had used Blood hardening covering both his hands and was pinning them together as it rushed towards Tempus, but the second family leader just gave a yawn as if the whole thing was just tiring.

"Did you not see the countless bodies of the other Royal guards from the first floor? I didn't realise that they started to allow anyone into the Royal guards." The second the guard got too close before he even could attack, Tempus had knocked both of his fists from above and suddenly the guard's hands were planted into the ground.

The guard tried to get up quickly but before he could, Tempus had already stepped on the guard's back and pushed him into the ground further.

"Whatever happened to respecting your seniors? You know what, I think everyone should learn a lesson for attacking an Original, what do you say?" Tempus asked, not waiting for an answer.

Watching everything going on, Silver also was trying to gauge the Original's strength, yet it was incredibly hard for her to do. It was clear he was stronger than a typical Vampire knight, and it didn't seem like he would struggle against most leaders, but how would he fare against the King?

Tempus picked up the Royal guard from the floor, but something strange was happening as the Original placed his other hand on his back. It looked like his body was shrinking in front of their very eyes. The wrinkles on the guard's face were disappearing and the appearance of the person was getting younger.

'What is going on, is it...the second family's ability, but I've never heard of it being so strong! Is he actually reversing his age!' Silver thought seeing this.

Eventually, the former Royal guard turned into a crying baby and only then did Tempus let go of him, gently placing him on the floor.

"You should thank me, you'll now get to experience life once again as a newborn." A smile was on his face, proud of his work, while all the other guards were now frightened to move.

Even Kyle was worried about what this would mean for them now. "Tempus, have you lost your mind? Stop interfering and I promise to not mention this to the King. You know what Bryce needs these people for. He's our only chance to stop Arthur. You can stay here, just let us do as we wish!"

As someone who wanted to do everything the easiest way possible, Tempus liked this suggestion.

"It's a deal." He shouted.

For Silver and the others they knew that they couldn't let Kyle finish what he was doing, and this was when the deal needed to be cut off.

Silver was ready to act, but once again someone stopped her. She felt something grabbing her around the back of her neck, and Tempus who was a few meters away was now suddenly behind her.

"Ah, ah, ah." Tempus spoke to the other two masked, who had their weapons pointed towards him. "I might not know who you are, but it's clear that you guys seem to care for each other far more than your average vampire does. On top of that, you tricked me."

"You brought me to this place knowing that they were here. I can tell that you two have some type of ability that allows you to sense them or see them. If you're lying about that, then perhaps the two of you are lying about where the tomb is as well."

Pressing his hand against Silver's back, slowly the same thing that happened to the other guard started to happen to her. Silver's appearance started to change, and her body sunk down, until she was just in her top that now covered her entire body.

"Wait." Leo shouted. "Stop! Turn her back and we'll tell you what you want to know. We'll tell you the location of the tomb!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1348: The families shame

The fighting at each of the castles had almost come to an end and unlike during the first attack, the vampires had been prepared this time, leading to a decrease in the number of their losses. However, this still left the families with one worry in their mind.

After this, just what exactly should they do next? Having received the message from Jill, all the vampires were at a loss. The leaders didn't know who to turn to. The King had betrayed them, the one person that they should have all trusted, the one that they relied on in tough times and the one that they had voted into that position.

Still, they were also having trouble against Arthur in these times. Was it really the time for them to dethrone Bryce? After dealing with the invaders, the leaders had decided to do something about this question on their mind.

A strange phenomena occurred next. All of the surviving leaders had collectively decided to head to a certain castle. There was no communication between them. It was something they knew they had to do. All had headed towards the first castle and were waiting outside of the first family castle.

The castle where Bryce was originally from. They were there to demand answers and to confirm whether what they had heard was true. Being strict creatures of tradition, they felt like they were unable to storm the King's castle, so this was the next best thing in their minds.

At the moment, certain leaders had gathered. Jin Talon, Sunny Kent, Jake Muscat, David Scutter and Lee Sanguines. They were the leaders of the 4th, 5th, 6th, 11th and 13th families. The other families hadn't decided to come, or simply had no one that could come at the moment.

When meeting with each other, the leaders exchanged their opinions on the matter.

"It seems that we all got that message from Jill. I still can't believe it, has the King really been sacrificing his own kind?" David asked.

Muka was the first to nod.

"We have been looking into this matter, and it all adds up. If we look at the eighth castle there are no longer any crystals on the outside that are lighting up. Her message must have gotten interrupted by Bryce killing her. I'll be honest, we suspect that certain vampires have been helping him."

"The ones...that Arthur has been killing." Jake said, having figured it out. "I already knew. When the other leaders were getting eliminated, I remember that they were ones who had traveled with my brother a long time ago!"

"With my brother gone, I was left in charge of the family for the meantime, of course. Vadeen Muscat was already dead so Arthur was unable to go after him, but I had no idea that Bryce was doing this. Why would he be doing this, and where is he right now? I didn't see him in the pooling area."

"That's why we are here." Jin stated the obvious. "We need to get some answers, and we need him to be honest. Bryce won't tell us the truth, but there is someone else who should know the truth at this very place."

Not wasting time, Jin got his shield ready, tapping the top of it, making the small blades shoot out from the inside. The blades went around the entire shield dripping with blood. Then throwing it out, it approached the gate. All of the castles had closed their inner castle gates for fear of an attack and the first family wasn't an exception to this.

The only thing they didn't suspect was that there would be an attack from one of the other families. The shield started to spin, throwing out the blood against the wall and in seconds multiple explosions went off. When the explosions stopped the wall could be seen partially destroyed.

"What is going on? Oh no, are we under another attack?!"

"We just managed to get rid of the Dalki and Masked! Is this the Punisher?"

They looked towards the entrance, and could see the other leaders walking through the doors of the inner area. The vampires there were at a loss of what to do, for they too had heard the message that had been broadcasted to them all.

In the end, they decided to do the only thing they could do. They bowed their heads in shame towards the leaders. They kept their heads down, their bodies at a 90 degree angle never lifting it up. While the leaders walked through.

Even the vampires that were injured remained still, letting their wounds bleed out. The vampires were simply embarrassed at what their former leader had done, their current King. They didn't need an explanation as to why the other leaders were here.

In the end, they didn't even need to reach the castle for there were two people who they wanted to speak to were waiting for them.

"Kazz, Nicu." Sunny called out to them. "Both of you have been under your father for a long time. Kazz as his trusted Vampire knight, and Nicu as the son he was raising to take over his leader position.

"I'm sure you are aware why we are here. We wish for you to tell us now what your father has done. Please comply, else we will have to storm the castle and look for

evidence on our way. The worst case, we will lock you up until we can bring in the King himself."

"You idiots!" Nicu shouted, stepping forward. "My father would never-"

Before Nicu could say much more, Kazz fell to her knees with her face full of tears.

"I never thought...I never thought....he was doing the wrong thing. He wouldn't have done this..he wouldn't have if it wasn't for Arthur."

There were some of the leaders that still had their doubts whether or not Bryce was behind such a thing, but this confirmed in their minds that the King was unfit to lead.

"Will you tell us why he was sacrificing members of our family? Their families will want to know whether their death at least had some meaning to it.." Muka requested.

"My father has always stayed true to his word...he has done everything for the sake of protecting....no he wasn't protecting us, everything he has done was for the sake of getting rid of all those with the Shadow power. I knew this, and he had done so using underhand methods that had damaged the settlement he promised to protect." When speaking, Kazz was biting her lip. She didn't even seem to realise that she was bleeding.

Ironically, the person who had pounded into her how important it was to follow the rules had been none other than her own father. It was because of that that she knew how much he had broken them as well. After that, she confessed everything she knew to the leader, about what exactly the King had done with those that he had taken from the other families, and their eyes winded as they heard the tale.

Some of them felt bad, that they hadn't noticed it even though it had been happening right underneath their noses. However there was one thing Kazz didn't know, and that was what he had done to the bodies of the deceased.

Due to this, they had decided to enter the castle, and Kazz led the way, leaving Nicu in charge of all those on the inner castle ground area.

It was the worst day in history for the first family.

Bryce, himself, had finally arrived at the fourteenth castle. He entered the inner castle area, which was filled with buildings that had been abandoned for years, yet he didn't care. Wasting no time he started destroying everything around him.

The blood from the pooling area was brought along with him, and covering his arms, there were now two large vortexes of blood constantly spinning in place. As Bryce stood in the centre. He looked towards the castle.

"Arhur show yourself! I will destroy every single thing in this place until you do!" Bryce shouted, as he let out the large blood vortexes on either side, making them grow ten times in size. They began ripping the houses around them in seconds. It was as if thousands of Blood swipes were hitting the buildings again and again and they were unable to survive. Eventually, both of the vortexes had met up with each other and the blood had disappeared .

However, along with it, so had all of the houses in the fourteenth's castle inner area, now only the castle remained. Chuckling at the site, Bryce was over the moon, because the person he had been waiting for had arrived.

"You were meant to be the last person on my list." Arthur stated, standing in front of the castle, the shadow waving behind his back. "I see that it was wrong to leave you for this long. It's time for you to be gone from this world."

"You're taking the words out of my mouth!" Bryce shouted back.

The battle between the two strongest vampires was to begin, and the whole vampire settlement could feel what was about to occur.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1349: Blood swords

Arthur could see that the blood was moving from the other castles and heading towards Bryce from a distance. It was all of the blood spilt from the vampires, the masked and the Dalki in the area. Controlling more blood was troublesome, and even now, Bryce had plenty of blood to play with.

This was apparent by how much destruction he had caused with just the amount of blood he had now. This was why Arthur decided to not hold back. Quickly using the shadow equip skill, his blood armour was shown, and Arthur held his great sword in his hand.

At the same time, the large shadow started to form on his back, giving him two gigantic wings made from shadow. On Bryce's side, he had formed the ten large swords of blood that were hovering in the air, and it was time for the clash to begin.

The largest of the blood blades was sent out first. This was the blade that continued Bryce's true sword inside as well.

Seeing this, Arthur moved his large shadow wing to block the attack. The two hit, sending out waves of energy in all directions. Pulses could be seen due to how much power was in both of these objects. The sword stayed hovering for a few seconds.

Regardless, the sword also could be seen being moved from the shadow easily and going to attack again. It was hard to tell if the effect of the shadow slowing down objects was working on the blood sword or not, for how quick it could move even after touching the shadow.

Controlling them all, Bryce tried to find a way to attack using all the swords, moving them in different areas looking for an opening. At the same time, the shadow on the wings was reacting to each of the attacks just as fast. Changing shape slightly and being able to move freely.

Eventually, Bryce split one of the blood swords into two at the right moment and went straight for Arthur's head. Before it could reach him, Arthur was able to swing his sword down, slashing it directly in half.

"Did you forget that I was once classed as one of the greatest swordsmen in human history, and I had even more time than you to polish my skills," Arthur said.

Now that his little warm-up was over, it was time for him to attack.

Leo and the others had left the library in the king's castle and were slowly heading through the floors. While Tempus still had a hold on Silver. Although Leo had requested that Silver be changed back to her form before he would help her, he had a feeling that Tempus was not the type to comply.

In almost an instant, he started to make it so Silver was even younger, and now she was about the size of a five-year-old girl. Thankfully the large robe they were wearing was long enough to cover everything on their body. Still, now that she was far smaller, her mask had fallen off, revealing her face.

It was hard for anyone, including Tempus, who wasn't even alive back then, to know who this cute little girl was. It was almost impossible to match it up with the Silver that they knew of.

"Why are we walking?" Tempus asked. "Surely your ability can scan this whole castle. You should know where the tomb is?"

"My ability doesn't work like that." Leo lied. "I'm guessing you noticed me using it before, but it has a short range and is less accurate. Depending on the situation, it is harder for me to see as well. Fast movements can also cause problems."

"I assure you, I don't want anything to happen to my fellow colleagues, and you know that my castle is in trouble, so I would not be taking this lightly."

Of course, everything that Leo said was a lie, and he and Erin already knew where the tomb was. Leo was just trying to buy time, to figure a way out of this without complying with Tempus' order.

The problem was, how would they revert Silver back? It seemed like the only way was to listen and awaken the first king. Perhaps Leo was just delaying the inevitable in the end.

Now that the others had left, Kyle Dawn was free to do his duty. The bodies were being piled up on a large type of storage vehicle. The royal guards were helping with the duty, but some of them didn't seem to be enthusiastic about moving the bodies.

"Hurry, we have no time to waste. Can't you feel it? The battle with the king and Arthur has already started." Kyle said.

Still, even with these words, the Royal guards just felt like this was wrong. They had played no part in Bryce's schemes, they knew nothing about this, so they were processing what he had done just as much as any vampire was.

However, their duty, which had been ingrained in them, was taking over, and they were following orders from the Royal knight. Eventually, all of the bodies had been placed on three vehicles, and it was time to move out.

---

Running forward the flying blood blades continued to attack Arthur's back, but they were unable to touch or keep up with him. His large wings of shadow started to

expand and grow, chasing after the sword blocking them each time they even came close to him.

Arthur readied his sword and was ready to go straight for Bryce, that was until he could suddenly see ten more blood blades appear, hovering over Bryce's head. For a second, Arthur thought the attack behind him had stopped, but they were still there.

'He's been able to gather more blood, and as time goes on, he will be able to summon more of those blades. With absolute blood control, using my own blood attacks will be ineffective against him, he could even use his powers to stop them, so I will just have to attack the old fashioned way.'

As the swords came towards him, Arthur swung his own blade effortlessly despite its large size, whacking them away and even destroying some of them with such strength. Still, Bryce was able to use the blood again, reforming them into hardened swords the second they were destroyed.

"I see the shadow was something I really didn't have to worry about much at all. Eventually, your time will be up as I gather more power." Bryce said.

"Do you really believe that?" Arthur said as he continued to swing his sword, moving his shadow blocking all twenty of the flying blood blades. Then Arthur took a step forward, not just one, but he continued to step forward, blocking them all.

"Do you not remember the reason why I exist? I am the punisher, and my power is meant to be so great, that even if the king is to break a crime, then I am to punish them as well."

Arthur seemingly ignored some of the blood blades now. There was no need to block all of them, and he let a few of them hit his blood armour. Because when they did, it did absolutely nothing.

Although Arthur couldn't use his sword's abilities from a distance, he could still use them on impact. Finally, getting within range of Bryce. Arthur swung his sword down, and Bryce quickly moved his cane covered in blood to his hand. Lifting it, blocking the blow.

An explosion was set off at the same time from the sword's power, causing Bryce's knees to buckle under the strength, bending slightly.

"You might have better blood control than me. You might be able to do all of this, but it doesn't help you in the strength department, nor make up for your lack of skills!" Arthur shouted, kicking Bryce in the stomach sending him flying through the air.

Arthur quickly followed, swinging his sword hitting Bryce in the stomach and sending him to the ground. The blood swords were trying to keep up, but Arthur's

shadow wasn't letting up. He was able to control it at a speed beyond what others had seen before.

Not just that, but with each successful hit, Arthur was getting faster due to one of the abilities contained in the sword. After Bryce had recovered, he was being hit with the great sword, again and again, thrown like a rag doll, each time making his movements faster. Bryce could do nothing but protect his head from the devastating blows.

His armour was what was keeping him alive at the moment, but if he didn't do something, Arthur would only get stronger. Out of rage, the blood armour he was wearing started to light up. Its active skill was activating.

And a flash of red, a great power of aura, was unleashed onto Arthur, who was right next to him. When the flash red disappeared, Bryce could tell that the attacks had stopped, but his opponent had covered his entire body with the shadow wings and was still completely fine.

"You..." Arthur said as he slowly opened his wings. "Even as king and borrowed power are so weak. I can't believe you did that to them. If only I was there!"

However, Bryce hadn't just been doing nothing while suffering abuse from Arthur. Now around him, all the blood had been gathered from the settlement. Hovering above him were over a hundred blood swords.

"You dealt with twenty, but let's see you deal with this!" Bryce said, sending them all out at once.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1350: Hundred blood swords

The hundred Blood swords looked menacing as each of them were pointing towards Arthur. Just ten of the flying swords had been enough to decimate a large group of Dalki, and now the Punisher was facing ten times that number all on his own.

However, despite the situation, Arthur didn't show any signs of hesitation, still willing to go in.

"I have confidence that I will win this fight. I promised myself that I would not fall until I made sure that everyone on my list has been dealt with."

Bryce laughed at this comment.

"We're not so different. Unfortunately, unlike you, I'm not an Original so I wasn't blessed with an immortal body. Why do you think, given my age, I have willingly stayed awake after all this time? I won't lie to you, Arthur, each day my body is in pain, begging me to take the rest it deserves. However, I haven't allowed it to! Just like you, the only thing that keeps me moving forward is my desire to get my revenge on ALL OF YOU PUNISHERS!!!"

The hundred Blood swords were unleashed. Arthur looked like a small dot in comparison, as he ran toward them. It looked like a human who was about to be showered on by rain. It would be impossible to block every single one of them even with his shadow.

"I learned something interesting watching that boy, these wings are fancy and nice, but they're not practical enough." Arthur spoke, as both the wings on his back started to form in his left hand. Instead of holding the swords with both hands, he had switched to solely his predominant one.

Meanwhile his shadow looked to have almost condensed into a shield made of shadows. Although Arthur could move his shadow faster than other people with the said ability, against hundred swords he knew his shadow wouldn't be able to move fast enough which was why he opted to hold it in place.

As the swords came forward, the Punisher was able to move his hand blocking each of the strikes, controlling the shadow expanding it bit by bit even in its shield form, while also hitting away the swords. Arthur also wasn't holding back as he used the sword's powers to blast away as many as the Blood swords as possible.

It was an amazing sight to behold, something worthy of being immortalised into a painting. The ancient vampire blocked dozens of them, yet he was unable to fend them all off. Still, being as skilled as he was, he made sure to limit it so that the majority that breached his defenses only managed to give him surface wounds or bounce off against his armour.

"Even if you had a thousand swords, I would still get through them all!" Arthur declared, as he recklessly started to move forward towards Bryce. Standing still, he had managed to avoid major injuries, but on the move such a task wasn't that easy. The closer he got to the Vampire King the deeper the cuts he received from the Blood swords. However, he didn't care, making sure to avoid just the ones that would be fatal.

"Idiotic." Bryce scoffed, as he formed ten more Blood swords, sending them Arthur's way, hoping to finish him off before he could close the distance completely. Arthur continued to attack and continued to use the explosive powers of the sword. He no longer had the ability of the twelfth family, as it had been a while since he had hit Bryce, but he was still fast enough to deal with all the attacks.

'How is he still able to use his Blood weapon's powers?' Bryce tried to figure out what he might have overlooked. The King had been certain that he would have had a great advantage over the Punisher in this fight. Absolute blood control should have meant that as long as his opponent was a vampire that it should be near impossible for them to use Blood powers or Blood weapons, making it so that he would only have to deal with the other's shadow ability and physical abilities, yet somehow Arthur was still able to activate his weapon.

'The only thing I can think of is that damned armour. It must have some type of ability that still allows him to use his weapon. Well no matter, it seems he is still having trouble with-'

Bryce stopped his thought there, as he noticed that even with the increased number of swords, Arthur was inching his way forward. He continued to swing his sword at the blood swords, narrowly avoiding attacks and blocking them with his shield.

To Arthur his current situation was reminiscent to the olden days when he had participated directly on the battlefield where a fatal blow could come from anywhere. It had been a long time since he had been reminded of when he had still been human.

It was then unexpectedly, when Arthur had come within ten meters of Bryce, he decided to hurl his sword in the air, throwing it like a spear.

The Blood swords tried to stop it, but the sword went through them destroying them as they went past. While Arthur had dropped his Shadow shield allowing it to protect him for a few seconds.

'Any tricks with the shadow I know won't work on this man. Neither the Shadow path, nor the Shadow jump redirect, but he knows nothing about what I have been through!'

It was then that Bryce had to make a quick decision, half of the swords he decided to drop to the ground in order to create a wall of blood that would stop the sword.

As the sword hit the wall it was stopped in its tracks, but to Arthur this didn't matter. He had never expected for things to finish this easily. He pulled on something that looked almost invisible and the sword started to come back towards him.

At first, Bryce thought that it might have been blood control, but soon realised that this was the ability of the thirteenth family. The sword was attached to a piece of string, allowing for it to come back to Arthur's hand, but it never did return.

Now that the number of Blood swords had lessened, Arthur began his attack, swinging the sword from outward in a different direction. It was now Bryce's turn to go on the defensive, preventing his enemy from killing him.

"You know, when I was but a small boy, I actually looked up to your kind. However, you have proven that you have no shame!" Bryce stated. "You killed an innocent man. I won't deny my own crime, but my grandfather had never attacked your people. He would never do anything like that! You say you punish people for their crimes, but who was supposed to punish you? Why didn't you deserve to be punished for killing an innocent man?!"

The two were still fighting while in the middle of conversing, Arthur blocking parts of the flying sword with his shadow shield while swinging his sword with his other hand, and similarly Bryce was blocking attacks with his blood while also controlling the swords.

"Is that the reason why you started your expedition?!" Arthur questioned him. "I may have been the one who dealt out the punishment, but it was still the council who decided against your grandfather. I was not the single person who had decided for or against the decision!"

"That may be true, but it doesn't change that you were the very person that didn't try to look deeper into the truth! At the end of the day, you were the very person who killed him in front of everyone! I don't care if history remembers me as a tyrant, as long as nobody else will have to go through the pain I did!" Bryce shouted.

"That is pathetic!" Arthur denounced his actions. "If you did all of that because someone innocent got punished, why did you go after them? Why did you go after the others? Even now, I haven't chosen to blame the whole vampire settlement, yet instead of going after me personally, you went after the people I cared about! Just because you couldn't find me, you took out your petty revenge on innocent people! How does this make you any better than me then?!"

Each one delivering more power into their strikes and the pulses of energy sent from each one had even moved the rubble around them further and further away off to the side, but finally there was something that was soon to turn the tide.

'Arthur, he is far stronger than I imagined. If I was just a vampire leader I would have never been able to get my revenge. I became King to overpower him, yet that

still doesn't seem to have been enough, but it seems like the Gods are on my side. Because even they want me to win this battle!"

"Your Majesty! I have arrived!" Kyle shouted and the three vehicles were there just outside the inner castle area.

It was time for Bryce to use the crystal. Pulling it out, it was filled with black shadows, all of the Shadow power he himself had gathered, and he was now going to use Arthur's own power against him.

\*\*\*\*\*

If you want to support me, you can do so on my P.A.T.R.E.O.N: jksmanga

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1351: A True Infected

The fight between Arthur and Bryce was at a standstill, with both sides attacking and not one side being able to best the other in strength or find an opening. Still, Arthur believed he had the edge for a few reasons.

His sword still had plenty of power, more so unlimited. He could still use all of his abilities due to the effects of the blood armour he was wearing. His blood armour special effect was to allow him to infuse blood to whatever he was touching. It was an ideal matchup to his weapon, allowing him to use all its abilities whenever he wished. Unless Bryce could destroy the Armour, there was no way for him to stop using the abilities of the sword.

The good thing about it, was it also allowed him to use his blood weapon when fighting against non-human opponents. Although even then, it didn't help him out in a particular situation.

Although Bryce could control all blood, he could not control this, and eventually, even with the absolute blood control, its power would take its toll on one's body. This was what Arthur was waiting for.

Yet, in the middle of the fight, Arthur could feel something was happening, Bryce still was continuing to attack hard, but his shadow seemed to be reacting strangely.

'Is there another shadow user nearby? Is that why my shadow is reacting in a weird way?' Arthur thought, still holding onto the shadow shield. 'No, this feels different. My shadow feels like it almost wants to go over to where he is rather than come to where I am.'

Kyle had done his duty, and there was no need for him to get close to the battle. Even as a Royal Knight, he was worried getting caught up in either of their attacks would finish him off in a single hit. Thankfully the vehicles he could set to an auto travel feature, sending them into the inner castle area.

Arthur, seeing the vehicles approaching from a distance, wondered what was going on. He could see that they were carrying bodies, dead bodies.

'What is he up to?' Arthur thought. The scene of the dead bodies just angered Arthur more, and he wondered if Bryce was trying to use them in some way to taunt him, but that felt silly. Bryce was someone who would do anything for his goal but wasn't a fool to think this would help beat the punisher.

"I bet even you didn't know about your shadows' full capabilities or the true origins of its power," Bryce said. "Let's see how you deal when your own power is used against you."

From the crystal, shadows started to escape and travelled to the bodies. Arthur, seeing the familiar shadow, was stunned for a few seconds. He had no clue how

Bryce was able to do such a thing, nor did he understand, but seeing shadow, he thought naturally he would be able to take it for himself and control it, or at least intercept it.

The shield form had done him well so far, but with half the amount of flying swords attacking him, he could use the shadow as he did before. The condensed shadows changed, and now Arthur was sending his own shadow out to intercept what he could see going after the vehicles.

Before the two of them touched, against Arthur's will, his shadow started to move away and was heading directly to where Bryce was.

"Haha, excellent!" Bryce started to smile. "I thought there was a chance that it wouldn't actually work against your shadow, but it seems like it does."

Arthur, seeing what was happening, wanted to recall his shadow, and that he did, but he was only able to recall a part of it. Nearly half of the shadow that he had sent out looked to be in some type of trance, floating and continuing to move towards the king.

That's when Arthur could see it. There was something in Bryce's hand. The crystal was slightly dark in colour, and the shadow soon went into the crystal, making the colour darker than it once was before.

Arthur could feel that part of his shadow was lost and no longer in his control.

'What is that crystal, and why is it able to absorb my shadow?' Arthur looked at it confused. It was worrying. He didn't know if it was a one-off or not, but he would have to try and win this entire fight without using his shadow.

With absolute blood power, not allowing him to use his blood attacks, and now this. Arthur would only be able to rely on his sword skills and power. The fight was getting harder by the second, and that wasn't the end of it.

The shadow that had escaped from the crystal had now entered the bodies of the dead. It looked as if the shadow power itself was infusing with their bodies. They were becoming covered in shadow from head to toe, constantly shifting.

And then, they started to move. They got up from the pile, still with shadows constantly moving around, and walked towards the battle. This continued to happen until there were now twenty people covered in shadow.

'My shadow powers have never been able to do something like this before. Is he reanimating the dead with them?' Arthur thought.

Arthur was focused more on the Crystal in Bryce's hand, he needed to get it for himself or somehow destroy it. Thinking this, Arthur placed his sword on the ground, and certain areas on the floor started to light up.

He had set up his traps and just needed Bryce to walk into them. He then swung his sword, attempting to hit Bryce. Widely swinging it with the string and using the explosive ability at the same time. Even though Bryce had blocked the attack with his blood, the sheer power of the explosive was nearly getting through his blood wall now

It was moving Bryce ever so slightly from side to side, until the light shone beneath his feet. Bryce had stepped into one of the traps freezing his body for a few seconds.

It was the perfect chance to hit Bryce cleanly.

Arthur had been using around 90 percent of his strength in each attack so far. Still, knowing that Bryce probably had more, Arthur didn't want to tire himself out for unexpected situations like now.

'Now I have to use everything I have to shatter that crystal!' Arthur once again hurled the sword like a spear. It went faster than it did before, and the blood wall had come to protect Bryce.

The wall was successful in arriving in time but not successful in stopping the sword. It went through it as if it crashed through a wave splitting the blood to either side.

Yet, Bryce wasn't worried because all twenty of those with the shadow bodies lifted their hand, and just like Arthur, what looked like a wall now made of shadows had appeared.

'They can....control the shadow...' Arthur realised. The second his blade touched the shadow, he realised that it worked just like his.

He pulled the sword away via the string with strength, attaching it back to his hand, and was left even more perplexed as to how to get out of his situation.

Now, he couldn't use shadow or blood skills, and he was fighting against his own powers.

It was at that moment that the other leaders had arrived from the first castle.

They decided to stay quite far back as they watched the spectacle and could see the dead bodies, the bodies being used in the way they were.

"This was Bryce plan. How is he able to do this?" Sunny wondered.

"I'm not sure," Jin replied. "However, it seems like he might have Arthur pushed up in a corner."

As they watched this scene, the question on everyone's mind was, who should they try to help. Who was the villain? Would Arthur continue to attack those in the vampire settlement with the Dalki after this, or would Bryce descend further into madness, refusing to give up the throne?

Perhaps, it might have been a situation where none of them deserved to live. What the leaders didn't know was that the situation was about to become more dire, and far more complex. For at the king's castle, Leo had made a decision.

With no way out and wishing to save Silver's life, he had led Tempus to the first king's tomb. They stood on the underground floor in a certain spot. There was nothing to show that the first king was buried here, but Tempus destroying the ground where they were could see the round chamber. The specially designed tombs for those to go to sleep.

"Finally, finally!" Tempus said with excitement. "It's been a long time. It's finally time for you to take back what was always yours, my friend." Tempus said.

\*\*\*\*\*

My Werewolf System has finally arrived on the Web Novel!

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1352: Interruption

Due to the situation, the leaders were in. In the end, they decided to help neither side. Joining one side at the moment wouldn't guarantee that side would win. Although it looked like the Punisher was cornered, they thought that he would still be able to at least harm Bryce or tire him out somehow.

The best course of action for them would be to wait for a winner out of the two and then for them to act because right now, neither one of the two were good for the vampire settlement.

Now that Arthur was aware that those that were covered in the shadow could use his powers, he decided to go for a different approach. Arthur needed to take out those with the shadow power.

"You are already dead, so there is no guilt inside me when I do this!" Arthur thought as he charged in towards one of those with the shadow powers. Arthur swung his blade, hitting the shadow person from the head down to his feet. The flying Blood blades were still following from behind.

A quick slash was made, And Arthur went on to move to the next one, but he realised something.

'I felt like I hit nothing. What is going on?' Turning his head, Arthur could see that the figure he had just attacked, nothing had happened. It was still standing there. Arthur had no time to slow down. Otherwise, the blood swords would eventually hit him.

When reaching the next person covered in shadows, he decided to do a vertical slash instead, hoping to cut the body in half. This time he paid closer attention. He could see his sword going through the body. He could feel it slicing the body, but just as quickly as he went through it, the shadow was almost reattaching the parts and bringing them back together again.

'I...I can't hurt them... it's like I'm just hitting a body made of shadow's.' Arthur didn't understand these shadow beings, and he didn't have time to figure it out. Turning around, ten blades went to stab him at once.

Moving the sword, he tilted it so the flat side could block the attack, all ten points of the blades hit at once, but the force was great, causing him to be lifted in the air by its power. It was a bit close, but Arthur had no choice but to activate the explosion power.

A loud bang was made, and the swords were destroyed. Still, Arthur had also suffered from some of the attack made by his own sword. His face was hurt and partly burnt, and for some reason, it wasn't healing either.

"Haha, you really are a fool", Bryce said. "You have a gifted body that can heal you from an attack like this, but I guess for more serious wounds, even you require blood. When was the last time you had consumed blood? If you don't, you will soon die." Bryce said.

Knowing there was nothing else Arthur could do, he decided to go forward to Bryce once again.

"So what I can't use the shadow, so what I can't use blood powers. All I need is a sword in my hand to take you down!" Arthur shouted.

He covered the distance in mere seconds and thrust his sword forward. A shadow appeared attempting to block his attack, and Arthur spun his body using the sword as weight skidded himself across the floor and, moving to Bryce's side. It was open, and the shadow was unable to keep up.

Arthur thrust to hit Bryce successfully on his side. The blood blades followed and stabbed Arthur from behind. Most of them had hit his armour, but one had managed to hit him just underneath the armpit, a gap in his armour.

Still, Arthur pushing through and ignoring the hit continued with the thrust, successfully hitting Bryce, and activated the explosion power again, increasing the power of the hit and sending him across the field.

'That was a bad hit.' Arthur thought as he could feel his blood trickling from under his arm. 'But I got a hit off as well. It might have just hit the armour, but now the twelfth family ability is activated, and I have gained extra speed. It was worth it, and I need to end this now!'

Arthur had a theory, and he wanted to test it out. Running after Bryce, the blood blades stood in his way, but Arthur decided to summon his shadow once more, covering himself. It blocked the blood blade's attacks and Arthur continued to dash forward, the shadow slowly trailed once again. Although following the direction Arthur was going in, it wasn't following him, but going to where Bryce was currently present.

This was because the shadow is no longer Arthur's.

Once again. Arthur went to attack from the front, but the shadow from the other twenty were summoned. With his speed, he thrust his sword and then moved to the side to repeat the same attack as last time, successfully hitting Bryce once again from behind. Another explosion hit off, and Arthur had gained even more speed.

Bryce now was bleeding from his mouth, having been hit by two big blows. His armour was unable to defend from the power of the explosion.

'How...I have the power of the shadow...and the absolute blood powers, and he is still able to hurt me!' Bryce was angered, but the shadow from Arthur soon entered the crystal in his hand.

Arthur had figured it out. All of Bryce's strengths were in a way, his weaknesses as well. The crystal that could stop Arthur from using his shadow and was controlling the others needed to be protected. Meaning the blood wall couldn't be moved to defend himself as much anymore.

At the same time, it wasn't impossible for Arthur to use his shadow. Just every time he did, the shadow would no longer be for him to use again. It was more of a one time use. In emergency situations, he could still block the attack.

This was why Arthur was successfully able to attack Bryce, despite all of his advantages.

'If you had fought me without all these things, it would have been a more interesting fight. This is what happens when you use borrowed power.' Arthur thought.

Repeating the same thing again. Hitting Bryce for the third time. It was getting easier since Arthur was getting faster after each successful hit.

"What are we watching right now? How was Arthur able to turn the tables around?" Jake asked.

"I heard that the leader of the Punishers was a great fighter in tactics and even more," Muka said. "He was someone that the vampires even feared when humans had no powers. He was able to take on mystical beings and had even killed a few stray vampires before he had been turned. That was the type of person they had turned into a vampire."

"That person had 1000s and 1000s of years to hone his skills, and that is what we are witnessing right now. While Bryce had been obsessed with absolute blood control. Bryce also thought that if he could stop Arthur from using his shadow, he could somehow win, yet this is the result in the end."

Seeing how things were playing out, the shadow from the crystal started to lead again, heading to more bodies, and at that time, more of the shadow people were being made. The numbers almost doubled from before.

Bryce had decided on giving up on the blood being used as a defensive measure. Instead, the new shadow users stood between him and Arthur. At that moment, before Arthur could dash in, more than a hundred blood swords had returned, and they surrounded Arthur like a chamber.

"This will be your fall!" Bryce shouted, moving all of the swords at once towards Arthur.

"Did you not learn anything!" Arthur shouted, using his shadow again to block the strikes from the swords, and charged straight forward, holding his sword with both hands. He was ready to swing it out with great speed. At the same time, Bryce had his cane sword held back in his hand.

The blood vortex he had summoned from before was now around his sword, and Bryce charged forward as well. The two were ready for a big clash.

Until a certain individual had dropped out from the sky, landing in the middle of them both, his head was down, making it hard to see who it was. Neither cared for this intruder and had planned to deliver their attacks regardless.

"Who is that, who jumped in the middle of that madness!" Jin called out.

The leaders looked at each other to see if one of them had intervened, but it was neither of them. They all thought that the intruder was to perish. Even if a leader jumped between those two attacks, they would fall.

The intruder stomped down on both of his feet, and before they could reach him or each other, he threw his fists out in both directions. A large invisible force had hit Arthur, he didn't even see what had hit him, but it caused him to fall on his back. At the same time, the blast in the other direction seemed to cut through the blood on Bryce's sword, hitting it and making the old vampire fall as well.

Leaving only one person standing, raising his head.

"Stop this!"

"That's...the tenth leader!" Jin called out.

## Chapter 1353: No point fighting

The other leaders were beyond shocked to see the tenth leader of all people suddenly appear in the middle of the fight between King Bryce and the Punisher Arthur. Where had he come from? How did he know about this fight? And most importantly, what had he just done to knock both of these supreme beings off their feet?

Nobody doubted his strength, after all he had been the one who had defeated the previous Queen. Although not crowned for long, Cindy had learned the Absolute blood control skill and had even stolen the Blood armour, yet he had still somehow been able to beat her.

Nevertheless, this fight was a tier above that.

Unlike his predecessor, Bryce had had ample time to familiarise himself with the King's exclusive skill. What's more, he hadn't been considered the strongest leader out of all of them despite his advanced age for nothing. Then there was Arthur, a being that none of them understood, yet all feared no matter how strong they got.

"What did he use against them? I didn't see anything come out of his hands?" Sunny asked, watching carefully.

Unfortunately, nobody else had been able to make it out, because it was something none of the vampires had seen before. Quinn had used the third stage of Qi. He had tested it out on the space beings, and had only recently come across it, but it was also the only thing he had believed would be able to surprise the two of them on initial impact.

Any blood attack they would have simply avoided, his shadow abilities would have fared no better,

yet they couldn't block an attack they were unable to see. It turned out that it had worked far better than even Quinn had anticipated.

A short while later, after the tenth leader had landed on the ground, the ship could be seen crashing off in the distance. Now it made sense to them why Quinn had suddenly appeared out of the sky.

Of course, during Quinn's flight all he had been doing was preparing himself, watching out for any situation where he might be needed. The second his eyes latched onto Arthur, he had decided to descend.

'I have to...I have to speak to them all...all of this fighting is pointless.' Quinn thought to himself.

"Listen!" Quinn shouted, while the two were still getting off the floor. "Stop fighting, neither one of you should have a real reason to fight against each other."

The second Bryce saw who it was, his anger wasn't unsettled.

'How did this boy even get here? Even as a King he dares defy me!!!' Bryce was practically fuming.

Still, due to what had just happened moments ago, the vampire wasn't going to act until he knew how Quinn had done it. The tenth leader always seemed to have tricks up his sleeve and there was a chance what had just happened was the same.

Bryce could feel his insides hurt from the strange force, and his body wasn't healing well from it. Nevertheless, it didn't stop him from holding back his tongue.

"How dare you?!" Bryce questioned him. "You ignored an official order from your King himself and what's more you tried to harm me? Do you know the consequences your actions will have?"

"Shut up!" Quinn yelled back, immediately directing it at Bryce. "You aren't fit to be King, not that I ever regarded you as one. You've attacked the fourteenth castle, and I already know what you have been doing to all those missing people from the other families!"

While on his way here, Paul hadn't stopped updating Sam on the situation, who in turn would relay that information to Quinn as well.

"Both of you need to hear the truth! Once you realise how stupid this whole thing is, hopefully you will end this madness!" Quinn pleaded.

Arthur for one, decided to not attack and let the boy speak.

"I shall listen to you, Quinn. I owe you that much at least, though I doubt it will change anything." Arthur said and stared at Bryce. His gaze made it clear that he would resume the fight if the other vampire wouldn't follow suit. The King didn't mind the chance to have a breather, especially since it would grant him time to get rid of the strange energy.

Bryce just scoffed, but he didn't give off any signs that he would attack. Knowing him this was the best he could get. Not wanting to waste any time, Quinn started to speak, hoping it might quell the situation somehow.

"Look, I understand Bryce, I know about your past! I saw the room and I know what really happened to the knights." Quinn began.

Suddenly, Bryce became far more intrigued to hear what the tenth leader had to say.

"The Boneclaw, Richard Eno's old familiar, is now with me. I saw what really happened. I know your grandfather was the person who was against the Punishers. So it was easy for them to put the blame on him, but he wasn't the one that harmed them. The one that harmed them is the familiar that is now with me."

When telling his tale, the other leaders were also able to hear, but they could only guess what Quinn was referring to.

"The truth is, Richard Eno, the first king, was the one that had ordered the attack on Arthur's knights. He did so hoping that Arthur would take his role more seriously. He needed someone powerful to pin the blame on, so the vampires would believe there was a need for Punishers."

"Don't you understand? The one that orchestrated this entire situation, the one who tricked both of you was none other than Richard Eno, the First King. He is the one behind all of this!" Quinn explained. "Bryce, he caused your grandfather's death, not Arthur! Arthur was just as much a victim in all of this."

"I know!" Bryce suddenly shouted. "Don't you think I didn't know that, but that doesn't change the fact that he and all the vampires still agreed to put them to death! No one stopped anything."

"Even if I said this fact, would anyone believe me, could they bring him back! No, by then everyone was praising the Punisher's existence, and you tell me to blame Eno? I've blamed him every single day since I found out, but where is he now? Don't you think I should blame all the vampires that also agreed to the whole settlement in the first place!"

Hearing Bryce speak his mind like this, he and the other leaders actually got a good look at Bryce's true feelings. He didn't just hate the Punishers, he also hated the vampires that had allowed the Punishers to exist. No wonder, he had been able to so easily claim their lives to achieve his personal goal.

"Do you not care what happens to the settlement, as long as you get what you want?" Quinn asked. "What crap are you talking about? The majority of vampires making up the settlement weren't even alive when your Grandfather died! Why should they be punished for crimes they didn't commit?!"

It was at that moment that Arthur let out a big sigh.

"I told you, Quinn, that no matter what you had to say it wouldn't change anything. Where even is Richard? He's not in his tomb, he escaped, right?"

Quinn was waiting for this as well., if he couldn't convince Bryce then maybe Arthur.

"Arthur, Richard is...I think he's dead." Quinn replied. "However, he's not the only one. I can at least promise you that Jim died. The Dalki were being controlled by him, you don't have to..."

Arthur shook his head as Quinn was saying these words.

"I already know about Jim's death. Your friend Fex told me, but this doesn't change anything. Even without him, the Dalki will still win this war. Before I pass on, I WILL exact my revenge!"

"Knowing that we were both tricked, doesn't change the fact that Bryce killed my friends and their families. I can't forgive him for that. The Dalki sacrificed their people to allow me to get my revenge, so I will still kill the Dragon to repay them... unless you can stop me, Quinn."

Hearing Arthur say this, Quinn knew that there was only one way out now. Still, he had one question on his mind before trying to stop the Punisher.

"Where are Linda and Fex?" Quinn said.

"Defeat me and you will find out, but I think you will soon join them." Arthur replied confidently.

At that moment, the shadow people that were under Bryce' control, charged in towards Arthur and Quinn. Bryce pushed himself off the ground, and went far away from the boy.

"I will get rid of both of you!" Bryce shouted.

However, Quinn just stood there, his fist tensed up.

'Arthur, are you saying you...killed them!'

The shadow creatures came towards him and Arhur, they then suddenly collapsed, falling on the ground. Bryce stopped for a second, wondering what had happened. He looked over at his crystal, yet it was still dark in colour, not having changed in the least and yet the shadows out there were no longer listening to them.

[Title placed]

[Leader of the Punishers]

[You now have control of the shadows in this area]

All of the shadows lifted from their bodies, revealing their true selves. Arthur could see some of the wounds he had created with his sword, the bodies now laid there on the floor, and the shadow went and joined with Quinn, adding to his own.

'The castle....it selected him.' Arthur realised.

"If you don't want to listen to reason, I'll just have to beat the both of you!" Quinn shouted in anger.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1354: Better than them

[New quest received]

[Your fourteenth castle has become a battleground]

[You have been unsuccessful in getting either person to back down peacefully]

[Quest: Throw out the intruders!]

[Reward: ????]

'Even now you're still giving me quests?' Quinn thought as he looked over the message. After receiving Eno's little gift, he was no longer able to improve his normal stats since they had been maxed out, making him curious what type of reward the system would offer him. Not just that, but there was something else that he noticed with the system as well that had given him confidence.

'So...you think I can do it, huh? You think I can take these two guys on. Not that I was going to back down in the first place.'

[Using your title's effect, you have consumed the shadows]

[Your maximum amount of MC cells has grown]

'It's strange to see shadow users here, something must be going on.' Quinn concluded, but he didn't have much time to think.

Arthur, now knowing that the Vampire Lord had decided to fight, was charging in, but rather than at Bryce it looked like he was aiming for Quinn instead. Still, something was up, why wasn't Arthur using his shadow?

"I'm thankful you came! With those shadows gone, I can use you to speed up my attacks, Quinn! Let's see how much you've learned since the last time!" Arthur called out his challenge, swinging his sword.

"I'm sorry, Arthur, I'm afraid I can't allow you to touch me!" Quinn replied.

A large amount of Qi had been piled up in Quinn's body ever since he had defeated the Pure's Agent 2. By absorbing all those crystals in the Demi-god tier beast's hideout, he had received a boost that his body simply hadn't been able to handle... until Eno's gift that was.

Now he could use more Qi than before, and he could utilise it. To top it off, the stats Quinn received made him faster than ever before.

At the right time, as the blade was swung down, Quinn moved and went to punch the blade by its side, but before his fist even touched the weapon, Arthur already

felt the force in it being pushed. The blade continued to go forward and had hit the ground.

Quinn then went in for another punch but this time, Arthur moved out of the way.

"You think, I'll allow that strange invisible force to hit me twice?" Arthur questioned, picking up the sword from the ground, and ready to slam it against Quinn.

Before that had occurred though, the flying Blood blades approached both of them from behind. Quinn could sense the incoming danger and immediately jumped out of the way, yet the Blood blades were still floating towards him.

'Blood swipe!' Quinn activated the skill, and aimed towards one of the large swords. After it left his hand, he could feel that his swipe was being controlled by something, causing his attack to miss.

'Cindy wasn't able to do that. Is Bryce's absolute blood control so great that he can even control my blood skills? No wonder, Arthur has refrained from using his Blood skills!'

With part of the Blood blades going after Arthur and some going after him, Quinn needed to deal with them, and perhaps attack Bryce. That's when he decided to activate his shadow, lifting it in place. The sword's attacks were blocked, but he noticed something. After blocking the attack, Quinn attempted to move the shadow, but just like his Blood swipe he lost control over it.

'Activate title effect!' Quinn ordered and tried to regain control over the shadow. Alas, it refused to listen to him even then. Quinn followed the escaping shadow and saw it head towards Bryce like a dog happy to see its owner.

'Is that why Arthur hasn't been using his shadow? Just what is that crystal in his hand?' Quinn wondered. It was strange, Quinn was supposed to control shadows even if they were controlled by others with his title effect.

He had believed Arthur hadn't used his shadow because he knew that, but that didn't seem to be the reason at all. The crystal seemed to be more powerful than what Quinn's title allowed him to do, even though they were in the fourteenth castle area.

'The shadow isn't the only thing I can use!' Quinn thought, dashing off the ground, and kicking the ground up as he left. Quinn was now even faster than Prima, the one that had been called the fastest vampire, and he ran past all the blood swords getting to Bryce's position nearly instantly.

"Bryce, you lost to me once already! Do you think your fancy title will change anything now?!" Quinn taunted the other vampire. Getting ready to deliver a Hammer strike filled with third stage Qi directly to his opponent's stomach. He had

learned from fighting Cindy that it was important to not touch the armour, and with his improvement in Qi it should be easy enough.

"You brat, let's see who will have the last laugh after this fight! I'll make you grovel at my feet." Bryce couldn't see what Quinn had done but he could guess, and held out his palm. The King's arm recoiled backwards, firing off a red raw beam of energy. It was the Blood cannon, only supercharged with power.

The two forces collided, sending ripples out, and Quinn knew he would be hurt, so he decided to use Shadow lock on himself. The attack continued going forward and had beaten out Quinn's Qi strength but he was nowhere to be seen, instead Arthur was now following up from behind.

Arthur went and thrusted his sword forward, but Bryce had activated his ability. As the sword got within a certain range, it started to constantly be hit by some strange force, by then, Quinn had come out of his shadow lock, and appeared behind Arthur.

'Crescent kick!' Quinn went out, throwing a kick towards Arthur's head as hard as he could. Seeing as there was no way for him to avoid the strike, the Punisher had no choice but to use his shadow to defend himself.

Seeing this though, Quinn smiled. His foot continued to travel, and as the shadow went to surround it, it was suddenly pushed out of the way.

'I have to keep attacking after this!' Quinn told himself.

His foot landed solid, connecting with Arthur's head. He was confident in his shadow blocking the attack but no such thing had happened, and because of that, Quinn's foot had successfully landed, hitting him to the side.

Straight away Quinn went to chase after Arthur, but a vortex of blood appeared in front of him. Destroying the ground and blocking his path.

"Damn it!" Quinn yelled in frustration, aware that this time Bryce was getting in the way.

The leaders watching the spectacle couldn't believe it. Quinn wasn't simply strong, but he was actually able to keep up with the other two supreme beings on the field. They were watching vampire history unfold in front of their very eyes.

"How did the boy get so strong so fast? He might even be doing better than them." Sunny said.

"Quinn has gotten stronger, the situation is to his advantage." Jin pointed out. "I don't know if you noticed, but Arthur's greatest weapon is his shadow, but the King's crystal seems to stop him from being able to utilise it. To top that off, even when Arthur uses it, Quinn appears to have a way to get around that somehow."

"Quinn's speed and strength is beyond that of any vampire I have ever seen."

They were right, Quinn himself didn't know what had happened to him, but ever since his system had been unlocked and the full potential in his body got unleashed he was able to keep up with them both.

'This won't do.' Quinn thought. 'I can keep up with them, but I can't beat them like this. Without my shadow, I can't utilise my full strength, but Bryce has his annoying crystal....maybe, there's still a way.'

It was a risk, but it was the only thing Quinn could do. Right now all of the momentum of the fight was in his hands, and he needed to finish this before things changed.

[Soul weapon activated]

[Shadow overload]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1355: An Eye With Wings

Using Shadow overload in a situation like this seemed quite crazy but Quinn had his plans. He didn't know how long Bryce or Arthur had been fighting for, but both of them were physically wounded and not at their best. There wouldn't be a better situation to subdue the two of them then at this moment now. Quinn needed to finish it.

With Arthur unable to use his shadow due to the strange crystal, Quinn thought he would have a nice surprise for them both.

[Shadow overload activated]

The shadows started to pour out from Quinn and soon covered his body giving him the shadow body he would usually get. He was waiting to see if his shadow body would be consumed by the crystal but it didn't seem to be the case.

Then, letting out a slight flicker of Shadow control, Quinn could see it heading for the crystal. Although the shadows on his body weren't influenced by the crystal, whatever he would use would be.

'At least this means I can still use the shadow, and while I'm in this form I have unlimited MC cell's to use the shadow as much as I like!' Quinn thought. 'Two minutes that's all I have.'

[Nitro accelerate activated]

Quinn's already fast body sped up even more. There was a reason why the Vampire Lord had kept this armour set in particular, instead of exchanging it for ones at a higher tier and it was all because of this active skill.

Perhaps in the hands of a human, it would have only done so much, but on a vampire with 100 Agility, the boost from this active skill was all he Quinn needed.

Bryce's Blood swords went out towards Quinn. Seeing this, the most common comparison one could make when seeing such a sight, would be that it was like raindrops. Something impossible to avoid, but Quinn could see each and every one of the individual swords.

He ran forward, moving past each one as if they were in slow motion. They missed and slowly turned around, but every single one of them couldn't touch Quinn even for a second.

"Impossible!" Were the words coming out from Bryce's mouth, a sentiment that everyone else present would agree with.

Seeing this, the King prepared to use his blood in a different way from the swords, ready for the close combat battle that would soon come, but Quinn would interrupt any idea he had of this.

Two Shadow portals appeared in front of Quinn. He empowered his hands with just the first stage of Qi and punched forward as hard as he could. Bryce was confused by these actions because Quinn was nowhere near close enough to do damage, even with his strange powers.

At the same time though, as Quinn's hands went through the shadow, they came out from two shadow portals behind Bryce's back, hitting him from behind. The force was so great that it threw Bryce through the air, towards the tenth leader.

Quinn had actually lost control over the Shadow portals the moment they had finished forming, but he didn't care. They had served their purpose and in his current form he could do it as many times as he wanted.

Bryce was approaching him, but he had already adapted to the situation, creating two Blood swords in his hands, while he placed the crystal around his waist.

"Sorry but I'm not the one you're going to be fighting." Quinn smirked, lifting his hand, and dropping Arthur in the middle of it. Arthur was suddenly thrown into an awkward situation appearing from a shadow portal, and had no choice to once again use his sword to cause a giant explosion destroying the Blood sword but also hurting both of them in the process.

The two of them tried to recover quickly but were still hurt from their fight from before.

"Quinn...you. What is that?" Arthur asked, looking at his strange shadow body which was something Arthur was even unable to do with the shadow.

"This is you not knowing a goddamn thing about me, Arthur!!" Quinn answered, as he ran forward towards him, the blade was swung down, and Quinn had summoned his own sword himself. He swung it as hard as he could, and Arthur was getting ready to swing back.

Quinn's swordsman ship screamed immature, but what did it matter when the strength, speed and Qi behind was beyond anything that Arthur had seen before? The second the two swords made impact, Arthur could feel his strength losing out.

"I fought against Cindy using this to save the settlement! I fought against countless Dalki and more. All with the image of you in my head!" Quinn revealed.

Arthur, seeing that he would lose out in strength, decided to cause yet another explosion, but his hands were still damaged and it had started to pile up. Still, he could see no other way to get Quinn's sword off him.

A big explosion occurred and Arthur was hurt but neither had moved from their place, Quinn was unhurt. His shadow body had protected him and his sword was in perfect condition unharmed.

"This was a gift from a human! He gave this to me because he wanted me to live, to get stronger and to help save the human race! So why? Why couldn't you do the same?" Quinn bellowed, kicking Arthur's sword, sending him to the ground.

It was then that Quinn could feel something coming from behind, as he turned he could see two large vortexes of blood heading his way.

"Don't interfere!" Quinn shouted.

He started to swing the sword like a mad man, but each time it would let out stages of the third Qi, when it would touch part of the Blood vortex it would disappear and disperse. With this, Quinn created countless sword slashes, going through the air hitting the vortex until it was no more, and followed behind it was the sword itself.

Bryce had no clue this was coming. The sword went through his barrier ability of a thousand strikes. Everything that got within a certain range of the user would be struck by an invisible force that was similar to that of a sword, controlled by the person's ability. Of course how many strikes in a certain amount of time was determined by the user, and the strength of the ability itself was also dependent on the user.

This could be used in an offensive as well as defensive way but despite his ability, the sword went through without faltering and hit Bryce in the centre of the chest so hard it caused him to fall onto the floor. The sword had even slightly dented the armour as it stayed there in place.

"Arthur, I don't understand!" Quinn turned his attention back to the Punisher, now unleashing Shadow portals all over the area, he started to throw out Blood swipes, Blood disks and more into each of the shadow portals. On top of that, Quinn would create new ones so the attacks would be directed coming from a different place.

Arthur picked up his sword and started swinging, blocking a lot of the attacks, but eventually there was one person that would be there as well, Quinn himself. He threw out a knee that was blocked by the sword, but then a Blood swipe hit Arthur from behind.

Quinn delivered a strong thigh kick, this time Arthur used part of his shadow to block, but seeing this the tenth leader used the third stage of Qi to break through it. It also broke through his own shadow body, but once the kick was delivered to Arthur's thigh almost shattering his bone inside the Shadow body returned.

"Do you remember when you beat me silly before? Well I haven't forgotten it, but let's see you try that again!!" Quinn didn't hold back his spite, suddenly sinking into the ground and appearing from behind. The Vampire Lord kicked his target into the

air, and then sunk into another shadow below appearing directly above Arthur and gave a punch full of pain straight on to his chest slamming him into the ground.

Arthur landed, creating a crater, leaving Quinn standing in front of him.

"Did...Quinn just... win?" Jake asked, still not believing what his eyes had seen.

It was at that moment, that all the shadows that Quinn had used in the fight, including the one Arthur had used, headed towards Bryce.

"Get up." Quinn ordered. "I'm not done."

At the same time, inside the king's castle. Leo had finally gotten Tempus to revert Silver back to her original appearance. The Original cared so little about them that he didn't even take the chance to verify who had actually infiltrated the castle and just handed her back after he was done.

Blood was already dripping onto Tempus' hand and had fallen into the chamber.

"Should we stop him now?" Erin asked.

"No." Silver shook her hand, placing her mask back on her face. "It's already too late."

"We have to get out of here!" Leo answered, and the three of them started to run out of the castle immediately, but who would they warn, who could they warn and what could they do.

The chamber slowly started to lift from the ground, this one slightly larger than all the others in the other tombs. Then slowly as the blood dripped onto the body inside, it started to energize them.

"Awaken, once again my old friend!" Tempus called out.

The chamber slowly started to open, and the one who had been asleep for the longest time, took a step out. There was a look of confusion as the one looked down to his hands and checked his surroundings.

"What...happened." Those were his first words, directed at Tempus as he was the closest one to him. The next moment memories of the events of everything before he had been placed in the chamber filled his head.

"ARGHHHHH!" The being screamed with anger, as he walked forward and a special marking could be seen on his back. A single eye with wings.

"You have woken up, my friend! You, the first REAL King of the vampires, the only King we should have ever had! Now come and let me help you claim what's

rightfully yours!" Tempus explained, with clear fanaticism as he tore off the sleeve on his shirt, revealing the same marking as the other, a single eye with wings.

\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1356: A Vampire God

In that instant, the leaders, the vampires in the settlement, and even Arthur, Quinn and Bryce could feel a strange energy suddenly enter the whole settlement. It was for a brief moment, but as it hit them, it caused all of their bodies to shudder. It was something that none of them could explain because it was something that they had never felt in their life before.

On top of that, Quinn could feel something reacting to it.

'Is it in my dimensional space? The tablet is reacting to whatever that was just now.' Quinn thought.

Still, the fight had to continue, and Quinn didn't have much time to waste, as Bryce had gotten up and thrown the sword off to the side.

"I'll kill you, I'll kill you all!" Bryce shouted.

The leaders wished to stay and watch the outcome between the three of them, even though it seemed apparent now who would be the winner.

"Did you feel that?" Muka asked.

"I did. My heartbeat twice as fast for a few seconds there." Sunny replied. "Has something happened in the settlement?"

"That would be my guess." Said Jin. "I think it might be time for us to head back. Quinn has this under control, and we can tell him our plans after this."

All of the leaders were concerned that something might have happened back at their own castles, so they decided it was best for them to check up on the situation.

At the king's castle, the original king, the first that had been tasked with leading all of the vampires, had been awoken once more. He was a large muscular man who had a perfect V shape on his upper body. Broad shoulders and long black hair that went down to his collarbone. The most impressive thing about him was the muscles on his back. They were defined so well one could see them even when he simply walked.

The only thing he had on was a pair of trousers, so his top half was visible to all.

He looked to be in his late forties or so with his finely trimmed beard on his face. Just like other vampires, his eyes were red, but this one had a particular glow to them, a glow that was unseen in the other vampires as if a fire was constantly burning in them.

"From what I know, that is everything that has happened since your slumber," Tempus reported. He had just given an update to the first king, the same way he

had done when he was awoken. Telling him of the world of vampires and what each king had done after him, even explaining the punishers that were created after him.

"So that damned Eno first chooses the humans over Rex Immortui, the being who gifted us this power, to then give my own power away. My power was used as a chain the vampires from doing what they wished!" He shouted, slamming his foot on the ground.

Cracks started to appear on the floor, and the whole castle shook under his sheer power.

"Call all of the vampires, tell them to get out from their castles and meet in the centre. The new king, Laxmus...I shall give up my name to prove that I am a real follower of the dead god. I, Laxmus Immortui has given them their order."

Giving a bow, Tempus had decided to go out of the room first, and Laxmus, the old king, had followed. Surprisingly they could see a bunch of the Royal guards present just outside.

At first, they had helped Kyle deliver the vehicles to the king, but halfway through their journey, they had second thoughts, stating that they could do this no longer and had decided to return to the castle.

Seeing them, Tempus was ready to talk to them, but they knew they would be hard to convince, but that's when Laxmus had gone out before Tempus even reached them and looked into their eyes.

"This is an order. Tell all the vampires to come out from their castle areas and welcome me." Laxmus said, and just like how the influence skill would work, their eyes started to fade.

The royal guards immediately went out, informing all of the families in the nearby area. Tempus couldn't help but continually smile at the old king's return. He had been part of those that had subdued the king in the past, but showing his tattoo proved that he was a faithful follower of Immortui, which was why the Laxmus hadn't outright attacked him.

When they finally reached the pooling area, the place was a mess from the countless fights with Bryce and the Dalki. There wasn't a single building that had been left standing. As the order was sent out, vampires started to leave their castles and enter the pooling area, at least what was left of it.

Even they were shocked by what they could see. The people came out confused. With no leaders present in the castle, they felt like they had no choice but to listen to the command of the Royal guards.

"What is happening, was Arthur dealt with?"

"I think they might be selecting a new king, or maybe a new king has been selected."

Rumours started to spread, and eventually, everyone gathered in the pooling area from each of the castles. In the end, even Paul and the others had decided to follow the orders, not wanting to cause trouble and Kazz as well.

The reason for them coming out was the strange feeling they had felt not too long ago. Paul, Silver, and Erin had arrived; they were no longer wearing their disguises and now stood by Paul's side.

"From the look on your faces, it seems like you guys might have a better idea of what is going on at the moment," Paul asked.

"It would take a while to explain, and I'm not quite sure," Leo replied. What was worrying him was the colour coming off from the vampire that was standing in the pooling area. Now that he was awake, he could see it clearly. Although his colour was purple like most of the vampires that Leo saw, he could also see a source of white light.

The Royal guards stood in order, as they would usually do in front of the king, only this time they weren't standing in front of the king, and instead in front of a vampire none of them had seen before.

However, the vampires did recognise Tempus, who was by this person's side. It looked like the new vampire was prepared to give a speech and that the leaders had returned from their little spectacle that was happening at the fourteenth castle.

They could see their families were all huddled outside of their castles and wondered what was happening.

"Excellent, it looks like everyone who needs to be here is finally here," Tempus said. "Although, there is one person missing? Is he dead?"

"Greetings, everyone!" Laxmus shouted in a booming voice, it travelled easily through the air, and everyone could hear him clearly. "I am the vampire king, Laxmus Immortui. A servant of the one that bestowed this great gift to us all, and leader of you all."

"I, your rightful king, was betrayed a long time ago by all your family leaders, bashing me into an eternal slumber, but all I was trying to do was complete the task that our god asked us to do.

"To send more souls to the undead world. I was simply fulfilling his wish, and for some reason, they had decided to stop that. It was the reason why we exist and the reason why we were so different. Now that I am back, I plan to continue this conquest.

"We shall travel to earth and start the annihilation. Sending countless souls until Immortui's belly is full!"

The other vampires listening to the speech were confused. They had no idea what this new vampire they had met for the first time was talking about. Some strange god that they served, none of them even believed in gods. They simply cared just about vampires and themselves, even those vampires that believed they were above humans.

Some of the older leaders knew a little bit about the old past and had a bad feeling about who this person was.

"Leo, what are we going to do?" Erin asked. "I know a lot of what that vampire said sounded crazy, but I'm pretty sure he just said that he was going to get rid of all humans."

Leo was unsure what to do and was hoping that instead of them needing to act, that the other leaders would. But he feared something else even if they did act.

"It seems none of you sees me as your king. I gave an order, yet no one is moving. There were no cheers after I spoke. I see the vampire settlement has truly, truly fallen." Lifting up his hand, Laxmus made a flicking gesture, he pointed it towards the crowd, and with a flick of his finger, a red beam of aura left it.

The next second, the entire row of vampires no longer had their heads and fell to the ground dead.

The vampires screamed as they ran around the settlement, trying to get back into their castles. These actions just seemed to annoy Laxmus more. Still, before he could do anything else, all of the leaders were now standing in front of him, including the Royal guard Kyle.

"Oh my, doesn't this remind you of the past," Tempus said with a smile, looking at all of them against the original king.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1357: Laxmus' Strength

It was a struggle for them to gauge the strength of the vampire in front of them, but after they had seen him destroy so many vampires with a simple flick of his finger, they knew two things. One, he was powerful, and two, he didn't care about the vampires' lives at all and would do anything to get his way.

"Is it just me, or does it feel like the vampire settlement has been on its last legs a lot recently," Jin commented as he pulled out his blood weapon, the blood shield.

"Indeed, but I remember a time when the leaders would complain that nothing would happen, that their powers were wasted, well here is your chance," Lee replied.

Muka stepped forward out of the group of leaders.

"This is the vampire settlement. I know you may be one of the original vampires, but we have our own rules and ways of working. You recklessly just killed vampires under the settlement, you are not fit to be a king, and none of the council does not agree with your decision. We now have no choice but to attempt to forcefully remove you from your position.

Laxmus looked at the leaders in front of him and just started to laugh.

"There were a lot more of you last time. Do you really think that you can stop me? All of the originals only just, and there was that annoying Eno man before."

Hearing this, the leaders were unsure if the new vampire was bluffing, but he was right about one thing. That the leader's numbers had dwindled. Kazz hadn't joined in, and Tempus was standing on the other side.

The 1st, 2nd, and 3rd families had no leader that could represent them in this fight, and it was similar with the 7th, 8th, 10th and 12th families. Either they had been disbanded, similar to Jill's family or they just didn't have a leader anymore.

Leaving the fight up to six leaders, Jin Talon, the fourth leader, Sunny Kent the fifth leader, Jake Muscat the 6th leader, Muka Fortuna the 9th leader, David Scutter, the 11th leader, and Lee Sanguinis, the 13th leader.

The vampires in the settlement stood to the side, watching the fight that was to occur in front of them. They believed that it was easy work for their leaders, while the leaders themselves did not. The first to make a move was David. He had strong hard fists that would only become more powerful with each hit.

It was a similar ability to Prima, but it relied on strength more so than speed. As he ran forward, all the other leaders followed in an Arrow formation, ready to make their attack at the right time.

David threw out his fist, which looked to be twice the size of a regular person. Laxmus looked to also be making his move, as he threw his own fist to match with Davids. This was exactly what David wanted, a head to head confrontation. It was where he was at his strongest, no blood powers and no fancy tricks.

Seeing the movement of the hand, Lee decided to use his blood strings to pull back the hand of Laxmus, so he was unable to punch, allowing David to make a clean hit, but at that moment, Laxmus wasn't held back at all.

He moved his hand, and the strings didn't break but had overpowered Lee, sending his face to the ground. The two fists collided, David's fist was shattered in seconds, and his whole body went flying backwards.

That was when the settlement saw something they thought they would never see. The way the vampire treated them was similar to how they imagined a fight with a leader and a regular vampire would go.

"Do you really think someone who has been blessed with the gift from our god could be hurt by you fools!" Laxmus shouted, and a shield was seen coming his way. Grabbing onto the shield, he caught it.

Seconds later and several explosions went off. It used Jin's blood activating on the spot. Jake was pretty sure that wouldn't be enough to hurt the original and soon was placing his hands on several places in the ground, setting up traps wherever he could.

At the same time, both Muka, with his large spiked mace, and Sunny decided to attack from the side. Muka swung his mace with blood aura over it while Sunny was prepping for the attack known as blood canon.

The dust from the explosion had settled, and Laxmus was seen standing there.

"What an interesting shield," Laxmus said, and using his finger, he gripped hard, crushing it and causing it to break with pieces crumbling to the floor.

Laxmus' whole body started to turn slightly red. His entire skin was red, and it was something the leaders had never seen before. When the mace successfully hit from, Laxmus grabbed the weapon with his bare hands allowing the spikes to go through it, and using his strength, he pulled it from his hand, now holding the weapon for himself.

The blood cannon from Sunny had successfully hit Laxmus, but it didn't even move him a few inches. Taking the spikes out of his hand, Laxmus held the mace and swung it hitting Muka, and smashing his black armour to pieces, he went falling to the floor.

Sunny started to use her blood powers one after another as she constantly kept moving, keeping her distance. Laxmus then dashed over towards her, but she had carefully made a note of where Jake had laid his traps.

It was then that one of them lit up, and Laxmus was unable to move. Seeing this, Jin made a cut on his arm and threw out his blood, attacking with everything he could, and Sunny and the other leaders had all done the same.

However, despite all of this, Laxmus' red skin was still intact, and the only wound on him seemed to be from Muka's mace that he had self-inflicted.

"The leaders...they can't beat him..." the vampires thought.

They could see they had used great skills and their abilities, yet it was quite clear that the vampire was hardly injured. The vampires didn't know what to do. If they were to run into their castles, it was quite possible that they would be attacked.

It felt like all they could do was watch as a new vampire king was forcefully selected.

"I was right. You guys are weaker than the ones before. Let me show you what a real blood attack looks like." Laxmus said as he smiled.

Placing both his hands to the side, a red ball of aura could be seen gathering in both of them. Blood would spin constantly. It was then he threw it out that two beams of red energy shot out. It looked like whoever or whatever it touched would be destroyed.

The beam was too large for the leaders to avoid, so they all prepared blood cannons, firing it off into the red energy beam. Their own attacks had joined up, creating a powerful blood attack, but it was a dwarf compared to Laxmus'.

When it touched, it did nothing, and the leaders could see their lives flashing before their eyes, until a certain girl with black hair who they hadn't seen before stood in front of them. She stabbed her large sword into the ground.

'Third skill activated.'

Soon an ice wall started to appear, and the attack hit the ice wall, and it wasn't breaking at all. It was then that the attack began to reflect back, and it was now heading for Laxmus himself. Seeing this, he had no choice and braced himself.

He gathered energy in his fists again and punched the energy upward, almost redirecting it into the air. Still, he wanted to hit it all away, but some of the energy had still hit his body.

Soon the ice barrier disappeared, and Laxmus could be seen, huffing and panting. His skin was partly hurt from his own Aura attack.

"What was that!" Laxmus shouted out. "Tempus!"

It was then, that a red blood swipe, faster than any of the vampires had seen, shot out from the side, Laxmus lifted up his arm trying to block it as if it was no deal, but it had cut through his arm and left a large cut on his skin, drawing even more blood.

The one that the leaders thought were invincible had just been hurt and damaged twice.

"It looks like the two of you took all the limelight," Paul said.

"In a fight like this, that does not matter. We just need to win." Leo replied.

As for where the two attacks had come from, the tenth family seeing them started to cheer.

"It's the tenth family! The vampire knights and Erin."

"Vampire knights," Laxmus said, holding his arm, trying to figure out what this weird energy was. "Vampires from the tenth family hurt me, and they were knights at that!"

The leaders themselves couldn't believe it. They didn't understand what happened but knew it had come from these now standing in front of them. However, Erin had used her strongest skill and had the element of surprise using it at the perfect time, still Laxmus was not yet defeated.

To top things off, Tempus went to Laxmus' side and placed his hand on him, and in front of all their eyes, Laxmus' wounds that he had just received had healed.

"That is going to be a troublesome pair," Paul said. "Looks like we need to get rid of him, first."

## Chapter 1358: Vampire knights

Out of the blue, three strangers seemed to have become the settlement's hope. After they saw that the leaders' attacks did nothing to harm the strange vampire, suddenly they bore witness to how those from the tenth family managed to harm him.

Laxmus, now having made a full recovery, had decided to change his plans a little after meeting these new vampires. He ran toward the Royal guards who had just stood by the side, not sure what they were meant to do.

It was a sorry sight to behold. They had once represented the glory of the vampire settlement, yet their number had dwindled to a mere fifteen, the rest having perished in battle. The Royal Knight Kyle stood in front of them since he was meant to command them, rather than with his family members.

"Kill them all!" Was the the simply command Laxmus gave the Royal guards, and nearly in an instant they turned against the crowd of people, charging in without any mercy.

"Wait!" Kyle shouted. "What are you doing?"

It was obvious that the Original King had used something similar to the Influence skill, but each Royal guard had around the strength of a Vampire Knight. Not even leaders could force them to do their bidding unless the guard might have served under them.

"Stop, this is an order!" Yet, no matter how loud Kyle yelled, it did nothing as they ran into the onlooking vampires, yet the leaders were there to prevent the normal populace from suffering any harm.

Sunny and Jin, were the first to go to combat with the Royal guards, hitting their spears away, and delivering a palm of red aura. Still, they would recover and attack again as if they were possessed.

"Leave the protection of the settlement to us!" Sunny shouted towards the tenth family group. "You're the only ones who can harm him, so please, defeat that tyrant!"

This seemed to be the will of the other leaders as well, as they joined the fourth and fifth leaders in holding down the Royal guards.

"You heard them!" Paul said. "They're relying on you two. I know my powers aren't enough to beat him. I've only learned how to use the first stage of Qi from the other vampires and I seriously doubt it will so much as tickle him."

"Still, there is another annoyance that I can help you get rid of." Paul never planned to just sit around and watch. He went to face the one who had awoken the strange vampire, the current leader of the second family, Tempus.

As long as he was there, not only the Royal guards but Laxmus could be healed over and over again. In a way it was of the utmost importance to get rid of Tempus before any of the others and Paul knew this.

The leaders and the vampires watching this thought Paul to be suicidal, because Laxmus wasn't far away, but the second he tried to move towards his fellow Original, Erin ran forward and pointed out her blade between the two of them.

Out from the Demon tier weapon came a large ice tunnel, until it hit the castle wall, creating a barrier between the two of them.

"You and your damned sword again!" Laxmus cursed as he turned around, looking at both Erin and Leo.

"This might be a harder fight than against Arthur. Now you will finally get your chance to show off all your skills!" Leo stated.

The reason why Paul was able to run head first towards Tempus was because he had confidence in his allies, or at least that's what he would have liked to think. While running over his heart kept beating louder hoping that they would do something. He wasn't a fool, he knew he had no chance going up against Laxmus, thankfully they did help out in the end.

'Now, it's time for me to do my part!' Paul thought, as he banged his gloves together to reveal the poison claws and immediately went striking towards Tempus, who moved out of the way quickly, avoiding each of the strikes.

"Are you really just a knight, you are a bit fast for one?" Tempus commented as he calmly went to grab Paul, but before he could, a set of strings had come out, and wrapped around the Original's hand, pulling it away.

"Don't let him touch you, if he does it's all over." Silver warned, and at that moment, not wasting time, from her chest a red glow could be seen.

"I will pay you back for embarrassing me!" Silver shouted, as nearly an identical version of her, appeared. The only difference was, it looked like this version of her was slightly red. Silver quickly attached strings to herself, and charged in along with Paul.

'What is this, a blood weapon but where did it come from?' Tempus wondered. The feeling was similar yet different at the same time. Regardless, he went in and avoided the sword strikes. At the same time, Paul came from the side striking again, yet he missed as well.

However, it looked like he was finding it difficult to attack as well.

"This is annoying." The next second Tempus decided to charge in, and one of the Silver's was successful in her sword strike, scraping his chest. A smile appeared on Tempus' face, as he moved to the side and grabbed her hand, trying to activate his ability, yet it wasn't working.

"Now!" Silver shouted.

It was at that moment, that eight flying balls of poison could be seen, and Paul made sure to target them all from different directions so the balls wouldn't miss. He was using his soul weapon as well. It wasn't a battle where either of them could hold back and a single touch could change the battle.

The poison hit, with no regard for the Silver that was still being held and this was because he had figured out that it was nothing but a puppet. The strange thing was, the Silver that had been grabbed was coloured, while the other one was tinted slightly red.

Which was why Tempus was slightly confused by how he could have been tricked by them.

"Idiot, I can make the puppet look how I wish! I thought someone as simple as you would fall for this."

It was then that, all the poison had successfully hit the Original, it immediately made him feel weak and he fell to the ground. Paul saw this as his opportunity to go in, and so did Silver. The two of them were beyond annoying.

As they came close, Tempus smashed the ground lifting up rocks in the air, in mere seconds his body looked to be recovering to what it once was. All the poison damage that had affected his body had disappeared.

"I'll make you pay for having tricked me!" Tempus' lackadaisical attitude changed to one serious, now not caring whether he was hit or not, he went straight towards Silver. Her puppet had been damaged and destroyed by the poison. It was their one chance she thought they had, but didn't realise just how fast the Original could heal.

Still, as Tempus reached out his hand, Paul had arrived from underneath stabbing his claws directly through it.

"There's two of us!" Paul shouted.

He could see Tempus using his open palm to hit Paul again, but he simply stabbed it with his claw again, hitting the other's open palm. As he was now, the Vampire Knight decided to use all the poison he could to weaken their enemy, yet they seemed to be at a standstill.

No matter how much poison he pumped into the other's body, the vampire kept reversing its effects, returning to prime condition.

'We have to get rid of him!' Silver thought.

Tempus was moving slowly forward pushing through the pain, and allowing for the claws to go deeper into his hands, all he needed to do was touch Paul. At this point, Silver was behind Tempus and tried to slice off his head.

However, having expected as much, her attack only struck on an outer layer of Blood hardening that he had used to protect his neck. Silver struck again, this time aiming at another area and slashed at his back, but the second she pulled it out, it looked like his body was healing on the spot. She continued to cut but her attacks just weren't strong enough.

"Why! Why!" Silver shouted in frustration.

It looked like time was up, for Tempus was soon upon Paul. Pushing through the pain and walking forward.

"You just need a little more help!" Another female voice stated.

She came from the other side, with a sword of her own, and started to stab at Tempus' back, but the stab didn't just make one wound, but made several in the same place, cutting the inside of the body as well as the outside.

"It's been a long time since you and I fought side by side like this!" Kazz said.

The two of them continued to attack. Tempus had seen the other leaders fight, and he was confident. How could three simple knights allow him to reach this level?

It was then that Paul, also summoned the poison balls hovering over his head again.

"You didn't think I could only do that once did you?" Paul smiled. "A commander knows when to reveal his trump card. I was waiting for her to join in."

The second Paul had entered the field, he had caught eyes with Kazz off to the side, she looked a bit lost, but at the same time concerned. Still, he and her had gotten close, and he thought that she wasn't the type to just stand there and do nothing when her people were being wrongfully attacked. It was a bit of a gamble but it had paid off.

The floating poison hit Tempus from the front, and as soon as all eight balls hit him, his reversing ability wasn't as quick. Paul, quickly, pulled out his claws, and all three of the knights started to attack Tempus non stop.

Eventually, a claw, and two swords stabbed Tempus right through the head, causing the second leader, the Original, to meet his end... to Vampire Knights...

The dying vampire had no idea where things went wrong...but he only had one regret.

"I won't get to see you...send them all to him." Tempus murmured as his vision went, looking over the ice barrier at the other side.

## Chapter 1359: Not a Vampire

Erin and Leo had no time to help the others, for the foe in front of them were far more dangerous than any they had faced before. They just had to hope that the others would be able to deal with the second original.

If there was one person that Leo felt like he could trust, it was Paul. During his time while serving him, he was a man who was a great fighter and knew how to use people and abilities to their full potential. In some ways, he was even better than Leo when it came to things like that.

"Your sword is annoying!" Laxmus shouted as he dashed over to Erin. It was the person he deemed as a bigger threat out of the two of them.

Even before the fight, Erin's hands were shaking but not because of fear. It was because the urge inside of her had grown ever since she had set her eyes on this person.

"Leo!" Erin called out.

She needed to do something and knew that her actions would leave her open, so she relied on her trusted teacher, who stood in the middle of her and Laxmus. Leo quickly placed the sword back in his sheath and took one step forward.

Then, concentrating, he waited for the right moment before pulling the sword out as fast as he could, dragging it out. A large line of red aura was seen that looked to even rip and cut the air itself as it was distorted to the outside viewers.

'My fastest and strongest strike! I just hope it gave Erin some time.' Leo thought.

However, the strike could be seen hitting Laxmus' hand, and this time there was no wound at all.

"I admit I let my guard down for a second when you hit me before. Whatever you are doing causes problems for my healing, so I won't let you hurt me again," Laxmus said.

Where the strike had cut, the forearm of Laxmus was jet black. It looked like a strange material had grown on his arm, but this was simply a form of blood hardening, a stage that no one had ever reached before, apart from him.

'I had enhanced my strength and even covered the strike with the second stage of Qi, yet it was still not enough to cause a cut on his arm...this person is beyond anyone I have seen before.' Leo realized.

Still, he had done his duty, for Erin was finally ready. She was making preparations. Her large Demon tier sword was placed on her back, and she had

drawn the Katana blade while also releasing the chains, so they were now only on her wrists.

The reason for doing this was quite simple. The strongest part of the Demon tier weapon was the stats they provided the user. With it on her back, she could still receive the energy from the sword. On top of that, two of the active skills had already been used.

In the current situation, the second active skill of the Demon tier weapon was useless since Laxmus didn't seem to be using any armour or weapons. Which was why she had opted for the katana blade that she had more practice with in the first place.

'First movement.' Erin recalled in her head, as she spun her body and the chains ran across the floor, the first one wrapped around Laxmus' left leg, and the second one was ready to wrap around his thigh.

However, before the second chain could touch him, Laxmus grabbed hold of it. He had planned to rip it apart, but when he pulled it, the chains didn't break.

'The chains are covered with the second stage of Qi. They won't break so easily.'

Still, Laxmus' power was greater than Erin's, and she was seen being tugged through the air, but at the same time, while floating in the air, she had her sword pointed outward while with her other hand, her palm was on the back of it for support.

"You just helped me!" Erin said. She had never felt this way before, strangely new energy was rising in her, and it was completely different from the times in the past.

She couldn't help it, and she could not control what was about to come out from within her. She didn't know if it was because the suppression chains were off or if it was because of who she was facing, but her eyes started to glow yellow, and a yellow Aura could be seen over the sword.

As Erin prepared to strike from the front, Leo went from behind and prepared his one-strike slash again, placing it back in his sheath.

'In this fight, I will be the support.' Leo thought, as his attack was only meant to be a distraction.

Seeing the yellow Aura, Laxmus' confident smile faded away, and instead, anger was building up in him. A vein appeared on his forehead.

"You let a Dhampir exist!" He shouted.

Laxmus' skin turned redder, almost the same colour as blood itself. He no longer looked like he was human. Next, as Leo threw his one strike, it had stopped

midway. When he looked up, it hadn't hit his back, for instead, it had hit a pair of wings.

The black hardened blood covered the entire of Laxmus' forearm and went up halfway to his bicep, producing something that looked similar to that of a flame pattern. His fingers elongated, becoming more boney while his nails grew, and his head also seemed to elongate as well.

No longer could anyone who looked at this being think they looked human or like a vampire. This was something more along the lines of a bloodsucker, only something far worse.

'This was the white energy I could sense inside. It has mixed with the vampire self...this is not a vampire.' Leo realized.

However, it was too late for him to do anything. Both of Laxmus' wings flapped with such strength that it sent Leo flying across into the crowd. A few of them stepped to the side, while members of the tenth family who had trained under him had grabbed Leo.

They continued to skid across the floor, but these members were ones that had trained in Qi and had used whatever power they could to finally hold Leo.

"Are you okay, sir!" They asked.

Leo hadn't replied but instead spat out some blood. With the flap of wings, a force that went through his Qi had struck him, hurting him. All he could think now was that Erin was in trouble. Lifting his hand, the yellow aura hit Laxmus' open palm, but it looked like it did nothing.

The sword had done nothing. Erin tried to pull on the chains to reposition herself. She moved over to the side, but Laxmus grabbed both of the chains and pulled them apart this time. Despite them having been coated in the second stage, they had no trouble breaking as the links fell to the floor.

"You are getting stronger even now. You can not live!" Laxmus said, his voice much deeper than it was before. He opened his mouth, which stretched beyond what was humanly possible. The skin by the side of his mouth opened, allowing him to open it four times what a human could, and a red beam of aura energy could be seen gathering.

The next second it was unleashed.

"Please be ready!" Erin thought as she pulled her Demon tier weapon out from her back, and she could see the ring was no longer on cool down. She pointed out the sword activating the first skill. It shot out the ice tunnel directly towards Laxmus.

The two great powers hit. As the ice tunnel hit the red aura, it started to freeze over it, but the attack hadn't stopped being produced from Laxmus' mouth, and the ice

was getting destroyed by the second. The red aura beam was winning. It continually struck the ice until it finally looked like it was about to reach Erin.

"The Demon tier weapon lost out. His attack was stronger?"

"You did well, but it's time you leave it for us." A voice said, and as the red aura was about to touch Erin, a shadow could be seen rising. It smashed into the shadow and stayed there in place while someone grabbed Erin and moved to safety.

The shadow then moved, and the red beam was redirected into the sky. Lighting up the whole planet and had gone so far out through the sky that perhaps, those from other planets could see it.

"The shadow power, my power!" Laxmus said, turning around. That's when he could see a man holding onto the opponent he was facing just seconds ago.

"Why.." Erin asked as she was gently let down. She didn't understand, why of all people now, had Arthur decided to come and save them.

However, Arthur just looked towards the one in front of him and held his sword in his hand. At the same time, there was another by his side.

"The king, the king is here!" The people shouted.

Both Arthur and Bryce stood a few meters away from each other, looking towards the original king. By now, the fight with the Royal guards had ended, Paul and the others had defeated Tempus, and everyone had moved away to the edge of the vampire settlement.

"Wait, why are Arthur and Bryce here? What happened to Quinn?" Sunny wondered.

Arthur looked towards Bryce.

"You heard the boy. We just have to give him some time."

Bryce scoffed and walked forward.

"I was never counting on him in the first place!" Bryce answered as he lifted his hands, summoning the hundred blood swords.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1360: The Castle reward

Arthur laid on the ground, while Quinn stood above him. He was still in his Shadow overload from standing strong, while the Punisher was bleeding from the open wounds, further exhausted by the multiple explosions from his sword.

"Why won't you get up?" Quinn asked Arthur in a growling tone.

"Why don't you just finish me?" Arthur questioned back, continuing to just lay there.

"Because you haven't gone through the same pain as I did back then!" Quinn answered immediately. "Do you think I don't know? I know what your blood armour can do! That damned Richard Eno had it on file, so Logan told me about it."

"Every set of blood armour has a different skill. Eno's allowed him to block any attack head on no matter how strong, the King's can destroy anything it touches and then there's yours, the power of the armour itself acts like blood."

"You can use it to power your weapon whenever you wish but that's not all. It also acts like blood for the user, meaning you can consume it to heal your wounds, but it looks like you haven't done that even once during your fight with Bryce or me."

"You might be unable to use your shadow because of that crystal, but if you used that armour you would have been able to continuously fight me at your full strength no matter how hurt you got! Alternatively, you could have used your blood powers to the max without getting hurt if he wasn't there."

It was true, Arthur's friendly smile after Quinn pointed out those facts, said it all. If Bryce hadn't had the crystal he could have used his shadow, if the other didn't have the Absolute Blood Control he could have used his Blood powers, but that didn't stop him from using the armour's power to heal.

As Quinn and Arthur were in the middle of conversing it looked like Bryce had gotten up again, ready to use his Blood powers on the two of them, but something strange had happened at that moment. He fell to one knee and blood started to pour out of his mouth.

Quinn turned his head, because it had become apparent that for some reason, Arthur had no intention of harming him anymore. Feeling something similar about the tenth leader, the Punisher lifted his head to look up.

"You've used the Absolute Blood Control for too long." Arthur explained with a light chuckle. You were already an old vampire in the first place. If you keep it up, you will die... but I bet you knew that already. Is that really what you want? The kid is already too strong for the both of us."

"Shut up!" Bryce shouted, summoning a singular large Blood blade, throwing it out towards Quinn. At that moment, Quinn lifted his hand creating a Shadow portal. As the sword went into the shadow it appeared through another pointing at the King.

Seeing this, Bryce tried to control the sword but he could feel the strain of his body. Instead of using his Absolute Blood Control, he moved out of the way, just in time before the sword pierced the floor. Moments later it lost its solid state, turning into blood.

"How?!" Bryce shouted as he punched the floor out of anger. "How can you still use the shadow? Why can't I get rid of you?"

It was at that moment, they all could feel the strong energy from the vampire settlement again. In the first place, the battle was happening in the pooling area and they were in the fourteenth castle inner castle area.

It wasn't too far away from where they were, and it was starting to concern Quinn as well.

"I've lost, Quinn." Arthur admitted. "It turns out I bet on the wrong horse. When attacking this place, I was sure that there was no one but them could stop me, that's why I agreed to work with them. I won't stoop so low to use excuses like I wasn't able to fight at my fullest, since in a fight to the death only the outcome matters."

"You want to save them, right? That's why you trained so hard to get this strong. Then it looks like there is something that you need to stop over there."

A strange power could be felt rising, that they all could feel but none of them were familiar with it.

"Bryce!" Arthur called out. "The one, we're feeling... Don't tell me you released the Original King?"

Hearing this, Quinn was surprised, he had learned from Arthur's memory about the Original King, that person was who Arthur had gotten his shadow powers from in the first place. Bryce himself looked to be still in the middle of recovering from using all of his Blood powers. If he pushed himself further there was a good chance that he would go beyond the point of return.

"That damned Tempus must have gone behind my back to wake him up!" Bryce cursed. "He doomed the whole settlement!"

"Here I thought you didn't care about any of them." Arthur teased the other as he got up from the ground. Quinn looked at him, afraid that either the two of them were going to fight again, or he would have to possibly fight himself.

It was the reason why he still hadn't gotten rid of the shadow overload, despite him using it for longer giving him a larger drawback.

"Quinn, I'm sorry about what I did, but at that moment it seemed that to save vampires and humans, there needed to be someone beyond me. I was wrong about that person not existing. After I found out that I wasn't strong enough to beat the Dalki, I gave up hope."

"Before you ask, no, I didn't beat you expecting you to get this strong. I admit that I beat you mostly out of frustration, seeing in you a younger me who wouldn't have given up... yet somehow that has created the current you. For all my sins, I'm proud to have played a part in that and I have a feeling that you can grow even stronger.."

"As your reward for showing me another light, I will help you face whatever is there, and after that...I will continue my business with him. That's what we both want, right old man?" Arthur shouted.

Bryce didn't want to agree with what Arthur was saying, but in the end the King actually did care for the vampires, at the very least his own family. It was just that revenge had been the major reason for his continued existence, yet he knew that with the Original King, things were more dire than even under his misguided rule.

Unlike him, the Original didn't have a need to hold back. The Original King especially might choose to eradicate them all, if he deemed them to be unworthy subjects, because at any point and time, he could create an infinite number of vampires under him, something not even the vampire leaders could do.

Bryce decided to hold off on his revenge. He knew that Arthur was a man of his word. If he promised a fight after this mess, then it would happen, provided both of them would actually survive of course.

"Will it be possible?" Quinn asked. "From what I've heard, he's supposed to be the strongest vampire in existence and it took all the other Originals to merely seal him."

"I'm afraid even with the three of us, we might not be able to take him on." Arthur stated. "But with my help we have a chance."

Quinn was worried about what to do, because the truth was his armour was on cool down. Meaning his armour was useless and he no longer had the speed that he had used to overcome Arthur and Bryce.

He had never expected there to be a fight with one that was even stronger than them.

'Wait... the Quest! If those two leave, won't I complete the Quest and get a reward? The system usually gives me exactly what I need, so could it have something that might help me with the fight?'

"You two...if he is really that strong, then there is something I need to do before that. Both of you leave and just wait for me." Quinn said.

Arthur looked at Quinn and nodded, then looked towards Bryce.

"Try not to get too hurt. I don't want to use it as your excuse for losing to me afterward" Arthur taunted the other before escaping in the shadow. At the same time, Bryce got up from the ground, and ran forward stopping right by Quinn. He looked at him, and said nothing as he went off again.

[Cancel Shadow overload]

[Total MC points are now being calculated]

[ - 1120 Mc points]

'HUH?! Why has it taken so many points? Is it because of Bryce's crystal? This doesn't feel like the normal payback from the system.'

[Total MC 240/1520]

'I was able to use the Shadow overload skill for a long time thanks to all of the MC cells I gained on Blade Island. I still have plenty but I will need all my shadow and the cooldown if I want to fight at my strongest.'

The problem was, the cooldown for the armour set was one hour. The two vampires buying him minutes of time would already be great, but an hour was too much to ask for.

[Congratulations Quest has now been completed]

[You have successfully defended the fourteenth castle]

[You deserve to keep your title]

[The castle wishes to reward you]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1361: Quest Update

[You will receive your reward in the fourteenth castle]

[Please proceed to the throne room]

'This is different?' Quinn thought.

In the past, he had received rewards from the system itself. The only time Quinn remembered something somewhat similar happening, was when he had entered the tower that Arthur was in. Still, Quinn was happy to take whatever gifts he would receive in order to make himself stronger.

Right now, Quinn wasn't only thinking about this fight that would happen soon but also about the battles that would take place after. After all, the Dalki even at this moment, were still at war with the humans.

'I'll have to head there straight away.' Quinn thought as he ran towards the castle.

While going through the floors, there was something else that Quinn was curious about.

'Vincent, do you have any idea what that Crystal that Bryce had was. It was able to absorb the shadow from Arthur and me. It even created those shadow people. Not even I can do that with my shadow. At least not yet anyway.' Quinn asked.

Hearing this question, Quinn could have sworn he heard Vincent sigh.

'It seems these days that I am less of a genius than I imagined. In the past, I thought I had uncovered a lot about the secrets of this world, but you... Someone who hasn't even tried has discovered things that people will never know about.'

'It is the same with this crystal. I have never heard of a crystal that was able to stop powers. It also seemed to only work for the shadow but....' It was then that a thought had hit Vincent.

Going through all the things Quinn had been told about abilities, he remembered that a certain someone had said something that stood out.

'Do you remember when your ancestor spoke to you about the different abilities coming from himself? I mean, Ray was it? Well, he stated that not all of the abilities we know today did come from him, just most, and that included your shadow power.'

'If we take this into account, then perhaps your power had come from something similar to the crystal. If that is true, then it would make sense why he could store powers into the crystal in the first place.'

After hearing Vincent's explanation, he had a horrible thought. At the moment, Bryce still had the crystal. Quinn was sure that if he had asked to take the crystal off him, he would have fought to the death with both him and Arthur there and then.

It was his biggest advantage over Arthur in the first place.

'If..it can store shadows and give shadow powers to those dead bodies, doesn't mean that a certain someone could get the powers again. Someone who had the powers once before?' Quinn asked.

Now Vincent himself realised what Quinn's worry was.

'Let's hope it doesn't come to that. Truedream took his power, so he shouldn't be able to learn a new one, but as I said, I am learning new things every day, and if this thing can give powers, we have to expect the worst.'

Quinn had finally entered the throne room. Here he could see the throne made from blood crystals in front of him and the hole in the wall behind it that contained the techniques of the shadow.

[You have successfully reached the throne room]

[You will now receive your first reward]

'First reward?' Quinn's inner self was smiling.

[Full restore x3]

[This reward will allow you to reset the whole system to full recovery every time you use it. It will restore MC points, all skill cooldowns of weapons, as well as abilities and skills. However, it will not heal the user or restore blood. Each use only lasts one time, so be careful.]

'This...is just what I need. If I use a full restore now, the hour cooldown on my armour, and my MC points will go back to normal. I can fight again. I should try and not use all three. This can be a really big trump card in the middle of a fight.'

'I would be able to use Nitro acceleration twice in a row, and Shadow overload twice as well!' Quinn was excited, and the best part yet was the rewards weren't over.

[Please head over to the throne]

Doing as the system said, Quinn was ready for another reward. The system was the answer, the answer and help he needed to beat all his enemies. When reaching the throne, nothing happened, even after Quinn touched it.

So he did what one would naturally do if they came across a throne, and sat down on it.

[The power of the blood crystals can be felt through the throne]

[It has chosen you as the castle leader. This power now belongs to you]

[Would you like to absorb the blood crystal and power within the throne?]

The whole throne was made of blood crystals that looked to have been mashed up together. Quinn couldn't imagine how many vampires crystals had been used to create such a throne.

Now he was finding out that just like with his gauntlet that allowed him to consume beast crystals, he could consume the crystal from the throne itself.

'Does this mean I will get more blood control or more blood aura in my body?' Quinn wondered. Regardless he couldn't see it as a bad thing and selected the only option in his mind.

[Yes]

The throne started to light up, and a few seconds later, Quinn could feel the chair channelling energy through him. It was strange. Rather than one's energy being sapped, it was as if someone was force feeding power into him.

At first, he felt a rush of energy better than ever. The feeling was greater than when he had consumed blood for the first time. But soon, he realised that his body seemed full, as if it was hitting its limit.

'Damn it, I didn't think the system would give me a reward that my body couldn't handle. I have to control this somehow.' Quinn thought.

The only thing he could think of was controlling the power as he had done with his Qi. He closed his eyes. At the moment, he had more Qi energy than blood energy, but with all this extra red aura inside him, he needed to make room.

He emptied out the Qi in his body. Using the second stage as much as possible to keep it on the outside, he would be able to move it back in when the process was over.

Then, he allowed the red energy to flow into his centre. However, he also needed to make sure to not fill it. If he did, that's what would change his body into his Bloodsucker form. So he needed to spread the aura all around his body.

After flowing it around him for a while, he could feel his body getting used to the power. The strain wasn't there as much anymore as his body tried its best to adapt. Then he slowly could enter the Qi back in again.

It felt like he was scratching his body, and he could stretch it a bit more bit by bit each time. Eventually, the glow on the throne had come to an end. All of the energy from the blood crystals had entered his body, and Quinn opened his eyes.

He stood up and looked at the palm of his hands.

'Haha, I can't believe it. One moment I'm struggling with the amount of Qi, that's In my body, and the next, I'm now overflowing with the red aura. Will my body ever be in balance?' was Quinn's thought, but he couldn't complain.

Having too much of one or the other didn't make him weaker. It was just if he wanted to combine the two, he would have to make one output weaker, which took a little getting used to.

Checking his system, Quinn wanted to see if his blood control had improved. It still showed the same number, which meant although he had more red aura and power to play with, his blood attacks would be stronger, but he wouldn't be able to control it better or do things similar to what Bryce could do with blood.

The messages from the system didn't stop there, and Quinn had gotten a surprise message from a quest that he hadn't seen in a long time.

[Update of quest]

[Become something beyond a vampire lord]

[Update: Your getting closer]

After levelling up to level 70 Quinn had received no such message. After unlocking the full power of the system, nothing had come up. Finally, after absorbing the blood crystals, Quinn had been given a hint to the quest.

'Does it mean I have to increase my blood power even more? Will that finally complete the quest?' At that moment, Quinn gulped. 'Do I even want to find out what is beyond a vampire lord? What if it's something like the Bloodsucker form, and I can't change back. Right now, I can still live an ordinary life.'

'Quinn!' Vincent called out.

'I don't know if you know this, but you were absorbing that energy for quite a while. You need to hurry and help the others now!' Vincent warned.

## Chapter 1362: The strongest form

Erin had been placed out of the way over to the side with the other vampires, and now both Arthur and Bryce were walking towards Laxmus. Arthur no longer looked exhausted. This was because he had decided to use the effect of the Blood armour to heal himself, consuming blood for the first time in a while.

'I did promise not to consume human blood, but this can be considered a work around, can't it?' Arthur thought.

Seeing this, Erin wanted to charge in as well. She had strong weapons and the skills to back them up, but there was one person who stopped her before she could move, grabbing onto her wrist.

"Don't." Leo shook his head. Looking at him, Erin could see that he wasn't in the best of conditions. The Blind Swordsman had been hurt pretty badly internally and that was just after suffering a single hit of Laxmus' wings.

After spitting out a little more blood, Leo was able to speak clearly.

"That being is something beyond a normal vampire, I fear that even if all three of you went up against it, you wouldn't survive. Even if you did, you need to consider your own situation.

"All vampires, including their leaders, have seen you use that yellow Aura. We can no longer hide what you are. Out of gratitude they might let you go today, but eventually vampires will start coming after you, fearing what you are.

"If you help them fight, I guarantee that you will not be able to get out of there intact or with your strength. Head back to the tenth castle, wait there and I promise...I promise if we survive this thing that I will be there."

Erin looked around the area, and all of the vampire's eyes were on the battle that was about to begin at any moment. Ultimately, she listened to her teacher, and decided to escape to the tenth area while no one else was paying her any attention.

"I'll help block anyone from seeing you." Timmy offered as he had the power of mist, making such a thing an easy task. With that the two of them were gone, while the rest of the settlement weren't safe at all.

"I don't know why these two have suddenly chosen to cooperate, but now's not the time to ask any questions. Their strength is exactly what we need. I have hope." Muka said.

At that moment, the Blood swords floating in the air headed straight towards Laxmus.

While this was taking place, Arthur quickly moved over to Bryce's side using the shadow, and he had the shadow power constantly on his back, ready to use.

"I felt a bit of his power when I blocked that attack just now. Thank you for not using that strange power of yours, but I fear if I take a few more of those attacks, even my shadow won't be enough."

"Take this." Arthur said, grabbing the other's hand before the King could react, placing it on his armour. Bryce could feel that an energy surging through him, similar to when he consumed blood.

"What are you doing?!" Bryce swung his cane sword, yet Arthur was able to block it in time with his own.

The leaders seeing this wanted to slap their hands against their faces, at a time like this the two of them still couldn't get on.

"Arghh!" Laxmus shouted, and out of his body, a red aura expanded. The blood swords that Bryce had created fell in an instant, all hundred of them.

"I think you're going to need a lot stronger of an attack than those swords old man!" Arthur explained, as he himself condensed his shadow into a shield again and charged in.

'That beam of power, it takes a few seconds to charge up, so I will have to face him in close quarter combat instead. Still it looks like it packs quite a punch.' Arthur thought.

Before Arthur could set up an attack, he could see Laxmus, suddenly dash forward and throw a punch of his own. This speed, it reminded him of someone he had recently thought. Just in time, Arthur lifted the shield. He could feel the other's strength through that hit alone, sending him back a few feet with each hit.

Arthur couldn't find the right time to retaliate, but he didn't need to because he wasn't the only one fighting. From behind, Bryce had gotten in a perfect position and his regular sword was now covered in a vortex of blood. He thrust it forward towards Laxmus' back.

Aware of the situation, Laxmus stopped his attack on Arthur, and curled up into a ball by making his wings cover his entire body. A clang was heard as Bryce's Blood sword hit the wings, yet the vortex continued.

It was unleashed and had trapped not only Laxmus but Arthur as well. The only way Arthur could get out was by using Shadow travel to get him out of the area. The vortex of blood went up ten meters high, it was the same as experiencing thousands of Blood slashes at once.

When the vortex started to fade, they could see Laxmus still tied up in his ball-like shape. Arthur, seeing this, charged back in.

'He didn't get hurt by any of that, his wings must be one of the strongest parts of his body!' Arthur realised.

At that moment, Laxmus released his wings and a red aura could be seen slashing from all directions. Arthur blocked it with his Shadow shield and continued moving forward, while Bryce was able to control the blood moving it away from himself.

However, the attacks continued to where the people were, and the leaders had to jump in. At first they used Blood slash of their own, but it did nothing against Laxmus' strike. Knowing this, all they could do was help clear a path.

The swipe that had come off from Laxmus had hit a few stray vampires who were unable to move in time, while also tearing the ground apart.

'Is he really that strong to contend against Arthur and the King?' Sunny thought.

Arthur continually charged in, and blocked an attack with the shield again, another claw, then when the second hand was ready to move, the shield expanded from a round one, into one that was large and square shaped blocking the view of Arthur himself.

He then jumped, somersaulting over Laxmus' large body, leaving the shadow behind, and swung out the sword with the string as hard as he could, looking for an open spot. He wanted to hit anything but Laxmus' black covered hands and wings, as those seemed to be the hard parts on the body. The winged creature managed to turn around and grab onto the sword.

'That's perfect.' Arthur thought, activating one of the abilities, he caused a large explosion. This time, the explosion was far larger than when Arthur had faced Bryce or Quinn. It had sent him flying backwards as he was hit by the recoil despite him using it with the string ability.

Arthur was quite hurt by the explosion. He had never used it at this level before, but now he was using the armour to heal himself. Still, Arthur could soon see that Laxmus was completely fine. Once again, the wings had wrapped around the front of himself.

'What is the man doing?' Arthur thought, but could see that for some reason, Bryce hadn't moved. The vortex had taken a lot out of him, and to top things off it hadn't injured Laxmus at all due to the strange ball form he had taken.

'I need to somehow get past those wings, or past that armour!' Arthur thought.

As if someone could hear his thoughts, an object could be seen coming from the sky. It was small but as it got closer they could see it more clearly, and finally it

had landed in the middle of the field, crashing down and shaking the ground beneath them.

"It's... a Bloodsucker?" Arthur thought, looking at it strangely.

The next second, it moved, and was instantly where Laxmus was, a punch was thrown and it was avoided by the Bloodsucker. A punch that Arthur could barely block. The Bloodsucker jumped on its back, and pulled on the large wings holding it in place.

It looked like Laxmus was struggling to move them, as all the muscles in the Bloodsucker's body were used.

"Now, attack him with everything you got!" The Bloodsucker hurried them.

'A Bloodsucker that can speak? It's so fast and can overpower the strange being?' Arthur was confused about the situation, but still did as he was told.

"That's Quinn!" Muka shouted, recognising the other. The tenth leader had done something similar in the past, only this time he seemed to be far stronger than before.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

# Chapter 1363: Save the settlement (1)

## Chapter 1363 - Save The Settlement (Part 1)

After reaching the rewards from completing the quest, Quinn had a few options he could do. One of them was to use one of his full restores, allowing him to activate his Nitro accelerate again, rushing towards the battlefield.

However, although it might only be a few seconds, he feared that those few seconds would be vital in a fight. With the new red Aura in his body, Quinn had come up with another idea.

'What if I use the energy to turn myself into a Bloodsucker? I usually fill my body with the red energy anyway to turn. Will it make it so I become even stronger than I usually would? Becoming a Bloodsucker double's my stat points, giving me twice my speed and strength, but I'm unable to use blood skills or the shadow.'

Quickly thinking about it, there was no harm in trying, and Quinn had decided to fill his body with the red Aura changing him into his Bloodsucker form. His body quickly started to change, and it felt different from the times when he would usually change.

'I haven't used this form in a long time, but is this normal?' Quinn wondered.

Once his body had finished changing, Quinn immediately decided to use the strength of his legs to jump. Doing so, he had gone so high up he broke through the castle ceiling and had landed in the inner area.

It had worked, Quinn could feel that he was stronger than before, and perhaps this was more than double his stats. He started to sprint on the ground running as fast as possible, and then leapt at the last second. In doing so, he jumped right over the fourteenth castle walls and landed right where he needed to be.

He could feel the energy from the fight, and it didn't take Quinn long to figure out that the strange-looking vampire creature was the one that needed to be dealt with. Quinn had no idea how strong his strength was in his current form, but he did know that if he was hit, he might very well lose his life.

---

'That's Quinn?' Arthur realised after hearing Muka shout. 'You really did go through a lot. You even learnt to control this dangerous Bloodsucker form. Well, I won't let this opportunity go to waste!'

Arthur dashed forward and, at the same time, threw his sword out directly towards Laxmus. Only unlike all the other times, Arthur did something else as well. When

leaving the palm of his hands, he had done so giving it a boost of power with his red Aura.

The sword was covered in red Aura that it was now twice the size of what it usually would be. This didn't just increase its strength but also its speed as well, and one more person was giving it an extra push.

Glancing over his shoulder, he could see that Bryce had his hand held out, using absolute blood control, to push it so the sword would move even faster.

'Looks like you can come through when you're needed.' Arthur smiled.

Everything was happening within a fraction of a second. With Quinn holding back his wings, and despite the extra speed, Laxmus was still ready.

Quinn could feel the strength of his wings trying to shut and defend itself. It took all his strength to hold them back that there was nothing else he could do.

Seeing the sword coming towards him, Laxmus decided to use his two hands to catch it instead. His hands that had the black blood hardening touched the weapon, allowing him to remain uncut. Still, for the first time, the power was something that even Laxmus couldn't stop.

His legs skidded across the floor, and the sword continued to push forward. Even with his great muscles, the sword was moving closer and closer until it pierced through Laxmus chest, but it was only an inch inside.

'Why, even though I've stopped the sword's momentum, it feels like it's still trying to push forward, and it's so powerful.' Laxmus thought.

Looking around, he could see that the king still had his hand held out. The veins on his hand and head showed as Bryce held his breath with a smile on his face.

"You...are not so strong after all!" Bryce said, weakly but still loud enough for Laxmus to hear.

"ARGHHH!" Shouting in a rage, Laxmus started to push back even more, and the sword that was inside was being pushed back. Everyone watching was now praying that somehow these three could defeat Laxmus here and now. Seeing this, they were starting to lose hope.

"We have to be ready," Muka said. "We can't be sure that they can beat him, and if they don't, it is up to us to protect the others."

The leaders nodded in response, ready to jump in at any moment, even if they felt like they had no chance of defeating such a being.

However, Quinn wasn't going to let this happen. Jumping off from Laxmus' back, Quinn then pushed the back of his sword with all his strength. He hit the hilt,

pushing it in deeper and deeper. With Bryce helping move the sword, the tip went in even deeper until a clang was heard.

No matter how hard Quinn continued to push the sword, it wouldn't budge any further.

"Quinn, get out of there!" Arthur shouted, seeing this.

Listening to the advice, Quinn quickly moved, and fearing that he might get hurt, he felt like it was time for him to revert from his Bloodsucker form. In doing so, he could use the shadow powers once again and sunk in trying to appear by Arthur's side.

In that brief moment, while the sword was still in Laxmus' chest, Arthur activated the explosion power, creating the largest blast possible, and at the same time, had used the shadow to cover the area around him, so the explosion wouldn't hurt any of the vampires in the nearby area.

A few seconds later, and red beams of energy could be seen hitting the shadow. Arthur could feel this and decided to take his shadow back to where he was currently.

'The attack is too strong to redirect it elsewhere.'

They could then see Laxmus standing there, blood dripping from his chest, but he was still alive and well.

"Do you really think I wouldn't try and protect one of our weaknesses?" Laxmus asked.

What he meant by this was his heart. The strange black hardening blood that Laxmus had wasn't just covering his wings and arms. It was also covering his heart and the inside of his head.

"If you want to kill me, you're going to have to do it properly." Laxmus flew in the air suddenly and threw the sword to the ground. He looked around as if he was looking for someone in particular, and he then found his target.

He started to dive down at an angle heading straight for Bryce. Who had fallen on his knees once again.

"Because of you, you were able to give them that push, and the people still see you as their king, so it's time to change that!"

Jumping in the air, between the two of them, Arthur was there swinging his sword. Still, it was quickly blocked by one of the black arms, and then with his other arm, Laxmus hit Arthur straight in the stomach, sending him back to the ground.

Seeing this, Quinn was thinking about what to do. Arthur couldn't stop him, and if he attempted to do the same, it was possible that the same thing would happen to him.

'I only have one choice.' Quinn thought.

[Full restore activated]

[Cooldown have been reset, and MC points have been restored]

While in the air, Laxmus could see Bryce not moving. He started to gather blood aura in both hands. It looked similar to when he had done so with his mouth, only these balls were smaller. The blood gathered looked darker than what the vampires would typically use.

So no one else could try to interfere, Laxmus then threw one of the balls of red Aura towards Arthur and Quinn. While the other was thrown towards Bryce. As they left Laxmus' hands, they started to expand, getting bigger and bigger.

'I don't know how big that's going to get, and if I block it, it will just be a waste of my MC cells.' Quinn thought. The ball of Aura would soon be upon both of them.

'I could use shadow lock, but the attack will hurt all the others if I do. I need to stop this attack!' Quinn thought.

[Shadow overload skill activated]

## Chapter 1364: Save the settlement (2)

Chapter 1364 - Save The Settlement (Part 2)

[Shadow overload skill activated]

Shadow started to surround Quinn's body, giving him the shadow body. Now, with unlimited use of the shadow, Quinn raised it, hoping to block out the attack.

At the same time, the other ball of red Aura was heading towards Bryce. His body was weak. He could still use his blood powers, but moving was straining his body all over. Still, even using absolute blood control would do nothing to move the attack coming from Laxmus.

"It looks like this might be my end," Bryce said. "At least I got to see that damned punisher hurt."

As both of the balls of Aura came towards Bryce, all he could see was red until a figure stood in front of him. She placed her hands on the ground creating a blood wall, using all the power she could, and then stood up, spreading her arms.

"KAZZ! DO NOT WASTE YOUR LIFE HERE, GIRL!" Bryce shouted.

A tear could be seen falling from her face.

"They still need you to defeat him. I am just doing my duty, to protect the king. Goodbye...father." Kazz said, closing her eyes. Ready for her life to disappear.

"He's right, don't be stupid; you should leave this to the old fools like us." A voice said, now standing in front of Kazz.

"Get behind me, and stay still!" Paul shouted. He unleashed all of his red Aura and the poison from his body. Creating almost a second barrier between the two of them. The red Aura hit them, and the power looked to have nearly consumed them whole from the outside.

Those from the outside could just see a giant ball of red Aura. As for where Quinn was, he had summoned the shadow. It was holding out, but Quinn was wondering for how long.

'Is this going to take all my MC cells after this, after this attack?'

Finally, both balls of red Aura started to disappear, and Laxmus had landed back on the ground, laughing where he stood.

"Look at that!" Laxmus said. "Just two attacks and the strongest vampires in the whole settlement have practically come to an end."

Laxmus' laughing had soon stopped, when he could see that a young man stood in front of Arthur. Shadows were covering his body, and Arthur was standing well by his side.

"Well, looks like at least some of you have some strength, and I would expect no less from my own power," Laxmus said, turning to look at how the others had handled his attack. Here he could see that Bryce was hurt, but he wasn't dead.

The skin from his face had partially peeled off, but he was standing just fine.

"You stupid girl!!!" Bryce shouted out in anger, but he could hear the sound of crying.

"Why...why did you save me!" Kazz couldn't stop crying. The sounds of her cry were partly muffled due to the person who had completely covered her with his entire body. It was none other than Paul.

He had hugged Kazz, forcing his body to cover for her in the attack, but that left Paul with his whole body destroyed from the Aura. The Aura was so strong, and with each passing second, his body was breaking off into pieces as if his body had turned into ashes.

"Why...why!" Kazz cried on her knees and tried to hug Paul back, but as she did, her hands went through his body, and the remains of him fell to the ground.

Kazz wasn't free from injuries either, her outer skin was burnt, and everyone imagined it must have hurt, but she couldn't feel the pain on her body. She could only feel the pain in her heart. She didn't realise it, but Paul had become someone dear to her.

Memoires start to flash through her head, of all the lessons he had tried to teach her when she was part of the Cursed faction. He was also always looking out for her back then, and even in the vampire settlement.

"You...were like a...like a..." Kazz couldn't even finish her words. It hurt so much as she grasped at her chest.

Ashley, who was next to Paul before he had decided to run in, had heard his last few words at the side.

"I'm sorry for abandoning you all like this," Paul said. "Please look after them all. I know Quinn will do a good job, but they need you as well and please...when you get back, tell my daughter I love her. Sorry I won't be able to see her face again."

Ashley's tears couldn't stop, and it was the same for his men, who had decided at that moment to all salute their head general. For the time they had served with him and to show respect.

[A family member has died.]

The notification screen had appeared, and seeing the peoples reaction by the side and how he was unable to summon one of his knights, he knew who it was.

'Paul...Paul...'

"Paul!!!" Quinn shouted out.

Seeing how Laxmus' attack had failed to kill the one he was aiming for, he was annoyed. He had decided to try and go for the one that had gotten in his way. In doing so, Laxmus sprinted forward and headed straight towards Kazz, with his hand held out.

Kazz had turned around, and she could see Laxmus' long fingertips almost reach around her neck.

"F\*ck you!" Quinn shouted as he threw an overhead strike, with the power of his Qi and Aura mixed in. It had a similar strength to a blood hammer strike, but this was far more powerful than any punch Quinn had produced.

'When did that kid...'

It landed, hitting Laxmus' arm, and to his surprise, the strength was great moving it out of the way. Before he could react again, Quinn had already kicked Laxmus to his side, hitting him away from the two of them, but not far enough.

Before Laxmus knew it, his body had fallen through a shadow, and he was now sent back towards where the king's castle was. To others, it would have looked like a strange move. Quinn was already right next to Laxmus, so why move him away?

However, Arthur knew the reason why. Right now, Quinn was using the skill Nitro accelerate, and to make his hits were hard enough to do damage against Laxmus, he needed to build up his full speed.

With him being so close, the strength and power he would get from the speed had lessened. Laxmus, being confused by where he was, almost saw Quinn next to him in an instant.

"Why, why do you have to kill people just because you have power!" Quinn shouted, throwing both fists forward and hitting Laxmus in the centre of his stomach, sending him through the castle behind him.

The next second Laxmus could be seen coming out and throwing out a punch towards Quinn.

"That hurt!" Laxmus shouted back.

Speed comparison wise, Laxmus wasn't that much slower than Quinn, but there was a person ready to protect him, as a condensed shadow shield had blocked the attack.

Seeing this, Quinn quickly ran in a circle, building up speed, and jumped, spinning his body, throwing out a kick that hit Laxmus straight in the head. It sent him tumbling back into the castle again.

Flapping his wings, Laxmus was able to catch himself before he went further in, and now beyond frustrated, he had opened his mouth. In doing so, the Aura started to gather, creating another ball. It was the exact same attack that he had used against Erin.

The next second, his mouth opened wide, releasing the attack.

"I'll kill you all!"

This time, the attack had spread out wide, rather than in a single destination as if it was aimed to kill everyone in the whole settlement.

Seeing this, Quinn raised the shadow everywhere he could behind him. With it hitting the shadow, the attack was stopped but continually poured out from Laxmus' mouth.

"Can his shadow hold?" Sunny wondered.

"We can't just rely on him. Everyone move into the inner castle area!" Muka ordered.

The red beam from Laxmus lasted far longer than when it did against Erin, but it gave everyone enough time to move out of the way of the far range attack. Apart from a couple who were still on the field.

"Kazz, just leave me!" Bryce stated, but Kazz refused to listen.

A few seconds later, something devastating had occurred.

[Your shadow overload skill has been used up]

[Calculating total MC points 0/0]

'What?'

## Chapter 1365: The Perfect Combination

It looked like Laxmus' red beam attack was coming to an end, but a few seconds just before it faded, Quinn's Shadow overload skill's time had run out. The Vampire Lord knew that there would be a possibility of this happening, but he had seriously hoped that it could have occurred at another time.

Since he had fought against Arthur and Bryce the time the Shadow overload skill would last had drastically decreased since his overall MC cells had lessened. He thought the same thing would happen this time, perhaps taking half of his MC points as a drawback, then he would simply use another full restore, but the drawback had taken away all of his MC points.

'What do I do now? I can't block the rest of this attack, I don't have any more shadow!' Quinn thought in a panic. It was strange but while looking at the system it looked like he couldn't use any of his Shadow skills even those that required no MC points.

Quinn did the only thing he could do in this situation and covered himself with the second stage of Qi, praying that it might reduce the intensity of the attack. Meanwhile, Arthur, who was also being covered by Quinn's shadow, started to get hit by the red beam of aura.

The Punisher gritted his teeth and held out his hand towards the tenth family leader, and the next second, Quinn was placed in the Shadow lock, appearing in a dark room, before Arthur joined him.

"Arthur!" Quinn called out as he saw how badly hurt the ancient vampire was. Unlike him, Arthur didn't have the second stage of Qi to protect him.

"I wanted to use this earlier, but I refrained in case I needed to protect the people." Arthur explained with a weak smile. "That attack of his is a nasty one, I don't know how you managed to protect yourself, but I don't even think blood can help me know."

Arthur coughed and a wad of dark black blood came out pouring from his mouth. The blood armour set could be seen activating, but it didn't look like it did anything to the wounds on his skin nor his internal wounds.

"Apparently this attack is more than just a 'mere' Blood aura attack." Arthur tried to joke. "Quinn, it seems that this is where my journey ends, but I believe that there is a way for you to beat Laxmus. Your attacks from before, they were internal strikes, right? I think the reason why he resorted to an attack like that is because he is a lot more hurt than he wants us to realise."

Quinn was wondering why Arthur was speaking in such a way, but soon he saw Arthur spewing out even more blood out.

"If I had known that I would have to save the vampire settlement I would have started healing myself a lot earlier. A big part of me must have wanted to die along with Bryce to end that ancient feud and so that I had an excuse not to complete the Dalki's task." Arthur mumbled. "Anyway, that Shadow body of yours that you used to hold both of us down should be the key to victory."

"Arthur, I-I... I can't use my Shadow powers anymore. That Shadow body has a massive downside and I didn't stop because I wanted to, but because I had to pay the price. I don't think I have a chance of winning without it." Quinn explained dejectedly.

Hearing this, Arthur stood up and placed his hand on Quinn. Since he sensed that there was no ill intention this time, Quinn didn't stop him. However, he remained vigilant, since the time he had lost so miserably against the Punisher had been in this exact room.

"Take my Blood armour, Quinn. Don't refuse me, it's obvious that I won't be able to fight. What use is it to me in such a situation? You are the only one we can rely on in this fight. This particular set will grant you unlimited access to blood and also lessens the strain on the vampire's body due to its effects."

"However, Richard Eno or whatever his real name was, had decided to make a different set of blood armour for the King. He was afraid that such a dangerous combination would give them too much power."

It did seem odd to Quinn. When he heard about its effects and the Absolute Blood Control he thought they were the perfect combination, but the thing was how would it help Quinn. He wasn't the best when it came to Blood powers.

"Just take it, Quinn because after my next request you will understand."

Quinn, used his shadow, to take the blood armour placing it in his dimensional space. He still had the blue fang set on, but could use shadow equip to change when he wished.

"Now... I have one last thing I want to give you. We don't have much time, so let's do this." Suddenly, Arthur's shadow started to appear from his back and moved over to his hands. It then prung from him, and entered Quinn's body. The Punisher's eyes filled up with darker shadow, and so did Quinn's. Both of their bodies were lifted into the air as the shadow was being moved from one person to another.

[The will of the Punisher has started.]

[All powers are being transferred.]

Quinn had felt like he couldn't do anything as the shadow had forcefully entered his body, but then it had eventually stopped.

[Transfer complete]

[50,526/112,345 MC cells]

Although Quinn had read the system message, what he was seeing didn't make sense. Had Arthur really amassed over 100,000 MC cells? No, the even crazier thing was during his fight against Bryce, Quinn and the Original King he had merely used up half of his total.

'Here I thought I was close to catching up to him with a measly 3,000 MC cells. I can see he has used a lot, blocking those attacks. Now I understand why the Shadow overload had run out of MC cells.'

"I have given you my power, now go—" Arthur ended up coughing a few times and the black blood started to stain part of his now armourless upper body. The room they were in also started to crumble breaking away.

It was then that Quinn and Arthur found themselves outside once again. As they looked around them, the scenery had completely changed. All the buildings in the pooling area had completely vanished and only the ground could be seen with small traces of rubble.

Looking in front of him, Quinn looked at Laxmus, who looked to have only just finished his attack, and he had fallen to the ground holding himself up with his arms.

'That attack must have exhausted him greatly, but I'm no fool to attack him in his situation just because he looks weak.'

"You idiot!" Quinn could hear someone shout from the right. When turning around to look at what had happened he could see Bryce on his knees, yet seemingly unhurt.

'That's right, my Shadow overload skill ran out, so other than those that had run into the castles, Bryce was still around.'

That's when Quinn could see that he was holding someone in his arms, the only female that could elicit any emotions in the King, Kazz Cane.

"You colossal fool of a daughter, who gave you permission to die?! How dare you disobey a direct order from your King, from your own FATHER!" Bryce continued to shout at the lifeless body, tears of blood running down his face.

It was a strange sight to see, for not too long ago, Paul had risked his own life to save Kazz, and yet still she had risked hers to save her father's. It was clear that Bryce was weak and he had no way of continuing the fight, but looking at Laxmus he wanted to do everything in his power to end it, getting revenge for his daughter.

"Old man!" Arthur called out. "It looks like both of us are down for the count, but the young one can still fight. Don't let your daughters' sacrifice be in vain. You know what needs to be done!"

Quinn was wondering what Arthur was talking about, why was he trying to taunt Bryce now of all times. More importantly, he thought that the two of them should be getting out of there. Especially since Laxmus looked to be recovering, if not getting a second wind.

Bryce tried to stand up, he did so weakly and at the same time, Kazz's body similar to Paul's started to blow in the wind, turning into nothing but ashes.

"Kid, get over here!" The King shouted at him.

Quinn was confused, what was Bryce trying to do now of all times.

"I said get over here! I'm going to help you kill that bastard, so come over here!" Bryce shouted again and Quinn quickly did as he was told, going to his side. "I will see him dead, and if it's the last thing I do!"

Bryce didn't say anything, just placed his hand on Quinn.

"I...have done many stupid things, but the one thing I was proud of, was her.... I....I...always thought about myself, and even now, I am only doing this, for myself."

[A source of energy is being infused into your body.]

[Your Blood control is increasing]

'Quinn, this must be Bryce giving you his Absolute Blood Control powers!' Vincent gasped in disbelief.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1366: My way

Just like a moment ago, Quinn could feel something strange happening to him, but it wasn't just a feeling this time, it was almost as if knowledge was also being implanted into his head. At the same time, his system informed him that his Blood control was going up.

'Did you just say Absolute Blood Control? You mean the power that only Kings are allowed to use. He's passing it on to me?' Quinn questioned.

'Exactly. It's supposed to be in a special book, but the King is the one that is meant to transfer the knowledge and power out from himself and pass it onto the book for his successor. However, Bryce has decided to pass this power onto you.' Vincent explained.

Quinn could feel it, and it wasn't like the raw energy he had gotten from the tower. This was different, what the Vampire Lord was obtaining right now more than anything was knowledge. He was understanding how the power of the vampires worked, how they were able to use the red aura and how they were able to control blood.

'But if he is giving up this power, doesn't that mean he has also given up on revenge? He won't be as strong as he was before and there is no chance for him to fight against Arthur?' Quinn thought.

It was then that Quinn realised something, his conversation that he had with Arthur not too long ago. When he had given him his blood armour set he had talked about it being the perfect combination.

Arthur couldn't have known that Kazz had died while the two of them were in the shadow space, but it was as if he knew that Bryce would make this choice in the end. The transfer had been complete and Bryce, fell to the floor once more, finally having some sort of rest in this fight.

"Don't disappoint me... Quinn." Bryce .

[Blood control: 10,000]

Before Quinn blood control was near the 200 hundreds but after obtaining the Absolute Blood Control he could control every aspect of it. Shadows quickly covered Quinn's body and replaced the blue armour fang set for Arthur's red Blood armour.

"This is just bloody brilliant!" Laxmus bellowed out in scorn. "You, this generation's King were unable to defeat me, your so-called Punisher couldn't beat me, and I already beat that kid once. Have you gone completely insane to think that

someone who hasn't even lived a fraction of my life is going to best me?! You're unable to do anything against me, so you've chosen to insult me?!"

In his palm he had a ball of red aura. It was the same one that he had used before and they all saw it expanding in size.

'I can feel it, I can feel the Blood energy from it? But why didn't Bryce just...'  
Quinn then held out both of his hands. The aura suddenly stopped, before it started to get smaller.

"What are we witnessing right now?" Muka asked as he couldn't believe his eyes. The leaders understood that Bryce had given the Absolute Blood Control powers to Quinn, but what they couldn't understand was how Quinn was able to do things that Bryce was not, especially in such a short time frame.

The dark red aura had been condensed and was now the same size as a small ball. The same size as it was when it was initially when it was in Laxmus' hands, and it had come to a complete stop now being held in Quinn's hand.

'I can control it, I can feel the energy of all of it, but why can I do this and Bryce didn't?'

Vincent, who was able to witness everything Quinn had done so far, only had one explanation. Quinns blood power must be far greater than Bryce's. The Absolute Blood Control book did give Blood energy to the new King, but it was mainly a technique on how to control it.

However, Quinn had obtained a mass amount of energy from the fourteenth castle, and he also had his own after going through so many different experiences. Holding it in his hand, the Vampire Lord ran forward and threw it out back towards Laxmus, but the Original King was unafraid and instead charged forward as well. The ball started to expand, but with his special hardened black hands he held onto the aura, and threw it up in the air, for it to slowly diperese.

"So what if my Blood powers won't work on you? I will just have to personally beat you to death!" Laxmus shouted.

Quinn's blood armour started to charge up. He got ready to throw out a swipe towards Laxmus. It was larger and more powerful than any of his previous ones and the best part about it was that it hadn't taken any Health due to the armour's effect.

Still, Laxmus seeing this, just knocked the swipe away.

'His power... he is still stronger than my own Blood power.' Quinn noticed.

'Using the Blood power in the same way as Bryce did won't help me. According to his imparted knowledge, every user had their own way to control it. And I feel that

for me to use it most efficiently... is like this..' Quinn thought, as he avoided swing from Laxmus' clawed hand, and threw a punch towards his open side.

As his hand was moving, Quinn had gathered blood around it, creating a drill-like shape. The speed of the drill was spinning faster than anything else thanks to Quinn's control. When it hit Laxmus, it continued to spin, piercing the side of his skin.

Blood splattered out in all directions.

'This attack is the same as that Eno bastard!' Laxmus thought, remembering the old days. 'How is this person managing to hurt me! I have received more power than before. I was stronger than when I last thought about them!'

Laxmus had no choice but to move away from Quinn using his wings. Escaping into the air, but as he did he soon found himself losing his enemy's position, only to find him appearing behind him in the air, with another Blood drill.

This time, Laxmus was able to cover himself with his wing, but he was still hit and sent through the air. Quinn then could be seen in the air with a pair of wings on his back, using the shadow to allow him temporary flight.

Annoyed by this Laxmus opened his mouth once more, shooting out a small beam of red energy. Quinn then proceeded to do the same, covering himself with the shadow wings.

[-3,420 MC]

'That red beam was smaller than the other, no wonder Arthur didn't block too many of those attacks even with this many MC points.' Quinn realised.

The attacks that would come from Laxmus's mouth were too fast for Quinn to stop even with the Absolute Blood Control on, and the others quickly picked up on that. He started to fly about in the air constantly using the red beam attacks over and over.

Each time Quinn would use his shadow to block the attack, but he was struggling to get Laxmus.

'Without Shadow overload I can't just make the shadow appear weather I want, and i'm still trying to figure out how to use this blood power I just got.' Quinn thought.

'Quinn, you said it yourself, you're neither Arthur, nor Bryce. Both of them fought differently than you with their powers. Why are you so hung up on trying to fight like them, when you have your own style?'

'Fight in your own way, and use their powers to help you.' Vincent advised.

Thinking about Vincent's words, that's when it hit Quinn. He now knew what he could do that he wasn't able to do before.

"I'll fight him with everything I got!" Quinn hyped himself up as he fell to the ground and protected himself with his wings covering his whole body.

Laxmus seeing this, decided to take more time to power up a bigger charge with his mouth to fire it out at Quinn. The beam was unleashed and it continued to hit the shadow.

[ -4,536 MC ]

[ -2,302 MC ]

Notifications kept appearing that Quinn's MC points were going down, but he knew that Laxmus had to have been using energy while doing this, and then the Vampire Lord could finally see that it had stopped.

"That shadow, I know you can't use it for much longer!" Laxmus shouted.

"I wouldn't be so sure about that." Quinn replied.

[Full restore activated]

[112,345 / 112,345 MC cells]

Quinn was refreshed, but that wasn't the end of it.

[Shadow overload activated]

Activating his shadow overload he had complete control of all of his shadow being able to cast them where he wanted, but now having the blood armour with him, there was something else he could use as well.

[Soul weapon activated]

Now standing there, with the Shadow wings covering his back, and his body covered with shadows, Quinn also had the two twin chains running down his arms. They had pierced his forearms causing him to drip with blood.

Quinn had activated both his soul item type soul weapon as well as his enhancement type soul weapon at the same time. Usually Quinn could only use his item type, when he was fighting multiple opponents, but thanks to the red Blood armour having the same effect as consuming blood, Quinn was free to use it for as long as his armour stayed intact.

"I will defeat you my way!"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1367: Help the Tenth!

Those who had run into their inner castle areas had now crept back out to see how the fight was going. After all, they all knew that the current battle was the deciding factor of whether they lived or not.

If it wasn't for the shadow powers in the first place, they all would have perished by the Laxmus' attack. They wanted to see with their own eyes just what was going to happen to them, what their fate would be. Since they couldn't change their fate themselves and it was in the hands of another, they might as well watch what was going to happen.

Now, they could see Quinn standing there, blood dripping from his arms, while Shadow covered his whole body.

Wrapped around his arms like chains was a type of weapon with razor-sharp edges that also were stuck deep into his forearms. The people could see this, as the shadow body couldn't cover the area where the weapon had joined with his body. The gauntlets that would usually cover his arms had also been removed.

Laxmus, seeing this, thought that he had seen the same thing before. This was no different to what Quinn had used so far, and now he just had a pair of weapons in his hands, so what difference would this make.

He flew up in the air once again, giving him an advantage, but at that moment, Quinn swung his chains back, landing on the ground and then swinging them hard down in front of him. It looked like Quinn was trying to attack an invisible enemy.

Before the Twin tails hit the ground, a shadow portal appeared in front of him. At the same time as the weapons went through the shadows, it appeared behind Laxmus, and slammed onto his back, hitting both his wings. It was such a force that the small blade's had dug and hooked onto his wings, causing Laxmus' whole body to be thrown back down into the ground.

Due to how strong and faster Quinn could move his hands, the energy was also transferred into the Twin tails. It acted somewhat like a whip, giving even more strength to the blow, and for the first time, Laxmus could feel that his wings had been slightly damaged and worse than that, the wound on them wasn't healing.

"Stay on the ground. Flying is annoying!" Quinn shouted.

The next second he started to swing both of the Twin tail's chains rapidly. Out from them, red slashes of blood began to leave. From one swing alone, not just one blood swipe would leave his weapon. Multiple could be seen. Each bend on the weapons had produced multiple slashes of aura, and the attack looked like a wave.

Laxmus was preparing to defend himself from them, using his hands and wings.

'I can still block these. I just have to be careful about the weapons themselves.' Laxmus thought.

However, the attacks soon went into another set of shadow portals, and before Laxmus knew it, he could see several of the shadow portals surrounding him. There were hundreds of them, and the next second, red slashes of aura started to come through them all.

Laxmus needed to be on guard, using his full concentration and power, blocking them all, hitting them away, hit after hit.

"This is annoying!" Laxmus shouted. Opening his mouth and firing a red beam out, hitting some of the shadows above him, destroying them, but as quickly as they were destroyed, Quinn would make more. Slowly, he walked over to Laxmus, contumely moving his arms, swinging the tails out the red blood slashes.

[Shadow equip]

'I can last a few seconds.' Quinn thought to himself.

Changing his armour set from the red blood armour, Quinn had changed to Blue fang set.

[Nitro accelerate activated]

Laxmus was still defending himself from the attacks, that he didn't see what was coming next. After boosting his speed, Quinn dragged the twin tails behind him and threw them as fast as he could, hitting Laxmus' body from the side with them.

He felt great pain as the chains ripped through the side of his ribs. It had pierced his skin, and with Quinn pulling them towards him, each of the small blades grinded against his muscle and even his bone.

However, that was just one of the attacks, of the soon several that were to come. Swinging the chains like a mad man, Quinn continued hitting Laxmus over and over again, and the red aura didn't stop there. They continued to pour through the Shadow.

"Those attacks, they're not hitting him," Bryce commented, seeing this. "Even while fighting him, he's making sure that the red aura doesn't distract him. He has already learnt how to control the blood so quickly...."

In front of his very eyes, Bryce was witnessing someone surpass him. Someone who knew how to use a power he had better than him. He felt like he had been defeated without even fighting.

Seeing that his blood had gone down by fifty percent, Quinn used the blood bank to restore himself and changed armour back to the red blood set. He no longer had the speed, but he had done enough damage to Laxmus, who was now bleeding all over.

Then, Laxmus decided to ignore the attacks, since the wounds weren't great and opened his mouth, firing out another red laser from it. It was too fast of an attack for Quinn to prepare a shadow to redirect it, but he could easily create a shadow to stop it with his body of shadows.

"You know, to hurt you, I don't even have to hit you!" Quinn called out, as he swung both of the twin tails into Laxmus' Shadow. Hitting the centre of his Shadow, and that was when Laxmus noticed the wound appear on his body and a great pain inside him.

"What sorcery is this!" Laxmus screamed.

One of the twin tails wrapped around Laxmus' arm, piercing his skin. He could feel the weapon draining blood from him and wrapping tighter. Quinn then pulled himself forward while swinging another one of the chains above, and when it swung down, it pierced right between Laxmus' neck and shoulder. He pulled on it, ripping through his skin, digging deeper and further, and when he was on top of Laxmus, jumping through the air. Quinn made a fist, forming the blood drill once again.

Laxmus opened his mouth, prepared to fire a beam, but Quinn's whole fist had gone right through Laxmus' mouth before he could fire an attack. The blood drill continued to spin, ripping his mouth to pieces.

Having no choice, Laxmus used all of his strength to break free, pushing back and allowing for both of the twin tail chains to rip through his skin more. Eventually, he fell back, and the bottom half of his jaw could be seen missing from the attack.

"Arghh!" Laxmus screamed, but with the bottom part of his jaw missing, no words he spoke would make sense even if he tried to speak.

'I am a servant of the great Immortui. He has granted me power, the power of a god, and I can't defeat a single vampire! Please, Immortui, if you are watching, grant me more power as your faithful servant so I can get rid of this person!' Laxmus thought.

Surprisingly, his prayers were answered. Laxmus could feel a sudden surge of power growing in him. The black hardened substance started to spread from his arms and now was covering his whole body.

Now, Laxmus allowed the red aura strikes that he had blocked until this point to hit his body, having no effect on it whatsoever. They were useless. Even the wounds

that Quinn had created had sealed up. It was as if his insides were made from the hard black substance.

While Laxmus was in the middle of his change, Quinn, using the Twin chains, threw them towards his Shadow, but upon hitting it, he could only hear a clang not harming him at all.

'My attack is too weak.'

Still, it looked like Laxmus was in the middle of a change himself, his body still growing, and two horns could be seen slowly growing from his head.

'I have to create a bigger attack, an attack that can pierce his skin still!'

Taking a few steps back, Quinn felt that there was only one thing he could do. He started to gather his own blood, blood from the field and those who were dead and injured and started to form it in the air above him.

He cancelled the item soul weapon, as he needed to focus. The blood started to gather and continued to spin. As it looked like Quinn was creating a giant lance. The only difference was the blood continued to spin like a drill.

"Quinn is putting all of his power into this attack, but do you think it will be enough?" Sunny worriedly said. She could feel the pressure of the weapon Quinn was creating but was worried about what Laxmus would turn into.

"It might not be," Jin commented, "but we can make it enough!" Jin then ran out into the centre of the field. It was a risk, but it was the only thing he thought he could do to help. He grabbed a blade and cut his wrist, drawing blood. Jin then started to make wounds all over his body, and the blood could be seen adding to what Quinn was gathering.

"Everyone, the tenth leader needs your help! Help him gather as much blood as possible! You've seen his skill, how hard he has fought for us. If he can't kill this creature! Then no one else can, so help him now!" Jin pleaded.

Through Jin's actions, everyone knew what he was saying. Using their hands, their sharp nails and claws, all the vampires started to inflict wounds on themselves, drawing blood, all adding to Quinn's power.

As Laxmus' body was seen changing, Quinn's drill was seen growing and soon the size stopped.

'It can't just be big. I have to condense it. So it's stronger, and I need it to be faster!' Quinn thought.

In Quinn's own body, the red aura was being used as a source to compress the power. It felt like at any second it could explode, destroying the whole settlement.

He needed to contain it no matter what, and sweat was dripping down his face as he used all the power he had.

'Now...I need to use the blood control to make it spin faster...faster...faster!'

The speed of the blood in the drill could be seen moving faster, so fast that everyone could hear a high pitched ringing.

"Quinn, kill that thing!" Silver shouted out.

"Kill him! Kill that bastard!"

"Tenth leader, please save us! take my blood!"

The whole settlement soon started to shout Quinn's name, supporting him not only with their words but with their blood as well.

"I hear you...I hear you all!!!" Quinn shouted, as all the blood had been gathered, and Quinn now was ready. Moving his hands down, the giant blood drill fell down. Quinn had formed a type of handle, but using all of his concentration of his blood control, he was using it to keep the shape of the weapon and spin the blood, including the handle. Grabbing onto it, the speed of it spinning was ripping into his own skin and flesh.

The red armour was activated, healing him at the same time, but it wasn't quick enough to heal his skin in time. The drill could be felt tearing the muscles in his bare hand.

"This pain is nothing!" Quinn shouted, holding on tight to the weapon.

## Chapter 1368: The rain falls

The Blood drill was spinning faster than Quinn's hand could heal. He didn't know how long he could hold the drill for before he would lose his hand all together, and he noticed that there was another problem he hadn't accounted for.

For the first time, since using the Absolute Blood Control, and controlling so much blood he could feel the strain on his body. The veins all over his body felt like they were about to explode. It was even worse than when he had absorbed the blood aura from the Punisher's throne.

'Is this what Arthur meant by the backlash of that ability? No wonder Bryce is no longer able to move. If my body hadn't gone through that strengthening or I lacked Arthur's Blood armour, I might have lost control far earlier.' Quinn thought.

Still, holding his breath, and ignoring all the pain signs, the tenth leader ran forward as fast as he could. Keeping his concentration, the Blood drill increased in speed even more, just in time to punish Laxmus who had finished his transformation.

He looked at the Blood drill with his now completely red eyes, even his sclera had turned to a crimson tone. However, it was too late for Laxmus to fully react, as the large drill connected him.

Laxmus was now around 3 meters in height, making him practically a giant compared to normal humans, yet the Blood drill itself nearly matched him in size. Stretching out his black hands, Laxmus went to grab the drill. He was confident that his black hardening would save him, like it had done every single other time.

Unfortunately for Laxmus, his immense trust started to diminish. Just like Quinn, the spinning of the Blood drill was similar to thousands upon thousands of Blood swipes hitting his hands simultaneously in the span of a second. The black substance could be seen shedding off, then his flesh, and now his muscles were being ripped by the second.

"That's not possible, I have the power of-

"Oh will you just shut up and die!" Quinn interrupted him, he was sure that holding it any longer would permanently damage his hands. He couldn't take it any more and pushed it forward, before letting go and falling to his knees. The Vampire Lord gasped for air deeply, only hearing the sound of destruction.

When Quinn looked up, he could no longer see Laxmus, but at the same time, the castle behind it, the King's castle, now had a large hole through it that was bigger than the remaining building. Its top started to crumble bit by bit, then the whole place started to fall down.

Fortunately, there were no vampires close to the castle, but the King's castle was no more.

'Is it over? Is he finally dead? Quinn hoped. There was still more he could do after all. Although he wasn't sure he could handle using the Absolute Blood Control anymore, the Vampire Lord still had the Shadow overload at his disposal. It was active even now and if necessary he could use another full restore to use his Blue Fang set.

"Quinn!" Jin called out, as a type of warning turning around, he could then see a smaller version of Laxmus. He was back to his Original Vampire form of when he had first awakened.

He no longer had any black parts of his body, but at the same time his entire body was free from injuries.

'How...how was he able to survive that?' Quinn asked.

'I'm not sure, but there had to have been some price for him to pay. He has to be on his last legs.' Vincent said. 'Looks like all of his energy or borrowed power has disappeared, so now's the best time to get rid of him completely!'

At the moment, though, Laxmus was standing by Bryce's side, holding the Vampire King by his neck. His body looked limp, and that's when Quinn could see that there was a giant hole in his chest.

"Your King has fallen, but it doesn't look like he was the most troublesome one after all." Laxmus stated. "I will remember this day. Curse your own fates for daring to betray the Great God Immortui!"

There was a reason why Laxmus had gone over to Bryce's side, and it was because he had seen something very interesting on Bryce's body. In his hand he now held the crystal that was filled with a Shadow power.

With it in his hand, it soon left the crystal and started to enter Laxmus' body.

"I knew this would always come back to me someway!"

Quinn got up from the ground and ran, as fast as he could, but the second he took a step, Laxmus had turned into nothing but shadows, disappearing from the place.

The tenth leader looked around, waiting for him to attack. The other leaders also stayed vigilant, afraid that they might end up as his next target. Alas, no matter how much they concentrated on their senses, none of them could sense his presence at all.

'He escaped... After all that!' Quinn fell to his knees. He couldn't believe it. After all the lives that had been lost, after all the power he had gained, the Original King

must have been closer to death than even in his fight against the other Originals... and yet, he still had managed to escape.

'Damn that crystal! Why did Bryce bring it with him?! Where did he even get it from in the first place?!" Quinn let out a blood-chilling scream. A few seconds later, as if responding to his cries, rain started to fall on the settlement.

Quinn was left there on his own, with the destroyed King's castle in the background, while the rain continued to pour on him, soaking his hair.

'It is unfortunate, Quinn, but you did all you could.' Vincent tried to offer him some solace. 'The Original King was strong, and perhaps one day he will create an army of his own, returning to face you, but I believe that he realised something in that fight. We all saw that you had completely overpowered him.'

'If he was to return now he would be foolish, for he would just suffer another loss. Everytime he comes back now, you will be able to stop him no matter what army he brings.'

Quinn felt that Vincent's words weren't empty. Through this fight alone, the Vampire Lord had obtained more power than he could have ever imagined. The Shadow overload skill had come to an end, and the draw back had brought him down by 10,000 MC points.

[60,234/102,345]

What would once have made him spit out blood out of shock, now seemed like a small price to pay. Quinn still had over a hundred thousand MC points, his blood control was still at ten thousand as well, and the blood aura he had gained could still be felt flowing through his body.

'But at what cost...Paul, Kazz...even Bryce ended up dying.'

It was then that Quinn finally stood up to check if another man had managed to survive. He remembered that he had been losing a lot of blood, but he laid there on the ground. Alas, there was not a single heartbeat to be heard, only a silent smile plastered on the deceased's face.

"You..taught me a lot." Quinn said as he closed the Punisher's open eyes.

'You know Vincent, when I was a young boy my parents went off to war. They fought for five years before I learned of their death. I never had a father figure, and I guess I was imprinting it on the people around me, yet now even Arthur is gone...'

'But I am still here, Quinn. As long as you have the system I will be with you.'

At that moment, all of the vampires started to come out from the castles. They all were wondering if the fight was over. All of them had watched Laxmus disappear,

afraid that he would reappear but he seemed to be gone. They all had witnessed that a particular vampire had achieved an overwhelming victory, thereby saving them all.

The leaders stood out in front, stopping short of Bryce's and Arthur's body. Their knights came to stand behind them, until every single member of each of the families stood behind them on the open field, followed by the unaffiliated vampires.

"Despite all his shortcomings, we thank King Bryce, Arthur the Original Punisher as well as Quinn Talen, leader of the Cursed family for saving the lives of all of us in the vampire settlement!" Muka stated, speaking as a representative for all the vampires, before he went down on his knees, bowing down. The next moment, everyone else did the same, getting on their knees and they spoke in unison.

"We thank you for saving our lives."

Quinn turned around, and could see everyone bowing down to him. Getting soaked by the rain. It was an amazing sight to behold. Thousands of vampires all bowed down to him, an outsider, a human who had been turned.

"Quinn!" Muka spoke as he lifted up his head. "You have saved us from this great threat! This is a challenging time for all of us vampires, but now more than anything we need a true leader. Which is why, right here, right now I hereby nominate you to become our next King!"

This suggestion earned the unanimous support from all the leaders and no one voiced their objection, not a single vampire from any of the families or leaders.

"Wha...What, you want me to become...the Vampire King?"

[Update to Quest]

[Become the Vampire King?]

[The council and the people have decided to appoint you as their next Vampire King.]

[Do you accept?]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1369: The future of the settlement

'How long?' was the one question on two people's minds. How long had they been stuck inside this dark place for?

When Linda and Fex had first met with Arthur, they had been ready to fight for their lives, but surprisingly the Punisher had not attacked them, rather choosing to listen to them.

"It looks like I was wrong about Quinn, maybe I should give him a chance." Arthur had said about listening to Fex. Unfortunately, before Fex or Linda got a chance to say anything else or ask him what he meant by that, the two of them found themselves trapped in a dark room.

It took them a bit to notice that for whatever reason Agent 11 had not been trapped with him. However, since the Punisher had chosen not to kill the two of them Fex wasn't overly worried for the Pure Agent.

An unknown amount of time passed with neither of them knowing what was going on. The two of them had quickly exhausted whatever conversation they could hold, opting to spend their time to do whatever they wanted... until they suddenly found themselves chucked out of that place and back in the lab, with the Dragon demon tier beast perfectly intact.

"How many days were we in there for?" Fex asked, yet there was nobody there to answer him. The two of them quickly turned around, trying to grasp their surroundings, half expecting that they were needed for some type of fight but there was no such thing.

"I don't think Arthur is here, but why were we hauled out here? Shouldn't we have been brought with Arthur... Do you think something happened?" Linda asked, but despite being a native, Fex had no idea about what the Original Punisher might have been thinking.

Suddenly, Linda felt something going on with Quinn, so she quickly shared that information with Fex. Unaware about the Dalki attacks, they both surmised that Quinn must have come to the Vampire World after they had arrived. The two of them decided since the Dragon was fine that they should head off towards the vampire settlement to assist in any way they could.

As they got closer they could feel huge surges of energy fighting, but they also noticed something else as they travelled through the forest. Fex had spotted a strange device that had already been destroyed, and he soon figured out what it was.

"That look like one of those Dalki jammers! They probably had these so Quinn or the others couldn't get here from the teleporters. Damn it!" Fex clenched his fist in

anger. "We've been sent here to help, but instead we've been sitting around doing nothing while everyone else was fighting!"

The duo started to speed up until they eventually arrived at the settlement, though by that point the sound of fighting had stopped. Strangely when they entered the pooling area, they could see that all the vampires were on their knees bowing down to a certain person in front of them.

They could see it was Quinn, so ignoring the bizarre scene they pushed through, but none of the vampires paid them any attention and continued to stay in the respectful bowing position, waiting for Quinn to answer their question.

Not quite reading what was going on, Fex and Linda had come out from among regular vampires and were now in the row where all the Vampire knights stood.

"Quinn!" Fex shouted. "Are you alright, brother?"

Ever since Muka had declared that he wanted to make him the next King, Quinn had his head held down looking on the ground, but hearing Fex' voice he looked up.

"The two of you..you're oka..y.." Quinn's body started to waver, and suddenly his vision blurred as he collapsed, falling on the ground.

Seeing this, the leaders in front of him immediately got up and were about to run forward but there was someone else that had reached him before the others, and it was none other than Leo. The Vampire knight held Quinn by his back, making sure everything was fine, yet it seemed like it was only his body that was exhausted. He didn't know what Quinn had been through but even now the energy in his entire body was moving around like mad, unsettled.

"Please, let us take Quinn, we can look over him." Muka offered.

However, Leo just shook his head.

"He hasn't accepted your request, so he remains the tenth family's leader. I will take him back to the castle. I would suggest that each family worries about themselves."

"When he wakes up, it will be up to him whether he wishes to meet with any of you. That boy never asked to be involved in this whole mess. Nevertheless, he was dragged into it, managing to save your previous settlement not once but twice now. He has earned the right to do as he wishes."

Hearing these words, Ashley, who was now taking charge over the turned humans, immediately created two rows. Leo walked away with Quinn's exhausted body, the vampire soldiers, as they were known within the tenth family, escorted them making a clear path.

Seeing the miserable state of their saviour, the kneeling vampires couldn't help but be thankful. They clapped as the soldiers walked past with their saviour.

"What the...what the hell is going on?" Fex was confused, following Leo and the others, scratching the top of his head. Then in the crowd, he discovered a certain someone who was trying his best to bow as low as he could to avoid the vampire's gaze.

Alas, his luck seemed to have run out, and Fex was happy to question him about what they had missed.

"Hey, Mr 11, get over here!" Fex smiled.

---

As Leo had said, the vampires had decided to head back to their own inner castle areas, to tend to their own families. This included those that were in the pooling area. As for those that served in the King's castle, there were no survivors. The leaders had no choice but to kill the Royal Guards as they were under the influence of the Original King.

Muka had taken Bryce's and Arthur's body into custody, locking them underneath his own castle, where no one should have access. The area where the King's castle used to stand had been marked as a forbidden zone for the time being.

There were also strict measures placed on each of the tombs, in the castles. After finding out that the second leader was the one responsible for waking up the Original King, they didn't want any more Originals suddenly springing up on them.

Those that had lacked leaders currently, the Vampire knights from the families helped them select new leaders and representatives making sure everything was done according to order and tradition.

The strange thing was that even after two days had passed, Quinn had yet to wake up.

Leo wasn't worried, he could tell that the energy in his body was settling just slowly, but it was almost as if his body had yet to adapt to all his new found powers that it still hadn't finished settling.

As for Erin, she had stayed inside the castle. Leo had made it clear that the tenth castle was acting independently to the other families. They were doing as they wished until Quinn woke up, so Erin was safe in the territory of the Cursed family.

The people were free to stay with them, or leave to join other families, but not a single person who had been staying at the tenth family castle had left. Each day the day on everyone's mind was whether the tenth leader was recovering.

In the end, this left the other surviving leaders, and the families that had selected a representative to represent them, to have a meeting of their. Surprisingly, all of the vampire leaders, new and old, had agreed to meet in the pooling area, following Muka's suggestion.

They stood there, looking at the empty space, and the large craters caused by battle. Standing in the circle, there was no longer any council room, or anything like that.

"What is your plan, Muka, you seem to have gathered leaders on your side before all of this had happened, surely you thought of something?" Jake Muscat asked.

"I believe I already made my plan quite clear, I wish to make the tenth leader our next King. This was my wish even before the Original King has been awoken, yet now even more so. As an Original he will likely create an army and come back to exact vengeance."

"At the moment there is no one that can beat him, other than Quinn. If our King is not powerful then this whole settlement will fall, more so than it has done already."

Everyone was quiet for a moment as they took in what he had said.

"I believe Jake is asking the right questions though. You have heard his Vampire knight, it didn't sound like Quinn would wish to be our King. What you're saying is basically that without him we are doomed. ...should the vampire families just live separate lives after everything we have been through?" Sunny asked. "What about the Absolute Blood power?"

"Even if Quinn refuses the position, at the moment he has possession of the Absolute Blood Control skill. We might have the King's blood armour, but that was useless against someone like Laxmus."

"Then we will just have to take the Blood power away from him if he refuses to become King." The young Nicu stated, who had become the representative for the first family. It was a surprise to the other families as well, but if he was selected through whatever means then it was fine.

"Oh." Jin raised an eyebrow. "Did I hear you correctly? Are you saying that if the tenth leader refuses to follow our traditions or refuses to become our King then you are going to force him to return the Blood powers to us? Sure, go right ahead, I would love to see what happens if you storm the tenth castle, just know that me and my family will take no part in that."

"The tenth leader is possibly the strongest vampire in existence and even if we were all to go up against him, none of us would survive."

Despite much discussion, the vampire leaders were unable to come to a unanimous decision on anything nor come to any type of agreement. In the end, they felt like the only choice was to wait for Quinn to wake up and give him his answer.

They could only pray for him to accept, otherwise they saw only ruin for the future of the vampire settlement.

## Chapter 1370: Too strong

The settlement was in recovery mode, but one family in particular had less to do compared to the other family and that was the tenth family. Their inner castle area had suffered minimal damage, yet they were nevertheless busy preparing a number of things.

Ashley and his men were organising a ceremony, a funeral for Paul, and wanted to ask Quinn a number of things. With Paul gone, they didn't know what their duty was. They had stayed behind under the orders of the Vampire King, but with Bryce gone and Quinn the potential successor to that position, he might allow them to return to the Human World. However, in that case what were they supposed to do about blood and so on. It was a confusing time for them all.

Timmy and Xander had organised the manpower to rebuild the houses and structures in the settlement, but had so far avoided restoring the pooling area. The main reason for that was that they were unsure if they would even be staying in this place. They didn't want to waste their time doing work. And then there were issues with the Cursed faction ship itself.

Without Paul, Leo was more busy than ever in the Vampire settlement, and didn't have a clear picture of what had been going on at the Cursed ship, Linda was in charge of that, however... the reports she was getting didn't sound great.

Apparently, all three major factions were struggling in the fight against the Dalki, this included those of the Cursed faction. All of this information was being passed on to Paul's Office, which had temporarily become Linda's for the time being.

"Do you need us to return to the Cursed ship? We could help in the war." Linda suggested.

"I appreciate the offer, but I don't think that will help much. One person can't really make a difference in this war. This has turned into a full scale battle." Sam explained with a sigh. "We've spread our forces to the three major Cursed planets and are holding them off as best we can, unfortunately I believe it's only a matter of time until they break through. Their numbers show no sign of slowing down no matter how many we defeat. Perhaps they are already using the demon tier beast to their advantage."

"We also need some of you to stay in the Vampire World. Just because we have stopped Arthur from killing the Demon tier beast doesn't mean we have stopped the Dalki's plan of getting full possession of the Dragon. We need to make sure that it is safe more than anything. When Quinn wakes up..."

Sam paused there because he started to think about his statement. If there was one person that could make a difference it was Quinn, but it seemed like the Vampire settlement needed him as well. Were they really useless without him?

"I would like to be the one to inform Quinn. If you just start telling him things, he'll certainly make a rash decision as always. He did good... he deserves some rest. We should at least be able to grant him that."

The call had ended there and Linda let out a big sigh, she felt more useless than usual, especially since she had missed everything that had happened, and now she felt like she could do nothing either.

'More and more people have died in this war....It feels like...it's never going to end.' Linda thought.

There was something strange going on in the tenth family castle that the vampires who lived there were aware of, and that was that the top two floors of the castle were off limits. Only those that Leo had given permission to were allowed to be there.

The others didn't think too much of this, because this was also where Quinn was currently resting in his chambers, but there was another reason for this. One of the large bedrooms that was so grand had been emptied and at the moment, Erin stayed there most of her time. The reason why all the objects in the room were to be removed was because she was currently using it as a training room, and there were slashes, cuts in the walls all over.

If any items had been left in the room then they would have been destroyed by now. She swung her Katana blade before swiftly switching to the Demon tier weapon on her back, swinging it above her head, letting out an almighty scream as she hit the ground. The Dhampir was breathing heavily and covered in sweat, even now that she wasn't swinging the blade one could see that her hands were tensed up.

"You're losing control of your breathing now as well." Leo commented. "If this carries on, all this extra training you are doing will make you worse not better."

Erin didn't seem to react to Leo's words as she usually would have and instead put the weapon away and sat down mediating.

"Does it help to swing your sword?" Leo asked, knowing that what she was doing wasn't any form of training at all. The young woman would be doing this nonstop for hours on end, and Leo was wondering if she had even gotten any sleep.

"Swinging the sword distracts me." Erin finally replied. "I don't know why..I can't control it anymore. I thought we had it under control, but ever since we met Laxmus, I can't control it, Leo." Her voice cracked slightly saying those words.

Erin always had a strong appearance, and even before everything the two of them had gone through he had watched her power through her condition without ever complaining, but this time she almost seemed scared.

"I can feel it...she's right." Erin said, opening her eyes that were now glowing yellow. "Even now Leo, with you standing here, I have sliced you down in my head five times already...make that six. Teacher...what are we going to do, what am I going to do.."

For the first time, Leo didn't seem to have an answer. He had done what they could to cure her urges, yet he had never expected her to have this type of reaction.

"There are...knowledgeable people in the Cursed faction. Perhaps, they can find a way to reverse the effects on you, Erin, don't give up. In the meantime, you don't have to worry. Even if you were to try and strike me, I am capable of taking you on." Leo replied.

"Really?" Erin asked.

At that moment, she stood up from where she was, and placed her hand on the hilt of her Katana blade. She waited, and Leo, seeing what she was trying to do, had done the same. It was a quick slash.

The fastest and most powerful strike that Leo had. Using his ability, he could feel that Erin wasn't holding back, so he chose not to either. There was silence between the two, and the second she went to pull her blade out of her sheathe, Leo did the same.

However, Erin's was slightly faster, her blade releasing a strong yellow blood swipe. Leo had done the same, also reinforcing his strike with the third stage of Qi. The two slashes met in the middle, and as they touched, the yellow slash consumed the red in an instant and continued going forward.

Leo, seeing the slash still coming towards him, had no choice but to move to the side, allowing for the attack to continue going forward, and eventually hit the wall, causing a big marking on it to be made.

Leo's hands were shaking as he saw this.

"Erin, your power has gotten even stronger."

She nodded in response, and now had tears flowing down her face.

"I could feel it, meeting Arthur, and then Laxmus, my power keeps growing as if it desires to defeat them. Even without training, I'm sorry Leo, but I don't think I can travel with you...or any of the Cursed faction anymore."

Leo wanted to stop her, but he could feel that even now the energy inside Erin was growing, and the next second, she had gone out of the door, Leo had entered. It was clear she was deciding to head back to the Cursed ship, and away from any vampires.

'It looks like..I failed you.' Leo thought. 'Maybe I was never cut out to be a teacher. I understand how hard it can be now, master.'

Erin's disappearance was kept a secret from the others. A lot hadn't even known that she was there in the first place, and no one had dared to ask questions about her in the tenth family due to her close connection with their currently only Vampire knight, who had temporarily taken over as the leader.

Finally, after more than a week since his fight, the one they had all been waiting for woke up.

Quinn's eyes opened wide, and he could see himself in a bedroom.

"You're finally awake, bro. Or should I call you, your majesty." Fex greeted him. "Man, you sure did a lot, huh. I can't believe it, it looks like I might really have to take some love advice from you."

Quinn smiled, he was happy to see Fex was okay. The Vampire Lord had been afraid that something might have happened to him and Linda due to Arthur's death. However seeing him also acted as a trigger to recall all of the events that had happened before he had collapsed.

'The Quest..the option it's still there.' Quinn thought, looking at his system.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1371: Becoming a king

The first thing Quinn did was check his system screen while he laid there in bed. Everything that happened, it was hard to believe he had gone through it all, but checking the system confirmed it.

He still had all of the MC cells which had been given to him by Arthur, he still had a high level of Blood control due to Bryce passing him the Absolute Blood Control skill and lastly, Quinn could see that he still had an update to a particular Quest, waiting for him to confirm whether he wants to become the next King or not.

Fex had been coming to Quinn's side frequently, after learning from Agent 11 about what happened, the vampire felt like he was even more indebted to his 'blood brother'. He had saved the whole settlement from a great power, which included his own family members.

Having done nothing to help, Fex wanted to at least be there when he woke up, so he stayed by his side ever since. Today the other finally opened his eyes, allowing the vampire to update Quinn on the situation in the Vampire settlement, about how they hadn't yet decided on a new King, the consensus seemingly being to wait for the tenth leader to tell them whether he accepts or not.

'I guess that's why the system still has the option of me accepting the role.' Quinn thought.

"So there is no one in charge of the settlement? And the tenth family have just been able to do as they like?" Quinn asked.

"I mean if you put it like that, it almost sounds bad. However, think about it, Quinn, no one can really stop you now. You are stronger than any Punisher, or King that they could select instead of you. I know it's your decision, but I wanted to say something about that."

"You might not have been born a vampire, but you have done so much for the Vampire settlement, I trust your judgment and understand if you decide not to become King, but just because you reject that role, it will be hard to distance yourself away from all the vampires."

"All the vampires recognise you as their saviour, especially those from the pooling area and if there is a problem they will come to seek you out. On top of that, if there is no one to control them that can be bad in its own way as well."

"Maybe the vampires that believe that we should be in control of the humans will do as they wish, and there will need to be someone to stop them then as well, and then there's the Original King."

Of course Quinn knew this, but the truth was he had been thinking of his human life more so than his vampire life. He hardly had spent any time here, with these

people. It was good to get the perspective of a vampire that was originally from the settlement, and Fex of course cared about them a lot.

"I haven't made my decision yet, Fex. I just need more time to think. There are still things the Cursed faction needs to do after all." Quinn replied.

When Fex left Quinn be, the Vampire Lord asked the other not to inform everyone that he was awake just yet. He wanted some time to himself to think about a few things. The tenth leader walked up to his window, and stared out of it. Here he could see everyone in the settlement working hard with each other.

Seeing them reminded him of the scene where all of them had bowed down to him out of respect. He would be lying if he claimed that he hadn't enjoyed that feeling, yet that alone wasn't enough to convince him to add to his responsibilities. Quinn then moved his hand a few times, as if he was getting used to his body, and that was because he was.

'My body feels lighter, and stronger, even more so than when I fought against Laxmus.' Quinn realised.

'That's because your body is still getting used to all that power, but I do have to warn you, Quinn. You've heard Arthur and you've experienced it, that Absolute Blood Control puts a lot of strain on your body. You have one of the strongest bodies a vampire has ever had."

'The reason for your exhaustion I believe was due to your last attack. All the vampires in the settlement gave you their blood, strengthening it. As powerful as that made you, I'm afraid if you do something like that again, then it could be a serious problem for yourself. Who knows how long you will need to rest the next time... '

He didn't need Vincent to tell him twice, because he had felt it at the time.

'Thanks for the advice, Vincent.' Quinn replied. 'I was thinking about what Fex said, about accepting the role of being King of this place. It just doesn't feel right to me. Not just because I'm an outsider, but I don't even feel like the leader of the Cursed faction. I don't know what I would do with it, if not for Sam.'

'How am I supposed to lead all the vampires? I mean I barely spent any time in the Vampire World despite having become the leader of a family. Paul had taken care of all those matters for me, but I doubt they'll just listen to me and now he's gone... just like Kazz, Bryce and Arthur. I still find it hard to believe that all of them are gone now...'

Vincent didn't reply, because he believed that nobody but Quinn could really understand what he was going through. The old vampire couldn't imagine how in such a short amount of time, the 'kid' had managed to experience more in a couple of years than what one person would have been through in a hundred lifetimes.

No wonder it felt strange to him.

In the end, after a lot of thinking, Quinn decided to leave the castle, making everyone aware of the fact that he had woken up. This information spread like wildfire to the other families, and they all wished to meet him as soon as possible. It was clear what they wanted to talk about which was why Quinn had put it on hold for now, though he had a valid excuse.

The Vampire Lord stated that he was busy with organising a ceremony. One for all the vampires that had passed away, including the deceased King, Paul and the others who had fought in this war. The others agreed that this was important, and had decided to hold a ceremony in the pooling area for them all, which would allow the leaders to say a few words.

Quinn was aware that although they had agreed to this request they would most likely grab him right after, demanding an answer about him becoming their next King or not. Still, at least this had bought him peace and quiet until tomorrow when the ceremony would start.

Now, Quinn had returned to the throne room in the tenth castle and looked out of the large glass panel window again. It was here that Vincent had told him to look after the people, and having experienced his ancestor's life he had begun to feel a connection with these.

'Before I decide, I will need to know what is happening with the Cursed faction. Linda said that Sam would contact me when he needs to. Then I can make my decision, and of course I will need to see what they say and want me to do.'

'Like Fex said, I guess I just haven't realised that I am in a position where I can request whatever I want. However, will the vampires really listen to me?'

Just as Quinn had finished this thought, and before Vincent could answer him, another had come through the doors, and it was his only remaining Vampire knight, Leo.

"Quinn." Leo greeted him by bowing down, but Quinn quickly gestured for him to raise his head. Leo was one the people who he had great respect for, and never wanted him to bow down his head to him, no matter who Quinn had become.

"Quinn, I have some news to tell you. Perhaps I should have mentioned it earlier, but at the time I didn't want to trouble you and I thought that I perhaps knew best for them." Leo said.

Quite surprised by what Leo had to say, the two of them sat down at a table in the room and Quinn listened to what the Blind Swordsman said. He would always have and make time for this person. Still regretting that it was Quinn's fault he had been turned and chucked into this mess. Not once though, did Leo ever blame Quinn.

The news that Leo had to deliver was about Erin. He had informed the tenth leader about everything that had happened, and the struggles she had been facing, leading to her leaving out of her own volition.

"I see." Quinn replied. "Leo, I don't think anything you did was wrong. Honestly, I wouldn't even know what to do if I was put in your situation. If Erin went through the teleporter then she should have appeared on the Cursed faction ship. When Sam contacts me, I will ask him where she has gone from there."

"After all, I was the one that turned her, so she is my responsibility, you have already done too much in that regard. Leo, you are free to do as you wish. I know you have business with Pure, let me worry about this."

The two of them continued to have some light conversation, talking about what Leo had done on his journey and confirming a few things. Such as the fight Leo had with the Dalki along with Chris. Quinn figured that it was the same person that had trained him in Qi, and was actually quite happy that the two of them had fought together.

At the end of the day though, Chris was a member of Pure, which meant that it was likely that Quinn or the others would have to face him someday. After that, Leo stated that he would stay, at least until he knew that the tenth family would be able to run smoothly without him. He intended to help out in the war after that, before seeking out his own personal business with Pure.

After leaving, Quinn decides to ask Vincent a few questions.

'Is there anything we can do to help Erin? I know you don't know much about the Dhampir, but any little bit might help.' Quinn asked.

'It is hard for me to say honestly.' Vincent replied. 'Stuck in this system there is only so much I can do. I've been thinking, maybe it is time for me to take you up on your offer, Quinn. Even if I was put into a clone body, it would do more good for me to be out there than to stay in here.'

'I could see what I could do to help you. After all, if you are King, you will have access to all the facilities, everything will be at your disposal, as long as the council agrees, though as Fex said, with your power, as long as it's not too ridiculous it shouldn't pose a problem.'

'So...are you saying I should accept?' Quinn asked.

'I don't think that would be the worst choice.' Vincent replied.

At that moment, Quinn's mask started to vibrate. The call he had been waiting for, came at the perfect time. He was eager to get an update on the situation with the Cursed faction.

Alas, it wasn't good news.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1372: A Decision Made

Picking up the call, Quinn was quite happy to hear the sound of Sam's voice on the other end. He had no clue what had happened while he was away and wanted to ask about Logan and Mona, who had decided to head back to the Cursed ship while he headed to the vampire world.

However, the news that was delivered was nothing that Quinn had expected at all. He could tell it was hard for Sam to deliver the news. His voice cracked multiple times, Sam couldn't stop apologising on the other end for making the wrong decision. With each piece of new information, Quinn was starting to think whether or not he had made the right decision coming to this place.

Eventually, the call had ended, and there was no need for Quinn to head back to the Cursed faction planets or the ship immediately. That was the worst part of it all. It was because the time had already passed for Quinn to do anything.

Quinn stood there, in the throne room, in silence. He had his head held down and was frozen in place. He was like a statue and didn't know how long he had been there for, in the same position.

Eventually, he did something different. Both his fists were clenched, and a red aura started to surround the outside of his body. The red aura mixed with Qi, as Quinn wanted to let out every part of power inside him.

If one was to look closely, one could see that items on the table were shaking due to the sheer power that Quinn was summoning right now.

"ARGHHH!" Quinn shouted at the top of his lungs, his veins showing from his neck, and at the same time, red aura was released out from his body all around him.

As the aura hit the items on the table, they fell off, and at that moment, everyone in the castle could feel that the whole place was shaking. Those who were outside could even see the castle shaking and stopped to look.

"What's going on? Is there a fight going on in there!"

"Has that person returned, or maybe the tenth leader is in trouble!" The people panicked.

Seconds later, Timmy and Xander had to come out from the castle, along with the vampire soldiers, to calm down the situation.

"It is no trouble, people. Please go back to what you were doing. The tenth leader was just practising a new technique. As you can see, not even the mighty castle can hold his power." Xander reported.

This news satisfied the people, but everyone close to Quinn was worried about what had actually occurred.

'Why..why is this happening..why can't I ever seem to make the right decision.' Quinn thought back in his room.

There was no one to talk to. No one had entered, perhaps because they felt like Quinn just needed to take a break, but at least one person was with him.

'Quinn, I don't think you made the wrong decision. It's impossible to tell. Who knows what could've happened here if you weren't here and the ripple effect that would have.' Vincent replied. 'Trust me, in my lifetime, I constantly thought about what if I was to do things this way or that, but at the end of the day, we can't go into the past.'

'What I would say is, do what you can now, with the position you are in.'

For some reason, the last words that Vincent said, was like an epiphany for Quinn. He still hadn't recovered from the news that he had received, but it was no time for him to be feeling sorry.

"I need a list."

A short while later, Leo had been called into the throne room. The look on his face wanted to ask Quinn what had happened. He felt the energy more than anyone due to his ability. Still, with the look that Leo could see now, he thought that perhaps there was no worry at all. Quinn's mind was clear with what he needed to do.

"Leo, I would like you to do me a favour. Head off with Linda towards the dragon in the lab. Once I'm done here, I'll travel to Linda and take the dragon with me. There's a chance that the Dalki could still attack this place."

"It might only be a matter of time until they find out that Arthur has failed his task."

Leo nodded and didn't ask any questions. He preferred leadership this way that was decisive and straight away went to inform Linda of their task.

The next day, the preparations for the ceremony in the pooling area were complete. The leaders dealt with the schedule, the temporary building of structures and more, and had sent some information to Quinn.

They had given him a time slot for when he would speak to the people, which was at the very end of the ceremony. Based on what he heard from those in the tenth castle, it was unavoidable for Quinn to do a speech. Everyone, not just those in the tenth family, was looking forward to it.

It was strange, but Quinn had been told that when he was to walk out the castle, that the vampire soldiers, which everyone referred to them as now, now that Paul was gone, were to escort him.

When Quinn left the castle to go to the pooling area, they had practically surrounded him, making it so no one could get close. It was only then since it was the first time Quinn had left the castle, he realised why this was needed.

"It's the tenth leader, the legendary vampire!"

"He was the one that saved us all. The shadow stopped the attack from hitting us in time."

"Tenth leader, please look my way, give me a wink!"

"Please let me thank you!"

The vampires were simply crazy. It reminded Quinn of those celebrities that would be hounded on the street.

'Look at all these people you helped, Quinn, and how appreciative they are of you. If it wasn't for you, they would be unable to put this type of smile on their face.' Vincent said.

As usual, Quinn was impressed by the work the vampires did. The pooling area was just a vast empty wasteland the last time he had seen it. Now, they had managed to set it up well, creating a large stage at the end just in front of the king's castle and places for the vampire leaders and new leaders to be placed.

Then, there were also coffins spread out in front of the stage. Inside, those with the bodies of all those that had died. Even though some didn't have a body to place in the coffin, they still made one out of respect.

The people from each of the families were made to stand as if they were attending a concert, and a wall was made of the black material just between the stage and the others. Not that the wall would stop the vampires if they wanted to, but it was to know where the vampires were allowed to be.

Then, all those Vampire knights and higher ranking vampires, including Quinn's large escort group was In the room behind the stage waiting for their turn.

At the moment, Sunny seemed to be a type of host to the event. Welcoming everyone and talking to them all.

What Quinn found impressive was there were crystals that were projecting her image and replicating it like a large tv to everyone all around. It was a reminder to Quinn that vampire technology was quite advanced.

They also had so many resources and secrets that they could use, but they just never chose to, always hiding here. All of the leaders were introduced and had time to talk. Quinn listened to them all.

The speeches sounded like they were mostly there to calm the people, to tell them everything was alright and that an event like this would never happen again.

Which just didn't sit quite right with Quinn.

"And now, everyone, the tenth leader would like to talk to you all. Our saviour of the vampire settlement." Sunny announced.

Quinn walked up to the stage, and the sound was thunderous coming from the crowd. The whole stage shook. It was unlike when any of the other leaders stood where Quinn was. Eventually, though, their leaders looked at them, emitting some sort of pressure that quickly got all the vampires to calm down.

Quinn stood there looking out at them all again, every single one of them listening to his words right now.

"The vampires that we lost in this fight. I was close to a lot of them. I'm not just talking about my vampire knight Paul either." Quinn said. "I knew Kazz, I knew Arthur, and I even knew Bryce through his good and bad. I hear a lot of you are calling me a hero.

"But honestly, these people who were willing to sacrifice their lives, they were the ones that should be called heroes. Without hesitation, they risked their lives to save each other. The settlement and people they cared for.

"They did something that I can't do. Bob, Tilart, Fiona, Lucas, Brian..."

The others were wondering what Quinn was doing at the moment as he went on to list a bunch of names. It lasted for about ten minutes. By then, some of the vampires in the settlement realised what Quinn had done, and their eyes started to tear up.

"These are the names of every single vampire that lost their lives in this fight. Let me tell you, this was no accident what happened today. You were attacked, and there is a good chance you could be attacked again, now or in the future, and I think some of you know that.

"But as long as we have people, people like those names I have said today, then we will be okay. I will not forget a single one of their names. As I take every single one of them with me, until the day I die. I will remember them and everyone after them."

The vampires didn't cheer after Quinn's speech. Instead, they were deep in thought. They didn't even understand why they had been attacked or what the fight was

about. They knew nothing, and even now, the vampire leaders hadn't explained to them.

The tenth leader was the only one that had told them a partial truth, and they wanted to thank Quinn for that. To know the cause and the reason why their fellow vampires had died.

"I have one more thing to say to you all. Your leaders and all of you had bowed your heads down in front of me that day, and you asked me a question. Whether I would become your vampire king.

"And I have your answer for that now..."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## **Chapter 1373: Do you accept me as your king?**

The leaders who were waiting in the back suddenly stood up from their seats as they waited to hear Quinn's answer. They had planned to talk to Quinn after the ceremony to discuss these matters. Muka had even planned a number of things to convince him, but it looked like they were all going to get their answer here and now.

Quinn looked at all of the vampires in the settlement listening to him carefully. They were hanging on to his every word.

"The answer is..yes," Quinn replied.

In an instant, the vampires started to cheer in joy. If anyone deserved to be the King, they all felt like it was the tenth leader. Not only was he the strongest vampire, but he was also their saviour, someone who brought them together, and those that were the happiest were the vampires from the tenth family.

They had spent years being suppressed by the other families but had felt a change ever since the new leader had appeared. There were hardly any vampires that were alive that could even remember the last time one from the tenth family had been selected as King.

Hearing this, behind the stage in the backroom, watching on the crystal monitor, the leaders heard everything and looked at each other. They wanted to see the reactions of each other. Some of them were left with their mouths wide open. Leaders such as Nicu and Jake were sure that Quinn would have declined.

They were trying to figure out ways to get the absolute blood control back from him. For one, Nicu even had a large crate by his side that contained Arthur's weapon. He thought it would be a good trade if need be. In the first place, although they knew Quinn suited the role of King, they just could never imagine him being one.

The cheers continued, but Quinn wanted to say more. Trying to calm them all down, Quinn started to focus on his Qi and shouted, amplifying his voice over all of theirs.

"BUT!!!" He shouted, silencing them in nearly an instant. "This is if you can accept me as King, as the King I wish to be."

Some of the leaders and knights scrunched up their faces hearing this comment. They knew there had to be a catch, and rather than discussing it with them. He had decided to publicly speak about it to the people.

"Should I stop him?" Sunny asked.

"No, let's hear what he has to say. I think he has a point. At the end of the day, we don't know what Quinn's wish is in all of this, and as King, we need to know his goal." Muka replied.

Pausing for a bit, Quinn realised that the others would allow him to continue to speak, and so he did.

"I'm sure some of you know about me or who I am, and there are some of you who will not. I was a human, a human that had been turned into a vampire, but one that had contained the Eno bloodline. Which was why I was able to become the leader of the tenth castle.

"I have been human for most of my life, and I have friends and people I call family that I care for. Human lives I care for, but here in front of me, I also have lives I care for. Vampires for who I feel the same way.

"If you wish for me to be your King, then you need to all accept this fact. At the moment, the humans are at war with a race called the Dalki. The same creatures that had attacked the vampire settlement. There is a good chance that it will happen again. The threat on the vampire settlement is not over, and I want you all to be aware of that.

"I...Have been living a double life, but I want to look after the vampires just as much as I do the humans. The humans already know about our existence, some are scared, and I'm sure some of you are scared, but...I want us to overcome this fear, so the two of us can see each other as equals.

"I don't wish for there to be a separation, and I want the two sides to support each other. This is my wish. If you do not agree with my wish or plan to go against it, then I am afraid I am not the right King for you."

Quinn had stopped speaking there, and it gave the vampires a moment to talk. Many of them started to talk amongst each other about what they had heard. The vampires had been secluded from the humans for so long. Only a few of them were able to go to the human world. Many of them didn't know what humans were like.

However, at the same time, leaving the settlement exploring a wider world with more people felt exciting to them. In contrast, it was scary for others, but most of the vampires could agree on one thing.

"Our life belongs to our king, you!" A vampire shouted. "If it wasn't for you, we wouldn't be standing here right now! I will do whatever you want!"

"Yeah, he's right! Look at what happened to us. Even under the old rule, we need change!"

"If we don't do anything about those Dalki, then they will come after us, won't they!"

Surprisingly to Quinn, many in the crowd were supportive. What Quinn didn't realise was that what had happened was such a shocking event to them all. The leaders that they had trusted in this fight were helpless. Many of them had died.

It had come as a complete shock to the settlement that had been peaceful for so long, and at that moment, Quinn was the one that was there. Which was why they were so willing to follow him. Especially since vampires valued strength greatly, and Quinn certainly had proved himself in that department.

"Alright, that was the speech from the tenth leader, everyone!" Sunny nervously ran onto the stage and started clapping. It was Quinn's cue to leave, and he could only think that perhaps the leaders weren't so keen on Quinn's idea.

A few passing words were said, and then all of the coffins were burnt. The vampires watched the fire in silence until all the smoke had disappeared, signalling it was the end of the ceremony.

The vampires headed back to their castles being directed by their knights, and as expected, Quinn had been called to a meeting with the others. The meeting was to take place in the room where all of the leaders were preparing and watching the ceremony from behind the stage.

It was a large place that looked similar to that of a ballroom. Inside there were glasses of blood in wine glasses and a large round table with a white cloth as if they were going to go for a high-class meal. Here, Quinn could see all the leaders, including unfamiliar faces of the new ones sitting there.

Going to the table, Quinn sat down confidently, without greeting any of them, as if this was a bothersome thing to do. He wanted to make it clear that he wasn't doing this just because they asked him to.

"So I accepted your request as King? But it looks like the leaders here haven't accepted me, right? Or the council, so what is it that you wanted to talk to me about?"

Quinn knew this because the quest to become the vampire king was still available in his system. He had thought after saying those words on the stage that the quest might have been completed. There could have been a few reasons why it was not.

Quinn needed to be accepted by the people, he had to go through the King's ritual, or he needed the council to accept him as their King as well.

"I have to admit, we were quite surprised by your speech there," Muka said.  
"Honestly, after listening to you, we realised that we always thought of you as a vampire like one of our own."

"But you have made it clear that you see yourself as something different!" Nicu interrupted, banging his fist on the table.

Immediately, Quinn went to look towards him and waved his hand. In that second, an invisible force was felt hitting Nicu, knocking him off the chair and slamming his head on the ground.

"Don't worry, he is alive. I just don't want anyone to interrupt when we are talking about an important matter." Quinn replied.

The other leaders who had been against Quinn, and also wanted to speak had decided to stay quiet. They hadn't even seen what he had done, and Nicu still hadn't come up from that single move. It was a reminder of how he was able to save the settlement in the first place.

"We just wanted to ask. We know you said you wanted to bring humans and vampires together, but what did you exactly mean by that? After all, you will be asking us to direct our families under you. So it would be good for us to know." Jin asked.

"I was planning to tell you all anyway, and you're right, I did have something in mind when I accepted being King, and it was why I said all that earlier on the stage.

"I want the vampires to help the humans in the war against the Dalki. This is my condition for me becoming your King."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1374: The vote, and power

The leaders had suspected that Quinn might use their request to help out the humans he cared about so much. It made sense after hearing the speech he had made, however they hadn't quite expected him to go so public with his plans. It was putting all of them in a difficult position and on the top of their toes.

The Vampire Lord had also just outright stated that the condition for him becoming their next King was to take part in a war that wasn't theirs in the first place. The first instinct of the newly elected and young leaders was to stand up and protest, but the tenth leader had already made an example out of Nicu.

Only one was brave enough to stand up to him.

"That is ridiculous!" A young looking female vampire scoffed at his words. Quinn looked at her, noticing her blonde hair, which was unusual since most vampires had black hair, which made him suspect that it was dyed.

"You are asking all of us to fight, just because of your personal interest! Right now, you are not our King and we all are at the same rank."

The other leaders were quite nervous about how Quinn was going to react, but unlike with the first family's leader, he remained calm.

"And who are you?" Quinn firstly asked.

This caused the woman's face to turn bright red, yet it was expected for Quinn to not really know who she was. He had been recuperating and only recently woke up.

"I'm Katori Cha, new leader of the second family."

"Well then that makes it easier." Quinn replied. "I believe it was because of the interests of your family in the first place that the settlements were in danger twice. Yet, it was because of my interest that I saved you all. However, I won't deny you having a point."

"I could just say that all of you owe me a favour, although I might not be a native vampire I have learned that etiquette demands that a favour always gets repaid, and based on the reactions from the people out there, they seem to be more inclined to stick to that than all of you."

"However, I would much prefer you agreeing to this willingly than me forcing you, so let me lay out everything clearly to all of you. At the moment I hold quite the high position in the Human World, you can think of it as the equivalent of a Royal Knight, without there being a King or maybe similar to the council with only three members. If there is anything you need from them in the future or information then I can easily obtain it."

"My condition wasn't one I placed on a whim. I have long since desired to bridge the gap between vampires and humans, only the current situation allows me to do it with your consent. In my opinion the vampires have tried to live secretly ignoring the human's existence for too long, giving rise to problems within the vampires and humans.

"There will always be disputes, of course. Humans argue with each other, yet vampires do as well, but at the moment both are facing the same enemy. On our own, neither side might stand a chance, but together I believe we can defeat them. For that, I want to use the resources in this solar system.

"On my way here, I have passed multiple beast planets. The humans are currently in dire need of crystals to continue fighting. At the same time, I heard from Fex that you have been gathering dangerous subclasses. Now, I don't know if any of you were aware, but it looked like Bryce has been planning to go to some type of war for a while now.

"Instead of killing them all, I suggest we use them to help us in the fight against the Dalki. I won't even ask you to take care of them, that can be the tenth family's responsibility. However, I do want the vampire leaders and their vampires to take part in it as well. That is my wish. For this to work, I need your power, not just mine."

None of the leaders said anything, even Muka who had felt like they could help Quinn in some way thought that the tenth leader was asking for too much, but there was one thing that was true. They owed him their lives, so wouldn't it be fair for them to fight with their lives on the line?

"I think some of your conditions are fair, but you are asking for too much." Katori argued. "The crystals and maybe the subclasses we can agree on, but for us to risk our lives? We have only just recovered from an attack of our own, and what should we do if Laxmus returns while we're away?"

At this point, Quinn had a big smile on his face, because he had been waiting for this. It was time for him to use his position, everything he had gained for this point.

"You're right, but let me ask you, even if you all stay here, what exactly do you plan to do if he attacks you again? I'm telling you now, in case you can't agree to my conditions, I won't stay in the vampire settlement. Me and the tenth family, as well as any vampire who wishes to accompany us, will leave for the Human World. I may be powerful, but I'm not omnipotent. I can only do my best in trying to protect my family, and those loyal to them... as for everyone else I don't have the luxury to care about them."

This was a worry that the other leaders hadn't thought about. If Quinn was to do this, would more vampires choose to follow him rather than them. Perhaps the

inner castle vampires were loyal to their families but what about the pooling vampires. They had seen the reaction outside.

"Make no mistake, I'm the one holding out my hand to you guys not the other way round, you have no one that can defeat Laxmus even if he were to return on his own. I'm offering you protection, but in exchange I expect you to fight, for your sake as well as the people I care about..."

"I'm sure some of the older leaders are aware that the Dalki have been created by the vampires in the first place, and that they had attacked you alongside Arthur. There is a reason why I haven't chosen to simply leave, and it's because I really do need your help."

"Do you know why Arthur was working with the Dalki? Before his demise he confessed to me that he chose their side, because he claimed to be weaker than them. His last regret was that I proved to him that he might have been wrong and that there was no hope for the vampires or the humans. If we don't stop the Dalki now, they will come for you as well."

Although Quinn's words spoke his words with conviction, he actually wasn't so sure about the last part. With the Dragon gone, was there any reason for them to attack the vampires? The one that seemed to have wanted revenge on them more than anyone was Jim, yet according to his system he should be dead.

Nevertheless, the Dalki hadn't stopped their invasion of the human planets, and Quinn had seen how aggressive they could be. Perhaps it was just in their nature to be this way, an urge to kill anything different from them.

"Quinn, I think what you said is right, but there is one problem." Jake brought up, a little afraid that he might get hit. "The Punishers were created to be an equal force to the King. In case anything happened like it did before, we would have relied on them.

"After that, the council was supposed to have just as much power as the King. The King was the person selected by the council, yet we could still overturn his decision. We have many traditions and I was wondering about a few things.

"First, would you be willing to follow our ways? You have become so strong that no one can overthrow you, and right now you have the power of the Punisher and the Absolute Blood Control skill, meaning if you wished to rule over us with an iron fist, there would be no one to stop you. Another thing, you only spoke about your plans for the war, but what do you plan to do after that. If we help you and we win, will you still be our King?"

Surprisingly, the other leaders nodded and agreed with what Jake was asking, even the ones that wanted Quinn to join them no matter what. It was questions they wanted to ask, but thought maybe it was best to deal with after.

"What you are asking is fair and I have thought about it." Quinn answered. "First, I'm not familiar with all of your traditions, but I also don't want to come in here and change your vampire ways. I think I would need to deal with them, on a case by case basis.

"For your remark about me being too strong, that I combine two great powers, the thing is, right now, I need both of these powers to fight our enemy, especially if Laxmus was to return, so my plan for this will link into your last question.

"I need the vampire leaders' strength. The Dalki aren't large in number, just like the vampires but great in strength. After you help me achieve my goal, then I will be happy to give up the Absolute Blood Control . Perhaps we can set up a system like the Punishers of old but with the Absolute Blood Control instead of the Shadow powers.

"And lastly, I think it's important for me to keep my role as King, as long as you wish for me to do it. You all put your trust in me, and you all helped me, so I will continue to serve all of you."

The leaders smiled at Quinn's answer. They thought they were appropriate answers to everything, even better than they had hoped, Quinn seemed to be a resathetic person, one of the most reasonable they had ever met.

"We will then cast a vote, all those in favour of Quinn Talen, the tenth leader becoming the new king, please raise their hand." Muka asked.

Everyone at the table raised their hand, even Katori, but Nicu was unable to, still passed out.

"It seems like we have come to a unanimous decision. We welcome you, Your Majesty." Muka bowed down, the others following suit.

[Quest: Become the Vampire King completed]

[You will now receive your rewards.]

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1375: The power of a king

It had been a long time since Quinn had received the quest. The quest to become the vampire king. It had arrived after the King before Bryce had decided to go into eternal slumber. At the time, Quinn thought that the system was just setting him up with an unachievable goal. The system had been known to do a few strange things, so why not this as well. Or at least he never thought it would be this soon that the quest would be complete.

Which was why he was expecting some pretty big rewards.

[You will now receive the following rewards]

[You have earned a new title]

[King of the vampire settlement]

[Summoning skill has been upgraded]

That was it. There weren't many messages for a quest that had taken so long to complete, and there only seemed to be two rewards.

'I have also stopped getting the instant level up reward as well. I didn't get anything when facing Laxmus either. After Eno did a full unlock of the system, it seems to have become rather stingy these days.'

What Quinn was most disappointed after seeing the messages was that he still hadn't completed the quest to become something beyond a vampire lord.

'It would have felt like an impossible quest if I didn't receive that notification for it not too long ago.' Quinn thought but decided to look on the upside and check out his rewards.

[Title: King of the vampire settlement.]

[As King, the area under your control has increased. The King is able to select the area in which he controls. Moving it where he wishes. Reputation points can now be earned from all of those in the vampire settlement. Reputation points can also now be used within the territory]

After reading its effects, it looked like a better version of the leader title. Checking out the system, Quinn could see that the area he could now cover was a little larger than the whole settlement. A small space just outside where the castles were set, but it also covered the pooling area.

On the map, he could see that just like with his own family area, he could upgrade the castle itself, place towers, and there were even a few more options he didn't have before.

'I can make this whole settlement into an unstoppable fortress!' Quinn thought. 'But it says I can change the King's area to a different place. Do I really want to set up such a place here? Maybe it's better to set something like this on earth, or even one of the Cursed faction planets?'

'I think there is no need to worry about that.' Vincent replied. 'Remember how I said the vampire settlement used to be on earth. Well, I think the reason why this place looks almost exactly as I remember it is because they moved it in some way.'

'Although I am not quite sure how they did it, I'm sure they will have a way to move it again. So if need be, you could still increase the strength of this place to move it at a later time.'

Knowing this, Quinn just needed to ask to make sure.

"If there was ever the need to move the settlement, is that possible?" Quinn asked.

The other leaders were still at the table. Now that Quinn was their King, it was rude for them to leave before he did, so they just sat there while he was deep in thought, not knowing what he was doing and too afraid to ask.

"Yes, there was a mechanism built into the castles and system," Muka answered. "However, there are a few things that need to be done. For one, there are items that need to be placed in the area you wish to move the settlement too. The second thing is, it takes up a lot of energy and a while to transfer everything and everyone. A lot of crystals, to be more specific."

"After you move, the mechanism can't be used again straight away. It will take a while to move again even if you have enough crystals."

Once again, the vampire's technology never ceased to fail in amazing Quinn. The things they had figured out how to do with beast crystal was almost magical to them.

"How long is a while?" Quinn asked.

"Around a week for the mechanism to cool down. If it was an emergency, I'm sure you could force it, but then there's a chance that the mechanism would no longer work after that."

Quinn had gotten his answer, and it looked like Vincent was right. He could upgrade the settlement as he wished for now, and if he wanted to move it in the

future, he could. With his Title, he wasn't restricted to just the land where they were either.

'This title might be more helpful than I thought, but I guess that depends on the reputation points I have at the moment.'

[Current reputation points: 120,345]

'Well, it looks like I won't have any problems in that department. Has it been increasing while I was away every day, or is it just because of what I have done and how I've become King?'

Regardless, Quinn decided to check out his next reward, which was his summoning skill that had been upgraded. As the tenth leader Quinn was able to summon his vampire knights to his side, so he wondered what he could do with it now.

When seeing this message, he nearly choked on the air itself and started coughing; he was so surprised.

"Your majesty, is there something wrong!" Muka quickly offered to help Quinn.

"Everything is fine. You guys can leave. I'm just going to be making a few changes, so make sure that the vampires don't get so alarmed." Quinn said, giving his first order, and the others were ready to leave.

"Quinn," Muka said before leaving. "There are still things we need to discuss, such as the Royal knights and when exactly you plan to do these things. Usually, your Royal knights would help you out with such tasks, or your old vampire knights, but you don't have either or anyone that is knowledgeable enough."

"In the meantime, I will do my best to fill that role. So if there are any questions or help you need from me, then please go ahead and ask."

Quinn was inclined to take up Muka on that offer because there were a lot of things he needed to know before he could move ahead. There was no Sam that could do that for him here.

"Also, I would suggest you start thinking about who would be the next leader of the tenth family as well."

When all of the leaders finally left, Quinn looked at the system again to make sure he wasn't imagining things.

'How do I explain this to them?' Quinn thought.

[Summon Upgraded: You are now able to summon any of the vampire family leaders to your side]

Looking at the list, Quinn could tell it was no joke as all of their names appeared. Quinn was tempted to use it on one of the leaders to test it out but had decided against it. The only downside was, it looked as if Quinn could no longer summon his vampire knights.

Still, being able to summon any of the leaders, and all of them at once if he wished, was definitely an upgrade in his eyes. The only thing was, he thought it would be best to warn them what they could suddenly get involved in if he was to do such a thing.

'So...this is it, this is what it feels like to be king.' Quinn said.

Getting up from the seat, Quinn left the room and walked out to the stage. He could see the pooling area hadn't been rebuilt to what it was, some of the castles were damaged, and because of him, there wasn't even much of a Royal castle itself, but now, all of this was Quinn's to look after.

'I guess it's time to improve this place.'

[Title has been changed]

[Title: 'King of the Vampire settlement' Is now active]

'Let us make some upgrades around here.'

[Reputation shop opened]

.....

...

'Vincent, you said you wanted to come back, right? how do you feel about becoming the tenth leader again?'

## Chapter 1376: The settlement upgrade

When Quinn had first gotten the system, the first thought in his head was that it seemed to resemble the old games people used to play all the time when the earth was not in danger of being overrun by the Dalki. Unfortunately, using the system had never felt like a game to him, especially since it was his life on the line all the time and unlike those games there was no do over.

However, today he would have to change his mind about the game aspect of it all.

Looking at the Reputation shop Quinn could see a number of things he could do, so he immediately started to get to work. His finger was moving non stop placing things around the map without even looking at the cost of what he purchased. As long as the name of that thing sounded useful he clicked on it, placing it down.

However, that wasn't the end of it. Most of the things he purchased could be further upgraded, leading him to spend even more of his Reputation points.

As Quinn continued to splurge, buildings, towers, and gargoyles were being built on the fly all over the settlement. The castle of every family seemed to be rumbling as more and more structures appeared out of nowhere as if they were magic.

"What is going on?!" One vampire shouted in confusion and fear, as they saw a tower being formed from the ground in front of their family area.

"Look over there as well!" Another one yelled, pointing towards a weird cannon that appeared in the middle of the wall. The vampires soon realised that the structures that they could see had a striking resemblance to the ones they had seen by the tenth family area.

"It must be the King! He has blessed us with another miracle!!!"

The noise from the pooling vampires and news about what was going on had soon spread to the vampire leaders. It hadn't been long since they had left Quinn on his own, and it would be hard for them to miss what exactly was going on outside. As they stared outside their castle, they could see their castle walls being strengthened in front of their very eyes and other changes taking place.

'Is this what he meant...when he was talking about making sure that the vampires weren't to get scared?' Sunny thought.

Eventually, the buildings and structures that had started constructing themselves out of nowhere had come to a halt. However, the Vampire settlement looked like a completely different place compared to just a few minutes ago.

The pooling area houses that had been destroyed during Arthur's attack had been rebuilt and seemingly even improved. The black jagged surface that had been used

to build the previous iteration of houses before was no more, and there was an improvement on the pavement and more.

Seeing this was simply frightening for many of the leaders. They had known Quinn to be powerful, but this ability was unbelievable, especially at this scope. Meanwhile, the one responsible for it all had the biggest smile on his face, because he too couldn't believe his eyes.

In mere minutes, it was as if he had upgraded the settlement into a city.

'This whole thing...it really feels like a game, but the structures there are real!'

After seeing how much he had done, Quinn was worried that he might have gone a bit crazy spending all of his Reputation points. However, now that he checked them out, he was left speechless for a completely different reason.

'What's going on? Why haven't they gone down?' Looking at it a little longer he soon could see that the number had not only not decreased but it had actually increased and was still going up at this very moment.

'Is this some type of bug?'

Trying to figure out what was going on, Quinn could soon hear noise from the vampires in the settlement. Closing his eyes he tried to focus carefully on what they were saying. That's when he understood what had happened.

"It has to be the new King! The tenth leader did the same to his own castle and now that he is King, he is improving the whole settlement!"

"I told you he was the best choice for King! Look, with these towers and gargoyles, we will be safe from any attack!"

"But how? Didn't the tenth leader claim that he was born a human? How does he have the tenth family's power if he has the shadow power?"

This was a question that many vampires wanted an answer to, but as long as it benefited them then why did they need to care so much. Quinn was on their side, and he was holding up his side of the deal to protect them.

Turning around looking behind him, now knowing that he hadn't spent all of his points there was one more thing he was looking to do.

On the map itself, there was also the option to use points to repair structures, and although the King'sl Castle wasn't a structure that had come from the system. Quinn was able to use around 50,000 reputation points for its repair.

"This should keep those leaders happy as well." Quinn thought.

Selecting the repair option, the castle started to rebuild itself from the ground up. It looked as if someone had put a video in reverse. Then, the large hole he had made started to be filled with a strange glowing energy. Once the glow disappeared it was fully repaired.

'This has to be due to your ability mixing with the system, right? Otherwise how is this possible?' Quinn asked.

'I'm thinking the same thing.' Vincent replied.

It was strange to say, but Quinn didn't feel tired at all. Nevertheless, he decided to rest in the tenth castle. He could see vampires already leaving the inner castle area to have a look at the improvements in the pooling area.

Rather than call the vampire soldiers to help him, Quinn opted to use his Shadow travel. He was afraid that if he encountered any of the pooling vampires, they would practically hop on him and never let him go.

Back at the castle, Quinn had received an update from Leo that the Dragon was all okay. He then decided to call in Xander and Timmy to have them share as much information about the vampires as they knew.

In the end, their information was severely limited due to their low position. If he wanted to know about everything the settlement had to offer, then there seemed to be no way around contacting Muka.

A little while later, and each of the leaders had decided to make an announcement to their own people about Quinn having accepted the role as being their official King. They could have guessed already, but the confirmation put a smile on their faces, making some of the leaders jealous.

The next day, Quinn requested for Muka to appear before him to give him the answers and questions he wanted. He seemed to be the most open compared to the other leaders. Always willing to talk and more than anything accepted the changes that were needed in the settlement.

At the moment, the two of them were having a type of tour, as Muka showed the map's tunnels and explained details and history about the vampires. A lot of it was a bore through.

"The leaders will inform the people about what you have decided. It's not wise to hastily tell the public that they will be going into another war after what happened, but right now you have a lot of momentum on your side." Muka explained. "At the same time we will not wait too long, and I believe you won't want to wait long either."

Quinn had been getting frequent updates about the situation back with the humans. At the moment the fighting had come to a bit of a standstill, neither side seemingly

willing to do a full push just yet. One side had already done that, the Dalki were clearly waiting for something, maybe for news from Arthur, but Quinn could use this time to get everything they needed.

Using the vampires would surely be a surprise, and when Quinn arrived with them, he wanted to give the Dalki a big push, so they would be unprepared for whatever was going to happen.

Muka had taken Quinn to the storage facility, showing them crystal weapons and more .He had then shown the King footage of the subclass that had been captured for use. They had a camera operating on each of the rooms.

The forces were even larger than Quinn had imagined, which was good news for a change, and afterwards he was finally being taken to the research lab. The building was located in the eighth family area. They had a big facility, yet ever since the family had been disbanded they were able to make it even bigger than before using the empty space.

Walking through its large halls, there was technology shown to Quinn that he had never seen before. He didn't understand much of it, to him it just looked like cool gadgets, similar to Logan's many rooms, but there was one person who was with him who was over the moon to see such things and wouldn't shut up about it....Vincent.

"I wanted to ask, have you thought about the position of the Royal Knights and the tenth leader yet?" Muka asked. "Before we move out, it would be best to fill in those positions. Although you are a strong King, it is almost impossible to micromanage so many people. A leader needs to know how to delegate."

"Yes... but there is something I still haven't seen yet." Quinn replied.

After looking around the research room, finally they had gone down to the basement floor. Here the doors had been sealed more so than the others. Walking through one set of doors, they shut behind, and now the two of them were in some type of metallic tube with another set of doors in front of them.

It reminded Quinn of the old spaceship designs.

"I'm sorry but this is necessary, if you wish to go here." Muka apologised.

Quinn nodded, he was sure he wanted to go in here, in fact he was really only interested in three things. The vampire's supplies, the dangerous subclasses and this. As soon as the second set of doors slid open, the waft of smell immediately hit his nose. He could smell it, the smell was so sweet that even he thought he was being affected by it slightly...it was the smell of blood.

"This is where we get our human blood from, the place you wished to see." Muka said, bowing down nervously, for what Quinn might do about what he would find.

## Chapter 1377: An upgrade

As the two walked in, a similar sight to what Quinn had seen before was in view. There were a number of large glass containers identical to those in the lab where the Dalki were created. Only they weren't creating Dalki here; they were creating humans. Floating in the glass tube were lifeless bodies. Multiple tubes were inserted into different parts, drawing blood out and sending it to another place.

This was the lab where they created their blood substitute, and there was a reason why Quinn wanted to see this place.

'The Dalki actually show variation from each other. I guess Jim was trying to create a new species or new life using the beast's energy, but these clones are all exactly the same.' Quinn thought.

Seeing that Quinn's instant reaction wasn't one of anger, Muka still decided that it would be best for him to explain a few details.

"It's not as inhuman as it looks," Muka explained, worried that Quinn's former race might influence his choice. "Although we have the ability to create human clones that are fully functional and walking, they wouldn't last long, and it would be against some of the vampire's consciousness if that was the case."

"Here, we simply clone their bodies, the bones, the insides, create the marrow, and so on. We create everything necessary for the creation of blood. Essentially we only create the parts that we need. There is no brain, so the person isn't conscious, nor do they experience any pain. The brain is an important part of keeping the body functioning, so they have to be kept in the glass tubes as a replacement. If they left the tubes, they wouldn't last long outside."

Looking at the floating bodies that were said to be lifeless, Quinn felt sorry. Each one of them had the same face of the same man. This man had gone on to become the Vampires' food source, but it was because of what they were doing down here that they no longer had any need to rely on feasting on humans.

'You know why I wanted to come down here, although I was somewhat interested in what they were doing, there is another reason.' Quinn asked, speaking in his head.

Of course, Vincent knew, and it was all about the question Quinn had asked before.

'Honestly, as I told you, I had parted ways with the vampire world and accepted my death. I waited for death, but I feel partial blame for all of this. The book was my fault. Even if Richard was the mastermind behind it, I took part in it.'

'Jim...I also feel like I could have stopped him. Which is why, if it is to help you, I do not mind taking the role of the tenth leader again, and with you as King now, there shouldn't be many problems with you doing that.'

The answer was what Quinn was hoping for, it had been a long time, but it looked like he would finally see the person who had helped him from the beginning right in front of his eyes.

'It looks like they can create a body for you? You wouldn't mind being human, would you?' Quinn joked. Still thinking about the answer Vincent had given him earlier.

'I don't think being human would be beneficial to you.' Vincent replied. 'If they are able to clone a human and have the same type of process with the Dalki, then surely they would be able to clone vampires as well. Logan now has the knowledge left behind by Richard, and he and Jim could create vampires. With him and me working side by side, I'm sure we can create something, maybe even a clone that can last a bit longer.'

According to Richard, a clone's lifespan was short, and it didn't seem like they had the ability to learn abilities. However, Quinn always thought that they could just create another clone if need be for Vincent to go in.

Although they were technically getting rid of a life, since they needed a fully functional clone, this was just a copy of Vincent's own life which felt less bad in a way, especially if the clone was happy to give his life for the real one in the first place.

The other worry they had was if removing Vincent from the system would affect the system in some way. Currently, he had powers beyond the system's understanding. When using the blood control or the shadow, he no longer used the system.

Now, the system was just showing him a bunch of numbers to indicate how powerful he had gotten. Worst case, they would just use Shiro's ability to try and place Vincent back in the system.

'I also don't think it will be a problem anyway, ever since using the Demon tier amulet. The system and Vincent are less linked than I Originally thought.'

"Do the bodies deteriorate?" Quinn asked.

"Yes," Muka replied. "We keep them alive as long as possible, but cloning for some reason causes the cells to produce more rapidly than a regular person. I'll be honest with you, Quinn, although these clones can last a few years, we decided to end their life quicker than that."

"I think you might already know, but we have other uses for a human body other than just their blood. Since we can create more, and we don't see this as doing harm, we use their body parts to feed some of the subclasses."

That certainly explained the bodies Quinn had seen when he arrived at Richard's suspected lab. He remembered seeing limb after limb and countless dead bodies. Either Eno was doing the same thing, or it was easy for him to take bodies from the lab.

The two continued looking around, and it really did remind Quinn of the Dalki lab. Once again, Vincent was more interested in the technology used. This was originally his job. To find a blood substitute, but he had never succeeded.

So he was interested in knowing how they had managed to succeed. Which was why Quinn started to follow the tubes coming out from the containers. They were not only draining blood, but energy was being supplied from somewhere and something.

Following along it eventually led them to the back of the lab. The tubes were all leading to a single source of energy that was kept more secure. There was a glass wall that was placed in between the room they were in and the item. So one couldn't just walk over and disturb or grab what was in front of them.

A podium could be seen, and on the very top, there was a single crystal, but it was one like they had never seen before.

'What...is that?' Quinn thought.

"That is what allowed us to create all of these, the source of their energy," Muka said, not having heard Quinn's thoughts but thinking he could guess what he was thinking.

'I think Logan briefly mentioned a different type of Crystal, but I left in a hurry to come here, so I didn't have time to speak to him about it. Is this the crystal he was on about?'

Looking through the crystal, it looked like he was looking at a small universe inside of it. The energy was drawing him in, and it was constantly shifting. The insides were moving, and Quinn wanted to reach out and touch it.

"If you remove the crystal, then unfortunately, all of these clones in here would be the last. We would have no way to create more." Muka said.

Although Quinn was sure if he ordered for them to give the crystal, they might comply, he wasn't going to do anything as drastic as that, but his interest had reached a peak, so Quinn did the one thing he could do without touching it.

[Inspect]

[Nest crystal]

'It is the crystal that Logan talked about, the nest crystal. The crystal beasts obtain their power from.'

There was no other information from the nest crystal. Still, it did trigger something in Quinn's system after using his inspect skill on it.

[Optional quest received]

[You are now able to consume the Nest crystal in order to upgrade the system!]

'Upgrade, you can be upgraded? Vincent, what is this?'

## Chapter 1378: A Proposal

Once again, Muka was left staring at his King as he just looked into space. Being around Quinn for a while now he noticed that he did this quite often and was wondering what on earth he was doing.

Right now, it didn't seem like he was looking at the crystal but was looking at something else entirely.

'Maybe this is the secret to his great strength? I should just observe.' Muka decided.

Right now, Quinn was looking for some type of answer from his system, to try to figure out what exactly this upgrade would be. The last time this happened, Vincent had been introduced to him so he thought maybe Vincent would know something about it. As usual, the system didn't actually expand on anything, so his only hope was his ancestor.

'I'm sorry Quinn, but I don't know much either. I hate that I can't give you answers.' Vincent replied with a sigh. 'The system has evolved way beyond my comprehension. Still, I think it's a good thing. This is the first Quest it has given you ever since you received Eno's gift.'

'I can only guess that this will help you become something beyond that of a vampire lord, or perhaps the system will allow you to get even stronger than what Richard Eno had intended. Maybe you're not at your limit after all.'

There was only one way to find out, and that was to consume the crystal as the Quest demanded. The name itself didn't make it sound like there could be any downsides, but the Vampire Lord did remember the horrible feeling he had gone through when absorbing the energy from the fourteenth castle.

'I can't use this Nest crystal, at least not until I find a replacement for them.'

"Do you have any more of these Nest Crystals?" Quinn asked.

"Unfortunately not. Finding this one alone was pure coincidence, and there wasn't really much need for a replacement. As you might know, our exploration these days has dwindled down. If you wish, we could gather a team to explore the beast planets. This way we can deal with two of your tasks. One to look for another nest crystal, and two, to gather crystals for the human forces."

It certainly was a good idea, and doing something like this also wouldn't alarm the vampires. If Quinn just stated he needed to gather crystals.

"Great, please select a family that is best suited for this role... Hang on. Actually, relay my wish of wanting to explore the beast planets in hopes of finding such a crystal to all of the families apart from yours. I wish to see which one is more keen for the job." Quinn ordered. "I'll be using this lab a lot more in the foreseeable

future and will also bring some members of the Cursed faction over. Don't worry I won't be doing anything to disrupt what you currently have going on."

Muka bowed, understanding that to be his cue to leave. He gave Quinn the passcodes to doors and was on his way to talk to the others. Overall, things had gone relatively well. He especially appreciated the new King merely stating his request, while allowing the council to decide things between themselves.

'Why did you make that request?' Vincent asked.

'About letting them choose a family?' Quinn clarified. 'Well, I thought it would be best to find out which of the leaders are keen to impress me at the moment. The pooling and castle vampires may accept me as their King but the ones that hold the real power in this settlement are still the leaders. They have no choice but to accept me, so I just want a clear image of who might choose to turn on me.'

'After all, for all we know Laxmus might already be in the midst of creating his own vampire settlement. If they really hated being under my rule that much, they would have the chance to defect over to him. There's also the problem with all the other Originals that are still underground. Who knows what their agenda is.'

'You're learning Quinn.' Vincent said, putting a smile on the other's face.

'Now there is something else I need to do.' Quinn stated and soon his body turned into nothing but shadows. The next place he appeared from was in front of the Demon tier beast, the Dragon. Linda and Leo were currently present acting as guards, yet now the King finally had time to sort out this problem.

"Has there been any trouble?" Quinn asked.

Getting up from the ground Leo walked over towards him.

"No, there hasn't been anything. So much so that I even decided to scout the mountain area nearby. Not too far away from here was where me and Erin first discovered the Dalki. I assume they were looking for this place, but Arthur must have already known about it."

"It makes me wonder whether they know about it or not."

And that was exactly the reason why Quinn needed to solve this problem. The Dragon here had always been in a strange state. Looking at it, it reminded Quinn of the bodies that he had just seen not too long ago. It was as if it was alive but was lacking a consciousness.

"I hope this works." Quinn thought, lifting up his arm.

The next second, a large shadow was cast over the dragon, and could be seen being pulled into it. It disappeared and was successfully placed in the Shadow space.

"What if you need the shadow for your fight?" Linda asked. She knew a bit more about the Shadow ever since learning how to use the ability as well.

Hearing this question, Quinn put a smile on his face.

"It's okay, it didn't take that many MC points."

What he said was true because to contain the whole Dragon, it had taken around 2,000 of Quinn's MC points. It was just a small drop compared to what he had at the moment. The problem would have been, whether or not he would be able to contain the Dragon.

If it had been the other half they had seen on Blade Island, he was sure it would have taken a lot of his MC points to contain it from breaking out, but this one remained as lethargic in the Shadow space as it had done outside.

'I wonder if anyone knows more information about the Dragon. Some of the leaders had fought against it to bring it in. So they must have had a way. If it comes down to it, maybe there is a need to wake up some of the Originals and rely on their strength... If we can trust them that is.'

A little while later, and in the tenth castle, two people could be seen appearing through the teleporter that stayed in the throne room. There was no reason to move it to the royal castle, and ever since it had been rebuilt it was empty. Muka had informed him they were waiting for him to select the royal guard and Royal knights for them.

As for the two people that entered, one was shorter than the other, and the other male wasn't too much taller. Surprisingly, the taller one was the older of the two. These two were Logan and Shiro.

"I can't believe it, I'm in a castle looking at everything here!" Shiro gasped in shock, twisting and turning his head. "This is crazy, like I know Quinn is a vampire but for there to be an entire world of vampires and stuff."

"I see you two made it over safely. I'm glad to see that you seem well and are unhurt." Linda greeted the two of them. She had returned along with Leo since there was no longer any need for them to look after the Dragon.

When hearing these words from Linda though, the happy expression that Shiro had borne, disappeared.

"Come on, I'll give you a little tour of this place." Linda offered as the atmosphere had turned awkward. "And then we'll go ahead and meet Quinn."

Shiro's excitement soon returned as everything was a new experience for him. The castle had a design that looked like things he had only seen in history books, then at

the same time there were new technologies that he had never seen before. It was a strange mixture to say the least.

Meanwhile, Logan was excited to get to work, because Quinn had already informed him of why the two of them had been called beforehand, and he had also brought along his little gift he had received from Eno for completing the trial, the Nest Crystal.

After the tour was over, Linda escorted the two of them to a special lab, and here they could see Quinn waiting for the two of them.

'So, how long do you think you're going to need?' Quinn asked.

"I already have the knowledge to do everything up here. I can get started straight away, are there any special requirements that you might have?" Logan replied with a confident grin.

Thinking about it, there was a proposal that Quinn had been thinking about.

"Yeah, see if you can create a permanent clone, and...what about making a clone of me?"

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1379: A Collection

After specifying his request all Quinn could see was a big smile on Logan's face. After acquiring a few samples of the Vampire Lord's blood, along with a few other things, Logan started to go to work.

He claimed that the whole process could take a while. Just making some clones would be easy enough, but actually improving one to make it 'complete' was a bigger task. The scientist would first have to run some tests on the Nest Crystal.

He was after all, attempting to do something that not even Richard had done, but would use the information to help him.

That was when Quinn found out that Logan had his own Nest Crystal, now there were two. One that made the human clones for human blood and the one Logan had. However, he stated that it was needed to create a better clone.

"It looks like you have confidence then, but I was actually wondering if we should use the Nest Crystal to create multiple clones? That's how Richard and Jim were able to create their army, right?" Quinn asked.

While Logan was typing information away and looking at certain numbers he was replying to Quinn, but Shiro was left bored not really doing anything.

"Humans have never lacked in numbers. There's far more of us than the Dalki, and with the Vampires' help we will have even more. Unfortunately, our numbers matter little to them. Quinn, the problem is that the Dalki are getting stronger far faster than us.

"You heard Sam's report, right? When looking at Jim and Richard's clones they were nowhere near the strength of the original, but I plan to change that. What we need more than anything is power."

Quinn wanted to ask more, but he stopped himself from talking about the incidents that happened on Earth while he was away.

'I guess there will just have to be an order to these things. First create a body for you, then if we find another Nest Crystal on one of those beast planets, upgrade the system and finally use the last one to create more clones. I understand what Logan is saying, but if we can even stop one more person from having to die, then it's worth it in my eyes.' Quinn thought.

Since Logan said it would take him a long time, possibly a few days even, Quinn decided that there were other things he could attend to. Before leaving though, he had taken Shiro with him, and told Linda to escort him around the settlement, to silently look after him.

Then there was a certain place that Quinn wanted to visit. He had found out that a certain family had claimed a weapon that he didn't feel like belonged to them.

Soon, Quinn found himself in front of the 1st family castle. As he walked through the doors, the vampires all bowed as there was no need for the King to make an appointment. The vampires were actually happy to see him.

Another perk about being the Vampire King was nobody would ever dare to jump on Quinn, even though some of them clearly wanted to. Instead, they just stayed there, respectively bowing until he passed them.

Eventually, Quinn made it to the person he was looking for, a young leader who was in his room being served by four vampire servants, all female. Each one was dressed skimpily, their clothes leaving little to the imagination, and they were in the midst of putting on clothes on a young man.

"Can you not even dress yourself?" Quinn announced his presence with a light chuckle.

The female vampires straight away bowed down to the King, stopping what they were doing, leaving Nicu with a half unbuttoned shirt revealing the top half of his chest. Eventually, Nicu bowed down as well, hiding his disgruntled look.

"Your Majesty, there was no need for you to come here, if you had only called I would have arrived in a heartbeat." Nicu claimed.

"Oh, it's no bother, really. I don't plan to stay long. I merely came because it came to my ears that the first family has laid claim not only to Bryce's cain sword, but also Arthur's Blood Sword. While I won't deny you your heritage, Arthur was a friend of mine, and as the only remaining Punisher, I would just like what is rightfully mine." Quinn saw no need to talk around the topic. He wasn't requesting the sword back, he was telling Nicu to return what belonged to him.

"But Your Majesty!" Nicu protested nervously, worried that he might be hit again. Their last meeting had left some fear in his heart for this outlier. "The first family has suffered immensely during that last attack. A lot of the leaders and families no longer have power that they did before."

"I have never seen Your Majesty use a sword. Wouldn't you agree that such a fine sword deserves to be used?"

"On that I fully agree." Quinn nodded, surprising the young leader. "However, it will be up to me as for who I deem to be that worthy someone. Now tell me where it is, or do you wish to make your King look for it himself?"

Nicu couldn't hold back his anger again. He had been trained by his father to follow the vampires' traditions, all of the families had heirs who had been trained from

birth, and this outsider who knew nothing about vampires had suddenly become King didn't even know he was walking lightly over them all.

If he was to get hit again, then so be it.

"You are just abusing your power! Didn't you claim you wanted to be different from the other Kings?!" Nicu shouted at him in frustration. Quinn paused for a second, while the female vampires by Nicu's carefully stepped away from him, worried about what might happen next.

"Of all the surviving families, your's is the one who has the least right to complain about how I do things." Quinn stared down at him with immense anger. "In case you've forgotten, it was due to YOUR father that Arthur attacked the settlement.

"Just as it was under YOUR father that the lives of innocent vampires had been sacrificed and that includes my family as well as your own. Imagine, if you were taken, told to sacrifice your life. Just because you were born his son, it never happened to you, you have lived your life with no fear.

"Imagine if Bryce was still King and one of the other leaders had done the same things he did. Now look me in the eyes and tell me whether you believe YOUR father would allow such a family to exist for even a day after discovering such a heinous crime! We both know, he would have claimed that all the vampires in the family were at fault for not stopping their leader.

"Yet I haven't punished any of you."

Quinn then moved his hand outward and spread his fingers. Nicu was waiting for something to happen, and a short while later they could hear noise. Suddenly something crashed through the floor and what appeared in his hands was the large greatsword.

"Good thing there was still a bit of blood on the sword. Seems like I didn't really need your help, after all." Quinn stated, turning away, but stopped just when half of him had disappeared into a shadow.

"Your sister was a good person, Nicu. She followed the rules, and cared about her family no matter what. I hope that in the future you can become more like Kazz rather than Bryce. Instead of just caring about the first family, why not try to see all the leaders as part of your family?"

With that Quinn left, and placed the Blood sword in his dimensional space.

Still, Quinn did wonder what would be the best thing to do with the sword. Despite his young age, he did have a point. He wasn't a swordsman, but the Blood sword and its powers went well with the Blood armour he wore.

'It's as if fate is trying to coerce me into learning proper swordsmanship with all the swords I keep collecting.' Quinn thought with amusement.

He then soon received a call from Logan. It hadn't been long, only a few hours, so he was worried something had gone wrong. However, arriving at the lab, he could see that there was good news awaiting him.

Floating in one of the glass tubes, was a person that looked identical to himself.

"Maybe we should give him a different hairstyle or another hair colour so we can differentiate between the two of us? I've always wondered what I would look like with cyan or green hair."

On a closer look he noticed a difference. There was a small marking around the clone's chest, which stuck out slightly. Quinn was sure that underneath was where the Nest Crystal had been placed.

'Amazing, Logan has managed to use the Nest Crystal itself to create a perfect clone. With its unlimited energy it means the clone can live for almost forever!' Vincent explained excitedly.

'Well, I hope you'll like it. After all, it's going to be your body from now on. Let's call Shiro over and do this!'

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1380: Double Quinn

While waiting for Shiro to arrive, Quinn was busy inspecting his other self floating inside the glass container. It was a different experience than looking into a mirror, where one couldn't really imagine how they looked through other eyes, he was actually seeing another version of himself.

'So this is how people see me huh?' Quinn stared hard at certain details of his body, in particular he was admiring his face. He hadn't actually been looking in a mirror much and after each evolution his body changed significantly.

"Not to toot my own horn, but I guess I am quite handsome. Looks like you're in luck Vincent." Quinn said out loud. A couple of chuckles were heard from behind, and when Quinn turned he could see Linda, and Shiro there. He could feel his cheeks heating up by the second.

"Don't be shy Quinn. Honestly you're right, with your looks you can make anyone blush. If it wasn't for your position I'm sure you would have more than just those that were chasing after you already." Linda teased him.

Quinn didn't doubt her. The Vampire Lord had turned off his Charm ever since he had tested it out and the reporter Bonny had practically stolen his first kiss.

'My Charm is at a 100 now, I wonder what would happen if I opened it up again?' Quinn thought to himself. Perhaps he would test it one day, but not in front of people he knew like Linda, that would be a little too awkward.

"I see all the pieces are here now." Logan spoke up, stepping forward as it was time for them all to get to work. The body was removed from the glass container full of liquid and was placed out onto what looked like a medical table. Now that they could see it in the flesh, the light around its chest became more visible.

"Are you sure there isn't a consciousness already present inside this body?" Quinn asked to make sure.

"It was made from scratch and I can guarantee you that it's brain dead. I didn't want to put that weight on your shoulders." Logan answered immediately. The question that was on all of their minds though, was just who did Quinn want to use the body for.

There were three beds laid out. Logan had made sure to make this experience as comfortable as possible. They looked like soft hospital beds, and Quinn wondered where and when he had got them from, or if he had just made them himself,

Shiro was placed in the middle, while the clone and Quinn were on either side lying down.

"You said this clone can live forever, but unlike Eno's and Jim's it can also learn abilities, right? What else do we know about it?" Quinn questioned, as he got into position.

"I'm not sure. My knowledge about this subject stems from Eno's research and he had only been able to theorise about this process. By my predictions it should be identical to you, almost like another Peter. However, as for abilities, we will have to see, but I wouldn't be too hopeful. I haven't managed to figure that part out and neither have the others." Logan replied, and headed towards Shiro. "When you're ready, hold Quinn's hand and the other one."

For some reason, Shiro felt more nervous than the previous times. He had already done this a few times now, so it should be a walk in the park, but perhaps it was due to who he was helping out this time. He didn't want to let Quinn down.

'Not again, not after I failed to bring Oscar back... I will make it work this time!' He hyped himself up.

Logan, and Linda stood by the computer, which was checking their vitals, brain activity and more. They didn't know what went on when Shiro used his ability, and honestly, Linda had no clue what all the symbols and signs on the screen meant.

After a few minutes though, one of the screens that had shown nothing was finally active.

"It looks like it was a success. I guess we finally get to meet the person who took over Quinn's body whenever he used that Demon tier Amulet, and if my guess is right, it's the one that created his system."

"System?" Linda repeated overhearing Logan.

Logan was one of the few people that actually knew Quinn had a system due to his own ability and his family's involvement in helping create it in the first place.

Slowly all three of them got up from the bed, Shiro touching his head, feeling a bit weak because he had used his ability quite a bit. He smiled though looking over at the others who had gotten up as well.

The clone was touching his body all over, from head to toe moving around.

"You... you did it! I'm in my own body. Well...A body. I have control again." Vincent announced.

Using the clone's body wasn't too hard for Vincent. He had already gotten used to moving around in Quinn's body when the two of them had gone through training together. This one didn't feel too different compared to it.

"I can finally, actually see you." Quinn said, but saying those words to himself was a little strange.

Still he pushed through. "Thank you Vincent, thank you for all the help you have given me. There were so many times when I was lost and you put me on the right path.

"Honestly, I can't even imagine some of the decisions I would have made without you or what would've happened if I didn't have you. This was one of the main reasons why I wanted you out of that system, so I could actually see you in person."

The others didn't quite understand what was happening, but thought it was best to let them have their intimate moment with each other. That was when they could see the clone Quinn opening up his arms.

"Come here, I've been waiting to do this for a while. Watching you grow up was like looking after another son!" Vincent stated. Although it was embarrassing, how could he turn down an offer like that from Vincent? Quinn went in for the hug.

"It's like seeing two hot twins hugging. This is really weird and somehow feels wrong. Sorry, I just had to get that out." Linda commented, making the others break into laughter.

A little while after they caught up, some clothes and armour had been given to Vincent from Quinn's dimensional space. He had prepared some things, but still kept the Blood set and the Blue Fang set for himself.

After that, everyone decided to head outside, into the inner castle area. The place was empty, since there were no longer any family members.

It was a wasted space for now, making Quinn think that maybe there was a better use for it later.

Right now though, he wanted to test Vincent's abilities and what it was able to do. They began with an easy strength test by holding a simple arm wrestling match. Not holding back they both used all their strength, though Quinn abstained from using his Qi or anything else to support him, making the two of them dead even.

There were then a few light spars between the two, and this was where the difference in their fighting styles showed, as Vincent fought in a completely different way to Quinn. Lastly, there was the test of Blood powers. Vincent was able to use his Blood powers, but they were not on the same level as Quinn.

"Well the good news is my system is intact. Everything is working fine, there seems to be no changes." Quinn shared.

"For me, your body is actually better than mine, but your Blood powers are lacking compared to what I had, I guess most of what you have now is due to the Absolute Blood Control." Vincent replied.

The last test they held was to check if Vincent could learn an ability or not, but this one was a hard one to do, and Vincent wanted to head back to the castle to try and take his time re-learning the Equivalent Exchange ability to see if he could.

However, based on how he was feeling at the moment, it was unlikely even with his new special body.

"I guess, unlike Peter who gets stronger based on you, I will not, so it's best for me to treat this body as my own. I should be able to improve its Blood control to a good standard soon." Vincent explained.

"That's good, which means you will be a match for the other leaders as well. Now we just need to somehow explain this to them, without having them freak out. Let's head back to the castle, and change what you look like, it's starting to creep even me out a little." Quinn half-joked.

The group had decided to do just that, and Logan took all his new knowledge with him. He would have preferred to test several more things with the Nest Crystal. It was a shame that something like this had to be done, but in the future perhaps he could.

When they arrived at the castle, Vincent was busy familiarizing himself with his very old home, at the same time Quinn had called a certain someone. He needed to speak to them about something since Vincent wasn't the only thing that he had to tell the leaders about.

"Yo, yo, yo!" Fex said, walking into the throne room with a hop in his step.

"You seem happy?" Quinn said.

"Why wouldn't I be, my Blood brother is the King, and I'm his friend. Like you literally don't understand how big this is!" Fex explained, coming over to him like he was about to throw his arm over his head like he usually would do but then stopped himself.

His vampire side was kicking in.

"Please, don't treat me any differently, I actually called you over because I wanted to ask you something. What do you think about becoming one of my Royal Knights?" Quinn asked.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1381: Much Change

Fex was at a loss for words. He literally had his mouth open wide and had no clue what to say as he looked at Quinn. He was trying to see some sign, to see if he was joking or not, but it didn't seem to be the case at all.

"Wait Quinn, I know you weren't a vampire, so maybe you don't know, but not just anyone can become a Royal Knight!" Fex tried to explain. "The Royal Knights are selected from the leaders. The Kings' left and right-hand men. I'm not a leader, and I'm not even a knight. Don't you remember I was also banished from my own family!"

Quinn nodded along and placed his hand on Fex's shoulder. Hoping that it would calm him in some way.

"I do know, but that was under the old rule. Look, me becoming King, it wasn't exactly due to regular circumstances, and think of it this way. You were so loyal to me that you were even about to be executed, for my sake.

"I can't think of someone better than you. Perhaps the vampires could argue somewhat if I had chosen someone that I turned, but I won't back down from this. Unless you have a good reason to refuse, I intend to make you my Royal Knight."

It was something Fex never imagined. Becoming a Royal Knight was a top honour. It was even above becoming a leader of a family. If the King asked you to be his knight, they would have to leave their position and accept, and now knowing Quinn was serious, almost immediately, Fex got down on one knee.

"I, Fex Sanguinis, pledge my loyalty to King, Quinn Talen of the tenth family. I will do everything in my power until my last breath to help you!" Fex yelled at the top of his lungs, and a few seconds later, tears started to fall from his face.

Quinn didn't quite understand why Fex was acting like this. He thought he would be happy, or maybe even annoyed that he had 'made' him do such a thing. As for the new Royal Knight, the reason for his happiness was because his life had been changed at this moment.

There were times while Fex was in the tenth family that he thought he could never rise to a higher position, that maybe his family members would look down on him. He also didn't like how he had ruined his family's reputation, but this single gesture from Quinn would restore it all again.

As soon as Fex had accepted the role, Quinn saw an adjustment in his system. He saw that now he could also summon Fex using the Summon skill whenever he wished.

'That's quite handy to have. Maybe I should make someone from the Cursed faction my Royal Knight after all. The Summon skill can be used as a protection as well as a helpful tool for myself.' Quinn thought.

Another interesting thing Quinn noticed was that it didn't matter if the council had accepted Fex or not. It seemed like his system had already agreed. Which was a different matter for someone else.

"Actually, Quinn, I know it might not be my place to speak about this, but I wanted to suggest something...." Fex said.

Fex talked about the suggestion he wanted to make, and Quinn thought it was a good idea.

"That great, I'll call a meeting now, and we can meet in the new castle together. We can make that announcement now."

A gulping sound was heard, as Fex didn't realise that things would be moving so quickly. He should have realised that when Quinn said he was going to do things, he meant it.

The two of them began to walk around the castle, and he had already asked Timmy to contact the other leaders and tell them all to meet in the new council room. That it was an order from the King.

In the meantime, Fex wondered what they were still doing in the tenth castle and eventually found themselves heading to the lab in the castle. A place where Logan would usually be. When entering, Fex could see the back of someone he didn't quite recognise, and as soon as he turned around, his mouth was left wide open, and he was at a loss for words for the second time today.

"But... he's..you...you..." Fex continually looked back and forth at the two people, not entirely understanding what was going on. There was an identical copy of Quinn...almost. There was one change and it was the hairstyle.

While Quinn now had his shortened hair and spiked it up a little bit, Vincent had decided to put his fringe down and to the side.

"Is it a transformation ability?" Fex asked.

"Almost, that's the new tenth leader of the castle...I guess I should explain a few things to you while we are at the King's castle." Quinn said, patting him on the back.

While on the walk, Quinn explained that he had found Vincent, one of the old tenth leaders, conciseness deep within him. It was left with him through a book. There is

no point for Quinn to explain the part about the system, but he thought this was close enough to the truth in the first place.

The consciousness that was always with him was why Quinn had knowledge about the vampire world, even though he had never been there before.

When arriving at the new Royale castle, Fex was surprised to see that there had been some changes inside as well as outside. This was all due to Quinn. He not only had rebuilt it, but the system had also influenced it to suit more of his style. Modernising the hallways.

Although, it did make everything look a bit plain, boring and white. It wasn't to Fex's liking at all. Eventually, they had reached the council room. Upon entering, he had both Vincent, and Fex by his side, and all of the leaders were already present in the room.

The leaders stood up and bowed, but they couldn't help but stare at the person who was by his side, who resembled Quinn greatly.

"If you would like, I could do the honours of taking over the meeting," Vincent said. "I have been to many of these things in the past after all."

Quinn nodded because even though he had attended meetings like this before, it really wasn't something he was used to as a king.

"Alright, everyone here. Today our majesty has a few things that he would like to announce and discuss with you all. Listen to what he has to say." Vincent said and folded his arms, having completed what he wanted to say.

Seeing how informal he spoke to the leaders and their angry expressions, Quinn didn't think he had done a good job and might have worsened matters.

'I guess Vincent disliked this whole system nearly as much as I did.' Quinn thought sitting down, in his seat while the two continued to stand by his side.

"First, I would like to announce to you all that I have selected the new leader for the tenth family. His name is Vincent Eno."

Some of the leaders twitched slightly hearing that name, wondering why it sounded familiar, but the first name Vincent wasn't too uncommon, so they decided to ignore it.

"As you can see, I and Vincent look quite similar, and that's because we are. Right now, he is using a body that is identical to mine. This is also true in terms of strength as well. If any of you wish to test him, then feel free to do so.

"My reason for selecting Vincent is because he is a knowledgeable vampire from our family. I also don't plan to hide anything from you all. He is the ex-leader, who at one point and time, escaped from this settlement.

"Why am I telling you this? Because I don't want any of you to complain when you find out later or have decided to do some digging. Anyway, Vincent has great knowledge and is someone who looks after people. Are there any objections?" Quinn asked.

The room was silent for a while until Sunny was the first to speak.

"Vincent Eno..it has been a while, hasn't it." She said, looking at him. "Your majesty, I don't know how much you know about the tenth people's past, but...there are many vampires that hated Vincent because he left them. He was the reason why your family-"

"And most of them are dead," Quinn replied. "Do you not remember, most of the tenth family inner castle members had been killed, including Edward, who was most loyal to Vincent in an attack. An attack by the second family. Now the tenth family is full of Pooling vampires who don't know better, and most of my own people from earth apart from a few students here and there."

Since Quinn had quickly shut down Sunny and reminded them how the tenth family had lost a lot, none of them said anything further.

"And finally, I have selected my new Royal knight."

The other leaders sat up more straight, and it looked like Muka was ready to move from his seat, but that's when they could all see that Quinn was pointing to someone by his side.

Smiling, Fex waved at them all, nervous.

"This is...this is too much," Jake said. Too many changes were happening in the settlement, and they were happening far too fast.

"Now, before you all jump the gun, there is a good reason why I have selected Fex as the Royal knight. Why don't you show them." Quinn said.

Nervously, Fex looked at them all. He closed his eyes, concentrating, trying to form it as he always did. A glow started to appear from his chest, and a large single black needle was revealed.

"What I have here is what is known as an Inner Blood weapon, and as the Royal knight, I wish to teach all vampires this skill!" Fex almost shouted.

## Chapter 1382: Making an entrance

At a glance, the leaders could tell that what had been summoned was indeed a Blood weapon. The question was, how was Fex able to do such a thing. They had seen him pull it out of nowhere, and only a small glow appeared from his chest.

The name Inner would suggest that it had come from inside him, but they all just wondered how. Still, one family already knew the answer to this, and they wondered what exactly the new king was planning to do.

"This here is something that will change the vampires' lives," Quinn said. "I know that creating blood weapons is banned. This was because you didn't wish for vampires to kill each other just for the pursuit of stronger weapons, but these blood weapons belong to you in the first place."

"Created from the crystal inside your body. I think it's essential that we teach all of the vampires this skill. It will be a boost in their strength. I don't know if you realised, but the Dalki blood acts similar to human blood no...it actually is even better than human blood. The inner blood weapons when fighting against them will be our biggest asset."

"This is one of the many reasons why I think Fex deserves to be a Royal Knight. The information was discovered by himself, with a pursuit of getting stronger. He had no time to inform all of you since things have been hectic since we arrived. He will be passing on knowledge that not only improves his family lives but all of the settlement. He is loyal to me and originally not from the tenth family."

Some of the leaders initially wanted to dispute Fex becoming his vampire knight, but this discovery was too significant for them all. They wondered if Fex didn't become a Royal knight if he would still share these skills. It was almost as if Quinn was stating, this is why you can't disagree with my decision. And with how close he was to the king, they sure couldn't force this information out of him.

There seemed to be no objections, and looking around, Fex could just see the biggest smile he had ever seen on his fathers face. Seeing that made it one of the happiest moments in Fex's life. A moment that he would treasure forever.

"Can we ask, what about the second Royal knight position, and have you decided what to do with the Royal guards?" Jim asked.

"Guards?" Quinn replied, knowing that this question would come up. "I believe there is no longer a need for Royal guards. As I stated with my condition before, we will be working to save the humans. I have the whole Cursed faction and trustworthy people there that will be willing to help me. The guards were originally vampires loyal to the king, so they will feel the same to me."

"If I was even to take members from other families, there is no telling if they would even be loyal to me. It makes no sense in my eyes."

For a lot of leaders, they didn't mind this, for they didn't want to weaken their own power. The guards were vampires meant to be at knight level, so they would be giving away their most potential candidates just for someone else to use.

After figuring out that Quinn could also use his summon skill on Royal guards, he wanted to make use of it with one of his own people. Perhaps someone like Layla, but at the end of the day, this relationship needed to be two ways.

Quinn had already been pushing and pushing the vampires. Perhaps he could get away with everything he wanted, but that would just leave a bad taste in the other leaders' mouths, more likely to cause a problem in the future.

"Muka," Quinn said. "Honestly, I feel like he has always cared about this settlement. Trying to figure out what was happening before anyone else did. Even if I was to do wrong, I know he would try and figure out a way to get rid of me."

"Honestly, I don't see that as a bad thing, as long as he accepts, of course."

In an instant, Muka stood up from his seat and bowed down.

"Yes, your majesty."

If one was to look at him, it would be hard to tell whether or not he was happy about this due to the fact he always had a helmet on his face, but they could tell he was delighted. However, at that moment, he did something that was more shocking.

Placing both hands on the top of his head, he lifted up his helmet, revealing his face. Which simply stunned the leaders.

"Oh...have I been wrong this whole time. I'm sorry." Quinn quickly apologised.

"You're a...a girl!" Fex shouted what everyone was thinking. "But I thought you were a guy. Everyone thought you were a guy. Why didn't you correct us when we call you he?"

Long flowing back hair could be seen going along the back of her armour, and a perfect, almost egg-shaped face could be seen. All the leaders were stunned by her beauty and couldn't stop staring, including Sunny.

Quickly noticing this, Muka placed the helmet back on her head.

"Ah, I feel much more comfortable with the helmet back on. I thought at least your majesty should know what the person who was selected as your knight knows what I look like."

"But I don't understand when we were younger. I was sure you had short hair and your face." Sunny continued to say.

"I was just a kid back then," Muka replied. "The short hair was just less troublesome to deal with, and you think my father would really let me play with boys around that age. It was why I frequently visited you."

Seeing how the focus of the meeting was starting to move, Muka herself thought it was best if she kept them all on track and clapped her hand once to silence everyone.

"I believe his majesty still has more to say."

At this moment, Vincent was getting a little tired of standing and decided to walk over and sit down in the tenth's seat. He didn't ask Quinn, nor did he greet the others on his way down.

"Please, what are you all looking at?" Vincent asked.

"Forgive us," David spoke. "But it will certainly take some getting used to. Having you returned after all these years. I hope that we could actually have a little catch-up."

The truth was that Vincent didn't have a bad relationship with many leaders before he left, which was why his sudden actions hurt them even more. Still, Vincent, on the other hand, did have.

They had sent countless vampires after him and his family members for years after leaving the settlement.

"Sure, but let's hear what the king has to say first." Vincent replied.

Thankfully, Quinn started to speak again.

"You all know that my goal is to help the humans in this war to join them. I wish for all of you to learn how to use your inner blood weapons before we go out. When I say this, I am referring to the leaders.

"I expect that since you are leaders, you should be talented and learn this before all the others. Once we have learnt this, then the rest of the leaders and I will make our first move."

"Only us?" Jake asked.

"Yes," Quinn replied. "At the moment, the human race is cautious against vampires. They had learnt of our existence, but at the time, there were Jim's clones

as well as the vampire spies that had been taken over. They have already been hurt by vampires.

"If we were to turn up, it would make things difficult, which is why I decided that we would need a special type of entrance. I plan to move the settlement, eventually into the beast planet solar system, but we need a safe planet to do that. I will be the first to move, and then I will bring you all with me later.

We need to show the whole world our power and just how much we can help in this war, and that's where we all will come in." Quinn smiled.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1383: The leaders growth (1)

Chapter 1383 - The Leaders Growth (Part 1)

It wasn't long after the meeting, that an announcement was made to the whole settlement about the King's two new Royal Knights. There was no big ceremony, Quinn had felt like they had had enough of those recently.

Every time they had a ceremony it seemed to delay things. He didn't understand what all the big huff was about, but according to Vincent, when vampires had lived for 1000s of years and had done nearly everything, an excuse for a celebration or something for them to do was welcomed.

He still disregarded this fact because now they did have something important to do, and thought it was just best to deliver the news to the leaders, allowing them to pass on the message. Although none of the vampires disagreed with Quinn's decision to make Muka a Royal knight, they considered him a good choice...her a good choice. They did though, wonder why someone like Fex had been chosen.

In the end, the people believed that it was due to him being close to the King. There were those vampires, who believed their leaders should have rightfully obtained the position and complained a little, yet the ones in the pooling area were okay with this. It seemed like the inner castle vampires were the ones kicking up the most fuss.

The Pooling vampires were still over the moon that Quinn had accepted to be their King in the first place, and they thought whoever he selected for the positions were the right choice. They just saw his actions through rose-colored glasses, where whatever he did couldn't be seen as wrong to them.

Then, there was a more tricky announcement, and it was for the tenth family. For this one, Quinn did decide to gather the people, because he wanted to gauge their initial reaction. Just like with the leaders, he didn't want to hide anything from his people as well.

They stopped on top of a balcony that led out from the castle, and all the vampires belonging to the tenth family were invited. They stood outside looking upward. As Quinn came out the usual roar and cheers were heard, and then when Vincent was revealed there were audible gasps in the crowd.

"Is it his twin? The tenth leader had a twin we never knew about?!"

"It must just be someone with an ability, right?"

In the end, Quinn decided it was best for him to speak first.

"As you all know, I have taken up the role to be your King, which means in my place someone else will have to take care of the tenth family. Leo will continue to

be your Knight, as for the other position, I will be leaving that decision to my successor, although it might be more accurate to call him my predecessor.

"Due to some special circumstances we have provided him with a new body." Quinn explained. "This here is Vincent Eno, the former leader of the tenth family."

There was whispering from the crowd, even if most of the vampires weren't around when Vincent had been their leader, they still knew the tenth family's history and he had been branded a traitor as a leader that had abandoned them at a crucial time, making the other families treat them like scum.

"Boo boo!"

There was great negativity from the crowd at the mention of that name, and Quinn was worried that any second the people might start to chuck things at them.

"Do you want me to say a few things to them?" Vincent asked. "They have a right to be upset."

"No!" Quinn quickly said, remembering what had happened when he had chosen to speak during that council meeting. It was one thing for the other leaders to dislike him, but for the ones he was supposed to lead would be a disaster.

"Everyone quite!" Quinn yelled, amplifying his voice with Qi. "I know of Vincent's past, in fact his blood runs through my veins, but you also don't know what he has been doing while he was away.

"It was because of Vincent that I was able to become who I am today! He guided me, taught me how to use my Blood powers and more. He was even the one that asked me to help you all! If it wasn't for him, then you wouldn't have me here today either!"

The vampires didn't know if these words were true, but what seemed to somewhat convince them, was the fact that Vincent now looked identical to Quinn. They couldn't imagine what he had been through that would make it so he had to be that way.

"In the end, if you are not happy with this decision, then I ask you to blame me who made this decision!" Quinn demanded.

It was then, a few seconds later that the crowd started to cheer, although it wasn't as joyous or as loud as they had done in the past, and seemed to be more done of obligations than true feelings.

"It looks like you have a lot to make up for, Vincent. Maybe try to be a good leader for them in this lifetime." Quinn advised. "And put some thought into picking your next knight."

There were a few choices that Quinn had in mind, such as Timmy, who had Edwards power and knowledge, Xander who had potential to grow stronger every time he saw him and lastly Ashley, Who worked closest under Paul. He was also a bright talent that was improving quicker than most.

Still, it just felt right to leave it up to Vincent, since they would technically be working under him, while Vincent would work for Quinn.

"I wasn't a bad leader in the first place." Vincent sighed. "They just forgot everything I did for them before I left. It only takes one bad thing to make others forget about all the good you have done beforehand..."

---

All of the leaders had been called to the 8th inner castle area. After thinking about how to use it for a while Quinn had come up with an idea. The King wanted to use the empty area as a training ground. The leaders having strong powers would cause destruction wherever they trained and that included their own castles.

In an area like this, that wouldn't matter though. The area had changed somewhat since the leaders had last come here, and they couldn't help but stare at the empty space and the large platforms that had been created.

"How were you able to do this so fast?" Sunny asked.

"The same way I improved the settlement. I can control everything as I wish, take down buildings, move things and create new structures, it's pretty amazing, right?" Quinn grinned, but soon blushed as he realised that it made it sound as if even he himself was amazed by his own skills. Of course he was, because he still couldn't believe what the system allowed him to do, but he understood that as a good King he was supposed to appear calm and dignified,

The leaders stood on top of one of the large platforms. By Quinn's side were Muka and Fex. He would have liked Vincent by his side as well, but he thought that would appear as clear favoritism, so his ancestor was currently standing amongst the other leaders.

"Alright, so from now on, we are going to use this area to train. You don't need to tell me how useless you all were against Laxmus. Use this chance to learn so that you can repay him yourself for everything he had done to the vampire settlement!" Quinn shouted.

It was strange for the leaders to hear these words. They were the strongest vampires in the settlement, and they had hardly ever heard themselves being called useless, but compared to Quinn they truly did feel that way.

"You guys need to get better or stronger at fighting, This whole time a lot of you have been lazy. So there will be two things we are focusing on. One Fex will show

you all how to summon your inner blood weapon, and two I want the leaders to fight against each other and improve, and I want you to especially go hard, against Vincent." Quinn grinned.

## Chapter 1384: The Leaders' growth (2)

### Chapter 1384 - The Leaders' Growth (Part 2)

The leaders looked pleased about Quinn's remark, and it was for more reasons than one. Vincent hadn't given them respect. Some of the leaders, such as Lee, Sunny, Jin and so on were leaders even when Vincent was around.

Yet, he treated them as if they were young upstarts, but for the other leaders they were excited for a different reason. There were those like Nicu that disliked Quinn, and this was a chance to pound the face of someone who looked exactly like him, but would be far weaker.

"It seems like you were all holding back, too afraid to reveal your full strength, worried about infighting. Well, now we all have a common enemy, so let's grow stronger together instead of worrying about individual families!" Quinn said.

The leaders agreed, and Fex was put to work immediately. He went into the explanation to them all about the Inner Blood weapon. It was a struggle since Fex wasn't the best person at explaining such things. After practising for a while, the leaders found little success. Lee had to pretend that he no didn't know about the Blood weapon, afraid he would get his son into some type of trouble.

There was also another Quinn was keeping an eye on, and that was Vincent. Although he could use blood abilities, Quinn was unsure if he would have an inner blood weapon as well. Since he wasn't exactly human.

After no results were given, and since they couldn't stay doing the same thing forever, it was time to go onto the sparring section.

The younger leaders were more willing to test their powers against each other. In contrast, the older ones were still reserved in showing off their strength, but what was surprising was Vincent. With his new body, he was easily able to overpower most of the vampires despite still lacking an actual ability.

Then there was Vincent.

"Remind me why I'm the only one going up against two at once?" Vincent asked.

"These two are new leaders, so you should be able to handle this, besides. My body isn't that weak!" Quinn shouted back.

The leaders were Nicu and Katori. Their abilities hadn't fully developed, and they had next to no experience fighting, but they had the potential to be just as strong as the leaders before them.

However, during the fight, that didn't seem to be the case, Vincent was able to dodge all the sword strikes with ease, and with a single hit to Nicu in the stomach,

it looked like he wouldn't be getting up for a long time. Then, with a kick to Katori's side, the results were quite similar.

It didn't matter if Vincent was weaker than them at blood control, when he would never be fighting them in a match with blood in the first place. With the beast armour and stats like Quinn, most leaders just couldn't do anything.

"Could you not go a bit easier on them? If it's too one-sided, then this isn't exactly training!" Quinn yelled.

"Wait, so they can go as hard as they want against me, but I can't do the same to them!" Vincent argued back.

It was because of this that Vincent's opponents needed to change. When going up against the more experienced battles, it seemed to be harder for Vicnet, mainly due to abilities. Since Vincent didn't have any himself, and they knew what his strengths were, they were being cautious.

This was exactly what Quinn wanted so they could all improve together.

"Watching all this fighting makes me want to spar a bit."

"Please don't your majesty," Muka replied. "We would have to all go up against you together if you were to get anything out of it."

Muka quickly realised the mistake that she had made. She might have just given him a horrible idea, so she decided it was best for her to continue giving her report.

"The family that accepted your request to send out a force was the fourth family, Jin Talon. His ability is strong in attacking, and he thought that it would be easy when using his power to try to help you find a Nest Crystal."

Quinn thought so as well. Exploding blood was one of the more difficult abilities Quinn had dealt with out of all of the leaders. There was another reason why Quinn was watching them all, and that was because he wanted to grant all the leaders with weapons.

They didn't have the habit of relying on beast or blood weapons, but it would increase their strength exponentially if they would start to use them. Right now, he was trying to figure out what type of weapon suited their respective abilities the most.

Carefully he watched their fighting styles, but there was something that he couldn't quite figure out that was bothering him a little.

"Some of the leaders' abilities I already know, but do you mind telling me all of their abilities? It would be in our best interest." Quinn asked.

"Of course. The first family possesses the ability to create an invisible force field around their body that can strike anything that comes within a certain range. The second family's ability is to reverse time on whatever they touch. The third family is able to produce Blood needles, stopping certain body parts from working properly. I know you have experienced this one yourself before.

"The fourth family has the ability to combust their own blood. The fifth family possesses the ability to communicate with any creature. The sixth family's ability is to set up invisible traps on the ground. The seventh family has the ability to harden an object, giving them the greatest defence.

"The eighth family used to have the ability of telepathy. Your own family possesses the ability of equivalent exchange.

"The eleventh family's ability is to get stronger with each hit. The twelfth family's ability is similar to the eleventh's, only that they gain extra speed for each successful hit. Finally, the thirteenth's family ability is string."

Out of all of those abilities, Quinn realised that one family, in particular, was missed out, and he was curious about something else as well.

"Bryce gave the order to disband the eighth family. I was wondering if there should still be vampires with that ability. Perhaps there should be a way to introduce them back. It is a good ability to have." Quinn wondered.

"There should still be plenty of vampires that have that ability, but they have been split between the other families. On top of that, the castle should have some information on that sadi ability, so if you wish to bring the eighth family back, then feel free to do so. I don't think the leaders would object to this." Muka replied.

"And one more thing. You seem to have skipped the ninth family. What is your ability?" Quinn asked.

"My ability is always active. I believe that it is what allows me to stand by your side even now. The ability of luck." Muka answered.

"Luck? That can't be real, can it? How would that even work?" When asking this, Quinn was expecting Vincent to answer, but once again, he realised that the voice in his head was no more.

"I believe you will see it come to play at some point and time," Muka answered, and for the first time, Quinn heard a cheerful giggle. He noticed that the large armour and helmet she wore was what had deepened her voice.

Over the next few days, all the leaders had successfully learned how to utilise their Blood weapons and after observing them the King had put in a request for their

weapons to be created. They weren't ready yet, but he feared that they could be running out of time.

The leaders would have probably learned it even faster if it wasn't for Fex's horrible explanation. Nonetheless, they had all succeeded in the end, and now they could pass on this knowledge to their own families as well.

'I guess it's time. Time to head back to the beast solar system, and give those damn Dalki a big surprise!' Quinn tensed his fists, and the veins on his head showed through as he thought about what they had done.

He was ready for some major payback!

## Chapter 1385: The upset leader

A large sphere spaceship the same size of a small planet was slowly drifting through the Beast solar system. Given its massive size it was unable to move as fast as regular ships yet it was the one place the Dalki called home, consisting of land mass taken from the many beast planets they had conquered.

One side of the gigantic spaceship held a base, stationing many of the Dalki motherships that were ready to leave at a moment's notice. Right now, one of those ships was in the middle of docking into the large spaceship.

The motherships that were sent out would usually stay on the conquered planets and become the Dalki fortresses that would be used to station their troops. This was done for a few reasons, the most important one being that the ships themselves contained the jammers that would prevent humanity from teleporting onto the planet.

Another reason was their durability. Until the recent outlier, they had never managed to breach or destroy them. This was mainly due to the force fields they were able to produce with the large amount of crystals on board.

For this reason, it was strange to see one return, especially since it didn't seem to have suffered any major damage. Nevertheless, the Dalki on the spaceship hurried to welcome those on the mothership.

The Dalki were a very hard working race. They had to be given that they used the knowledge that was passed on to them when making new things, yet they were a hard race to control. All of them had the inner desire to improve and get stronger, to prove that they had the right to be the leader and command their fellow Dalki.

As such, the only way to control this race, to get them to focus on certain tasks aside from fighting, was for there to be an absolute leader among them. Someone who was far stronger than the rest of them, making the rest submit to him.

And that exact person was the first to exit the mothership. The Dalki who had taken a liking to wearing human clothes, descended down the ramp. Unexpectedly, he had a deep frown on his face. The thought of all the Dalki looking at this, knew this to be a rare sight to behold.

'Something must have happened during the attack.'

'Something definitely happened, he seems furious!'

Those were the common thoughts shared among them. Now that Graham had gotten closer to them, they could make out that the clothes on him were burnt, full of holes, and there was even green blood that covered his entire body.

"Why is he so angry?" One of them whispered to the Dalki next to him. "I heard that he successfully took over the planet."

"I heard that those humans put up more of a resistance than we had expected. Looking at his clothing and the blood, it seems to be true. Do you think he had to do 'that'?" The other asked.

Before the first one had a chance to answer, one of the higher spiked Dalki behind the two of them, kicked the back of their legs, reminding them to be quiet. There had been one time he had seen Graham as irritable as now and it hadn't been a pretty sight.

The Dalki stood by the side creating a path for him. At the very end there was a small ship waiting for him. He would then take this small ship to head to the castle or the lab to do whatever he wished to do next.

In front of the small ship there was a one spiked Dalki who was nervously holding a neatly folded set of clothes for the Dalki leader, next to a clone that looked identical to Jim. As he walked through the path, Graham pulled at his damaged clothing, ripping them off his body, throwing them on the ground without saying a word.

The one spiked Dalki took that as his cue and sprinted towards Graham, getting on his knees as he presented the items to the other. Graham didn't even acknowledge him as he grabbed the clothes and proceeded to put on the plain white top shirt.

However, before he could even try on the black trousers, a problem manifested itself. The moment the Dalki put his arm through the sleeve, it ripped. The clothes appeared to be a couple sizes too small for him.

"What is this?" Graham asked in clear annoyance. "I personally go out to battle and all I expect in return is for a pair of decent clothes to be prepared upon my return. Is that really too much to ask for?"

Graham looked around, as if he was waiting for someone to answer, but no one dared to say anything. Graham was the calm Dalki leader that talked things through, some who had never seen him act like this before were just wondering what was going on.

"The clothes aren't the problem." The clone let out a derisive laughter. "They were made based on the latest measurements taken. You must have gotten a little fatter while away."

Everyone else gulped hard, none of them daring to state such a truth, yet the clone didn't look scared or frightened like the rest of them. Instead it was more like it didn't care about what was going to happen next, as it saw a fist heading towards its

head. It was a punch that completely tore the clone's head from his body, and the next second it smashed into the spaceship behind it, exploding on impact.

There was a dent left on the outer spaceship. Seeing this, the one spiked Dalki who had still been kneeling in front of Graham got scared and turned around, which was the worst decision it could have made, yet also his last. Before it could take more than one step, Graham opened its mouth wide, and the Dalki's whole head ended in his jaws.

The next second it clamped down, crushing the other's head. Green blood spewed out from his mouth as the other's lifeless body fell to the floor. Swallowing whatever bits it had left in its mouth, Graham seemed to be somewhat satisfied as he entered the small ship.

"He...he just killed a Dalki... for nothing?" One of them pointed out, "He didn't even challenge him to a fight, or say anything. I mean, it was normal for One Horn or Slicer to act like this but I have never seen Graham do something like that. Just what happened to disturb him this much?" One of them asked as they could see a ship floating in the air ready to set off.

"I'm not sure, we will just have to wait for the reports from his fight." The other replied, as they all headed back to work.

Left on his own, Graham was still reviewing his last fight, trying to understand when things had started to go wrong.

'Those girls, how could they do that? How was it possible for them to give me so much trouble?!' The Dalki leader clenched his fist. 'They even forced me to reveal my trump card, when I thought there would never be a need to! Well it's clear that means that I have to just get stronger.'

The ship eventually landed just outside the lab, where multiple Dalki awaited him outside, but the one giving the orders looked to be a three spike. When the ship landed Graham immediately got off and stood in front of the three spikes, still with a frown on his face, with fresh blood still sticking on his body.

"How is the creation process going?" Graham asked.

"It's going great, sir. We imported the information from Jim's lab as you have asked, and we have been able to narrow down which ones are more likely to produce bad results, so our output of higher spiked Dalki has increased exponentially." The Dalki reported, doing his best to ignore the other's outer appearance.

This was something that Logan had found out as well upon accessing information from Richard. Not all of the Dalki had been completely created from scratch. Instead, later generations had been fused with different Human DNA from different

people, and in turn when mixing with the Demon tier beast this would produce different results depending who the human was.

However, when raiding Jim's lab, they had found some mutant DNA strands that didn't seem to be quite human nor vampire. They didn't know what they were, yet their success rate ended up being incredibly low.

It had been pure luck that the first experiment with one had succeeded, as the subsequent ones had demonstrated how hard it was to create one. Nevertheless, the reason why they had tried again and again was that that particular strain had produced the highest spiked Dalki compared to any of the others.

Through trial and error they also found other types of special human DNA, information gathered from ancient fossils, that seemed to be mixed with beasts that would produce good results as well.

"That's great, the Dragon still isn't low on energy either. We'll be able to create plenty more, and it doesn't seem like the humans are able to put up much of a fight. We will lose even less than I predicted. Send all the newly created three spikes and above over to me.

"They will be put to great use in making me stronger." Graham ordered, already walking away. Leaving the three spiked worried about just what Graham was going to do with these newborn Dalki.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1386: The first of his kind

Graham stood on a large open wasteland. The Dalki leader felt uncomfortable, as he still had no clothes to wear. He himself didn't know why, but it felt like everyone could see right through him when he didn't wear clothes, and without it whenever others laid their eyes on him, he wanted to snap at them.

However, at the moment there was no one but him. It was just an open land with several craters, but after waiting a while he could see them in the distance. A group of other Dalki was heading his way, and in the background, in the distance the Dalki castle could be seen.

'It looks like they are finally here. Hmm, there's around fifty of them. I guess he wasn't lying when he said they were able to improve the creation process.' Graham smiled.

As he waited for them to arrive, he continued observing them. The new set of Dalki looked undisciplined. They weren't walking in a single file, and most of them continued to butt heads with each other as they walked. It looked like some were about to go into a full scuffle, while others had already fought and were bleeding.

There was one in front was a three spiked Dalki who had a digital tablet with him, and by his side there were two more three spiked Dalki, all stood away from the group.

"It's hard to blame them for their behaviour since we were the same when we first came to be." The one on the left commented. "I just hope Graham won't mind their unruliness."

"Indeed, I believe in some cases we were even worse. Fortunately, they were all smart enough to listen and follow us." The one on the right added.

"Alright!" The one in the centre said turning around. "I know you all must be confused. After all, you have only been awake for a couple of hours, and we have yet to tell you much about what is going on. Right now, we are taking you to Graham, one of our leaders. He has just returned from a major battle and he isn't in the best of moods, so it's in your own interest to show him the respect he deserves!"

It was then, that a larger Dalki out of the group, a four spiked pushed past the others and walked out in front.

"I came along because I was interested in this Graham character you've all been praising, but this is starting to become a pain! Why should I listen to someone who is clearly weaker than me?" The four spiked questioned the one in the middle with a challenging look.

The three spiked leaders felt nervous. There was one universal truth that all Dalki were aware of, without the need to fight. 'Those with more spikes than them were

'stronger'. It was only those with the same amount of spikes who would fight amongst themselves to establish a hierarchy.

Out of the new batch, there were a few four spikes that had been created from the mutant DNA strand. From the moment of their birth they had already surpassed the three spiked leaders, without ever having evolved on their own.

Before a fight could break out, Graham landed between the two parties, having jumped over.

"Then, will you listen to me?" The Dalki leader asked as he turned slightly to the side to show off the five spikes on his back. It was at this point that the four spike's ego took a hit, yet he still felt like he deserved more respect.

"You seem unhappy with your treatment. Don't worry, you will all get a chance to show off your worth." Graham looked in the sky. "The reason why I called you all over is because I want all fifty of you to take me on at the same time. As long as you survive I will bestow you a position befitting you. I swear that you will get all the respect and recognition you believe you deserve, so I want you to fight as hard as you can."

Graham then walked over to the four spiked Dalki, that had been so outspoken just moments ago.

"I wasn't joking. Part of you should already know that you were born into a dog eat dog world. If you can't prove your worth, you will all die here."

The four spiked looked down and he could see that Graham's arm had pierced right through his stomach. He hadn't even seen him move, yet the next moment the Dalki leader stood before him with an evil grin plastered on his face, his eyes showing no remorse.

The Dalki lifted its hands, trying to rip off Graham's head, but with his other single hand free the five spiked Dalki just hit them away, and pierced the other Dalki's stomach once again.

"I said try harder!" Graham shouted, punching out multiple times, causing large holes to appear on the Dalki's body. When he eventually stopped, the four spiked lifeless body fell to the ground. The others didn't know what to do, and when just standing there, Graham went to the next one.

Now knowing that their lives were on the line, the three spiked and four spiked Dalki, all fought together trying to take down Graham. Although none of them had the individual strength to take him down, with so many Dalki attacking him at once it was impossible for the Dalki leader to get out unscathed.

While everything was going on, the three Dalki had moved off to the side out of the fight that was going on.

"Those Dalki, they're some of the strongest members of our race despite just having been created. I thought Graham was just going to beat some discipline into them, so why is he choosing to kill them all?!" The three spiked Dalki on the right was shocked.

"I have been with him as long as you have. Do you think I would have any clue?" The one on the left shrugged his shoulders as they continued watching the Dalki leader fight.

They were happy to see that Graham hadn't chosen to kill everyone as they had feared. None of them doubted that he could easily kill off the three spiked Dalki with a single hit, yet so far he had chosen to hit all those he fought against in non vital areas.

Seeing this, they thought that Graham might have just killed off the first one to shock the others and get them to behave. From the looks of it, he seemed to be trying to make them evolve now of all times, yet that quickly turned out to not be the case.

Graham had injured his opponents to the point that they would get a massive power boost, but when he noticed that they still couldn't finish him, he started striking back and finishing them off. It would have been more useful to bring them back to the lab to heal their wounds, giving them more of a chance to evolve, yet today he seemed to lack patience.

"All of our hard work..." The Dalki in the middle felt awful. It didn't take long for the massacre to unfold, with not a single one being kept alive. All fifty or so of them had perished, yet the Dalki leader was only close to being out of breath.

"It's still not enough." Graham muttered to himself, as he looked over to the old generation Dalki. "Fifty is not enough, bring over a hundred next time!"

The three gulped, still not understanding Graham's actions. Even during the fight, he had allowed the stronger four spikes to hit him, and now he was asking to go through the process again?

However, they were in no position to argue. If they dared to, they knew it would just end with them being on the chopping block next. When they finally had a new hundred subjects they were sent out to Graham to repeat the process. When the three Dalki returned, they were surprised to see that all of the Dalki bodies had disappeared. Only with Graham picking at his teeth with his claw.

'Did he..eat them?' One of them wondered, it was the only thing they could think of.

Even hundred or so Dalki didn't fare any better than fifty. The same thing happened again, with a similar outcome. After killing off more than half of them, something finally happened to Graham's body.

The Dalki leader suddenly stopped and distanced himself from the survivors. There were already five large spikes running down his back, ran from the top of his back to his tail. There didn't seem to be room for anymore, but then, next to the largest spike at the top, another one could be seen forming out by the side.

Graham let out a scream as it grew out. He had evolved once again.

"This makes me the first official six spiked Dalki! ... but this is still not enough!" It was then, that a ship out from the castle had landed, and three Dalki came out urgently searching for graham.

"Graham, we have some bad news! It's about the Vampire World. It seems like Arthur, along with all the others, failed their task. We have tried to contact them multiple times but there is no report whatsoever."

"We can only assume he has betrayed us, been killed, or gone back to the other side."

From the interactions Graham had with Arthur, he couldn't imagine the Punisher betraying them, not unless he was sure they could win, which was an interesting thought in itself, but from the daily reports they were getting Arthur had launched a full scale attack against the vampire settlement not long ago.

Graham couldn't think of anything that would make him suddenly turn, which could only mean that they had failed.

"Well, I didn't expect that. It looks like I really have to do all things by myself." Graham let out a sigh. "Looks like the rest of you are in luck."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1387: Project Utopia

Surrounded by nothing but metal, and somewhere in the dark deep blue sea, was the submarine that was used for the base of Pure. Currently, an important experiment was taking place. There were a large number of test rooms on the submarine itself, and in one of them, there was a certain agent with a tablet in his hand recording all the information he could see.

This agent had quite long spiked hair that went down past his shoulders. It was ragged and unkept. On top of that, he had glasses on his face that would constantly slip down. It was a strange sight to see since nearly everyone these days got corrective surgery to fix their eyesight.

Only those that didn't have the money to afford such a surgery would wear glasses. Still, for this person, their reasoning was different. He wouldn't take the risk, even if the chances were minuscule of losing his eyesight.

This person was known as Agent four, and the large number on the back of his white robe showed it.

"I have never seen armour like this before. It doesn't act like any type of beast armour. Nor does it seem to be made from beast crystals, yet the only reaction we have seen so far from it is with blood.

"This is, without a doubt, from them." Agent 4 smiled, quickly typing away all of the details he had seen so far.

Right now, what Agent four had in front of him, was blood armour. It wasn't a single part, but lying out on a table, was what was thought to be a full set, which had gone through countless different experiments. It was his job to find out what it could do, among other things in Pure.

The sound of the door sliding open was heard behind him, but agent four chose to ignore it.

"Agent 0 is asking for your report. He says you have been here too long." The voice said from behind. The next second, the said person was standing by his side.

A person who hardly wore a top, always displaying his large body with battle scars to show. The one known as Agent 1, and also known as Chris.

"It was a lot more tricky than I thought, and the ability of this armour is impressive, but it will be troublesome. If blood is the only way to activate it, then how can one use it correctly in battle. The armour seems inefficient if that was to be the case.

"Vampires themselves have their own blood, but just like humans, it takes a certain amount of time before their body can recreate it. Of course, you could get blood from your victims, but then the active effect seems almost useless."

Chris wasn't really listening to what agent four was saying. He never really cared about all this stuff, so he just said the first thing that came to his mind.

"Maybe something is missing?" Chris replied. "You know, I mean, I know it looks like a full set, but perhaps there was a helmet or something with it?"

Agent four placed his finger on his chin, tapping it away as he thought. It was an interesting thought. He couldn't believe that whoever owned this armour would allow for such a big downside to it.

'Maybe what Chris said was right.'

"Anyway, you can work on this later. There is a meeting to take place, and I'm in charge of it. Nearly everyone is there." Chris said.

Usually, agent four would have decided to ignore the calls for a meeting. He felt his work was far more critical than the discussion the others would talk about. His research would help the whole group advance as a whole.

Regardless, because he knew what this meeting was concerning, he had decided to attend. Walking along with Chris in the main hall, they eventually found themselves in a nice area. Rather than the usual metal halls, they would see this area was carpeted grey and had clear glass in several places.

It was more like an office of the old. They had several seats out looking towards a particular wall facing the same way, with numbers 1 to 25 written on the back. All of the top members were told to attend this meeting, and Chris made his way to the empty space.

When everyone came in, Chris was ready to speak. Agent 0 wasn't present, and some of the seats were empty, but that wasn't because they had chosen not to attend or couldn't make it, but because they were dead.

There was a rule that had been set by agent 0. Although rankings could move up and down in the top 5, their positions wouldn't be filled, and two seats were empty at the front. Agent 5's and Agent 2s. It reminded them all that the group had failed in some way.

If they were to lose all of their leaders, then the Pure deserved to fall apart.

"I'm glad to see that most of you made it back safely, although we can't say the same for everyone or those that are still out there on the other planets." Chris

started the speech. He stood there with his arms folded, and there was no need for him to use Qi to amplify his voice. It was plenty loud already.

"0 has been patient, carefully binding his time and waiting for the right opportunity. The Dalki have pushed and pushed, and it looks like the Earthborn group has had to send most of its forces to help them.

"The Graylash group, although having dealt with the threat well, are in no position to come back. As reports of a new wave of Dalki are hitting them, and as for the Cursed faction, they have had one of the biggest blows out of all the groups so far.

"Which means they are far too occupied to deal with us. Our movement begins now. All those who are ready with their squads and are in positions, please raise their hand."

Everyone in the room raised their hand at that moment.

"Then I give you permission to execute project Utopia now," Chris said.

All of them cheered in the room at that moment. They stood up from their seats, ready to move out. Seconds later, and nearly everyone on the Pure Sub started to move. Entering teleporters, some exiting from small pods in the submarine out in the water.

Pure was in full motion as if the group themselves was planning for war. Pure had decided to not take part in the fight so far. Not helping any of the other groups, seeing the outcome, but they finally chose to make their move.

Hours after Chris had made his announcement, countless submarines all over earth had remained a distance away from the land that was still left. Some of these cities would usually have top tier protection. Provided by the Earthborn group or their respective factions, but at the moment, they were mostly filled with high-class Civilians.

Those that had good backgrounds and chose no longer to fight or hunt, after all, living on earth was expensive. However, due to the current war, many of those that would be protecting them and the Travellers they paid for protection had gone out to fight.

The people understood. The Dalki were the threat, not humans. If they didn't win this war, then no money in the world could help them, but this left them unprotected at the same time.

Each group was stationed nearby these cities. The Pure members were geared up, ready for their order. The receiver of each group made a few crackles, and the order was given out.

The voice wasn't that of agent 1, but it was from the original creator of the Pure organisation, agent 0.

"Everyone, it is time for Pure to take over the government, the military and everything that is wrong with the world. When they come back, they will be in for a surprise to see that what they have been fighting for all this time has been lost. It's time for us to take over earth!"

## Chapter 1388: The lost planet

Before leaving the vampire settlement, Quinn made sure to inform the tenth family of what was going to happen. How those that had worked under Paul, the vampire soldiers, would soon be returning to Earth, and he told the leaders that they should all inform their people as well.

For Quinn wanted to move the entire vampire settlement to the beast solar system. There was one major problem with this though, and that was the sunlight. All those vampires in the inner castle areas had rings that helped with the sunlight but not those in the pooling areas.

It wasn't that they lacked rings or resources, it was just that the vampires had never seen the need to make it so everyone could have rings. At the moment, another group was sent out to fight against the Death Bats, whose crystal was required to create those special rings.

As the King he told the leaders to not act themselves, warning them that they should remain on standby, but ready to act at any moment. Quinn hadn't explained exactly how or when he would call them, only that they had to prepare to be called at any moment in any situation.

There was something else that Quinn had on him, that was in his Shadow space. He had also taken the special mechanism that would be used to move the whole settlement in the first place.

'I have a lot of things in my dimensional space. The tablet, the Blood armor and Arthur's weapon, along with this stuff are all in there. Then there is also the Dragon that I have in the Shadow space. People would definitely be surprised if they knew that at this point, I'm practically a walking treasure trove.' Quinn thought with a silly grin on his face.

The dimensional space allowed him to store as much as he wanted in it, but it didn't allow him to store living things, while the Shadow space that was connected to his shadow lock could store living things. The only problem was using the Shadow space and Shadow lock would use a part of his MC cells.

In the past, this would have mattered quite a bit, but now thanks to the Original Punisher having bestowed all the MC cells he had accumulated over the centuries, Quinn had a higher amount than he had ever believed to be feasible. Without it, he wouldn't have dreamed about putting certain things like a Demon tier beast inside.

This had given him an idea, now he could store more things in his Shadow space.

With all this said, for the first time, an active King of the vampires was leaving the Vampire settlement and what's more, he was doing it alone. Quinn was heading back to the Cursed faction ship. Or at least that's where he thought he was heading.

Using his Shadow travel he came out from Sam's shadow, yet he soon found himself on top of a Shelter wall staring outward on the planet's surface. It was one that Quinn hadn't been to before.

The surface seemed to be clay like, though grey in colour. There were a few large stones out on the surface which had green plants growing on it here and there, and trees that seemed to stretch out from underneath these stones. Most of it was empty, apart from the areas which had been terraformed into the Shelter, with pathways and roads leading in and out.

That's when Quinn noticed the amount of people at the Shelter. Turning around, he could see it was packed. The buildings looked to have been changed to stack on top of each other like apartment blocks, while the streets were filled with people pushing past each other to get to where they were headed.

'A top Shelter like this usually has around fifty thousand or so people but it looks like there are over double, if not triple that number, down there.'

"Quinn." Sam called out, not having noticed his arrival beforehand. "I know you said you were coming, but I didn't realise that you would be here so soon. That was fast."

A smile appeared on Sam's face as he was happy to see the Cursed faction leader actually be okay, yet the smile quickly disappeared as he remembered that they would have to discuss certain things and talk about business.

"Actually, it's a good thing that you came out while I'm here. The two of us can talk about everything here without having to worry the others." Sam said.

"Are the others in the Shelter?" Quinn asked.

"Not everyone. A few are in the Shelter, many are on the other walls and some are on the Cursed ship that is stationed behind the Shelter. The rest have split up to take care of the other Cursed planet that is still under our control."

As Quinn was listening to Sam, he was looking outward to see if he could gather basic information of what this shelter was like out here. He could see that there was one of the Dalki motherships very far off in the distance thanks to his great eyesight.

There were also multiple stations that were set up between here and the Shelter, forces to stop the Dalki from making an outright attack out of the blue. Looking at it Quinn was thinking about a few things.

"So I take it that the influx of people inside the Shelter... are the survivors from the Daisy faction?" Quinn finally asked.

Hearing this, Sam clenched his fist hard, and even now after so much time had passed since that event had occurred tears started to flow down his face.

"We were there, Quinn. All of us were there. I knew they were going to attack, I had hoped that all of us would be enough to hold them back, but..." The Vampire Lord placed his hand on the other's shoulder before he completely broke down.

"I don't blame you. ... If anything, I blame myself. It was my choice to go to the Vampire World instead of helping you out. I was hoping I could deal with Arthur before coming over, yet I never expected for things to suddenly take a turn for the worse with the appearance of the Original King.

"However, we can't know if things would have actually changed even if I had been with you. Despite being there I failed to save them." Some of the words he repeated to Sam were told to him by Vincent, yet his ancestor wasn't in his head anymore to drop his wisdom, so it was up to Quinn.

"They died, even though I was there. Paul... Kazz... Arthur. I know exactly how you feel but we have to push forward and save what we can." Quinn spoke.

Wiping away his own tears with the sleeve of his shirt, Sam tried to put on a brave face. Quinn had yet to tell him the full details of what occurred in the vampire world. At the same time, if anyone was to see him like this, especially those in the Cursed faction they would see him as weak.

As one of the leaders who frequently appeared in front of the other faction members, it was important for him to put on a brave face whenever possible.

"Quinn, I have a plan and with you here now, the chances that it will succeed have greatly increased. I don't know what the Dalki are planning, but this time, after they had captured the Shelter, they kept hostages.

"I asked all of the other groups, but there have never been any cases that they did something like this in the past. There are members of the Daisy faction that are still alive at the Shelter. I think they might be thinking of using them as some type of bargaining tool or maybe something else.

"I want to save them, but I was too scared, too worried that I would make the same mistakes again."

Hearing Sam talk like that was making Quinn worried. He had never heard the other sound so unconfident before. Sam had made far better decisions than he himself could have ever done on his own, which was exactly why he had left him in charge on this side.

However, he had said these words to him before. Some people just needed time.

"Sam, you should rest and look after this Shelter. Let me deal with the Daisy faction prisoners. I will save them." Quinn stated confidently.

"But..Quinn you don't understand how many they have, how strong they all were! The worst part is, if they use them as hostages, they won't hesitate to kill them in seconds!" Sam had been stressing over this more than anything. The problem had never been attacking the Dalki to retrieve the abducted people, but making sure there would actually BE anyone left to rescue at the end.

"Trust me, I have my ways, did you call over Bonny and Void like I requested?"

Looking in the Shelter, the two stood out like a sore thumb, with drones hovering above them, and even now they were talking to the public reporting news to everyone.

"That's great. I'm going to need them. Don't worry you will understand, when you see it all." Quinn said. "I guess it's time I head to the Daisy faction."

'Helen, I hope you kept your promise.'

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1389: Unique power

Although Sam still wasn't so sure about Quinn going out on his own, he couldn't really disagree with him, for he was already making movements. He had ordered a small ship to be sent to him, along with Bonny, Void and Nate.

These were the only people that he would be taking along with him, to the Daisy faction planet. Even now, Sam was standing out the front of the Shelter, giving a send off to the group, he was deeply concerned.

'Quinn I know you're strong, but you didn't see the things that we saw when they attacked...we were useless against him. I just hope that you don't run into him there.' Sam thought.

With that, Quinn and the others entered the small ship, and were off heading towards the Daisy planet. While inside, Bonny and void were testing their equipment, trying to see if everything was working as it should.

"It looks like you guys have had a few upgrades since the last time I saw you." Quinn commented as he looked at the heavily reinforced drones.

Bonny chuckled.

"Of course, and we have to thank Logan Green for it. When he came to this planet, the first thing he did was improve our equipment for us. Glathrium is usually quite a heavy material but he managed to somehow make it light enough so our drones can still fly while enjoying the strong protection."

"So whatever you have planned, we will definitely be able to catch it all."

It was music to the Vampire Lord's ears. This event was going to be big and Quinn wanted everyone to see what was going to happen, but first he needed to know exactly what the current situation was.

At the moment, not far from there, in the ship's centre, Nate was practicing his martial arts, he currently had the Demon tier Shield in his hand, yet there was now a strap on it that had been created for it.

This was moveable, allowing him to move it up and down his forearm if he wished, still giving him access to it on his arms without taking it off. Of course, he also had the Shadow ability so he could use Shadow equip for it as he wished.

"Quinn, are you really sure we can take on their side with just the two of us?" Nate asked, as he threw out a punch, and imagined an enemy in front of him, but then something else appeared in his head as he was practicing.

Quinn could see that his eyes started to stare slightly upward and Nate was slightly frozen, he even gulped.

'What enemy is he imagining right now? What happened to them all?' Quinn wondered. He had heard from Sam, but hearing and experiencing were two different things.

"Don't worry Nate, if everything goes according to plan, there won't even be any need for you to fight." Quinn answered, hoping to cheer the other up. "Let me take care of the Dalki. The reason why I asked you to come with us, is primarily so you can protect Bonny and Void. They will be filming from the spaceship above, and using their drones.

"There is a good chance that they could be attacked, but with your Shadow powers and that Shield you should be able to stop everything that comes your way."

For a second, Nate felt annoyed that he had been brought along just for bodyguard duty, but that quickly went away as he thought back to what had happened during the last fight.

'I can understand Sam, but even Nate is like this.' Quinn noticed, making him bite his bottom lip.

"Nate, what happened? I know the Dalki attacked the Daisy faction, but Sam says that you were all there. You had the Demon tier Shield, so even if they were strong... Who did you meet?"

It took a few seconds for Nate to reply, but he thought that Quinn should know, especially if there was a good chance that they could be seeing this Dalki again.

"It was a Dalki who was wearing clothes... a five spiked Dalki." Nate explained. "Sam's plan was working perfectly and with the help of everyone we were actually able to defend. It seemed like any other day, and we were sure it would end in yet another stalemate... but everything started to change when he attacked."

Hearing this, Quinn remembered that when Richard was speaking, he spoke about the major threats the other side had, and one of them was a Dalki named Graham. He was the only Dalki Quinn had seen wear clothing, and seemed to be quite unique in his preference.

'It's him again, the Dalki I met that time when I was controlling one of the Dalki... his power was great and even with all the strength of the other Dalki I was unable to do anything, but that was then... could he really be strong enough for Arthur to be scared of? and the others.'

It looked like Nate had more to tell, so Quinn continued to listen, hoping he would get his answer.

"We knew how strong five spikes were, but we thought that with Sil, with everyone having improved and the equipment you gave us, that we might have been able to beat him by banding together.

"Initially, we weren't too afraid of him. Slicer had that dangerous tail, yet he didn't seem to have anything that made him out to be that special aside from those normal looking clothes. We were able to put up a good fight, even able to injure him to a good degree.

"However, then he started to do something strange. After realising that he was unable to take all of us on his own he picked up a Dalki corpse and devoured it. As the fight continued, he even grabbed live ones and just bit into them. Each time he did, he seemed to grow stronger to the point that we became unable to do much against him."

Thinking about what Nate had said so far, Quinn was wondering whether Dalki could grow stronger from eating their own kind or if that was something unique to Graham. The latter seemed to be the likelier case, as they had never seen other Dalki do that before. Back when he had controlled the Dalki, although he didn't test it, he hadn't felt any desire to cannibalise his fellow Dalki.

'It must be a special trait. From the information we gathered so far, Silcer's tail, and the one that attacked the Graylash family was able to produce energy from his hands. The Dalki around the five spikes level seem to all have gained a special trait.'

"That wasn't the end Quinn...that Dalki, he could change..he transformed, and that was when we knew we were doomed. I know you already know the rest of what happened after, but it was lucky that we all came out of it alive to be honest."

The conversation ended there. It seemed that Nate didn't want to go on and tell Quinn the full details for fear that he would be distracted, or it was because he thought Sam would have told him the rest.

The thing was, Quinn wanted to hear what happened directly from the people, and there was still a chance....

Eventually, the medium size ship had entered the planet's atmosphere, the beautiful flowers that had been planted all around, looked to have been burnt, including those on the Shelter walls. It was nothing like when Quinn had seen it before.

"Alright, Bonny Void, it's time to start recording." Quinn said as he stood up and used his Shadow equip to change into the red blood armour on his body.

It was the first time the others had seen this, and it was certainly eye-catching to them. Something they had never seen before, it was drawing them all in. The next second, Void started recording and made sure his drones were also ready.

"Hello everyone watching at the moment, I'm Quinn Talen, leader of the Cursed faction. As you may know the Daisy faction that was part of the Cursed faction has recently been taken over. They tried their best but eventually lost to the attacking force.

"The Dalki have captured some of them that are currently being held hostage. We will be approaching the Shelter any second now. The truth is, I know everyone is struggling in all of the groups...and as their leader I apologise to everyone that I was away during the Cursed faction's toughest times.

"However, the reason why I was away was because I went to ask for help. It is the kind of help that the human race needs right now to win this war and fight against the Dalki. I have asked to be recorded today, to demonstrate the power of our allies."

The door to the spaceship was opened, and they were now directly above the Shelter. It looked like many of the Dalki were already alerted, but Quinn didn't care, as he jumped down.

Void quickly moved to make sure he caught everything, and at the same time, the drones were sent out, quickly following Quinn as well.

Shadows started to appear from Quinn's back as he fell. The Dalki that jumped towards him never reached him, as the Vampire Lord quickly placed them in his Shadow lock, allowing him to crash down into the centre of the Shelter unobstructed.

"Right now everyone, as you can see, Quinn has entered the Shelter, which is currently filled with hundreds of Dalki all on his own." As Bonny reported these words, she was wondering who exactly those allies he was talking about were.

"System." Quinn called out. "Activate the Summon skill."

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1390: Quinn's return

Since the war between the Dalki and the human race had started, the two had gone through different phases in the war. One of the worst attacks they had suffered was the initial blitz, where a Dalki mothership appeared on each planet.

Then soon after, strong forces had been sent to the Graylash first, and later to the Cursed faction. However, right now, they are in another calmer period. Neither side was fully pushing forward. Not that the humans felt like they could, they were clearly on the defensive.

After hearing the news of what had happened to the Cursed faction, it was a big morale blow to both the Graylash faction and Earthborn group. None of it caught live, but it was the first planet they had lost since the humans had decided to condense their forces onto nine beast planets.

On top of that, the Cursed faction had lately been seen as the strongest of the three groups. With all the accomplishments they had been making, especially with Quinn being able to destroy multiple of the Dalki mother ships.

Which was why when they heard the news of what happened, even without Quinn there, they couldn't quite believe it. It was the first great loss for the Cursed faction.

Since it was a quiet period during the war, all eyes were tuned in on the special Livestream that Bonny had prepared. Sach, who was still on the snow planet, was in his base watching the Livestream along with Samantha and other few high personnel.

On the Graylash planet, they were also tuned in, along with several civilians and more. Bonny's Livestream had become one of the few places that were still active and broadcasting, and they knew that they captured the best moments and were the closest to the truth.

What helped more so was that Bonny was able to tell everyone that Quinn, the Cursed faction leader, had something he wanted to show the world. The only thing was, they expected to see a message. The last thing they expected to see was Quinn having decided that he would go on the attack.

"Quinn, you're fighting on your own, I know you're strong, but this was something your whole group couldn't deal with!" Sach was worried.

On the other hand, Samantha was interested in who these allies were that he was referring to. Then there was Owen, who was watching it with a big smile on his face.

"So that is the man who you think will change everything," Grim commented, Owen's grandfather.

"There is one thing the others don't seem to understand about him," Owen replied. "If he says he is going to do something, then he will do it. There was one point and time I thought he was crazy. When he said he would be going to save his friend on Blade island..and yet here we are, and you are today. If there is one person's word I trust more than anyone, it would be his."

Everyone saw Quinn land in the centre of the shelter, and the drones were in perfect position. The ship was also able to move fast and get in position. With the Dalki mainly concentrating on Quinn, they were able to get optimal angles, and the broadcast was able to catch nearly everything.

The Dalki were ready to pounce, but suddenly, several lights could be seen on the ground around Quinn. The next second, a bright light appeared, showing multiple figures around him. When they arrived, they looked just as puzzled as the people who were watching the broadcast.

"Where did they come from, where were they hiding, was it an ability?"

"It looked like they all just teleported there or something."

"What are they wearing, it looks like none of them has beast armour or beast weapons."

"Except that one that's dressed in that thick armour from head to toe."

The users were quickly commenting about the situation, and as a camera zoomed in closely, there was a feature that was noticed on them all.

"They all have red eyes."

"Is this the allies Quinn was talking about?"

Some viewers had a hunch about what was going on, but there was no confirmation just yet.

"Everyone," Quinn said. "I said to be prepared at any moment, don't hold back and fight all the Dalki, save the humans! This is an order!" Quinn's voice was serious, more severe than any of the leaders had heard before, and they could see the Dalki already coming towards them.

With no weapons, immediately, the first thing they did was use their abilities and blood powers. Many of them fired off blood swipes hitting the Dalki away. The leader's blood powers were stronger than most, and the Dalki were gravely injured as they were hit. Seeing this, the viewers knew that their confirmation was right.

"V, these people are V. Did Quinn call more V. I know some of the Cursed factions were V, but not all of them were, and I have never seen these before."

"Who cares? Look how easily they are dealing with the Dalki. There are two spikes and three spikes in this group."

The leaders themselves had improved somewhat, in the past, even they would have had some trouble with the three spiked Dalki, but their small training had shown considerable improvements in their powers, and some were showing just how impressive they were.

Jin showed off his explosive blood, firing it out, and dealing with three or four Dalki at once. He also wasn't slow when it came to hand to hand combat.

At the same time, there was Lee, who was using his string abilities to wrap one of the Dalki and swung them around like children, hitting them into each other. Also, with a pull of his strings, he was able to tear some of their limbs off.

The leaders were quickly killing all of the Dalki in the area, and they were simply no match for them. So much so that not even a single one could get close to Quinn.

"I... I'm not needed at all." Nate said from the spaceship. "I think even if we were down there, they wouldn't let a single Dalki get close to us."

"Who are these people?" Bonny asked. "Do you know anything?"

Nate wasn't sure how much he could tell, nor did he know much at all. What Nate was concerned about was what Quinn had done to get these powerful vampires on their side.

'What type of deal did he make?'

"We need to find the survivors," Quinn said, lifting his hands up. It was then that the green blood started to lift from the ground, and Quinn's eyes began to glow red. The leaders were still fighting but noticed what Quinn was doing. He was using absolute blood control.

The blood looked to just be floating, staying in place, but in reality, since Quinn had time and knew he couldn't be disturbed, he was able to condense the blood into small little pellets.

"Get back!" Quinn shouted.

The leaders jumped back to where Quinn was, and they noticed that all of the pellets of blood were in the air floating outside of the area around him.

Moving his hand, in a single motion, all of the pellets struck outwards like bullets, hitting the remains of Dalki that were visible in the area, mainly aiming for their heads. The next second, nearly all of them fell to the ground.

The viewers at that moment had all stopped typing. In almost an instant, Quinn had killed around a hundred or so Dalki, all on his own. They had heard feats of what Quinn had done before, but those stories were different.

This time, they had seen it in person, and it was so effortless.

"This shelter is a large one. Spread out, use your noses and let me know if you find any humans." Quinn ordered.

At the same time, all of the leaders answered, and the camera was able to pick up what was said clearly.

"Yes, your majesty."

With that, the leaders split, disappearing from the cameras.

## Chapter 1391: A Royal

"Yes, Your Majesty."

These three words had been clearly broadcast worldwide, yet everyone who watched the livestream didn't quite understand the meaning behind them. These words were usually used when addressing someone of royalty, yet it had been ages since any humans had referred to another one as such. Because of that, it took everyone a few moments to really know what they meant.

"Do I have a problem with my ears or did those V just call the Cursed faction leader 'Your Majesty'? Do V have some type of hierarchy? All of them V listened to Quinn as soon as he spoke."

"Not unless we both have problems with our ears... Could it be that he is some type of prince to them? Is that why they were listening to him?"

"Was the Cursed leader lying to us? Can we even be sure that he hasn't been a V this whole time? For all we know all of the problems with the V could have to do with him!"

"But he's fighting for us right now! They are fighting against the Dalki! I know the Cursed faction, not all of them are V! Quinn Talen is a good leader!"

Although views were split on whether Quinn used to be a human or had been a royal figure all along, there was one common consensus. He was someone important to those strong V, and they were listening to his words. It was clear that he was in charge of them.

This had not only come as a surprise to those on all the planets watching the livestream but including those closest to Quinn, those that were currently in the Cursed faction. Although their reaction was much different.

On the Cursed planet, nearly every available vicinity was showing Bonny's live stream, and those that had been in the cursed faction for a while now couldn't help but be proud of their leader.

"Look at Quinn! That power to destroy those damned Dalki! This is why the Cursed faction is the best group to be in!"

They had long gotten over the fact that Sam, Quinn and some of the other higher-ups were V. They had been with them long enough to know they were loyal to all those in the Cursed faction. They had been with them through countless fights to know that their actions were genuine, and if anyone disagreed they weren't afraid to tell them off.

"How..can we trust someone who has this much help from those V... they could betray us at any time!" Someone commented while watching the show in a bar-like venue.

"Shut your mouth!" Another person shouted. "That is the Cursed faction leader, and the only reason why we're all safe right now is because of them. As long as you are here, I won't let you say another bad word about them. If you doubt him, then just get off this planet right now and join the Earthborn or Graylash group!"

Where Sach was, the leaders were also discussing what they had seen Quinn do, rather than being happy that he was able to kill the Dalki straight away, they were afraid at how much power Quinn had been able to obtain not just himself but with those by his side.

'Quinn, I knew you were a vampire, but nobody told me you carried this high of a position...there is only so much I can do as Supreme Commander...but I will agree with whatever it is you chose.' Sach thought.

Finally, there was also Sam's thoughts on this. He did not know what Quinn had done either, only that the situation on the other side had been resolved.

'Quinn, you really did it. You somehow made those stubborn leaders pick you as King, and you have gotten them to help us.' Sam thought. 'I understand your plan of showing this power to the world, but I believe it is a double edged sword.'

'You will create those that will attack you out of fear from this, there will be others that react in the same way that Innu had done. Humans are strange things...but at the same time, what else can humans do? You have extended your hand out to help them, giving them this option, a solution to the situation they are in...and they will have no choice but to accept it.'

Inside the Shelter the leaders had split up, and so had the drones. Void and Bonny had control of more drones than they did before, and had sent out some to look and follow the vampire leaders, while the main space ship along with one of the drones would follow Quinn.

The Shelter was large, and there were Dalki spread out everywhere in the place. Plenty of the buildings around had been destroyed as well, from the last fight, making it easier to see far in the distance.

One of the leaders the drones had followed, had entered a large empty building. It was one who wore all black, and had a strange mask covering the bottom half of his face. The building was filled with around four different Dalki.

A mixture of one spikes, two spikes going up to three spikes. The first one to strike was a three spiked Dalki, which sprinted forward throwing out a fist, but the leader stood there unafraid, throwing a fist back himself.

The audience watching knew one thing about the Dalki, the more spikes they had the greater their power. Even the strongest of ability users wouldn't go head to head with a Dalki in the battle of strength yet this V was fearless.

When the two fists collided, to their surprise, there was a clear winner as the bones in the Dalki's arms had been crushed. The V didn't stop there and created a blade of blood aura to slice the enemy's head off right after, before proceeding to deal with the rest in the room.

"These are a bit of a pain." The V mumbled, turning around and seeing the drone, placing a thumbs up towards the camera. This leader was none other than Vincent, who had decided to wear a mask so others wouldn't notice how similar he looked compared to Quinn in this regard.

At the same time, the drones had caught many of the other leaders fighting, using their blood powers and abilities, finishing off the Dalki easily. There were a few that struggled a little bit but it was because they had been told not to use their full power and avoid using their new inner blood weapons. Quinn didn't want to reveal everything just yet, especially since there was always the chance the Dalki might also be watching this. They still needed their own trump cards.

Out of the newer leaders that were struggling, one of them was Nicu.

Nicu, the first leader, was on a pile of rubble and the Dalki had followed him somewhat. He was confident in his barrier ability, but one of the three spiked Dalki pushed through, even with its hand being shredded it managed to skim across Nicu's chest clawing at it, and blood was drawn.

"You filthy creature, how dare you spill my blood!" Nicu shouted, then using his sword, he quickly slashed the Dalki multiple times to finish it off.

That's when the viewers also saw that the cut on Nicu's chest had already healed. Watching all the clips of the leaders fighting, the viewers noticed something on top of the healing.

"Hey, has anyone else noticed that all these strong V don't seem to have any beast gear on? Apart from that twirp using a sword, the rest don't seem to even be using beast weapons?"

"Holy crap, you're right, even the V that we came across were using beast weapons and were already strong, are these top tier V or something? How can they be this strong without beast gear and armour."

"Do you think they're like the Dalki? Those guys can't use the power of beast weapons, so maybe it's the same for V?"

"But then what about Quinn? The Cursed faction leader is also a V, right? He uses beast equipment all the time, so I think they can definitely use it. Maybe they have just chosen not to?"

"If what you're saying is true, then that means this is just their own strength. Just imagine how much stronger they could be with beast gear! I bet they could even make short work of four spiked Dalki!"

In the viewer's eyes the vampire leaders already had an immeasurable amount of strength. However, as soon as someone mentioned that possibility, it spread like wildfire. Some immediately started writing articles about the V being 'humanity's new hope!', whereas others felt more scared than ever.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1392: Super Dalki

The vampire leaders were doing as Quinn had ordered, and following their nose they were able to pick up particular scents. Dalki and humans each had their own scents, different from vampires, but they still had to be relatively close to find them.

However, there was one thing that had led two leaders, Sunny and Jin, to a particular location, and that was the smell of blood. To vampires, the smell of blood was far more prominent and they could notice it from much further away. Unfortunately, since they could smell human blood, especially as prudent as this one was, it wasn't exactly a good sign.

The smell had led the two leaders to a particularly large building. It was a giant greenhouse that was covered in glass. Inside looked like it spread for miles and it was the only green plants that didn't look to be too destroyed.

"The smell of those plants is quite annoying." Sunny commented, as she covered her nose.

"Still, the blood smell led us here, so let's head inside." Jin shrugged his shoulders, doing his best to tolerate the plants.

Inside, the two of them noticed that the drone had followed them, floating a short distance away. It was clear that the two of them were being watched right now. If it wasn't for Quinn telling them not to interfere, then they would have destroyed it by now.

The vampires didn't like being viewed. They had spent centuries away from humanity's eyes and yet suddenly each and every one of their moments was being watched by people they didn't even know. The two did their best to ignore it, as they headed further inside.

As they walked through, there were the same pathways. The green house seemed to be designed similarly to a tourist attraction, there was the sound of a waterfall and plants laid out in all types of different ways.

"It's such a beautiful place, but it stinks." Sunny complained, still covering her nose.

"Well, it looks like the Dalki think we can't tell they are here either." Jin said, looking through the greenery and seeing a Dalki off in the distance. The next second, using his speed, he ran through, avoiding stepping on the precious plants, after the Dalki who was fleeing instead of fighting.

With its back turned, Jin jumped at the creature, placing his hand on the Dalki's head. The tips of his fingers were slightly cut, allowing him to release a small

amount of blood. Once he had let out enough, he ignited his blood, causing a small explosion.

After the smoke had cleared, the Dalki's head was no more. It was lying on the ground, dead.

"It looked like the Dalki was heading somewhere. Do you think it was going to inform the others?" Sunny asked her partner. "Do they not know that they are being attacked? Surely from when we first arrived, everyone should have noticed it."

The viewers who were watching were able to hear the conversation between the two vampire leaders and had come to their own conclusion. The Dalki were suitably armed, and even if they had heard the sound of fighting coming from the centre of the Shelter, they might have believed that the others had already dealt with the intruders.

It might have been the case as well, since the leaders were able to finish off all the Dalki in the area quickly, before they even had the chance to inform the others.

Eventually, heading in the direction of the smell of blood and where the Dalki was heading towards, they encountered more of them. They had come across a wide spread area that was just in front of an artificially made waterfall.

In the midst of the Dalki group, the humans were kneeling on the ground, they weren't tied up. It appeared that they were staying through fear alone. Not wishing to move, and some could understand why, since there weren't many of them left.

There were only nine female survivors along with one male, yet a pile of bodies was floating not too far away, in the water behind them.

"This is the strong scent of blood we could smell. The waterfall is spreading the smell out." Jin mumbled.

Wasting no time, the two leaders quickly went out. Initially, the prisoners seeing them appear began to harbor hope, thinking that someone had come to rescue them, but seeing that there were only two people they didn't think they could do much, especially since there were ten Dalki or so that were guarding them.

That was until they watched Sunny dodge a swipe from a two spike Dalki, and lift up her leg kicking it in the face. It looked like a simple kick, nothing special, yet, the Dalki's head flung back, and the creature fell to the ground with its face slit open.

During her attack, she had used blood hardening on her leg, creating a type of blade that was able to pierce the hard skin. Of course, this was the hardening of a vampire leader. The strength, the speed and power of the attack was different and was why she was able to do such a thing.

After that, the two dealt with the Dalki, one after another and they were saved, but the Daisy factions were aware while watching the fight that the ones that had saved them were V.

"We have been sent by His Majesty to save you. I believe you all know him as Quinn Talen." Sunny informed them.

As soon as they heard that name, they looked at each other and smiles appeared on their faces.

"He saved us! He didn't forget about us!" Hearing this news, they no longer were worried about what these two would do to them.

Both Sunny and Jin saw the reaction of the people and were quite impressed.

'It looks like the King really is a respected figure to the humans as well. I wonder what he went through to earn that much respect from them at his young age.'

Since Sunny had a nicer face, the survivors were less afraid of her and willing to follow her, at the same time, as she began to lead them out of the green house, Jin looked at the river. Bodies floating, limbs having been ripped off and even dead bodies on the ground.

The drone that had been following them, looked to be filming all of this as well.

"What is that V doing there just standing there looking at them."

"He must be thinking something along the lines of 'look at all this wasted food', lol."

"Yeah, I mean he is a V after all, we might get to see them drink some blood live!"

"What is wrong with you people? How could you say that? Did you not just see that they risked their lives to save those people. If they weren't there then it's possible that all of them could have been beaten. I can't believe, why do you have to be this distrusting of them all?"

"Too long, didn't read! These freaks eat humans and they didn't help us until now! How can you be such a sheeple to NOT be cautious of them?"

At the same time, they weren't the only leaders that had come across humans. In one of the apartment buildings, Vincent had also just defeated a group of Dalki that were guarding some captives.

He was looking at them all frightened, and had noticed a slight observation. They all had a pinprick on their arm. Which was suggesting they had been injected with a needle of some kind. After asking them some questions it seemed to be the case

that they were taking blood from the humans, not just once, but sometimes several times.

'So the Dalki didn't just take them to hold them hostage. They are definitely doing something with the captives, but what?' Vincent wondered. 'They didn't before, so I can only guess it has something to do with the Demon tier beast they have captured. Even without the second half they seem to be able to create more Dalki.'

'From the information we have, the Dalki can also be based on mixing specific human and the beast's DNA. Is that it? Are they capturing the strong members from Daisy, in order to create a better and stronger Dalki? It seems to be the most likely case.'

"Alright everyone, it's time for me to get you out of here." Vincent spoke to the survivors.

'Whatever they are planning, I don't like it. If my hunch is correct, we might soon be facing off against a new wave of super Dalki.'

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

# Chapter 1393: Untouchable (1)

## Chapter 1393 - Untouchable (Part 1)

After the other leaders had split up, Quinn had decided that the best course of action for him was to head straight forward towards the back of the Shelter. The last time he was here, it was where the Daisy base was located, but at the same time, he realised that it was where most of the chaos had taken place.

It was clear that a great battle had happened, and the Daisy faction had made their last stand here.

Rather than running straight ahead, Quinn was walking through the Shelter concentrating and focusing. Getting closer to the main base, he could smell blood everywhere. Not only smell it, but he could see many victims. Bodies that had only slightly decomposed and worse off were just left there on the street. Blood splatters covered the buildings and broken walls.

Quinn wanted to see if anyone was still left to save, but he hadn't run into anyone yet.

'The Daisy faction, it was such a beautiful place when I first came to visit it. I remember talking to them all not too long ago. It was meant to be one of the most protected places, due to all the plants inside and on the outside wall...and yet it still ended up like this.' Quinn grinded his teeth.

'Helen, you were strong. I can tell you all put up quite a fight trying to protect this place, didn't you...but I need to know...are you still alive. We had a promise, remember, you're not a liar. You're someone who keeps their promises, right!'

As he walked closer towards the Shelter, Quinn was thinking of the worst as more dead bodies could be seen. Eventually, several Dalki had come out from the rubble of the buildings.

Bonny and Void were still in the air, following Quinn with their personal camera and one of the drones.

They could also tell what Quinn was trying to do and decided to help with the search but couldn't find anyone just like him, anyone alive at least. One of the Dalki's did, however, spot them. They stood behind a high pile of rubble. With a simple jump, it was easy for them to reach the spaceship.

Seeing this, Nate got his shield ready. The good thing about the Demon tier shield was most enemies didn't know its effect and would think that it was just a simple shield. The Dalki being the aggressive beings they were, would just punch the shield without thinking much of it, killing themselves in the process.

Just as suspected, the Dalki leapt up to the ship aiming to hit it.

'You guys are worse than monkey's.' Nate thought, placing his shield in front of him, but as the Dalki was halfway in the air towards the ship, out of nowhere, blood slightly splattered from one side of its head.

Its eyes quickly appeared lifeless as it fell back down to the ground. All of those on the ship were wondering what had happened, and looking towards Quinn, they could see he had his hand held out with his finger pointed like a gun.

"Did that come from Quinn, he's protecting us even now, but it didn't seem like the same attack as he made before?" Bonny noticed.

Void, thinking the same thing, decided to play the footage back in slow motion frame by frame, and that's when he could see a small bullet the size of red aura going through the Dalki's head.

If other vampires had seen this, they would have thought that Quinn had just produced the blood bullet, but that was not the case as his finger was perfectly working.

"When I obtained all that power from before, I didn't have the time to learn it properly, but now I can test it out on you and make you all pay for what you did!" Quinn said, lifting his hand and now had his hands out with his fingers pointed as if they were both guns.

What Quinn had done was create his own blood bullet. With his blood powers having increased, his red aura was strong. Then mixing it in with the third stage of Qi, he could make it even more powerful.

Lastly, he had absolute blood control. A blood swipe in itself wasn't that fast, but Quinn had seen how fast Bryce was able to move the raining swords, and seeing this, he figured it was due to the blood control, and Quinn was right.

Using the control, he could move the blood fast enough, so it would work similar to the blood bullet skill but have no drawbacks.

The Dalki started to charge towards him, and without holding back, Quinn began to fire away. He wasn't the best when it came to aiming, but it didn't matter. The Dalki had no defence against such an attack.

If the blood aura hit their arms or legs, it would go through them. Still, they could see Dalki dropping dead easily before they even reached Quinn in front of the area.

It looked like a scene out of a war from the past. As if a person holding two guns in his hands while the others hand nothing but their bare fists. The only problem was

that Quinn couldn't use this skill rapidly due to the amount of concentration it would take, but that didn't matter either.

Some of the Dalki eventually reached him. He could have used his shadow to block their attacks, or maybe something else, but instead, he chose to use his blood skills. With the blood armour equipped, he could do so without holding back.

He avoided the punch from the Dalki easily, and then Quinn threw a simple punch to the Dalki's gut, using his normal blood spray. As his fist connected, the Dalki was lifted into the air. When the blood spray skill activated, a bang was heard, and a hole through the entire Dalki's stomach was seen, causing it to die instantly.

'I can mix my powers better now. I can use the red aura energy I obtained without it hurting my body too much. As long as I limit myself to using the blood control with my own aura, it doesn't hurt my body. Only when I also control blood from the outside, it affects me.'

After this, Quinn used the shadow equip to change his armour, changing it into the blue fang set.

[Nitro accelerate activated]

In the two minutes that the armour was activated, the camera was unable to pick up anything clearly. All they could see was Dalki losing body parts and falling to the ground out of nowhere until there was no more.

And once Quinn was done, he switched back to the red blood armour standing there.

"What are we watching right now..." Bonny was at a loss for words. She didn't even know how to report because she was unsure what had happened.

Thankfully, it looked like some of the leaders had returned. They had done so with survivors from the Daisy faction, so she could continue her commentary about that instead.

Seeing that there were some people alive, Quinn had new hopes, and the anger he had inside him was starting to settle a little bit.

"Quinn, it really is you!" One of the females saw him but noticed that he looked a bit different. At least the air around him was a little different.

The women that had been saved, Quinn noticed that these were the ones he had given blood weapons. Though it looked like they no longer had blood weapons on them anymore.

The leaders explained to Quinn what they had seen so far. Jin, Sunny and Vincent. Then it was time to ask the girls themselves.

"Where do you think others will be, and what about Helen?" Quinn asked.

The group of women looked uncomfortable when they heard this question.

"Honestly, we're not sure, but they were fighting until the very end towards the base. After we lost the fight, we got split up and taken hostage there. So I think your best bet is to continue heading to the base."

Since it seemed like they didn't know much and the direction Quinn was going to head anyway, he thanked them.

"You guys will just need to hold out a little longer. I will place you in a safe place for now." Quinn said.

They looked nervous but trusted Quinn. Holding out his hand, he placed each of them in his shadow lock. So they wouldn't be able to get hurt, and so the leaders didn't have to look after them.

"You guys, continue looking through the Shelter and see if you can find survivors. Then meet me at the base." Quinn ordered.

"Don't you want us to come with you?" Jin asked. "As they said, I don't think there are any other survivors in the Shelter."

"No," Quinn replied. "Every second counts, and if there are those around that are injured, I won't be able to get to them. You guys being around won't help me take over the base any quicker. It's quicker for me to deal with them, then let you."

Although what Quinn said was true, the real reason was, he believed that most of the Dalki remaining in the Shelter would be at the base. He wanted to be the one to kill every single one of them himself.

'Something...is changing inside the boy.' Vincent thought. 'But right now, it might be exactly what the humans need to win this war.'

## Chapter 1394: Untouchable (2)

### Chapter 1394 - Untouchable (Part 2)

As Quinn had somewhat expected, humans weren't the only one watching the live broadcast, but he somewhat wanted the Dalki to see this. He remembered that back when he had been in Graham's lab, the Dalki leader had been watching the fight between Slicer and the others.

Right now, Graham was doing the same thing. He was still out on the field, fighting against the new generation of Dalki, but during one of the breaks, a Dalki had come out to make a report of what was going on. That there was something interesting he should see.

After finally getting a set of clothes that fit his new size, he had calmed down, and was happy to watch the footage. A lot of it he had missed, and now on the camera he could see Quinn walking towards the Daisy base.

"This...man." Graham grumbled. "He was also there when Slicer was defeated. This person..." The Dalki leader didn't say it out loud, but he had a feeling that this person was going to cause him a lot of trouble.

Just watching the video alone, he was walking on camera with so much confidence, confidence he had never seen before, even amongst the strongest of humans, and vampires. It reminded Graham of when he had first met the vampire known as Arthur.

'Let's see if you have the skills to back it.' Graham smiled.

---

After finding out that there could be survivors at the main base, Quinn decided to run ahead at full speed. The spaceship was easily able to keep up with the Vampire Lord, but they were wondering when he was going to slow down, the thing was, Quinn never did.

Two large doors could be seen up ahead, they looked reinforced and Quinn could even see a few Dalki guards on the outside. Not slowing down, Quinn leapt up in the air. He was moving too fast for the guards to react. Throwing both of his fists back, he threw them forward slamming into the door.

He powered his fists with the first stage of Qi, as much as possible, and the two doors went flying open, breaking off from their hinges and crashing into the base. As Quinn landed on the ground in front of what would have been the doors that were there before, he threw out two punches to the side of him.

An invisible force hit the two Dalki away, the third stage of Qi, throwing them off their feet. Ignoring whether they were alive or not, Quinn decided to head further into the base.

"Come on, let's get down from here! We have to follow him, we can't let this go to waste!" Bonny shouted.

"What about the Dalki? He didn't finish them off! What if they attack us?!" Void complained.

"Do you really think you have to worry about that? Isn't that pretty much the whole reason I'm with you guys?" Nate asked confidently, as he was already getting off from the ship that had landed in front of the base. He walked over to the Dalki Quinn had hit, and the reason why they were no longer moving was because they were dead.

Sure these were just one spiked Dalki, but finishing them off in one hit. If Nate had heard stories like this back when he had been in the academy he would have just treated it as some sort of propaganda, made up to raise morale.

"If there are any leftovers I can protect you." Nate claimed, punching his shield, but he had a feeling he wasn't going to have to use it.

When they entered the base, they could see that the two large doors that were around ten meters in height, had been knocked to the back of the entrance rooms and not just that, the room was filled with dead Dalki and Quinn was nowhere to be seen.

"Everyone, I hope you are seeing everything. Quinn Talen entered the base seconds ago and without much effort defeated two Dalki on the way in." Bonny reported.

"This has to be fake, right? Like a pre made video to make the Cursed leader seem stronger." Someone commented under the livestream.

"Why would they have that? Everyone is watching this right now, why would they make a fake video. We all know that the Cursed planet was actually attacked, and he even saw what he did when he landed. This is real." Another viewer, refuted.

The three of them continued to follow Quinn's tracks, which didn't seem to be too hard to do, as they just had to follow the trail of dead Dalki inside the base. They went up a set of giant stairs, and onto the second floor. Up top, another door had been destroyed, though smaller than the entrance one, which led into a long hallway.

In the hallway, countless Dalki could be seen killed, it looked like none of them were able to put up much of a fight, and the spikes on their back could be clearly

seen. There were three spikes, two spikes all killed just as easily as the one spikes, and Graham was watching all of this as well.

"This, after just having come back from that place?!" Graham was beyond annoyed.  
"Who the hell is this person! I want all the information on him!"

Although Graham had originally followed Jim's plan, now that the original Jim was dead, the Dalki leader had started to adapt his own plans, believing he had made a better one than Jim himself. The Dalki had already evolved far beyond whatever their creator had predicted. So how, how could the vampires or the humans possibly have such an outlier like this?

Still, Graham calmed himself down, it was true that Quinn looked to be stronger than when he thought against Slicer, but he was just one person, and it was up against the old generation of weak low spiked Dalki. Even Graham himself could do something like this.

---

Finally, Quinn had reached the room he had been looking for. Here he could see three four spiked Dalki. It was the main meeting hall for the Daisy faction but it was open, filled with blood and teleporters in the back could be seen having already been destroyed.

What Quinn was more concerned about, was the fact that he could see another group of survivors, about six or so of them in total.

'I don't see her!' Quinn thought, a mix of anger and worry on his face.

These Dalki, unlike the rest, seemed to be somewhat aware that something was coming. However, it didn't matter to Quinn, this whole time there was something he hadn't used. Shadows started to grow from his feet and had covered the entire floor.

The Dalki, seeing this, tried to avoid it, but since they had filled the entire room there was nowhere for them to go and once it came into contact with their shadows, their movements slowed. A Dalki seeing this, concerned, had decided to grab a hostage, yet the shadow had just appeared in front of them blocking its attack and the next second, Quinn was seen coming through it, holding onto Dalki's arm.

"I'm going to borrow some energy from you." Quinn said activating the active skill of his gauntlet. All of the things he had obtained, all of the fight he had fought, was for this moment. It was then the hostages could see that this person, in front of the four spiked Dalki they wouldn't dare fight against, was untouchable.

---

"Come on, we have to hurry!" Bonny shouted, as the three of them did their best to catch up to Quinn. They came just in time to see the Cursed faction leader standing there with three four spiked Dalki dead on the ground.

"It looks like Quinn has managed to save more of the Daisy faction, and we have two of their leaders here!"

Quinn hadn't had the time to speak to the ones he had saved, but he had recognised both of Helen's sisters.

'If these two are alive, Helen should also be safe.' Quinn thought, but there was another thought in the back of his mind. Where was Helen and why wasn't she with her sisters.

Without realising it, Quinn had become somewhat obsessed with finding Helen. Maybe it was because he felt like the two of them never got to talk, or he never got to thank her for the Daisy faction's help. Or perhaps it was the giant worry at the back of his mind. It was because of this, he didn't ask if the others were okay.

"Where is Helen?" Quinn asked. Her two sisters pointed towards a door to their right.

"We last saw them take her there, it's the science lab of the Daisy faction." Peach answered.

The two girls stood up next to Quinn, and followed him as he walked towards the door, and Bonny and the others weren't far behind him. He pushed the doors open, and they had finally found Helen...

## Chapter 1395: Battle of Daisy (1)

### Chapter 1395 - Battle Of Daisy (Part 1)

Nearly the entire cursed faction was watching Bonny's live stream. It was exciting for them. They felt like it was payback for what they had lost and a display of the faction's power. However, for the Cursed faction's main leaders, for those involved in protecting the Daisy faction at the time, watching it was nail biting.

Sam had his jaws clenched as he watched everything play out, and every time they saw people dead on camera, he was reminded of the decision he had to make that day. Yet, the person who was finding it hardest to watch everything was none other than Layla.

She had bitten on her thumb so hard while watching the video clip that it was bleeding slightly. She didn't care though. Each time the camera caught some survivors, Layla was looking for one person in particular, yet so far, they hadn't appeared on the screen.

'Please...please...Helen, you can't have...you can't have died!' Layla thought, thinking back to what had happened that day, the day of the Dalki attack.

---

On the day of the attack on planet Daisy, Helen was standing tall on the Shelter walls staring outward. The original Dalki mothership that was on the planet had been destroyed by Quinn, so when they saw another one appear, alarm bells were ringing in her head.

'They haven't just sent that to intimidate us, and from the reports, it seems like the other groups are going to be under attack as well.'

"Peach, contact the Cursed faction, inform them that the Dalki has made their move, and inform everyone. Tell them to get ready for battle." Helen ordered.

Peach, her sister, knew that the Dalki ship moving was probably a big deal. The Daisy faction was strong, and even when they had been attacked multiple times in the past, the Daisy faction had successfully defended it with the people they currently had.

It was a Shelter that had never suffered from a beast attack, or from another faction attack before. It was one of the reasons why the Daisy faction was so feared. She knew that Helen would have defended the Shelter with all her power and would never call for help from the others unless she felt like it was absolutely necessary.

Not long after, and hundreds of pods could be seen coming from the mothership. It was more than the attack from before, and what was worse, they could hear the

sound of rumbling. Almost instantly after landing, they weren't building a type of fortress like they usually would.

Instead, it seemed like all the Dalki were on the attack straight away. Surprisingly, standing outside the Shelter wall were the three sisters, along with a large group of around five thousand fighters.

This was the first force of the Daisy faction. Then on all sides of the walls, there was an additional one thousand members covering each side. Finally, inside the Shelter, there were another five thousand ability users ready to fight. At the same time, the rest of those inside were civilians.

The anti jammers were working, and the teleporters were still online to allow them to escape. The only problem was, there really wasn't anywhere for them to run to. At the moment, the other two Cursed faction planets were also under attack, and the Cursed ship was heading their way.

At the same time, although the Cursed ship was large, there was no way that they could house so many people on board. They were already close to their max capacity.

"If they get inside the Shelter, then hundreds...no thousands of lives will be lost. We need to do what we can to make sure they don't make it inside!" Helen ordered.

The large group of five thousand cheered and quickly split into three groups. Each one led by a sister team, and they spread out slightly, with the centre group being more forward. That's when they could see the hundreds and hundreds of Dalki running towards them.

'These Dalki...they look to have higher spikes than the last lot. I knew my feelings were right.' Helen thought.

Still, this was Daisy's planet, and it was designed for combat using their powers. As soon as the Dalki got within a specific range, several of the plants the Dalki stopped on exploded. Vines had grown from the ground, wrapping around their feet, thorns digging into their body.

Of course, there was also Helen's power, as she had several plants pop out from her seeds, firing at the Dalki getting close. On top of that, she ran in together with the combat team and swung her whip, constantly getting rid of them.

"We were once one of the factions considered to become one of the big four. We are no pushovers!" Helen shouted as she continued to fight Dalki after Dalki. Still, her main focus was trying to help those around her rather than killing the Dalki. Since they were fighting on their specially built terrain, they felt powerful.

There were minimal losses on their side, and the powers and fighters were able to support each other well. Once in a while, groups from the Shelter would come out

as support and grab those that were more injured than others. Bringing them back to the Shelter for healing.

Although there were more Dalki than the last attack, it was the same for the Daisy faction, which now had support from the factions of the other planets. The reason why they were so willing to follow and help Helen was because she was out there on the field now.

She didn't stay behind, waiting for the enemy to get weak. No, she was fighting against the Dalki from the beginning, and a leader who led through actions was a very powerful thing to the people.

However, soon, a giant shadow would be cast above the entire Shelter. Something gigantic was coming out from the clouds above, and the second they saw it, Helen hated that her gut feeling was right.

For right now, there was another Dalki mothership, and it had decided to attack right from above. Looking out, Helen wondered if she had made a mistake or noticed the other mother ship moving, but it was still there.

Before they knew it, more pods started to come out from above, landing directly in the Shelter.

---

At the moment, on the cursed faction ship, Sam was taking in the reports that he was getting from multiple areas. He thought he might need to send help to the other factions but decided that helping the Cursed faction was the number one priority.

The reason he hadn't sent help through the teleporters immediately was because he was in the middle of deciding which planet needed more help than the others. He knew every second that passed would mean more lives lost, but this was important as well.

He didn't want another situation similar to before where Sil was unable to help in a fight. After analysing everything, Sam had decided to send groups to their respective planets and knew Daisy was in the most trouble.

"Alright, you three will be one group, head through the teleporters. Save as many people as you can, and show the Dalki that they messed with the wrong faction." Sam said.

The three nodded and stepped through the teleporters, and before they knew it, they had arrived in the Daisy faction.

---

Helen was still struggling with the fight outside, but she knew that she needed to go in and help. Those in the Shelter at the moment were the weakest, but just then, she had received a message.

"Don't worry, I've sent in three of the strongest Cursed faction members to help you," Sam said.

And Sam wasn't lying either. A Dalki was seen, ready to swing and grab one of the civilians fleeing, but before it could, something had whisked right in front of the Dalki and grabbed its hand.

A blonde-haired boy, who gave a tug and ripped the Dalki's arm off with his super strength, this was Sil. There was a martial arts expert not too far away, who was dealing with two Dalki at once. He lifted up his new shield allowing them to hit it, and the next second, they were blasted away. This was Nate.

Then finally, Qi filled arrows were seen moving around, hitting a Dalki in the eye and through its skull. The last person who was there to help was Layla. Knowing that these three were inside the Shelter, Helen believed she could fight outside peacefully.

Until a different coloured pod, a larger black pod with golden trimmings, had landed in the centre of the Shelter.

## Chapter 1396: Battle of Daisy (2)

### Chapter 1396 - Battle Of Daisy (Part 2)

The second Dalki mothership had caused panic inside the Daisy Faction. The number of Dalki that had appeared were equal to the force that was attacking outside. Helen had never predicted this, which was why the strongest members from the Daisy Faction were currently fighting outside.

The other members were stationed on the wall. However, they understood that if they were to move from their position, it might make matters worse, which was why it was left to all those who were currently inside the Shelter. Although lately, there had seemed to be a rise in those that could deal and fight with the Dalki, this number was minuscule compared to the regular human population.

Inside the Shelter, there weren't many normal civilians with abilities that could go past that of level five; their beast gear wasn't even past that of the advanced level. Which meant, even if they were to team up and try their best to fight against a One Spiked Dalki, they would fail.

This fact was made clear in the first war; it didn't matter how much the humans outnumbered the Dalki; they just didn't have enough people with strong enough abilities that could deal with them.

This was why, when the Cursed Faction members were called, it was a big help to the Shelter. These weren't just any members of the Cursed Faction but some of the strongest. Sil was making quite the impact; he had made sure to take abilities that suited him the most.

The Cursed Faction didn't have any elemental abilities that he could use, which was what the Blade family were mostly taught to use, but Sil knew that. After missing out on the fight on Balde Island with the rest, all Sil had done was train.

His enemies were now gone, Hilston was no longer here, so Sil decided to put his powers to use in helping Quinn, to make sure that others who had been raised like him could continue to live, and to protect the Blade kids at all costs.

With this in his head, Sil started to train himself with a set of abilities, strength, speed, hardness, and more, and he was using all of this now to fight off the Dalki. With his great power, he was stronger than them; with his speed, he was faster than them, and his hardening skills even made it, so his skin was stronger than theirs.

Sil was bulldozing through, killing Dalki after Dalki, and they could see that this was a problem, and now he had their attention. The Dalki knew if they didn't get rid of this troublesome variable, they wouldn't complete their mission.

However, he wasn't the only troublesome one, nor was he the only one that had trained. Nate was able to charge in just as recklessly with the shield, and then there

was Layla, who stood on top of a building, firing at the Dalki with her arrows, trying to save as many lives as possible.

Helen, who was out the front, had been getting these reports, and she was thankful; it looked like the Daisy Faction would be okay. Until...a large black and golden pod came down from the Dalki mothership.

The pod looked different compared to others, and the way it had left the ship was distinct as well. It was shot out with such extreme force and speed that it hardly had spent any time in the air before slamming into the ground.

The force it had struck the ground was done so powerfully, that a large crater was created, and fissures on the ground were created from where it had fallen. Buildings within half a kilometre that were in the range of impact started to fall and crumble, and the Dalki started to move towards this destroyed area.

Layla was about a good kilometre away from where the pod had landed, but she could see its direction from a distance. She had a feeling this wasn't good news, so she made a decision.

"Everyone, head to the base where the teleporters are, be prepared to move out, at any moment," Layla shouted, making her voice louder with the power of Qi.

Hearing the voice, the people had decided to comply, leaving their homes and heading away from the centre of the Shelter, while those who thought they were better fighters would stay as others went past.

The streets were a bit clearer now, and Layla had decided to jump down from the high building. Before she hit the ground, she used her telekenesis ability on herself, slowing down her movements and landing safely.

'My ability powers have improved as well.' She noted. 'When I was human, it was limited to level two, and when I turned, I didn't bother trying to improve them so much. Now, I'm no longer restricted by the limits I had before. Thanks to Leo, I am able to realize this.'

On the ground, Nate had just finished dealing with a Dalki and ran over to the middle of the street between several buildings where Layla was. Up ahead, they could see the Dalki had gathered around the strange large pod. They were stood at the edge of the crater that was a few meters deep.

"What do you think that is?" Nate asked.

"Probably something similar to Slicer." Layla guessed. "The attack seems to be still happening outside, and I haven't received any report from Sam. I imagine other places might be under attack like this. Worst case though, the people should travel through the teleporters to one of the other planets."

"I think you might be right," Nate replied. "If Sam sent us, the big guns to this place, then they must be really in trouble."

Layla glanced at Nate for referring to himself and the others as the big guns, but that was just him, and it was then that the others saw someone else running straight past them at great speed, which was none other than Sil.

He continued to run forward and had entered where the Dalki and the large crater were. He didn't halt and continued to run right past the Dalki; none of them were able to catch him. At that moment, the door to the pod started to open. Steam had come out as the door opened wide.

"We don't need to call Quinn because he has us!" Sil shouted, jumping. He threw out his fist fast, and the outside of it could be seen hardening into a type of metallic material. With super-strength, speed, and hardening, Sil was delivering one of the strongest punches he had done before.

It was then that he saw his fist didn't strike; rather, something reached out and grabbed it. For a second, the strength gave in, and he could feel his hand losing momentum, but then a force pushed out, pushing Sil's hand back as well. Sil's feet were now touching the ground, and his other hand was quickly grabbed by whatever was in the pod.

The next second, he felt a force pushing him across the ground and the Dalki in the pod slowly stepped out.

"You are a strong one, I recognize you; you were there when Slicer died!" the Dalki shouted. He was covered in clothes and had five spikes on his back. He was none other than Graham.

"No one interferes! I need to fight this one!" Graham shouted, and soon a few arrows came for his head, which he quickly tilted down, letting it hit his hard-scaled head. The arrows hit the target but snapped upon contact, even with the added power of Qi.

Looking up, Graham saw two more people standing at the edge of the crater, but Graham just smiled at this fact.

"All of you're going to help me evolve." Graham sneered. He then lifted his leg and kicked Sil by his side.

Sil, seeing this, tried to harden his side in time, but he was still sent flying and into the ground. The next second, Graham started running towards the other two.

"Back me up!" Nate said, running forward. He hadn't held out his shield yet; he thought that would be too obvious but needed to time it right. The Dalki was faster

than him being a five spike, so he needed to predict the next attack. Still, he had gained extra strength and speed due to the power of the demon-tier weapon.

'He's pulled back his arm. Now!' Nate thought, throwing his shield out in front of him, but he never felt the attack against his shield and instead saw Graham standing there.

"You think I don't know what that shield does?" Graham smirked, "I was the one that created it."

Looking up, Nate could see just how large and muscular of a Dalki Graham was. Through the tight-fitting clothes, one could truly see how great beings they were, and just like with Sil, he lifted his leg to kick Nate aside.

Just then, an object came flying from the side and hit Graham from the side. It knocked him like a heavy truck, making him slightly fall off-balance and go down to one knee. Regaining his composure, Graham saw the boy he had kicked before holding a bow, but not on his own. Beside him was a brown-haired girl.

"Using our two abilities together was a good idea." Layla smiled. "For some reason, after the last five spikes, this one isn't that scary."

## Chapter 1397: Battle of Daisy (3)

Looking at the ground, Graham was wondering what had hit him. The truth was that he wasn't hurt and could still move; he was just in a shock. It had been a long time since anything had succeeded in knocking off his balance. And he found out that of all things, what caused this was a simple arrowhead.

'The arrowhead couldn't pierce my skin, but that force, was it from the girl before? But how?' Graham thought.

Layla's arrows were able to work somewhat this time, compared to last time, due to the person who actually had fired the arrow. That was none other than Sil himself. Out of the multiple abilities he carried with himself, one of them could magnify any object's weight.

Using this, he made the arrowhead several times heavier. Then with another ability, he could accelerate any object he touched regardless of weight, which was exactly what he had used on the arrow. Lastly, Layla empowered it with Qi and ensured that it stayed on the right path.

She knew it would be almost impossible to move the arrow with her ability. They needed to get a perfect aim, and Sil wasn't exactly the best when using a bow and arrow. When the arrow had hit Graham, the force was too strong, and it had easily knocked him off balance.

However, although that trick had worked this time, they knew it wouldn't work again. Graham immediately stood up and felt it was best to deal with the troublesome ones first. He had wholly ignored Nate, deeming him as a person who could do him no harm even with his strongest attacks and headed straight for the other two.

They tried to fire multiple arrows, but Graham was able to jump and avoid them with his great speed each time.

"Layla, it's not going to work anymore. Let me take care of him!" Sil said as he hardened his fists and ran forward. He threw a punch towards Graham, but it completely missed; not only that, but Graham had wrapped his tail around Sil's arm and then slammed him onto the ground.

"You are from that damned Balde Family!" Graham said. "Even your whole family was only just able to take out Slicer, so what makes you think you can take care of me!"

Graham punched the ground where Sil lay, and Sil somehow managed to harden his stomach. Still, even then, the blow was so strong, his whole body sunk into the ground, making the crater around them even deeper. Sil spat out a bit of blood. He tried to get up but was hit again and again.

'No! I need to do something!' Layla was alarmed.

Strangely, there was a lot of negative smog in the air, and it was mostly coming off from Graham. Using this to her advantage, Layla didn't waste any time consuming it all in.

'In this situation, only one form will help us in this fight.' Layla thought, and almost immediately, the horns started to grow from her head, her teeth began to become pointed, and her eyes glowed red.

'Come on, stay in control; I have to stay in control!' Was the strongest thought in Layla's mind right now, and she had succeeded.

Graham was still in the middle of hitting Sil. With each hit, Graham seemed to be getting more frustrated, and it was all because Sil hadn't died yet. He didn't even have this much trouble killing fellow Dalki, so how was a mere human able to stay alive even after so many kicks?

With all six of his high-level abilities, Sil had a strong defence in his hardening abilities. Still, even with that, he was getting hurt from Graham's punches.

'How was Hilston able to fight against that other Dalki for so long? Is it because I'm still weak?' Sil knew he had to find a way to get out of this state but could not do anything.

In the next instant, Graham found himself being hit by a strange black ball. Spiritual chains were gripping on him, restricting his movements. However, even with their great power, the spiritual chains that had hardly failed Layla till this point, Graham was still able to move.

Still, Layla had somewhat expected this; she just needed Graham's movements to be slowed down slightly. At that moment, a blue flame formed out of nowhere. The second it touched Sil, he felt himself growing slightly stronger; a green flame touched his body, healing his wounds, and on top of that, there was another energy rising in him.

Layla was transferring her Qi energy into Sil. Sil hadn't learned the art of Qi; despite Nate wanting to teach it to him, Sil had decided to focus on improving his combat skills and use of different abilities.

With Layla, this didn't matter since she could give Qi through her ability to whoever she wished.

The next punch came towards Sil, and he was able to move away, hitting Graham's hand, causing it to skim right past Sil's head.

"You Damn lizard!" Sil shouted, using both his legs to kick Graham in the stomach, throwing him up in the air. He wasn't the only one in the air, as Layla was

right behind with her sword. Striking at Graham's back, she hoped it would do something, but they just heard a loud clang as it bounced off his large scales.

Spinning his body, Graham now turned his attention towards Layla.

"You seem to be an annoying one as well!" Graham snarled.

Realizing that she had somehow been able to buff the boy Graham was punching just moments ago, Layla braced herself holding the sword.

Although the sword could block abilities, Qi, and other things, it didn't seem to work against physical strength, which the Dalki are best known for.

"Sprout!" She heard a voice, and plants started to appear seemingly out of nowhere, all turning towards Graham and Layla; at the same time, Nate was seen behind her, and he had covered the two of them in shadow.

Immediately, all of the plants started to fire towards Graham. As the spikes hit his body, multiple explosions went off one after another constantly. The spikes didn't stop, and Graham eventually landed on the ground.

Once Layla and Nate had landed and were far away enough, Nate placed his shadow away, and they could see who had come to their aid. On the other side was Helen, and she was standing next to Sil.

After seeing the strange pod land in the centre of the Shelter, Helen knew that it meant big trouble. Since her sisters were doing well dealing with the Dalki that were coming from the front, she decided to check in at the Shelter to find this situation.

"Do you think the four of us can take him down?" Helen asked, unsure.

Before Sil could answer, small stones suddenly flew out from the explosion dust and started to hit the plants one by one. Each time it hit them, the plants would wither instantly. Then, these stones were thrown towards Sil, who caught them, preventing them from hurting Helen.

On the other end, they were blocked by Nate's shield. Now that the explosions had stopped, they could see Graham standing there, some of his clothes slightly scorched from the attack, but still, through his hard skin, not a single attack had hurt his body.

The four of them had used nearly everything they could, and Sil was the strongest among them, yet even now, they still hadn't been able to put a scratch on Graham.

"Hey, I have an idea. You gave some of your power to Sil earlier, right? Well, give him as much power as you can. At the same time, try to trap the enemy with those chains like you did last time. If I use my shadow, I can block one attack from him,

but that's it, and it will completely dry my MC cells." Nate explained, telling her they only had one shot.

Layla knew Nate had a plan, but she just didn't know whether or not Sil would understand the plan either. Lifting up his shield, Nate punched it a few times, and both he and Sil nodded as if they understood what they were about to do.

"Now!" Nate shouted.

Layla spread out her arms at that moment, and a dozen of the black spiritual balls had surrounded Graham; it was impossible for him to avoid. Seeing them and knowing what it did last time, Graham was cautious about touching them.

Regardless, it didn't exactly seem like he could get out if he didn't touch them, and he decided to pick a direction and move ahead. Two of them touched him, and the chains immediately wrapped around his feet. Using her powers, Layla then moved all of them towards him.

Layla used multiple black balls at once, so the effect of the chains was stronger, and now Graham's movements were somewhat restricted.

Helen had dropped many seeds on the ground, and immediately they started to sprout, firing off the spikes from before, causing multiple explosions as they hit Graham's body.

She knew that they wouldn't do any damage, but that wasn't why they were being used; it was because they needed a smokescreen. To her side, Sil could feel his strength rising beyond what it was before. This was because of Layla.

At that moment, though, they could see a fist moving so fast that the smoke had been blown away and a punch was heading right towards Sil's face, but a shadow had appeared, at that moment, between the two of them, blocking Graham's punch.

Seeing Sil's punch coming towards Graham, he was unafraid; just like before, these weak punches would do nothing to him, but the punch was never aiming for him in the first place. Sil had used one of Graham's legs to jump up as he threw out his hardened fist as strong as he could, and a ringing clang was heard.

What it had hit was the Demon-tier shield that Nate was currently holding up. Sil's momentum, the strength of his attack at that moment, was doubled.

"There is more than one way to use this thing!" Nate shouted as the shield lit up was pointed towards Graham.

## Chapter 1398: Battle of Daisy (4)

So far, none of the attacks the group had done had worked on the five spiked Dalki. The situation was beginning to feel similar to when they faced Slicer; however, Sil didn't have stronger abilities, unlike before.

If they couldn't hurt Graham now, then how else could they hurt him. The most important thing to do was to increase their attack power. The idea had occurred to Nate when he had blocked the small stone from Graham. He could feel the energy that was collected in the shield.

That's when he realized why does the attack have to be from the enemy? Which was what eventually brought them to the situation they were in right now. Layla almost collapsed on the ground again. This was because of Qi Depletion. She had already partially given her Qi to Sil before, and she had given him, even more, this time.

The problem was, Sil's power probably would have increased by far more if he had some idea how to use Qi himself in order to power up his attacks, but because he didn't, it meant that the charge was only partially increased.

Nevertheless, even though Layla had used most of her energy, there was still one more thing she needed to do. She could feel her body reverting to normal as the energy around her was disappearing; however, she threw out several more black balls towards Graham at her last strike. Wrapping him in chains once more while Layla finally was back to her ordinary self again.

Now, with Graham's movement somewhat restricted, the group gained confidence that the attack could work. The shield lit up, causing it to shine blue. Nate gritted his teeth and held onto the shield as hard as he could.

Then, a large blast of blue energy came from the shield. It was too strong for Nate to handle, and he could feel himself being pushed back, skidding across the ground, until someone came for support, holding him from behind.

It was Sil. Supporting Nate from behind as the latter continued to fire the energy in the direction of Graham, and a few seconds later, the assault finally had ended. Still on guard, they quickly went to look at the condition of Graham and found that almost half of his body was missing.

The chains hadn't held out, and he was able to move somewhat from the attack; the right side of his body was missing, and almost half his chest was gone. Blood was oozing, spreading across the surface.

'Damn it, if only I could have held onto the shield a bit more, then maybe I could have directed it and finished him off, but he's nearly dead now, we can do this. I can get Sil to hit the shield again, and we can use this as an attack.'

'As long as we can hurt the Dalki, we can win this fight!' Nate thought.

Although they knew that Dalki got stronger the more they were injured, this looked like a critical blow, and judging from Graham's condition, it was.

However, he suddenly leapt up in the air, jumping out from the crater-like area even in this condition. Sil, seeing this, was ready to run after him, but the other Dalki, who had been watching everything from the sidelines, moved and stood in his way.

"Wait, Sil! Take the shield; it's useless in my hands right now. You're the only one who can fight!" Nate said, handing it over to him. He knew that it was pretty likely that Sil wouldn't be able to hurt Graham, and they needed to finish him off somehow. Working together had worked once, but now it was all up to Sil.

However, in that short timeframe, they had allowed Graham to do something they should have never allowed. Opening his mouth wide, he had bit the Dlaki's head off next to him, consuming it in an instant.

Then, the Dalki to his left, he bit their head off as well. Within seconds, his body began to heal on the spot. The green blood stopped, and his limbs started to regenerate.

'This...is bad...' Helen gulped. Seeing this, it was time for her to make the tough decision.

"Peach. Inform everyone, I want everyone to get out of the Shelter now! Head to one of the other planets, just tell them to leave this place, and you guys as well. We can no longer protect this place!" Helen decreed.

She had the same bad feeling in her guts which she had earlier. She figured that not only was eating his fellow Dalki healing Graham, but most likely, he was getting stronger as well.

Sil, using his speed, had caught up to him. Graham's other arm was still in the middle of healing. Sil then proceeded to hit the shield powering it up with his own attack, but before he could, Graham had moved from his spot and grabbed onto Sil's arm.

"Not again," Graham smirked.

Kicking Sil in the stomach, he sent him back to the crater with all the others. Feeling the kick, Sil knew that Helen's hunch was right. Graham's attacks had gotten stronger, and he was even faster!

If it weren't for the buff he got from the demon tier shield, then perhaps Sil wouldn't be able to get up again.

What the others didn't know was that Graham wasn't done yet. As his arm had finished healing, he looked up to the sky.

"I would have never thought, in a place like this, I would be injured in such a state," Graham said. "I can't take any more chances, and I won't underestimate you."

It was then that something started to happen to Graham. His body started to change slightly. The Dalki was already large, but he could be seen growing even larger; his face began to stick out a little, and his teeth sharpened more than before.

Strangely, the scales on his hand were turning slightly, changing into something else.

"All of you, get out of here!" Helen shouted. "While he's transforming, Sil can use his super-speed to get you all out of here."

The others knew that this was a lost fight and that they could do nothing else, and it looked like Graham was about to get even stronger.

"Don't tell me you're thinking of staying here!" Layla shouted.

To which Helen responded with a slight nod.

"I will slow him down; I still have a lot of tricks up myself, so don't worry about me," Helen said. "But once he finishes transforming, there's a good chance he might even be able to catch up to Sil."

It was then that Layla noticed that the vines that had covered the Shelter walls, the plants that were placed all over the Shelter had begun to move towards Helen; it seemed like she really did have some sort of plan.

Hearing Helen's words, Sil, decided to grab Nate under his arm and quickly zoomed towards Layla as well.

"What are you doing? Put me down! If we leave her here, she's going to die!" Layla shouted.

"And if we all stay here, we are all going to die!" Sil said; he looked over to Helen one more time, and she nodded.

It was then that Layla pulled out her sword; if she tapped it against Sil, she was sure that he wouldn't be able to use his ability, and that way, they would have no choice but to fight. Helen didn't know what the girl was trying to do but felt that Layla might do something reckless.

"Stop, don't do something stupid like that! How in the world did I lose out to you." Helen shook her head. "I don't know what he sees in you, but he should have picked me. Do you remember the bet when we had that fight? Whoever won can

request something from the other, right? Well, you owe me a favour, and I'm going to call in that favour right now. Leave this place and make him happy."

The strength in Layla's arms started to give after hearing these words, and tears began to flow down her face. Without wasting any more time, Sil left, and Layla could only see Helen, bravely standing there surrounded by plants, about to go against the strongest Dalki in existence.

That was the last time that Layla would see Helen.

## Chapter 1399: Helen's fate

Reminiscing about the events that transpired that day, Layla was praying that Helen was safe. Quite a few Daisy fighters were saved, and Layla noticed a pattern with those still alive. They were the strongest members of Daisy.

If that really was the case, there was a good chance that Helen was alive as well. Her hands were held tightly together, shivering as she saw Quinn open the doors and the cameras with Bonny and Void rush in behind him.

Finally, she would get an answer of what had happened after they had left her that day.

"What...have they done!" Quinn was stunned at the scene in front of him and almost fell to his knees. Currently, they were in what looked like a lab. It wasn't a lab like the other bases had. Usually, they focused on improving weapons, designing mechs, perhaps even trying to create new weapons; however, here, the whole place was just filled with broken vases and plants all over the place.

Soon, Helen's sisters rushed in behind, and in an instant, tears started to roll down their faces; they couldn't even take another step forward. They fell to their knees beside Quinn, who stood motionless.

"Look away; we can't film this," Bonny said, making Void put the camera down. It was important for them to film and update people on the situation, but a certain amount of respect was obliged when filming the fallen.

Eventually, Quinn walked forward into the lab and finally went to the wall, where Helen was practically stuck. Her body looked to be flattened on the wall, as if she had been squashed onto there, her own flesh acting like glue.

It was easy to identify her because most of the front of her body was intact; although she had no clothes on, her body appeared naked with several holes all over the bare skin. The worst part of it all, though, was how skinny and frail she looked.

As if she wasn't fed, left there to starve, barely left alive. While at the same time, the blood had been drained out of her, leaving her in such a state. Then, the strangest thing of all were some of the plants.

The plants had escaped from their glass experiment jars, seemed to have eventually grown, and were starting to feed off of Helen's body. Around her legs, there were even several roots attached.

It was an unnatural phenomenon, to say the least.

'I can't hear anything.' Quinn thought. 'There is no heartbeat... I can't think of any way to save her...how did all this happen?'

"Let's cut to something else," Bonny said in a low voice as they left the rooms and instead decided to film the survivors who were standing outside. Bonny was hoping she could help in some way and get a clearer picture of what had supposedly happened. At the same time, Quinn just stood in the room, looking at Helen; he didn't touch her, he didn't do anything, but just stood there with Helen's sisters sobbing in the background.

"Do you think he'll be okay?" Void wondered as they headed back into the main base hall.

"I don't know, whatever happened, it seems like the two of them are close. I've never seen him act like this." Bonny replied. "Usually, anger, sadness, or something else overcomes them, but Quinn, he wasn't displaying any of those things, and sometimes the people that act this way have the worst reaction possible."

After interrogating the survivors, they found out that the Dalki were collecting blood from all the survivors once in a while. They didn't know what they were doing with it or how they were using it. They also claimed that they had seen Dalki enter the room that Helen was in several times, coming out with blood-filled tubes.

However, there was quite a clear difference in treatment between them. Dalki had fed the other survivors, and they were even allowed to stay together, but for Helen... they could only imagine that during that whole time, the Dalki only drained blood from her until her current state.

After some time, the leaders started to return to the base where Quinn was, and they had brought along a few more survivors, but not many numbers. In total, they had gathered around another twenty or so, and that was between all the leaders.

Void and Bonny made sure to film all of them walking together. Getting a clear look at their faces, and that's when she realized something.

"My gosh, all of these people, they're so handsome and pretty," Bonny unknowingly spoke aloud, and it seemed like the viewers agreed to this.

"Are all V like this? I mean, I guess not; there are some people I saw that were V's that looked quite normal."

"If all V's looked like this, then we would have to start suspecting every good-looking person."

At the same time, there was something else that couldn't be displayed through the camera. It was something only those who were present at the scene could feel - The

overwhelming presence each of them carried; the V's had a sense of importance when walking as if they owned the land they stepped on.

"Where is his majes..I mean Quinn Talen?" Muka asked, stepping forward. Everyone looked towards the door of the other room, where Quinn would be. Bonny and Void followed behind, hoping to witness whatever might transpire next.

Upon entering the lab, they all stood next to each other and just looked towards Quinn with their heads down. Not a single one of them said a word and just waited. How much time had passed, no one was sure.

Even those watching on camera felt strange, as they knew they couldn't say much or poke fun at the situation.

Eventually, Quinn turned around and could see all the leaders. However, he seemingly ignored their presence and instead walked to the two sisters who were still sobbing on the ground.

"Ivy... and Peach, right?... I see you cared a lot for Helen." Quinn said. "Please tell me... what should I do?"

This was unexpected; for all things they expected Quinn to say, he was asking them what he should do. A strong person like him was asking for their help.

Wiping the tears away, Peach, the eldest of the two, stood up.

"Please, she was our sister; let us take her off the wall and give her a befitting farewell before you do anything."

Then, Ivy stood up as well, grabbing her sister's hand to help her up, she gripped tightly, and both of the sisters looked at each other and nodded. Then at the same time, the two of them spoke to him.

"And, Quinn, please, kill them, please help us kill whoever did this to our sister!" They shouted and started crying again.

It didn't take Quinn long to answer.

"So that's what I need to do. To let Helen rest in peace, I have to kill the person who did this to her. Then that's exactly what I will do. I promise... I promise I will get rid of the Dalki before I even think about resting."

With those words said, Bonny thought that it was time to end the live stream, at least for now. It was a good introduction to the Cursed Faction, and it had finished with Quinn making a promise to the whole world.

Still, Bonny and Void were instructed to remain in the Shelter for now, as they felt there was more to this story still, and the two sisters had something they wished to speak to Quinn before they began to bring Helen off the wall.

"There is something you should see, Quinn." Peach said. "When the Dalki started to attack the other Cursed Faction planets, Helen made every single person make a video. It was a video that was meant to be sent to whoever they wished after their death."

"It was for their loved ones to receive a last message. You see, the videos that were to be made even included us as leaders, and we're the only family Helen has, so she had already said everything she wanted to speak to us, but she still had made a video, and it was her wish that if she were to die, the video would be sent to you.

"Please... watch the video whenever you can."

Quinn nodded and instructed the leaders to stay on standby and aid in anything the sisters wanted help with. At the same time, those survivors had been sent back to the planet Sam was currently on. This was all done on the same day the Cursed Faction had reclaimed the Daisy Planet.

While the sisters and the leaders remained here, for now, not leaving, Quinn decided to head to the office of the Daisy Faction before doing anything else. Surprisingly the place was in good shape. There was no reason for the Dalki to destroy all the buildings in the first place, and an office wasn't important to them.

Here he could see several beautiful flowers, still full of life in the room, and windows that naturally let the light into the room. Then, there was the seat that she would sit on. Quinn had come here because he was finally ready, ready to watch the video that Helen had left for him.

Just what message had Helen left, Quinn couldn't help but wonder.

\*\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

## Chapter 1400: Final message

With the live stream concluded, there was a lot of talk about from the netizens. The public couldn't stop talking about the new V that had appeared. Some were already comparing them with the old big four and the head generals.

Eventually, conversations started to spring up. If there were ever a war to begin between the two races, would the humans be able to win. Conversations about how long the V's even existed were starting to come into play.

However, some were more rational; if V's had existed for a long time and were this strong, then at any point and time, especially before humans had discovered they had abilities, they could have ruled over the humans, yet they had not.

Perhaps, it was because like Quinn, all V's were originally human at some point, and this was a mutation. Some people even saw it as a type of ability. Especially since their appearance, it has certainly made them seem more human on the outside.

Regardless of all these facts, it had caused a stir within the Earthborn group, especially among those who were part of the Board. They had decided to call a meeting, including Supreme Commander Sach, to discuss the new information they had gathered.

This wasn't the only thing that others were talking about. After discovering Helen's death, stories of her accomplishments and the tales of her kindness towards her people started to spread online. People were learning just how great of a person she was and how big of a loss to the human race this was.

On the Cursed Faction ship, two people in particular felt worse as more news started to spread. One of them was Layla, who had yet to leave her room ever since discovering what had occurred after she was taken away.

'She... she stayed behind when she didn't need to... she was so brave. She knew she was going to die if she stayed behind, and she still told us all to leave. Why... do people who are around me keep dying.' Layla started to sob once again with her hands covering her face.

It wasn't the first time she felt like this. When Erin was taken away, when Cia had died, when her mother had died, and now Helen. Each time, Layla had been somewhat close, but she was too weak to do anything, and this time too, she was too weak to help.

'If only I had succeeded in learning the Soul weapon, or learned to use Qi better, then maybe I could have done something...' These thoughts plagued her head. Every time she thought she had improved, more people were fading from her side.

'If Quinn were there instead of us...he probably would have been able to save her.'

At the same time, another person who blamed Helen's death on himself just as much as the others was Sam. In the end, he had decided only to send three people to help out the Daisy faction.

'Why didn't I send more. Maybe more people would have been able to stop the enemy. Maybe then Helen wouldn't have had to stay behind. Or I should have asked all of them to move as soon as the Dalki appeared.'

'I should have been the one to order them to head back to the other planets.'

The thing was, Sam knew that would have been a bad call at the time as well. Dealing with an influx of people while all the Shelters were under attack - if he had chosen this option from the get-go, it was highly likely that they could have lost two shelters that day.

'Someone destroyed the teleporters after nearly everyone made it through, was that Helen as well. Did she destroy the teleporters to save the lives of the others?' He wondered.

Taking a deep breath and sitting down in the chair, Quinn had directed that no one disturb him for the time being. It was time for him to watch the video. He had been putting it off because it felt strange to him.

He had just seen Helen's dead body not too long ago, and now he would be hearing her voice and her words as if she was speaking from the other side. Still, he felt like she had left him this video for a reason, so he should watch it.

Playing the video, a large hologram displayed in front of him, and Helen appeared, sitting in the very seat on which Quinn was at this moment.

She had a bright smile on her face and looked in good condition, a great contrast to what he had seen her just moments ago.

"I hate that I'm recording one of these... but I guess as a leader, I need to lead by example, right? I can't tell all the others to make one and then not make one myself." Helen said. Her voice showed her nervousness, a side that Quinn hadn't seen from her.

"Anyways, when making this video, I needed to decide who would be best to see it. I have spoken to my sisters many times before, and they know how I feel, so I started to think... if I didn't get the chance to talk to the person, if there was someone I wanted to talk to one more time before I leave, who would that be?

"In the end, I came to my answer, and that is you, Quinn Talen. When I first saw you, I remember thinking of you as a young and naive man, but you had this

determination, this look in your eyes to change things, and I was attracted to that because it was the same for me.

"I have an inkling for meeting these types of people, and for the first time, I thought I had met someone who had more ambition than me. You might not have realised this, Quinn, so I wanted to tell you.

"You might have more ambition than anyone I have ever met before. The reason why others and maybe you yourself don't realise this is because, for once, unlike other people, your ambition isn't selfish. This selfless desire attracted me towards you, and I thought, what would it be like if I spent the rest of my life with this person.

"I could imagine you as a great person who, if you truly loved me, would have done anything for me. You would have got up every morning to see me smile because that's just the type of person you are, and that's when I realised... your eyes didn't look at me in that way.

"At least, not yet. I'm sorry, Quinn, I'm sorry that I hesitated when I found out what you were. I started to think my initial attraction to you was something else, that maybe you had tricked me. Because for me as well, I had never felt these feelings of true love or love at first sight, I thought it was a myth. However, it was only later that I realised these feelings were real.

"I wish that I could have seen the world that you will create. I would have loved to travel on different planets with you, exploring new worlds and different views together. It would have been great, but I guess if you're watching this video, I will never experience that."

Helen paused there for a second, and Quinn could see a tear roll down her eye.

"I'm not like you, Quinn. I'm not a selfless person. I wanted you for myself, but in my aims to improve myself and be a person you would approve of, I decided not to be selfish. If this video arrives in your hands, I want you to enjoy those views; I want you to spend the rest of your life making someone else smile and experience these new feelings with others.

"And if you ever did fall for me, or realise you're feeling too late...then forget about me, Quinn Talen. This is my selfish request. Forget about me, and carry on with your selfless ambition."

The video ended there, and just like earlier, when he saw Helen, he didn't know how to feel.

"You...really are a selfish person. I remember when you just kissed me out of the blue...but you aren't a bad person Helen. Maybe I did realise too late..."

After thinking things over for a while, Quinn decided to do something and called Bonny.

"Bonny, get ready to film something. I'm sure they will be watching. I want to make sure this is something that the Dalki will see, my message to them!" Quinn said.

\*\*\*\*

You will get access to the MVS + MWS webtoon for only \$3 dollar a month.

Content from **Chapter 701: Break the law to Chapter 1400: Final message**

eBook from [9Kafe](#)